

The Home Page of Wade Frazier

Welcome to this web page. If you are interested in free energy, cancer cures that are harmless, cheap and effective, or how this planet might be healed and what some of the obstacles seem to be, you might find these pages of interest. To readers from the past, welcome back. To those new to my work, I hope you find something worthwhile on these pages.

The information on this web site is freely given. Several pieces of it, and other writings of mine, have been published elsewhere. If you want to reproduce some of these writings, I ask that you also provide a link to this site, and tell your readers that what you have reproduced is a small excerpt of it. Also, since this information is freely given, I do not want anybody to charge for it. Please reproduce it in the spirit in which it has been given to the world. Thank you.

This work defies neat categorization, and the political-economic-historical-scientific-spiritual aspects of this work pervade all of it, and are all interrelated. Nevertheless, an attempt has been made to organize this site's essays into something resembling order.

[New Material Added in 2006 and 2005](#)

Comprehensive Essays and General

[An Introduction to This Website](#) (122K)

[This Website's Purpose](#) (64K) - Updated in April 2007 - I am [engaging the public](#) on a limited basis, and I have a new section on [how to use this website](#).

[A World Based on Abundance - What it Looks Like; What it Does Not Look Like](#) (40K)

[Orthodoxy Versus Alternatives - The Layman's Quandary](#) (37K) - Published June 2007

[The Strange, Harrowing Journeys of Free Energy Activists](#) (75K) - Published December 2006

[The Free Energy Conundrum](#) (89K)

[An Open Letter to the Radical Left - Let's Truly Get Radical and Heal the Planet](#) (101K) -

Published June 2007

[An Open Letter to the Free Software Movement](#) (24K)

[Peak Oil, New Energy and the End of Scarcity – Making New Energy *Thinkable*](#) (51K)

[Hooked on Scarcity - Reactions to New Energy and other Observations](#) (87K)

[Roots, Branches and Paradigms](#) (72K) - The 12-page version of this 1200-page web site.

[Site Timeline](#) (236K)

[Visions of What *Can Be*](#) (110K)

[Links](#) (42K)

Personal and Spiritual

[My Journey and Life's Work in Five Pages](#) (25K) - **My most succinct introduction to my writings.**

[My Adventures](#) (261K)

[A Vegetarian's Journey](#) (24K)

[A Spiritual Perspective](#) (212K)

[Dennis Lee, His Critics, and the "Skeptics"](#) (261K)

[The Handiwork of the BPA Hit Man](#) (34K)

[Watching UFOs with James Gilliland](#) (25K)

[Pictures from My Life](#)

Political and Historical

[Lies I Was Raised With](#) (241K)

[Columbus, The Original American Hero](#) (148K)

[The American Empire](#) (1098K)

[Ralph McGehee, the CIA and *Deadly Deceits*](#) (30K)

[Investigating Possible Conspiracies and Cover-ups – JFK, The Moon Landings, etc.](#)
(429K)

Economic and Scientific

[Racketeering for Fun and Profit](#) (14K)

[The Energy Racket](#) (284K)

[The Medical Racket](#) (777K)

[Ralph Hovnanian's *Medical Dark Ages* Quotations](#) (337K)

[Fluoridation: A Horror Story](#) (161K)

[The Business of War](#) (690K)

[Other Rackets](#) (110K)

[Julian Simon, Whaling and the "Good News"](#) (67K)

[The Savings and Loan Scandal and Public Accounting](#) (98K) - With an [Enron postscript - and the next possible scandal](#)

[Trucking, and One Way to Immediately Improve the Lives of Millions](#) (93K)

(The address on the Internet of my home page is [http://
www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm](http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm))

New Additions to this Website in 2006 and 2005

December 2006

By Wade Frazier

I resumed my career in 2003, and have been very busy ever since. I also [briefly came out of retirement](#) on the free energy activism front. I was originally planning on spending my free time in 2006 and 2007 re-editing my site, adding some new material, and rewriting some essays. However, I was persuaded to set that task aside for a few years, and perhaps forever. I have not stopped writing and editing altogether, and this page is designed to make it easy for my readers to find the significant changes since 2004.

Additions include:

In 2006:

- A [five-page summary of my life's journey](#); it is the most succinct introduction to my writings so far;
- A new essay on this [website's purpose](#) - I am beginning public dialogue again;
- A new essay on what an [abundance paradigm looks like](#) – once in awhile, I get to write a fun one;
- A new essay on the [journeys of free energy activists](#) – it is my most ambitious essay of 2006;
- An open letter to the [Free Software Movement](#); I hoped they would be receptive to free energy and abundance, but so far, I have found them to be trapped by their [rationalist-materialist paradigm](#);
- A [small addition](#) on the heart disease treatment racket in America;
- A slightly expanded description of the [pre-Columbian Western Hemisphere](#).
- A small addition on my partially successful [2006 UFO-hunt](#).

- A slight update to the [Enron scandal and what scandal might be next](#).

In 2005

- A new essay on the [free energy conundrum](#).
- A [brief epilogue](#) to the My Adventures essay, with some footnotes in that section that deal with recent events in some detail;
- A revised “[Make Them an Offer They Can't Refuse](#)” section of the My Adventures essay. It packs more punch now, and presents some new material.
- Some [new links](#) to information that I have not previously revealed, some [relating](#) to my free energy journey.
- A little more new material about the [Founding Fathers](#) of the United States and a short [Iraq epilogue](#) to the American Empire essay, with an accompanying [incendiary photo collage](#);
- A little [9/11 section](#) added to the cover-up essay;
- A page related to my [successful UFO hunt](#) in June 2005;

I have kept busy on the reading front. While there have been many notable efforts on dissecting the abysmal state of the U.S. media and its [complicity regarding the invasion of Iraq](#), it is difficult to single one out. Many are Internet-based efforts, but *War Made Easy* by Norman Solomon is a good antidote to the propaganda barrage in book form.

Two recent books are particularly germane to my site, and I have incorporated their findings into my site. In 1998, when I first read an article by Joel Griffiths and Christopher Bryson on the [Manhattan Project's connection to America's fluoridation effort](#), I hoped they would publish a book-length treatment of the issue. I was rewarded in 2004 by Bryson's magnum opus, *The Fluoride Deception*, whose findings have been sprinkled throughout my [fluoride essay](#).

The second pertinent book is making history, and is already being compared to [Smedley Butler's War is a Racket](#). As with [Ralph McGehee](#), John Perkins was a recruiting error. Perkins was recruited into a professional group that literally call themselves “economic

hit men.” As with McGehee, Perkins’ conscience eventually overcame him and he spoke out. His *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man* should be required reading for everybody who kneels at the capitalist altar. It [validated from the inside](#) many things that I have written about on my site.

I may put my entire site in one easy downloadable file one day. I may engage in [public dialogue](#) on the free energy conundrum and related issues, if I can find the right audience and forum.

I sympathize with readers of my work. It is not easy reading, and can hit the reader like a sledgehammer. In 2005 performed a slight re-edit of my [introductory essay](#), and was dazed when I finished. I think my work is best digested in small doses, even for me.

The next section: [An Introduction to This Web Site](#) (122K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

An Introduction to this Website

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[This Site's Thesis](#)

[How It Stands, and How We Got Here](#)

[Who is Paying the Price of our Progress? - A Sampling of our System's Losers, and What Can be Done About It](#)

[Blinded by the Paradigm](#)

[Scientific Paradigms](#)

[Other Paradigms](#)

[Forgetting the Basics, and Turning Vices into Virtues](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

December 2005

This web site is part [personal odyssey](#), part [scholarly research](#) and part [visionary speculation](#). I have had the benefit of many friends in cyberspace and elsewhere who have contributed mightily by providing learned criticism, new information, editorial observations and shoulders to lean on. Without their help, this site would not appear as it has, and may not have been completed. They know who they are.

This essay is designed to introduce this site, summarize its central thesis - the situation humanity faces today, and how it got here - as well as summarizing solutions that await use today. It also discusses the [paradigms](#) that dominate our thinking in the West. It links to the site's other essays, which explore the topics in greater depth. I hope you find the reading experience worthwhile.

This Site's Thesis

Here is this site's thesis, stated as plainly and succinctly as I can.

- In the name of "progress," we are destroying our home planet. The United States leads in destroying our environment and our fellow humans.
- In the United States there is a strange combination of [denial](#) and complacency regarding this situation. While relatively few are conscious of it, we all (wittingly or unwittingly) participate in it.
- The twin ideologies blinding United States citizens are [nationalism](#) and [capitalism](#), with a substrate of [materialism](#). America's current versions of nationalism and capitalism are largely founded upon and sustained by myths, secrecy and lies, and ultimately by [massive violence](#).
- People adopt and [irrationally defend](#) these systems of thought largely because they bring short-term material benefits, but the costs are largely borne by the earth and the people who live in the "[undeveloped](#)" world (as well as this nation's poor). The "undeveloped" world's poverty is directly related to having been [violently conquered](#) by Europeans and being kept in various [forms of bondage](#) ever since.
- The system also devours the "winners." Americans ingest [brain-numbing poison](#) every day, and are [brainwashed by our media](#) and [indoctrination systems](#). Americans also develop a wide array of diseases that are directly related to our "advanced" lifestyles; the cures for such diseases [are suppressed in the name of power and profit](#). In addition, many technologies that would eliminate the damage that our industrialized methods wreak on the environment are also [suppressed in the service of power and profit](#), such as [free, non-polluting energy](#).
- The slavish devotion that Americans have for their ideological systems is more pronounced in the educated classes, just as George Orwell wrote about in [his prescient 1984](#). They seemingly think they are the system's biggest winners, but in significant ways they are the most enslaved. The most effective prison is one in which the prisoners do not realize that they are *in* prison.
- There are [deep spiritual dimensions](#) to this situation. The current paradigm is like a broken record played continually. The solution is not to get a new record, but to stop playing old records to death. [George Orwell](#) called it the "gramophone mind." It is time to put the records away.
- We will either wake up or destroy ourselves. [Love is probably the only answer](#). Our tired games can be easily given up, and we can readily heal the planet and ourselves. The nuts-and-bolts of

how to do it [are already here](#). Desiring to do it is the essential ingredient. Heaven on earth instead of hell on earth is quite possible, and soon. We are facing a divine paradox: only by caring for each other will we save ourselves. As [Buckminster Fuller](#) observed, humanity is on the brink of Utopia or oblivion.

Right or wrong, that is this site's thesis. Criticisms of this site are dealt with at this [link](#).

How It Stands, and How We Got Here

Today, the human species stands poised on the brink of two divergent near-term futures. Several trends may spell humanity's doom. One or all of them may become vehicles of our destruction, which may take most of the planet's ecosphere with it. Some can be immediately catastrophic, while others are millennia-old trends that might have chaotic confluences, resulting in or contributing to disasters of unprecedented magnitude for the human species.

First, here are looming catastrophes that could spell immediate doom for billions of humans.

- The current "[War on Terror](#)" has hidden objectives (as with all "wars"). Its long-term objectives are securing unfettered U.S. access to the oil and gas resources of [Central Asia](#) and the Middle East, and destroying anybody or anything that hampers that objective, as well as further securing [U.S. global hegemony](#). Ironically, the industrialized nations *do not even need fossil fuels*, as there are alternative and free energy solutions, but they have been [actively suppressed for generations](#). The War on Terror has destabilized Central Asia and the Middle East, with Pakistan and India, two nuclear powers, rattling sabers during 2002, and nuclear power [Israel](#) further enraging the Arab world by its unceasing and escalating wars against the Palestinian people; a nuclear conflagration is far more likely today than it was a year ago. Other weapons of mass destruction may also make their appearance, from [secret programs](#) that would curl most people's hair to hear the [smallest fraction of them](#); with America's recent invasion of Iraq, Armageddon might be just around the corner.
- Earth's human population of more than six billion people is twice what it was in 1960, and three times what it was in 1930. Earth is currently experiencing the [greatest mass extinction episode](#) since the [dinosaurs' demise](#), and this one is manmade. In addition, the world is quickly hitting the wall of food production on several fronts. The so-called [Green Revolution](#) may be nearing its end, and billions of people may soon be at risk of starvation. If that happens, it may well trigger a global food war.
- Related to the Green Revolution is the trend of mega-corporations trying to patent life itself. [Monsanto](#) and other corporations are [genetically engineering](#) plants to be dependent on artificial fertilizers and pesticides and making crops whose seeds are sterile, so farmers are forced to buy

more seeds for the next season's planting. A [global food monopoly](#) is taking shape; already, two companies control about 80% of the global grain market, and Asia is quickly becoming [dependent on imported grain](#). The most ominous aspect of that trend is genetic engineering. It is not confined to making "Frankenfoods." Perhaps the biggest risk is an inadvertent creation of a super-disease that kills off most of humanity. Those fears are [not outlandish](#). Even if a designer disease does not get loose, humanity may be about due for a global epidemic of a magnitude not seen [since the 1340s](#).

Those are three *manmade* catastrophes that loom today; the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse might be ready to ride. Another possible looming catastrophe is a comet or asteroid hitting earth. That has become a popular speculation, as [catastrophic theory](#) has come back into vogue during the past generation. During the past couple of years, astronomers and NASA have made announcements that asteroids seemed to be on a collision course with earth, and then recanted their findings, while "near misses" occurred that were not even seen coming, where an asteroid came within a cosmic hair-width of hitting earth. With NASA's track record of [obfuscation and cover-up](#), they probably would not tell the public the true story anyway.

Humanity's "progress" has been damaging earth's ecosphere for the past 10,000 years. According to today's anthropological findings, humans had a "[great leap forward](#)" about 40,000 years ago as they improved their hunting and related technologies and became super-predators. That initiated the golden age of the hunter-gatherer phase of human existence. Humans were too successful, as they hunted all the planet's [large, easily killed mammals to extinction](#), a speculation supported by what happened when humans [migrated to uninhabited islands during historical times](#). When hunter-gathers exterminated their primary energy source, the [Domestication Revolution](#) began about 10,000 years ago in [Malthusian](#) fashion. All economic systems ride atop ecological systems, and all ecological systems operate on the principle of the [acquisition, preservation and consumption of energy](#); all political systems are about controlling economic systems or serving them. When the Domestication Revolution began, earth's ecosystems also began undergoing dramatic change and destruction, and several man-made trends have reached ominous levels today. Some are summarized below, with the energy issue figuring prominently.

- The Domestication Revolution led to "[civilization](#)." Plants and animals were domesticated, and humans were no longer nomadic hunter-gatherers. The alteration of the earth's ecology by exterminating all the big, easily killed animals was minimal compared to what the Domestication Revolution did. [Forests have created most of earth's topsoil](#). Because humans cannot digest cellulose, which comprises most of plant matter, they domesticated and ate [animals that could](#). They also razed forests to use the wood for structure and fuel, and used the exposed soils for growing plants that humans could digest. Deforestation, plow agriculture and irrigation eventually destroy soils, through wind and rain loss, salination and mineral depletion. Without forests to create new soils, that trend is a one-way ticket to desertification; most of earth's agricultural land has experienced serious soil loss and depletion, and huge tracts of land have [already turned to](#)

[desert](#).

- With the [Industrial Revolution](#), humanity's ability to manipulate the environment grew by another order of magnitude. Mining, deforestation, city building, road building and other ecosystem-damaging activities accelerated enormously. [Species exterminations accordingly increased](#), as well as soil losses.
- Earth's surface would average about 0° F if not for what are called "greenhouse gases," water vapor and carbon dioxide being the two main components, the lack of which would have made life on earth's surface a questionable possibility. Between [10% and 25%](#) of the warming currently attributed to greenhouse gases is attributed to carbon dioxide (and it would be more pronounced in colder climates, as carbon dioxide has a much lower boiling point than water, but estimating that carbon dioxide makes earth about 10-15° F warmer than it would otherwise be is probably not far from the mark, with all the uncertainty of climate science). Burning fossil fuels has increased the atmosphere's carbon dioxide content by a third during the Industrial Revolution. That dynamic is undoubtedly contributing to today's [global warming](#), which is rapidly melting the Northern Hemisphere's glaciers, the arctic icepack, and the Antarctic ice shelves are beginning to [break up](#). I might see dramatic sea level rises in my lifetime; the climactic changes from such rapid warming will be nothing less than catastrophic for humanity, with record droughts, floods, crop failures and other disasters. They are already happening. Among the "minor" effects of such a change, it could [kill the Gulf Stream](#), and Western Europe will be about 20° F colder in the winter, while other regions parch and bake. "Natural" catastrophes have been increasing at a rate of 6% per year during the past generation. The long-prophesied earth changes are already upon us.
- Humanity is quickly running out of oil and gas, but even if more oil and gas are discovered, it is estimated that earth's oceans have absorbed half of the carbon the Industrial Revolution has vented to the atmosphere, and the oceans [have become more acidic](#), which threatens all ocean life, which is also where most oxygen is generated. A cascading feedback effect could drastically affect the ocean's ability to absorb carbon and produce oxygen.
- [World War II](#) was a global watershed event in many ways. One outcome was [U.S. global hegemony](#), a new era of [neocolonialism](#) and the resultant [war against the world's poor](#). Another outcome was the rise of the chemical industry. [Modern chemotherapy](#) came out of World War II chemical warfare experiments, [DDT](#), [napalm](#) and other chemicals were first used in World War II, and deadly substances such as [fluorine](#) and [uranium](#) were transformed by an alliance of industry and the military into seemingly beneficial substances. The flooding of the environment with toxic substances has created many environmental and health disasters. Government and industry [have gone to great lengths](#) to buy up scientists such as [Harold Hodge](#), [Elizabeth Whelan](#), [Steven Milloy](#) and others to make those deadly substances appear harmless. The cost that humanity and the environment are bearing due to this situation is reaching surreal levels.
- Related to the chemicals issue are numerous toxic waste issues, such as pollution from [chemical farming](#) and nuclear waste. The [U.S. Department of Energy admitted to my face](#) that the "management" of nuclear waste is a racket, and none of the proposals put forth to make it harmless will be pursued, unless it makes the [waste management racketeers](#) a pile of money. There are more situations like that - where [greed](#) triumphs over issues of common sense and even survival - than this or any other web site can possibly chronicle.

- The world's most diverse ecosystems, the coral reefs, are in danger of becoming extinct during the next century, as well as the most diverse land-based ecosystems, the tropical rain forests. If that happens, humans may also face extinction.

Those are simply *some* of the more prominent issues facing humanity today, and their magnitudes are barely debatable, except for scientists and academics who have [sold their souls](#) to the moneyed interests. What is being done about this looming catastrophe, especially in the nation that leads the parade to oblivion? Virtually nothing. [Julian Simon](#)'s possibly fraudulent scholarship, or the opinions of about six scientists, who are all in the oil industry's hip pocket, are given a respectable hearing in the [corporate-owned mainstream media](#), as if their interest-conflicted opinions matter as much as the [scientific findings of the world's most qualified climate scientists](#). Earth is dying, and the rich and ruthless are raping and plundering as never before, determined to wring every last cent out of earth and humanity...for what? [Noam Chomsky](#) says that the West's current institutional ideology [ranks hegemony above survival](#); that is another way of saying those who run the show would rather rule in hell (or even kill themselves off) than be regular members of heaven. Those who want to rule in hell rather than be one of heaven's regular members [will get to live there](#), but they probably will not be in charge.

Because states in the West currently have limited ability to inflict violence onto their domestic populations, they have developed the world's most sophisticated and subtle mind control systems, although much of the brainwashing has been accomplished by the corporate order, not the government. Americans are consequently earth's [most brainwashed people](#). One of [America's finest teachers](#) has stated for years that the American "educational" system's primary goal is turning Americans into stupid, childish, easily manipulated consumers. It is not a new phenomenon, but a trend [since the nation's founding](#). It accelerated when America's robber barons began diversifying, particularly [John Rockefeller](#) and Andrew Carnegie. Rockefeller built the [University of Chicago](#), which dominates mainstream, largely [capitalistic](#), economic theory. Carnegie and Rockefeller's "philanthropy" also [took over modern medicine](#) early in the 20th century, and Americans have been paying in awesome ways ever since.

During my [traumatic adventures](#) while trying to [bring alternative energy to the American marketplace](#), my biggest surprise was not that people are brainwashed, or that corporate and governmental interests can be [more sophisticated gangsters](#) than the Mafia. It was not a pleasant realization, and came after [several years of gradual and brutal disillusionment](#), but is why humanity stands on the abyss' brink today, and few want to hear it:

The world is like it is because not enough people care enough.

That is not to say that *nobody* cares, but not enough care enough, to counterweigh those proudly on the [dark spiritual path](#), and the inertia of the masses that go whichever way the wind blows. I would love to be wrong about this, but my experiences told me otherwise. My Pantheon of modern-day saints is not

large. [Dennis Lee](#) and [Mr. Professor](#) are in it, along with some other free energy comrades, but as a group, I have found more people of high integrity in America's radical left than anyplace else, populated by [Edward Herman](#), [Noam Chomsky](#), [Howard Zinn](#), [Michael Parenti](#) and others like them. Some overgrown Boy Scouts, such as [Ralph McGehee](#), discovered from the inside, the hard way, about the dark reality of the system they worked for. About one in two thousand American doctors possess the necessary integrity to declare that [orthodox cancer therapy](#) is a racket, and dare to provide actual *cures*. In choosing their cancer treatment, Americans are among earth's [least free](#) people. Most of the high-integrity saints in my Pantheon have come under intense attack from America's establishment defenders. America's cultural managers do not want people waking up, and keeping those of integrity from being heard, or vilifying them if they are, is one of the [mainstream media's tasks](#), even to the extent of [wiping out their own publishing companies](#) to prevent the modern secular saints' works from being published.

However, America's [whistleblowers](#) have often reported that the worst abuse they received did not come from those who ruined their careers and lives – they were “[just doing their jobs](#)” – [but from their colleagues, friends and family](#), with ostracism and attacks that were shocking. Those saints all-too-often are crucified while the mob cheers, something [I witnessed happen to Dennis](#) more than once. Dostoyevsky's [parable of the grand inquisitor](#) is not all that fictional.

There is auspicious news to report, which is the [motivation behind creating this web site](#). The answers to all of our problems [are here](#) today, or nearly so. Free, non-polluting energy technology has been around for generations, but the people calling the shots on earth [do their best to hide that fact](#), and the vast majority of humanity are their easy-manipulated accomplices.

The situation is not hopeless; there is good news to report:

We can have heaven on earth instead of hell on earth, but enough of us have to care enough.

If one percent of the population simply began waking up to possibilities of healing that most are completely (and partly willfully) blind to, it might help catalyze enough awareness and action to bring a healed humanity and planet into being. The two groups I have encountered that are at the [stage of their spiritual evolution](#) where they are closest to “getting it” are the [radical left](#) and the [mystical left](#). I have seen more human caring and more ability to see the bigger picture in those groups than any others. There may not be enough collective integrity in those groups to put humanity over the top, but I know of no better candidates.

This site was not designed to exclusively cater to those groups, but anybody who can read English can probably get something from it. It is especially designed for Americans because I am one, and there are many things [we can begin doing today](#) to assist a planetary healing. I ask nothing of any reader except to honestly consider this site's thesis and information.

Who is Paying the Price of our Progress?

A Sampling of our System's Losers,

And What Can be Done About It

A common response to this site, mainly by white men, is that life here (in the West, the United States in particular) is good, so what am I complaining about? Life is "good" for the winners, and white, educated American men are history's biggest winners. The point is not about how good the winners have it, but how the losers are suffering. Below is a sampling of the losers that [this site's critics](#) usually ignore or minimize.

- A middle-aged Vietnamese man lost his parents and siblings in an American napalm attack on their village in 1967. He was burned also, but survived. As [Ralph McGehee](#) and [others have made quite clear](#), the Vietnamese people's crime was wanting to be free of the white man's yoke, and America killed off several million Southeast Asians to keep them [enslaved to the capitalistic order](#).
- An elderly Japanese man lives in [Nagasaki](#) today, and lived there as a child in 1945. Although Japan had been trying to surrender for months, the U.S. stonewalled Japanese surrender attempts so they could demonstrate their secret weapon, [the atom bomb](#). The 1945 bombings were vengeance on the Japanese for Pearl Harbor and a demonstration of power to the Soviet Union. Although the justification for the Hiroshima bomb was weak, and in light of current scholarship (Gar Alperovitz's, among others), difficult to take seriously, Nagasaki was a great crime against humanity. That elderly man lost his parents and entire family in the Nagasaki bombing, a bombing that intentionally targeted a city, to demonstrate the bomb's devastating impact. He still suffers from the wounds he received in the bombing, including radiation poisoning. Ironically, the man was raised as a Christian, and Nagasaki had [Japan's largest Christian community](#). The United States [has never apologized](#) and still justifies the bombings.
- A mother of five works in an American shoe factory today in Indonesia. The factory was moved there in the 1990s, throwing thousands of Americans out of work. Indonesian labor was cheaper, and the shoe company did not have to adhere to American standards of worker safety and treatment. Wages were low largely because the United States actively supported a military coup in Indonesia in 1965. When [Suharto](#) came to power with U.S. help, the first thing he did was murder about a million Indonesian citizens. They formed the political opposition to his dictatorial rule, and mainly belonged to the Communist Party. The CIA drew up lists of people, and the Indonesian army rounded them up and murdered them all. Thus, with the Indonesian people put into virtual bondage, the "investors" from the West flocked to Indonesia, moving factories there and drilling for oil, knowing that their pawn would keep the masses in line. That woman's parents were murdered in Suharto's political "cleansing" in 1965, and she was eventually reduced to working in the new American shoe factory, making a few cents per hour. When the workers in her factory recently

went on strike because of their inhumane working conditions, the shoe company asked the Indonesian government to send their brutal soldiers to bludgeon those striking workers. [Suharto and his cronies](#) stole about \$60 billion from the Indonesian people, thereby bankrupting the economy. The United States and the International Monetary Fund (IMF) rode to the rescue and "loaned" Indonesia about forty billion dollars to stay solvent. Part of such a "rescue package" is the imposition of "[Structural Adjustment Programs](#)" that essentially cut out such "frills" as affordable food and heat for the Indonesian masses, so they can pay back the "loan." The loan, like Suharto's looting, never makes it into the hands of the citizenry. Starvation and other austerity measures are imposed on them to pay off the "loan." The U.S. and IMF have provided that kind of "help" to scores of [Third World nations](#), and they starve while they export food and other commodities to the United States in order to earn "foreign exchange," to pay off the loan. It is merely shell-game slavery, and America gets cheap imports out of the deal.

- A thirty-year-old man picks bananas for United Fruit Company in Guatemala, the company that brings us Chiquita bananas. His parents were murdered in the 1980s by the Guatemalan government. The United States, at the behest of United Fruit Company (and the Secretary of State and CIA director were investors), overthrew the democratically elected government of Guatemala in 1954.^[1] The president of Guatemala, Jacobo Arbenz, was a fan of Franklin Roosevelt, and embarked on building a New Deal-style economy, and providing everybody a minimum standard of living. United Fruit thought that it owned Guatemala, and the American government conspired with United Fruit to overthrow Arbenz in a coup. The American Secretary of State and his brother, the CIA's director, [literally had a financial stake in the coup](#). For about the next forty years, [Guatemala](#) was ruled by a series of U.S.-backed dictators that eventually began slaughtering the political opposition in their nation. The carnage became the worst in the 1980s, when the Guatemalan army murdered that banana picker's parents as they tried to organize the banana workers. That banana picker today cannot properly feed his son, who at the age of four still cannot walk on his own, but American consumers get cheap bananas.
- An [Iraqi mother](#) recently lost her teenage son, as the trigger-happy American occupiers gunned him down as they "lit up" a street where the boy was walking. A decade earlier, she lost her three-year-old daughter to an intestinal ailment caused by contaminated water. The water was contaminated because the United States specifically targeted the infrastructure of Iraq during the so-called Gulf War, and then imposed an economic embargo that denied the Iraqi people supplies such as chlorine to purify their water, because it could have been "diverted" to military uses. Iraq used to have the best medical care in the Middle East, but the United States reduced Iraq to Third World status as we denied them food, medicine and other necessities. The woman's husband was conscripted into the Iraqi army during the 1980s and was killed by the United States in the [first Gulf War](#). Well more than one million Iraqi citizens have prematurely died since 1991 because of U.S. actions that continue to this day. Several hundred thousand of the dead are children under the age of five. It is all part of a U.S. effort to control the region's oil supplies and bludgeon anybody who steps out of line.
- Although they cannot articulately tell us their suffering, all across America, pigs, cows and chickens live hellish lives in factory farms in order to provide [McDonald's](#) and other firms the cheapest possible meat, milk and eggs. In addition, tens of millions of animals in America die each year from experiments performed on them. They die so that companies can test drugs, shampoo, and other consumer products.

- In [Bangladesh](#), a woman works in a clothing factory for an American corporation, making pennies an hour, barely able to feed her family. Where she works used to be called Bengal, which was perhaps the richest region on earth when the British conquered it (which was why they set about conquering it). Under the banner of the British East India Company the British raped Bengal, just as the colonial masters raped the inhabitants of every colony they established. Today, Bangladesh is one of earth's most miserable places, a direct result of centuries of British exploitation.
- Today in Chile, an American logging firm is clear-cutting the timber there, and the logs are being shipped to a mill in Oregon for processing. America no longer chops down its forests with its former abandon, but forests abroad are now being decimated to supply America with wood.
- A Filipino man works as a cabin boy on a luxury cruise ship that sails across the world's seas. He and his ancestors have lived under the white man's brutal rule for nearly five hundred years. The Spanish first colonized the Philippines, then the [United States stole the islands in the Spanish-American War](#), for the U.S.' first colony near Asia. Filipinos originally fought alongside the United States against their hated Spanish oppressors, but after the revolution ended it became obvious that the Americans had merely supplanted the Spanish as the new imperial overlords. The Filipinos revolted, and the U.S. killed about 200,000 Filipinos to keep their new colony in shackles. It was not until World War II that the Japanese overthrew the U.S. overlords, but the Japanese were just as bad as the Americans and probably worse. After World War II, the Americans reinstalled themselves as the imperial overlords and kept the Filipino people in bondage. They set the stage for the fascist system that has existed there. One side effect is [women ending up being prostitutes for American soldiers](#), and men end up working as cabin boys on cruise ships, rarely seeing their families but sending money back home so their children can eat. It is a miserable life, but Americans and other Westerners get cheap luxury cruises and sex.
- There are more than two million [Americans living behind bars today](#). Most of them are not in there for what a rational person would call a crime, but for "crimes" related to drug use. They are almost exclusively America's poor, and doing drugs was an attempt to escape, however briefly, the pain of their miserable lives. Ironically the [CIA is probably the world's biggest drug runner](#), so it not only [helps kill millions of foreign people](#), while making millions more miserable, but it pays for their oppression by selling drugs to America's poor. The prison industry is booming in America, and instead of shipping American jobs abroad, some American companies are closing down factories in the free sector and rebuilding them in prisons, where the labor is cheap and in the strongest sense, captive. Microsoft, run by some of the world's richest men, has used that prison labor to keep its labor costs down, as have many other American firms. This dynamic has created a powerful incentive to keep building prisons (prisons are also becoming privatized) and filling them up with prisoners (disproportionably people of color), ushering in a new era of slave labor.
- A few miles from where Bill Gates and Paul Allen live (with an aggregate net worth of many billions of dollars), thousands of people are homeless and sleep on the streets each night. Allen even bought an election in 1997 and ran an ad campaign to convince the public to pay hundreds of millions of dollars for a stadium they did not need, so Allen could rake in more money. Where the stadium was built, homeless people slept, so they had to find new alleys to sleep in (there are some silver linings in this litany, one of which was Bill Gates donating \$40 million to help homeless women and children in July 2000, although charity is a poor substitute for justice).
- A black man in Michigan today works the fry machine and cash register at [McDonald's](#), making about eight dollars an hour. He used to work at an auto company, making nearly twenty dollars an

hour. His job was eliminated when it was shipped to Mexico, where the auto company only has to pay two dollars an hour and does not have to adhere to American safety and environmental laws.

- A Native American man lives on the Sioux reservation on [Pine Ridge](#) in the nation's poorest county. [Deceptive and dishonest treaties](#) forced on his ancestors by the Americans stole their lands, and many Native Americans were [slaughtered outright](#). To this day, the reservation natives live dire lives, with a life expectancy nearly thirty years less than the average American's. The injustices continue, and the policies against the natives are [subtler than they used to be](#), but are still exploitative.
- In the Pacific Northwest lives a man who lost his wife to cancer. In the early 1990s, she was diagnosed with advanced ovarian cancer and was given little chance of survival. The couple heard about a clinic in Mexico that cured people of cancer like hers. [She went there and the treatment miraculously reversed her cancer](#). During her treatment, armed bounty hunters for the U.S. Justice Department kidnapped the man treating the woman's cancer, at gunpoint. They delivered him to the United States, where the man spent years behind bars for the crime of curing cancer. The man worked in Mexico precisely to stay out of an American prison, and kidnapping him was a gross violation of international law, but that is how [American "justice" works](#). The woman grappled with the bounty hunters as they kidnapped the man, and without his treatment, she died. Her story is common in America, where [all the cancer treatments that work have been outlawed](#), and the ones that do not work (and even kill off the patients) are the only legal "treatments," and make big money for the medical establishment. A half million Americans die needlessly every year from cancer, while the medical establishment rakes in the money. A similar situation exists with [artery diseases](#), which kills a million Americans a year.

That is a sampling of our system's losers. For the few winners in such a system, life is good, as they enjoy cheap oil, land, bananas, software, running shoes, luxury cruises, tin, sex, wood, cars, hamburgers and the like. Most of the system's participants are losers, however, and not all that willing. The situations listed above are only a sampling of the immense cost that humanity and the planet is paying in order for those white, educated Americans to live the good life. The United States is the [world's stingiest industrialized nation](#).

This site discusses [things that can be done, today](#), to completely eliminate not only the situations listed above, but create heaven on earth, [step-by-step](#).

Some problems are easily remedied. Some will take longer to fix, but all can be readily resolved. Edmund Burke's famous quote comes to mind:

"The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing."

It has been said in different ways over the centuries, but it is quite true.

True spirituality (one's relationship with one's maker) has little to do with religion, and religion has often been [spirituality's greatest enemy](#). For people with love in their hearts, and who act on it with minds engaged, they need not study any teachings or join any religion or have the "right" beliefs. They will never advocate violence, will be willing to see the deeper truth of matters, and will play an important role in the upcoming healing of humanity and earth. According to [Neale Donald Walsch's](#) god, humanity is a primitive species that regards regression as progress (such as destroying the planet). In [societies of highly evolved beings](#), there are no lawyers, accountants, soldiers, policemen, surgeons, etc. There are three basic principles that they orient themselves around:

1. We are all one
2. There is enough for everybody
3. There is nothing that we have to do[\[2\]](#)

Humanity and the planet will not be healed by using ideologies based on greed and fear (such as [capitalism](#), or *any* ideology dogmatically adhered to), through theft (such as [starving out nations so we can steal their oil](#)), through exploitation (such as wage slavery and [neocolonialism](#)), through coercion (such as [prisons](#) and punitive laws), or through violence (police, armies, etc.). Love is the essential ingredient. With it comes truth and joy.

There are those who believe that the head needs to wake up first, and the heart will follow. Some are head people, and some are heart people, and I think the head, heart and enlightenment issue is like the chicken and egg conundrum. While I respect trying to get at the heart through the head, I have also seen many stuck in their heads, unable to connect with their hearts. Those with whole hearts have a kind of wisdom, and can see things that others cannot. Jesus was perhaps the wisest person to ever walk the earth, and [it was his heart](#), not his head, that led to his attainment. Nobody with a whole heart [goes to "hell,"](#) but many ingenious people, whose hearts are dead, do. If people want to try waking up their minds first, and then their hearts, they are welcome to try.

The thesis and information on this site just might be wrong. Noam Chomsky said that in order to truly *learn*, we must do the work. Nobody is going to open our skulls and pour in knowledge and truth. When somebody says that they will, what is delivered is often the opposite. It is up to each of us to find our own truths.

We are all in this together, and we can make great progress in healing humanity and the planet, *if we care to*.

Blinded by the Paradigm

This site is iconoclastic, and challenges the system and the beliefs of Americans in particular. The same dynamics seemingly play out in all intellectual disciplines, whether it is [science](#), religion, politics, economics, philosophy, etc. They all fall prey to dogmatism. The dogmas appear related. Holding rigidly to a point of view, no matter what evidence flies in one's face to contradict or temper it, is dogmatic. Dogma is [based on denial](#), which is rooted in fear. It can be called blind faith, or a faith that blinds, but it short-circuits the thinking process.

In religion, the set of beliefs adhered to can be called a faith. In science, it can be seen as a set of beliefs (theories) called a paradigm. In politics and other disciplines, it can be called a worldview. What it amounts to is how people view "reality." Do we each have our own reality? Do we co-create it? How much does mine have to do with yours? Those are timeless questions. Below are presented several examples of "paradigmatic thinking." Paradigms always seem to be built from the bottom up. Children are inculcated into the prevailing paradigms of the society they grow up in.

Scientific Paradigms

The modern meaning of the term [paradigm](#) was coined by Thomas Kuhn in *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*. A bedrock presumption of the scientific worldview is that of objectivity. There is a world out there, as related to our senses, and we can "objectively" observe what it is. Some of the greatest physicists of all time [have challenged that notion](#). Is there *really* anything out there, and if there is, is there an *objective* perspective of it? Science has no answers to that question, but operates from that *presumption*. That presumption can be right or wrong, but if I do not share that presumption, the direction that science pursues may well be meaningless to me. That does not mean that I am right, but I can hardly have a meaningful dialogue with a system of thought in which we differ on our most basic premises. Lines of thought follow from their presumptions.

The most influential work of physics ever written was Isaac Newton's *Principia*. In the beginning it makes three *presumptions*. Two of those are the notion of time and space being absolute. For more than two hundred years, Newton's *Principia* was the guiding light of physics. In the 1880s two scientists, Michelson and Morley, performed the most delicate experiment in history to that point and determined, much to their surprise, that the speed of light did not vary, no matter the velocity of the light's source. A generation later, Albert Einstein theorized that time and space were not absolute, but relative. It appears that Einstein was right. His theories led to today's physics, with black holes, lasers, atomic bombs and a new paradigm from which to view the universe. Its foundation was built on challenging the presumptions of the previous paradigm, and challenging the presumptions is how paradigms and belief systems are changed.

People have tried minimizing the paradigm shattering that Einstein did by saying that Newton's work was good enough, until our instruments were able to prove his presumptions wrong. Wrong is wrong. Ptolemy's theory that the earth was the center of universe also worked for its time, until it was eventually proven wrong by scientific observation that led to new theories. Although Ptolemy's astronomy "worked" for the day, it did not make it right. Nearly identically, Newton's derivation of accurate calculation systems regarding the effect of gravity did not make his presumptions about time and space right. In addition, Newton did not even say what he thought gravity was, but merely described its effect, an effect that

relativity modified. Einstein will eventually be proven wrong, and Einstein expected it. If Einstein had a professional descendent, it may have been David Bohm, and Bohm's theory of the implicate and explicate order makes the seemingly dualistic nature of light - appearing as a particle and times and a wave at others - partly an interaction with the observers' point of view. That can be seen as a direct challenge to objectivity, as well as bringing human consciousness into physics.

Einstein said that every theory is eventually killed by a fact. That did not make Newton any less of a towering scientific figure, but his presumptions were eventually shown to be incorrect, which radically altered today's physics.

[James Watt](#) invented the steam engine that powered the Industrial Revolution. A couple of generations later, [Sadi Carnot](#) created a theoretical framework for technology that already existed. Victor Fischer challenged the foundation of thermodynamics, stating that [Carnot presumed an ideal gas](#) as the working fluid in his ideal engine. He then *extrapolated* from his logic with gas engines to all working fluids. Wilhelm Reich and Eugene Mallove adduced experimental data that [directly challenged the Second Law of Thermodynamics](#). Fischer and others maintain that Carnot's presumptions and extrapolation were his crucial errors. Fischer maintains that beginning with the steam engine and extrapolating that logic to all engines marched thermodynamics off in the wrong direction, a misdirection from which it has not yet recovered. Because of that faulty presumption (at least in the eyes of Fischer and others whose scientific opinion I respect) regarding heat engines, the notion of liquid heat engines has been ignored ever since. Fischer and others like him explain that thermodynamics textbooks are gloriously wrong as they teach students about thermodynamics, building on Carnot's presumptive foundation. The first prototype of Fischer's engine came closer to Carnot's ideal efficiency than any other heat engine ever had before. Among others, [Tom Bearden](#) is challenging the theories of electricity at their root, once again questioning the *presumptions*.

In the realm of microbiology, the same phenomenon can be seen. [Antoine Béchamp](#) was one of the nineteenth century's great scientific minds, and disproved the notion of the spontaneous generation of life at the microscopic level with one of his Beacon Experiments in 1857. [Louis Pasteur](#) was an opportunistic chemist who quite possibly plagiarized Béchamp's work. Many years after he seemingly stole credit for Béchamp's work, he still did not understand the process of fermentation or why the spontaneous generation theory of life was inaccurate. Pasteur may have marched microbiology off in the wrong direction more than one hundred years ago.

Today's [microbiology textbooks](#) present expedient fairy tales regarding Pasteur's disproof of spontaneous generation theory. At best, the fairy tales are misleading, and at worst, it leads students gravely astray in their first day of class, a misdirection they never recover from.

[Royal Rife](#), [Gaston Naessens](#) and others have shown that pleomorphic theory is more persuasive in describing disease dynamics than Pasteur's germ theory. The findings of the revolutionary microscopes of Rife and Naessens not only support Béchamp's pleomorphic theories, but also overturn today's optical theories, which is also part of Newton's legacy. Einstein proposed radical ideas of space, time and gravity, and the microscopes of Rife and Naessens produced radical *data* about optics, enabling them to see life processes never seen before. It does not mean that Newton's work was worthless, but it was something that others improved on, which should be standard scientific practice.

Unlike the relatively gracious reception that Einstein's theories received, the work of Rife and Naessens, the proof of which was evident by looking through the lens of their microscopes, was met with jailing and other vile behavior by the scientific and medical establishments. Why? In a pattern that repeats throughout this web site, it appears to be because their work led to cancer cures that were harmless, cheap and effective, and [threatened the cancer racket](#). Today's paradigm of "attack the tumor" is thorough insanity, but it guides orthodox cancer therapy and research today, and Pasteur's seeming plagiarism of Béchamp helped create the paradigm that serves up an attack-the-tumor philosophy. This site's medical essay presents [more than twenty examples](#) of how cancer cure pioneers were wiped out in the West, mainly in the United States. The treatments were mainly harmless, cheap and effective. Most medical professionals, especially in the realm of cancer research and treatment, appear to have been blinded by their paradigm.

Science goes far beyond optics and microbiology. A math wizard I know told me that today's geometry is merely one of an infinite number of "valid" math systems, and with different *presumptions* (such as Einstein's presumption that parallel lines meet at infinity), each is "valid."

Today the respected astronomer Halton Arp is questioning one of the foundations of astronomy and cosmology: the universe is expanding from a primordial "Big Bang." The universe may not be expanding at all. Naturally, his work is marginalized, although he has not gone to jail. Theorizing whether the universe is expanding or not generally will not land people in jail, because no economic empires are built on it...yet. Einstein enjoyed that grace. The work of [Nikola Tesla](#), however, had a more practical impact on the lives of average people, so he has been severely marginalized by history, although he invented the electricity that powers our homes today, and was pursuing free energy before the robber baron J.P. Morgan pulled the rug out from under him nearly a century ago.

Those are issues in the "hard" sciences. The disciplines of optics, thermodynamics, astronomy, microbiology, mathematics, etc., are all subject to radical revision. Supposedly, those are no-nonsense studies, but their very foundations are being seriously questioned today. What do we *know*? There has probably been a major [cover-up of extraterrestrial life](#) by those who think they run the world. I sought and [watched a UFO myself in 2005](#). People I know and trust have received [secretive free energy and anti-gravity demonstrations](#), whose revelations would wipe out many "laws" of physics today as well as radically transform the world economy. Numerous areas of "hard science" are apparently faulty in their theories and data, often because vested political and economic interests actively thwart any progress. The paradigms are shaky at best.

Try engaging a scientist on these issues and [watch what happens](#). Only scientists as internally secure as Einstein can gleefully admit that we barely know anything, or that they were taught lies (or "expedient rubbish"). I have interacted with scientific giants, and they have all acknowledged that we barely know anything. That is regarding "hard science." It becomes more problematic regarding the "softer" issues such as history, the media, politics, religion, economics, etc.

Other Paradigms

As a child in California, [Christopher Columbus](#), [George Washington](#), [Junípero Serra](#), [Thomas Jefferson](#),

[George Custer](#) and others were held up to me as American heroes. My adult investigations have not supported any of those notions.

The lies that American schoolchildren have been taught for centuries about Columbus and his heroic feat is the *very beginning* of their American history studies. In his important *Lies my Teacher Told Me*, James Loewen clearly demonstrated how vapid American high school history textbooks are. Loewen observed that high school children hate learning American history, partly because they know on some level that they are being sold a lie. Loewen devotes a chapter of *Lies my Teacher Told Me* to the Columbus Myth that children are taught. Virtually no facts about [Columbus](#) and his voyages as taught to American schoolchildren are undebatably true, except that he sailed in 1492 on the Santa Maria.

Loewen, a college history professor himself, made the case that college history, on the other hand, is partly about disabusing those students of the fairy tales they were raised with. I still have the history book I studied during my first year in college.^[3] Just as high school history books do, the text began American history with the voyage of Columbus.

After half a page of dubious information on the natives who lived here for most of what we call history, and [many thousands of years before that](#), the authors quickly go across the Atlantic Ocean and describe the European dynamics that led to the voyage of Columbus. They briefly sketched Columbus' career as "discoverer" and concluded that he "deserved the fame that ultimately came to him."^[4] The big news of Columbus' career was initiating the world's first and [only complete extermination of millions of people](#), the Taino of the Caribbean. Regarding that truly historic event there is barely any mention, and it is only mentioned after the section regarding Columbus is concluded. The text states,

"The first experiments with forced labor, as in the island of Hispaniola, resulted in the near extermination of the natives, but Indians continued to work in the mines or on the ranches of the mainland for centuries...The whites exploited the colored peoples, yet the Spanish conquerors were not particularly cruel and predatory, no more so than the later English colonists. The millions of Indians who died in Spanish America were mostly victims of the white man's diseases."^[5]

My college textbook was not exactly an exercise in iconoclasm. I am not the only student who finished college thinking that Columbus was a hero. [Howard Zinn](#), with a Ph.D. in history, earned at *Columbia*, [never found out any differently about Columbus](#), until he began researching his *A People's History of the United States*.

There it is again; the paradigm's foundation is formed with the subject's introduction, and the disinformation deludes students from that moment forward. As Loewen stated, the purpose of the [lies in history textbooks](#) is partly to inculcate a sense of nationalism in American children, to lead them to believe their nation is a great one, forever unstained, marching off to endless feats of "progress." It is a story of state as hero. As Loewen demonstrated, the more "educated" Americans were, the more they supported the [rape of Vietnam](#). In 1971, 80% of those with a grade school education were against the war, 75% of

those with high school education, and only 60% of those with a college education.[\[6\]](#)

In 1925, the American Legion listed the ideal American history textbook's features:

"must inspire the children with patriotism

"must be careful to tell the truth optimistically

"must dwell on failure only for its value as a moral lesson, must speak chiefly of success..."[\[7\]](#)

To this day, that largely remains the philosophy of American history textbook publishers. The "dumbing us down" thesis of [John Taylor Gatto](#) is elucidated by William Griffin and John Marciano, who wrote:

"Textbooks offer an obvious means of realizing hegemony in education. By hegemony we refer specifically to the influence that dominant classes or groups exercise by virtue of their control of the ideological institutions, such as schools, that shape perception on such vital issues as the Vietnam War... Within history texts, for example, the omission of crucial facts and viewpoints limits profoundly the ways in which students come to view history events. Further, through their one-dimensionality textbooks shield students from intellectual encounters with their world that would sharpen their critical abilities."[\[8\]](#)

"There is no other country in the world where there is such a large gap between the sophisticated understanding of some professional historians and the basic education given by teachers." - Marc Ferro[\[9\]](#)

I was raised in Ventura, California, a mission town founded by [Junípero Serra](#). The grade school I attended, down the street from where I grew up, was named after Serra. I was taught three years of California history, and as with Columbus and American history, Serra is the first significant figure of California history (if the pirate [Drake](#), who briefly visited it, is not counted), while the many thousands of years of native habitation merit a brief footnote.

As with the Columbus Myth, I looked into the Serra Myth. Serra is up for [sainthood](#) today. It turns out that Junípero Serra was a fanatical and masochistic priest who initiated the [genocide](#) of California's natives, another fact that escaped the history I was taught. What was the difference between Serra, Columbus and Hitler? In the end, not a great deal besides the level of technology available to them. Hitler was not so much an aberration as the logical conclusion of the Western mentality.

Similarly, [George Washington](#) was America's richest man when he became president, building his fortune on his inheritance, marrying well, owning slaves to plant and harvest his tobacco (on stolen native land), and he was the [primary architect](#) of the strategy of forcing the natives to sign treaties that the new nation would never honor. Nearly every subsequent American politician [faithfully continued that strategy](#), until there was [no more land left to steal](#). "Heroes" such as [Custer](#) and [Jefferson](#) fared similarly under scrutiny, as well as [Andrew Jackson](#), Kit Carson and Wyatt Earp.

That kind of "teaching" creates a paradigm that guides thinking. In the case of the history I was taught, the paradigm was that my ancestors were great and noble heroes, "civilizing" the Western Hemisphere. Why? Apparently, so I will believe I live in a great nation, forever progressing to new vistas of wonder, leading the world to the light. It worked for a while. The paradigm blinded me to reality and put me in a fantasy world. Why? Apparently, it was to control me. With my brain carefully washed, I would gladly march off to distant lands to annihilate the natives, to "defend" my great nation, or [cheer as others do so](#). I would believe in the insanity of attacking the tumor as a way of "curing" cancer. That [cancer paradigm](#) has created an awesome amount of suffering and death, while "coincidentally" lining the pockets of the drug companies, doctors and others in the medical business. The nationalism paradigm has created even more suffering and death, but [generally for people of other nations](#), those we have attacked with the world's biggest killing machine, while "coincidentally" lining the pockets of military contractors and others.

In religion the same paradigm manufacturing can be seen, also at square one. The book of Genesis, in its first section, states:

“Then God said, ‘Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the air, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth.’ So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. And God blessed them, and God said to them, ‘Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.’”[\[10\]](#)

If Genesis is to be believed, God put humans in charge of earth. Westerners generally feel they have the right to treat animals and other "lesser" creatures however they wish, which has led to the [evils of factory farming](#) and the animal experiments of today. That is also why the [English saw Native Americans as subhuman](#). Europeans could be in charge of the natives, treating them however we saw fit, annihilating them when they got in the way. Although that first creation myth said nothing about the inferiority of women, a later passage in Genesis, during the Garden of Eden tale, has God making the first woman from Adam's rib. Then Eve ruined the paradise deal with the serpent and forbidden fruit, with Adam blaming Eve for his sin, which has justified [the treatment of women as inferior creatures](#), a paradigm that continues to the present day. Women did not get the right to vote in the United States, that revered democratic nation, until less than one hundred years ago. Slaves and [Jews](#) got the right to vote in America before women did. For a man, the paradigm as initiated by Genesis might sound like a good deal. For women and animals (or "inferior" races), the deal was not so benevolent.

In economics, a paradigm built on presumptions and myths prevails. The dogma of free markets dominates [capitalistic theory](#). There is no such thing as a free market or free trade. Free markets are as plentiful as unicorns. With capitalism, the game is giving consumers the right to buy whatever they want, but their menu must be limited to one or two items. Americans can choose any cancer treatment they want, [as long as it is surgery, radiation or chemotherapy](#). Americans can get their [energy](#) any way they want, as long as they pay the electric or oil companies for it. Americans can pay for their goods any way they want, as [long as it is in U.S. dollars](#). Americans can get around any way they want, as [long as it is by car](#). In practice, alternatives can be chosen through great effort and privation, such as going to Mexico for cancer treatment, if the U.S. medical gangsters do not burn down the Mexican clinic or [kidnap its director](#). Generally, it is far too much trouble, if Americans are even aware of the alternatives, so they [shuffle along with the herd](#).

In orthodox economic theory, there is the law of supply and demand, called a law, as if it were gravity. The law of supply and demand is founded upon a *presumption* of [human greed](#). There exist other societies where greed is not the "law." Donald Walsch's god said to him, when discussing the highly evolved societies around the universe (humanity's does not qualify today):

"In those cultures it would not be possible to fail to share. Nor would it be possible to think of 'charging' increasingly exorbitant 'prices' the more rare a necessity became. Only extremely primitive societies would do this. Only very primitive beings would see scarcity of that which is commonly needed as an opportunity for greater profits. 'Supply and demand' does not drive the HEB (Highly Evolved Being) system. That is part of a system that humans claim contributes to their quality of life and to the common good. Yet, from the vantage point of a highly evolved being, your system *violates* the common good, for it does not allow that which is good to be experienced *in common*.[\[11\]](#)

Greed was nearly an unknown vice in the "primitive" civilizations of the New World and Africa (the Aztecs being a rare exception), [before the white man came along](#).

Again, a paradigm is built on a *presumption*, and a primitive one at that. How does one enforce the paradigm? By attacking and marginalizing anybody not subscribing to it. Hence, the U.S. war against "communism" and its anti-capitalistic heresies of sharing. Ironically, Christians were the West's first communists, going back to its earliest days. The paradigm enforcers [harass, jail and murder doctors](#) who cure cancer patients without attacking the tumor. They throw free energy revolutionaries such as [Dennis Lee](#) into prison on fabricated charges. They write [Béchamp](#) and [Tesla](#) out of the history books. [Halton Arp](#) and [Noam Chomsky](#) are unheard of by most Americans, but [Carl Sagan](#) and Rush Limbaugh are household words. The paradigm creators/enforcers parade Columbus, Serra, Washington, Jefferson, Custer and the rest of that rogues' gallery as heroes that children are supposed to look up to.

In the world of politics, similar enforcement mechanisms are in place to keep the paradigm from being challenged. Much of it is "innocent" in that once people get the paradigm drilled into their heads, they are incapable of seeing beyond it. [Ralph McGehee](#) discovered the hard way what his employer, the CIA, was

really up to.

Ralph had to [run the gauntlet](#) in order to tell the American people what the CIA really did, and suffered greatly to live by his conscience. The CIA has nothing to do with defending freedom, and never did. The [CIA has always been about keeping the subject nations enslaved to capitalism](#), which is largely [colonialism](#) with [new rhetoric](#). Ralph wrote about how the CIA policymakers "culled" the data so it would conform to the prevailing ideology. Thus, most Americans and nearly everybody at the CIA did not realize that what happened in Vietnam and the whole Cold War were generally the U.S.' efforts to [keep the people of the post-colonial world enslaved to the West](#). The realization that the "communist menace" was only the attempt of the populations in Vietnam, Guatemala, Chile, Indonesia, etc., to free themselves from the white man's domination was fleetingly acknowledged by barely anybody in America, and America's mainstream media and its pundits have [never admitted it](#). In 2000, Ralph wrote,

"As I discovered in my 'Vietnam days' policy dictated intelligence with William Colby and others ensuring that no information challenging our policy saw the light of day. However, the rejection of reality started from the very first days from just after WWII and prior to the creation of the CIA.

"Later even Sam Adams, the number one analyst/protestor on Vietnam, had little knowledge about the Communists "People's War," written about ad nauseum by Vo Nguyen Giap, Ho Chi Minh and even Mao Tse-Tung.

"Agency analysts do not use open source data/datum - and herewith lies one major cause of its egregiously terrible intelligence. Another is the multi-leveled bureaucratic structure of the CIA that authorizes politicized bureaucrats at all levels to hack away at raw intelligence until it supports policy.

"In my last few years in the CIA as a skeptic I saw that distorting intelligence to support policy was a universal truism. This can be deduced particularly from Mel Goodwin's experience regarding CIA intelligence on the Soviet Union. William Casey was a total practitioner of this phenomenon.

"...For a successful career in the CIA one must accept that the Emperor wears gorgeous robes - stating the obvious kills the messenger."

Of the major ex-CIA authors who are critical of the Agency, four men make up nearly all of them: McGehee, Phil Agee, John Stockwell and Victor Marchetti. They all either endured huge legal battles to publish what they did, or endured many illegal intimidations. Agee essentially lost his citizenship for publishing *Inside the Company*, and lived under political asylum in Germany, after being hounded across Europe. The CIA tried cloak-and-dagger strategies to prevent him from publishing his book, bugging his typewriter to find his Paris hideout while he wrote his memoirs and trying to lure him to Spain to possibly murder him. Marchetti and McGehee engaged in huge legal battles with the CIA, as they tried publishing their books "legally." Stockwell was like Agee in that he did not let the CIA censor his book before publication, and had a running legal battle with them after he published his *In Search of Enemies*. Other ex-CIA authors write under pseudonyms to avoid those fates. Wiping out the messenger is how the false

paradigm can be sustained.

In their masterful [Manufacturing Consent](#), Edward Herman and Noam Chomsky clearly demonstrate the complete subservience of the media to government/corporate policy during the Vietnam days, during the bludgeoning of Central America in the 1980s and so on. The true motivation of our aggression in Southeast Asia was never hinted at. The media completely inverted reality, so the people we invaded and murdered by the millions were the aggressors, while our invading army was doing all the suffering. It would be as if the Nazi invasion of Poland were depicted as a Polish aggression against Germany. That [inversion of reality over Vietnam](#) lasts to this day in the U.S. [mainstream media](#). [Orwell](#) would have been impressed.

What *Manufacturing Consent* and other works clearly demonstrate is a total adherence to a paradigm (e. g., we are the good guys) that no amount of contradictory data is ever able to shake, no matter how bald and undeniable. No matter how many obvious lies America's politicians told, no matter how many dishonorable actions by its diplomats, the corporate media could be counted on to put the best possible spin on it, somehow transforming genocide into a noble affair. Somehow, the [United States killed several million people](#) and destroyed the lives of many millions more in Southeast Asia, but our motives were pure, through and through. The media as propagandists reached new heights during the [invasion and occupation of Iraq](#).

The American people themselves do not buy the Vietnam propaganda (most saw the war as immoral on America's part), but the media and other establishment mouthpieces have never admitted it, and it looks like they never will. They repeat the dogma that America's motivation was pure, but the strategy unfortunate or "unwinnable." Although most Americans believe our motivation regarding Vietnam was tainted and immoral, that notion has *never* entered the pages of the mainstream media. As astute scholars have stated, [the notion is simply "unthinkable" by mainstream media personnel](#).

It appears that the United States will never apologize to [Vietnam](#), Laos, Cambodia, [Iraq](#), Cuba, [El Salvador](#), [Indonesia](#), [Chile](#), the citizens of [Hiroshima](#) and [Nagasaki](#), the [Philippines](#), etc., etc. Being the world's most powerful nation, with the world's largest killing machine, means never having to say you are sorry.

[Fluoride](#) was magically transformed from a deadly industrial waste into a tooth's best friend. Most fluoridation pioneers had conflicts of interest or directly worked for fluoride polluters, as [Harold Hodge](#) did, although the nature of his employment by the fluoride-polluting military was kept secret. Industry-employed scientists fabricated and distorted data to make an industrial waste appear a safe cavity preventive, although there is no credible evidence that supports that notion, and all evidence shows that fluoride is a deadly poison that actually *destroys the teeth* and damages brains, among other health disasters.

The system can be sophisticated and subtle. It is not always easy to see through the many layers of deception. The reason all those false paradigms are held in place is because they provide comforting fictions for many people, and great wealth and power for a select few. If, like Nazi Germany and probably every other nation, Americans can see themselves as forever noble, virtuous and heroic, as a *presumption*, they can inflict their violence at will on anybody else with a clear conscience. In that regard, the [American history brainwashing](#), the [CIA's lies](#), the [media inversions of reality](#) and so on form an

interlock of self-interest. For those at the top of that food chain, life is "good." In addition, Americans get cheap bananas, oil, tin and other imports due to America's enforcement of the [international neocolonial order](#). White, educated American men are history's most privileged demographic group, and eagerly believe the lies because it justifies their privileged position. Virtually without exception, they are the people [who most take my work to task](#). As the [Ralph McGehees](#), [Rodney Stiches](#) and [Dennis Lees](#) of the world have discovered at great personal cost, the enforcers of those murderous paradigms do not deal gently with their heretics, and for the nearly 99% of humanity who are the losers in such a system, life is not pretty.

Although those at the food chain's apex think life is great, they are also sacrificed on the altar of power and profit, [dying agonizing deaths from cancer](#) and drinking fluoridated water, which helps give them cancer and [impairs their intelligence](#). Under the prevailing paradigm, [everybody is ultimately a loser](#). If today's [genetic engineering wizardry](#), in which there is a capitalistic rush to own life itself, ends up unleashing something like [Stephen King's Captain Trips](#) onto humanity, annihilating nearly all of us ([Walsch's](#) god says that humanity is facing *exactly* that, as do others), it will be a monument to the dangers of allegiance to a paradigm that elevates power and greed, while denigrating truth and love.

Not all paradigms blind their adherents. The problem is adhering rigidly to *any* paradigm and suspending our mental and emotional faculties. Many paradigms can illuminate, but in a world where power and greed rule, the [healthy paradigms are still waiting to be adopted](#). It is not yet too late, if enough people begin waking up *and caring*.

Forgetting the Basics, and Turning Vices into Virtues

Intimately related to the issue of founding paradigms on false assumptions is a phenomenon where people conveniently forget the lessons taught them as small children, thinking they have become too grown-up and smart for that. People often recall the self-serving assumptions, while forgetting the other-serving admonitions. That part of growing up is not exactly a triumph. One of the greatest American spiritual masterpieces to make it into mainstream awareness in my lifetime is Robert Fulghum's *All I Really Need to Know I Learned in Kindergarten*. For literate Americans, it has been virtually impossible to avoid seeing the list he developed. Fulghum made the case that all the truly important things worth knowing were taught to us by age five. The first seven items on his list were about being a "good citizen" and being considerate when interacting with others. I will present his first seven rules, and how the West, and the United States in particular, has learned those lessons.

Share. [Europe's conquest of the world](#) is history's greatest act of genocide and theft. Its effects over the centuries have resulted in the situation where the earth's richest one thousand people have more wealth than the poorest three billion, for a wealth ratio of millions-to-one. The U.S.-inflicted genocide in Iraq today has everything to do with controlling the Middle East's oil supplies, and the current "[War on Terror](#)" is more of the same. The United States has been [stealing Iraq's oil](#), while [millions of Iraqi citizens die](#). Today, the United States has only five percent of the world's population, but consumes a quarter of its energy, and the West consumes the vast majority of the world's resources, while the people in the subject nations live lives of dire poverty and oppression. Because of [neocolonial](#) institutions such as the [World](#)

Bank and International Monetary fund, nearly all the world's poorest nations export food to the United States, as they earn "foreign exchange" to pay off "loans" that those nations' people never received any benefit from. It is merely a new form of slavery. In the United States, the richest 1% owns more than the poorest 95%, and in 2000, the world's richest man, Bill Gates, had more wealth than the poorest 100 million Americans combined. These situations are not laws of nature, but due to [several hundred years of exploitation](#) of the world by white people, with the current incarnation of the rapacious system called "[global capitalism](#)."

Play Fair. The West has never come close to playing fair with those it exploited and murdered. From the very beginning of the world's conquest, Spanish legal tactics were used as a form of fraud [to steal land from the natives](#), as well as enslaving them. Priests, soldiers and lawyers formed the vanguard of the enslavement of Mesoamerica's natives. The natives of the Caribbean were [completely exterminated](#) during the early days of conquest, so today's Mexico is the first place that the Spanish truly "colonized" (if their rape of the [Canary Islands](#) is not counted). That colonization was anything but fair. When the other colonial powers got into the game, [the same patterns were repeated](#). [Christopher Columbus](#) and [George Washington](#) were anything but heroes, yet they have national holidays in their name. Washington first proposed the strategy of stealing native land by [forcing treaties on the Native American tribes that the United States would never honor](#), a strategy that was immediately adopted by the Continental Congress, and of more than 370 treaties forced on the native American tribes by the United States government, historians cannot find even one that the United States honored. That legalistic fraud is not merely something in America's history that has been covered up. In today's international arena, the United States is [the world's most lawless nation](#). As Noam Chomsky says, the United States' disregard for the restraints of international law is the worst the world has seen since the days of Nazi Germany.^[12] The [blatant vote fraud](#) (and subsequent Supreme Court fraud) that took place in Florida during the 2000 U.S. presidential election is one more example of how America "plays fair." During the 1990s the United States began [kidnapping people from Mexico](#) to bring them to America for "justice." Although it was a violation of international law that not even Hitler could get away with, the Supreme Court chief justice, the noted racist William Renquist, ruled that kidnapping people from Mexico was OK because the extradition treaty with Mexico did not explicitly say "no kidnapping allowed."^[13] I had [brutal experience regarding how our legal system plays fair](#) when I tried to help bring alternative energy to the marketplace.

Don't Hit. Internationally, the United States is history's most violent nation. Nobody comes close. The [genocide of Native Americans](#) during the nineteenth century was a mere warm-up to the violence that the United States has inflicted on humanity during the past fifty years. Usually, the United States merely finances and arms its pawns, as with [Indonesia](#), [Iran](#), [Afghanistan](#), the [Central American](#) banana republics and elsewhere. That record would be bad enough, and by itself is one of history's bloodiest records.^[14] Using its armed forces, the United States has also [killed several million people directly](#) during the past fifty years, in [Southeast Asia](#), Korea, [Iraq](#), [Panama](#) and elsewhere. More people have died as a direct result of the United States' efforts in Southeast Asia and Iraq than died in Hitler's death camps, but somehow, America is the good guy, defending the high principles of freedom. Rhetoric and reality regarding that situation are on nearly opposite ends of the spectrum, and the most fervent [believers of the propaganda are educated Americans](#).

Put Things Back Where You Found Them. This rule is related to not taking things that belong to others and cleaning up after ourselves. It relates directly to the "play fair" observations above and the "clean up

your mess” rule, dealt with below.

Clean up Your Mess. The United States is the world leader in creating environmental devastation. From fossil-fuel emissions to the environmental devastation of its subject nations, the United States (and the West in general) has created the greatest environmental devastation the world has known. As the environmental movement in the United States gained momentum during my lifetime, environmentally-disastrous activities such as mining, oil exploration and pumping, [deforestation](#) and the like have been exported to subject nations. America has also dumped its toxic waste onto subject nations. In America, waste has always been dumped in the poorest areas, including the land the remnants of Native American tribes live on. For a clear illustration of that principle in practice, a memorandum from the World’s Bank’s chief economist was leaked to the public during the early 1990s. In his memo, the chief economist, [Lawrence Summers](#), encouraged the bank to promote the migration of the “dirty industries” to the less developed nations. What kind of public disgrace and career scuttling did Summers experience when that memo became public? In 1999, Bill Clinton promoted him to be the U.S. Secretary of the Treasury.

Don’t Take Things That Aren’t Yours. All imperial cultures have been master thieves, and the United States is no different. From stealing the native land, using George Washington’s [criminal strategy](#), to stealing Iraq’s oil with the [oil-for-food swindle](#), the United States has always been a kleptocracy, and is now playing the game on a global scale.

Say You Are Sorry When You Hurt Somebody. After [America shot down a passenger plane taking off from Iran](#), killing hundreds of people, U.S. Vice President George Bush said, “I will never apologize for the United States of America. I don’t care what the facts are.”^[15] That is not an aberration, but standard United States foreign policy. Not long ago, lame duck Bill Clinton made a public relations trip to Vietnam. The United States indefensibly [murdered millions of Vietnamese citizens](#) during the 1960s and 1970s, while trying to recolonize the region, even though the Vietnamese people, led by Ho Chi Minh, were instrumental in thwarting Japan’s imperial ambition in the area during World War II, and were considered U.S. allies. While Clinton expressed a willingness to let the past be the past, and to move forward in bettering U.S.-Vietnamese relations, when asked if he would apologize for what the United States did to Vietnam, he declined to do so.

Declassified documents have now proven beyond any reasonable doubt that [dropping nuclear bombs on Japan](#), and especially [Nagasaki](#), had virtually nothing to do with saving American lives, saving Japanese lives, or any of that noble-sounding rhetoric. [Harry Truman proudly justified](#) the atom bombs dropped on Japan long after he had left office, even openly calling it an act of revenge. [Clinton also refused to apologize for the atom bombs](#), as every post-war president has done.

Those Seven Noble Rules. Regarding those seven noble rules, the United States regularly ignores them, usually conjuring impressive-sounding rhetoric to justify its behavior, and most Americans either cheer those actions or quietly acquiesce to them. Why is humanity heading toward that brick wall? Because people reject rules of consideration for others that they were taught as young children, thinking they no longer apply, or lying to themselves that what is so obvious is not really happening. People are either mindless, or [are knowingly doing these things](#). I think it is a little bit of both, which all begins with a hard heart, which is because people are afraid. It [does not have to be this way](#).

Turning Vices Into Virtues. Long before Robert Fulghum walked the earth, the West has been familiar with the seven deadly sins. They are: pride, greed, anger, envy, lust, gluttony and sloth. Americans have enshrined some of those deadly sins as not only benign, but worthy attributes of our societies, even making them the centerpieces of our ideologies. It is exactly the kind of inversion of reality that [George Orwell wrote about](#), where freedom is slavery, war is peace, and ignorance is strength.^[16] When 1984 rolled around, I read discussions of why Orwell's dark vision did not come to pass. It largely has. Here is how Americans have been turning deadly sins into either virtues or valuable attributes of our ideologies, or rendering them benign or invisible.

Pride. Nationalism is all about generating feelings of [national pride](#). Most of what I was taught regarding generating feelings of national pride was a [pack of lies](#). As we inflict endless violence and suffering onto the world's people, we do it with [great national pride](#), which is partly how we are blinded to the true nature of what we support. That dynamic was never more apparent than the [flag-waving aftermath](#) of the World Trade Center attacks of September 2001. Since September 2001 I have regularly sat in traffic behind cars that wear bumper stickers with a picture of the American flag and the words "Proud to be an American" or "The Power of Pride."

Greed. America's capitalist ideology has made greed a centerpiece of its theoretical framework. The so-called law of supply and demand *assumes* greed. The "law" states that people will raise the price of something if it becomes scarce or demand increases, as they seek profits at the expense of others. As Neale Walsch's god remarked in *Conversations with God*, it is a "law" that only applies to "primitive" societies, and the mark of a primitive society is that it regards regression as progress, and inverts reality. In Oliver Stone's *Wall Street*, the corporate raider played by Michael Douglas told an audience that "greed" makes our system work. Stone was being ironic, but I have heard such sentiments coming from the mouths of today's educated Americans. Douglas has even become a hero in Wall Street circles, because of his character's "greed is good" sentiments.^[17] In the minds found on Wall Street, greed is good, as it makes our system work. Instead of wondering about a system that runs on greed, or perhaps greed being something to try to reduce, it is cheered as a beneficial aspect of our system, the very engine that drives it. That same mentality has been adopted in corporate ideology, where [continually-increasing profits is the only reason for a corporation's existence](#). The complementing aspect of capitalistic theory is the "invisible hand of competition." That "invisible hand" is the fear that your competitor will erode your profits or put you out of business. In such theorizing, fear of the competition is what kept people honest. It makes fear a vital component of how our system works. Instead of working to reduce such dynamics in our society, it is worshipped as a centerpiece of our ideology, a vital piece of our system. Wiping out the competition is the [essence of capitalism](#), which I discovered the hard way during [my days with Dennis](#), which even [Smith remarked upon](#) in his work. Capitalistic ideology is based on greed and fear.

Anger. American men, especially older than sixty-five, are emotional cripples, and anger is about the only emotion acceptable for them to openly display. American men are getting a little better in that department, but anger has too often been enshrined as a virtue. For many years, I have read and heard Christians (and even supposedly enlightened mystics) laud Jesus' moment of anger in the temple, whipping the moneychangers out of the temple. What those people always ignored was that his moment of violent anger (the only one we see in the New Testament) led directly to his death, as the high priest Caiaphas, who was getting rich from the temple coffers, led the effort to put Jesus to death, sparked by

his performance in the temple, which impacted the temple's cash flow. Yet, so many people point to what was likely the lowest moment of Jesus' life as his greatest triumph. People have justified bombing [Yugoslavia](#) to me with Jesus' moment of anger. Jesus' temple tantrum more likely showed that even a Christ can have his bad days, while it has been used by Christians countless times to [justify violence](#). Christians are by far the most violent people of all time.

Envy. At this stage in America's journey, it does not envy anybody else much of anything, except perhaps Middle East oil. What it wanted, it took long ago. America is the [king of the global hill](#). The people who run America knew that a long time ago. Before World War II ended, the American government knew it would emerge with unprecedented global power. Declassified documents display the mindset of those who ran the American government back then. It was all about [hoarding the world's wealth and keeping the world enslaved to U.S. capitalism](#). [George Kennan](#) even used the word "envy" when describing how other peoples might look at the U.S.' unprecedented wealth, and he suggested abandoning all pretence of pursuing "unreal objectives such as human rights, the raising of living standards, and democratization", and begin dealing in "straight power concepts" to keep the world under the U.S.' boot, and Kennan was a foreign policy *dove*. The hawks had [even more ruthless plans](#). U.S. foreign policy is merely a modern variation of a very old dynamic. Also, there is a lie in that logic. Much of the so-called "envy" of the world's poor was not envy, per se, but the desire to be free from the West's shackles, so they can eat the food they grow, etc.

Lust. Among my psychologist friends, sexual abuse is the childhood abuse they see almost more than any other, at least for ones that can leave debilitating effects for the rest of the patient's life. The porn industry was the first one on the Internet to make money. On television, Americans are flooded with titillating ads and shows with endless sexual double-entendres. Even Shakespeare played to that passion in his plays. It is also part of what I call the "[War Against Women](#)."

Gluttony and Sloth. These are related vices; with gorging one's self complementing laziness. Americans are history's fattest and most sedentary people. In 2003, 65% of American adults were overweight. This is partly due to the high calorie, high fat, high sugar, high protein, junk food diet that Americans eat. It is also due to the cars, garage-door openers and other conveniences that Americans are history's fattest people. Since 1980, the percentage of American adults considered "obese" has climbed from 15% to 30%. Americans are particularly gluttonous when the starvation happening across the world is taken into consideration. In the West, about half of all adults are overweight. In India and elsewhere in the Third World, most adults are underweight. What the West is doing is called "overconsumption" in academia's parlance. It used to be called gluttony. The world's overweight and hungry people are of approximately equal number: more than a billion of each.[\[18\]](#) American gluttony and sloth is the greatest the world has ever known. Not to say that Americans consider that distinction a great virtue, and pathological reactions to that situation, such as anorexia, are understandable. In general however, most Americans do not think much about it, and the media bombards viewers with all manner of food ads, and most of that advertised "food" should not be touched with a ten-foot pole. The day I originally wrote this, my wife handed me the Sunday newspaper, where an article discussed the abysmal American diet, and how it directly leads to heart attacks and other degenerative diseases. It is worse in the "beef belt" of America's Midwest, where coronary surgeons have a booming business. Even as undeniable as the evidence is, most of the afflicted people, filling their plates with greasy food, do not really care. In the words of one customer at a Kansas City barbecue establishment, "We've grown up on meat and potatoes. There was always a meat and starch at every meal, and it just carries on to how we

eat today.” That customer drove 200 miles to eat that meal.^[19] I was recently in Hawaii, where gluttony is a virtue, with billboards advertising all-you-can-eat establishments with smiling local residents who have eaten themselves into gargantuan size. They are local heroes. My brother worked in Hawaiian hospitals where he regularly treated those trenchermen and trencherwomen, where they ended up after having heart attacks and other health failures, for those who survived long enough to get to a hospital.

Forgetting the basics because we think we are too smart for those old lessons, or inverting reality by turning vices into virtues, is an integral aspect of why humanity stands on the abyss’ edge today. It [can be different](#).

Footnotes

- ^[1] See Stephen Schlesinger and Stephen Kinzer’s *Bitter Fruit; The Story of the American Coup in Guatemala*.
- ^[2] See Walsch, *Conversations with God, Book 3*, p. 362
- ^[3] See Current, Williams and Freidel, *American History: A Survey, Fourth Edition, Volume 1: to 1877*, published in 1975.
- ^[4] See Current, Williams and Freidel, *American History: A Survey, Fourth Edition, Volume 1: to 1877*, p. 8.
- ^[5] See Current, Williams and Freidel, *American History: A Survey, Fourth Edition, Volume 1: to 1877*, pp. 10-11.
- ^[6] See Loewen, *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, p. 305.
- ^[7] See Loewen, *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, p. 272.
- ^[8] See Loewen, *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, p. 275.
- ^[9] See Loewen, *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, p. 271.
- ^[10] See Genesis 1.26 to 1.28. *The Revised Standard Version*.
- ^[11] See Walsch, *Conversations with God, book 3*, p. 306.
- ^[12] See, for instance, Noam Chomsky’s *The New Military Humanism*, pp. 150-157.
- ^[13] See William Blum’s *Rogue State*, pp. 210-211.
- ^[14] See, for instance, William Blum’s *Killing Hope*.
- ^[15] See Blum, *Rogue State*, p. 227.

[16] See George Orwell's *1984*, in its first few pages.

[17] In the April 2004 edition of *Premiere Magazine*, p. 68, Michael Douglas talks about the Gordon Gecko character that he played in *Wall Street*, and says that nearly twenty years after he played that role, he regularly experiences "half-drunk Wall Street investment bankers coming up to me and saying, 'Hey, man, you were the guy, greed is good.' They look at me like I am a folk hero, but I was supposed to be a bad guy. It's a very sad comment."

[18] See Gary Gardner and Brian Halweil's "Nourishing the Underfed and Overfed," in The Worldwatch Institute's *State of the World, 2000*, pp. 59-78.

[19] See Stephanie Simon's "Straight to the Heart," *The Seattle Times*, p. A3, May 27, 2001.

The next section: [This Website's Purpose](#) (37K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

This Website's Purpose

By Wade Frazier

December 2006/April 2007

[This Website's Purpose](#)

[My Intended Audience and Those I am *Not* Trying to Reach](#)

[How to Use this Website](#)

[Pursuing Your Interests](#)

[If you want to build your own free energy machine](#)

[If you want to debate free energy physics](#)

[If you want to support free energy efforts](#)

[If you want to tell your own free energy tale](#)

[If you want to challenge my work](#)

[If you have your own “conspiracy theories” to propose](#)

[If you want to constructively discuss my work](#)

[Places where my work is being discussed](#)

This Website's Purpose

I wrote this essay because, after several years of seclusion, in 2006 I began interacting with the public again. I do not have the time, energy or inclination to publicly interact in the many ways that people wish me to.

I began writing about my adventures in alternative energy soon after I staggered out of Ventura, California in 1990, after [we had our lives shattered](#) by the people who run the

world. They wiped us out after my former partner, Dennis Lee, refused [about a billion-dollar offer](#) for us to cease our pursuit of free energy. I eventually learned that our treatment was only [slightly more extreme](#) than their typical efforts to keep their grip over humanity, because we were more of a “threat” to the world’s power structure than most alternative energy efforts. When I left Ventura, it culminated a ten-year process of gradual disillusionment and awakening. Free energy technology already exists, but [is controlled](#) by that world-dominating group, whom I call the “Big Boys” in my work.

The writing and research that I have performed since 1990 was far less stressful than the mayhem that I survived with Dennis, but my goal has always been the same: [averting global catastrophe](#), [healing the planet](#) and perhaps ushering in a new epoch of the human journey, one where we live in heaven-on-earth and relinquish the tired games of survival and exploitation that have largely defined the human journey until now.

When our ordeal in Ventura ended, I realized that whatever I had been taught about my world was probably incorrect, and I spent long years comparing my institutional indoctrination to my adult researches. I discovered that most of what I “learned” while young was a purposeful indoctrination; the goal seemed to be inculcating me with delusions so I could be easily manipulated. The [purveyed delusions](#) were rooted in various scarcity-based paradigms. If I participated in the system and became one of its “winners,” ample material and egocentric rewards would be mine. The system could be fairly subtle in its methods, while some manipulations seem ludicrously heavy-handed in retrospect, such as the idolatry of [pledging allegiance to a flag](#), which I was forced into doing as a schoolboy.

Because I realized that [personal integrity was earth’s scarcest commodity](#) and the key to healing the planet, I sought a group of sufficient collective integrity that would not only desire to heal the planet and rank their personal gain from the effort as a secondary concern, but one that could also lay aside their indoctrination and dare to envision a world based on abundance instead of scarcity. I came to realize how heavily most people lean on their “[mind crutches](#).” A practical, abundance-based way of viewing our world has never been embraced by any significant group that I know of. There have been some prophets of abundance, such as [R. Buckminster Fuller](#), but his legacy has been co-opted and diluted since his death, as it has for most genuine visionaries.

Even groups with a seemingly visionary agenda have been subtly thwarted by their scarcity-based indoctrination. For instance, I have great respect for certain political and economic groups, some being heavily populated by academics and others who have earned my esteem, but the rationalist-materialist paradigm that they typically adhere to

is a form of [scarcity-based religion](#). Most do not see their adoptive ideology as an *ideology, but as reality*. That is a peril of physical reality, and nobody seems immune to its seductions and limitations, although the [mystical masters](#) can often come close. Those groups of intellectuals and activists have largely embraced the materialist view of evolution, believe that there are “[laws of physics](#)” that our scientists ([the new priest class](#)) comprehend and have a visceral aversion to the idea that the world’s political-economic situation is [managed by super-elites in clandestine fashion](#), dismissing any and all evidence of that situation as a “[conspiracy theory](#).” My *experiences* are not *theories*, but I have had scientists, academics and technical professionals call me a “conspiracy theorist” when I have described my experiences and those of others around me. [Labeling me as a conspiracy theorist](#) is an irrational act and one of the ironies of dealing with scientists and academics. The thrust of my [medical writings](#), for instance, gives relatively little weight to the conspiratorial behavior of the medical racketeers, but that has not prevented some academics from [dismissing my writings](#) on the medical racket as a conspiracy theory.

For instance, the main reason that I present some of the clandestine methods that the Big Boys use to control the world economy is to help answer the [most common response](#) that I receive to the account of my energy-industry experiences, which is: “If free energy machines really existed, I should be able to buy one.” The Big Boys’ machinations are partly why we do not enjoy free energy today, but their [dark efforts are far from the only aspect](#), and are far from the most important factor, in my opinion. I have almost never encountered a productive response to today’s situation, which is a key aspect of the free energy conundrum. The vast majority of people simply deny the situation exists, and most who acknowledge the situation’s reality overemphasize its conspiratorial aspects and have other [unproductive responses](#).

This site’s purpose is connecting with people who can make a difference, which leads to this essay’s next section....

My Intended Audience and Those I am *Not* Trying to Reach

As my days with Dennis ended, I realized that if fifty people had banded around Dennis and his technical team in the late 1980s as [Mr. Professor](#) and I did, we had a fair chance to make free energy a public reality; if it had been a hundred, it would have been easy. However, Mr. Professor and I were about the only people who stood up to the

corruption; almost everybody else either ran and hid when the big sledgehammer came down, [tried stealing the business](#) or [anything in it not nailed down](#), or actively helped those bludgeoning us as a way to avoid the bludgeoners' wrath. I have searched for those [hundred heroes](#) since the 1980s, and no group I have yet encountered has come remotely close to being qualified. I strongly doubt that such a group exists or can be assembled.

After gaining that understanding, I tried a different strategy, which is the purpose behind this website. It may be as futile a plan as the others I have seen attempted, but I had to try it. As abundance has proven to be a virtually *unimaginable* concept to the vast majority of humanity, I thought that [helping people imagine it](#) would be a good start. However, imagining abundance, much less pursuing it, is not very likely when people are dependent on their scarcity-based [mind crutches](#). After many years of interacting with the public on these issues, it seems to me that less than one percent of Americans are currently willing and capable of throwing aside their mind crutches, and the integrity issue seems paramount. This site's material is targeted toward that tiny fraction that is ready to begin leaving scarcity behind. If thousands of the awake and awakening can come together and simply be willing to *imagine* abundance, discuss it and perhaps take a public stance on the issue, it might be enough to catalyze the reality of free energy and earthly abundance. I also only speak and write English, which further reduces my potential audience. Although I would like to interact on a broader scale, most of my audience is American, and I cannot entirely escape my culture. Non-American readers may find my work of little relevance, although free energy will obviously have a global impact.

Many well-intended people have made suggestions about where the group can be found that can help an abundance paradigm come to pass (which would be [based on free energy](#)). I am not on a hundred-hero search, but merely seeking people willing to consider and discuss the issue in a somewhat open-minded and enlightened manner, and [we would see where it went from there](#). The other [free energy activists](#) that I am aware of are generally not seeking the hundred heroes, but simply kindred spirits who can provide some support. My attempt to interest the [radical left](#) in free energy and abundance is my most recent effort to find that group. Perhaps humanity is not ready for abundance, either mentally or emotionally.

Experience may be the *only* teacher, and more than twenty years of trying to interest various groups in free energy and an abundance paradigm has told me what groups are *not* interested in my work. Also, some groups I believe should *not* pursue free energy, at least not actively in today's environment, because they would be a danger to themselves

and others. The free energy pursuit is perilous, and many [unproductive paths](#) await the unwary and inexperienced.

The following groups I will *not* be trying to interest in free energy and abundance in the near future. There are always exceptions to the rule, and people from all the below categories have become staunch allies, but I do not seek to engage those groups as a strategy, and here are my reasons why.

1. **My Peers.** I am a white, educated, corporately employed American man, and belong to history's most privileged demographic group. However, this site's material makes it clear that our political-social-economic status is not due to our unique virtue. Consequently, my most [irrational and vicious critics](#) have always been from my "peer group." My peers seem deeply invested in their (increasingly precarious) status, and lean heavily on their [mind crutches](#), both the [obvious](#) and [subtle](#) ones. The more people lean on their mind crutches, the less likely they will learn to cast them aside. I have always directed my efforts to where the most fruitful avenues appeared to be, and interactions with my peers demonstrated long ago that they would be among the most resistant people to free energy and an abundance paradigm, because all they can see is their seemingly reduced status, even when it means that *everybody* can live vastly better lives, including themselves. I finished banging my head against that wall many years ago, and have watched others do it recently, to sometimes career-ending effect.
2. **The Scientific Community.** Every era of human civilization has had its intellectuals who believe they fully understand how the universe operates. It is no different with today's scientifically trained, who sit at humanity's intellectual apex, or so they believe. I have engaged in many senseless, [circular arguments](#) with the scientifically trained. As a group, they are as fervent believers in the [fairy tales of their faith](#) as any fundamentalist Christian is in their Bible stories, and few in their ranks are interested in learning any differently, not interested enough to leave their comfortable armchairs. Free energy is a paradigm-buster, and few scientists will ever [question the paradigms they were raised with](#), as with [most people](#). Scientists are far from the only complacent group I have encountered, but their collective complacency is why they are of no help these days. Others are [trying to engage the scientific community](#) with credentials far more impressive than mine, and I have watched them run up against the [naïveté](#), [denial](#), complacency and groupthink of scientists for many years. The divine paradox is that only people who *care about others* will help us save ourselves. The complacent are being [self-centered](#) and are no help.

3. **The Idly Curious.** I designed this site so that the idly curious would probably not be interested. I have presented few names regarding my adventures in alternative energy, or patent numbers, federal studies and the like to keep the idly curious from stumbling onto terrain where angels fear to tread. For those with initiative, they can go deeply into the material, far deeper than is presented on this site. Many participants in Dennis' and my adventures do not want to be contacted by the idly curious or by anybody at all. Some are trying to live their remaining days in peace, a peace that the idly curious can intrude upon, while others are [dark path initiates](#), and encountering/exposing them is dangerous. People can easily bite off far more than they bargained for and have their lives wrecked if not prematurely ended. Free energy is currently not a safe issue for the idly curious to engage.
4. **The Naïve.** I began my real world journey naively, asking "[Easter Bunny](#)" questions that everybody laughed at. [Losing my naïveté](#) was an agonizing but necessary process, if making a difference was my goal. The naïve generally flee from my work's implications, and [naïve responses](#) to the free energy issue have been the most common ones I have encountered. I doubt that naïveté can be shed by anything other than experience. While the naïve and well-intended may make a difference one day, I doubt that this site is the place for them to start. Maybe after they have some real-world experience, this site's material will begin to make sense. I have been encouraged to "dumb down" the material on this site into cartoons, slogans and other presentations, but that generally attracts people easily seduced by slicker counter-presentations, and the "bad guys" have [PR](#) down to a science. I learned that the [hard way](#) during my days with Dennis. The naïve do not comprehend our world's reality, and pretending it is different seems to be no help. Imagining that it *can* be different, however, seems to be a key step in making it happen. Earth is currently not a fairy tale world, and believing that it is can lead to extremely painful experiences, and in the pursuit of free energy [can be a fatal delusion](#).
5. **The New Age Community.** I grew up in Southern California, worked in Los Angeles for five years and had my [mystical awakening at age sixteen](#). By age thirty, I had just about seen it all in the Southern California mystical scene. As with India and other places that supposedly have a high "spirituality quotient," there are extremely few in the mystical realm with high integrity, which is more important than all other qualities combined. [Love is always the answer](#). I found the New Age community to be plagued with naïveté, [self-centeredness](#) and many brands of the seemingly new wine being sold in ancient skins. With very few exceptions, [the men in that community](#) take advantage of the easy sex, money and other benefits

that accrue from preying on women who seek enlightened men. The recent popularity of *The Secret* epitomizes the New Age community. If I had to summarize that movie in one sentence, it would be something like, “Think positively and become rich!” Its defining scene was a preadolescent boy wishing for a bicycle and one being delivered to his doorstep seconds later, as if magicians conjure them from thin air. While such a perspective possesses a certain charm and contains *some* truth, it is not one suited to pursuing free energy and an abundance paradigm, not in today’s world. New Agers should not be confused with enlightened mystics. Enlightened mystics can think critically and are not as self-centered as New Agers have too often proven to be. An enlightened mystic seeks to integrate the light and the darkness, not to deny that the darkness even exists. Such people, however, are truly needles in haystacks and I have stopped searching for them. That they are not contacting me means that I may not have the right stuff, either, or that I need to be more patient (which I find difficult to be [these days](#)).

6. **Environmentalists.** Of all the groups that have rejected the idea of free energy, none have dismayed me more than environmental organizations. My efforts may have been spurred by a desire to heal the earth more than any other reason (with humanity’s healing being right up there – I find it difficult to rank one over the other), and the knee-jerk rejection of free energy has been more pronounced among environmentalists than any other group I have encountered. Quite arguably, *nothing* could help heal the planet more effectively than free energy. There are potential downsides to free energy (weaponized, irresponsible use), but the rejections I have seen go far beyond such objections. Many environmental organizations have been corrupted by fundraising considerations, co-opted by their benefactors or [were fraudulent to begin with](#). The organizations fortunate enough to avoid those fates have, virtually without exception, proposed austerity solutions to humanity’s predicament. Saying that [abundance](#) is unimaginable to them is understating the case; it has become an *enemy* in many environmental circles. Their solutions are “let’s ride bikes” and other austerity measures (the kind that [Fuller said were doomed](#)), similar to Richard Heinberg’s solution of [ridding earth of more than five billion excess humans](#). The environmentalists and Heinberg believe that humans would quickly destroy the planet with free energy, not heal it (while enjoying unprecedented abundance in the process). Holding such a dim view of humanity may be understandable, but does not seem to lead to positive solutions, unless ridding the planet of five billion excess humans can be deemed constructive. Whether such attitudes are a residue of Calvinist Christianity, humanity’s [addiction to scarcity](#) or something else, environmentalists are perhaps the group most impervious to the idea of free energy, even if their

motives were pure (and I have seen [where they were not](#)). Long ago and with great sorrow, I stopped trying to interest environmentalists in free energy and abundance. They could be free energy's greatest allies, and I hope to one day see them awaken to the possibility of a healed planet where everybody wins, but for now I do not actively pursue that dream. They will not be the first to get aboard the free energy train, and might be among the last.

Perhaps my approach is misguided and unworkable, and one or all of those above groups will end up saving the day. Maybe some obscure group, or one that finds new inspiration (and recent and coming world events may provide that inspiration), will make free energy and abundance happen. I have just not yet met or heard of them yet. If enough people with the right stuff exist, they may indeed be scattered across the planet. If they exist, can or will they combine their efforts for something like this? I am attempting to find out.

There are many ways to make the world a better place, but the biggest leverage point is the energy paradigm, which is why free energy is so important and why it is so [ruthlessly suppressed](#). I believe that enough people need to come together and devote their collective effort to the issue, particularly with humanity's inertia and the Big Boys' vigilance. I seek to engage *people who care*. That is by far the most important quality necessary for pursuing free energy, an [abundance paradigm](#) and a healed planet, and those people can be found in almost any walk of life, however rare they may be. If a person's heart is in the right place, then they will almost certainly have the second most important necessary quality: the *desire to make an effort*. The third required quality is intelligence. It is not nearly as important as the first two qualities, but we need to exercise our sentience in order to make the change, and not just the [rational](#) aspect of intelligence. If people care and make an effort, that is most of what is needed, but intelligence is also required, at least enough to understand what the opportunities and risks are, what works, what does not, and how to make things happen.

The train needs to be built and get moving before everybody can jump aboard. Trying to coax people to help who may *not even want* to get on that train, before it is even built, seems a great waste of time and effort. When progress has been made in building a strong, committed nucleus, then other groups may jump aboard, but getting them aboard too early does not work, as far as I have seen, and in the free energy pursuit is often the path to disaster.

How to Use this Website

This website's material is largely comprised of several book-length essays, such as the [American Empire](#), [medical racket](#), [cover-up](#) and [war](#) essays. The cover-up essay is the shortest of those four, and weighs-in at 113 pages of material. The others are considerably longer, with the American Empire essay being 226 pages in length (which has also been this site's most popular essay). My days with Dennis Lee and our pursuit of alternative energy are contained in two essays ([1](#), [2](#)) that total more than 100 pages, with essays on the [energy racket](#), [Dennis' critics](#), and a [corporate hit man](#) who was sicced on Dennis adding another 140 pages of material. The larger essays are works of scholarship, although not intensely so. I have tried supporting the facts I use with easily verified references. This site's writings were not intended for academic consumption. The scholarly essays on this site total about 1,000 pages with 1,500 footnotes, which is not very dense, from a scholarly perspective.

While I tried making the reading experience relatively easy on my readers, the material can be challenging, both intellectually and emotionally. The essay that may be the most difficult to read, both intellectually and emotionally, is this site's [medical racket](#) essay. I have encountered people who spent intense days reading it, and were dazed when finished. Once in awhile, this site's essays have their intended effect – when people have personal paradigm shifts after reading an essay. However, I also hear from readers that this site can be difficult to digest and that it is easy to get “lost in the woods.” One common complaint has been that there is “too much meat” and this site needs to be simplified. My writings are sometimes called “rambling.” They rambled far more before I hired an editor, and such an observation partly stems from the comprehensive, multidisciplinary nature of this site – it covers vast territory.

To honor those complaints and make it easier on my readers, since I completed this site in 2002 I have periodically added essays that were “doorways” to this site's material. In general, those “doorway” essays were not scholarly and were relatively brief, but linked to the “meat” of this site throughout those essays. Those essays are mainly found in the “[comprehensive](#)” section of this site's home page, and include the [Free Energy Conundrum](#), [World Based on Abundance](#) and [Journeys of Free Energy Activists](#) essays, the open letters to the [Free Software Movement](#) and [Radical Left](#), and the site's [introductory essay](#). One essay also presents my [journey and life's work in five pages](#). Those essays are not heavily footnoted. However, they *are* peppered with links to the website's meat. Since I have been publishing those essays, I now receive the opposite complaint: “Hey, where is the meat?!” I have been dismissed as a lightweight writer because those essays did not contain much meat. Those making that complaint

obviously never took the links to the meat, and some of those complaints were probably disingenuous – they could justifiably dismiss this site's writings and their [illusions](#) would remain safe from challenge.

In summary, if this is your first encounter with this site, I suggest reading one of those meatless, comprehensive essays first, as it will present my work's gist and you can see the new paradigms I am attempting to sketch. If you find the ideas interesting, then you can follow the links to the site's meat. It is difficult to read this site on paper because of its interlinking. This site is designed for the Internet, not for reading in paper form.

Pursuing Your Interests

What follows is intended to send readers to where their interest lies.

- If you want to build a free energy machine, many prototypes have been built and you can try building some for yourself. However, the day when you can build a free energy machine in your garage with parts you can get at your hardware store is not yet here. The free energy machines I am aware of generally have some highly specialized and precision-made components, and some inventors have taken their secrets to their graves, as [Sparky Sweet](#) did. There are also many perils to that path, not the least of which is that the Big Boys can apparently tell when anybody on earth [taps into the field](#) which powers most free energy devices. The [New Energy Congress](#) has assessed many free energy approaches, and they may help steer you in the direction you are looking to go. [Brian O'Leary](#) has recently estimated that it would take about \$200 million to make a production-ready free energy prototype, which is in the range of other estimates that I have seen. For monetary reasons if no other, the opportunity for a lone inventor to make free energy happen is very slim. If your effort gets very far along, you will probably be [made the offer you cannot refuse](#).
- If you want to debate the physics of free energy or the viability of new energy technologies that have some public visibility, the [New Energy Congress](#) is where you may find fruitful dialogue. There are a number of technical forums on the Internet where free energy physics and technology are discussed. I specialized in the political-economic aspects of the free energy conundrum many years ago, and

can only discuss somewhat knowledgably the technologies that [we were pursuing](#) when we were wiped out. I am familiar with many free energy theories and the related technologies, but must direct you to the specialists. I *know* that [free energy technologies exist](#), but technology is not the problem, in my opinion.

- If you want to be one of the [hundred heroes](#) of free energy or actively support them, the activists whom I currently have the most respect for are [Dennis Lee](#), [Brian O'Leary](#) and [Steven Greer](#). Their respective approaches may not have much of a chance, either, but they have demonstrated their sincerity and commitment while surviving great hardships, including financial devastation, stints behind bars and murder attempts. If you truly want to help, they may be willing to hear from you.
- If you want to tell the tale of how your alternative energy efforts were wiped out by the Big Boys (or by your “friends”), you can post something to whatever forums I will be posting discussions of my work, which may spark some worthwhile discussion. Steven Greer may one day interview those who were put under the Big Boys’ “buzz saw” (I call it their “meat grinder”), similar to how he has interviewed the ET witnesses for his [Disclosure Project](#). Also, the [New Energy Movement](#) and [New Energy Congress](#) might be receptive to your tale. A significant aspect of the free energy conundrum is the general public’s [denial](#), partly because your experiences are far beyond what people can view from their cubicles, social circles, televisions and computer screens. Not only are your experiences deeply traumatic, but you also suffer from the secondary trauma of having everybody you know believe you are [crazy](#), because to acknowledge the validity of your experiences would shatter their comforting fantasies of how our world works. When you finally meet somebody who can comprehend your journey, you nearly explode during the catharsis of your tale’s telling. You may also seek solace and commiseration. I sympathize with your journey, and I have dealt with [how the Big Boys operate in my work](#), but I do not plan to significantly expand my writings in that area. Unfortunately, [you are one of many](#), and I wish you the best in your efforts and healing.
- If you want to challenge the validity of [my work and experiences](#), particularly [my days with Dennis](#), and do it *credibly*, you have to first do your homework. Surfing the Internet and forming hasty opinions will not suffice. For the record, I have never seen an attempt to deny the validity of my work and experiences that was intelligent, informed and honest, which also applies to attacks on Dennis’

experience and integrity. At best, those critics engage in numerous [logical fallacies](#), and the worst of them are dishonest, as [Mr. Skeptic and friends](#) have too often proven to be. Sterling Allan [wrote the best public critique of Dennis' efforts](#) that I have yet seen (parts of which I tended to agree with), and seeing it led me [to contribute to his site](#). If you want to discuss what Dennis has been doing since 1990, I have not followed his efforts much since then, and you need to look elsewhere to have that discussion. Sorry.

- If you want to propose you own theories of [9/11](#), the [JFK assassination](#), the [moon landings](#) or other possibly “conspiratorial” events, there are appropriate Internet forums where you can do that. I do not have the time or energy to perform investigations of your theories. I have recently been approached with some doozies, such as JFK faked his own assassination, holographic planes “hit” the World Trade Center, etc. I will offer one observation, however: the more “off the beaten path” your theory is, the more rigorously the evidence needs to be adduced and assessed. Some have approached me with the opposite methodology: their strained theories have little supporting evidence, significant and persuasive evidence conflicts with their theories (which they therefore ignore), and what little supporting evidence they have is interpreted in a fanciful manner.
- If you truly wish to constructively discuss my work, this website was written with you in mind. This website is comprised of 1,200 pages of inter-disciplinary material that took 12,000 hours to produce. It would be helpful to carefully digest the writings before entering the discussion. You do not need to read all of it before you respond, and to make it easier on my readers I have broken this site into dozens of essays. Reading an entire essay is suggested before responding to it. Also, I have provided more than one thousand footnotes to this site, and have tried referencing readily accessible material that people can find if they want to pursue the subject further. My interest is greatest regarding how to [change this planet for the better](#), although if you wish to discuss the “[discovery](#)” and [conquest](#) of the Western Hemisphere by Europe, America’s [imperial behavior](#), the state of [Western medicine](#), how [poisons are marketed to us as medicine](#), how America’s [media](#) and [indoctrination systems](#) work, [spirituality](#), [warfare](#) and the other topics that this site explores, I am also willing to discuss those topics in a constructive manner.

Whatever your interest might be, I wish you the best while pursuing it.

Places Where My Work is Being Discussed

February 2007 – I am not aware of any public discussions of my work (at least discussions that seem constructive) that are very active. The most active currently are on the Above Top Secret (“ATS”) site. These threads began by discussing my work:

<http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread125227/pg1>

(on suppressed technologies)

<http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread52232/pg1>

(on the dangers of investigating conspiracies and cover-ups)

and have grown over time. Because of those threads, I began a thread specifically designed to discuss my work:

<http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread206843/pg1>

I suggest initiating discussion of my work on that thread, as it seems the most appropriate one, although the others may be topics on which you wish to contribute your views. As a warning, [Mr. Skeptic](#) has been stalking me on the Internet for the past ten years, and will spread his [disinformation](#) wherever he is able, as he recently did here:

<http://portland.indymedia.org/en/2007/02/353778.shtml#251272>

If he tries joining any discussions of my work (in order to lead the gullible and uninformed astray), I will not reply to him, and my replies to posts like this:

<http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread125227/pg6#pid2862592>

are very terse if I reply at all, and in the ATS forum I use the “ignore” feature so I do not have to waste my time and energy reading the posts of such people (and therefore will never respond again to them). Again, people who [challenge my work](#) need to first do their homework if they expect to do so credibly.

My work on the Audie Murphy/John Tower/Gary Wean connection to the [JFK assassination](#) was the subject of one of the best discussions I have seen on the issue, here:

<http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/lofiversion/index.php/t2861.html>

That discussion is inactive today, but could be revived if there was interest.

My work has been discussed in many other forums, but generally have not been ones where I have actively joined the conversation. I seek places to have good, constructive exchanges on [how to make this world a better place](#). If you know of any, you only have to link to this site from whatever forum you are discussing my work, and if people take that link to this site, I can see it in this site's statistics. If the discussion seems like it is heading in the right direction, I might join it. There are some forums where I may initiate discussion, and if it is a public one, I will link to it from this page.

Thank you for your interest.

The Next Section: [A World Based on Abundance - What it Looks Like; What it Does Not Look Like](#) (40K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

A World Based on Abundance

What it Looks Like; What it Does Not Look Like

By Wade Frazier

May 2006

[Introduction](#)

[Economics and Energy](#)

[Exuberance Is Not Abundance](#)

[“Sustainable” Does Not Mean Abundant](#)

[What Does Abundance Look Like?](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

My [thirty-year-plus journey](#) in the free energy and other milieus might be called, “the pursuit of abundance.” While some popular concepts allude to an abundance [paradigm](#), such as “win-win,” the scarcity principle is so deeply ingrained in humanity that even *imagining* abundance can seem impossible. For instance, an impressive scholar such as [Richard Heinberg](#) cannot seem to conceive of abundance, but frames the world situation in an “endless growth/overshoot-and-collapse” dichotomy. R. Buckminster Fuller believed that humanity’s seemingly intractable resistance to the *idea* of abundance is because [scarcity has been the human reality for so long](#) that the [zero-sum-game](#) is virtually cemented into human consciousness. The fact that scarcity is currently being [artificially forced onto humanity for reasons of earthly power](#) makes the pursuit of abundance even more difficult. Even those who truly *try* to comprehend abundance have a difficult task, and this essay is intended to make the abundance principle clearer.

Economics and Energy

Life on earth has always been powered by sunlight; the [energy captured via photosynthesis](#) has been the basis for virtually all ecosystems. Without energy, there is no life. Scientists think that trees are adaptations by plants to get their leaves closer to the light, so they can absorb more than the shorter plants that stand in their shadows. Flowering plants [produce fruit to attract animals](#), which spread the seeds while eating the fruit. A class of mammal [evolved opposable thumbs and toes](#) to better navigate tree limbs while seeking fruit and other tree-borne foods. Eventually some primates left the trees, most likely for food-related reasons. Some of those primates learned to walk erect and lost their opposable toes, which freed their hands for other uses. Those primates developed larger brains, and after millions of years of adaptation to changed environments and circumstances, [anatomically modern humans](#) appeared somewhat more than 100,000 years ago. Humanity's early [migrations](#), adaptations and tool making were always primarily concerned with [acquiring, preserving and consuming energy](#).

About [40,000 years ago](#), humans improved their hunting technology and tactics to the point where they became super-predators, and thereby conquered most of the world's land-based ecosystems, eventually inhabiting all continents except Antarctica. They also contributed to the extinction of nearly all the planet's large, easily killed animals, [particularly large mammals](#). When the easy meat was gone the [Domestication Revolution](#) occurred, apparently independently, in Mesoamerica (today's Mexico), China, and the Fertile Crescent (Iraq, Egypt and vicinity). Domesticating plants and animals allowed humans to become sedentary, because more energy per acre was extractable. Populations thereby became denser, and [civilization](#) developed. Economics is the study of humanity's material wellbeing, and the bedrock economic reality has always been the human stomach. From the beginnings of the Domestication Revolution, about ten thousand years ago, to the Industrial Revolution, about two hundred years ago, the primary preoccupation of most humans was obtaining enough food to eat.

The [Industrial Revolution](#) was dependent on harnessing amounts of energy not previously exploitable, and today's Americans consume about eighty times the energy provided by their diets. Americans are also history's [fattest and most sedentary humans](#), with most of the industrialized world not far behind. Energy consumption is by far the most important measure of a society's economic production and standard of living. Great Britain has one of earth's most educated and affluent societies, while Ethiopia has one of earth's least educated and poorest societies, but their economic production divided by their energy consumption is [almost exactly the same ratio](#). The

same is true for all the world's societies, from the richest to poorest. Modern economic theory, however, has largely obscured that relationship, and the main reasons, I think, follow.

When humans became sedentary and civilizations appeared, human health declined. Early agriculture did not produce healthy diets, particularly the [dead food](#) between harvest seasons, and [early civilizations](#) were not clean. There also was not enough to go around, so the beginning of civilization has been called the transition “from [egalitarianism to kleptocracy](#).” Economic, political and social stratification accompanied civilization's development. All political systems for all time have been primarily concerned with who received the benefit of the scarce and energy-dependent economic production and, as Fuller stated, all political actors are “[stooges](#)” of the [economic interests](#). Professions appeared and “elites” ascended the hierarchies. Economic elitism has always been the hallmark of all elites, with the elites of all civilizations [engaging in conspicuous economic consumption](#) as a mark of their status. Those at the hierarchical bottoms, such as slaves, barely eked out existences while elites lived in opulence. That situation was due to economic scarcity.

Economics is generally separated into three parts in modern study:

1. The production of wealth;
2. The distribution (or exchange) of wealth;
3. The consumption of wealth.

As [noted above](#), economic production is almost entirely dependent on energy usage. Consumption is the use of that economic production. The distribution/exchange aspect of economics is about who gets to consume the production. Money, banking, accountants, laws – in short, what passes for economics today – are primarily concerned with the exchange aspect of economics. In a world of scarcity, who owns what becomes the overriding concern, which is why economics is so focused on the exchange aspect, particularly in daily life. In ancient civilizations, slaves gathered/produced the wealth while the elites consumed it. The exchange aspect was largely concerned with separating the slaves from the fruit of their labor, for elite benefit. That basic dynamic has been repeated in all civilizations to the present day. Socialism and communism have been conscious attempts to ameliorate that dynamic, but are still rooted in the *assumption* of economic scarcity. The main difference between capitalist and communist theory was who should receive the benefit of the scarce resources. Capitalism averred that the capitalists, who cleverly organized the system for their benefit, should get the lion's share of economic production. Communism stated that

those doing the hard work should receive a fair share of their production. In the industrialized world, machines perform all the truly heavy lifting. While capitalism has been [reliant on violence and coercive exploitation](#), communism was forced egalitarianism. In practice, both systems have violated people's free will.

It is no coincidence that slavery first appeared in early civilization and disappeared in early industrialization. Energy was the reason. That American consumption of [eighty times their dietary calories](#) has been called the equivalent of having [eighty slaves](#). That is the Industrial Revolution's central dynamic. With energy slaves performing work, human slaves became impractical, although [economic exploitation for elite benefit](#) is still a primary aspect of how economic systems function. Economic, political and social systems are still steeply hierarchical, with America's richest individual (Bill Gates) possessing as much wealth as about half of America's poorest citizens combined, for a wealth ratio of around one-hundred-million-to-one, a disparity greater than any in history. In order to accept or [defend](#) such an obviously unfair situation, people have had to cultivate [many egocentric delusions](#) that are based on the scarcity principle. The human ego is our collective Achilles' heel.

Every civilization has ridden atop its energy consumption, which is a fact that most of civilization's inhabitants never learn, conveniently forget or minimize. All collapsed civilizations disappeared largely due to [depleting their energy sources](#), and [knowledgeable observers of today's world](#) realize that industrialized civilization will collapse unless [non-fossil-fuel energy sources are discovered and used](#). The motivations behind all wars for all time have been [primarily economic](#), although the elites have always conjured and sold the masses superficially-noble motivations (self-defense, religion, nationalism, [humanitarian](#), spreading freedom and democracy), as naked self-interest rarely sells well. Regarding the economic motivation behind wars, no current example could be more obvious than America's invasion of the Middle East (and its current saber rattling with Iran and Venezuela), as the U.S. seizes control over the world's fossil fuel deposits, which power the world economy. Predictably, the [American media](#) has dutifully [parroted the Bush administration propaganda](#) nearly verbatim, and virtually never even *mentioned* the motivation that is obvious to everybody on earth, except [brainwashed Americans](#). The sitting president, vice president and secretary of state are all former oil industry executives.

Today's Westerners would benefit from thinking about how energy consumption makes their modern lives possible. More energy goes into building an automobile than will ever be consumed in its engine. Everything material in our lives, be it wood, food, water,

metals, glass, plastics and so on, has been made available by harnessing energy. All of our transportation, electronic communication, human-friendly environments, appliances and other modern amenities rely on energy for their existence and performance. Without energy, it all comes to a sudden halt.

Exuberance Is Not Abundance

Many years ago, Carl Sauer, one of the greatest academics that America has yet produced, stated that modern ideology extolled ever-increasing economic production and a fresh planet begging to be filled with people, but that such ideology ignored the fact that the West's "progress" came at the cost of the ["permanent impoverishment of the world."](#) Sauer stated that such recklessly optimistic ideas were the result of an [attitude born from Europe's conquest of the world.](#) [Julian Simon](#) was a modern apostle of that attitude. I call it "rape-and-plunder economics (AKA Vulture Capitalism)." Europe's global conquest was an economic undertaking before all else. Everywhere Europeans appeared, the native peoples were devastated because Europeans put the natives under the yoke ([Spain in the New World](#), [Britain in India](#), several imperial players in [Africa](#)), exterminated them in order to seize their land ([England/Britain](#) and [America in the New World](#), Britain in [Tasmania](#)/Australia), or destroyed the native environments via economic exploitation ([America](#) and [Spain](#) in the New World).

William Catton echoes Sauer's theme in his [Overshoot](#). Catton's work is called neo-Malthusian, as it repeats the "dismal science" observation of Thomas Malthus, which essentially states that people will always outstrip their energy supply. In Malthus' pre-industrial world, the energy came largely in the form of food. There is little intrinsic difference between a calorie of food delivered to the human stomach and a calorie of gasoline delivered to an automobile's fuel tank. Both sun-based energy sources are used to power human activities; gasoline calories are simply substituted for food calories in moving people across our planet.

Catton called that reckless optimism "emotional exuberance," and defined it as an "almost euphoric mood" that, in the context of his work, meant the emotional high that comes from burning through one's resources before they are all used up ("environmental exuberance") and the inevitable collapse ensues.[\[1\]](#) That exuberance was due to people's being unable or unwilling to see that using something up far faster than it could be replenished would end in a grim "morning after" when the resources were depleted. That "exuberance" is another variation of the [zero-sum-game](#), and the losers in the

exuberant pillage of resources (mainly energy, but also [people](#)) are simply ignored.

Catton's concept of "exuberance" is virtually unassailable, and aptly describes the European/settler-state mentality for the past several centuries. However, such egocentric exuberance has nothing to do with an abundance mentality. The exuberant mentality states that "there is always more where that came from," even if there was not (also called the "cornucopian" paradigm).

"Sustainable" Does Not Mean Abundant

With the understandable horror that accompanies comprehension of the West's amazingly shortsighted and rapacious economic systems, the concept of "sustainability" is being promoted in many places. No industrialized society has come close to being sustainable, not when its primary resource is being used up about a [million times faster than it was created](#). Environmentalists have adopted the "let's ride bikes" philosophy, and are ideologically opposed to the *idea* of abundance, preferring austerity (the opposite of abundance) solutions, the kind that [Fuller said were doomed](#).^[2] Also, many Westerners have looked to the pre-industrialized world for examples of "sustainable" societies. The concept of sustainability being promoted is this: humans can "sustainably" harvest ecosystems. In pre-industrial cultures this has often been the case, such as the [Pacific Northwest culture](#), the [Great Plains culture](#), the [Eastern Woodlands culture](#), the New Guinea Highlands culture, perhaps the [Amazon culture](#) and some others. Those cultures did not engage in deforestation *and* plow agriculture, which eventually turns fertile land into desert, as it has in the [Fertile Crescent](#) and elsewhere. However, those kinds of sustainable solutions are not based on the abundance principle either. It is still a zero-sum-game, and in those instances our fellow creatures paid the price. Humans caused the [displacement/extinction](#) of the native flora and fauna wherever they showed up over the past 50,000 years or so. In addition, most if not all pre-industrial sedentary cultures had some form of forced servitude. There may be no "golden age" of the human past, and definitely not an abundance-based one.^[3] When Europeans conquered the world all those years ago, they unleashed another wave of displacements/extinctions, but that time the [pre-industrialized peoples largely went extinct](#). Today's popular concept of "sustainable" is still scarcity-based.

What Does Abundance Look Like?

As [stated earlier](#), a “win-win” concept is based on abundance and might be what everybody would prefer, although [younger souls](#) may rather play the “I win, you lose” game. What is true abundance, and what does it look like? Many people are envisioning an abundance-based world today, but very few have addressed economic abundance and how it would be almost entirely dependent on energy abundance. Unless there is economic abundance, the rest of the abundance ideas probably *cannot happen*.

Free energy is the key to making an [abundance-based world](#) feasible. People living in abundance not only would [never engage in warfare](#), they would harm no living thing, or as close to that ideal as is possible. In an abundance-based world:

- Our [energy-production methods](#) would not be destructive to humans or the planet;
- Our [water needs](#) would be met with zero environmental impact;
- There would be no exploitation of [forests](#), either to use the forest products or [raze the forests to make farmland](#);
- All of our [food](#) would be produced with nearly zero environmental impact; we would not dominate/exploit ecosystems to serve human needs;
- People would almost exclusively be [vegetarian](#) (eating nothing with a brain);
- We would not need to [ravage the earth](#) to obtain metal, glass and other materials;
- The exchange aspect of economics would either disappear or become of minimal importance, as nobody needed or wanted to keep score anymore; money, accountants, lawyers and other exchange-related professions would largely disappear; if there was still scorekeeping taking place, it would account for the well-being of *every living being*, not just human welfare;
- Concepts of right and wrong would largely disappear, because the cost of being “wrong” would not threaten anybody’s survival;
- Because our material needs could be met without exploiting other life forms (even plants), the “cornucopian” paradigm would become reality, because there would always be more where that came from, and nothing would be harmed to get it;
- Because people would be eating their [ideal diet of live food](#) and living in a clean world, almost all of today’s diseases would disappear, and what disease might [manifest would truly be cured](#), not subject to the [greed-based medical “treatments”](#) that exist today;
- Very little human effort would be required to provide life’s necessities, and that effort would be freely given for the benefit of all.

With an abundance-based reality, human intelligence and manipulative ability could be directed toward making the world a better place and having fun instead of exploiting and violating each other. There are other visions of an abundance-based world that might make the concept clearer, and some follow.

The television show *Star Trek*, especially *The Next Generation* series, depicts a world partly based on abundance. Onboard the starships are replicators that provide any kind of food, clothing or other material that people need. In that reality, money became an obsolete concept. No *Star Trek* episode I know of portrayed the situation, but imagine if a man from today's world was planted in a room with a replicator and he spent a day replicating food, piling it in a corner. Then he replicated a huge wardrobe of clothing. He then began replicating gold and diamonds, piling it in another corner. In a few days, he filled the entire room with replicated goods; both the necessities and what we today call "luxuries." He then went to the holodeck and created a virtual paradise, replete with a harem. He would gorge himself and sleep on piles of gold with his virtual women, but he might eventually realize how silly his behavior was. If he did not realize his folly in a reasonable length of time, Captain Picard or Counselor Troi would gently ask what he was doing. He would eventually realize that in a world of abundance, his behavior was crazy.

[Michael Roads](#) recounts many incredible mystical experiences in his books, but the most amazing was his first, which propelled him into his journey. In his *Into a Timeless Realm*, he described his visit to two future earth civilizations, about three hundred years into our future. Those two civilizations explored the two "extremes" of the love principle: [those who chose love and those who did not](#). He first [visited a hellish and steeply-hierarchical world](#) that made *Blade Runner*'s Los Angeles pale by comparison. In a world where all people were primarily serving themselves, everybody lost. Then Roads [visited the world](#) where people chose love, and had a joyous experience almost beyond imagining. As a species, we are today facing a divine paradox: only by caring for each other can we save ourselves.

Neale Donald Walsch's "God" would call the loving world Roads visited one populated with ["highly evolved beings"](#). In societies of highly evolved beings, the abundance principle reigns and the time spent at their "jobs" is called "joy time," and such efforts are how they fulfill their souls. Nobody performs a "job" that they hate in those societies.

[Fuller](#) said that when economic abundance came to pass (if we did not destroy ourselves first), humanity would still have plenty of issues to deal with, such as two men falling in love with the same woman, but humanity's efforts would be directed more

toward self-realization than survival.

What if instead of [eighty times](#) the calories available from our diets, a level which only some industrialized peoples enjoy today, *all* humans had access to energy a thousand times greater than our dietary calories? If every human had a thousand “energy slaves,” (or ten thousand) and their use harmed nobody, would there ever be want again on this planet? The [technology exists today](#) to make that a daily reality for all humans.

Abundance can become humanity’s reality, but we first have to imagine what it would look like. Do we want to pursue abundance? The choice is ours.

Footnotes

[1] See William Catton’s *Overshoot*, pp. 275-276.

[2] My opinion that environmentalists are hooked on austerity and are ideologically opposed to an abundance concept has been formed from many years of interacting with them and watching others attempt to interest environmentalists in free energy. [Richard Heinberg](#) is merely one example of many.

[3] See, for instance, Jared Diamond’s *The Third Chimpanzee*, chapter 17, “The Golden Age That Never Was.”

The next section: [Orthodoxy Versus Alternatives - The Layman's Quandary](#) (37K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Orthodoxy Versus Alternatives: The Layman's Quandary

By Wade Frazier

June 2007

[A Note to My Readers](#)

[Introduction](#)

[The Virtues and Limitations of Orthodoxy](#)

[The Virtues and Limitations of Alternatives](#)

[What Can a Layman Do?](#)

A Note to My Readers: This is an introductory essay that links to parts of my website that contain the detailed support for my contentions. If anything in this essay seems unfounded or superficial, I suggest taking the related link to the more detailed discussion. This is one of several “doorway” essays to my 1,200-page site, and is [not intended to be a stand-alone essay](#), at least stand-alone enough to convince readers new to the ideas presented in this essay. I also am [limited by my American heritage](#). Non-Americans may find that this essay has limited relevance and usefulness, particularly those from nations where English is not the official language.

Introduction

My introduction to the contrast between orthodoxy and practical alternatives occurred nearly forty years ago, when my father [reversed the hardening of his arteries](#) by adopting a live food diet, something that orthodox medicine [still maintains is impossible](#). The booklet that saved his life was [banned in the United States](#) a generation ago.

When I was fourteen, my first professional mentor invented what a major federal study hailed as the [world's best engine for powering an automobile](#). His invention [came to him in an instant](#), fully realized.

When I was sixteen, I had my [mystical awakening](#) after forty hours of meditation training. While my mystical awakening was a vivid and valid experience, that meditation class' teacher committed many abuses of his position of trust, including hypnotizing female clients and then seducing them. I eventually learned that what came to my professional mentor in a [flash](#) was an instance of mystical insight. Nearly all of physics' giants were [mystics](#), and [similar instants of insight](#) gave birth to relativity and parts of quantum mechanics, which are the two pillars of today's physics. Science's giants [did not subscribe to the rationalist-materialist paradigm](#) that dominates scientific thinking today. For practitioners of today's orthodox science, that fact is often deeply uncomfortable. The "[skeptics](#)," whose motivation seems to be defending the tenets of the rationalist-materialist paradigm, often attack scientists with a mystical orientation.

At age seventeen, [I was introduced to Paul Bragg's work](#) and have tried following his prescription for health, to one degree or another, ever since. I recently discovered that Bragg betrayed his readers by [lying about his age](#) and events critical to his public image. [His teachings' validity](#) is open to question.

Those events highlight the promise and pitfalls of orthodoxy and the pursuit of alternatives.

A decade after those seminal events, I became involved with [the most sustained effort yet made](#) to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace, and I [learned the hard way](#) how the world really works. I am a [semi-retired activist](#) and seek the quiet life. However, humanity is on the brink of [committing species suicide over the energy issue](#), so I am not as retired as I would like to be.

I discovered long ago that [personal integrity is the world's scarcest commodity](#), yet it is the *key* for averting global catastrophe. For the layman, distinguishing the bogus from the genuine, be it regarding either orthodox practice and theories or those hailing from alternative practitioners, can be a daunting task. What follows is what I have learned on my journey regarding orthodoxy versus alternatives, in many disciplines.

The Virtues and Limitations of Orthodoxy

The term *orthodox* is often associated with religion, but can relate to other disciplines such as science, medicine, economics, history, news and politics. Various synonyms for orthodox are *mainstream*, *conventional*, *approved*, *traditional*, *conservative*, *accepted* and *established*. In its positive sense, orthodoxy means the tried-and-true. In its negative sense, it means blind allegiance to dogma or the herd logic of "everybody else is doing it, so it must be right."

The environments the various disciplines were developed within have impacted all of them, and those disciplines usually have stated ideals. Science has the scientific method, history has objectivity, politics has freedom and justice (with democracy as its ideal implementation), the press strives for objectivity through its freedom, modern economic theory has the ideal of free markets. Those are not universally held ideals, however. [Howard Zinn](#) has openly questioned whether [history should be objective](#), as have others. The free market is a cornerstone of *capitalist* theory, not Marxist theory. In totalitarian societies, the ideal of politics is control. Is there an objective reality that science can truly explore with its method? History's greatest physicists [doubted it](#). Also, those ideals have never been seen in the real world. There has never been a free market, a free press, an objective history or a democracy. There may not be one instance of the scientific method fully prevailing over the influence of vested interests, scientific dogma, the human ego and other limitations. Pure science does not exist.

Orthodoxy's primary virtue should be that it is tried, tested, and validated - in short, proven to work. Our modern industrialized world runs on the basis of orthodox physics, and we [sent men to the moon](#) based on it. Benefits have certainly derived from the practice of orthodox science, as well as the means to destroy humanity. However, Albert Einstein openly acknowledged that [humanity knew virtually nothing about how the universe operated](#); his peers acknowledged that science's tools may be unsuitable for fully investigating it, and physics is considered the hardest and purest science. The life sciences and applied science are even less hard and pure. The [Wright brothers](#) flew for five years before the scientific establishment even acknowledged that man-powered flight was possible. Thomas Edison lit up Menlo Park with his [light bulb](#) while scientists in his neighborhood and around the world derided his invention as impossible and "idiotic," and could not be bothered to go see it for themselves, and Edison was the world's most famous scientist at the time. The man who [discovered the virtues of antiseptic medicine](#) died from the beatings he received in the insane asylum where he was involuntarily committed. His demise was partly due to the vicious attacks that he received from his *peers*. Antiseptic medicine was not adopted in the West until after his

death. Similar ignoring of the evidence is happening today, in [many areas of science](#).

How many orthodox practices come close to achieving their ideals? The American mainstream news' distortions of reality, particularly the television news, are easy to see. Only those living in the "reality bubble" provided by [TV news](#) believe that it depicts *reality*. The [print news](#) is nearly as biased, particularly in these [post-Orwellian days](#). The history I was taught in school was a [series of lies](#), with pernicious mythmaking concocted about fake heroes such as [Christopher Columbus](#), [Junípero Serra](#) and [George Washington](#). Few would argue that *any* orthodox religion has a monopoly on the truth. The more orthodox *any* religion is, the more likely its practitioners will be intolerant of other religions, seeing their path as the *only* one to enlightenment and salvation. Love is arguably the [primary message of all spiritual masters](#), but it can be a rare sentiment among religion's practitioners.

Western medicine can be highly effective for treating trauma. Many lives have been saved in emergency rooms. But Western medicine is usually worse than worthless for treating chronic degenerative diseases, which kills two-thirds of Americans today. The immensely expensive, agonizing and worthless treatments for degenerative disease are the only legal ones, as with [heart disease](#) and [cancer](#), while the harmless, effective and inexpensive treatments for [heart disease](#) and [cancer](#) are outlawed. Vaccines may also be [worse than worthless](#). Antibiotics are a mixed bag, with the [antibiotic age nearing its end](#). [Compulsory fluoridation](#) was a ploy by fluorine polluters to dispose of their industrial waste, and one of earth's deadlier substances has been foisted on an unsuspecting public as *medicine*. At least three-quarters of what is spent in Western medicine is probably a complete waste of money, if improving people's health was the goal. But that is the problem: improving health is a low priority. Western medicine is one of earth's most lucrative industries, with medical doctors being earth's highest-paid professionals. Western medicine is a gold rush. About the only tools in a Western doctor's medical kit are knives and drugs. When the only tool available is a hammer, every problem looks like a nail. Improvements in sanitation, nutrition and hygiene are almost solely responsible for humanity's increasing life expectancy over the past two centuries, not the interventions of Western medicine.

Capitalistic theory is based on assumptions of [greed and fear](#). When those are a discipline's root assumptions, the resultant theories and real world outcomes will be of dubious worth. [Global capitalism is a racket](#), increasingly [admitted by insiders](#), and bloody [European colonialism was its parent](#). As I write this, the primary outcome of the U.S./British invasions of [Iraq](#) and Afghanistan, other than millions of deaths and a world

on the brink of Armageddon, is the [Western energy companies gaining control over the world's energy supplies](#), stealing it from the nations that sat on those energy deposits. [Energy runs the world economy and always has](#). [The world is also running out of oil](#), which is the black gold of the industrialized economies.

The American republic may well be in its last days, and is being infamously compared to the Roman republic as it became an empire (the other pertinent comparison is to late Weimar or early Nazi Germany, with [America's invasion of the Afghanistan and Iraq](#) similar to [Germany's invasion of its neighbors](#) at the beginning of World War II).

As [R. Buckminster Fuller](#) stated long ago, all politicians are [stooges of the economic interests](#), and until scarcity is resolved on a global basis, [there will always be wars](#). Fuller also observed that political systems competition will not resolve the scarcity issue, because all current political systems are based on [who receives the benefit of the scarce economic production](#). It is time to rescue Fuller's vital work from its neglect.

The scarcity concept underlies all of today's orthodox ideologies, be they in [economics, politics, religion or science](#). Under an [abundance paradigm](#), all such ideologies will become obsolete.

While the tried-and-true aspect of orthodoxy is its ideal, all too often orthodoxy prevails not because it is tried-and-true, but because vested political-economic interests profit from the situation.

Conflict of interest is probably orthodoxy's greatest corrupting influence, and below are some examples.

- [Scientists working for fluoride polluters](#), often secretly, performed the makeover of fluoride from a deadly industrial waste to a tooth's best friend, and the actions of [Harold Hodge](#) and friends comprise an instance of the wolves looking after the sheep's interests. When [Phyllis Mullenix](#) published data demonstrating that fluoride caused brain damage, her career was quickly terminated. She is [one of many](#) who had their careers derailed for challenging pro-fluoridation dogma.
- The conflict-of-interest dynamic seen in [fluoridation](#) can be seen in [orthodox cancer treatment](#) and many other areas of Western medicine, such as [Louis Pasteur's career](#) and the paradigm that his work erected in the life sciences and medicine.

- MIT, which is a major recipient of hot fusion research funding, presented [fraudulently manipulated data in order to dismiss cold fusion](#), and [Arthur C. Clark](#) said that cold fusion's dismissal might be one of the greatest scandals in science's history.
- The "[skeptics](#)" attack scientific fact and theory that challenges orthodoxy, particularly that which threatens to invalidate the [rationalist-materialist paradigm](#) that mainstream science operates under and the economic empires built on that foundation. The "skeptic" that has attacked me has [dishonesty as his work's primary characteristic](#). Is he being paid to purvey his disinformation, as a [corporate hit man](#) who we encountered certainly was?
- The conflicts of interest in the [American media](#) are deep and pervasive.
- The winners write history, and [objectivity quickly flies out the door](#) when fabricating the fiction known as [mainstream American history](#).
- The Catholic Church's [Albigensian Crusade](#) is an example of wiping out the religious competition in the name of saving souls. Today, the Bush administration is attempting to reunite the church and state.
- It is difficult to find a more blatant conflict of interest in today's politics than that exemplified by the Bush administration, which may well be U.S. history's most corrupt. The Bush administration is filled with oil executives, with Dick Cheney's Halliburton given lucrative no-bid contracts in the wake of the [U.S. invasion of the world's most oil-rich region](#), while the Bush administration hands over the spoils of war to American oil companies. The [privatization of Iraq's oil deposits](#) is well underway.

Orthodoxy, by its very definition, is not where new ideas or directions originate. However, not every departure from orthodoxy is necessarily a valid direction (in fact, relatively few are), and that is the root of the layman's quandary. Part of the problem is that few pursue alternatives, so less effort is expended in those directions, as well as few funding possibilities.

While the perils of orthodoxy are many, the alternatives also have their problems.

The Virtues and Limitations of Alternatives

For all of the orthodox practices described above, there are alternative theories and

practices. The validity of any alternatives or orthodoxies is a matter of debate. Rarely is an alternative considered to be of equal validity to orthodoxy. They are often compared and contested. Eclectic practices can take the best of both, but such approaches are rarely seen in our winner-take-all world. [Capitalism is an offspring of colonialism](#), and capitalism's excesses gave birth to Marxist theory. The most visible ideological "battle" of the twentieth century was between the capitalist and communist camps. Today, [Parecon](#) is a challenge to capitalism by America's radical left.

A great deal of "revisionist" history has been published lately, but the "revisionism" is often [simply seeing what the primary documents tell us](#), something that the mainstream historians [failed to honestly do](#). The alternative media, particularly the leftist media, hews far closer to the facts than the mainstream media does, as [the mainstream media was long ago corrupted by its influences](#). Alternative movements that challenge the orthodox perspective accompany all political establishments. Nationalism is largely an exercise in [herd management](#), but nation-states dominate the planet, with no practical alternatives currently tolerated.

In science, alternative theory and data is often called "fringe" science. Most of history's radical breakthroughs in science and technology have come from the fringes, the [Wright brothers'](#) airplane and Einstein's relativity being classic examples.

The practical applications of those disciplines impact our daily lives, at times quite profoundly. The "black ops" world is [privy to technologies](#) which demonstrate that orthodox physics textbooks are woefully inadequate. I have seen some of those technologies [with my own eyes](#). The implications of *existing* technologies that demonstrate the validity of free energy, anti-gravity and probably time travel, reduce today's physics textbooks to a primitive era's quaint notions of reality, something that [today's professors uneasily realize](#). The implementation of those "deep black" technologies *can* bring about an unprecedented transition from a world based on scarcity to [one based on abundance](#).

Today, two-thirds of Americans die of easily preventable degenerative disease. The [treatments that actually work are suppressed](#), largely because of the economic empires built on providing the worthless treatments.

Every orthodox religion has splinter sects that teach very different lessons than orthodoxy presents. The Rosicrucians, Cabbalists and Sufis are the mystical branches of Christianity, Judaism and Islam, and those mystical sects all embrace reincarnation,

which is generally considered a fact in Eastern religions. All Eastern religions have their orthodox and splinter sects too, although religious toleration is more prevalent among them than in the Western religions. Is [love](#) more predominant in the splinter sects than the orthodox ones? Both [Jesus](#) and Buddha challenged the religious orthodoxies of their day.

Charlatanry is easily found in the alternatives, such as [Paul Bragg](#) lying about his age in order to amass “life extension” credentials, or [my first mystical teacher abusing his position](#). There is [plenty of chaff](#) among the free energy field's wheat, and [plenty of revisionist history serves unsavory agendas](#), not a pursuit of the truth.

What Can a Layman Do?

Although alternatives at the margins are where genuine “progress” usually originates, how is the layman to know what alternatives are genuine and what orthodox methods are not? Personal experience is usually the best indicator, but it takes time, effort and intelligence to compare orthodoxy to the alternatives. Most people do not have the time or inclination to successfully weigh the evidence and make informed decisions, particularly those of a technical nature, much less pursuing the alternative practice. That is largely why orthodoxy prevails – it is the path of least resistance. Unfortunately, the price of making the wrong choice regarding medical treatment can be one's life. As Noam Chomsky once said, if people want to learn something new, they have to do the work. Nobody is going to open up people's heads and pour in knowledge. If somebody says they can, they will almost certainly deliver its opposite: mind-controlling dogma.

If people do not have the time and energy to investigate and pursue alternatives, to whom can they delegate such responsibility? That is part of the layman's quandary. Orthodoxy, in all the important disciplines, is increasingly corrupt and out-of-touch with reality, but the ranks of alternative practitioners are also riddled with charlatans, the deluded and the incompetent.

While orthodoxy supposedly has a large body of experience to support its positions, its assertions are often baseless, particularly when they are used to persecute the alternatives. As an example, most alternative cancer treatments abandon the attack-the-tumor [paradigm](#) and pursue other paths, such as rehabilitating the immune system. There *is not one instance* of the orthodox medical establishment [subjecting an alternative cancer treatment to a fair test](#). When one cancer researcher developed a

treatment that helped rehabilitate the immune system, at his trial, where the prosecution was trying for life imprisonment, a witness introduced evidence to demonstrate [that the alternative treatment failed to kill cancer cells](#), as evidence of its worthlessness! Is such blindness intentional, or is it an example of such rigid adherence to dogma that the witness could not *imagine* any tool other than a hammer?

The public usually [acquiesces to the population management](#) that orthodoxy performs. Orthodoxy is *designed* to suppress dissent, keep the cash registers singing and maintain its control. Machiavelli [made an astute observation](#) on the hazards of pursuing alternatives, which is as relevant today as it was five hundred years ago.

There are criminals in both the orthodox and alternative camps. However, [Paul Bragg's](#) charlatantry probably hurt few people and his work may have helped many, while [Harold Hodge](#) and [Morris Fishbein](#) arguably harmed millions with their interest-conflicted efforts. Since orthodoxy is the establishment by definition, only [alternative practitioners find themselves prosecuted](#), while orthodox criminals can [have immensely successful](#) and [lucrative](#) careers. Orthodoxy deserves the greatest wariness, not the alternatives. To understand why harmless cancer treatments are outlawed while the violent and deadly treatments are the only legal ones, reading [George Orwell's work](#) might be helpful. Protecting the public is the greatest protection racket of all.

In summary, the rut of orthodox practice is taking humanity to the brink of self-annihilation. If there ever was a time for pursuing alternatives, it is now. However, the alternative pursuits are filled with pitfalls, dead-ends and unproductive paths, something I learned firsthand in my [alternative energy days](#). I wish I had a better answer, but experience may be the *only* teacher, and effort must be expended to pursue alternatives. What people derive from the effort is usually directly proportional to what they invest, although some issues, [such as energy](#), can be critical leverage points, where the reward to humanity and the planet can far exceed the investment.

The next section: [The Strange, Harrowing Journeys of Free Energy Activists](#) (75K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Strange, Harrowing Journeys of Free Energy Activists

By Wade Frazier

December 2006

[Introduction](#)

[Steven Greer's Odyssey](#)

[The Adventures of Other Free Energy Activists](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

The human journey hangs in the balance today. Humanity is very capable of [destroying modern civilization and even most of life on earth](#). We are also quite capable of turning earth into a heavenly place [where we all live in beauty, peace and plenty](#). The crux of the situation relies in great measure on *real* economics, and energy has always been the [underlying basis for all economies for all time](#). During my pursuit of alternative energy and healing the planet, I came to understand that free energy technologies have existed on earth since before I was born. Those technologies have been [demonstrated](#) to those close to me. The general public has not been invited to those demonstrations because of some [impressive forces at work](#).

My alternative energy efforts largely ended in 1988 when the people who run the world [wiped out my life's work](#) and ruined many lives in the process. The Big Boys play for keeps. While my alternative energy efforts largely ended in 1988, I have sporadically rejoined the effort.

There may be nothing on earth today with more potential impact to humanity than free energy, and I will present the journeys of some of the field's activists. Critics have pointed to the idiosyncrasies and personal foibles of the activists discussed in this essay, but this essay's primary focus is the *reality* that those activists have experienced,

not their virtues or failings. Learning the lessons of that field the hard way is not recommended, as the hard way usually means having your life shattered if not prematurely terminated.

Steven Greer's Odyssey

The catalyst for writing this essay was reading Steven Greer's *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, which is the book version of a recently rendered oral history of his life. I have been following Greer's efforts since the early 1990s, and helped stage the [New Energy Movement](#) conference where he spoke in 2004. Greer's journey saw him mount an impressive and dangerous attempt to make the reality of extraterrestrial (ET) civilizations visiting earth, today, officially acknowledged. The logical extension of his [ET efforts](#) was the [pursuit of free energy](#), because they are conjoined.

Most free energy activists I know of began their journeys at a young age. They may not have pursued alternative energy while young, but they all had personal qualities and youthful experiences that led them down paths that few travel, and such paths regularly lead to the energy issue, which is humanity's [root issue](#) and always has been. Those who have pursued free energy the longest and most successfully have had high personal integrity in common, largely because the perils and temptations are so great that personal integrity is probably the most important quality for continued pursuit. [Personal integrity is the world's scarcest commodity](#), which makes those activists quite unusual.

Nearly all of modern physics' giants were, to one degree or another, [mystics](#), which is true of most free energy activists and inventors that I have encountered. [Ken Wilber](#) posited that the giants of physics became mystics due to science's failure to explain the universe. I am not so sure. I have known minds that were [arguably on par](#) with Einstein's and Tesla's, and their mystical orientation seemed significantly *responsible* for their scientific and inventive insights, not a result of watching science fail to explain the universe in a satisfactory manner.

As with [Dennis Lee](#), Steven Greer had a challenging childhood. Greer thinks that his troubled family life helped make him stronger.^[1] Greer also had a keen appreciation of nature from a young age, which is common among those devoting their lives to healing the planet. Greer had mystical experiences from a young age, partly due to being

spared religious indoctrination, because religion is often spirituality's worst enemy. Greer's mystical initiation began with a near-death experience at age seventeen.[2] Dennis was in his early twenties [when he had his mystical breakthrough](#). My awakening happened was [when I was sixteen](#). Brian O'Leary's [mystical awakening](#) came much later, when he was almost forty years old.[3] [My first professional mentor](#) began his mystical journey as a child, but had no framework for his experiences. His startling mystical abilities were largely responsible for his ingenious inventions, similar to [Nikola Tesla](#). Others whose free energy efforts I respect had similar awakening experiences, usually in their late teens or early twenties. Those experiences often led to radicalizing experiences, which usually meant leaving behind the conventional beliefs that [the masses subscribe to](#).

Greer articulated an important concept quite well, writing:

“Most of the problems that we face in our world today, whether they be spiritual and religious or scientific, political and economic, are all because people are holding onto some perspective that has nothing to do with the truth but has to do with their own belief system and addiction to something that is outdated, and they can't let go of it.”[4]

That is another way of stating the [integrity](#) issue. We humans tend to abandon the pursuit of truth and settle for self-serving beliefs, particularly [in a world of scarcity](#), as those self-serving beliefs usually help justify our political-economic status. Jesus described a similar phenomenon when he spoke about a rich man's entering heaven and a camel's passing through a needle's eye. That phenomenon is also [alive and well in science](#). It is possible that those self-serving delusions would largely disappear in a [world based on abundance](#). Greer wrote about receiving an angry, personal attack from a prominent scientist at one of his public talks. After the talk, some of the scientist's associates approached Greer and said that his public outburst was not due to his believing that Greer's ET/UFO discussion was wrong, but because, “he thought that maybe it really was true, and it meant that everything he knew and has been teaching for sixty years of his career was rubbish!”[5]

Although witnessing ET craft in flight is [easy to accomplish](#), denial is a common response from the public to UFO, ET and free energy talk, and Greer noted how

“normal” such behavior was. Greer related an incident when a U.S. military general invited Greer to brief him on the ET/UFO situation. During the briefing the general noted that he himself had been stonewalled and ridiculed by the military establishment in his attempts to find out more. He then related a poignant anecdote. The general's father had discovered ET/UFO cover-up activities within the U.S. government and had run into the usual wall of silence and denial. He told his son about the situation, but the future general thought his father was crazy. His father eventually killed himself (or, quite likely, was murdered and his death made to appear a suicide). The general told Greer, “It wasn’t until I got into *this* position at the Pentagon that I realized that the old man was right!”[\[6\]](#) If an ET/UFO whistleblower was thought a “kook” by his own son, what chance does somebody like Greer have with the general population?

Greer has briefed officials from the White House, Capitol Hill, CIA, Pentagon, United Nations, Vatican and other institutions, and has yet to receive a scoffing reaction. Instead, the briefing’s recipients show deep concern and are troubled by the implications. The most common reaction to his briefing again hinges on the integrity issue: virtually none of the briefing’s recipients has ever done much with the information. They fear the people behind the cover-up, feel the job is too big for them, and leave the task of uncovering the situation to somebody else. Greer was regularly told by insiders that because he was an outside agent (Greer was a hospital emergency room doctor by profession) that he had the freedom to make noise on the ET/UFO issue. Those insiders always wanted to stay inside and quiet. Once Greer briefed a U. S. Senator, and they discussed why the sitting U.S. President (Bill Clinton) and others would not make the subject public, and the Senator said, “Well, I’m just a Senator,” and Greer retorted, “Well, I’m just a doctor!”[\[7\]](#) Not long after Greer briefed the CIA’s Director, one of Clinton’s friends told him that they were afraid that if Clinton tried revealing the ET/UFO situation to the public, he would end up like [JFK](#).[\[8\]](#) That responsibility-refusing dynamic is typical of all humans, not just the elites.

Sitting American presidents are out of the loop regarding the ET/UFO situation. Clinton read Greer’s briefing materials at the White House and exclaimed: “I know this is all true, but God damn it, they won’t tell me a thing. Not a God damned thing!”[\[9\]](#) Jimmy Carter tried getting UFO information from George Bush the First, who was then the CIA’s Director. Bush refused to give Carter the CIA's information, and told Carter to get it from someplace else. Carter persisted, and was eventually threatened with an abrupt end to his presidency if he did not immediately cease his investigative efforts.[\[10\]](#) JFK was also stonewalled as he tried investigating the ET/UFO situation. Dwight Eisenhower was the last sitting president in the loop.[\[11\]](#) During Greer’s journey, he was given a classified CIA report on the wiretap they had on Marilyn Monroe’s phone. Monroe told a

friend that JFK had seen recovered ET craft, and Monroe was going to call a press conference to publicly disclose it. Monroe “committed suicide” the next day.[\[12\]](#) An FBI agent told Greer that he could be locked up almost indefinitely for publishing that Monroe document, but Greer does so to this day. People such as Laurence Rockefeller, Barry Goldwater and even secretary generals of the United Nations have tried making the ET/UFO issue a public matter, but were thwarted.[\[13\]](#)

Not long after Greer briefed the sitting Director of the CIA (James Woolsey), he was invited to meet with the people behind the ET/UFO cover-up and much more. That group essentially runs the world. They told him that the U.S. president and CIA director, “don’t know anything, and they are never going to know anything.”[\[14\]](#) Much of what Greer was told at that meeting seemed incredible, but Greer was able to later confirm virtually everything he was told. At that meeting, they told Greer that they had paid out [\\$100 billion in quiet money](#) over the years to prevent free energy, anti-gravity and related technologies from becoming publicly used. When I heard Greer say that in 2004, it made perfect sense, as I [encountered those stories many times](#) during my adventures. I am sure that members of the same group [offered Dennis a billion dollars](#) to stop our pursuit of free energy. As [Tom Bearden says](#), those offers are their “benign” tactics. Only when the “benign” and subtle methods fail do they begin playing rough, [as they did with us](#).

The global control cabal is divided, and factions of the more “benevolent” half have demonstrated those technologies to a [select few](#). About half of the cabal realizes that the power plays by the darker half threaten to turn earth into a cinder, and they favor bringing those technologies to the public.[\[15\]](#) The darker half also has a plan to wipe out about six billion people and turn the surviving humans into pliant slaves, but part of their motivation is also to reduce humanity’s burden to earth’s ecosystems. Ironically, with free energy, there does not need to be *any* [burden to earth’s ecosystems](#). That global controlling organization is not one that many conspiracy researchers/theorists are familiar with. That organization is the offspring of secret societies and elite manipulators going back thousands of years. The favored grist for the conspiracy theorist mills - the Bilderbergers, the Freemasons, Bohemian Grove, Skull and Bones, the Trilateral Commission, the CIA/NSA and other alphabet soup federal agencies, defense contractors, European royalty and so on - are not in charge of that global cabal. The cabal has penetrated and influences those organizations, thereby limiting what those organizations are capable of. The rank-and-file members of those compromised organizations have little idea what is really happening or who is calling the global shots. CEOs of *Fortune 500* corporations that are involved in the global control paradigm and that have helped developed those exotic technologies are not in the loop either (here is

a [video](#) of him talking about the situation).[\[16\]](#)

While I do not believe that names are important, Greer has mentioned some of the organizations involved with maintaining global control. The Mormon financial empire is the most powerful member of the present group.[\[17\]](#) Interestingly, [Mormons stole Dennis' company in Seattle](#), and the person [who led the effort to destroy Dennis' company in Ventura](#) was a Mormon who was later arrested in a [Mormon scam](#). The Jesuit order is also a major player. For the people who play at those levels, wealth is largely a means, not an end. The end is power. Controlling the [world's financial systems](#) and keeping free energy and related technologies out of the public's hands are simply the means to keep control over humanity. People [living in scarcity](#) are easy to control. People [living in abundance](#) are not. Consequently, people motivated primarily by greed are not the most ruthless members of the global cabal. Religious fanatics and Armageddonists are the most vicious foot soldiers of that global controlling group.[\[18\]](#) They want to bring the world to an end so they can all float off to heaven together. They have some strange bedfellows, and studying the spiritual path is important to understanding the situation. The brethren of those religious fanatics are variously called negative masters, Satanists, the Dark Brotherhood and other names. They [have made self-service a science](#) and enjoy all the death and suffering that their efforts cause. They help the religious fanatics and greedy hyper-capitalists keep control over humanity, but do it for very different ends. Instead of destroying the planet and everybody ascending to heaven, they want to drag as many as possible into [hell](#).

The global cartel's goals and means often align with the milieu's smaller players. Greed and a lust for power are not the sole province of that global cabal; they are simply its most accomplished players. For instance, I doubt that the global cabal was deeply involved in our [Seattle events](#). [Bill the BPA Hit Man](#) may have worked for the cabal, but perhaps not. The BPA and local electric companies may have simply been protecting their local markets. Likewise, the [Boston events](#) may have had little Big Boy involvement, but [that first offer to buy us out](#) was most likely a Big Boy overture. Most of what I saw with Dennis was probably just average people in the thrall of greed, fear and a lust for power. The Big Boys usually need not expend much effort to derail efforts such as ours, as our "allies" and the local energy gangsters unwittingly do their work for them. We will probably never know who [stole our technical material during the raid](#); it was undoubtedly for somebody in the energy racket food chain, but might have been a relatively local effort. Likewise, I am only about half convinced that [Mr. Skeptic's efforts](#) regarding Dennis are being done of the behalf of some covert interest. The human ego may explain the [libelous "skepticism"](#) that I have seen Mr. Skeptic engage in.[\[19\]](#)

Brian O'Leary is, along with Ed Mitchell, the most outspoken ex-astronaut on the ET/UFO issue, and has had bizarre and perilous encounters with high-ranking officials. The U.S. military brass knows full well the reality of the ET/UFO issue, but their cover-up and disinformation efforts are probably more along the lines of their misguided "national security" ideals than it is consciously working on the Big Boys' behalf. In fact, the Big Boys have faked and/or inflated an aspect of the ET/UFO issue to further their power goals. Most of the free energy, anti-gravity and other exotic technologies that I am aware of were at least partly developed by reverse-engineering captured ET craft. Our reproductions of those technologies are relatively primitive. If the ETs that visit earth had primarily malevolent intent, humanity might not exist today. The ETs have technology that could exterminate humanity in short order. Just one of their tiny scout ships could easily defeat's earth's combined military might. However, an acknowledgement of the ET reality would immediately [threaten earth's power structure](#), particularly the Big Boys' grip over humanity.

For many years the Big Boys have planned a fake ET event whereby ETs are portrayed as the ultimate terrorist, and humanity will be duped into huddling under the Big Boys' "protection." It will be a global protection racket. The ET "abduction" phenomenon is at least partly a Big Boy operation to manipulate people into fearing ETs. The good news is that the ET situation is largely under the control of the benevolently-intended ETs, but they operate under the Prime Directive (*Star Trek* is not all that fictional), and they cannot directly and openly intervene in human affairs unless enough humans ask for it or we are truly in danger of destroying this planet (something that humanity will not be allowed to do). Because humanity *is* toying with its [self-destruction these days](#), our ET pals may reveal themselves in undeniable fashion in the next few years, which would end the dark ones' megalomaniacal dreams. The Big Boys may try to preempt the situation with a manufactured event that vilifies ETs. If the ET card is played, the Big Boys plan to play it first. They also know that if they play that card, they will ultimately lose their game. We therefore are currently suffering under the [biggest cover-up of all time](#). Most of the Star Wars technology has been developed so the controllers can threaten violence against a benevolent public ET landing. Among spirituality initiates, such [malevolent motivation](#) and activity is not difficult to comprehend.

Steven Greer, Dennis Lee and Brian O'Leary have all been subjected to life-threatening, cloak-and-dagger harassment by the Big Boys, Greer perhaps the most visibly. I had begun full-time research on the subject matter that became my website when Greer held his famous 1997 secret U.S. Congressional hearings on the ET/UFO issue. Greer had [about a dozen witnesses testify](#), and his co-chair for the hearings was Apollo 14's Ed Mitchell. Greer was trying to enter by the establishment's front door, something I had

seen Dennis attempt numerous times. I watched from a distance, and it was no big surprise when Greer and members of his team came down with unusual forms of cancer soon after the hearings. I sent information to Greer's assistant, Shari Adamiak, on alternative cancer treatments. Adamiak died in early 1998, as did others in Greer's circle. Greer was the only survivor of those unusual cancer cases. In his book, Greer described the diabolical technologies used to induce their cancers. Greer used his mystical abilities to fend off their attacks, even shaming his assailants into ceasing their efforts (by asking his god to forgive them).[\[20\]](#) Not only do the Big Boys induce deadly diseases with their methods, but they also attack people's minds. Many inventors are [paranoid](#), but Greer wrote that the electromagnetic technology the Big Boys use on inventors and others trying to bring free energy to the world induces or exacerbates paranoid tendencies. I was part of at least one effort that may have come under similar attack, and I am revealing it for the first time on my site at [this footnote](#).[\[21\]](#)

Greer is still at it. What may impress me more than anything else about people such as Greer is their persistence. There are very few like them.

The Adventures of Other Free Energy Activists

Dennis Lee's alternative energy journey is obviously the one most familiar to me, and I present [his journey](#) and [my role in it](#) elsewhere. Dennis is the Indiana Jones of alternative energy, as well as its P.T. Barnum. I have never met or heard of another like him.

Brian O'Leary's journey has also been traumatic and wondrous. He joined NASA just as my [father was leaving it](#). Brian was one of the first civilian astronauts and is still the only human being officially and publicly slated to visit another planet. His PhD was in astronomy, and he was a Mars specialist. He was going to be the science specialist on NASA's first manned voyage to Mars. He is also the first astronaut to resign. Brian writes about those days in his *The Making of an Ex-Astronaut*.

When Brian resigned from the astronaut corps in 1968, [Carl Sagan](#) recruited him to join the Cornell faculty. Brian and Sagan were the world's two most prominent experts on Mars back then. In Brian's *The Making of an Ex-Astronaut*, there is ample evidence of the personality that eventually led him on his journey. Brian still worked with NASA on its planetary probe missions and taught science in the heart of academia. He was a political radical, at least as radical as an Ivy League professor could be, such as leading

an academic protest to the Oval Office's door during the Watergate days, and he has been the science and/or energy advisor for several Democratic presidential candidates (Brian eventually realized what a dead-end electoral politics was). Dramatic events would lead Brian from the establishment's fold. A paranormal experience during an automobile accident put cracks in his orthodox outlook, but it was not until he performed psychically at a [Lifespring class in 1979](#) that his awakening really began. That experience opened new vistas of reality for him, and the dead, mechanistic science that he taught at his day job became increasingly meaningless. Brian eventually left his comfortable academic life behind. Brian later admitted that if he knew what he was in for, he would not have done it. I have similar feelings about [my journey](#). Brian traded an easy life for a difficult one.

Brian began exploring the frontiers of science, and those explorations are chronicled in his *Exploring Inner and Outer Space* and *The Second Coming of Science*, among other later works. Brian became involved in the energy issue many years ago, and his mystical awakening led him on paths rarely traveled. He has visited holy men, free energy inventors, fringe scientists and others across the planet. Brian also kept at least one foot in the orthodox world for quite some time. Brian once helped get Buzz Aldrin a job and shared an office with him during his gradual turn toward the unorthodox, and Brian's last job for the establishment ended when he refused to work on Ronald Reagan's Star Wars program.

Brian has also been involved in controversies unrelated to free energy, such as the [moon landings](#). As with Dennis, I was Brian's spear-carrier for some time. Although I no longer have active involvement with either of them, they are great humanitarians, and being associated with them are among my life's highlights.

Sparky Sweet was a famous free energy inventor who had the goods. He believed that the world would welcome his free energy technology, and instead [came to a lonely and sad end](#).

One of our fellow travelers is Adam Trombly. Here is [an interview](#) that he gave in 2002. When he said that his life turned into a "bad spy novel" when he began his free energy efforts in 1980, he is being modest. He survived several murder attempts and was subjected to numerous cloak-and-dagger activities. Trombly's tale has several confluences with this essay and my work. One is that his father's work in reverse engineering captured [ET](#) craft introduced Trombly to free energy as a [teenager](#). Trombly is well known to several of my associates. I have heard some of his journey's details, and they are mind-blowing. Another connection is that Trombly was Bucky

Fuller's colleague. Fuller was one of the West's first "comprehensivists." Fuller saw the big picture and proposed big solutions. Fuller is also perhaps the first to propose a practical abundance paradigm for the human journey, but his legacy has been co-opted and diluted. I [discovered Fuller's work](#) after I completed my site in 2002, and his work was revelatory. Trombly is reluctant to engage the public, partly because few can comprehend his journey. I have had similar problems, and sympathize when those such as Trombly choose a low profile. Americans have proven particularly obtuse, and American scientists and academics often prove to be the most [naïve and irrational](#) of all, something [Fuller also mentioned](#).

Another fellow traveler is [Tom Bearden](#), whose old eyes have seen some amazing sights. He helped me better understand how free energy suppression works. Not everybody mentioned in this essay belongs to the same drinking club. I have seen and heard people, some close to me, wondering if Steven Greer, Tom Bearden and Dennis Lee were not who they appeared to be, but were perhaps "honeypots" to misdirect free energy inventors and activists onto [unproductive paths](#). Discernment is crucial, especially in the free energy pursuit. I am not endorsing *any* of the activists in this essay. They all have their personal foibles, as do we all, but I *know* that Dennis is not a covert operative. I cannot speak with certainty about Greer and Bearden, but I doubt they are covert operatives, particularly Greer. To one degree or another, we are *all* deluded, which is a hazard of living on the [dualistic physical plane of existence](#). One heartbreaking aspect of the free energy field is watching those who should be allies maligning and attacking each other. I have seen dozens of dishonest attacks on Dennis over the years, and [from within the free energy ranks](#) all too often.

Virtually every activist mentioned in this essay has survived attacks that could have easily ended their lives. Most have tried populist approaches to the free energy issue, Dennis being its ringmaster. They all know that bona fide free energy technology exists, but the Big Boys keep it under wraps. They therefore have tried developing those technologies along independent paths, but that is an incredibly difficult undertaking, even if the Big Boys were not guarding the gate. Dennis has probably been hurt more by his "allies" than by the "bad guys." Greer has written about the innumerable betrayals that he has endured on his journey.

I wrestled with making this next disclosure, but it is important information for those planning to take the free energy journey: virtually every free activist that I know of has become disgusted with humanity at some point on their journeys. If you play at the high levels, it is [almost certain](#). I have watched people enthusiastically embark on a mission to tell the world about free energy, and I have seen them engage the public, scientists,

politicians and others who they hoped would be interested. Every earthly human will be profoundly affected by free energy. I have also watched those activists openly wonder, several sobering years later, if humans are really a sentient species, as almost all they encountered were [mental, spiritual and ethical cripples](#). Finding people with the qualities needed to help overturn the current scarcity paradigm is like hunting for needles in haystacks. Discovering that [personal integrity was the world's scarcest commodity](#) was the primary lesson of my journey, and the lesson I resisted the longest. That is not a fun realization, and that reality makes it unlikely that humanity will thrive as a species without some kind of "divine intervention." When I have watched saintly people come to that same conclusion after years of gradual disillusionment, it has hurt to watch it. That reaction has also been privately expressed to me by some of the greatest "radicals" that I know of, people of international stature whom I greatly admire. A memorable quote regarding that doleful understanding is: "So, who are we doing this for?"

Those activists still effective have escaped the potential trap of that sobering realization. Sometimes their disgust lasted only moments, sometimes it lasted years, but the condition is debilitating and must be healed before an activist can progress further. For those that conquered their despair, they seemingly responded by burrowing deeper into the human condition and peering into people's souls, instead of our frightened personalities that live in a world of scarcity. Those who have successfully delved deeper into the human condition have seen the spark of divinity in us all, and they have continued their efforts to uplift humanity, so that divine spark might be fanned into a flame. That might be the most difficult task on earth today.

The [dark path initiates](#) also have an uncharitable view of those whose primary motivations are survival and [cultivating their vices](#), but want to keep the great herd of humanity readily exploitable, not uplifted from their condition. Their attitudes and methods remind me of [Hitler's henchmen](#). When places such as the Warsaw Ghetto and the concentration camps went into operation, Goebbels and friends filmed Jews in those settings for propaganda purposes. By reducing Jews to seemingly subhuman states, the Nazis sought to retroactively justify how they treated them, and to justify treating them even worse. Both the saintly and the vile see where humanity is today. One wants to uplift humanity, and the other wants to keep us down and drive us even further into the muck.

Critics of the free energy milieu point to free energy activists who may well be frauds, who are deluded, who are strange and "unbalanced," and so on. There is plenty of [chaff](#) amongst the free energy field's wheat. That is simply [one aspect of the dynamic](#), but people such as [Mr. Skeptic](#) try convincing the world that it is the *only* dynamic in the

“free energy” milieu, and the [mainstream media](#) eagerly feeds at their trough.[\[22\]](#)

Who knows? Maybe *you* will try your hand at making free energy a public reality and [transforming the human journey](#), and your timing will be impeccable and bringing free energy to humanity will be laughably easy. I pray that you have such success. As Isaac Newton said about his discoveries, if you reach those lofty heights one day, you will be standing on the shoulders of giants, some of whom are discussed in this essay.

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) See Steven Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, pp. 18-19.

[\[2\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, pp. 19-22.

[\[3\]](#) See Brian O’Leary’s *Exploring Inner and Outer Space*, pp. 6-9.

[\[4\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 58.

[\[5\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 141.

[\[6\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 13.

[\[7\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 125.

[\[8\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 115.

[\[9\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 103.

[\[10\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 123.

[\[11\]](#) On Greer’s Disclosure Project’s *Disclosure Witness* DVD, you can watch Stephen Lovekin’s account of his days in the Eisenhower White House as a military attaché, as the ET/UFO situation began slipping from Eisenhower’s control and became “privatized.”

[\[12\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, pp. 137-139.

[\[13\]](#) On Rockefeller, see Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, pp. 101-102. On Goldwater, see pp. 186-187. Also see [this link](#). On the United Nations and the experiences of Secretary Generals Kurt Waldheim, Boutros Boutros-Ghali and Kofi Anan, see pp. 126-127.

[\[14\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 119.

[\[15\]](#) See Greer’s *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 190.

[16] See Greer's *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 222.

[17] See Greer's *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 193.

[18] See Greer's *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, pp. 223-226.

[19] At one of Dennis' public events in the 1990s, Mr. Skeptic attended and handed out his "skeptical" pamphlets. He wanted a meeting with Dennis and considered himself one of Dennis' worthy adversaries. Dennis quickly disabused Mr. Skeptic of that notion and refused to meet with him. Dennis considered Mr. Skeptic to be merely one the many zero-integrity critics that he has encountered over the years, some on the energy interest payroll somehow, but many just free-lancing. That slight may be partly responsible for Mr. Skeptic's efforts in attacking Dennis ever since.

[20] See Greer's *Hidden Truth – Forbidden Knowledge*, pp. 156-176.

[21] In early 2003, soon after [America's invasion of Iraq](#), Brian O'Leary asked me to join the board of the [New Energy Movement](#) (NEM). In retrospect, I should not have joined, partly due to the fact that I was in [poor emotional shape](#) to assist such an effort. I was invited into other efforts at about the same time, and I joined some before I realized that I was stretched too thin and quit all of them. I helped found and fund NEM until I resigned the day after NEM's September 2004 conference. In late 2003, on NEM's original website I read an article by [Eugene Mallove](#) on promising free energy approaches, and one of them was the [exact technology](#) we were pursuing when the Big Boys [dropped the hammer on us in 1988](#). Brian introduced me to Mallove and we had some email exchanges about Dennis, our efforts and the heat engine/heat pump combination we were pursuing. Mallove was a former academic (at MIT) who had yet to really sail the rough waters of free energy activism. Mallove quit MIT in protest after he discovered that MIT scientists had fraudulently manipulated their data in order to dismiss cold fusion. MIT is one of the world's largest research institutions that researched hot fusion, so their data manipulation was a case of conflict of interest. I tried telling Mallove about the big carrots and sticks that were used on us, and he was skeptical about the [billion-dollar bribe](#) offer that Dennis received (it was the largest he had heard about). To Mallove's credit, however, he was at least willing to listen (which is unusual in of itself). I sent him technical information on what we were pursuing, and he promised to reply in the coming spring.

In early May 2004, we had an NEM board meeting at Brian's house and began planning our September 2004 conference. Mallove agreed to be a conference speaker, partly because several board members knew him. The week after our board meeting, I began to pay for professional assistance for NEM. I resumed my career a month after I joined NEM, I was working twelve-hour days at my stressful day job, and there were some hiccups in getting the professional help aligned with NEM's needs. An NEM board member had a tantrum during that week over the hiccups. The outburst seemed disproportional to the problems, and I had a very stressful week trying to calm the waters and getting us back on track. By Friday of that week, May 14th, all was well and that board member sent me a conciliatory email, and further stated that we might be under psychic attack, the kind that Greer later [wrote about](#) in his book. As that board member was sending me that email, Mallove was dying from being bludgeoned. We heard about his murder the next morning. Because of that bizarre "coincidence," I will always be skeptical that Mallove's death was a random murder. It was frustrating to try educating Mallove on the methods the Big Boys used on activists like us, to instead receive his skepticism. Mallove may have learned of their more extreme methods in fatal fashion. Mallove was engaging in activism in Washington D.C., and Greer, [Paul](#)

[Wilcher](#), [Danny Casolaro](#) and others discovered the hard way how dangerous radical activism and investigation can be around America's capital city. At the NEM conference, Greer said that Mallove's death might well have been due to what the Big Boys sometimes do to their more nettlesome gadflies. We may have also been subjected to those technologies [during my days with Dennis](#).

[22] Dennis has been the subject of numerous media reports since 1996, on national and local television and radio and in the print and Internet media. Virtually all have been hatchet jobs, and Mr. Skeptic is often featured. Other than [Dennis' site](#), there is not a more in-depth account on the Internet of Dennis' efforts than my writings, and few people on earth know Dennis better than I do, but none of those media organizations has ever attempted to contact me to provide any insight or information on the issue. Instead, [Mr. Skeptic](#) has become a media and "skeptical" darling, with his [dishonest](#) "research" on Dennis receiving prominent coverage. That situation is simply more evidence of what a propaganda machine the [mainstream media](#) is.

The next section: [The Free Energy Conundrum](#) (89K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Free Energy Conundrum

Is Humanity Ready for Abundance?

Wade Frazier

December 2005

[A Summary of the Free Energy Conundrum](#)

[My Journey and Primary Lesson](#)

[Laying aside the Mind Crutches](#)

[Pitfalls and Unproductive Paths](#)

[What Can Be Done about the Conundrum?](#)

[Footnotes](#)

A Summary of the Free Energy Conundrum

1. There are two prominent motivations for making free, forever renewable, non-polluting energy a daily reality for humanity:
 - On the upside - an unprecedented human journey [based on abundance](#) instead of scarcity can be catalyzed by a transition to free energy, while healing the environment at the same time;
 - On the downside - today's energy production methods are [destroying the biosphere](#); energy scarcity is the primary reason for global poverty, and the Middle East is increasingly becoming the site of energy wars, which may ignite World War III.
2. Such free energy sources exist and have been extensively developed in the United States and elsewhere, however:

- The technologies that use those energy sources have been subjected to deep secrecy ([Black Budget, Above Top Secret](#), privatized);
 - Those attempting to independently develop technology to use those energy sources have been [bought out or wiped out](#), although such efforts usually self-destruct before attaining the stage where they need derailing;
 - Those leading the suppression of the independent efforts also control the extensively developed free energy technologies, and their influence is wielded in subtle yet powerful fashion; they are forcing artificial scarcity onto humanity for reasons of earthly power (I call them the Big Boys in my work).
3. Far less than 1% of the U.S. population has constructively engaged that situation, the proportions falling somewhat along these lines:
- Most people are unaware that the situation exists, largely due to the clandestine methods used to keep the situation unknown and a compliant media system, but also because most people *do not want to know*;
 - Those exposed to this situation usually deny it, often by dismissing it as a “conspiracy theory;”
 - Those acknowledging the situation’s reality usually have unproductive reactions, such as:
 - o paranoia;
 - o apathy;
 - o hopelessness;
 - o trying to expose or punish the suppressors;
 - o beating the suppressors at their own game;
 - o trying to get a piece of the suppression action for themselves;

- o thwarting those attempting to overcome the suppression, as they try stealing the technology/market for themselves;
 - Those acknowledging the situation and attempting a constructive response, such as mounting an effort to develop such technologies and bring them to the public, or educating the public about the situation, seem to number fewer than one thousand people; and of those, the number possessing the integrity sufficient to mount a potentially successful effort is probably fewer than one hundred people.
4. If an effort to overcome the suppression and public inertia is going to have a realistic chance of succeeding, that final group needs to grow to thousands of people, to form a critical mass. The effort needs to reach far beyond the small and insular alternative energy community. Simply becoming aware of the issue and engaging in constructive dialogue may be all that is needed. The primary qualification for a member of that critical mass group is nearly incorruptible integrity. The task is formidable, because people of that level of integrity are [less than one-per-thousand in the U.S. general population](#), but that approach appears to have the best chance of success with the least risk to the participants.

The bold contentions in this summary are explored at depth in the following essay. Perhaps the above summary is incorrect, but nobody I trust with significant *experience* in that milieu denies its basic thrust.

My Journey and Primary Lesson

[My journey into alternative energy](#) began more than thirty years ago, when my first professional mentor invented what was considered the [world's best engine for powering an automobile](#). Today's "cutting edge" cars are using innovations my mentor invented long ago, such as hybrid cars recycling the energy absorbed from applying a car's brakes. I dreamed long ago about changing the way humanity produces and uses its energy. I eventually [chased my dream](#), only to have it [become a nightmare](#). My journey was filled with numerous lessons, and many were reluctantly learned. I know of no effort in world history of higher profile or of more persistence or closer to success in bringing significant alternative energy to humanity than [Dennis Lee's](#) efforts, and I was with him during some of his adventures' darkest chapters. I think he did his most interesting work before I met him. There is no teacher like experience, and I am writing

this essay with the hope that it will assist those few who try bringing alternative energy to humanity, and perhaps help [heaven on earth](#) come into being.

My primary lesson was one I resisted for many years, until I finally had it [beaten into my head](#): personal integrity is earth's scarcest commodity, and applying a sufficient pool of it to the free energy conundrum is *the key* to making it happen. If an alternative energy effort does not begin with people of the highest integrity, it will not get very far. Almost without exception, when I have mentioned that harsh lesson and its ramifications, people have responded by ignoring it or presenting irrelevant counter-examples or dismissing it as of minor consequence. It is not an enjoyable realization, but it is today's reality. While [denial](#) may seem a valid defense mechanism, it is ultimately self-defeating, particularly in this context. True skepticism is a virtue (which means getting out of one's armchair and honestly investigating before launching opinions), but I have rarely experienced a genuinely skeptical reaction, which reinforces my primary lesson. I *expect* my work to be greeted with skepticism, because it is so alien to the average American's experience, so this essay is peppered with footnotes and links that lead to evidence that illustrate my points.

First of all, what follows is why a lack of integrity dooms alternative energy efforts. [All economies for all time](#) have been primarily dependent on energy. Today's energy industry is the world's most powerful, and a new energy source, particularly one that could easily replace conventional energy sources, has long been the subject of novels, motion pictures and other mass media. The economic value of such an energy source is beyond the dreams of avarice. Several trillion dollars of revenue are generated annually by the energy and related industries, such as transportation. Even that vast sum misleadingly minimizes the importance of energy, because without energy to run the show, [industrialized civilization would quickly grind to a halt](#).

When people begin pursuing alternative energy, whether it is in pure or applied research, prototype development or the more advanced stages of entrepreneurialism, manufacturing and marketing, greed nearly always rears its head and defeats most attempts before they even get started. Dennis has likened the situation to the movie *The Treasure of the Sierra Madre*, where everybody wanted to wipe out everybody else so they would not have to share their plunder. The stakes are higher in the free energy pursuit than any other on earth, and bringing a genuine alternative energy to market, one that can impact the global marketplace, is not something that a lone inventor or entrepreneur can accomplish. It will take a major effort by many players to make alternative/free energy happen, and stealing a prototype or start-up company is futile, if developing a genuine alternative energy for the public is the goal. I have watched

numerous attempts to steal Dennis' companies, and the two successful attempts I witnessed in the 1980s were performed when the Big Boys had Dennis in a headlock.[\[1\]](#) Before I met Dennis, his companies were stolen several times by his business associates and once by organized crime, which then pulled off a genuine scam of the public. I saw some particularly incompetent attempts to steal Dennis' companies that [I witnessed after our days in Ventura](#). Steven Greer calls the Big Boys "[Godzilla](#)," but the economic jungle is also filled with T-Rexes, velociraptors and other predators. The jungle is not filled with gentle, herbivorous beasts and one super-predator.

After Dennis' company was stolen in Seattle, I watched [several groups fight](#) over the company's *carcass*, and none of them did anything productive with it. Also, if any of them became productive, they would have quickly discovered the hard way why Dennis' company was defunct when they stole it, but they were blinded by their greed. Also, the employees not involved in stealing the companies often stole anything they could on their way out, a phenomenon [vividly evident in Ventura](#). For those people, the Big Boys' suppression efforts gave them theft opportunities. [Greed](#) is one of the [seven deadly sins](#) and is the fear of never having enough. It is an irrational fear that can never be extinguished by hoarding wealth. After obscene amounts of wealth are stolen from others, the fear then becomes focused on amassing as much control over others as possible, trying to play God.

When the Big Boys' hammer came down, those not actively stealing were mainly motivated by self-preservation, and those running and hiding or crawling before agents of the Big Boys, begging for mercy (or actively helping the Big Boys, as a way to avoid their wrath), may have provided a more disheartening spectacle than the thievery did. A third category of ignoble behavior was provided by many of those who did not fall into the first two categories: blaming and attacking Dennis became a favored activity, probably because he was an easy target, particularly when the Big Boys had him in a headlock. Many people fell into all three categories.

All those actions evidenced low personal integrity, and when the dust had settled in Ventura, human behavior could never surprise me again. There were heartening exceptions to that low-integrity rule, however, with [Mr. Professor](#) shining the brightest. People like him were needles in haystacks. I have sought people like him ever since, and have encountered very few who *may* have had the right stuff. Just as nearly everybody thinks they are an adequate housekeeper or a competent driver, nearly everybody thinks they possess high integrity. Passing an integrity test of the magnitude that Mr. Professor took often costs one their [career/net worth/health/life](#), so those who have proven their integrity at those levels can rarely join together to make something

important happen, because their lives have usually been destroyed.

Laying aside the Mind Crutches

When I staggered out of Ventura in 1990, I realized that whatever I had been taught about the world was probably not true, and for the next twelve years I read around two hundred thousand pages of material. A primary thrust was researching what I had been taught, comparing it to my adult researches and seeing if it held up. It rarely did. Although my ride with Dennis radicalized me, I also had some early experiences that aided my receptivity to the lessons, such as my [family changing its diet when I was twelve](#) and being introduced to [paranormal phenomena at age sixteen](#).

As I performed my adult research on what I was taught while young, I realized that most of my “learning” that failed under scrutiny was not simply a haphazard assortment of misinformation. The misinformation was apparently designed to indoctrinate me into certain ways of “thinking.” Here are some examples of what I discovered during my adult researches.

- I read the newspaper everyday for twenty years, thinking I was getting the news. Now I realize that I was [receiving a form of brainwashing](#).
- [Christopher Columbus](#) has a national holiday in his name, and is the first shining hero in American history books, but his greed-inspired efforts directly led to history's only *complete genocide* of millions of people, a fact that my teachers failed to mention.
- I was taught that [George Washington](#) was the first American president, the “father of our country” and a [man who could not lie](#). In reality, he was an avaricious, slave-owning aristocrat and America's richest man when he became president, getting rich partly from stolen Native American land. He was also the primary architect of the American government's policy of stealing Native American land through fraudulent treaties in what may be [history's greatest swindle](#).
- I attended [Junípero Serra](#) elementary school in grades four through six. Serra established the California mission system and the padre is up for [sainthood](#) today. What my teachers failed to tell me, as I watched a movie of his holy life and viewed his statue in our town square and visited his missions, was that he was a

masochistic religious fanatic who ran colonial Mexico's Inquisition and that the primary outcome of his missionizing efforts was the *complete extermination* of the coastal California tribes that greeted him. The only tribes that survived were tribal remnants that fled to California's interior.

- The United States is simply a [successor empire](#) to the European empires that were weakened or destroyed during the World Wars of the 20th century. The words "America" and "empire" were never used in the same sentence during my [American history education](#), a rule followed by American history books and today's media organizations, at least until the recent invasion of Iraq, as the nakedly imperial aspect of our international behavior is increasingly difficult to deny. As with all empires, we tell ourselves that we are a different kind of empire, as in a benevolent one. Our victims do not believe it, nor does the rest of the world.
- America's [fight against communism](#) had nothing to do with protecting the world's people from the evil communists, but was an effort to keep the world's people enslaved to the political-economic system that the United States dominated, a system known today as global capitalism. That easily-verified situation somehow escaped the educational process I was subjected to while growing up.
- In my economics classes in college, I learned that Adam Smith was the father of capitalism and that he extolled the magic of free markets and the invisible hand of competition. However, Smith also remarked that capitalists were relentless in making sure there *were no free markets*, accomplished by buying out, [wiping out](#) or colluding with the competition, which is the most apt description of [today's capitalists](#) that I can think of.
- My chosen profession of public accounting turned out to have a fatal conflict of interest that became evident during the [Savings and Loan Scandal](#) of the 1980s and the [Enron/WorldCom/etc. scandals](#) of the early 21st century. I was never taught about that conflict in school, and the conflict exists to this day.
- I now realize that a great deal of the "science" I was taught did not come from carefully produced research but was propaganda that served certain economic and political interests. The [real world of science](#) is a vastly different one than the one I was taught about in school.
- The "War on Cancer" has been waged for many years. It turns out that cheap, harmless and effective [cancer cures](#) have existed for generations and the "War on

Cancer” [is a fraud](#). A great deal of the “warfare” has been directed toward [wiping out those genuine cancer cures](#) in the name of protecting the consumer, but is really done to protect the immensely lucrative [cancer racket](#) from the threat of genuine cures being used.

- Fluoride was in my toothpaste while I grew up, to promote healthy teeth. It was also added to the water I drank every day. I now know fluoride is an [industrial waste](#), added to my water so fluoride polluters could dispose of their waste. Fluoride was originally identified as a pollutant that [destroyed teeth](#) and, in an incredible inversion of reality, scientists working for fluoride polluters magically transformed a tooth-crumbing pollutant into a tooth’s best friend. The fluorine ion also causes [brain damage](#), among other harmful effects.

I was fortunate to be raised relatively free of religious indoctrination, but I received its secular equivalent in my “education.” Was I taught anything that was true? I am not sure. My indoctrination gave me various “mind crutches.” Crutches can help people walk until they no longer need them, but they can also produce cripples who cannot imagine living without them. The mind crutches I was given are seemingly of the latter variety. Why do our educational and media systems produce people with an inverted sense of reality? Apparently, so people can be manipulated via their mind crutches. How do mind crutches work to cripple people’s minds? To a significant degree, they work because they appeal to people’s self-interest and egos, particularly their [vices](#).

If Americans believe they belong to the greatest, most benevolent society of all time, then they can rape and plunder the world’s people (particularly the poor ones) with a clear conscience or only passing awareness, because our international acts are obviously designed to help the world’s downtrodden, right? To question the *assumption* of American benevolence can lead to [cognitive dissonance](#), and few Americans have proven themselves capable of resolving the dissonance by discarding the false beliefs they were indoctrinated with. The truth then becomes *unthinkable*, and that delusional state provides fertile ground for more delusions to take root, the deluded paying an immense price in lost sentience. The human ego explains a great deal of that dynamic, but there are also rewards for playing the game and penalties for failing to. For instance, I do not walk down the halls of my corporate employer and contradict capitalistic dogma. If I did, I would not be there long. The result is that Americans are largely a semi-sentient people who mindlessly repeat the catechisms they were indoctrinated with. A monkey can be trained to wave a flag on cue. Most people never break free and learn to think for themselves on those subjects. I recently encountered the observation that America’s official bird should be changed from the bald eagle to the

parrot, an observation with keen significance since September 11, 2001.

Here are the mind crutches that Americans need to discard (or stop leaning on so heavily) if they want to help a world of abundance appear:

- **Nationalism;**
- **Capitalism;**
- **Organized Religion**, particularly its literalist forms;
- **Scientism** - the worship of the methods of science as the only valid path to knowledge, also related to worshipping the scientific establishment;
- **Materialism** - the worship of the material world as the only reality, also related to hoarding material wealth;
- **Rationalism** - the worship of the rational aspect of intelligence as the only important attribute of intelligence, also related to the denigration of intuition.

The above doctrines are all based on the scarcity principle, as they exalt one group at the expense of others. The first three do it quite obviously, the other three more subtly.

People cannot help an abundance principle take root when their minds are mired in scarcity consciousness.

The first three doctrines have been prominently used to justify violating others and have fostered egocentric delusions that provided the justifications, such as the Chosen People, wealth elitism, the [Promised Land](#), [Manifest Destiny](#) or its successor [Lebensraumpolitik](#). Those first three mind crutches form the triune faith of most Americans. Scarcely an American can be found who does not regularly kneel at one of those altars. In nationalism, we are elevated above other nations by virtue of our being born here. My [American Empire](#) essay was partly intended as an antidote to American nationalism. The essays in [this section of my website](#) are intended as an antidote to capitalism, which might be the most *inefficient* economic system yet devised, as it is quickly destroying the planet and provides the rationale for doing so. Every organized religion is to some extent a corruption of the vision the religion in whose name was erected. In Christianity in particular, kneeling at the right altar is the ticket to heaven,

and those kneeling at the wrong altars (or those not kneeling at all) are condemned by the Almighty. People having [near-death experiences](#) or those who have learned to [explore other planes of existence](#) do not describe anything like a [gatekeeper to “heaven,”](#) and those in “[hell](#)” are there because they *want to be*, and leave when they are no longer *attracted to it*. The scarcity principle is ingrained into our societies in ways that can seem invisible, such as our sports and games, where there is almost always one ultimate winner and many losers.

Those last three doctrines are interrelated and subtler than the first three. Those holding to Enlightenment ideals (I will call them Enlightenment doctrines in this essay) often subscribe to those three. People can easily pursue experiences that show how false and limiting those doctrines are. All three doctrines have the denigration of consciousness in common. Consciousness, in those doctrines, is seen as dependent on biochemistry, and the rational aspect of consciousness is the only one considered important, and phenomena such as intuition, emotion or love are minimized. History’s greatest physicists [did not subscribe to those doctrines](#), and anybody can easily be trained to experience [paranormal phenomena](#), clearly demonstrating that chemistry-based consciousness models are woefully deficient. Those subscribing to Enlightenment doctrines often ignore or dismiss evidence that we are not alone in the universe and are regularly visited by [extra-terrestrial civilizations](#). For instance, over the past generation more than three thousand people have witnessed UFOs appearing on request at a Washington ranch. I went to see for myself this year, and [I was not disappointed](#).^[2] Those subscribing to Enlightenment doctrines also tend to dismiss the notion that the world’s political-economic system is managed by surreptitious means, usually dismissing the notion as a “[conspiracy theory](#),” and almost always deny that the [Above Top Secret](#) world even exists, preferring to focus on the [bureaucratic aspect](#) of covert action. I discovered that many who are great at describing our immense problems *do not want to hear* about solutions that topple their [scarcity-based paradigm](#).

As [R. Buckminster Fuller](#) observed, economics has always been the name of the elite game, with politics a mere byproduct; all political actors are “stooges” of the economic interests. Today’s most radical political and economic ideologies are still based upon the scarcity principle, and all political systems have been primarily concerned with [who gets the scarce resources](#). Pursuing free energy (or significant alternative energy) is the most radical economic act on earth today, and only when an effort becomes “threatening” do activists encounter the Big Boy gatekeepers. The [billion-dollar bribe](#) we were offered to stop pursuing free energy is not a “conspiracy theory” but the reporting of our *experiences*. Also, those pursuing that path at a level where they threatened to

make an *economic impact* all report [similar experiences](#). There is no theory about it, but that situation has never been constructively engaged by any political faction that I have encountered, and I have encountered just about all of them.

Pitfalls and Unproductive Paths

Experience may be the *only* teacher, and the pitfalls and unproductive paths presented here are those I have experienced myself or heard of from first-hand participants. Just as teenagers often think their parents do not know anything, many in the free energy community whom I have tried cautioning with tales of pitfalls have denied their relevance as they blithely headed for those very same pitfalls. It has not been easy to watch. For a teenage boy, learning some of life's lessons the hard way is part of growing up. When pursuing free energy, learning those lessons the hard way often means having one's life destroyed, if not prematurely ended. Only those with the crazed persistence of a [Dennis Lee](#) get to make the attempt more than once. I learned many of my lessons the hard way, and seek to help others avoid learning them the hard way.

Here are some of the more important pitfalls and unproductive activities that I have seen.

Denial - This pitfall kills most free energy efforts before they get very far. The denial relates to many facets of the free energy conundrum (such as that the Big Boys even exist or are vigilant). Because the free energy arena is like no other, denial of how it operates is common and can be fatal for its participants. For instance, except for my years with Dennis, I have spent my entire career in corporate America. The free energy scene only vaguely resembles how corporate America operates. Thinking it does is one of the many pitfalls that free energy activists encounter. Believing in the fairy tales of capitalism and nationalism is particularly dangerous for somebody pursuing free energy. The most harmful denial often relates to denying that the pitfalls listed below even exist, or can be leapt over or run past too quickly for them to matter.

Delusions of grandeur - I have yet to meet a human without an ego. When pondering the implications of free energy, the situation's immensity can seduce the ego. Delusions of grandeur can take root, and one must always be vigilant of them. I had fleeting delusions of grandeur during my days with Dennis, and I have seen the bug bite others fiercely.[\[3\]](#)

Seeking “humanitarian assistance” and rich benefactors - All free energy efforts

have always operated on a shoestring, and all have tried raising money somehow. Each fundraising method has its pitfalls, and the most futile one I have seen is seeking a rich benefactor. If a rich person genuinely tries helping out, they [quickly get a horse's head in their bed](#), get their [money seized](#), and so on. More often, the “benefactor” tries controlling the effort from the outset or stealing the technology/company or [waits like a vulture](#) for the opportunity to take over when they smell easy profits. Dennis has interacted with numerous billionaires and has never seen one part with a dollar relating to helping free energy happen. They all seem to heed Bill Gates' dictum, “You don't get rich by cutting checks.” “Humanitarian” groups often hamper efforts like developing free energy, in a bizarre situation where the biggest obstacles to realizing the solutions are the people who say they seek solutions.

Needing a paycheck - This is related to the above pitfall, and is the primary reason I have pursued my Website work as I have. If people in a free energy venture must immediately be paid for their efforts, they are already defeated. Economic need kills most free energy efforts, and when I saw all the [employee theft in Ventura](#), it was because the company owed them *one week* of wages. I have seen that need come in many guises, and if a significant free energy effort ever becomes viable, it will be due to people who are giving, not getting. That is *why* there is a free energy conundrum - there have not been enough people involved who are more interested in giving than getting. If the people involved are starving or need regular, corporate-sized paychecks to be involved, the effort is doomed before it begins.

Greed - Dealt with at length [above](#).

Naïveté - I fell into that pitfall regularly during my journey with Dennis. It took some time to wake up to the free energy milieu's reality. Most people will have to negotiate that pitfall to get very far along the path. The most common reaction I have heard to the free energy conundrum is also the [most naïve](#), which goes like this, “If this was possible, I would be able to buy it.” That statement reflects a belief in the magic of capitalism, where the best, brightest and most benevolent always triumph. Not even [Adam Smith](#) believed it. It also reflects a belief in the [fairy tale of American nationalism](#). Disbelief is the most common reaction to the [billion-dollar bribe](#) that we received, and engineers and technical professionals often prove to be the [most naïve of all](#), as [Bucky Fuller](#) observed. Mailing off [working free energy prototypes to the Big Boys](#), hoping for a tickertape parade, gets the wrong kind of attention. Naïveté can be a fatal pitfall in the free energy pursuit.

Seeking specialist opinions - One on hand, seeking specialist opinions may seem

prudent, but on the other hand, most scientists, engineers and technical professionals undergo heavy indoctrination disguised as learning and can rarely think past their [textbooks](#). For instance, there have been credible experimental results that call into question the [Second Law of Thermodynamics](#). That “laws” of physics even exist shows how much like a religion physics is. There are no “laws” of physics, only theories. The first person to perform those law-defying experiments [died in a U.S. prison](#), with the U.S. government destroying his equipment. A scientist who related to me his own experimental results [was murdered not long ago](#). While what Thomas Kuhn called “[normal](#)” science is an honorable and necessary part of scientific endeavor, and those performing normal science are firmly wrapped in their paradigm and rarely glimpse beyond it or comprehend evidence that [challenges their paradigm](#). Less than 1% of scientists and engineers have the creative insight and discrimination needed to successfully evaluate novel experimental data or technology, and the best of them are always cautious about saying that something is “impossible,” which my [first professional mentor](#) taught me. Thinking that a physicist or engineer is qualified by their orthodox training/experience to evaluate free energy technology or theory is the height of folly. Some of the most irrational responses to my work have been by engineers, scientists and academics, and some of their most illogical responses have been regarding areas where they claim *expertise*.[\[4\]](#)

Failure to separate the wheat from the chaff - Because few with scientific or technical training can properly evaluate novel theory, data or technology, it does not mean that nobody can. Finding those people is difficult, however, and there are many garage mechanics and electronics tinkerers who think they invented a free energy machine. As [Adam Trombly once noted](#), there are many in the new energy field who have never done anything productive and often say that nobody has [made them an offer they cannot refuse](#). Those producing pedestrian results are not made those offers; the Big Boys are not stupid. Navigating between the bogus and the genuine is a perilous endeavor for free energy activists. There is far more chaff than wheat out there, and some is even fraudulent chaff, although not nearly as much as [Mr. Skeptic](#) would have people believe.

Thinking that low integrity people can be “managed” - When the [BPA Hit Man](#) approached Dennis’ company in 1985, Dennis suspected that he was not who he presented himself as. Dennis thought he could “manage” him, and actively misdirected him. When the hit man’s actions [cost one of Dennis’ employees her life](#), Dennis became radicalized in his pursuit of alternative energy. I became a pile of frayed nerves a few months after [the raid on our facilities](#) in 1988, and a business associate asked Dennis if

he could become his new protégé. Dennis knew that the man did not have the required integrity for the job but took him on anyway, while cautioning him that he would probably betray Dennis one day. Dennis says that only nice guys have betrayed him, as the cutthroats never get close enough to stick their daggers in his ribs. Instead, his “friends” always shove the daggers into his back. That opportunity for betrayal came a few months later, and that protégé [gleefully helped destroy Dennis’ company](#) while he was in jail. A major problem with people of less-than-high integrity in a free energy effort is that any success attracts the predators. The predators are not only agents of the Big Boys, but also the standard predators that populate America’s entrepreneurial waters.^[5] The magnified temptations and dangers of the free energy environment easily corrupt people of less-than-high integrity. Managing people of low integrity in a free energy effort is like holding a faulty bomb with the fuse lit - you cannot throw it far enough away, and it might still blow up in your hand. The [latest instances](#) I encountered of low integrity people and people’s refusal to recognize the danger they presented helped drive me back into seclusion.

Overlooking low integrity because the person has something to offer - This is related to the preceding point. I have yet to meet an altruistic inventor. Discovering that inventors have no more integrity than the general population was the second most important lesson of my journey. *Creativity does not confer integrity*, something I learned the hard way. It took me many years of disillusionment to finally accept the reality. My [first professional mentor](#) is the closest thing to an altruistic inventor that I have met, and my early experience misled me about the real world of inventors. Whether it is an inventor with an intriguing energy prototype or somebody who offers funding or a business associate who offers an alliance, at the first inkling that their integrity is not the highest, severing the relationship immediately and honorably is the best remedy, because when times get trying, those people will betray the effort for personal gain or self-preservation. Many times I have watched people overlook low integrity because the person had something else that might contribute to the effort. It has always backfired when the going got tough, and it *always* gets tough when pursuing free energy.

Thinking that one can run below the suppressors’ radar - A number of free energy inventors and entrepreneurs have tried to [invent in secret](#), distribute in secret, finance in secret and so on. The Big Boys have an impressive [global surveillance infrastructure](#). I have yet to see that strategy work. In fact, secrecy plays right into the Big Boys’ hands, partly because they are masters of clandestine operations (they prefer operating in dark alleys), and secrecy often leads to paranoia and other delusions, helping the projects self-destruct before the Big Boys need to lift a finger. Maybe somebody will run below the radar one day, but so far, it looks like the high road offers much more promise and

aligns with the ideals of openness and honesty. A related notion is thinking that the free energy effort can migrate to some free-energy-friendly nation. I have received that suggestion dozens of times since 1986. I have yet to see or hear of what nation that might be. All national governments are corrupt, and the Big Boys have a truly global reach. There is no place to run and hide. There are also many practical limitations to consider in taking it someplace “safe.” I strongly doubt whether a free energy effort can be launched from a nation that is not already industrialized.

Trying to expose and/or punish the suppressors - The Big Boys are masters of their game, and trying to beat them at it is a doomed strategy. Secrecy, deception, violence, arrogance, avarice - these are their hallmarks. While there have been courageous efforts by [whistleblowers](#) and investigators to expose “bad guys” and/or punish them, the [danger is great](#), and ultimately, they cannot be beaten at their game. Exposing, punishing, beating them at their own game - these are all scarcity-consciousness efforts and are rooted in the victim mentality. Bringing free energy to the world will take an abundance-oriented effort and must transcend the victim mentality to become successful. Of course, that is easier said than done, but changing the prevailing paradigm for the past ten thousand years is not an easy task. If we want love and forgiveness to prevail on earth, we need to live it.

Forming a mass movement around a small and/or weak nucleus - I have burned too much of my life’s energy on building alternative/free energy efforts, to only watch them quickly disintegrate when faced with challenges. If a large nucleus of high integrity people cannot be amassed, then humanity is not ready for free energy and all that can come with it. It would probably be better to make quilts instead of launch onto the path of disaster and martyrdom that efforts of insufficient collective integrity invariably chart.

Forming a movement around ideologies - Trying to form a movement around an ideology, whether it is economic, religious, political, scientific or social is a tacit admission that the movement’s members cannot be trusted to think for themselves, and herding them along under an ideology’s banner will not work, not for bringing free energy to the world. All of today’s earthly ideologies are based on scarcity and most are subtly egocentric, and will not help an abundance paradigm take root. [\[6\]](#)

Telling your family and friends about free energy and the toppling of scarcity-based ideologies - Many readers of my work thought they would introduce their “hip” family members or friends to my work, only to be shocked as they watched their friends and family members go into [irrational](#) tirades against my work. The vast majority of my “peers” - white, educated American men - can only read a few pages of my work before

blowing a fuse. Very few people can currently examine the mass *assumptions* about reality, as the exercise threatens the “stories” we tell ourselves. People addicted to their [mind crutches](#) do not want to confront naked reality, and cannot currently pursue free energy. Again, [less than one-in-a-thousand](#) are fit for it. If that is true, then what is the point of this essay?

What Can Be Done about the Conundrum?

If all those paths of action listed above are fraught with peril or even counterproductive, then what? A family friend was fond of saying, “Let’s do something, even if it is wrong.” The free energy situation *is* a conundrum. The scarcity principle is being artificially enforced on humanity, and the vast majority of humanity will resist the removal of the chains from their brains. I learned important lessons along the way, and some relate directly to the free energy conundrum:

- **Love is *always* the answer**
- **The means *become* the ends**
- **Violating *anybody’s* free will is ultimately self-defeating**
- **If you can, do it with gentle humor**

As [Seth once said](#), actions inconsistent with the ideal will always fail to achieve that ideal. Bringing an abundance paradigm to humanity is as idealistic a project as was ever conceived. However, humanity is apparently not ready for it. Not yet. If we were, we would have it, because there are enough people trying to bring free energy and abundance to the world to make it happen, if humanity was ready for it. But the Big Boys’ shenanigans and the masses’ inertia and easy manipulability are formidable obstacles, the inertia/manipulability being the biggest factors by far.

When the dust settled in [Ventura](#), I realized that if fifty people had banded around Dennis and his technical experts the way that Mr. Professor and I did, we had a realistic chance of making free energy a daily reality for humanity. If it were a hundred, it would have been easy (what I call the [hundred heroes strategy](#)). But there may not be a hundred people to find at that level of commitment. Also, the price it extracts from those few people can be awesome.

We humans are largely locked into our false personalities, which is the herd mentality.

[7] Being a herd member can seem comforting, until the herd stampedes off the cliff. The question I have pondered for many years is this:

Does humanity have to attain enlightenment before it can have free energy and abundance, or can its daily reality help catalyze it?

Can a group of people begin the movement toward abundance by simply becoming aware that it is *feasible*? Such a strategy asks nothing of anybody but that they *think* about it, and perhaps engage in dialogue (and maybe even do some research). If the hundred heroes model is ever tried, those heroes/heroines will need thousands of the awake to provide support. In addition, the Scarcity Enforcement Team will find that strategy more challenging to derail. In some ways, that might seem as futile as the other strategies, but almost nobody can currently even *think* about these issues in an enlightened manner. Until a sizeable group begins *thinking* about the issue, the rest seems futile. Can such a group carry the ball for humanity until they are ready to carry it themselves? This essay seeks to initiate dialogue on that issue, and find more of those needles in haystacks.

Other strategies may succeed, and while some pitfalls are more fatal than others, an effort of direct action by the masses may limp to the finish line while *only* stumbling into the lesser pitfalls, but no effort so far has really had a chance. Are we ready to begin pursuing abundance?

Footnotes

[1] The two successful attempts were the theft of the company, [engineered by my boss](#), in Seattle in 1986, and theft of the company when Dennis was in jail in 1988, [engineered by a business associate](#).

[2] Why only three thousand? Why not three million? The answer says a lot about where America is these days.

[3] For instance, when I was briefly with Dennis in 1996-1997, one of his volunteers previously volunteered for another prominent free energy inventor. One day, the volunteer took a nature walk with that inventor and that inventor confided that he thought he was the Second Coming of Christ. That admission spooked the volunteer, who came to Dennis' organization soon thereafter.

[4] Recent examples have been various forums where my work has been discussed, particularly in the energy realm. I present examples of intriguing technologies in my work, such as [here](#) and [here](#), and I have watched engineers and scientists, who *claim expertise in the energy field*, dismiss them as of no consequence, although one was called the world's most effective engine design by a major federal study, and the other is the best heating system the world market has yet seen. Such reactions by scientists and engineers used to amaze me, but now I accept them as normal. Some of my colleagues have had access to academics that run world-renowned science institutions and to others in the scientific establishment's inner sanctum. My colleagues' reports have not been encouraging, as they encounter dogma, arrogance, complacency and a host of vices avidly cultivated by the scientific establishment's authorities.

[5] This quote has been attributed to Howard Scott and others: "A criminal is a person with predatory instincts who has not sufficient capital to form a corporation." Dennis has encountered thousands of them over the years in America's entrepreneurial waters.

[6] Even the scientific worldviews are often subtly egocentric, such as the current Creation Story as portrayed by the Big Bang and Evolution. Humans are the crowning flower of evolution in that scientific worldview, and religious ideology, such as the Judeo-Christian religions, present humans as the apple of God's eye. Whether coming from scientists or religionists, the basic message is the same - humans are the best the universe has to offer, and all inferior beings can be treated accordingly.

[7] The [Michael Material](#) deals at length with the [false personality](#) and human ensoulment.

The next section: [An Open Letter to the Radical Left - Let's Truly Get Radical and Heal the Planet](#) (92K)

[Return to My Home Page](#)

An Open Letter to the Radical Left – Let's Truly Get Radical and Heal the Planet

By Wade Frazier

June 2007

[A Note to My Readers](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Economics, Energy, Scarcity and Abundance](#)

[Why the Radical Left is in Position to Make a Difference](#)

[Overcoming Ideological Barriers to Comprehension](#)

[The Myths of Science](#)

[Conscious Control of the World Economy](#)

[Healing Humanity and the Planet](#)

[Footnotes](#)

A Note to My Readers: This is an introductory essay that links to parts of my website that contain the detailed support for my contentions. If anything in this essay seems unfounded or superficial, I suggest taking the related link to the more detailed discussion. This is one of several “doorway” essays to my 1,200-page site, and is [not intended to be a stand-alone essay](#), at least stand-alone enough to convince readers new to the ideas presented in this essay. I also am [limited by my American heritage](#). Non-Americans may find that this essay has limited relevance and usefulness, particularly those from nations where English is not the official language. For non-Americans, I define *radical left*, particularly as compared to *liberal left*, at this footnote.^{[\[1\]](#)}

Introduction

This open letter has been gestating for seventeen years, ever since I began reading [Ralph McGehee's memoirs](#) and [Lies of Our Times](#), which [Ed Herman](#) edited. Before long, I was reading everything I could by Noam Chomsky, including [Manufacturing Consent](#), subscribing to [Z Magazine](#), [Covert Action Quarterly](#) and other progressive periodicals. I began enlarging my home library, which today includes several hundred volumes devoted to political writings – largely radical left texts. Due to my adventures while pursuing alternative energy, I became radicalized *before* I encountered the radical left, so their work was relatively easy to digest, although it took me about two years to really understand what Chomsky was saying. I have received more political education from Chomsky and Herman's writings than from any other body of work.

My alternative energy experiences began more than thirty years ago, when my first professional mentor invented the [world's best engine for powering an automobile](#), and continued when two paranormal events ([1](#), [2](#)) radically changed my life's direction and landed me in what is arguably the [most significant attempt yet made](#) to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace. I became partners with the Indiana Jones of alternative energy, and was in for a wild ride. I bounced [back-and-forth](#) across the United States, ending up in my hometown of Ventura, California. My adventure culminated with our company being offered about a [billion dollars to cease](#) our pursuit of alternative energy, and then being wiped out after we refused it. Being bludgeoned was a nightmare, with my partner [spending two years behind bars on fabricated charges](#) and many lives being [shattered in the process](#), including mine. It was my radicalizing experience.

No alternative energy of significance is publicly available today, and that situation is not due to a lack of viable technologies. During my adventures, I came to understand that free energy – virtually limitless, non-polluting, forever renewable, no-operating-cost energy – [has existed for generations](#), but has been suppressed by the same interests that wiped us out. Those people essentially run the world. Steven Greer, who is a leading free energy activist and has had a similarly [arduous journey](#), met with factions of that global-controlling group about fifteen years ago, and they informed him that they had paid out [\\$100 billion in quiet money](#) over the past few generations to ensure that technologies such as free energy and anti-gravity do not become publicly available.

Those payouts are part of their [“benign” tactics](#). That controlling group begins playing rough only after fools like us refuse their buyout offers and/or survive their subtle methods of sabotage. I realized long ago that the technological aspect of free energy is not the most important one. The political-economic dynamics seem most important, by far, and many in the radical left are in a position to comprehend them.

After my radicalizing experience, I spent 12,000 hours of unpaid labor performing the research, writing and editing (some professionally hired) that resulted in my 1,200-page [web site](#). However, no matter how thoroughly and conservatively I have documented my journey and the reality I witnessed, the public’s reaction has been one of denial and indifference about 99% of the time, with [personal attacks](#) fairly common. People cannot experience the alternative energy milieu’s reality from their armchairs, TVs, computer screens and cubicles, so those in denial pretend it does not exist if they are aware of the situation at all, even though it affects their lives, humanity and the planet profoundly. After years and years of largely futile interaction with the general public, I became selective about whom I interact with. A disinformation specialist [has also been stalking me on the Internet since 1997](#).

Some prominent rad lefties have taken my work seriously when I have written about American mythmaking, such as turning [Christopher Columbus](#), [George Washington](#) and [Junípero Serra](#) into national heroes, but their interest has been mild when I have tried to engage them on alternative energy realities. The radical left is one of the few groups I know of that *might* constructively engage the alternative energy field’s reality. I have [never seen any group](#) beyond the [small specialist community](#) constructively engage that situation. A healed humanity and planet can be [just around the corner](#), if enough people can only *imagine* it.

Economics, Energy, Scarcity and Abundance

One reason for this open letter is that the radical left regularly engages economic issues, and the human journey rides atop our economic reality. Scientists often have a [better understanding of economic reality than economists](#), who tend to homogenize everything with money, perform their abstract analyses and produce misleading results. Energy runs the world economy and always has, and the recent Peak Oil controversy has brought the issue into sharper focus. Richard Heinberg has been the leading Peak Oil spokesman in progressive circles, and an interview with him appearing in *Z Magazine* inspired two essays ([1](#), [2](#)) on Peak Oil, scarcity and Heinberg’s work.[\[2\]](#)

Heinberg wrote in a [semi-ridiculing and dismissive manner](#) about free energy, and [then refused to learn more](#) about the very situations he dismissed. Heinberg's solution to the current energy crisis is [eliminating nearly six billion people](#) (any volunteers?). For all of Heinberg's failures to investigate what he semi-ridiculed/dismissed, he and his colleagues understand one issue very well: the industrialized world is entirely dependent on energy consumption, as have [all civilizations for all time](#). From the richest and most educated nations to the poorest and least educated, energy consumption is by far the most important [determinant of their standard of living](#). Americans currently live off the backs of eighty "energy slaves," and they are almost entirely responsible for our status as history's richest nation. Noam Chomsky says that anybody with a functioning brain understands that America's invasions of the Middle East and Central Asia are about controlling the world's fossil fuel supplies. All other factors are of minor importance.

After I finished my web site in 2002, I was introduced to R. Buckminster Fuller's work. Fuller was one of the West's first "comprehensivists," and developed a multidisciplinary approach for viewing the human journey and its potential. Although his work has often been neglected, misappropriated and misrepresented since his death, his comprehensivist approach to humanity's problems and potential is evident in [his written work](#). Only those who see the big picture can envision and pursue the big solutions, and Fuller noted that specialization in science and other pursuits tended to blind those specialists to the bigger picture. Fuller said that such over-specialization was intentionally encouraged and made the [scientists slaves to the ruling class](#). It is another variation of the divide-and-conquer game.

Fuller stated that humanity had reached the technological level a few generations ago whereby we could make an unprecedented transition from a world based on scarcity to one based on abundance. A world based on abundance is necessarily based on energy abundance. Fuller understood the political-economic dynamics that Chomsky has been writing about for many years, but [waited until late in his life](#) to begin writing about them, probably to avoid marginalization. Fuller was also familiar with the global energy racket, and one [of his pupils, Adam Trombly, pursued free energy](#) and barely survived the experience. Trombly is one of many who have tried bringing free energy to humanity, and all have [been prevented from doing so](#).

Not only is there active suppression of anything that can upset the energy racket and the greatest lever for controlling humanity, humanity readily plays into the racketeers' hands. Fuller provided a plausible explanation why people such as Heinberg *refuse to imagine* abundance and instead propose hyper-austerity "solutions" to humanity's

problems. Fuller wrote that for almost the entirety of human history, only one-in-a-thousand people lived to a ripe old age, and only one-in-a-hundred-thousand became an economic success, so [scarcity and failure](#) have been deeply embedded into human consciousness. All the previously proposed Utopias and solutions such as Heinberg's have been based on shared austerity, and [Fuller noted that they have always been doomed strategies](#). The only Utopia with a realistic chance of success is based on abundance, and an abundance-based economic system is perhaps the only chance we have of averting global catastrophe. Fuller said that if humanity's scarcity paradigm was not overturned by the 1980s, our chances of survival [might be less than 50%](#). His estimate might be accurate, which is partly why I am writing this essay. It would not take much effort to topple the scarcity paradigm, but first people must *imagine* it.

If all humans had access to a thousand "energy slaves" and their use caused nobody any harm, including the environment, that abundance-based reality will beckon. I have [spent more than thirty years pondering it](#), and I know that I can barely imagine what it would look like. However, I discovered during my journey that humanity is currently addicted to scarcity and most people are truly [afraid of abundance](#). The radical left may be in position to begin making the change, and what follows is why.

Why the Radical Left is in Position to Make a Difference

It took a gradual awakening, culminating with my radicalizing experience at the hands of the energy gangsters, to understand that the reason why we do not have free energy today is because [personal integrity is the world's scarcest resource](#). It was the primary lesson of my journey, and a sobering one. If humanity cannot muster sufficient collective integrity, we may be doomed. A world civilization with people such as [George W. Bush](#) on center stage will not survive much longer. People's level of caring also seemed directly related to how much awareness they displayed.

After my radicalizing experience, I researched, wrote and edited my web site. The process was often spent comparing my "education" while young to my adult investigations. Much of what I was taught as a child and young adult was a compendium of lies, whether it was the "[news](#)," [history](#), or my [professional training as an accountant](#) and its related economic "[education](#)." I began seeing a common thread, but not until I read Fuller's work could I fully articulate my perception: my indoctrination was designed to imbue me with egocentric, scarcity-based ideologies. I was white, male, intelligent, educated, scientifically trained, American, human and a capitalist, and each

designation elevated me above my fellow creatures, in order to justify exploiting them, usually economically. If I was a Christian, that could be added that to the list, because only Christians go to heaven.

Those scarcity-based ideologies undermine a person's ability to comprehend an abundance paradigm. The people I encountered had invested their economic survival strategies and egos into their ideologies, and anything that challenged their position was to be avoided at best and attacked-and-destroyed at worst. Very few could or would comprehend that they were ignoring/attacking the keys to healing the planet because they would make their survival-oriented ideologies obsolete. I came to call those scarcity-based ideologies "[mind crutches](#)." Greer recently made [almost exactly the same observation](#).

Laying aside those scarcity-based ideologies is necessary for imagining a world of abundance. Some ideologies are [blatantly obvious](#) in their scarcity-based nature, while others are [subtler](#). I eventually learned that only those with sufficient integrity can question their indoctrination and eventually lay those mind crutches aside. What immediately struck me when encountering the work of [McGehee](#), [Chomsky](#), [Herman](#), [Howard Zinn](#) and friends was the high personal integrity evident in their work. In their analyses, they always pointed the finger toward themselves, which is a basic ethical principle that few actively practice. My initial impression of their integrity was reinforced when I eventually contacted them: they have all been among my most gracious correspondents.

Until abundance can be imagined, it cannot be pursued, and the global controllers realize this. Perhaps their greatest triumph in preventing free energy and abundance from becoming a reality has been making the ideas *unimaginable* to the vast majority of humanity. The radical left is in an auspicious position to begin imagining abundance, because they have already cast aside the [most crippling mind crutches](#), such as nationalism, capitalism and organized religion. Other ideologies must also be cast aside, which can be difficult, because ideologies do not seem like ideologies to those adhering to them, but *reality*. *Beliefs* come from being *told* something is true. *Knowledge* comes from the *experience* of something being true.

Overcoming Ideological Barriers to Comprehension

The American ideologies which are obviously scarcity-based – [nationalism, capitalism](#)

[and organized religion](#) – comprise the triune “faith” of most Americans, and are seemingly impossible for people to relinquish these days. In times of fear, politics shifts to the right, not the left, as people become more [self-centered](#) for survival reasons. If most Americans are currently [addicted](#) to their scarcity-based ideologies, then what? Even in these days of expensive energy, [energy wars](#) and [Al Gore](#) playing spokesman for the idea of human-induced global warming, nobody on the global stage is even *hinting* that there may be solutions that dwarf all others. For somebody who has [survived](#) the suppression efforts of those who manage the global energy paradigm, it is surreal that virtually nobody is mentioning practical *solutions* to our civilization-threatening problems.

What follows is a discussion of the subtler, scarcity-based ideologies that have trapped most scientists, intellectuals and the educated. Those subtle ideologies are more insidious than the obvious ones, as they seem to have solid logical and empirical bases. However, my experiences and research have shown me that they sit on foundations nearly as flimsy as those that support nationalism, capitalism and organized religion. Some of those subtler ideologies can be summarized under the categories of [scientism](#), [materialism](#) and [rationalism](#).

The Myths of Science

An august MIT academic recently stated that he never saw a scientist say how science should be done – they just do it. I doubt that professor ever encountered [Carl Sagan](#), Isaac Asimov and the “[skeptics](#),” because he would have heard plenty about how science is *supposed* to be done, and the difference between “real” science and “pseudoscience.” Sagan devoted a great deal of his professional life to attacking “[pseudoscience](#)” and its practitioners. With disturbing frequency, Sagan’s attacks were dishonestly performed. [My Internet stalker](#) is a prominent member of the “skeptical” community, and his work’s [dishonesty](#) is its most salient characteristic.

Sagan’s “skeptical” work is a prime example of *scientism*, which is the belief that the methods of science comprise the only valid path to knowledge. In scientism, science itself is made an object of worship. The so-called scientific method is like democracy and free markets – ideals that have never been seen in the real world, similar to unicorns.[\[3\]](#) In the West, the official creation story used to be in the book of Genesis, with God saying “let there be light,” and Adam being created from mud, and Eve from

Adam's rib. To a significant degree, the Big Bang and evolution is Western science's answer to Genesis. The Big Bang is as fantastic as anything in the Bible, with everything coming from nothing in an instant. Astronomers have [challenged the notion of a Big Bang and expanding universe](#), and the most prominent Big Bang heretic had to leave the U.S. to pursue his theories. Darwinian evolution [also has its problems](#).

The idea of understanding the universe through one's physical senses and logic has existed at least since the ancient Greeks. The Catholic Church eradicated the Greek teachings in the West as pagan, but when the "[Reconquest](#)" of the Iberian Peninsula began almost a thousand years ago, the great Islamic libraries of Moorish Spain became available to Christian scholars, beginning with the Christian conquest of Toledo in 1085. [\[4\]](#) The ancient Greek teachings were then gradually reintroduced to the West. Those Greek teachings helped lead to the Renaissance, Protestant Reformation and diminution of the Church's power. From Roger Bacon in the 1200s to [Francis Bacon](#) in the 1600s, logic and empirical investigation gradually rose to prominence. During the Enlightenment of the 1700s, science and reason largely supplanted religion as the interpreter of how the universe functioned, and by the late 1800s, scientific inquiry had fully triumphed over religious dogma. The rise of science was integral to the [Industrial Revolution](#).

However, science began acting like a religion from the early days, and its terminology reflects it. Today, we have "laws of physics." There are no laws of physics, only theories, but to call a theory a law invests it with a quasi-religious certitude, and today's scientific establishment punishes its heretics with the same zeal as medieval inquisitors did, if not with the same inquisitorial equipment. For instance, the so-called [Second Law of Thermodynamics](#) has significant experimental data that calls it into question.

However, the initial discovering scientist of a possible second-law-defying phenomenon (who had Einstein's interest) had his equipment destroyed, his books *burned*, and [died in a U.S. prison](#). Ironically, he was a Jew who escaped Hitler's Germany, and as he watched his books burn in a U.S. government bonfire, he expressed his dismay that after escaping Hitler's Germany, he never suspected that he would see his books burned again. I encountered another scientist (from MIT) who produced experimental data that contradicted the hallowed Second Law of Thermodynamics, and he was [murdered](#) in 2004.[\[5\]](#) I believe that the dire fates of those scientists who challenge the entrenched dogma may be best understood by comprehending the political-economic dynamics surrounding those "laws" of physics.

An informative example of how theories become prominent, dogmatized and the

foundation of economic rackets is Louis Pasteur's career. He was a chemist whose life's ambition [was becoming rich and famous](#). His initial discovery that led to fame – [discovering chiral molecules](#) – may have been his discovery, although [Pasteur's published account of his discovery](#) was self-serving. Pasteur's forays into biology and medicine, however, are haunted by the suspicion that he may have plagiarized others in his quest for fame and wealth, [Antoine Béchamp](#) most notably. A Harvard professor wrote a book in the 1970s that demonstrated how the story taught to college students about Pasteur's first triumph in the life sciences – his disproval of spontaneous generation theory – was a deplorable example of “[Whig history](#)” in science, where students are taught expedient fairy tales. A [review of microbiology textbooks](#) written a generation after that formidable work demonstrates that Whig history is still practiced regarding Pasteur's triumph. Howard Zinn [capably wrote](#) about how damaging such “history” is to those who believe it.

Such mythmaking about Pasteur is not innocent, and economic empires have been [built on the Pasteurian paradigm](#). The fairy tales about Pasteur may be far more damaging than those told American schoolchildren about [George Washington](#) and [Christopher Columbus](#) because Pasteur apparently had a poor understanding of what he may have plagiarized, and his work arguably placed modern medicine on a false foundation. His [germ theory of disease](#) may be [critically flawed](#), vaccines [probably do far more harm than good](#) (if any good at all), the short-lived antibiotic age [may soon come to and end](#), and harmless, cheap and effective [cancer and other disease treatments](#) have been developed by those pursuing biology and medicine beyond the Pasteurian paradigm. The doctors and scientists who pioneered and used those treatments have been subjected to breathtaking [suppression efforts](#) by organized medicine.

The life sciences and medicine are rife with that kind of mythmaking and outright lying in the service of economic empires. For instance, today's orthodox cancer treatments do not [extend the lives of those they are used on](#), but make many billions of dollars each year for the medical establishment. Similarly, the most lucrative surgery in America, coronary bypass surgery, also [does not appreciably extend the lives](#) of those it is used on. If those immensely lucrative treatments do not extend the patients' lives, can we call them complete failures, particularly since they are also agonizing treatments? Also, can we suspect that those worse-than-worthless treatments are also part of a racket, especially when treatments that *do* extend the lives of the patients, and do so cheaply and harmlessly, are mercilessly suppressed? Does it really [stretch the imagination](#) that far to suspect that the right and left hands are aware of each other and may be directed by the same brain?

Life sciences are not as “hard” as the physical sciences, so maybe we really *know* something in the physical sciences. By the late 1800s, the rationalist-materialist paradigm was firmly entrenched as the West’s new “religion.” Scientists believed that they were [dealing with the real world](#) with their methods. Then something strange happened. An obscure, 26-year-old Swiss patent clerk proposed the *special theory of relativity*, and twentieth-century physics was born. Everything became relative, with no absolutes, except perhaps change. A generation later, a number of young scientists proposed a theory to describe how atoms behaved. Quantum physics was thus born, and one of its cornerstones was the *uncertainty principle*, authored by a 23-year-old scientist whose theory became clear to him during a fevered weekend. Relativity and quantum theory are the two primary pillars of today’s physics. Einstein and Heisenberg had to thank [flashes of creative insight](#) for their theories, not cold reason. I have known some of the [greatest inventive minds of the 20th century](#), and they also had instants of creative insight to thank for their breakthroughs, not reason.

The most influential study of the scientific milieu in the past fifty years is Thomas Kuhn’s *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*. Kuhn was *another* MIT academic, and he coined the modern definition of the term *paradigm*. Kuhn argued that scientists did not adopt new paradigms because of the persuasiveness of the scientific evidence, but because scientists [chose to believe the new paradigm](#). The dominant theories of today’s physics arrived through moments of intuitive insight and state that everything is relative, that little, if anything, is certain, everything changes, and that scientific paradigms prevail because scientist have *chosen to believe in them*. Of all of today’s theories of physics, Einstein had perhaps the most confidence in the [Second Law of Thermodynamics](#). If that one falls, which ones might not? The so-called Second Law helps define the scarcity-based paradigm that prevails today among the scientifically trained.

Einstein and Heisenberg were, to one degree or another, [mystics](#), as have been almost all of physics’ giants. Einstein believed that the universe was [intelligently designed](#), and he cheerfully admitted that modern science knew almost nothing about how the universe worked. Einstein and friends largely rejected the West’s rationalist-materialist paradigm. Isaac Newton is considered history’s most influential scientist, but devoted most of his life to alchemy and [likened his work to a boy playing on the beach](#), being diverted with pebbles and shells, while the vast ocean of the universe had yet to be explored. James Jeans wrote that the twentieth century’s breakthroughs in physics demonstrated to scientists that they were still imprisoned in [Plato’s Cave](#), still [watching shadows on the wall](#). If the leading figures of the hardest of sciences did not believe that

the picture that science tells us depicts *reality*, why should anybody else? A mystical/[spiritual](#) perspective has nothing whatsoever to do with organized religion, and organized religion is often the mystic's greatest assailant. [Ken Wilber](#) argued that the giants of physics became mystics because they had seen how science failed to explain the universe. It may be the other way around, and their mystical orientation produced their breakthroughs. Nearly everybody whom I respect in the free energy field is also, to one degree or another, a [mystic](#).

There are many related dogmas that accompany the rationalist-materialist paradigm. Two common reactions among the scientifically trained to the idea of intelligent life existing elsewhere in the universe are that it would not or could not come here. That first reaction is a projection of human motivation onto extraterrestrial intelligent life, in a vacuum of knowing just what may influence such extra-terrestrial thinking, and the second projects our primitive understanding of the "laws of physics" onto what technologies are "possible." Both objections beg the question. [Two years ago](#), I stood in a field with aerospace and military personnel and watched intelligently piloted, almost certainly extraterrestrial (ET), craft reveal themselves in the sky on request. [I went again the next year](#), and received a similar show. There is still [debate and controversy](#) on an issue that is easily settled for those who simply go see for themselves.

Greer is also a leading ET activist, because ETs and free energy are conjoined. Greer staged U.S. Congressional hearings on the ET issue in 1997 (co-chaired by Apollo 14's Ed Mitchell, and they had several hundred witnesses willing to testify, mostly military personnel) and he nearly died soon thereafter of artificially induced cancer, while other members of his team [did not survive the experience](#). In the early 1990s, he briefed the [sitting director of the CIA](#), and the sitting [U.S. president](#) avidly read his briefing materials. He was then invited to meet members of the group that runs the world, and they told him that sitting U.S. presidents and CIA directors were [completely ignorant](#) about how the world is really run. They also told him about the [\\$100 billion in quiet money](#) they have paid out to prevent free energy and related technologies from becoming publicly available.

That [recently murdered free energy scientist](#) resigned from MIT in protest when he discovered that MIT had fraudulently manipulated its experimental data in order to dismiss cold fusion. [Arthur C. Clarke](#) called the dismissal of cold fusion possibly one of greatest scandals in the history of science.

The ideologies of [scientism, rationalism and materialism](#) are all scarcity-based and have

served to straightjacket the minds of scientists and others into believing what is possible and what is not, and those blinded scientists have almost completely abandoned a principal tenet of scientific investigation, that of *observation*. The scientific establishment ridiculed reports of [Edison's light bulb](#) and the [Wright brothers' airplane](#), claiming that both were “impossible,” and could not be bothered to go see it for themselves. Such mindlessness is [alive and well today](#) in the halls of science and technology, and may well be worse today than it was in the days of Edison and the Wright brothers. I have had numerous interactions with physicists and scientists regarding free energy realities, and I can never get them dislodged from their armchairs long enough to look into it. Instead, they engage me in circular arguments that run like this:

1. Free energy is contrary to the laws of physics and therefore impossible;
2. The suppression of free energy is an unbelievable conspiracy theory, and you can't suppress something that does not exist;
3. If you can give me a working free energy device that I can study, then I might believe that free energy is possible;
4. If you cannot give me a free energy device, it means that free energy's impossibility is the most likely reality, not its suppression, because I cannot imagine anybody wanting to suppress something like free energy, even if it was possible;
5. Thank you for your time, but my armchair is very comfortable; I'll sit here and wait for you to deliver me a free energy machine, but I doubt you will deliver one to me, because such a device is impossible.

I had a similar exchange with a famous person in the high-tech field in 2006. After more interaction with various people in 2006, something I had seen Herman and Chomsky write about finally became clear: most people are [incapable of being rational](#) when their survival-based ideologies are challenged, *especially* those who fancy themselves to be intelligent and educated; their defense mechanisms are just slightly more sophisticated than most. That situation leads to the question of whether humanity is really a sentient species, and if so, if sentience really means much.

The reasons for such responses from the scientifically trained, I believe, are several. One is that many scientists have mental and physical attributes that have been described by many terms over the years, including “nerd.” As psychology has been “advancing,” they have found that the qualities that make people “nerds” are partly a reflection of their particular talents. There seems to be a range of these qualities, with autism on the far end, Asperger's Syndrome next to it, with hyperlexia and other “disorders” nearer to “normal.” People in the *autism spectrum* often have unusual

mental and creative abilities, but also tend to have poor social skills and other problems (such as clumsiness or poor dexterity). Today, it is surmised that Newton, Einstein and Bill Gates had/have symptoms that place them in the autism spectrum, possibly with Asperger's Syndrome. Those scientists in the autism spectrum relatively easily understand the abstract concepts common to math and science, but can be oblivious to body language and other cues required to socially navigate. They consequently tend to have poor social lives and a stunted understanding of the human condition. That dynamic is probably related to the [naiveté of scientists](#) that Fuller observed.

Another reason is their political indoctrination. About half of all American scientists work for the military-industrial complex. If we add the medical-industrial complex and civilian high technology, that group probably includes more than 80% of America's scientifically trained. I work in the civilian high-technology field myself, and right wing political views predominate. The military-industrial complex is also heavily right wing in its political orientation. I have many friends and relatives who work in those environments. For instance, one relative works for a military contractor and recently said that the only show that played on the lunchroom television was [Fox News](#), and nobody really seemed to mind. One day, he changed the channel and fled the room when nobody was around. It was turned back to *Fox News* almost immediately. Most people will never overcome their indoctrination, and when their bread is buttered by a highly slanted political culture, there are few incentives to ever learn any differently – except a love of the truth. The likelihood of a scientist waking up to political reality in that environment is almost zero. I have subscribed to *Z Magazine* since the early 1990s, and have read all manner of progressive periodical and book. I cannot recall ever seeing an article in any of those publications that was authored by a scientist in the physical sciences. As Noam Chomsky has discussed for many years, the U.S. military establishment heavily funded American universities during the Cold War, and his fellow MIT faculty are mostly right-wingers.

Ironically, Chomsky's peers at MIT find his political views strange but non-threatening, but a few miles away at Harvard, the seat of the liberal establishment, Chomsky is regarded as the devil incarnate. That is because Chomsky is a true leftist, and his positions expose the [liberal left's](#) fraudulent stances, which are every bit as imperialist as right-wingers' are, but they concoct more humane rhetoric. That Chomsky's work even exists demonstrates that the liberal left's work is not very left at all, and is just more apologetics for empire.

Related to the political indoctrination of the scientifically trained is their economic indoctrination. I work near Microsoft, almost in sight of Bill Gates' house, and the prevailing economic viewpoint of Microsoft employees is a belief in the unbridled "free

market” as they try to get rich by working for a monopoly. They also have strongly “libertarian” views.

In summary, scientists and technical professionals receive ample rewards from their membership in America’s more lucrative establishments, and rarely have the motivation, ability or opportunity to successfully study evidence that contradicts the paradigms they have been indoctrinated into. In addition, there is often a genuine fear of straying from the herd, and great rewards reaped for quietly serving in their soft berths. That is not a pointed indictment of scientists, as this dynamic has long been observed to be [common to all Americans](#), if not all people. Few have [ever had a productive reaction](#) to the evidence of how the energy racket really works. The danger is thinking that scientists are *less* susceptible to such irrationalities, when sometimes they are *more* susceptible. Very few of them [have what it takes](#) to effectively investigate/evaluate/pursue free energy.

Conscious Control of the World Economy

My baptism-by-fire in the alternative energy field taught me many lessons. That the [global controllers existed and were vigilant](#) was not my journey’s big surprise, although they inflicted great suffering onto us. My big surprise was how easily humanity plays into their hands, and my primary delusion took me [the longest to shed](#) because I did not want to believe what I was seeing. I finally had to admit it, after having my face rubbed in it for years. To revisit the [high ethical ground](#) that Chomsky and friends regularly stand on, the most ethical position regarding the situation is not to focus on what *they* do, but on what *we* can do. The global controllers cannot be beaten at their game, and [exposing them is a perilous and probably futile task](#). The best we can do is making them obsolete.

When numerous family members and friends attacked and/or abandoned me and/or my partner, as he sat in jail and I was going bankrupt, I was in shock and dismay for a long time. I thought they knew what motivated *me*, if not my partner. In their worldview, only criminals go to jail and greedy get-rich-quick artists usually get what they deserve, and they chose to believe the blatant lies spewed by the [prosecution](#) and [local media](#) over my testimony. Some never even asked for my side of the story, because the newspaper and TV news are obviously paragons of truth. Greer cited a similar situation [with an ET whistleblower and his son](#). The son thought his father was crazy, until he encountered the identical situation during his career. If sons think their fathers are crazy for telling the

truth about what is really happening, what chance does somebody like me have of convincing the general public about the stark realities behind the world economy?

When I began engaging the public via the Internet after publishing my original website in 1996, people's reactions were educational. They either completely denied that the kinds of suppression efforts we were subjected to even exist, or they believed the global controllers were *the reason* why we do not have free energy today. In my experience, neither perception is accurate. I estimate that the global controllers and [their antics](#) only account for about 5-10% of why humanity does not benefit today from free energy, anti-gravity and an abundance paradigm.

Putting golden handcuffs on ten thousand people is an impressive effort, and [\\$100 billion dollars](#) is a tidy sum. The global controllers have probably also spent hundreds of billions of dollars on their surveillance efforts and bludgeoning people like my former partner and me. They have a lot of blood on their hands. Half a trillion dollars, however, is a pittance to pay for ensuring that humanity is mired in economic scarcity and easily manipulated. Far more important is how humanity plays along. In 1984, George Orwell wrote that the masses could throw off the elite manipulators like a horse shakes off flies, if they woke up only a little.[\[6\]](#) After the ordeal in Ventura was over, I realized that a [hundred people of high commitment and integrity](#) could easily bring free energy to the public. I also slowly realized that those hundred people might not exist. Therefore, I have [tried a strategy](#) that is less risky to its participants – it only asks that people become *aware*. If enough collective sentience and integrity can be applied to merely attempting to understand and discuss the free energy milieu's reality, it may catalyze enough awareness so humanity can go over the top. However, I have yet to find a group willing to lay aside its scarcity-based ideologies in pursuit of a healed humanity and planet.

As I began reading Chomsky's work and digesting the radical left's perspective, it quickly became evident that structural analysis was preferred over "conspiracy theories" to explain how the world works. I noticed a visceral, almost violent, aversion amongst the radical left to the notion that aspects of the global political-economic system are consciously managed through surreptitious means. I also noticed that, with rare exceptions such as [David Edwards](#), there were no religious people among the radical left's members, and the rationalist-materialist paradigm seemed firmly entrenched, as it is with most scientists.

In early 1989, before I mortgaged my life to help free my partner from jail, [I met a policeman](#) who helped prevent me from wasting my time begging the federal

government to intervene. His advice directly led to my partner's release from jail. That policeman also [wrote a book](#) about his adventures in Southern California, adventures that he [almost did not survive](#). In his book, he recounted an extraordinary event that transpired in late 1963. The policeman was Audie Murphy's friend. Murphy was [America's most decorated war hero](#) and a friend of Bill Decker, who was Dallas County's sheriff. Jack Ruby shot Lee Harvey Oswald as he was being transferred to Decker's custody. In December 1963, Murphy, Decker, my policeman friend and his partner met with a frightened John Tower, who revealed Oswald's true involvement in the John F. Kennedy assassination: Oswald was a military intelligence operative involved in a covert operation led by E. Howard Hunt that [planned to stage a fake assassination attempt](#) on JFK and pin it on Cuba, to justify invading it. The operation somehow backfired, and a fake assassination attempt turned into a real one.

When I read that story in 1989, it spurred my interest in the JFK assassination. Since then, I have read about ten thousand pages of JFK material and analyzed a great deal of the JFK assassination evidence. The center-of-gravity of my research was comparing how the evidence fit with my friend's story. I never found any piece of credible evidence that contradicted his story and, over the years, new evidence has sometimes provided stunning validation of it. For instance, Hunt's brainchild seemed like an offspring or parallel effort to [Operation Northwoods](#). After I wrote the first draft of this essay, Hunt's "deathbed confession" was [published in Rolling Stone Magazine](#). While his confession's veracity is suspect, even doubted by his son, it is another strand of evidence that makes it increasingly difficult to swallow the "lone nut" story of the JFK hit. In 2006, I became aware of serious investigation into the Tower/Oswald story, and I briefly joined the [best discussion I have encountered on the issue](#). One impressive investigator informed me that he also knew of no reason why the Tower/Oswald story would not be true.

Because of my proximity to the situation, I was about 99.9% certain that Oswald was not JFK's "lone nut" assassin. The goal of my JFK research was never to "solve the crime" and unmask the conspirators, but to challenge the legitimacy of a system that produced the fiction known as *The Warren Commission Report*. It has been educational to see how various factions have dealt with the issue. Chomsky wrote a book that debunked any possible CIA motive for involvement in the JFK hit.^[7] Parts of his thesis I tend to agree with, because the CIA's leadership *may* not have been behind the *real* assassination. However, the JFK hit created a small firestorm amongst the radical left, with Michael Parenti criticizing not only Chomsky's analysis of the power structure's motives regarding JFK, but Parenti also wrote that the left had a "[conspiracy-phobia](#)."

I immersed myself in the JFK assassination evidence and interacted with the

independent researcher community. There are undoubtedly disinformation specialists in the JFK researcher community, both free-lance and on somebody's payroll, and many varieties of establishment defenders. However, as with free energy, the collective behavior of the sincere JFK researchers may be the biggest reason why they have not gained much traction on the issue. I became involved with other "conspiratorial" milieus, such as the [controversy surrounding the moon landings](#), and I have interacted with independent researchers of the [events of September 11, 2001](#). I had seen enough similarities to [generalize about what I saw](#). With striking similarity to people's reactions to free energy, few have had balanced reactions to the idea that Oswald was not a lone nut or that the attacks on America on 9/11 may have been at least partly an inside job.

On JFK, the radical left has largely dismissed any relevance of JFK's death to U.S. foreign or domestic policy or world events, so they do not really care if JFK was murdered by Oswald or not. The liberal left is less dismissive of an American president's significance, but generally cannot bring itself to believe that our government has covered-up the evidence that shows that Oswald did not act alone. The right wing has its factions too, and one of their predominant themes is that JFK's presidency was some kind of Golden Age, and the American nation has been going straight down the toilet since his murder. Those perspectives can be endlessly debated, but what interested me was the radical left's aversion to the idea that such events might be consciously orchestrated. I have now seen it many times in leftist writings. [An astute, longtime observer](#) of Chomsky's work and the fervor surrounding it believes that Chomsky accepts the official stories of JFK, 9/11 and [Pearl Harbor](#) partly due to his "need to ensure a minimum level of personal security in his professional life, in other words plain survival for one who is consistently challenging conventional assumptions." If true, it is understandable and something that Chomsky may not even be consciously aware of.

Not long after 9/11, *Z Magazine* [made its editorial position clear](#): it preferred structural analysis largely *to the exclusion* of the consideration that power structure members consciously orchestrated events towards a desired end. In [their article](#), Stephen R. Shalom and Michael Albert provided some common critiques of the conspiratorial mindset and how it can go astray. However, they also use labels such as "conspiracy buff" and "right wing crazies" as they dismiss the evidence that 9/11 might have partly been an inside job. Other leftists have produced startling, Limbaugh/Coulter-style invective regarding those who consider the "inside job" angle of 9/11. George Monbiot, who seems more [liberal left more than radical left](#), [wrote in The Guardian in February 2007](#) that to even consider the "inside job" aspect of 9/11 was to become a "gibbering idiot" ([here is a rebuttal](#)). Alexander Cockburn, one of Chomsky's colleagues and an

editor of *Counterpunch*, [which I consider one of America's best political publications](#), has launched vitriol at the “[9/11 Conspiracy Nuts](#)” and other “conspiracy buffs” for a long time. Ironically, *Counterpunch* has recently advocated the “[Israel knew about 9/11 in advance](#)” theory. The Israel-involvement theory is no more or less tenable than many other 9/11 angles, but it appeals to Cockburn's political sensibilities ([here is a competent response](#) to those articles).

My point here is not to debate the [facts of 9/11](#) or the [JFK hit](#), but to demonstrate how the radical left's position on those issues is *ideological*. In [their article](#), Shalom/Albert explicitly state that “religious beliefs are not rational or scientific,” as they observe that “conspiracy theorists” tend to behave like religious zealots when confronting contrary evidence, and that such theories “lead us to counterproductive and wrong priorities,” and they state near the end of their article that “If everything is under the control of powerful and incredibly evil forces, there is no point in fighting injustice.” They seem to be saying that even acknowledging those “evil” people and their deeds is to land on the slippery slope that leads to hopelessness and paranoia. As anybody knows who has actually *played at the high levels*, those “evil” people indeed exist, but their control is far less than total, and is really not that much control at all. For the herd's size, the shepherds' task is surprisingly easy.

Greer has encountered those who clandestinely run the world and became aware of activities that he will not disclose publicly, except in passing, [because they are so horrific](#). [\[8\]](#) Again, very few have a healthy and balanced reaction to that situation. Most deny that such people and activities exist. Those that suspect or *know* they exist try to expose and/or punish the perpetrators. Both reactions operate from the victim principle, not from a position of responsibility. A [spiritual perspective](#) may be necessary to both acknowledge the situation and put it in its proper context, but those operating within the rationalist-materialist paradigm seemingly cannot accomplish it. Those “bad guys” are an integral and arguably necessary part of the human family, and cannot be beaten at their game. Making them obsolete and becoming immune to their manipulations seems to be the only productive strategy (and one that can eventually redeem them too), a strategy that few have attempted.

There is a vast and crucial difference between placing appropriate emphasis on a phenomenon and downplaying/denying its very existence. “Conspiracies” exist, on a scale that can be difficult to comprehend for those who have not been on the receiving end of such efforts. Pretending they do not exist misses the bigger picture. For instance, about the only reason I mention the global controllers' efforts to suppress free energy, anti-gravity and related technologies is to answer the [most common response](#)

that I receive to my tale: “If free energy devices were possible, I should be able to buy one.” Most scientists [respond with something similar](#). Such responses reflect a belief in the [magic of capitalism and the greatness of America](#), two pillars of America’s triune faith. If people can move beyond their denial (and few do), then most of them have other [unproductive reactions](#).

Some of the more thoughtful rebuttals to the analyses of Cockburn, [Shalom/Albert](#) and friends move beyond the [false dichotomy](#) of structural analysis or conspiracy theories. Peter Dale Scott has been integrating the two perspectives with his “deep politics” analytics, as have others. Here is an [excellent rebuttal](#) to Cockburn and friends’ analysis of the 9/11 evidence. Various commentators have noted that the radical left’s increasingly caustic attacks on the 9/11 researcher community are partly due to the growing irrelevance of political-economic analysis that denies the “deep political” aspect of today’s reality. The good news is that not *all* rad lefties are disparaging efforts that challenge the official version of 9/11. A few years ago, [Howard Zinn](#) signed a [petition](#) that questions the official 9/11 story, as did [Michael Parenti](#). Bill Christison, a former CIA officer and regular contributor to *Counterpunch*, [wrote that attacking the 9/11 researchers was counterproductive](#), and the issue was well worth being made the subject of intense investigation, as 9/11 has been the *casus belli* for all U.S. wars and international aggressions ever since, as well the ongoing shredding of the Bill of Rights.

It took me several years of studying a vast array of material, as well as interactions with many activists from both sides of the divide, to arrive at my current understanding of the conflict between the “conspiracy theorists” and the “structural analysts.” The “conspiracy theorists” are often active members of an organized religion, and Shalom/Albert [compared them to religious fanatics](#). The notion of conscious manipulation of the global situation by the elites is consistent with the cosmology of those religious “conspiracy theorists.” They believe that the universe was consciously created. On the other hand, those subscribing to the rationalist-materialist paradigm almost invariably subscribe to the Big Bang and evolution as *their* creation myth. Even though Einstein [believed the universe was intelligently designed](#), leading radical leftists have dismissed the notion. With the Big Bang and evolution, the universe is one big accident, with nobody planning anything. Consciousness is merely some poorly understood byproduct of chemistry. The competing notions of the universe being created consciously or randomly go a long way toward understanding the mutual antagonism between the “conspiracy theorists” and the “structural analysts.” My worldview has room for evolution *and* creation. The greatest science is the science of consciousness, and until scientists begin factoring consciousness into their equations, they will be playing a small game.

On the energy issue, *Z Magazine* published an article a few years ago that lauded a work of TV *fiction* that depicted the Rockefeller Empire suppressing alternative energy a century ago.[\[9\] Such activities](#) are *happening today*, and are critical to the human journey and our near-term prospects.

The people controlling humanity do not need to micromanage the situation. Only a few leverage points really matter. The primary one, energy, [has run all economies for all time](#). *That* is something that [Heinberg](#) and friends understand. They also know that [human civilization is doomed](#) if we run out of energy. Just as most of the [giants of physics](#) and [those I respect in the free energy field](#) were/are mystics, the global controllers do not operate within the rationalist-materialist paradigm. They have a fairly sophisticated understanding of consciousness and the human condition, and they sometimes use incredible and often [diabolical technologies](#) to keep their stranglehold on humanity. For the initiated, it is obvious that if humanity burned up all the fossil fuels and did not find another energy source to replace it, today's global civilization has several billion "excess" people in it. That is why Heinberg and friends are called neo-Malthusians, and their solution is for humanity to immediately [shed more than five billion people](#).

As people are currently [addicted to scarcity and failure](#), most truly *do not want to hear* about [free energy](#) and the [abundance paradigm](#), and abundance remains an *unimaginable* concept to them. If I had not observed that reaction countless times, I would not have believed it. Under an abundance paradigm, all [scarcity-based ideologies](#) evaporate. If free energy became publicly available, it would be "game over" for the global controllers. They understand that situation, which is why they [offered us about a billion dollars](#) to cease our efforts.

The problem with paradigms is that they rest on *assumptions*, and once *assumed*, principles are rarely examined afterward. That is how scientists tend to be [blinded by the paradigms](#) they were raised with, as [Max Planck observed](#). The rationalist-materialist assumptions can be very seductive, and I have seen irrational dismissals of spirituality by prominent rad lefties, calling it "irrational." Spirituality is not *materialistic*, but can be the [pinnacle of rationality](#), yet the spiritual masters also realize rationality's limits. Again, the [giants of physics](#) did not subscribe to the rationalist-materialist paradigm and their breakthroughs did not rely on rational thought processes. When my mentor [invented the world's best engine in an instant](#), he knew that something other than his intellect was responsible. Scientists tend to call the phenomenon "creativity." I had a [more mundane flash of creative insight long ago](#), and knew it did not come from

my intellect. Einstein was fond of calling that inspiration “God” (as have others I have known), but he did not mean a man in a white beard. Einstein reveled in his “cosmic religious feeling.”

For the American masses, their checks clear the bank, they punch the clock, [watch the tube](#), eat at [McDonald's](#) and are [history's fattest humans](#), but they are also all a few missed paychecks from being homeless. They are Orwell's *proles*. Only when people try to *do something* that might alter the paradigm do the global controllers venture out of the shadows and intervene, such as when they [froze \\$20 billion](#) that some radical activists had in the bank.

In summary, the global controllers exist and they are vigilant, but you will never encounter them unless you begin getting close to the levers of power, and those levers do not reside in governments. Their organization is a deeply private one and does not have a name that you would recognize. They [stand far above](#) the alphabet soup U.S. government agencies, transnational corporations and even international elite groups such as the Bilderbergers and Trilateral Commission. The sitting U.S. president is just another pretty face.

As Fuller said, a new political system is not an answer to our problems. All political actors are “[stooges](#)” of the economic interests. All of history's [political-economic systems](#) have been based on scarcity and will fade away in the light of an abundance paradigm. Becoming radical in economics means solving the energy issue and making humanity's economic pie a hundred times larger than it is today, instead of fighting to preserve/enlarge the small slice that the economic “losers” currently receive. All other economic issues are of secondary importance, and I am asking the radical left to truly get radical. The left's current radical economic manifesto is Michael Albert's *Parecon*, which *does not even mention* energy. There is an economic reality beyond capitalism that is also beyond scarcity.

When Greer's ET witnesses are asked why there is a cover-up, [the most common answer](#) is so that free energy, anti-gravity and other technologies do not make it into the public's hands, and not due to benevolent intent – keeping potentially-dangerous technologies from an irresponsible public – although that argument can be cogently made and is worth considering (here is a [video](#) of him talking about the situation). I have seen leading leftists disparage the entire ET/UFO situation as one of “little green men.” I doubt that such disparagers have actually *tried to see a UFO for themselves*, [which is easy to do](#). Their [ideological objections](#) to the notion that we are not alone in the universe, and that such beings are here, *now*, serve to blind them to the significance of

free energy and its suppression. There is nothing inherently unscientific about those situations and, in fact, those realities shatter the worldview and professional egos of most scientists, just as [The Brookings Institute warned NASA about many years ago](#). People need their feet firmly anchored on the ground in order to pursue these issues. I have watched people unravel when simply pondering these issues, and there is plenty of [chaff amongst the free energy field's wheat](#).

Healing Humanity and the Planet

If you are a radical leftist and made it this far, you may be asking yourself, “Why us? Why would this guy try to interest us in free energy, abundance and conscious control of the world economy, which are all such strange ideas?” I do so because every group I have encountered so far has proven addicted to their scarcity-based ideologies, and they leave the job to somebody else to pursue the truth and bring free energy and abundance to the world. *Not enough people care enough*. Explaining the predicament that humanity finds itself in today is as simple as that, something I [learned at great personal cost](#). There seems to be a greater proportion of people with high integrity in the radical left than in any other group I have encountered. I hope the radical left has what it takes to develop a discussion of such novel concepts as [abundance](#) and a realistic Utopia. I *know* it is feasible, but one person or ten cannot make it happen, not with the global controllers’ vigilance and the masses’ inertia. [A hundred heroes could](#), but I do not advocate that approach either. How about if thousands of the awake and awakening simply discuss it? That may be enough. I do not ask that anybody accept anything on faith. If a worthy discussion is started, I will invite some *highly* qualified people to it.

I was once a board member of the [New Energy Movement](#), founded by a former astronaut. They are currently [beseeching the American government for help](#). While I honor their motivation, in today’s environment that approach, like all others I have seen, has a faint chance of success. This open letter can be seen as a complementary attempt in pursuit of a healed humanity and planet. I have not seen *any* approach that seems likely to succeed in today’s world, but we keep trying. [Sometimes the miracle happens](#), but it generally manifests for the persistent.

The ideas presented in my work are easily explored. People come from earth’s four corners to a [ranch in Washington State](#) to watch UFOs reveal themselves on request. Discovering your mystical abilities is easily done [with a little training](#). I do not need to

convince rad lefties that such ideologies as [nationalism, capitalism and organized religion](#) can be very limiting and damaging. The radical left has an advantage over those still worshipping at those altars. Can anybody think of anything with more potential than bringing free energy to humanity? Is there anything close?

Using the world's scarcest commodity, personal integrity, to bring about an abundance-based reality is a paradox, which is not necessarily a bad thing; Niels Bohr said that [wrestling with paradoxes](#) is where scientific progress is made.

I also must present a concept that is at odds with the attitudes of many radical activists. It relates to realizing ideals. Bringing an abundance paradigm to humanity would dwarf everything that came before it. It can be [difficult to imagine](#) what a world based on abundance would look like. It is as idealistic a project as was ever conceived, and [the means become the ends](#). I have seen too many in the radical left, all men, [advocate violence as a solution](#). Humanity has a deep-seated belief in violently redressing grievances, and I have seen prominent rad lefties advocate coercing the elites (AKA "enemies") into relinquishing their power. What they have yet to understand is that the elites' power has been *given to them* by a humanity that refuses to accept responsibility for the world they live in. The relationship is symbiotic, if dysfunctional. Coercion and violence [only lead to more](#). As a great master once said, the way to [utterly destroy one's enemies is by loving them](#).

If enough people simply became aware and made sufficient noise about free energy and abundance, the global controllers would probably disappear. They live in the shadows and cannot abide the light of day. With enlightenment, there does not need to be any "struggle."

The human condition these days is not pretty, and virtually every activist I know of, who has played at the high levels, has become [disgusted with humanity](#) at some point on their journeys. To one degree or another, they all recovered from their dismay and disgust, and I believe that their larger, usually mystical, perspective was instrumental in their recovery. An enlightened mystic sees the divine spark in us all, and fanning that spark into flame has been the goal of all spiritual masters.

Free energy, abundance and a healed planet [can be just around the corner](#) if enough of us can only *imagine* it. Is anybody interested in discussing these ideas and pursuing the evidence supporting them? It does not take very many of us to [help humanity over the hump](#) and heal the planet in the process, and I hope that some of them may hail from

the radical left.[\[10\]](#)

Peace and well being.

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) The United States was founded during the era of classic liberalism, as exemplified by Adam Smith's writings and those of other Enlightenment philosophers. Classic liberalism immediately became a dominant American ideology, with considerable and enduring influence. Classical liberalism is notable for its focus on rationality, personal freedom and its deep intertwining with economic theory. What we today call radicalism was born in the same era as classical liberalism, and it took the ideas of liberalism further and tended to challenge the legitimacy of all governments and economic institutions. Radical means "going to the root."

In these neo-Orwellian days, the terms "liberal" and "conservative" have been often stripped of their original meaning and even inverted at times. Radicals tend to operate from a cleaner slate than liberals do, by rejecting more mass assumptions. An informative recent contrast between liberals and radicals, both in the United States and Britain, has been their stance regarding the American-British invasion of Iraq. Liberals have tended to align with the mainstream in defending the American/British right of unilateral invasion in defiance of the entire world (while [none of the official rationales have withstood scrutiny](#)), while radicals reject the notion on principle. Recent liberal (and "conservative" and mainstream) revulsion with the Iraq invasion is that it is "not successful" in achieving its stated goals, not that the entire enterprise suffered from corrupt motivation at the outset. Mounting aggressive wars of invasion was the primary crime that the Nazi officials were convicted of at Nuremburg after World War II. Ed Herman has described those "liberal" invasion defenders as the [Cruise Missile Left](#). Today's liberals also tend to defend the corporate order and capitalism, while sometimes proposing mild reform; radicals tend to challenge capitalism *in toto*. [Parecon](#) is the latest challenge from the radical left to capitalism. Regarding the invasion of Iraq, liberals tend to completely ignore the economic motive for invading Iraq – i.e., capturing the world's most accessible and lucrative energy deposits – while radicals say that the economic motive, as with all wars, [was paramount](#), and extremely so. History often vindicates the radical perspective, and is already doing so regarding America and the West's multiple manipulations and invasions of the Middle East.

American radical leftists have a relatively unfettered view of world events and have discarded the ideological crutches that cripple comprehension in America, such as [nationalism, capitalism and organized religion](#). The liberal left tends to embrace nationalism and capitalism, although usually with less fervor than the mainstream and those subscribing to right wing political-economic ideologies. Right wing philosophies are generally self-serving, while left wing philosophies tend to consider everybody's welfare. I see the contrast as a measure of their [spiritual maturity](#).

[2] See “Plan War and the Hubbert Oil Curve, An interview with Richard Heinberg,” by Dave Ross, *Z Magazine*, May 2004, pp. 47-50.

[3] Henry Bauer wrote *Scientific Literacy and the Myth of the Scientific Method* to address that issue.

[4] See an easy-to-read presentation of how Greek teachings were reintroduced to Christian Europe in James Burke’s *The Day the Universe Changed*.

[5] This is a subject of immense, if marginalized, controversy. There have been [many theoretical challenges to the second law](#) in recent years (see also [here](#); a more accessible argument is [here](#)).

The data surrounding [Reich’s discovery](#) is controversial, accompanied by the typical acrimonious exchanges at the margins (the conflict between Paulo and Alexandra Correa and James DeMeo being a recent example). However, others have adduced data that brings the second law into question (for instance, [here](#) and [here](#)). Most of the free energy technologies that I am aware of (see, for instance, [1](#), [2](#), [3](#)) of do not violate the Second Law, but are tapping into an energy source that science does not currently recognize, which is called the vacuum and other terms.

[6] See George Orwell’s *1984*, chapter VII.

[7] See Chomsky’s *Rethinking Camelot*.

[8] See Steven Greer’s *Hidden Truth, Forbidden Knowledge*, p. 119.

[9] See Z Staff’s “Quiddity,” *Z Magazine*, November 2003, p. 5.

[10] I have been asked what would happen if enough people imagined abundance in an enlightened manner. What would the outcome look like? There are many ways it could look. The simplest would be somebody mounting a free energy effort (there are [plenty of potential technologies](#)) and having the support of those who can imagine an [abundance paradigm](#) and realize that free energy would be its cornerstone. It would not even have to be financial help, just the light of their sentience (and they would not stay quiet about it). They would not be easily dissuaded/deluded by the power structure’s suppression efforts. The biggest and most painful lesson I learned was how [low the integrity level of the average American was](#), and how easily an effort like ours was derailed, largely with the help of our “allies.” If a hundred people had supported the effort the way that [Mr. Professor](#) and I did when the gangsters in Ventura lowered the boom (almost certainly at the [global controllers’](#) behest), the effort would not have been smashed, but would have been successful. It could be that simple. Again, a [hundred heroes](#) could do it, but the cost extracted from them [can be rather high](#). I doubt that the hundred heroes exist, but maybe thousands of the awake and awakening [could simply hold the vision](#). The [disinformation](#) and [outright lying](#) about Dennis Lee’s journey has been a significant reason why he has not been able to successfully rebuild his effort. [Sterling Allan’s critique](#) of Dennis’ efforts is the only honest, intelligent and somewhat informed one that I have ever seen, and I have seen a hundred of them. Again, if enough people simply loved the truth enough to pursue it, it might be enough. When the disinformation and attacks come, they hold their vision, because their understanding is rooted in a love of the truth and the desire to make the world a better place. Those who readily believed all the lies and/or helped the “bad guys” bury us do not have the integrity and discernment to help. If enough people came together with sufficient integrity and sentience, taking action will be the easy part, because it will be obvious. The hard part is finding those people.

The Next Section: [An Open Letter to the Free Software Movement](#) (24K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

An Open Letter to the Free Software Movement

Wade Frazier

July 2006

This open letter is written in an attempt to interest some members of the free software movement in an abundance paradigm, and simply be willing to discuss it. If enough people can be found who can simply *think* about an abundance paradigm, it could create sufficient awareness to make it happen. Not only would humanity's current sled-ride-to-oblivion halt, but heaven-on-earth can also manifest. The nuts-and-bolts of making an abundance paradigm a daily reality already exist but unfortunately are suppressed to keep humanity enslaved to a paradigm based on scarcity, something that I learned first-hand long ago.

Many members of the free software movement may be closer to comprehending an abundance paradigm than about any people that I have yet encountered. A member of your community believes that some in the free software movement already comprehend the abundance paradigm, so my task may be easier than I think.

I recently wrote an essay on what an [abundance paradigm](#) looks like and what it does not look like. Economic abundance will be the root of an abundance paradigm. Without economic abundance, almost all other abundance ideas are wishful thinking. I discovered the hard way that [personal integrity is earth's scarcest commodity](#), and have been searching for a high integrity group for nearly twenty years. I believe that personal integrity is *the key* to making an abundance paradigm appear. Personal integrity has obviously fueled the efforts of many in the free software movement's ranks, which is why I am writing this essay.

I am not writing as a theorist, but as an activist. I was involved in the most significant effort that I am aware of to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace. During that bizarre odyssey, I discovered that free energy already exists. By free energy, I mean virtually limitless, non-polluting, zero-operating-cost energy. I recently wrote a [five-page essay](#) that outlines my journey. While some of that essay may seem unbelievable, every significant fact is linked to the pertinent part of my 1,200-page website. I provide support for every assertion that I make, and limit my discussions to facts and ideas that people can prove to themselves.

I am an American and my work is directed largely to Americans, but the dynamics I will relate in this essay have global relevance. The nationalistic fables that the Chinese and Israeli people are raised with will necessarily be different than the nationalistic fables that [Americans are raised with](#), but the goal is the same: controlling what people think. Contrary to the myths of American nationalism, [America's Founding Fathers](#) did not invent freedom. However, ever since the [English civil war in the 1600s](#), the ruling classes of English-speaking lands have had limited ability to control their subjects through violence. Therefore, the ruling classes had to try to control what people thought. Ideological indoctrination [is as old as civilization](#), but controlling what people think has become a science in America, because what they think *does* matter to their ruling class.

The [ideologies that Americans are raised with](#) are based on the scarcity paradigm and are egocentric because they elevate one group of people at the expense of others, and finding one's self on the "winning team" is the primary reason those ideologies find fertile ground. Also, those ideologies are fed to people when they are young and vulnerable, and most people never again question their indoctrination. If those ideologies are challenged, most believers resort to highly irrational defenses of them, a phenomenon [vividly evident in America since September 1, 2001](#). My "peers" - white educated American men - have always been the [most irrational and vicious critics of my work](#), and not many can read more than a few pages without blowing a fuse. That reaction seems to be because I show how our status as history's most privileged demographic group is not due to our unique virtue.

After several years of effort, I realized that attempting to interest the general public in my work was futile for now. I have focused my efforts toward potentially receptive groups for years, but have yet to find that group. Again, personal integrity has been the most important quality to assist comprehension, and those with the highest integrity also have lain aside more of the egocentric ideologies. I have referred those ideologies as "[mind-crutches](#)."

In addition to laying aside the mind-crutches, a critical realization helps a world of abundance appear. Scarcity is the bedrock assumption of virtually every earthly ideology, and scarcity and failure are nearly hardwired into human consciousness, something that [R. Buckminster Fuller clearly saw](#). The scarcity assumption is so deeply baked into human awareness that it is invisible to most people, like the air we breathe. In real terms, all civilizations and all economies for all time have [ridden atop their ability to extract, conserve and consume energy](#), and [civilizations have collapsed](#) when they ran out of energy. Everything else in economics is of secondary importance, and there

are [telling statistics](#) that spell it out very clearly. However, in a world of scarcity, most of what passes for economics today focuses on who enjoys the benefit of the scarce economic production, [not how the production is attained](#).

Today's Americans consume about eighty times the energy that is provided by our diets. That energy consumption is almost entirely responsible for our standard of living. Money, banking, accounting and laws deal with the exchange aspect of economics, and are largely meaningless in a world of economic abundance. Many "radical" ideas in economics focus almost exclusively on its exchange aspect. For instance, Michael Albert's radical economic manifesto, *Parecon*, does not even discuss the energy issue. If everybody on earth had access to a thousand (or hundred thousand) times the energy that their diets provided, the exchange aspect of economics would no longer be the focus of attention that it is today. The economic "radicals" are focused on slicing up humanity's scarce economic pie more equitably, and ignore making the pie bigger. If the pie were a hundred times bigger than it is today, people would not be fighting to enlarge or preserve their slice. With free energy, that quantum leap in the human standard of living could be made with no environmental impact. A [world of abundance](#) can look a lot like heaven-on-earth.

However, the people that rule the world understand the issue of energy and economics and are addicted to "power." Consequently, they have been vigilant to ensure that free energy, anti-gravity and other technologies do not make it into the public's hands. They offered my partner [perhaps as much as a billion dollars](#) to stop pursuing free energy in the 1980s. I call those people the "Big Boys" in my work, and they informed a leading figure in the free energy effort that they have paid out [\\$100 billion in quiet money](#) over the past few generations to prevent people from bringing those advanced technologies to the public. That quiet money is one of their "benign" tactics. When the big carrot did not work on my partner, the Big Boys used the [big stick](#), and they used our corrupt legal system to wipe us out, and I watched many lives get destroyed, including my own. I have since discovered that our treatment was a [fairly standard tactic](#), although more extreme in our case, because we were probably closer to delivering significant alternative energy to the American marketplace than anybody else has ever come.

I do not tell the tale of [our adventures](#) to elicit a piteous response, but largely to address the [most naïve and common response to the free energy issue](#): "If free energy devices really existed, I should be able to buy one." Denial is by far the most common response to our experiences, but almost nobody has ever had a constructive response to the issue. If people can get past denial (by looking into the situation for themselves), they usually have other unproductive reactions.

A key to solving the free energy conundrum is walking the razor's edge of acknowledging the suppression but not succumbing to paranoia, revenge, hopelessness and other [unproductive, fear-based reactions](#). I know of only a handful of people who may possess the qualities needed to lead a free energy effort over the finish line. The "[hundred heroes](#)" model of making free energy happen seems unviable, because those hundred heroes may not exist. I have therefore attempted a seemingly less perilous strategy: educating people on the [free energy conundrum](#) and helping a [vision of abundance](#) take root. However, at this time, free energy and a world of abundance has proven itself *unthinkable* to the vast majority of humanity, a situation that the Big Boys have carefully managed.

My experience is that those who cannot comprehend abundance are leaning heavily on their mind-crutches. Perhaps the most crippling mind-crutch among the technically trained are the "laws of physics." NASA was advised long ago that scientists may be the group most threatened by the [fact of extraterrestrial visitors](#), as their worldview may crumble when confronted by intelligence and technology orders of magnitude beyond our own. Today, anybody can go to a ranch in Washington State and [watch extraterrestrial craft fly by every night](#). If they fly low, our military will attack them. The attacks are not to protect humans from ETs, but to protect the world's power structure from people having access to free energy and related technologies. In fact, the Big Boys have long possessed free energy, anti-gravity and other exotic technologies - largely due to reverse engineering captured ET craft. I know people who have [had such technologies demonstrated for their benefit](#). Experienced people in the field realize that the revelations of free energy, anti-gravity and related technologies [invalidate almost everything we "know" about physics](#). Albert Einstein [cheerfully realized that we know almost nothing about how the universe operates](#), but the scientific establishment's defenders aver [that we have it all figured out](#), which has been a persistent notion for the entirety of science's history. I have known some [world-class scientific and inventive minds](#), and they all had Einstein's attitude about how much we really "know." History's greatest physicists were almost all, to one degree or another, [mystics](#). However, a rationalist-materialist paradigm has dominated the scientific establishment's worldview for centuries. The rationalist-materialist paradigm is a form of religion. It is a subtler religion than what is called organized religion, but it has its priests, popes and [Inquisition](#).

Will the lust for power disappear with free energy's appearance? I doubt it will entirely vanish, but those hooked on their power trip will no longer be able to keep humanity mired in misery so they can play god (also called ruling in hell). Lust for power will not

completely die out, but it would no longer *run the show* in a world of abundance.

There are [many pitfalls on the path of pursuing free energy](#), but the most formidable may be the *unwillingness to even imagine it*. Here are some recent examples of this phenomenon. Richard Heinberg may be earth's most prominent "Peak Oil" advocate. He [writes dismissively about free energy](#), but [declined a friendly invitation](#) to be educated from the inside about the very situations that he dismissed. He frames the world energy situation in a neo-Malthusian paradigm of endless-growth/overshoot-and-collapse. He does not seem *capable* of comprehending an abundance paradigm, and instead [preaches austerity](#) as the only viable solution to humanity's energy situation. After years of interacting with "environmentalists," I realized that they *do not want to hear about free energy*, which could heal the environment like nothing else. Their solution is "let's ride bikes" and other austerity measures (tactics that [Fuller made clear were doomed](#)), and Heinberg has been adopted as one of their prophets. I have largely been in seclusion on the free energy issue for several years, but have lately been entering some public discussions. Not long ago, I was introduced to an anarchist discussion of Peak Oil and the energy issue. Anarchists have largely laid aside the nationalist and capitalist mind-crutches, but [did not present even one thoughtful response to my posts](#). I was quickly dismissed, then ignored. Unfortunately, those have been the standard reactions to my offers to get educated on what may be the most important issue on earth today, by people who say they are seeking solutions. I rarely even hear back from the people I make the offer to.

I have greater hopes for the free software movement, as the ideas put forth by Richard Stallman, Eben Moglen and others neatly align with the abundance paradigm, and in my work I make it clear what three factors led to [humanity's rise on earth](#): energy, manipulative ability and intelligence. The reproduction of intelligence is in its infancy. I consider the free software movement's members to be fellow travelers and possibly much more. I have designed information systems professionally, and have given away a way to use software to immediately and dramatically [raise the standard of living of millions of Americans](#), turning a miserable profession into something much more pleasant. I have yet to find a receptive audience to the idea, but the free software movement can help make it happen. Technically, making my idea come to fruition would be easy. Is there any interest in dialogue?

The next section: [Peak Oil, New Energy and the End of Scarcity – Making New Energy Thinkable](#) (51K)

[Return to My Home Page](http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Peak Oil, New Energy and the End of Scarcity – Making New Energy Thinkable

By Wade Frazier

December 2004

[Summary](#)

[Fossil Fuels, Economics and Peak Oil](#)

[Catton, Heinberg and Malthusian Philosophy](#)

[Can New Energy Help Topple the Scarcity Paradigm?](#)

[Making New Energy Thinkable](#)

[Footnotes](#)

The following essay is designed to give a broad overview of the issues. Far more detail is readily available at the links in the footnotes, or in the companion essay at this [link](#).

Summary

SCARCITY OR ABUNDANCE

Energy Paradigms

The end of oil as a primary source of energy (perhaps forty more years of remaining production) to run the world's industries and provide us with the necessities of life is a foreseeable reality. The quest for new energy sources and applications should be the responsibility of corporations and governments everywhere on the planet. An examination of the problems and possibilities in the development of "new energy" and the benefits of its reality is a worthy and vital endeavor in answering the question "What do we do when the oil runs out?"

Historically, efforts by “new energy” pioneers have been met with “resistance” (to put it mildly) from global oligopolistic energy (mainly oil) interests. Furthermore, many new energy pioneers and alternative energy advocates have tended to focus narrowly on pet theories or projects to the exclusion of valid sources promoting a comprehensive and real solution to the energy problem. Indeed, these efforts have combined to make obvious truths, alternative viewpoints, and possible solutions *unthinkable*. The reality is that new energy exists, is unlimited, forever renewable, non-polluting and can free the world from a paradigm of scarcity and introduce it to one of *abundance*.

A FEW EXAMPLES OF NEW ENERGY ABUNDANCE APPLICATIONS

Polluting energy could be replaced by clean energy for all of humanity’s current applications of it, such as for providing transportation and running homes and businesses. In addition, new applications that are currently not pursued due to energy scarcity would become feasible, such as:

- Unlimited amounts of ocean water could be desalinated and pumped overland to provide for all of humanity’s water needs and turn deserts into gardens, and have about zero impact on the oceans. All water can be purified before being sent back into the environment (or being infinitely recycled), for about zero environmental impact.
- Mining waste in the procurement of industrial minerals can be eliminated. Almost any patch of earth could be turned directly into glass, steel, and aluminum, with virtually no waste. Further, the mined elements could be infinitely recyclable, ultimately eliminating the need for future mining.
- New energy, combined with the efforts of synthetic sciences and infinite recycling of organic molecules (or synthesized) can eliminate the need for harvesting resources from the earth, such as wood and fiber.
- With new energy, indoor farms can be made that can have as much water, light, heat and nutrients that crops need to grow, 24/7, with no farmland pollution vented to the environment. Live food (the healthiest kind) would be available to all earthly humans, no matter where they live.

MAKING NEW ENERGY ABUNDANCE APPLICATIONS A REALITY

There are numerous problems to making new energy a reality, including organized suppression, but the issue seems to hinge on integrity, which is earth’s scarcest and most precious commodity. The hope for making new energy a daily reality may entail gathering people of high integrity, from all sectors, increasing their awareness of new energy viability and

possibilities. If enough of us just think about new energy and its implications, it might create sufficient awareness. Awareness can be the catalyst to *action*.

Fossil Fuels, Economics and Peak Oil

The hydrocarbons known as “fossil fuels” probably began forming when plants captured sunlight via photosynthesis. Geological processes then distilled decaying organisms into what are called oil, natural gas and coal.^[1] Fossil fuels currently provide about 86% of global energy industry production, with nuclear and hydroelectric energy comprising about half of the remainder each, with traditional “alternative” energy (wind, solar, geothermal, biomass, tidal energy, etc.) contributing about one percent.^[2] For people who have delved into the matter deeply, particularly when they have tried impacting the marketplace, it becomes obvious that alternative energy is such a small proportion of global energy production partly due to the workings of real-world capitalism. The global oligopolistic energy interests have ensured that nothing can threaten their marketplace supremacy. In addition, most potential challengers to the oligopolies have largely failed due to their own frailties, with their “allies” often inflicting more harm than the energy oligopolists.^[3] The energy oligopolists rarely have to actively derail threats to their market positions.

Economics is the study of how humanity produces, exchanges and consumes the wealth we create/acquire. Without production, there is nothing to exchange or consume, and production has little to do with money, financial institutions and other modern economic concepts. Today’s popular conception of economics is generally focused on determining who owns what, which is the exchange (accounting) aspect of economics. In a world of scarcity, accounting becomes the primary economic focus. In a world of abundance, accountants are not needed. Today’s economists typically homogenize all economic activity by using money and market prices, and regularly achieve results with a tenuous relationship to reality.^[4] The *real* economy is based upon matter and energy, not money. No single measure of a nation’s economic output is more predictive or descriptive than how much energy it consumes.^[5]

With oil providing nearly 40% of global energy production, it is no mystery why the United States has repeatedly invaded the world’s greatest oil-producing region, just as Great Britain did when they were the world’s imperial overlords (and it is no mystery why Great Britain was America’s junior partner for the recent invasion of Iraq; invading its former colony and America’s new one). The United States, with less than 5% of the world’s population, consumes a quarter of the world’s oil production (and a quarter of all energy industry production), and imports more than half of the oil it consumes. America’s thirst for oil is enough to explain its Middle East policy for the past sixty years, but recent trends put America’s motivation in an even starker light: the world is running out of oil. If oil is the result of life and geological processes, humanity is consuming oil around a million times faster than it

was created.[\[6\]](#) Such a production/consumption ratio falls a bit short of “sustainable,” and the concept of “Peak Oil” has been appropriately gaining notoriety during the past few years.

In 1956, Shell Oil geologist M. King Hubbert predicted that U.S. oil production would peak in the early 1970s. His prediction was widely criticized and dismissed when he made it, but it was accurate: 1970 was the peak year for U.S. oil production, when it stood at nearly ten million barrels per day. The peak year for extraction was forty years after the peak year for oilfield discoveries, which was 1930.[\[7\]](#) American oil production has steadily declined by about 40% since 1970 to less than six million barrels per day today. Hubbert’s methodology has been assailed on many grounds and his estimate denigrated in some corners as “lucky.” However, Hubbert’s professional descendants have used his methodology to estimate when global production would peak, and the answer has consistently been that it would peak in this decade.[\[8\]](#) Global natural gas production may peak in the next decade, and it already has for the United States.

The numbers for global oil production and remaining deposits are not very controversial in the big picture. Competent estimates of the world’s recoverable oil deposits that existed in 1859, when the first oil well was drilled, have long been in the neighborhood of two trillion barrels. Humanity has consumed one trillion barrels so far, and is currently burning nearly thirty billion barrels per year. Oil company geologists and exploratory wells have scoured the planet. The peak decade for oil field discoveries was the 1950s, when nearly 500 billion barrels were discovered.[\[9\]](#) The last giant oil field, Shaybah in Saudi Arabia (a sixteen billion barrel field), was discovered in the 1970s. There have been no major discoveries since 1980, and global oilfield discoveries peaked in 1964. Once discovered, oil fields cycle through a well-established pattern of extraction, with production peaking when about half of the recoverable oil has been removed.

Those issuing optimistic estimates for remaining oil deposits often are subject to oil industry influence, which gives them conflicts of interest.[\[10\]](#) The optimists usually cite marginal sources such as “shale oil,” “sand oil” and other costly and difficult-to-extract hydrocarbons (and environmentally disastrous to produce). While optimistic estimates reach up to eighteen trillion barrels of globally recoverable hydrocarbons, the kind of oil extracted and burned today amounts to perhaps three trillion barrels on the high side, with the two trillion barrel estimate more likely. Promoting marginal sources of hydrocarbons reflects a typical pattern of resource depletion. When the cream has been skimmed, inferior sources are exploited until exhausted.[\[11\]](#) Iraq’s high quality oil is also about the world’s easiest to produce, with an extraction cost of about a dollar per barrel. American oil interests have coveted Middle East oil for a long time and have now wrapped their arms around Iraq, at prodigious cost to Iraq’s people.[\[12\]](#)

Even if the optimistic estimates of three trillion barrels of recoverable oil are accepted, it would extend the global production peak by a mere twenty years, and nations such as China are

industrializing, which is spurring demand. At current production rates and the probable estimate of two trillion barrels, the world will run out of oil in forty years. However, the global oil crisis will not begin when the last drop is extracted. Resource depletion crises begin when production begins dropping, and the supply and demand curve causes prices to spike. In 2004, the United States gasoline prices have risen to well more than \$2.00 per gallon, and oil prices rose to more than \$50 per barrel.[\[13\]](#)

Catton, Heinberg and Malthusian Philosophy

One of today's most visible Peak Oil spokespersons, at least among progressives, may be Richard Heinberg, and an interview published in *Z Magazine* was the incentive to produce this essay.[\[14\]](#) I first became aware of Professor Heinberg's work in early 2003 when I read his brilliant article on the trajectory of the industrialized world and its dependence on fossil fuels.[\[15\]](#) I eagerly purchased his *The Party's Over: Oil, War and the Fate of Industrial Societies*. It is a formidable work. The phrase "the party's over" refers to the coming end of the oil era. In his book, Heinberg explored how the exploitation of fossil fuels made the Industrial Revolution possible and how their exhaustion will signal its demise. He explored various energy alternatives, and his preferred energy solution is wind power.

Heinberg largely dismissed an entire class of potential energy solutions. That class of solutions I have been intimately involved with, and is sometimes called "new energy." My interactions with Heinberg in the summer of 2003 bore no fruit in interesting him in a deeper investigation of new energy, and a related essay deals more fully with his treatment of new energy.[\[16\]](#)

I have experienced Heinberg's style of dismissal many times in various venues. Most dismissals were irrational and fearful, which is a strange reaction to the notion of true abundance. Heinberg, however, logically articulated his position, both privately and publicly. *The Party's Over* prominently featured the thesis found in William Catton's *Overshoot: The Ecological Basis of Revolutionary Change*. The *Overshoot* hypothesis is partly based on the idea that humanity came to dominate earth's ecosystems at the expense of other species. That phenomenon is also known as earth's Sixth Mass Extinction, as human activities have been rendering other species extinct on a scale only experienced before during global catastrophes such as asteroids or comets hitting earth. There have been five prior mass extinction episodes identified by scientists so far, the fifth being the extinction of the dinosaurs sixty-five million years ago.[\[17\]](#) Humanity has been causing the sixth one for the past 50,000 years or so, and the pace of extinctions is accelerating as ecosystems are disrupted to support human activities. Earth's climate has been undergoing a recent shift, which may become far more dramatic in the near future.[\[18\]](#)

In nature, animals typically breed to the limits of their food supply, and there are numerous recorded instances, both in the laboratory and in the wild, of animals expanding their populations due to windfall increases in available food. They breed to the limits of their resources, eventually use them up, and then the population collapses as the resources disappear (or they drown in their waste).[\[19\]](#) Thomas Malthus was a British economist who worked for the British East India Company. In 1798, he published an essay which stated that human populations tend to grow faster than the food supply, leaving humanity constantly on the brink of starvation. That observation has been the foundation for what is called “Malthusian” philosophy.

Today’s Americans consume about eighty times more energy than the calories provided by their diets. American agriculture has been estimated to burn around ten calories of fossil fuel for every calorie of food produced. Heinberg and others attribute the dramatic increase in earth’s human population to the exploitation of fossil fuels.

What happens when the oil runs out?[\[20\]](#) Do we use coal to fuel the world (for awhile, at prodigious environmental cost), find other energy sources, or do we experience the overshoot phenomenon and humanity suffers a global population collapse? According to Heinberg, collapse is virtually inevitable and the last chapter of *The Party’s Over* is devoted to managing the collapse. Heinberg’s projected global population collapse is his central theme these days. Estimates of earth’s carrying capacity for humans are around two billion in the absence of the energy provided by fossil fuels. Heinberg estimates it to be less than one billion today, partly because earth’s long term carry capacity has been degraded by human activities, and the choice Heinberg gives his audience is losing humanity’s “excess” five billion people wisely or ignorantly. Heinberg seems to have little optimism that it will happen wisely, with America’s invasion of Iraq simply one of the first wars that will be fought over the world’s dwindling fossil fuel deposits; a situation he calls “plan war.” With such a grim scenario, I was surprised when he stated that he did not want to discuss new energy until it was understood that drastically reducing earth’s human population was the first priority. In William Catton’s *Overshoot*, his prescription for humanity was to “expect the worst.”[\[21\]](#) Catton called “neo-Malthusian” an unfair label to pin on his work, but it seems apt.[\[22\]](#)

Can New Energy Help Topple the Scarcity Paradigm?

Overshoot dwelled on the term “paradigm,” which was invented in its modern sense by Thomas Kuhn in *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*. Catton made the case for his “ecological” paradigm throughout *Overshoot*, but as Kuhn made clear, no paradigm is necessarily more “accurate” than another. Paradigms are adopted because people believe in them.[\[23\]](#) All paradigms are built on assumptions, so any paradigm must first be evaluated by

examining its assumptions. While trying to preempt the “neo-Malthusian” label being attached to his work, Catton labeled anything not conforming to his paradigm with terms such as “cornucopian paradigm,” “cargoism,” “neo-exuberance,” “cosmeticism,” “Ostrichism,” while calling his perspective “realism.”[\[24\]](#) Analyzing Catton’s assumptions can illuminate the basis of his paradigm, and those his work has influenced.

Catton firmly placed humanity in earth’s ecological systems and noted that through intelligence and tool making humankind was able to populate many previously unsuitable ecological niches. The primary assumption of Catton’s ecological paradigm was that humans have always been and always will be dependent on earth’s environmental “carrying capacity,” which means the amount of “resources” that can be extracted from it on a continual basis. There are numerous assumptions implicit in such a paradigm. Some are that earth’s surface is where life’s primary processes will always take place, with all land-based life dependent on water delivered by the solar-energy-driven hydrological cycle, and all life dependent on the energy delivered by sunlight. New energy can invalidate all of those assumptions, as well as topple assumptions that gird terms such as “carrying capacity” and “resource.”

New energy exists and its reality has been suppressed by a concerted, global clandestine effort, the kind most educated Americans immediately dismiss as a “conspiracy theory.”[\[25\]](#) When one lives through it, however, it is no longer a theory.[\[26\]](#) The primary assumption that Catton, Heinberg and economists operate from is scarcity. They can hardly be faulted for it, as humanity has operated under the scarcity assumption for the past 10,000 years. None of the paradigms Catton portrayed is based on *abundance*, a paradigm where everybody wins. What often passes for abundance is really greed-based, rape and plunder economics. The notion of true *abundance* can be the foundation for a completely new paradigm, and can usher in an era never glimpsed by historic humans.

R. Buckminster Fuller observed that all Utopias that have been envisioned and tried have been based on shared austerity, which is why they never worked and never will.[\[27\]](#) A Utopia based on abundance has never been tried and was not really possible until relatively recent technological advances. New energy can be the foundation of a global society based on abundance.

Nearly every “resource” that humanity relies on today is primarily made available by energy or *is* energy. For a discussion of which “resources” humanity most relies on today, Michael Klare’s *Resource Wars* is appropriate. The “resources” Klare discusses are: oil, water, minerals and timber. *Resource Wars* is dominated by the scramble for the world’s remaining fossil fuel deposits.

Fresh water is currently made available to humans by the solar-energy-driven hydrological cycle. With new energy (unlimited, forever renewable, non-polluting energy), unlimited amounts of ocean water could be desalinated and pumped overland to provide all of

humanity's water needs, and turn deserts into gardens (if we want to do that), and have about zero impact on the oceans. With new energy, all water can be purified before being sent back into the environment (or being infinitely recycled), for about zero environmental impact.

The term “minerals” almost exclusively refers to metals found in earth's crust, which are usually mined and refined today by environmentally devastating practices. Mining waste is largely created because of energy scarcity. Oxygen, silicon, aluminum and iron comprise about 87% of the Earth's crust, with the remainder almost entirely other metals. With new energy, almost any patch of earth could be turned directly into glass, steel and aluminum, with virtually no mining “waste” created.[\[28\]](#) With new energy, those mined elements would also be infinitely recyclable, so mining as an industry would end before long anyway.

Wood, as far as its utility to humans goes, is little more than carbon, hydrogen and oxygen atoms that photosynthesis-driven processes combined into cellulose, which forms the cell walls in plants. Humanity uses wood for structure, its fibers, and the energy released from burning it. There exist methods to infinitely recycle organic molecules.[\[29\]](#) Synthetic molecules are superior to natural ones in many ways, and the science of creating synthetic molecules is still in its infancy. New energy, combined with synthetic sciences and the infinite recycling of organic molecules, would largely eliminate the need for harvesting living “resources” from the earth, such as wood and fiber.[\[30\]](#) Also, many synthetic molecules are toxic, but are made because they perform tasks by using less energy than other methods. With new energy, the reasons for making those toxic synthetic molecules (such as chlorine gas, pesticides, and so on) could also disappear.[\[31\]](#)

Food is humankind's most essential energy source, with caloric energy comprising about eighty percent of what constitutes nutrition. Also, humans, as with all animals, are designed to eat living food. Most degenerative diseases (which cause most deaths in Westerners) are caused by eating food that humans are not equipped to eat.[\[32\]](#) With new energy and the burgeoning materials science, indoor farms are easily made that can have as much water, heat, light and nutrients that crops need to grow, with 24/7 growing seasons (and no farmland pollution vented to the environment), and live food could be readily available to all earthly humans, no matter where they live.[\[33\]](#)

Making New Energy Thinkable

The implementation of new energy can help eliminate all the reasons that Heinberg and friends cite in their arguments for reducing earth's human population by five billion or more in the near future. New energy can also make possible what looks a lot like heaven on earth. In that light, the misleading dismissals of new energy by Heinberg and company require proper rebuttal,

which this essay attempts to initiate. As Noam Chomsky and others make clear, one of the greatest successes of our indoctrination and propaganda systems is to make obvious truths, alternative viewpoints and possible solutions *unthinkable*.^[34] As long as new energy is *unthinkable*, it will never be pursued at a level sufficient to overcome the organized suppression. A primary goal of this essay and its related writings is to help make new energy *thinkable*.

The scarcest and most precious earthly commodity is human integrity.^[35] A recent summation of the American spirit is not pleasant reading, but nobody has convincingly rebutted it and the evidence strongly supports it.^[36] Ignoring or denying that reality is perilous for anybody trying to make a difference in today's world, particularly regarding something as paradigm shattering as new energy. One of the few hopes for making new energy a daily reality may be gathering those rare people of high integrity who can be educated about new energy, its implications, and the multifaceted situation surrounding it. Simply increasing awareness of new energy's viability and possibilities may be all that it takes to generate enough "critical mass" to make it a daily reality for humanity. Where is that high integrity group? I have been looking for it since the 1980s. Some groups seem promising, but what may happen is that people comprising that "critical mass" will come together from all walks of life, with most belonging to no "group" at all

One of the greatest obstacles to seeing the bigger picture regarding new energy appears to be ideological indoctrination. Those received ideologies can seem comforting, but they can prevent comprehension. Among the ideologies people probably need to set aside, if they want to comprehend an abundance paradigm, are capitalism, organized religion, nationalism and any other ideology that exalts one group at the expense of others. Those ideologies are all based on the scarcity paradigm and are all largely self-serving. They are also used by the elites to manipulate and control the masses. Controlling ideologies also extend to areas that most do not immediately associate with ideology. The rationalistic/materialistic paradigm that dominates modern science is an example.^[37]

If enough of us just *think* about new energy and its implications, it might create sufficient awareness to bring it about. Awareness can catalyze action.

Footnotes

^[1] A popular book on oil's origins and how it is "discovered" and extracted is Kenneth Deffeyes *Hubbert's Peak, The Impending World Oil Shortage*, which is also representative of recent works concerned with the looming end of the fossil fuel age. The recently deceased Thomas Gold of Cornell theorized that oil is not produced by organic decay, but was created when earth was, meaning that oil is a non-renewable resource in its strongest sense. Very few in the oil geology field take Gold's theorizing seriously, but Gold may still be right (although I personally doubt it). Gold theorized that

there are hundreds of times more oil in the ground than has been extracted so far. There is some evidence that weighs in Gold's favor, such as very deep wells drilled in Russia, in theoretically unpromising places as far as oil of biological origin is concerned, that have produced oil (and Russian scientists have accused Gold of plagiarizing their work). But even if Gold is correct, the climactic and pollution problems caused by burning hydrocarbons may become even more dramatic in the near future, rendering burning "fossil" fuels disastrous on a global basis. I have yet to see anybody who promotes his theories seriously address that issue.

[2] For 2001, from U.S. Energy Information Agency data. Humanity uses about 400 quadrillion British Thermal Units of energy-industry-produced energy each year. Oil supplies about 39%, coal 24%, natural gas 23%, hydroelectric and nuclear about 6.5% each, with traditional alternative energy providing the remaining 1%.

[3] I was involved in an attempt to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace. The story is told for the first time on the Internet at this link, <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/energy1.htm> and my role is partially told here, <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/advent.htm>. I am not aware of a more significant attempt made in American history. With this first footnote that refers to my work, an issued needs addressing for clarification purposes. This article is not a scholarly exercise, but my 1200-page web site is for the most part scholarly, and the material and discussion that this article's footnotes refer to are where readers can go to find out more, so they can take *those* footnotes and see where they lead. I have attempted to create a body of work that is easily researched for validation and further consideration.

[4] In Deffeyes *Hubbert's Peak*, the disconnect between economists and reality is regularly remarked upon, and is summed up with one anecdote on page 186, where a young economist stated in his lecture that because agriculture and mining comprised only three percent of the U.S. economy, they were matters of little concern. An elderly voice in the lecture hall then mumbled, "What does that genius think we are going to eat?" The Die Off site (<http://dieoff.org/>) discusses the logical fallacies that plague economic theory.

[5] See *Joseph Tainter's The Collapse of Complex Societies*, p. 91. See also data and discussion at this link: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/energy.htm - economics>

[6] Decaying land plants probably created earth's coal deposits during the Carboniferous era, which ran for 70 million years, ending perhaps 290 million years ago. Oil, however, is probably developed from marine life forms, and has likely had a much longer window of creation. William Catton, in his *Overshoot*, estimated that humanity was burning fossil fuel deposits at least 10,000 times faster than they were created (*Overshoot*, pp. 51-52), but oil deposits may have begun forming 500 million years ago, when abundant marine life appeared. A "mere" 200 million year formation window for most oil deposits is not an unreasonable estimate, and by "oil" I mean what we consider true oil today, not the organic material trapped in shale, sand and other difficult to extract "oil." The two trillion barrel estimate of global oil deposits in 1859 may not be far from reality, and will be completely consumed at current rates of extraction in forty years. So, 200 million years of formation is burned up in 200 years of extraction, for a burn rate of one million times greater than the creation rate.

[7] See Deffeyes *Hubbert's Peak*, p. 138.

[8] See this website devoted to Hubbert's work: <http://www.hubbertpeak.com/>. Hubbert predicted that global production would peak in 1995, which did not quite come to pass, but may be within a decade of being correct.

[9] See Richard Heinberg's *The Party's Over: Oil, War and the Fate of Industrial Societies*, p. 108.

[10] Heinberg's *The Party's Over*, pp. 102-121, ably covers the wildly optimistic estimates issued by the U.S. Geological Survey and the Department of Energy.

[11] For instance, that resource depletion pattern is readily discernable in the short-lived whaling industry, which experienced the world's first oil depletion crisis. See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/simon.htm>.

[12] See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/america.htm> - attacking.

[13] In real dollars, those are the highest prices since the all time high was achieved during the oil crisis of 1980-1981, when the last protracted war was fought in the Middle East, which was the U.S.-encouraged Iraq-Iran war.

[14] See "Plan War and the Hubbert Oil Curve, An interview with Richard Heinberg," by Dave Ross, *Z Magazine*, May 2004, pp. 47-50. His work has become rather ubiquitous, and has been dominating the mindset of many alternative energy advocates.

[15] See Richard Heinberg's "The US and Eurasia: Endgame for the Industrial Era?" at this link: <http://www.museletter.com/archive/132.html>.

[16] See the essay at this link: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/hooked.htm>.

[17] See a list of those episodes here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/timeline.htm> - extinction.

[18] Global climate change is the looming phenomenon that may create havoc not only for earth's other species, but also humanity. Increasing atmospheric carbon dioxide by a third during the fossil-fuel-burning age is the most likely determining variable.

[19] An example that Heinberg and Catton use is that of yeast in wine vats, which experience explosive growth as they digest the rich environment they are introduced to, and eventually die off as they succumb to their own waste products. See *Overshoot*, p. 96, 169. Heinberg used that example in private correspondence, and makes similar observations about humanity in *The Party's Over*. They also describe "detritus" ecosystems that use up decaying organic material until the material is gone. See *Overshoot*, p. 168. Catton calls humanity's use of fossil fuels an immense detritus ecosystem,

which is a novel and accurate way of viewing the situation.

[20] Thomas Hartmann's *The Last Hours of Ancient Sunlight* is a highly readable and holistic, if somewhat mystical, summary of what the coming end of the fossil fuel age may portend.

[21] See Catton's *Overshoot*, p. 262.

[22] See Catton's *Overshoot*, p. 199.

[23] See discussion at: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/medicine.htm> - introduction

[24] See Catton's *Overshoot*, p. 70.

[25] See this link, for instance: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/letter.htm> - sweet.

[26] See this link: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/advent.htm> - hitting

[27] See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/roots.htm> - austerity.

[28] The “waste” materials could be further refined, or combined into relatively inert “rocks.” Also, earth’s surface would not need to be where those buildings reside, but can be on “stilts,” underground, floating on water (or even air, when suppressed anti-gravity technology is made available), so earth’s ecosystems do not have to “make way” for humanity’s artificial environments. With new energy and anti-gravity, possibilities barely dreamed of become viable.

[29] The process was written about the May 2003 issue of *Discover* magazine. The process has been promoted as an energy solution, but it really is not. It is, however, a startling solution to the waste problem. See this link: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thermal_depolymerization

[30] See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/visions.htm> - forest1.

[31] For a different chemistry paradigm that new energy could help usher in, see discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/visions.htm> - chemistry.

[32] See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/medicine.htm> - lessons.

[33] See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/visions.htm> - farms. Also, creating a healthy vegetarian diet that all humans could enjoy (if they wanted to), would be easy with new energy.

[34] An example of Ed Herman and Chomsky’s work in that regard can be found here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/america.htm> - vietnam1.

[35] See discussion here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/energy1.htm> - burn.

[36] See this link: <http://www.counterpunch.org/publius07152003.html>. They have help, however, from the establishment, in honing their mentality; for a recent summary of the mentality of those who voted for George Bush in the 2004 elections, see this link: <http://www.buzzflash.com/contributors/04/11/con04503.html>.

[37] Some of the myths of science are presented here: <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/energy.htm#real>

The Next Section: [Hooked on Scarcity - Reactions to New Energy and other Observations](#) (87K)

[Return to My Home Page](#)

Hooked on Scarcity - Reactions to New Energy and other Observations

Wade Frazier

December 2004

[Introduction](#)

[Richard Heinberg's Exclamation Points](#)

[Michael Ruppert's Alternative Energy Advice](#)

[Why all the Misinformation and Disinformation? – Are We Hooked on Scarcity?](#)

[Replacing Scarcity Consciousness with Abundance Consciousness](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

This essay is intended as a companion essay to [this one](#). This essay explores the issues in more depth. In early 2003 I became aware of Richard Heinberg's work and had a brief exchange with him after I read his magnum opus, *The Party's Over: Oil, War and the Fate of Industrial Societies*. His treatment of energy sources not currently recognized by mainstream science (also called new energy) seemed inadequate and misleading, and I tried educating him on the subject. My attempt was not successful. I was not planning to write publicly about Heinberg's treatment of new energy, but he has become a prominent voice in alternative energy circles since our brief exchange. Similar to how the [New York Times](#) is America's agenda setting media, Heinberg's work has come to dominate the mindset of many alternative energy advocates.

Humanity's long journey has [always been primarily defined by its energy usage](#). Our immediate and long-term future is critically dependent on the energy situation, and facile dismissals of promising alternatives such as new energy require rebuttal. New energy can dwarf all other potential solutions, and even catalyze [heaven on earth](#). Mainstream science, politics and media cannot be relied upon to investigate, much less promote, the paradigm shattering solutions that new energy promises. Institutional science has been controlled by vested economic interests in a well-known phenomenon of long standing,

something that [R. Buckminster Fuller](#) remarked upon.

[Thomas Kuhn](#) was the first to use the term “paradigm” to describe how scientists see the universe. Kuhn wrote about “normal” and “revolutionary” science. Normal science is what 99.9% of all scientists do everyday, which is pursuing issues bounded by the paradigm they operate within. Kuhn compared such activity to puzzle solving. Paradigms are essentially worldviews that rest upon assumptions. Kuhn described paradigm shifts in science, which he called “scientific revolutions,” which were based on challenging the prevailing paradigm’s assumptions. The most famous paradigm shift was Einstein’s challenge of Newton’s assumptions of absolute time and absolute space. Relativity theory will one day fall to another paradigm shift, and Einstein expected it, stating that, “every theory is killed by a fact.” Paradigm-shifting work can encounter fierce resistance from institutional science, with [the scientific establishment pursuing its heretics](#) with the zeal of medieval inquisitors. That inquisitorial behavior is an aspect of what is sometimes called [close-minded science](#).

More than 99% of all scientists are presently incapable of the insights required to initiate paradigm shifts, because questioning our *assumptions* about reality is among humanity’s most unusual behaviors. Solitary scientists and inventors have initiated many if not most of the greatest innovations of science and technology, while the scientific establishment fought/ignored them the entire way, often [stealing credit](#) when the innovation became too prominent to be ignored, with the pioneer [dying in obscurity](#) (or worse). Fuller stated that only one in every 100,000 scientifically trained people would make the breakthroughs that will keep humanity advancing technologically, but that one would be sufficient. Institutional science has usually done far more to hinder than assist radical scientific and technological breakthroughs. Two examples are how scientists greeted the [light bulb](#) and the [airplane](#). Those are not irrelevant examples of a bygone era, but the resistance of institutional scientists to novel data and technological breakthroughs is arguably far more pronounced today than it was a century ago.

Today, microbiology students are taught a [utilitarian fairy tale](#) about how spontaneous generation theory was overturned during the 1800s, with the textbooks ignoring relatively recent work that demonstrates how flawed such a presentation is. Such misinformation is not benign, but probably marches students off in the wrong direction on their first day of class. Much of modern disease theory and treatment is based on that questionable foundation. A few days before I began writing this essay, mainstream science once again [stumbled upon evidence](#) that has [long been suppressed](#). Will scientists begin seeing the forest that those trees may belong to?

A materialistic paradigm dominates the scientific establishment, which is ironic given that the giants of twentieth century physics were mostly, to one degree or another, [mystics](#). All too often, scientists and philosophers equate materialism with rationalism, and even rationalism is overrated. Cool rationalism is considered the hallmark of science, but many of science and technology's greatest breakthroughs were initiated through intuitive flashes of insight. For instance, one of my mentors invented what was considered the world's best engine for powering an automobile. The engine's design appeared to him in an instant at a [stoplight](#). The pillars of twentieth century physics, relativity and quantum theory, both came to their authors in [flashes of insight](#).

Because of complacency, corruption and groupthink, institutional science is presently *incapable* of assessing the merits of new energy. The scientific establishment, in interlocking and subservient self-interest with the global corporate/energy interests, which also own America's politicians and [mainstream media](#), is about the last place to look to for an honest and competent assessment of new energy's potential. The Massachusetts Institute of Technology ("MIT") fraudulently manipulated its data in order to dismiss cold fusion. MIT "coincidentally" has been a major recipient of funding for hot fusion research. Arthur C. Clarke called the dismissal of cold fusion "perhaps one of the greatest scandals in the history of science."[\[1\]](#) Most people think that cold fusion was disproven soon after it was announced, although it has been reproduced in hundreds of laboratories across the planet.

With the mainstream being a virtually worthless forum for exploring an issue that may dictate humanity's immediate future, "alternative" venues, particularly those existing on the Internet, assume potentially great significance.

Richard Heinberg's Exclamation Points

Deep in Heinberg's *The Party's Over* he discussed the range of possible alternative energy solutions that is sometimes called new energy.[\[2\]](#) I believe that the only place in his book where he used exclamation points was when putting words in the mouths of new energy advocates. His summation of the milieu was largely confined to noting that Internet discussions of new energy seemed "pervaded" by "paranoia and extravagant claims..." Heinberg's exclamation points came when he "quoted" those making "paranoid and extravagant claims." Paranoia and extravagance are often in the eye of the beholder. I have encountered many paranoid inventors, and they often had good reasons for their paranoia. Paranoia can be an extreme reaction to real events. If an

inventor gets blindsided once, he never knows when he will get hit again (making the term “paranoia” a dubious one to describe their fear), and many inventive minds are also susceptible to Paranoid Personality Disorder. It is an occupational hazard, as genius is often a close cousin to insanity.

Heinberg’s first exclamation-point statement was that the oil companies were buying up “patents and suppressing the evidence!” I know that phenomenon, and there is little paranoid or extravagant about it. A fellow corporate executive told me of investigating that *exact* situation during his [Department of Justice days](#), where the automobile and oil companies conspired to suppress high-mile-per-gallon carburetors. Another friend of mine, an accomplished engineer, began building his own high-mile-per-gallon carburetor, to only discover that the oil and automobile companies indeed [owned all the patents](#). That situation is no “urban legend.” What I have seen in that realm is probably only the tip of the iceberg, and undoubtedly encompasses the suppression of new energy.[\[3\]](#)

Heinberg’s second exclamation-point statement was that the military had created free energy devices using “technology stolen from space aliens!” Perhaps the most promising, global paradigm shifting project I am aware of is Steven Greer’s Disclosure Project. Since 1991, Greer has been rounding up astronauts, military personnel (including generals), politicians, NASA employees, corporate executives and the like to [publicly testify regarding what they know about extraterrestrials](#). Nearly five hundred witnesses have come forward, including the recently deceased Mercury Seven astronaut Gordon Cooper. Many have already delivered highly compelling, first hand testimony under oath to Congress in secret hearings, as well as publicly. Others [have also spoken out](#), often at great risk. In 1993, R. James Woolsey, the Director of the CIA, invited Greer to brief him. Bill Clinton was ultimately a beneficiary of the briefing. Clinton and Woolsey had tried finding out about the secret ET-related projects, and were told that their security clearance was not high enough.[\[4\]](#) Greer has given a fair number of briefings to high-ranking U.S. officials, including many in the military.

Greer has also briefed high-ranking officials from many foreign governments and international bodies, and has yet to receive a scoffing reaction to his briefings from *any* official, either domestic or foreign. The typical reactions are deep concern and often despair as they realize that they can seemingly do little about the situation (they could, if they mustered some courage; but that is a discussion for another time). When Greer briefed the Vatican, a cardinal observed that dismissing the testimony of the Disclosure Project witnesses and the related evidence would be a highly irrational act.

Two main lines of evidence require consideration when assessing the situation. The first line is the direct evidence of contact with intelligent extra-terrestrial (“ET”) life. Greer’s witnesses have testified to recovering downed alien craft and alien bodies, seeing photographs of artificial structures on the moon and elsewhere, and witnessing alien technology shutting down nuclear missiles in their silos and shooting them out of the sky. Some of that testimony [is readily available today](#). The second line of evidence is that virtually all witnesses have reported that their testimony was given in direct defiance of national security laws that they are subject to, or to direct threats to never reveal what they witnessed. The first line of evidence needs to be considered in tandem with the second line of evidence. Most of Greer’s witnesses want a waiver of U.S. national security laws before they will publicly testify. I believe the most compelling testimony has yet to be made public because the witnesses fear imprisonment and other reprisals, including murder.

I have watched people ignore the second line of evidence while trying to dismiss the first. The more charitable dismissals go something like this, “They did not see what they thought they saw.” Such an analysis can only aspire to credibility if the second line of evidence is ignored. If they did not see what they thought they saw, then why were they threatened into silence (a silence that some have already paid a great price for breaking)? The logic that the silence is enforced to protect national security [is not compelling](#). I have encountered the same logic when people have denied/ignored my experiences gained while pursuing new energy.

In 1988, we were pursuing [rather mundane technology](#) to try creating zero-operating cost energy. The technical heavyweights involved with us believed that “free energy” was possible with what we were attempting. It has been satisfying to find scientists saying today that what we attempted is possible.^[5] We were [offered about a billion dollars](#) to cease our efforts, and then [wiped out](#) after we refused it. When critics have told me they were not sure our technology was viable, I responded with, “Whoever offered us a billion dollars to cease our efforts had less doubt about our technology’s potential.” I have yet to receive a response of any kind from those critics to that statement. They act as if I never mentioned the billion-dollar bribe. People are free to dismiss our “claims” of the offer we received, but I have never seen a credible dismissal, partly because they never considered the fact that my former partner mounted what is probably the [biggest run ever made](#) at bringing alternative energy the American marketplace, and we had acquired technology with extraordinary potential immediately before we were wiped out. According to Greer’s sources, the offer we received was simply a day at the office for those who make sure free energy never comes to market.^[6] The larger context must be considered when giving weight to our “claims,” but is

something our critics have *never* competently and honestly done. They have invariably [resorted to lying about it](#) and/or played dishonest rhetorical games. Also, the main purpose of the Disclosure Project or work like mine is not to have our “claims” believed; it is making the case that the situation is *worth investigating*. The Disclosure Project primarily wants a safe venue where its witnesses can publicly testify. The armchair critics (many on the energy interest and “national security” payroll) have also avoided that issue.

I also know a little about the ET technology situation from the inside. When people begin banging on the White House front door and other places of power, trying to bring new energy to the world, they can enter a reality that resembles the *X-Files*. After years of sailing in that strange environment, one of my close associates was given an [underground demonstration of free energy and anti-gravity technology](#). My friend does not even believe in ETs, but he described almost exactly what Greer’s UFO witnesses have testified to, which is the Disclosure Project’s primary upshot. When asked why there is such a [massive cover-up of the ET presence](#), the most common answer from Greer’s witnesses is that it is to prevent free energy and anti-gravity technology from becoming public knowledge, as the “secret government” types and super elites would quickly [lose their economic stranglehold](#) over humanity. I do not know what is paranoid or extravagant about Gordon Cooper, military generals and corporate executives who say they have witnessed such events. There is nothing inherently unscientific about the ET issue. Competent scientists and investigators go where the evidence takes them, leaving their ideological objections and belief barriers at home.

In Heinberg’s discussion of the ET situation and the “paranoid and extravagant claims” made about it, he seemed to cede all power over humanity’s future to the American government. He wrote that because “black projects” and related government activities are surrounded by secrecy and disinformation, it is “impossible” to know what was happening, so it was better to stop speculating about free energy being developed from captured ET technology.

At least in theory, the U.S. government works for the American people. Heinberg avidly proposes that [humanity quickly shed more than five billion people from its population](#), and apparently believes it will not be done wisely.^[7] Heinberg’s “realistic” scenario means that humanity is very likely facing an unprecedented catastrophe, one that will make all previous wars, famines and epidemics seem like tame warm-ups. Greer has nearly five hundred people waiting for enough public awareness to protect them, and they will blow the lid off the subject of the big, permanent solution to humanity’s most critical issue. Those could be history’s most important public hearings. However, those

supposedly serving the common good may have hidden the potential preventive to such a catastrophe behind a veil of secrecy and disinformation. I would rather try getting behind that curtain than encourage five billion people to die off.

Heinberg's third and final exclamation point was that the potential for free energy rode on the shoulders of some "maverick" inventor whose prototype generated a "million times more than it consumes!" There is only one free energy prototype I have heard of that has been measured to produce one million times more energy than it consumed, and that was Floyd ("Sparky") Sweet's. I write about our encounters with Sparky and his spectacular technology [at this link](#). Although scientific paradigm shifters [usually work alone](#) on the leading edge of science and technology, and have few true "peers," Sparky was anything but a "maverick," particularly in the sense that Heinberg seemed to use it. One popular fallacy is that those challenging the system are naturally rebellious. The "heretics" I know and respect the most were the opposite of "mavericks." [Ralph McGehee](#), [Dennis Lee](#), [Brian O'Leary](#) and [I](#) all began our journeys as successful true believers in the system. The CIA recruited Ralph McGehee because he was literally the all-American boy: a clean cut All-American football player from Notre Dame. Dennis was once "soldier of the month" on his base, and engaged in fistfights in the U.S. Army when fellow soldiers voiced unflattering observations about the United States. Brian was an astronaut, which was about as all-American as it gets. We all swallowed our indoctrination and excelled in our pursuits, to later wake up to the big lies we had been sold. Most like us also possess a little righteous indignation, because we *needed* to honestly believe in what we were doing, and discovering how thoroughly we [had been lied to](#) was not fun.

Sparky was cut from similar cloth and bought his American indoctrination hook, line and sinker. He had a successful corporate career as a research scientist and retired to pursue more research in his specialization of magnetism. After Sparky invented his amazing prototypes, he naively mailed them off to the big institutions of government, science and industry, which was when his troubles began. He called in the FBI to investigate his harassment. He continually tried working with large corporations and other institutions to develop his technology. He tried bringing his device to market responsibly, fearing that the short term economic dislocations it could create might collapse the economy. That is not what "mavericks" do. While beseeching the establishment all the way, the death threats escalated to where Sparky finally fled into hiding. One of my close associates met with him in his hiding place in an American desert, the week before Sparky died.

When I saw that the three areas of new energy that Heinberg specifically exclamation-

pointed were areas where I knew the inside story, I had hoped that he would be willing to be educated. It was a vain hope. He quickly clarified his motivation. He considered new energy an ancillary issue, as his primary mission is reducing earth's human population by at least five billion in the near future because there is not enough energy to go around. Only he knows his motivation for using exclamation points when discussing new energy, but I doubt it is because he is an enthusiastic supporter of new energy's potential.

After the first draft of this essay was written, Heinberg published a follow-up book entitled *Powerdown: Options and Actions for a Post-Carbon World*. In that book he emphasized themes found in his private correspondence and in *The Party's Over*. Once again, he virtually ignored new energy, and again, about the only exclamation points in his book were used to put words in other people's mouths. He again used those exclamation points tellingly: "those wretched oil companies are polluting the air and commandeering our foreign policy – while suppressing new technologies that could save the world!"^[8] To his credit, he admitted that he knows very little about his exclamation-pointed situations.^[9]

Powerdown was liberally sprinkled with Heinberg's austerity aphorisms, such as "Earth cannot afford rich people..."^[10] The scarcity paradigm informs all of Heinberg's work that I have seen, and I have seen no evidence that Heinberg has ever comprehended what an abundance paradigm might look like. In Heinberg's view, our only sane and rational choice is reducing our global population by around 90% in the near future. The closest Heinberg came to addressing an abundance paradigm was framing the idea as an "endless growth" paradigm, which he called "so self-servingly blind as to be morally reprehensible."^[11] Another option awaits, one that moves far beyond self-serving mentalities and the endless-growth/overshoot [false dichotomy](#), where humanity can [shift to an environmentally harmless, economically abundant global civilization](#).

This essay will deal with another visible member in the progressive ranks whose work Heinberg has heavily influenced.

Michael Ruppert's Alternative Energy Advice

Michael Ruppert was a Los Angeles Police Department narcotics investigator. During the 1970s he discovered evidence that the CIA was involved in Middle East drug trafficking. He encountered the usual [whistleblower problems](#) (also see [this link](#)) when

he tried making the evidence known. Bucking the system while following one's conscience is extremely unusual and courageous behavior. Ruppert received heated criticism from America's political left after the September 11, 2001 terror attacks. The Left's criticisms of Ruppert's work seemed ideologically motivated, which likely reflects its "[conspiracy phobia](#)." Ruppert and friends appeared to overreact, and currently promote a rather weak "[Left Gatekeeper](#)" concept.[\[12\]](#) The true "Left" has almost zero "power" in the United States. It is tragic that Ruppert and the Left are mutually antagonistic, as both perform vital work and need allies. There is plenty about the official version of the 9/11 terror attacks that does not add up. For years, Ruppert had been reluctant to credit the notion that 9/11 was as at least partly an "inside job" by elements of the U.S. political/military/intelligence establishment, but credible evidence points toward it. Ruppert finally began to consider that it may partly be an inside job, and even campaigns on that theme today.[\[13\]](#) The [JFK assassination](#) was at least partly an inside job, and many acts that initiated American wars were [either "allowed" to happen or covertly instigated by the United States](#).

Ruppert's work has grown over the years. His website publishes many timely and formidable works and has increasingly emphasized the global energy situation. Heinberg's work has heavily influenced Ruppert, and they have each other's blurbs in their most recent books. While I was reading Heinberg's *The Party's Over* in the spring of 2003, Ruppert's site published an essay titled, "[Nine Critical Questions to Ask About Alternative Energy](#)." Long before Ruppert published that essay, I tried interesting him in new energy, to receive a terse, non-committal response and then silence. Others I know have had similar experiences when trying to get Ruppert to examine the situation more deeply.

Ruppert is not a scientist and appears to have no experience in the alternative energy field, so his essay is somewhat dependent on guidance from the scientific types around him. This response is therefore directed more at his advisers than at Ruppert. Ruppert finished the essay's introduction with its conclusion, "there is no effective replacement for what hydrocarbon energy provides today."[\[14\]](#) In correspondence published on the Internet, Ruppert promotes [Heinberg's prescription](#) of working to immediately reduce earth's human population by about five billion people.

The first point in Ruppert's article is a good one, which is that the viability of energy sources can only be assessed by considering the energy captured divided by the energy invested (or subtracted from the energy captured). Ruppert correctly noted that many have called hydrogen a new energy source when it is nothing of the sort, but merely a means of storing energy, at least in the mundane applications for which the mainstream

envisions its use.

In his second question, Ruppert equated “independent testing” of novel technologies with something being “peer reviewed” by the scientific establishment, and implied that until an alternative energy technology had been “peer-reviewed,” claims for it were not to be taken seriously. The scientific establishment not only ignored the [Wright brothers](#) for five years after they first flew, [Scientific American](#) ridiculed the persistent reports of their flights, more than a year after they first flew. The public, however, had only to open their eyes and watch the planes flying through the air. New energy is far too important to leave in the hands of the scientific establishment, which has demonstrated its [inability to honestly and competently assess paradigm-breaking advances](#) many times. Inventors also contribute to their own demise by their behavior. I doubt I have met an altruistic inventor (their true motivation will often not become clear until money enters the equation), and the climate of avarice, fear and delusions of grandeur that invariably haunts new energy efforts has helped derail every effort I have witnessed.

Ruppert’s third question stated that seeing an energy device working was not proof of its viability. His prudent caution was linked to his next question, which has been the acid test that I have always used in evaluating new energy claims: where does the energy come from? Ruppert cites energy sources currently recognized by the scientific establishment, and says to treat with skepticism claims made of tapping other sources, although he admits such sources may exist. For people who become deeply active in the field, it becomes evident that the problem is not a lack of potential technology, but the prodigious inertia found in almost all corners of society (particularly American, although no earthly society has sufficiently escaped that condition), combined with [concerted suppression](#) when anybody gets close to delivering *any* kind of alternative energy that might significantly impact the marketplace.

Ruppert’s fifth question was that if an energy device seems to defy the laws of thermodynamics, then “something is wrong.” I agree, but it could be that the “laws” of thermodynamics are wrong or incorrectly interpreted, which is a possibility Ruppert does not consider. According to classical thermodynamics, hooking up a [hydraulic heat engine](#) to a [flat plate evaporator](#) cannot produce “free energy,” although both inventors that we worked with, with considerable accomplishments and credentials, thought it was possible. Not long before his recent murder, [Dr. Eugene Mallove](#) informed me that by using a Faraday Cage he reproduced the effect first [measured by Wilhelm Reich](#) with his “orgone accumulator.” Creating a “spontaneous” increase in temperature is contrary to the second law of thermodynamics. So, what is wrong: the “impossible” results measured by Reich and others, or the second law of thermodynamics? I can

understand former police detective Ruppert not wanting to challenge such hallowed theories (that have attained the lofty stature of “laws”), but highly credible scientists and inventors have adduced data that challenges them. Reich died in prison for his troubles, with the FDA destroying his orgone accumulators. Mallove recently came to a violent end, and I know of no happy endings for those who challenged the citadel of science regarding the new energy issue.

In Ruppert’s sixth question, he advised “great skepticism” toward those making “extravagant” claims. What is an extravagant claim? What is a “reasonable” claim? [Sparky Sweet’s](#) device was measured to produce a million times more energy than went into it. It was also measured to produce anti-gravity effects. How is reporting its performance an “extravagant claim”? When the [Wright brothers flew through the air](#), the American scientific and media establishment ignored their “extravagant” claims for five years. When [Edison perfected the light bulb](#), science also derided his “extravagant claims,” even while his light bulbs were lighting up Menlo Park, and Edison was the world’s most famous scientist at the time. The inventors of the heat pump subsequently developed and sold by Dennis Lee were laughed out of engineering offices as they reported their heat pump’s data. They then [cut their published performance data in half](#) so engineers would stop laughing at their “extravagant claims.” Ruppert’s caution against “extravagant claims” seems similar to [Carl Sagan’s](#) skeptical canard, “extraordinary claims require extraordinary evidence.” Ruppert appeared to take [Heinberg’s misleading treatment of ET technology](#) a step further, writing, “Did ‘extra-terrestrials’ give the promoter the plan for this invention?” The most credible allegation on ET technology that I am aware of comes from Greer’s 450-plus witnesses, and Ruppert’s comment bears no relationship to that situation.[\[15\]](#)

Ruppert’s seventh question was concerned with an inventor claiming that his invention created zero pollution. Ruppert then asserted such a claim is impossible, but then gave examples from traditional energy sources, completely ignoring new energy, which may well produce zero pollution, or perhaps slight thermal pollution (the most benign type) at most.

Ruppert’s eighth question related to obtaining designs and blueprints for an inventor’s device, and finished with the caveat that such designs may be part of a scam. It could be but, my experience is that even when designs are in the public domain, such as my [mentor’s engine is](#), it does not mean much. I have rarely seen a soul beyond the lone inventor who vigorously pursues such technologies, even when it is all laid out before them. Inertia, apathy and lazy, armchair denial are the typical responses, with people such as [Mr. Skeptic](#) actively promoting disinformation.

Ruppert's ninth and last question related to some of the technical, economic and social aspects of an energy solution. It was the best part of his essay, but was still framed within the prevailing scarcity paradigm. Ruppert said that the shift towards a sustainable civilization cannot be done alone, but only from within a community. I will add a big amen, and finish by saying that I believe Ruppert means well, but is still mired in conventionality and what I call the [zero-sum-game paradigm](#). One Peak Oil advocate told me that the Industrial Revolution might be the worst thing that ever happened to humanity.^[16] There is another way to view the situation, and an escape from the prescription purveyed by [Heinberg](#), [Ruppert](#) and friends, which is that earth shed five billion people or more in the coming decades.

Why all the Misinformation and Disinformation? – Are We Hooked on Scarcity?

Ever since 1986, when I began my alternative energy journey in earnest, I have received many reactions from people who hear about the possibility of free, non-polluting, forever renewable energy. The most common reaction is fear, and those fearful reactions have had a wide spectrum of expression.

I recently had a conversation with a learned man who recited the many potential disasters that humanity is poised on the brink of, largely due to our energy practices. I [agree with that assessment](#). When I mentioned that free energy could eliminate all those problems, and quickly, he dismissed it in an instant, saying that we could not predict how free energy's implementation might develop. He preferred certain doom rather than potential salvation, because he could not predict the final outcome, even though the potential upside was something that looked like [heaven on earth](#). I have witnessed that kind of response dozens and dozens of times. That reaction is not confined to the energy issue. In 1990, when having AIDS was a death sentence, I tried interesting two AIDS patients in a treatment that reversed AIDS. Those patients could have tried the treatment for little cost, effort or inconvenience. [They chose certain death instead](#).

Why did [Heinberg](#) and [Ruppert](#) dismiss new energy as they did, particularly regarding the ET/black ops situation? When given the opportunity to see a vision of true abundance and the possibility of heaven on earth, people usually avert their eyes as quickly as possible. [Heinberg](#) and [Ruppert](#) are *preaching* scarcity and austerity, and

have a large and growing audience.

Many doomsayers seem sincere. There *are* possible downsides to new energy's implementation, but the reactions I have seen are knee jerk dismissals, where new energy is instantly banished from the range of possibilities, not subject to discussion or given the [exclamation point treatment](#) before dismissal. R. Buckminster Fuller provided a possible explanation for such behavior. Fuller wrote that for nearly the entirety of human history, only one in a thousand humans lived to a ripe old age, and only one in a hundred thousand became an economic success, so failure was [deeply ingrained into human consciousness](#). Fuller wrote that scarcity has always been the [primary motivation of all soldiers](#) as they battled over scarce resources, and until the scarcity problem had been resolved globally, there would always be wars. Fuller also wrote that political systems competition will not resolve the scarcity issue, because all political-economic ideologies are founded upon the principle of scarcity and are primarily concerned with who gets the scarce resources. Marxism and capitalism's main difference was deciding who received the benefit of the scarce resources: the workers or those who exploit them (known as capitalists).

The fearful reaction to the concept of abundance can be a puzzling one, and a mystical explanation may suffice, although it is doubtful that anybody on earth can really "prove" it. Earth may well be a school of hard knocks, where [souls come to learn difficult lessons](#), and having heaven on earth would make the kill-or-be-killed game obsolete. Those denying free energy's potential may be protecting their soul's game of scarcity, severe limitation and hardship.

Do people who embrace doom and reject possible salvation feel unworthy? After many years of repeatedly witnessing the same reaction, I came to believe I was witnessing an emotional phenomenon in the doomsayers and deniers. It may be emotionally safer to expect failure. Whether it is Fuller's idea of a deeply ingrained belief in scarcity or a mystical notion that the physical plane experience is *supposed* to be full of hardship, humanity may be hooked on scarcity. How can we break that addiction, and do we *want* to?

Replacing Scarcity Consciousness with Abundance Consciousness

Because Heinberg articulated his scarcity argument better than most, I researched his influences and came to understand M. King Hubbert's "Peak Oil" theory better (and

realized it may well be accurate and humanity is near or at its highest oil extraction rate). The title for Heinberg's book can be found in Kenneth Deffeyes' *Hubbert's Peak: The Impending World Oil Shortage*. I did some more reading on the collapse of civilizations, including Joseph Tainter's *The Collapse of Complex Societies*.[\[17\]](#)

Carl Sauer is a seminal figure in the modern environmental movement and one of the greatest scholars that America has yet produced. In 1938, long before it became fashionable, he remarked that much of Western ideology rested on the notion of forever increasing productivity and new lands ready to be filled by "settlers," but such expansion [permanently impoverished the planet](#). Sauer noted that that optimistic notion was born when [Europe learned how to conquer the planet](#). William Catton in *Overshoot*, published in 1982, repeats Sauer's theme.[\[18\]](#) Since Catton's work deeply influences Heinberg's thesis, addressing the *Overshoot* hypothesis is vital to understanding the [paradigm](#) that Heinberg and friends operate from. Catton also deals extensively with Kuhn's paradigm concept and notes that when people operate from within a paradigm it is difficult to see beyond it, which [I agree with](#). Paradigms are built on assumptions, and examining its assumptions is essential to understanding any paradigm.

The primary thrust of *Overshoot* was that the West, particularly the United States (which is about the only nation Catton examines in *Overshoot*), had been in an era of "exuberance" for hundreds of years due to two factors: discovering a "new" hemisphere and the exploitation of fossil fuels. As the New World filled up with people and fossil fuels became depleted, the exuberant era waned, and Catton's marker was the oil crisis of 1973.[\[19\]](#) Indeed, the American standard of living [began declining with the 1973 crisis](#). People began competing more fiercely over scarce resources, yet exuberant ideologies remained, although with patchwork modifications that Catton described. Catton's description of the modifications to the exuberance paradigm is similar to Kuhn's account of how paradigms are modified to account for "anomalies," until the anomalies mount to such a degree that a new paradigm is proposed that explains the anomalies and the old paradigm is discarded. Catton makes the case for a paradigm shift from a philosophy of limitlessness to one of limits that humanity has already exceeded (which is what "overshoot" means). Kuhn remarked that scientists did not accept one paradigm over another because it was "better," more predictive and so on, but because scientists *believed in it*. That notion further fueled raging debates on the nature of reality and if there is such a thing as objectivity.

What is a "resource?" Catton's discussion of "resources" was appropriately confined almost entirely to energy, and may be the primary virtue of the work of Heinberg and friends. *The Party's Over*, *The Collapse of Complex Societies*, *Hubbert's Peak* and

Overshoot all are based on the understanding that *real* economies are best described in terms of energy, and that financial concepts are simply accounting games subject to manipulation, and can obscure reality instead of accurately depicting it.

Catton's book contained so much specialized terminology that it included a glossary. Along with terms such as "resource" and "carrying capacity," Heinberg and/or Catton stressed: limitlessness, self-limiting, sustainable, and exhaustible. Some of Catton's assumptions are discussed [in the related essay](#), assumptions that new energy can readily invalidate.

Catton made much of the assumption of limitlessness in modern ideology, but largely quoted American politicians to make his case. If we accept the vacuous speeches of politicians for what they are and look instead to the actual planners of governmental policy, a different picture emerges, where the scarcity underlying the world economy [is frankly acknowledged](#). There are many [dishonest and sold out scholars and scientists](#) who purvey the propaganda of the rich and powerful, but such work is designed to delude the masses and is rarely taken seriously in the halls of power. Modern economics does not rest on assumptions of limitlessness, but instead relies on scarcity-based concepts such as the invisible hand of competition and the law of supply and demand, and is dominated by a [greed-based ideology](#) known as capitalism.

Earth's surface is obviously finite, but it is also far more than adequate to support today's six billion people at a very high standard of living, with no harm done to earth's ecosystems, if new energy was wisely implemented. Does self-limiting have to mean self-eliminating? The austerity advocates seem to think so. If self-limiting means living harmlessly, the enlightened adoption of new energy is far more "self-limiting" than the "sustainable" prescriptions of Heinberg and friends. If new energy was implemented, there might be no "exhaustible resources."

Much of Catton's marshaled evidence can readily fit into another paradigm, one that may describe today's reality more accurately. The "exuberant" ideologies Catton described have only been "limitless" from an egocentric, self-serving perspective. Ever since Europeans began conquering the world, there were no illusions in high places about the true nature of their imperial efforts. Their "unlimited" perspective was the notion that there were ["unlimited" lands and people to rape and plunder](#), but [even Columbus realized](#) the people were not unlimited. Far from being an "unlimited" perspective, it was the same old [zero-sum-game](#) perspective that had dominated human awareness for millennia. The "unlimited" perspective of the conqueror was dependent on the conquered losing everything. The main difference with the European experience

was that ecologically wealthy lands were discovered where its inhabitants were easily conquered and enslaved ([Spanish](#) and [Portuguese](#)) or exterminated ([English](#), [Dutch](#), [American](#) ...the [French](#) were underachievers in both, although contenders). Catton almost exclusively used America as his example nation, but a nation that has waged almost continuous war against other peoples since its inception, as it grew to become history's largest power, is not one that regards the world as limitless. *People living in true abundance do not wage war.*

In history's wealthiest and most powerful nation, the vast majority of the population lives only a few missed paychecks from becoming homeless, with bankruptcy a rampant condition. A life of quiet desperation is the rule of the day, and the "exuberant" perspective that Catton stressed is not much in evidence, except for establishment ideologues such as [Julian Simon](#) and the relatively few others who benefit from serving the elite. [Orwell's 1984](#) may describe American reality better than anything else, where establishment mouthpieces broadcast the party line of everything being better than ever, which only the deeply brainwashed political class believes (largely because there are material benefits to being brainwashed). The working class can believe whatever they want as long as they keep working. My American ancestors, where every man fought in wars and many lived through the Great Depression, did not live by exuberant ideology, although my father's parents thought that anything less than a 3,000 calorie meal was starvation rations, while my grandmother saved string and displayed other behaviors that reflected her austere past.

Imperial societies have always played elaborate games to make murder, theft and exploitation appear to be noble undertakings. Two astute commentators from long ago might as well have been writing about today's America:

"Next the statesmen will invent cheap lies, putting the blame upon the nation that is attacked, and every man will be glad of those conscience-soothing falsities, and will diligently study them, and refuse to examine any refutations of them; and thus he will by and by convince himself that the war is just, and will thank God for the better sleep he enjoys after this process of grotesque self-deception." - **Mark Twain, *The Mysterious Stranger*, 1916.**

"The enemy aggressor is always pursuing a course of larceny, murder, rapine and

barbarism. We are always moving forward with high mission, a destiny imposed by the Deity to regenerate our victims while incidentally capturing their markets, to civilise savage and senile and paranoid peoples while blundering accidentally into their oil wells or metal mines." - **John T. Flynn, *As We Go Marching*, 1944.**

A common argument against the idea of new energy is that with it, humanity would quickly deplete the world's remaining resources and suffer an even more catastrophic environmental collapse than we are already on the brink of. Can we avert that envisioned catastrophe if energy was free, non-polluting and forever renewable?

Homo sapiens is a bipedal ape that left its tropical home long ago. Humans survived beyond their natural habitat by using intelligence and manipulative ability to [extract energy from their environment](#). The human journey has always been based on energy extraction, preservation and consumption, and early civilization seems to have appeared due to Malthusian factors, when the hunter-gatherer's basic energy supply ([megafauna](#) and other easily hunted animals) was used up and the human population was then sustained by [domesticating plants and animals](#). With civilization came social and economic stratification, with the beginning of ideological indoctrination to justify the stratification, because there obviously was not enough to go around. The root assumption of scarcity has informed all ideologies ever since. Organized violence to commandeer land, resources and labor has been such an integral part of the human experience over so many bloody centuries that many call it an inescapable fact of *human nature*. Is it? Might it instead be a dimension of the human *condition*, not human *nature*?

When people have more than enough of something, they are often willing to share it (except those in [greed's thrall](#)). Even though the land was won by the [removal and extermination of its inhabitants](#), the United States encouraged foreign immigration to its soil to fill up the continent with desirable people. In the aftermath of World War II, the American people seemed to genuinely desire to help war-torn nations (at least those with white skin), although such sentiment was [cynically manipulated](#) by their leaders. Why were Americans being generous? Was it because America was riding history's largest economic bubble? In the aftermath of World War II, Americans [owned half of the world's wealth](#) and could afford to be generous. However, that aid began declining soon after World War II, and America has been the world's [stingiest industrialized nation](#) for many years.

One question has dominated my alternative energy quest: “Do we have to have enlightenment before we can have new energy, or can its reality help catalyze it?” If scarcity was eliminated as a concept, how would people react? Would we all get fatter and lazier and greedier, or might we see a new dawn of the human potential? Many believe that humanity has to experience Armageddon before we collectively “get it.” I hope that is not the case.

According to the worldview the austerity crowd has espoused, humanity cannot be trusted with new energy because of our unenlightened, egocentric despoliation of the earth and each other, which would only accelerate with new energy. However, in almost the next breath they say that humans are capable of an unprecedented act of sentience, voluntarily eliminating nearly 90% of our species in respect for itself and other life forms (but really because we are forced to by austerity). Heinberg seems to have little faith that his austere prescription will be followed, and that humanity is embarking on “[plan war](#),” with America’s invasion of the Middle East being the latest in a series of escalating conflicts where the world fights over dwindling fossil fuel supplies.[\[20\]](#)

A different viewpoint predicts something other than an accelerated, egocentric ruination of the planet in the service of our lifestyles, and the Peak Oil crowd presents part of that evidence. Americans presently consume about eighty times as much energy as the calories consumed in their diets. That has been described as the equivalent of having eighty “slaves” doing work for us. There are some problems with that equivalence, such as most energy is used for [heating and cooling](#), not what is thought of as work, and human energy can run brains and hands, which are more capable than today’s machines in many ways. Yet it is also true that a slave-borne palanquin never hit sixty miles per hour. Today’s average American lives better than the richest king of two hundred years ago. That is mainly due to those eighty “energy slaves.” When the Industrial Revolution began and great amounts of energy began being harnessed, two related phenomena occurred. One was that family sizes gradually declined. People did not need to exploit children as farmhands and pension plans anymore. Also, with energy slaves coming onto the scene, human slaves became obsolete, and the Industrial Revolution largely coincided with the end of chattel slavery in the West.

[Tainter’s thesis](#) on the collapse of civilizations is likely accurate, insofar as explanations that stray from economic factors begin losing their punch. All wars for all of history have been primarily fought due to economic factors, although those waging the wars will rarely admit it openly, because such crass, self-serving motivation rarely sells well to the masses, who usually need seemingly-noble delusions to motivate them, even though they too realize that economic factors are most important. There is no more salient example today than America and Britain’s invasion of the Middle East, while everybody

in the Bush and Blair administrations publicly deny that oil motivated them, even though the Bush administration is dominated by oil interests, and oil was why the British originally colonized the Middle East nearly a century ago.[\[21\]](#) All the official reasons for invading have been proven bald faced lies, but most Americans still believe them, at least publicly.[\[22\]](#)

When the fact is mentioned that nations with the highest birth rates have the lowest energy consumption, Peak Oil/austerity advocates have tried explaining that fact away with “complex” reasons that relied on cultural dynamics. Any explanation that strays from economic factors, particularly when we have the clear example of the Industrial Revolution to draw upon, is going to be dubious. If everybody had “energy slaves,” and a thousand instead of eighty, the exploitative reasons for having children will largely disappear world-wide and there may not be another population explosion that Heinberg and friends fear, especially one that further degrades the environment. Women are also less exploited in the West, with more options than becoming baby machines in a paternalistic system of exploitation. There are important factors that strongly support arguments for a global population decline or stability than another explosion, if new energy appeared.

With new energy, intelligently, compassionately and wisely implemented, an [environmentally harmless global society can emerge](#), where six or even ten billion people could live at a standard of living that is orders of magnitude above today’s average American, with no harm done to earth’s ecosystems (or even the “sustained” exploitation of them). It is also possible that such a humanity would decide that a population of one billion people is better for all involved, and we voluntarily reduce earth’s population.[\[23\]](#) Which scenario seems more desirable, one where we might decide to reduce earth’s human population, operating from a place of true abundance, or one where we “wisely” eliminate nearly 90% of ourselves because we are forced to by a lack of energy? Which requires more wisdom? Which plan has the more realistic outcome?

What if people realized they could live a harmless life on earth, and live it abundantly? Who would sign up? The technology to make it possible already exists. Do we have enough collective integrity and will to make it a daily reality?

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) Arthur C. Clarke, “President, Experts and Asteroids,” *Science*, June 5, 1998. See discussion in Brian O’Leary’s *Re-Inheriting the Earth*, p. 69.

[2] See Richard Heinberg's *The Party's Over: Oil, War and the Fate of Industrial Societies*, pp. 157-160.

[3] See Jonathan Eisen's *Suppressed Inventions and Other Discoveries*, for instance.

[4] Greer spent nearly three hours debriefing Woolsey. It was an intense briefing. According to Greer, Clinton wanted to make the information public, but was afraid of ending up like JFK. Carter and JFK had similar experiences when trying to find out about the issue. It was all "privatized" during the Eisenhower years. See Greer's *Extraterrestrial Contact*, pp. xvii-xviii. This link presents a fairly comprehensive account of that briefing and its aftermath: <http://www.presidentialufo.com/part2-.htm>.

[5] The third category of technological possibility listed in Dr. Eugene Mallove's energy appeal (see <http://www.pureenergysystems.com/obituaries/2004/EugeneMallove/LastMessage040513/>) was exactly what we were pursuing in 1988 when they lowered the boom on us. I tried educating Mallove on what we were pursuing in the winter of 2003-2004, and on the situation that he would encounter if he tried making an impact in the marketplace. His 2004 murder ended our dialogue. There were some [bizarre coincidences](#) relating to his death that will make me always doubt the "random murder" explanation of his death's circumstances. I also have grave doubts about how his legacy is being handled. In the January/February 2006 issue of *Infinite Energy*, the lead editorial was written by William Cantrell, and it seemed just like something [Julian Simon](#) would write. That issue of the magazine was devoted to assailing the science that suggests that the dramatically-increasing carbon dioxide content of the atmosphere was contributing to global warming. One article ended with the observation that ultimate effects of carbon dioxide pollution would be a "wonderful and unexpected gift from the Industrial Revolution." (see p. 17).

[6] I heard Greer speak at the New Energy Movement conference in September 2004. He has had significant interaction with [factions of the global cabal that essentially controls the world economy](#). They told him that they have paid off about ten thousand people to the tune of \$10 million each over the past fifty years or so to stop pursuing free energy and related technologies. That is congruent to what I heard [Tom Bearden say](#), and other experiences I have had.

The situation at the top is apparently very much like the *X-Files*. Greer says that a few hundred people control the world economy and call the shots. They are probably the same people who froze [\\$20 billion that our pals had in the bank](#).

Greer's summation of the situation is similar to what I have received from other sources I respect. Those three hundred or so are divided. Nearly half want to have "disclosure" about the ET reality and what comes with it, like free energy. The majority, however, are so hooked on their global power trip that they will never let go, and they are the ruthless, tyrannical majority, who have people such as Eugene Mallove murdered (Greer thinks Mallove's recent death was probably not a random murder). Greer almost [died himself in the 1990s of induced cancer](#), while three members of his team did not survive.

Greer has since been contacted by that more "benevolent" half, and asked what he wanted. He replied that he wanted them to stop killing those who tried making the ET reality known, or pursuing technologies such as free energy and anti-gravity. Greer apparently has the goods on the darker half, and has

threatened to expose them if they try to murder him or his team members again.

[7] See “Plan War and the Hubbert Oil Curve, An interview with Richard Heinberg,” by Dave Ross, *Z Magazine*, May 2004, pp. 47-50.

[8] See Heinberg’s *Powerdown*, p. 182.

[9] See Heinberg’s *Powerdown*, p. 130, where he stated that people “touted” free energy machines to him, and admitted that his doubts about the viability of such “touted” technologies was not based on any actual investigation of them. Even seeing a working device is to only know one facet (and far from the most important one) of a quite complex and emotionally overwhelming situation.

[10] See Heinberg’s *Powerdown*, p. 178.

[11] See Heinberg’s *Powerdown*, p. 165.

[12] In the “Left Gatekeeper” site’s chart of controlling influence of aristocratic money connected to covert action and secret societies, the total funding from the Rockefeller and Carnegie foundations to the “Left” media amounted to about \$100,000. Most of the “Left” that the “gatekeeper” site refers to is the establishment left, which is not what I call the real “Left.” The real “Left” is not what most Americans think of as the “Left.” The so-called “Left” who enthusiastically endorsed the American-led invasions of Yugoslavia and Iraq are what Ed Herman calls the “Cruise Missile Left.” See this link <http://www.zmag.org/ZMagSite/Nov2002/Herman1102.htm>. Herman has written extensively on the Cruise Missile Left since 2002. There is another “Left” that did not support the invasion of Iraq, but largely because George Bush did not bring enough opportunistic allies with him to create a plausible façade of global unity against the dire threat that Saddam Hussein presented to the world, and the ultimate success of our imperial undertaking was uncertain. Such a position is largely bereft of principle. John Kerry has personified that kind of “Left” in 2004. What I call the real Left is often called the “radical left.”

[13] See this link: <http://www.fromthewilderness.com/PDF/Commonwealth.pdf>. His new book, *Crossing the Rubicon*, greatly emphasizes that theme.

[14] The article does not name the author, but Ruppert is the site’s author, so I will credit him.

[15] After a couple drafts of this article were written, Ruppert published an article on his site in October 2004. Its description demonstrated that I gave Ruppert too much benefit of the doubt. The description read, in part, “And he throws down a gauntlet to the economists and abiotic oil/alien technology worshippers they will be hard pressed to pick up.”

[16] In his October 2004 essay, “The ‘Abiotic Oil’ Controversy,” Heinberg wrote, “It is my opinion that the discovery of oil was the greatest tragedy (in terms of its long-term consequences) in human history.” Heinberg repeats that theme in his *Powerdown*, p. 51, “Hydrocarbons have been both the greatest blessing and the greatest curse our species has ever encountered.”

[17] Heinberg is understandably an admirer of Joseph Tainter's *The Collapse of Complex Societies*, first published in 1988. What follows is a brief analysis of Tainter's work. In a sense, Tainter's formidable work is paradigmatic. Tainter analyzed the many explanations posited for the collapse of complex societies, which include resource depletion, intruders, natural disasters, inability to adapt and mystical explanations. The agricultural surplus that early civilizations provided allowed for greater human specialization, which increased a society's aggregate skills, and professions developed. Tainter called that process the "investment in complexity," although it is doubtful that many ancient elites (or even modern elites) saw it that way. For increases in complexity, societies have to invest more energy, which is the coin of *real* economics and always has been. The primary energy source of all early civilizations was food. As civilizations became more complex, energy was used for more than satiating hunger. Human and animal energy was then used to create goods and services that allowed civilizations to "advance."

Tainter compared the two main theories of why civilizations evolved, which were so elites could exploit the masses (conflict theory, as exemplified by Marx), or so the masses could attain higher standards by living inside civilization than they could outside it (integrationist theory, from the "progressive" view of the human journey). Tainter concluded that neither school of thought could fully explain the phenomenon (p. 28-38), and tension between the two theories existed clear back to the classic Greeks and Confucius, and may be as old as civilization itself.

As an aside, elites in all societies for all time have engaged in conspicuous consumption as a way of demonstrating their hierarchical status. It was corpulence, harems, palaces and self-aggrandizing monuments in older times. In "pre-discovery" Hawaii it was wearing a cape made of hundreds of thousands of colorful bird feathers (which drove the birds to extinction). Today, rocket rides into space for \$20 million a trip is about the ultimate in conspicuous consumption.

Tainter stated that all civilizations, like all living creatures, are maintained by a continuous flow of energy (p. 91), and his book's conclusion was that unless today's global society developed a new source of energy it was doomed to collapse, as have all other civilizations that ran out of energy (p. 215). Tainter analyzed the many reasons given by scholars and theorists regarding why civilizations collapse, and concluded that economic explanations are superior to any other explanation yet proposed (p. 90), and that when economic theorists began straying from economic dynamics and tried incorporating other factors into their collapse theories, their arguments lost their strength. I agree, and add that while most people live on the brink of economic disaster (even in the [world's richest and most powerful nation](#)), economic factors will dominate the dynamics of the human journey, which have always primarily relied on energy.

Tainter developed an economic theory for why civilizations decline and collapse, and framed it in terms of marginal return on investment in complexity. I believe his conclusion (p. 197-203) adequately explains the moment of collapse, although the other theories he criticized seemed to deal more with the decline than simply the collapse. In brief, human specialization increases the collective skill level of a society so it can function at more complex levels (which Tainter called the investment in complexity). Before civilizations developed, people were primarily concerned with getting enough to eat and finding shelter from the weather. There were not professions as such, but a handful of tasks that a village, for instance, would undertake, such as men doing the hunting and infrastructure construction/maintenance (largely concerned with making and maintaining dwellings), and women doing the gathering/growing/harvesting, food preparation and child rearing. When civilizations rose due to the energy surplus that agriculture produced, people not involved with food production could learn new skills, and professions developed. As more energy was consumed by a society (particularly in its urban areas), higher levels of specialization were

attained. A civilization's collapse was defined by the moment when suffering urban specialists realized that they could make better livings by returning to the farm. A hungry woodworker left the city and became a farmer because he was likely to be better fed that way. Tainter showed that primarily hunter-gatherer civilizations collapsed via the same dynamics. As specialists left the urban environment to pursue less "complex" behavior that better met their immediate economic needs, the cities lost their collective skills, became unsustainable, and the civilization collapsed. That explanation of collapse may seem a little too obvious, but is the primary conclusion of Tainter's work. That dynamic is also found in the [most interesting explanation of degenerative disease](#) that I have seen.

In 2005, Jared Diamond published *Collapse*, which dealt with the collapse of civilizations. Diamond's effort was less systematic than Tainter's, although Diamond was correct in criticizing Tainter's minimization of environmental factors. On [Heinberg's site](#), he capably reviews Diamond's book. Diamond minimizes the energy issue and civilizations, even describing the U.S. invasion of Iraq as due to the West needing to intervene where environmental problems overwhelmed the nation (p. 516), and does not mention one word about the oil issue perhaps having something to do with our invasion. While Diamond downplayed the energy issue, Heinberg downplayed new energy.

[18] See William Catton's *Overshoot*, pp. 24-30.

[19] See William Catton's *Overshoot*, pp. 58-74.

[20] Heinberg further discusses that idea in *Powerdown*, pp. 165-166, where he writes that fossil fuel depletion, competition for the dwindling supplies by the world's nations, denial of reality by the masses and attempts at building survival enclaves by small communities is so highly probable "as to approach certainty."

[21] For a mainstream treatment of that dynamic, see Daniel Yergin's *The Prize*.

[22] As late as September 2004, according to opinion polls, more than half of all Americans still believed that Saddam Hussein's Iraq was involved in the 9/11 terror attacks or was closely allied with Osama bin Laden's "terrorists" or possessed "weapons of mass destruction," even though zero evidence has come to light to support any of those official reasons for invading Iraq, which has even been admitted by the Bush and Blair administrations. Bush and Blair's "war on terror" is an obvious fraud. That the invasion was undertaken to "liberate" Iraq from Saddam Hussein was only invoked by Bush and Blair on the eve of the invasion, when all their other rationales were proven to be lies. There has not been a ["humanitarian" invasion in world history](#), and there is zero evidence to support the idea that it was the U.S.'s motivation for invading Iraq, particularly as the [U.S. had already killed more than a million Iraqis](#) by using history's most draconian economic warfare. "Liberated" Iraq currently suffers under an occupation noted for its brutality, sieges of cities, indiscriminate murder of civilians, torture centers and other behaviors that describe barbarian invasions, not the actions of the world's leading "democracy." As a relative told me recently, if you could get frank answers from Americans who were not concerned about maintaining imperial appearances, 90% of them would readily admit that invading Iraq was all about getting our hands on their oil.

[23] However, with a free energy-based economy, concepts such as "earth's carrying capacity" become

virtually obsolete, and having ten billion humans living in an environmentally harmless, abundant global civilization becomes readily feasible. Is it desirable? If we make the paradigm shift, we can decide that issue.

The next section: [Roots, Branches and Paradigms](#) (72K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Roots, Branches and Paradigms

By Wade Frazier

January 27, 2003 (slightly revised in 2005)

Energy has always been the root of the human journey, and that will never change. In addition, the defining parameter of human civilization has *always* been energy *scarcity*. Civilized thought is founded upon the assumption of energy scarcity, in ways that can seem invisible, because *assumptions* can become imperceptible to those holding them. The root of politics has always been economics. The environment has always been the root of economics, and energy has always been the root of all life. This essay will outline the development of that situation, and link to more complete renderings of the issues.

The attempts made to interest various activists in my work have inspired this essay. It largely has not been a successful effort. This [site's thesis](#) and [proposed solutions](#) has received very little feedback from those activists. Perhaps everybody, including me, thinks they see the problem's root as they hack at its branches, as Thoreau observed. I am not alone in my understanding that energy is the root issue regarding today's world, and the long-term (or even short term) survivability of the human species. [Buckminster Fuller](#) had energy as a central theme of his work.^[1] [Brian O'Leary](#) also sees energy as humanity's root issue. The United States is about to initiate what could be World War III in order to seize the [world's most lucrative energy reserve](#). There are many other factors in the human journey, but as with life itself, it all rides on top of the energy issue, similar to Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs.

Whether this universe came into existence from a Big Bang, a Creator in a white beard waving his hands and saying, "Let there be light," or other ways, nobody is disputing the idea that this universe's energy centers are its stars. According to today's scientific theories, stars are huge fusion reactors, mainly comprised of hydrogen and subatomic particles under tremendous gravitational pressure. The larger atoms are supposedly created in star cores, as the pressures forced nuclei together to form larger elements

(the pressures in stars, especially while dying, are theorized as sufficient to make this happen, and the resultant supernovae seed the surrounding galactic vicinity with heavier elements, which form planets, etc.). According to today's prevailing theory, earth was once part of a star core, and it is composed mainly of iron, which is the most stable element created in a star.

Earth is not *all* iron, but is largely composed of metal. Lighter elements "rose" and [settled on the earth's surface](#). The [Second Law of Thermodynamics](#) states that energy is always seeking its most stable state, with hot things giving their heat to cold things. Entropy is always happening, with all energy systems going through their stages and eventually winding down. The work of Ilya Prigogine and others has challenged the notion of entropy, and chaos theory is in vogue in certain corners.^[2] However, nobody is challenging the notion that all life on earth depends on the [capture of sunlight by photosynthesis](#) (or chemical synthesis for some classes of microscopic organisms^[3]). If the sun disappeared tomorrow, earth's surface life would almost immediately vanish.

The fossil record tells a story of life evolving in earth's primeval oceans, and eventually migrations to land happened. Biology became more efficient and sophisticated, whether it was fish, plants or reptiles. Earth's biosphere has also experienced several major extinction episodes, the first happening [more than 400 million years ago](#). For [reasons still uncertain](#), [ice ages](#) and hot ages have punctuated earth's past. The level of solar energy reaching the lower atmosphere and earth's surface largely determines the global climate. Today, earth is experiencing a [rapid warming](#) trend most likely due to the great increase of greenhouse gases that the industrial age has created.

Carbon makes life on earth possible, and carbon's ability to form double and triple bonds with other carbon atoms can store great amounts of energy. Today's [coal deposits](#) were probably laid down during one of earth's hot periods by fern forests, while earth's oil deposits are thought to have been [created by earth's oceans](#), from the cumulative effect of dying sea organisms. There are [alternative theories](#) about how the oil and coal deposits were created, but about everybody in the oil business, who studies the deposits, concurs that life processes created the "fossil fuels," and there is a finite supply of it, a supply that is being used by civilized humans about a million times as fast as it was created.

Life is an anti-entropic process. It takes energy from the environment and creates order where there previously was none. Cells are marvelously organized entities. The photosynthetic process in a tree captures sunlight energy. It then uses that energy to take water from the ground (and metals – they comprise most of the ash after wood is

burned), carbon dioxide from the air and combine them into cellulose (among other carbohydrates created), which makes the cell walls, and hence the tree's fiber. Energy is stored in the bonds making the cellulose, energy that is released when the cellulose is digested or burned.

About 240 million years ago, the great reptiles known as dinosaurs appeared, as well as the first mammals. Today, it is theorized that later reptiles began chemically regulating their internal body temperatures, a practice that mammals further refined. Becoming warm blooded required a great use of energy, and fur was an energy-saving adaptation that allowed mammals to live in climates too cold for reptiles. Plants were also evolving, and [flowering plants](#) appeared about 135 million years ago. Flowers become seeds, and the eventual appearance of fruit provided a symbiotic relationship with the animals that ate them, as they spread the seed. As trees became more sophisticated and branchy, a class of mammals particularly adapted to tree life appeared: primates. Primates have opposable thumbs, limbs with great range of motion, binocular vision and most significantly, large brains (thought to be an evolutionary response to the visual demands of their environment). As animals increased in their sophistication, they became more adaptable. When environmental conditions change, animals and plants adapt or die off. Few animals leave their ecological niches, and if they do, it largely has to do with food availability. Larger primates, especially monkeys, are highly social creatures that can live in packs of more than 100 animals. Most monkeys eat fruit as their dietary staple, although most primates are omnivorous.

Anthropoid apes began appearing about 40 million years ago, which were humanity's ancestors. Gradually, the larger apes left the trees, and the reason for that will never truly be known (environmental change is central in nearly all hypotheses), but it may well have been due to outstripping the arboreal food supply. As large apes left the trees, it freed up their hands for other manipulations, and they began exploiting new sources of food. There are various theories to account for increasing brain size among the anthropoid apes (more protein in the diet, using hands in new ways, [extraterrestrial](#) genetic intervention), but as brains became larger and some anthropoids used their hands for duties other than grabbing tree limbs, humanoid apes gradually appeared. More than four million years ago, anthropoid apes appeared that could walk upright. The big toe gradually lost its opposable feature in the upright apes. Tool-making began, which led to a greater availability of food sources. A significant use of early tools was probably scavenging predator kills in Africa. About two million years ago, African predators migrated beyond Africa, and early members of the genus *Homo* apparently migrated with them. Such migrations are nearly *always* presumed to be in response to changes in the ability of their former environment to provide enough food (energy), or the supply being insufficient for the increased numbers of animals.

Around a half million years ago, early humans made their first great energy-using innovation by [harnessing fire](#). Around 100,000 years ago, anatomically modern humans appeared, and all other human species eventually died out, leaving *Homo sapiens* alone on the humanoid scene. According to my [mystical sources](#), that was also when humans became sentient, or ensouled. Science has its theories about what sentience means, and religion has its theories about what ensoulment means, and that debate may never end, but I agree that something happened that set humans apart from other land-based mammals ([cetaceans may have been sentient/ensouled](#) for far longer than humans have). Was it “divine intervention?” Is the real story of humankind’s creation somewhat like the Book of Genesis and other creation myths? Was it [extraterrestrial](#) and/or inter-dimensional intervention? How many, if any, technologically advanced civilizations have called earth home in the distant past?

Whatever the case may be, early humans kept increasing their technological prowess, which was always directed toward greater energy availability. About 40,000 years ago, humans markedly increased their tool-making ability, and they created weaponry and hunting tactics that made them super-predators. With their new killing ability, they began spreading across the planet, migrating to previously unsuitable environments, and it was the golden age of the hunter-gatherer. Large mammals that had never seen humans before, with few or no natural predators, were easy prey to the new methods and technology. First, Africa’s large, slow mammals were rendered extinct, and the [wave of extinctions](#) across the earth closely coincided with human settlement.^[4]

About 10,000 years ago, human settlement spanned the planet, and all easy meat was rendered extinct. Humans then began exploiting new energy opportunities, and [plants and animals were domesticated](#). Cellulose comprises most plant matter, and most animals cannot digest it (which is a good thing, or else animals would have devoured all plant-based life). Humans then largely domesticated animals that *could* digest cellulose (cattle, sheep, goats, horses, llamas, yaks), and domesticated plants that could provide digestible calories, generally in their roots and seeds. Various melons/fruits were also domesticated, as well as plants that could provide fiber for fabric, rope, etc. Sheep and llamas provided wool and meat, cattle provided milk, meat and leather, and horses and llamas provided transportation.

Civilization began forming with the Domestication Revolution, partly because humans could become sedentary, not continually roaming the land in search of food. The “agricultural surplus” of the Domestication Revolution began allowing for people to develop skills other than food procurement, and professions began forming. Also, the

[diseases of civilization](#) began appearing. In addition, *humans* were domesticated. [Slavery](#) probably began when civilization did, or even helped lead to it, as human slaves could be uniquely productive, performing work that llamas and horses could not. While domesticating a horse took work, convincing humans to accept their enslaved status was more difficult, and early slave conditioning was almost certainly the beginning of ideological indoctrination, so slaves would accept their status. People born into captivity, who never knew freedom, were always the easiest-managed slaves. Forced labor institutions existed until the Industrial Revolution, and machines could do the work of humans. Humans were then rented instead of owned.

Humans began working metal early in the Domestication Revolution. It is thought that [copper](#) is the first metal ever worked. As with its cousins silver and gold, copper could be found in nuggets, as it was relatively non-reactive (resistant to entropy), and could be found in a relatively pure state. Because copper is harder than silver or gold, it had practical uses. Because of copper's relatively low melting point, it is estimated that around 7,000 years ago, people learned to melt copper in their hearth fires in the Fertile Crescent's steppe region. Humans reversed entropy in a new way by smelting metals. With the advent of metallurgy, humans could manipulate their environments as never before, to extract more energy from them. Humans invented bronze, which was far harder than copper, and bronze made plow agriculture more feasible (along with draft animals to pull them). The earliest use of each metal appears to have been artistic, but soon gave way to practical applications. A common use of metal was in weaponry, in order to kill human competitors for energy (land, food, shelter, animals). Organized intra-species murder can be seen in chimpanzees today, the only great ape besides humans that engages in such behavior. [Warfare](#) is a peculiarly human activity.

Virtually all early human technology, from stone tools to dwellings, clothing, pottery, weaponry and the like had to do with extracting/preserving useful energy. As the environment was manipulated to human ends, nearly all other species suffered for it. Earth is currently experiencing its sixth major extinction episode, which began with the [megafauna extinctions](#), and has continued to accelerate with human "progress." Today, one fourth of earth's mammal species, and one-eighth of its bird species, are in immediate threat of human-caused extinction. The methods of civilization also destroyed the environment. The Fertile Crescent, where civilization first appeared, is largely desert today (as is much of the Mediterranean region), as [deforestation](#) and plow agriculture destroys forest ecosystems, and forests are the world's greatest soil builders, and soil is the basis for land-based ecosystems. Deforestation also disrupts the land-based hydrological cycle, even changing the climate, making it drier, which leads to desertification. Civilization's very methods cut its legs out from under it.[\[5\]](#) There have

been exceptions to that trend, particularly in the New World, where the [Pacific Northwest culture](#) was environmentally sustainable, as was the [Plains economy](#), and also the [Eastern Woodlands](#). The [Amazon region](#) may also have been a consciously husbanded environment. Such environmental gentleness may have evidenced the [spiritual attitudes](#) of New World natives, with their spirituality that saw humans as *part* of the circle of life, and nature as their partner. That attitude was in stark contrast to the [Book of Genesis](#), which put humans in charge of earth, with its angry, vengeful [male sky-god](#), and the nature-fearing/conquering mentality of many Judeo-Christian peoples.

As human technological prowess increased, higher temperatures enabled humans to create [iron implements](#), which greatly increased human ability to manipulate the environment, and create much greater carnage in warfare. Also, ideology increased in sophistication, and was used to herd and control the masses under a ruling class. Organized religion appeared with civilization, with slaves, artists, farmers, herders, prostitutes, politicians, priests and soldiers being among the earliest specialized occupations. Writing made its appearance, and history thus began, with [Sumeria](#) becoming the world's first literate society.

With ensoulment/sentience also came the human ego, and the capacity to choose "good" or "evil." For the entirety of human civilization, its elites have engaged in luxurious consumption. Whether it was the [Egyptians working slaves to death](#) to mine gold for royalty, or Hawaiians making brightly feathered capes for its monarchs (which drove the birds with such plumage to extinction) or today's rocket rides into space (for about \$20 million a trip), human elites have always indulged their egos at the expense of others.

Earth's surface is finite; its available energy has always been finite, and all ecosystems have operated within the parameters of available energy. The other limiting factor has been the availability of water, upon which all earthly life depends (and some nutrient issues such as nitrogen and minerals). Water's availability (for land-based creatures) has always been dependent on the hydrological cycle, which is driven by the sun's energy.^[6] Migrating past the (energy-rich) tropics to human-hostile environments required the many energy-acquiring/preserving innovations that have marked human "progress," and energy scarcity became an obvious issue to early humans, probably as all the easily hunted mammals began disappearing. The [Zero-Sum Game](#) then began forming. It became institutionalized very early in civilization, and is based on the *assumption* of scarcity. In the words of Buckminster Fuller, the game for soldiers has always been, "You or me to the death - on behalf of yours or mine - for there is not enough to sustain us both."^[7] The fact, however, is that there has always been

thousands of times more available energy than humankind uses on earth's surface, just in the sunlight, heat, wind, tides and the like, that energy scarcity can seem a ludicrous idea. However, energy scarcity has defined the human journey, which has largely been one of plundering an energy resource until used up, and then moving on to the next resource until used up, and so on ([megafauna](#), [trees](#), arable land, fish, [birds](#), [fur-bearing animals](#), [whales](#), [coal](#), oil, etc.).

Accompanying the rise of civilization and ideology (and helping *cause* it) was abstract thinking. The pursuit of religion, writing, art, politics and other endeavors required abstract thought. A major hazard of abstract thinking is its creation and use of symbols, which are often substituted for "reality." Mistaking the symbolic for the real has been one of humanity's greatest pitfalls. Because religion deals with realities beyond the physical plane (or purports to), there is no non-physical reality to physically point to, to validate a great deal of religious symbolism. That has been the bane of all religions, trying to depict non-physical realities in physical reality. It can easily fall prey to idolatry and dogma ("it is this way because I say so," or some "authority" says so), and Western science's methods were partly a reaction to that unenlightened practice (such as Galileo's principle of *observation*, although that principle is regularly [abandoned by the scientists themselves](#)). However, such abstraction also takes place in ideologies having nothing to do with trans-physical realities. In addition, because most humans are captive to their egos to one degree or another, being [mainly self-serving](#), substituting symbols for realities has been a primary method by which humans have manipulated each other's minds, in pursuit of ego-serving activities.

One discipline particularly susceptible to substituting symbols for reality is economics, and that practice dates to human civilization's earliest days. The human journey, ever since the genus *Homo* left Africa a couple million years ago, has been about 99.9% centered around obtaining enough food. Even today, the preoccupation of most of earth's humans is getting enough to eat. The human stomach is the bedrock economic reality and always has been. As humans plundered new energy sources (or developed ways to harvest more energy from the environment, such as the [paddy system of China](#)), there was relative energy security, but humans soon bred to the energy supply's limits, and as the supply became insufficient, people would starve, engage in warfare, etc. In that respect, Malthus' perspective of the human journey was accurate. When people have energy security, they become relatively content.

The first economic abstractions were probably done for political/religious reasons. Early political/religious elites concocted ideologies that made them more worthy of being fed than commoners or slaves. *There are no starving kings*. In early Sumeria, economics,

politics and religion were united, with priest-bureaucrats running the societies. The Sumerian temples were the gold repositories, as well as the seat of temporal power. [Gold](#) had artistic merit, and was used in early religious symbology. While the concept of money was invented independently in numerous cultures, as a way to exchange goods (usually food) the earliest known use of money is thought to be about 2500 BC in Sumeria, and silver was the preferred money in the Fertile Crescent and vicinity for millennia. Gold and silver became the logical basis of money, because they were scarce (although abasement of gold with copper was practiced even by early pharaohs), and were probably used as money long before there were written records of the practice.

Money has no intrinsic value, except money that can be consumed, and in “primitive” economies, food was often used as money, with ears of maize used as currency in Mesoamerican society, and barley in the Fertile Crescent (by its non-elites). When symbols became substituted for reality, then conditions became ripe for deception, as symbols can be manipulated so that reality can be distorted or even turned upside down, as people become mesmerized by the symbols, while ignoring the underlying reality the symbols theoretically represent. *Real wealth* is food, shelter, transportation, free time (all are energy concepts, or rely on energy) and the like. [Real wealth](#) has nothing to do with money. Money is merely the scorekeeper, not the game.

In economic theory, there are two sub-disciplines, macroeconomics and microeconomics. Macroeconomics deals with the economy of a nation, for instance, and microeconomics deals with the economy of a single market or a single family, for instance. There is an inherent conflict between the two disciplines. The world’s first major economic treatise was [Adam Smith’s *The Wealth of Nations*](#). Smith’s ideal was that each person, competing in the “free market,” would benefit the entire society through their self-interested efforts. So, microeconomic decision-making would benefit the macroeconomic picture. [Charles Darwin](#) theorized similarly about the natural world, that through creatures warring with one another, in their struggle for survival, comes the “progress” of evolution. One of the most enlightened bodies of work I ever encountered [dismissed that notion](#). Smith’s and Darwin’s theories were partly projections of the British mind onto the real world, theories that are *highly* subject to challenge, although their work has become Western dogma.

A historic example of the conflict between microeconomics and macroeconomics, and the difference between wealth and its symbol, was history’s greatest gold rush, the [Spanish plunder of the New World](#) during the 16th century. The world’s biggest gold rush [helped the Spanish Crown go bankrupt](#). Spain was probably [worse off in 1600 than it was in 1500](#), while Spaniards helped [kill off 90% of a hemisphere’s population](#) (a

situation of such enormous magnitude that nothing in history compares to it). A few mercenaries became rich while the nation became poorer. The Spanish sovereigns neglected Spain's real economy while pursuing wealth's symbol. Spain's ignorance of what real wealth *was* doomed their imperial efforts. The [English](#) and the [Dutch](#) were far more successful in their imperial enterprises, with their [mercantilist](#) plunder of distant lands. While some success was simply the confluence of circumstances their countries benefited from, they were more scientifically minded than their Spanish rivals as well as more business-oriented. With the advent of paper money and today's electronic global banking, the abstraction of wealth reached even greater heights, also leading to greater elite manipulation.

All of [science's greatest breakthroughs](#) have come when new paradigms were erected, and they always came about by [questioning the founding assumptions](#) of the [previous paradigm](#). The *assumptions* of today's prevailing economic theory are scarcity, fear and greed. Those principles are *assumed* in the law of supply and demand, and the "invisible hand of competition." The [law of supply and demand](#) states that people will increase the price of scarce commodities in order to make greater profits at the expense of their customers. Monopoly control of supply is the dream of every capitalist. Such economic ideology rationalizes [greed](#) (the fear of never having enough), and makes it a founding *assumption* of the modern economic paradigm. Once *assumed*, founding principles are rarely examined afterward, as questioning it could topple the entire paradigm. That is largely why scientists, and nearly all people, are highly resistant to questioning their *assumptions*. Today's invisible hand of competition is the fear that your competitor will put you out of business (or erode your [profit](#) margins). That fear motivates *all* capitalistic empires, and virtually all industries and professions have [largely turned into rackets](#), wiping out the competition being their primary goal. That is a major reason why America's standard of living has been declining for the past generation. An *assumption* of abundance would completely overturn today's economic paradigm, and may be the chief catalyst in bringing [heaven on earth](#) into being.

Real wealth has always been rooted in earth's ability to support life. As [Brian O'Leary](#) once told me, there can be no economy on a planet that cannot support life. An old Native American saying was that when the white man chopped down the last tree and poisoned the last river, he would realize that he could not eat money. Today's economics, where money measures everything, and destroying an environment in pursuit of short-term economic gain does not appear in the tally, is a house of cards, built on false assumptions while wearing blinders. To separate environmental reality from economic theory is an ideological decision that serves to further obscure what *real* economics is. Such ideological gamesmanship is no accident. Today's economic

theory is dominated by economists from the [University of Chicago](#), an institution that history's most notorious robber baron, John D. Rockefeller, built. Academics and scholars *not* owned by such interests see the ideology coming from the University of Chicago and similar institutions as a [form of brainwashing](#).^[8] As [Noam Chomsky](#) and others make clear, when Western states largely lost their ability to establish their "legitimacy" by simply using force on their domestic populations, then elites had to resort to controlling what people thought.^[9] That idea has nothing to do with a "conspiracy theory," but is an easily researched [social engineering project](#) that is more than a century old. The "[dumbing down](#)" of the U.S. population (and to a lesser extent, Western Europe and the former British colonies) has been a goal of industrial and corporate elites for a long time, something I was eventually able to see [in my own indoctrination](#), after I had my "radicalizing" experience.

Accordingly, Chicago School economists will turn a blind eye (probably unconsciously) to the underlying reality of the [energy industry](#) driving the world economy, as their chief patron [controls the world's energy industry](#) to some degree. One [astute site](#) shreds several false assumptions of today's economics, a discipline that not only tries to ignore environmental realities, but also political ones.

It is a hallmark of Western reductionism to ideologically separate economics from the environment and politics. The food industry is part of the energy industry. Whether energy is measured in calories, kilowatt-hours or barrels of oil is of relatively slight importance, not meaningful enough to segregate them into entirely separate disciplines. For every calorie of food that makes it to a Westerner's dinner table today, several calories of fossil fuel energy are consumed to grow it and get it there. Categorizing the food and energy industries separately is partly why people are unable to see the big picture of what is really happening. It is also a primary reason why most activists hack at the situation's branches, while ignoring the root.

While tree hugging and peace marches can be noble activities, unless the root issues are addressed, they are largely futile gestures. When I was with [Dennis Lee in Boston](#), and we dealt with anti-nuclear-energy protestors, our message was that the best way to "fight" nuclear energy was to make it obsolete. We found, however, that protestors were far more interested in chaining themselves to the front gates of the Seabrook nuclear reactor. I hug trees, and was in several peace marches since the "terrorist" attacks of [September 11, 2001](#), but until the underlying economic motivation of why America is about to invade the Middle East is addressed (seizing control of the world's most lucrative energy supply and expanding imperial domination), all the peace marches and civil disobedience will have a very limited effect.

Perhaps *all* wars for the entirety of world history had an underlying economic basis, but the ruling classes cannot get the masses to throw the lives of its young men away with that stark understanding, so elites have conjured all manner of ideological cover story to mask the underlying economic motivation. The rationales given have been religious, racial, ethnic, political, [humanitarian](#), and whatever else can delude and motivate the masses. Truth has been the first casualty of *all* wars, and that dynamic will never change.

The global ruling class (I have seen solid evidence that it exists, and can play very dirty when it needs to – see [this link](#), and [this one](#)) has been busy enforcing the scarcity paradigm, so people can be incited to commit violence against others. Free energy definitely exists, but a [global effort](#) to derail anything that can challenge the [current energy industry](#) has long been in place. It is real, and I have [borne the brunt](#) of it, but it has been virtually impossible to get anybody to comprehend the root issue of energy scarcity and how it is being managed on a global basis. How difficult is it to imagine that global elites [like ruling in hell just fine](#), and will derail anything that makes humans independent of the global exploitation system, which personal abundance would do? The notion of conscious manipulation of the global political-economic system is almost universally derided as a “conspiracy theory.” The global elites will never advertise the real game, although it *does* surface in the public record sporadically, such as David Rockefeller’s Trilateral Commission issuing a report that global democracy is a threat that needed attention.^[10] Also, there are [rare admissions from the inside](#) as to what the game really is. People with their eyes and minds open can easily figure it out.

Political “democracy” in the absence of economic democracy is an empty vessel, which most Americans realize at some level, which is largely why the United States has the “free” world’s [lowest voter turnout](#). As a corollary, political activism in the absence of economic activism is impotent. The proper term for the American political-economic system is a *plutocracy*, which means that the rich run it. The rich have *always* run the United States, going clear back to when [America’s richest man](#) became its first president, and its first Supreme Court Justice (John Jay) openly stated that the people who own the country should run it (it was his favorite maxim, according to his biographer).

Democratically free, environmentally harmless energy exists but is suppressed by a global effort, and its liberation is probably the key step in [overturning the scarcity paradigm](#) that has dominated human thought and action for at least the past 10,000 years.

The hazard of paradigms is that they are built on assumptions, [assumptions that can blind people](#) indoctrinated into those paradigms. Hacking at branches can be useful, as long as it ultimately aims for the root. While energy is the root issue of our physical existence, there also is a deeper root, one the great masters know well. Until the advent of Western materialism, all peoples have had a sense of a “higher” reality, a divine origin from which this universe manifested. That sense has been the root of all religions, and that source has been called names such as the divine light, the force, the infinite spirit, God and so forth. The energy that created and sustains this universe, and all of Creation, is the energy of love. That is what “God” really is. Energy is the root issue of creation too, something that [Jesus knew well](#), as did history’s other masters. To say that energy is the root of the issue, or to say that love is the root of the issue, [is stating the same thing](#). It just depends on how big we want to draw the picture. Will we have [hell on earth](#) or [heaven on earth](#)? It [is up to us](#).

Footnotes

[1] See Fuller’s *Utopia or Oblivion*, for instance. Steve Meyers studied under Fuller and made me aware of this aspect of Fuller’s work after this web site was substantially completed in September 2002. Fuller saw humanity’s prime commodity being “ephemeral ideas aligned with the principles of creation” and their practical application, with energy being the most fundamental supporter of human needs on earth. When America had its first energy crisis in the 1970s, Fuller said the real crisis was one of human ignorance, not energy. I agree with that perspective, although it still comes down to energy being the root issue for the human journey. Without energy, there is no life. With enlightenment, boundless energy can be made available to humanity, in a way that harms no other creatures. Although Fuller’s major theme was creating a sustainable global civilization, and the energy issue was central to it, academia and the media have ignored/suppressed that aspect of his work, and most people have only heard about Fuller because of his geodesic dome. During January and February 2003, I had the pleasure of reading Fuller’s *Utopia or Oblivion* and *Grunch of Giants*. Steve said that *Utopia* best summarized the overall theme of Fuller’s work, while *Grunch* was the closest Fuller came to calling the global political-economic system what it really is, with a perspective similar to [Noam Chomsky’s](#) and other radical leftists ([Parenti](#), [Herman](#), etc.). Reading Fuller’s work was discovering the professional grandfather I never knew I had (although Fuller declined to call himself a professional - *Utopia*, p. 336). The material for *Utopia* came from the mid-1960s, while Fuller wrote *Grunch* soon before his death in 1983. Parts of *Utopia* seemed limited, incorrect or dated, but some of what was missing in *Utopia* became more evident in *Grunch*, as far as how Fuller saw humanity’s situation. Steve said that Fuller had to walk a tightrope: making his case without being marginalized as Chomsky has, and Chomsky has been the world’s most prominent academic for the past forty years. It is probably no accident that Fuller wrote *Grunch* at his life’s end, purveying his pithier observations when he could no longer be penalized. Just as Martin Luther King Jr.’s legacy has been misrepresented and watered down since his death (Jesse Jackson says the establishment transformed King into the “harmless dreamer” after his death), and [Adam Smith’s](#) work has been distorted by the corporate capitalists, so has Fuller’s legacy been diluted, misappropriated and even ignored by today’s establishment.

Whatever criticisms might be made about Fuller's work are mere quibbles compared to pondering his masterful synthesis and his great humanitarian labors. He was far ahead of his time. As far as the differences between Fuller's work and this site: he deals with geometry in detail (partly how he invented his geodesic dome); this site incorporates more of a [spiritual perspective](#), and deals with the evolution of the [medical establishment](#) and the racketeering that pervades [all of today's industries and professions](#); this site does not shrink from the political-economic-historical topics that Fuller treaded rather lightly upon until *Grunch*; I have seen first-hand evidence that manipulating the global political-economic system is partly conscious (see [here](#), [here](#) and [here](#)), while Fuller describes the more [structural](#) (unconscious) aspects of it; this site focuses on more than just humanity's welfare, but [all life on earth](#); Fuller relieves U.S. citizens of a great deal of their personal responsibility for what is happening, while I *emphasize* our responsibility, largely because Americans are uniquely positioned to initiate bringing a global Utopia or destruction into being. It is an awesome responsibility, and so far, [Americans](#) are not handling their inheritance very well. Steve Meyers is Fuller's direct professional descendent. Humanity stands poised to create a global Utopia, or [we may destroy ourselves](#). The mass of humanity has largely come to this stage of its existence unconsciously, usually without trying to benefit anybody other than themselves. The time to become conscious, and help *all* people attain sufficiency in life's necessities, is upon us. Failure to do so may mean our demise by our own hand. With that comparison out of the way, what follows are some of the simple but profound truths that Fuller pursued for many years.

Humanity's [hands and intelligence](#) led to tool-making ability that allowed humans to exploit energy in ways that other animals could not. That led to people expanding their range across the planet. Humanity's journey has always centered around manipulating the environment to gain energy security, and our reservoir of knowledge and skill has generally been a process of compounding itself, as our ancestors evolved through their stone, bronze, iron, industrial and information ages. Until relatively recently, there have never been enough resources so all humans can live to a reasonable life expectancy of ninety years or so. The concept of scarcity was ingrained in humans early on, and is the great invisible assumption of today's humanity. However, it is an obsolete assumption, at least as far as human life on earth is concerned. The technology came into being a generation or two ago to clothe, house, feed, transport and educate *all* of humanity at a standard of living not even attainable by European royalty during the 19th century.

Nearly all the metal ever mined is still being used by humans, as all elements are eternally recyclable, as long as there is sufficient energy to do so. When Europeans [learned to sail the oceans](#), what followed was largely an act of global piracy. Technological and scientific advances were conscripted into making ships hold more cargo, to make them swifter, to make their armaments more deadly, and so on, as Europe's nations vied for supremacy. That competition greatly accelerated the trend of "doing more with less." Technology developed for ships was used in land applications much later, such as with steel and refrigeration. Sea dominance eventually gave way to air dominance, and [space dominance](#) is the new goal. The emphasis for centuries has been making vessels lighter, more capable, and deadly. The "doing more with less" idea can be summed up in one word: efficiency.

Before the invention of radio, ships at sea could not effectively communicate with their imperial masters, so sea captains needed training in diverse disciplines, as they needed to be self-reliant (*Utopia*, pp. 41-42). With the invention of radio, captains could take orders directly from their superiors in real time, and

diversity in a captain's training was no longer as necessary. Specialization has been the hallmark of science and industry, but specialization also tends to contribute to tunnel vision. Specialists know about their particular discipline, but rarely see the larger context their efforts impact. Fuller called himself a generalist, and meant it in a comprehensive sense. Fuller believed that the specialization in science and other technical endeavors was a ruling class tactic to keep specialists from seeing the big picture, so they could be controlled (*Utopia*, p. 334). Science is largely a slave profession (*Utopia*, p. 304), and its master is capital, i.e., stolen and hoarded wealth. Only comprehensivists can see the big picture, and thereby consciously develop the big answers.

According to Fuller, scarcity has always been the [motivation of soldiers](#), and until the scarcity problem is resolved on a global basis, we will always have wars. Because of perceived scarcity, [greed](#) became the centerpiece of today's economic ideology. One of Fuller's most trenchant observations was that *all* political ideologies are founded upon the idea of scarcity, and politicians are preoccupied with who gets the scarce resources. Capitalism avers that idle capitalists should enjoy the scarce resources, while Marxism posits that workers should. Fuller noted that because politics is founded on scarcity, or what I call the [Zero-Sum-Game](#) idea, no political ideology is of *any* use in resolving the scarcity issue. Fuller wrote,

"Making the world resources adequate can't be accomplished through political system competition. All politics are obsolete as fundamental problem solvers. Politics are only adequate for secondary housekeeping tasks. Mankind must take universal initiative in effecting the design revolution." (*Utopia*, p. 156)

Fuller repeatedly wrote that if all politicians and ideologues were relocated to the moon tomorrow, but all the industrial infrastructure was left intact and the people who operate it, human society would do just fine. Take away the machinery and industrial capacity, while leaving the politicians and the attendant political infrastructure intact, and most of humanity would starve to death in a few months (*Utopia*, p. 157). Under an abundance paradigm, today's politics are useless. Fuller wrote that politicians have *always* been "stooges" of the economic interests (*Utopia*, p. 276). Fuller wrote that the old Utopias always failed because they were based on shared austerity. A Utopia based on abundance has a chance of coming to pass.

Many of Fuller's visions did not come to pass as he envisioned, and most are still in the future, if they ever happen. Steve Meyers and I have long discussed people's resistance to visions such as Fuller's or ours. It has been awesome to witness the general population's intractable resistance to the *idea* of abundance, and for many years, Steve and I have beaten our heads against the walls of organizations that *claim* to be seeking answers. We have shown them solutions that make the big problems, the ones that threaten humanity's existence, go away almost overnight, and [what we get back is nearly complete silence and denial](#), or worse, derision. Dennis Lee discovered the same thing [on his journey](#). That might be the most mind-boggling part of my strange journey, and I came to a new understanding of the phenomenon in [early 2006](#). The vast majority of people *do not even want to know* that there are solutions waiting to be used, and those who say they seek solutions are often the biggest obstacles to achieving them. What follows

are our speculations, based on our *experiences*, on why most of humanity *does not want* to solve its problems.

Fuller stated that for virtually the entirety of human history, only one-in-one-thousand people lived to a ripe old age, and only one-in-one-hundred-thousand was an economic success (*Utopia*, p. 340). Consequently the concept of failure has been nearly hardwired into human consciousness. Most people seem *addicted* to the fear/failure/scarcity paradigm, and ideas of abundance are literally outside their universe of possibility. Also, people often subscribe to ideologies that short-circuit their awareness, [blinding](#) them to what is really happening. The quickest dialogue-ender I have ever experienced regarding my work is people telling me they are “skeptical” that free energy is even possible, and I respond with the offers we received to cease our pursuit of free energy, the last one being [at least one billion dollars](#). I do not even get back, “I do not believe you, give me evidence of your offer” (our treatment [was pretty standard](#), as I eventually discovered, but more extreme, because we were more “threatening,” as far as being able to deliver alternative/free energy). When I mention the offers we received, I receive pure silence as their response, virtually every time. Why? Steve thinks it is because if they acknowledged that situation, it would shatter their comforting fantasies of how this world operates. The radical left, with its “[conspiracy phobia](#),” has virtually never responded to my work, even from those who say they are *looking for answers*. Even Noam Chomsky says that earth’s rulers would [rather destroy the planet](#) than give up their “power.”

I believe the [cognitive dissonance](#) dynamic partly explains the denial I have encountered. It is far easier to dismiss my experiences than acknowledge them, because to acknowledge them, people would have to rethink their worldviews. In the end, it probably comes down to integrity. I discovered the hard way that [personal integrity may be the world’s scarcest commodity](#). Only one-in-thousands of people have proven to have the integrity needed to pursue the world’s big problems. Fuller’s ratio of people who can technically create answers was even larger. Fuller wrote that only one-in-one-hundred-thousand trained scientific types will make the breakthroughs necessary to keep technologically advancing humanity, but that one would be enough (*Utopia*, p. 261). I believe that the low collective integrity of the human species, combined with that low number of creatively competent technical types, is largely why we are heading toward oblivion today more than we are Utopia. Nearly every major scientific/technical innovation was initially [greeted with outrage and/or denial](#) by the scientific community, and many potentially earth-shaking ones are marginalized and derided to this day, to humanity’s detriment. It is probably worse today than it was when the [Wright brothers](#) were ignored for five years after they first flew.

Another ingrained problem that Fuller mentioned, and [I have also seen](#), is that [scientific and technical types](#) are deeply naïve about politics and other real world factors. Most American scientists and technical types work in some capacity for the war industry, and consequently have wholly swallowed their nationalistic and related indoctrination, unable to see beyond the tiny reality framework they were inculcated into.

Fuller and others have written that weaponry and warfare have been the driving forces behind most technical innovation (he called it humanity’s “suicidal fixity” on the killing aspect of the efficiency and design revolution - *Utopia*, p. 203). Fuller often wrote that if humanity directed its efforts at creating “livingry” rather than weaponry, the scarcity paradigm could evaporate almost overnight. However, we flirt with our self-destruction. Fuller wrote that if the scarcity paradigm was not toppled by the late 1980s, humanity’s chances of survival were probably less than 50%. He may be right, but it is never too late to

begin trying. Fuller stressed warfare as the factor that may destroy humanity, but it has [competition today](#), environmental collapse being a prominent competing factor.

Fuller noted that when college students became engaged in pondering and solving global problems, notions of nationalism and other group ideologies quickly faded into insignificance (much to the consternation of their elders, who could not shed their indoctrination), and the students all saw themselves as simply humans, or “earthians” (*Utopia*, p. 248). There is [another step beyond that one](#), which Fuller’s work did not quite address, which is understandable for a man of his generation.

This site could be accused of plagiarizing Fuller’s work, although we took independent and parallel paths, and he was from my grandparents’ era. Fuller and I agree that energy *is* wealth (*Utopia*, p. 287), and is the root of the human journey. I hope, for humanity’s sake, that Fuller’s brilliant, pioneering work is rescued from its obscurity, and soon.

[2] See Prigogine and Isabelle Stengers’ *Order out of Chaos*, David Bohm and David Peat’s *Science, Order and Creativity*, and James Gleick’s *Chaos*.

[3] Photosynthesis is the capture of photon energy to increase electron energy, to overcome the atom’s/molecule’s resistance to react with other atoms/molecules, known in chemistry as activation energy. Chemical reactions must pass their activation energy threshold in order to happen. For some reactions, the needed energy is high, and for others, less so. Reactions are also exothermic or endothermic. Exothermic means that the reaction gives off more energy than was used to initiate it, while endothermic means there was a net absorption of energy in the reaction. Burning wood is an exothermic reaction, with the reaction begun by heating the wood to the point where its activation energy is exceeded, as with a spark or match flame. In heat synthesis, subterranean bacteria are able to take advantage of high temperatures (of hundreds of degrees), and have an endothermic reaction that absorbs energy, to fuel its life. Much of that chemical synthesis can only happen under high temperatures, and has been found in geysers, undersea volcanic vents, or far beneath the earth’s surface, where temperatures of several hundred degrees can be found. Such chemical synthesis is today considered a primitive precursor to photosynthesis, and is only performed by microscopic organisms. Those microscopic organisms are called archaea, and there are also some classes of chemicals (salts and methane, for instance) where certain archaea can eke out chemical reactions to fuel their lives. Archaean life forms may be earth’s oldest.

[4] Because humans evolved in Africa, their fellow mammals also adapted to their presence. Although there were African megafauna extinctions, they were more modest than elsewhere on earth. It is thought that the surviving African megafauna adapted to human predation because humans “grew up” around them, and learned to fear them. They survived the rise of the human super-predator, and are about earth’s only living examples of what kinds of mammals populated earth before humans appeared.

[5] Clive Ponting’s *A Green History of the World* is an excellent overview of that process, and Jared Diamond’s *Collapse* is also good reading on that subject.

[6] The hydrological cycle is largely considered to be the circulation of water through earth’s landmasses. The sun’s energy evaporates water from the oceans’ surface, and most falls back to the oceans as rain.

Water vapor that floats over land and falls as rain or snow drives the land-based hydrological cycle. That water is needed for earth's land-based ecosystems to exist, as it passes on its way back to the oceans via rivers and lakes, or is vented back to the air by plant respiration and evaporation. Some trickles underground, and creates great aquifers.

[7] See Fuller's *Utopia or Oblivion*, p. 6.

[8] For instance, [Edward Herman](#) is an economist who takes the "Chicago School" to task regularly in his work.

[9] See, for instance, Chomsky's *Necessary Illusions*, and Herman and Chomsky's *Manufacturing Consent*.

[10] See *The Chomsky Reader*, p. 45, or Chomsky's *World Orders Old and New*, p. 93, or *Necessary Illusions*, pp. 2-3.

The Next Section: [Site Timeline](#) (236K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Site Timeline

By Wade Frazier

This section grew from a friend's trouble with trying to keep straight in his mind various names, dates and events that are on this web site.

This is not supposed to be a history-of-the-world timeline, although it can appear that way. It is a linear listing of various events discussed on this site, including links where the events are dealt with in some depth.

[Timeline from 1492 onward.](#)

	This timeline presents events related to this site, with links to pertinent parts of it.	
Date	Event	Human Population Statistics
4.6 billion BC	A star is born. We call it the sun.	
4.5 billion BC	Earth appears.	
3.8 billion BC	Life appears on earth.	
2.3 billion BC	First ice age known of occurs.	
950 million BC	Ice age appears and lasts for 350 million years. Ice ages have periods of advancing and retreating ice sheets over parts of earth.	
900 million BC	Algae appears on earth.	
570 million BC	Complex sea animals appear in earth's oceans.	
500 million BC	Fish appear, world's oceans teem with life.	
450 million BC	Ice age appears and lasts for 50 million years.	

438 million BC	First mass extinction episode, with 85% of earth's species becoming extinct.	
435 million BC	Land plants appear, with vascular systems.	
410 million BC	Insects and amphibians appear.	
367 million BC	Second mass extinction episode, with 82% of earth's species becoming extinct.	
360 million BC	Large fern forests appear.	
330 million BC	Reptiles appear. Ice age appears and lasts for 90 million years.	
245 million BC	Third and so far greatest extinction episode, with more than 90% of earth's species becoming extinct.	
240 million BC	Dinosaurs and mammals appear.	
208 million BC	Fourth extinction episode, claiming 76% of earth's species.	
205 million BC	Birds appear.	
135 million BC	Flowering plants appear.	
65 million BC	Dinosaurs become extinct in fifth mass extinction episode, which claims 76% of all species. First primates appear.	
45 million BC	Whales are evolving from land-based to aquatic life.	
38 million BC	Anthropoid apes appear, the ancestors of humans.	
12 million BC	Evolutionary split, which separated eventual orangutans from other great apes, begins.	
7 million BC	Evolutionary split that leads to chimpanzees begins.	
> 4 million BC	First erect protohumans appear in Africa, differentiating from their great ape cousins.	Human population = 0
> 2 million BC	Large-brained bipedal hominids, of the genus <i>homo</i> , appear in Africa.	

< 2 million BC	Homo erectus begins migrating from Africa, and fire was first used as a tool. The African ape diet was partly abandoned as fruit, blossoms, seeds and leaves were less available beyond the tropics, meaning more meat eating.	Human population <100,000
1.6 million BC	Pleistocene ice age begins, ending 12,000 years ago.	
1 million BC	First motion picture, starring Raquel Welch.	
c. 400,000 BC	Fire consistently used . First regular food processing practiced – cooking.	>100,000
c. 130,000 - 100,000 BC	First anatomically modern humans appear in Africa and migrate across Asia, eventually displacing other hominid species.	
c. 40,000 BC	Advances in hunting skill and technology allow humans to hunt larger animals . Boats invented. Modern humans first appear in Europe and Australia.	
c. 35,000 BC	Humans populate Tasmania and eventually become isolated from peoples in Australia, probably from rising ocean as Ice Age ends.	
c. 30,000 BC	Humans probably first appear in North and South America. Cave murals are first drawn, in European caves. One of the earliest artistic works, and possibly a religious artifact, the Venus of Willendorf, is made in central Europe. It, and many works like it, is evidence that goddess-based religion flourished from humanity's earliest days.	
c. 25,000 BC	Pottery first appears, in Europe.	
c. 23,000 BC	Bow and arrow invented, probably in Europe.	
c. 11,000 BC	Methods for processing and storing food appear in Fertile Crescent. Australia experiences extinction of its large animals, probably due to over-hunting by humans. Australia did not have a continental ice sheet. Extinction of large mammals begins in northern Eurasia, probably due to over-hunting and climate/ biome change.	

c. 10,000 BC	The most recent ice age ends. Dogs are the first domestic animals, appearing in the Fertile Crescent region. Copper , possibly the first metal ever worked, is worked in the Fertile Crescent region.	
c. 9000 BC	Extinction of most large mammals in North America, possibly caused by human over-hunting, probably also influenced by climate changes.	
c. 8500 - 8000 BC	Large mammals become extinct in South America , which was not covered in a continental ice sheet, probably from human over-hunting. Hunter-gatherer lifestyle is increasingly unsustainable. First permanently inhabited town, Jericho, begins developing. Domestication Revolution begins in Fertile Crescent and the Americas. Wheat, peas and olives domesticated in Fertile Crescent. Squash and pumpkins first domesticated in Mesoamerica. Beginnings of marine-based culture of North America's Pacific Northwest.	4 million
c. 7500 BC	Domestication Revolution begins in east Asia.	
c. 7000 BC	Sheep and goats begin domestication in Fertile Crescent region.	
c. 6500 BC	First large human communities, such as Catal Huyuk, appear in present-day Turkey. The clearing of forest to make farm fields, and the resultant puddles, led to the spread of malaria, probably originating in Africa.	
c. 6000 BC	Cattle and pigs begin domestication in Fertile Crescent region. Chicken and rice begin domestication in east Asia.	
c. 5500 BC	Agricultural communities appear along the Nile river.	
c. 5000 BC	Civilization begins forming in the Fertile Crescent. Early societies are egalitarian. The agricultural societies have goddess-based religions, while the pastoral, herd-tending societies develop male-based religions. The mobile pastoral societies begin invading the sedentary agricultural societies. Irrigation is first used in the land between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers, and in Nile river valley. Villages appear along Yangtze river. Metallurgy first practiced near mountains of Eastern Europe. Copper weapons developed by herder societies of steppe regions. People of Greece and the southern Balkans adopt	5 million

	agricultural practices.	
c. 4500 BC	First large religious facilities built at site of today's Iraq. Stratification of early society begins, with elites - priest class, craftsmen, rulers and probably the first medical doctors. Earliest known bronze implements are made in Thailand.	
c. 4000 BC	Horse domesticated in steppe region north of Black Sea. Llama and Alpaca domesticated in South America. Camel first domesticated near Fertile Crescent. Invasions from steppe regions wash across Europe, Fertile Crescent and Middle East. Warfare practiced on large scale. Iberians migrate to today's Spain, from either northern Africa or central Europe. They also become the British Isles ' first permanent inhabitants during the historical period.	
c. 3500 BC	Migrating farmers from Fertile Crescent settle Indus valley in present day Pakistan. Bronze age begins in Fertile Crescent . Soil salination begins affecting Mesopotamian agriculture, and salt resistant barley is raised in place of wheat, comprising half of southern Mesopotamian grain production. Siltation of river water from upstream deforestation also contributes to environmental degradation. The wheel is invented in Mesopotamia. By this time, corn, potatoes, manioc, beans and turkeys are domesticated in the Americas.	
c. 3000 BC	Sumeria becomes the world's first literate society. History begins. State bureaucracy and military establishment are developed. The earth-based Mother Goddess begins being replaced by thunderous, male, sky gods in Middle Eastern mythology. Elephants, giraffes and rhinoceroses are extinct in Nile valley. Plow agriculture begins in Fertile Crescent. The Pacific Northwest marine-based culture begins fully developing, from southern Alaska to Northern California.	14 million
c. 2600 BC	Imhotep is credited with building the world's first large stone building, a step pyramid in Egypt. Imhotep was also a physician. He was later deified, and was probably the model for the Greek god of medicine, Asclepius.	

c. 2400 BC	Crop yields continue declining in Sumerian fields. Wheat yields decline by 42% between 2400 and 2100 BC.	
c. 2100 BC	Ur abandons wheat cultivation. Wheat comprises only 2% of Sumerian crops.	
c. 2000 BC	Great migration wave of pastoral societies from steppe regions (generally between the Caspian and Black Seas) into the Fertile Crescent, India and Europe. Third Dynasty of Ur collapses. Violent, male, sky-god religion accompanies the invaders. Feminine, earth-based religion and mythology in the Fertile Crescent, Mediterranean region and Europe are eventually overthrown by the invaders, replaced with male, sky-god religions. Helen of Troy becomes a famous female healer and mythological figure, but female healers begin disappearing from medicine at this time. Intense deforestation of the region from Morocco to Afghanistan commences. Today, only about 10% of that forest remains; much has turned to desert.	
c. 1900 BC	Indus valley society collapses. Declining food production due to soil salination probably led to population decline and internal collapse, combined with foreign invasion.	
c. 1700 BC	Wheat yields in Sumeria decline by 65% since 2400 BC. Fields turn white from salt. Sumer declines as a power, and the center of Mesopotamian civilization shifts north.	
c. 1500 BC	A four hundred year period of chaos and warfare begins to sweep Europe, the Fertile Crescent and Mediterranean region. The violent, male sky-gods come to dominate religion, including one named Jehovah. The Aryan (pastoral tribes of the steppe regions) invasion of India leads to their caste system; the invaders are the favored class.	38 million
c. 1400 BC	Iron first smelted by Hittite civilization in present-day Turkey . Agriculture begins in Japan.	

c. 1200 BC	Iron made into weaponry. Iron weapons rapidly replace bronze and become common throughout Europe, the Fertile Crescent, Egypt and elsewhere. The feminine-friendly Minoan civilization on Crete collapses, as does Mycenaean civilization. Joshua's Israelites lay siege to Jericho . Celts invade from region of today's Austria into France and Germany. The Polynesian expansion, from the region near New Guinea to the South Pacific's islands, begins.	
c. 1100 BC	The Phoenician maritime civilization rises, based in today's Lebanon, and flourishes for centuries. They invent the alphabet.	
c. 1000 BC	Agriculture collapses in central Mesopotamia due to soil salination. In 1990, Iraq imported 70% of its food. The anti-feminine culture of ancient Greece develops, known as Greece's "dark age." Women are gradually excluded from public life. Although male gods dominated Greek mythology, women were also present, if subservient. The Picts migrate to Scotland from Europe. The Greeks make the first heat-treated iron weapons . Chinese begin using coal for smelting copper coins .	50 million
c. 900 BC	Asclepius lives at this time, and eventually became "sainted" in Greek culture and became the Greek god of healing during its classical period. The mythological Asclepius was the son of Apollo, who was the son of Zeus. Hygeia and Panacea were Asclepius' daughters.	
c. 700 BC	A village that began with shepherds' huts, eventually known as Rome, is growing.	
c. 650 BC	Expanding Greek settlements begin causing noticeable environmental degradation.	
590 BC	Solon argues against agriculture on steep slopes in Greece because of rapid erosion.	
586 BC	Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar II's armies destroy Jerusalem, with remaining Jews being taken to Babylon as slaves. Their first forced emigration was in 597 BC, when skilled Jews were taken. It began the dispersal of the Jews across the world.	

c. 563	Gautama Buddha is born; he died in about 483 BC.	
560 BC	Peisistratus becomes tyrant of Athens, and pays bounty for farmers to plant olive trees , as they can survive on the badly eroded land, and put down roots to penetrate the exposed rock.	
539 BC	Persia conquers Babylonia, under Cyrus the Great. Persian Empire becomes the Old World's largest. Babylon's Jews are allowed to return home, but many, if not most, prefer to stay.	
509 BC	Republic of Rome begins, which takes power away from local kings. The Roman republic tries balancing the needs of peasants and aristocrats.	
c. 500 BC	Celts begin invading the British Isles, absorbing the Iberians. Women enter the healing profession in Danish Celtic culture. Pythagoras, the world's first mathematician and the West's first vegetarian , dies. His followers taught that the earth orbited the sun. Etruscan civilization is at its peak influence, to eventually fall to neighboring states. The world's most sophisticated agricultural system, the paddy system , is developed in China, expanding across Southeast Asia during the next millennium.	
480 BC	Persians sack and nearly destroy Athens. Themistocles, and later Pericles, rebuilds Athens into a great city. At its height, of its 200,000 inhabitants, only 50,000 were citizens (men). The rest were women, slaves and foreigners.	
c. 450 BC	Roman law codified on twelve wooden tablets. The laws make men the absolute rulers of family households, giving them the authority to sell their children into slavery, among other rights.	
432 BC	Peak of the Greek classic period. Hippocrates , Socrates, Thucydides and Aristophanes are alive. During Peloponnesian War (begun in 431 BC), war-crowded Athens is afflicted with a plague (probably smallpox or typhus) in 430 that lasts three years, killing about a third of the population and leading to Athens' decline.	

c. 400 BC	Centuries of Greek deforestation and agricultural practices devastate the environment and soils, remarked upon by Plato and other observers. The degraded environment led to falling crop yields and Greece's decline, as had been happening to other empires for thousands of years. Rome begins rising as a power, eventually defeating the Etruscans of today's northern Italy, and incorporate Etruria's cultural and technical achievements. By the time of Jesus, Etruscan culture was almost completely absorbed into Roman culture.	
334 BC	Alexander the Great of Macedonia conquers Persia and tries uniting East and West. The short-lived Macedonian Empire helps pave the way for the Roman Empire. Alexander supposedly said that he "died by the help of too many physicians."	
264 BC	After subduing Italy, Rome engages in its first war against Carthage. Italy and Sicily are rapidly deforested to meet Rome's needs.	
202 BC	Rome defeats the forces of Carthaginian general Hannibal, ending the second Punic War.	
c. 200 BC	Picts migrate to Ireland from Scotland. Lion and leopard are extinct in Greece and coastal regions of Asia Minor. Beaver is extinct in northern Greece due to trapping.	
197 BC	Rome invades Greece and conquers them. Rome would incorporate much of Greek culture into its own, borrowing its gods and technology, although denigration of Greek physicians and medicine was typical.	
146 BC	Greek resistance to Roman rule leads to the complete destruction of Corinth and the sale of its inhabitants into slavery. That same year, Rome does the same to Carthage . The Roman Republic begins expanding across Europe, northern Africa and the Middle East.	

58 BC	Rome begins handing out free food. Eventually, hundred of thousands of Rome's citizens received free food for political reasons. Intensive agricultural exploitation of imperial lands are undertaken to feed the empire. Places such as today's Libya are forced to become farms for Rome, with the agricultural practices eventually turning Libya into the desert nation it is today.	
54 BC	Julius Caesar's armies defeat the inhabitants of southern Britain.	
31 BC	Cleopatra and Anthony's forces defeated by Rome, and Egypt comes under Roman rule the next year.	
27 BC	After a century of bitter civil war, the Roman Republic ends with the naming of Augustus Caesar as the first Roman Emperor. Rome's citizens cease having representation in government.	
1 AD	Jesus is alive. Much of Palestine, Syria, Lebanon and surrounding regions are deforested by Rome, eventually turning it into desert. In the Caribbean, agricultural Arawakan peoples begin migrating along the archipelago from South America, eventually displacing/absorbing the hunter-gatherer peoples there. They populate the Greater Antilles in the millions by 1492 , and are loosely known as the Taino. At this time, and perhaps a few centuries earlier, Polynesians begin colonizing the Hawaiian Islands. The Chinese probably invented paper around this time, although tradition gives the date as 105 AD.	World population: 170 million.
C. 30 AD	Roman writer Celsus translates works of Hippocrates, writes a mammoth series of books, and the eight devoted to medicine have survived.	Roman Empire's population: 50 million
66 AD	First Jewish revolt against Roman rule . Rome responds with typical brutality, the revolt ending with the mass suicide at Masada in 73 AD. Jews begin their dispersal from Palestine.	
122 AD	Hadrian's Wall built by Rome in northern England, which marked the northern extent of its empire.	

132 AD	Jews revolt against Roman rule again. Rome responds in standard fashion, completely destroying the Jewish state in 135 AD and laying waste to the entire region. Hundreds of thousands of Jews die; the survivors are sold into slavery and dispersed across the Roman Empire and beyond.	
165 AD	The Antonine plague, probably smallpox, sweeps through the Roman Empire, brought back by returning soldiers from Syria. It rages for 15 years, killing about five million people, or about a quarter to a third of all of those exposed to the disease, including Emperor Marcus Aurelius in 180, as it did his predecessor in 169.	
c. 169 AD	Marcus Aurelius appoints Galen to be personal physician to his heir, Commodus. Galen writes prodigiously, his work guiding Western medicine until the 1500s.	
c. 200 AD		200 million
251 AD	An epidemic again sweeps through the Roman Empire until 270, killing 5000 of Rome's citizens each day during the epidemic's peak, including the Emperor Claudius in 270. Rome was forced by the population loss to recruit barbarian troops. The first mass conversions to Christianity were apparently a consequence of the epidemic. Centuries of Roman games have rendered the elephant, rhinoceros and other animals extinct in Northern Africa. Tiger is extinct in Persia and Mesopotamia.	
c. 276 AD	Mani dies in captivity . Unlike Jesus or Buddha, Mani attempts to create a religion, and he succeeds. It is a syncretic religion that incorporated elements of Christianity, Buddhism, Zoroastrianism and Gnosticism. Although the Roman Empire and others heavily persecute Manicheans, Manichaeism becomes one of the world's great religions, and lasts for a thousand years before it is finally wiped out.	
300 AD	Babylonia becomes the center of the Jewish culture.	

324 AD	Roman Emperor Constantine convenes the Council of Nicea, his gambit to hold the fragmenting empire together through a state religion. There were 20 different versions of Jesus' crucifixion circulating among the numerous Christian sects of the day. The council was charged with creating a state-approved institution and version of Jesus' life for mass consumption. The other 19 versions were suppressed, as well as rival Christian sects, such as the Arians. Roman Catholicism became the official religion of the Roman Empire in 325 AD. The Council of Nicea may have something to do with the fact that more than half of Jesus' life is missing from the <i>New Testament</i>. Feminine imagery is almost completely missing from Christian religious mythology. Constantine also establishes Constantinople in 324 AD at the site of the ancient city of Byzantium, and it becomes the center of the Eastern Roman Empire and the repository of Hellenistic (Greek) culture and learning.	
410 AD	Visigoths invade Rome, for the first invasion of the city in eight centuries.	
451 AD	Hun invasion of Roman Empire stopped by a great battle in France. Hundreds of thousands die in battle.	
476 AD	Western Roman Empire falls. Germanic peoples invade the Roman Empire's lands in Europe during the late 400s, including the Anglo-Saxon invasion of Britain. The Eastern Roman Empire lasts nearly continually for the next 1000 years, with Constantinople (earlier named Byzantium and later Istanbul) as its capital city. Europe, however, fell into its Dark Ages. Ancient Greek texts were burned as pagan, including Hippocrates' works. The Roman Catholic Church largely took over medicine, and Galen's work became dogmatized by the Church. That situation would dominate Western medicine for more than 1000 years. By this time, whales are extinct in the Mediterranean.	
c. 500	Polynesian explorers discover Easter Island, and soon colonize it.	

541	First recorded instance of bubonic plague, beginning in Egypt and racing to Constantinople, where it killed off as many as 10,000 people per day and 40% of the population. Epidemic diseases would periodically sweep Europe and Asia, with cities such as Rome suffering greatly.	
562	32-year drought begins to afflict the Moche culture in South America. El Niño cycles regularly affect South American civilization , and elaborate food production and storage systems are designed to cope with them, as well as other environmental challenges. That region's people become the world's greatest agricultural experimenters.	250 million
c. 570	Muhammad born, founder of Islam.	
632	Muhammad dies, after an amazing life that founds one of the world's great religions. Islam sweeps throughout the Arab world, spreading widely.	
c. 650	Mesoamerican empire centered in city of Teotihuacan begins its collapse, to be replaced in power by the militaristic Toltecs, similar to the way empires rose and fell in the Fertile Crescent.	
711	Islamic armies invade the Iberian Peninsula. Jews live under Moorish rule in Iberia , and it is their golden age in Europe, lasting for 300 years. Learning was an Islamic ideal, and Islamic scholars kept the teachings of the ancient Greeks alive in the West. Influential doctors such as Abu'l Qasim (936-1013) and Maimonides (1135-1204) came from Moorish Iberia. China is undergoing urbanization and population explosion.	
C. 800	Mayan civilization begins its collapse. It attained a peak population of several million, before its overtaxed environment failed to support the population. Famine, war and disease accompanied the collapse of the Mayan population to perhaps a million before 1000 AD, similar to Fertile Crescent dynamics. The forest recovers and covers the Mayan ruins. Charlemagne tries to create a new Western Roman Empire, with a unity of church and state. The Holy Roman Empire lasted until Napoleon. Vikings begin raiding the British Isles, and some settle in France and become the Normans. Others go inland and become the Russians.	

c. 900	Brown bear nearing extinction in the British Isles.	
c. 1000	Polynesian explorers discover New Zealand. Invaders, probably from Tahiti, come to the Hawaiian islands and conquer the inhabitants, setting themselves up as the ruling class, and a slave class was created. Leif Ericson extends Viking colonization past Greenland settlements to North America, probably in today's Newfoundland. They may have driven Irish monks from Iceland before them to North America. The Vikings' violent ways quickly create resistance from the local Algonquin people, and their colonization is not permanent. In Iceland, the Vikings are unable to easily plunder neighboring lands and quickly become a peaceful people, engaging in trade.	
1012	Jews expelled from the Rhineland , in one of Europe's earliest expulsions of Jews.	
1036	Umayyad dynasty ends in Moorish Iberia, and fractures into mutually hostile, petty kingdoms.	
c. 1050	Northern and central Europe, especially the Germanic lands, engage in great age of deforestation , making way for civilization, clearing about a third of the forest in a couple of centuries, and up to 75% deforestation by the end of the medieval era. This is the beginning of the High Middle Ages. In 1900, about 25% of the forest remains.	
1056	Ferdinand I, who proclaimed himself the Emperor of Spain, undertakes "Reconquest" of the Iberian peninsula.	
1066	William the Conqueror leads the Norman invasion of Britain. Islamic preachers incite anti-Jew riot in Granada , which kills about 5000 Jews.	
1085	Christian conquest of Toledo , which introduces European scholars to the ancient Greek writings via Islam. The introduction of the Greek writings leads to humanism, the Renaissance and Protestant Revolution.	

1096	Christian Europe makes its first united act: the first Crusade to Palestine . The first wide-scaled Jew slaughters in Europe take place as a warm-up for the first Crusade, in France and Germany. Jews would no longer be safe in Europe, and warfare would be the European way of life until World War II ended.	
1144	In England, the rumor begins that Jews murder babies in their religious rites , which is Europe's first such rumor.	
1145	Bernard of Clairvaux (Saint Bernard), who may have established the Order of the Knights Templar, visits southern France, Europe's most cosmopolitan region. He finds it ripe for heretical sects to flourish, and his Cistercian monks begin to try countering the nascent Cathar influence in the region. Their efforts are ineffectual.	
1158	Munich founded.	
1163	Notre Dame cathedral in Paris begins construction.	
c. 1170	Mesoamerican Toltec city of Tula is destroyed, probably due to major drought and population migrations that led to war.	
1175	Peter Waldo tries reforming Catholic Church corruption, and eventually forms the Waldensian sect.	
1182	Jews expelled from France .	
1184	Peter Waldo is excommunicated from the Church and a papal bull orders bishops to "direct inquisitions" on heresy.	
1195	Council of Evreux tries stemming Catholic Church corruption, such as bishops selling relics.	
c. 1200	Polynesian people begin colonizing New Zealand. The Islamic culture attains the world's highest standard of living. Incan people conquer the land around Lake Titicaca, the first step in their empire building. Human hunters render large mammals on Madagascar extinct.	

1204	Fourth Crusade ends up sacking its “ally” Constantinople. Pope Innocent III tries getting the Cistercian order to preach against the Cathars , an attempt that fails.	
1209	After a decade of attempting to curb the Church’s corruption, and after gentle methods to try bringing the Languedoc region back to the Church’s fold, Pope Innocent III calls for a Crusade on France to eliminate Catharism . The resulting Albigensian Crusade kills about one million people. Innocent also authorizes the formation of the Franciscan sect , which copies Cathar austerity.	
1212	In a great battle near Toledo, Christian armies defeat the Islamic forces in the decisive conflict of the “Reconquest” of the Iberian Peninsula.	
1214	The Dominican order is founded, which also copies Cathar austerity.	
1215	Magna Carta sealed by England’s King John I. Pope Innocent III convenes the Fourth Lateran Council .	
1221	Genghis Khan’s Mongol armies conquer Islamic armies in Indus valley. Islamic peoples are devastated by the Mongol invasion, and Islam begins its decline as a social force.	
1244	Massacre at Montségur, the last stronghold of the Cathars . The Catholic Church eliminates the greatest threat to its religious monopoly, until Martin Luther posts his Ninety-Five Theses in 1517.	360 million
1254	Jews expelled from France .	
1257	Coal smoke from local fires drives Queen Eleanor from Nottingham Castle.	
1258	Mongol armies raze Baghdad while slaughtering at least a million people. Islam is devastated.	
1264	Iceland accedes to Norwegian rule and begins its decline, their fortunes turning worse when Denmark takes over in 1380, and Iceland eventually becomes a captive nation.	

1274	Dominican monk Thomas Aquinas dies. He tried reconciling Christian theology with other systems of thought, most notably Aristotle's.	
1290	Jews expelled from England .	
1295	Marco Polo returns to Venice from many years in the court of Kublai Khan in China. His account deeply influences European merchants.	
1307	Royal edict issued in London, banning coal fires . The edict is ignored.	
1314	Europe is gripped by major famine that lasts until 1317.	
1315	Dante Alighieri finishes his <i>Divine Comedy</i> .	
c. 1325	Immigrants to Valley of Mexico settle in marsh in the valley's lake, the only land available to them. They are known as the Mexica, and eventually form the Aztec Empire.	
1326	Ottoman Empire is born, as the Turks attack the Eastern Roman Empire.	
1337	England and France begin the 100 Years War. Originally invented in China several centuries earlier, but used for fireworks, gunpowder for weaponry begins to be manufactured in England and Germany at about this time. English Parliament restricts fur wearing to royalty, as fur-bearing animal populations collapsed.	
1344	The Pope "awards" the Canary Islands to Castile.	
1346	The Black Death probably originated in China. In 1347 it swept across Asia to Europe. The death toll for Europe and Asia was about 50 million people by 1351, wiping out one quarter to one-third of Europe's population, and periodically recurring for the next three centuries. Epidemiology being what it was in those days, Jews were accused throughout Europe of causing the plague, and 50,000 Jews were consequently killed. War and death imagery would become prevalent in European art.	Europe's population declines from about 75 million to 50 million. It would not regain 1345 levels until the 16 th century.

1378	Contested election of Pope Urban VI leads to the Great Schism, an embarrassment that would last half a century, climaxing with the spectacle of three men claiming to be Pope at the same time.	
c. 1385	Turkish ruler Tamerlane's armies catapult smallpox victims into cities they are besieging, in perhaps history's first instance of biological warfare.	
1391	Anti-Semitic furor leads to Jew slaughters in Seville , and Jews began accepting conversion to Christianity to survive.	
Late 1300s	Beginning in northern Italy's city-states, a multifaceted phenomenon begins which is now called the Renaissance. Humanism takes root, which eventually undermines the Catholic Church's influence.	
1399	The Black Death makes a final visit to Europe, and then disappears for many years.	
1400	After a century of unrelenting epidemics, warfare and calamity, Europe's population is two-thirds-to-half of what it had been in 1300.	400 million.
1405	Ming Dynasty begins mounting great naval expeditions along southern Asia, which reach Africa. They <i>do not</i> plunder the people or lands they sail to. The last expedition is in 1433.	
1410	Christian Reconquest of the Iberian Peninsula reenergized with attack on Granada.	
1415	Portuguese defeat Moors at Ceuta in North Africa . Prince Henry subsequently encourages and helps fund the study of maritime science. Henry's motivation is outflanking Islamic rivals in the gold trade.	
1418	Portugal begins colonizing the Madeira Islands , the Azores in 1439 (discovered in 1427) and the Cape Verde Islands in 1456. The prominent cash crop is sugar, which played to the biological predisposition of humans to sweet food, reflecting the distant ape past in Africa , when fruit comprised most of the diet. Settlers to Madeiran island of Santo Porto introduce two rabbits, and soon they rapidly reproduce and denude the entire island.	

1421	Jews expelled from Vienna , in one of many European expulsions during the 15 th century.	
1428	Itzcoatl leads Mexica to military victory and Aztec Empire begins.	
c. 1430	"Little Ice Age" begins, and runs for four centuries, until about 1850.	
1431	Joan of Arc burned at the stake.	
1444	Portugal enters the African slave trade.	
c. 1450	Gutenberg invents printing press in the German city of Mainz.	
1453	Ottoman armies capture Constantinople, which terminates the Eastern Roman Empire, controls Europe's trade route to the Orient, and inspires effort to find another European route.	
1455	The Wars of the Roses, which are several dynastic civil wars that last until 1485, begin in England.	
1456	Walruses could still be found on the Thames River.	
1469	Isabella I of Castile marries Ferdinand V of Aragon.	
c. 1470	Incas conquer the imperial city of Chan Chan and the Chimoran people, completing their imperial consolidation.	
1474	Paolo Toscanelli of Florence suggests to Prince Alfonso V of Portugal that the quickest way to the Indies (spice trade) is sailing across the Atlantic. Toscanelli was wrong. Christopher Columbus eventually obtains the letter from Toscanelli that makes the suggestion. Castile and Aragon formerly united under Isabella and Ferdinand.	

1479	Portugal cedes Canary Islands to Castile, and Queen Isabella I mounts their invasion. The Canary Islands were inhabited by the Guanche, who settled the islands in antiquity, building step pyramids and making mummies, much as the Egyptians did. The conquest of the Guanches was complete in 1496 , and the Guanches became an extinct culture by 1600.	
1480	Isabella I initiates the Spanish Inquisition , which is largely concerned with hunting down Moors and Jews who were forced to convert to Christianity, but may still practice their erstwhile faith in secret.	
1486	Last wolf sighted in England.	
1488	Portuguese explorer Bartolomeu Dias rounds the southern tip of Africa, and Portugal abandons the idea of reaching Asia by crossing the Atlantic Ocean. Columbus, who made a living in the Portuguese slave trade, takes his plan to sail across the Atlantic Ocean to Castile, which the experts thought was an impossible plan because the distance to Asia would be too great. Columbus had badly miscalculated the earth's circumference. His early attempts to convince the Castilian court fail.	

Timeline from 1492 Onward

1492	The Spanish "Reconquest" of the Iberian peninsula ends in January with the conquest of Granada, the last city held by the Moors. Jews are given the options of conversion, expulsion or death. In April, Columbus finally gets authorization for his doomed plan to reach Asia via the Atlantic Ocean. He stumbles into the New World in October, enslaving the first humans he meets. He builds a fort on Española from the wreckage of his flagship. By this time, the Bay of Biscay has been " whaled out ."	World population: 470 million, at least half in East Asia and India. Population in the Americas: 50 to 100 million (this site uses 80). Europe's population: 70 to 80 million. Taino population: 2 to 10 million. At least one million on Española (this site uses 2)

1493	Columbus is named Admiral of the Ocean Sea and returns to Española to mount a large-scale invasion . The Incan Empire is at its peak in South America.	
1494	Treaty of Tordesillas delineates the eventual New World domains of Portugal and Spain.	
1496	The genocide of the Taino is well underway on Española. Selling the Taino in the European slave markets does not work, because they quickly die upon being shipped to Europe, and the Spanish sovereigns officially frown upon the idea when it proves unprofitable. Columbus devises a tribute system to force the Taino into mining gold.	
1497	Vasco da Gama sails from Portugal to India around Africa; Arab traders cure his crew of scurvy in 1498 , and he returns in 1499 with trade specimens, including valuable spices.	
1499	First major gold strike on Española.	
1502	Montezuma II crowned, the last pre-invasion Aztec emperor.	
1504	Michelangelo finishes sculpting his <i>David</i> statue.	
1506	Leonardo da Vinci finishes his <i>Mona Lisa</i> . Columbus dies a rich man in bed in Spain, although he is an obscure figure.	
1509	Henry VIII ascends throne of England.	
1510	Portuguese ships conquer the Muslim port of Goa in India, beginning the era of Portuguese dominance along southern Asia. Portugal makes its first official sale of African slaves in the New World .	
1511	Portuguese traders capture Malacca, in today's Malaysia, establishing themselves in the spice trade .	
1512	Michelangelo finishes painting the Sistine Chapel's ceiling.	

1513	Vasco Núñez de Balboa “discovers” the Pacific Ocean in present-day Panama, and claims it in the name of the Spanish crown. Juan Ponce de León hunts for slaves for Caribbean gold mines and “discovers” Florida. Natives likely already knew of white men, as they battle and drive off the Spaniards. Niccolò Machiavelli writes <i>The Prince</i> , which foreshadows future European political practice.	
1516	Hieronymous Bosch dies, leaving behind a surreal body of work that will later influence Salvador Dali, among others.	
1517	Martin Luther publishes his Ninety-Five Theses, which begins the Protestant Reformation.	
1518	First New World smallpox epidemic begins, wiping out most of the surviving Taino on Española, who were already only about 1% of their 1492 population.	
1519	Hernan Cortés and his men kidnap Aztec Emperor Montezuma and loot all the gold they can get. As Columbus did, Ferdinand Magellan seeks route across Atlantic to the Asian spice trade. He dies in 1521, battling the natives in the Philippines, but his mission circumnavigates the planet in 1522. Charles of Spain bribes his way into becoming the Holy Roman Emperor.	
1520	Smallpox epidemic that began on Española in 1518 comes across with the Cuban governor’s army, probably killing several million people in Mesoamerica.	
1521	The Cortés-led siege of Tenochtitlán completely destroys what is probably the world’s most spectacular city. Ponce de León invades Florida again, and dies from battle wounds. Diet of Worms, where Martin Luther is asked to recant his criticisms of the Catholic Church. He refuses, and is declared an outlaw.	
1524	Giovanni Verrazano , an Italian explorer in the employ of France, sails along the coast of North America.	
1525	European epidemic sweeps through Incan Empire, kills emperor and ignites civil war.	

1528	Pánfilo de Narváez ' <i>entrada</i> into Florida ends in disaster.	
1529	Ottoman armies lay siege to Vienna , but fail, in the greatest advance into Europe it would make.	
1530	The Portuguese begin their colonization of Brazil .	
1532	Francisco Pizarro invades Incan Empire , kidnaps Incan emperor and sacks empire. Anne Boleyn, Henry VIII's second wife, gives birth to Elizabeth.	
1535	Native American medicine man cures Jacques Cartier's crew of scurvy on Saint Lawrence River with evergreen foliage and tree bark tea, which was high in vitamin C. Henry VIII's England begins confiscating Roman Catholic properties.	
1536	The world's first life insurance policy is written.	
1537	Ambroise Paré accidentally ends the practice of pouring boiling oil on battlefield wounds and initiates more gentle treatment.	
1539	Hernando de Soto invades southeastern North America, seeking gold.	
1540	Francisco Vázquez de Coronado invades southwestern North America, seeking gold.	
1542	Juan Rodríguez Cabrillo "discovers" the Californian coast. Hernando de Soto dies on banks of Mississippi River after his fruitless gold quest devastates southeastern North America . Spanish expedition asserts Spain's claims to the Philippines . Efforts of Bartolomé de Las Casas persuade emperor Charles V to sign laws repealing native slavery .	

1543	Nicolas Copernicus ' posthumously published work theorizes that the earth orbits the sun, re-establishing what Pythagoras thought more than 2000 years earlier. Considered the first work of the scientific revolution. Andreas Vesalius ' <i>De Humani Corporis Fabrica</i> is considered the first work of modern scientific medicine. It challenges a thousand years of dogma based on Galen's work. The Catholic Church increases its efforts to ban books. Portugal begins trading with Japan .	Taino population on Española: 200
1545	The great silver mine at Potosí (in modern-day Bolivia) is established.	
1549	A Portuguese expedition establishes a large colonial presence in Brazil.	
c. 1550	Easter Island reaches its peak population, of about 7000 people. Clans compete in making stone idols, and the island is quickly deforested by idol-transporting activities, leading to environmental and population collapse by about 1600. The English deforestation of Ireland is underway. Neither Ireland nor Easter Island has recovered its forests.	
1552	Las Casas publishes his A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies , which quickly becomes a bestseller, especially in Protestant Europe, and the "Black Legend" begins.	
1553	Michael Servetus publishes an accurate description of pulmonary circulation. Escapes Spanish Inquisition to only be burned at the stake in Calvin's Geneva for his heresies.	
1556	Portuguese establish port of Macau on Chinese coast.	
1557	Spanish crown goes bankrupt , the first of several bankruptcies that would chart Spain's decline as an imperial power.	
1558	Elizabeth I becomes England's first ruling queen.	

1559	Catholic Church publishes its index of banned books. Index survives until the 1960s. Tristán de Luna expedition goes where de Soto's went, hoping to find rich lands to plunder as de Soto did, and finds the region depopulated from aftermath of de Soto expedition. Portuguese Crown gives official approval to begin shipping African slaves to Brazil .	
1562	Wars of Religion begin in France, a series of nine conflicts that last until 1598.	
1564	Spain begins conquest of the Philippines , and establishes Manila in 1572.	
1565	Saint Augustine , in today's Florida, is established, originally a fort to protect Spain's plunder route from pirates. It is the first permanent European settlement in North America.	
1566	Ottoman sultan Suleiman dies, and the Ottoman Empire begins its long decline.	
1568	Oppressive Spanish rule leads to Dutch revolt, which lasts until 1648. Spanish "discovery" of the Solomon Islands .	
c. 1570	Hiawatha and Deganawidah form the Great Law of Peace and the Iroquois Confederation, which influences the creation of the U.S. Constitution . It might have been formed as early as 1200 AD, however.	
1576	Martin Frobisher seeks gold near Baffin Island. He ravages natives and hauls back hundreds of tons of fool's gold to England on the next voyage. Last wolf sighted in Wales.	
1577	Francis Drake mounts pirate expedition to plunder the Pacific ports of Spain's empire. His successful voyage circumnavigates the world, returning home in 1580, and got him knighted as well as made him England's richest private citizen.	
1580	Spain annexes Portugal , and remains in control of it for sixty years. Castile is no longer able to produce enough food to feed its population.	

1582	Russia invades Siberia in pursuit of fur trade.	
1585	Walter Raleigh establishes the ill-fated Roanoke colony.	
1586	Spain goes to war with England, to try ending the Dutch revolt.	
1588	Spanish Armada is destroyed in battle with English navy. The defeat marks the end of Spain's imperial dominance.	
1593	South Pacific islanders cure Richard Hawkins' crew of scurvy with citrus fruit.	
1595	Walter Raleigh seeks golden city of El Dorado in South America.	
1596	Spitsbergen whaling grounds opened. Bubonic plague visits Spain, carrying off 10% of its population during the next several years.	
1598	The year its Wars of Religion finally conclude, the French try to establish a colony on uninhabited Sable Island off of Nova Scotia, in a rich fishing area, and with no interference from natives or European rivals, the colony completely fails.	
1599	Spanish forces slaughter hundreds of Pueblo Indians at Acoma, in present day New Mexico, in revenge for the killing of eleven Spanish soldiers who had been plundering and raping the natives at will. Spain ends the 16th century probably worse off than it began it.	Native population of the Americas: 8 million
1600	Giordano Bruno burned at the stake for his heresies, notably for stating that the earth orbits the sun. The English East India Company is incorporated. The Dutch begin sailing to Asia for spices, and establish their own East India company in 1602.	
c. 1601	William Shakespeare writes <i>Hamlet</i> .	
1603	Elizabethan Era ends with the death of Elizabeth I of England. England completes its conquest and subjugation of Ireland.	

1604	King James I publishes A Counter-Blaste to Tobacco , and tours England to warn of its dangers. English war with Spain ends, and Spain never again rises to its former imperial dominance.	
1605	Squanto , of Puritan fame, first kidnapped by the English.	
1607	Jamestown established . The first task is finding gold.	
1609	With their French allies using guns, Huron warriors surprise a war party of their Mohawk rivals, with deadly effectiveness. On behalf of the Dutch, Henry Hudson, while searching for the Northwest Passage, explores the river that is named for him, in present-day New York.	
1610	Galileo Galilee publishes his discovery of Jupiter's moons, using the newly invented telescope.	
1614	Squanto is captured by John Smith's men.	
1615	Jews are legally allowed to live in the Netherlands , for their only haven in Western Europe.	
1618	The Thirty Years' War , Europe's last great religious war, begins. About 4 million people die in the conflict.	
1619	Squanto returns as interpreter with English, and discovers that his entire tribe had been wiped out by European disease. The Puritans would settle on that tribe's land. The Dutch establish Jakarta , which becomes the center of the Asian spice trade.	
1620	The Pilgrims land at Plymouth , and Squanto teaches them how to survive in the New World. Squanto dies in 1622 of disease.	
1626	The Dutch "buy" Manhattan Island from the natives.	
1627	Last wild European bison dies	

1628	William Harvey publishes his research on function of human heart. Dutch ships seize entire Spanish silver fleet off of Cuba.	
1637	The English surround Pequot village of several hundred people on the Mystic River at night, then burn it to the ground while killing nearly every inhabitant, selling the few survivors into slavery.	
1638	Three million pounds of tobacco per year are exported from present-day Virginia, reaching 17 million in 1672. Caribbean sugar growing becomes a business on Barbados, and the great period of New World sugar growing begins. New Sweden established in present-day Delaware.	
1639	Japan kicks out Portuguese traders , and thereafter trades exclusively with the Dutch. Dutch fleet defeats Spanish fleet in the English Channel.	
1640	Fur trade renders the beaver extinct in the Hudson River Valley. English Civil War, also called the Puritan Revolution, begins. It is the last significant religious conflict in Europe.	
1641	The Dutch governor of Manhattan offers the first scalp bounty.	
1643	Spanish army destroyed by French army at Rocroi.	
1644	John Underhill successfully reproduces his strategy of strategy of surrounding Native American villages at night and annihilating all of its inhabitants. That time, he did it under hire to the Dutch, and the Manhattan church fathers declared the second Thanksgiving to celebrate the feat.	
1646	Pamunkey tribe (natives who initially fed the Jamestown invaders) is completely destroyed, and survivors sold into Caribbean slavery.	
1649	Only forty years after receiving military assistance from the French, the Huron tribe becomes extinct . King Charles I of England is publicly tried and beheaded.	

1652	English and Dutch navies begin a series of wars that last until 1684.	
1661	Coal smoke in London creates the greatest lung hazard on earth .	
1664	The Dutch lose their North American possessions to the English.	
1668	Antoni van Leeuwenhoek invents the microscope.	
1670	Charleston founded , which becomes the center of the early English-American slave trade.	
1672	Nantucket becomes heart of American whaling industry.	
1675	The French East India Company establishes its first outpost in Bombay .	
1676	King Phillip's War results in the extinction of the tribe that welcomed the Puritans.	
1680	The Pueblo Indians revolt against brutal Spanish rule, and kick them out of today's New Mexico. The Spaniards begin their reconquest of them two years later. The revolt leads to horses becoming part of Native American life, especially benefiting the Plains Indians.	
1682	Frenchman La Salle explores Mississippi river , finds it deserted, depopulated by disease left by de Soto's expedition and other European-introduced epidemics.	
1687	Isaac Newton's <i>Principia</i> is published.	
1688	England has its Glorious Revolution, which limits the power of English sovereigns and empowers its Parliament.	

1689	King William's War begins, between France and England, largely over dominance in North America, and it involves the native tribes. The English Bill of Rights is passed by Parliament, and the Toleration Act, which promotes religious toleration. Those laws become the model for the U.S. Bill of Rights.	
1692	Twenty people executed in Salem , Massachusetts, for practicing witchcraft.	
1700		600 million
1702	Queen Anne's War begins between the French and English in North America. It was known in Europe as the War of Spanish Succession.	
1707	England unites with Scotland, becoming Great Britain.	
1709	Englishman Abraham Darby advances brass-making science, and invents coke smelting in this year, producing iron with it. It initiates increased demand for coal and metallurgical advances.	
1712	Thomas Newcomen invents steam engine for pumping water.	
1717	Voltaire spends his first stint in the Bastille, for his satirical writings. His work would come to embody the ideals of the Enlightenment.	
1739	Spain tries halting trade between England and its American colonies, and the conflict is called the War of Jenkins' Ear, and becomes part of the War of the Austrian Succession, which begins in 1740.	
1743	Last wolf sighted in Scotland.	
1744	King George's War begins, which is waged in North America, but is also part of a larger war, the War of the Austrian Succession.	
1750	The Enlightenment becomes prominent in France at about this time. Johann Bach dies. China and India comprise 57% of world industrial output.	

1754	James Lind's experiments aboard HMS Salisbury prove that citrus fruit cures scurvy . French and Indian War begins in North America, which was the last war of dominance between England and France in North America. Benjamin Franklin, influenced by the Iroquoian model of government, introduces his Albany Plan of Union , which sought to unite the colonies. The plan becomes the first step toward creating the U.S. Constitution.	
1756	The Seven Years' War breaks out in Europe between the imperial powers, England and France most notably. The Third Carnatic War in India between France and England breaks out at this time.	
1763	Lord Jeffrey Amherst suggests deliberately introducing smallpox amongst the Native Americans who resisted the English invasion. The subsequent epidemic kills more than 100,000 natives. The French and Indian War ends in North America, with the English prevailing. The Third Carnatic War in India ends, with the English victorious over the French. The English announce the Royal Proclamation of 1763 , which forbids the American colonists to settle west of the Appalachians.	
1764	Battle of Buxar establishes British rule over Bengal. The British rape of India begins.	
1768	James Cook visits Australia, names it New South Wales, and targets it for British colonization.	
1769	James Cook visits New Zealand and claims it in the name of Great Britain. The Maoris had eliminated about a third of New Zealand's forests by that time, and large animals, such as the Moa, were about extinct. In the first century of the European invasion, more than 75% of the Maori population dies off. Similar population collapse accompanies the Europeans wherever they appear in the South pacific. Junípero Serra establishes first mission at San Diego. James Watt patents the modern steam engine, and the Industrial Revolution begins. Daniel Boone begins the illegal invasion of Kentucky.	800 million worldwide

1770	British exploitation of Bengal leads to a great famine that killed one-third of Bengal's peasantry. Famines always greatly increased wherever Europe had colonial dominance.	
1773	James Cook makes the first visit to Antarctic icepack and surmises that it had to be formed in connection with a landmass. Boston Tea Party helps lead to the American Revolution. The King of Sweden allows Jews to migrate there .	
1776	The American Revolution begins. Adam Smith publishes his <i>Wealth of Nations</i> .	
1778	James Cook "discovers" the Hawaiian Islands, with the world's human-friendliest climate. His crew's venereal disease rapidly spreads through the islands, quickly depopulating Hawaii. The Hawaiian Islands' population possibly approaches one million inhabitants. Within 100 years, fewer than 50,000 Hawaiians were alive.	
1782	Kamehameha begins conquering the Hawaiian islands, using Western arms and waging bloody battles. It takes 13 years to complete his empire building. George Washington proposes a plan to the Continental Congress to swindle the Native Americans out of their land. His plan becomes national policy for the next century. Padre Serra establishes his last mission, San Buenaventura, today called Ventura . The Austrian emperor issues an edict of toleration toward Jews .	
1786	Because of the American Revolution, England can no longer ship its criminals to North American penal colonies. Australia is picked as the next English penal colony. The population of the aborigines in southeastern region of Australia (site of the penal colony) declines by about 95% in 60 years. Shays' Rebellion begins in the United States.	
1788	Britain claims Tasmania , and within 50 years, none of the 5000 aboriginal inhabitants remain on the island. Only 43 survived in 1843, and the last Tasmanian aborigine died in 1876.	

1789	French Revolution begins. George Washington becomes the first U.S. president. The U.S. Bill of Rights is passed, 100 years after the English Bill of Rights.	
1791	Inspired by the American and French revolutions, Haitian slaves lead a successful revolution against the French colonial masters. The U.S., with its millions of slaves, would not officially recognize Haiti until the American Civil War. Wolfgang Mozart dies, which marks the beginning of the end of the classical era of music. The U.S. Army suffers its greatest proportional defeat ever, at the hands of Native Americans, as it invades the Ohio River Valley .	
1793	Benjamin Rush begins era of “heroic” medicine in U. S. during yellow-fever epidemic.	
1794	Antoine Laurent Lavoisier is beheaded in France. His work with oxygen, combustion and respiration founds modern chemistry. Whiskey Rebellion over American taxation begins. The Battle of Fallen Timbers completes the U.S. theft of the upper Ohio River Valley.	
1795	260 years after Jacques Cartier’s crew is cured of scurvy , and more than one million preventable deaths later, the British navy begins issuing citrus juice to its sailors.	
1796	Samuel Hahnemann first uses the term homeopathy to describe a new system of medicine that he was developing. Edward Jenner performs his first smallpox inoculation.	
1798	U.S. Congress passes the Alien Act and the Sedition Act . The Sedition Act makes it a crime to criticize American government officials. The Alien Act authorizes summary deportations of “aliens.” It is specifically intended to rid the nation of people with revolutionary ideas, such as French and Irish immigrants.	

1799	Napoleon leads overthrow of French government. He begins war with neighbors in 1803 and crowns himself Emperor in 1804. Benjamin Thompson and Humphry Davy's work demonstrates that heat transfer is an exchange of energy, eventually killing the phlogiston theory.	
1800	Woodland bison is rendered extinct in Eastern North America. Fur industry in Siberia collapses from centuries of trapping. Sea otter population of northern Pacific also collapses due to Russian over-hunting.	
1802	French invasion to try reconquering Haiti fails.	
1803	The United States consummates Louisiana Purchase from France. Lewis and Clark expedition sets out to reconnoiter the new territory. The expedition initiates the short-lived exploitation of the fur trade 's last frontier.	
1804	First locomotive built in England by Richard Trevithick. Haiti declares itself independent, for the world's only successful slave rebellion.	
1807	Robert Fulton 's steamboat <i>Clermont</i> makes its famous voyage from New York to Albany up the Hudson River. Spain supports Napoleon in war against Portugal, which ignites the Peninsular War, which lasts until 1814.	
1808	In reaction to Napoleon crowning his brother as the King of Spain, Venezuelan colonists form self-government, and send Simón Bolívar to England as its emissary, to try gaining recognition.	
1811	Venezuela is first Spanish colony to declare its independence , a revolution that fails the next year.	
1812	Napoleon begins his disastrous invasion of Russia. War of 1812 begins.	
1814	British troops burn Washington DC. First self-contained cotton mill is built, in Waltham, Massachusetts. Napoleon's reign ends, as all of Europe unites against France.	

1815	Battle of Waterloo ends Napoleon's bid for a comeback to power, a year after he was finally defeated. The Congress of Vienna is convened by the European powers, to reestablish lines of political demarcation.	
1819	After years of battles and exile, Simón Bolívar and his troops overthrow the Spanish Crown in 1819 in New Granada, now called Colombia. It is the first successful Latin American revolution, with Bolívar becoming Colombia's first president. Bolívar seeks to unite South America on the model of North America's United States, a plan that fails.	
1822	Americans establish colony to ship slaves back to Africa . In 1847 the colony became Liberia. Brazil achieves its independence peacefully .	
1823	The Monroe Doctrine is formulated.	
1824	Sadi Carnot publishes treatise that becomes the basis for the second law of thermodynamics.	
1825	The most abundant metal in the earth's crust, aluminum , is first isolated.	Humanity passes 1 billion
1826	After decades of bitter fighting, Maryland passes its "Jew Bill," giving Jews the right to vote.	
1830	Belgium emancipates its Jews , leading to emancipation movements throughout Europe.	
1835	Charles Cagniard-Latour works with yeast , and theorizes that it is alive. Theodor Schwann , the father of histology, confirms Cagniard-Latour's work at about the same time and takes it further. Using Western arms, Maori warriors of New Zealand brutally invade and conquer the Moriori people of the Chatham Islands. By this time, the beaver pelt trade has collapsed in western North America, after only 30 years of exploitation.	
1836	American settlers complete theft of Texas from Mexico .	

1838	Cherokee and other “civilized” tribes are forced into migrating to Oklahoma, even after the Cherokee prevailed in the U.S. Supreme Court. The genocidal relocation becomes known as the Trail of Tears .	
1839	Three million Americans use Samuel Thomson’s brand of medicine. Britain begins exploitation of China with first Opium War, and forces opium addiction on China by also forcing the Bengal region into opium production. Prickly pear cactus introduced to Australia, and by 1925 it dominated 30 million acres, pushing out all other plants.	
1841	Britain captures Hong Kong.	
1843	Charles Dickens publishes <i>A Christmas Carol</i> .	
1844	American Institute of Homeopathy founded . Anesthetic properties of nitrous oxide first used by American dentist Horace Wells . European “hunters” render the great auk , which once lived in great numbers on the islands of the North Atlantic Ocean, extinct.	
1845	American Medical Association (AMA) founded . Irish potato famine begins.	
1846	America wages war on Mexico to steal what becomes the Southwestern United States. American whalers show up off California coast, hunting the gray whale and seals.	
1847	Ignaz Semmelweis invents Western medicine’s first sterile practices, used in maternity wards. Peak year of American whaling.	
1848	Louis Pasteur discovers molecular chirality , beginning his career. U.S. finishes stealing most of southwestern United States from Mexico. Gold discovered at Sutter’s Mill in California . Revolution sweeps Europe. Karl Marx presents his <i>Communist Manifesto</i> .	
1850	California admitted to the union, and its first governor declares open season on the natives .	

1851	Herman Melville publishes <i>Moby Dick</i> .	
1853	Diplomatic invasion of Japan by the American Commodore Perry forces Japan into the world economy. Expanding rail system allows mass “hunting” and shipping of passenger pigeons from American Midwest to markets in east. Passenger pigeon population begins collapsing. Seal fur trade collapses in North Atlantic. Crimean War begins, in the first great struggle of the great European powers, a conflict that would eventually lead to the World Wars of the 20 th century. A French diplomat publishes book that marks the rise of anti-Semitism in France .	
1854	Antoine Béchamp begins his Beacon Experiments . German parasitologists have documented parasitic pleomorphic life cycles , ending the spontaneous-generation controversy regarding parasites.	
1858	Rudolf Virchow publishes his <i>Cellular Pathology</i> .	
1859	First American oil well drilled. Charles Darwin publishes his <i>Origin of the Species</i> . Rabbits introduced to Australia, initiating ecological disaster.	
1861	American Civil War begins. Calomel is the standard medicine for the troops. Antiseptic surgery is not yet invented . Pasteur tries taking credit for discovery of Béchamp. Sammelweis publishes his great work on sanitary practices.	
1862	The United States recognizes Haitian independence .	
1863	John Rockefeller enters the oil industry and concentrates on taking over oil refining. American whaling industry is collapsing .	
1864	Pasteur publicly takes credit for overturning spontaneous-generation theory. The germ theory of disease follows from his work. Sand Creek massacre of Black Kettle’s Cheyenne tribe in dawn attack. The AMA steps up its anti-abortion campaign .	

1865	American Civil War ends. Svend Foyn perfects cannon-harpoon, initiating industrial phase of whaling.	
1866	Béchamp calls the sub-cellular life forms that he discovered <i>microzyma</i> .	
1868	George Custer 's troops slaughter Black Kettle's Cheyenne tribe in dawn attack. Revolution in Japan leads to a unified nation, and Japan begins playing catch-up with the West.	
1870	Joseph Lister produces his first report of the success of sterile surgical procedures. Franco-Prussian War begins. It is the last major conflict on European soil until World War I.	
1876	" Custer's luck " runs out at the Little Big Horn. Beginning of proprietary medicine craze in America. El Niño-caused drought that lasts three years, combined with European export crop imperialism, devastates India, China and Brazil , causing as many as 30 million deaths from starvation and disease. Japan forces trade agreement on Korea; similar to what Perry did to Japan in 1853. William W. Keen begins using Joseph Lister's sterile surgical procedures at the St. Mary's Hospital in Philadelphia.	
1878	Yellow-fever epidemic begins in New Orleans. People treated with homeopathy have less than half the death rate of the general population. Congress is impressed. One million American families use homeopathy.	
1879	Thomas Edison perfects light bulb , and science refuses to acknowledge his feat.	
1880	John Rockefeller's empire controls 95% of U.S. oil refining. Pacific whaling industry has largely collapsed , in less than 80 years of Pacific whaling.	
1881	William Halsted begins his surgical career in the United States.	
1882	Jews expelled from Moscow , and Jewish pogroms spread in the Russian Empire.	

1884	New York Cancer Hospital opens . Later named Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center, the world's most influential cancer research organization. Elephant seal extinct on islands off California.	
1885	Belgium begins plundering the Congo .	
1886	In the United States and France, scientists discover how to refine aluminum economically.	
1887	John Rockefeller begins rebuilding a Baptist seminary into the University of Chicago . The Tesla Electric Company files its first patent on alternating current technology, which provides electric power to the world today.	
1890	Massacre at Wounded Knee , ending Native American resistance to U.S. land theft. Extermination of Plains Indian sustenance, the bison, is also complete, as only 23 animals survive in the wild, compared to 40 to 60 million before the white man's invasion. Vincent van Gogh commits suicide.	
1891	Starlings introduced to America, and displace native species in their population explosion. Walrus extinct on Pribilof Islands off Alaska, once known as the Fur Seal Islands.	
1893	Columbian Exhibition in Chicago, celebrating 400 years of European presence in the New World. Largest event attendance in world history to that time.	
1894	Japan wages a war and easily defeats China, supplanting China as the dominator of Korea.	
1896	Emil Grubbé invents X-Ray treatment of cancer. Another El Niño-caused drought , combined with European exploitation, ravages India and China, causing perhaps another 30 million deaths over several years, similar to 1876 event.	
1899	George Simmons hired by the AMA. He soon takes it over. Chinese uprising against foreign occupation becomes the Boxer "Rebellion." It is put down by foreign troops, including American, British, French, Russian, Japanese and German troops.	

1900	After 150 years of European exploitation, beginning in Bengal , China and India produce 8% of world industrial output, versus 57% in 1750. The gray whale is thought to be extinct at this time. Some survived, however, and its population has largely recovered. The right whale was also considered extinct in the Northeast Atlantic. Some survived, however, but its population has not recovered.	
1903	Wright brothers first fly . Science and the media ignore them for five years. U.S. steals Panama from Colombia , creating the divided nation of Panama so it can own the route for its proposed canal.	1.6 billion
1904	The devastation of the world's last unplundered whaling grounds, the Antarctic Ocean , begins.	
1905	Japan beats Russia in war. Albert Einstein publishes his paper on special relativity.	
1906	Mark Twain writes King Leopold's Soliloquy regarding the Belgian rape of the Congo , and the American publishing establishment completely suppresses its publication in the United States.	
1910	Flexner Report is issued, and directs Carnegie and Rockefeller "philanthropic" funding of medical schools.	
1913	Ludlow Massacre committed by Rockefeller strikebreakers. Rockefeller founds American Cancer Society predecessor organization. Morris Fishbein is recruited to the AMA by Simmons. Federal Reserve Act sneaks through U.S. legislature.	
1914	Pasteur Institute confirms bacterial pleomorphism. World War I begins. The last passenger pigeon dies in captivity in Cincinnati. From a population of 5 billion pre-white man birds to extinction in little more than one century, for history's most spectacular extinction episode.	
1915	The United States invades Haiti , overthrowing its government.	

1918	World War I ends. Prescott Bush , father of George Bush the First, allegedly robs the grave of Geronimo , and the remains were put on display at the Skull and Bones Society, an oligarchical secret society at Yale. George the First and Second also belong to the club . The Great Powers of Europe begin carving up the Ottoman Empire into controllable nation-states. Oil politics dominates the affair.	
1924	Divorce scandal forces Simmons to step down at AMA. Fishbein takes over . He tries to buy out Hoxsey's cancer treatment and begins persecuting Dinshah Ghadiali . Hitler writes <i>Mein Kampf</i> .	
1926	Pancho Villa's tomb raided, and his skull allegedly acquired by the Skull and Bones Society at Yale .	
1927	John Rockefeller begins funding the Memorial Hospital, later named Sloan-Kettering . Rockefeller's Empire enters into its first cartel agreement with I.G. Farben .	
1929	American Tobacco Company begins campaign to addict American women to tobacco . Wall Street collapses later that year.	
1930		2.0 billion
1931	The findings of Royal Rife's microscopes begin generating great scientific interest, and Thomas Rivers of the Rockefeller Institute tries discouraging it. Three independent studies conclude that the fluorine ion is responsible for tooth mottling .	
1933	Hitler comes to power. Franklin Roosevelt takes office as president. American industrialists try to mount a Fascist coup of the White House .	
1935	Under Fishbein's guidance, Phillip Morris launches an ad campaign for its cigarettes , making a health claim to do so, quickly becoming the biggest U.S. cigarette seller. <i>JAMA's</i> pages are filled with cigarette ads for a generation. Smedley Butler writes War is a Racket .	

1937	Japan invades China, and the Rape of Nanking is the first major atrocity of what became World War II. Gerald Cox, of the Mellon Institute, begins suggesting that the fluoride ion is good for teeth .	
1939	After hearing of miraculous success with Rife's treatment , Fishbein tries buying into Rife's company. When that fails, the AMA wages lawsuit, destroying Rife's company. Nazi Germany is in midst of anti-smoking campaign led by Hitler , as well as beginning World War II.	
1941	Japan attacks Pearl Harbor , and U.S. enters World War II. Hitler's Final Solution is underway.	
1942	The FDA has Dr. William Koch thrown into jail. The tide of World War II turns with the Nazi disaster at Stalingrad late in the year. Father of George Bush the First is director and shareholder of company that U.S. government seizes because it helped arm and finance Nazi Germany. The Rockefeller Empire, which also helped Nazi Germany , escapes that fate.	
1943	George Orwell writes Animal Farm and has trouble finding British publisher, and a censored version of book is eventually published. The censorship still exists.	
1944	Manhattan Project has huge fluorine accident , which the government covers up. Harold Hodge of the Manhattan Project helps with the accident cover-up, and soon begins promoting the health benefits of fluoride.	
1945	Third Reich ends, as well as greatest war in human history, ending with two nuclear bombs being dropped onto civilian population centers . After only 30 years of exploitation, the sardine industry in California collapses due to overfishing.	
1946	Dr. Max Gerson presents recovered cancer patients using his treatment to a U.S. Senate committee. Anti-Jewish sentiment in the United States reaches its all-time high.	

1947	The term “flying saucer” is coined by UFO sighting by pilot near Mount Rainier, and the Roswell Incident happens soon after. The CIA and NSA are formed. The United Nations proposes the establishment of Israel. U.S. engages in first major manipulations of post-war era, as it overthrows popular communist movements in Greece and Italy. Oscar Ewing, lead counsel for ALCOA, the world’s largest fluoride polluter, heads government effort to fluoridate America’s water supplies.	
1948	Israel established, and Jewish oppression of Palestinian people begins. Bell Labs invents the transistor.	
1949	George Orwell’s 1984 published. In the wake of Harry Hoxsey’s victory in court, Morris Fishbein is dumped from the AMA, ending his 25-year reign. Fishbein goes to work for cigarette-maker Lorillard.	
1950	Immediately after Fishbein’s fall, JAMA publishes its first report on the link between smoking and cancer. ALCOA is selling its sodium fluoride refining waste to municipal water districts in the most profitable hazardous waste disposal program in history. U.S. invasion of Korea begins.	
1952	Lorillard begins an ad blitz promoting its asbestos cigarette filter, using research that their highly-paid consultant Fishbein helped design. The CIA recruits Ralph McGehee into its ranks; as an All-American football player, he is one of the CIA’s more treasured recruits.	
1953	Fitzgerald Committee finds that organized medicine wiped out a dozen alternative cancer treatments, including Krebiozen and Hoxsey’s treatment. U.S. prevents nationalization of British oil monopoly in Iran by overthrowing the government, installing the Shah and one of the 20th century’s more brutal regimes.	

1954	JAMA finally discontinues running cigarette ads , because the drug advertisers complained. U.S. prevents nationalization of United Fruit's investments in Guatemala by overthrowing its U.S.-friendly government , leading to a generation of brutal rule by Guatemalan juntas. The U.S. takes over from the French failure of trying to recolonize Southeast Asia.	
1957	Wilhelm Reich dies in a U.S. federal penitentiary. His work was burned in the U.S. and Nazi Germany.	
1960	John Crane thrown into prison for pursuing Rife's work.	3.0 billion
1963	John Kennedy murdered . Gerald Ford of the Warren Commission would help concoct the "magic bullet" theory to pin the crime on "lone nut" Lee Harvey Oswald.	
1964	American Surgeon General releases report that makes smoking hazard clear . The AMA and tobacco companies produce their own "research" that attempts to counter the Surgeon General's report. Gaston Naessens is run out of France. Beatles appear on <i>Ed Sullivan Show</i> . The U.S. fabricates the Gulf of Tonkin Incident , and begins the destruction of Southeast Asia.	
1965	CIA helps military junta take power in Indonesia . Suharto's forces "cleanse" Indonesia of about a million "communists" by murder. Globally, the whaling industry collapses , as there are few whales left to kill.	
1967	Israel invades neighboring areas and seizes large swaths of land.	
1968	Martin Luther King, Jr. and Robert Kennedy are murdered by "lone nuts." Nixon elected president. In Saigon, Ralph McGehee finally figures out what the CIA is all about.	
1969	United States lands on moon , and begins "secret" war in Cambodia , killing hundreds of thousands of people and setting the stage for the Khmer Rouge's reign.	

1972	Watergate burglary , planned by the CIA's E. Howard Hunt , begins Nixon's downfall. George Wallace shot by "lone nut" while campaigning for president.	
1973	OPEC oil price shocks create worldwide cycle of inflation until the 1980s. Vice president Agnew resigns to avoid criminal charges of bribery and income tax evasion. U.S. overthrows elected Marxist government of Chile and installs one of the world's most repressive regimes.	
1974	Nixon resigns, taken down by his own people. Gerald Ford takes office, makes Nelson Rockefeller his vice president, and pardons Nixon for alleged crimes.	
1975	Two assassination attempts on Gerald Ford by "lone nuts," nearly making Rockefeller the second appointed president, Ford being the first. With American approval, Indonesia invades East Timor using U.S. weapons, killing off about a third of East Timor's inhabitants.	4.0 billion
1977	Sloan-Kettering rejects laetrile as a cancer treatment, although its famous chemotherapy researcher Kanematsu Sugiura found positive results, and fires Ralph Moss for making that contradiction public. Jimmy Carter signs treaty to give Panama Canal back to Panama.	
1979	The Shah of Iran is overthrown in a revolution. The United States manipulates the Soviet Union into invading Afghanistan.	
1980	Ronald Reagan elected president. October Surprise operation , probably aided by George Bush, helps sabotage Carter's attempt for re-election. John Lennon murdered by "lone nut." Iraq invades Iran , beginning eight-year war.	
1981	Ronald Reagan becomes president. " White paper " of fabricated documents "justifies" reign of terror that the U.S. begins in Central America . Reagan shot by "lone nut" friend of vice-president George Bush's family . Panamanian national hero Omar Torrijos dies in "plane crash," and Manuel Noriega takes over.	

1982	Ronald Reagan signs Savings and Loan deregulation law , setting the stage for America's greatest financial scandal.	
1983	Dr. Ernst Krebs , the discoverer of laetrile, goes to jail. After a two-year legal battle, Ralph McGehee's heavily censored Deadly Deceits is published.	
1984		5.0 billion
1985	U.S. ships weapons to "enemy" Iran through Israel. It becomes basis for Iran-Contra Scandal. Dennis Lee makes a run at bringing alternative energy to the United States marketplace, in perhaps the most formidable effort yet made in U.S. history.	
1988	George Bush is elected president, and the next week the American people are told of the magnitude of the Savings and Loan Scandal .	
1989	Gaston Naessens is put on trial . Berlin Wall falls. U. S. invades Panama and Bush apprehends his former employee, Noriega.	
1990	With virtual encouragement from the United States, Iraq invades Kuwait. Tomb of Omar Torrijos robbed , probably by the Skull and Bones Society that both George Bushes belong to.	
1991	Jimmy Keller is kidnapped by U.S. Justice Department from Mexico . After actively avoiding negotiations for an Iraqi withdrawal, the U.S. bombs Iraq into the Stone Age, and the subsequent death toll is more than one million people.	
1995	Canadian factory trawlers cause collapse of the Grand Banks fisheries, which was about the world's most prolific. It is only one of many examples of collapsing fisheries across the planet. A slow recovery is happening.	
1996	Dr. Stanislaw Burzynski is put on trial.	

1998	Charles Pixley is released from prison. His crime was trying to make 714X a legal import. Jimmy Keller is put back into prison.	
1999		6.0 billion
2000	George Bush the Second comes to office in a voting scandal.	
2001	714X treatment making news in the U.S. Keller gets outs of prison again, has stroke. Terrorist attacks on World Trade Center and Pentagon. George Bush the Second begins his “war on terror.”	
2002	Enron Scandal makes news. America prepares to invade Iraq .	

The next section: [Visions of What Can Be](#) (110K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Visions of What Can Be

By Wade Frazier

[Alternate Realities, Visions and Prophecies](#)

[What is, and What Can Be](#)

[How It Is, and How It Got Here](#)

[How It Can Be](#)

[Activities Americans Can Do, and Now](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Alternate Realities, Visions and Prophecies

Nearly every contemporary account of experiences in dimensions beyond the physical plane reports that time and space are attributes peculiar to physical reality, and that they either do not exist beyond this dimension, or they take on properties considered bizarre by physical beings, such as [spherical time](#), as opposed to linear. People who have had [Near Death Experiences](#) (NDEs) report examining every instant of their lives, in great detail, during earthly death events that are only minutes or seconds in length. Einstein theorized that time is relative, and it may be far more relative than scientists think.

Jane Roberts' [Seth](#) described the concept of probable realities, which science fiction authors have explored many times. Probable realities, in Seth's conception, are genuine and populated by alternative "versions" of beings. For instance, I am living a life that began in 1958. Probable versions of myself died in 1965, 1976 and 1989, while others will live longer than my earthly life will prove to be. In some of those lives, my probable selves took other career routes, into the military, chemistry, computer science and a life of crime. Seth says that those probable realities are as real as the one I live today, and those probable versions of myself may be as skeptical of my existence as I might be of theirs. Jane Roberts and her husband reportedly met one of their probable selves,

selves that took an unpleasant life direction, and the experience affected Jane and her husband profoundly.[\[1\]](#)

Explorations of those ideas can lead to strange musings about what reality *is*. Helen Wambach specialized in mass hypnotic regressions. She originally performed her research to challenge the notion of reincarnation. She regressed more than one thousand people. To Wambach's surprise, 99% of the subjects reported detailed descriptions of other lives and the times they lived in, with arcane details subsequently confirmed by historical research. Wambach published her findings in *Reliving Past Lives* and *Life Before Life*. Those were published a generation ago. During her research, some subjects reported details from *future* lives. Wambach then embarked on her most provocative research: hypnotically progressing subjects to *future lives*, aiming for specific time frames. It is the only published research of its kind.

During both the future life progressions and the past life regressions, Wambach discovered a statistical anomaly that stands as some of the best evidence of reincarnation yet presented. Today's mystical path is [mainly the province of women](#), as that discipline is a subtle one that uses [feminine principles](#). The statistical anomaly was this: although 80% percent of the participants were women, the past life regressions yielded nearly an exact 50/50 ratio of male and female past lives, something unexpected if the subjects were "making it up." When Wambach performed the future life progressions, the ratio of women and men's lives for the period after the year 2300 AD was 50% male, 44% female, and 6% androgynous.[\[2\]](#) Her progression work's statistics also suggested that earth's human population will decline drastically in the coming years.

Wambach died before publication of the future life progressions' results, but her colleague Chet Snow published *Mass Dreams of the Future* in 1989. The future life progressions fell into four distinctly different future scenarios, and were named types one through four. Type one memories were of people living in space stations or colonies on other planets. Type two memories were of the classic New Age scenario, where people lived in peace and love in pastoral environments, wearing robes and having powerful psychic abilities. Those societies were built on love. Type three memories were of high tech societies, either underground or in artificially enclosed environments. They lived that way because the industrial excesses of previous generations left the planet's surface uninhabitable. Type four memories were of remnant societies that survived a holocaust that largely destroyed human civilization. Some memories were of living in a pre-industrial state in the countryside, while others were of eking out an existence in the rubble of destroyed cities. For the 2100-2200 AD life progressions, those were the predominant scenarios.[\[3\]](#) For the beyond 2300 AD scenarios, it was slightly more varied.[\[4\]](#) The [mystical](#) and [fringe science](#) ideas on this web site were evident in those future life "memories."

Wambach's research results were consistent with Seth's probable reality concept. Each person *chooses* the future they will experience, and they choose it with the *decisions they make today*. Tomorrow comes from what is decided today. Seth said that every morning when we open our front doors, we open them to a new probable reality that we have *chosen*. This world is a reality we have all chosen, and by our decisions today, tomorrow can begin "progressing" toward a much different reality, based on what *we* decide. This is a co-created reality, with each of us creating it.

That idea is paradoxical and seemingly nonsensical, but most mystical sources agree: each one of us exercised our free will to create this co-created reality. It is nearly identical to accounts of the astral plane and Robert Monroe's [Focus Levels](#). The [heavens](#), [purgatories](#) and [hells](#) that await us are also our creations. A primary difference between physical reality and the astral plane is that creating our realities there is far more obvious than it is here. We largely create our realities here unconsciously, and there are many "ground rules" that we all had to agree on (such as gravity) in order for this reality to work, which limits a great deal of our "free will" here. Many choices and innate abilities had to be "left at the door" when we came here. Earthly masters are simply more conscious than the rest of us, and can create their realities more consciously, performing feats that appear to "break the rules," such as walking on water and doing the loaves-and-fishes trick.

Once the concept of probable realities is understood, prophecy is seen in a different light. All prophecies depict *probable* realities, and all prophets know they only describe what *might* be, not what *must* be. When prophecies are dire, the intent is that they be heeded. If people change their ways, the grim probable future can be avoided. The best prophet is the false prophet, and Jonah of the Old Testament is the classic false prophet. He told the citizens of Nineveh that their city would be destroyed if they did not repent their ways. The citizens *did repent*, and the destruction did not happen. Some probabilities are more probable than others, and many prophets have keen insight into future probabilities. However, dismissing their warnings can bring the "bad" prophecies into being. As a rule of thumb, any prophecy that seems to carve the future into stone, so nothing can change it, can be ignored. Earth-change prophecies are nearly always related to the environmental devastation that humanity has inflicted on the planet. If we stop inflicting the destruction, the earth change prophecies will either not come true or be milder. If we continue to [inflict awesome devastation](#) onto the planet and each other, worse than the worst of them will come true, as humanity may indeed exterminate itself, a probability more than possible.

With that caveat, this essay will explore some visions of the near future. [Dannion Brinkley's](#) spectacular [Near Death Experience](#) (NDE) provided a great deal of prophetic information recorded by Dr. Raymond Moody. As the foretold events kept happening during the subsequent generation, Moody's skepticism slowly melted.^[5] The 1994 publication of *Saved by the Light* made the probable future Brinkley saw a public matter, and bringing it into mass awareness also created an alteration of the probable future, as more people became aware of it and could help change it. That is partly why his later prophecies have not occurred as foretold. The future is always in motion. The Armageddon scenario Brinkley saw happening during the 1990s still might happen, as Brinkley was told that the date of everything coming to pass and the world being vastly different was the year 2004.

[Tom Brown's](#) Apache shaman mentor, Stalking Wolf, was shown a series of visions in 1962, and the possible future he saw was every bit as ghastly as Brinkley's, and also foretold events that came true, such as the bizarre notion of "holes in the sky." The hole in the ozone layer, discovered a generation later, made Stalking Wolf's strange prophecy eerily prophetic.^[6] No prophets worth their salt want to see their dark visions come to pass.

One of the most fascinating bodies of mystical material is Dolores Cannon's work. Cannon

specialized in hypnotically regressing subjects to past lives, partly as therapy for them. Sometimes she hit the jackpot, regressing a subject to a non-human lifetime, or into [afterdeath](#) realms. Two of her most intriguing works came from “accidentally” regressing subject to lifetimes where the subjects knew Jesus and Nostradamus. With Jesus, the subject regressed to the life where she was the Essene tutor of Jesus and John the Baptist. Those regressions are produced in Cannon’s *Jesus and the Essenes*, which is also a compelling account of the times in which Jesus lived. His spiritual mastery was evident as a young boy, something the New Testament also preserved.

Jesus’ tutor described the crucifixion and resurrection much as the New Testament does, but deflates today’s doctrine around Jesus’ death. The tutor asked how anybody could pay for another’s sins, and rejected the standard Christian notion of his death’s purpose. He said that we all pay for our own sins. Nobody can step in and pay them for us. He said that Jesus never intended to be worshipped. Remembered and marveled at, yes. He was here to help guide humanity to fulfilling its potential, not to become an object of worship. The tutor also discouraged following anyone blindly, and said that the only devil exists inside us. He said that Jesus would return. When asked about Jesus’ philosophy, the tutor said,

"...he feels that love is the only law that one must abide by solely. And after that all the others pale into insignificance. We did not teach him this. He came to this conclusion through inner....what do I say..? discussions with his soul, and deciding how he feels about certain things. Love cannot be taught. It is something that must grow...It is important to not think evil in your heart."[\[7\]](#)

Cannon’s “jackpot” regression of a subject to a lifetime as Nostradamus’ pupil eventually yielded Cannon’s largest work, the three-volume *Conversations with Nostradamus*. As Cannon guided her subject to her life as Nostradamus’ pupil, he walked into the room of that subject’s past life, knew what was happening and offered to speak with Cannon. That was very out of character in a regression, where the “target” in the past-life situation was aware of the hypnotist guiding the subject from the future. When it happened, Cannon “felt the hair stand up on the back of my arms and a cold shiver run down my spine...Nothing like this had ever happened in my work before.”[\[8\]](#) Thus began an astonishing dialogue. For the next few years, Cannon sent that subject and others to speak with Nostradamus. The central issue was his prophecies, the cryptic thousand quatrains. What did they mean? [The Inquisition](#) would not have appreciated not only his prophecies, but also his method of seeing them, so Nostradamus was secretive and cryptic. Even if made from whole cloth, *Conversations with Nostradamus* is an engrossing body of work, and some is startling when seen in today’s light. For instance, in Century II, quatrain 75, is:

"The noise of the unwanted bird having been heard,

"Upon the canon of the highest story,

"The bushel of wheat shall rise so high,

"That Man shall be a man-eater."[\[9\]](#)

The standard interpretation is that it means aircraft, space warfare, [famine](#) and cannibalism. That is a straightforward interpretation. In *Conversations with Nostradamus*, Nostradamus expands on the quatrain. Nostradamus retranslated it, and said that there would be a famine, but because of war, where the nations that had the wheat could not get it to the ones that needed it, mainly because warfare had interrupted all the shipping, and the price was too high for those nations to afford it.[\[10\]](#) That was written in the 1980s.

State of the World's 1997 edition, chapter three, was devoted to preserving global cropland. In that chapter, the author discussed the problems with industrialization, particularly in East Asia. Several Asian nations are already grain dependent, meaning that they must import more than 20% of their grain consumption. Those nations were Japan, Taiwan, South Korea, Malaysia, Sri Lanka and North Korea. The threshold of grain dependency is 600 to 700 square meters per person. Japan was the lowest at 190 square meters per person. The industrialization trend, where arable land ends up becoming roads and golf courses, is colliding with Asia's population increase. By 2020, at current trends, India will be the only East Asian nation of significance not grain dependent, and it will not be far behind. China was barely grain sufficient in 1995 and at current rates will be grain dependent before 2020. The main grain exporting nations are the United States, Canada, Argentina, Australia and Europe, and the nations that really need it are in Asia. Nostradamus' prophecy does not seem farfetched. Nostradamus was looking into *probabilities*, and *Conversations with Nostradamus* is tantalizing.

This section will conclude with two of humanity's probable futures. [Michael Roads](#) is a modern-day Dr. Doolittle, able to communicate with all manner of consciousnesses, including those of animals, plants, rocks, clouds and so forth. His odyssey is recorded in a series of four books: *Talking with Nature*, *Journey into Nature*, *Journey into Oneness*, and *Into a Timeless Realm*. The events in the final book happened before those in the other three, and the series' final book is its most unusual. Readers are advised to read his first three books before his final one, so it makes more sense. Roads is unpretentious, gregarious and humble in person - a fitting persona for a veteran of his journey.

In *Into a Timeless Realm*, Roads described an out-of-body experience he had, one that lasted all night and propelled him into his awesome trek through realms of consciousness. While traveling with his otherworldly mentor, Roads visited two probable futures of the human species, about 300 years into our future. Roads' mentor stated that the probable futures they visited were only two of an infinite number of possible futures, but they were toward both ends of the spectrum: societies that did not choose love, and those that did.

One was worse than *Blade Runner's* Los Angeles, while other was a heavenly world that a Disney movie could not do justice to. At this footnote is a fairly detailed description of those two worlds.[\[11\]](#)

The hellish reality was created because people did not choose love, and the heavenly one existed because its inhabitants chose love. Love is the only way this reality can begin heading in that direction.

What is, and What *Can* Be

“You are never given a wish without also being given the power to make it true. You may have to work for it, however.” - **Richard Bach**[\[12\]](#)

“If you want to be a true practicing idealist, then each step that you take along the way must be worthy of your goal.” - **Seth**[\[13\]](#)

“You are not in competition with other species, nor are you in any natural competition with yourselves. Nor is the natural world in any way the result of competitiveness among species. If that were the case you would have no world at all.” - **Seth**[\[14\]](#)

"The ultimate weakness of violence is that it is a descending spiral, begetting the very thing it seeks to destroy. Instead of diminishing evil, it multiplies it...Through violence you may murder the hater, but you do not murder hate. In fact, violence merely increases hate... Returning violence for violence multiplies violence, adding deeper darkness to a night already devoid of stars. Darkness cannot drive out hate; only love can do that." - **Martin Luther King, Jr.**

[Seth's view of idealism](#) is not a Peter Pan fantasy, but an understanding of *how Creation functions*. People cannot kill the “bad guys” and make the world peaceful, because killing *always leads to more*, as [Martin Luther King Junior](#). and many others have noted. There will never be a war to end wars. Only peace will. The road to hell is not paved with good intentions, but with *acts that violate those intentions*. Seth said that there has never been and never will be a justification for violence, as the means *become* the ends. That is the most enlightened message regarding practical action I ever received from mystical material, and was about the first.

How It Is, and How It Got Here

Human beings are intelligent, naked apes that [migrated beyond their natural range millions of years](#)

[ago](#), and invented many adaptations of behavior and diet in order to survive in unsuitable environments. The human journey, ever since it [left its primordial home](#) in the tropical forests, has always been about securing and consuming *energy*.

All animals are designed to eat living food. Great apes are [ideally suited to eating fruit](#), which comprises most of their natural diets. The intelligent ape steadily enhanced its ability to manipulate earth's environment, although it also became further estranged from its natural diet and behaviors. As people improved weapons technology, there was a 30,000-year period of hunter-gatherer bliss, before the [easy prey was rendered globally extinct](#). Then the [Domestication Revolution](#) happened, probably by necessity, and humans reached new levels of environmental manipulation and devastation, with [organized warfare](#) humanity's most peculiar behavior, as well as the appearance of slavery. The human population slowly grew from about [four million when the Domestication Revolution began](#), to about [800 million](#) as the next major change happened, the [Industrial Revolution](#). That revolution helped bring an end to slavery, which began with the Domestication Revolution. The new revolution took energy exploitation and the means to [manipulate and destroy the environment](#) to extraordinary levels.

The Industrial Revolution began in societies that had [already conquered the world](#), and who commandeered the resources necessary to industrialize (the first and [most industrialized nation](#), Britain, had about the fewest domestically exploitable resources). The imperial peoples were by far the world's most violent, which was why they prevailed. They mercilessly [exploited the conquered lands](#), and as more imperial aspirants came to the table, the world was not big enough to sustain imperial industrial practices for all who wanted to play, so the 20th century saw awesome wars waged over which colonial powers could plunder the planet. The [United States came out on top](#), with virtually unchallenged global hegemony. America called the most devastating war earth had ever seen the "[good](#)" one, and capped it off with gratuitously [dropping nuclear bombs onto civilians](#). Industrial wars inflicted devastation onto peoples and environments of such magnitude that they threatened to destroy *all* civilizations. In industrialized societies, the ruling classes had limited ability to inflict violence onto their domestic subjects, and they no longer could really fight each other, so they inflicted [virtually unlimited violence onto their colonial subjects](#), and the [manipulation of the imperial class' minds](#) became [a science](#) during the 20th century.

The United States has been the heart of industrial imperialism for the past century. It has [earth's most brainwashed people](#), because their opinions *do* matter, as their government is nominally democratic. During the year 2002, form prevailed over substance to the extent that [Orwell's dark prophecy](#) has largely come to pass, with most living in the nightmare incapable of even seeing that it came true, which was also part of Orwell's vision. With the current [War on Terror](#) declared [virtually perpetual](#) by America's [Secretary of Defense](#), with nearly half of earth's nations on America's hit list, as it secures all lands with oil and other coveted resources, with the U.S. president and Vice President unabashedly *owned* by the energy interests, the nightmare *has* come to pass, and is rushing headlong toward a future that may be immensely worse.

In the words of America's [unelected](#), semi-literate president, America is by definition good, and its resisting victims evil, and that president threatened the entire planet as he declared that everybody was either "with us, or against us." The document that theoretically limits presidential power, [the Constitution](#), has been rendered a meaningless relic, with the unelected president given virtually unlimited power to wage war, and as of August 2002, open discussion of [invading one of the world's most oil-rich nations](#) takes place with scarcely a hint of opposition or irony (the September 2002 "debates" in Congress were more over how to get the job done, not to question the nature of the undertaking, which is typical – it is largely a debate between hawks, without a true dove to be seen). Iraq has already suffered a [genocidal destruction that the United States inflicted](#), begun by the current president's father.

Orwell's continual war *has* been declared. War *is* peace, freedom *is* slavery, and ignorance *is* strength. Reality has been turned upside down, with [vices turned into virtues](#). Powerful figures publicly and proudly display behaviors that [five-year-old children are taught are unacceptable](#), and few seem to notice or mind. Orwell wrote that the masses could throw off the elite manipulators as a horse shakes off flies, if they woke up. [Flag-waving](#) has replaced thinking, also as [Orwell predicted](#). Today, America is eagerly [militarizing space](#) for offensive purposes, with potential consequences nearly too horrific to contemplate.

In the more "rational" world of science, there is [blindness of a different sort](#). The most blinding *assumption* of today's science is that there are only five senses, and they tell us everything there is to know (or extensions of our senses, such as telescopes, microscopes, radio telescopes, etc.). The so-called [skeptics](#) are ardent defenders of materialism. All of science's giants were [mystical in their outlook](#). Today's [materialism](#) is an ideology, just as nationalism is, just as communism and [capitalism](#) are, just as all organized religions are. Materialism is perhaps the most seductive of all; it seems to conform to what our senses and rational minds tell us. As [Seth](#) has stated, our senses are lovely liars. A week of taking the [Silva class](#) has shattered the materialistic *assumptions* of many scientists. Once people realize that the five senses tell only part of the story, new vistas beckon.

As energy sources were depleted and new ones discovered, oil became the new big game at about the same time an ideology that [exalted greed](#) was invented. The same man who [quickly took over the new oil industry](#) engaged in social engineering soon thereafter, and his efforts not only [created the institution that dominates today's economic ideology](#), but also today's [medical paradigm](#), and he became involved with [banking](#) and other institutions, further corrupting them. About a hundred years ago, the [man who invented the means to electrify the world](#) was also pursuing free, non-polluting energy, and [another robber baron pulled the rug out from under him](#). As [I discovered first-hand](#), alternative energy [has been ruthlessly suppressed](#), on a global scale, for the past century. Free, non-polluting energy and anti-gravity technologies *do* exist. People close to me have [had it demonstrated to them](#). Some may be related to [reverse-engineering captured extraterrestrial spacecraft](#). Free energy is already here, but is not simply suppressed; virtually nobody even suspects that it has been, and even some of [America's most enlightened groups](#) have [ideological](#)

[objections to the notion](#), deriding such facts as a “conspiracy theory.” Their materialism blinds them, and their ineffectiveness is partly due to the fact that they are economically impotent. They have not yet glimpsed a world where the economic pie can be a *hundred times bigger than it is today*, so they can stop fighting to try preserving the tiny slice the poor have. When the pie is a hundred times bigger (and free energy would catalyze the biggest and most democratic redistribution of wealth the world has ever seen), no people would need to fight for their slice. For all their brilliant radical perspectives, most activists are still largely hacking at the situation’s branches, not its root.

It is time for the world’s people to take their economic destiny into their own hands and end the [Zero-Sum Game](#). Humanity’s survival may depend on it.

The vision presented below will be radical, and “radical” means one that attempts to burrow to the heart of the issues, addressing them at their root. All worthy radicalism attempts that, but [America’s Orwellian establishment](#) has made “radical” into a disparaging epithet. Nearly every human group on earth has been [blinded to one degree or another by its ideology](#). The problem with ideologies is not that they exist, but are mistaken for *reality*. Every ideology is simply an involved theory, an artificial way of viewing the world, and *every theory is wrong*, as Einstein was candid enough to admit. Ideologies blind their adherents when dogmatically held, with the ideology’s founding *assumptions* mistaken for *reality*, and never again questioned. Questioning the dominant paradigm’s *assumptions* has led to all of [science’s major breakthroughs](#).

The paradigm humanity has been operating from for the past 10,000 years I call the [Zero-Sum Game](#). It is a game based on an *assumption* of scarcity, particularly the scarcity of energy, where the world is seen in terms of “I win, you lose,” and “if I do not kill you, you will kill me.” All land grabs and other exploitations of land and humans have been primarily about [securing control over energy supplies](#) (food, wood, oil, etc.). Along with energy supplies, human intelligence and manipulative ability - the [three factors that led to humanity’s rise](#) - have been the subject to elite control since the dawn of civilization. The only true energy is love, and the energy (power) struggles humanity has seen have everything to do with [learning about love](#). If we choose love, the [heavenly future that Roads saw](#) will be closer to becoming reality for the majority of today’s humans. If we continue to choose fear and unconsciousness, then the [darker future](#) is more likely to come to pass, or even worse, as we might wipe out our species and take the planet’s ecosphere with us. No matter how unconscious humanity might seem, what will happen is our *choice*.

How It Can Be

As the concept of [probable realities](#) posits, no future is carved into stone for *anybody*. The future we will experience is dependent on what we *do* today. What we *do* is dependent on what we see and *think*, and this section is intended for Americans more than any other group, because it is all about what *we can do*, and what *we can create*, it we *care* to.

With free, environmentally friendly energy, the [Zero-Sum-Game](#) paradigm can topple, and unlimited abundance for humans and *all earthly creatures* is possible. Without free energy, the paradigm shift probably *cannot happen*.

The choices facing humanity are obvious, regarding its long-term survivability. These are a few possibilities.

1. Humans revert to living in their natural environment (the tropical forest), eating their natural diet (mostly fruit), and living in their Edenic state. Earth can support probably no more than a million people in that fashion.
2. We revert to the hunter-gatherer lifestyle, adopted after migration from the tropics. When people [exterminated all of earth's easily killed big animals](#), there were about [four million of us](#), and the limit that earth can support using the hunter-gatherer lifestyle is not much greater.
3. We adopt something like the Pacific Northwest culture, which was one of the few environmentally sustainable civilizations earth has seen, where people farmed the oceans by setting up villages next to rivers [where fish came to spawn](#). There were perhaps several million natives living in that culture before the [white man showed up and destroyed it](#). There are few places on earth that could sustain that method of subsistence today, as those ecosystems have been largely destroyed. If earth could recover its razed forests and the climate stabilized to its pre-warming stage, there are many places on earth where a fish-based economy could flourish, and perhaps support fifty million or more people in that fashion, although it is not the ideal human diet. We could engage in fruit cultivation and gathering activities to supplement that lifestyle.
4. Adopt the practices of other North American natives, such as the [Great Plains](#) bison economy, or the environmentally gentle [agriculture-hunter-gatherer economy of the Eastern Woodlands or the sustainable milpa methods of today's Mexico](#). The [Caribbean culture](#) of the Taino also appeared fairly sustainable, with a combination of sea harvesting, gathering and agriculture. In short, agricultural practices that do not deforest the land and disturb the soil are the most sustainable. Many pre-industrial peoples had that practice in the New World (largely because there were no draft animals to pull plows). Earth might be able to host hundreds of millions of humans using those environmentally gentle practices of the plains, woodlands and *milpas*. The [Amazon](#) may also be a consciously created and husbanded environment.
5. About 99% of the human race wakes up and gently throws off the shackles that the elite one percent has put on it, and humanity begins to use free, environmentally harmless energy. We could use our intelligence and manipulative ability in increasingly enlightened and refined ways, creating a culture that is harmless to the environment and humanity's fellow creatures, and the relationship with nature and each other is even mutually beneficial. Using technology that already exists or is close to being developed, an environmentally harmless

world society can be created that could feed and house *more than ten billion people*, at a standard of living that is orders of magnitude beyond what exists today.

The rest of this essay is mainly devoted to showing how option five can come to pass. In order to happen, humanity needs to begin healing and opening its collective heart, begin caring for each other and refuse to be manipulated by those on the [spiritual dark path](#), who play with humanity as if they are puppets and toy soldiers. Waking up can be initially painful, but staying asleep will be far more painful, and even suicidal.

Alternative and free energy has been suppressed by a [worldwide, clandestine effort](#), as the energy oligarchy not only keeps the energy racket intact, but also the greatest lever of manipulating the human species. Many [alternative energy pioneers have suffered greatly](#) at the hands of the energy gangsters, and theirs has been a lonely path, but their greatest adversaries have been the [inertia and indifference of the masses](#) and the [betrayals of their allies](#). If fifty people had supported [Dennis Lee](#) as [Mr. Professor](#) and I did, the world might have free energy today. If a hundred did, it would have been easy. There may not be a hundred people to find who would commit themselves at that level, so this web site is devoted to a different strategy: getting as many people as possible to comprehend what is at stake, what is possible, and if merely one percent of America simply became aware and cared enough to simply *ponder the possibilities*, it might help generate enough awareness and effort to overcome the energy gangsters' efforts, without there needing to be any more hero/martyrs.

With free, nonpolluting, [environmentally harmless energy](#), here are the short-term, [intermediate-term](#) and [long-term](#) possibilities of what it could produce and catalyze.

Short Term

1. There would be an immediate cessation in creating the primary [human-influenced greenhouse gas](#), carbon dioxide. Whatever the alternative theories may be, the [radiation-trapping properties of carbon dioxide are real](#), denied by nobody [not owned by the oil companies](#). The immediate cessation of greenhouse gas production will halt the component of global warming due to it. The catastrophic threat of global warming could immediately end.
2. Control over the world's energy sources is the primary preoccupation of the [criminals](#) that run the American Empire, and their current [War on Terror](#) (the latest [phony rubric](#)) could easily

ignite [World War III](#), which could destroy most of humanity. With free energy, the motivation to hold *that* hammer over the world's head would evaporate.

3. The energy industry's elimination would put perhaps a quarter or more of America's cash flow back into its pocket, while the short-term effect of making free energy machines would be an economic boom and redistribution of wealth of unprecedented proportion. The decline in America's standard of living would quickly end, and free energy would create a global economic boom of a kind never seen before. While there would be short-term "losers," the same awakening that would manifest the possibilities of free energy can also bring to awareness the need to lessen the short-term discomfort of those relying on fossil fuel revenues.
4. Burning fossil fuels [causes most air pollution](#), including acid rain. Virtually all air pollution would immediately disappear. Global respiratory problems would largely cease, as would stress on trees and other plant life, which makes them susceptible to diseases and is killing off forests today and is [acidifying the oceans](#).
5. Oil spills, the environmental devastation of oil drilling, coal mining and other energy-acquisition practices would immediately cease.

Intermediate Term

1. Because the entire human journey has been about the [acquisition, preservation, and consumption of energy](#), and the supply has always been scarce or finite, a paradigm has accompanied the human journey for the past 10,000 years, one I call the [Zero-Sum Game](#). It is the idea that the only way to improve one's station in life is to exploit others. No other event could help shatter the illusion of scarcity and the Zero-Sum-Game paradigm better than free energy. If people begin seeing beyond the Zero-Sum-Game [blindness](#), vistas scarcely imagined today can be glimpsed.
2. Humanity seems to be an intelligent, sentient species. Ending the Zero-Sum Game can also end the lives of quiet desperation that most people lead, and help open their hearts, which will also unleash the potential of their minds. Today, there is a system designed to [purposely dumb Americans down](#), but if Americans begin waking up, those games will end. Human intelligence in the service of an awakened heart is a force that most people today *cannot imagine*; with the awakening that free energy can catalyze, intelligence and imagination can be used as never before.
3. Many simple things can be done immediately to improve people's lives. For instance, [more than a million Americans live in their trucks](#), making the American consumer system work; the technology exists today to easily make it so [every driver could sleep at home each night](#).

The only barrier has been ideological blinders, such as the threadbare and increasingly unviable [capitalistic ideology](#).

4. There are [many existing cures](#) for the diseases that Westerners fall prey to, and they are currently being [suppressed in the name of greed](#). The vast majority of people have been easily [manipulated to their graves](#). An awakening West can almost immediately embrace [sane, gentle and healthy paradigms](#), instead of the deadly ones purveyed today.
5. Humanity's water-use practices are currently unsustainable, with water tables plunging worldwide, largely due to over-pumping for irrigation. It is creating widespread environmental devastation, including soil salination. With free energy, done intelligently, environmentally harmless desalination plants could exist in the oceans, desalinating ocean water and pumping it to land. The most enlightened first use is filling back up the depleted water tables. In addition, the dissolved solids collected from desalination could largely replace the need for mining. Also, for earth's regions that have been turned to deserts because of human practices, desalinating water could be part of a program to turn those areas back into fertile lands (more on that below). The two biggest killers of children worldwide today are polluted water and air. Although the [greed-based World Bank and IMF](#) are behind privatizing the world's water supplies, even in the United States, [which has led to disease outbreaks already among the poor](#), that desalinated water would also make universally free and pure water available to all humans.
6. With free energy, there is no barrier to setting up machines to extract carbon dioxide from the atmosphere, and bring those greenhouse gases down to their pre-industrial levels. There are even mainstream organizations devoted today to that issue, but they usually need to burn fossil fuels to get the energy to extract carbon dioxide, which partly defeats the purpose. Those extracted greenhouse gases can be put to better use in the chemistry revolution, as [discussed below](#).
7. The West's dominant paradigms are [truly insane](#). The only power sold to Western consumers is the *power to consume*. Mining the earth, consuming part of it and then throwing the rest away (and dumping the waste onto the world's poor), is about the most destructive and suicidal ideology ever invented. By itself, there is nothing wrong with consumption (although Americans are [history's fattest humans](#)), but the awesome destruction it has inflicted on humanity and the world is far from healthy. Free energy can catalyze both the means and motivation to begin undoing that damage. All of humanity's toxic dumps and other repositories of waste can be mined (even [nuclear waste](#)), not only cleaning up an immense problem, but the recovered material can be made as good as new, and used for raw materials for new goods.[\[15\]](#)

With the end of the [Zero-Sum Game](#), people can also began thinking about how they can reduce

the harm their existence causes others, which leads to the long-term possibilities.

Long Term

The [rise of the human species](#) was dependent on exploiting new energy sources by using intelligence and manipulative ability. The new paradigm can be catalyzed by free energy (there is nothing else more likely to do it, or so close to becoming reality), and then unleashed intelligence and manipulative ability in the service of a healed heart can create an incredible future. Pondering the possibilities of free energy for nearly thirty years has led to many realizations, and here are *some* possibilities that are not far off. That future heavenly world [Roads saw](#) is not so seemingly fanciful. Humanity can make huge steps in its direction during my lifetime. This section is devoted to exploring some of them.

1. Most chemistry today is performed in the service of greed, with [the profit motive paramount](#). With free energy, a new paradigm of chemistry can appear. Most substances used to clean things, such as chlorine in the water supply, laundry detergent and other soaps, bleach and other household cleaners, can be replaced with hydrogen peroxide, oxygen, and ozone. Those three chemicals “deteriorate” into water and oxygen. They are infinitely recyclable and of zero environmental impact, and they are creatable in virtually infinite amounts with free energy; a primary reason today’s toxic agents are used is that they are chemically persistent. Chlorine in the water will stay there, killing microorganisms, with free energy, ozone could be continually created and put into water. The U.S. government is today demanding that ozone purification replace chlorine purification within the next decade, creating the same effect without the persistent poison in it. Even that is an intermediary vision (desalination distillation can leapfrog the whole issue). The basics of using hydrogen peroxide, oxygen and ozone is simply using free energy to [increase the electrons’ energy](#), and using it for cleaning purposes. Such a practice would introduce zero pollution and keep human environments spotlessly clean and non-toxic. There are new horizons of chemistry that await the awakening that free energy can help catalyze, and goes far beyond cleaning agents.
2. Humans have been able to artificially reproduce manipulative ability and intelligence. Reproducing manipulative ability began with the era of machines, and the reproduction of intelligence began with the computer age. Both ages are still in their infancies. Most mainstream environmentalists have [austere solutions](#) to humanity’s energy issues, such as riding bicycles. Free energy can blast those austere blinders to shreds, and should. The [heavenly world that Roads saw](#) was technologically advanced, and they were particularly masters of the loving manipulation and use of energy. The [hellish world he visited](#) was also technologically advanced. It all depends on whether love or lack of it is the underlying motivation. With love, intelligence and manipulative ability can rise to currently-undreamed-

of levels, and can begin approaching that heavenly future that can await most of us, *if we want it*. I am a believer in computers, especially their potential when wedded with machines. Popping the Zero-Sum-Game paradigm also will unleash amazing levels of genius that *exist today*, but are [suppressed in the name of greed](#), as [Roads' mentor stated](#). Robotics is in its infancy, and free energy, machines and intelligence can create marvels that today's science-fiction authors can barely imagine. Today's scientists are able to manipulate material at the atomic level as they make computer chips ever smaller and faster, while our [energy production methods](#) are not far removed from the cave days. That contrast is one of many mind-bogglers in today's world, and could spur people to begin thinking about what is wrong with that picture; with the increase in robotics sophistication, no human need toil on behalf of another, unless that is what they *want to do*.

3. Although people can seem clever, it is probable that our high-tech revolution was at least assisted by [extraterrestrial technology](#), either given to us, or we stole it. The same people who have covered up free energy have covered up anti-gravity technology. I know people who have had it [demonstrated](#) to them in underground conditions, people I know and trust. Those in the know understand that today's military possesses technology that is about ten years ahead of what is publicly available, but the spook world, the realm that has supranational security (even the American president is an uninformed stooge) has technology about one hundred years ahead of what is publicly available today. Among the technologies they possess, besides antigravity and free energy, is the ability to create [holographic Illusions](#), similar to the Holodeck on *Star Trek*, according to sources I respect, such as [Barbara Marciniak's Pleadians](#). Only those with developed spiritual abilities can tell the difference between the holographic illusion and the real thing, which is another reason for people to begin pursuing their inner world and [developing their innate abilities](#). Once awakening humanity blows the lid off the spook stuff, and we gently take our responsibility back, technological quantum leaps are possible. [Crop circles](#) are probably part of a gentle wake-up call from our otherworldly pals.
4. The [Domestication Revolution](#) was the beginning of humanity's creation of artificial environments. A house is an artificial environment. A farm is an artificial environment that grows artificially manipulated plants that [can provide useful calories to humans](#). The reason for those artificial environments is that humans are poorly suited for life on earth, at least in [numbers of more than a million](#). If more than one million humans happily live on earth, they must do it using artificial methods. By itself, there is nothing wrong with that. Unfortunately, humans have created their artificial environments at the expense of all other living creatures. It does not need to be that way, here is why.
5. Earth's best and nearly only [soil-builders are forests](#). Soils are the basis for all land-based life, and humanity's prodigious forest destruction could lead to the end of land-based life, at least for a time, until the oceans (if they are not also rendered devoid of life) can generate the conditions of [several hundred million years ago](#) that made life on land possible; trees are the greatest introducers of energy and nutrients into land-based biomes. What have humans done to forests, and why? Originally, [humans, as with all primates](#), lived in the forest. [They left that forest and the tropics](#), and when they finally killed off their extra-tropical food source,

their only option was to begin to turn the forest into useful energy. Consequently, forests were chopped down, and the trees used for energy as they were burned. The [energy that went into making wood](#) was used to build dwellings and other structures, and sunlight that formerly fell on forests instead fell on plants to raise for human consumption, or pastures for human-consumed animals. Chopping the forests down also [killed the hydrological cycle](#) that trees created, which made life on land possible, and agricultural practices eventually destroyed the soils the forests created. The so-called [Fertile Crescent](#), where those activities first happened on a large scale, is largely desert today, as deforestation, plow agriculture and irrigation destroyed the soils. The dynamics today are what the Fertile Crescent experienced. It took the Fertile Crescent thousands of years to turn to desert. Modern industrial methods are making that transition happen much faster elsewhere.

6. Every use of wood today can be replaced with free energy, intelligently and lovingly used, and even the land used for forests would not be needed, and the forests can all grow back, even “farmed” by enlightened humans. The practice of using wood for energy would immediately vanish. Complementing the free energy and [chemistry revolutions](#) would be a materials revolution, which had also happened in [both future worlds that Roads saw](#). The main reason for why mining practices are so destructive has been, once again, the limitations of available energy. Earth's crust is about 85% oxygen, silicon, aluminum and iron, in nearly the exact proportions that it could all be turned into glass, steel and aluminum, with no waste byproducts, lasting virtually forever, and all infinitely recyclable; because of energy scarcity and the dominant paradigms, driven by [greed](#) and other deadly sins, virtually nobody is *even thinking* in the directions that chemistry could go. It is not much of a leap to quickly approach something like the replicators on *Star Trek*, where the toilet feeds them, mass continually being recycled, with energy added and the elements recombined in useful ways, the food-to-waste-to-food cycle is how our ecosystems operate, with the sun's energy adding the needed boost. It could all be artificially provided, but still letting life do its thing. Humans are a long way off from creating life, and today's genetic engineering is [potentially suicidal](#), but simply providing the energy and nutrients that plants and microscopic organisms can use to grow healthily can be extremely beneficial.
7. Buildings made of glass and steel, that do not need to take up ground space, can easily be made if free energy, anti-gravity and advanced materials technology were available. Dwellings, even cities, could be made on stilts, or even underground, with the land undisturbed (or the land below them used for orchards and playfields, with light and water provided), or ten-mile-in-diameter cities could float on the oceans, totally stable and stationary (if stationary is desired), and vast environments could be created for living, recreation and perhaps most importantly, agriculture.
8. Such buildings would have perfect climate control, with its rooms, even independently, made as warm or cold, wet or dry, light or dark as desired. Those domed cities and farms would have perfect environmental controls, the air always clean and fresh; and crops growing in perfect environments. Those domes could have protective force fields surrounding them, so that not even a bird could be hurt by flying into it. It could have a holographic covering, making it look like a mountain. It could be on a kind of antigravity buffer, activated during earthquakes, so there would not even be environmental catastrophe risk (today's earth

changes are probably largely due to humanity's spiritual degeneracy and the harm it is inflicting, so earth behaving violently would largely disappear anyway).

9. The "raw material" for the soils for those indoor farms has already been washed down the world's rivers by deforestation and agriculture, and it would not be difficult to "mine" that silt (a lot of it is in the way anyway), leach out the man-made toxins and ocean salts, and use it as a starting point for making those soils (and hydroponics could also be used). An indoor, perfect environment, for raising fruit and other live foods that humans are designed to eat, may take less than half an acre per person, and multistoried farms like that could pepper the earth, where the humans living in them had their own food supply, and no human would be dependent on imported food, as is seen in the West today. Cities and farms would become one; completely self-sustaining homes in Antarctica are possible, or anywhere else on earth. Large cities would probably disappear, as there would be no need for them, nor would anybody desire to live in one. They could all be recycled into the smaller communities, and even Manhattan Island could be turned back into forest.
10. A major reason why [environmental devastation is happening](#), [Americans are so fat](#), so easily [brainwashed](#), easily succumb to [preventable diseases](#), and [file to their deaths](#) at the hands of modern medicine, is their disconnection from the natural world. American children are being told that [Big Macs grow in hamburger patches](#), and similar fairy tales. Americans need to reconnect with nature, and a great beginning is to start having a hand in raising the food they eat. Those domed, multi-storied farms might be a generation off, but beginning to go in that direction is possible even today. All animals are designed to eat [live food](#), and my ultimate eating experience has always been eating fruit off the tree and berries of the bush. Not only is it how we lived in the tropical forests, no food has ever tasted better or been better for us. The American food supply is degenerate on several levels, and locally grown fruit, harvested by those who eat it (or getting it the same day or week it was picked) can go a long way toward not only improving humanity's health, but also reconnecting minds and spirits with nature, to begin seeing the world with healthy eyes and hearts.
11. [As discussed above](#), forests are largely responsible for the existence of today's land-based life. With free energy and the materials revolution, the uses of wood for fuel and buildings would disappear. It would also disappear for furniture. Already, America is on the brink of eliminating paper for printing information. I rarely use my computer's printer anymore, and read everything on my computer. Words can be on computer screens, LCD tablets that look like books; projected onto sunglasses, walls and even the retina. It can even be spoken aloud by voice generation; with just a little ingenuity, we could eliminate paper for information transmission.[\[16\]](#) All plant fiber is simply water and air that photosynthesis turned into cellulose; all animal fibers such as wool are other transformations of sunlight. Already, synthetic fibers have eliminated much of the need for using cellulose and animal fiber; some organic fiber can still have some use, but could be provided by cotton or hemp, grown in those indoor environments; there could still be *some* use for wood, but it can be taken from newly dead trees, in environmentally harmless fashion. Even toilet paper can be replaced by laser-guided warm water, perhaps with a little hydrogen peroxide or other sterilizing agent present (and a blow dryer!). That would not be much of a technical feat, in light of these other dynamics. In short, every use of wood and paper could become largely obsolete, and

humans would not even need the land the forests stood on for their energy needs. Then forests could become what they used to be; homes for forest denizens and places for humans to recreate. I want a [forest experience like Roads had](#). There can be some places where it is not forest, but human-tended “flatlands” as he also saw in that [heavenly future](#), but there would not need to be much of it.

12. Mining would largely disappear. Not only has enough raw material been mined from the earth to create nearly all of the facilities needed (“mining” the roads, as they will no longer be needed, will provide raw materials as well as pave the way for those lands to be healed, as well as mining all the dumps), and ocean desalination could provide other materials (as well as help clean them up, similar to [mining the carbon dioxide](#) from the atmosphere); whatever small amounts of mining might be needed can be done in a few places, with no mine tailings (as it could all be used, and whatever might be “waste” can be made into stable, non-leaching rocks), and the mine closed and turned into a lake, park or forest when finished).

With such abundance, the [Zero-Sum Game](#) will end, and nobody will need or want to keep score anymore. In that heavenly future Roads saw, they had no money, and economic ideology (or any ideology) did not even exist. Today’s *Star Trek* depicts a future where money and striving for material possessions became relics of humanity’s primitive past. Gene Roddenberry was not depicting a future that was all that fantastic.

After long years of imagining what is possible, and looking into the areas deeper, no idea presented here is outlandish. When the lid of suppression is taken off and humanity allows its heart and mind free reign, that [world that Roads saw](#) is only three hundred years into our possible future. Glass domes instead of [electromagnetic domes](#) is something achievable in my lifetime.

Such a vision can seem overwhelming and impossible to achieve, particularly with the situation seen in today’s world. I am an American, and I can only speak to Americans, as far as what we can do to help bring that vision to pass. Peoples of other nations could pursue many of these ideas themselves. Unfortunately, the suppression of free energy is an effort of global scale. The only nation on earth that may not be subject to the [manipulation of the energy gangsters](#) is China, and waiting around for them to develop free energy is a dubious strategy. People have regularly asked me if another nation less corrupt than America could pursue it. [Tom Bearden and friends](#) are trying to make their devices outside the United States. They know how the game is played. While my prayers are with Tom and his friends, looking for heroes to save us is insane, and also an abdication our responsibility. The above visions will not come to pass as long as people keep playing the victim game, seeing the world as one of [heroes and bad guys](#). We are all creators, and it is time we begin acting like them. So, for my fellow Americans, the next section is devoted to things *we can do*, now, to help the above visions begin to become possibilities for humanity.

Activities Americans Can Do, and Now

Unplug – The United States has history's most sophisticated and subtle brainwashing system. People who wanted to control humanity, and turn Americans into mindless pawns, [designed it](#). That is not even a so-called “[conspiracy theory](#),” but [easily researched social engineering that began more than a century ago](#). Americans have been “dumbed down” like no people in history, and [Orwell's world](#) has largely come to pass. Both the brainwashers *and the brainwashed* deny this, and Orwell also foresaw the denial. America's indoctrination process nearly begins in the cradle. Mass murderers and thieves such as [Christopher Columbus](#) and [George Washington](#) are held up to American children as heroes, with national holidays in their names, and outright fairy tales told about them. The [history that American children are taught](#) is a fabrication. Unsavory facts are left out or spun out, while the few good facts are overemphasized or [even made up](#). The news produced by America's corporate media is largely [fairy tales for adults](#). Nearly the entire American media system is pernicious, but the most effective brainwashing tool is television (and there is probably subliminal brain manipulation going on, even beyond the insipid program content and ads). Turning off the tube may be the most effective thing an American can do to begin unplugging from the brainwashing machine. Ceasing consumption of the mainstream media in its other forms is the next best thing to do. Immersion in alternative forms of information, mainly those not corporately owned, is probably part of the waking up process. Nearly everything we have been taught [is a lie](#). Once people have broken away from the machine, they can go back later and take a look, and can easily recognize the brainwashing rubbish it serves up; it will no longer seem so tasty, and they will never go back to it. Because the manipulators have been trying to create mindless, childish and easily manipulated *consumers*, part of the unplugging process is also unplugging from mindless consumption, which Americans excel at. Simplifying our lives and disengaging from the consumption squirrel wheel is part of the process.

Clean up - While the above [vision](#) has plenty to do with cleaning up the planet, everything starts at home. The cleansing of minds, bodies and spirits is an essential part of the healing process. [Unplugging](#) is part of cleaning up the mind. Adopting a largely [live food diet](#), and adding [regular fasting](#) to the American regimen are two behavioral changes that can go a long way toward cleaning up American bodies, as will regular exercise, preferably in nature. Giving up deadly comforts such as tobacco and alcohol is part of that cleansing process, as is drinking pure water. There is no argument that an industrial waste is dumped into America's water supply and called medicine. Looking into the [history of fluoridation](#) is horrifying. Although the evidence has been suppressed for more than fifty years, the fluorine ion [damages the human brain](#), and [scientific careers have ended](#) when it has been experimentally demonstrated. It is legitimate to wonder if fluoridating the water supplies is part of a mind-control program, especially with the other undeniable mind control activities. Calling the fluorine ion a medicine is the height of insanity at best. If more people become aware of the facts, just maybe we will stop adding a brain-poisoning, tooth-crumbling industrial waste to our water and calling it medicine.

Be gentle - As [Elisabeth Kübler-Ross](#) has documented, unpleasant situations or inevitabilities, such as death, are originally met with denial, to evolve through anger, bargaining, depression and

acceptance, and *can* lead to transcendence and enlightenment.[\[17\]](#) Regarding what is happening as of the summer of 2002, virtually all Americans are in denial or anger, or combinations of both. The [crazed flag-waving](#) after the [World Trade Center attacks](#) was a textbook example of trying to reduce [cognitive dissonance](#), where people tried drowning out the reality of why America may be hated around the world with waving the largely meaningless [symbol of America's secular religion](#). Those people need to be dealt with gently, if for no other reason than they are frightened and dangerous. In addition, harsh methods will not help wake them up, but spark further games of denial, and many carry weapons. These are the days when heretics can burn. As [Martin Luther King, Jr.](#), Gandhi and others have noted, violence will only beget more, and gentleness is the salve we need. America has tens of millions of [Young Warriors](#), and their primary delusion is that might-makes-right. Perhaps the human race's only hope is trying gentle solutions to our problems; it may be the only thing that will work. I advocate removing criminals from power such as Bush and friends, but not unethically or violently. There is no argument that [George Bush the Second](#) is [not even elected](#), and the [U.S. Supreme Court criminally intervened](#) to put him into office. The [invasion of Iraq](#), its justification built on a mountain of lies, is at the very least an impeachable offense. There are legal and gentle means to remove them from power, such as a national referendum. Bush's current plans to invade Iraq are impeachable offenses, although Capitol Hill is his accomplice, so we cannot expect much auspicious to happen in Washington DC. Dismantling the executive branch and even dismantling the United States should be on the table of possibilities. Thinking that the average American will wake up to that degree might seem hopeless, but the means *will become the ends*. Harsh methods will only make things worse. The [dark path folks](#) pulling the strings *want* people to react in fear, hatred and violence, as it ultimately keeps them in a negative spiritual spiral that [can be exploited](#).

Go within - Every religion has betrayed the teachings of the master it was modeled after. However, that does not deny the masters' enlightenment, and they all realized that the inward journey is the path to enlightenment. The materialistic West is outwardly focused, and is largely why it is so degenerate. The [Silva Method](#) can teach a person in forty hours how to attain deep meditative states, without religious baggage attending it. Perhaps no other course is better suited for Westerners to quickly learn powerful meditation techniques. [Robert Monroe](#), [Bruce Moen](#) and others have blazed trails that anybody can follow, but it is an inward journey. It is not an intellectual process, and largely defies Western attempts to describe it, but meditation and prayer can help lead to enlightenment, and there is a greater need today for enlightened people walking earth than ever before. Just *becoming aware* of our internal light has a powerful effect on anchoring enlightenment on earth. Some of the most powerful acts people can do today are what they can do *inside* their heads and hearts.

Remember - Related to [going within](#) is becoming more mindful. It is an act of raising human consciousness. For [older souls](#), memories of [other lives](#) are more available, and mundane memories of current lives can be better recalled by the inward journey, and people can remember the more important things. Much of what Americans have forgotten are life's basics, the things that [Robert Fulghum said were taught to us by age five](#). Much of the remembering does not have to be mystical, but just remembering what is important, such as love, truth, and integrity.

Act - Living one's enlightenment on a mountaintop is easy. Far more challenging is living it in the world, especially today's. As never before, there is need for enlightened action. In the West, people often equate "action" with violence. Gandhi was active, as was [Martin Luther King, Jr.](#) Calling violence "active," and pacifism weak or inactive is an example of a [false dichotomy](#). There are more opportunities for gentle, enlightened, healing action than ever before. It is best pursued, however, by people whose hearts are whole. Action in the service of fear is the path of disaster, particularly now. Action in the service of love is perhaps the most important thing anybody can do today, and with people's hearts awakened, they will *know* what to do. Nobody need tell them. Anybody who advocates violence is not operating from an enlightened perspective.

Forgive - Today's world is full of misery, violence and exploitation. There is plenty to forgive. True forgiveness is not about being a "spiritual heavyweight," and able to "forgive" violations, but realizing that every "violation" is a co-created experience. With true forgiveness, the dynamic of those past events can be healed and set aside, and the victim perspective can be shed. That can make room for a creator's perspective to come into play, and a new dynamic can appear, one immensely more fun and loving. The [heavenly world](#) that Roads saw did not come into being by imposing "justice" on others, vengeance or related acts. True forgiveness can help release the fear and hatred in today's world, and particularly forgiving ourselves.

Those are activities that Americans can do now, and although they may seem nebulous as far as making a difference, they can go a long way toward healing humanity and the planet. Raising our awareness may be the only way out of this mess, and then taking action related to our increased perceptions. On an [ancillary link](#) are some frank observations about what I think is happening and what is possible, in the near term, as well as observations on what it was like to make this site. Free energy is the biggest first step toward the visions presented in this essay, and raising awareness of what is at stake, and how close the planetary healing can be, is this web site's main purpose. It is up to us.

Footnotes

[1] See Susan Watkins' *Conversations with Seth, Volume Two*, chapter 16, pp. 431-454.

[2] See Snow, *Mass Dreams of the Future*, p. 157.

[3] See Snow, *Mass Dreams of the Future*, p. 117.

[4] See Snow, *Mass Dreams of the Future*, p. 160.

[5] One of the funnier events regarding Brinkley's visions was the prediction that an actor-cowboy with the initials "RR" would become the American president in 1980. When Moody asked Brinkley who that might be, Brinkley answered "Robert Redford." Ever since Ronald Reagan became the U.S. president in 1980, Moody has mercilessly ribbed Brinkley about getting the vision "wrong."

[6] See Tom Brown's *The Quest*.

[7] See Cannon, *Jesus and the Essenes*, p. 222.

[8] See Cannon, *Conversations with Nostradamus*, volume one, p. 26.

[9] See Robert Lawrence's *The Complete Prophecies of Nostradamus*, p. 68.

[10] See Cannon, *Conversations with Nostradamus*, volume one, pp. 258-260.

[11] Because Roads was a farmer and rancher, that was the initial orientation of his visit to the probable world that *did not* choose love. Roads and his mentor visited a dairy. Today, there are [genetic engineers](#) working for [agribusiness](#) corporations who are unabashedly trying to create that dairy Roads visited. In that dairy, the art of genetic engineering reached its zenith. The cows had been bred and manipulated into becoming nothing more than an eyeless, earless head, a legless torso, and one huge udder that provided milk. The liquid feed went in the mouth via tubes, the milk came out the udder into the milking machine, and the cow became a Borg-like (a species depicted in *Star Trek*) wedding of flesh and machine, with the cows called "cow units." The cow units spent their entire lives hooked up to those feeding-milking machines. As Roads observed, two dairy workers walked down the production line and stopped at the stall of a cow unit whose production had declined. They watched it for some moments, then one pressed a pen-like device to the cow unit's head, and with a sharp hissing sound it immediately died. They then unhooked the cow unit from its device and smoothly dumped it into a trolley that had rolled into place. Then the trolley drove it to another building. Roads and his mentor followed the trolley and saw the dead cow unit dumped into a vat, where it quickly dissolved. The vat's contents became raw material for growing new cow units, incubating in nearby artificial wombs. The embryonic cow units grew in their jelly-like "wombs" until ready to be put into production.

Roads staggered from the dairy, full of disgust and revulsion. In his out-of-body state, he could also sense the mental-emotional states of those in that world. From the cow units came an intense feeling of discord and misery. Roads shuddered to imagine the effect such milk would have on those drinking it. Roads and his mentor then visited the farm where the cow units' feed was grown. The field was brilliantly green, with the grass-like plants growing before Roads' eyes, and being sucked up into a big "lawn mower" that continually glided over the field. Roads turned his spirit eyes toward that scene, and was again assailed by a deep feeling of discord, that time emanating from the plants. He stepped back and looked around, and realized that no nature spirits were in the vicinity; those devas that help nurture all plant life on today's earth. Roads encountered nature spirits throughout his journeys, but that was the only reality he ever saw where nature spirits had entirely abandoned it.

Roads turned down an offer to visit a hospital in such a society, but his mentor took him to visit a city. As with the genetic engineering wizardry the dairy evinced, the society was technologically advanced. However, it resembled the world of *Blade Runner* more than *Star Trek's* earth. That society created an alloy

of plastic and steel that was virtually indestructible and unbelievably strong. They built their cities miles into the air. The bottom levels of the city looked like *Blade Runner's* Los Angeles, in perpetual twilight, and there was a heavy stench in the air. It was impoverished, and virtually all people in the lower realm were young. When Roads asked why there were no old people, his mentor replied that medical treatment was reserved for those with enough "credits," which was that reality's money. When anybody in the lower levels became ill or infirm, a pill was provided them at no cost, which gave them a painless death. That reality was built upon the principles of [greed](#) and indifference.

In that reality, organized warfare ceased to exist, because each person was the adversary of everybody else. Roads and his mentor began ascending through the city's levels, and it became progressively brighter and less impoverished. They reached levels where the wealthy lived, and it was astounding. Vast parks laden with flowers beckoned. Sweeping vistas of verdant plains, distant mountains and ever-present rainbows danced before Roads' eyes. Now, that was more like it! What he was seeing should not have been possible, on top of a skyscraper. His mentor then told him to tune in with his spirit eyes again, and Roads saw that the extraordinary scene was an elaborate holographic illusion. The rich people strolling by, seemingly blissful, were in a drug-induced stupor. If people could afford it, they could buy a fabulous, illusory existence. Most people on that level believed they were experiencing reality, not a carefully contrived illusion. They could not tell the difference between the holographic illusions and "reality," living in a perpetually deluded state. They were that society's "winners." Roads asked his mentor that if they believed it, then was it not real for them? To which his mentor replied with a smile, "What is reality?"

Roads asked his mentor what could be wrong with such a world at the higher levels of the city. Many elderly lived in the rich areas, appearing quite healthy, and the children lived naked in the warm, safe environment there. Even if drugged and living in a holographic reality, was it not pleasant? Roads' mentor told him that the lower levels were left to rot, eking out their lives, but the rebels of that netherworld were where change for the better would come. Their shame of their world's callous indifference was the only saving grace that reality had.

To make his point clear, Road's mentor then took him to the city's "penthouse." It was at the very top, and opulence scarcely imagined surrounded Roads, with castles spun from rainbows and gardens to take the breath away. Roads' mentor said that on the top level it was not all a holographic illusion, but a carefully manufactured reality, with synthetic soil and other techniques that created a realm that was mostly "real," and only slightly helped by holograms and other high-tech tricks. At that level lived people whose wealth in credits was beyond measure. A family walked by, and they all had shimmering, multicolored auras. They looked like gods to Roads, but his mentor stated that their condition was due to extremely involved and expensive genetic manipulation, something orders of magnitude beyond a Beverly Hills facelift.

Then Road's mentor took him to that reality's final destination: a social gathering in one of the penthouse palaces. As Roads looked at the milling people, he realized that some were not human, but grey-looking humanoids. They wore a holographic disguise, and the humans took them for normal people. Those grey beings were that reality's shepherds. They manipulated the entire society from its highest levels, keeping everybody in misery, as it created an emotional energy they fed off. They were at the very top of that reality's food chain, but Road's mentor said that the grey beings were losers too, as their negative harvest kept them locked into a hellish baseness of spirit. In that reality, *everybody* was a loser. The grey beings did not create that reality, but were opportunists who took advantage of that greed-based reality. They set themselves up at the hierarchy's emotional-food-chain apex. Roads' mentor told him that as long as greed and indifference are in the human consciousness, realities like that one would be created. We all create our realities, and that was merely one of infinite realities that exist, and one that some of today's humans will

experience in about three hundred years. Roads thought it ironic that humans, who are beings made of love and light, could create such a reality for themselves.

Elements of the *Blade Runner-ish* reality are easily seen in today's world, with that dairy being the [goal of some of today's genetic engineers](#), with today's [factory farms](#) raising animals in conditions not far removed from that dairy's. Many of today's urban hells could compete with that *Blade Runner-ish* world. The notion of [feeding off of people's negative emotions](#) and being in holographic disguises, helping shepherd humanity, can be seen in today's mystical literature, phenomena *that are happening right now*, on earth. Today's predominant economic ideology, capitalism, is [based on greed](#), and has become more overt through the years, with [outright gangsters running the White House](#). George Bush the Second and friends are almost certainly puppets of those pulling their strings, puppet masters who stay in the background, playing the power-behind-the-throne game. They will never take the fall for anything their puppets do, using new puppets when the others break or outlive their usefulness.

After that harrowing experience, Roads was ready for something more pleasant. He and his mentor visited a reality as far into earth's future as that *Blade Runner-ish* one, but beings that chose love populated that one. As they began descending into the other reality, the very atmosphere radiated peace and joy, which Road's mentor said was due to the love energy that the beings in that reality radiated. As they approached a city in that reality, the trees lining the street looked like spruces, but with silver needles. Roads thought they looked artificial, but the life energy emanating from them was far too strong to ignore. Roads examined a tree and saw that the needles slowly swayed, like sea anemone tentacles. His mentor confirmed that that tree was the result of genetic intervention, and sea anemone DNA was indeed involved. However, it was done with the tree's consent. That reality also had genetic engineering, but done with the utmost respect and *cooperation* with the life forms involved. The trees enjoyed the movement that their silky, silvery needles provided.

In the *Blade Runner-ish* reality, Roads and his mentor were ghostly beings, unseen by that reality's inhabitants. When they showed up in that new, loving reality, the people could see them and knew Roads' mentor, as he was a regular visitor. A group of teenagers invited Roads and his mentor to their school. To a casual observer, the teenagers looked remarkably like those god-like people in the rich levels of the *Blade Runner-ish* world, but they needed no drugs, genetic tinkering or holographic crutches. Those teenagers were highly developed, both spiritually and mentally, and love increased their abilities to astonishing levels.

The teenagers took Roads and his mentor on that city's equivalent of a bus: it looked like a rainbow running down the street. As soon as Roads stepped on it, it whisked him away. It responded to his mind, going where he wanted, as rapidly or slowly as he wanted, and before he knew it, he had already disembarked at his destination. The school was in a park setting. The lawn was a kind of fern-ish plant that smelled faintly of lemon and never needed mowing. The area emitted a feeling of tranquility, as if it was a specifically induced atmosphere. In the park was a large domed building that housed the school, and the teenagers invited Roads inside. Each lay down in a bed that adapted itself to the student, and they received an education where information was fed directly into their brains while in a meditative state. The students' entire bodies were involved, each cell participating in the learning experience. The students *experienced* what they learned, and they learned about fifty times faster than students in today's schools learn, so by age six a child knew nearly everything there was to know about the human body, and how to be healthy.

Roads was disbelieving at first, but he saw that the students were all physically perfect and radiated robust health. As Roads goggled, his mentor reminded him not to compare that reality to his world, and his mentor

made a statement that nearly sums up this web site:

“You are living in a time when the great potential of many brilliant individuals is suppressed. Your people are stricken with disease, war, famine, and suffering on a level that rivals anything in your historical past. All your true geniuses who develop the means for holistic health and a global abundance of food are persecuted, ridiculed, restrained, and controlled by rampant corporate greed and consensus reality. However, as always, the greater the suppression, the greater the resulting explosion... You live in a time of great cataclysm, a time of an explosive upheaval in consciousness. This can be seen environmentally in the unprecedented speed of change. The times you live in will be the determining factor of your next reality frame. Some of your humanity will incarnate into the reality that we visited earlier; some will incarnate here. The big majority, however, will probably incarnate back into a reality frame that is a continuation of your present mode.” (see Roads, *Into a Timeless Realm*, p. 227)

In that heavenly reality Roads visited, there was no disease, sickness or hospitals. Utopia barely begins to describe it, and Roads only saw a sliver of it. Then Roads’ mentor took him to a forest outside of town. Roads is a veteran of many incredible mystical experiences, where he has communed with nature and all manner of consciousness, but that forest experience was one that a Disney cartoon could not begin to portray. Birds and butterflies flew everywhere, nature spirits abounded and trees talked to him. The entire planet had a rainbow expressway that webbed it, and connected city to farm to wilderness. The rainbow was just one form of transportation. The most common form of long-distance travel was the equivalent of a huge soap bubble, which was made of electromagnetic energy, and everybody over age six had one. The bubble responded to the “driver’s” mind, taking each one wherever they wanted to go.

Their last visit in that reality was to a farm. As with the *Blade Runner*-ish world, the farming was automated, but as the grain was harvested, it nearly leapt into the harvester, with the grain emitting a deep sense of fulfillment. The farmland had larger versions of those traveling bubbles, but those protected crops, and could cover up to a square mile of land and provide a perfect environment, including temperature and moisture control, while the surrounding land would be unaffected. Those bubbles were made of electromagnetic energy and were nearly invisible, but the most powerful tornado could not have dented one. That reality had no pets, but animals and people could become each other’s companions if *both wanted to*. Of course, [vegetarians](#) entirely populated that reality. No animal was abused or killed by humans in that reality.

[12] See Bach, *Illusions*. p. 92.

[13] See Jane Roberts’ *The Individual and the Nature of Mass Events*, p. 277.

[14] See Jane Roberts’ *The Individual and the Nature of Mass Events*, p. 277.

[15] The recent efforts using [thermal depolymerization](#) are mere baby steps toward a “cradle-to-cradle approach to production and waste.” See William McDonough and Michael Braungart’s *Cradle to Cradle*.

[16] William McDonough and Michael Braungart's *Cradle to Cradle* is printed on recyclable plastic.

[17] Brian O'Leary's *Miracle in the Void* takes an enlightened look at that process.

The Next Section: [Observations, Opinions and Dilemmas](#) (51K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Links

By: Wade Frazier

[The Big Picture...and Solutions](#)

[Free Energy](#)

[Health and Environment](#)

[Alternative Cancer Treatment](#)

[Political and Human Rights](#)

[Spiritual](#)

[Channeled](#)

[Fringe Science and the Offbeat](#)

[Catastrophic Quicksand](#)

Here are various links to sites referred to in my web pages, as well as others that I have respect for.

The Big Picture...and Solutions

The primary purpose of this site is identifying the problems and possible solutions to the phenomenon called life on earth. What I eventually realized is that until the big picture can be glimpsed, the comprehensive solutions cannot even be *pursued*. So, this section is devoted to big picture people, and deals somewhat with proposed solutions. [R. Buckminster Fuller](#) was one of those "big picture" people. He called himself a generalist, which really meant a comprehensivist, where his work crossed lines of specialization to develop a comprehensive, big picture view of the problems, as well as the solutions. Here are authors and activists with that Big Picture approach. Their work is highly recommended.

[Brian O'Leary](#) - Ex-Astronaut and fellow free energy visionary. Brian sees the big picture, and is worth listening to.

Brian has now founded the [New Energy Movement](#).

[Jay Hanson's page](#) - Where humanity is headed if we do not embrace renewable, harmless energy.

Free Energy

There are obviously other free energy sites besides these ones. A number of sites are not here because of my questions about their motivation. One site is prominent, but the only mention of Dennis is a link to [Mr. Skeptic's](#) propaganda web site. I have had little involvement with Dennis since the 1980s, and this web site is not an endorsement of what he is doing or promoting, mainly because I am not qualified to comment on it.

[Tom Bearden](#). Here is some of his information on [Sparky Sweet and his amazing technology](#) and how to get a video. Other Sparky links: [1](#) (this one is taken from Sparky's writings), [2](#), [3](#), and on his mentor [Gabriel Kron](#).

[Steven Greer and Space Energy Access Systems](#)

[New Energy Congress](#) - They may end up doing some good work.

[Infinite Energy](#) - The late Eugene Mallove's formidable magazine. Here is a [link](#) to his open letter on ways to do free energy. Unfortunately, I wonder about [how his legacy is being handled](#).

Health and Environment

[Jack La Lanne](#) is a true American original. Although his original influence in matters of health, [Paul Bragg](#), was a charlatan, La Lanne is genuine, still going strong in his nineties.

[Dean Ornish](#) - Can we reverse heart disease and hardening of the arteries without drugs and surgery? He is the professional descendant of the people [who saved my father's life](#). He was a doctor to the president.

[Peter Duesberg](#) - One of world's leading virus experts who has [challenged orthodox theory regarding AIDS and HIV](#).

[Julian Whitaker](#) - Another sane and courageous doctor in America.

[John Robbins](#) - Heir to the Baskin-Robbins fortune [who instead took a modern day Buddha's journey](#). His [defense of the soybean](#) from [the soy assailants](#) is impressive.

[Gary Null](#) - A longtime health researcher and writer, who has done important work on [vegetarianism](#). He might seem a little too commercial for some, and Robbins or [Cousens](#) are less so.

[Puget Consumers Cooperative](#) - The leading edge of a healthy future - organic food, cooperatively-owned, no animal testing, fair pay for all members of the food production chain, environmentally-friendly, they are exploring the way humanity needs to go if it is to survive.

[Acidifying oceans](#), another consequence of burning fossil fuels.

[Greenhouse gases](#) - A good discussion of them on Wikipedia, and the role of carbon dioxide.

[Genetically Engineered \(GM\) food](#) - Site that exposes the [awesome risks of GE foods](#). Here is a [UK site](#).

[Greenpeace](#) - They may be a little too disobedient, and maybe too much like a business, but I respect many of their efforts. Perhaps the world's best environmental site.

[Natural Resources Defense Council](#) - A large environmental site. Though they are mainstream and subject to

the corrupting influence of fundraising and the like, they have my respect.

[EnviroVideo](#) - They have my respect. They are an environmental media organization, operating on a shoestring, as do all alternative media organizations.

[Friends of Freedom](#) - Canadian organization devoted to health choice.

Alternative Cancer Treatment

[Ralph Moss](#) - The Big Kahuna of alternative cancer treatment.

[Cancer Tutor](#) - Excellent overview of alternative cancer treatments.

[Gaston Naessens and 714X](#) - A [treatment](#) based on a different paradigm for viewing degenerative disease..

[Stanislaw Burzynski](#) - The FDA has [tried wiping out](#) his harmless, ingenious and effective treatment numerous times, and he is still hanging in there. His is the only cancer cure hope for many Americans.

[Royal Rife](#) - One of the many medical establishment snuff jobs on [a cancer cure that worked](#).

[Barry Lynes](#) - The leading writer of Rife's tale.

[Hulda Clark](#) - Good stuff, from cancer to other diseases to parasites to flushing out liver and gall bladder stones.

[Good links page to alternative treatments](#).

[Jimmy Keller](#) - [Kidnapped from Mexico](#) in one of the most egregious methods to wipe out alternative cancer treatments that I have seen.

[Cancell Page](#) - Very good web site on an alternative treatment and the cancer business in particular.

Political and Human Rights

[Z Magazine](#) - My favorite political magazine.

[Fairness and Accuracy in Reporting](#) - My favorite media watchdog organization.

[Counterpunch](#) - These guys don't mess around. They particularly take on the Washington D.C. crowd, and follow the money.

[Medialens](#) - Edwards, Cromwell and some of the best of the left.

[Common Dreams](#) - Another good site with radical perspectives.

[Working for Change](#) - Another good, progressive site.

[PR Watch](#) - Excellent site on what the public relations industry is up to. [Their work](#) has [helped expose Steven Milloy as a tobacco company front man](#).

[Truthout](#) - Eclectic news items, lib rather than rad. Too bad.

Great political cartoonists

[Tom Tomorrow](#)

[Mark Fiore](#)

[Ted Rall](#)

[Troubletown](#)

[Andy Singer](#)

[Matt Wuerker](#)

[Stephanie McMillan's Minimum Security](#)

[The Onion](#) - Good humor.

[Independent Media Center](#) - Good site devoted to grassroots media, though its open-publishing newswire is often jammed by a right wing offensive. In 2004, their servers in the UK were seized by the FBI, in a gross violation of human rights.

[Worldlink TV](#) - New TV station in the U.S. Offering television coverage that you will not find in the U.S. They actually played [Manufacturing Consent](#), for the first time I know of, on an American-based TV station.

[Reuters](#) - Far less biased than the American mainstream media.

[Al Jazeera](#) and [here](#) - Virtually the [Arab version of CNN](#).

[Asia Times](#) - Good analysis from Asia

[Der Spiegel](#) - German media in English.

[The Guardian](#) - A leading British web site. Far better than the American mainstream media. Unfortunately, the British press is the least trusted media in Europe, but I cannot read other languages.

[The Independent](#) - Another British media organization. This one features the work of [Robert Fisk](#), the West's best Middle East correspondent.

[John Pilger](#) - Another Western journalist with integrity, with a career that is decades old.

[Project Censored](#) - What the mainstream media will not tell us.

[Information Clearing House](#) - News not found in the U.S. mainstream media.

[Covert Action Quarterly](#) - It was once about the single best periodical regarding what our government is really up to. Site is fairly inactive as of December 2005.

[An excellent CIA analysis page.](#) - Yahoo once refused to list it. It is easy to see why. The emperor is stark naked.

[International Action Center](#) - I respect Ramsey Clark's organization. They are "sectarian," but their courage is inspiring. Considered too "Marxist" in some circles, I wish there were more folks around like them.

[War is a Racket](#) - A frank assessment of the war racket, by one of America's greatest war heroes, [Smedley Butler](#)

[Rat Haus Reality](#) - An excellent archive of important writings on health, politics and science.

[Disinformation.com](#) - Sprawling site that deals all manner of controversial issues. Well done.

[Noam Chomsky](#) - Z Magazine's archive of the great man's work.

[Howard Zinn](#) - Site of my favorite American historian.

[Edward Herman](#) (and [here](#)) - He is Uncle Ed to me, as I received a lot of my political education at his scholarly knee. He is one of the finest dissident scholars in U.S history. His articles on the [kangaroo court at The Hague](#), where [Milosevic is interned](#), and the [2000 election coup](#), are timely. Vincent Bugliosi also [wrote a formidable account of the voting scandal](#). Ed has also [written about mass graves](#) being [discovered in Afghanistan](#), where thousands Taliban POWs were murdered and dumped into pits, with the U.S. media failing to cover it, as usual. Here is a [great link](#) on his fisticuffs with the "Cruise Missile Left" that defended the invasion of Iraq.

[Michael Parenti](#) - Another voice of integrity from the radical left.

[Edward Said](#) - A tribute page to a great voice of conscience from Palestine.

[Allan Nairn](#) - One of America's [most courageous journalists](#).

Excellent material on the [Crop Circle](#) phenomenon.

[John Taylor Gatto](#) - One of America's finest teachers, [who takes a frank look at the American education system](#).

[Common Courage Press](#) - One of the world's most important publishing companies.

[South End Press](#) - Another one of the best publishing companies on earth.

[Oxfam](#), [British](#), [International](#) and [American](#) - One of the world's premier relief organizations, one that also sees [the politics that creates the famine and misery](#). As usual, it appears to be subject to slow co-optation and undermining by the establishment.

[Mark Twain's anti-imperialist writings](#). A highly suppressed body of work by one of [America's greatest citizens ever](#).

[Michael Ruppert and From the Wilderness](#) - Another good piece of investigative reporting, tackling subjects that America's media will not. [His case](#) for [Bush administration foreknowledge of the World Trade Center](#)

[attacks](#) deserves to be taken seriously, particularly the [short selling of airline stock](#) and [war games](#) evidence.

[Richard Heinberg](#) - Has produced excellent, interdisciplinary work on the trajectory of human civilization and where we may be headed.

[Guerilla News Network](#) - Good stuff.

[Black Op Radio](#) - Featuring material ignored by the mainstream media.

[BNN](#) - Brilliant satire on events in the Middle East

[Third World Traveler](#) - Excellent alternative views

[The Bush family history](#) - The version you will not find in mainstream bookstores. From a right wing source, and its conclusions are not necessarily my own, but a valuable depository of facts not easily found.

Ralph Nader [1](#) and [2](#) - While I have seen many people question his motivation, including some close to me, I have not seen a more prominent national political figure telling more truth about what is happening in America, and trying to unite people in seeking solutions. If nothing else, his work can lead to finding out much more about what is happening.

[Xymphora](#) - Excellent blog on current events

[Rodney Stich and Defrauding America](#) - In an age almost completely bereft of acts of integrity and courage, Stich is a beacon in the darkness. *Defrauding America* is one of the most important American books ever written.

[JFK Assassination Site](#) - This site presents the [best work](#) I have seen regarding the [backyard photo evidence](#) against Lee Harvey Oswald, and the issue of the Minox camera. The alleged murder weapon may well be a [vintage weapon](#).

[Operation Northwoods](#) - These are apparently declassified documents that spell out how JFK's Joint Chiefs of Staff planned to kill Americans and frame Castro's Cuba for it, to justify invasion. This revelation is not all that surprising, given the milieu of the day, and has given grist for the mill of the 9/11 conspiracy theorists, theorizing that I am skeptical of. However, it gives a great deal of credibility to [Gary Wean's tale](#) of a CIA operation that used JFK as a target for a fake assassination that framed Castro.

[Blueprint for a Prison Planet](#) - This is a compelling, levelheaded and even hopeful rendition of an issue that I am familiar with, but have generally not dealt with on my site, as it can easily overwhelm people, and there are enough pieces of the puzzle missing (not available for public inspection), that it can lead to various interpretations. However, I have directly experienced enough events that fit into this person's narrative, and heard of others, such as [here](#) and [here](#), that I do not dismiss it. I think that in large measure, what he is writing may well be true.

[The New Enlightenment](#) - Interesting combination of politics and spirituality.

[Without Sanctuary](#) - A site devoted to the [American advertisement](#) of lynchings.

[Women in Black](#) - Granny Power! Those old women show more courage than all the U.S. politicians put together. The FBI calls them terrorists.

Spiritual

[Swami Beyondananda](#) - A longtime spiritual comedian who has given me many laughs and smiles over the years.

[Tom Brown](#) - America's leading outdoorsman, who learned almost everything he knows from an Apache shaman. His mentor's life story an amazing and inspiring true story, and shows one path to humanity's salvation.

[Michael Roads](#) - A modern-day Dr. Doolittle. [His work](#) is vitally important.

[Afterlife Knowledge](#) - An excellent introduction to what people can expect when learning to [explore the metaphysical realms](#). I have no doubt of the material's validity, as I have had too many similar experiences, and know many others who have. As the site's author emphasizes, those "fantastic" experiences are open to anyone who pursues them. The only "inside track" any of us has on these experiences is desire, experience and integrity. His account of a ["hell" he visited](#) is vital reading.

[Dannion Brinkley](#) - His "lightning therapy" both [ended and changed his life](#).

[NDEs](#) - A collection of Near Death Experience accounts. [George Rodonaia's](#) experience is one of the most extraordinary ever recorded.

Channeled - Channeled material has influenced me the more than any other area of study. I do not prefer the term "channeled," but have learned to live with it. Many intellectuals and [skeptics](#) despise channeled material, dismissing it *a priori*. [Linear and purely rational thinking](#) cannot comprehend the material's meaning. Its critics often attack the genre's poorer examples. Religious fundamentalists often see it as the devil's work. Taken as a whole, it is the most enlightened and loving genre of literature I have encountered. Speaking in tongues was an ancient form of channeling, as was the process by which Richard Bach wrote his masterpieces. The gospels of the New Testament were probably channeled (though one might be a forgery, and they have been heavily edited). The Koran seems at least partly channeled. Automatic writing is a form of channeling. God's voice coming from a burning bush or from a cloud in peals of thunder is a close cousin of channeling. That [voice in my head](#) that told me to study business and [move to Seattle to meet Dennis Lee](#) was a form of channeling. Dennis' inspiration, Einstein's, [Tesla's](#) and other [geniuses' breakthroughs](#) are related to channeling. Eventually today's genre will die off as all people learn to bring their own wisdom through their consciousness.

[Seth](#) - My [first exposure to channeled work](#), over twenty years ago. It began the modern channeling phenomenon. People like me did not like the term "channeled" when it was coined in the 1980s (and some of us despise the term "New Age"), including Jane Roberts' husband, but we have learned to live with it. The Seth Material is still a giant among channeled works, holding up quite well over the years.

[The Michael Teachings](#) - A [rare teaching](#) in that it is channeled by many people. An awesome perspective of our reality and the journey of our souls. The most insightful view of the human condition that I have encountered.

Lyssa Royal [1](#) and [2](#) - One of the best.

[Barbara Marciniak and the Pleiadians](#) - Possibly my favorite.

[Kryon](#) - A superb body of material.

[Bashar](#) - Excellent, uplifting material, as are all the channeled works on this link page.

Ramón Stevens and the [Alexander Material](#) - Very good stuff, a kind of cross between Michael, Seth and Marciniak's Pleiadians, delivered in a unique and engaging style.

Robert Shapiro's Zoosh and friends - Shapiro has probably created the most diverse body of channeled work in existence. Link is dead for now. I hope another one appears one day.

Ken Carey - More than channeled, his work is unique. He has suffered quite a few slings and arrows as he has tried living his work. His appears to be gone, like many others from my original version of this link page.

[Neale Donald Walsch and the *Conversations with God* Material](#) - The first channeled work to hit the *New York Times* Best Seller List, which gives me hope that humanity and America might wake up in time.

[Hinono and ancient native wisdom](#) - Only one book out so far (four books in one, actually), but very good..

[The Sedona Journal of Emergence](#) - The leading channeled periodical. I have subscribed for years, and plan on continuing. Excellent material. Nice artwork on the covers!

[The Ra Material](#) - One of the best bodies of channeled work.

[Emmanuel](#) - Poetic channel

[Michael Topper's](#) interesting analysis of the milieu.

Mystical/Spiritual links that I wish existed: Bartholomew, Eric Klein, Michael Schuster, Graham Bernard's Richard material, Robbyn and his Merry Bande, and many others.

Fringe Science and the Offbeat

[Close-Minded Science](#) - A vast site which, among other issues, deals with how close-minded scientists can be, hiding narrow mindedness and dishonesty under the mantle of "skepticism." Also deals with true scientific investigation of the strange and paranormal.

[Richard Milton's Alternative Science](#) - I am a fan, and learned of important aspects of the scientific establishment from his work. His work on [James Randi's Million Dollar challenge](#), and how [Randi ran away from a challenger](#) while calling him names, is important. Here is [another account](#) of Randi's challenge.

[Steven Greer and CSETI](#) - Here is a man who has [suffered greatly](#) for trying to make UFOs a public issue.

[Moon Base Clavius](#) - Jay Windley's site, and one of the best sites that debunks the claims made by the moon hoax theorists who argue that the moon landings were faked.

[Flatland](#) - A timeless classic on how we can become captive to our point of view.

[Jeff Rense](#) - Another good voice from the fringe.

[Richard Hoagland](#) - Somebody has to do it, and I am glad Richard is out there.

[Daniel Drasin's hilarious primer](#) on how to be a "[skeptic](#)."

[Wingmakers](#) - Food for thought. The site's information may seem incredible, but the theme is familiar, and my own [mystical experiences](#) make me seriously consider it.

Catastrophic Quicksand

While researching the debunking career of Carl Sagan, I slipped into the quicksand of catastrophism. It was not bad quicksand, but still quicksand. Catastrophism is gaining popularity, as evidenced by two recent motion pictures that depicted comets crashing into earth. I first became aware of the subject while studying [Carl Sagan's attack on Immanuel Velikovsky's theories](#). Ten thousand pages of reading later, from all sides of the controversy, I have concluded that there is enough to catastrophic theory to keep a person busy for the rest of their lives assessing it. Velikovsky derived a multidisciplinary hypothesis for planetary near-collisions in historical times. His theories were audacious. His story is a long one. I doubt that he was entirely right, but he was mercilessly maligned by the scientific establishment for nearly the last thirty years of his life. His theories exercised the mind of his friend Albert Einstein, who was studying Velikovsky's *Worlds in Collision* when he died, partly because one of Velikovsky's theories about Jupiter had recently been proven correct. I have refrained from much mention of catastrophic theory in my work, partly because I am unqualified to fully assess it. I believe that Velikovsky was unfairly attacked for his theories, most prominently by Sagan. If people want something to keep their minds busy for the next fifty years or so, they can delve into catastrophic theory. It is a highly intriguing body of theory, one that incorporates diverse disciplines such as astronomy, geology, mythology, physics, psychology, archeology and a host of other subjects. Here are some links.

[Phil Burns](#) - Maybe the best site for an introduction to catastrophism.

[A good catastrophic links page](#)

[Kronia](#) - Good folks.

[The Society for Interdisciplinary Studies](#) - An organization devoted to catastrophism.

Miscellaneous - This site was designed so that the only links external to it are from this page, so below are external links from my essays which do not really belong in the above sections.

What [Scientific American](#) had to say about reports that the Wright Brothers were flying, which was a [typical response](#) from the scientific establishment regarding breakthrough innovations. Here is a [good article](#) on the Wright Brothers by Jed Rothwell in the late Eugene Mallove's magazine.

An amazing [U.S. Supreme court ruling](#) that [justifies kidnapping people from other nations](#). Hitler could not even get away with it.

The 1953 [Fitzgerald Report](#) documented [racketeering in organized medicine](#).

The [banning of Stale Food vs. Fresh Food](#), the booklet [that changed my family's diet and saved my father's life](#).

[Ronald Reagan's policy directive](#) regarding [Yugoslavia](#).

An [account on Wikipedia](#) of [George Washington's](#) relationship to slavery. He was probably [bled to death](#) by his doctors, who subscribed to the "heroic" medicine ideals of [Benjamin Rush](#).

[The tale of the Sauer family](#), persecuted by [Ben Franklin](#) and other "patriots."

[The professional fate of Dr. Virginia Steen-McIntyre](#), when she discovered [evidence of very early human habitation](#) of the New World.

A [case](#) that [Dennis Lee's attorney "won"](#) over the Internal Revenue Service in the U.S. Supreme Court.

[Mr. Texas](#), who helped destroy one of Dennis Lee's companies, [was arrested as part of a religious scam in 2003](#), demonstrating that he was likely a free-lance criminal and not a provocateur.

[Letters from and to Jeffrey Amherst](#) (or [here](#)) regarding giving native Americans smallpox blankets, in the best-known early instance of biological warfare in the New World.

An [Adam Trombly interview](#) on his experiences in the free energy milieu.

An [essay I wrote in 2005](#) about the free energy conundrum.

A [letter I wrote in 2002](#) about the looming invasion of Iraq.

An article on the [confused state of the American mind](#).

A painfully perceptive article on state of the [American mind and spirit in 2003](#), by Gaius Publius.

An [official catalog](#) of all the lies that George W. Bush and his administration used to sell the invasion and occupation of Iraq.

A [good index](#) of all the Bush administration's lies to sell the war.

The privatization of Iraq's oil deposits is well underway ([1](#), [2](#), [3](#)) , which did not surprise anybody who was informed in the slightest.

A poll which shows that [half of all New York City residents](#) believe that the Bush administration allowed 9/11 to happen.

BYU Physics Professor Steven Jones' paper on the [collapse of the three World Trade Center buildings](#).

[Thermal deploymerization](#) is a way to turn waste into raw materials for synthetics, although today it is promoted as an energy solution, which it really is not.

[Mr. Skeptic's](#) libelous [1997 Skeptical Inquirer article](#) about Dennis Lee, which demonstrated [Mr. Skeptic's dishonesty](#).

Next section: [My Journey and Life's Work in Five Pages](#) (25K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

My Journey and Life's Work in Five Pages

By Wade Frazier

March 24, 2006

This essay was initially written to assist readers of a [post](#) to a [site that discusses the "enigma" of Dennis Lee](#), where I outline how [his most prominent and persistent assailant](#) since 1996 [has dishonestly portrayed Dennis' past](#). While recalling my days with Dennis can revisit pleasant memories, the process is usually agonizing. Repeatedly demonstrating how dishonest Dennis' critics have been is an unwelcome task, and I decided to make lemonade out of lemons. Telescoping my life's work into five pages was difficult, and this essay stands as my most succinct introduction to my writings. This essay summarizes many hard-to-believe experiences, and if any of them seem too "way out," I suggest taking the link to the more complete version of the event, to put it in its proper context.

My alternative energy journey began in the early 1970s, when my first professional mentor invented [the world's best engine for powering an automobile](#). My first exposure to the real world of alternative energy was when my mentor told me that during the hoopla over his engine, a high-ranking government official told him that if he planned to bring his engine to market, [he had better make his funeral plans first](#). At age 19, I [had a paranormal experience](#) that changed my college studies from chemistry to accounting. After college I became a CPA, and at age 27 I [had another paranormal experience](#) that led me to move from Los Angeles to Seattle and [right into Dennis Lee's company](#), which was in its death throes. Dennis had just finished what is arguably the most significant attempt yet made to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace. The energy interests pulled out all the stops [to destroy his company in Seattle](#). Their efforts [resulted in the death of one of his employees](#), which radicalized Dennis in his pursuit of alternative energy. The energy interests ran Dennis out of the state, and he tried rebuilding his venture in Boston, with the [Washington authorities hounding him across the continent](#). However, I would not be denied my boyhood dream of changing the energy industry, and [I was the only employee to follow him out to Boston](#). Dennis had about four hundred employees in late 1985.

As I was driving to Boston, bringing along his family's few possessions, Dennis received his first free energy idea. He wanted to marry his [heat pump](#) to a [low temperature turbine](#) that he heard about two days before I arrived. We saw it demonstrated the day after I arrived. I raised the money to get Dennis' free energy venture off the ground, and became his partner. Those

were innocent and happy days for me. We had unwittingly landed in the middle of an energy controversy in Boston over the [Seabrook nuclear power plant](#). Dennis always thinks big, and [offered to buy the Seabrook power plant](#), never put nuclear fuel in it, and instead use it as a storage device to balance the load from all the free energy machines that would feed it. Dennis soon had an audience with the [Seabrook Association's chairman of the board](#). At about the same time, we [received the first offer to buy us out, for \\$10 million](#), a sum that I now know is [the going rate to buy out and shelve innovative energy technologies](#). The Boston venture failed, partly due to a [media blackout](#) on our company. In the meantime, I had tied into more capital and some world-class technical talent in my hometown of Ventura, California. We [moved the company to Ventura](#) in June 1987.

In late 1987, my first professional mentor came forward and proposed that if we married [his engine](#) to Dennis' heat pump panels, "free energy" might be possible. In January 1988, [Victor Fischer came aboard](#), with a similar engine to my mentor's, and one that had been extensively developed in Australia. We then tried marrying Fischer's engine to Dennis' heat pump panels, and Dennis began making earnest free energy noise. We also had a highly successful program of selling information kits for making, installing and manufacturing Dennis' heat pump. We were flying high. Two days after Dennis publicly announced that we were pursuing a free energy prototype using Fischer's engine and Dennis' heat pump panels, thirteen armed deputies of the Ventura County sheriff's department [raided us](#). During the raid, they stole or photographed all the technical material from our chief researcher's office, in a blatant act of [theft](#) and [espionage](#).

The previous year had already been very stressful, but after the raid it began going rapidly downhill for me. I was the company controller, and the sheriff's department [seized all my records](#) and refused to provide us copies of them. After six weeks of sixteen-hour days to try surviving their carefully aimed deathblow, I began going into general physical collapse, and that was the beginning of the end of my days with Dennis. I left the company to try recovering in May 1988. At about the same time, [Dennis received the second offer to buy us out](#). A CIA man representing European interests made the offer, and Dennis could have asked for a billion dollars and they would have paid it. Dennis refused their offer, and the next month Dennis was arrested with a [million-dollar bail](#). When the big carrot did not work, they brought out the big stick, and then the nightmare truly began.

Little did I know it while growing up, but Ventura County regularly makes the top-ten list of most corrupt police forces and judicial systems in America (it is the home of the Rodney King beating verdict), and [I discovered it first-hand](#). I became familiar with evil during the Ventura nightmare, with the sheriff's deputy in charge of the "investigation" bringing me to my [pivotal moment](#). [Instead of getting a shotgun](#) and "cleaning up" Ventura County, I [mortgaged my life](#) to give Dennis a slim chance of avoiding life in prison, and probably being murdered while in

prison. My quixotic gesture worked, and Dennis was released from jail on April Fools Day, 1989. With the nightmare over, my legal fund helped secure the services of the most prominent Constitutionalist attorney in America, who [gave the IRS a black eye in the U.S. Supreme Court the year before](#). Kangaroo court still prevailed, however, when [the judge took Dennis' attorney hostage](#), and Dennis was forced to plead guilty to a civil law infraction. A parking violation was a more willful breach of the law, but the courts violated his plea bargain all the way to the U.S. Supreme Court, and Dennis did hard time in the state penitentiary, [nearly being murdered in there](#). Dennis' case [set precedents all along the way](#), even to illegal parole conditions.

I began waking up fast when I was at Dennis' company in Seattle, but when the dust cleared in Ventura I was radicalized. I would never again see the world in the same way, and I spent 12,000 hours of unpaid labor [creating my 1,200-page website](#). I saw many lives destroyed during my journey with Dennis, including mine. [I buried one of the few heroes of Dennis' journey in 2002](#), and I do not want any more adventures in alternative energy, and seek the quiet life these days.

Dennis, however, is like no human being I have ever known or heard of. I met him immediately after he was released from behind bars both times, and he began going back at it more fervently each time, as if his stints behind bars gave him a chance to rest. I could only stand back and watch with awe as he went back at it. I was *there*, and *I* have a difficult time fathoming what Dennis has lived through. For several years, Dennis kept trying to coax me back into the saddle with him, but I was in no mood or shape to walk back into that hurricane. My years with him comprised a learning experience like no other, but such learning experiences are rather hard on the student, let us say. When Dennis was released from prison in 1994, he surprised me by quickly getting a national profile, trading largely on his credentials gained by what had happened to us in Ventura. I joined back up with him in November 1996 in New Jersey, but it only lasted a few months. The years have been hard on me, and I do not have the recovery capacity or crazed persistence that Dennis has, and in April 1997 Dennis allowed me to return to Seattle, where I was born. I have lived here ever since, and have no plans of ever leaving.

I also discovered first-hand during my days with Dennis that the American media is an integral part of the power structure, and [brainwashing the American people](#) seems to be its primary function. That was not fun to discover, but a byproduct of creating my website was the realization that most of my "education" while young [was a pack of lies](#).

From 1990 to 1996, all of my spare time was spent reading a vast spectrum of material, and just before I joined up with Dennis in 1996, I hastily completed and published a 600-page website. Soon after I published my site I met [Mr. Skeptic](#) in cyberspace, who had published a website the day after Dennis' Philadelphia show, where Dennis put 5,000 people into a sports

stadium to talk about free energy. I tried educating Mr. Skeptic about Dennis and what we were doing. I had studied the “skeptics” at length as part of my research, so my optimism was guarded about his comprehending the free energy milieu’s reality. I had seen shocking dishonesty displayed by [Carl Sagan](#), the leading light of the “skeptical movement,” and I had seen many instances of “skeptical” minds so closed or locked into linear thinking that it astonished me. Perhaps the most closed-minded “skeptic” I have seen is [James Randi](#), and he was Mr. Skeptic’s mentor. I came to realize that the “skeptics” are mainly fundamentalist materialists who adopt a “skeptical” attitude to everything that does not conform to their “faith.” There are few scientific geniuses in their ranks. The giants of physics were almost all [mystics](#). My first professional mentor [invented like Tesla did](#), with his inventions coming to him complete in his mind’s eye, and Dennis’ mind works similarly, except that his inventions were mainly in the marketing and entrepreneurial field.

Dennis is obviously a controversial figure, and has had no shortage of critics over the twenty years I have known him. However, as I discovered first-hand, [integrity is earth’s scarcest commodity](#), and almost without exception, Dennis’ critics were either people who tried to steal from him and failed (or they *did* steal from him, and realized their booty was not as lucrative as hoped), people who were being paid to beleaguer Dennis, as [the BPA Hit Man was](#), or people who fired potshots from their comfortable armchairs. In addition, many people have been caught in the crossfire of all the mayhem that has surrounded Dennis’ efforts, and many have lost their life’s savings and had their lives ruined. I have seen a great deal of carnage over the years. However, nobody has suffered more in Dennis’ adventures than Dennis himself. He has survived [combat](#), [murder attempts](#), [paralysis](#), [medical negligence](#), [starvation](#), [malnutrition](#), and [prison](#). Second place in the suffering department has been the people closest to him. [When I helped bury Mr. Professor in 2002](#), it was obvious that his premature death was directly related to his years with Dennis. [Mr. Financier had his life ruined in Washington](#), as Dennis’ company was destroyed. I will always be picking up the pieces of my shattered life. Dennis is not exactly living on the Riviera with his ill-gotten millions. Nearly his entire adult life has been lived in poverty, with the clothes on his back purchased in thrift stores, losing his teeth because he could not afford dental care, and so forth. However, with his unforgettable style and all the merciless libel and derision aimed Dennis’ way for the past thirty years or so, he is the face people remember, and he gets blamed for many things that were not his doing. The energy interests, both global and local, and their eager minions owe an awesome debt to humanity, not the least of which are all the people who were hurt as they overtly or subtly derailed Dennis’ efforts. An amazing fact is that [Dennis has probably been hurt more by his “allies” than he has by the Big Boys and their agents](#). Dennis constantly treads in dangerous territory.

I do not believe in [ideological approaches to the free energy issue](#), of which Dennis’ current religion approach is one, as was his Patriot approach. I doubt those approaches will work, but Dennis works with what he has and what he is. Persistence and integrity are two of the most vital keys to making free energy happen, traits that Dennis possesses in great abundance, so

he can never be totally counted out of the game. Personally, I am not into “faith” and have faint hope that messiahs can save us from ourselves, and I doubt I want them to. I think it is time for humanity to begin demonstrating self-responsibility and manifesting personal integrity. It may be the only way out of our self-created mess (but our [ET friends may help](#)). However, I have *never* seen a public criticism of Dennis’ efforts that was informed, intelligent and, most importantly, honest, at least until I read [Sterling Allan's recent comment on Dennis' efforts](#). A fair number of his observations I tended to agree with, and I contacted him, which led to writing this essay. However, people who are fixated on criticizing Dennis, without pursuing the lessons to be learned from his preposterous journey, are missing the point. The goal is free energy, something that has [already been done many times](#). Whether Dennis is a crook or not, or has a prayer with his approach or not, is not really the issue. It is about *somebody's* getting over the finish line.

Dennis is obviously a fast-talking combination of P.T. Barnum, a preacher and an entrepreneur. That is his public image, and there is significant truth behind it. I have seen him called a “snake-oil salesman” for the past twenty years. But does he have malicious intent? I have yet to meet a person who cares more for humanity than he does, and Dennis has always put his *life* where his mouth was.

When Dennis is playing pitchman he embellishes events, and I have told him so, particularly when he embellishes the facts around my participation or those I brought into the operation. The tale told in this essay is obviously quite dramatic, even ludicrous, and the straight truth is plenty spectacular enough. In Dennis’ books, particularly *My Quest* and *The Alternative* (both largely written when he was behind bars and could slow down), when Dennis relates the facts of his journey, he is telling it straight and even conservatively. For those who want a web-based rendering of the facts of Dennis’ life and efforts, he has many hours of streaming video on his site, and I have a [quiz on my site](#) that links to the pertinent facts of Dennis’ past. Dennis' writings regularly veer into right wing conspiratorial theorizing, which I believe is far from the most important aspect of the [free energy conundrum](#). The Big Boys are definitely out there and [have been actively mischievous](#), and Dennis has borne the brunt of their machinations, but they can only play their games with the power that humanity has *given* them. Dennis plays showman, but that attracts people who come for the show. The very same people who gave Dennis a standing ovation one day would cheer at his lynching the next, as that was a good show too. Crowds like that seemed to be little help in making free energy happen. Any effort to bring [free energy to the world will face many obstacles](#), but the inertia and easy manipulability of the masses presents the most formidable hurdle. The enemy is us.

This essay will now deal with Mr. Skeptic’s dishonesty. I present the facts of my relationship with him at [this link](#). I also inserted a [lengthy footnote](#) discussion of just why Mr. Skeptic’s [Skeptical Inquirer article](#) was dishonest. It was not libelous because Mr. Skeptic was hasty or sloppy or unintelligent. After months of interacting with him, it became obvious that he was

desperate to attribute criminal motivation to Dennis' efforts. That *Skeptical Inquirer* article was published months after I stopped interacting with Mr. Skeptic. The article was only about two pages long and was the crowning moment of his skeptical career. The only cited sources in it were from two libelous and obscure newspaper articles that presented false "facts" about the prosecutions and convictions of Dennis in Washington and California. Those articles stated that Dennis pled guilty to having criminal motivation, and *that* was what Mr. Skeptic sought. Mr. Skeptic had easy access to the official documents. He even published on his website part of my original website, which outlined the facts and documents, and Dennis' books also reproduce them, books that Mr. Skeptic claims to have carefully read. The official documents contradicted those easily disproved lies. Attributing criminal motivation to Dennis was the only thing that made Mr. Skeptic's crusade *appear* the least bit credible; accordingly, Mr. Skeptic knowingly lied, which was a criminal act. He even called his libelous article "funny" on his website, and has only escalated his accusatory rhetoric over the years. That is the point of this essay.

Mr. Skeptic attacked me in an Internet forum in 2003, and I am familiar with his disinformation style. [His initial post at the peswiki.com site](#) is representative of how he plies his trade. He began by stating that Dennis pled guilty to multiple felony counts, to make it *appear* that Dennis has criminal motivation. If he can make the reader believe *that*, then his job becomes easier. His statement about Dennis' pleading guilty is technically accurate, in a limited sense, but misrepresents the situation. Disinformation specialists usually use "facts" to establish their cases, at least a few of them. They then add supposition, rumor and half-truths, stripped from their context, and then construct their house of cards, hoping that uninformed audiences will be duped by it. Telling outright lies is unprofessional and can backfire, as it is doing here, which is another reason why I believe Mr. Skeptic is probably an amateur. I am about half convinced that Mr. Skeptic is free-lancing his efforts, and is not a paid provocateur as [Bill the BPA Hit Man](#) was. When I read Mr. Skeptic's article, I realized that he was dishonest, and his behavior since then has only reinforced that notion. I will never interact with him again. As a wise man once wrote, never debate a liar or a fool, as the audience will have trouble distinguishing who the liar or fool is.

The next section: [My Adventures](#) (254K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

My Adventures

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[Believing in the Easter Bunny](#)

[Getting the Bad News about the Easter Bunny](#)

[Hitting Rock Bottom and Meeting Dennis Lee](#)

[Chasing My Dream](#)

[Mr. Professor and Ventura](#)

[Make Them an Offer They Can't Refuse](#)

[Jail and Kangaroo Court](#)

[It is Darkest Before the Dawn](#)

[The Journey Continues](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

December 2005,

My childhood had a significant bearing on my adult experiences. From an early age, the idea instilled in me was that I must leave the world a better place, or the life I had lived was not worth much.

I was gifted in science and mathematics, and took it for granted that I would be involved in science somehow. It did not turn out as planned. I had a mentor of international reputation who was an engineer and inventor. His inventions revolutionized some industries, and some were so revolutionary that they were suppressed in order to preserve the status quo. One invention was considered the [world's most effective engine for powering a car](#). Another was a bomb that eliminated most conventional warfare without harming people (quickly suppressed by the Pentagon). Another was a circuit that revolutionized the electronics industry and earned the man who stole the invention the title of "Electronics Design Man of the Year." Although a government study devoted about \$10 million to analyzing his engine, it went nowhere, partly due to [auto industry inertia](#). During the hullabaloo over his engine, one of my mentor's well-connected associates told him that if he really thought his engine would make the internal combustion engine obsolete, he had better start making

his funeral plans.

I was a teenager when my mentor invented his engine, and I had visions of revolutionizing the energy industry and ending the insanity of producing energy by raping the planet. That was more than thirty years ago. What I could do about the world's energy situation when I was a teenager, I had no idea. I held the dream for many years and had the chance to try making my dream a reality. For that alone, I feel fortunate.

In the meantime, I was graduating from high school and going to college, studying biochemistry. Chemistry was my second love, an affair that began at about age twelve, after an infatuation with paleontology when I was about nine. I had vivid dreams about the elements, such as a dream about gallium. In my second year of college I came to the existential crisis that many young people encounter, and decided I did not want to spend my life in a chemistry lab. For the first time in my life I felt lost. If I would not become a chemist, what would I do with myself? I flailed around for months, seeking a direction.

I had been introduced to the paranormal and spirituality a few years earlier. [After forty hours of meditation training at age sixteen](#), I had dramatic experiences that demonstrated that everybody has innate extra-sensory perception abilities, and there is far more to earthly existence than meets the eye. From that moment forward I became an avid student of spirituality, and have studied that more deeply and intensely than all other subjects put together. When I was a teenager, studying Jesus' life and (what is now called) [channeled material](#), I wondered what practical use any of it would be, but I was enthralled. Colleges did not offer degrees in mysticism and it did not pay the bills, but I have never studied anything as enthusiastically.

I was nineteen, and had dropped my organic chemistry, calculus and physics classes, knowing that my life would not be lived as a scientist. I went from the top of my class in college science studies to dropping all my classes. I felt that I was careening toward disaster, a rocket wildly off course, not knowing where I would crash. One night, after months of flailing around, I hit rock bottom. Although I had meditation training and was studying spirituality, I had never really prayed, at least in the standard way. That night, as I lay in bed, I beseeched with all my soul for somebody to give me a clue. I had never experienced a "higher power" before, and although I had studied spirituality intensely, I was not *sure* that anybody would hear my plea. My plea was this: "If anybody can give me a hint about what to do, I desperately need your input. Please give me a sign, I beg you."

I fell into a dreamless sleep. The next morning as I lay in bed, looking across the room, my first waking thought was a voice speaking inside my head. The voice said, "Have you ever considered studying business?" I had nearly no idea what the voice was talking about. "Business?" I thought. "That sounds like a great idea, but what is it?"

My only academic perspective at that time was learning "important" stuff such as chemistry and physics, or "loafing" and studying English, history or social science. I had no idea I could study business in college. My father's career was spent working for the government. I called the counseling center at my college and said, "Are there any classes at your college where you study business? Is there such a thing as a degree in business?" I had been following a science/math curriculum throughout my academic career, and had about zero knowledge of the business world. The only thing that I knew about accountants was hearing about them on the news every April 15th. The counseling center said, "Sure, we have a business curriculum. We have business counselors here. We will set up an appointment for you for next week." I was on my way.

The next semester I took Introduction to Business and Bookkeeping 101. My mathematical mind gobbled up the bookkeeping. My professor said that accounting paid well. I began my introduction to the world of business and capitalism. I was taught that accounting was the language of business, about how superior capitalism was to communism, and how business was a great force of light in the world. I learned about Adam Smith in my economics classes. I was taught about the wonders of free markets and the invisible hand of competition. In my idealism I ate it up. My zeal for learning and my talent was fully brought to bear upon my business studies.

During my next year of business studies I worked as a janitor in an office building, cleaning the offices of attorneys, accountants, investment advisers and other businesses. I retrieved the *Wall Street Journal* and other business publications out of the trash and read them. I was seeing how business could be an ideal vehicle to serve one's self *and* humanity. I was over-idealizing the situation. I was not completely naïve, remembering the "[make your funeral plans](#)" comment my mentor received. Yet, I was a babe in the woods. I began playing the stock market with my savings, playing the capitalistic game at age nineteen. I played casino stocks, short sold, bought options, started to play the commodity futures game. I was gambling with my college fund. Somebody up there was looking out for me, as I just about broke even in all my gyrations, with thousand dollar swings in one day.

I was at the top of my class in my business studies. I decided that I would pursue an accounting degree. I went to a community college my first three years, then off to the university, playing in the big time. There were national accounting exams given to the university students. I got the highest score in the university's history. I went from being the chemistry prodigy to being the accounting prodigy, but my last year in college wore me out. I became fed up with academia and the rote exercises that can be found in every college curriculum.

I graduated in 1981, during the worst recession in forty years. I went to college in California where I was raised, but I was originally from Seattle. I wanted to go home, and did. A California kid did not have a prayer of getting into the Seattle Big Eight firms (the world's largest and most prestigious accounting firms, as of 2003 only four are left) during a deep recession, one that hit the Washington State economy hard.

After a sobering experience of working for a small CPA firm the winter of 1982, and being laid off a few weeks after April 15th, it was evidently more important at that life juncture to pursue the proper career path than live where I wanted. I moved to Los Angeles and joined a Big Eight firm. My winter spent working at the small CPA firm was a brutal introduction to the profession, but working in downtown Los Angeles was a deep dive into the "real world." It was a trial by fire. Those were my life's unhappiest years.

In America, downtown Los Angeles is the most conservative business district west of Manhattan, and as one of 700 professionals in my office I was thrown into a dog-eat-dog world. Those recruits fresh from college, as they began their CPA apprenticeship in the Big Eight, were called "Grunts," "Lambs to the Slaughter" and other terms. "Assume the audit position" was used to describe the auditor's life. As an auditor I traveled throughout the Los Angeles region, spent several months on audits out of town, and worked in Skid Row Los Angeles for several months. I experienced events such as passing by a dead Mexican-American man on the sidewalk as I was walking to lunch, having sneezing fits for months because the air pollution was so fierce, being accosted by beggars every day and so forth. I became street-wise fairly quickly.

I was the first male in my family in a hundred years [who did not serve in the military](#), but I experienced the corporate version of it. The regimentation was extreme. A mystical, non-materialistic vegetarian did not fit in. I was required to eat at restaurants everyday, and being a vegetarian was less acceptable back then than being a homosexual in the environment I worked in. I gave up being a vegetarian to work there, which affected my health. I was virtually [forced to drink alcohol](#), and developed a bad habit that I gave up in 2000.

The lambs were assigned mentors in the firm's hierarchy to help groom their careers. The sage advice I received from my mentors (they were trying to help me, and I liked them) was that my shoes were not shiny enough, I was not dazzling them at the phony weekly cocktail parties, and if I wanted to get ahead at the firm I had to crawl over the bodies of my peers.

The people I worked for, particularly the men (there was not one woman partner in the office when I began) who had attained the lucrative and coveted position of partner, were human wreckage, virtually all of them. They nearly all looked at least ten years older than they were. Many drank heavily, and I could not imagine living their lives. Their average income was \$150,000 per year (in 1983, in 2003 it is about \$300,000). Many of

my peers were determined to make it, and trampling each other on the way up was a minor hurdle in many minds. Not everybody was Machiavellian, but it was the most impersonal and least friendly working environment I have yet encountered.

The environment was bad enough, but what constantly nagged me were the challenges to my idealistic vision. I was not very bothered by the "I have a BMW, therefore I am" mentality that I saw in many of my peers and throughout the Los Angeles yuppie community, but I had a difficult time seeing how our audits benefited society. The collision of indoctrination and reality could be a harsh one for the lambs. I had been told that auditing provided a valuable safeguard against the excesses of capitalism. By performing audits of corporate America we insured that accurate financial statement information was being published, thereby ensuring a fair playing field in the capital and financial markets, but I was having a hard time seeing that happen. Here is a vignette to make it clearer.

Believing in the Easter Bunny

I did not know what auditing was when I graduated from college. Part of adjusting to the "real world" was making sense of the income I made and how much money the firm received for my efforts. During my final year in college, I worked as a cook and dishwasher in a "greasy spoon" restaurant, making \$3.50 an hour. With a diploma in hand, I made more than \$9.00 an hour and was being billed out at \$39. My first "busy season" (the winter months, when year-end audits are performed for corporations) was spent making photocopies, running errands and adding up columns of numbers. I was part of an army of auditors at a huge bank. Alongside me at the photocopier was a peer who had recently received his MBA at USC, and it was also his first busy season. He had the same disturbed sense of wonder that I did. Being an MBA, he was being billed out at \$42 an hour. One day, after a morning spent at the photocopier, he said, "That stack of copies just cost the client more than a hundred dollars."

The idealist in me tried making sense of my place in the scheme of things, and I wondered how I was contributing to society, particularly in light of the money that attended my efforts. I knew the party line about auditing being good for the business world and a benefit to society, but it was difficult to see it from the trenches.

After a few months on the job, when the busy season was over, there was a one-week training class for the new junior auditors. Near the week's end there was a "quiz the partner" session. A partner would come to the class and answer any question we had. We put our questions in a basket in order to have anonymous questions.

On that day, among the standard questions for the partner ("How much do partners make in the LA office?" "\$150,000 annual average," the partner replied) was mine: "How does auditing increase the world's real wealth?"^[1] There was a snort or two, then everybody began giggling in genuine humor, and I laughed with them, the question was so out of place for the setting. If somebody could have spoken for the group mind at that moment, it probably would have been approximately, "How delightful! Somebody still believes in the Easter Bunny."

The partner put on a straight face and gave the standard answer that auditing helped provide reliable financial information for the business community, so better investment and other business decisions could be made. A couple of years later I was on an audit with him, and saw how he really felt about the value of auditing.

I was with him on a savings and loan (S&L) audit. One day he was talking about an audit our firm had performed that blew up in our faces. As auditors, we issue "opinions" on our client's financial statements. That opinion is what the client pays for. It ends up on the client's annual report and their filings with the

SEC (Securities and Exchange Commission). The opinion usually reads something like: "We audited XYZ Corporation's financial statements and found them to be fairly presented in accordance with Generally Accepted Accounting Principles." In other words, we audited them and found them playing by the accounting rules. That is what we received a million dollars for, which was the standard fee for a large corporate audit in those days. Today, it is two or three times as much.

The audit opinion can state that the client played fair, while the financial statements themselves show a company on the ropes. That is not an audit failure, but if a company gets too close to the edge, there is a "going concern" principle that states if the company looks as if it may go out of business soon, the auditors are supposed to qualify their opinion. A qualified opinion is always bad news for any corporation, and auditors rarely issue them. Qualified opinions usually mean the firm is in serious trouble.

An audit "blowing up in our face" means that the auditors issued their standard unqualified opinion, and the company soon capsized. Auditors are not fortunetellers, but if a company goes out of business a few months after they issue "healthy" financial statements, and there is an unqualified audit opinion accompanying their statements, the auditors often are sued for a negligent audit. In some ways an audit is a crapshoot, because a future event that nobody foresaw can capsize the company, but the "deep pocket" theory means that shareholders and other folks left holding the bag will try extracting money out of *somebody* for the business failure. That is a risk of being an auditor. Partners physically sign the company's name to the audit opinion with a pen and ink. Every partner learns how to sign opinions with a signature that looks like every other partner's signature.

There we were, auditing an S&L that had melted down, blowing up in the faces of our predecessor auditors, and that partner who reassured me about the "Easter Bunny" was looking at the financial statement and audit opinion of another firm we audited that "blew up." He said, "That signature looks a little shaky to me." It was a joke about the partner's state of mind while signing the opinion, inferring that he felt in his bones that the opinion he was signing would someday haunt him.

Getting the Bad News about the Easter Bunny

There was an inherent conflict in my indoctrination versus reality. As auditors, we theoretically rendered independent opinions on our client's financial statements. Our clients paid our fee, and could choose another auditor if they wished. I did not understand that situation's implications in my early days. I was just trying to survive. In 1984, something happened that eventually made it clear. I helped audit one of the world's highest profile savings and loan (S&L) institutions. During my first two years at the firm I periodically heard a cynical sentiment regarding the worth of auditing, and no auditor ever relied on the work of another, but I had not yet figured it out. That S&L audit eventually made it clear. We were brought in to audit the S&L immediately after the previous auditors had been fired. That situation was called a "high exposure" audit. "High exposure" meant that the likelihood of the auditors being sued was high.

The previous several months had seen that highflying S&L run out of money. They were posting record revenues and profits, until one day they were unable to pay their creditors and depositors. Then it all came crumbling down. Suddenly, those record profits appeared illusory. There was a 1930s-style bank run, and the federal government stepped in to keep its doors open. The S&L's shareholders filed a several-hundred-million-dollar lawsuit against the previous auditors. I was the junior auditor on that "high exposure" audit. On an audit such as that, the lambs did not do the work, but my firm flew in real estate and banking experts from our offices across the nation, and managers and partners did work usually done by the lambs. I coordinated hotel rooms, rental cars and the administrative logistics of the audit. I was also the right hand of the partner who ran the audit. The senior manager who worked with him (who made partner a couple of years later) was my direct supervisor. Those two men were some of the nicest human beings I ever encountered

in public accounting. The reason they were on that audit was probably because they were such nice guys. People were not exactly volunteering for the job. I was on the job as a lost waif in the office. Although I was the lowest man on the audit's totem pole, they treated me as if I was a peer. I was treated better than I ever was in the Los Angeles office.

On my first day there, my manager briefed me, telling me what lead to our audit. He said, "As usual, you can make the numbers say whatever you want to until the money runs out." I had heard it before, but did not really understand it. That S&L became one of the highest profile and earliest meltdowns of the entire [Savings and Loan Scandal](#). The S&L had been doing creative accounting, and had concocted bogus transactions to hide their losses. They abandoned basic accounting principles. By itself, that was not the crime of the century, but was common corporate activity, unfortunately. It was our job to make sure that did not happen, applying Generally Accepted Accounting Principles (called GAAP in the profession) to their books. As we began auditing the S&L, it became obvious that our predecessor auditors had abandoned basic accounting and auditing principles, and allowed their client to bully them into signing off on fictitious financial statements.

The gist of the problem was this: the Holy Grail of capitalism is profits. Corporations only exist to make profits for their owners. Over the years, I have seen numerous instances of corporate executives making a sagacious statement that goes like this, "Gentlemen, you must not forget that we are not in the business of (fill in the blank; I have seen everything from "producing eggs" to "treating patients" to "making cars"), we are in the business of making money."^[2] When the corporate elite makes those astute observations, they are repeated endlessly in corporate halls as mottoes to never forget.

With the drive for profit being the ultimate reason for a corporation's existence, corporate managers have the incentive to report the largest possible profits. There are principles of accounting, such as the conservatism principal, the revenue realization principal, the objectivity principle, the matching principle and many others that supposedly guide accounting practices, so profits are not overstated or counted before they are "in the bank." The Big Eight's very existence depended on laws passed during the 1930s in the wake of Wall Street's collapse and the Great Depression, designed to help ensure those events would never be repeated. Our job was to keep corporations honest in reporting their profits.

At the university, my auditing professor told us why the Big Eight partners made so much money. He said it was because sophisticated professional judgment was required to render an independent audit opinion. My professor said that such highly qualified professionals, with their sophisticated auditing practices, which entailed numerous levels of review, did not come cheaply. He said if the government took over the auditing profession, they would create bureaucratic guidelines so that a monkey could do an audit. They would produce substandard audit results and the profession would be ruined. With no frame of reference other than his, I believed it.

On that S&L audit, even I could see that our predecessor auditors were signing off on ridiculous accounting practices, things a lamb could have spotted. How could a highflying Big Eight firm, with its highly paid, pin-stripe-suited auditors, approve such phony financial statements? After a month on that audit, the partner in charge, my manager and I went to lunch. The partner said, "If you look at what (our predecessor auditor) approved in their audits, it is shocking what they signed off on. Yet, if we had been in their shoes, I'm not sure we would have done any differently." He was the nicest partner I ever knew, and his candor that afternoon was a major influence in helping me figure it out.

What he said did not fully sink in until years later, when the Savings and Loan Crisis became headline news in 1988. That partner was saying that the predecessor auditors had allowed themselves to be bullied by their client (the S&L) into signing off on bogus financial statements. How could they be bullied, with all those accounting standards, levels of review, and highly honed professional judgment? To put it bluntly: by a million-dollar audit fee. If an auditor proved too stubborn in applying GAAP to the S&L's financial statements, the S&L would merely hire a more pliant auditing firm. For a million-dollar fee, the partner who lost the

account because he refused to see the financial statements the client's way could ruin his career.

A few years before that audit, the CPA profession was deregulated, in a sense. The "free market" ideology of the time, exemplified by Ronald Reagan and his administration, created the acceptability of doctors, lawyers and CPAs to begin getting "competitive," advertising and trying to take business away from each other. It brought capitalistic principles to the professions.

The notion of CPA firms rendering "independent" audit opinions became a farce. Those were the go-go years for Reagan's boys. [Greed was a virtue](#) in 1984. Michael Milken, Ivan Boesky, Donald Trump and other capitalistic heroes dominated the scene. By 1984, only two years after Reagan deregulated the savings and loan industry, the writing was on the wall. What we saw on our audit was typical throughout the industry. The S&L we audited was just one of the first to run out of money. What my manager said was true: as long as a company has money in the bank, it can get compliant auditors to sign off on virtually any financial statement. For a million-dollar audit fee, independence goes flying out the window.

That crime was far greater in the S&L industry. Take an industry such as energy, for instance. In theory, if Exxon goes out of business, its shareholders lose their money (this was originally written in 1998; in the 2002 update, I could have inserted "[Enron](#)" for Exxon). At least that is the theory. Capitalism, profits and market discipline all sound nice, but when a corporate giant is on the ropes, our government runs to the rescue with taxpayer money to bail them out. Americans older than me should easily remember the government bailouts of Lockheed and Chrysler. U.S. Government bailouts and interventions have propped up industries such as aerospace, automobiles, steel and semiconductors. In theory, shareholders take the risk if the business fails. In banking however, with deposit insurance, the government, which is ultimately funded by the taxpayers, guarantees the liabilities of the bank or S&L. Banking is a regulated industry, where the government has assumed a great deal of the risk. Bank and S&L liabilities are essentially guaranteed by public money. The deal for that protection was to adhere to certain regulations. Banks and S&Ls were limited in the kinds of loans they could make, the interest they could pay on their deposits, etc. The public was ultimately the rock that stood behind the bank, making that \$100,000 of deposit insurance per account mean something.

If anything, the public accounting profession had a larger duty to perform independent audits on regulated corporations such as banks and S&Ls because a bank failure would ultimately risk the taxpayers' money, not just a bunch of rich shareholders' money. In a regulated industry there is an extra level of auditing and accountability, in theory. Along with fancy Big Eight auditors there are also governmental auditors (federal and state) looking over the bank's shoulders, making sure the public's interest was being looked after, and banks were acting prudently. [Ronald Reagan](#), in the interest of "getting the government off of the public's back," began gutting the government agencies that regulated industries such as banking.

The nature of Reagan's deregulation was insane (or diabolically sane) and ushered in the S&L failure. Reagan "deregulated" the prudence side of the industry, letting S&Ls invest in almost anything they wanted, while letting them give out whatever interest rate to depositors they wished, while *raising* the deposit insurance from \$40,000 to \$100,000. Those acts dramatically shifted the risk from the S&Ls to the taxpayer. It let the S&Ls "go to Vegas" with speculative real estate deals, giving out whatever interest rate they wanted, and increased the weight of the bag the taxpayer would hold if it all came crashing down. It is said that organized crime rings avidly watched the deregulation bill make its way through Washington, rubbing their hands with anticipation. It was obvious to those with eyes to see where Reagan's "rescue package" was headed.

If my profession had been honest, and the auditing profession structured to eliminate the conflict of interest of corporations being able to hire any auditor they wanted, the S&L crisis would have never happened. The alarm bells would have been going off back in 1983 throughout the industry, and something would have been done about it. The S&L industry was already doomed because of the inflation of the 1970s, related to the oil price shocks of OPEC. Increasing computer technology also eliminated much of the reason for S&Ls to exist.

The price tag to responsibly phase out the industry would have been less than \$10 billion in 1983. The number did not start growing large until about 1986.

What happened was avoidable. The Big Eight was not responsible for creating the S&L crisis, which was the result of global political-economic factors, corrupt politicians, greedy S&L executives and the land owners who made the really big money in the scandal. Many books dissect the scandal. Although we did not create the crisis, our prostitution for the audit fee, which was profession-wide, helped a \$10 billion problem become a \$400 billion (in today's dollars) disaster.[\[3\]](#)

When it came time to protect the public's interest, which was the only reason our profession existed, we were busy kissing our clients' backsides. As it stands today, the public accounting profession is worthless. More than half of the Big Six's (now Big Four) revenues come from those audits. Back in 1984, the annual U.S. auditing revenues of the Big Eight were a few billion dollars. In 2004 they were about \$10 billion. The inherent conflict of interest that existed in the profession in 1984 is still there. They have made some minor attempts at reform, but auditors *cannot* render independent audit opinions if the auditee pays their fee, and can choose another auditor if they come up with the "wrong" answer. I have no confidence that when the next financial scandal looms on the horizon, the Big Six will sound the early alarm (again, the [Enron Scandal](#) happened four years after this was originally drafted, and now it is the "Big Four"). If they are financial cops, they are cops on the take.

Remember the movie *Snow White*? The Seven Dwarfs worked in a gem mine, and at day's end, they happily marched home, singing their song. Dopey was the last one out. He shut the door, locked it, and left the key on a peg next to the door. The Big Eight was as valuable in protecting the public's interest as that door was in protecting the gem mine. I did not completely figure it out until the price tag of hundreds of billions of dollars was announced immediately after George Bush was elected in 1988. Bush's son Neil was on the board of Silverado Savings in Denver, and helped ride it into the ground to the tune of \$1 billion taxpayer dollars, and the S&L scandal was kept quiet until George Bush was elected.[\[4\]](#)

Money does not evaporate in such a scandal. It goes into somebody's pockets. The S&L crisis was a defrauding of the public from beginning to end, and a great deal of criminal activity was engaged in, in addition to all those riverboat gamblers running S&Ls, lighting cigars with \$100 bills and funding "see through" office buildings. There were S&L execs who went from one S&L to the next, looting it until it went under, then another S&L would hire them where the pattern was repeated, the CIA laundering drug money through them, and sheer Mafia gangsterism.[\[5\]](#) The scandal is dealt with more fully at this [link](#).

The other main activity the Big Six firms engage in is tax accounting. I had largely figured out that game when I was still in college. I was determined that I would never do professional tax accounting. That goal lasted a couple of months, as that first tax season at the small CPA firm in Seattle saw me doing nothing but tax returns for my three-month stint there. The theory given for why professionals are needed so citizens can properly pay their taxes is that the deductions available under the tax code are a benign form of governance. The theory is that offering financial incentives for certain kinds of economic activities, and financial disincentives for others, is far less coercive than other methods of state power. That was what I was told in school, which is probably still the drill today. I believed it, even if I did not believe *in* it. I now realize that I was sold another bill of goods. For instance, the rationale for the capital gains deduction was presented to me as a way to encourage investment, risking capital for a higher return than mere interest at the bank, or with bonds. I believed it, with my capitalistic indoctrination.

As I have been waking up over the years, the left's literature has allowed me to see that capital gains deduction in a new light. If somebody works at [McDonald's](#) or [drives a truck](#), the sweat of their brow is taxed at one rate. If somebody sits on their backside, "investing" their wealth in stocks, the money rolling in as passive income is taxed at a lesser rate. That is a neat scam. When I did tax returns professionally, I performed tax research, and one cannot spend much time doing that before finding tax laws so obscure that one wonders if they apply

to even ten people. It becomes obvious that rich people write the tax laws. Legislators promoting appropriate economic activity did not write those obscure deduction laws. They are written at the behest of rich people (and large corporations), using their power to lobby congress with their wealth, giving them tremendous tax breaks.

How did I ever believe that baloney? All those tax laws and obscure deductions take a progressive tax system and eliminate its progressive features. Corporate income taxes have steadily declined during the past couple generations. The public accounting profession is a parasite. Its professionals spend years being trained in tax law so the rich can avoid paying taxes. During those glorious Reagan-Bush years, regressive features were increasingly added to the tax system. For instance, they kept raising the Social Security rate, which is a tax that begins at the first dollar people earn. The rationalization is that it is paying for the retirement of working people. The reality is that the increased flows into the coffers of government on raising Social Security rates gets appropriated to cover the federal deficit. The net effect was another transfer of money from the poor to the rich. All those tax cuts the Reagan-Bush people rammed through, while simultaneously raising a regressive tax such as Social Security, had a net effect of transferring money from the poor to the rich. Those kinds of mechanisms have made wealth in the United States so concentrated. In 1997 the richest one-percent of Americans had 39.1% of the wealth, a share that had doubled since the 1970s.[\[6\]](#)

On a global scale, the wealth concentration is far worse, although it is hard to append much responsibility to CPA firms. The richest 400 people in the world have about the net worth of the poorest three billion, for a wealth ratio of nearly ten-million-to-one. That is one effect of [global capitalism](#) and our global economy. It has been happening for the past five hundred years, as the West conquered the world. The global disparity in wealth has never been greater, and there is no sign it will get any better. The rich are getting richer as never before, and people are starving to death across the planet while Americans are the [history's fattest people](#).

The current system that has been carefully constructed is how the rich keep getting richer. On the federal level of the U.S. government, the tax breaks and subsidies given to the rich are [more than three times larger](#) than the transfers made to the poor. Fixed wages with unlimited profit potential (supposedly because the capitalists take the "risk") is another mechanism. In the end, brute force is what keeps the rich getting richer, as any nation that tries opting out of the global capitalist system is bombed, invaded or otherwise bludgeoned, such as Vietnam, Chile, Cuba, Nicaragua, etc., etc. Corporate propaganda is part of the system, as [they own the media](#). The manipulation of the [international banking system](#) is another part of it. The phenomenon is multi-faceted.

Hitting Rock Bottom and Meeting Dennis Lee

For audits and tax preparation, CPA firms provide about zero public benefit, but take in about \$20 billion per year in the U.S. If our government were honest, the Securities and Exchange Commission would have taken over the audit field long ago. CPA firms are so rich that they have their hooks quite deeply into the SEC. It is known in economics jargon as "[capturing the regulator](#)" which means that the government has been corrupted by the very industries it regulates, and no longer looks after the public interest. I finally realized that my profession was worthless.

The sixty and seventy hour weeks during the busy season of auditing took their toll. I began suffering from stress symptoms. There were many factors, but sixty-hour weeks, having to change my diet, attend endless phony social functions and having a hard time believing in what I was doing had a cumulative effect.

In early 1986, I was looking to get out of public accounting and find a job in Los Angeles in "industry." One day in February of 1986, I hit rock bottom. I was at the end of my rope, shaking from stress, with eyes that looked like

a raccoon's, dreading the next day. For the second and so far last time in my life, I went to bed while sending out a desperate plea to the cosmos, asking for a clue. I had done my best, and felt backed into a corner with no way out. I even considered taking a clerical position, as long as it was close to home. What happened the next morning was not as dramatic as when the [voice told me to study business](#), but during my first waking hour the voice snuck up on me, whispering, "Well, what do you have to lose? You can starve in Seattle as easily as you can starve here, and you would like it there better." It was like a brilliant day dawning after a long, black night. I was practically jumping up and down.

The manager I worked for on that S&L audit was helping me leave the company on my own terms. He put me on the payroll to stay at home and look for work as long as I needed to. I called him up that morning, which was a Tuesday, telling him that I was moving to Seattle. I arrived in Seattle the next Monday and moved in with my grandparents. I spent a day getting my résumé updated, and then began looking for work. On Thursday, I had a meeting with an executive search firm, which are called "headhunting" firms in the business. The recruiter told me that in a month or so I would easily find something to my liking.

I went home that afternoon, ready for the long haul of finding work. I was in my paradise, hiking in the Cascade Mountains every week. That voice was right: I would be far happier starving in Seattle than in Los Angeles. The next morning I was lying in bed at about 9 a.m., still asleep. The phone rang and I heard my grandmother's slow footsteps as she came to tell me that I had a phone call. It was the recruiter I had spoken to the previous afternoon. He asked me if I could be ready for an interview that afternoon with a "solar company." It felt as if a lightning bolt hit me. It turned out to be the company owned by Dennis Lee.

When I found out what they were doing, I bowled over the controller who interviewed me. There were no other contenders for the job after I was finished. A week later I interviewed with Dennis and was hired on the spot, to begin work the next day.

When I met him, Dennis was [marketing a heat pump](#) that he had sold for several years. A serendipitous cowboy [invented a "solar heat pump" in 1974](#) during the first energy crisis. Standard heat pumps today get what is known as a Coefficient of Performance ([COP](#)) of between two and three. In 1986, they averaged about a two. That meant that for every unit of electricity used to run a heat pump, two units of heat would be delivered into a home. The heat pump Dennis sold got a COP as high as twelve, and had done as high as a COP of five in Minnesota in January. It was two-to-three times as efficient as standard heat pumps. Dennis had been selling them on the East Coast for years, where customers would switch from oil or gas heating to his heat pump, and they would save seventy percent in operating costs versus heating with fossil fuels. It is still the best heating system the world market has ever seen.

Dennis had a [marketing plan was sheer genius](#). For \$4000 dollars he could fund the cost of marketing, manufacturing and installing his heat pump. He would sell the heat pump for \$10,000, the customer would make a \$4000 down payment that the federal government would refund to the customer, and the \$6000 dollar balance would be paid by the customer over several years, based on proven savings. The customers risked none of their own money. Virtually everybody who ever heard of the deal went for it. What did they have to lose? For years, Dennis could not get any financiers to back his plan. Financiers, rich men and entrepreneurs got involved, but nobody ever saw the genius of Dennis' plan. Their attitude was almost universally, "This is a great piece of equipment, the price is \$10,000 cash." They never realized that a customer would not part with \$10,000 for a piece of equipment they were not sure worked. Dennis removed the customer's risk, but the money would not be completely collected for several years. Businessmen rarely think that far ahead, not when they smell the quick kill. When Dennis had his companies stolen time after time, the people who stole them thought the gold was the system, and promptly discarded Dennis' "crazy" marketing plans. They promptly all went out of business.

The Discover Card is a watered down version of [a card Dennis invented](#) years before he got into the energy business. As a marketer and entrepreneur, Dennis is an Einstein. I saw his genius immediately.

Because of my mentor when I was young, I became a student of genius, and knew what it looked like. Genius is simple, and turns ideas upside down or inside out, looking at the problem without the presumptions that blind most people. Dennis definitely had that knack.

Soon before the Mafia and his business associates stole his company for the last time on the East Coast, that time even stealing his personal possessions, leaving him and his family with only the clothes on their backs, Dennis was on the brink of having a household name corporation put up [\\$1 billion to carpet America with his heat pumps](#). The chairman of the board saw Dennis' genius. Finally, Dennis stood in front of somebody who understood. Just as they were getting to the deal's short strokes, his greedy business associates collapsed his company while stealing hundreds of thousand dollars from him. Soon after that, the Mafia stole what was left, and Dennis had to start again from scratch.

After a several month relationship with a rich business associate in [Yakima](#) who also did not understand, one day Dennis had enough. Mr. Rich was telling people that he did not need Dennis anymore. Dennis bid Mr. Rich goodbye, packed his family into a beat-up station wagon, and drove over the mountains to Seattle with twenty dollars in his wallet and no place to sleep. That was in October of 1984, and Dennis sold 1000 systems in a few months, and tried carpeting Puget Sound with them.

Dennis figured the job would only get done by doing it himself. His Seattle strategy was selling thousands of systems before he had financing, and maybe tens of millions of dollars of sales would finally get a financier's attention. In the meantime, he was trying to attract the electric companies' interest. He thought he would be their hero, bringing the energy conservation that their ads said they desperately needed. They rebuffed him at every opportunity. He was surprised, but would not let that stop him, and sold systems as fast as he could. The Renewable Energy Tax Credit expired in 1985, and no system installed after December 31, 1985 would qualify for the credit.

Although Dennis did not figure out who was behind the vendetta for a long time, the electric companies pulled the strings and wiped out his company, and a corporate hit man was responsible for the [death of one of Dennis' employees](#).

The most complete rendition of Dennis' Seattle experiences is in *My Quest*, written from his jail cell in 1988-1989.^[7] By the end of 1985, Dennis' company had endured media smears, a fraudulent consumer protection lawsuit filed by the Attorney General's office, numerous break-ins and sabotages of their facility, bomb threats, theft of their phone equipment, attempted theft of all their records, surprise visits by the fire department and OSHA, a threatened investigation by the IRS, pressure being put on his financier, his suppliers, his customers, and his employees by various parties, such as the corporate hit man, the Attorney General's office and the courts. A [fraudulent bankruptcy suit](#) filed by the hit man and a few gullible employees he manipulated into filing with him [capped off the circus](#). The Attorney General's office was involved with the hit man. They possessed documents he stole from the company, which they produced when Dennis threatened an FBI probe of their files.^[8] The media splashed the company in the newspaper and the evening news, which scared away customers and employees, and shook up others, such as the financier. The electric companies were mobilizing all their forces to wipe out the threat of a superior technology.

When I joined the company in March of 1986, it was in its death throes. In June 1986 I witnessed the theft of Dennis' company, and my boss, the controller, engineered it, [while the employees cheered](#). The financier had his company stolen two weeks before Dennis' in a move that the financier believes was part of a conspiracy.^[9] I lost [plenty of innocence](#) back then. I received one paycheck before the company stopped making payroll. I was so on fire that I worked three months for free until the company was stolen. I was reverberating from the lightning bolt that hit me in March. Dozens of employees were hanging around the office, seemingly loyal to the cause. I felt a comradeship that I had never had before. I felt surrounded by people who were committed to making the world a better place, and saw Dennis' vision. When I saw that their loyalty was to their paycheck,

I had a valuable learning experience, although not a fun one.

Dennis was essentially run out of Washington. A member of the Washington version of the SEC attended the shareholders' meeting where Dennis' company was stolen, where those "loyal" employees showed their true colors. The representative calmly watched it happen, subpoenaing Dennis immediately before the company was stolen, seemingly trying to find him at fault for having his company stolen.

Chasing My Dream

After seeing the outrageous and criminal acts engaged in by the authorities and others, Dennis felt their next move would be for the police to "find" a barrel of heroin in his closet. He left the state in June, moving to Chicago and soon to Boston, trying to rebuild the venture. Although all I had seen was bloody ruin, [my spiritual training](#) came in handy. I could spot a great soul. I saw who Dennis was, and was sold on him. Of the hundreds of employees Dennis had in Seattle, I was the only one who followed him to Boston.[\[10\]](#) Months of working without pay had reduced me to moving back in with my grandparents, working as a temporary employee, and saving a few hundred dollars so I had gas money to drive to Boston. After years of trying to live in Seattle, I was leaving it to chase a crazy dream. It was one of the hardest things ever did. In November of 1986, with tears in my eyes, leaving behind a girlfriend who soon ended the relationship, I drove out to Boston.

I went to Boston with nothing more than the promise from Dennis that he had a floor I could sleep on. The day after I got there, Dennis and I met with a company that had developed a turbine that ran off a 200° F heat source. Dennis got the idea of hooking up his heat pump to that turbine and make "free electricity." It was a naïve idea at first, and the [Second Law of Thermodynamics](#) said it could not be done. I became far more involved than I thought I would. I raised money to get us going again, a couple months after I got there, and I brought in my [old mentor](#) to take a look at what we were doing. He thought we had a chance, and even gave his world's best engine to Dennis, to try marrying with his heat pump panels to try making free energy, which my mentor thought was possible.

In Boston, in early 1987, Michael Dukakis was readying his run for the presidency, and one of the state's big political issues was the Seabrook nuclear power plant. Seabrook was in New Hampshire, next to Massachusetts. Dukakis was getting political mileage out of opposing the reactor, and if Massachusetts did not approve the evacuation plan for Seabrook, they could prevent it from going online. We had unwittingly landed in the middle of a huge energy controversy.

I first became aware of "[Astroturf](#)" organizations in Boston. An Astroturf organization is a fake grassroots organization, bankrolled by corporate America or other powerful interests, but camouflaged to appear as private citizens merely agitating for their own cause. The first Astroturf organization I encountered (at least that I knew was one) was called the Coalition for Reliable Energy. While we presented our first "Greatest Energy Shows on Earth," the Coalition for Reliable Energy began a media blitz on Boston television and newspapers. The Coalition presented itself as an amalgamation of grandmothers and concerned citizens, making sure that New England had reliable energy and that all energy sources were considered. At the end of their first TV ad, a grandmotherly figure mumbled, "and nuclear energy options." That happened in January and February of 1987.

In a rare instance of mainstream investigative journalism, just as the Coalition's ad blitz was firing up, the *Boston Globe* revealed that 95 percent of the Coalition's funding came from the Seabrook Association, which consisted of the electric companies that invested in the Seabrook nuclear power plant. The Astroturf organization was unmasked.

Probably, not many people took their ads seriously after that revelation, but the ad blitz kept coming all spring. By the time we left Boston in June 1987, the ads became brazen. They featured a thirty-something professional man telling the viewer, "You will have to pay for the Seabrook nuclear power plant whether you use it not, so why not use it?" It was perhaps the most flagrant exercise of corporate propaganda I have ever seen.

The *Boston Globe* continually ran front-page coverage of the Seabrook protests. Demonstrators chained themselves to the reactor's front gates almost daily. At that time, we were holding "free energy" shows, telling our audience that the best way to eliminate nuclear energy was to make it obsolete. We met with a local protest group that staged many of the protests. We presented them a plan for the electric companies to pursue free energy technology and end the nuclear insanity. Later, one of the group's high-ranking members told Dennis that their real motivation was not opposing nuclear energy, per se. The person bankrolling them owned land that could be sold at a high price for a hydroelectric project. They were proposing a hydroelectric solution, and their sponsor would get rich in the process. That was disillusioning. It appeared to be another Astroturf organization, although most of its members likely did not realize it.

At a show we had a quarter mile from Seabrook's front gates, Dennis announced his intention to buy the reactor. He proposed to use the containment vessel as a heat storage facility, using free energy machines to supply the electricity. The mouse roared. Before the electric companies in Washington wiped his company out, Dennis' stock in his company was worth \$48 million. He barely escaped the state with the clothes on his back.

Dennis made a multibillion-dollar offer to buy the nuclear reactor, but to never put nuclear fuel in it. At the show, attended by about 200 people, Dennis announced his offer to the Seabrook Association. The next day he mailed his proposal. The Seabrook Association chairman of the board called our hole-in-the-wall office the next day, within minutes of receiving the package. He said he could come immediately to our office to discuss our proposal. *That* was a much different reception than Dennis received in Seattle.

Publicly, the Washington electric companies said they knew little about Dennis except that he was crooked and his technology was a scam. Soon after we arrived in Boston, a banker we encountered called the BPA to check out Dennis' story. He called the BPA switchboard, asking if anyone could tell him about Dennis Lee, which was a strange way of approaching a huge bureaucracy such as the BPA. The next day he received a call from the BPA's conservation department. The banker told us that the BPA man was extremely cautious, but admitted that, "For three months, all our entire department thought about was Dennis Lee." That was the same organization that hired the hit man, the same organization that publicly said "Dennis who?"

The Seabrook chairman invited Dennis to his office to discuss the proposal. The next week Dennis and his engineer (Mr. Engineer) went to the Seabrook Association's palatial offices, and were given the red carpet treatment. The chairman and his pals talked about working with Dennis and his free energy ideas, thinking they might work. Dennis said it was almost amusing to watch them in action. Those were not nice guys, but acted as if Dennis was a long lost son. Dennis could see their masks slip at times, and it was evident that they were playacting.

Later, when Dennis composed a press release of his offer for the chairman's approval, the chairman began backpedaling, and it became obvious that placating him was their goal all along. In Boston and California, we had friends on the inside, high in the electric company hierarchies, who told us things. We heard that New England's electric companies convened secretly to decide what response to give to a wild man selling free electricity machines. Instead of the snuff job Dennis got in Seattle for merely selling a heat pump, at the secret meetings the consensus was they might have to cooperate with us.

As far as I know, the *Boston Globe* has never mentioned Dennis. To add a weird touch to those days, electric company representatives attended our Greatest Energy Shows, something they admitted when Dennis met with them. Right after one show, in the *Boston Globe's* weekly science section they interviewed a scientist who thought we could mine moon dust, extracting an isotope of helium from it, thereby solving our energy

problems.^[11] It was as though they knew exactly what they were doing, and rubbed our faces in it. They ran front-page news of protests at Seabrook, while ignoring our show at the Seabrook gates. While we received the red carpet treatment from the Seabrook chairman, and while New England's electric companies held secret meetings about us, the *Boston Globe* ran an article about mining the moon to solve our energy problems.

I lost more naïveté in Boston by witnessing a media blackout on us, seeing Orwellian ads from the Astroturf Coalition for Reliable Energy, reading moon dust articles and other oddities. The electric gangsters in Washington had not forgotten about Dennis. The Attorney General's hatchet lady, who repeatedly lied and bloodied her hands while trying to destroy Dennis' company, quit her job soon after her final confrontation with him. She came to his office one day on a document-hunting expedition, but Dennis had her meet his employees, who grilled her for two hours about her underhanded actions toward the company. Much later, Dennis found himself sitting next to her on an airplane flight. He asked her how she slept at night, and she gave the Nuremberg defense, that she was only following orders. Then she said, "But you will notice that I do not work for them anymore." Her hands got too bloody, her conscience finally woke up, and she quit the Attorney General's office.

The Attorney General's office had a pinch hitter that sicced the authorities on Dennis everywhere he went after they ran him out of Washington. Ms. Pinch Hitter contacted the authorities immediately after Dennis arrived in Boston, and she duly warned a Middlesex County District Attorney Investigator that the criminal of the century was in his backyard. The investigator swaggered into Dennis' office a few days later, telling Dennis he looked forward to throwing him into jail, and other officious threats. In Ventura, a telling document surfaced regarding the attacks on Dennis. That Middlesex investigator wrote to the sheriff's deputy who finally threw Dennis in jail on fabricated charges. The investigator wrote:

"Mr. Lee was attempting to duplicate his Washington operation in our state. We were attempting to proceed criminally against Mr. Lee but, without clear cut violations of our law, could only proceed in the manner in which we did. I don't believe our AG completed their investigation before Mr. Lee left our state."^[12]

In other words, the investigator tried jailing Dennis based on the word of Ms. Pinch Hitter, but failed to find a law that Dennis broke. Given enough time, they would have found something, but we left the state before they could attack. They could not find a violation in California either, but that did not prevent them from making it up. The Secretary of State's office was sharpening its axe as we were leaving Boston, trying to snare us in a securities law violation. They started a fishing expedition just before we left. The red carpet was going to turn redder with our blood if we stayed in Boston much longer.

Mr. Professor and Ventura

In the meantime, I sent a Christmas card to the professor who inspired me to become an accountant. Mr. Professor was the best teacher I ever had. We kept in touch over the years, and I told him what his crazy student was doing in Boston. Over the years, Dennis' organizations have interfaced with tens of thousands of people. Dennis has had plenty of public exposure over the years, on TV and hundreds of radio talk shows. Millions of people have heard of Dennis in America. Mr. Professor's response to me was the rare time that somebody became excited about our project because of its potential benefit to humanity. Talk is cheap. Before it was over, Mr. Professor showed what he was made of. He displayed a level of integrity I have only seen in a few people.

Mr. Professor wanted to help bankroll the venture. I had tied into technical talent in California, and Mr. Professor was putting up more money. We moved to Ventura (where I was raised) in the summer of 1987. I would not have believed it at the time, but our experiences before Ventura were the easy days. In the fall of 1987, my mentor came forward with his [hydraulic heat engine](#), and we started flying high. We were soon approaching gross revenues of a million dollars a month, selling informational kits on how to make, sell and install the heat pump.

On New Year's Day of 1988, we became involved with [Victor Fischer](#), who had also invented a hydraulic heat engine and built some prototypes in Australia, prototypes coming closer to the [Carnot ideal](#) than any engine ever developed. On January 12, 1988, Dennis publicly announced that the technology was in hand that could make free energy a possibility. In the crowd was a deputy sheriff investigator, whom I will call Mr. Deputy. He talked to one of our administrative people a few weeks earlier. The Better Business Bureau was forwarding requests on us to Mr. Deputy, and our employee called him, asking what was happening. Our employee used to be a sheriff's deputy himself, and knew that if our company was doing something wrong, the investigator was legally obligated to tell us when we asked him. Mr. Deputy replied that all was fine and that he would stop investigating us.[\[13\]](#)

Mr. Deputy was in the audience on January 12th, and the next day he was readying a search warrant for a [raid on our facility](#). On January 14th at about 10:00 a.m. I stood in our company's parking lot and watched ten cars speed into our driveway in a cloud of dust. Mr. Deputy, leaping out of the lead car, asked me if the building behind me was ours. The raid was on. Not only was Mr. Deputy guilty of entrapment, telling us three weeks earlier that we were not breaking any laws, but the raid was the first time I experienced felonious acts engaged in by law enforcement personnel.

The raid had a few purposes, as we discovered later. The first was the felony act: the raid was an espionage exercise. Thirteen armed deputies raided our facility, rampaging through our building and herding everybody into our conference room. We were photographed and had to produce identification before we could leave the building. All employees were arrested. Then they kicked everybody out of our building and occupied it for hours.

That building was where our technical material was. Our chief researcher's office (whom I will call Mr. Researcher) was located next to our machine shop and research area. In his office were technical details regarding the free energy prototypes we were developing (including Fischer's, and technical material on inventions other inventors had sent us), and Mr. Researcher's personal papers. The research facility had mirrored windows so people could not see into the building during daylight. Mr. Researcher and the machinist went behind the building where the mirrored windows were, after being kicked out of it. While standing behind the building, they suddenly saw into the building because it was momentarily brighter inside the building than outside. Why was it brighter inside the building? It was due to the repeated flash of a camera. When the camera flashed, they could see inside the building. The door to Mr. Researcher's office was open to the machine shop, and with each flash, they could see where it came from. The sheriff's deputies were in Mr. Researcher's office, rolling out the blueprints on his desk and photographing them. It was an outright espionage expedition.

About an hour later, hours before their official search began, they were seen taking boxes out of the building, loading them into a car and driving off. In those boxes were all the papers in Mr. Researcher's office. After they stole the technical data they suddenly became cooperative, and eventually allowed me to accompany them on their official search, while they sought the evidence that their warrant authorized them to seize. In their official search, they pointedly ignored Mr. Researcher's office. It was the last place they officially searched, and the receipt they left stated they removed only one piece of paper from his office: a parts list for the heat pump. The raid lasted from 10:00 a.m. to after midnight. The next morning, when Mr. Researcher got back into his office at 6:00 a.m., the wreckage in his office told a different story. His office had

been cleaned out. They took every scrap of important paper that they could. The blueprints were too big to sneak out in the boxes, so they photographed them. Everything else important was taken, and there sat a receipt, saying they took only one piece of paper. That kind of outright, naked crime, committed by police officers, not only shocked me, but for the first time in my life I seriously harbored violent thoughts. Mr. Researcher was white in the face for weeks, and I thought he was going to keel over. He quit the company a few weeks after the raid, not able to handle how he had been raped. That was only the raid's first goal.[\[14\]](#)

The second goal was putting us out of business by seizing all our records. I was the controller, and they cleaned out my office to the walls. During the raid, as I was escorting Mr. Deputy around the office, I told him they could have whatever records they needed. I did not yet know what they had done to Mr. Researcher's office. Mr. Deputy said I could have copies of anything I needed to continue running the business. He tried convincing me that Dennis was a crook because of what happened in Seattle. When I told him that I was with Dennis in Seattle and knew what happened, he stopped that angle. I was relieved of my duties after several hours of escorting the deputies through our buildings. The next morning, I found that they had taken every scrap of documentation we had, and Mr. Deputy reneged on his promise of letting me have copies of our records. When he told me he was going back on his word, he had the audacity to tell me we were lucky they did not also take our computers. We did not even know who all our customers were after receiving their lobotomy. That alone nearly put us out of business. It was a carefully aimed deathblow.

The third goal was the legal one: gathering evidence for the "crime" that we committed. What was the crime? During the raid, I asked Mr. Deputy what we did to warrant thirteen armed deputies storming our building. He said we may have violated an obscure franchise law that nobody had heard of. Not one California lawyer in a hundred had ever heard of California *Civil* Code 1812.200, the Seller Assisted Marketing Plan Act (SAMP). It was known as a "worm farm" law, due to the short-lived worm farm businesses in the 1970s, where people put their life's savings into questionable business opportunities. The law was designed to regulate the sales of business opportunities. It was a law that required a business to register with the Secretary of State's office. To comply with the law, a business filed a one-page form with the Secretary of State's office. The form provided cursory information about the business, and the filing was accompanied by a fifty dollar filing fee.

There had been one prosecution in California's history under that law. It is what Dennis called a "Red Tie on a Tuesday" law. It was a law that nobody knew of, but through corrupt law enforcement it became a crime to do what everybody else did, such as wearing a red tie on a Tuesday. Of the million men who wore a red tie on Tuesday, you were the only one thrown in jail for it. Before Dennis' case was over, he got an affidavit from the lawyer who *wrote the SAMP law*. In a conversation with our attorney, the lawyer estimated that up to 100,000 California businesses could qualify under the law for its filing requirements. According to his affidavit, only 250 companies had ever made the filing, for a compliance rate of 0.25%.[\[15\]](#) Dennis was the second person ever prosecuted under those laws; the other was for a man selling Little League franchises, and his conviction was overturned on appeal. Dennis is likely the only person who will ever do prison time for "violating" that *civil* law.

We sued for civil rights violations and the theft of our technical material in the raid. We made noise. Thousands of people called the sheriff's department to protest. The next several months were nightmarish for me. Working with no records was a small fraction of what I suffered through during those days. The stress symptoms I suffered in Los Angeles came back soon after I raised the money in Boston, and friends began attacking me. I had to come to terms with possibly being murdered for my efforts, and I worked seventy-hour weeks. After the raid, my stress symptoms blossomed. I had to work sixteen-hour days just to survive.

What happened in Ventura caused a number of close family members to refuse to speak to me for several years. Mr. Professor, Dennis and his wife and I felt nearly alone in a world of insanity and darkness. By May 1988 I was becoming useless at work, just sitting there, quivering. I asked Dennis if I could take the summer off, not knowing if my body, mind and emotions could withstand such a situation again. He had a good idea of

what I was going through. I was involved with my future wife by that time, and those events put our relationship through severe stresses.

In May, the same month I left the company, Dennis received an offer. It was not the first time he received an offer like that, and this tale will digress a little, with the kinds of offers that Dennis and others like him get.

Make Them an Offer They Can't Refuse

What the [Attorney General's office did in Washington](#) can easily be called a conspiracy. How much cooperation was going on between the electric companies, the Attorney General's office, the media, the federal bankruptcy courts and others? The local police refused to arrest or even investigate the BPA hit man, even after [his actions caused one woman's death](#), when his accomplices in our company confessed to espionage on his behalf, and when documents he stole were later found in the Attorney General's investigative files on Dennis. The Attorney General's office hurriedly returned them to Dennis when he threatened them with an FBI probe. What exactly happened can be difficult to figure out. When bullets fly at you from every direction, it is legitimate to wonder if somebody is orchestrating the salvos.

When the Middlesex County investigator in Massachusetts admitted that he was [investigating Dennis](#) because the Attorney General's office in Washington contacted him, it made me wonder. It is possible that the attacks on Dennis were not coordinated, since [capitalistic gangsters](#) are the same everywhere.

I felt that the Attorney General's office contacting Middlesex County and siccing them on Dennis was not necessarily conspiratorial on the part of Middlesex County. I now know that low intelligence combined with zero integrity and vindictiveness is not that unusual in law enforcement. On the Attorney General's side, however, it was definitely conspiratorial. That does not mean that everybody was in on it, but there were people in Washington who knew exactly what they were doing, and sent their soldiers marching after Dennis. The BPA hit man knew exactly what he was doing and why. He was in on it. There is no conceivable explanation for his behavior other than him being a corporate hit man. Whoever hired him knew exactly what they were doing. However far that might venture into a worldwide conspiracy is debatable, but the hit man changing costumes and becoming a ["noted Tesla researcher"](#) after he helped wipe out Dennis' efforts in Washington seemed part of a more comprehensive effort. The barrage of attacks by the Attorney General's office *after* Dennis left the state also has the whiff of a broader conspiracy.

It is possible, however, that it was merely a mean-spirited vendetta by the Attorney General (AG) to inflict vengeance on somebody who stood up to his attacks. Dennis made the AG suffer. When the AG's office attacked the company with their phony lawsuit and media blitz, Dennis responded. He bought a full-page ad in *The Seattle Times* that ran on October 18, 1985.[\[16\]](#) It enraged the public about the AG's actions. The AG's office was inundated with public protest. Dennis later heard what the AG's reaction was while he read Dennis' full-page ad. The man was livid.

Years later, Dennis heard that he became famous by standing up to the AG. It apparently was one of the two worst publicity black eyes the AG ever endured while trying to crush somebody. The other black eye came from wiping out an activist who tried ending the homeless problem with affordable housing solutions. The activist fought back, and his campaign aired the AG's dirty laundry while he was running for governor in 1992, and may have been a key reason he barely lost. The woman who "pinch hit" for the hatchet lady who quit the AG's office was a prominent member of the AG's staff. When the AG ran for governor, the pinch hitter quit her AG position and joined his campaign. Perhaps siccing the authorities on Dennis everywhere he went was just vengeance by the AG, and his close relationship to the pinch hitter[\[17\]](#) gives evidence of the AG's personal interest in making Dennis' life miserable.

I have seen no evidence that the Massachusetts Secretary of State's investigation into our money-raising efforts in Massachusetts had anything to do with Washington. I have heard nothing about why they did it, but it was obviously instigated by somebody up high, because we were not doing anything that should have attracted their attention. It appeared to be a fishing expedition for something they could hang us on. I suspect that the electric interests in New England instigated it.

Somebody also instigated what happened in California. Mr. Deputy's investigative report regarding what got him involved with investigating Dennis is amazing reading. According to Mr. Deputy, he was minding his own business when a man contacted him who attended Dennis' Saturday show at our facility, where Dennis pitched the technology. According to Mr. Deputy, the man "said that he was bedazzled by the caffeine in the coffee, the sugar in the donuts and the speaker's presentation and really wasn't sure what you get for the money."[\[18\]](#) The man did not buy anything. He was not a complaining victim. That supposedly got Mr. Deputy hot on his career-making case. We were drugging our marks with coffee and donuts, and Dennis closed the deal on our bedazzled victims.

[Mr. Professor](#) knew somebody high-ranking at the local electric company. During the summer of 1987, the electric company knew very well about Dennis and what we were doing. Mr. Professor asked his friend what they planned to do about Dennis, and the man replied that the electric company had not yet decided. It looks as if Mr. Deputy's "investigation" in the fall of 1987 was related to the decision they finally made. We heard from other sources that the chairman of the board ordered the hit on us. Maybe it was not the chairman. I will never believe that when the deputies ransacked Mr. Researcher's office [during the raid](#), stealing the technical material, that they did it for their own edification, to peruse at their leisure while watching Sunday football games on TV.

How far that bona fide conspiracy went, I cannot say. Not all the deputies at the raid knew what really happened. One was a former student of Mr. Professor, and had no idea what really happened that day. As [Smedley Butler](#) said, soldiers blindly following orders can serve evil as easily as "good." I doubt the thieving deputies knew who they stole the technical material for, or even cared. When studying covert actions by folks at the [CIA](#), NSA etc., it becomes obvious that few see the big picture, except those at the top. Those in the chain of command work on a need-to-know basis, with strict compartmentalization, secrecy and the rest. Later events later made the picture clearer for me.

[Conspiracies](#) do not explain everything that happens, or even all that much of the suppression dynamic. That is too simple-minded, but I believe that the attacks on Dennis were not *all* isolated and unrelated instances of local energy companies protecting their revenue base. There is substantial evidence that supports arguments for an energy industry "immune system." The dynamics I have seen in energy I have also seen in medicine, particularly in [the cancer racket](#). The more wealth and power vested in any particular industry or profession, the more ruthlessly it protects itself. Every industry and profession has an infrastructure designed to protect itself from competition. How far they take their defensive strategies, and how far they *can* take them, is dependent on how powerful that industry or profession is. The more concentrated that wealth or power, the more likely one will see conscious and ruthless activities designed to keep the competition at bay.

There is perhaps no more powerful industry than the energy industry. People can say that the military is more powerful, but it is obvious that the military is not running the show, but is the muscle used to keep the rackets flowing smoothly, and it is [one of the biggest rackets itself](#). As [Smedley Butler](#) said, those order-following soldiers have little idea whose interests they really serve, which is part of the racket's design.

The geopolitical devastation the energy industry has inflicted on the planet is not pretty. In Nigeria, [Indonesia](#), Saudi Arabia and other places, the ruling elite has a sinister relationship with the oil companies, and their domestic populations are repressed. Those situations make for unpleasant realizations regarding the connection between the oil those nations have, their repressive governments, the Western oil companies

and the governments of Western nations.

If Americans think I am unfairly picking on America, part of the reason is that Americans *can do something* about America's behavior, and they are my target audience. Pointing out the flaws in the Soviet Communist system, and there were many, can be a rewarding exercise, but that does not excuse our murderous international behavior. As [Noam Chomsky](#) has said, we are responsible for the predictable consequences of *our* actions, not the actions of somebody in China, for instance.

Here is an example of blood on the West's hands that is not all America's. In 1995, Nigeria's government executed Nobel Prize literature nominee Ken Saro-Wiwa and several others. Their ostensible crime was their activism for human rights and resisting the corporate practices of Shell-BP, whose operations are devastating the Nigerian environment, particularly the land of the Ogoni tribe, of which Saro-Wiwa was a member. In the case of Nigeria, Great Britain is the chief culprit, arming the dictatorship in [neocolonial](#)-style while the oil flows unabated from the region. Saro-Wiwa's execution, along with several other activists, was one of the greatest human rights outrages of the 1990s. The United States, Britain and other nations, such as South Africa, stood by and watched it happen. The tragedy continues. Nigerian literature Nobel laureate Wole Soyinka lived in exile with a price on his head for years. Genocide and devastation is OK as long as the oil keeps flowing. The American-sponsored genocide in [East Timor](#) was another instance of securing more cheap oil for the West.

Oil is not the only big prize, whereby the masses suffer greatly to keep the cheap energy coming. [Coal](#) is another, and Native Americans have suffered because uranium was discovered on their "worthless" reservation lands in the 20th century.[\[19\]](#)

With that [teenage dream](#) of revolutionizing the energy industry, I also realized that our energy production methods devastate the environment, are not sustainable, and harm many people. I also saw that our dependence on fossil fuels, particularly those Middle East "reserves," might lead to World War III someday. That was another monkey on my back. Free energy might just [help save humanity from self-destruction](#). [Brian O'Leary](#) feels the same way, as do many others.[\[20\]](#) The U.S.-caused holocaust in [Iraq](#) and today's fraudulent "[War on Terror](#)" is something that I have tried preventing for my entire adult life. For all the value of uranium, wood, hydroelectric energy and coal, oil has always been the greatest prize, and the industry wields tremendous international power.

In Boston, I began new levels of education. Just before Dennis made his public offer to buy out Seabrook, one of our merchants lined up an interview on a New Hampshire radio station. Dennis and I drove to the station for the interview. It was being taped for later airing. As we arrived, the receptionist told us to wait a minute, as our interviewer was "talking to a Senator." I thought nothing of it, and we waited for a minute. Then the man came out, welcomed us, and we entered his studio for the interview. It was a typical interview, with questions such as "So, Mr. Lee, you say you have a heat pump that gets high efficiencies, and you say you can generate free electricity with it. Wow!" It was a "gee whiz" interview. After he finished taping the interview, he turned off his professional reel-to-reel tape recorder. He was affable, with his leading man voice. He then said, "Off the record, Mr. Lee, what is going on here? Do you think you can really make free electricity? Are you trying to challenge them? Let's have a friendly chat. I want to know more." Just as he was saying that, he turned on a small desktop tape recorder. For the next half-hour, Dennis talked about how he was not threatening the electric companies, but wanted to work with them to end pollution and bring renewable energy to the world.

After our chat, we walked to my car. As we pulled away, Dennis said, "Did you see him turn on that small tape recorder after taping the show? That was the real interview. That tape is going to the Big Boys. They will never air our original interview." I looked at Dennis in shock and disbelief. "What?!" I stammered. Immediately, the wheels in my head were spinning a million miles an hour, trying to make sense of what he said. Dennis would later write that I looked at him as if he was crazy. Maybe it looked that way to him, but it

was more like being told something shocking, not knowing what to make of it. As I sat there, driving the car in puzzlement, Dennis sighed and said, "This is going to be a long haul. Let me tell you some of what is happening."

Dennis told me what he thought was happening behind the scenes. It was during those days that I faced the possibility of being murdered for pursuing free energy. I decided that if it came to that, it did. Nobody lives forever, and I could think of nothing more worthwhile to pursue. If the energy gangsters murdered me, well, it happened. It is one thing to face such a situation in one's mind. It is another reality entirely to face it in real life.

Dennis thought the informal interview was the real one, and that the energy boys wanted to know what his attitude really was. They wondered if Dennis was a belligerent revolutionary or if they could work with him. It was the next week, I believe, when Dennis received the call from the Seabrook chairman. Our radio interview never aired. I bet the chairman himself heard that "informal" interview. It appears that Dennis was right.

[Brian O'Leary](#) is an ex-Astronaut, ex-colleague of Carl Sagan, the first human slated to visit another planet (Mars), and a free energy visionary. O'Leary's *Miracle in the Void* contains one of the best, most succinct summaries of free energy's suppression. Brian wrote of his encounter at a free energy symposium bankrolled by a multi-hundred-millionaire. Brian attended the symposium at the rich man's behest and subsidy, and heard the rich man's marketing gurus tell why he was not committing significant funding to developing free energy:

"He explained to us that the situation was similar to that of a river. For optimal profits we want to catch the river where and when it flows fastest. Until then it would be foolish to put up much money now. Why spend millions of dollars now, with uncertain results, if we could hold back those millions until such time is truly ready to enter the marketplace and can outcompete the others?"[\[21\]](#)

Brian described his anger and awe. While humanity may be on the brink of self-annihilation, the rich man would wait on the sidelines as a vulture would, seizing the best opportunity to make a killing in free energy.

In those Boston days, as Dennis first made his "free energy" noise, we received our first offer. A group of businessmen came to our company and met with us. They offered ten million dollars for the rights to our technologies. It would have made us rich, but that was not our program. Our program was bringing free energy to the world, not being bought out and the technology shelved. We could not say for certain that was their goal, but it smelled similar to the stories I had heard when I was younger.

We did not accept their offer, but kept plugging away on a shoestring. We almost became involved with a household name marketing organization at about that time. They performed some shoddy investigation of our technology, tested a broken system, and decided against becoming involved with us. We were becoming desperate for money, but Dennis was relieved that we did not get involved, because it would mean losing his freedom.

In Ventura, Dennis hit on a program that worked. We ran ads in newspapers, such as *USA Today*, modestly titled "Free Electricity!" and we sent out videotapes of our pitch, offering to sell educational materials to market, manufacture and install the heat pump, and told them we were working toward free energy. People began mailing us checks for thousands of dollars. About all I had seen with Dennis was disaster until September of 1987, but Dennis said he had found the new rocket ship.

The program exploded. Money began pouring in from across the country. We were so buried in orders that we were more than a month behind in shipping them out. We went from a few volunteers to more than forty employees in about two months. The rocket was taking off. I did not see Dennis' glory days in Seattle, but I saw it in Ventura. It was like holding onto a rope tied to a rocket ship.

After the raid, as we tried avoiding the next deathblow, it gave us *more credibility*, not less, with the public. Many people had some idea how the system worked, and being attacked told many that we were onto something. Our sales *increased*, and in May of 1988 Dennis received a second offer. That one was different. Dennis was invited to meet some bankers in Chicago. Dennis met a CIA man who represented "European" interests and said that they would write Dennis a check. They would "put a '1' on it" and Dennis could put on the zeroes. It is one thing to hear the stories from people who approach you; it is another level of understanding when it happens to you.[\[22\]](#)

Dennis' integrity had already been tested many times, although he never got a "name your price and we will pay it" offer before. Dennis made a counteroffer: he would to put the zeroes on the check, but the money would go right back into the European interests' pockets, and they would be forced to spend that money on bringing free energy to the world! The CIA man was stunned. He sat there, speechless. After he recovered from his shock, he regained his friendly demeanor but said he was not prepared to accept Dennis' offer. He met Dennis in California a few weeks later, but never again mentioned the offer. The next month, Dennis was arrested with a million-dollar bail. Dennis thinks that his arrest was their response to his offer. I would have been a millionaire many, many times over if Dennis had taken that deal, but dealing with the devil never works out too well. I could not have lived with myself if we had taken that quiet money. That was the exact *opposite* of what we were about.

Such offers are never put on paper. I have now heard of many like it. Nobody goes to court to try enforcing those kinds of deals. Now that I have heard many stories similar to ours, from those with no reason to lie to us, I see the game. As Don Corleone did, they make you an offer you can't refuse. If you refuse their offer, they destroy you. Here are other stories told to us or myself, from people we believe.

A few weeks after we came to California in the summer of 1987, Dennis ran "Free Electricity!" ads in the *Los Angeles Times*. In those ads, he was looking for salesmen. One evening, Dennis and I were in Mr. Professor's office (we had not gotten going in California yet) and Dennis was calling the ad leads. As I worked alongside him, Dennis talked to a sales lead that told Dennis that he was the marketing director for a company that made cars that got 100 MPG. He said the company no longer existed because the founders were in prison. The government prosecuted them for fraud. It was the standard "protect the consumer" angle. The man said the prosecution's star witness claimed that he was an important engineer for their company, who worked for them for years. The "engineer" testified to the company's fraudulent practices. Nobody at the company had ever seen the man before. Forged payroll records were produced at the trial to "prove" the witness worked for the company. The man told Dennis, "You don't know what they'll do to you!" Dennis told the man "Admit it, you called me because you believe some people have the guts to do it. You want to see me succeed." Dennis was jailed less than a year later.

With the national exposure that Dennis receives from time to time, we became a magnet for others like us, and they came, telling familiar stories. Our experiences were far from unique. After the raid, and before Dennis was arrested, we had a number of people approach us, telling their tales. Here are two more.

One man told us of living in a chiropractor's back office for two years. His friend taught at a California State University. He developed a chemical method to extract platinum from ore considered unmineable. The process promised to make platinum much more available, hence cheaper. Experiments yielded nearly unbelievable results. They became involved with the big money boys, some famous old New York money. They were financed and began using the process to mine in the California desert. They bought the necessary mining equipment with the New York money. Suddenly, the bank seized their funds, and the

sheriff was beating their door down for violating a law that nobody had enforced since the nineteenth century. The two men fled in a panic. The teacher's truck was found abandoned in the desert. He was never seen again. The other man slept in the back of a chiropractor's office for two years in order to stay alive. The New York money now owns the land where the mine was.

One man showed up at our office in a limousine. He told us that he once owned a windmill facility in the Southwest that actually worked, not an investment scam used to get federal tax breaks. He was selling electricity, competing against the electric companies. One evening he was working late at his facility, and he received a phone call. The caller told him that if he did not immediately leave the premises and never return, his family would be dead by dawn. The caller made it clear that he was serious and could deliver on his threat. The man took out his calculator and did some figuring. His net worth was about \$400 million, and he had invested \$35 million in the windmill project, about nine percent of his net worth. It was not worth it. He packed up his briefcase and left the premises, never to return. At our business he said, "I wish you the best, but you do not know what you are up against."

Those people had no reason to make things up. They were relating their traumatic experiences to people who would listen, not ridicule, and perhaps heed their cautionary tales. I now know how they felt.

One thing decried as an "urban legend" by the "[skeptics](#)" is the high MPG carburetor. I had an engineer friend who was designing and building his own high MPG carburetor. The basic flaw with today's carburetion systems is that they introduce liquid into the combustion chamber, and therefore the gasoline cannot completely ignite. Coming out the tailpipe are the results of combustion and uncombusted fuel, now completely vaporized as it exits the exhaust pipe. If carburetors can be designed to inject vaporized gasoline, the combustion will be more complete, and more energy released. All high MPG carburetors work on that principle, and are called vapor-injection carburetors. My friend was building a vapor injection carburetor and sent away for lists of patents on them. The ones he saw marketed were poorly designed, and he thought he could do better. He got back quite a list. Practically every patent was in the name of auto companies and other large corporations. He wisely abandoned his project.

One corporate coworker of mine was a U.S. Department of Justice investigator early in his career. He worked undercover, and sometimes he rotated into other duties. He was assigned one of the Justice Department's more mundane tasks: responding directly to public inquiries. It was crummy work, but somebody had to do it, and the low-ranking people got that duty. The phone calls came into the Justice Department and were recorded. One day he responded to a caller who said that an American automobile company had threatened his life. My buddy called the man back, figuring it was one more paranoid tale, but he could not lightly dismiss alleged death threats. He called and said, "Sir, what evidence do you have that (the car company) is going to kill you? The man replied, "Because they told me so. Showed right up at my house and told me so." When he asked why, the man replied, "Because I invented a carburetor that gets more than one hundred miles a gallon."

As the conversation continued, my buddy realized the story was becoming difficult to dismiss, and he decided to visit the man. He got on a plane and flew to his house. The man invited him to his garage to see his carburetor. The man said that the car company tried buying it from him. When that strategy failed, they threatened him. Then they tried both tactics at once, culminating with a man showed up with a half million dollars in cash in a sack, telling him to take it. He was told that if he did not take it, he would be killed. The investigator began taking the case more seriously, and asked what the man wanted the Justice Department to do. He said, "I want you to protect me!"

The investigator looked more deeply into the matter, and the man was apparently telling the truth. Here was the Justice Department's response, as delivered by my buddy,

"We cannot protect you forever, unless you move away and change your identity, which we can help you do, but if you try selling your carburetor again, they will find you. We suggest that you settle the matter with them."

The man settled with them, when given those options. He let them buy it out, and it was a pretty good deal, better than the earlier ones, probably because he got the Justice Department involved. The deal was for a million dollars a year for fifty years, payable to his heirs in the event of his death. My buddy told me that the oil companies funded it. My buddy was not a wild-eyed, paranoid lunatic. He was a corporate big shot who performed the investigation himself, somebody I worked with for five years. I imagine that man's carburetor was on the list of vapor injection carburetors that my engineer friend received. Another buddy who [worked for General Motors](#) told me a similar tale, as have others.

I had an encounter with [Tom Bearden](#), the leading theorist of free energy. [Richard Hoagland](#) presented a conference in Seattle in September 1988 in which Bearden and the astronomer Tom Van Flandern also presented their theories and data. It was an interesting conference. There were question and answer sessions. None of my many submitted questions were answered, but Bearden answered somebody else's question regarding the suppression of free energy. I have immense respect for Bearden's experiences in the field and what he knows. Bearden spent about twenty minutes answering the question, and when he finished the audience was stunned.

Bearden is aware of a global infrastructure that suppresses free energy research, development and marketing attempts. He said it was not the oil companies, per se. The oil companies were in the business of finding oil, extracting it, refining it and selling it. They do not bother themselves with suppressing alternative energy, at least not the efforts Bearden described. Bearden said that some oil company *owners*, however, were extremely vigilant, and they were behind the suppression of free energy. He said they had developed the global infrastructure that wiped out free energy innovations.

Bearden may not see the entire picture (if anybody does), as our experiences were related to the electric companies, not the oil companies, but Bearden's opinion is not to be taken lightly. Bearden said that the small group of oil company owners (Rockefeller agents are nearly guaranteed to be involved) have built a sophisticated organization that keeps its ear to the ground, keeping tabs on free energy efforts and making sure they never succeed. He said they were experts in "game theory." Bearden said he might write a book about it someday.

Bearden said they build dossiers on all free energy researchers and pioneers. They study each individual for weaknesses. Does a man have a weakness for attractive women? Does he smoke pot? What angle can they use on him? Can they direct an inventor toward his organization whose personality will clash with the others? Bearden said their game theory was a discipline of strategy, probability and outcome, whereby a free energy pioneer is similar to the king in a chess game, and maneuvering him into checkmate is the goal. Those people working for the oil company owners (it may extend to all energy companies) spend their careers derailing free energy threats. It is only when clandestine moves fail that they escalate the strategy. Death threats, prison terms and violence only happen when the game reaches higher levels.

Here is a good place to insert a quote from Machiavelli:

"And one should bear in mind that there is nothing more difficult to execute, nor more dubious of success, nor more dangerous to administer than to introduce a new system of things: for he who introduces it has all those who profit from the old system as his enemies, and he has only lukewarm allies in all those who might profit

from the new system. This lukewarmness partly stems from fear of their adversaries, who have the law on their side, and partly from the skepticism of men who do not truly believe in new things unless they have actually had personal experience of them."[\[23\]](#)

Bearden told the crowd of an event that happened to him, demonstrating how the secret teams operate. Bearden has been involved with numerous companies for years, trying to get free energy developed and working with many free energy inventors. He has seen working free energy prototypes, but the game theory boys have been actively mischievous, making sure that nothing gets far along. One company Bearden worked with was looking for money. A person approached their company, presenting his credentials as a high-flying financial whiz who could get the money, but was really a plant from the secret team. He approached the Justice Department, telling them that he hired on with Bearden's company, but as he got deeper into their organization he realized that they were crooks, going for a big scam. He told the Justice Department that he would help them nab Bearden and friends if he got immunity.

Unbeknownst to the Justice Department (likely) or Bearden and gang, the secret team plant pieced together a financial deal. It involved offshore bank accounts, relatively anonymous organizations and other shadowy aspects. It seemed like a relatively straightforward deal to get legitimate money, but probably came from a money laundering operation for the drug lords or CIA. The money was not "clean," but unless Bearden and gang performed a thorough investigation, they would never know. The plant put the deal together, but told the Justice Department that Bearden and friends were putting the deal together, and that he was the chump they hired to finalize it. The Justice Department was lured into the deal, rubbing their hands, ready to nab Bearden and his partners.

The secret team plant presented the deal to Bearden and friends, telling them that he found the money. They merely had to sign their name and the big money was theirs, making their noble free energy dream a reality. Bearden's funny bone quivered. It did not smell right. He had been there before and told the company president that the deal smelled suspicious, and to not sign it. They did not. In the next room were U. S. marshals, handcuffs ready, waiting for Bearden and friends to sign the documents. If Bearden and friends had signed the deal, they would have gone to prison for twenty years or so. They could nearly hear the groans from the secret team plant and marshals in the next room when Bearden's friends took his advice and did not sign.

Bearden told that story as an example of their non-violent Machiavellian methods to derail free energy inventors. Then Bearden told what happened when those "benign" game theory tactics failed. Only then would inventors and entrepreneurs get anonymous phone calls, telling them to stop their efforts if they wanted their family to live through the night. Their homes and businesses might mysteriously burn down at night. Bearden told of the friendly buy out offer. The inventor would be approached, asking if a few million dollars would be enough to buy out his technology. If the inventor or entrepreneur proved recalcitrant, he would get the offer he could not refuse: "If you don't take \$10 million to buy you out, we will kill you and your family." Bearden's stories sounded very familiar. He said that \$10 million was the going rate the last he knew, and knew an inventor friend who he thought was forced to "bite that bullet" fairly recently. They use big carrots and big sticks. How can they offer a carrot to a multi-hundred-millionaire building a [windmill farm](#)? They usually cannot, so they move straight to the big stick. I have also heard nightmare tales of them carrying through on their threats, where entire families have been murdered, their houses set on fire and then bulldozed. Those extreme measures can permanently derail certain free energy threats, but are only undertaken sparingly as they attract too much attention, as a world unaware of their suppression efforts is their best protection. Their methods have worked very effectively for at least the past sixty years.

For several reasons, I rarely use names when writing about these matters; the anonymous' fear for their health and their families' is a primary reason. Also, [naming names can get me killed](#). I have seen many lives

destroyed while on my journey, and many still live in fear today, all these years later. Several more people have to die before I can name many more names in my work, but it is now “safe” to mention [Sparky Sweet](#) by name, as his tale is famous and he died in 1995.^[24] Sparky was Bearden’s friend and a successful research scientist whose work may be partly based on that of General Electric scientist [Gabriel Kron](#). After retiring from General Electric, Sparky kept researching in his specialty of magnetism and eventually developed a prototype that generated a million times more energy than went into it. Even though some call him a “[maverick](#),” he was anything but, and went to great lengths to interest the energy establishment in his work. A limitation that plagues most inventors and engineers is their political-economic naïveté. R. Buckminster Fuller [wrote about that problem](#), and Sparky was naïve about what the energy interests’ reaction would be to mailing working prototypes to them. Their official response was silence. Instead of a tickertape parade for solving the world’s energy problems, he was hounded to a grim end. The Big Boys were interested in his work, all right, but their attention was limited to putting him under surveillance (including showing him pictures that they took of him through the walls of his home), sabotaging his efforts to bring his technology to the public and making death threats that eventually drove him into hiding and a lonely and possibly violent end.

Sparky’s fatal “heart attack” may well have been a natural one, but the spooks who use technology where they can photograph people through the walls of their homes can also shoot them with a microwave weapon which can induce a heart attack as they sit at their kitchen tables. Another free energy comrade may have experienced one of those spook-induced heart attacks while in his home, but he survived it and did not figure out what probably happened until years afterward. The spooks are experts at killing people and making it seem like an “accident” or “natural causes.”

One of Dennis’ technical advisors from the Ventura days was invited by the now-defunct International Tesla Society to visit Sparky in the late 1980s. Sparky lived in the Los Angeles area, not far from Ventura, where the fireworks began for us. When they met, Sparky was aware of what had happened to Dennis and voiced his sympathy. Sparky then showed Mr. Advisor his device. Mr. Advisor related to me the awe he experienced while watching it operate as ice formed on it. Sparky then related his experiences while developing his device and offered to make Mr. Advisor his partner, as Sparky knew him by reputation. Mr. Advisor, having lived through the Ventura nightmare, had no desire to repeat the experience and had retired from the alternative energy scene. He declined Sparky’s offer. Sparky still wanted the benefit of Mr. Advisor’s mind and lent him the textbook he wrote to describe his prototype’s function and the theory behind it (some of which is [on the Internet today](#)). Mr. Advisor was impressed, and told me that the math was particularly elegant.

When I heard [Steven Greer say in 2004](#) that the Big Boys told him that they paid off 10,000 people at an average of \$10 million each over the past sixty years or so, it made perfect sense to me. Ten million dollars times ten thousand people is \$100 billion in quiet money. I would not be surprised if the Big Boys spent another \$100 billion on their global surveillance efforts and snuff jobs. That is a pretty penny, but is a pittance at the level they play at: keeping an entire planet enslaved to the [scarcity paradigm](#). Greer also knows a fair number of billionaires, and when any have tried devoting funding or other help to a free energy effort, they have immediately received threats, the kind that [windmill entrepreneur](#) did. Again, it is difficult to dangle to effective carrots to the rich, so the Big Boys go straight to their big sticks when the rich poke their noses into the affair.

A high-profile friend of mine once received a demonstration from the spooks. He was transported, blindfolded, to an underground location where they demonstrated free energy, anti-gravity and other technologies, along with an explanation of why such technologies will remain underground for now. That friend has proven his integrity to me many times - he has not abused me with a fanciful tale. But very few can tell such a story, and virtually no one will tell it publicly. Those spook technologies my friend saw were probably developed at least partly by back-engineering “captured” extraterrestrial craft, the kind I have now [seen with my own eyes](#). What my friend saw neatly aligns with what [Steven Greer’s 400-plus UFO witnesses have to say](#).

Here is my final anecdote from the free energy milieu. A fellow traveler once told me about his early experiences in the free energy field. He had a mystical awakening while a college physics student, and used his new insight to create a working free energy prototype. Within hours of getting his prototype to work, he received a "men in black" experience where the spooks descended on his lab bench, confiscated his prototype and incarcerated him. He was dazed when released, wondering what the heck had just happened. He eventually became indignant and planned to redevelop his prototype in secret. Years later, he rented a hole-in-the-wall lab under an assumed name and worked in the utmost secrecy. Immediately after he got his new prototype to work, the same "men in black" treatment happened again! He then stopped trying to make prototypes, and his free energy path has since taken a different direction. When I heard him say that, I imagined that the Big Boys must have a technology that can detect when anybody on earth taps into that energy field. In 2005, I heard from somebody whose opinion I respect on these matters, and he said that, indeed, the Big Boys have satellites in orbit that can tell when anybody taps into that field. Then they send their "men in black" after them to eliminate the threat of free energy. I have seen other [weird evidence](#) of the global control mechanism that the Big Boys have developed.

The technology the spooks possess is apparently about a hundred years ahead of what is on the market today. The American military has technology that is "only" about ten years ahead of what is on today's market. The spooks apparently have technology that can create holographic illusions that the people think are real events, not virtual reality. That is in the "way out" category not explored much on this site, because I have presented information people can pursue for themselves, and have avoided impossible-to-demonstrate information that is usually derided as "conspiracy theory."

That all-too-real scenario of the Big Boys' global control mechanism can seem depressing, but if enough people began waking up and *caring* about something beyond their egocentric existences, the Big Boys could not maintain their tyrannical grip over humanity for long. Finding and educating those people was why I made my website.

The math and physics that underlie zero-point energy and other unorthodox alternative energy technologies are not subjects that average Americans can easily study. What laypeople *can* study relatively easily, however, is why Dennis' [heat pump](#) was the world's best heating system and why [my mentor's engine](#) was the world's best for powering an automobile. There are only so many hours in a day and years in a life, and I decided long ago to focus on studying the political-economic aspects of this situation, and this site's material is easily studied by laypeople, if they devote the effort to it.

This section will conclude with a quote from Victor Marchetti, the first ex-[CIA](#) employee to really go public with what they really do, and The Brookings Institute's advice to NASA in 1960. Marchetti said:

"The purpose of the international conspiracy is to maintain a workable stability among the nations of the world and for them, in turn, to retain institutional control over their restive populations. Thus, for these governments to admit that there may be...technological capabilities obviously far superior...could, once fully perceived by the average person, erode the foundations of earth's traditional power structure. Political and legal systems, religious, economic and social institutions could all soon become meaningless in the mind of the public. The national oligarchical establishments, even civilization as we know it, would collapse into anarchy. Such extreme conclusions are not necessarily valid, but they probably accurately reflect the fears of the 'ruling classes' of the major nations, whose leaders (particularly in the intelligence business) have always advocated excessive governmental secrecy as being necessary to 'preserve national security.' The real reason for the secrecy is, of course, to keep the public uninformed, misinformed, and, therefore malleable."[\[25\]](#)

Soon after NASA was founded, it commissioned The Brookings Institute to write a report on the social implications of space exploration. The report was delivered to NASA in 1960. The report ended with some shocking recommendations and observations.

The report warned of the implications of discovering signs of intelligent life elsewhere in the universe. It said that religious fundamentalists would be "electrified" by the discovery of life elsewhere, and said that scientists and engineers might be the most threatened of all by the discovery of intelligent life elsewhere, if it was significantly more advanced than ours. Those scientists and engineers:

"might be the most devastated by the discovery of relatively superior creatures, since these professions are most clearly associated with the mastery of nature, rather than with the understanding and expression of man. Advanced understanding of nature might vitiate all our theories at the very least, if not also require a culture and perhaps a brain inaccessible to the earth scientists."[\[26\]](#)

The report further stated,

"Anthropological files contain many examples of societies, sure of their place in the universe, which have disintegrated when they have had to associate with previously unfamiliar societies espousing different ideas and different life ways; others that survived such an experience usually did so by paying the price of changes in values and attitudes and behavior."[\[27\]](#)

Near the end the report stated,

"Questions one might wish to answer by such studies would include: How might such information, under what circumstances, be presented to *or withheld* [emphasis mine - Ed.] from the public for what ends? What might be the role of the discovering scientists and other decision makers regarding release of the fact of discovery?"[\[28\]](#)

There is little difference between the motivation to cover up UFOs, ETs or free energy.

Jail and Kangaroo Court

The local courts summarily dismissed our civil rights suits against the Ventura County sheriff's deputies. A few days after they were dismissed, Mr. Deputy and friends struck. Dennis was arrested with a carefully orchestrated media splash across the southern California media, and Dennis was thrown in jail on a million-dollar bail. That was in June 1988. The bail schedule for the "crime" Dennis supposedly committed was \$5000, but Mr. Deputy, who led the investigation, raid and arrest wrote a creative affidavit, asking that

Dennis' bail be raised to one million dollars. The judge rubber-stamped it.[\[29\]](#)

What happened in Ventura made the [Seattle experience](#) pale by comparison. Dennis was the catch of Mr. Deputy's career, and a few weeks after arresting Dennis, he was promoted to lieutenant, put in charge of the jail, and given an award for accomplishing the most difficult investigation in department history. At about thirty years of age, he was about the youngest man ever promoted to lieutenant in the department. He received a strange promotion, from a sergeant-investigator. Strange, until one realized that he personally oversaw his career catch, seeing to his comfort. His sidekick received a big promotion also. Mr. Deputy had his finest hour after arresting Dennis and imposing an astronomical bail, by far the highest of the jail's 1200 inmates, some in there for murder. Charles Manson had a million-dollar bail. Mr. Deputy had a steady stream of frightened employees kneeling in his office, begging for his mercy. Employees were making offers to [steal documents](#) from our office and deliver them to him, and he took them up on it! Such activities were documented in their investigative reports.

They were trying to put Dennis away for life. A civil law "violation" would be stretching it for a life sentence, so they concocted a few fraud charges as well. The case was fabricated from start to finish, with fabricated victims, fabricated charges, a law nobody had heard of, while law enforcement personnel committed [the boldest felonies](#). In order to make the fraud charges stick, they had to portray Dennis as a man selling no viable technologies. How they could do that, when he was selling the best heating system the world market had ever seen, with government certified test data, I had no idea. I had yet to find out how extreme Kangaroo Court could get.

As in Seattle, there appeared to be another energy-industry-hired saboteur in our ranks. He was a [dealer from Texas](#) who tried ingratiating himself into the inner circle from the day he joined. When Dennis was arrested, the man led a coup attempt to take over the organization. He easily manipulated the dealers and employees, and worked with the sheriff's department to keep Dennis in jail. Dennis' wife was trying to raise the bail, and Mr. Texas discovered who put up bail collateral and threatened or lied to all of them so they would pull their collateral. He lied to one rancher who was putting up his ranch for collateral (who had installed one of our systems in his greenhouse and was saving nearly \$500 a month with it) and told him that if Dennis was found guilty, the county would seize his ranch.[\[30\]](#) That was a spectacular, felonious lie, but if one works for the right people, it merits a raise, not jail. In a month of manipulation and rapacity, Mr. Texas and Mr. Deputy closed the company's doors.[\[31\]](#) Then Mr. Texas turned around and destroyed the fools who supported his power play.

In 2003, [Mr. Texas was arrested in a religious scam](#), demonstrating that he was probably a free-lance criminal, not a provocateur. Mr. Texas' tale provides an example of how difficult it is to distinguish paid provocateurs from the everyday criminals that thickly populate America's entrepreneurial waters, because they both act the same.[\[32\]](#) [Mr. Skeptic](#), the latest and most persistent assailant that Dennis has encountered, is probably also a free-lance assailant.

Destroying the business was partly to make sure Dennis had no money to defend himself. After the business was destroyed, Mr. Deputy made sure that nobody with technical expertise could testify at Dennis' trial. Demonstrating the viability of the technologies that Dennis promoted would ruin the railroad job.

Every inventor and technical employee and/or consultant headed for the hills when Dennis went to jail. Some of them crawled into Mr. Deputy's office on their hands and knees, begging for his mercy. Mr. Deputy convinced them all that testifying on Dennis' behalf would make them a suspect themselves, and most wanted convincing anyway, which was why they crawled into Mr. Deputy's office. Mr. Deputy told anybody who needed convincing that they might occupy the cell next to Dennis' if they did not work with the prosecution.

The most heart-rending situation was Mr. Researcher's. He lived locally and had unimpeachable credentials.

He saw what they did to his office during the raid, yet got on his knees and crawled into Mr. Deputy's office, saying every bad thing about Dennis that he could. Yet, he also knew the technology worked, and told Mr. Deputy so. Mr. Deputy started yelling at him, telling him that if he testified that the technology worked, he could expect to go to jail.[\[33\]](#)

Mr. Texas strolled through our offices the day [he successfully closed the company's doors](#). He told the employees that anybody who kept working there would be arrested. The employees stampeded out the door. They fled before payday, and were owed one-week's wages. Therefore, many stole anything that was not nailed down as they left. They stole our computers, office equipment, camera equipment, records and even equipment we had rented. Our machinist sold our entire machine shop, pocketed the money and left town.

Dennis' wife was desperately trying to raise the bail collateral. The bail bonding company kept changing their bail requirements, frightened by the obviously political nature of Dennis' incarceration. To try denying Dennis the chance to get out on bail, the Ventura County court set a new legal precedent. The SAMP charge had one precedent in California's history. The motion the DA filed to deny bail had one precedent in *United States history*. The DA filed a "Motion to Examine Sources of Bail." The only precedent in U.S. history was the case of a New Jersey drug lord who sold a million dollars worth of heroin to raise his bail. Equating a SAMP with heroin dealing, the DA filed the motion. The logic was that since the "crime" was related to the business Dennis ran, he could not use any money from his business, money he might have received in salary from his business, or any assets of any of his business associates! That ruling would put Bill Gates in jail with no chance of making bail.

In the meantime, I was not enjoying myself. The year before, in addition to working seventy hours a week, raising money, bringing in the technical talent and working for practically nothing (my personal income for those years was about \$4000 per year), I lent the company my American Express card to help the cash flow. When Dennis was arrested, his wife, in her desperation to get him out of jail, did not pay off my credit card so she could pay the wages for those "loyal" employees who stole everything that was not nailed down. When it all came crashing down, I was stuck with \$27,000 on my credit card. I tried working it out with American Express, but they did not want to, and preferred forcing me into bankruptcy, which I did before the year was out.

In the fall of 1988, Dennis was rotting in jail with his astronomical bail. I was driving to LA, working as a temporary employee. I was going blind in a basement, looking at microfiche all day long, reconciling a garnishment account for a huge security company. I was trying to scrape up enough money to file for bankruptcy, and was helping Dennis however I could. Dennis' preliminary hearing was coming up. Mr. Professor took in Dennis' wife and children and supporting the entire operation to try rescuing Dennis. He ended up spending hundreds of thousands of dollars of his own money. The events helped destroy his health and [nearly killed him](#).

Mr. Deputy's fraudulent investigation and prosecution was largely successful. He chased off every technical expert. One way the court kept test data suppressed was by ruling that the person who performed the testing would introduce the only admissible data. They made sure that Dennis had no money by destroying his company, so he could not afford to fly witnesses to the trial.

In Arizona a few years earlier a government-certified lab produced test data on our heat pump. One of their tests measured a COP of more than seven. They were close to California, and we might have gotten them to testify. Their data could have been a problem for Mr. Deputy's case, but he adroitly handled the situation. One of Mr. Deputy's sidekicks wrote a letter to that Arizona lab. He lied to them, telling him that Dennis was using their name and test data to pull off a scam, and the unit they tested was not the one that Dennis promoted. That was in the Big Lie category. It was the same equipment. Later, the president of the company that hired the lab asked them for a certified copy of their data. His company paid for the tests. The lab wrote him back a strange letter, stating that their attorney was advising them. They would only provide certified test data if he wrote a letter stating that the unit they tested was not the one that Dennis promoted, and that he had

no business connection with Dennis.[\[34\]](#) Then the lying letter the deputy used to scare them surfaced.

When the preliminary hearing was held, the nearly paraplegic Dennis attended it in leg irons. They violated Dennis' civil rights almost daily while he was in jail, as they tried breaking his spirit. Since Mr. Deputy was promoted to run the jail, Dennis received extra-special treatment. The prosecution apparently had the most extravagant preliminary hearing in county history. They flew in more than twenty witnesses from across the nation. They spared no expense, spending hundreds of thousands of dollars to prosecute Dennis. Meanwhile, the defense was broke. The only technical witness locally available was Mr. Researcher, but remembering Mr. Deputy's threats when he was on his knees, he quailed and hid to avoid the subpoena that Dennis' lawyer was trying to serve him.

That left me as the key witness. The prosecution tried intimidating me by subpoenaing me several times. Some people, looking out only for their own hides, tried convincing me to fall on my knees in front of Mr. Deputy myself, and beg for his mercy. Again, virtually nobody "got it." The reign of terror by Mr. Deputy was so effective that only Mr. Professor, a few other people and I were not frightened into running for the hills. With everybody gone, I became Dennis' star witness.

The defense was in such straits that I testified to [thermodynamics](#) and the technology. I could do a fair job of presenting it, but had no credentials that the court would recognize. Even so, I tried.

In retrospect, testifying was a pivotal moment in my life. I did not come to that conclusion until relatively recently. Life-changing events are not always obvious while one experiences them. I took a day off from work to testify, and spent several hours on the witness stand. I had never been in a courtroom before meeting Dennis. I had one heck of a first experience. When I walked into the courtroom, it was nearly empty. Just as I walked in, there stood Mr. Deputy, a few feet away. He was talking with the local newspaper's reporter. The reporter looked younger than me, and I was only 30. They were engaged in furtive laughter as I walked in. The local paper was particularly merciless and libelous in reporting Dennis' case. That cub reporter wrote most of the stories. The situation I saw made me think of an arrogant fraternity brother holding court with an obsequious pledge. They were softly laughing. Mr. Deputy was regaling Mr. Cub Reporter with the goodies on Dennis. It was a conversation along the lines of, "And let me tell you something else, buddy," with Mr. Cub Reporter's jaw dropping open as Mr. Deputy told him another sensational revelation about how crooked Dennis was. Mr. Cub Reporter was trying to contain his laughter, but not very effectively. They were trying to be quiet, but it was not that quiet, and their charade dominated the room as I entered. It was high theater.

I was gradually finding out about the county I was raised in. Ventura County has a reputation for having one of America's most corrupt judicial systems. A few years after I testified, Ventura County made news by acquitting the officers charged in the Rodney King beating trial, an event that triggered riots in Los Angeles. It also has one of most corrupt police forces, and even makes the top ten lists of people who track such things. The local newspaper is part of the corruption. I was discovering it firsthand.

It seemed that our attorney had been privately told what the program was. He was probably threatened with vengeance if he vigorously defended Dennis, but he never admitted to us what had happened.

The high theater that greeted me while walking into the courtroom was merely a warm-up. Ms. Prosecutor was a local law school graduate (the place nearly looked like a barn, and graduates of it often acted like it was one), and she prosecuted the case from the moment Dennis was arrested. Technically, he no longer had a million-dollar bail. In the first bail hearing the judge reduced it to a paltry \$750,000, which was still by far the highest bail of the 1200 county jail inmates. At that hearing, I was shocked to hear Ms. Prosecutor telling outrageous lies to the judge. If Dennis had ever told a lie remotely as big as the ones I heard her tell, he would still be behind bars. Soon after Dennis was arrested, his lawyer approached Ms. Prosecutor, asking her if they could work out a deal. Her response to Dennis' attorney was, "If he pleads guilty to all charges, I will see that he doesn't get the death penalty!"

Dennis' attorney made no preparations to defend Dennis. Dennis and his wife were doing all the work. They prepared cue cards for the lawyer to read, so he would ask the right questions. About the only time the lawyer spent on the case was in the courtroom. Dennis and his wife prepared about seventy questions to ask me. It was going to take a long time. As soon as I got on the witness stand, the judge broadcasted an obvious attitude. Prosecution witnesses go first and defense witnesses last in trials, to favor the innocence of the defendant, as the most recent testimony the jury would likely remember best. I was the defense's star witness, and could testify to many practices that would have determined any fraudulent nature regarding our business. I handled all the money and helped run the business. My testimony would be key to the issue of fraud, but as soon as I got on the witness stand, the judge made a statement regarding how long the trial was taking, and how he hoped it would not take long for my testimony. The prosecution spent endless time and money with their witnesses, while the defense had to be quick about it.

The prosecution had an "impressive" list of witnesses and "victims." The raid happened on January 14th, and Dennis was not arrested until late June. In the intervening months, Mr. Deputy and his pals took our customer list and called all our customers. They were fishing for "victims." As in Seattle and Boston, in Ventura the investigation did not begin because victims complained to the authorities. There were no victims, but when there are no victims, they must be manufactured. That was what Mr. Deputy spent the majority of those months doing. They called all our customers, asking them leading questions about their satisfaction with our company.

The ranks of Dennis' organizations have always been filled with constitutionalists and other political activists. They knew we were not only about making money with a free energy machine. They knew that our project might be one of freedom's last chances, so many customers received Mr. Deputy's fishing expedition rudely. They told him where he could stick his "investigation," particularly ones outside of California, knowing the long arm of his corruption could not reach them. His response was to uncooperative "victims" was threatening them, telling them that if they continued to participate in the organization, they would be suspects themselves. Mr. Deputy was trying to scare away anybody associated with the company, threatening them with jail. He told Dennis' salesmen that they could spend sixty years in prison for working at our company.[\[35\]](#)

After his campaign of cajoling and intimidation, Mr. Deputy rounded up nine "victims" from our hundreds of customers. They worked through the customer list in alphabetical order. One day we would hear from a customer whose last name began with an "A." The next week we would hear from a customer whose last name began with a "C," telling us that Mr. Deputy (or sometimes *the sheriff himself*) had contacted them. Who were the nine "victims?" One "victim" had his check lost in the raid, so he never paid for his materials. Another "victim" was from our early days in Ventura, before we had our operation running smoothly. He lived locally and we lent him the materials, telling him he could bring them back if he did not like them, or pay for them if he did. He was one of the many thieves we encountered. He took our materials, then reneged on his promise to either return them or pay for them. We made numerous calls to him. Every time we called, he told us a cheap lie, such as "The check is in the mail." That charade went on for about nine months. We chalked it up to experience. He had actually *stolen* our materials, and he was one of the victims.

Another "victim" bought our materials and liked our technology so much that he set up a competing organization, trying to lure away our customers to his operation. His victimhood was an attempt to wipe out the competition. His testimony was ironically the only one accepted by the court where somebody testified regarding the high COPs our system got. He testified for the prosecution, telling the court that the system he bought from us and installed got a COP of nine, and that he was trying to build a free energy machine himself using Dennis' technology. He was quite a victim.

Before the raid, we had a policy of a ten-day free trial. We would Federal Express our materials to the customer. If in ten days they had not sent back the materials (at our expense), they bought it. That is one of the few places where the prosecution might have had a legitimate case. Depending on the state, consumer protection

laws can require that the refund period be extended to months, not only ten days. I doubt they even tried that angle. Since all of our records were seized, we had no idea of the status of many orders. In the raid's wake, we were battling just to keep the doors open. After about six weeks of trying to operate with my records gone, I began going into a general physical collapse, caused by the stress. I was looking like a raccoon again. We were understandably slow in getting out refunds to customers who we had no record of.

Another "victim" purchased his materials just before the raid. Through records on our computers, we at least had the phone numbers of many of our customers. We called all our customers we knew of, asking them to send us whatever documentation they had. We called him, and when he heard what had happened he called Mr. Deputy to find out more. It is easy to imagine how that conversation went. After talking to Mr. Deputy, the man returned his materials. In the pandemonium of trying to survive the raid, that man who returned his materials did not get a prompt refund. He called our office, saying that Mr. Deputy had talked to him, asking him to sue our company. I talked to the customer. He told me he had returned his materials within the ten-day trial period, but did not have his refund yet. I told him some of our problems, and said I would expedite his refund if I could find his properly returned package in our building. I hung up the phone, searched our office, and found his properly returned materials. I prepared a refund check and overnighted it to him. I enclosed a note with his refund check, apologizing for the delay in refunding his money, and asked him if he could send us a note, telling us what Mr. Deputy told him. The man paid for his materials, returned them according to our terms (when scared into it by Mr. Deputy), and we refunded his money, as we did for every customer who properly returned the materials. That man was one of the nine "victims."

Mr. Deputy visited some of our customers; the ones close enough to easily drive to. Mr. Deputy thought he would be more effective in manufacturing victims if he personally met them. One customer lived in the San Fernando Valley, about an hour's drive from Ventura. The San Fernando Valley is in Los Angeles County, so was out of Ventura County's jurisdiction. Mr. Deputy showed up at the man's house unannounced and began asking his clever and leading questions. Mr. Deputy was an expert manipulator, which was partly why his career was so successful. The man in the San Fernando Valley had not paid for his materials (he asked us to not cash his check, and we did not), believed in what we were doing, and thought Dennis was the finest human being he had ever met. He became increasingly irritated with Mr. Deputy's line of questioning, and told Mr. Deputy the interview was over, and further told Mr. Deputy to get off his property. That man became another "victim." The man did not even know he was a "victim." He was shocked when asked why he was pressing charges against Dennis. He said he did not think he was a victim, and he thought it was horrible what they had done to Dennis. That victim was quickly crossed off the victim list by the prosecution.

Of the nine "victims," only one truly acted like a victim, and his story bears telling. After the raid, we realized what laws they were using against us, and we got educated. The SAMP law was about making disclosures. The law provided a "cure" if it had been violated. Our crime was not filing a one-page form with the Secretary of State and paying fifty dollars. That was the crime, and that is what they "got" Dennis on. He spent two years behind bars for that "crime." Part of the "cure" was offering refunds for inadvertent violations of the law. Dennis had a "Cure Tour" a few weeks after the raid, offering refunds to those who thought they deserved them.[\[36\]](#) I attended one in Los Angeles. Dennis told the story of what happened, what he was planning on doing, and letting anybody out who wanted to. When Dennis speaks at events like that, people regain their faith and support him. It is one of his talents, for better or worse. If he had the bent of a Hitler, he would be a dangerous man.

At that Los Angeles "cure" meeting, during the question-and-answer period, one man looked like an off-duty deputy and began making rude and accusatory remarks about Dennis. He sounded like an abrasive lawyer. People were shying away from him as he made an ass out of himself in public. He had purchased our materials and wanted his refund. The event was for people to get refunds if they wanted them. The man was not satisfied with merely getting his refund, but made a scene about how crooked he thought Dennis was. He was even quoting what Mr. Deputy said about Dennis. In another venue, the crowd might have pounded him to a pulp, but we ushered him from the room and told him that if he sent his materials to our office, he would

receive his refund. He then made the strange remark that that was all he wanted. He acted like the [BPA hit man](#) and other provocateurs I have seen. He reminded me of the ruthless kind I often saw in Los Angeles [during my early CPA days](#). Being in his presence was decidedly unpleasant.

A few days later, I accepted the return of his material and gave him his refund. He showed up with his wife. Because I was about to give him his money, he wore an unctuous air, heaping on the fake friendliness a lemon-selling used car salesman might use while closing the rip-off deal. My skin was crawling. His wife made some compliment about a picture on my wall, and I affably handled them, trying to get them out of the office as quickly as possible. One deals with that type as cautiously as possible. At the preliminary hearing, he acted like the biggest "victim" of them all. He apparently was as obnoxious on the witness stand as he was at the "cure" meeting. Getting a total refund was not enough, the man reasoned. He had spent hours reading the material we sent him, and thought he should be reimbursed for his time spent reading the material, at a very high rate per hour.

Dennis was sitting there in leg irons with a \$750,000 bail. He had been in jail for five months at that time, and that man had the gall to claim a right to be paid for his time in reading Dennis' material. If anybody was a plant from the sheriff's department, it was that man. Those were the "victims" that Mr. Deputy hung his hat on, going for life imprisonment for Dennis.

Ms. Prosecutor asked me if I had ever heard Mr. Researcher "tell Dennis he was going too fast?" Immediately the defense objected, as that kind of question Mr. Researcher should have answered, not me. I am not a lawyer, but it had something to do with hearsay, I believe. The judge overruled the defense's objection and ordered me to answer the question. I truthfully said, "No." The prosecution wanted a different answer. A few seconds after I answered, the judge said, "I reverse myself. Strike that testimony from the record." It was the wrong answer for the judge too. It was my first experience on a witness stand, and I was in Kangaroo Court. A year later, in the heat of other grim situations, Ms. Prosecutor accused me of perjury for that answer I gave, the one stricken from the record by the judge.[\[37\]](#)

Dennis' lawyer would not even read the cue cards properly. After barely asking me any questions about the business, he said, "I have no further questions for this witness." There was a surprised snort from Dennis, and he almost strangled his attorney, whispering fiercely, and his attorney said, "I'm sorry your honor, I have a few more questions for this witness." Then the judge became piqued, telling Dennis' attorney that he would allow a few more questions, but that time was short and they needed to get me off the stand as quickly as possible, to stop wasting the court's time. I left the witness stand having answered only a small percentage of the questions prepared for me.

That situation was merely the backdrop for my pivotal moment. The part that changed my life was Mr. Deputy's performance. While I testified, Mr. Deputy sat next to Ms. Prosecutor. The way the courtroom was arranged, he sat directly in front of me, about twenty-to-thirty feet away. Looking straight out, I looked directly into his face. Apparently, the proceedings were not rigged enough for Mr. Deputy. He tried intimidating me as I testified. His charade with the reporter was only a warm-up. When I testified about thermodynamics, the prosecution protested. Then Ms. Prosecutor thought she could show how ignorant I was, and asked me what I knew about [Carnot and thermodynamics](#). My answer showed that I knew a little about it. Mr. Deputy made faces at me while I testified. His reaction after I testified about thermodynamics was a theatrical expression that conveyed, "Gee, the kid knows something. Give him a point."

Before my testimony on thermodynamics, Mr. Deputy made a number of disdainful reactions. His sidekick was sitting in the public seats behind him. When I made a statement, Mr. Deputy would dramatically turn his body around, put his hand next to his mouth, and act as if he was talking to his sidekick. His body would shake as if he was laughing. When he finished making his comment, (nearly silent, but not quite) he would turn back to face me, always trying to wipe a feces-eating-grin off his face, but never quite succeeding. It was never to the point of disrupting the proceedings, but he was playing Marcel Marceau, my pantomiming adversary as I

was testifying. If a child did that in a fifth grade classroom, the teacher would swiftly put an end to it. In Kangaroo Court, the judge and Ms. Prosecutor pointedly ignored his imbecilic behavior. Sometimes he would snort when I said something.

My future wife took the afternoon off from work to watch me testify. Other than Dennis' wife, Mr. Cub Reporter and Mr. Sidekick, my future wife was the only person in the public seating. Mr. Deputy was not jumping into the air and doing jumping jacks, but sitting directly in front of me, which was surely no accident. There was a brief recess while I testified, and I asked my wife if she had noticed Mr. Deputy's gyrations. She did not, as she was far more focused on me. I told her to keep an eye on him while I testified after the recess, and she could see what kind of trial it was. Mr. Deputy did not disappoint her. His faces, gestures and theatrical asides to Mr. Sidekick escalated after the recess. His sweeping gestures even took in Mr. Cub Reporter. The newspaper articles that Mr. Cub Reporter wrote about the trial were virtually dictation from Mr. Deputy. The lies were thick and furious.

The last question I was asked was how much money the company took in during a certain span of time. When I said about \$2 million, Mr. Deputy nearly leaped out his chair, turning his body all the way around, gesturing to Mr. Sidekick and Mr. Cub Reporter. Mr. Cub Reporter even began laughing, so my wife said. Apparently, they were trying to make a connection between the gross revenues of a company and how much money Dennis "stole." It was an ignorant sentiment, repeated in Mr. Cub Reporter's next article, which was published the next day. The term "gross revenues" does not mean it went into Dennis' pocket, which was one of the many malicious rumors that Mr. Deputy had circulated. He was telling everybody that Dennis had jammed millions of dollars into his pockets somehow. It was an outrageous lie, which anybody with any business experience knows well.

Mr. Deputy's performance was in November of 1988. After the pitiful defense was finished, the judge remanded the case to trial, and then came the wait until trial. At that point, after seeing how the preliminary hearing went, it looked like Dennis had a snowball's chance in hell. I was still working as a temporary employee, looking for permanent work in LA, getting my bankruptcy filing prepared. Mr. Researcher fled into hiding to avoid the subpoena, and was in hiding for months. It was a grim December. I found work in Los Angeles as an accountant in a [medical lab](#), and began work the week before Christmas, the day after I filed for bankruptcy. There were several betrayals by my friends and family during those days, and some were major; it was a grim time.

A few days later, it was Christmas. Dennis is a literalist Christian, which has something to do with his migrant farm worker upbringing. I will take the loving parts of any religion, and when Dennis is not attacking homosexuals or feminists because the Bible says he can, he has the love part of Christianity down fairly well, about as well as I have seen. His stay in the county jail was not pleasant. Dennis was about eighty pounds overweight when he was arrested. During his life he has often fasted, usually for the biblical forty days. For his first month in jail, Dennis was just trying to survive. In jail, the meals had a calorie intake barely above the starvation level. That was partly because of the county's corruption; the money not spent on prisoner food made it into a government official's pocket.[\[38\]](#) Hunger was a constant for the prisoners.

Dennis fasted his first month in jail, but went to all the meals and gave his meals to the biggest, meanest guys there. He made friends fast. Dennis is so charismatic and amazing that within a month he was running his cellblock. Within a month, he had transformed his cellblock from a place of fear into a dormitory atmosphere. Dennis, as his wife said, blooms where he is planted. He figured that as long as he was in jail, he could do his Christian ministry there. He had a welcome wagon for new inmates. He saved up his chocolate ration to give to new inmates who were kicking heroin cold turkey, as chocolate helps the withdrawal symptoms. Mr. Deputy did not want Dennis getting too comfortable. After a month, just when Dennis had transformed the environment in his cellblock to a dorm atmosphere, he was suddenly moved to a new cellblock, where he knew nobody. That was a violation of Dennis' rights, but it was simply part of the psychological warfare Mr. Deputy and his minions were waging to break Dennis' spirit in jail. Somebody

paid the county officials handsomely to keep the heat on Dennis, but some of his treatment was probably just sadistic, free-lance malice, engaged in by those who ran the jail.

Dennis also became a jailhouse lawyer, going to the jail law library as often as he could. He filed more than one hundred legal motions while he was in jail. He also eventually ran his new cellblock. After the farce of a preliminary hearing came and went, it looked bleak. Dennis wrote the story of his adventures after the preliminary hearing. It became his book *My Quest*.

With Christmas rolling around, Dennis was his usual extravagant self. He was going to throw a Christmas party for his inmates, and then tell them about his interpretation of Christmas. There were about thirty-five inmates in his cellblock. Mr. Professor contributed \$50 so Dennis could throw his party. It worked out to about \$1.50 per inmate. The jail had a commissary, and inmates could have an account to buy things in it, such as cigarettes, candy, paper, pencils, etc. Dennis was going to buy goodies for Christmas gifts for the inmates. The commissary account had a limit of \$30. Dennis had it split \$30 on his account and \$20 on a cellmate's, and they planned the party. Suddenly, Dennis' inmate was transferred to another cellblock, and Dennis was thrown into solitary confinement. He had violated rule number 38, which said he could not transfer money or goods to another inmate.[\[39\]](#)

As with the SAMP law, the intent of the law and its execution by evil-minded people are like night and day. They were turning down the screws on Dennis, to break him for trial. They also knew he was writing a book that did not flatter them. They tried it on the wrong man. Dennis was able to make collect phone calls, and he talked to me from solitary confinement. He told me how peaceful and quiet solitary confinement was, and how he got more writing and research done in solitary. Ministering to his inmates was taking his time, and solitary was like a vacation for him. I have never met another like him.

It is Darkest Before the Dawn

Meanwhile on the outside, I was driving to Los Angeles every day. When I drove home, I went right by the county government complex. It was a park-like setting, but I knew Dennis sat in that tall building in the distance, and it appeared that he would never live to see this side of the bars again. It was at about that time that I had my worst moment. It was the most horrifying part of my journey so far. I am an avowed pacifist, and have not touched a weapon since I shot a BB gun as a child. At that time, I found myself thinking that getting a shotgun and "cleaning up" Ventura might not be such a bad idea. That I could even be brought to have thoughts such as that, however fleeting, was the most horrifying part of my entire journey. I immediately dismissed such thoughts as a product of my pain, but that I could be reduced to even imaging those scenes of violence was about as soiled as I have ever felt. I had gone far past losing my innocence. I was staring into the bowels of hell, wondering what it would vomit up next.

I decided to do whatever I could to save Dennis' life. During those dark days, Dennis' wife encountered other victims of Ventura County's legal system. Dennis was in good company. The most prominent person fighting the Ventura County corruption was [Gary Wean](#). He became a friend of Dennis' wife in their common plight. Gary was a policeman who wrote a book about his adventures, published the year before Dennis was arrested, titled *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*. I obtained a copy through Dennis' wife and began reading. I was almost afraid to go to bed with the light off after reading it.

Gary was a policeman who worked in Los Angeles for a decade, then moved to Ventura County, then back to Los Angeles to become an investigator for the LA District Attorney's office. He did that for seven years, and then moved back to Ventura County in 1964. According to Gary's book, political murder was common in Ventura County. From Dennis' wife I got his telephone number and called his house. I talked to his wife, who was brusque until I told her who I was. Then she became friendly, telling me that they did not trust anybody

who called them out of the blue. Gary was at a meeting that evening, trying to help some local people prevent a land grab by Ventura County's plutocrats. He went out of his way to meet me that evening.

We talked awhile about Dennis and our experiences. Gary told a little about his adventures, and said that the only reason he was still alive was that he never broke the law. He was an old time policemen who believed in the force of law and its potential for justice. Gary believed the law could work if properly enforced, and he had seen it all. While he could not claim many victories while challenging the legal gangsters, he believed he someday might.

I asked him what I could do to help Dennis. I said I would go to Washington D.C. or wherever I could to meet with somebody in government, any government, to intercede in the legal gangsterism that kept Dennis behind bars. He said, "There is nobody anywhere in American government who will help you. They are all in the same club. If you are going to help Dennis, you will have to do it yourself." Gary suggested that I refile my civil rights lawsuit in the local court, and that it might put heat on them. Gary had been waging lawsuits against the legal gangsters for many years. Gary had to become his own attorney because no attorney had the courage to help him confront the awesome corruption. While I respected Gary's opinion, I did not have the stomach to try taking them on in their own court, for civil rights violations.

They were going for a fraud conviction, and would have to portray Dennis as a snake oil salesman selling no viable technologies. The SAMP act was a civil law, and they were not going to put him away for forty years because he did not file a form. I did not think that even they could pull *that* off. Mr. Deputy also knew that, which was why he intimidated all the technical people that surrounded Dennis. There were several experts with impeccable credentials, and if any one of them testified, the legal gangsters would have a hard time making the fraud charges stick. Although his highly paid experts fled, there were others around the country that had experience with Dennis' heat pump and could credibly testify to its performance. At the preliminary hearing, the "experts" the prosecution paraded onto the witness stand included: two ex-Seattle employees who tried [extorting money](#) from us the year before and did not [understand the technology](#) well, and one even demonstrated his [amazing ignorance](#) on the stand; an electric company consultant who had never seen Dennis' heat pump run before, but testified that it would not work; and a man whose experience was limited to once testing a broken system.

If Dennis had competent expert witnesses testify at his trial, I thought he had a chance to beat the fraudulent fraud charges. I doubted that Dennis had much of a chance, whatever I did. Dennis himself was writing that he would be murdered behind bars, never living to be free again.[\[40\]](#) I could not stand by and do nothing. By that time, Dennis was out of solitary, but they were turning the screws down harder each day. They had him hog-tied in jail. They even began threatening him.

With little hope of getting Dennis out of jail, I did the only thing I could: I mortgaged my life. Mr. Professor was busily trying to keep the business alive, and was housing Dennis' family and doing everything he could. Mr. Professor taught at the local college more than twenty years and was one of Ventura's most respected people. At the college, he was beloved by all. He was a millionaire before he met Dennis, and what happened to Dennis was the most educational and horrifying experience Mr. Professor ever had. I was raised in Ventura, but Mr. Professor was a pillar of the community. He had a hard time believing what he was seeing. As with me, the more corruption Mr. Professor saw, the more determined he was to stand up to it.

In late February of 1989, I approached Mr. Professor. I asked him if he would mortgage his home and lend me \$50,000 so I could pay for some kind of defense for Dennis. Mr. Professor said that he would have to ask his wife.

The next week we met at his office, and Mr. Professor and his wife said they would lend me the money. I was going to borrow \$50,000 from them at 10% interest to make a legal fund for Dennis. When they agreed, I was torn by several emotions at once. On one hand, I was relieved that I could help Dennis. On the other, I

had just guaranteed that I would be spending the next ten years of my life paying off the loan, and it probably would not help Dennis at all.

After the preliminary hearing, they stepped up the heat, finding Dennis "guilty" of an infraction nearly every day. He had not had one during his first six months in jail, but he was suddenly being written up every day. It was part of a plan to forestall any chance of Dennis getting out on bail, making him seem less than the model prisoner. When Dennis had an attorney, the jail was caught opening his legal mail. Private mail between an attorney and his client is a part of the lawyer-client privilege, and one of our legal system's supposedly sacred cornerstones.

After the preliminary hearing, Dennis' lawyer said that he needed *big* money to continue representing Dennis, and quit. Dennis was his own attorney after that. Dennis was also writing *My Quest*. The jailers used the excuse that Dennis wrote about his God in his manuscript, which they creatively interpreted as a religious tract, to announce they would read everything that went between him and the outside world, to limit his proselytizing. All his phone conversations on the jailhouse phones were recorded, and all his mail read. The deputy who ran the jail personally read all of Dennis' writings, bragging to Dennis' wife that he could read thousands of words per minute. Dennis had no private contact with the outside world. Mr. Researcher was still in hiding at that time.

During the next month, the tide began turning. When the case was remanded to Superior Court, Dennis finally had one judge presiding over his case. Dennis previously made eight bail appeals, all summarily rejected. They all upheld Mr. Deputy's astronomical bail request. The Superior Court judge who inherited the case had a legal tarbaby on his hands. If Dennis was convicted, that judge would be responsible for how his legal treatment went. We believe it was no accident that that particular judge got Dennis' case. Dennis said he was the smartest judge he ever saw, and was the smartest one in the county.

Mr. Deputy's million-dollar-bail affidavit was an exercise in creative writing. His rationale was a combination of misrepresenting Dennis' "criminal" past, puffing up his own credentials as an expert in investigating fraud, and the highly strained logic of Dennis' victims helping hide him from "justice." Mr. Deputy theorized that the very people Dennis was defrauding would create a national underground network to hide Dennis from the law. It was one of the most ridiculous things ever written, but in Kangaroo Court all those judges rubber-stamped it. The DA's precedent-setting "Motion to Examine Sources of Bail" was one of many irregularities in Dennis' treatment.

The judge had a problem. Mr. Deputy and friends were not letting up in jail. The prosecution tried burying the defense in sheer paperwork. The prosecution introduced ten thousand pages of documents into discovery evidence. Documents that [Dennis' employees stole](#) when the company went under made up much of it. With Dennis being his own attorney, he had to sift through the discovery evidence to see what they were throwing at him. The jail was a state-of-the-art facility, and building the County Center was actually a huge defrauding of the Ventura County taxpayer, as chronicled by Gary Wean in *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*. The jail was a brand new facility of steel and concrete. If there were one building that was the *least* likely to burn down in Ventura, it would have been the new county jail.

One of the jail's "rules" was that an inmate could only have one cardboard box for his personal papers. It was like a box that oranges come in. With ten thousand pages of discovery evidence, that Dennis' wife had to copy at her own expense at the courthouse (paying to copy documents stolen from us was one of the many ironies of those days), one box would not hold all the documents Dennis had to sort through. Imagine that situation for a moment. They had rules that said he could only have one box, but they introduced evidence that took up two boxes. The jail was adamant that Dennis could only have one box. That recalls the old Soviet joke of "Have you stopped beating your wife?" Dennis was damned, whatever he did. One of Dennis' many legal motions was to have two boxes to hold copies of the evidence being used against him. The DA and jail heatedly contested his motion. Why? They said that two boxes would be a fire hazard and might jeopardize the jail.

The judge granted Dennis' request over the heated objections of Ms. Prosecutor. It was about Dennis' first legal "victory." After he won his "big victory," the man who really ran the jail came to Dennis' cell (he was also the man who read all of Dennis' correspondence with the outside world) and told Dennis that if the jail burned down because of Dennis, he would take personal vengeance on him (a thinly-veiled threat to his life).

We will probably only know a fraction of their evil deeds during those days. For instance, we know they tapped our telephones. One technique of phone taps, particularly illegal ones, is to use the phone line to transmit the recorded conversations to a central recorder. A friend from childhood, who worked at Dennis' company, heard a conversation of his from the day before, being transmitted to the central recorder. He happened to pick up the phone while the transfer was in progress. He was stunned. If *his* phone calls were being recorded, it is guaranteed that mine, Dennis', Mr. Professor's, Mr. Researcher's and others' phones were also tapped. That phenomenon of phone lines being used to transmit the recorded conversation, and somebody coincidentally picking up the phone while it was being transmitted, is not all that uncommon. I have heard of it before, but with *illegal* wiretaps. My phone has probably been tapped for years, and is probably being tapped today. While they were tapping phones around Ventura County, they also scrutinized every telephone conversation Dennis had, and were reading all his mail in or out.

Years later, Mr. Professor regularly received calls from men who were cellmates of Dennis' (Mr. Professor's home was Dennis' only phone number for years). The men called to tell Dennis that they had trod the straight and narrow ever since meeting Dennis. They were calling the man who changed their lives.

With my legal fund, Dennis was able to hire an attorney again, but we could only get a young lawyer who had never worked in a courtroom before. However, it did allow Dennis to have private mail going in and out again, and regained him a sliver of privacy. The jail had already been caught opening his legal mail. The judge had reprimanded them for doing it, and ordered them to stop.

In late March of 1989, the judge did something very strange. Dennis had been winning minor motions, such as getting two boxes for his papers, but one day in the middle of a hearing regarding other motions Dennis made, the judge asked Dennis why he had not brought up the issue of his astronomical bail. Dennis was stunned. Dennis had already made eight bail appeals, all summarily rejected, except for the first time when the judge lowered it to \$750,000. Dennis replied that he was not ready to ask for a bail appeal just yet, because he was trying to assemble his strongest possible case, trying one last time to get out of jail before trial. The judge said, "Then I am calling for my own motion to look at your possibly excessive bail." Something was up.

Dennis saw his opening and ran for it. He had his wife assemble all that she could for his bail appeal. She rounded up affidavits regarding various threats that Mr. Deputy made to employees, witnesses and anybody who might obstruct their plan for putting Dennis away. Dennis' wife was his legal runner, which among other things allowed her to spend more than the half-hour a week of visiting time that the jail allowed its prisoners. A few days before the scheduled bail hearing, Dennis' wife had a phone conversation with Dennis. She told him that she was sending him affidavits regarding the threats Mr. Deputy had made to people during his reign of terror.[\[41\]](#) She was sending it in his legal mail package.

There were jail procedures for delivery of the legal mail. It was delivered directly to the inmate, bypassing the normal mail delivery. Dennis waited futilely for the legal mail. It was not delivered. It was delivered hours later, with the regular mail...and it had been opened. When the deputy delivered the opened package, Dennis made a scene, yelling for his fellow inmates to come witness the delivery of his opened legal mail. They all signed a statement that they witnessed it. The deputy who delivered the mail was shaken up. Dennis had one more big motion to add to his bail appeal. They were caught red-handed doing something the judge had already ordered them to not do.

I was at the bail hearing to testify to Dennis' character, to help make the case that he was no threat to jump bail. Mr. Professor and his wife were there. Mr. Deputy showed up with *his own lawyer*. The judge opened

the hearing by saying that there were several motions Dennis had made about the jail's misconduct and Mr. Deputy's, which he would consider. Mr. Deputy's lawyer ate humble pie, apologizing profusely for opening Dennis' legal mail and claiming that it was an innocent mistake. He was even going to produce a deputy to admit to the "clerical error" in opening Dennis' legal mail, testifying that nobody saw the package's contents except him. The judge thanked him for his apology, and said he was sure it would not happen again.

Then he said that it seemed that Dennis' "victims" appeared to have paid \$20,000 to Dennis' company (it was actually \$14,000). The judge then said he was lowering the bail to Dennis' own recognizance, with a \$20,000 restitution deposit posted to reimburse the "victims" if Dennis was found guilty of fraud. Mr. Professor said that when the judge made his announcement, Mr. Deputy turned white as a sheet, looking as if he had swallowed his shoe. The next day, April Fools Day as fate would have it, Mr. Professor took \$20,000 from my legal fund and paid Dennis' bail.

Meanwhile, Dennis was saying farewell to his inmate friends. Although they threw Dennis into solitary confinement for trying to throw a Christmas party, Dennis had an Easter celebration in jail, and even had an Easter egg hunt for the other inmates. Dennis came from the hearing and said, "The judge reduced my bail to my own recognizance!" His inmates gave a cheer and hoisted him on their shoulders.

Dennis again documents events from there quite well. The only way Mr. Deputy and friends could put Dennis away for life was to have him hog-tied and unable to defend himself from their fabricated charges. When he got out of jail and hired Mr. Big Time Attorney, the fraud charges were soon thrown out. As the fraudulent nature of Mr. Deputy's investigation became clearer, from fabricated victims to threatened witnesses to intimidated folks such as the Arizona test lab, Mr. Deputy's career-making case began crumbling.

Mr. Big Time Attorney had a national reputation. He was the leading attorney in the United States in defending U. S. citizens against the depredations of the Internal Revenue Service (IRS). Mr. Big Time Attorney specialized in taking on the IRS, and one of his cases [went to the U.S. Supreme Court](#). That case dealt with criminal activities engaged in by IRS agents while prosecuting his client. In a case with parallels to Dennis', the Supreme Court ruled that the IRS agents *had* committed felonies in their pursuit of Mr. Big Time Attorney's client, but the Supreme Court ruled that although they had committed crimes, it did not mean that the case would be thrown out. The IRS agents would be prosecuted separately, independently of the case against Mr. Big Time Attorney's client. That alone was Orwellian, although Supreme Court Justice Thurgood Marshall notably dissented from the court's majority position. The criminals are admittedly doing the prosecuting, but the court ruled that their criminal behavior could be separated from their prosecutorial behavior, not tainting the government's case. Such Supreme Court rulings are not unusual. In 1992, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that the U.S. Justice department was legally kidnapping people from Mexico because the extradition treaty with Mexico did not specifically say, "[no kidnapping allowed](#)." Their intervention to put [George Bush the Second into the presidency](#) is simply another instance of the Supreme Court's criminal behavior.

Mr. Big Time Attorney had to go to trial, his client was found innocent, and the IRS agents were found guilty, ruining their careers. Mr. Big Time Attorney was in the process of moving to San Diego from out of state, and Dennis took a day and went to see him. While other big name attorneys were asking for \$250,000 up front to defend Dennis, Mr. Big Time Attorney was so impressed with Dennis' case that he only asked for a \$10,000 retainer. That was almost exactly what was left of my original \$50,000 loan from Mr. Professor. Mr. Big Time Attorney later told me that what originally drew him to Dennis' case was the million-dollar bail. "Is a SAMP a deadly weapon?" he said. "Was Dennis beating people over the head with his SAMP filing?" Mr. Big Time Attorney took Dennis' case more to sue the county for violating Dennis' civil rights than winning Dennis' trial, which he thought would be a joke to win.

Mr. Big Time Attorney gave us another peek into what happened behind the scenes. I do not know all the stories, but I can relate the ones that I heard. For instance, about a month before the raid, when we were flying high, an attorney flew out from Virginia to give us \$10,000 for two full kits of materials. He was a friend of

Ed Meese, who was the U.S. Attorney General at the time. I have little admiration for anything that went on in the White House during the Reagan-Bush years, but Meese was the nation's highest-ranking prosecutor. The attorney asked Meese what he knew about Dennis. Meese knew Dennis *by name*. Meese said, "We have investigated him thoroughly, and he is *squeaky clean*." The attorney emphasized the words "squeaky clean" as he handed Dennis a check for \$10,000. I would not trust Ed Meese with my life, but if he said that about Dennis, it was not because Dennis had Meese in his hip pocket. On the day of the raid, as I was talking to Mr. Deputy and he was talking about the SAMP law we might have violated, I told him what that attorney said Meese said. Mr. Deputy replied with a grin, saying that he would not believe anything that Ed Meese said.

Mr. Big Time Attorney, soon after he took Dennis' case, hearing the unbelievable situations surrounding it, asked his FBI friends to look into what the intelligence world had on Dennis. His friends came back with something like, "Wow! Not only is there massive information in the FBI's files on Dennis, but it went to the CIA and beyond." Putting 5000 people into a stadium to talk about free energy gets attention in high places.

Soon after Dennis' 1996 Philadelphia show, Yull Brown, whom Dennis was promoting as nobody else had ever done before, had a meeting with Al Gore, otherwise known as Mr. Environment. Yull made a [discovery](#) that may lead to techniques to neutralize radioactive waste, and he successfully demonstrated it numerous times, even to Department of Energy personnel armed with their Geiger Counters.[\[42\]](#) Gore is more of a politician than an environmentalist, and it showed in his meeting with Brown, as he backed off from any further investigation of Brown's technology. During Brown's conversation with Gore, he mentioned that Dennis Lee was promoting him, and a Clinton staff member replied, "You had better hope that the President does not hear you say that."

We even had the fun of a prosecutorial misconduct hearing, undoubtedly one of the few in county history, if not the first. Mr. Deputy eventually ascended to the hot seat, having *amazing* lapses of memory on the witness stand. All those threats were suddenly remembered as *warnings*. In the affidavit he wrote to justify increasing Dennis' bail from \$5000 to \$1,000,000, Mr. Deputy wrote of his expertise in investigating the crime of fraud. He stated that he had investigated hundreds of cases with fraud elements in them, and that he was such an expert on fraud, and Dennis was such a clear case of it, that the judge should heavily rely on his opinion in raising Dennis' bail to \$1,000,000. When on the hot seat, Mr. Big Time Attorney asked Mr. Deputy if he could tell the court what the legal elements of the crime known as fraud were. Mr. Deputy could not recall them. He said that he did not remember technical things such as that. Mr. Big Time Attorney asked him to recall just *one* of the elements of fraud. Mr. Deputy was unable to. Those fun days are documented in *The Alternative* in detail.

Although the prosecution was on the run, they still kept up the gutter maneuvers. They made a motion to have Dennis re-jailed that was nearly laughingly rejected by the judge. Mr. Researcher eventually came out of hiding, testifying to the threats he received and what he saw happen in his office on the [day of the raid](#). Mr. Deputy was "too sick" to testify at the prosecutorial misconduct hearing, which held up the proceedings for months. Dennis is fairly certain that Mr. Deputy spent those months not on his sick bed, but receiving coaching for his impending testimony. An investigator for the District Attorney's office pinch-hit for Mr. Deputy, keeping up the dirty work while he was out of commission. Mr. Investigator was Ms. Prosecutor's assistant for the case. He performed the "investigation" used to concoct the motion to have Dennis re-jailed. Mr. Researcher eventually came out of hiding and was subpoenaed by Dennis. He went to the courthouse to see if the subpoena was valid. He was immediately grabbed by Ms. Prosecutor and questioned for hours.

Mr. Investigator attended the questioning session. After Mr. Big Time Attorney took the case, it was really the judge against him. The judge put words in Ms. Prosecutor's mouth from time to time. She was along for the ride after that, following orders. Although the judge was not going to nakedly play kangaroo court judge, he still had his orders to get Dennis convicted of *something*.

Mr. Researcher had a few conversations with Mr. Investigator during those months. While Mr. Deputy was "ill," Mr. Big Time Attorney drove all the way from San Diego (an eight-hour round trip) for the hearing, only to be

told that Mr. Deputy was too ill to testify. Those days spent driving back and forth from San Diego apparently was a stalling tactic, designed to eat up Dennis' legal funds. Mr. Investigator even frankly admitted it to Mr. Researcher. During those delays, Mr. Investigator had a conversation with Mr. Researcher where he said the judge said there was no way he would throw the case out, no matter how much prosecutorial misconduct there was. Mr. Investigator then said, "The defense must be out a lot of money with all the delays. Lawyers coming all the way from San Diego cost a lot of money. Where are they getting the money to do this? What is Dennis going to do when his money runs out?"[\[43\]](#)

At one point, Mr. Researcher asked Mr. Investigator, "Has it ever occurred to you that Dennis Lee just might be innocent?" Mr. Investigator made the memorable reply: "I could not care less if he is innocent. I am paid to get convictions." Mr. Researcher said that the prosecution's case appeared to be built on lies and deception, and Mr. Investigator said, "Sure we lie. Everybody lies. I will do however much lying I feel is necessary to get that conviction." Mr. Investigator was trying to disabuse Mr. Researcher of any fairy-tale notions regarding the legal system. He was voicing notions probably held by most prosecutors across America, but only in Ventura could they be heard saying it aloud. Mr. Researcher has used Mr. Investigator's words ever since in the courtroom, in front of the judge, when he has been summoned for jury duty. He is immediately dismissed from duty when repeating Mr. Investigator's words.

Mr. Big Time Attorney became so disgusted by the constant gutter maneuvers by Ms. Prosecutor that he filed a suit in federal court on April 18, 1990, suit number 90-1942, suing the county officials for their many criminal and unethical acts while prosecuting Dennis. For instance, during his first day in court he told the judge that he could not yet legally defend Dennis in California, because the California Bar had not yet issued him his license. The DA's office immediately called the Bar, accusing Mr. Big Time Attorney of practicing without a license. His license was held up for months due to their interference. Ms. Prosecutor never gave Mr. Big Time Attorney a copy of her motions before the hearings, as was normal and ethical in the legal profession. Instead, he would be handed them as Ms. Prosecutor would begin arguing her motions in court. That was one of the many gutter maneuvers they used.

Some of the crimes Mr. Deputy and friends committed were identical to what the IRS agents did while prosecuting his client, and Mr. Big Time Attorney beat the IRS in the U.S. Supreme Court over it. He was rubbing his hands together, expecting to tear them up in federal court, but the IRS' political muscle paled compared to whatever was behind Dennis' prosecution. He called a press conference when he filed the federal lawsuit, and had Dennis contact all the Los Angeles media to get them to be there. They all told Dennis that they would. Mr. Big Time Attorney said that the press *always* came when he gave a press conference. Nobody showed up. As Mr. Big Time Attorney sat on the federal courthouse steps in downtown Los Angeles with Dennis, amazed that no media showed up to his press conference, across the street was a camera crew for a Los Angeles TV station. Mr. Big Time Attorney crossed the street and introduced himself to the TV reporter. He said, "I don't know what you are covering here, but it can't be as newsworthy as what is going on across the street. I am suing Ventura County legal officials for their gross violations of my client's civil rights...." The reporter surprisingly answered, "Yes sir, Mr. Big Time Attorney, I know who you are. I am aware that you called a press conference for today. I saw the invitation on my editor's desk, and I asked him if I could cover it, but instead I was assigned to cover the story that I am covering right now. Yes, your story looked far more interesting than what I am covering, but I report on what I am told to. Sorry."[\[44\]](#)

One rude awakening that Mr. Big Time Attorney had was discovering how deeply ingrained the corruption in California was. Mr. Big Time Attorney had worked mostly in the Eastern federal courts. Gangsters run the West Coast federal courts, literally. As documented in Gary Wean's *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*, he discovered the federal courts' corruption. Wean wrote about seeing an aspiring young attorney regularly hanging out with the Jewish gangster [Mick Cohen](#). The man was a protégé of Cohen's. Gary saw him with Cohen regularly during his LAPD duties. Today that man is a judge in the ninth district federal court. I still see his name in the news from time to time. The man *is* a gangster. Gary's book describes the many criminal enterprises the man has engaged in, using the power of his position to swindle the public and others out

of millions, if not billions, of dollars.

Mr. Big Time Attorney found out how the land lay when they not only threw his federal case out of court, but also *threatened to disbar him* if he refiled it. Mr. Big Time Attorney received a harsh education. He thought he had seen it all, but Dennis' case taught him some hard lessons about who *really* runs America. In the end, there was too much pressure being brought to bear on Dennis' case from high places. The judge eventually held a legal gun against Mr. Big Time Attorney's head, essentially telling Dennis that he would bankrupt Mr. Big Time Attorney unless Dennis did a plea bargain. Dennis pled guilty to not filing the form and paying the fifty dollars, but part of the deal was having the higher courts rule on the constitutionality of the law as it applied to his case. When Dennis pled guilty to not filing the form, the District Attorney himself came to the courtroom three times that day, and sat in the audience while Dennis affirmed his deal with the judge. The DA's presence was so startling that the courtroom's bailiff told Dennis, "I have been a bailiff here for eight years, and I had never seen the DA in person before today. Now he comes here three times today for your case. Who *are* you?" [Mr. Skeptic](#) says that Dennis' claims of being persecuted are a "delusion."

Dennis suspected it would happen, and the courts violated their deal, all the way to the U.S. Supreme Court. They maneuvered strangely on Dennis' case, all the way up the chain of appeals, and in late 1992, Dennis had to go to prison for more than a year for not filing a form. For his "violation" of a civil law, and fabrications in his file about his past, Dennis was put into prison with murderers. It may have been a parting shot from his friends in Ventura County. Dennis was nearly murdered in prison, and the guards put him in that position. That he was *even in* that prison was incredible. Dennis was "lucky," and only had some fingers broken and teeth knocked out.

His being in a medium security prison for an unintentional "violation" of a civil law was so bizarre that the director of the Little Hoover Commission, a commission trying to reform the California prison system, showed up at Dennis' prison unannounced, to interview Dennis.[\[45\]](#) Who knows how much the Little Hoover Commission's interest influenced what happened next, but Dennis was quickly transferred to a minimum-security prison where he served out his remaining months. Being railroaded into spending two years behind bars for "violating" a civil law was not the end for Dennis. His case set precedents and received special attention all the way. He did not get off parole until 1997. There were irregularities with his parole, but he slipped through the net. Ventura County originally tried forcing Dennis to serve his parole in Ventura County, where he would have undoubtedly soon enjoyed Mr. Deputy's hospitality again, and they could have tried again to put him away for life. Dennis' wife penetrated the bureaucracy however, and had his parole transferred to New Jersey, where she and her children had been living for years. That was how Dennis escaped California's clutches. He was on parole for years, and was suddenly and illegally put back on parole for another year after he was off it, when he began doing national speaking tours.

One last item is of interest. Within a few months of Dennis being hoodwinked by the judge into making the plea bargain that was never honored, the judge suddenly retired, and was subsequently promoted to a higher court. Ms. Prosecutor became a judge herself. All for a job well done? How deep it all went is anybody's guess.

In the May 1992 edition of *PC World* is an in-depth investigation published under the title: "SCAM! How a group of Los Angeles mail order companies ripped off consumers, distributors, banks, and publishers and why they're getting away with it." The article was illuminating.

In Ventura, Dennis was selling information kits by mail order, and advertising nationally to do it. When people ordered the kits, we sent them. Nobody ever paid for their kit and got nothing, and if they felt their kit was not what they expected, we gave them 10 days to mail back their kit (at our expense) for a full refund, a commitment we always honored. After the raid, we even gave *everybody* a chance to get their money back, and some took us up on it.

Below is the situation that *PC World* documented. A group of Los Angeles con men set up mail order computer businesses where the consumer could mail-order a computer or accessories. The con men ran their ads in national computer magazines, alongside other vendor ads. Their prices were low, but not ridiculously so. The consumers then ordered the products by calling the number in the ad, paying by check or credit card. No product ever came. The company simply took the money and ran. Their scam was taking place at the same time that Dennis was in jail in Ventura, one county away. One of their offices was a few miles from where Dennis was arrested.

The con men would set up a facade corporation to take orders and money. When they had collected a few hundred thousand dollars from the duped consumers, they would shut down the company. A few months or weeks later, another company would spring up in LA and perform the same scam. *PC World* undertook an extensive investigation. *PC World* estimated that its readers were out \$450,000 on responding to the scam's ads in *PC World* alone. *PC World* was being victimized itself, as the companies never even paid for their ads.

PC World was not the only group investigating the scam; there were other groups also investigating, as many people were being stung. Those con men had been at it for years. The investigations yielded their identities, and the article outlined the trail they traveled in setting up one phony company after another. It was all documented, down to the handwriting analysis of nineteen fictitious business statements filed by the conspirators, twelve in the same penmanship. They were nailed down to their underwear. They had no defense. Comparing their undeniable crimes to Dennis' situation, one might think those boys would be put away for a long, long time. They were blatantly defrauding the consumer and making millions of dollars.

In a summary chart of what consumers can do about being had by such scams, *PC World* lists who to contact if they have been had. Then they list the law enforcement agencies they themselves contacted to try getting some prosecution done. Not one law enforcement agency picked up the ball placed in their laps. The men were not being prosecuted by *anybody*. The excuses the law enforcement agencies gave for not prosecuting were interesting. The California Attorney General "punts to other agencies." The U.S. Postal Inspector's Office "pleads overwhelming case load." The LA City Attorney "rejects cases from individuals." The Federal Trade Commission "doesn't act on individual cases." The Secret Service (which actually does have jurisdiction in such a case) "puts lives of presidential candidates above your pocketbook." Most poignantly, the local police "can't afford to fly in out-of-state fraud victims to testify." In LA they could not afford it, but in Ventura they sure could.

A great deal has been left out of this story. The essay was perhaps the most emotionally difficult part of this site to write and edit. I have used names such as Mr. Deputy, Mr. Big Time Attorney, etc., to protect people's privacy, and I am not into naming names, even "public servants" such as Mr. Deputy, who committed monstrous crimes in his efforts to protect the [energy racket](#). If it really matters to anybody, all those identities are easily discovered if the story is researched. I wish nobody any harm, even the "bad guys."

I moved to Ohio soon after Dennis made his plea-bargain. I staggered out of Ventura, realizing that whatever I was taught about the world did not remotely jibe with my experiences. I spent the next twelve years figuring it out, and this web site is the fruit of that investigation.

The Journey Continues

I wrote this epilogue in November 2005. Dennis tried to rebuild his venture but his companies failed. I watched a number of attempts to steal his companies *after* the Ventura days.[\[46\]](#) I have mostly remained on the sidelines, this site being where I focused my efforts. Dennis is still at it, and can never be totally counted out, but is now trying the [religion route](#) to free energy. [Mr. Professor](#) died in 2002, his life shortened by his involvement in

my adventures. He never recovered from the complications of his diabetes that spun out of control during the Ventura nightmare (as with me, going bankrupt was a minor inconvenience when compared to the other dynamics). He reluctantly admitted to me that those events contributed to his health's deterioration, which was a remarkable admission, as he was saintly and the epitome of the strong, silent type, never complaining about anything.[\[47\]](#) I attended his funeral in North Dakota, and he was buried near his family's farm. His widow told me that if she had not [taken him to Mexico for treatment](#), he would have spent the last ten years of his life without his legs.

As his widow made her final goodbyes to his body in the funeral parlor, I sat in the viewing gallery, went into a meditative state and saw Mr. Professor in his heaven, which looked like a cross between North Dakota and Alaska (his favorite recreational venue). One day, I will visit his heaven and do the things that his health prevented us from doing. While I was meditating, I had a startling, unexpected vision that he seemed to send me. I later related the vision to his wife, and she replied that what I saw was one of his favorite scenes while on earth (probably when he felt the most spiritual). I suppose that was some compensation, hearing that he was doing fine on the other side of the veil, but the finality of watching his broken body being buried will always haunt me.

While I said goodbye to his body, a realization hit me that I had never suspected before: the first time that [voice spoke in my head](#), it was about a lot more than changing my career path; it was to meet Mr. Professor, who was the reason I went into accounting. The first time the voice radically changed my career path, and the [second time](#) it led me straight into Dennis' company. It can be said that I asked for it, but I hope I never hear from that voice again. I suffered and continue to endure great personal devastation that my public writings only hint at. Seeing countless lives wrecked by the Big Boys as they play their "rule in hell" game, while "average people" have eagerly performed most of the Big Boys' dirty work for them, has been a nightmare.

The terror attacks of September 11, 2001 coincided with what seems to be beginning of the second stage of my mid-life crisis, a stage that has yet to finish. For its first two years, [my mid-life crisis](#) was about my thirty-year journey being futile, as far as healing the planet goes. The past four years has been watching George Bush the Second and his neoconservative cabal take America and maybe the world on a sleigh ride to hell, as America leads the world to the brink of World War III. All for oil and empire, with barely a glimmer of sentience or integrity evident among my fellow Americans. I am way beyond tired of the emotional agony. I was coaxed out of my seclusion to begin some free energy activism in early 2003, but it was very disappointing.[\[48\]](#) I found that virtually nobody on earth has what it takes to pursue free energy in today's environment, which was the answer I never wanted to hear.[\[49\]](#) I am in deep seclusion these days. More than ever, I realize that the scarcest commodity on earth is [personal integrity](#), but is the only thing that will rescue us from ourselves. The only way I see out of this global nightmare is for people to reach deeply inside themselves and find some integrity (another way to say it is "[caring for others](#)").

I was originally planning to spend my free time in 2006 and 2007 re-editing my site and adding significant new material, but those close to me have informed me that I am in poor emotional shape to undertake that task, an assessment I have to agree with. The last couple months of 2005 saw me doing minor editing of my site - to correct the more glaring grammatical errors - add a little [new material](#) and smooth out some rough spots. Maybe by 2010 I will finally finish my site in a satisfying manner. I do not want any more adventures. A quiet life is about all I seek anymore.

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) In the world of capitalism and economics, "wealth" is a concept of value. For instance, if I have to work four hours a day to obtain my food one year, and in a later year I only have to work two hours a day to procure that food, I am wealthier, as

I am getting the same goodies for less effort. Wealth is considered to be a real thing. [Gold and money are not wealth, but symbols of it.](#) In speaking of “real wealth,” when I asked if we were increasing the world’s wealth, it was an economist’s way of asking if there was a net benefit to the world from our efforts. Increasing the “world’s real wealth” was a common phrase in business and economics, but not commonly heard outside of those professions. The question I asked was a cliché in the business, something every first-year accounting student hears.

[2] See John Robbins' *Diet for New America*, p. 67, where Fred C. Haley, the president of a 225,000-hen poultry firm in Georgia states, "The object of producing eggs is to make money. When we forget this objective, we have forgotten what is all about." The drive for profit has brought us the hellish institution of [factory farming](#), where pigs, chickens, sheep and cattle live nightmare lives in the quest for the most profitable meat.

[3] As it stands today, the federal government will pay about \$32 billion per year for the next thirty years to clean up the S&L disaster, which translates to perhaps \$400 billion in today's dollars, depending on the interest rates applied. The original price tag was about \$157 billion, but it was funded with long term bonds, increasing the price. See Zepezauer and Naiman, *Take the Rich Off Welfare*, pp. 45-52.

[4] See Steven Wilmsen's *Silverado, Neil Bush and the Savings and Loan Scandal* for a blow-by-blow account of a scandal in the making. The same kinds of accounting fraud I saw on my audit was standard operating procedure throughout the industry. Silverado was just one of the boys.

[5] See Rodney Stich's *Defrauding America*, pp. 165-194, and Pete Brewton's *The Mafia, CIA and George Bush* and Stephen Pizzo's *Inside Job* for the scandal in general.

[6] Based on the Federal Reserve Survey of Consumer Finances. See Holly Sklar's "Let Them Eat Cake", *Z Magazine*, November 1998, pp. 29-32.

[7] *My Quest* is available from United Community Services of America, 3002 Rt. 23 North, Newfoundland, NJ 07435.

[8] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 1F for the Attorney General's list of stolen documents they had in their possession, which the BPA hit man gave them.

[9] See the affidavit by the financier in *The Alternative* (available from United Community Services of America, 3002 Rt. 23 North, Newfoundland, NJ 07435), exhibit 1J.

[10] After I raised money, we brought Mr. Engineer out to Boston from Washington, where he had worked with Dennis for years, including the Seattle company.

[11] Ackerman, Jerry. "Moon's helium holds promise as fuel". *Boston Globe*, March 2, 1987. The article presented the views of scientist Gerald Kulcinski who had an idea for mining helium 3 (an isotope of helium) from the moon, a project he estimated would cost \$15 trillion. The *Globe* never mentioned us.

[12] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 1N.

[13] See affidavit sworn out by our employee in *The Alternative*, exhibit 1P.

[14] See affidavits regarding the espionage carried out during the raid by those who witnessed it in *The Alternative*, exhibits 2B, 2C, and 2D.

[15] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 4F.

[16] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 1C.

[17] For what it is worth, the pinch hitter was tall, blonde, attractive and buxom. Who knows how much that related to her qualifications in being so valuable to the AG?

[18] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 4C.

[19] A superb essay on uranium mining's impacts on America's native population is Ward Churchill's "Cold War Impacts on Native North America" in his *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 289-362.

[20] See O'Leary. *Miracle in the Void*.

[21] O'Leary, *Miracle in the Void*, p. 73.

[22] See Dennis' description of that meeting in *The Alternative*, p. 20.

[23] Niccoló Machiavelli, *The Prince*, chapter 6. Quote from Bondanella and Musa, editors and translators, *The Portable Machiavelli*, p. 94.

[24] See an account of Sparky's tale in Jeane Manning's *The Coming Energy Revolution*, chapter 6.

[25] See Terry Hansen's *The Missing Times*, pp. 53-54.

[26] Donald Michael, et al., of The Brookings Institute, *Proposed Studies on the Implications of Peaceful Space Activities for Human Affairs*, p. 225.

[27] Donald Michael, et al., of The Brookings Institute, *Proposed Studies on the Implications of Peaceful Space Activities for Human Affairs*, p. 216.

[28] Donald Michael, et al., of The Brookings Institute, *Proposed Studies on the Implications of Peaceful Space Activities for Human Affairs*, p. 217.

[29] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 3A.

[30] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 3L and 4L.

[31] Very early on, after a very polished performance gained him access to our inner circle, Mr. Texas began acting like the kind Dennis has encountered many times before: an opportunist that Dennis could not turn his back on. In July 1988, when Dennis was in jail with his \$750,000 bail, Mr. Texas unmasked himself to Dennis during a phone call from Mr. Professor's house, while the [trio](#) was there. The trio was essentially demanding that Dennis turn his company over to them, or they would destroy it (as they worked closely with [Mr. Deputy](#)). During the heated discussion, Mr. Texas got on the phone and Dennis said, "Tell me what you want, and you will get it." Mr. Texas then engaged in a charade for the benefit of those in the room but could not hear Dennis' end of the line. Mr. Texas engaged in a fake argument with Dennis, acting like Dennis was on the other end, being belligerent. Mr. Texas ended his performance with something like, "Dennis, stop being a maniac and listen for once!" and then slammed down the phone. Dennis listened from the jail in shocked silence, knowing that Mr. Texas had unmasked himself (to Dennis, at least) and was playing his hand. Dennis knew from that moment forward that Mr. Texas was going to attempt the same shenanigans that [Bill the BPA Hit Man](#) had, and thought that Mr. Texas was probably another paid provocateur. Mr. Texas indeed engaged in the same stunts that Bill had, but in light of his 2003 arrest, it looks like Mr. Texas was just a free-lance criminal, probably not hired to do what he did in Ventura.

[32] A quote from Howard Scott sums up America's entrepreneurial waters: "A criminal is a person with predatory instincts without sufficient capital to form a corporation."

[33] Typical of the sheriff's department's criminal activity, Mr. Deputy's interview of Mr. Researcher took place in a county interrogation room where they secretly recorded the conversation. When we had heard about the interview, we demanded a copy of the tape. The session lasted four or five hours, according to Mr. Researcher. After an hour or so, when the conversation had been fairly cordial, Mr. Deputy began getting belligerent, eventually shouting at Mr. Researcher, yelling at him that he did not "know anything" and that if he testified in Dennis' defense, he would immediately become a suspect himself. When the sheriff's department reproduced the tape of the session, they only reproduced the first hour, mysteriously "losing" the rest. I wish I had a dollar for every instance I have seen of law enforcement "losing" evidence that would expose their corruption.

[34] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 4B.

[35] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 3M. He told that to our two best salesmen.

[36] See the law and Dennis' "Cure Tour" schedule in *The Alternative*, exhibit 2G and 2H..

[37] I have copy of a letter from Ms. Prosecutor to Dennis' attorney, dated January 4, 1990, saying that Mr. Researcher was amazed I would deny it "under oath."

[38] [Gary Wean's](#) *There's a Fish in the Courthouse* chronicles the hair-raising corruption in Ventura County.

[39] See *My Quest*, pp. 455-456.

[40] See *My Quest*, pp. 456.

[41] See *The Alternative*, exhibits 3M, 3N, 3Q and 3R regarding threats Mr. Deputy made to employees and witnesses. Those affidavits were in that legal mail package. See also exhibits 3H, 3I, 3J, 3K, 3L and 3P for other evidence of Mr. Deputy's malfeasance, particularly evidence that he was working closely with Mr. Texas to take the company down.

[42] Christopher Bird wrote of Brown extensively, and died before writing his planned autobiography of Brown. He had a series of articles published in *raum & zeit*, in 1992 (vol. 3, #s 2, 3 and 6). U.S. Congressman Daniel Haley investigated the Department of Energy demonstration and its amazing attempt to explain away what their Geiger counters told them. He relates the results of his investigation in Planetary Association for Clean Energy, Inc.'s July 6, 1993 issue.

[43] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 5E.

[44] Naturally, with that conversation, I can be accused of taking some poetic license by putting in quotes what is likely not the verbatim conversation. It was the essence of the conversation, and I was not there to hear it, but heard it later from Dennis, who was there with the attorney when it happened. In a few places I put words in quotes that I cannot prove are verbatim conversation, but you can tell where I do it, I believe. If I footnote it, I refer to where it can be found in writing. There is no place where I have put something in quotes that does not nearly capture the conversation word for word. For instance, when that lawyer who gave Dennis the check for \$10,000 while telling Dennis that Ed Meese said that he was "squeaky clean," the lawyer himself made special emphasis that Meese indeed said "squeaky clean." When I said that Ms. Prosecutor said that if Dennis pled guilty to all charges, she would see to it that he would not get the death penalty, she said those words, although maybe a "that" or "and" is missing from her verbatim words.

[45] See *The Alternative*, exhibit 9E.

[46] Here are a couple of examples of attempts to steal Dennis' companies after the Ventura days. The first I witnessed in 1992, when Dennis was trying to tie into Wall Street money and talent for a public relations campaign. He flew me out to Las Vegas to attend a conference of hundreds of his joint-venture partners. One conference speaker owned a company that offered organizational assistance to the partners. At the conference, Dennis introduced the speaker and

said how impressive the man's commitment was, as he attended on "his own nickel" and even brought along some of his staff. When the conference was finished I flew back home to Ohio, and in the row in front of me was that man and his staff, heading home to New York. I kept a low profile at the conference and they did not know who I was. I just read in my seat. As we approached the landing in Columbus, I put my book away and stared into space ahead of me, daydreaming. Next to the conference speaker and directly in front of me was one of his employees, who I recognized from the conference. As I was staring into space, that staff member held up a yellow legal pad in front of my eyes. He was probably admiring his handiwork, composed during the plane flight, but the words leapt off the page into my passive eyes. He had written an outline of "The Plan to Rape and Pillage [Dennis' joint venture partners]". It was a four-part plan to entice Dennis' partners away. The man probably realized that he should not have held up his masterpiece where others could see it, and quickly looked over his shoulder and realized that I had probably seen his plan. The plane landed a few minutes later and I raced through the airport, looking over my shoulder, hoping that nobody was coming after me. I called Dennis immediately and told him what I had seen. When the conference speaker called Dennis the next day, eager to take the next steps in their relationship, Dennis asked him about his "rape and pillage" plan. The man tried explaining it away, but Dennis never heard back from the conference speaker.

The second attempt was actually a few dozen attempts, but they all made the same play. In 1996, Dennis mounted two national tours. During those tours Dennis hooked up with [Yull Brown](#) and he promoted Yull and his technology like nobody has before or since. Brown was planning on transmuting radioactive material during the tour's final show, which was held in the arena where the Philadelphia 76-ers played. Five thousand people attended that show. Brown was the main attraction, and for the rest of his days Brown continually replayed the video of the standing ovation that that crowd showered upon him. In the weeks before that show, more than thirty of Dennis' business associates called Yull to try enticing him away from Dennis before the show. Yull politely took the names and phone numbers of those contacting him with their offers and then gave Dennis the list. Those are two of more than a dozen examples that I could present of incompetent attempts to steal Dennis' companies.

[47] Dennis and I were among several people (including other former students) who offered our organs to Mr. Professor for transplant. Mr. Professor declined all the offers, saying that he would only accept organ donations (a kidney and perhaps part of our pancreas) from those who were as "old and useless" as he was.

[48] In early 2003, I was coaxed out of my seclusion by a number of people and began a little free energy activism. I was invited into an alternative energy Internet forum that was populated by scientists, engineers and other technical professionals. Long ago I decided to specialize in the political-economic aspects of the free energy issue, and my first post to that forum briefly described my adventures. The most common reaction to the [billion-dollar bribe](#) we received has [been silence](#), but the engineer who dominated that forum replied in a way reminiscent of Monty Python's *Argument Clinic*. His response was "No you didn't!" I lay out [plenty of evidence](#) so people can assess the story and investigate further. I replied that I was reporting my *experiences*, and that if he wanted to call me a liar he could, but that he should do some homework before doing so. The engineer then dismissed me as a "[conspiracy theorist](#)." Such an *ad hominem* attack was [irrational at best](#), as reporting one's experiences has nothing to do with any theory. The forum moderator evidenced a bit more intelligence and open-mindedness by telling me that he would read some of my work before forming his opinion. I heard from him a few weeks later, and he said that putting political information into my work on free energy was inappropriate, which demonstrated that he *completely* missed the point of my work. The political-economic aspect of the free energy dynamic is *why we do not have free energy*. That understanding appears beyond the reach of nearly all the scientists, engineers and technical professionals that I have encountered in the alternative energy community.

The scientific corollary to the most common and [naïve response](#) that that I receive to the idea of free energy is, "If free energy machines existed, I should be able to buy one and scientifically study it. Otherwise, I have no reason to believe that free energy machines exist." When I have tried coaxing those scientists out of their armchairs and get them actually *investigate* the situation, I have never been successful. Their soft berths in academia and in corporate America have proven too comfortable. To believe that somebody is going to drop a free energy machine in your lap, so your testing lends them credibility, is to know absolutely nothing about how the real world of alternative energy works. The genuine technology is removed from circulation almost immediately.

In early 2006, after I published my [free energy conundrum essay](#), I made attempts to engage various groups in discussion of the free energy issue. My attempts also triggered some sites to present parts of my work. My early 2006

experiences were so dismaying that some radical left writings and other sources finally became clear to me. My work does not dance around the free energy issue. My [summary of the situation](#) is direct and succinct, and I posted summaries of my work in forums where it had previously been discussed (in a deficient manner), and hoped to engage in some worthwhile discussion. The responses astounded me. I learned long ago that general public forums were not the place to discuss my work, so I have sought a *few* audiences that I hoped could engage in rational and honest discussion of the issues. My expectations were not high, as I have interacted with people for twenty years on the issue, and have encountered very few who truly understood. Forums devoted to suppressed technologies and sites devoted to free energy pioneers seemed to hold some promise. I could not have been more wrong. In early 2006, I made posts that briefly discussed my points and linked to places in my work that supported my contentions (as well as some private emails to people who were supposedly familiar with the milieu). The forum respondents *completely* ignored my writings and links, acting as if they were not there, and then regurgitated their physics textbooks to show why free energy was “impossible,” and even presented sites unrelated to the points I was making, presenting *them* as what I was arguing for. It was so bizarre that I had to reassess what I was seeing. It was tempting to think those respondents had [low intelligence](#) or were dishonest, but I think I was seeing something else. The respondents were able to write proper sentences and make somewhat coherent arguments and cite their textbooks, but their responses had nothing to do with my arguments and evidence, yet they acted as if they had rebutted and dismantled my work. As with that [engineer who irrationally dismissed me as a conspiracy theorist](#), I believe I was seeing how the ego defends itself from information that threatens its delusions. They lashed out from deep-seated (and unconscious) fear, and I am sure those respondents thought they were being rational and even giving my work a fair hearing, even though they failed to acknowledged even reading it. Calling it [denial](#) I believe is too simple. I have come to *expect* those kinds of responses in general forums (which is why I no longer post to them), but was not expecting it in forums supposedly devoted to the issues I wrote about, not to the uniform degree I saw it. In one of the forums, there was not even *one* response that evidenced any consideration of my work. I have not contacted every potential group on earth, but there are only a couple left on my list that I think might have promise.

[Ed Herman](#) has criticized the writings of establishment pundits for many years, and has regularly shown how they effortlessly perform logical summersaults to [defend the indefensible](#) acts of their rich and powerful patrons, while trying to *appear* rational and ethical. Ed has written that those pundits were *incapable* of acknowledging what was so obvious to everybody else (because, I believe, the admission would expose how completely they have sold their souls). I believe Ed was describing the same thing I have seen for many years. Virtually nobody on earth today seems *capable* of honestly and rationally engaging the [free energy conundrum](#), but rationality and honesty appear to have little to do with it, although defending egocentric delusions are not acts of integrity. The free energy situation's reality is simply too threatening to people's cherished fantasies of how the world works, and they will avoid the implications at all costs. The vast majority simply stays in denial so complete they will never become aware of the situation. I was able to understand them and do not engage them. But it has taken me many years to finally understand those who fancied they had open minds and even proclaimed familiarity with the situation. They have what one friend has called “sophisticated egos.” They pride themselves on being reasonable and ethical, but are incapable of being reasonable and ethical when encountering information that threatens their illusions. To say they are *incapable* of realizing how their world works might seem to absolve them of responsibility, but if virtually nobody on earth is capable of acknowledging the reality of the world they live in, the question then begs to be asked: “Are humans really a sentient species?” And if we are, does sentience mean much?

[49] Over the years, I have generally kept abreast of what was written about Dennis or my work on the Internet. Dennis has also been the subject of nationally televised shows and many newspaper articles. My work has been discussed in numerous Internet forums, and I have found very few discussions worth joining. The situation has been much worse regarding Dennis' efforts. During the past twenty years, I have *never* seen an honest, intelligent and informed critique of his efforts. There is plenty to criticize about Dennis' efforts, as with all efforts like his. But almost all of his critics are of the armchair variety, and most of them resort to repeating each other's lies, in the style of [Mr. Skeptic](#), driving home the [primary lesson](#) of my journey even more deeply.

One libelous effort has been particularly notable. The critic is a scientist who writes about the free energy situation. He has a multi-faceted approach, much as I do. However, the author libeled Dennis in an essay written in 2001, claiming that Dennis has raised \$100 million from his victims over the years. Being a scientist, one might think he would either qualify his “estimate” of what Dennis has raised (an “estimate” that I know is about an order of magnitude askew from reality) or tell the reader how he derived it, or even tell them that it *is* an estimate, but he presented his wild guess as a fact in

an attempt to legitimize what the authorities did to Dennis in [Seattle](#) and [Ventura](#). I considered the article another low integrity effort and ignored it. Apparently, because that scientist has some writing talent and experience in the field, that essay has been given to me at least a dozen times, in person and also by email, as the premier commentary on the free energy conundrum, and several times by people who should know better. In 2003, I was invited to join with others an effort to educate the public on the subject matter my work covers, but their free energy information was dominated by that scientist's [libel tract](#). I informed the editor that I could not publicly join an effort that libeled Dennis, and even spent days of my time informing the editor why that tract was libel, and my explanation sailed right over his head. That public effort prominently promotes that libel tract to this day, turning their efforts into disinformation rather than useful information. That scientist has also been informed about his libel and *why it is libel*. He has not seen fit to retract his libel, which only reinforced my opinion about his integrity level.

I was invited into another educational effort around the same time. To my dismay, I was also handed that scientist's libel tract at one of the organization's meetings, as an example of excellent writing on the issue. That scientist was subsequently invited into that organization's inner circle, even to speak at one of our organizational functions and perhaps even sell his technology through our organization. When I brought up that man's libel (when *handed* his libel tract) and how he obviously did not have the right stuff to advance the free energy effort, I doubt that anybody in that organization understood my point. They thought that scientist could be "managed," or that maybe he owed Dennis an apology or that they needed to somehow comfort my emotional distress or they had some other excuse. That organization had barely gotten off the ground, and already it was aligning with people that I *knew* had low integrity (that scientist was not Dennis' only libeler close to the organization). As a group, they did not really understand the integrity issue regarding the pursuit of free energy. I then realized that our effort had little hope of success and left the organization. Without a [large nucleus](#) of high integrity people, there is no point in even initiating a free energy effort, unless learning harsh lessons and achieving martyrdom is the purpose. Earth may not currently host enough of those high-integrity people to form that nucleus, but if they do not exist in sufficient numbers, then pursuing free energy is futile in today's environment.

The Next Section: [A Vegetarian's Journey](#) (24K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

A Vegetarian's Journey

By Wade Frazier

I decided to write this essay because I became embroiled in the vegetarian issue, a controversy I did not know existed until 2000, when I was surprised to read an article that attacked vegetarianism, in an alternative medicine magazine. It was framed under the rubric of [myth debunking](#), which is a [popular strategy](#) these days.[1] I heard people express concern over the health dangers of being vegetarian when I became one during the 1970s, but those concerns seemed groundless, and I never heard anybody voice it since. I had been a happy vegetarian for many years when I read that article, and I felt like Rip Van Winkle, sleeping through a controversy that has apparently not abated. I began surfing the Internet to read other writings by that author and his chums, and the more I read, the angrier I became. Some of their work read like [Elizabeth's Whelan's](#), with links to [CSICOP](#) and other establishment defenders.

The author put in a disclaimer that the meat interests were not bankrolling him, and perhaps they were not, but his work was nearly as supportive of their interests as Whelan and [Steve Milloy](#) are supportive of their patrons. I wrote a furious letter to the editor, and I was shocked when they published it a few months later, with the author's rebuttal.[2] That author betrayed his own anti-vegetarian fervor by making the irrelevant observation in his riposte that Hitler was a vegetarian. The more I read their work, the clearer their mission became.[3] They also [assail the soybean](#).

This subject is better served by discussing issues that have been muddled by both pro-vegetarian and anti-vegetarian advocates. Both can miss and confuse important issues. The United States has the world's biggest flesh-eating culture, as well as [history's fattest humans](#), and the United States is by far the world's [largest purveyor of violence](#). Flesh eating has something to do with the situation, but is not the whole story. Americans are also history's most sedentary people, and eat more "junk food" than any people on earth. When my father reversed his heart disease by our [family going "health nut" in 1970](#), vegetarianism was not part of the regimen. Probably at least 90% of American health problems would disappear if Americans had live food (preferably organically grown) comprise at least 60-70% of their diets, and gave up tobacco and alcohol.

I became a vegetarian in 1978, going vegan, just to see what it might be like. Profound changes happened to my body, such as my body odor disappearing, and the next year was the only one during my college athletic career that I was not injured. I also lost ten pounds, as I did not even *try* to get any protein. I was vegan for eighteen months, and then I wanted to

become an All-American in my event (the javelin throw), and I knew I could not do it at six foot, one inch and 142 pounds. I then ate six hard-boiled eggs a day and weight trained, and gained twenty pounds of muscle in three months during 1980, but my body odor also became fierce. I largely retained that muscle, and have been a vegetarian since 1987.

I was forced into giving up my vegetarian ways when I [moved to Los Angeles to work in the high-rise world](#) in 1983. After I left LA, I became a vegetarian again. Although I have not quite become a vegan again, my home diet has been virtually vegan for years, with cheese and eggs only eaten when I do not eat at home. One day, probably before long, I will become a vegan again. Although I never advertised that I was a vegetarian, it is difficult to hide that fact when I eat with other people. During the past fifteen years, people have continually called me a vegetarian (sometimes with disdain, sometimes with awe, and sometimes with humor), as if that described my primary relationship to food, and I thought it was *the* prescription for good health. Abstaining from flesh does not have much to do with a healthy diet. Vegetarians whose diets are mostly processed food are not eating very healthily. Eating steaks everyday is also not so good for people (and hell on the cow), but if I had to choose, not eating live food is more harmful to human health than eating flesh. Humans are the only animals that eat [dead food](#), and the frequency of our degenerative diseases is also unique on earth (pets also eat dead food, and get human-style degenerative diseases).

Another misconception I wish to slay, which made me angriest at the work of those anti-vegetarian crusaders, is that probably less than one percent of vegetarians are the kind of activists that populate PETA and other militant organizations, such as those who “liberate” experimental animals by sabotaging laboratories. [Animal experiments are evil business](#), and this will be a happier world when people stop killing animals to eat them, but [the ends do not justify the means](#). Those vegetarian activists can be like those misguided “black bloc” protestors (for those who are not [outright provocateurs](#)) who have been at anti-globalization demonstrations, giving the police a convenient excuse to [use billy clubs, plastic bullets and pepper spray on non-militant protestors](#). Those vegetarian militants are operating from the victim principle, not the creator principle. I have met many vegetarians, and never met a zealous or “doctrinaire” one (and neither has my wife, who is largely a vegetarian). The author of the “myths of vegetarianism” article, as well as his crusading pals, consistently portrays all vegetarians as fanatics, using the [straw man](#) tactic. No vegetarian I ever met preached to anybody else about vegetarianism. I have rarely gotten into “vegetarian-rap” with any of my “brethren.” They all considered their vegetarianism a personal and private decision.

Sometimes the vegetarians I met did it for health reasons (the owner of the [medical lab I worked at](#) did it for his health), and other times for ethical or spiritual reasons. All three reasons influence me today. The first time I became a vegetarian, it was for none of those reasons. The second and last time, it was for health. Flesh eating took a toll on my body that I could feel, and eating red meat made me sick, so even when I was forced into giving up my

vegetarian ways for years, I avoided red meat whenever possible (just being around it can make me nauseous). Today, I am a vegetarian for ethical/spiritual reasons more than any other. [My journey](#) made me more aware and sensitive to the suffering of others, and I slowly came to realize that if I did not *need* to eat animals to live, I should not support robbing them of their lives. To decide to lessen our burden on the planet we live on and our fellow life forms is a profoundly personal [and spiritual](#) decision. As [John Robbins](#) and others have made clear, human carnivorism's [toll on earth's environment](#) is tremendous.[4] [Spiritually advanced societies](#) are mainly vegetarian, if not exclusively.

Because of the abuse I have received over the years for being a vegetarian, I understand how such treatment can make people fanatical. To create fanatics, oppressing people is effective, as America has seen with the [World Trade Center attacks](#) and other acts of "terrorism."

As proto-humans left their arboreal habitat millions of years ago, they changed their diet and behavior. Tool making was about [increasing their food supply](#), and when protohumans migrated beyond the tropics millions of years ago, killing animals and eating them was the primary substitute for their formerly fruit-eating, live food diet. Making weapons to kill animals more effectively is what allowed humans to migrate to earth's farthest reaches. However, the same technology that allowed humans to migrate to hostile environments also allowed humans to kill *each other*.

Humanity's murderous ways are directly related to its carnivorous ways.

With our great ape cousins, the carnivorous/murderous relationship is also seen. Chimpanzees are the most carnivorous great apes, with around 1% of their diet being mammal flesh, and perhaps 5% being insects. They are also the only great apes known to kill each other and engage in cannibalism. The mountain gorilla eats insects as the most carnivorous part of its diet. The great ape diet is two-thirds fruit, as the human diet should be. The human sweet tooth comes from our fruit-eating heritage.

Also, humans were a little too successful with their hunter-gatherer lifestyles, and [killed off all of the planet's easily killed large animals](#). About 10,000 years ago the hunter-gatherer lifestyle became unsustainable on a global basis, and the [Domestication Revolution began](#).

The anti-vegetarian-crusader analysis of nutritional research needs to be considered in the context of their ardor. If people read their work, then read the work of [John Robbins](#), Gabriel Cousens[5] or [Gary Null](#), they can decide for themselves.[6] Being a vegetarian rarely, if ever,

really endangers the health. There are some issues germane to the vegetarian path, such as vitamin B-12 (which is produced by bacteria living in dirt and on animals, and carnivorous humans can also have the deficiency), protein and some other nutrients, but nobody who puts forth some effort to become informed need much concern themselves with nutritional deficiencies. If all I ate were apples, then yes, I would develop nutritional deficiencies, but that is not what being a vegetarian means. There are also several definitions of vegetarianism, and some call those who eat fish and birds vegetarians, although I do not.[\[7\]](#)

People have different blood types, health histories and metabolisms, and each person needs to discover what is best for them. Pure fruit diets or pure brown rice diets are not ideal, and those are the kinds of extremes that can give people health problems and vegetarianism a bad name. I am allergic to spirulina, getting it by being disinformed by 1970s vegetarian researchers regarding how much protein I really needed. For me, getting enough protein is no big deal.

The general rule-of-thumb for an enlightened human diet is the less sentient the prey, the better off everybody is. The scale of greater-to-lesser violation of the prey is: humans, cetaceans ([whales and dolphins](#), although they may be *more* sentient than humans), mammals, birds, reptiles, amphibians, fish, insects, plants, microscopic organisms and fruit; eating fruit is actually a [symbiotic relationship with the plant](#). Prey-cannibalism is the greatest violation of the spirit, while eating fruit is the other end of the spectrum.

Comparative anatomy studies clearly show that humans are ideally fruit eaters, which our great ape cousins demonstrate. Many in the anti-vegetarian crowd have compared humans to horses, rats and pigs, but the most meaningful comparison is obviously to our closest biological cousins. Classic omnivores, the bear, panda and raccoon particularly, were originally predators that adapted to eating vegetable matter, and their anatomy does not have much correspondence to human anatomy, especially regarding suitability for a carnivorous diet. From our teeth, jaws and saliva, to stomach acid volume and concentration, to intestinal length, humans are obviously not of carnivorous design. The adaptation to meat to extend the human range and numbers came with a price, warfare and violence only part of it.

Humans *can* be carnivorous, and have been for many millennia. However, there is also dramatic evidence of certain diseases disappearing when societies suddenly became vegetarians (such as Denmark under Nazi occupation during World War II – colon cancer nearly disappeared). There is plenty of literature and research on the health benefits of a vegetarian diet, but there *are* some risks, if it is not done with care. None are that serious, but they exist. Some education is recommended if a person wants to try a vegetarian diet.

[Mystical students](#) have long known that eating flesh lowers the spiritual awareness. Eastern masters have stated since ancient times that the less flesh consumed, the higher the enlightenment attained, and have advocated vegetarianism for the spiritual initiate. It partly

has to do with the fear the animal experiences when it is killed. Sometimes, lowering the spiritual vibration can be useful. [Channels](#) often eat meat after channeling, to help “ground” them. Many also smoke or are overweight. Those are not ideal grounding mechanisms (I hike in the mountains with fifty pounds on my back to ground myself), although they work. Killing and eating animals definitely creates negative karma, which can directly affect the body.

Gandhi regularly discussed vegetarianism, and said that those who did so for “moral” reasons used vegetarianism to help them evolve to higher spiritual states, while those who merely did it for health reasons did it selfishly, received limited benefit from it, and were usually the ones who abandoned vegetarianism. He said that vegetarianism that was all about food and disease was, “the worst way of going about the business.” He also said,

“The Spiritualists hold, and the practice of the religious teachers of all religions... shows that nothing is more detrimental to the spiritual faculty of man than the gross feeding on flesh. The most ardent vegetarians attribute the agnosticism, materialism, and the religious indifference of the present age to too much flesh-eating and wine-drinking, and the consequent disappearance, partial or total, of the spiritual faculty in man.”[\[8\]](#)

What hit me between the eyes when reading that was that the two behaviors I was *forced* into doing when I [began my career in Los Angeles](#) was drinking alcohol and eating flesh. In retrospect, [when I discovered how worthless my profession was](#), I wonder how “knowing” such behavior was. Not from a conspiratorial sense, but there is often a deadening of one’s humanity that accompanies the descent into the business world, and forcing people to drink alcohol and eat flesh was part of that process. Those in “the club” were unconscious, and were making sure I became like them. It was the most ruthless work environment I ever encountered, with the personal lives of my colleagues largely disasters. .

Gandhi’s pacifist activism and his vegetarianism were no coincidence. Also, it is no coincidence that meat and alcohol (and formerly tobacco) are military and corporate staples. Fruit is the ideal food for spiritual reasons also, as eating fruit is a symbiosis with plants; it does not harm them and helps spread their seeds.

After years of being a vegetarian, a perspective gradually came into focus as I looked at flesh food: it is a carcass, once part of a living, breathing creature, one not much different than me. Today, I have a visceral revulsion toward meat eating that far exceeds any thoughts I might have about its effect on my health or spirit. There is no will power in my vegetarian ways, as I can barely fathom putting flesh in my mouth. I am not laying that trip on anybody else, but that is a “hazard” of being a long-time vegetarian: flesh eating can eventually be seen as

disgusting, horrifying, and a cousin to cannibalism. I passed the point-of-no-return in the 1980s.

For those who feel they *must* eat animal flesh, the most spiritual and ethical way of doing it is to look the animal in the eye while taking its life, and thanking it. Eating it raw and on the spot is also the “natural” way to do it. Anything less is not being a true carnivore. If that style of carnivorous behavior seems revolting, then it might be helpful to ponder why, as that is the most ethical, spiritual and healthy way to eat flesh. People can also get parasites that way, which is another reason humans are not ideal carnivores; true carnivores have far more acid and a far more acidic pH in their stomachs, which kills parasites. Cooking flesh destroys a great deal of its nutritional value, and is another unnatural human practice.

Vegetarianism is part of the path to a [healed humanity and planet](#), and some of humanity’s darker possible futures have [animal abuse](#) as signposts of their degeneration, but nobody should be coerced, bribed or deceived into the practice. It is a deeply personal issue, and one that all people need to decide for themselves.

Footnotes

[1] The article was Stephen Byrnes’ “The Myths of Vegetarianism” in the *Townsend Letter for Doctors and Patients*, July 2000, pp. 72-81.

[2] See *Townsend Letter for Doctors and Patients*, October 2000, pp. 93-94.

[3] They then engaged in an advertising campaign (they have arrogated the pioneering work of [Weston Price](#), but that is a story for another time). They had an ad for their material in *Nexus Magazine*, in the January-February 2001 issue, p. 70, and their headline nearly said it all: “Confused about nutrition? We set the record straight.” That is a bold claim. Then their ad purported to debunk myths about nutrition, and the first “myth” they debunked was, “Animal fats cause cancer and heart disease.” Their “truth” was that animal fats “protect” against cancer and heart disease, and vegetable oils cause it. The Beef Council could not have said it better.

[4] See Robbins’ *Diet for a New America*.

[5] See his *Conscious Eating*.

[6] See, for instance, Gary Null’s *The Vegetarian Handbook* and John Robbins’ *The Food Revolution*.

[7] See Gary Null’s *The Vegetarian Handbook*, p.4.

[8] Mohandas K. Gandhi, in a speech given before the London Vegetarian Society. See *Ethical Vegetarianism*, edited by Kerry Walters and Lisa Portmess, pp. 136-144.

The Next Section: [A Spiritual Perspective](#) (212K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

A Spiritual Perspective

By Wade Frazier

[How I Developed my Spiritual Perspective](#)

[My Early Paranormal Experiences](#)

[Serving Ourselves and Serving Others](#)

[What Is the Relevance to My Work?](#)

[The Human Afterlife](#)

[A Tale](#)

[Footnotes](#)

How I Developed my Spiritual Perspective

For me, my worldview does not become comprehensive until the metaphysical/spiritual/mystical (pick the term that seems to suit best) perspective is incorporated, because I view all my work and life through a mystical lens. By that, I mean that I always seek the biggest possible picture in everything that I look at and experience. In order to speak to the world of scholarship, science, history, et cetera, it has been necessary to try speaking the language of those disciplines. While my work on [Columbus](#) and the [European conquest of the world](#) can stand on its own historical legs (or my research on [fluoride](#), [thermodynamics](#) and [cancer treatment](#) can stand on its own scientific legs), history only tells part of the story, no matter how comprehensive it may seem, no matter how heavily it relies on "[primary](#)" source material.

The world of our everyday conscious minds is a limited one, bound by our sense perceptions and the course of our thinking. A history that only hews to the "facts," or a science that is only concerned with what its instruments can tell it, is materialistic. While a historical account that adheres to the "facts" can be admirable, "facts" [are not as objective](#) as we might like them to be, and what facts are presented and omitted is hardly an objective undertaking. Materialism is the worship of the material world and our physical existence. [Carl Sagan](#) practiced it, as did [John D. Rockefeller](#), although he was a devout Baptist (Rockefeller became the most excited when pondering how rich he would become^[1]). A mystical viewpoint also looks beyond the physical plane, seeking a larger framework of understanding, and exploring the nature of our consciousness.

[James Randi](#) and [friends](#) aver that there is no solid evidence for anything existing beyond the physical plane.

The rationale for that viewpoint usually relies on the logic of making evidence of a reality beyond the physical plane conform to the physical plane's rules. If people begin with the *assumption* that the only "real" things are those detected by their senses, their circular logic will "prove" their assumption's accuracy. If somebody has visited another dimension, only an artifact of that dimension (or conformance to this one) can convince materialists that they really went there. That introduces standards of evidence that are often impossible to achieve, so Randi can be right. This essay will lay the groundwork for how I developed my perspective. An intellectual game did not bring me to my perspective, but my *experiences*.

"Reality" may not be objective. My reality does not have to be Carl Sagan's. Paranormal experiences have shaped my view of reality far more than the study of books and science. I cannot "prove" my reality to anyone else. My experiences are nobody else's, but I have discovered that having "paranormal" experiences is something that anyone can attain. Nobody need take Randi's word or mine for it; they can seek and have their own experiences. When people have their own paranormal experiences, they are not at the mercy of the world's Sagans and Randis, telling them that there is no veil, so therefore nothing on the other side, or that they were just "imagining" it.

My Early Paranormal Experiences

My mental gifts were recognized early in my childhood, and my parents groomed me for a life of achievement. It did not quite turn out as anticipated. When my sixth grade teacher remarked that he thought my parents were pushing me too hard, and that I could not seem to accept failure, I think he was sincere.[\[2\]](#)

The spiritual aspect of my upbringing was not ignored, nor was it pushed. My parents were raised in staunchly Christian environments. My mother's mother ran her Lutheran church for about fifty years, and my father was a Bible scholar who once had thoughts of becoming a minister. To my parents' credit, their children were not subjected to intense Christian indoctrination. I attended Sunday school for about three years of my childhood, until I was twelve. As I look back from an adult perspective, I appreciate what those church workers did. There was love there, and they were trying to help raise "good" children, but I was largely oblivious to it, just wanting to get my Bible verses accurate and getting my goodies for acing the "curriculum."

A few years later, my maturing mind considered the Christian view of God and the Cosmos, and I decided it made no sense to me, and I began calling myself an atheist. It was a ridiculous label to use, as at that age few children can willfully ascribe to any "isms." Parents and other authority figures heavily influence a child's worldview at that age. By age 15, I was fully involved with growing up, dealing with the new rage of hormones coursing through my body - replete with acne, body odor and unbidden erections - and preparing myself for the adult world. I kept pulling the straight A's, and was at the top of nearly all my classes, from kindergarten through my college diploma.

My parents sent me to Europe for two months in the summer of 1974, just after I had turned sixteen, as part of a student tour that studied the Old World's art and culture. It was an intense tour, visiting nine nations (we would have also visited Turkey, but the Cyprus War was being waged) and about 50 cathedrals, 50 museums, and nearly every noteworthy cultural relic in continental Western Europe. The students were the tour guides, each becoming an expert for part of the tour, having signed up for what they wanted to lead.

At that age, I was oblivious to art and culture. I had visited several science museums, but European art and culture was alien to me. About the only exposure to other cultures was knowing my Mexican-American friends and watching *Kung Fu* on TV, not for the Eastern philosophy, but for how Kwai Chang Caine kicked righteous butt every show (only when egged into it, so I thought). I was a *Gilligan's Island* fan. I had no interest or even knowledge about what to become "expert" in, which was a major reason I did not want to go, because of the homework required to prepare. When the list finally came around to me, about the only part not taken was a man named Vincent Van Gogh and Holland. I had never heard of him, but had to study his life and work to play tour guide in Holland and the museums that housed his work. I discovered the world of art, and to this day Van Gogh is my favorite artist. I have stared at his paintings and drawings for many hours, sometimes mesmerized in museums while looking at his work. If I did not have to earn a living, I would prefer being an art historian.

My summer in Europe was a rite of passage, and the beginning of my adulthood. It was an awakening, but on the spiritual front there was nothing happening. I had abandoned religion as a superstition, and my early fascination with strange phenomenon (I avidly read Frank Edwards' *Strange World* and *Stranger than Science* at age thirteen) was being replaced with an adult, no-nonsense view of such things. That changed. In the autumn of 1974, my father and brother came home one night and said they could see my aura. I had never heard of an aura. They stood me in front of a white wall in our home and told me what they saw. They said the class they were taking had trained them to see auras. I was amazed. I asked, "Can I see it too?" Their response was that I could, after taking the class.

The next month my entire family took the course. The class was called Silva Mind Control. Reading auras was not part of the official Silva curriculum, but something our teacher had thrown in. Silva Mind Control was not marketed as a class to develop one's psychic muscles, read auras, or any of those "New Age" concepts that abound today. Instead, it was marketed as a way to improve the memory, think positively, and a host of "tame" ideas. The course was presented with a scientific basis. The buzzwords of today's "New Age" were not in evidence. The class taught the students how to meditate, without Eastern religious concepts. Instead, the class was about controlling brain waves. By slowing brain waves from the usual waking consciousness of 21 cycles per second, to the range of REM (rapid eye movement) sleep of around 11 cycles per second, the brain could work more effectively, more creatively, remember more, etc. The class was forty hours long, about half lecture and half meditation exercises. The instructor had galvanic skin response devices where we could measure our brain waves. Those devices were predecessors to today's biofeedback machines.

From Monday to Friday, we attended the class in the evening. On the weekend we finished with two ten-hour days of instruction. I had no idea what I was getting into, or what the class was really about. With each new exercise, I became more familiar with the mental state they called "being at level." It is not easy to describe, and can be subtle. Unless one is familiar with meditative or prayer states, or has been through intensive meditation exercises, it is difficult to comprehend that state. In general, people are more relaxed, their minds clearer and not easily distracted. Usually, there is nothing spectacular about it. It is similar to the hypnotic state, but where the subject controls the process. As we performed our meditative exercises, the instructor played a tape with a somnolent sound. He also read us the Silva script, which was filled with positive images and conditioning.

One conditioning statement was that if we fell asleep during the mediation sessions, three taps on the shoulder would wake us up. It was similar to a posthypnotic suggestion. About the third night (class was from about six to ten PM and was held about an hour's drive from home, which made for long days), I fell asleep during a session, and all I remember is feeling a tap on my shoulder and springing almost out of my chair in shock. I was embarrassed as I saw the instructor standing next to me, and the whole class (about 20 people) looking at me and smiling. When the exercise was finished, I was asleep, and the instructor demonstrated to the class how powerful the mind is. He stood next to me and tapped my shoulder firmly. The class noted that I did not budge. Then the instructor tapped my shoulder firmly again. There still was no response from me. As he touched my shoulder for the third time, I nearly leaped out of my chair. The class was impressed, I was embarrassed, and as I look back, that was my only warning that my worldview and life direction was about to radically change.

On the weekend came the ten-hour days, the exercises becoming progressively longer and more involved. No longer were we merely learning how to "go to level." The instructor had us "project" our awareness into a cube of metal that we held, and eventually had us project our awareness into our homes, plants, and family pets. The exercises were fun, and my imagination was being used like never before. It did not feel much different than daydreaming, but was perhaps more vivid.

On Sunday afternoon came the end of class and the grand finale, one my father and brother had not told me about. We were going to project our awareness into people and "work cases." It was strange to me. The idea was thinking of somebody I knew with a health problem, and I would write that person's name, gender, age, and city of residence on a card, as well as their affliction. Then a second person would read off the name, gender, age, and city of residence to a third person who had "gone to level," and they would "project" their awareness into that person, going on nothing more than that information, and diagnose the problem and send healing energy to the person.

I had a strange mixture of exhilaration and uneasiness. On one hand, it was similar to a classroom experiment, my academic background came to the fore, and I loved the classroom. On the other hand, I would be the experiment. I avidly read Frank Edwards' stranger tales years earlier, and doubted the scientific worldview told us the entire story. I suspected we might have unacknowledged abilities, but being put on the spot to perform psychically was unnerving. I had one of my "cases" easily picked out.

My first employer was a black man named Isaac Brown. I worked for him the year before, tearing apart a walnut farm, salvaging the wood from the buildings. He lived in Ventura's poor section and my father bought scrap wood from him. My father got me the job, and I made \$1.50 an hour. Mr. Brown had diabetes and an injury related to it. My employment ended while he recovered from his injury-related illness and the business folded. Mr. Brown also had an index finger that had been severed at the middle knuckle, but he was my case because he had diabetes. I was the scientific kid, and I remember hiding my card as I wrote his condition, not wanting to compromise the reading with flashing the card to the potential psychic, whomever that might be. I did not write about his index finger being severed. His diabetes had caused him to lose half of his foot. Those were his spectacular medical conditions, and I certainly did not write about his race. I did not even think about his finger.

The "psychic" who worked Isaac Brown's case was a woman that people might call a "yuppie" today. She probably felt as I did: she was not taking the Silva course to increase her psychic prowess. She probably did not feel too psychic. Improving the memory and thinking positively was how the course was pitched, and I do not know for sure, but that probably drew her to the class. She closed her eyes and went to "level," and I gave my card to the moderator. He read off: "Isaac Brown, age 42, male, Ventura, California." The class was held in Santa Barbara, about 40 miles from Ventura, and I doubt that woman would have known a poor black man named Isaac Brown.

The woman's eyelids fluttered, and within seconds of being given Isaac Brown's information she said, "I keep getting the impression that he is black," and she then held up the hand where Isaac was missing most of his index finger, bent the finger where it was severed and said, "He is missing the end of this finger." From

the moderator reading Isaac's name to her holding up her finger took less than ten seconds. The first ten seconds of her first "case" changed my life forever. The "probability-and-outcome skeptics" who try explaining such events as sheer luck carry no weight with me. The odds of somebody trying to act psychically after finishing forty hours of training, and having a "hit" such as that on their first attempt, and attributing it to coincidence, is one in millions. The "skeptics" can never take away my knowledge with their pronouncements and arguments. I *know*. They have only their empty theories; I have *experience*.

One requirement of performing psychically is quieting the intellect we operate from so often, letting the impressions come forth without judging how reasonable they seem. Her intellect may have kicked in after that, and I cannot recall if she even determined that he was diabetic. I just sat in awe of her holding up her bent finger, telling us that its end was missing. I was stunned. For the moments she let her impressions flow unencumbered by the intellect, she performed with the best of them. One might say that Isaac Brown is a cliché name for a black man. Maybe so. The index finger, which I did not even write on the card, and she had no way of seeing anyway, eventually expanded my universe of the possible about a million-fold.

Then it was my turn. It can make people nervous to perform that way. It felt like I was making it up. When the impressions come, keeping the intellect at bay is the key to being accurate. In my first case, I said the woman had a stroke that had paralyzed her right side. One diagnostic tool is "putting on" the head of the person being read, and feeling what they feel. That is how I diagnosed the paralysis. My "wild guesses" and irrational feelings were correct. Everybody in the class had similar experiences. I discovered that day that the abilities of human consciousness were barely dreamed of by mainstream society. I have sat in several Silva classes (attending the class for the rest of my life is free) and have regularly witnessed students making "hits" similar to the ones I saw in my first class.

[Brian O'Leary](#) (astronomer, ex-astronaut, and free energy visionary) had a similar experience to mine, five years after I did in a course called Lifespring, which was a cross between Silva Mind Control and EST (another human potential class that I took in the 1970s). When it came time for Brian to work his "case," he made up out of the thin air that his case was a man who was a meteorologist-journalist who preferred hanging out on the west coast of Maui and lost his wife by death. Those "wild guesses" were true.^[3] Others in the "New Age" community entered it through Silva Mind Control, including Shakti Gawain. She nailed ten cases in a row when she took Silva Mind Control.

The introduction to Silva Mind Control began my spiritual journey. Silva has classes in most large cities. Because of revelations of government mind control programs such as [CIA's M-K-ULTRA](#), the course now is called the Silva Method. There are millions of satisfied graduates, and the money-back offer has been around since the beginning. I heard of one person once who took them up on it. Actually, I heard of two, but the first one got her money back to prove to her family that the course was not a "scam", and then her entire family took the class and she paid the money back.

After that class, I was taught how to see auras, and it takes the same training to "work cases" to get one sensitive enough to where auras can be seen. For the "skeptics" who think it was the after-image retina phenomenon, I have news for them: it was not. In the fifth grade I became fascinated with the after-image phenomenon, and for a few months I created image after image that I could stare at, and then stare at a blank wall and see the "negative" of the image before my eyes. I am familiar with that phenomenon, and it was quite different than seeing auras.

For anybody who risked a few hundred dollars (Silva has always given refunds to anybody who wanted their money back for any reason) and a week's worth of their time, they could have proven those things to themselves, and they can today.^[4] Nobody needs to read "research," hear "debunkers," or watch "psychics" on TV. They can prove it to themselves. We cannot prove our experiences to anybody else, not really, but we can prove it to ourselves. The "miracles" that Jesus performed did not seem so impossible anymore, but neither did they provide a basis for worshipping the man. He was a great master, yes, but he was demonstrating abilities inherent in everybody, and he said we would "do greater works" than he performed. I believe it, now. Over the years, I have participated in and witnessed phenomena that went far beyond "working cases."

Many years later I would discover the work of [James Randi](#) and other "debunkers," with their broad proclamations and arrogant boasts. One of Randi's books is titled *Flim-Flam!, Psychics, ESP, Unicorns and other Delusions*, putting his opinion of those he investigates and the phenomena's legitimacy in the book's title. The "debunkers" usually have no idea of what they are talking about, as they are bereft of *experience*, and most have never even pursued it.

Studying the debunkers' work has been educational. Randi is so highly biased that he disqualifies himself as an investigator.^[5] There are a fair number of reasons why Randi and others are doomed if they really

seek evidence of the paranormal, and abilities of human consciousness that go beyond the ability to rationalize. Their goal is "proving" that their narrow view of reality is the "right" one.

Experiencing the paranormal is one of the easiest things to achieve if one seeks sincerely and leaves one's mind open. If people fervently believe that there is nothing to the paranormal, they will probably never experience it, or if they do, their minds will go into overdrive to convince themselves that they did not have the experience. Wanting to be right might be humanity's greatest failing.

After our family took Silva Mind Control, we explored those new realms. We learned how to communicate mentally with our cats. Animals are naturally psychic, much more so than human beings. We went to level and mentally pictured our cats doing something that we wanted them to. To do it successfully, it must be an atypical behavior but not one that was disagreeable to the cat, because we are asking the cat for a favor. We had two kittens, and we mentally pictured them jumping into our laps, something they never did. One of us would sit on a stool and go to level, while the others watched. The cat began looking at the person at level intently, then walked over and jumped into his lap. I saw our kitten do it for my brother, and it did it for me.

My father began experimenting with pyramid power. Pyramid energy is one of the more derided aspects of the "New Age." My father bought some pyramids and began experimenting with them. He had one that he put his razor blades on, to keep them sharp. I cannot speak for how effective such "uses" of that energy are. I have seen Kirlian photographs of an energy spike coming off the apex of pyramids, and even the Great Pyramid. *Something* is happening. Pyramid energy is apparently a subtle energy that is not very detectable by our modern instruments, but I saw that plants could recognize it.

My father built a pyramid with a wooden frame and clear plastic stretched between the frames, forming its planes. Such pyramids are usually built to the relative dimensions of the Great Pyramid at Giza, as my father did. My father made the pyramid about four feet wide at its base. He designed it to be suspended from the ceiling over a chair, so somebody could sit under it. Nobody in our family really used it, and my father eventually hung it from the ceiling in a corner of our enclosed, fiberglass roof patio, to get it out of the way. On the patio were pet cages (my brothers and I raised rats and mice), bicycles and other assorted clutter. On a table, my mother had some houseplants, and one was vine-like, hanging over the table's edge, dangling a few feet, its end nearly touching the ground. My father hung the pyramid on the patio. The pyramid's base was about five feet off the ground. It was a couple feet above the table that held the plant, and a couple feet away horizontally. About a week later, I was sitting on the patio and noticed that plant. It is one of the most amazing things that I have ever seen. The vine dropped down over the table as it had been, but at about a foot below the tabletop the vine made about a 130° turn, and more than a foot of the vine's end was pointing into the air, aiming at the pyramid! In botany, there is a phenomenon known as phototropism, where plants can grow toward a light. That plant was growing toward the center of the pyramid, about where the King's Chamber is in the Giza pyramid.

The "skeptical" crowd derides pyramid energy as pure moonshine, while the scientific community also ignores "pyramid energy" as a fantasy. I once knew a houseplant that knew better (or perhaps it read the *National Enquirer*). After witnessing that phenomenon, I have never laughed at anything being theorized about the Great Pyramid's purpose.

Aura reading became quite a pastime for us. We went to classes where twenty of us took turns getting in front of the class, and we all looked at our auras. Reading auras requires the kind of training that meditation offers, although some can naturally see them. Today, I cannot see auras anymore. I am "out of shape." If I want to see auras again, I will have to regularly meditate to redevelop those "psychic muscles" (something I am planning to do after this web site is finished).

I had a childhood friend take the class, and we used to "work cases." Each person had their preferred method of doing readings. What worked well for me was "putting on" the person's head and feeling what they felt. It was an empathic method. Once I read an old man that my friend knew. While doing the reading and "wearing" his head, my back felt as if I was wearing a hubcap between my shoulder blades, and I must have looked like Quasimodo. When the reading was over I asked my friend if he noticed my hunched back, and what it might mean. He said that the old man had a very hunched back, which looked like the way I was hunched over.

Sometimes there was a downside to being empathic. I have participated in plenty of "hands on" healing over the years. Once I worked with somebody who had severe back problems that resulted in volcanic migraine headaches. While laying my hand on his neck, suddenly the muscles in the back of my neck tightened up and my neck was sore for days. He said that was what his neck felt like. One might say that it "backfired." I have had numerous paranormal experiences such as those, and they would usually happen when I did not expect them.

I have attended dozens of "channelings," in which somebody lets another being come through their awareness. The "skeptics" dismiss the phenomenon as bogus, either as a fraud, wishful thinking or some other delusion. I once had a private session when the channel told me that I was misaligned with my spirit's light (during my dark days with Dennis), and she asked my guides and other helpers, such as angels, to help align my body with the light of my spirit. I had little idea what that entailed, and did not know what to expect, if anything. The channel is a friend of mine, and I did not expect her to try to convince me that something happened when it did not. As I sat there, she looked at me and said that my friends were trying to help me. Just then, something strange happened. My awareness began "turning" in my body. It is difficult to describe. It felt as if my awareness was being twisted in my body, as though I was no longer "straight" in my body. My head wanted to twist to the side, and I was straining to keep it pointed straight ahead. It was quite a trip. I had nothing to compare it to, although years later I heard that my experience was related to vertigo. I do not know if what my unseen friends attempted was successful, but it was strange.

Those experiences and many others were part of a drastic change in my worldview. The single biggest change was the first, when that woman held up [Isaac Brown's severed finger](#). After that, I was not quick to call anything "impossible," especially regarding the abilities of human consciousness. By age twenty-one, I had five years of increasing study under my belt. In those days, a few books were highly influential to me; one was *Illusions* by Richard Bach which was his follow-up to *Jonathan Livingston Seagull*. I have read a vast array of spiritual material since *Illusions*, but it is still one of the greatest spiritual masterpieces I have seen. Perhaps the most influential book I ever read was the *Aquarian Gospel of Jesus the Christ*, first published in 1907. Levi Dowling, an American Christian minister, wrote it. Dowling produced the book over a number of years while in a deep trance state. He was supposedly accessing the Akashic record, where every thought and act of Creation is recorded. That is the theory, anyway. After my experience with Silva Mind Control, I would not scoff at much in the paranormal realm. I read the *Aquarian Gospel* at age eighteen. For the first time, I began understanding spirituality. For two years, that book was on my bedside table. Every night as I went to bed, I picked up the book and read from it.

Something happened when I took Silva Mind Control. It was a dual blessing. One effect was that my imagination became more vivid. In addition, my intuition and sense of truth was awakened. If I had read the *Aquarian Gospel* at age 15, it probably would have been largely meaningless, but with my intuition awakened the text leapt off the page. The words sang to me. I had a sense that I was reading The Truth. By "truth," I do not mean the sense of right and wrong or what really happened two thousand years ago when Jesus walked the earth. It bypassed the intellect. The words spoke to my soul. Perhaps the right and left halves of my brain were becoming integrated, or my head and heart were united. I realized that my linear, logical mind was not in charge of the process, but was along for the ride.

I studied the life of Jesus as ardently as any fundamentalist Christian, but not the version they did, and without their fundamentalist beliefs. The sense I received of Jesus' life was radically different from the typical Christian view of his life and work. Jesus was a mystical master second to none. The feats I performed and witnessed on my journey with Silva Mind Control were baby steps compared to the mastery of Jesus. He was a living example of humanity's potential. Walking on water, turning water to wine, raising the dead and doing the loaves-and-fishes trick seemed quite normal once I realized its nature. Jesus said those "feats" were a part of human nature, and once we had attained our own self-mastery we could all do those things, and greater still.

Yet, all those "feats" were merely ancillary to his primary message: love. Jesus demonstrated the power of love. Love is such a peculiar word, yet the most important. The Beatles could sing about love in every song, but that word is not used in our Western world often. What is love? It seems to be the power of Creation, or God's real name. What we feel when we think of our spouses, children, parents and friends is a pale reflection of God's love. Our love is not unworthy, yet few of us have attained unconditional love: love for love's sake. That is the love of God, and that was the state that Jesus attained, his Christhood, asking the Creator to forgive his murderers, for they did not know what they did.

From studying the *Aquarian Gospel* I understood that Jesus did not want to be worshipped. Paul began corrupting it, turning the good news *from* Jesus into the good news *about* Jesus. That was where Christianity made the wrong turn, from which it has yet to recover. Christianity is the cult of Jesus. Jesus lived to show us all our innate potential, and awesome it is. We can all attain the mastery of Jesus and go beyond it, and I understand it is the destiny of us all, someday. I have hardly picked up the book during the past twenty years, and as I am writing these words I have been leafing through the *Aquarian Gospel*, and it holds up well. Long ago, I realized that [the only thing worth knowing about Jesus was love](#). It has been the true north of my spiritual compass ever since. The yardstick I have used ever since in assessing spiritual material, the motivation of others and myself is this: is it loving? In the end, that is all that matters to me.

Love does not judge. Pure love is unconditional. The Creator does not judge his/her creations, but loves all equally. When Jesus spoke of loving the enemy, he was talking about a level of love that few people in the past two thousand years have even attempted. He was far, far ahead of his time.

At about the same time I read the *Aquarian Gospel* and *Illusions*, my father introduced me to body of work that was creating a sensation in the spiritual community. It was the work of a non-physical entity named [Seth](#), who spoke through Jane Roberts, an American. There was little to compare it to at the time. Mystics and spiritualists across the globe studied the books. Seth's identity was a source of speculation by many, including Roberts. I did not care much about who or what Seth was; it was *what he said* that got my attention. My awakened sense of truth was awed by Seth's perspective, which was loving and of unfailing good cheer. Even if he was Jane Roberts' alter ego, I had heard no mortal evince such an exalted and loving perspective. Seth looked at the BIG PICTURE of life. Along with the loving attitude was an involved and challenging perspective of our physical dimension, why we are here, and what lies beyond this reality.

The first book Seth dictated was *Seth Speaks*, followed by what many, including me, feel is his magnum opus, *The Nature of Personal Reality*. Two books followed that nearly broke my brain, titled the *Unknown Reality*. When the Seth books were published, there was nothing quite like it in Western culture, particularly a prominently published book (bodies of work such as the Silver Birch and Theosophy material qualified, but were not widely known in the West in those days). Later, the term "channeling" came into vogue to describe the phenomenon. As a body of channeled work, I consider the Seth Material still one of the best. If one's intuition is not awakened, the words of Seth can be seen as gibberish, and many have dismissed it as nothing but the alter ego of a deluded woman.

In the end, the mark of enlightened material such as *Illusions*, the *Aquarian Gospel* or the Seth Material is that its message leads people back to their own integrity, the value of the individual, the power of the self, and it is always loving. Those perspectives sought no acolytes and addressed each of us as equals. If cults sprang up around them, it was not because the masters encouraged it.

While I avidly studied the masters' teachings, my life was also barreling along. I was attending college, becoming a staunch pacifist, becoming involved with women, being a collegiate track athlete, entering the working world, driving and growing up. At age 19, [I prayed for guidance](#) and was told that I might like studying business. That happened concurrently with girlfriends, track, work and my spiritual studies. A lot was happening, and I did not always handle events as well as I would have liked, but I have no regrets. We are all on our divine journeys, and all roads are there to be walked. Every experience is an important part of the journey, and to regret any of it is to deny our divinity. Making "mistakes" is one of life's most important parts. Even not learning from our "mistakes" is important, from a certain perspective, and we get as many chances as we need to get it right, and "getting it right" means learning the lesson of love. That is my understanding today, and I doubt it will change much.

As I look back, a vital part of my journey was trying to integrate my spiritual studies with my academic studies. I tried wedding my spiritual studies with my studies of business and economics. I tried seeing how capitalism could be an ideal vehicle for enlightened spirituality. I was in for some painful realizations. Yet, if I had not been that way, I would not have walked my path. I see a divine plan in my strange journey, and I am not sure where it will ultimately lead, but I trust the journey, although some days I whine and ask for Scotty to beam me up.

My "[Easter Bunny](#)" question evidenced the "[cognitive dissonance](#)" I was undergoing. My spiritual training gave me the strength to question what I was seeing, because my capitalistic indoctrination was colliding with the real world. If I had no spiritual foundation, I may have quickly joined my comrades, easily dismissing the question of whether we were truly contributing to the world. I would not have really cared about the answer, as long as I was well paid. If I had played the game as my peers did, I would probably be rich today, but my soul would be gnawing at me, and I would be wondering when I would do something important. My dream of [changing the world of energy](#) and helping heal the planet, however grandiose that might seem, would probably have eaten at my soul like a cancer.

Eventually the mystical student realizes that spirituality is not really about other dimensions and arcane powers. It is only valuable in how it is applied to *this* world. The old saying of being so heavenly bound that one is no earthly good applies richly to the spiritual journey. Living one's enlightenment on the mountaintop is easy. Far more difficult and rewarding is living that enlightenment in society. In the end, there is only one Creation, one universe, one place where we all exist. An important aspect of this plane of existence is that the path of truth abounds with paradox and dichotomy. As the great physicist Niels Bohr once said, when scientists encountered a paradox, it was great news, because wrestling with paradoxes was where the scientific progress was made.[\[6\]](#)

As an analogy, suppose I am a virtuoso violinist in this life. [On the other side](#), I do not lay down my violin, but join a great symphony, learning to participate in making music that I could not produce by myself. Ultimately, every one of us plays our part in Creation's symphony, and although some of us may play solo leads at times, and some play kettledrums while others play the piccolo, every instrument is essential. On the other side, we find ourselves playing music that we doubted was possible on this side.

Serving Ourselves and Serving Others

Whether people believe in an immortal soul, or believe their existence is dependent on their body's chemistry, every earthly human can probably agree upon one idea: we all have a physical body. Because we all have bodies, and they all have needs such as air, water, food, shelter, sex, etc., to an extent we are all "self-serving" as we care for our bodies. Since it takes two people to procreate, and few have a tropical island to themselves or can survive alone on a mountaintop, humans interact.

To the extent humans interact, we serve each other's needs. People are other-serving when seeing to the needs of others, and self-serving when seeing to their own. All humans engage in both activities. According to nearly all mystical material, that interaction is the primary reason we are here. We evolve our souls by inhabiting this dimension, interacting with each other (including animals, plants, Mother Earth, etc.) helping and hurting each other, and living with the consequences. Even for people who believe that oblivion awaits them at death, they can probably relate to the self-serving/other-serving dichotomy.

Throughout our lives, we constantly make decisions whether to serve ourselves or serve others. Infants are totally focused on survival. Parents are (usually) totally focused on that infant's well being. The infant is self-serving, the parent other-serving. As with all decisions in life, especially when humans interact, the question of whom we are serving is constantly with us, and can make seemingly straightforward decisions more complicated. Why do parents have children? Is it to give life where there was none, passing on the blessings they have received? Is it to breed a farmhand, somebody to exploit today and perhaps support them when old and feeble? Is it to have built-in friends, built-in sex slaves, or a built-in retirement plan? Is it a bid for immortality? Do people do it in a moment of lust, not thinking or caring about the consequences of bringing a child into the world? Is their own motivation to serve the child or themselves? Is it both? Is it to serve the Creator? It can appear extremely complicated, but always comes down to whom is being served.

There is not a single human interaction where the issue of it being self-serving or other-serving does not apply. The ideal is getting as good as we give, being self-serving and other-serving at the same time, or balancing the scales in the end. The Beatles sang, "The love you take is equal to the love you make." Our motivations are not always clear to others, or sometimes even to ourselves. Even the issue of self can become contentious. Is the "self" the body? What is called the consciousness? Is the self the individual, the tribe, the nation, the universe, the soul? Is it all of the above? Most people probably think of the conscious mind and the body it inhabits as the "self."

Most people on earth are mostly self-serving. Stated another way, if all human decisions made in one day were weighed by relative scale (where helping an old lady across the street would not count as much as jumping in front of a train to save somebody's life), sorting to one-side the self-serving actions and other-serving actions to the other, the scale would tip to the self-serving side.

There is tremendous variation with each person, each day. A nursing mother is generally other-serving when she nurses her infant. When she is feeding herself, she is serving herself, although part of her motivation may be being healthy in order to properly care for her infant.

Most mystics say the reason we are here is to learn about love, to remember who we are - divine children of Creation, and in fact, the Creator itself. A life lived in service to others is apparently the most "worthwhile." Very few people have ever achieved such a lofty goal on earth. People who do so become "saints," religious icons and beloved heroes. The quality that "elevated" them was often their love and consideration for others, but a predominantly other-serving life is an ideal that few attain.

Yet, each person has "heroic" moments. The mother awakening to cries at 2 AM and soothing her child, the father awakening at 5 AM to earn the family's daily bread, jumping in front of a train to save somebody's life, can all be profoundly other-serving activities. But on balance, most people are mainly concerned with caring for themselves.

A deeply profound body of mystical literature is the Ra material, which presents an intriguing way of viewing a soul's evolution. In Ra's perspective, ensouled entities on the physical plane mostly fall somewhere between 50% self-serving and 95% self-serving. Ra discussed planetary evolutions and an event known as a "harvest." Harvest happens when an ensouled being attains a mastery of their physical plane lessons, and are "promoted" to the game's next level. Ra did not discuss good or evil, but "positive" and "negative polarization." Positive polarization is equated with an other-serving mentality, while negative polarization is equated with the self-serving mentality. Ra called it "love of other self" and "love of self." Ra stated that if an ensouled being devotes greater than 50% of its energy to serving others, it is eligible for harvest on the service-to-others path. If an entity devotes greater than 95% of its energy to serving itself, it is eligible to be harvested on the service-to-self (or love of self) path.

Both paths require intense dedication. On today's earth, few are eligible for harvest on either path (Ra stated that 20% of the human race may be eligible for harvest today). Ra stated that Genghis Kahn, Rasputin, Hermann Goering and Heinrich Himmler were all harvestable on the love-of-self path (otherwise called self-serving, negatively polarized, or what I call the dark path).^[7]

Ra made no judgment regarding the two paths, even stating that the two polarities are required so souls can evolve through this plane. Without the tension those poles create, there would be no growth. Other planes have other means of growth. Ra also called the path of love-of-other-self the "study of what is," and the path of love-of-self the "study of what is not."

Those polarities can also be described as the paths of light and darkness, good and evil, etc. Whereas the path of light is committed to truth and love, the path of darkness is committed to illusion and fear. Ra described further dimensions of existence that pursue those paths. It is a fascinating perspective that this essay cannot do justice to. It provides a framework to understand interactions between beings on this plane and beings in others, how humans evolve on the physical plane, and the soul's journey. Others have called the path of serving others the path of service to self through others. Ra said that the dark path leads to a dead end of sorts. The study of "that which is not" is valid, with many valuable lessons learned along the way. As that path is progressed, higher levels of power and understanding are attained. Along the light path are constantly increasing levels of expansion and integration into Creation. Along the dark path there are constantly increasing levels of concentration and a withdrawal into one's perceived self. Along the light path there is an eventual reunification with the source of creation, the ultimate coming home. The source of creation is love, and it is the force that created and sustains not only this universe, but also all of creation.

Because love is the power of creation, love is the game humans are learning, because we are learning to be creators here at earth school.^[8] There are no spiritual lightweights on the planet at this time. This is an extremely challenging place to be. As the light path leads to a wondrous reunion with the Creator, those at the dark path's highest level also realize that a reunification with The Source is its next step. When a highest-level dark path being attempts that reunification, it gets a rude awakening: the dark path does not lead home. As it is the study of "that which is not," the entire path is ultimately one of illusion, and self-deception.

As that highest-level dark path entity "knocks on God's door," God's greeting is approximately:

"I am glad you are here, but I have news for you. You are a being of light, not darkness. You trod your path because I gave you the freedom to choose it. It was not real, not in the way you might think. I am proud of you, my child, but there is an important lesson your path has not taught you, the lesson you must learn before you can come home. You cannot fit in here, as much as I would like you to. You would not be able to stand it. I created you and everybody else. I love you, as I love all my creations. Your path has led you here, but loving yourself, while an important lesson, is only part of the journey. The journey is not complete until you love *all* of Creation, as I do. You have racked up quite a tally. You incurred many debts to others as you failed to love them, and only loved what you thought of as yourself. As you failed to love others, you also failed to truly love yourself. You owe yourself a great debt that you can only pay while serving others. I have a deal for you. All the mastery, all the wisdom, all the greatness you attained on your path, which is indeed impressive, you can trade in for an equivalent status on the path of light. From that exalted rank of light, you will labor long to settle your debts, make right your wrongs, and bring as much light to Creation as you earlier brought darkness to it. I think you will find that loving others is highly rewarding, not only to yourself, but also to others. You have a choice. You can stay where you are, at the dark path's highest level, where you can progress no further, because there is nowhere else to go. Or, you can accept my offer, working magnificently with me, engaging in fabulous work on behalf of Creation, and when you have balanced your scales, you can come home, and it will be glorious."^[9]

The Ra Material is popular and highly regarded. More obscure are two recent books by Gina Lake, channeled by "extraterrestrials." Her themes are similar to Ra's.

The dark path is self-serving, and a primary goal is exploiting others. They see others as there to serve their needs. While light path beings live by love, the dark path motto is "look out for number one." They believe that looking out for themselves is the only credo worth living by, and they see light path beings as naïve or foolish. Their [afterlives are not pleasant](#). The dark path is an inverted view creation. Put another way, the dark path is an attempt to become the Creator without love. It is an impossible dream, but such is the dark path's folly, the study of that which is not.

What goes around comes around, and dark path initiates realize that God created with love, and God's creations love it back. There is a feedback effect, whereby the love of God's creations also help sustain God. In the inverted dark path perspective, they think that manipulating others is how creation functions. They think love is weak, better dispensed with. Fear is "what it is all about" to them. They have yet to realize that love is the greatest power, and indeed the only power. God's creations ideally give love back to God as freely as God gave it to them. In the dark path's inverted perspective, they believe the exhilaration of the fear they experience is Creation's essence, and they induce fear in others, receiving a feedback effect, nourishing themselves. They think God does something like that. Their understanding is inverted. Fear is the absence of love, and in the dark path's inverted logic, they feel if they can inspire fear in others, they are becoming creators.

As stated in Lake's *The Extraterrestrial Vision*, those dark path initiates are acting appropriately, in light of their beliefs. She summarizes the situation on earth regarding the committed self-servers with:

"Self-servers are as diverse as any random group of people. They work in many different professions, but are particularly drawn to ones involving power. Much of the corruption in business and government is perpetrated by self-servers, many of whom are highly intelligent. They are never found in service professions, except as impostors or con men who prey off those in need. They have no sympathy for the needy, because they believe everyone should be self-sufficient. They believe that those who can't take care themselves will learn to take care of themselves by being taken advantage of. Consequently, they feel a spiritual duty to take advantage of the weak."[\[10\]](#)

Lake's material evokes Ra's perspective, as well as another extraordinary body of work known as the [Michael material](#), which has been produced by various channels. As souls evolve through the physical plane, they progress through "soul ages," which can be likened to the changing perspectives a human being passes through while they progress from birth through age eighty. Generally, the more lives we live, the more our souls evolve and become "older." I have never seen channeled material that does not admit that reincarnation is a fact, although a number of the Eastern religions' distortions are not necessarily valid.

Some dark path goals are inciting fear in others and recruiting others to their path. They are nourished by fear, in a pathological way. In Barbara Marciniak's seminal *Bringers of the Dawn*, in chapter eight is another perspective of the dark path. It appears that dark path entities that have evolved beyond physical plane realities, such as Genghis Kahn, are helping humanity stay in fear, because fear creates an energy that nourishes them. A humanity in fear, bathed in violence and misery, is something they thrive on. Humanity has proved a most productive herd for negative emotional "nectar."

In a [first-person account](#) by [Michael Roads](#), in his mind-blowing *Into a Timeless Realm*, he saw those beings that keep humanity in misery because they thrive on it.[\[11\]](#) Those parasitic beings did not create the conditions of human misery - humans largely did that to themselves - but they capitalized on it and furthered it, using deceptive and secret tactics.

[Michael Topper](#) and his wife echo those themes in Topper's peculiar prose. Topper's perspective is decidedly mortal, yet interesting. The theme of dark path beings thriving on fear, even to the point of inducing fear in people, extracting chemicals that fear produces in the human body, then bathing in it, are in Topper's writings.[\[12\]](#)

What Is the Relevance to My Work?

To bring this essay back to "earth," how does it relate to my work? The self-servers on this planet are in it for themselves. They feel a duty to exploit others. Evil is their business, profiting from the misery and exploitation of others. This site documents many extremely dark situations, and many people refuse to believe that people will actively and consciously create situations where others suffer and die. They cannot believe that people could act so "diabolically." Dark path initiates depend on that denial.

Because the dark path is the study of that which is not, deception and secrecy are their tools, which is [largely how the U.S. government operates](#). In the end, the dark path folks' greatest victims are themselves, and the most deceived chumps of all are themselves, completely misunderstanding who and what they are. The greatest deception is self-deception. It takes two to tango, and while dark path beings play their games, they actively deceive others, and their greatest victory is not forcing people to do their bidding, but having them freely choose to.

Dark path initiates know that few will consciously let themselves be used by dark path practitioners. So, they must deceive people into serving dark path interests instead of their own. That is not an easy trick. Most people are consciously committed to neither path. They worship comfort. Most merely try surviving. A full belly, a roof over their head, and their addictions sated are primary goals of the vast majority of humanity at this time. Most people can be called "good," because they will try doing the "right" thing if it does not cost them too much, and usually will not go out of their way to hurt others. Most Americans would return a wallet they found on the ground, provided it did not have too much money in it (recent research - in 2001 - shows that about half of all Americans will return that wallet; I was being too optimistic). [My experiences](#) ruefully showed me that it goes little further than that, however.

How can the dark path folks exploit people, while having them believe that their actions serve the common good? Dark path initiates commonly use a singularly effective tactic: enslaving people, while telling them they do it to protect them. When the [FDA](#) relentlessly [wipes out cancer cures that actually work](#), while throwing doctors into jail, or [Dennis is thrown into jail](#) on fabricated charges to [prevent free energy from happening](#), or a [life insurance company](#) that specializes in selling term insurance because all other policies are scams is ruthlessly attacked by police state tactics, the stated rationale is always "protecting the public."

Protecting the public is the world's largest protection racket, and the vast majority of humanity pays dearly for such "protection."

Dennis was fond of saying, "Put a man in a big enough cage, and he thinks he is free." Barbara Marciniak's Pleiadians say that the most effective prison is one where its prisoners do not realize that they are in prison, and those prisoners will believe almost any clever lie, as long as believing it keeps their bellies full.

The dark path is dark indeed. In the family of light, ties of mutual love bond them together. In the family of dark, it is mutual self-interest. They work together not for love of each other. They might experience some light and often-phony camaraderie, but they generally fear and hate each other. Each realizes that they cannot subjugate an entire planet or galaxy by themselves, so they need comrades of like mind. They are always watching their backs around each other, as they know that everybody is in it for themselves. There can only be one Emperor of the Universe, and they all want the title, so the kinds of power plays that occur in their circles most would rather not hear about. In addition, their conspiracies and game plans are always falling apart, because they cannot work in unison very effectively. They are all vying for power with each other. The idea of following orders is a dark path invention, used to keep those below them in the hierarchy in line.

Most young men [would never willingly kill people in war](#), if left to themselves. Consequently, a [system has been devised](#) to glorify violence, dehumanize the "enemy" (young men just like them), shield them from war's realities until they are on the battlefield, condition them to obey orders and call them cowards and even execute them if they do not obey. [Wars](#) are always created and egged on by dark path initiates, with the masses falling into line as they have given away their responsibility to the "powerful." A twist on the "protection" racket is having people support violence to "save" somebody, or "get" the bad guys, such as riling up Americans to [cheer the bombing of Iraq, Yugoslavia or Afghanistan](#). The dark path folks must laugh heartily

as the American people fall for it each time, as those cheering Americans believe they are helping the people they bomb.

Einstein once remarked that human stupidity is one of the truly infinite aspects of our universe, and dark path members eagerly exploit it. They play to people's sense of helplessness and feelings of victimization by selling violence as a remedy for the world's ills, as if there were no other choice. The demonization of [Saddam Hussein](#), [Manuel Noriega](#) or [Slobodan Milosevic](#) (or America's demon of the hour, [Osama bin Laden](#)) is merely state propaganda, and the masses fall for it every time. Indonesia's [Suharto](#) makes them look like choirboys, but he *always* did our bidding, so he was a respected ally who we heavily armed. Hussein, Noriega and bin Laden all were lauded U.S. allies while they did our bidding, and became demons when they failed to. The dark path folks smile every time people support violence, as they know it *always* leads to more violence, and they truly get thrills out of bloodshed (as long as it is not *their* blood being shed) and the suffering of others. Millions of people cheering massive violence wreaked against distant peoples is a dream come true for dark path initiates.

"Power" as discussed in this essay is not true power. Love is the only power. The earthly power of controlling and manipulating others to one's will is counterfeit power. It is stealing the power of others. True power comes from within. Detonating a [nuclear bomb](#) is "powerful" in its own way, but is a pale and dark imitation of real power, which the dark path initiates have yet to learn.

Val Valerian, in his *Matrix III*, establishes broad categories to classify humanity into, with rough percentages. It relates somewhat to the light-dark polarity. [\[13\]](#) Valerian did not present his data to expressly deal with the integrity issue, but it has a relationship and gives rough numbers. Valerian sees it in terms of those who give away their personal power. It can also be seen as serving themselves. Most people do not want to be responsible for their lives, and arriving at a new level of integrity and taking back their responsibility has a price. When faced with the decision to be responsible for one's life, more than half of humanity at this time readily falls back into complacency, easily controlled, giving up their freedom for comfort and "security." As [Ben Franklin](#) once observed, those who give up their freedom for security deserve and receive neither. About a quarter of the human race feels there is something wrong with the picture, but shuffle along with the herd nevertheless. About ten percent *know* there is something not quite right, and have tried to do something about it at some level, but were repressed in one way or another and still shuffle along with the herd. A few percent have figured it out and have broken away from the herd. About five percent of humanity are committed self-servers, and actively and knowingly use others for their own ends. Those numbers are handy and relate to the integrity issue. Those few who have broken away from the herd are mainly other-serving. The ten percent have tried to be other-serving and are to a degree, but have been beaten back into line. About ninety percent of humanity makes up the "Great Herd" and is easily manipulated. The five-percent manipulator class is composed of those on the dark path.

Those are general categories and percentages, and are only for illustration, not to be taken literally. That category of five-percent dark path initiates has various levels of accomplishment and commitment. The dark path is not forever, either. Eventually, all dark path initiates wake up. Not many reach that highest level of dark path evolution and meet the Creator, to be told they cannot get home on their path. Most figure it out before then, getting a belly full of the [pain and suffering that attends their path](#), and eventually revert and pursue the light path. An initiate who attains the "mastery" of the dark path, equivalent to a Genghis Kahn is far less than five percent of the population. A Genghis Kahn is one in many millions. On the light path, a Jesus or a Buddha attained levels of mastery that have proven to be one in billions on planet earth, so far.

Being other-serving is the ideal, and the vast majority of humanity loves other-servers, partly because they get something out of the deal, and the 95% of us not on the dark path can be inspired by their example. That ninety-percent of humanity will not accept personal responsibility for their lives, and rather easily give it up. They look for other-servers to give it to. That is *their* great folly. Other-servers realize that nobody should give their power away, and usually do not seek positions of earthly power. As Lake's ET friends stated, the self-servers seek power and can be found flocking to positions of power as moths flock to a light bulb. The self-servers engage in a charade. They masquerade as other-servers, asking the masses to give them their power (responsibility) so they can serve the "common good." As Dennis has said, they serve humanity all right, they serve up a plateful that they feast on every night. It is not always the case, but those in positions of power in today's world are largely self-serving.

Because of the game humanity plays today, other-servers can fill those "powerful" roles, not because they lust for it, but they realize it is a way to counterbalance the self-servers, hoping to help steer the masses toward a brighter future. It is dangerous work, not only due to the many temptations, but they are swimming with the sharks. Every self-server in public life says they are an other-server, battling all the self-servers. Nobody stands up and says that they are a "bad guy." Everybody sees themselves as good guys, rationalizing their

deeds, whatever they may be, no matter how dark.

Many years ago I read about the shantytowns that ring Latin American cities such as Buenos Aires, Rio de Janeiro, Mexico City, etc., where life is nearly unbearable. Life is cheap there, with children on their own on the streets, trying to survive with no parents, at age three. Life is so horrible there that a class of children assassins developed, and a practitioner was called a pistolero. A pistolero was a gun for hire, committing murder for a price. Life was so cheap they would murder somebody for as little as five American dollars. One of those teenage assassins righteously defended his profession. He said, "There will always be bad people who need to be killed. I am providing a public service." For as little as five dollars, that pistolero would be convinced you were a bad person who needed to die.

While discussing assassins, it is worth mentioning that they are usually men. Women have an inside edge on the light path over men. They have bodies designed to serve others. Their wombs and breasts are designed to nourish life. They are more inclined to be other serving than men. That does not make women "better" than men. Neither gender is superior, and humans all spend plenty of lives as each. The [war against women](#) the West has waged for millennia is revenge, somewhat. It is a reaction to a time when men were denigrated, relegated to being little more than something to inseminate the female, who possessed the power of life (men were perceived similar to how a drone bee is). The coming age, if we make it, will have a balance between the sexes, with each fully appreciated for its distinct and valuable qualities. The world's situation today can be seen as the male principle out of control. That perspective can be seen in many areas, such as the [endless wars](#), the environmental rape (raping Mother Earth), or [male-based Western "medicine,"](#) where the body is seen as a battlefield, with the only legal medicines being drugs and surgical procedures, violent methods that violate the body's integrity. Healing is feminine work.

Regarding light workers in politics, although [Abraham Lincoln's](#) tenure as president had many dark and bloody events, and Lincoln was a lawyer and politician, with all the unsavory ramifications of those professions, Ra says that in 1853 Lincoln's soul made a deal with a fourth dimensional light being. Lincoln then became a "walk-in," whereby another entity inhabited Lincoln's persona, and the great labors of his last twelve years were accomplished by a great light being.[\[14\]](#) I will not contradict it, although many people in the South may not agree with that assessment. Ramtha has called Lincoln America's "greatest king." The imperial impulse had much to do with [keeping the union together](#).

There are more other-servers in the CIA than [Ralph McGehee](#) and the few other CIA employees who spoke out as he did. Ralph's intelligence was not what enabled him to figure it out, but his pure heart. The CIA psychologically screens its fieldwork applicants, trying hiring people who blindly follow orders. For every Ralph McGehee who took the high, hard road, there were numerous other CIA employees who at one level or another eventually saw the big picture. Some quickly became disillusioned and quit the CIA, getting a "real job" or becoming a missionary or other undertaking designed to serve humanity. Others developed a gradual uneasiness over the years as their experiences contradicted their indoctrination. At some point, the CIA ceased to be fun and they left. Others gradually felt the pain of having their ideals and reality clash, but developed coping behaviors such as drinking and other dysfunctions. Some devoted their spare time to charity work or something else they saw as truly helping.

Others figured it out as Ralph did, but did not have the courage to take his path. As with Ralph, they were too far along in their careers to practically change into another. They watched the calendar, counting the days to retirement, drinking themselves into a stupor nightly to live with their situation, exemplifying a life of quiet desperation.

In his *In Search of Enemies*, John Stockwell wrote about CIA case officers who return to the CIA headquarters at Langley from abroad (as Ralph McGehee did) and reception they receive,

"Case officers often come back unnoticed, drained by their experiences and haunted by their consciences, by the suspicion that the things they had done were pointless as well as cruel. They rarely have the same sparkle and drive on the next assignment - or the next. In offices throughout headquarters were those who had given up, who were walking out their years before early retirement, becoming grey fixtures like safes and Xerox machines."[\[15\]](#)

Some would speak up in the CIA's halls, trying to reform it or openly question the CIA's stated mission, only to

be quickly swatted down or ostracized. If they stayed in the CIA, their lives were made unpleasant. Very few would wake up as Ralph did and do something about it, taking great personal risk to tell the world what was happening. Ralph is around one in twenty thousand. During World War II, there were virtually *no* German soldiers who [spoke out against the Final Solution](#).

There are also CIA employees who see the situation exactly as Ralph does, and are supremely happy. They are dark path initiates, crave positions of power, and love being on the "winning" side. How many in the CIA's ranks are like that? It is probably ten percent at most. The others engage in many sophisticated rationales for their actions. To one degree or another, they have had the opportunity to see what Ralph saw, but prefer to not. They do not want to believe they are serving darkness, and engage in many games of denial to protect their consciences. McGehee's CIA associate who was assigned to work with him on censoring his book thought McGehee should be taken out and shot. He believed McGehee was a traitor to the noble cause. That man was a prime example of how the masses react to a Ralph. Ralph represents a shattering of the mass illusion, and the herd does not like having its self-serving illusions shattered. The emperor may be stark naked, but few want to hear it. In an earlier time, Ralph may have become a victim of mob violence, nailed to a cross or have some other grim fate. Many years later he may have become a posthumous candidate for sainthood, but in America, there are other ways to deal with Ralph. The most effective method is denying him access to the podium. If his voice is a mere whisper next to the trumpet blare of propaganda, and he is discredited with lies, few will hear his voice or heed it, and few want to anyway. Everybody wants to believe they do good deeds, and do not take kindly to being told otherwise. Ralph has been actively spied on and subjected to a campaign of intimidation over the years as the [CIA tried silencing him](#), quite illegally. In 2000, the CIA finally succeeded in silencing him. In 2004, [John Perkins](#), after years of soul searching, spoke out from the privatized middle management of the empire.

That is the point regarding spirituality and how it relates to my work. As the Bible says, many are called and few are chosen, and the world's fate rests in few hands. It [does not have to be that way](#). The forces of darkness easily manipulate humanity. The relatively few committed light workers are trying to wake us up, so we do not stampede over the nearby cliff. The dark path is not easy to tread. They are continually trying to navigate between enslaving humanity and destroying the planet, which would end their racket. They want alive and terrified slaves, not a destroyed planet, but it is not an easy tightrope to walk.

[Mr. Deputy](#) is a dark path acolyte. He is fairly accomplished, but not in the dark hierarchy's upper echelon. He is a soldier, following orders and making a good living by preying upon others, doing his part to keep humanity in chains, posing as a "public servant." He may not realize the full implications of his actions, but even if he did, they probably would not affect him, other than feeling good about a job well done. Until people [encounter their mentality](#), that may seem to be going too far. Dark path initiates rely on the denial of the average person. People do not want to believe that those in positions of power are self-serving, because they have given their power away to them. Therefore, they often go to great lengths to stay in denial about the state of affairs, although the effort they can expend in battling their [cognitive dissonance](#) can reach [surreal levels](#).

There is reason to be optimistic about the future. If enough people make the effort to simply choose the light, not because it will win, but because it is good, [a great age of light, love and healing](#) awaits us. The Bible describes the Thousand Years of Peace. Native Americans have called it Paradise Restored. Some call it the New Age, and various cultures have other terms for it, but we are not there quite yet. We also might destroy ourselves. If we do, either through warfare, environmental destruction, or both, we will continue our incarnation cycles, but on another planet. Michael says that if we do, we will probably choose a life form that cannot manipulate its environment, [dolphins and whales](#) being examples of ensouled species that cannot destroy their environment. We probably would have no opposable thumbs in our next attempt to get it. One reaction to that notion is that if we did something like that, we will not have learned our lesson. The truly happy ending would have us finishing our incarnation cycle in a life form that can manipulate its environment, and finally learn the lesson of living in harmony with it. That *would* be the ideal, but Michael says the ideal is rarely attained on the physical plane, and very few wrap up their incarnation cycles by living the life of a Jesus. Our physical lifetimes do not end until we enjoy being here, loving the trip. Then we graduate to other adventures.

Robert Shapiro's Zoosh says that the path to the New Age, healed planet, etc., is not by destroying the darkness with light, but by honoring the darkness for what it is, appreciating it, and having it take its rightful place in the cosmos. Darkness is largely running the show on Earth, and that was not its intended stature. Unmitigated evil will always destroy itself in the end, when there is nothing left to destroy. Zoosh states that the ideal mix of light and darkness is about 98% light and 2% darkness, to spur continued growth. Without some "discomfort" on this plane, there would be no incentive to grow. What is happening, according to Zoosh, is a healing and redemption of the darkness, where it will play the role it was designed for. The lessons learned by having darkness in charge have been profound and harrowing for humanity, yet valuable for Creation. It is apparently a great sacrifice for every one of us to be here, acting on this stage at this time.

The [Michael material](#) covers those topics in depth. Michael says a species destroys its home planet by warfare or environmental destruction a third of time, and completes its incarnation cycle on another planet in a different life form. Of that third, one-third is by warfare, and two-thirds is by environmental destruction. Humanity is today at that juncture where we may kill ourselves off. This is the turning point in our evolution. Michael's vast perspective and dispassionate view of an ensouled species destroying its home planet and simply choosing another one to continue its journey can be unnerving. Michael says that if we do destroy this planet (or make its environment hostile to life), those who have contributed the most to its destruction (mainly dark path acolytes) will incarnate on this planet as it is dying, experiencing the consequences of their activities. That is not because God forces them to, but because the nature of our souls and the incarnation cycle is acting in the world, and learning by reaping the results of our actions. We reap what we sow. It is a law of creation that applies from top to bottom. Often we sow in one life and reap in the next.

Michael's perspective can be interpreted as stating that those on the dark path are generally younger souls. Lake's ET perspective states that plainly. Spiritual teenagers are running the world today, seeking "power" over love, and even confusing the two. Every soul is divine, and the path of darkness is one of God's gifts. It is a consequence of having "free will," which is something that animals do not have. A rabbit, bear, tree, shark or dog cannot choose to be "good" or "evil." They are not playing that game. To the extent animals are "vicious" in today's world, they are largely reflecting back to us our consciousness. They are also not too happy playing that role. They look forward to when we "get it." Viciousness is not their natural state, and the time is coming soon when the lion *will* lay down with the lamb. Mother Nature is not competitive, [but cooperative](#), which is another lesson that humanity has yet to learn.

Another way of describing the coming transition is calling it a dimensional shift, where humanity is transitioning from the third to fourth dimension, which apparently has never been tried before while staying in a body. Robert Shapiro's Zoosh discusses those concepts and length in the *Explorer Race* and *Shining the Light* series. In the fourth dimension, people can read each other's thoughts, so the charade of dark path initiates deceiving others is impossible. Consequently, in the fourth dimension one does not find light and dark path initiates sharing the same planet. They each have their own planets, and imagine a planet where everybody is on the dark path and they all know it.

Those different schools of thought do not contradict each other, and neither do the teachings of masters such as Jesus, Buddha, Mohammed, etc. Michael likens the seeming differences in the various mystical philosophies to studying various systems of the body, where Jesus' teachings are like studying the circulatory system, Michael's teachings are like studying the endocrine system, Buddha's teachings are like studying the nervous system, the Ra material is like studying the lymphatic system, Jane Roberts' [Seth](#) material is like studying the digestive system, the [Alexander material](#) is like studying the skin, [Barbara Marciniak's](#) Pleiadian teachings are like studying the sensory systems, [Neale Donald Walsch's](#) *Conversations with God* material is like studying the immune system, Zoosh's *Explorer Race* material is like studying the skeletal system, and so on. Each is a valid system of study, seeing a different facet of reality, each complementing the other.

That is what I have learned on my journey so far, and I will surely have a somewhat different perspective in twenty years. Nobody need agree with everything (or anything) presented in this essay, but it gives some insight into the perspective that dominates my writings.

The Human Afterlife

The earliest human writings evidenced ancient belief in the supernatural and in realms of existence beyond the physical plane. The Babylonian epic of Gilgamesh and his otherworldly journeys circulated as oral histories for a millennium before being written in cuneiform on clay tablets. That epic influenced myths ever afterward, including Old Testament tales.[\[16\]](#)

Only with the modern age's appearance have any peoples ever officially disavowed the idea that anything existed beyond the physical dimension. Such a viewpoint is known as [materialism](#), although such terms as atheism, agnosticism and "[skepticism](#)" have also described philosophies that reject the notion of life after death. America's [Founding Fathers](#) were largely deists; they believed in a creator of sorts, but one that remained aloof from the physical plane and the concerns of humanity. [Thomas Jefferson created a Bible](#) that edited out all of Jesus' "miracles," and ended with his entombment.

Although mysticism never died out, the West was fully in materialism's grip during the 20th century. A curious phenomenon happened during the later decades of the 20th-century; Western emergency medicine advanced to the point where clinically dead people were revived. They reported otherworldly realms remarkably similar to what mystics had described for millennia. The current research on the phenomenon began with Raymond Moody's *Life After Life*, which appeared in 1975. Before Moody's first book was even published, he met a person who had one of the most spectacular near-death experiences (NDE) yet recorded. [Dannion Brinkley](#) was struck by lightning in 1975 and died. While he was dying and dead, he had most aspects of the classic NDE, with the tunnel of light, the being of light, the love that permeates the place he visited, a love immensely more intense than anybody feels on earth, a life review and visiting realms that no motion picture can do justice to. As with most who return from an NDE, Brinkley wanted no part of coming back to earth's vale of tears, but was told that his work here was not finished, so his consciousness came back to his body while it was being taken to the morgue.[\[17\]](#)

One of the few NDE accounts that might top it is [Grigorievich Rodonaia's](#). He was a Georgian dissident that the KGB assassinated, and his body was taken to a morgue and frozen for three days. When the doctor began cutting into his body for the autopsy, Rodonaia's eyes opened. They closed his eyes, and they popped back open. At that point, the doctor panicked. Rodonaia was brought back to life and spent nearly the next year in intensive care. He reported visiting realms similar to those described in mystical accounts. As Brinkley was shown many future events that came true (Moody recorded them, and his amazement grew during the subsequent years as the predicted events kept happening), Rodanaia brought back "proof" of his death experience's validity when he told the hospital staff that he had been able to see into an infant there, and the child's pelvis was fractured, which the doctors were unaware of. X-rays proved Rodanaia's information accurate.

There have been many pieces of evidence that validate NDEs, as far as human consciousness not being dependent on the human body for existence. The materialistic presumptions of science, as well as the "Pearly Gates" tales of Christianity, have been challenged by the NDE phenomenon, and there have been numerous attempts to challenge the validity of NDEs, coming from both mainstream religion *and* science, them being the former and current authorities of reality. While creditable efforts have demonstrated that NDEs are influenced by the person having them, such as their culture, beliefs in an afterlife and so forth, no attempt to invalidate them, such as calling them demonic experiences (fundamentalist Christian debunkers) or byproducts of the brain's chemistry (the "skeptics") has been persuasive.[\[18\]](#)

It is nearly impossible to find anybody who has had an NDE and has been convinced that "they just imagined it," or it was a byproduct of lack of oxygen to the brain. The post-NDE transformations of people's lives are nearly as spectacular as the NDEs themselves. Brinkley is a case in point. He was in about 6,000 fistfights while growing up, and was a triggerman for a U.S. [assassination squad in Southeast Asia](#) while [America was killing millions of people](#). After his "lightning therapy," Brinkley developed startling psychic abilities.[\[19\]](#)

Although his soldier background is evident in his perspective (he is a right wing Southern boy who was a Marine), he also renounced violence and realized that life was all about love. Nearly every NDE survivor has a radical change in their life's priorities, seeking the spiritual and abandoning materialism. That radical change in people's outlooks has led to many divorces, as their materialistic spouses cannot handle the change. Whereas having the nicest house or the newest car on the block may have once been the goal of the pre-NDE-person, the post-NDE-person wants to help others and enjoy every breath, and none of them have any fear of death, as far as it meaning oblivion. They *know* they are on earth for a reason, and know that when their time comes, they will leave earthly life, and gladly.[\[20\]](#)

The life review portion of an NDE can be astounding. When Brinkley had his NDE, he not only reviewed every moment of his life, but also what everybody *felt as they interacted with him*. When he relived his 6,000 fistfights and his murders, he also saw them through the eyes of those he fought and murdered, feeling what they felt. That was the worst part of his NDE, and makes the Golden Rule a little easier to understand, and the concept of sowing and reaping. It was sickening to feel the emotional pain people felt as he beat them up or murdered them. The worst feeling of all was when he beat people up for the sheer fun of it. He also was able to see the "ripple effect" of his actions. When he was an arms dealer to the United States' [Latin American puppets](#), he got to see and feel the effects of the weapons he sold, such as feeling what a little boy felt when his father was murdered with a weapon that Brinkley sold. After his agonizing life review, he expected some kind of rebuke or punishment from the being of light with him, and instead received love and joy, with an enigmatic reply:

"Who you are is the difference that God makes...and that difference is love."

Just before being sent back to his body, with his new mission in life of helping to raise human consciousness, Brinkley's guide told him,

"Humans are mighty spiritual beings. All they need to realize is that love is treating others the way they themselves want to be treated."[\[21\]](#)

When he was dead, Brinkley was shown a device he was supposed to build when he returned to earthly life: a bed that helps people have out-of-body experiences, and across-the-veil experiences with "dead" people. The Monroe Institute does something similar. One of the most validating parts about the NDE and out-of-body phenomenon is that [Brinkley](#), The Monroe Institute, [Bruce Moen](#) and others is that they do not ask anybody to believe anything they say, but they assist others in *having experiences* of those states for themselves, and they can make up their own minds. It has nothing to do with faith, especially the blind kind. Today there is even a TV show, *Crossing Over*, where [John Edward](#) brings messages from the other side to people in the studio audience. Every show, Edward has "hits" of the [Isaac Brown](#) variety. The "skeptics" who try explaining it away as a "cold reading" or other trick carry zero weight with people who have *experienced* John giving them messages from their departed loved ones.[\[22\]](#) As with all efforts such as Edward's, the goal is teaching others to do it for themselves. Nobody need rely on the "experts;" anybody can seek and *have those experiences* for themselves, but it requires *self-discipline*

The many [testimonies of people who have had NDEs](#) strongly correlates with what mystics and [channels](#) have been saying for a long time. The term "afterlife" is something of a misnomer; time does not exist beyond the physical plane, so nothing can really be "after" anything else. The trappings of conventional heavens and hells are rarely reported. The beliefs of the experiencer help create their immediate afterlife experiences. Whereas ancient Greeks crossed the River Styx after they died, some modern Christians were also greeted at the Pearly Gates and given the standard-issue harp, which they began strumming. Those with rigid beliefs about what awaits them can become mired in those expectations. Hard-core religious fanatics and hard-core materialists can be stuck there for a long "time." Hard core materialists can spend centuries in a kind of catatonic state, constantly repeating to themselves that they do not exist. Eventually they realize that *something* is saying "I do not exist," and they begin waking up to life in the other side.

Robert Monroe called the out-of-body realms he visited "Focus Levels," with every being focusing on the level appropriate to their development. In Monroe's terminology, Focus 1 is physical reality, and Focus 10 is like a waking dream. Focus 23 is where some beings go after physical death, where they either do not realize they are dead or are unable to free themselves from the attractions of earthy experience. What people call ghosts are usually beings caught in Focus 23. It is related to the Christian concept of purgatory. Focuses 24 to 26 are where most people on earth today quickly end up after they pass over. They are also called "belief system territories." In Focuses 24 to 26, there are Romans hanging out in Elysium, harp-strumming Christian heavens and every otherworldly realm that any human group has ever postulated. They are real, in that people experience them as real, just as we experience physical reality as real. They are way stations, however, that people are attracted to based on their beliefs and spiritual development. Nobody is *sent* anywhere; people go to what they are drawn to. If a small town's citizenry all attended the same church, believing that a particular kind of afterlife environment awaited them, they will go there and live after their physical deaths, until they are ready to move on to their larger lives. Physical existence is an extremely traumatizing experience, and among those "many mansions" are places for souls to recover from earthly experience.

The harp-playing heaven is not all that heavenly, and after plucking those strings for what can seem a long, long time, souls begin wondering if harp playing is all there is to heaven. When they begin wondering if there is something more, helpers are always nearby (angels and other friends) to help them discover what that might be. Focus 27 is a place where beings begin integrating, healing and putting their earthly experiences behind them.

Focuses 24 to 26 also contain what can be called hells. Once again, nobody sends anybody anywhere, especially against their wishes. Those who live in the various hells are there because *they are attracted to them*. [Bruce Moen](#) was one of Monroe's pupils, and [he once visited a "hell" in Focus 25](#), where emotional sadists lived, playing evil tricks on each other. The major difference between such a hell and earth is that there is a vast spectrum of spiritual attainment of people living on earth. Some are on loan from heaven, more are on

leave from hell, and most today just try getting through life without hurting anybody too much, or helping anybody too much, either. So, people on earth interact with a wide spectrum of souls. The emotional sadist that Moen visited, named Max, played his games on unsuspecting people during his earth days, but in Focus 25, Max's world was completely populated with emotional sadists like him. On earth, Max was a big fish in a little pond. In Focus 25, Max was near the middle of the food chain, bearing the brunt of emotional sadism as often as he inflicted it. In that hell, they all lived to inflict emotional pain on others, but the only victims they had to prey upon were each other. If there ever was a fitting hell for Max, he was in it. He is going to stay there as long as he wants to play the emotional sadist game. There are also thief hells,[23] soldier hells, murderer hells, rapist hells and so on. Some try out each hell in succession, an experience called "hell-riding." The only way out of those hells is through love: being able to both accept it and give it.

Some are so attracted to their hell that they become masters of it, becoming the "king of hell." They are so clever that nobody can beat them at their hell game, then always getting the upper hand. All souls are part of a larger entity, as with the mid-causal entities [Seth](#) and [Michael](#). Those in hell are stuck, with arrested development. All entities evolve, and when a group of a thousand souls is ready to travel to the causal plane, and one of its souls became the king of its hell, the thousand souls will "move heaven and earth" to try getting that soul to leave its hell and rejoin the others. If the soul cannot be persuaded to leave, the other souls will move on. Little did the "king of hell" realize that those other souls were part of its larger self, and when the other souls leave the astral plane for the causal, much of the "substance" that helped sustain the "king of hell" also leaves, and the king of hell cannot "hold itself together," and its personality eventually disintegrates, with the "king of hell" eventually becoming little more than a fly, buzzing around in that hell's energy.[24]

Cult members can live together in the Belief System Territories for a long time. Their heaven, however, can be a hollow one, like that harpist heaven.[25] When they finally decide they have had enough of the Belief System Territories, they move on to Focus 27. Each teaching, such as Monroe's, has particular terminology, and can be seen to correspond to concepts in other teachings. In the Richard Material, what Monroe calls the Belief System Territories and Focus 27 (also called the Reception Center, or the Park), Richard calls the Place of Self-Deception (like a Hollow Heaven), the Lower Regions (like [Max's Hell](#)), and the Place of Preparation.[26] It is the *realities* that are important, not the terminology. Robert Sibley's *The Science of the Soul* covers that territory and far more, describing the various planes of existence, at least those somewhat knowable by earthly souls. It is not a matter of belief and dogma, but realms that sincere seekers can explore for themselves, but *usually* only [older souls](#) have much interest or talent for such undertakings, as they are on the inward journey, not the outward one that younger souls are on.

There are also heavenly realms that far exceed in love and grandeur anything that can be written about or even imagined while on earth. The [Michael](#) teachings describe the planes he is familiar with, and earthly souls can somewhat comprehend the astral plane, but not really the higher ones. Michael is a mid-causal entity, and readily admits that the next plane of his evolution, the [Akashic plane](#), is as much a mystery to him as the astral plane is to us.

There are high-quality accounts of the other side of death, by people who recently passed over. Ken Akehurst's *Everyone's Guide to the Hereafter* and Helen Greaves' *Testimony of Light* are excellent accounts of the initial afterlife experience. Akehurst was an average everyday English workingman, and he reported from the Belief Systems Territories. Life was "good" there, immensely more enjoyable than physical existence, but Akehurst also advised earthlings to give up their addictive behaviors before they died, because they would simply bring them along to the other side, but with no way to satisfy them. Robert Monroe and others have described beings that died with physical addictions. They often become "trapped" in Focus 23, alcoholics hanging around earthly bars to possess a passed-out drunkard, to get the brief thrill of being inebriated. All physical additions can lead to agony on the other side, where the addiction cannot be sated, which can lead to hanging around those who are still physical, to try getting a vicarious "sniff" of their addiction. Greaves channeled the experiences of a Catholic nun she knew in life, and the woman began dictating to Greaves mere weeks after she had passed over. The nun was in the Belief Systems Territories to begin with, but rapidly passed on to Focus 27, where she met her soul. Greaves described the dramatic change in the nun's appearance and demeanor after she met her soul.

Virtually every existing account of the other side and channeled teaching accepts reincarnation as a fact. The only exceptions are people who have *only* had an NDE, where they are *merely* on the threshold of the other side (Bettie Eadie's *Embraced by the Light* is one of those accounts), or *only* in the Belief Systems Territories, as Akehurst was. Akehurst was not yet to the point of reuniting with his soul (it does not happen in the Belief Systems Territories, but further along the path), and asked around about reincarnation, but was left to figure it out on his own. Greaves wrote another book titled *The Wheel of Eternity*, which described her experiences with a woman who was a ghost in her home, trapped in Focus 23. Greaves participated in helping that ghost

realize where she was and why, and helped her move on. Greaves also helped an English aristocrat who went straight to “hell” upon leaving earth life, but was granted “shore leave” to come to Greaves’ home, where she also eventually was able to accept love, leave her hell, and move on.

After exploring the literature on crossing to the other side and what awaits us, and leavening it with [my experiences](#), one issue is clear: bribing people with heaven or threatening them with hell are counterproductive. We go to whatever *we are attracted to*, and how we live our lives on earth determines where we go on the other side. What we *think* is important while we are here, but more important is what we *say*, and what we *do* is the most important, and the motivation behind our actions is all-important. Religious fanatics often have the most difficult time on the other side; their beliefs are conditioned by fear, not love. Rigid beliefs are the greatest obstacles to enlightenment, and all belief-fanatics are advised to give them up if they want a pleasant transition to their heaven. Living by Jesus’ Golden Rule - treating others how we would wish to be treated - is the best prescription for raising one’s awareness and having a joyous transition to the other side. Love is the *only* answer.

A Tale

I want to paint the big picture, as far as can I glimpse it from my limited physical perspective. So, here I will tell a tale. I will reference parts of it, where some sources are, but that is only for the reader’s reference. The following tale is not necessarily the “right” one. Richard Bach’s Donald Shimoda said he did not know if his view of creation was “true,” but he believed it because it was fun to believe it.[\[27\]](#) I cannot “prove” this tale to anybody, and it is partly mine. Nobody *needs* to believe it, even me. This could all be wrong. We are not our beliefs, and believing that we are can get us into trouble.

The question I ponder the most these days is “why?” Why are we here? What game are we playing? Why *this* universe? It is the unfathomable question. Even Sai Baba says he does not know what God had in mind when this reality was set up. All the same, many sources hint at it, although I wonder if they really *know*, either.

Virtually every mystical source agrees that beyond the physical plane, time and space largely do not exist. They are artificial constructs used to create this dimension, a dimension that is ultimately illusory. There is also plenty of first-hand human testimony regarding that phenomenon. People who clinically die and are revived report reviewing their entire lives, in greater detail than is seemingly possible, in mere instants of earth time.[\[28\]](#) The further a physical being “progresses” on “the other side,” the less their existence has time and space-like attributes, to eventually be abandoned, much as a child eventually abandons training wheels. With that limitation acknowledged, I will write in time and space terms, being that I live in a dimension where it defines our existence.

In the beginning, the creator gave birth to an immense number of beings, somewhere on the order of the number of stars in the observable universe (200 billion multiplied by one trillion), and perhaps a truly infinite number. They were the creator’s playmates, in a sense fashioned from the creator’s rib. There was no physical reality as we know it. All beings had free will, and creation was one big celebration, with everyone laughing and playing. All were equal to the creator, as everybody was made from the same “stuff.” One day, one being decided to play a game of creating a hierarchy. He said to his pals,

“Give your will to me. Free will can be burdensome, and I have a special ability to handle it. If you give your will to me, I will take care of it, making your decisions for you, and making your existence easier.”

Some say the being made his pitch at the creator’s request.[\[29\]](#) Others say that the being was an outside agent, seeming to come from outside creation. That being’s sales pitch was well done, but about 99% of the creator’s playmates replied with something like,

“Thank you for your offer, but I think that my will is something I am supposed to manage by myself. Yes, some decisions seem difficult, but if I do not make them, I think I will diminish myself (and hence creation) in some way. Your offer is generous and noble, but I think I am better off making my own decisions.”

After eons of recruiting effort, that being recruited about 1% of the creator's playmates to his new program. The new recruits gave their free will to that being. A hierarchy was created, with that being managing the free will of that 1%, with other beings helping him. It developed into a hierarchy, with that recruiter at the top, the helping levels below him, and those giving away their free will at the bottom. Eventually, those at the bottom gave away virtually *all* their free will to the hierarchy. Free will was an essential component of the creator, and when those beings gave away their free will, they also lost other given attributes, particularly their awareness. In Judeo-Christian circles, that loss of awareness is known as "The Fall." That being who invented and recruited others to his hierarchy is known as Lucifer in those circles, and that time of carefree play is known as the Garden of Eden. The tale has been greatly distorted in Genesis, with women being blamed for The Fall, the sin was seeking knowledge, the Garden of Eden was in today's Middle East, and that tempter was in the form of a snake, as the serpent was the symbol of women [thousands of years ago](#).

The Fall took a long time. As everybody has free will, the creator could not infringe upon what transpired, even if his playmates gave their will away. Even though he cautioned that 1%, he had to watch them give away their will and gradually lose their awareness. They devolved to a state that had not been seen before. Whether Lucifer did it at the Creator's bidding or not does not alter today's situation. If Lucifer did the Creator's bidding, however, I am not currently happy about it, because I am a member of that fallen 1%.^[30] Was it a test that God invented? Did we ask to take the test? Did we think we could become creators, and God replied, "So, you think you want to be a creator? I have a little test, to determine if you are ready." If it happened somewhat like that, at this time I question my wisdom. Life on earth is not my idea of a good time, having lost awareness and a seeming lack of free will, not continually bathing in the love that is a natural part of the "other side" and being at the mercy of forces seemingly beyond my control.

So, what to do about the fallen 1%? No being can fall so far that all awareness and memory is lost. As awareness was lost, those beings also fragmented into a hierarchy of awareness that resembled Lucifer's. The aspect of those beings that remembered their Garden of Eden days preferred their former awareness to what happened after they gave away their free will. They realized their mistake, and the creator (with the other 99% assisting) invented a system to allow them to regain their awareness and reclaim their will. A remedial school was developed for lost beings to regain their awareness. No being embarked on the journey that did not desire to regain its awareness.

The densest, lowest, most elementary part of the course was invented. It is known as physical reality, where I live. In the fragmentation of awareness, "lesser" beings were created. Paradoxically, creation is one being. There is truly no separation from the creator, yet we all have our individuality. In this dualistic plane of existence, all explanations of the big picture contain paradoxes. Every being is part of the whole, and the whole *cannot be* whole without each part present. Every *atom* is a necessary and infinitely valuable aspect of creation. That is the unfathomable aspect of creation that no earthly source has ever dealt with to mortal satisfaction. Earthly brains are not equipped to comprehend infinity and dimensions where time and space do not exist. That is part of the frustration of being here; having extremely limited awareness while inhabiting the physical realm. While the physical realm is the densest and cruelest of dimensions, it is also where the most growth happens, and lessons are learned here that cannot be had anywhere else.

Humans are considered sentient. Sentience is quite a ways along the developmental path. Sentient beings begin their physical reality journey as less aware forms. Today's human beings began their physical reality journey spending time as parts of stars, interstellar dust and other things before focusing on earth. As we focused on earth, our early experiences were involved with being parts of the atmosphere, even as clouds. Our awareness eventually became earthbound, and we spent eons as parts of earth, parts of oceans, mountain ranges and deep within the earth's core. As we got the hang of physical reality, we eventually became life forms, the simpler, unicellular organisms to begin with. Our awareness became ever more fragmented with that process, but it was also a way of creating a "concrete" foundation for us to begin rebuilding our former awareness.

This story will seem similar to the theory of evolution. The scientists have an accurate view of the process, to a limited degree, but they also largely have it backwards. Our current consciousness is not a *byproduct* of chemical and evolutionary processes, but is the *driving force* behind them. There is an interaction, however, similar to Marx's dialectical materialism, but not materialistic. Materialism largely ignores consciousness, chalking it up to a phantom of chemistry, but consciousness is the engine of the entire process. Life is not an accident, but the *purpose* of physical reality. Everything in the universe is alive in some way, as it is all a manifestation of consciousness. Physical reality is a place of interaction of more evolved consciousness with less evolved, the less evolved seeming to be rocks, trees and other "unaware" things. Each has its own awareness, perhaps less evolved than human consciousness, but no less divine and necessary for creation.

[Seth](#) says that there is no division of the self, which is another way of saying creation is one. Nevertheless, each particle of creation has its individual integrity, and every atom has its divine awareness. Seth says that the bedrock of our reality, its most elementary component, is a unit of consciousness, which is far, far smaller than an atom or any subatomic particle that has been identified.

In the fragmentation of awareness of which physical reality represents the lowest level, there are many levels of awareness, wholeness and fragmentation. An electron in a squirrel's toe has an awareness of itself, its role in the oxygen atom it is part of, its role in the water molecule it belongs to, the cell it helps comprise, the muscle it is part of, the squirrel it is part of, the squirrel species it is part of, the planet it is part of, the solar system it is part of, the galaxy it is part of, and the universe it is part of. They all build upon each other, all part of the whole, similar to an onion's skin.

The package of consciousness that concerns humans is commonly called the soul, which is an entity that manages the growth of awareness through the physical plane for sentient beings. Every human being is part of a soul, or as it is stated more commonly, each human *has* a soul. [Michael](#) calls human beings fragments. According to Michael's view of creation, an earthbound human is generally one of more than one hundred lives that a soul experiences on the physical plane. In the grand plan of regaining fallen awareness, souls help integrate the growing awareness. Michael's conception of a soul is probably not the same thing as those who gave away their free will to begin The Fall, but it could be considered close. The entity that Paddy McMahon dealt with seems to equate the two.[\[31\]](#) Virtually every piece of mystical material admits that reincarnation is a fact. The mystical branches of the Judeo-Christian religions, specifically the Rosicrucians, the Sufis and the Cabbalists (the mystical branches of Christianity, Islam and Judaism) all taught reincarnation as a fact, while their orthodox counterparts denied it. On the other side of the veil, the closer a personality is to their earthly life, the less they are aware of their soul, or other earth lives their souls have lived. Although the heavily edited New Testament removed more than half of Jesus' life, and probably many references to reincarnation, Jesus' statement that John the Baptist was Elijah returned to human form has survived.[\[32\]](#)

The plan to regain awareness is a vast one that no earthly awareness can fully comprehend. Even the exalted awareness that Jesus and Buddha manifested can only hint at the big picture. Physical reality is where awareness grows at its most elementary level. The lessons learned at the physical reality level are essential for the progressing levels of awareness, similar to a three-year-old's lessons of caring for himself being essential lessons that see him through his earthly life.

Everything on the physical plane has correspondence to the "higher" planes. The most beautiful tree on earth is a drab reflection of how it appears in higher planes. The most profound and intense love we ever feel for our loved ones barely hints at the magnitude of love that permeates the higher planes, and it is as available as the air we breathe. The physical plane is the most rudimentary manifestation of the higher planes' principles. Numerology studies the mystical significance of numbers. Numbers are not only for scientists and accountants, but a reflection of the higher planes, and today's mathematics is merely one of many ways to deal with numbers. There are perhaps an infinite number of valid mathematics systems, and we could glimpse many that would have little or no meaning to our minds. Nevertheless, there are many significances to numbers that go well beyond what scientists think of them, with one, two, three, four and five having a great deal of mystical significance. If there was a "divine" number, however, it might be seven. There are many systems of thought where the number seven has special significance (seven chakras, seven deadly sins, sacred seven prayers, seven days of the week, seven colors of the rainbow, etc.). The Michael teachings are oriented around the number seven, and can be highly useful in helping understand the soul's journey through the physical plane.

The [Michael teachings](#) define the soul as an entity that inhabits the astral plane. The astral plane is the one just "above" the physical plane. The soul that Michael describes "gives birth" to about 120 personalities that inhabit the physical plane. Some souls live only one earth life, while others live thousands and some never do. It is up to the soul. Again, there is not time as it is thought of past the physical plane, and the soul's 120 personalities all exist at once as far as the soul is concerned, similar to leaves on a tree. However, the physical plane has been set up with linear time, so part of the soul's awareness experiences those lifetimes in linear sequence, each experience building on the other, as the soul's awareness "grows" through the physical plane. The soul grows in awareness with each physical life lived. The astral plane is where souls rest between lives. When people have NDEs, out-of-body experiences or visions of heaven, they are generally describing the astral plane. In a paradoxical fashion that earthly brains cannot fully comprehend, souls "invest" themselves in each earthly personality it gives birth to. The soul experiences each physical lifetime and learns the lessons it provides, although the earthly personality has little or no conscious awareness of the soul that gave it birth. On one hand, that does not seem very fair. On the other, the "on its own" aspect

of the earthly personality allows it to develop in its own right. When the earthly personality leaves physical reality, it comes back to the astral plane and is eventually reunited with the soul, but it might take quite some “time.”

Just as every atom has its own awareness and “soul,” so does each human being. The human soul is no “better” than the atom’s “soul,” as all are ultimately made of the creator, and *are* the creator. Even so, the human soul is much “larger” and more complicated and evolved than the atom’s soul, just as the soul is a more evolved and complicated entity than an earthly personality. That does not detract from the integrity of each atom or human personality, however.

Each soul eventually becomes part of a larger entity on the plane “above” the astral plane, called the causal plane. Michael claims to be an entity composed of more than 1000 souls. With each soul living more than 100 lives, the Michael entity draws upon the experience of more than 100,000 human lives to inform his perspective. The further the entity integrates on its way back to the godhead and full awareness, the less “personality” it possesses, so Michael has a clinical detachment and dry sense of humor, mostly confined to puns. Michael hails from the middle of the causal plane, and is thus called a mid-causal entity. [Seth](#) has also been called a mid-causal entity. Seth evidences far more personality than Michael does, perhaps partly because Jane Roberts is part of the Seth entity, him being a “big brother” of hers. Many people channel the Michael entity, but each interacts with a slightly different facet. One person may channel a facet composed of 50 souls of Michael’s 1050, while another person channels a “subgroup” of 40 others. It, combined with the people doing the channelings, gives the Michael material a slightly different flavor, depending on who is channeling it.

The Michael teachings correspond to many others, such as Gurdjieff’s, the Indian caste system and others (the caste system being a badly distorted corruption of valid perspectives). When souls begin the long journey, they choose a “role,” which is a common theme in mystical material. Seth discussed “speakers” as one of the permanent roles that some souls choose, while [Alexander](#) describes a system quite similar to Michael’s. In Michael’s view, a soul will choose one of seven roles: artisan, server, warrior, scholar, sage, priest and king. Each has its own orientation and awareness, and it will always have that role. Each role has its strengths and vulnerabilities. Each role progresses through its ages, its awareness expanding as it “grows” older. Michael teaches that there are seven soul awarenesses, or “ages,” with seven levels within each “age.” On the astral plane, the soul is aware of all its physical lives, but as the physical plane journey progresses with its linear time, each personality is somewhat aware of its “earlier” lives, and builds upon that awareness with each succeeding life.

The “grand plan” to regain awareness has been designed so no soul can “backslide” all that far. We cannot really “fail.” That is apparently part of the creator’s compassion. No soul can become so lost that it cannot get back home one day. We have free will, but it is constrained by some fairly narrow parameters on the physical plane: we cannot remember our nightly trips back to the astral plane, we generally cannot recall our past lives, we must eat to sustain our bodies, gravity makes us earthbound, the love energy that comprises the very atmosphere on the higher planes is not obvious here, we feel pain and must die one day.

Mystical students often read about how wonderful an opportunity earth life is, but discarnate entities say it. It is easy to wax rhapsodic about earthly existence when one does not live here. Although third grade was a valuable experience, I do not want to live through it again. It is difficult to imagine a sane being *choosing* the existence found on today’s earth. Earth is a vale of tears, and has largely been so for a long time. I hope we somehow *earned* this difficult existence. The sources I respect the most say that physical reality, especially life on earth these days, is not an easy experience. I consider [Donald Walsch’s Conversations with God material](#) a masterwork, although Walsch’s God can seem a somewhat flippant Pollyanna at times (and [other problems](#)), but Walsch’s God admits that our best day on earth is the day we die and leave behind this dense existence. The general mystical consensus is that being born is the hard part of being here, and dying the easy part. If earthly life was the best that the creator could come up with when he decided to do a little creating, then we all could make many suggestions. Whatever delights may wait on the veil’s other side do little to mitigate the cruelty of this existence, not while we are here. The standard mystical tale, however, is that we all chose to be here, and only the bravest of the fallen are on earth right now. This [is the cutting edge](#) in many ways, apparently. For humans, earth is a school, not a home, and there is nothing “wrong” with trying to make the school cleaner and prettier (or making sure we do not burn it down), the curriculum less painful and the classes more fun.

There are no human souls, just as there are no cat souls. There are souls that express themselves as humans, and souls that express themselves as cats. Animals are not ensouled as humans are. While it is usually one soul for each human, it is more like one soul for a flock of geese. Also, that “soul” is not playing the same game as a soul playing the human game. Humans exercise free will in a way that animals do not. A goose cannot decide to be “evil,” although there are some mean geese out there.[\[33\]](#) Domestic animals

are usually bridging the transition between sentient and non-sentient animals. Domestic animals are around humans partly to investigate what being ensouled is like. Our pets observe us for more reasons than we might think. If they find the ensouled state attractive enough, they may begin incarnating on the ensouled cycle.

Each of Michael's roles has its positive and negative pole. The pole operated from depends on if the personality is operating from love or the lack of it (fear). We can choose love or fear here in physical reality (the freewill deal), and fear is a normal condition, largely based on feelings of not being in control of what happens to our bodies. Love is the energy of creation. God creates with love. It can even be said that God *is* love. In physical reality, love is not as readily available as it is on the other side, where feeling love is as natural as breathing. The feeling of separation from God's love is perhaps the cruelest aspect of physical reality.

Once the cruelty of not remembering to ask to come here, and having a difficult time feeling the hidden love that sustains this universe, is accepted, the rest is not difficult to imagine or comprehend. The discarnate entities say it is in our best interests to not remember our larger lives, but they also do not live here. Our goal here is choosing and feeling love. As souls "age," each level has unique lessons to learn, and souls adopt "overleaves" for their physical personalities. In more than 100 lifetimes, each overleaf is explored. Each overleaf also has its positive and negative aspect. The [overleaves](#) are: goals, modes, attitudes and a "chief feature," which is how fear predominantly accesses the personality. At the footnote ending this sentence is a highly abbreviated rendition of the Michael material.[\[34\]](#)

On earth, the "Young Soul" stage of the cycle has dominated human awareness for the past two thousand years. Young Souls are great at building civilizations and destroying planets. Winning is everything to the Young Soul. Killing and being killed has been a predominant theme for the past two millennia, especially for [the Europeans who conquered the planet](#). Humanity is at the brink of self-extinction, as it has focused its awareness outwardly as far as it can. The inward journey that the Mature Soul awareness initiates is humanity's next step. It is the most dramatic transition that any ensouled species makes. Mature Souls began outnumbering Young Souls on earth during the past generation (during the past decade it became 34% versus 33% of the world's human population), and the transition is underway to begin exploring emotional and inner realities. Whether the transition will be completed before humanity exterminates itself has yet to be determined. The human race will probably make it, but billions of people may not survive the transition. Those who still prefer playing the kill-and-be-killed game may soon find themselves on another planet to continue their game, as Earth will not allow herself to be destroyed. Although the kill-and-be-killed game provides valuable lessons, no planet can host that game indefinitely. The gentle *will* inherit the earth, and Earth will eventually ascend to higher planes and leave this one behind, just as humans do.

In earlier lives, with the focus outward, humans typically incur a huge burden of negative karma. They spend their later lives paying it back. Those early lives are when people can more readily walk the "dark spiritual path," making self-service a science.

It is easy to see how limited human awareness has been, even during our history. For one instance of many, the Catholic Church's dogma had earth being the universe's center. Today's dogma from many corners is that [humanity is alone in the universe](#). Hundreds of years ago the West rediscovered what Pythagoras knew: earth orbits the sun. As science rose, our sun became understood as just another star in the sky, and the one our planet orbited. Eventually the Milky Way became seen as a cloud of stars, and not long ago the concept of a galaxy was developed. Eventually our sun became seen as merely one of about 200 billion stars in our galaxy. As our scientists kept looking outward, other galaxies were seen, and seen, and seen. Today, it is accepted that there are perhaps one trillion galaxies in the observable universe. Now *that* is a universe created by a big "C" Creator. What if the universe is 100 billion times larger than we think it is? What if it is truly infinite?

Seth and Michael state that humanity has barely scratched the surface of the physical universe's vastness and strangeness. Seth says that science has erred in estimating the earth's age by a few orders of magnitude, and that the earth is actually *trillions* of years old and has not always resided in our solar system. Michael says that humanity is merely one of one million ensouled species in our galaxy, and pondering one trillion galaxies gives a tiny glimpse of the potential diversity of our physical universe. To glimpse that diversity, we share this planet with another ensouled "species": cetaceans (dolphins and whales). They chose bodies that cannot manipulate their environment. There are many first-person accounts of [whale and dolphin sentience](#). Cetaceans play the game differently than humans do. A pod of twelve dolphins will have twelve souls, but the souls share the bodies, swapping them, which is one reason they do not fear death as humans do. Whales apparently think holographically, which is nearly impossible for us linear thinkers to comprehend. As Europeans conquered the world and [exterminated humans across the planet](#), they also drove whales to near-extinction. Many dolphins and whales are only beginning to suspect that *human beings* are sentient, as

they did not think a sentient species was capable of the genocide their kind experienced at human hands.

In the universe there are sentient clouds, mountains, trees, birds and life forms humans can barely imagine. Humans are a sentient form of ape. Channeled material regularly describes how humanoid sentient species are the predominant ones in our little corner of the galaxy, as they all hail from the same rootstock, the inhabited planets being “colonized” in a sense. The human race apparently has had plenty of help from our galactic cousins, genetically and otherwise.^[35]

Channeled entities often throw out statements that blow away the participants, the listeners shaking their heads in dismay or awe. Once somebody asked Michael if the Big Bang and the scientific establishment’s notion of an expanding and contracting universe, to lead to another Big Bang in billions of years, was correct. Michael replied that there is some truth in that notion, but the universe had done it more times than there are atoms in our universe. Seth says that our universe is not expanding in the way our scientists think. Whatever the “right” answer may be, our earthly minds, with their puny conceptions, are poorly equipped to grapple with those ideas. Throw in infinite [parallel and probable existences](#) (and physical dimensions where time and space are more “fluid”), and no earthly mind fails to “blow a fuse” when trying to comprehend those concepts.

The Michael material is only one of many [worthy teachings](#). What is coming up for humanity is a healing of the “heart-mind split.” It is also called the Second Coming, the New Age, Paradise Restored, etc. Love will reign, not fear, but we must *choose* it. It will not fall into our laps.

It is also possible that there is something very big afoot on earth. There might be a lot more about to happen than merely an ensouled species turning the corner, beginning its inward journey after a long time of focusing outward. Michael admits that the human species is more sexually polarized than 95% of ensouled species (again, we need only look at cetaceans to get an idea of less polarized species). [Kryon](#), [Zoosh](#), [Barbara Marciniak’s Pleiadians](#) and others say that the [human race is a special experiment](#), and its outcome could change the way our universe functions. That can seem grandiose, but it may also be true. If true, it has everything to do with love. I once asked [Hinono](#) a few questions. He said, “the Creator is coming,” with a “big love” that nobody here has quite experienced yet.

Michael claims no ultimate awareness, nor does Seth or any other reputable channeled entity (except perhaps Walsch’s God). Jane Roberts would periodically channel Seth Two, which Seth called his “big brother.” Seth Two was obviously unused to using a human body, and said that his joy created universes, and that it was challenging for him to relate to human awareness and emotion.

All those ideas are worthy to ponder, but our reality is that we must eat to survive here, and growing our awareness while caring for our bodies is our earthly task, and it keeps our hands full. If people truly begin caring for each other, then humanity might have a gentle transition to a healed humanity and planet. [Much is possible](#), but not when most Americans predominantly operate from their personalities’ [negative pole](#), while calling it its positive pole. Humanity’s primal nature is love, and Jesus and other masters came to remind us of that fact.

In the final analysis, it is our reality, our world, our everlasting lives. What will we do with them?

Footnotes

^[1] See Collier and Horowitz, *The Rockefellers*, p. 18, 19, 33.

^[2] I saw those words in my school district’s “cumulative file” after I graduated from high school. My sixth grade teacher’s comments stared out at me. I believe it was sincere, but also was influenced by two factors. I was a bit of a discipline problem in those years. Another factor was that I was more intelligent than my teacher, and sometimes better informed. I was a normal child in most ways, but one day my teacher showed the class the eastern and western hemispheres on a globe. The only problem was that he was pointing out the northern and southern hemispheres. I raised my hand and said I doubted that he explained the hemispheres accurately. To his credit, he asked me to show the class how I thought the hemispheres were oriented on the globe. I did. It retrospect, that was quite a spectacle, to have a student challenge a teacher’s presentation because it was inaccurate, and the teacher allow the correction. I had never seen it done before, and have never seen it since. When I finished showing the class how the hemispheres really lined up, my teacher said that he would perform some research that evening. The next day he announced that my explanation was correct. It took a big man to admit that his eleven-year-old student had corrected him. Yet, I believe that the event, along with my admittedly unruly demeanor, had something to do with my teacher’s writings in my cumulative file. I do not feel that my parents pushed me too hard, although it could have appeared that way. They conscientiously undertook the task of raising a well-behaved, helpful and obedient child whose IQ was in the

genius range, and I was blessed with experiences that many children my age did not have, and I cannot fault my parents for it.

[3] Brian describes that event in the foreword to his book *The Second Coming of Science*, and Brian credits that event with propelling him into mysticism.

[4] I have a close friend who was a Silva instructor for many years, and he recently told me that in the unfortunate situation in today's hurried society, the Silva class has been truncated to twenty hours, a "Silva-lite" to those of us who took it the old way. I think the old way still exists, but may be more expensive. I recommend the full course, not the abbreviated version.

[5] Also, Randi may not be [as honest an "investigator" as he seems](#). .

[6] For an example of that mentality, see Werner Heisenberg's "Truth Dwells in the Deep" in Ken Wilbur's *Quantum Questions*, pp. 33-38. Heisenberg relates a conversation that he, Bohr and Wolfgang Pauli had. Those men were [decidedly mystical](#), as were nearly all the greatest physicists of the twentieth century.

[7] For Genghis Kahn and Rasputin, *The Ra Material*, p. 118. For Himmler and Goering, *The Law of One*, Book II, p. 60. Elkins, Rueckert, McCarty are the authors.

[8] In the opinion of entities such as [Zoosh](#), as channeled by Robert Shapiro.

[9] That is my interpretation, not endorsed by anybody else.

[10] Lake, Gina. *The Extraterrestrial Vision*, pp. 19-20.

[11] Roads, *Into a Timeless Realm*, pp. 190-211.

[12] See Valerian, *Matrix III*, p. 488-538.

[13] Valerian, *Matrix III*, pp. 0002-0003. His table does not add up to 100% (it adds to 110%), but gives very general numbers.

[14] Elkins, Rueckert, McCarty, *The Law of One*, Book II, pp. 60-61.

[15] See Stockwell, *In Search of Enemies*, p. 56.

[16] See Carol Zaleski's *Otherworld Journeys*, pp. 14-16.

[17] See Brinkley's *Saved by the Light*.

[18] NDEs have been a subject of considerable personal interest for me, as [my paranormal experiences](#) prepared me to investigate them. Kenneth Ring performed the seminal work on NDEs, as far as attempting controlled research and comparing NDEs to extraterrestrial close encounters. See his *The Omega Project*.

Gregory Little attempted something similar, though more from a debunking perspective. Little chalks up most paranormal phenomena to electromagnetic illusions. See his *Grand Illusions*. There is significant Bible quoting in *Grand Illusions*. John Michael McCarthy's phantasmagoric cartoons strangely dominate it. The thesis of *Grand Illusions* is worth considering, but the admittedly Christian Little had an agenda. To a degree it was a defense of his faith, and needs to be read with that in mind.

Going further into materialistic, "its an illusion" dismissals of the NDE experience is the work of Susan Blackmore, the leading "[skeptic](#)" to try formulating a materialistic theory of NDEs. See her *In Search of the Light*, and her materialistic theory of the NDE experience in *The Near Death Experience - A Reader*, edited by Lee Bailey and Jenny Yates. At least she appears to be an honest debunker. Her theory is partly based on dismissing the notion of reincarnation, and she formulates a questionable interpretation of the words attributed to Buddha. Buddha emphasized the here and now, and his de-emphasis on the afterlife and reincarnation has been misinterpreted by many Westerners as being a strike against the reincarnation concept. Astute scholars of Eastern literature, especially regarding Buddha's teachings, assert that anybody thinking that Buddha was skeptical that reincarnation was a fact is sorely mistaken. See Radhakrishnan, *The Principal Upanishads*, pp. 948-949. See Head and Cranston, eds., *Reincarnation, an East-West Anthology*, pp. 12-16. See Zimmer, *Philosophies of India*, pp. 464-487. See Huston, *The World's Religions*, pp. 82-153, especially pp. 115-116. See Yogananda, *Autobiography of a Yogi*, p. 484. See Evans-Wentz, *The Tibetan Book of the Dead*. Blackmore then invented a chemical/physiological explanation that was creative, to say the least. Blackmore's and Little's are the *best* efforts I have seen that try invalidating the NDE experience, and had serious shortcomings.

Perhaps the strangest attempt to invalidate the NDE experience is Richard Abanes' *Journey into the Light*. Abanes attempts to demonize the NDE, arguing that NDEs are encounters with Satan. Abanes spends most of the book enlisting the work of scientific debunkers of NDEs, in an effort to try invalidating all NDE experiences. The last third of the book, however, is a betrayal of any pretensions to scientific objectivity, and is a descent into demonizing anything that cannot be found in the Bible. The book is a strange alliance of science and religion to try invalidating experiences that challenge both worldviews. Abanes' book made it to the mass market, but is appropriate only for the fundamentalist Christian section of bookstores. The last part of Abanes' book was reminiscent of Ron Carlson and Ed Decker's *Fast Facts on False Teachings*, which calls every philosophy, faith and religion not fundamentalist Christianity the devil's work.

[19] See Brinkley's *Saved by the Light* and *At Peace in the Light* for his account of coming to grips with his new abilities.

[20] See Cherie Sutherland's *Reborn in the Light*.

[21] See Brinkley's *Saved by the Light*, p. 59.

[22] Joe Nickell is one of the "skeptical" faithful, always ready to invoke the "scam" angle, no matter how much evidence flies in the face of his theorizing.

[23] See a description of a thieves' hell in Moen's *Voyage to Curiosity's Father*, pp. 149-154.

[24] See Moen's *Voyage to Curiosity's Father*, pp. 111-170. I suspect that the Creator does not simply leave things there, but at some stage those "flies of hell" will receive their redemption by an act of grace that no earthly being can currently imagine.

[25] Moen describes a "hollow heaven" in his *Voyage to Curiosity's Father*, pp. 171-186.

[26] See Graham Bernard's *The Challenge of Evil*, pp. 5-7.

[27] See Bach, *Illusions*, chapter 17.

[28] See [Brinkley's](#) *Saved by the Light*. Michael Roads, in his *Into a Timeless Realm*, described time as appearing "spherical" instead of linear. Many near-death experiences (NDEs) describe that "fast-forward" life review.

[29] Robert Shapiro's Zoosh says this. After this essay was written and this site pretty much finished, an article came out in the *Sedona Journal of Emergence*, November 2002 issue, pp. 69-70, titled "The Sacrifice of Lucifer," by Yaël Powell, who claims it is a channeling from God. It is along the lines of humanity exploring "anti-love" due to the free will God gave us, and Lucifer volunteered to help us make this exploration that God did not anticipate, as God knows that love is all there is, we are exploring what we are not. It is a very compassionate article.

[30] Paddy McMahon's *The Grand Design* material discusses that issue.

[31] See Paddy McMahon's *The Grand Design* material.

[32] See, for instance, *Reincarnation, An East-West Anthology*, edited by Joseph Head and S.L. Cranston; Arthur and Joyce Berger's *Reincarnation, Fact or Fable?*; *Reincarnation*, edited by Sylvia Cranston.

[33] : -)

[34] Many people channel the [Michael teachings](#). The sources used for this essay are: Chelsea Quinn Yarbro's *Messages from Michael*, *More Messages from Michael*, *Michael's People* and *Michael for the Millennium*; Joya Pope's *The World According to Michael* and *Upcoming Changes*; José Stevens' *Tao to Earth* and *Earth to Tao*; Shepherd Hoodwin's *The Journey of Your Soul*; *The Michael Game* by The Michael Digest Group and *The Michael Handbook* by José Stevens and Simon Warwick-Smith. Below are tables that outline most of the Michael teaching's basics

Soul role for earthbound souls	% of human species	% of America	How roles view the human world
Artisan	20	30	The world is their artistic model

Server	30	10	The world is their guest
Warrior	20	30	The world is unconquered territory
Scholar	15	15	The world is their object of study
Sage (artisan exalted)	8	8	The world is their audience
Priest (server exalted)	5	5	The world is their flock
King (warrior exalted)	2	2	The world is their realm

Role	Positive Pole	Negative Pole	Primary Delusion	# of Karmic Ribbons Created and Burned
Artisan	Creation	Artifice	My creations are real	500
Server	Service	Bondage	I am forced to serve	500
Warrior	Persuasion	Coercion	Might makes right	2,000
Scholar	Knowledge	Theory	My theories are correct	1,400
Sage	Expression	Oration	I am always worth listening to	2,000
Priest	Compassion	Zeal	I always know what is best for all	3,000
King	Mastery	Tyranny	I should always be in charge	4,000

Goal	Mode	Attitude	Chief Feature	Centering
Discrimination	Caution	Skeptic	Self-Destruction	Emotional
Acceptance	Power	Idealist	Greed	Moving
Re-evaluation	Repression	Stoic	Self-Deprecation	Intellectual
Growth	Passion	Spiritualist	Arrogance	Instinctual
Submission	Perseverance	Cynic	Martyrdom	Higher Emotional
Dominance	Aggression	Realist	Impatience	Higher Moving
Stagnation	Observation	Pragmatist	Stubbornness	Higher Intellectual

Soul Age	Positive Pole	Negative Pole	Theme	Life is About	Relationship to Nature
Infant	Innocence, openness	Terrified inhibition	Let's try it, but life is scary	Survival	Connected with nature

Baby	Structure	Rigidity	Let's do it right, or do not try	Following the rules	Controls nature
Young	Accomplishment	Egotism, destruction	Let's do it my way. I win, you lose.	Winning	Conquers nature
Mature	Emotional depth	Melodramatic	Do it someplace else. Life is intense	Emotions	Preserves nature
Old	Love and acceptance	Laziness, "I am better"	You do it your way, I'll do it mine	Love	Lives with nature
Transcendental	Social revolution	"You can call me master"	We can make things better		
Infinite	Mastery, love	None	We are one		

Michael's Soul Ages	Rough Correspondence to Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs	Less "age" oriented terminology
Infant	Survival	Stage 1
Baby	Safety	Stage 2
Young	Social	Stage 3
Mature	Esteem	Stage 4
Old	Self-actualization	Stage 5
Transcendental		Stage 6
Infinite		Stage 7

Life Monads	Age of Monad	Planes of Existence, Tao is Source of all	Body Types
Birth		Physical	Lunar
Awareness as individual	2	Astral	Venusian
Leaving "nest"	18-22	Causal	Mercurial
Mid-life crisis	35-50	Akashic	Saturnian
Reflection on life lived	65-70	Mental	Martial
Realization that death is coming		Messianic	Jovial
Death		Buddhaic	Solar

These tables give only a bare outline of the Michael teachings. Joya Pope gave me a reading in the early 1990s, and

read me as an Old (level 2) Artisan, an Idealist/Skeptic with a goal of Growth, in the Observation mode with a strong slide into Perseverance, with Emotional centering complemented with a Moving part, a chief feature of Impatience and about 65% feminine energy. I have a Saturnian body, which is rugged on the positive pole and gaunt on the negative pole, and I have experienced each in this life. I am one of those "slow learners" who has lived more than 160 physical lives, most on earth as a human. Joya's impressions (done over the phone) and glimpses of my future were extremely accurate in many ways. This web site is a classic Old Artisan undertaking, but Old Artisans also leave behind many unfinished works. This site was largely completed in September 2002, overcoming the flagging inspiration that Old Souls are vulnerable to. Since love and being of service to others is the royal path, Servers complete their incarnation cycle with the fewest lives and incur the least amount of negative Karma. Violating another's free will in a way that harms them creates negative Karma. It can be paid back in eye-for-an-eye fashion, but that is the least enlightened way. If I murder somebody in a life, them murdering me in another can pay it back, but can also lead to a new round of Karma. Saving their life can also pay it back, and can lead to creating Philanthropic Karma, which is a positive Karma. Kings incur the largest Karmic burdens as they play tyrant when acting out of their negative pole ("off with their heads!"). Hitler was a priest, as was Gandhi. The Transcendental and Infinite souls rarely manifest on the physical plane. Transcendental souls usually initiate great social changes, and in history there have been few, such as Socrates, Muhammad, Zoroaster and Gandhi. The Transcendental soul often paves the way for the Infinite soul to manifest. The Infinite soul manifests through final incarnation priests and kings, and history's have been: Jesus, Buddha, Lao-tzu, Krishna and Ra. There have been others that history has not recorded. The Great Peacemaker of the [Iroquois](#), Deganawidah, may have been a Transcendental soul, or perhaps Infinite. The early soul stages easily fall prey to their "false personalities," which is essentially herd conditioning: having attitudes and beliefs indoctrinated by society and not from direct experience. The false personality is generally founded upon fear- and scarcity-based beliefs. Setting aside the false personality and bringing through one's "essence" (soul) is the Great Goal of all sentient species, and it can only be done through love.

In the soul cycle, the first three are outwardly focused into the physical world, the Late Young stage being the apex of outward focus. Societies at that stage are materialistic, nearly anti-spiritual, and that is the stage where ensouled species that can manipulate their environment can destroy their planet, by either warfare or environmental destruction. Michael says that ensouled species do it a third of the time. If a species makes it past the Young Soul stage, it begins the inward journey, and Mature Souls explore their emotions. The final stage is Old Soul awareness. While love is mainly what matters to them at that stage, they can also fall prey to their particular foibles. They can be lazy, sloppy and think their experience makes them better than the younger souls, and toleration and acceptance are their great lessons. They can be intolerant of the intolerance that younger souls often display. In humanity's upcoming transition from Young to Mature Soul awareness, there may be several Transcendental and Infinite Souls manifesting during my lifetime, and they might mainly be women.

[35] On those themes, see Lyssa Royal and Stephen Davis' *Future Sex*, Royal and Priest's *The Prism of Lyra*, *Visitors from Within* and *Preparing for Contact*; Gina Lake's *ET Contact* and *The Extraterrestrial Vision*; [Barbara Marciniak's Bringers of the Dawn, Earth and Family of Light](#); *The Ra Material*; Dolores Cannon's *The Legend of Starcrash*. [Robert Shapiro and friends' The Explorer Race and Shining the Light](#) series. There are many other excellent works on those themes, but those are a good start.

The Next Section: [Dennis Lee, His Critics, and the "Skeptics"](#) (266K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Dennis Lee, His Critics and the "Skeptics"

By Wade Frazier

[A Note to My Readers](#)

[Dennis Lee's Critics](#)

[Mr. Skeptic and Friends](#)

[Mr. Skeptic and the "Crackpots"](#)

[Mr. Skeptic and Mumia Abu Jamal](#)

[Mr. Skeptic and McDonald's](#)

[Other "Crackpots"](#)

[Dennis Lee's Past - A Quiz](#)

[Footnotes](#)

A Note to My Readers: Many readers of this essay are reaching it directly from links on other sites. This essay is a minor part of this site, and a minor part of my [energy writings](#). Far more is written about Dennis and my days with him elsewhere, especially at this [link](#) and [this one](#). This essay was written to demonstrate the nature of the criticisms I have seen launched at Dennis since 1986. I have had virtually no dealings with Dennis' organization since the late 1990s and very little from 1989 to now, and this essay does not endorse what Dennis is doing

today, partly because I am not qualified to venture an opinion on it. A major point of this essay is showing how Dennis' critics lie about his past. It is particularly telling when people resort to lying to make the case that Dennis is a criminal. If people want to shoot holes in what Dennis is doing these days, they can have at it, with my blessings. They should do it with integrity, however, and not scrape up libelous newspaper clippings to make their case. If they want to be taken seriously as a "defender" of the public or assailant of Dennis' integrity, they need to demonstrate some integrity of their own. The official documents are available, for anybody who does the legwork. Dennis publishes many of them himself.

Dennis and I largely parted ways in 1988, partly because I am not the warrior he is. I had to take time to lick my wounds, and have traveled other paths. Dennis and I are human, with our foibles, but if we were crooks, we would have to be the stupidest ones on earth, working much of our adult lives for free. That is not how true criminals play the game. There are at least two sides to every story. I know what I saw, and if people wish to challenge the veracity of my experiences, they are welcome to try, but I have never seen any of my challengers do *any* of the necessary homework, as they launch their fact-free opinions from their keyboards.

Dennis Lee's Critics

This essay was written from the perspective of having [many years of experience](#) watching Dennis in action, and seeing and fielding countless criticisms of his free energy/alternative energy efforts. I wrote it in response to the merciless derision and libel I have seen directed Dennis' way in the media since 1986, and on the Internet since 1996.

Dennis became involved with the energy industry [in the 1970s](#), and has been trying to transform it ever since. I rode in the saddle with him for a few chapters of his adventures, and have been watching from a distance since the 1980s. I witnessed about twenty attempts to steal his companies while I was with him, and they succeeded twice. I helped Dennis rebuild a couple of times.

During my years with Dennis, I encountered thousands of people. A phenomenon I regularly saw was the constant criticism of what he/we were attempting. Dennis is about the quickest thinker I have ever seen, and perhaps the most creative. He has tried nearly every possible avenue to getting alternative energy developed.

Dennis approached Wall Street numerous times; he tried getting large energy companies interested; he directly sold the equipment and hoped for financing later; he almost got into bed with a household name international marketing firm; he almost had a [billion dollar deal](#) put together to finance his unstoppable (at least honestly) marketing program for his [heat pump](#) with a household name corporation; he used volunteers; he surrounded himself with

Christians; he tried numerous marketing/financing programs that he usually devised himself; he formed nonprofit organizations; he tried grassroots movements; he talked with foreign national governments; he talked with many free energy inventors and tried developing their technologies; he tried media campaigns; he tried direct mailing campaigns; he tried telemarketing campaigns; he tried buying out electric companies; he tried working with anti-nuclear protesters; he talked with numerous billionaires (and they never parted with a dollar); he tried working with numerous environmental organizations; he tried getting movie stars involved with him, he tried doing it from jail; he considered trying it in foreign countries; he rented out a ballroom in Washington D.C. and invited every politician in town to attend his meetings, to work with him on bringing free energy to the marketplace responsibly; his companies have marketed, built and installed his technologies. I do not know what he has not tried, and Dennis does nothing halfway. He is immensely talented, and made a worthy attempt with all those techniques.

Perhaps the most common reaction I saw when describing our latest attempt or situation to people, be they potential employees, potential dealers, strangers, friends, family, etc., was their instant criticism. After hearing about what we were attempting for less than one minute, or perhaps as long as five, people would often chime in with something such as, "Aha, I know what you are doing wrong, you just need to (fill in the blank)." Their helpful advice always consisted of something tried before, or was something quite naïve, such as giving it to the energy companies, letting them bring free energy to the world. The energy interests have [buried more technologies](#) with the potential for free energy than the world will ever know of. The [energy interests](#) have ruthlessly crushed many energy-saving technologies, even ignoring what I lived through with Dennis.

The most naïve comment (and perhaps the most common) I have heard regarding the predicament of bringing free energy the world is this: "If it is so great, why can't I buy it?" Being naïve is no crime. Naïveté is the starting point when we enter the world. [I lost mine honestly](#). Naïveté (at least regarding the "real" world) is a state where we have a mistaken worldview due to our lack of experience, and think others share our view and act as we do. Clinging to our naïveté, when our eyes tell us otherwise, leads to [denial](#). Believing the energy companies are a consumer's best friend reflects a mentality one might find on children's television shows, but the corporate world, contrary to popular opinion, only embraces innovation [if it increases its profits](#).

The larger and more monopolistic an industry is, the more it can throw its weight around, [wiping out competitive and innovative upstarts](#). Energy, transportation and medicine are three classic cases of that phenomenon. Energy production methods have not fundamentally changed during the past century, if we ignore, as Einstein said, the "one hell of a way to boil water," nuclear energy. Alternative energy still comprises [less than one percent](#) of energy consumption in America. The automobile and its internal combustion engine have [not](#)

[fundamentally changed](#) since Henry Ford. Many [superior engine designs were invented](#) during the 20th century. The reason they are not in cars today is that the level of investment in current technology makes sure Detroit does not convert.

Today's [medical paradigm](#) is insane. Drugs and surgical procedures, with extremely few exceptions, are the [only legal "medicines" in the United States](#). That is not because they are the best, but because they are the most lucrative. Watching alternative cancer treatments being [wiped out by the dozen](#), or seeing [books banned](#), [burned](#) and attacked because they suggest that changing our diets [can reverse our health problems](#), is indicative of a tremendous racket that rakes in the cash as millions die needlessly.

Competition is a nice Economics 101 concept, but all [capitalists hate the idea of competition](#). Competition is hell on profit margins and makes for an uncertain future. [Eliminating the competition](#) is the arguably the primary goal of every industry and profession, particularly their trade and professional groups.

Nearly everybody likes to criticize Dennis, but precious few will actually help him. The loudest critics usually try stealing from him while they lambaste him.

Dennis is the eternal optimist and does not like hearing "bad news." He has a way of turning the darkest outcome into an opportunity. That is a mixed blessing and he could be accused of being a Pollyanna, although it is not true. His eternal optimism is partly based on his faith. As the Dalai Lama once said, optimism is the only attitude worth having when faced with dire challenges. The eternal optimism of a promoter of Dennis' stature is a challenging fit with the mentality needed to investigate and develop technologies. Visionaries see the goal, and "realists" get there. It is rare to find one person possessing both attributes in great measure. Dennis is not the universal man, and I doubt that any exist in today's world. He is not a scientist, nor does he need to be. He has his important role to play, but does not need to do it all. Yet, it was educational to see him understand some technologies [better than the engineers who worked for him](#). Dennis was heavily involved in developing the [heat pump technology](#) that he used to market. Scientists and engineers do not have all the answers or insight either, and are often [amazingly blind to unorthodox data and theory](#), being so indoctrinated by their training that they cannot think past their textbooks.

Dennis has been learning painful lessons about developing and marketing new technologies, although he has probably also been subject to the "[game theory](#)" strategies of the energy gangsters, being subtly sabotaged. I know of no person more fit to lead the effort to bring alternative energy to the marketplace, although I wish there were a hundred like Dennis, so he would not be the target he is. Dennis is prominent by default. He is doing something that anybody else could do, but his combination of integrity, talent and courage may be unique. The answer for those asserting that they can make it happen (usually asserted while attacking

Dennis) is "Nothing is stopping you from doing it yourself. Dennis has no monopoly on it."

I will not denigrate the many noble efforts that have been made during the past century, but I know of nobody who [staged a better attempt](#) at breaking through the stranglehold that the energy gangsters have over humanity. Dennis had them quite frightened for a while, to the point where they [offered at least a billion dollars](#) to make him go away. Dennis' associates will ride his coattails while he is flying high, and when the energy gangsters attack, his associates see their golden opportunity to steal the business. Dennis has [had his company stolen](#) numerous times. Have the thieves ever done anything productive with what they stole? No. It always crumbled in their hands, and they gutted the ship as it sank, stealing every dishonest scrap they could. Dennis makes it happen. There are always those appearing on the scene, thinking they can do better. If only they tried building it from scratch as Dennis has. That requires far more integrity than they possess. Instead, they try stealing what Dennis built.

Dennis has never really written his life story. There have been pieces of it in books such as *My Quest*, but if his full story were ever told, it would sound ridiculous. Dennis is a promoter of no mean order, but he need not stretch anything when discussing his life. He has his virtues and failings, as with all of us. What makes Dennis "great" is not his [marketing genius](#), his entrepreneurial savvy, his audacity, his clever mind or promoter's talents. It is his integrity and great heart.

Mr. Skeptic and Friends

Since 1990, I have studied the "skeptics" at length. Carl Sagan, Isaac Asimov, [Martin Gardner](#) and James Randi have all been prominent members of the Committee for Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal (CSICOP), and the CSICOP publishes the *Skeptical Inquirer*. Their use of the word "skeptic" is an [Orwellism](#). They are skeptical of everything but their beliefs, which they consider "facts." While there were some skeptics whose work I had some respect for, they were relatively few. For every article in the *Skeptical Inquirer* that impressed me with the reasoned investigation of a researcher, even if I did not always agree with their conclusions, two articles left me shaking my head. The same goes for the magazine *Skeptic*. The CSICOP skeptics supposedly investigate paranormal phenomena, as the name of their committee suggests, but I have never heard of them finding evidence of the paranormal. I [found it easily](#) when I was a teenager, which makes me wonder what kind of investigators they are. Here is a [humorous primer](#) on how the "skeptics" operate.

In 1996, Dennis mounted national speaking tours, promoting technologies and talking about free energy. In September 1996, he finished his second national tour of the year in Philadelphia. Five thousand people attended the show held in the sports arena where the

Philadelphia 76ers played. I readily admit that he did not "demonstrate" much that was impressive regarding free energy at his Philadelphia show. Dennis is not my first candidate to explain the physics of the technologies he promotes, but he was showcasing a few technologies that have extraordinary potential and was talking to a lay audience. Even if [hydraulic heat engines](#) could not produce free energy, they would represent the first new heat engine cycle in a century, and might sweep aside nearly all the others.

Billions of dollars should be spent developing hydraulic heat engines, even if they could not produce free energy. Just as Detroit swatted down, froze out or bought out [all the new engine designs](#), they surely could not be trusted to develop new engine designs. At the Philadelphia show, among the five thousand attendees was Mr. Skeptic, who was an aspiring debunker and founder of a Philadelphia skeptic group.

The day after the Philadelphia show, Mr. Skeptic had up a web site, claiming to investigate Dennis' "claims." I had already written one book that was more of a diary of my experiences. I reproduced a [medical quotation section](#) from it, and an earlier essay that I wrote on American history. During October 1996 I wrote 400 new pages of text and slapped the whole thing onto the Internet in November 1996.

As I published my web pages and registered them with the various search engines I searched the Internet, seeing if there was anything out there about Dennis. I found Mr. Skeptic's web site. For the next five months we engaged in a cordial dialogue. I allowed him to call me at home, and we had a three-hour conversation. Mr. Skeptic's web site was rather large, and devoted megabytes of information to Dennis. Mr. Skeptic said that his wife was irritated with the hundreds of hours he spent on Dennis. The man was *obsessed* with Dennis. Mr. Skeptic used one word all over his web site and in my discussions with him. It was the word "fraud." He obviously thought Dennis was a crook. He speculated loud and long on that issue. He even listed fraud hot line numbers to every state government.

I knew Dennis was not a crook, and had plenty of experience in defending him over the years. I began a dialogue with Mr. Skeptic, presenting my case. If nothing else, I tried encouraging Mr. Skeptic to perform some actual investigation. There were heat pumps in Philadelphia that he could have tested, customers he could have talked to, true investigation he could have performed to see if Dennis was crooked or crazy. Merely sifting through the legal documents regarding the various governmental cases against Dennis was stunning. The best book Dennis has written about his experiences was *The Alternative*, available even today for [\\$25.00 at his company](#). That book provides plenty of official documentation and witness affidavits that clearly present the government's cases against Dennis. The book is strongest when Dennis merely documents what he lived through, and arguably weakest when he ventures into right wing conspiratorial theorizing.

Although Dennis became the biggest case in Mr. Skeptic's skeptical career, I became

increasingly disturbed at how Mr. Skeptic *avoided* investigation. Dennis has dealt with many establishment hacks over the years who were on the government/energy company payrolls and whose jobs were to discredit him and destroy his companies. Dennis had no patience with Mr. Skeptic from the beginning, and it was understandable. Mr. Skeptic took a position from the start and virtually never wavered from it. I have almost never seen a skeptic say there was anything legitimate in what they investigated. Why did they bat 1000? Could they have perhaps made up their mind before they began investigating? Is that practicing skepticism?

My experiences with the skeptics' work did not make me too optimistic about Mr. Skeptic, but I tried to get him to at least investigate. The man seemed determined to not perform any investigation. Since about 1990, Dennis has not tried to market his heat pump, per se, but was trying to marry the large evaporator from his heat pump to a hydraulic heat engine to make free energy. To investigate Dennis' potential crookedness, the logical place to start would be looking into his past, investigating what he sold, seeing how crooked that might have been. Mr. Skeptic said that he would not investigate the heat pump, since Dennis was no longer selling it. He said he only cared about free energy. My position with Mr. Skeptic was approximately, "Okay, take that position, but admit that you know nothing about the man, and you have plucked your fraud speculations from the thin air."

To my knowledge, Mr. Skeptic never even parted with \$12.95 to get *The Alternative*. Immediately after the Philadelphia show, he called Dennis' company to try getting a free copy because he was an "investigator." I have performed far more investigation than Mr. Skeptic will ever pretend to, and I have never asked for free materials, particularly from somebody I was planning on writing unflattering things about. Mr. Skeptic even advertised how much money he had, giving out his broker's contact information so people can confirm his healthy bank account balance, so he could back up his "reward" for indisputable evidence of free energy. As the months went by, Mr. Skeptic was confirming my worst suspicions about the skeptical movement. Being civil to the man was becoming a challenge. He continuously concocted psychological theories to explain how Dennis' followers were deluded, or Dennis was deluded, or I was deluded, in denial about what a con man I had been taken by. They were some of the more strained theories I had encountered, but there was a consistency to them. At every turn, Mr. Skeptic defended the establishment. I had been developing the opinion that the skeptical societies were little more than establishment attack dogs, scientific and otherwise. Mr. Skeptic is clear evidence of that theory.

The general skeptical attitude is that everything the establishment does is good and righteous, while anything not promoted by the powerful is suspect. That may seem an extreme assessment, but it is formed from a long time of examining the "skeptical" world. The skeptics believe that the government faithfully hunts down the crooks that threaten society. Although Mr. Skeptic had apparently not bothered obtaining the official documentation regarding the continuous prosecutions of Dennis, he wrote that Dennis' perception of being a victim of establishment persecution was a "delusion." Even when he admitted that perhaps the sheriff's deputies [stole technical materials during the raid](#), Mr. Skeptic theorized that they did so

because they were overzealous in protecting the public, not because they were corrupt.

In far right circles there is a phenomenon known as [Holocaust Denial](#), where a number of "scholars" are trying to rehabilitate the image of fascism and Uncle Adolf. They make out the Jewish Holocaust to be a fiction, dismissing the testimony of many thousands of death camp survivors, the testimonies of Nazis who worked in the camps, and engaging in what I have to call intellectual fraud.

Mr. Skeptic specialized in Corruption Denial, dismissing the testimony of nearly everybody closely involved in the Dennis issue while launching his theories, which invariably defended the establishment. For reasons not entirely in my control, my web pages came down in April 1997 and I did not communicate with anybody associated with Dennis for years.

Mr. Skeptic was a skeptical "hobbyist." He was not a true professional as [James Randi](#) is. Randi tutored Mr. Skeptic as they debunked a technique known as Touch for Health, Mr. Skeptic learning at Randi's knee. Mr. Skeptic finally hit pay dirt with his investigation of Dennis. He [had an article published](#) in the *Skeptical Inquirer* in the summer of 1997. Mr. Skeptic unmasked himself. Putting up a web page is one thing, but submitting an article for publication is an entirely different matter.

There is plenty of official documentation regarding the prosecutions and "convictions" of Dennis. *The Alternative* clearly lays some of it out. One thing is clear if one follows Dennis' story: the last thing he does is cover-up his past, particularly regarding the legal system's attacks. His books lay them out in excruciating detail. Investigators are inundated with official documentation if they begin researching his case, being treated to search warrants, investigator reports, court transcripts, witness affidavits, court rulings, prison records, etc. For anybody who begins researching Dennis' case, what is impressive is the documentation he provides.

Mr. Skeptic's article is glib and condescending, in standard *Skeptical Inquirer* style. Mr. Skeptic begins his article with some facts, such as he attended a show in Philadelphia where Dennis talked a lot and did not demonstrate much. I have no argument with that. There were some reasons for that, partly governmental and not in Dennis' control. Mr. Skeptic scoffed at that notion.

Then Mr. Skeptic spent a few paragraphs comparing Dennis to his snake-oil model. At best, Mr. Skeptic evidenced no investigation of the existing and marketed technologies, but hung his hat on whether Dennis had free energy. Mr. Skeptic's theorizing was amusing and I thought the article harmless until the final paragraph, where Mr. Skeptic committed libel. It was not a gentle, unknowing libel. Mr. Skeptic was too knowledgeable to chalk up that paragraph to ignorance. He knowingly lied, but was calculating about how he lied. It would be no surprise if a lawyer reviewed Mr. Skeptic's article before publication. That article was the crowning work

of Mr. Skeptic's debunking career. He is quite proud of it.

Mr. Skeptic quoted a newspaper that libeled Dennis. Mr. Skeptic wrote,

"The *Utah...News* reports that Lee was indicted for fraud in New Jersey in 1975, charged with fraud in the state of Washington in 1985, and pled guilty to two felony counts of consumer fraud in California in 1990 in connection with the sale of his energy-saving heat pump kit. Well, what the hell... they say Jim Bakker is planning a comeback, too."

During 1991 and 1992, Dennis tried reviving his venture after getting out of jail the first time. He became involved with the Patriot Movement, which is located in the northwestern United States and has more than a tinge of white supremacy associated with it, along with many self-serving "leaders" who seem more interested in selling videos than turning America around. Dennis became high profile in the movement, to the point where other "Patriot" leaders felt they had to discredit him. The Mormon Church was so alarmed that they allegedly threatened ex-communication to any member who became involved with Dennis. "Coincidentally," a Utah newspaper published some libelous articles about Dennis. Of all the massive documentation surrounding Dennis' cases, much of it official and published by Dennis himself, Mr. Skeptic quoted a Utah newspaper regarding the government's cases against Dennis.

The official record is clear. The 1975 indictment had to do with [unintentionally bouncing some checks](#) as his company was going out of business, when a customer put a stop payment on a big check to his company. After getting poor (and probably *intentionally* poor) legal advice, Dennis naïvely pled guilty to fraud for bouncing some checks, a decision that still haunts him. Dennis was *not* charged with fraud in Washington in 1985. He was charged in a *civil* matter regarding consumer protection issues, and if anybody committed a crime, it was the Attorney General's office and their buddies. Their efforts [killed one of Dennis' employees](#).

Dennis did *not* plead guilty to two felony counts of consumer fraud in California in 1990. He pled guilty to not filing a form and paying fifty dollars [regarding a civil law](#). Civil law is not criminal law, and is called "civil code" in the business. His guilty plea amounted to not knowing about the filing requirement (and subsequently believing that he was not required to file) and getting a ruling from the courts on it, and Mr. Skeptic knew it. In addition, the situation regarding his so-called guilty plea is far different from how Mr. Skeptic and others have reported it. The plea was that Dennis in fact did not file the form, but the deal was that the courts would rule on the constitutionality of the law *as it applied to Dennis' case*. The courts reneged on that deal, and never held up their end of the "bargain."

That situation of U.S. courts violating their own deals is as [American as apple pie](#). Ask the Native American tribes how often the U.S. government and courts honored the treaties that they forced on the natives, which was a fraudulent strategy crafted by [George Washington](#). In one rare instance when a tribe prevailed in court, the Cherokee tribe won in the U.S. Supreme Court, and the sitting president, [Andrew Jackson](#), openly stated that he would ignore the court's ruling, and the genocidal Trail of Tears followed soon after.

Mr. Skeptic wrote that Dennis "pled guilty to two felony counts of consumer fraud" in California. In *The Alternative*, Dennis produces his prison records and court transcript of the proceedings. The judge said that:

"One of the things that we must keep in mind here is that the defendant has not been convicted of theft, he's not been convicted of a crime that requires or there's been any proof by an admission or otherwise that the defendant is convicted of intentionally defrauding people."[\[1\]](#)

Dennis also reproduces his prison records that plainly stated the "offense" he was in prison for: "Failure to register marketing plans. (A misdemeanor.)" and cited the *civil* code that Dennis "violated."[\[2\]](#) Anybody who had performed the elementary step of reading *The Alternative*, which thousands of people have, would know that Dennis did not plead guilty to felonious fraud in California.

In Washington, Dennis was *not* prosecuted for fraud. With those prosecutions, the mind-boggling fraud was perpetrated by the Attorney General's office, the electric companies, the sheriff's department, the District Attorney's office, the Superior Court, etc. In Washington, Dennis' company was charged in a *civil* matter. Fraud is a criminal matter, not a civil matter. The Washington civil suit was an unconscionable fraud. The Deputy Attorney General who prosecuted the lawsuit (whose conscience eventually got to her, and she [quit her job](#) in the midst of bludgeoning Dennis' company) made her case in her correspondence with Dennis, trying to entice him to settle her lawsuit. She stated that she could find a violation of the law, even if there was never any intent to deceive anybody.

Ms. Deputy Attorney General based her entire case on a letter from a person who innocently misunderstood one statement made in the video pitch Dennis' company used. She seized on the fact that *one* person in the entire state misunderstood *one* thing Dennis said. In her letter to Dennis, she made it clear how she would get him. She stated:

"... It is important to underscore that the consumer protection lawsuit is a civil suit... state does not allege, nor does it need prove that the defendants intended to deceive or deal unfairly with their customers...Rather the issue is whether representations have the tendency or capacity to mislead regardless of the intentions of those who make them...the seller's state of mind is excluded. Intent to deceive or act unfairly is not an element of proof in a Consumer Protection cause of action; similarly lack of intent is not a defense for the seller."[\[3\]](#)

Dennis was the only person in the state singled out that way. Mr. Skeptic is familiar with Dennis' case and the documentation surrounding it. For several years Mr. Skeptic published a page of mine where I outlined the facts of the cases against Dennis, referring to the exhibits in *The Alternative* that present the government's cases. I wrote that essay partly in response to Mr. Skeptic's complaints that he was hearing too much from Dennis' defenders (I was not the only one), and he would like to see the government's case presented. I presented it with the government's own documents, right from Dennis' book.

When it came time to go on the record about Dennis, what did Mr. Skeptic do? Instead of referring to the readily available official documentation regarding the cases against Dennis, Mr. Skeptic did some digging and discovered libelous comments made by a newspaper, and then presented it as his evidence that Dennis was crooked. In [Logic 101 classes](#), what Mr. Skeptic did is called "appeal to inappropriate authority" and the logical fallacy of "omitted evidence." If we are prudent and logical, and if the voice of authority stares us in the face, telling us what their legal actions against Dennis were, we accept their rendering of the issue, or at least give it weight. What we do *not* do is ignore them, scraping around for a *rumor* about their actions that suits our uses better. Not only is it crudely dishonest, it abandons the most elementary standards of scholarship and logic.

Ironically, Mr. Skeptic gave a better endorsement of Dennis than I ever could. After spending hundreds of hours "investigating" Dennis, when it came time to go on the record, Mr. Skeptic resorted to a logical sleight-of-hand. His motivation has been laid bare, and there is no reason to take him seriously as a "debunker." To be polite, he is a propagandist. His *Skeptical Inquirer* article told me more than I needed to know about the skeptics. I have seen Carl Sagan display dishonesty that was shocking.[\[4\]](#) I have seen evidence of James Randi not quite playing straight.[\[5\]](#) Mr. Skeptic's libel removed my lingering, charitable doubts about the skeptics' motivation, and *the Skeptical Inquirer* publishing such a scandalous article proved to me what kind of rag it is.

It is also worse than that. I informed Mr. Skeptic about his misrepresentations of Dennis' "criminal" past years ago, as have others. I *knew* that Mr. Skeptic was being intentionally deceptive with his presentation of Dennis' "criminal" past, or he had seriously impaired

intelligence. Instead of uttering a thousand *mea culpas* when informed of his libel, Mr. Skeptic stepped up his attacks, harping on Dennis' "criminal" past. During the summer of 2001, Mr. Skeptic campaigned against Dennis, to, in his words, "put him away" in prison. [Mr. Deputy](#) could not have found a better soul brother in his efforts to "protect the public."

Over the years, people have defended Mr. Skeptic's libel. However, they never defended it by addressing the *facts* of his libel. The worst of them simply ignored the facts and called me names and played other games of obfuscation and misdirection. The *best* of his defenders made excuses for his state of mind, calling him either sloppy or too eager to play debunker. Early drafts of this essay presented in greater detail the context of Mr. Skeptic's libel, but my editor thought I was belaboring the facts. In 2006, it became clear that some people still need it spelled out. For more information on why Mr. Skeptic's [Skeptical Inquirer article](#) was consciously dishonest, see this footnote.[\[6\]](#)

Mr. Skeptic's web site gives the appearance of thoroughly debunking Dennis and his efforts. *Appearance* is the operative word. Here is a final example of the criticisms of Dennis on Mr. Skeptic's site. He reproduces an anecdote from a person who once introduced Dennis to a crowd.

The man wrote:

"I first ran into him at the Global Sciences conference in 1989 in Denver. At that time, I heard several reports of an incident at a supplemental presentation he set up, which was not part of the actual conference proceedings. Because it was not a regularly scheduled part of the conference, I was not in the room at the time. Therefore, a friend arranged for me to see a video of the incident. A noted Tesla technology researcher came into the room, and when given an opportunity, asked a pointed question as to why none of Lee's investors had yet received any money back. Lee then went into a bizarre diatribe against this individual, accusing him of having murdered an 8-year old girl. Eventually the researcher left the room, as it appeared the incident was about to degenerate into a physical fight."

The man summed up his version of events with: "I came away with the impression that Dennis Lee is a singularly dangerous individual."

The "noted Tesla technology researcher" was in fact a [hit man](#) from the Bonneville Power Administration. His "noted Tesla technology researcher" image was the latest sheep's skin that the wolf wore, and many at the Global Sciences meeting thought that a bona fide corporate hit man was a sincere researcher and their friend.

Mr. Skeptic has frequently announced that he "debunked" and otherwise disposed of Dennis. Dennis feels that Mr. Skeptic may be clandestinely working for the energy interests or some agency such as the CIA. It is difficult to distinguish provocateurs from freelance, low integrity operators, as they largely act the same. I would respect Mr. Skeptic's work more if he was a paid provocateur, as the BPA Hit Man was, but like [Mr. Texas](#), Mr. Skeptic is probably free-lancing his efforts, for reasons only he knows.

The media attacks that accompanied Dennis' 1999 tour were sickening. Diane Sawyer even smeared him on national television, after loading up her sling with mud for several years.

Dennis' case is a classic example of the complete ethical bankruptcy of our legal system and power structure. I have read numerous media accounts of Dennis, and they nearly always use the "you lie, and I'll repeat it" tactic that Mr. Skeptic used. Tell a lie often enough and it will never go away. That was how Goebbels operated, and the [mainstream media works the same](#). The mudslinger always wins.

In nearly every account I have read since 1986, they continually referred to Dennis' "criminal" past. The latest libelers never, ever say that his "guilty plea" in California was concerning a [civil law](#), and he unintentionally broke the law because he did not know about it (nor did anyone else in California). They constantly have said "felony, felony, felony." One site even reproduces Dennis' plea in California, the plea says "felony" at the top of it, which is true, but that is telling about one percent of the story, if that.

According to how the Ventura County courts (home of the Rodney King beating verdict) interpreted the statute, nearly every businessman in California should have been behind bars. In kangaroo court, however, Dennis was singled out [from 100,000 of his peers](#) for a million-dollar bail. In kangaroo court, unintentionally breaking a civil law that nobody has ever heard of becomes a "felony." That would be bad enough, but the prosecution committed numerous bona fide felonies while persecuting Dennis, including [theft](#), [espionage](#), [threatening witnesses](#), [destroying evidence](#), [threatening employees with prison](#) for working at our company, not to mention the numerous, blatant lies they told daily, in the courtroom and elsewhere.

Ventura County officials today state that Dennis was crooked and pled guilty to crimes. Dennis stood in court and made it clear that he was not pleading guilty to any "intent to defraud anybody." The judge replied that he understood that plea, and asked the prosecutor herself if she agreed, and she said "That is correct. Your Honor, in dismissing the 487 [fraud - Ed.] counts, I believe we dismissed the counts that carried with them the intent to defraud."[\[7\]](#) Dennis did not plead guilty, nor was he convicted of intending to deceive or defraud people, but I have never seen a media article, or anything written by Mr. Skeptic, that admitted such. The only "crime" that Dennis has ever admitted to (or has been convicted of) is unintentionally

bouncing some checks more than twenty-five years ago as his company was being wiped out in the general mayhem of America's first energy crisis. A customer putting a stop payment on a large check to his company made those checks bounce.[\[8\]](#) Why do none of those reporters or Mr. Skeptic report the truth of matters?

Mr. Skeptic and the Crackpots

A prominent piece of Mr. Skeptic's web site is a "crackpot" page. He put substantial effort into constructing it. His crackpot page is a compendium of links to "crackpot" web sites. I have read the work of [Jewish Holocaust deniers](#), the militias, and the political spectrum's right and left ends. Dennis was prominent in the Patriot movement. Many people associated with Dennis' organization have some very alternative thinking. I have studied fringe science for a long time, and have [studied the paranormal](#) since I was a teenager. I was acquainted with many of the sites that Mr. Skeptic listed as crackpot sites.

Once I hit Mr. Skeptic's crackpot page, I was treated to *X-Files* music and the moving image of a ghoul, as if it were trying to grab me. Other images were big eyes that blink (paranoid eyes), a flying ghost, a marching religious zealot, and other "funny" images. He listed well more than a hundred links to "crackpot" sites. Few will argue against there being many strange groups out there, and Mr. Skeptic linked to many, but his derision and commentary were telling. His categories were: Hate Groups, Dizzy New Age Groups, Total Schizo, Just Stupid, Strange Hobbies, Political Crackpots, Pseudo-science, Religious Nuts, and Other Lists of Crackpots. As if his headings were not informative enough, he provided commentary: "This broad really hates men... more pro Waco wackos... a wacky female channeling cult... hot headed gays," and so on.

Mr. Skeptic has linked to some strange sites, but a fair number did not seem to justify his ranting. Some were not in English. He labeled many things not mainstream thought as crackpot, even if it was from some of the most respected intellectuals alive. Here are a few examples of some of those "crackpot" sites.

Mr. Skeptic and Mumia Abu Jamal

Mr. Skeptic linked to a group of activists trying to prevent the execution of Mumia Abu Jamal. Mr. Skeptic listed that group under "Hate Groups," alongside neonazi groups. Mumia Abu-

Jamal is one of the world's most famous political prisoners. He was on death row for a crime he supposedly committed in Philadelphia, which has one of America's most corrupt police forces (in late 2001, his death sentence was thrown out by a judge, in one of the greatest victories for human rights organizations in recent years). For years, Frank Rizzo headed Philadelphia's police force, and it was legendary for its brutality and corruption.

For generations, the FBI has been a key element in destroying American social movements. The FBI's infamous COINTELPRO program during the 1960s and afterward was specifically designed to wipe out political activists. Black, Native American, student, anti-war, and civil rights activists were among those targeted by the FBI for "neutralization."[\[9\]](#) The FBI virtually wiped out the Black Panthers, murdering a number of them outright, such as Fred Hampton. The FBI personnel behind Hampton's murder were openly disappointed (when talking to their FBI buddies) that they did not murder more "niggers" in that operation.[\[10\]](#) Many others were railroaded into prison on a variety of fabricated charges. The FBI often worked closely with local police. The worst offenses were committed in Philadelphia, New York City, Los Angeles, Oakland and Chicago. Today, the Bush administration is reviving COINTELPRO-type activities in its "[War on Terror](#)," which many groups are viewing with horror. They have not forgotten COINTELPRO, even if it has been flushed down America's [Memory Hole](#).

Mumia Abu-Jamal helped establish the Philadelphia chapter of the Black Panthers. His political career goes back to age 14 when he protested at George ("Segregation Forever") Wallace's 1968 presidential rally, and was beaten and arrested for his trouble. He became an influential journalist who the intensely racist Philadelphia police hated. During his career, Abu-Jamal interviewed such people as Julius Erving, Alex Haley and Bob Marley, and his work received national recognition, ending up in the *Associated Press* and on *National Public Radio*. *Philadelphia Magazine* named Abu-Jamal as one of its "people to watch" in 1981, citing his "eloquent, often passionate, and always insightful interviews (which) bring a special dimension to radio reporting."[\[11\]](#) For the FBI and Philadelphia police, Abu-Jamal had long been one of their "people to watch." He was under surveillance for years, and had been openly threatened by Philadelphia policemen.

In Philadelphia, radical blacks formed an organization called MOVE. MOVE was a back to the earth, militant, self-help movement for the blacks. Its leader, John Africa, became an incendiary political figure, a great orator who spoke out against the system's exploitation of black people. Predictably, the group came under fire from the Philadelphia police. They regularly harassed and beat MOVE members, sometimes murdering them. Abu-Jamal produced journalistic criticism of the police regularly, earning him the hatred of the police and then Mayor Rizzo. At a press conference, Rizzo openly called for silencing that gadfly Abu Jamal. Not long after that ominous comment by Rizzo, Abu Jamal found himself on death row.

In 1978, Philadelphia police laid siege to a MOVE home with 600 police. In 1985, the Philadelphia police made history when they dropped a firebomb from a helicopter on a MOVE

neighborhood, murdering six adults (including John Africa), five children and burning down sixty homes.

Kangaroo Court has been a standard feature of the Philadelphia judicial system. In recent years a scandal has rocked Philadelphia, as more than one hundred prisoners have been released due to irregularities in the judicial process, such as paying witnesses for perjured testimony to gain a conviction.[\[12\]](#)

Abu-Jamal was moonlighting as a cab driver one night in 1981 when he saw the common scene of a Philadelphia policeman beating a black motorist. The motorist was Abu-Jamal's brother. It may have been a case of mistaken identity, as the brothers looked alike. Abu-Jamal stopped the cab and tried to stop the beating. In short order, Abu-Jamal and the policeman were lying on the ground with gunshot wounds.

Therein lies a mystery. Abu-Jamal survived and the policeman died. The official record is clear on the matter: Abu-Jamal was tried, convicted, and sentenced to death on charges of first-degree murder. The two main witnesses who convicted Abu-Jamal were both under Philadelphia police influence because of their criminal records. Compelling evidence exists that their testimonies were fabricated. Several other witnesses to the crime had testimony supporting Abu Jamal's innocence, and their testimony was suppressed. Similarly, the police fabricated a "confession" by Abu Jamal, months after Jamal supposedly made it. The bullet removed from the policeman could not be matched to Abu Jamal's pistol (he had it because he was moonlighting as a cab driver in inner city Philadelphia, an understandable situation). Abu-Jamal had been on death row since his conviction. There were many irregularities with his trial and conviction.[\[13\]](#) The judge who sentenced him to death sentenced more black men to death than any other active judge in the United States. They used to call judges like him "hanging judges." Six former prosecutors have gone on the record, stating from experience that no accused person had a chance at a fair trial in that judge's court.

When one of their own dies, police go out of their way to make somebody pay, and it was apparently too good to be true when a bleeding Abu-Jamal was found lying next to the policeman. I have seen [Kangaroo Court](#) in action myself and Abu-Jamal's case reads like a textbook example. Abu-Jamal was perhaps America's only political prisoner on death row.

One thing is clear: Abu-Jamal is a talented writer. His reputation as a journalist was deserved. Just before his scheduled execution in 1995, he published *Live from Death Row*. It is an eloquent series of essays, especially being written from death row. As in Dennis' case, writing from prison is considered a crime in the minds that often run our prison systems, particularly when the writing does not flatter the jailers or judicial system. Abu-Jamal was served with a misconduct report for writing the book. In 1997, Abu Jamal published another book, *Death Blossoms, Reflections from a Prisoner of Conscience*.

In 2000, *All Things Censored* was published, which had a compact disc that played the radio commentaries that Abu Jamal gave from a death row telephone. *National Public Radio* scuttled its plans to air those commentaries, under pressure from various political groups, in one of the more egregious instances of American censorship during my lifetime. Those radio commentaries, given from death row, must rank with the best journalistic performances in history, and they are actively censored in the United States.

During the summer of 2001, the courts denied the testimony of Arnold Beverly, who admitted that he shot the policeman Abu Jamal was convicted of killing. Beverly's testimony is quietly and competently delivered, yet sensational in its implications. According to Beverly, he was a professional hit man who killed that cop as part of a police-assisted hit. According to Beverly, that cop was too corrupt even for Philadelphia, and other cops had him killed, as he was infringing too greatly on the Philadelphia police's protection racket. Abu Jamal was just in the "right place at the right time" to end up on death row. Beverly's open confession was refused as evidence regarding Abu Jamal's innocence, but may have had something to do with a judge throwing out Abu Jamal's death sentence not long after Beverly delivered his testimony.

The groups trying to save Abu-Jamal's life were the standard left wing groups that have been speaking out against racism, murder and other outrages in our society and around the world. People such as Nelson Mandela, Salman Rushdie, Elie Wiesel, Archbishop Desmond Tutu, Jesse Jackson, Wole Soyinka, ex-attorney general Ramsey Clark, Vaclav Havel, actor Michael Farrell (Alan Alda's sidekick on the TV show M.A.S.H.), Ed Asner, Alice Walker (author of *The Color Purple*), author E.L. Doctorow and many others spoke out. "Hate Groups" such as Amnesty International, the ACLU, Human Rights Watch, the European Parliament, and members of the governments of Japan, Denmark, Belgium and others also tried preventing his execution. I was involved with trying to prevent his execution. In all, global organizations whose members number in the millions protested his impending execution. It is almost incomprehensible that Mr. Skeptic listed a group trying to prevent an execution as a "Hate Group."

One agonizing issue regarding executing a journalist is that America is about the world's only "free" nation with a death penalty, and one of six nations that executed juveniles in the 1990's, and today is the only nation that will officially execute children. We are the world's leader in executing people for crimes they committed as children.[\[14\]](#) The issue of Abu Jamal is illustrative of our nation's barbarity.

Mr. Skeptic and McDonald's

Mr. Skeptic classified a group of people protesting McDonald's' corporate practices as a "Hate Group," describing their site as having a "neo-PC hatred of McDonald's restaurants." The

McDonald's case is another instance where the powerful have tried silencing a voice of dissent. In one sense, calling McDonald's protestors a "Hate Group" is aligned with the skeptical philosophy, where huge corporations and other powerful groups can do no wrong, and anybody who challenges them has a screw loose or are "Hate Groups." The McDonald's situation epitomizes the havoc that corporate practices wreak on the population and environment.

McDonald's helped pioneer the notion of "fast food," and has been the leader in industrializing the eating experience. The McDonald's protest situation covers vast territory. McDonald's is the world's largest user of beef, and second place in chickens. Raising animals to slaughter and eat is a tremendous waste of resources. The West's meat-eating culture is creating large-scale environmental devastation. The numbers are overwhelming. To produce a single pound of meat requires 2500 gallons of water.[\[15\]](#) It takes 100 times more water to produce a pound of meat as a pound of wheat. Animal flesh is a terribly inefficient method of producing dietary protein. In the watery Northwest, more than half of its vast water supply is used to raise livestock for meat.[\[16\]](#) The meat and dairy industry in California consumes half that state's water supply.

The global political-economic order, led by the United States and huge transnational corporations such as McDonald's, rules the world. Anybody who steps out of line or tries opting out of the global capitalist system will invariably be [visited by U.S. troops or a U.S.-financed destabilization effort](#).

The McDonald's phenomenon is a classic example of how rampant capitalism is destroying the planet. In bringing assembly line strategies to the eating experience, everything has been reduced to the lowest common denominator. The McDonald's strategy has been to sell vast amounts of cheap food with a low profit margin per unit, and the profits attained by the huge volume of food sold. It is a standard corporate strategy, and what has it cost the planet?

On the meat front, McDonald's has been a leading influence in revolutionizing how animals are raised. In order to sell the greatest amount of meat at the lowest possible price, the practice of factory farming came into being. I used to say that if a person visited a slaughterhouse and saw what was done to animals to produce their tasty burgers, bacon, and hot dogs, most people would become [vegetarian](#) on the spot. Today with factory farming, people only need to visit where the animals *are being raised* to become vegetarians.

Visiting today's chicken and pig factories is a hellish experience. In the drive for maximum profit and minimum costs, fast fading are the days of pigs wandering around a farm, or a barnyard full of chickens. Today's pig and chicken factories are the ultimate triumph of farming's industrialization. Those pigs and chickens live their entire lives without seeing the light of day. They are kept in cages stacked to the ceiling, and fed drugs, antibiotics, hormones, cheap feed, and stimulated to produce the largest weight gain in the shortest

amount of time for the least amount of resources used.

Across America's heartland, pig and chicken factories are replacing farms. Seventy percent of America's pigs are raised in pig factories today, and half of America's small family farms that raised pigs have gone out of business during the past decade. The traditional American farmer is not doing the work anymore. America's underclass, such as Mexican immigrants, work in the farm factories owned by huge [agribusiness corporations](#). It is among the lowest-paid work in America, down there with picking beans. Chicken factory workers have injury and illness rates far higher than coal mining and construction. Meatpacking is America's most dangerous job, with a serious injury rate five times the national average.^[17] In the pig factories, the workers are supposed to wear gas masks because the excrement fumes are overpowering. Even so, according to the American Lung Association, 70% of those pig factory workers develop respiratory disease symptoms, and 58% have chronic bronchitis. Workers have died numerous times by being exposed to excrement fumes. The pigs do not get gas masks.

Pigs are among earth's most social animals and are probably smarter than dogs. As pigs are crammed into cages, the stress of their inhumane environment leads them to kill each other and engage in cannibalism. In factory farming, pigs, chickens, sheep and cows become "[production units](#)" with zero quality to their lives. They are merely machines to turn feed, drugs and antibiotics into profitable flesh. Another problem introduced by pig factory farming is the issue of pig excrement. Across America today, there are lakes, almost oceans, of pig excrement from the factories. Nobody is quite sure what to do with it. It is a problem similar to the nuclear waste lakes at nuclear facilities across America, although fortunately, pig excrement is not radioactive...yet.

A protégé of mine previously worked at a chicken company where they raised egg-laying hens. They raised them from egg to sale. One day he told me about the business. At their facility, they had huge incubators where the eggs hatched. As the chicks hatched, they were immediately swept onto a conveyor belt, beginning their corporate careers. The first people the chicks met were known as "sexers," who turned them over to see what sex they were. If the chick was female, it could look forward to a life expectancy of less than two years. Outside of the factory setting, chickens can live to be twenty years old, and average nearly ten. If the chick was male, the sexer dropped it into a chute that led to a grinder where the chick was instantly shredded and carted off as hazardous waste.

The female chicks were immediately put into pens and fed. That company only raised chicks to egg-laying age. They produced an egg-laying hen for about 50 cents apiece. Without antibiotics and drugs, factory farming would be impossible. The confined quarters breed disease, so all factory animals have antibiotics as part of their feed. About half of America's antibiotic production goes directly into animal feed.

In a few months, the chicks have been fed and stimulated to maturity and are ready to begin their egg-laying careers. The modern egg factories typically have cages stacked to the ceiling. Inside those huge buildings the lighting is manipulated (simulating night and day) to gain maximum egg production. The chickens are crowded several to a cage that is about the size of an oven. The chickens can barely move. Identical to the pig situation, the crowded chickens engage in anti-social behavior, attacking, killing and eating each other. The solution implemented by the geniuses that designed such systems is to de-beak the chickens. De-beaking is done by cutting off the top-half of their beaks, a process performed with no anesthesia, obviously, and a procedure that kills many chickens from sheer shock.

The chickens lay about an egg a day under the factory conditions, far more than normal egg-laying hens used to lay. After about eighteen months of life, the hen's back end blows out due to the stress of excessive egg laying. About twenty percent of the chickens die under those conditions, and do not make it to eighteen months. Those dead chickens are called "spent fowl" in the industry parlance. The "spent fowl" is sold to soup and pet food companies. My protégé told me that the production managers lamented the fact that the hens only produced for about a year before their "ass blew out." Another ingenious solution is being developed for that problem: genetically engineering chickens that will not explode for perhaps two years of production. Here is a quote by one of those hard-working biological engineers, stating with pride and not a trace of irony, "At the Animal Research Institute, we are trying to breed animals without legs, and chickens without feathers."[\[18\]](#) He might [reach his goal one day](#).

Chickens without feathers are easy to pluck, and animals without legs will not "waste" energy moving around, and instead put that food energy to better use, such as getting fattened up. A similar situation exists in dairy farming. Dairy cows used to live to be about twenty years old. With the new factory methods, a dairy cow will live to be four if she is lucky. Dairy cows are artificially inseminated and artificially stimulated to keep producing that milk. That is why they do not live long. Another byproduct of the dairy industry is the male offspring. Similar to the chicken industry, if the young animal is female, life is "good." If the offspring is male, a common fate is becoming a veal calf. Veal calves are produced by methods not far removed from what the Nazi doctors dreamed up.

A veal calf is a similar byproduct to those superfluous male chicks, although their careers last longer and there is an economic value to them. Veal is treasured for its tender, pale flesh. How do they produce such tender, pale flesh? A veal calf is put into a cage and chained so he cannot lie down, but must stand. He will spend his entire life there. In that manner, he is purposely kept from exercising, keeping his muscles soft, which is how the softness is produced. The pale flesh is created by purposely malnourishing the calf. Veal comes from calves fed a diet designed to make them anemic, hence the flesh's pale color. Such conditions are ripe for disease, so the calf's diet is liberally laced with antibiotics and drugs. Even then, veal calves suffer from diarrhea and other maladies. After about six months of that existence, never seeing the light of day, the calf is slaughtered. Veal is a menu delicacy, which, like pork, is another one of America's "white meats." Hundreds of thousands of calves meet that fate

each year in America.

As always, the goal is [maximizing profits](#) by keeping costs low. The trends are obvious, the goals understandable. In the constant quest for more production, a few years ago Bovine Growth Hormone (BGH) was introduced to produce even more milk from those beleaguered cows. [Steve Milloy](#) and [Elizabeth Whelan](#) think BGH is another wonderful agricultural innovation. That system truly is faithful to the [materialistic viewpoint](#) that has prevailed in the West for centuries. Factory farming is a logical conclusion of that mentality. In a world where the prevailing view denies humans the benefit of souls, animals are far, far down that contrived scale of creation.

Another byproduct of that worldview is the practice of animal experimentation. Tens of millions of animals are killed in American laboratories each year for "testing." The apologists for that practice are well paid and many, telling us how "vital" animal experiments are for our standard of living and health. The apologist's standard argument is that if we ever stopped the practice, it would seriously impact our health. Animal experimentation is called "necessary" for everything from winning the war on cancer to testing shampoo. Many people do not agree. There are many groups trying to abolish those inhumane activities. They propose alternatives to every animal experiment there is.

The only rationale for our treatment of animals is "might makes right." We murder tens of millions of animals in "experiments" each year because we can. Few seem to ask themselves if such a practice is ethical, but from both Christianity and science come ready rationales. God [put us in charge](#) of the animals, to do with as we please, so goes the popular interpretation of the Book of Genesis. Science has declared that we are the crowning achievement of evolution. Although we possess no souls, according to the materialistic scientism of Carl Sagan and friends, less evolved beings such as animals are there for our use. Similar logic has justified slavery, genocide and a host of horrors. If humanity survives the coming transition, a [new level of awareness](#) will take root, and we will desire to harm no living thing. For all the grotesque justification for animal experimentation, not all doctors and scientists are of the same mindset. Here is a quote from a founder of the Mayo Clinic.

"I abhor vivisection. It should at least be curbed. Better, it should be abolished. I know of no achievement through vivisection, no scientific discovery that could not have been obtained without such barbarism and cruelty. The whole thing is evil."[\[19\]](#)

The world's most evil people do not staff McDonald's. They are just pioneers and one of the

most successful practitioners in an evil system. The protestors took on McDonald's to protest the system, McDonald's being a logical target.

With all the bad publicity they have received in recent years, McDonald's investigated the possibility of using free-range eggs, but abandoned that idea upon learning that "free range" eggs are 50% more expensive than factory eggs.[\[20\]](#) On the issue of cows and beef, McDonald's has long been known to buy the cheapest beef it can. In California, the beef industry is large and I had friends in the business. One buddy told me a story regarding a cow auction he attended, where the corporate buyers assembled to buy their supply. The McDonald's buyers were infamous for buying the cheapest cows they could. As a McDonald's crew began loading their bedraggled purchases into the cattle cars, one cow collapsed. The law states that a dead animal cannot be used for human consumption. It must be properly slaughtered. The industry is prepared for collapsed cows. The McDonald's crew had a winch on their truck that they attached to the collapsed cow, and hauled it aboard. If they could get the cow into the slaughterhouse while still alive, it would be legal meat. My buddy told it as a funny story.

In the dairy industry, the cows' bodies become depleted from the stresses of their lives, which is why they do not live long. Similar to "spent fowl," when a cow collapses, the industry term is "downed cow." Those "downed cows" are sold to companies that make their flesh into something fed to the American public.

That multifaceted evil ultimately takes a human toll. Human consumers of factory-farmed animals eat flesh loaded with antibiotics, drugs, hormones, and other chemicals, as well as the hormones that misery and fear produce. About 20-30% of all supermarket chickens are infected with live salmonella bacteria (although recent efforts by the [USDA](#) are lowering that number; the meat is not from healthier birds, it is just free of salmonella). Hundreds of Americans have died due to bacteria-infected hamburgers. Mad Cow Disease has made its appearance, caused by feeding cows their ground up relatives, in another ploy to increase those profits. Other nightmares are sure to follow. The solution to those mounting problems are other technological "fixes," such as subjecting it to radiation as a way to kill the diseases increasingly appearing in the food.

In the 20th century, menarche steadily decreased in the industrialized nations. A meaningful comparison is Hong Kong versus Mainland China. Hong Kong has an industrialized diet, and 25 of McDonald's 50 biggest outlets are in Hong Kong. In Hong Kong, menarche dropped to 12, whereas on the mainland it is still 17. A prime suspected culprit is the growth hormones the meat was raised with. Since McDonald's first arrived in Hong Kong, the average teenager has gained 13% in weight.[\[21\]](#) Americans are [history's fattest people](#).

Nutritionally, McDonald's food is indefensible, as is virtually all fast food. It is high in saturated fat, sugar, salt and dozens of additives, and low in fiber, vitamins and minerals. An internal

McDonald's memo surfaced that frankly admitted, "We can't really address or defend nutrition. We don't sell nutrition and people don't come to McDonald's for nutrition."[\[22\]](#)

What do people go to McDonald's for? They go for a cheap, fast, tasty meal. Children go there to play on the McDonald's playground, get toys from the latest Disney movie (McDonald's is the [Disneyland](#) of food), and see Ronald McDonald's smiling face.

McDonald's workers are among the lowest paid workers in their industry, and the retail food industry is one of the lower paying industries to start with. As with virtually all corporations, McDonald's is staunchly anti-union, firing pro-union workers. The employee turnover is immense, at more than 100% annually (I have seen as high as 300% in America). McDonald's also helped pioneer another profitable labor practice: hiring part-time workers. Part-time workers receive minimal employee benefits. Companies such as Wal Mart and United Parcel Service have emulated such practices. In standard [neocolonial](#) fashion, those cute toys given away with Happy Meals are usually made in sweatshop conditions in Asia.

The trash created by fast food is staggering. Fast food establishments create a prodigious amount of trash. Every American city has fast food trash blowing in the wind.

The fast food revolution is also [chopping down the rainforests](#). It is bigger than just McDonald's, but McDonald's is part of a neocolonial system whereby rainforests are being chopped down to produce cattle ranches so Westerners can have cheap beef. Although McDonald's now avows that their beef will not come from ex-rainforest land, they have led the juggernaut that has produced the trend of chopping down the rainforests to pasture cattle, getting the world hooked on beef. Brazil is a notorious example. Cattle ranching in devastated rain forest areas is about as ecologically unsound a practice as there is. Tropical rain forest soils are thin, and cattle ranching on those soils is disastrous, quickly turning the rain forest into lifeless moonscapes.

McDonald's is no more rapacious than any other corporation, at least consciously. They are [going for the profit](#), as all corporations do, and if they must use sweatshop labor and factory-farmed animals, turn cropland into far less productive pasturage and sell their product with a clown's smiling face, so be it. All fast food companies play the same game. McDonald's was just the pioneer and most successful practitioner. McDonald's is the logical conclusion of industrialization, capitalism and materialism brought to the eating experience. One way that McDonald's kept criticism of their practices from being very public was suing anybody who spoke up, which is another standard corporate practice.

In England, a handful of people protested McDonald's practices. In 1985, six people handed out flyers titled "What's wrong with McDonald's?" In 1990, McDonald's threatened lawsuits against the protestors. Four backed off, and only two had the courage to continue: a barkeeper and an ex-mail carrier. They were affiliated with Greenpeace.

McDonald's sued for libel, asking \$30 billion in damages. It blew up in their faces. What would have become one more marginalized tale became a global story when McDonald's sued those two people. A \$30 billion corporate giant tried silencing two people for telling the truth. It became the longest trial in Britain's history. Libel laws in England are different from United States libel laws. McDonald's pressured the court as much as possible. Money and power talk very loudly in the courtroom, although from behind the scenes. The judge's mouth moves, but the corporate voice is heard. The trial was rigged in a number of ways, and McDonald's was awarded 60,000 pounds. The way the libel laws in England were executed, the judge found in favor of McDonald's although no libel was proven. McDonald's was not put in the position of proving libel, as Americans know it. The defendants were put in the position of "proving" that their charges against McDonald's were not overstated for rhetorical purposes. McDonald's' lawsuit could not have been brought in America.[\[23\]](#) McDonald's bit off far more than it had bargained for. The bad publicity McDonald's received far outweighed their legal victory, although the McDonald's juggernaut rolls onward with undamaged revenues and profits. In Mr. Skeptic's mind, those English activists were a "Hate Group."

There is a silver lining in the McDonald's' story, so far. Since that libel suit and other events, such as protests, McDonald's has begun setting standards for animal treatment from its suppliers of eggs, chickens, pork, milk and beef (beginning in 1999). It is a step in the right direction, and a step in the right direction is better than a step in the wrong one, and we significantly have those "hate groups" who took on McDonald's to thank for it.

Other "Crackpots"

Mr. Skeptic had a link to Steven Milloy's "Junk Science" pages, calling it "A great compendium of Junk Science." Mr. Skeptic was an admirer of Milloy, who was also flaying those "crackpots" and their "junk science." The sarcasm and ridicule that pours forth from Milloy's web site can be breathtaking.

The notorious Cato Institute, [Julian Simon's](#) old haunt, helps fund Milloy. Milloy stepped into Simon's shoes as Cato's leading environmental adjunct scholar. As with all good propaganda, there are nuggets of truth amongst the disinformation. Milloy allows that America's health habits are responsible for a great deal of suffering, in an admission of the obvious. He is similar to [Julian Simon](#) and [Elizabeth Whelan](#), where he has apparently never met an agribusiness or petrochemical company he did not like. He lets others make many of his editorial comments. He will not always get in the line of fire himself, but will reproduce nearly any pro-chemical piece he can find. What he and Whelan have done repeatedly is look to the *Washington Times* as their paper of record. The same person who runs the Moonies owns the *Washington Times*. It is about as far right a publication as this nation has.

Milloy reproduced a *Washington Times* article that extolled the virtues of Olestra (the miraculous, indigestible "fake" fat that has given many consumers diarrhea attacks, and God only knows the long-term effects), an article where the author is openly disappointed that Olestra is not a universal food additive quite yet.[\[24\]](#) Milloy reproduced an article from an Australian organization that believes a major part of air pollution may be caused by grass.[\[25\]](#) His organization, The Advancement of Sound Science Coalition (TASSC), promoted Bovine Somatotropin (BST), more popularly known as Bovine Growth Hormone (BGH).[\[26\]](#) Milloy reproduced a *New York Times* editorial saying that 100,000 people dying each year from adverse drug reactions is "no epidemic," as it represents 0.5% of all hospital drug treatments.[\[27\]](#) That is many times the number of people who die from illegal drugs each year. Milloy reproduced a University of Washington study that suggested that being old and fat was healthier than being old and thin.[\[28\]](#) Here is a clever Milloy quote, epitomizing the tenor of his work: "Schering Plough says its competitor's product (Ex-Lax) causes cancer. I say Schering Plough deserves a junk science enema!"[\[29\]](#)

Milloy stated, "One in three Americans develops cancer as a function of being alive."[\[30\]](#) That is another example of the false logic of assuming the average is normal. Milloy adheres closely to the "you get old, you get cancer, you die" medical establishment party line.

I also saw a new twist on the dirty money angle. While Whelan has largely made it a secret where her money comes from, Milloy was somewhat open about it. In answering the "Who pays for the Junk Science Home Page?" question, Milloy's web page replied: "The Advancement of Sound Science Coalition. But who pays isn't important; the substance is. Steve figures he has the junk science debate won when an opponent raises a collateral issue like funding."[\[31\]](#) In November 2001, the *American Journal of Public Health* published a lengthy investigation regarding how the [Phillip Morris tobacco company](#) launched an aggressive public relations campaign to forestall second-hand smoke lawsuits, in the wake of a 1992 EPA report that identified second-hand smoke as a Group A human carcinogen.[\[32\]](#) In conjunction with APCO Associates, its public relations firm, Phillip Morris launched an effort to promote "sound science" in February 1993. Three months later, TASSC was born, and one of its stands was debunking the notion of the harmfulness of second-hand smoke. The *American Journal of Public Health* Internet article links to internal documents, unearthed in litigation, between Phillip Morris and APCO that show that TASSC was their joint creation. TASSC had the gall to publicly call itself a "grassroots" organization. A genuine grass roots activist's term for TASSC is an "Astroturf" organization. Corporate America has funded many fake "grass roots" organizations that advocate corporate positions from a "neutral" perspective.[\[33\]](#)

Sheldon Rampton and John Stauber have published articles at [PR Watch](#) regarding Milloy and his connections with the tobacco companies.[\[34\]](#) Early in his career, Milloy was a lobbyist with Multinational Business Services, Phillip Morris' "primary contact" in the lobbying world

regarding the second-hand smoke issue. When Phillip Morris went on the “sound science” offensive against the EPA and other environmental and health organizations, Milloy was picked to head TASSC. TASSC was merely one of a number of efforts by Phillip Morris to defend its deadly product from governmental censure. The goal was rigging the science to make it nearly impossible to declare that second-hand smoke was hazardous to health. Phillip Morris had other clandestine campaigns to fight cigarette taxes and make the ban on smoking in public places a freedom issue. Phillip Morris created the “National Smokers Alliance,” another fake “grass roots” organization that tried lifting smoking restrictions in the name of freedom. They tried linking the smoking issue to regulations on food additives and auto exhaust, showing how governmental regulations were unnecessary meddling with corporate freedom. The Phillip Morris campaign is an instructive example of how the dark side of the force operates, and Milloy is one of its front men.

In order to attack EPA findings and other scientific results, Phillip Morris concocted the “sound science/junk science” duality, “sound science” being the (Phillip Morris-sponsored) research that found cigarettes benign, and “junk science” being anything that contradicted it. Unsurprisingly, Milloy then championed the term “junk science.” Milloy has led other efforts, teaming up with [Elizabeth Whelan](#) and other corporate “scientists” in 2000 to lead a campaign named “No More Scares.” According to their corporate logic, scientific findings regarding health damage caused by corporate chemicals and waste are needless “scares.” It dovetails with Whelan’s *Toxic Terror* work. Whelan and Milloy make strange bedfellows, as the only corporate product Whelan has ever assailed, to my knowledge, is tobacco.

Although TASSC is officially defunct, Milloy’s site ([junkscience.com](#)) is still up as I write this in November 2001. It is now on the public record that Milloy ran a tobacco company front organization, posing as a scientist promoting public health. I wonder if any criminal laws might apply to his efforts. Unfortunately, the so-called “consumer protection” investigators I have seen have a rabid desire to put Dennis away, but will not touch people such as Milloy with a ten-foot-pole, not wanting to tangle with his patrons.

TASSC is a spiritual cousin of Whelan’s American Council on Science and Health. As with [Julian Simon](#), TASSC and Milloy have trolled the scientific and press release waters for whatever supports their pro-corporate position. Mr. Skeptic was a Junk Science fan, and thought Milloy’s pages were a great list of “crackpots.” Mr. Skeptic reads my work, keeping the link to this essay active on his site, and since this essay was first published, he quietly took down his “crackpot” links to the Mumia Abu Jamal activists, the McDonald’s protestors and Milloy.

Mr. Skeptic’s listed Dennis under “Just Stupid” and “Pseudo-science.” This essay will finish dealing with Mr. Skeptic with one last link. He listed *Covert Action Quarterly* under “Total Schizo,” describing it as a “great zine for conspiracy buffs.” That made me think he may work for somebody else, such as the CIA. He has the debunker vocabulary down pat, using more

than one pejorative in the same sentence. "Zine" is a hip word that describes a fun, counter-cultural publication, often published from somebody's bedroom, usually a fan magazine about underground music groups. It is not substantial enough to be called a magazine, so the diminutive "zine" came into being. If Mr. Skeptic read and comprehended an issue of *Covert Action*, he would know that "zine" is about as far from describing that *magazine* as one can get. I subscribed to *Covert Action* for several years.

It is probably the most respected publication regarding exposure of our spy agencies. One of *Covert Action*'s founders was Phil Agee, the legendary CIA agent who first exposed what the CIA really did, from an insider's perspective. *Inside the Company, CIA Diary* was published in 1975 and dealt the CIA a blow from which it is still recovering. The United States hounded Agee across the globe after his book was published. His book *On the Run* documents how he was expelled from one European nation after another, until he gained political asylum in West Germany. *On the Run* documents how the CIA tried stopping him from writing his book, to the extent that they tried luring him to Spain to "neutralize" him, whether from a Kangaroo Court scenario or outright murder is still classified. [Noam Chomsky](#) and [Ralph McGehee](#) have contributed articles to *Covert Action*.

If people could only pick one publication to find out how America is really run, *Covert Action* might be it. "Zine" does not describe that magazine. The pejorative "conspiracy buff" shows either Mr. Skeptic's political infancy or that he knows what he is doing. "Conspiracy buff" is a standard establishment label for anybody who challenges authority. "Buff" is a denigrating term that often portrays serious investigators as hyperactive stamp collectors. "Conspiracy" does not apply to what *Covert Action* investigates, unless everything our military, [CIA](#), NSA, FBI and corporations do is a "[conspiracy](#)."

There is a political spectrum in America, generally seen as extending from "left" to "right," but those terms can be misleading. There is great overlap in the "left" and "right," which are supposedly on opposite ends of the spectrum. Noam Chomsky would rather we stopped using those terms, although he has used it in correspondence with me, calling himself part of the "left press." "Left" and "right" have become clichés in many instances, but I will use it broadly here, realizing that they can be limiting terms.

America's mainstream politics are actually right wing, dominated by the rich.[\[35\]](#) To the right of the mainstream are folks such as the militias, the Patriots, the Ku Klux Klan, *The Spotlight*, fundamentalist Christians, the John Birch Society, Holocaust deniers, etc. There are many conspiracy theorists in their ranks, and sometimes the word "buff" might apply. There definitely are some strange theories there in the far right, but I have seen too many strange things to laugh at them all. Significant aspects of their theories ring true, and I have had real world experiences that attest to some of them.

The majority stands left of the mainstream. Or at least they *think* to the left, but most still

shuffle along with the [herd management](#) the elite perform, keeping everybody riveted to the tube, [reading the daily newspaper](#) and going to work every day. The “mainstream” does not really respond to the needs or wishes of most people. To the left of the “mainstream” are feminists, environmentalists, civil rights activists, peace activists, homeless advocates, gay activists, communists, socialists, child advocates, animal rights activists, advocates for the elderly and probably most of Christianity.

The right and left both point out the establishment’s abuse of power, but the way they see it happening differs. It is a conflict similar to two views of history known as the “Great Man” and “Mass Movement” views. The “Great Man” view has a few extraordinary people changing history’s course, making their way into the history books. The “Mass Movement” view sees history as the cumulative story of humanity, and the historical figures, although great as some of them may have been, were like a ship’s prow. It is what we see first, but there is plenty behind it. It is like the space program. Neil Armstrong was the [first man to step on the moon](#), but the effort of a vast number of people got him there.

The right often subscribes to the “Great Man” dynamic, and consequently sees many dark societal aspects resulting from the actions of relatively few people, usually conspiring together. The right often poses “conspiracy theories.” I do not agree with many of them, but also believe many could be true, to a degree, and I have not encountered many that seem to beam in from Neptune. With our steeply hierarchical social systems, where a few hundred people have as much wealth as a few billion, mutual self-interest is something obvious to those at the top. Many conspiracies have played out over the millennia. Julius Caesar was one of six Caesars in a row deposed by Senate conspiracies. During the past generation, the owners of America’s professional baseball teams were repeatedly convicted of conspiring to keep players’ wages (relatively) low.

The left sees history more as mass action. One prominent area of left scholarship is known as “structural analysis,” or “institutional analysis.” Those studies look at how society is organized, particularly regarding its major institutions, and analyze how those shape society’s function. In general, they do not explain the major events of history with conspiracies. They see the sweep of history as the result of how millions and billions of people live their lives, and they also admit the important role elites play. Chomsky and *Covert Action* may go too far in dissociating themselves from “conspiracy theories.” Chomsky wrote a book to debunk the notion that [JFK was assassinated](#) because he was too much of a “dove” on Vietnam.^[36] It created a stir in left circles. A noted left scholar, [Michael Parenti](#), had a vigorous dispute with Chomsky’s views on the JFK matter, and stated that there is a “[conspiracy phobia](#)” on the left.^[37] I took *Covert Action* to task in 1995 for its rather breezy reviews of *Kooks* and the *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*.^[38] Much of the theorizing in those books was not nearly as way out as the *Covert Action* reviewer made it seem.

In general, those two often-competing viewpoints can also be called “conscious” and

“unconscious.” With conspiracies, events turn out just as a select few want them to. In structural analysis, the system produces the outcome without conscious design. The situation should not be oversimplified, but that is the general trend that I have noticed, and believe it also has to do with one’s spiritual beliefs. Religious people generally believe that a creator consciously designed the universe. They do not believe they are here by accident. The prevailing cosmology as promoted by Carl Sagan and others is that “In the beginning, there was the Big Bang,” and through fortuitous accidents of chemistry and physics, life evolved. Nobody designed it that way, it happened by accident. Karl Marx’s dialectical materialism has been influential.

In general, the structuralists have the Big Bang and the Theory of Evolution as their Book of Genesis. The “conspiracy theorists” believe that nothing happened by accident. It is fascinating to study those divergent points of view. There is merit in both viewpoints, and limitations in each. Obviously, *Covert Action* is not the “zine for conspiracy buffs.” For Mr. Skeptic to make that statement either displays his political naïveté or shows that he is a disinformation expert, working for somebody in clandestine fashion. I have generally believed the “clueless theory” more than the “conspiracy theory” regarding Mr. Skeptic, but I could be wrong.

That is all the writing I plan to do regarding Mr. Skeptic. I do not plan on analyzing or dealing with his work anymore. Readers might ask why I have devoted so much effort to him. Unfortunately, as with [Elizabeth Whelan](#), [Steve Milloy](#), [Julian Simon](#) and others, the media has presented Mr. Skeptic as a man with credible things to say. The media has repeatedly portrayed Mr. Skeptic as the primary critic of Dennis and his efforts, making him seem a valid critic. As Dennis has been making national noise on and off over the years, there have been numerous media accounts regarding Dennis, including a nationally televised documentary where Mr. Skeptic is Dennis’ prominent critic. This essay was partly intended to show what kind of critic Mr. Skeptic really is, and Dennis' critics in general.

Dennis Lee’s Past - A Quiz

I have never seen the mainstream media fairly present the facts of Dennis Lee’s life and efforts. [Mr. Skeptic](#) and others have followed their lead. Mr. Skeptic long ago revealed himself to me as a [disinformation specialist](#). Such people always misrepresent Dennis’s past, particularly the years I was with him. In June 2003 I had an unexpected encounter with Mr. Skeptic on the Internet. He is more strident than ever, repeating his disinformation as if it was a collection of diligently-researched and carefully-presented facts. Mr. Skeptic’s efforts have influenced others who have publicly written about Dennis. I was spurred to create this quiz. People writing about Dennis’ “criminal” past can test their knowledge before publicly embarrassing themselves while libeling Dennis.

1. What was the seminal, radicalizing event in Dennis' life, the one that propelled him into the past thirty years of his adventures? [Answer.](#)
2. What subject did Dennis study in college? [Answer.](#)
3. What event did Dennis attend, which convinced him that his subject of study was being used to manipulate the public? [Answer.](#)
4. What was the first business Dennis started after his college days? [Answer.](#)
5. What event destroyed that business? [Answer.](#)
6. What is the only "crime" that Dennis has ever admitted to "committing"? [Answer.](#)
7. What were the events that initiated that "crime"? [Answer.](#)
8. What did Dennis do after his first company was destroyed? [Answer.](#)
9. What happened to his second venture? [Answer.](#)
10. What was the final event that shut down his second company? [Answer.](#)
11. How much money did Dennis walk away from that failed venture with? [Answer.](#)
12. How many times has organized crime tried to murder Dennis? [Answer.](#)
13. What was the next business that Dennis became involved with? [Answer.](#)
14. What technology did he specifically pursue in that next venture? [Answer.](#)
15. How did Dennis help change the way that technology was being implemented? [Answer.](#)
16. What happened to his efforts with that technology? [Answer.](#)
17. What disease befell Dennis while he pursued that technology? [Answer.](#)
18. How many times was he nearly killed by the negligence of the hospital that treated him? [Answer.](#)
19. As he recovered from his disease, what technology did he become involved with? [Answer.](#)
20. How successful were his early efforts with that technology? [Answer.](#)
21. What marketing plan did Dennis unveil during his early days with that technology? [Answer.](#)
22. Under that marketing plan, how much money did the customer risk on the technology's performance? [Answer.](#)
23. Did Dennis try interesting the industrial and finance world in that technology? [Answer.](#)
24. What happened to his first company that was involved with that technology? [Answer.](#)
25. Dennis is a native of Washington State. Why did he not begin marketing that new technology to his home state? [Answer.](#)
26. What events brought Dennis and his technology to Washington? [Answer.](#)
27. After a year in Washington, what brought Dennis to the Seattle area in late 1984? [Answer.](#)
28. When Dennis arrived in Seattle, how much money did he have? [Answer.](#)
29. By the spring of 1985, how many systems had Dennis sold for \$10,000 apiece? [Answer.](#)
30. How many of those customers were offered Dennis' unique financing plan? [Answer.](#)
31. How much money did the customers opting for Dennis' financing plan risk on system

performance? [Answer](#).

32. After more than a year of trying to interest the local electric companies in his technology, what was the first public response by an electric company? [Answer](#).
33. When the Washington Attorney General began "investigating" Dennis' company, how many customers of Dennis's had complained? [Answer](#).
34. What was Dennis' response to the allegations by the electric companies to his "scam" company and equipment? [Answer](#).
35. Who responded to Dennis' response to the electric company allegations? [Answer](#).
36. By the autumn of 1985, what was Dennis' paper net worth, based on his stock in his company? [Answer](#).
37. Dennis was heavily involved in further development of the LamCo technology. What was his most significant innovation regarding the LamCo technology? [Answer](#).
38. When did the Washington Attorney General publicly attack Dennis' company? [Answer](#).
39. When the Washington Attorney General attacked Dennis' company through the media, what was their legal basis for the attack? [Answer](#).
40. When the Washington Attorney General made their highly public move, what did a provocateur from the Bonneville Power Administration do? [Answer](#).
41. What activities was the Bonneville Power Administration provocateur subsequently involved in regarding Dennis' company, both in undeniable fact and in all likelihood? [Answer](#).
42. When the Attorney General struck, how much time did Dennis' company have to install their heat pumps before Carter's Tax Credit expired? [Answer](#).
43. What was Dennis' original response to the Attorney General's attack? [Answer](#).
44. In the wake of Dennis' response to the attack, what was the response of the Assistant Attorney General who was leading the prosecution of Dennis' company? [Answer](#).
45. How many legitimate charges were in the Attorney General's high profile lawsuit against Dennis' company? [Answer](#).
46. Upon what legal issue did the Assistant Attorney General base her entire case against Dennis' company? [Answer](#).
47. Who voted that Dennis settle the Attorney General's case? [Answer](#).
48. In settling the Attorney General's case, how many crimes or intentional deceptions did Dennis admit to making? [Answer](#).
49. What percent of those contracted systems were installed by the time Carter's Tax Credit expired? [Answer](#).
50. How much money did Dennis' Systems for Savings customers end up risking by buying Dennis' heat pumps? [Answer](#).
51. What was the act by the Bonneville Power Administration provocateur that radicalized Dennis' alternative energy efforts? [Answer](#).
52. What unexpected act did the Assistant Attorney General perform during her attacks on Dennis' company, and what did she later admit to Dennis was her motivation for her

action? [Answer](#).

53. Who was the biggest financial loser in the Seattle affair? [Answer](#).
54. What was the reaction of that loser to what happened in Seattle? [Answer](#).
55. What event put an end to Dennis' efforts in Washington? [Answer](#).
56. When Dennis left Washington State in June 1986, what was his net worth, and how much money did he take with him? [Answer](#).
57. When did Dennis begin thinking about producing free energy? [Answer](#).
58. Who became Dennis' next financier? [Answer](#).
59. What was Dennis' most audacious act in Boston? [Answer](#).
60. What was the reaction to that act? [Answer](#).
61. Although the Bonneville Power Administration (BPA) publicly said they knew almost nothing about Dennis' company, what did a representative from the BPA's conservation department admit to a New England banker who was investigating our company? [Answer](#).
62. When we were in Boston, we were approached by a group of businessmen who offered to buy the exclusive rights to our technology. How much did they offer? [Answer](#).
63. Why did Dennis move to California in June 1987? [Answer](#).
64. What program did Dennis develop that began rapidly growing our California effort? [Answer](#).
65. What was the reaction of the local electric company to our initial efforts in California? [Answer](#).
66. What event got Dennis talking big about free electricity in California? [Answer](#).
67. What event further spurred Dennis' free energy talk? [Answer](#).
68. On January 12, 1988, Dennis publicly announced that he had the technology in hand that might make free electricity a possibility. What happened two days later? [Answer](#).
69. How many complaining victims were there when the Ventura County sheriff's department began their "investigation," as admitted by their investigative notes? [Answer](#).
70. During the raid by the Ventura County sheriff's department, what did our chief researcher and machinist observe the sheriff's deputies doing? [Answer](#).
71. What did the United States Attorney General say about Dennis Lee, when asked about him by an attorney friend who subsequently purchased two full kits of materials from us for \$10,000? [Answer](#).
72. During the raid, after he tried convincing me that Dennis was a crook, I told the sheriff's deputy leading the investigation and raid what the United States Attorney General said. What was the deputy sheriff's response? [Answer](#).
73. During the raid, I asked the sheriff's deputy leading the raid what crime we had supposedly committed that warranted an armed raid of our facilities. What was his reply? [Answer](#).
74. Had we known about the law that covered the "crime" we had committed? [Answer](#).

75. How many previous prosecutions had there been in California history under the laws used to justify a raid of our facilities? [Answer](#).
76. Before Dennis' case was settled in 1990, the lawyer *who wrote the law* concerning our prosecution provided statements to us regarding the law and who it applied to. How many companies did the lawyer estimate would have been subject to the law's filing requirements, and how many complied with that law? [Answer](#).
77. What was the "crime" that Dennis admitted to in California? [Answer](#).
78. For that "crime," how much time did Dennis spend behind bars in California? [Answer](#).
79. After the raid, what did the sheriff's department do for the next several months? [Answer](#).
80. How successful were those efforts by the sheriff's department? [Answer](#).
81. Of the "victims" who the sheriff's department persuaded to testify for the prosecution, how many truly acted like a victim? [Answer](#).
82. How much money did those people who acted like victims lose to Dennis' "scheme"? [Answer](#).
83. A few weeks before the raid, one of our employees talked to the deputy in charge of investigating our company. What did that sheriff's deputy tell our employee, who himself used to be a sheriff's deputy? [Answer](#).
84. In April of 1988, Dennis was approached by some bankers with an offer to buy out his operation. What was their offer and who delivered it? [Answer](#).
85. What was Dennis' response to that offer? [Answer](#).
86. Dennis was arrested in June 1988 by the sheriff's deputy in charge of the investigation. The arrest was performed in Los Angeles County, even though Dennis lived less than a mile from the Ventura County's sheriff's department, and they could have arrested him at home at almost any time. How many arrests had been made in California history under the law that Dennis was arrested on? [Answer](#).
87. What public announcement did the Ventura County sheriff's department make upon arresting Dennis? [Answer](#).
88. What did the bail schedule for such a "crime" as Dennis committed call for, in dollars? [Answer](#).
89. What level of bail did the sheriff's deputy in charge of the investigation ask for from the judge? [Answer](#).
90. What was the rationale the sheriff's deputy presented for changing Dennis's bail? [Answer](#).
91. How many of the 1200 inmates at the Ventura County jail had a bail higher than Dennis's? [Answer](#).
92. During the subsequent prosecutorial misconduct hearing, the sheriff's deputy in charge of the investigation was asked to display his professional expertise that he asked the judge to heavily rely upon in adjusting Dennis' bail. What was the deputy's response? [Answer](#).
93. When Dennis was arrested in June 1988, what happened to the sheriff's deputy in charge of the investigation the next month? [Answer](#).

94. What further motion was filed by the District Attorney's office immediately after Dennis was arrested, and what was their rationale? [Answer.](#)
95. What happened to Dennis' company during the month after he was arrested? [Answer.](#)
96. What happened to the several technical advisors and inventors who worked at Dennis' company, after he was arrested? [Answer.](#)
97. When Dennis was in jail, he fasted and gave his meals to the biggest, meanest guys he could find (the caloric intake given the inmates was at the starvation level), and within a month, he was running his cellblock, turning it from a place of fear into a dormitory atmosphere. What did the jailors then do? [Answer.](#)
98. Soon after Dennis was arrested, his attorney approached the Deputy District Attorney who prosecuted Dennis, and asked if there could be some negotiation, and perhaps some kind of plea bargain worked out. What was the Deputy District Attorney's response? [Answer.](#)
99. How much time, effort and money did the prosecution expend on Dennis' preliminary hearing? [Answer.](#)
100. Who was the first defense witness who testified about the physics of the technology that Dennis sold and was developing? [Answer.](#)
101. Who was the Deputy District Attorney's assistant during the preliminary hearing, and what was that person's reaction to not only my testimony, but all the defense witnesses' testimonies? [Answer.](#)
102. Not long after the preliminary hearing was finished in late 1988, Dennis was thrown into solitary confinement for a month. What was the "infraction" he committed to warrant such treatment? [Answer.](#)
103. What happened to Dennis' family while he was behind bars in Ventura? [Answer.](#)
104. In March 1989, what did Dennis' judge do about his bail situation? [Answer.](#)
105. What was the chain of events that led to Dennis' release from jail? [Answer.](#)
106. What adjustment to Dennis' bail did the judge make? [Answer.](#)
107. Soon before the judge adjusted Dennis' bail, Easter came. How did Dennis mark that event? [Answer.](#)
108. What was the reaction of Dennis' inmates when he told them about the judge's adjustment of his bail? [Answer.](#)
109. After Dennis was released from jail, he lived with my accounting professor. For years, the professor's home address and phone number were also Dennis'. Mr. Professor told me several years later that he received phone calls for years after Dennis no longer lived there. Who were the callers, and what did they have to say? [Answer.](#)
110. Both times that Dennis has been released from jail/prison, I met with him almost immediately. What were Dennis' immediate reactions to his ordeals? [Answer.](#)
111. After Dennis was released from jail, he obtained an attorney with a national reputation. What was that attorney's claim to fame? [Answer.](#)
112. What was the reaction of the Ventura County District Attorney's office to the famous attorney taking Dennis' case? [Answer.](#)

113. What happened to Dennis' case after the famous attorney took it? [Answer.](#)
114. What happened to the deputy in charge of the investigation/jail when the prosecutorial misconduct hearing began? [Answer.](#)
115. Who succeeded the deputy sheriff in charge of the investigation as the case continued, particularly during the misconduct hearings? [Answer.](#)
116. That new investigator traveled the United States on Dennis's case. He visited our chief engineer at his home in Ellensburg, Washington. The investigator told the engineer that part of Dennis' "fraudulent" activities was representing that he was involved with heat storage technology, when in fact such technology did not exist. What was the engineer's response, and what was the investigator's reaction? [Answer.](#)
117. Our chief researcher eventually came out of hiding, and when the prosecutorial misconduct hearing was taking place, Dennis finally served him a subpoena. The researcher went to the county courthouse to see if the subpoena was a legally compelling document (it was not, as it had not been filed with the court; Dennis was trying to not drag the researcher into court against his will, but just wanted to meet with him). When he inquired at the courthouse, the Deputy District Attorney and the investigator came out of their offices and descended upon the researcher and interviewed him (I heard the tape of that interview, and the Deputy District Attorney's lack of professionalism was glaringly evident). That led to more than one conversation between the researcher and the investigator. What did the investigator reveal to the researcher during the course of their conversations? [Answer.](#)
118. During the misconduct hearings, the prosecution presented a motion to have Dennis re-jailed without the possibility of bail. Why? Dennis was trying to rebuild the business, and by the prosecution's logic, even though the issue was still to be decided how "criminal" his activities were (and the fraud charges had already been thrown out), putting him back in jail would keep new "victims" from being created. What was the judge's reaction to their motion, and what was Dennis' attorney's reaction? [Answer.](#)
119. In the end, it appears that the judge had to convict Dennis on *something*, and how did he get Dennis to submit to a plea bargain, something that years earlier Dennis said he would never do again? [Answer.](#)
120. When Dennis went to prison for not filing that form with the state of California, what prison was he sent to and why? [Answer.](#)
121. When Dennis got out of prison, what did the Ventura County folks have cooked up for him? [Answer.](#)
122. In summary, how much cash and net worth did Dennis possess when: his first business failed; when United Community Services first failed after he tried giving it away to the Christian community; when his insulation companies were stolen; when he got out of the hospital after being paralyzed; when he had his heat pump company stolen; when he moved from Yakima to Seattle in 1984; when he left Seattle to try rebuilding in Boston; when he got out of jail in Ventura; when he moved away from Ventura? [Answer.](#)
123. When Dennis got off parole, he began speaking publicly about free energy. What happened to him then? [Answer.](#)

124. At nearly the *same time* that Dennis was first arrested, and a few miles from *where* he was arrested, real live con men were defrauding the public with a mail order scam, where people paid for computer equipment that was never delivered. How did the authorities react? [Answer](#).
125. What happened to the judge, the prosecutor and the deputies involved in Dennis' case? [Answer](#)

Quiz Answers

1. He [witnessed a starving man](#) (with his skeletal children following behind him) beg a banker for a loan. [Return to questions](#).
2. [Social Psychology](#), with an emphasis on Utopian civilizations. [Return to questions](#).
3. A conference where [B. F. Skinner talked](#), and the subject was the art of conditioning the public mind through stimulus-response techniques. [Return to questions](#).
4. A [construction company](#) that tried bringing craftsmanship back to homebuilding. [Return to questions](#).
5. The energy crisis of 1973-1974. [Return to questions](#).
6. [Bouncing checks](#) as his construction company was destroyed. [Return to questions](#).
7. [In the mayhem of the energy crisis](#), Dennis' lumber supplier illegally repossessed lumber and supplies it sold his company, which precipitated a customer putting a stop payment on a large check written to Dennis' company. It was for the job on which the lumber was repossessed, and Dennis' company's checks began bouncing. Dennis later tried getting his ill-advised plea bargain reversed, and made good on those bounced checks, but that plea bargain stands today as the only "crime" he has ever admitted to committing. [Return to questions](#).
8. He invented a [coupon card](#) that united the consumer and gave them a voice in the marketplace. Dennis' company was named United Community Services. Today his idea has reincarnated in watered-down form as the Discover Card, the card that saves as customers use it. [Return to questions](#).
9. After years in business, after beginning with no capital, the company was nearly defunct. Dennis tried [giving his company away](#) to the Christian community (being that he had recently embraced Christianity), and a famous TV evangelist invested in the company. [Return to questions](#).
10. After [investing \\$150,000 into Dennis' company](#), the TV evangelist's lawyers decided that Dennis' marketing strategy might look to some like a pyramid scheme, and in order to protect his public image, the TV evangelist pulled out of the company. Dennis' company then closed its doors. [Return to questions](#).
11. Zero. [Return to questions](#).
12. At least three times. ([1](#), [2](#), [3](#)) [Return to questions](#).
13. Energy conservation. [Project C.O.N.S.E.R.V.E.](#) was born. [Return to questions](#).

14. Urea-formaldehyde [foam insulation](#). [Return to questions](#).
15. Dennis implemented a quality-control system to ensure proper mixing of the ingredients, and invented a "battle wagon" concept to create the ability to insulate an entire neighborhood in short order. He industrialized a process that was formerly a craftsman process, minimizing human error and creating economies of scale. [Return to questions](#).
16. His [insulation companies](#) were either destroyed by his business partners, or directly stolen from Dennis. [Return to questions](#).
17. [Guillaine Barre Syndrome](#). [Return to questions](#).
18. [Three times](#), leaving him crippled to this day. [Return to questions](#).
19. The [LamCo solar-assisted heat pump](#). [Return to questions](#).
20. His first efforts were [wildly successful](#). He sold 300 heat pumps in two months in one county, while LamCo had not sold even twenty heat pumps on the whole East Coast of the United States in the previous three years. [Return to questions](#).
21. Dennis developed his [Systems for Savings plan](#), which he first used when he began Project C.O.N.S.E.R.V.E. Dennis believes it was the first shared savings plan introduced during Jimmy Carter's "war on energy." [Return to questions](#).
22. [Zero](#). [Return to questions](#).
23. Yes. Endlessly. His persistence eventually gained him an audience with the plant manager of the [world's largest heat pump factory](#), and he was on the brink of putting together a [billion dollar deal](#) with a household name financial company to carpet the United States with the LamCo heat pump. [Return to questions](#).
24. It eventually owned LamCo, but the original LamCo owners conspired with organized crime figures to [swindle Dennis out of his company's cash](#), and then organized crime figures conspired with Dennis's partner to steal his company. [Return to questions](#).
25. Washington State, due to its numerous hydroelectric projects, had the [nation's lowest utility bills](#), so the equipment was not economically feasible in that marketplace. [Return to questions](#).
26. A confluence of several events. After his original company was stolen, he tried rebuilding, but Long Island mobsters and others hounded him, and he was having a difficult time rebuilding his company. He had three children by that time, his only son recently being born. He visited his family in Yakima, Washington to show him his newborn son. The son died of crib death in Yakima, their rebuilding efforts in New York had not been successful, and the "[Whoops](#)" disaster raised Washington utility bills to the point where the LamCo heat pump was economically viable. [Return to questions](#).
27. The rich developer Dennis was involved with in [Yakima](#) became entranced with a [less efficient energy saving system](#) because he thought it was pretty, and he eventually told his business associates he did not need Dennis anymore. [Return to questions](#).
28. Dennis arrived with his family in a beat up station wagon, [\\$20 in his pocket and no place to sleep](#). [Return to questions](#).

29. One thousand, for [\\$10 million in sales](#). [Return to questions](#).
30. All of them, and most opted for Dennis's [Systems for Savings](#) plan. [Return to questions](#).
31. Zero. [Return to questions](#).
32. The local electric company said that [Dennis's company and equipment was a scam](#), that he had refused to answer their questions (the opposite was true – they stonewalled every attempt he made to attract their interest), and called for an investigation by the Attorney General's office into his company. [Return to questions](#).
33. Zero. [Return to questions](#).
34. Dennis [hosted a meeting](#) and invited all the electric companies in the Seattle area to it. [Return to questions](#).
35. The meeting was attended by one low-level electric company employee, who came because of the influence of Dennis' chief engineer. He was the only electric company representative to attend. The other attendees were two [undercover investigators](#) for the Attorney General's office who posed as college students, and a [corporate hit man](#) who was on the Bonneville Power Administration's payroll, who had infiltrated himself into Dennis' company. [Return to questions](#).
36. [Nearly \\$50 million](#), based on his ownership of the company's stock and its market price. [Return to questions](#).
37. Dennis invented the "[Heat Injector](#)," which was a self-contained heat pump which did not need field technicians to laboriously fabricate panel arrays. The Heat Injector overcame the installation and related problems that plagued that technology. As with the [foam insulation business](#), Dennis industrialized the process, making it more reliable and needing less technical skill to install. His Heat Injector never got past the prototype stage because his Seattle company was wiped out, but that was the direction the technology needed to go toward if it was going to become an industry. Dennis has rarely received proper credit for his technical contributions to developing that technology. [Return to questions](#).
38. In [October 1985](#), orchestrated while Dennis was out of town to explore moving his factory and business to Indiana. [Return to questions](#).
39. A [civil lawsuit](#) that they did not file for days after they orchestrated the media splash. [Return to questions](#).
40. He tried inciting mutiny from within Dennis' company. The effort failed. The [BPA Hit Man](#) had been unmasked, and then he engaged in a several month vendetta against Dennis' company. [Return to questions](#).
41. After the BPA Hit Man left Dennis' company after his [ten week tenure](#), he tried manipulating creditors and employees to taking legal action against Dennis's company, leading to a [federal bankruptcy suit](#) being waged in federal court. The only "creditors" he could find were a few unscrupulous and/or easily manipulated employees, and after Dennis' company was destroyed and stolen, the judge threw out their case and even recommended countersuing the petitioners. Among the BPA Hit Man's other [undeniable](#)

[activities](#) were having documents stolen by Dennis' employees, which later ended up in the Attorney General' files, and trying to frighten Dennis' finance company from doing business with him. He almost certainly was involved in breaking into Dennis' company's facilities at night, to sabotage the company in numerous ways. He also was almost certainly behind a campaign to have various regulatory authorities swoop down onto Dennis' company, and he also interfered with Dennis' suppliers and other business associates. The BPA Hit Man's most egregious act will come later in this quiz. [Return to questions.](#)

42. Slightly more than two months. [Return to questions.](#)
43. Dennis took out a [full page ad](#) in the *Seattle Times*. It turned out to be one of the two worst public black eyes the Attorney General ever received, and the second may have derailed his bid for governor in 1992. [Return to questions.](#)
44. She desperately tried to get Dennis to settle the lawsuit. [Return to questions.](#)
45. [Zero.](#) [Return to questions.](#)
46. The fact that [one person in the entire state](#) of Washington misunderstood one thing Dennis said. [Return to questions.](#)
47. Dennis' customers. Dennis would later call it the dirtiest deal he had ever done. [Return to questions.](#)
48. Zero. [Return to questions.](#)
49. [100%.](#) [Return to questions.](#)
50. Zero. [Return to questions.](#)
51. His manipulations directly [led to the death](#) of one of Dennis' employees. [Return to questions.](#)
52. She quit her job with the Attorney General's office. Long after the ordeal was over, Dennis found himself [sitting next to her on an airplane](#). Dennis offered to sit someplace else, but she replied that it was OK for him to sit next to her. Dennis asked her how she slept at night, and her response was that her attacks on his company were because she was following her superiors' orders, but that her conscience finally overcame her and she quit her job. [Return to questions.](#)
53. The financier whose company [financed the heat pump purchases](#). He not only lost millions of dollars, but he also lost his company. [Return to questions.](#)
54. He did not blame Dennis for any of it, and felt that the theft of his company and Dennis's [were part of a conspiracy](#). [Return to questions.](#)
55. His company was stolen, and my boss, the controller, [helped engineer the theft](#). [Return to questions.](#)
56. Zero and zero. [Return to questions.](#)
57. In November 1986 in Boston, when he met a company that produced electricity from [200 degree Fahrenheit water](#). [Return to questions.](#)
58. Me. [Return to questions.](#)
59. [Offering to buy](#) the [Seabrook nuclear power plant](#) and never putting fuel into it, but using

- it for heat storage the storage plant being fed by free energy machines. [Return to questions.](#)
60. The chairman of the board of the Seabrook Association called Dennis's office within minutes of receiving the proposal, said he could come to Dennis's office within an hour, and next week [hosted Dennis](#) and his chief engineer at their penthouse office to discuss his proposal. That was not all that surprising, as we heard that the New England electric companies held secret meetings to decide on how to deal with us, and they thought they might have to work with us. During those days, I once picked up our ringing office phone and asked the caller, who wanted to talk to Dennis, whom I should say was calling. It was the Seabrook Chairman of the Board. It was a decidedly different treatment than Dennis received in Washington. [Return to questions.](#)
61. That for a few months, all that the Bonneville Power Administration's conservation department [thought about was Dennis Lee.](#) [Return to questions.](#)
62. [Ten million dollars.](#) I was in the office when they came to make their offer. They were fairly non-descript people. [Return to questions.](#)
63. Because I tied into more financing and technical talent in [Ventura, California](#), where I was raised, and the effort in Boston was not going well. We had a media blackout [among our problems.](#) [Return to questions.](#)
64. Dennis developed a program where we sold materials that enabled people to learn how to manufacture, market and install the LamCo-style heat pump. [Return to questions.](#)
65. Nothing publicly. We [heard from the inside](#) that they were not sure what to do about us. [Return to questions.](#)
66. One of my mentors came forward with the [world's best engine for powering an automobile](#), a hydraulic heat engine which he invented many years earlier. He thought he could marry it to the heat pump panels and produce no operating cost electricity. [Return to questions.](#)
67. Another hydraulic heat engine came to Dennis, that one from [Victor Fischer](#), and prototypes had been built in Australia. We ceased developing a prototype for my mentor's hydraulic heat engine and immediately began building a home-sized Fischer engine prototype. As with my old mentor, Fischer also thought that his hydraulic heat engine, married to Dennis heat pump panels, could generate no operating cost electricity. Fischer worked with Dennis again in the late 1990s for a couple of years to try developing that "free energy" machine. [Return to questions.](#)
68. An [armed raid](#) by the Ventura County's sheriff's department. [Return to questions.](#)
69. Zero. This link [tells that story.](#) [Return to questions.](#)
70. While standing outside the building, they were able to see through the mirrored machine shop windows when the inside of the building was lit up by the flash of a camera. They saw the sheriff's deputies rolling out our prototype blueprints on our chief researcher's desk [and photographing them.](#) The sheriff's deputies also [cleaned out](#) our chief researcher's office, removing box-loads of documents from his office. They later denied even being in that office until more than twelve hours later, and said they only removed

one piece of paper. Our chief researcher later testified to their theft and espionage in court, and he also waged a lawsuit against them for their theft of proprietary and sensitive documents. [Return to questions.](#)

71. Edwin Meese, the U.S. Attorney General in 1987, knew Dennis by name, told his attorney friend that they had thoroughly investigated Dennis and his operations in the past, and said that Dennis and his companies were "[squeaky clean](#)." The attorney emphasized the words "squeaky clean" as he handed Dennis a check for \$10,000. [Return to questions.](#)
72. He grinned and said he would [not believe a word](#) the highest-ranking prosecuting official in the United States had to say about anything. [Return to questions.](#)
73. He said it seemed that we had violated a civil law known as the [Seller's Assisted Marketing Plan Act](#), California civil code, section 1812.200. [Return to questions.](#)
74. Yes, at least in general. A few months before the raid, I was sent and read the law for seller's assisted marketing in a Midwestern state (related to our national advertising efforts), and there were about twelve criteria for having that law apply to a company's efforts. I read the twelve criteria, and one of the twelve might have applied to our efforts if interpreted a certain way. The other eleven criteria did not apply. At the end of the criteria for that Midwestern state's law, it stated that if a company *met all twelve criteria*, then the law applied. Since it only one criterion might have applied to our efforts, I quickly dismissed the law as of no concern for us. When the sheriff's deputy mentioned the Seller's Assisted Marketing Plan Act, I told him that I had heard of it, and it did not seem to apply to us. He then grinned and said that was a matter for lawyers to decide, not us. [Return to questions.](#)
75. [One](#). [Return to questions.](#)
76. The lawyer estimated that up to [100,000 or more California businesses](#) could have been subject to the Seller's Assisted Marketing Plan Act's filing requirements. The filings ended up in his office, and he stated that only 250 filings had ever been made, for a compliance rate of less than one percent. The main reason was that hardly anybody had ever heard of the obscure law, including lawyers. [Return to questions.](#)
77. He admitted that he did not make that one-page filing with the state of California, along with those 100,000 other businesses that did not file it. [Return to questions.](#)
78. Two years. [Return to questions.](#)
79. From the customer lists they obtained during the raid, they [called all of our hundreds of customers](#) and tried to get them to help prosecute Dennis and his company. [Return to questions.](#)
80. They were only able to round up [nine "victims"](#) from our hundreds of customers. [Return to questions.](#)
81. [One](#). [Return to questions.](#)
82. Zero. The [single man](#) who acted like a victim not only received his money back several months earlier, but asked the court to compensate him for the time he spent reading the material he originally purchased from our company. [Return to questions.](#)

83. That we were going [nothing illegal that he could see](#), and that he would close his investigative file on us. Therefore the raid qualified as “entrapment” at the very least, as we pointedly asked the sheriff’s department if we were violating any laws, but were told that we were not. [Return to questions.](#)
84. The [offer was made in Chicago by a CIA man](#) who said that he represented “European interests.” The offer was to pay Dennis to stop pursuing free energy, and the CIA man’s words were that he would put a one on the check and Dennis could put on the zeroes. [Return to questions.](#)
85. Dennis said that the deal sounded good to him. They would put on the one, he would put on the zeroes, and it would go back into the pockets of those who made the offer, with [money committed to bringing free energy to the marketplace](#). The CIA man almost swallowed his spoon, and rejected Dennis’ counteroffer when he regained his composure. [Return to questions.](#)
86. Zero. [Return to questions.](#)
87. They created a video using footage of Dennis’ tapes and other footage they provided, and sent it to the [Southern California TV stations](#), where it played the next day. The TV stations played the tape unaltered, and it was slanted by the sheriff’s department to make Dennis appear to be the criminal of the century. [Return to questions.](#)
88. [\\$5,000](#). [Return to questions.](#)
89. [\\$1,000,000](#). [Return to questions.](#)
90. It was a creative writing exercise that [used novel reasoning](#). A central reason given by the sheriff’s deputy was that Dennis’ victims themselves would help hide him from the authorities. The main reason given was that the sheriff’s deputy in charge of the investigation was an expert in fraud, having investigated hundreds of cases with fraud elements in them. He asserted that the judge should rely on his deep professional experience and understanding of the crime known as fraud. [Return to questions.](#)
91. [Zero](#), and inmates were in there for murder and other crimes that far exceeded what Dennis was accused of. [Return to questions.](#)
92. The deputy was asked by Dennis’ attorney to tell the court what the legal elements were of the crime known as fraud. The deputy replied that he was unable to, as such technical knowledge was beyond the scope of his professional duties. He was then asked to recall just one element of the crime known as fraud. The deputy was [unable to recall even one](#), although he asked the judge to heavily rely on his professional experience in investigating fraud. [Return to questions.](#)
93. He was [given an award](#) for performing the most difficult investigation in Ventura County history (the investigation of Dennis), and was promoted from sergeant to lieutenant. He was one of the youngest, if not the youngest, deputies to ever make lieutenant in Ventura County. He also had a radical change in his career direction. He had been an investigator, but was promoted to be in charge of the county jail, where he could personally see to the treatment of his prized catch. [Return to questions.](#)
94. They moved that even if Dennis provided the million-dollar bail, that he should not be

freed because he [might have raised the money by fraudulent methods](#). Their rationale had one precedent in U.S. legal history, where a New Jersey drug dealer raised his bail by selling drugs. Equating the Seller's Assisted Marketing Plan Act with heroin, the motion stated that if bail was raised, it could not come from any of Dennis' customers, any money he might have made while working at his companies or any of his business associates, as they were all involved in the situation to some degree. That motion could have kept Bill Gates in jail with no chance of getting out. [Return to questions](#).

95. One of [Dennis's customers](#), who had cleverly insinuated himself into Dennis' organization, immediately mounted a "mutiny" of Dennis' customers and national network. With [two other customer/business associates](#), they worked closely with the sheriff's department to make sure that Dennis never got out of jail. The ringleader was most likely the same kind of provocateur that the [BPA Hit Man](#) was, but more sophisticated. He [threatened or lied to](#) anybody who offered their property for collateral for Dennis' bail, and sabotaged every move Dennis' wife made to try keeping the company alive. The final blow for the company was when the provocateur walked through the company's offices and announced that he has just come from a meeting at the sheriff's department, and that any employees who kept working for the company would go to jail as one of Dennis' accomplices. It worked. The employees streamed out of the building, and several stole anything that was not nailed down on their way out. I happened to [drive into the company parking lot](#) a few minutes after that incident, and had another one of my salient moments of realizing how the world really works. The new lieutenant in charge of the jail was enjoying his finest moments in those days. A stream of frightened employees crawled into his office, begging for his mercy. He masterfully manipulated people in whatever way was necessary to not only abandon Dennis, but to also help bury him. Salesmen were told they could get [sixty years in jail for working for Dennis' company](#). If cajoling worked, that was all that was needed. If people proved more resistant, they were threatened. The standard carrot-and-stick strategy used was that if they helped the prosecution, they would not be prosecuted themselves. [Return to questions](#).
96. They were all [scattered and driven/lured away](#) by either the deputy in charge of the investigation and jail, or the provocateur who helped destroy the company during July 1988. The only technical person who lived locally was our chief researcher, and [he went to the deputy's office](#) in July with all the other frightened people, virtually begging for the deputy's mercy. He tried distancing himself from Dennis, but not the technology. Since putting Dennis away for life would be difficult if it was demonstrated that the technologies he promoted and sold were legitimate, the deputy threatened the chief researcher with jail if he testified for the defense. The chief researcher subsequently [fled into hiding](#) to avoid the subpoena Dennis's lawyer tried serving on him. There had been a campaign since the raid to chase off anybody who could produce credible testimony or data regarding the heat pump or the technologies we were pursuing. [Return to questions](#).

97. They [moved Dennis into an entirely new cellblock](#), which was of questionable legality and obviously initiated by the deputy in charge of the jail, as he did not want his prized catch getting too comfortable. [Return to questions.](#)
98. She said that if Dennis pled guilty to all charges, she would "[see that he does not get the death penalty!](#)" [Return to questions.](#)
99. It apparently was about the [costliest and most time-consuming](#) preliminary hearing in Ventura County history, with the prosecution flying in about twenty witnesses from around the United States, and spending several hundred thousand dollars. [Return to questions.](#)
100. [Me](#). With all the technical witnesses driven off or in hiding, I testified about the technologies and thermodynamics. A CPA should not have been testifying about those matters, which demonstrated how effectively the prosecution had rigged the trial, and how desperate Dennis was. Fortunately, one of Dennis' salesmen had a degree in physics and was a former minister and displayed some heartwarming integrity in those dark days. Over the heated protestations of the prosecution and even Dennis' own attorney (who was probably in on the railroad job at some level), the salesman was allowed to testify. That was it for the "expert" witnesses that the defense was able to bring to court. [Return to questions.](#)
101. It was the deputy in charge of the investigation and jail, who laid around in court for the entire month of the preliminary hearing. His official job of running the jail was obviously only a figurehead position, and the bone he was thrown for snuffing us out. He tried intimidating me as I testified by [making theatrical and imbecilic gestures to my testimony](#). He sat directly in front of the witness stand. His performance was repeated for all defense witnesses, and was pointedly ignored by not only the Deputy District Attorney, but the judge himself. It was an incredible spectacle, which even the local newspaper reporter played along with. In retrospect, it was the turning point of my life. Up until that day, I had given that sheriff's deputy and the entire affair some benefit of the doubt. He unmasked himself for me that day. [Return to questions.](#)
102. Trying to throw a [Christmas party](#) for his inmates. [Return to questions.](#)
103. They were soon rendered homeless and were taken in by my accounting professor and partner in the Ventura operation. They lived with him and his family for more than a year. He was the true hero of what happened in Ventura. [Return to questions.](#)
104. The judge called for a [hearing on Dennis's excessive bail](#). Dennis was shocked, as he had already made eight bail appeals with the other judges who had presided over his case, and all had denied his appeal, except for the very first one, where the judge reduced the bail from a million dollars to a paltry \$750,000. [Return to questions.](#)
105. The first event was when [I asked my professor](#) to mortgage his house and loan me \$50,000 to provide some kind of defense for Dennis, mainly so we could afford to bring in expert witnesses who could testify about the technologies. Some of that money was also used to hire an attorney, as Dennis had no lawyer by that time. That began to turn the tide, beginning with Dennis finally regaining some ability to have private

communication with the outside world. The jail had ensured he had no communications with anybody outside the jail that they did not read or listen to. Then Dennis won some minor motions. The judge's request for the bail review was the big, unexpected event, and Dennis wasted no time in taking advantage of it. His wife began rounding up affidavits of witnesses that the deputy in charge of the investigation had threatened, and the jail was [caught illegally opening Dennis's legal mail](#) from his attorney, which had those threats in it. The jail had been previously caught opening Dennis' legal mail, and the judge warned them not to. Being caught red handed at that stage was the crowning blow. [Return to questions.](#)

106. The bail was reduced from [\\$750,000 to zero](#), with a \$20,000 restitution deposit made in case Dennis was convicted of the fraud charges. Dennis walked out of jail the next day. The prosecution was going to have a hard time putting Dennis away for life for violating a *civil* law, so they threw on some fraud charges onto the stack. Soon after Dennis got out of jail and was able to defend himself, the District Attorney's office [withdrew all the fraud charges](#), which were the only criminal charges they filed. [Return to questions.](#)
107. He had an [Easter celebration](#) in his cell block, complete with Easter egg hunts for his fellow inmates. [Return to questions.](#)
108. They [cheered and hoisted him](#) onto their shoulders. [Return to questions.](#)
109. The callers were [Dennis' fellow inmates](#). They called to thank the man who turned their life around, and to tell him that they had walked the straight and narrow path ever since they got out of jail/prison. [Return to questions.](#)
110. Dennis' response was that being behind bars was not too bad, and that he was going back after free energy full steam ahead. He also talked about how he was nearly murdered in prison, so it obviously was no picnic, but Dennis is the world's greatest lemonade maker. [Return to questions.](#)
111. He was the [United States' foremost Constitutionalist attorney](#), and his specialty was taking on the Internal Revenue Service (IRS). Soon before talking Dennis' case, he was on the floor of the U.S. Supreme Court. That case had to do with IRS personnel committing felonies while prosecuting his client. The U.S. Supreme Court ruled that the IRS personnel had indeed committed felonies, but that their crimes could be separated from their prosecutorial work, so the case would not be thrown out. The Supreme Court ruled that Dennis's attorney's client still had to face trial, which he did. He was found innocent, for well more than 100 cases in a row that Dennis's attorney had won. [Return to questions.](#)
112. They tried preventing him from receiving his California license to practice law (they accused him of practicing without a license, which was in the Big Lie category), which he was in the process of obtaining when he took Dennis' case. His license was held up for months because of interference from the Ventura County District Attorney's office. [Return to questions.](#)
113. Not only were the criminal charges dropped, but the prosecution was soon on the defense, as the prosecution's many crimes became the subject of one of the only

[prosecutorial misconduct hearings](#) (if not the only) in Ventura County history. [Return to questions.](#)

114. He strangely [became "ill" soon after the hearings began](#), and the hearings were held up for months due to his "poor health," as he was "too ill" to testify. [Return to questions.](#)
115. An [investigator for the District Attorney's office](#). [Return to questions.](#)
116. The engineer told the investigator that the heat storage technology in fact existed, and some of it was sitting in his barn about fifty yards from where they were having their conversation. I helped store that technology in that barn in 1986, just before Dennis had his company stolen. After having traveled a thousand miles to "investigate" Dennis and his past, the investigator declined to walk those fifty yards to see that technology for himself. [Return to questions.](#)
117. For starters, the [investigator told the researcher](#) that all the delays in the misconduct hearings were certainly draining Dennis' defense funds (Dennis' attorney had to make an eight-hour-round-trip drive, through Los Angeles, to attend court in Ventura County, to only be told that the hearings would still be delayed due to the deputy sheriff's "poor health"), and when those funds ran out, Dennis would probably once more not have a lawyer, and would not be able to defend himself. The investigator made those statements with poorly concealed glee. He also said that the judge would not throw out the case against Dennis no matter how much prosecutorial misconduct there was. Later in their conversations, the researcher asked the investigator if it had ever occurred to him that Dennis might be innocent. The investigator's memorable reply was, ["I could not care less if he is innocent. I am paid to get convictions."](#) The researcher also observed that the prosecution's case seemed to be built on lies and misrepresenting the evidence. The investigator replied, ["Sure we lie. Everybody lies. I will do however much lying I feel is necessary to get that conviction."](#) To this day, that researcher is dismissed from jury duty when he repeats that investigator's words to the judge. [Return to questions.](#)
118. I [watched that motion](#) being argued by the prosecution. The judge seemed to suppress the desire to laugh, but kept his decorum and dismissed their motion with a few words, almost jovially. Dennis's attorney was not so jovial. For him it was the last straw. He was a nationally known attorney, doing nearly all of his work at the federal level, and the backwoods-style gutter maneuvers he had witnessed for the past year (and bore the brunt of some of them himself) were shocking to his lawyer's sensibilities. Some misconduct that the sheriff's deputies engaged in during their investigation were identical to the crimes that he whipped the IRS in the U.S. Supreme Court over. A couple days after that hearing our attorney called Dennis. He said he was [preparing a lawsuit to file in federal court](#) against the Ventura County legal folks. He told Dennis that when he was through with them, they wouldn't be able to get jobs as street sweepers. He ruined the careers of those IRS agents and was eager to rip up the criminals that ran the Ventura County legal system. He produced the lawsuit on his own time and expense and asked Dennis to help publicize the case and get the media to attend a

press conference when he filed the lawsuit in Los Angeles. At [this link](#) is how that turned out, much to our attorney's surprise. He did not know how corrupt California was. It was the beginning of the end of his involvement with us, as he realized he was fighting something far larger than he had ever encountered before. [Return to questions.](#)

119. The investigator was right, in that the continual delays and gutter maneuvers had used up our legal fund. The high profile attorney was the third one Dennis had, and that attorney was planning to also bow out of the case if the misconduct hearing did not succeed in having the case dismissed, as he could not afford to do the trial without money up front. Dennis was fine with that situation, having been abandoned by his first attorney and betrayed by so many, and the high profile attorney was pivotal in turning the tide of the case. Instead of life in prison or some similar "justice," the deputy sheriff was hoping that *his* career was not going to end over Dennis' case. The judge, however, had other ideas. He decided [to force the high profile attorney to defend Dennis](#), even if Dennis and his attorney agreed to part ways. The judge was holding a financial gun against Dennis' attorney's head in order to get Dennis to submit to a plea bargain. With his attorney essentially held hostage by the judge, Dennis figured that his high profile attorney was not going to provide much a defense, a hundred cases-in-a-row won or not, and Dennis had no interest in financially ruining his attorney. The judge also made it clear that if the case went to trial, that he would rule on matters of law, and the fact that Dennis had not filed that one-page form with the California government was a clear-cut violation, and he also stated that he would seek the maximum possible sentence if the case went to trial. The judge played a grim carrot-and-stick game. The attorney went to his knees in front the judge a little too eagerly, which Dennis was not too happy with, and he did another dirty deal. He pled guilty to not filing the one-page form with the California government, but got a deal where the higher courts would rule on the Constitutionality of the law *as it applied to Dennis' case*. Dennis's attorney said he would file the appeals to the higher courts without pay, and told Dennis that to work its way through the legal system, all the way to the U.S. Supreme Court, would take at least seven years. Dennis' case set legal precedents all the way. The higher courts all [reneged on their end of the deal](#). Nobody ruled on the Constitutionality of the case as it applied to Dennis. The one ruling I saw essentially stated, "he pled guilty, end of story." That "appeal" process wound its way *through* the U.S. Supreme court in two years, and Dennis was subsequently railroaded into prison. [Return to questions.](#)
120. Officially, Dennis' crime was ["Failure to register marketing plans. \(A misdemeanor\)"](#) as his prison records stated. A traffic ticket was a more willful violation of the law. Even if Dennis was fully guilty of fraud, it was not the kind of crime where he needed to be in a maximum security prison. When Dennis was released from the Ventura County jail, the judge made Dennis go to the jail everyday for a year and sign in. Dennis was not even allowed to leave the city of Ventura without permission (and the first time in two years that he did leave Ventura, the BPA Hit Man [attacked his efforts](#) while using [new, fraudulent credentials](#)), so he was obviously no threat to break out of prison to escape. He was the classic minimum security prisoner, but somehow his file got all screwed up.

Imagine that. There is a method of ranking prisoners as to their security risk, and the prisoners' backgrounds are evaluated. Significant points in favor of a prisoner's security status would be if they were married, if they had children, if they had gone to college and if they had served in the military. Dennis qualified for all of those things, not to mention the *civil law* nature of his "violation." Well, even after Dennis had an interview and related all those facts during his admission, his file said he was not married, had no children, and was never in college or the military, and those "errors" helped bump his security status from minimum security to medium security. He was bumped into medium security by a whisker. Medium security prisons are where most people do hard time. Medium security is particularly designed for violent criminals, and Dennis' first cellmate was in there for murder, and the murder he was convicted of was only one of many that he committed. Dennis was nearly murdered himself while in medium security, and the guards put him in the position to be murdered. He got "lucky," and "only" had some fingers broken and teeth knocked out. It is hard to know how "conspiratorial" those events were as far as his prison experience went, but I have a difficult time chalking it up to a series of amazing coincidences. His treatment was so outrageous that the official in charge of the California prison reform effort [came a vast distance to Dennis's prison and interviewed him](#). Dennis was then quickly moved to minimum security, where he served out his remaining sentence. [Return to questions](#).

121. They were trying to get Dennis sent back to Ventura County for his parole, where they undoubtedly would have cooked up some kind of parole "violation," where he would have soon enjoyed the deputy sheriff's hospitality once more (which was also why Dennis refused probation, his faith in the Ventura Country legal system being non-existent). But when he did his plea bargain, he was free to move away, which he eventually did, as he was unable to resurrect the business in Ventura County (which also bankrupted my accounting professor, as he funded the effort). Dennis moved back to New Jersey where his alternative energy efforts began, where he lives to this day, still trying to make free energy happen. Because they lived there when Dennis went to prison, and his wife and children stayed there, his wife pierced the bureaucracy and Dennis was able to serve his parole in New Jersey, away from the corruption in California. The West Coast of the United States seems far more corrupt than the East Coast, at least from what Dennis experienced, and his high profile attorney [got a taste of that reality too](#), as have others ([1](#), [2](#), [3](#)). [Return to questions](#).
122. Zero; zero; zero; zero; zero; \$20; zero; zero; zero. [Return to questions](#).
123. He was [put back onto parole](#), in a move of highly dubious legality. He did not get off parole until 1997, nearly ten years after he was first arrested for failing to file a form. [Return to questions](#).
124. The [real life crooks had stolen millions of dollars](#) from duped customers, and the Southern Californian and federal authorities received mountains of complaints and requests to prosecute. Every governmental body with jurisdiction in the case refused to prosecute. That story was documented in *PC World* in the early 1990s. [Return to questions](#).

125. They all received big promotions. The [sheriff's deputies'](#) promotions were explicitly related to Dennis's case. The judge retired almost immediately after Dennis made his plea bargain, and was [subsequently promoted to a higher court](#). The prosecutor became a judge. I doubt those judgeship promotions were coincidental. When the District Attorney [came into courtroom to watch Dennis make his plea bargain](#), it was the first time that the bailiff had ever seen him in a courtroom, and the bailiff had worked there for eight years. The DA came to the courtroom three times that day. [Return to questions](#).

For those who answered more than one hundred of the above questions accurately, I will agree that they know Dennis' past quite well. They would almost certainly also know that he is not a criminal pulling off the history's biggest free energy scam. Across the Internet and elsewhere have appeared the most indefensible libels and slanders about Dennis. Wildly irresponsible numbers and allegations have been thrown around. Again, it is highly ironic that Dennis' critics to accuse him of being a crook, and lie and misrepresent his past in order to do it (even if it is carelessly repeating the lies and misrepresentations of others). For those who want to criticize what Dennis is doing today, they can have at it. I have not talked to Dennis for several years, and am not sure what he is up to today, but I doubt that anybody will ever convince me that he has criminal intent. For those who want to keep writing about Dennis' "criminal past," and how he got rich off all those "suckers" (Mr. Skeptic's favorite label these days) from the trailer parks, "patriot" groups and churches, they should first try their hand at this quiz. If they wish to credibly challenge this material, they should adduce some impressive facts, along with astute interpretations of them. Recycling libelous newspaper clippings, calling Dennis an "idiot," and the many other dishonest/careless/weak-minded tactics that I have seen since 1986 will fail to convince honest and intelligent readers.

Footnotes

[1] Dennis Lee, *The Alternative*, p. 66.

[2] Dennis Lee, *The Alternative*, exhibit 9C.

[3] Dennis Lee, *The Alternative*, exhibit 1B.

[4] This will be an inordinately long footnote, nearly a section in itself. Sagan was something of an enigma. On one hand, he was the most famous living scientist, until he died a few years ago. On the other hand, there is the question of why he was so famous. He was an astronomer/professor who dealt with a wide range of disciplines beyond his formal training, but his contributions to science did not really befit his popular stature. On one hand, Sagan was a sober voice of reason in science, even of

conscience, especially when dealing with environmental or military issues. He could be quite sensitive when writing about dolphins or religious fanatics. Yet he also could be dogmatic, arrogant, pompous, and - which is the issue that concerns this section the most - dishonest. Sagan wrote in the realm of science, although some of his colleagues say that at times he did not hold up his end on collaborative efforts, being too busy with his more famous activities. Where he kept to astronomy and other aspects of his professional discipline, he never did anything Nobel-worthy. His claim to fame was being a popularizer. His book *Cosmos* spawned a TV series, and that is what made him a household word. There is nothing wrong with that. Einstein is history's most famous scientist, justifiably so, and he spent much of his time trying to make his ideas understandable to the lay audience.

Hugh Martin analyzed Sagan's use of language in *Cosmos*, and his analysis was not flattering (see "Sagan's Pseudo-Sagacity: Style as a Reflection of Character (or Lack Thereof)" in *The Velikovskian*, vol. III, No. 4.). To millions of Americans, Sagan was the voice of science. He regularly wrote articles for *Parade Magazine*, a Sunday newspaper supplement with an audience of eighty million Americans. There is a burden of responsibility in being the voice of science for millions of people. Martin analyzed Sagan's use of language in addressing his lay audience in *Cosmos*, and laid bare Sagan's lofty prose for what it was: pompous. Using words not typically encountered by the audience they are writing for is a problem that popularizers must face, and how they face it is an important test of their craft's execution. In *Cosmos*, Sagan used the words: hubristic, doxological, eschatology, circumjacent, occulted, dryad, maenad and vouchsafed. Hubristic (not "hubris" which is fairly common, but "hubristic") is a word people will never see, except in the dictionary...and Carl Sagan's writing. The use of such five-dollar words is questionable in addressing the *Cosmos* audience, but that was the least of Sagan's crimes against the English language. In *Cosmos*, Sagan also used: irreparable, interstices, transmogrified, immolate, provocation, distillation, plenum, concatenation, palpable, fecundated and integuments. The problem with Sagan's use of those words was that he used them *improperly*. To introduce another big word, Sagan was writing malapropisms. Instead of making things clearer for his readers, he confused them. That is a mistake that a thirteen-year-old boy can make, having a blast with his first thesaurus, but for Sagan to use such highfalutin words, and use them incorrectly, is less than helpful. Sagan would also write meaningless yet impressive-sounding sentences such as "The Cosmos is rich in the subtle machinery of awe."

If people are going to use big, esoteric words to a lay audience, what is their purpose? It should be to relate big, esoteric *ideas* in a way that the audience can understand, so they walk away better educated. That is the popularizer's ideal, to educate the uninitiated. When people use those big words to a lay audience, an audience that trusts them and they cannot even use those words properly, it is not educating them, but the opposite. Sagan would throw also out nuggets to his readers about how evolution and space cameras work in *Cosmos*, but he would be wrong. Sagan was committing popularizer charlatanry. As far as his image versus reality with his book *Cosmos*, Sagan was a fake. What Sagan was doing, and his readers may have lapped it up, was making his writing seem sophisticated and full of meaning. Everybody felt dazzled with his mind and the ideas he discussed, feeling good that they could even pronounce the words that Sagan was using, realizing that actually understanding what he was writing was less important than being impressed with his command of the language. With Sagan, it sometimes seemed that the bigger the word, the smaller the idea. Martin ended his critique with "Good English is honest English. Dr. Sagan's language is dishonest. A lot of people buy his books because they think they're buying difficult but profound thoughts simplified by a remarkable mind. Dr. Sagan is ripping these people off."

Sagan was not only the world's most famous scientist, he was also the world's most visible "skeptic." Sagan wrote numerous books and articles to debunk "fringe science" and the paranormal. *The Demon-Haunted World* was Sagan's last debunker book. I pick the book up from time to time, then put it down in my anger and dismay. Not all of Sagan's observations are off the mark. Some of what he has to say about the scientific establishment and other issues are worthy. One big problem is when he has no idea of what he is writing about and tries to appear an expert. One of the standard words in the debunker's lexicon is "pseudoscience." Sagan uses it dozens of times in *The Demon-Haunted World*. What does "pseudoscience" mean? Literally, it means "false science." It means something that is not science, parading around as science. What *is* science? There is a wide range of philosophical literature on that subject. The philosophy of science has a long history. Henry Bauer says the scientific method is a myth, an ideal seldom achieved. Thomas Kuhn says that scientific revolutions are the result of questioning the founding presumptions of a scientific discipline, and the new "paradigm" that science adopts may not be any more "correct" than the old paradigm, and what makes one prevail over another is the allegiance of the scientists, not really how right or wrong it is, if that can even be determined.

How does Sagan define and use "pseudoscience"? On page 13 of *The Demon-Haunted World*, Sagan gives examples of pseudoscience and why he calls them that. Sagan gives examples of paranormal events, such as if "dead people could take control of your hands and write us messages...or if our dreams could...accurately foretell the future. These are all instances of pseudoscience. They purport to use the methods and findings of science, while in fact they are faithless to its nature - often because they are based on insufficient evidence or because they ignore clues that point the other way." This site discusses metaphysics/mysticism and gives examples of the wide range of paranormal phenomena that I have [experienced and produced](#). If, as Carl said, "dead people could take control of your hands and write us messages," that is a form of what is known as automatic writing. It is only one variation in a wide spectrum of phenomena known loosely as channeling. Channeling, in one form or another, is as old as history. People have been speaking for the dead, or having the dead speak or write through them, for thousands of years, or so they say. For the skeptics' benefit, I will grant that the phenomenon has not been "proven" the way they want, which holds for every paranormal phenomenon that they have ever looked into. That is partly due to standards of evidence that rest on presumptions that defeat the very purpose of the "investigation." Yet, if I think my dead Aunt Betty is writing me a message through my own hand, how am I pretending that I am practicing science? I am not. How can it be pseudoscience when it does not even pretend to *be* science? At that point, Sagan is making the dishonest or ignorant assumption that *science* is the arbiter of reality, or at least what Sagan calls science and what Sagan calls reality. It is at that point that Sagan dons his priest's robes, becoming the authority of REALITY. The *assumption* that Sagan is making, and hoping his readers fall for his ruse, is that if something is *real*, it can be validated by science, and if science cannot validate it, it is not real. The greatest physicists [did not believe that line of reasoning](#), but a much lesser light did, one who was the very pope of his materialistic faith. Sagan laid down a slippery slope of false logic, hoping his readers went along for the ride he prepared for them, where he denigrates and dismisses anything that materialistic science cannot explain. If science cannot explain it, or does not even have the tools to explore it, Sagan calls it pseudoscience. If my dreams show me future events, and I think they are valid, how am I pretending to practice science? I am not. If I think it is real and valid, am I practicing pseudoscience? According to Sagan I am. Since the practice of Western science is only a few centuries old, when the oracle of Delphi was in action thousands of years ago, how was that "pseudoscience," when science did not yet exist? Sagan pretended that science was something it is

not. If I do not accept Carl's presumptions, I will not go skipping merrily down the path he has tried laying for his readers. This can seem like quibbling, but Sagan's materialistic writings and "investigations" have often done the opposite of bringing light into this world.

One of most egregious instances of Sagan's dishonesty was his treatment of the Face on Mars issue. On June 2, 1985, Sagan authored an article in *Parade Magazine*, a newspaper supplement in millions of Sunday newspapers across America. It was a name-calling article that had me thinking that maybe there was nothing to the Face at all. For the informed, however, Sagan's article was an amazing piece of disinformation. Sagan knew exactly what he was doing. He was not misinformed. He knowingly lied about significant aspects of the Face on Mars controversy, and one lie qualified as a Big Lie.

Sagan was writing for the lay audience in *Parade*, addressing a readership in the tens of millions. A great burden of responsibility attends writing for the lay audience, as the "expert's" science had better be as accurate as possible, because millions of people will read and heed their words, and are generally cannot tell if they are being deceived. Sagan did the opposite, taking advantage of his position to dispense scientific *disinformation*, not information. Sagan was aware of the independent image analysis being performed by various specialists, and the intriguing results being produced. His *Parade Magazine* article was artful, where he denigrated the qualifications of the image analysis researchers without naming them, calling them "amateur astronomers, flying saucer zealots, and writers of aerospace magazines." His name-calling was one of five propaganda devices Stanley McDaniel analyzed on pages 148-158 of *The McDaniel Report*, and here is the Big Lie. The process of taking photographs from a probe millions of miles from earth, transmitting them, receiving them, and processing them is not perfect. One imperfection can be missing pixels from the images obtained. One term for them is "transmission error dots." The raw images that came back from Mars had transmission error dots in them. It was a typical artifact of processing space probe data in the 1970s. Image analysis and processing is a sophisticated field. A number of the independent researchers who analyzed the Mars images were image analysis professionals, and during the years of following The Face on Mars controversy, I have become familiar with the rudiments of image analysis. There are many processes that can be used on images to refine them, and the professionals who worked on The Face images used everything in their bag of tricks. About the first thing the professionals did to the images was "remove" the transmission error dots. It was one of the process' most elementary steps. They used a program that interpolated values from neighboring pixels to arrive at a value to replace the missing data. Every processed image had the transmission error dots removed as a matter of course. Sagan studied the processed photographs that the Face researchers had produced long before he wrote the *Parade Magazine* article. Accompanying the *Parade Magazine* article was a photograph of The Face, but it was oddly processed, adding false color and obscuring its features. Strangely, the transmission error dots were left in. Such processing made little sense until reading the article and seeing the propaganda point Sagan made with the image. Of the many transmission error dots in the Face image, one fell where one might fancy a nostril. Every researcher knew it was a transmission error dot and not a nostril, something Sagan knew quite well. It was beneath mention to anybody familiar with the issue. A five-year-old boy could have figured out that the transmission error dot was not evidence of a "nostril." Everybody associated with issue knew it. Sagan was writing for the lay audience in *Parade*, however, and his performance would have made Goebbels proud. Sagan stated, "If we look more carefully at the image, we see that a strategically placed 'nostril' is in fact a bit of lost data in the radio transmission from Mars to Earth." The obvious implication was that the "flying-saucer zealot" investigators were being fooled by the transmission error dot, influencing their belief that

The Face was artificial. Sagan made the researchers look like idiots to millions of American readers by telling a lie so cheap, so big, that there is no conceivable excuse for his behavior. Sagan knew exactly what he was doing. When I understood what he had done, my respect for his debunking work fell to about zero. Such behavior is blatantly dishonest. Sagan could also be quite arrogant in private. During the pre-*Parade* days of the Face on Mars controversy, Sagan received a lengthy report draft on the Face image with the reply, "It is not whether you're right or wrong sir. You have not even entered the discussion." (see *The McDaniel Report*, p. 157, n. 4) In *The Demon-Haunted World*, Sagan reproduces his *Parade* article nearly verbatim, and even repeats his "nostril" canard. Stanley McDaniel and crowd have been gracious regarding Sagan's disinformation efforts, and lauded his admission in *The Demon-Haunted World*, that the Face bore closer scrutiny. For his admission to be buried amidst his regurgitation of his *Parade* article, Sagan's acknowledgement was faint praise indeed. Sagan even wrote, "There was an unfortunate dismissal of the feature by a project official as a trick of light and shadow, which prompted a later accusation that NASA was covering up the discovery of the Millennium." (see *The Demon-Haunted World*, p. 53). The most famous dismissal by a project official was Carl Sagan's *Parade* article! Did he keep a straight face while writing that? [Brian O'Leary](#), who was, with Sagan, the world's leading Mars expert for many years, was incensed with Sagan's *Parade* article, although Brian's big heart apologized for his anger toward Sagan, posthumously (see McDaniel and Paxson, eds., *The Case for the Face*, pp. 42-43.).

In my opinion, the artificiality of the Face on Mars has not been settled. Numerous web sites today deal with the issue, Richard Hoagland's *The Enterprise Mission* most prominent among them. NASA was guilty of eliminating about 90% of the data from the recent flyby image by removing 75% of the pixels and truncating the data's gray scale values, things they did not tell the public when the photos were released, and only partly admitted to when Hoagland and others publicly took them to task for it. There is good reason not to trust NASA's motivation [on those issues](#). If NASA had processed a photograph of my face the way that they did that first Face image, my mother may not have recognized her son. The second image, the full one obtained in 2001, rules out artificiality for many, but there are still striking geometric features, such as its "headdress." Although I do not lose any sleep over it, I await better data that might come along one day.

Sagan performed similarly in "debunking" other areas of the offbeat and paranormal. His performance on the Sirius-Dogon mystery was an instance of him shouting from his bully pulpit in the public eye, never allowing the other side to air their responses, and even continuing to write as if there was no credible opposition to his views. See Jerome Clark's *Unexplained!*, pp. 346-348 for a short summary of the performance of Sagan and his "skeptical" colleagues on that issue.

Another area of Sagan's debunking was his 1974 performance at the American Association for the Advancement of Science (AAAS) symposium on the theories of Emmanuel Velikovsky. Sagan presented a paper that discussed his "ten problems" with Velikovsky's theories. I stumbled into that controversy several years ago and have read about 10,000 pages of material regarding Velikovsky's theories and the scientific establishment's attacks on him. I delved much further into the Velikovsky issue than I originally intended, partly because the legitimacy of his theories is contested, although on science's fringes. His theories represent an ambitious synthesis of several areas of study, including mythology, geology, psychology, physics and astronomy. His theories cover such a broad range of topics that it would take many years of study for one person to properly assess. I do not believe Velikovsky's reconstructions of several planetary near-collisions in historical times, but I have not been

quick to dispose of his theories into the "crackpot" bin, and I doubt there should be such a bin. The body of theory Velikovsky promoted is known as "catastrophic" theory. There is still heated debate regarding the legitimacy of Velikovsky's theories. I have taken up the study of the topic as a hobby, but it will take years of study to properly assess his theories as a whole, and I probably will never succeed in making a learned and complete assessment of his theories. However wrong Velikovsky may have been, how "uncredentialed" he was in many areas of speculation, he was treated mercilessly by the scientific establishment ever since his *Worlds in Collision* was published in 1950. Ironically, one of the few scientists who gave Velikovsky his ear was Albert Einstein, an academic colleague in Berlin in the 1920s, and a fellow Jew and Princeton resident in his last years. When Velikovsky's prediction that Jupiter would be found to emit radio waves was unexpectedly confirmed in 1955, Einstein was impressed, offered to help Velikovsky get other scientific testing done on his theories, and when he died soon thereafter, the one book open on his desk was *Worlds in Collision*. When space exploration data from NASA and the Soviet Union confirmed more of Velikovsky's predictions, interest was renewed in his theories, leading to the AAAS Symposium in 1974. In reality, the symposium was designed to publicly put the nails in Velikovsky's theoretical coffin. Sagan led what astronomer Tom Van Flandern called a "sneak attack." Their papers were given in a rigged forum, where Velikovsky was not given a chance to review their papers before they were presented, in order to properly respond to them. Sagan's presentation was the centerpiece of the symposium, and his paper was delivered with some of the smug demeanor that he was noted for. One of his one-liners made fun of Velikovsky's theories about what might have been deposited from Venus' atmosphere on earth in a planetary near miss. After Sagan delivered his paper, he never allowed himself to debate Velikovsky in a fair forum, and his bully pulpit job at the AAAS Symposium permanently killed any interest in Velikovsky's theories by the scientific community. The debate of his theories today takes place on the scientific world's fringes. Velikovsky was not the first catastrophist, nor was he the last. Curiously, [catastrophic theories](#) are more acceptable today than in Velikovsky's day, being presented by credentialed scientists, the most accepted put forth by Bill Napier and Victor Clube. Recently there were two movies about asteroids/comets crashing into earth, as catastrophic theory has entered the popular imagination. Velikovsky's name probably should not be uttered in the same breath as Einstein's, but he did not deserve the attacks he received from the scientific establishment. The astronomer Harlow Shapley, who led the attack on Velikovsky in 1950, wrote a threatening letter (he waged a boycott) to Velikovsky's publisher, calling Velikovsky's work the "Black Arts." However accurate Sagan's critique of Velikovsky may have been, the way he delivered it, letting his reputation outweigh his arguments (obvious by his never dealing publicly with the issue again; his paper was supposed to be a deathblow to Velikovskian theory) was the kind of unfair treatment that Sagan would later display regarding the Face on Mars issue.

There is much more to say about Sagan's career as a defender of the scientific establishment and a debunker, but not here.

[5] Randi has put up a "reward" for many years for "proof" of the paranormal. It used to be a \$10,000 reward. Apparently, debunking can be a lucrative career, and Randi has raised the reward to \$1 million (apparently also with donations from supporters of his cause). Mr. Skeptic has worked with Randi, and apparently got Randi to extend his reward to Free Energy. I asked Dennis about it, and he said Randi's reward was written so that Dennis could never collect it. Randi apparently wrote his "offer" with the skill of the cleverest lawyer, giving himself an "out." I would never stoop to going after Randi's money, and I doubt Dennis would have. His "The money was never safer" (*Flim-Flam*, p. 252)

boast/joke clearly displays his mentality. Randi's "offer" is not made in the spirit of impartial investigation, but more as an arrogant boast that he is right, and dares the world to prove to him otherwise. I thought about Dennis' comment on Randi's offer, and wondered if Randi was hedging his bet a little. I studied Randi's work over the years and he seemed honest, if perhaps narrow-minded. Recently I read something that made me wonder about Randi's integrity. In Dennis Rawlins' account of a CSICOP scandal (they fudged their numbers, and it would be the last time CSICOP did any original research), he wrote unflattering things about Randi. Rawlins was and is a firm "skeptic" of paranormal phenomena, but he also professed to believe in doing honest research into the subject. Rawlins' experience gave plenty of evidence for the political nature of CSICOP and its mission. Honest skeptics doing what they think is honest investigation is laudable, if limited by the investigator's beliefs. Those who appear to be less than saints run CSICOP, as with virtually every other organization. Mr. Skeptic's indefensible [libel piece](#) on Dennis is one example of many. The Rawlins scandal evidenced the ugly power politics that plagues nearly every organization. Phil Klass wrote a rebuttal to Rawlins' account of the scandal. Rawlins too-cleverly titled his essay "sTARBABY." Rawlins should not be taken at his word about the scandal. Klass' rebuttal at least seemed to stick to the facts, but in Klass' [inimitable style](#), he could not refrain from making many observations on Rawlins' character and integrity (none of them flattering), but the title Klass chose for his rebuttal was the typical class CSICOP is known for. Klass titled his article "Crybaby." Rawlins had intimate interaction with James Randi while the scandal began unfolding. Randi was apparently involved in doing damage control on Rawlins. According to Rawlins, Randi was part of an effort to keep Rawlins quiet and in line with the debunking program. Rawlins wrote that Randi spent considerable time with Rawlins, and threatened him to keep him silent. The scandal was brewing in 1978, and Randi apparently did his part in trying to keep the scandal from becoming public. According to Rawlins, Phil Klass was also one of those trying to keep the scandal quiet. Rawlins' account confirmed my experiences with the CSICOP crowd, but one thing surprised me. Back when Rawlins was with CSICOP, Randi's "challenge" was only \$10,000. During Randi's long, soulful talks with Rawlins, Rawlins says Randi admitted that he planned on never paying out the \$10,000 reward because, "I always have an out." See Rawlins, sTARBABY, *The Velikovskian*, vol. II, no. 1, p. 39. Rawlins further states that Randi plays policeman, judge and jury for his "challenge" tests, and "thus has never supported my idea of neutral judgment of CSICOP tests." Rawlins said that Randi's motivation, as revealed in a confidential memo Randi wrote, was keeping the issue quiet so the "irrationalists" would have nothing to crow about, because CSICOP could "not afford to wash its dirty linen in public." If what Rawlins wrote was true, and I have little doubt it is not, and I heard Dennis say almost the same thing, then Randi may have to join company with Carl Sagan. Randi seemed a true believer in his cause, but having an "out" on his challenge shows that he may not be quite the true disbeliever he presents himself as. Randi may be one more debunker of questionable integrity, but one with the gall to put up a \$1 million challenge he may plan on never paying, because he gives himself an "out." [Richard Milton](#) analyzed Randi's million-dollar challenge on his web site, and presented an instance where somebody submitted their entry to Randi. He not only failed to accept the challenge, but Randi virtually ran away with his tail between his legs while insulting the challenger, using *a priori* reasoning that more than suggests dishonesty in Randi's stance. In an interview with Mr. Skeptic, Randi said the a debunker should never make up his/her mind about the phenomenon being investigated until the evidence is examined. It would be nice if Randi would take his own advice.

The debunking/investigating that may do some good for the world is telling the real story about [fluoride](#), telling the real story about the [cancer racket](#), exposing our [murderous political system](#) for what it is,

showing how legitimate our [energy industry](#) is. That kind of "debunking" could save millions of lives, [make this world a vastly better place](#) and perhaps help save our species from self-annihilation. Of course, that kind of debunking takes on the powerful and can lead to [misery](#) and [an early death](#). Debunking psychics does not.

Trying to show the world that Uri Geller is a charlatan is pedestrian debunking. Where the Randis of the world have fallen into their holes is not in believing that Geller is a fraud. If he is, sure, expose him. I know people who do not think Geller is a fraud (with credible stories to tell), but may be a trickster, always keeping somebody like Randi guessing. That is not the hole Randi fell into. The hole he fell into was not believing that Geller had no paranormal ability, but believing that *Randi himself* has no paranormal ability. Because Randi, Sagan, etc. believe that they are merely bags of chemicals, although complicated ones, they project that belief onto everything that they see, practicing materialistic fundamentalism. If Randi was able to open his mind just a little, he could readily produce paranormal phenomena for himself, and not just for the sake of the phenomena. Once people witness or produce [irrefutable paranormal phenomena](#) for themselves, it often leads to the idea that maybe they are not just a bag of chemicals, and that leads to a certain comfort that all the materialistic "science" can never take away, and can open up new realms to explore, such as the realm of the soul. Reality is not out *there*, it is in *here*.

Having paranormal ability and what it entails has nothing whatsoever to do with superstition, although Randi thinks so. Superstition, as with materialism, is putting the power outside of one's self. Walking the light path is putting the power into *ourselves*, and granting others their own inner light. The Randis and Sagans of the world are trying to banish that inner light, although they seem to think that sterile reason is all the inner light anybody needs. Fundamental materialism is a dreary philosophy, but it somehow exhilarates the world's Sagans and Randis, although it seems to have been part of making them such reportedly unpleasant men.

[6] Mr. Skeptic first published a web site about Dennis in September 1996, the day after Dennis' Philadelphia show, and I began communicating with him in November 1996. By early 1997, Mr. Skeptic stated that he had spent hundreds of hours "investigating" Dennis. Mr. Skeptic often could not get his basic facts straight about Dennis, but one thing became clear early in our brief Internet relationship and during a three-hour conversation with him in early 1997: Mr. Skeptic was becoming increasingly desperate to demonstrate that Dennis' efforts were inspired by criminal motivation, and the word "fraud" constantly spilled from his mouth and keyboard. In the legal world, fraud is a criminal matter, because it makes a determination regarding the accused's state of mind. If somebody has been convicted of or pled guilty to fraud, the legal finding is that their *intent* was to deceive their victims. Dennis has *never* pled guilty to intentionally deceiving anybody, and has *never* been convicted of that crime. Because of the *intent* aspect of fraud, it has always been defined and prosecuted under criminal law. Civil law, on the other hand, does not deal with criminal intent. In both Washington and California, Dennis was prosecuted and "convicted" under civil law.

In Washington in 1985-1986, there were *never* any criminal charges brought against Dennis or his company, so fraud charges were never filed. Not only was Dennis *not* prosecuted for fraud in Washington, the Deputy Attorney General leading the prosecution officially stated that Dennis' [state of mind was not on trial](#).

In California, the prosecution was waged using *civil* law. When they originally arrested Dennis with a [million-dollar bail](#) and [handed out promotions all around](#), they piled on some fraud charges (so they could try for life-in-prison, as life in prison for a civil law “violation” would be a bit of a stretch, even for them). When I [mortgaged my life](#) to give Dennis a prayer in those [rigged proceedings](#), it led to Dennis’ release on his own recognizance within six weeks of my quixotic gesture. Once Dennis was free and able to defend himself, the prosecution quickly dropped *all* of the criminal charges. In open court the prosecution admitted that they were [not prosecuting Dennis for criminal intent](#), which the [judge also made clear](#). That is why Dennis calls himself the “accidental felon,” because the prosecution and court admitted that they never demonstrated criminal intent, and Dennis’ prison records even said his “crime” was [failing to register](#) his marketing plan under *civil* law, which was classified as a *misdemeanor*. In kangaroo court, failing to file a form and pay \$50 becomes a felony, even though the [lawyer who wrote the law](#) estimated that up to 100,000 Californians had committed the same “crime,” and Dennis is the only person who will ever spend time behind bars for that “crime.”

In addition, the settlement in Washington and plea bargain in California were only accomplished by the prosecution and judge taking people hostage and forcing Dennis to capitulate. In Washington, the prosecution took Dennis’ customers hostage, and Dennis only settled because his customers voted for him to settle. Dennis calls it the [dirtiest deal he ever did](#). In California, the judge took Dennis’ [attorney hostage](#).

The official records are clear: Dennis was *not* prosecuted for fraud in Washington; he did *not* plead guilty to fraud, and was not convicted of it, in California. Dennis has published those facts in his books, usually by presenting or quoting the official documentation (court transcripts, prison records, official correspondence from the prosecutors, etc.). Mr. Skeptic had all of that information in his hands by late 1996. For several years (and it may still be true) Mr. Skeptic maintained an essay on his site from my original 1996-1997 website that presented the evidence of what happened to Dennis in Washington and Ventura, which cited the many official documents presented in Dennis’ books. I stopped interacting with Mr. Skeptic in April 1997, when I left Dennis’ company.

The official documentation regarding the prosecutions of Dennis has always been readily available; the officials in Washington and California have always been happy to present their documentary evidence to anybody who asked, even express-mailing it.

None of the official documentation that Mr. Skeptic ever saw demonstrated criminal intent on Dennis’ part. As Mr. Skeptic interacted with people who knew the *facts* of Dennis’ journey, because we had been there, we always easily invalidated his *theories* about Dennis’ criminality, which he tacitly admitted by abandoning his new line of “evidence” that Dennis was a criminal, and doggedly searched for others. It took some digging for Mr. Skeptic to find the articles he quoted at the end of his [Skeptical Inquirer article](#). If Mr. Skeptic even cited those 1992-1993 articles accurately, they are about the only articles I am aware of that actually *lied* about the legal actions against Dennis, insofar as stating that he was prosecuted for fraud in Washington and pled guilty to fraud in California.

Mr. Skeptic’s article should be put into its proper context. His article was not an off-the-cuff post in an

Internet forum, an ill-advised email or part of his many writings on his website. The *Skeptical Inquirer* article was Mr. Skeptic's initial fifteen minutes of fame. The aspiring debunker finally made the big time, having an article published in the house organ of the "skeptical" movement. His use of those libelous articles was a careful and conscious act, because those were about the only existing documents that he might credibly cite that "proved" that Dennis had criminal intent. Mr. Skeptic had to present a veneer of academic respectability, particularly in a magazine that claims to speak for rational people. When it came time to go on the record, did Mr. Skeptic cite *any* official documents? He did not even cite the many libelous articles that were written in California and Washington, but found something from a Utah newspaper that provided the "facts" he needed to make his case.

Libel is not only intentionally defaming somebody, but it is also having a reckless disregard for the truth while attacking somebody in print. If Mr. Skeptic did not commit libel with his *Skeptical Inquirer* article, then nobody has ever committed that crime.

For a moment, let us continue to give Mr. Skeptic the benefit of the doubt. His reporting that Dennis was prosecuted for fraud in Washington and pled guilty to fraud in California was obviously a false rendering of the events. Mr. Skeptic was repeatedly informed that he had committed libel, a libel that was easily proved. If Mr. Skeptic possessed a shred of integrity, he was given ample opportunity to display it. He could have mitigated his crime by contacting the *Skeptical Inquirer* and having the libel retracted. To my knowledge, Mr. Skeptic has never even acknowledged his libel, calling his article "funny" on his debunking site. Far from uttering any *mea culpas*, Mr. Skeptic has only stepped up his rhetoric since 1997, constantly harping on Dennis' "criminal" past. Mr. Skeptic attacked Dennis on a [site](#) devoted to exploring the "enigma" of Dennis Lee in early 2006, and began by noting that Dennis "pled guilty to multiple felony counts" in California, which is technically true but misleading. If Mr. Skeptic can deceive his readers into thinking that Dennis pled guilty to criminal intent, his disinformational task becomes easier.

Mr. Skeptic is dishonest, and all of his writings about Dennis should be read, if they are worth reading at all, with that in mind.

[7] See Dennis Lee's *The Alternative*, p. 63.

[8] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, p. 6.

[9] The literature is vast in this area. There are three epic books written or edited by Churchill and Vander Wall: *The COINTELPRO papers*, *Cages of Steel*, and *Agents of Repression*. Also, see the periodical *Covert Action Quarterly*, and Parenti, *Dirty Truths*. The crushing of dissent and positive action in this country is merely the domestic version of what the United States has been doing to countries around the world for many years. For the international versions of that phenomenon, see Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*; Chomsky and Herman, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism*, and Blum, *Killing Hope*. For the latest target of the FBI and our police state – environmentalists – see Helvag, *The War against the Greens*.

[10] See M. Wesley Swearingen's *FBI Secrets: Agent's Exposé*, pp. 88-89.

[11] Weinglass. *Race for Justice*. p. 270.

[12] For instance, in 1996 Raymond Carter was released from ten years behind bars, with a judge ruling that his conviction was obtained by a police officer paying a prostitute \$500 for the appropriate testimony. The policeman in question is currently in prison himself. Information located at Mr. Skeptic's "Hate Groups" web site, the organization Refuse & Resist! at 305 Madison Ave., Suite 1166, New York, NY 10165.

[13] See Weinglass. *Race for Justice* for a succinct summary of the judicial irregularities that lead to Abu-Jamal's conviction. Weinglass was Abu Jamal's attorney, so some bias is expected, but millions of people think the same way Weinglass does. The evidence shouts out at rational observers. "Justice" would not be served by executing a gadfly journalist.

[14] According to Amnesty International, Iran, Nigeria, Pakistan, Saudi Arabia, the United States and Yemen are the only nations that have executed people for crimes committed as children since 1990. The United States has executed more children than those other nations.

[15] Robbins. *Diet for a New America*. p. 367.

[16] Robbins. *Diet for a New America*. p. 368.

[17] See Eric Schlosser's article in *Mother Jones*, August 2001.

[18] Gowe, R.S. Director of the Animal Research Institute in Canada, quoted at the conference on "Livestock Intensive Methods of Production," Ottawa, Dec 6-7, 1978. Cited in Robbins. *Diet for a New America*. p. 64.

[19] Charles Mayo. .Quoted by William H. Hendrix, *New York Daily News*, Mar. 13, 1961. Cited in PETA fact sheet. "Animal Experimentation: Sadistic Scandal." May 15, 1997.

[20] Kovel, Joel. "What's Wrong with McDonald's?" *Z Magazine*, September 1997, p. 28.

[21] Kovel, Joel. "What's Wrong with McDonald's?" *Z Magazine*, September 1997, p. 26.

[22] Kovel, Joel. "What's Wrong with McDonald's?" *Z Magazine*, September 1997, p. 26.

[23] Kovel, Joel. "What's Wrong with McDonald's?" *Z Magazine*, September 1997, p. 26.

[24] By Henry I. Miller. "The cutting edge of cutting calories." *The Washington Times*, April 16, 1998.

[25] CSIRO Australia "Keep Off the Grass - Reduce Air Pollution" media release, April 20, 1998.

[26] Press release of February 9, 1994. "Pure Food Campaign Viewed as Disservice to Sound Science. TASSC Attacks Critics of Bovine Somatotropin (BST)."

[27] "Drugs That Kill Instead of Cure" Editorial, *The New York Times*. April 18, 1998.

[28] "Weight Loss, Not Weight Gain, A Health Risk For Older Adults." University of Washington. Press release of April 8, 1998.

[29] From Milloy's "Junk Science at Large, Hall of Shame" page, downloaded on April 20, 1998.

[30] Milloy, Steven. "Relax...You Might Not Be Doomed" *Public Risk*. February 1997.

[31] From the "About Junk Science FAQs," downloaded on April 20, 1998.

[32] See Elisa Ong and Stanton Glantz's "Constructing 'Sound Science' and 'Good Epidemiology': Tobacco, Lawyers and Public Relations Firms," [*American Journal of Public Health*, Nov. 2001, Vol. 91, No. 11, pp. 1749-1757.](#)

[33] There is a short book that lists dozens of those fake environmental organizations titled, *The Greenpeace Guide to Anti-environmental Organizations*, published by Odonian Press. Those fake environmental organizations are one more avenue of assault on the environmental movement, mainly bankrolled by large corporations.

[34] See *PR Watch*, third quarter 2000, vol. 7, no. 3, "How big tobacco helped create 'the Junkman.'" See also from the same issue, "The Usual Suspects: Industry Hacks Turn Fear on Its Head."

[35] Gore Vidal wittily calls the "two-party" U.S. political system "one party with two right wings." He even has purposely confused the two on national TV, referring to a suited chap who called himself a liberal "the conservative" and vice versa, while they "debated." See Vidal, *The Decline and Fall of the American Empire*, which is a brief, extremely engaging and funny introduction to Vidal's views on the U. S. political environment.

[36] Chomsky, Noam. *Rethinking Camelot, JFK, the Vietnam War and US Political Culture*. Boston: South End Press, 1993.

[37] See Parenti, Michael. *Dirty Truths*. San Francisco: City Lights Books, 1996. pp. 153-191.

[38] Smith, Phillip. "Off the Shelf" Book Review, *Covert Action*, Summer 1995.

The Next Section: [The Handiwork of the BPA Hit Man](#) (33K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Handiwork of the BPA Hit Man

By Wade Frazier

Dear Reader: This is a slightly edited diary excerpt from the early 1990s. When I wrote the following pages, it was so emotionally draining that I stopped writing in my diary for six months. I do not want to rewrite my work and go through the harrowing experience of rewriting. The style is somewhat different from my writings today, and you have my apologies, but people are often curious about how Dennis' employee died. This narrative best relates to [this piece](#) of this site. Here it is.

I have been asked more than once how Mr. Hit Man (I am writing about the Bonneville Power Administration (BPA) hit man here) caused the death of one of Dennis' employees. I will tell you about Mr. Hit Man, who was little more than a bit player in this tale, and show you how much could be written about all of it.

First off, his name is Bill. Although I have never met him, he is about six foot seven and weighs about three hundred pounds. I hear he is unforgettable to meet if only because of his great size. Apparently Bill gained fame and credentials by waging a "battle" with an electric company over the right to produce hydroelectric electricity on his land. He won and used it to give him credibility as a proponent of "alternative energy", and Bill told Dennis that through it he got to know people in the industry and found that working with them instead of against them was the way to go.

Was Bill's original "battle" with an electric company staged? Or did he sell himself as a prostitute to the electric companies after his first encounter with them? I don't know, but there is no doubt that his masters were and are the electric companies. Bill admitted that he worked as a "consultant" for the electric companies, and Dennis says he can prove that Bill was getting paid by the BPA all during his several month vendetta against Dennis' company.

During the middle of the electric companies' fervent, if anonymous, campaign against Dennis' company in Seattle, along came a man who gave his credentials and asked Dennis to hire him to smooth things with the electric companies. Dennis had been around the block quite a few times by that time, and immediately suspected Bill for who he was, and Dennis' wife was also

afraid to have Bill around. Dennis [hired him](#) and told his wife, "Then let's not trust him. But I'd rather have my enemy up close where I can watch him."

Bill worked for Dennis about ten weeks. He didn't do *anything* productive for the company during his tenure. But what he *did* do was try to befriend the company's key people, to place doubts in their heads about whether Dennis was really the man for the job. Never mind that Dennis was the owner of a multimillion-dollar company that he built from a twenty-dollar bill eight months before. During those ten weeks came repeated attacks from the media and the Attorney General's (AG's) office, working hand in hand. During one particularly vicious, backstabbing attack by the AG, orchestrated during a business trip when Dennis was out of town, Bill started working in earnest to incite a mutiny from the inside, just as those on the outside were trying to breach the hull.

Dennis came back from his trip to a company in pandemonium. He ran a full-page ad in *The Seattle Times*, submitted just before the weekend when it fortuitously ran under the weekend editor's scrutiny (and thus ran without being killed by the big wigs) that enumerated the crimes being perpetrated by the electric companies and the AG. It created quite a splash and it backed up the AG several steps, people like him being taken aback when their victims fight back.

Dennis then called Bill in and sent him home for two weeks, with pay, to calm things down at the office. Bill denied he was trying to incite mutiny. He was sent home, understanding that he would be fired if he talked to any other employees during his stay at home. Legitimately fulfilling the job duties that he had actually solicited to Dennis' company did not require contact with any other employees.

Bill knew he had been found out and kicked his campaign into high gear. His job was to destroy the company, and he went to work in earnest. The next day he contacted everybody he could who was related to the company. "Let's just get rid of Dennis and I'll be happy to run the company, with the electric companies' blessings of course." It was amazing, or maybe not, how many people bought those lies.

Two days after Bill was sent home he flew to the finance company that had financed Dennis' company to the tune of millions of dollars. He used all his powers of persuasion to try convincing the financier to pull the rug on Dennis. It shook up the financier. Not everybody was completely fooled, and Dennis was still running a viable company. Mutiny would come later, when the ship was sailing quite low in the water with gaping holes in its sides.

But Bill kept working on anybody and everybody he could, and eventually scraped together about a half-dozen misfits from Dennis' hundreds of employees, including one who appeared to be another electric company plant.

Then Dennis' place of business started being broken into every night. In a six-week period the factory and offices were broken into about thirty (30, not a typo) times. The police eventually became tired of responding to the alarms. Dennis' people found one door that was easy to jimmy, and ordered a special lock that took over a month to get. Other doors were left open by anonymous employees, allowing easy access for the burglars.

Documents would be missing from all the departments, critical phone equipment was stolen in one of the night raids, leaving the company without phones for two days. During that time Dennis hired a security service to also see to the building's security.

Then one morning at about six a.m. the security guard caught them in the act. All the company filing cabinets had been dragged to the loading dock to be loaded into a pickup truck, a truck that looked just like the one Bill drove. What a coincidence. They tore out of there, peeling tracks in the snow. That was a little too close for comfort. That would have likely been the end of the company. Dennis hired armed guards and offered a \$1,000 reward for catching a burglar in the act - dead or alive. That stopped the break-ins. The company chained one door (only during the night, after hours) that kept getting broken into, then the fire department showed up the next day, responding to an anonymous tip, and pressed criminal charges against Dennis for chaining the door (eventually thrown out of court).

Units on the assembly line were being sabotaged. Suppliers would get mysterious phone calls canceling orders for critical parts, or orders for things the company didn't need. The IRS got an anonymous call telling them to jump on Dennis' back, and pronto, because he wasn't paying his taxes. They called to come down and audit the company. OSHA got an anonymous tip that the factory was in violation of safety regulations, and came for a surprise inspection that Dennis' company passed with flying colors. The company received bomb threats. Dennis had anonymous threats on his life. I am not making any of this up, as hard as this may be to believe.

Bill was burning the midnight oil, earning his pay from the BPA. One of the many dark deeds of the AG's office was to force Dennis into signing a consent decree, in theory settling their assault on his company. I don't want to go too far into the detail of the consent decree and its background, but in essence the AG took four hundred of Dennis' customers hostage, and unless Dennis signed the decree, his company would be destroyed and the customers would be out \$4,000 each. It was all done in the name of protecting the consumer. The decree admitted to no guilt of anything and said Dennis' company would do the things they were already doing. It was a useless document. But over the years the decree would be used many times by unscrupulous law enforcement personnel, district attorneys, media hatchet men, "skeptics" and other people as hard evidence Dennis was a crook.

One provision of the decree was that Dennis would provide a list of installed customers. The first batch of names and phone numbers went to the AG. Immediately the customers called

Dennis' company, saying the AG's office had contacted them, and asked many leading questions regarding their satisfaction with their system. They were told that if any of them wanted to get out of their contracts for their systems, the AG would be more than happy to make it happen for them. Good old Big Brother, protecting the public. Dennis gave the AG no more names of customers.

"Coincidentally" Bill and his dupes went on a campaign to get the customer list for "themselves." One woman worked for one of Bill's misfits, Harlow, and had access to the customer list. Harlow and Bill began working her over with lies, promises, assurances, etc., to get her to give them the information. They did that with any employee who might be useful to them.

Bill started dating a married woman in the accounting department. They were just good friends, the woman would profess, but she was stealing documents and giving them to Bill. One day the woman was caught in the act of theft and signed a confession that she was stealing records for Bill. Dennis went to the police with the signed confession, trying to get Bill and the woman arrested and charged with industrial espionage. The police would have to "look" into the matter. Predictably, nothing happened. Dennis then filed a charge to have Bill arrested. The police refused to accept the petition for arrest.

At about the same time a petition was filed in federal bankruptcy court to have Dennis' company declared bankrupt. Guess who were the petitioners? Bill and his misfits, of course. When the petition was filed, Dennis thought it was a joke. The company was in the midst of trying to install four hundred systems before the energy tax credit expired at the end of 1985, and they had hundreds of employees, not one delinquent creditor, inventory, orders, and cash. Bankrupt?

The petition didn't have one legitimate creditor on it. In fact Bill, through having the woman in accounting steal documents, was desperately trying to find legitimate creditors to con into filing with him and his dupes. Failing at that, he and his dupes just made up things and filed their petition. Bill, who worked ten weeks for the company, claimed he was owed \$5,000 in vacation pay. One salesman who had been overpaid and owed the company \$12,000 was another filer. His wife filed also, for thousands. Another salesman (the other likely plant) who worked there less than a month claimed the company owed him \$37,000. And Harlow, the dupe who had been Bill's first treasured find in the company, because Dennis (deceptively) told Bill how valuable Harlow was to him, said the company owed him thousands in wages. The Department of Labor had previously come to Dennis' company and audited the wages paid to Harlow, determining that he had been overpaid \$2,000 by the company. Dennis would loan Harlow money against his wages. But by golly, Bill had assembled five "creditors", the minimum required to file the bankruptcy petition.

After knowing who the creditors were, who could predict this bankruptcy "petition" would be the

blow that would eventually bring the company down? The bankruptcy action put Dennis' company into a court it would never escape from. The law was not even remotely on the petitioner's side. But the electric company influence in Washington State apparently reached far and wide, clear into the federal courts.

(Dennis read this and informed me that the final deathblow was when his company was stolen, and that he was trying to maneuver around the bankruptcy action when it happened. I can agree with that interpretation of events, especially as I was beginning my tenure with Dennis when those events happened. The bankruptcy petition *did* strangle the company, but was part of an array of weapons that were being used. The bankruptcy petition, along with the other blows, made the company of dubious value, and the thieves really did not steal all that much. I doubt, and I believe that Dennis does also, that if he was able to dance around the bankruptcy action (which in light of the kangaroo court activities in Ventura makes it a questionable hypothesis), the electric company gangsters were going to wave the white flag and leave him alone. I will grant that Dennis' interpretation is more informed than mine regarding those events, but see *My Quest*, pp. 134, 142, 150-153, which supports my view of events.)

There is a section of the bankruptcy code, called section 303 I believe, and I think it is under Chapter 11, which will allow 5 *bona fide* creditors to take advantage of section 303. Bona fide creditors means creditors that have undisputed, proven claims. Bill's buddies made their claims up out of the thin air, completely undocumented. Can you imagine me and four of my family members making up stories and taking IBM into bankruptcy court? I think under section 303 they had to also be owed over \$5,000 apiece. No wonder Bill was owed \$5,000 in vacation pay.

The law was intended to protect creditors and the company. Putting a company into a 303 situation put them into a bankruptcy holding pattern. The company couldn't use its assets, but it also was shielded from its creditors. In effect it acts as a de facto bankruptcy, with a future court date to determine whether the company was really bankrupt or not.

So Bill drug four people into court telling lies that had not one shred of supporting documentation, and asked for a bankruptcy motion the law says is expressly denied their breed of "creditor." The judge (lawyer) says "Sounds great to me, motion granted."

For the next seven months the company slowly died, strangled by the inability to refinance, borrow, or do any financial maneuvering in the face of the other assaults the company suffered. They tried to have the petition thrown out, but the judge denied it, aided by Dennis' highly recommended bankruptcy lawyer's inexplicable loss of ability to make one coherent and forceful argument. I have seen Dennis' lawyers lie down and play dead more than once now. They are coached (or threatened, or bribed) into that posture, unbeknownst to their client. And do you think Bill came up with his 303 bankruptcy scheme all by himself?

Bill had been seen in the AG Hit Lady's (I call her [Ms. Deputy Attorney General](#) on my web site.) office more than once, but when confronted with that charge, she denied it, along with about a hundred other lies she told. When the AG Hit Lady couldn't get the information she believed she was entitled to, Bill tried to get it by his more devious means. Bill also had other informational needs, and wonder of wonders, A.G. Hit Lady gave Dennis' company a shopping list of documents she needed that was almost identical to the documents Bill was trying to steal.

On one of AG's shopping sprees, when they came to the company in hopes of making off with sacks full of documents, Dennis put the heat to them, and his in-house lawyer questioned the legality of the possession of the documents they already had on Dennis' company. It worked, and the next day came a package to the company stuffed with the documents the woman in accounting had confessed to stealing for Bill. Accompanying it was a letter from the AG Hit Lady, professing innocence and claiming no knowledge that she had possession of stolen documents (See *The Alternative*, exhibit 1F). She said Bill's lawyer gave them to her, the Bill she had never heard of.

AG Hit Lady did not have nearly as much success in snuffing out Dennis' company as she was supposed to, and within weeks of the final confrontation she left her career with the Attorney General's office and got a job teaching at a law school.

With a signed confession of theft by the woman in accounting, and a signed letter from the recipient of the stolen documents (the Attorney General's office) stating receipt of them from Bill's lawyer, Dennis' in-house attorney (who later helped engineer the eventual theft of Dennis' company) filed a complaint himself to have Bill arrested. The detective who received the request for arrest said he was legally obliged to accept the request from the lawyer, but they were so busy they probably wouldn't get around to arresting Bill for at least six months. Bill was never arrested or even investigated. He worked for the right boss.

Now we come to the death of Dennis' employee. That happened soon after the break-ins stopped. There was that woman I previously mentioned who worked for Harlow. After Harlow was fired she became an important potential source of customer lists and other information for Bill. She cooperated with them. She became one of their spies and everybody knew it. Also her attitude became a little overbearing, probably because her mind had been so poisoned by Bill and Harlow, so she had little respect for the company anyway. Dennis' wife eventually confronted the woman with the charges, and the woman denied them, even though Dennis' wife knew she was doing it. When the woman was confronted with the charges she became very fearful of losing her job, and begged not to be fired.

Dennis' wife struck a compromise, sort of like the deal Dennis gave Bill, except for the pay. She was to go home and stay there for two weeks without pay. If after two weeks Dennis' wife was convinced she had stayed away from Harlow and Bill and kept her nose clean, she would

be welcomed back, with a new attitude, it was hoped.

At that point all Dennis and his wife knew was that an employee cooperated with those trying to destroy the company, and they hoped the discipline would straighten her out. What they didn't know was that the woman had experienced a very difficult past that included drug and alcohol abuse, a recent divorce, a young daughter to take care of and the inability to keep a job for more than a few days or weeks. She was living with her mother and viewed her job at Dennis' company as her greatest opportunity to pull her life back together.

She went home properly chastised. She refused all phone calls from Harlow and Bill, using her mother as a shield. They tried everything to get to her, even trying to meet her at the supermarket. She was terrified of losing her job. She had held that job longer than any other, even though she had been there only a few months. The two weeks were coming to an end and she was getting depressed, believing she might not get called back to work.

On the last evening of her two-week suspension her mother had to leave the house and took the woman's daughter with her. Harlow and "a very tall man with a beard and mustache" (Bill) came to her house with a bottle of whiskey in hand, and the woman answered the door. That would be the last and greatest mistake of her life. Although she had recently won her battle against alcohol addiction, in her vulnerable state Bill and Harlow got to her.

A couple hours later the woman called her sister, who's husband worked in the installation department for Dennis. The woman was drunk and told her sister that "they" had convinced her that Dennis and his wife would never hire her back, that they were mean and were liars. She told her sister that she gave Harlow and Bill what they wanted, and she wanted her sister's husband to give them information on the most recent installations. Her sister refused to let her talk to the husband, and asked if she could come over. The distraught woman sounded like she needed it. The woman replied, "No, I'm just going to bed. I'll be alright."

The woman's mother came home with her granddaughter, and the woman's bedroom door was closed. Apparently she had gone to bed. The next morning their phone rang. It was Dennis' secretary, calling to tell the woman to come back to work. The woman's mother got excited and said "let me go tell her", and taking her four-year-old granddaughter in her arms she went to the woman's room to wake her. They opened the door to find the woman's brains sprayed across the wall. In her despair she shot herself the night before.

Dennis knew nothing of the woman's problems and Bill even showed up at the funeral, spreading the rumor that she had killed herself because she had been treated so badly by Dennis and his wife. Bill is an ardent student of the dark path, duly employed by the local electric agency to keep their electricity racket unchallenged by any change or competition. Killing a person didn't slow Bill down at all. I'm not sure people like him have what we would call a conscience.

The electric czars owe a great deal to a great many, not the least of whom was the woman's daughter, who will likely be traumatized the rest of her earthly days. Bill is one of the many people that have been sicced on Dennis over the years. [Mr. Deputy](#) is another; [Mr. Texas](#) (the man who destroyed Dennis' company when he was arrested) is another. Bill's story is not yet over.

Out of the blue the woman's family came to Dennis' office the week after she died. Her mother and sister told Dennis the story. When Dennis found out what had happened, he came to a whole new level of inspiration. He became determined to at least go into competition with the power companies, who he believed were behind the actions that were taken against his company. He sent an anonymous letter to the heads of the electric companies and the Attorney General, telling them they had "drawn first blood". It was then that he decided to declare war against them (His "war" was "Project WPPEE" pronounced whoopee, which stood for Worldwide Privately Produced Electrical Energy. See *The Alternative*, exhibit 1E. It was actually Dennis' first "free electricity" idea, though he had no idea about what technology might be able to do it at that time. I attended the WPPEE presentation that he gave at the Seattle Center on March 18th, 1986, the day Dennis hired me and the day before I began working for him.)

After Dennis' company was stolen, and the only man who could do anything was taken out of the picture, the thieves of the company got the bankruptcy case thrown out of court, with the judge recommending countersuing the pants off the original petitioners (he saw the light at last). At the hearings to throw the bankruptcy case out of court, which I attended, and to finally see Bill being part of my motivation, Bill was nowhere to be seen. The dupe petitioners had a "falling out" with Bill and were waging the petition on their own. Bill had performed his job, the company was dead, and his dupes were left holding the bag. I wonder if they ever realized how they were used to screw over their own lives and the lives of many others.

Bill disappeared from then on, to resurface years later when Dennis spoke at the Global Sciences Congress in Colorado in the summer of 1989. When Dennis [got out of jail in 1989](#), he had to sign in at the county courthouse every day for a year. He never missed a day. It was a form of house arrest that Dennis never got prison credit for, for another of the many oddities surrounding his case. Dennis was invited to speak at the Global Sciences Congress in Colorado. He asked and got the judge's permission to go there. When Dennis arrived at the conference, guess who showed up? Mr. Hit Man from Seattle! He looked like he had been crawling around in the woods for years, which is what he does when not "on duty."

Dennis conquered the urge to tackle Mr. Hit Man on sight and said "hi" to him without any increase in his blood pressure. Dennis was willing to forget the past, but Mr. Hit Man was there on business. When Dennis speaks at those symposiums, he is always the big hit because of his extraordinary speaking ability. At the show after his big speech he had a smaller meeting of only a couple hundred people, to get folks involved with his project, as all

the speakers there do. Dennis' meetings are always the most popular.

Mr. Hit Man couldn't very well interrupt a meeting with several hundred rapt listeners, but at the smaller meeting he tried interrupting the meeting by shouting his clever and not-so-clever lies. Dennis had him removed from the room, but he stood outside poisoning every person he could after the meeting was over. Dennis later found out what Mr. Hit Man's angle was at that conference. He corralled every person he could who looked like they were excited about Dennis. One group was quite excited and Mr. Hit Man invited them out for lunch so he could tell them his experiences with Dennis. He told them that he was a person who Dennis conned into investing in his company. Mr. Hit Man's story was that he invested a small fortune into Dennis' business and Dennis never even tried delivering anything with it. A sociopath like Mr. Hit Man can easily tell whatever lie suits his needs, but what was amazing was how easily others believed it. They never even approached Dennis, asking him about Mr. Hit Man's tale. They just walked away from the whole thing. It was only years later that Dennis bumped into somebody from that original group who told him what had happened.

Also at the Global Sciences Conference was a sign up sheet for further meetings for those who were really serious. Dennis always draws the most for those also. On the day of the meeting nobody showed, and Dennis proceeded to find out why. "Somebody" had written "cancelled" across Dennis' sign up sheet. Dennis scheduled a meeting for the next day and the sign up sheet was similarly wrecked, with the names of those who signed up actually crossed out. Mr. Hit Man went back to Seattle feeling good about a job well done.

When I originally wrote about Dennis' encounter with Mr. Hit Man, I thought the courts and electric companies conspired to sic him on Dennis the first time he was allowed outside of Ventura in over a year. But in 1990 I joined the U.S. Psychotronics organization. In 1991 they held the national conference in Dayton, where I lived at the time. I worked at it.

The Global Sciences Congress is the old Denver chapter of the U.S. Psychotronics organization that split off and formed a new organization for reasons I don't know. Both organizations are two of a handful of organizations that are pursuing the science of the future. The conference I attended had some very impressive people there, as well as "flakes" (or as Beverly Rubik told me, "ungrounded people"). The organization explores: alternative medicine, energy, and farming; psychic phenomena, UFO's and a host of other disciplines.

The president of the U.S. Psychotronics organization thought for years that tales of FBI and CIA surveillance of their activities was so much paranoia, until the day he picked up his phone and heard a conversation he had the day before. His call was being transmitted to the central recorder. That also happened to my childhood friend at our Ventura company.

There was a local chapter of the Psychotronics organization that I joined. Wright-Patterson Air Force Base was nearby (home of Hangar 18, the Blue Room, etc.), and engineers from there

also joined the chapter. I was told that all of them were under surveillance by the air force, which is no surprise.

The power structure publicly ridicules/ignores the Psychotronics organization and similar organizations as a collection of flakes and fakes, better left ignored. In reality they know they are the future of science and watch them very carefully so they don't upset the power structure by coming up with the solution to the world's energy, medical or other problems, and ruin their rackets.

I worked at the registration table at the national conference, and in front of me was the member list. I referred to it to validate incoming registrants as members of the organization. Guess what I did when nobody was looking? I looked up Bill's name to see if he belonged to that organization. Yep, there he was! One theory down the drain and another, more ominous, one takes its place. Bill's membership had just recently expired, he was slipping a little, but it was evident why he showed up at the Global Sciences Congress. He likely joined all of the "new science" organizations, keeping his ear to the ground for his masters.

Like the provocateur that he is, he developed some "credentials" for himself before infiltrating Dennis' company by "waging a battle" with an electric company to be able to produce hydroelectric energy on his land. After he took care of Dennis' company, he became a "noted Tesla researcher," "investigating" the free energy possibilities of Nikola Tesla's work. The man is a wolf in sheep's clothing, but the "free energy" community readily accepted this man, [believing him to be a fellow comrade](#) in their quest for free energy.

He read in the organization literature that Dennis was going to speak there, and he came running. I don't know if his performance at the Congress earned him a bonus, or if it was all in the line of duty, and he was only reimbursed for his direct expenses of attending. How many people like Bill are in the ranks of those organizations? I can only guess, but I'll bet he is far from the only one.

That ends my tale of Bill the BPA hit man. I have not heard of him since.

The Next Section: [A Note to My Critics](#) (73K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Watching UFOs with James Gilliland

By Wade Frazier

June 2005

[2005 Visit](#)

[2006 Visit](#)

2005 Visit

In 2003, a friend in the new energy field told me that his introduction to paranormal phenomena was watching UFOs with James Gilliland near Mount Adams in Washington State. In early 2004, a friend who works at Boeing suggested that we go watch UFOs at James Gilliland's ranch. In June 2005, I finally went there to see for myself. I had never seen a UFO and had never tried. I know many people who claimed to have seen UFOs, and seeing one had long been on my list of things to do. When my Boeing friend arranged a trip to Gilliland's ranch, I was ready to go.

James Gilliland's Web site is [here](#). We met James at his ranch on June 4th, 2005. He was the perfect host, spending several hours talking with us and offering to let us spend the night at his ranch, which we did. James is very mild mannered, particularly when considering the wide range of intense and controversial topics that we discussed (such as the coming earth changes, political skullduggery in elite circles, close encounters with bigfeet and other creatures, free energy, etc.). His ranch has a spectacular view of Mount Adams. The below photograph is from his "backyard," a few yards from his house, where people gather from all over the world to watch UFOs.



Click on image to enlarge

About 3,000 people have witnessed UFOs at James' ranch. He has published many [testimonials from visitors](#). James has had numerous visitors from the U.S. military, the CIA, NASA and other alphabet soup agencies. He has had Special Forces operatives visit him, as well as people who say they worked on captured extra-terrestrial ("ET") craft, to reverse-engineer their technology. I have independently [encountered that phenomenon](#). As is evident from the testimonials, a common incident is a UFO "powering up" and becoming very bright in the sky. No mundane phenomenon can account for it, let alone the many sightings where the craft have flown low over James' ranch. If UFOs fly close to the ranch or land on Mount Adams, the U.S. military and related organizations can be counted on to chase or attack them, sometimes shooting exotic weapons, such as lasers

and plasma weapons (which do not seem to affect the craft). Operatives from the spook world have watched those UFOs “power up” above James’ ranch, and they say that nothing “we have” can do that.

While we talked with James on that Saturday afternoon, airplanes flew by in an endless procession, leaving heavy contrails that James and others call “chemtrails.” In the photograph above, all the high “cirrus” clouds are those heavy contrails left by jets. The photograph below shows those “chemtrails” in more detail.



Click on image to enlarge

Chemtrails are controversial. Investigators have collected samples of chemtrails for analysis, which U.S. government agencies such as the EPA have refused to test. James told us that a member of U.S. Congress recently tried opening an investigation of them, and was advised by a high-ranking military official that if she valued her career and her family’s health, she should cease her investigation (which she did). If chemtrails are a genuine covert action phenomenon, I doubt the motivation behind chemtrails is benevolent. The military and related attention to the Mount Adams area likely has nothing to do with the “threat” that UFOs pose to humanity, but the “threat” that they pose to the world’s power structure. All the attacks and other games are most likely not to keep humans safe from ETs, but to keep ETs from openly interacting with humans, in alignment with the [Brookings Institute’s](#) advice to NASA many years ago. James has endured great harassment from the people trying to remove UFOs from public awareness.

By that evening, the chemtrails had blown away and the sky was clear. James said that the best time for viewing UFOs was between 10:30 and 11:30 at night, or at about 5:00 in the morning. We went to dinner and arrived back at the ranch at about 10:00 PM. At 10:00 PM, Mount Adams was in twilight, and by 10:30 the sky was about as dark as it gets in the summer. There was no moon that evening.

There were about fifteen people watching the sky at James’ ranch that night. We watched one satellite make about a thirty degree turn as it changed course from moving in a northwesterly direction to moving due north as it passed over Mount Adams (at least from our perspective), although satellites are hundreds of miles away in the sky. One veteran sky watcher said that normal satellites cannot make a turn like that, as he watched it make that turn. It was interesting but not spectacular. A few other anomalous “satellites” were seen that evening.

At about 11:00 PM, James decided to “call” a UFO and began flashing his ten-million-candlepower spotlight into the sky. He later said that he also prayed for one to make its presence known as he flashed his spotlight. James said that they respond to heartfelt human desire to see one, and they respond best to a joyful attitude. He said that the dour, stern UFO “nuts and bolts” investigators do

not have the right attitude to go UFO hunting. Somebody said that afternoon that the “permanent scowl” that UFO investigator [Phil Klass](#) wore defeated him before he even began, and that is giving Klass the benefit of the doubt that he was not working on behalf of the power structure as a UFO debunker.

Within a couple of minutes after James began flashing his spotlight, it happened. One innocuous “satellite” that was passing slowly south, to the east of Mount Adams, suddenly “powered on.” For about five seconds, it was the brightest thing in the sky, by far. Think of Venus-times-ten in brightness, and you get an idea of what we saw (one of my Boeing pals called it “Mars times fifty”). It was spectacular, and nothing that could be explained by the typical “[debunker](#)” explanations. It was not “one of ours.” After about five seconds of brilliance, it powered down and became just one more “satellite” trailing across the night sky. I had seen my UFO. There was no doubt among any of us regarding what we had seen, and some were very experienced at watching satellites and other lights in the sky (as James’ [testimonial section](#) used to show, which I hope reappears soon, one of the witnesses that night was a retired Air Force captain).

Being ready to film a UFO “powering on” for a few seconds is not an easy trick, and we did not film it. However, James publishes many photographs on his Web site, and publishes DVDs with footage and photographs taken over the years. James said that the psychic abilities he has developed over the years (beginning with his [near-death experience](#)) allows him to anticipate when they appear, so he is often ready with his camera.

Below is a frame from a video that James took of a UFO lighting up, which is almost exactly what we saw, sans the “Star of David” effect (the image below also [links to the clip](#), which is a 5 megabyte file, and Apple’s QuickTime can read it, as can Microsoft’s Media Player 10). We received a fairly typical show. Other clips can be seen at [this link](#).^[1]

On June 4, 2005, with aerospace and military personnel in attendance, I observed a UFO "light up" over Mount Adams about a minute after James Gilliland requested that one do so. The display was very similar to the footage taken by James on the video clip that this image links to. The only significant difference between what we saw and what is depicted on James' clip is that we did not see the "Star of David" effect evident below. Thousands of people have witnessed UFO displays at James' ranch over the past generation. The show we received was fairly standard, but a little better than average.



Click

on image to play video clip

I have directed people to James' ranch since our 2005 sighting, and although what we saw was relatively standard, it was apparently better than average. When we returned in 2006, our 2005 sighting was remarkable enough that James recalled it, calling it a show put on by the "big ships." Big ship displays are fairly common at James' ranch, but ours was impressive enough that my Boeing pals talked about it with Art Bell on the [Coast to Coast show the next year](#). One Boeing pal told me that he was in a daze during the week after seeing that UFO light up above Mount Adams. His universe of the possible greatly expanded after that experience.

When my friend who first told me about Gilliland's sightings read the first draft of this essay, he wrote:

"Read your report. Glad you got to see something. It's always fun to witness one of those craft power up and become bright like that. One time, after getting bright, an object changed colors several times and then changed shapes before powering down and zooming away. Pretty remarkable."

Many in the UFO field have called James a fraud, which is a typical situation encountered in these

realms of investigation (the human ego is nearly always the culprit). James' response has always been, "come to my ranch and see for yourself." People do not go away disappointed, and only those who refuse to visit and see for themselves openly disparage or dismiss James' work and what happens at his ranch.

2006 Visit

Nine of us visited James on June 2, 2006. James was once again a very gracious host. One Boeing pal brought his wife, and the rest were my friends. We had partly clear sky on June 2. As with our 2005 visit, many "satellites" crossed the sky that evening. I began developing a trained eye for observing their behavior, and several made turns while crossing the sky, which normal satellites cannot do. In the dark, in the middle of a field, if somebody said, "look there!" few could see where they were pointing. James taught us to call out coordinates, such as an object's relationship to the Big Dipper and the compass points (i.e., north, south, east, west), so people could direct others to what they were seeing, particularly when people had to look quickly or miss the event.

As with 2005, one UFO "powered up" above us, but the 2006 experience was frustrating. It again happened at about 11:00 PM. In 2005, I saw the UFO powering up and James pointed to it with his flashlight as the event began. The 2005 event stunned everybody who was there (except those who had seen such spectacles previously). In 2006, of the dozen who were watching, only James and I saw it.

In our 2005 sighting, the UFO powered up to the northeast of Mount Adams, at about a thirty-degree angle to the ground. In 2006, the UFO powered up to the northwest of Mount Adams, and at about a seventy-degree angle to the ground. Neither James nor I saw it power up, but we saw it after it became bright. That night was a half moon (first quarter) in the southeast, and the brightest star was to the south (Jupiter, I believe). At about 11:00 PM, I suddenly became aware of a *very* bright star. This year's UFO seemed about two-to-five times the brightness of Jupiter. It was definitely the brightest "star" in the sky, but was not moving as the 2005 UFO did; it seemed to stand still. For about two seconds, my mind pondered that star's brightness and position (near the Big Dipper). I did not want to cry wolf for a normal star, but my mind raced as I considered if it might be a UFO. After about three seconds, I realized that no star in the sky had been that bright, particularly near the Big Dipper, and James and I called out at about the same time. About a second later, the "star" completely disappeared. James and I saw it probably a second after it had powered up; it went dark a second after we called out, and nobody else saw it. It was another five-second event.

I coordinated the 2006 trip. One friend flew from California to see it, and my hesitation meant that my friends did not witness the main event. We stayed for the next night, but were rained out. One veteran sky watcher said he was convinced that more than satellites crossed the sky that night, and early in the night he saw a strange flash. Even so, I returned to Seattle with a keen sense of frustration. I dragged my friends along so they could experience the awe of watching a UFO make a display, and only I saw the big show. I wonder if my ET pals influenced that situation. James voiced the same suspicion, but also playfully joked that I was his confederate in calling out a UFO that nobody could "see" but us two. As I watched that UFO light up the sky, it felt as if I was being

subtly prevented from calling out in time. That is not a product of fermented frustration, but immediately after I called out and the UFO went dark, I wondered why I had not called out sooner, even though my hesitation was no more than two seconds.

I doubt I have made my last trip to James' ranch.

Footnote

[1] Well meaning people have challenged the validity of what we saw. I will answer some of those questions here.

People have proposed that those "satellites" "powering on" are something more mundane than UFOs responding to James' request for them to light up. On one of James' videos, a TV news report is produced where a scientist says that the people at the ranch are really seeing satellites and other human-launched space hardware. Nobody who has been to James' ranch buys that explanation, and "explanations" like that are what detract from the armchair "[skeptics](#)" credibility with those who investigate the paranormal. No acknowledged satellite has the ability to suddenly become the brightest thing in the sky for a few seconds and then dim back to its original brightness, or radically change direction and velocity, or change shape and color, or land on Mount Adams. Another proposed explanation was that the spotlight that James used to "call" the UFO is what lit it up. If it was a real satellite, it was at least a hundred miles away in orbit. James' spotlight can light up trees a few hundred yards away. There is a big difference between hundreds of yards and a hundred miles, and James was not flashing his spotlight on the UFO when it lit up. James recorded video footage at this [link](#) mentioned above, and no spotlight was involved in that sighting.

Others have wondered if James was playing some kind of high tech trick on the people at his ranch. We stood out in the middle of a field many miles from the nearest city, watching the night sky, and a "satellite" became brilliantly illuminated for a few seconds, within a couple minutes of James trying to call one. You can't fake a "satellite" suddenly becoming the brightest thing the sky. I know of no earthly technology that could accomplish that, much less doing it in a field next to a collection of modest dwellings in the middle of nowhere.

At this time, I lean toward believing that the "[orbs](#)" that James and others have photographed are mundane anomalies relating to digital cameras, although he showed us numerous anomalous photographs that could not be explained as artifacts of digital photography, such as a ghost whose face was recognizable as the person who died in the home the ghost appeared in, and who was "hassling" the house's current resident.

No mundane explanations proposed for our UFO sighting have held any water so far, and when I watched James attempt to attract a UFO, and watched one "power up" a couple of minutes later, nobody will ever "explain it away" to me. Many years ago I had undeniable proof that [all people are inherently psychic](#), and subsequently learned that a person with *experience* is not at the mercy of a person with a theory.

Next Section: [Pictures from My Life](#)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Pictures from My Life

By Wade Frazier

This web site isn't *all* about my intense writings. I have fun also.

I was born in Seattle, a third generation Washingtonian. Although the story of how Europeans "settled" this land is not pretty, here is where I came into the world. I am a hiking "fanatic," enjoying my time in the mountains and wilderness immensely. Below are some shots accumulated over the years.



I began developing my bad habits at a very young age. I am not sure if my first vice was smoking, gluttony or drinking, but I obviously indulged all the them.



The first of the above three photos is of me, hiking with my uncle in 1998. The second is me on on Sahalee Arm in 1986, above Cascade Pass. The third is one peak over from Desolation Peak, where Jack Kerouac spent a summer watching for fires, with Ross Lake and the Little Beaver Valley in the background, 1986. The fourth is me resting on Trapper Peak in 1986, in the North Cascades National Park.

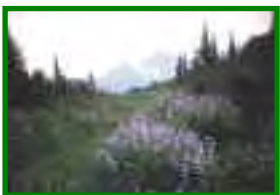


The first of the above two is of me in Spider Meadow in 1986, in the Glacier Peak Wilderness Area. The second is my college roommates and me on Mt. Whitney in 1990.



Self-portrait on Sourdough Mountain, North Cascades National Park, 1998.
brother and me, above Spider Meadow, 1997

My



Meadows I have known. The first is on Sourdough Peak, 1998, on a pathless mountainside that nobody ever gets to. The second is on the way to South Pass Lake, in the Lake Chelan Recreation Area, 1983.



The first image is below Shepherd's Pass in the Sierra Nevada Range, 1990. The John Muir trail is in the distance. Awesome country. The second image records one of the more sublime moments of my life. It was taken at Blue Lake on October 16, 1999, on the back side of Liberty Bell Mountain in the North Cascades National Park. The golden trees are larches, which are deciduous conifers. Finding larches in autumn foliage (the needles are very soft) on a clear day is not easy to do. Those were the first autumn larches that I had ever seen in person. After many years of longing for a sight of the autumn larches, I finally experienced it. The third photo is of a larch grove near Blue Lake. I climbed off trail and into a grove of them and hung out with the golden larches. It will always be a vivid memory.



These photos are taken at both ends of the Lyman Lakes basin, surely one of the world's most beautiful. In the first photo, just below my left shoulder the snout of Lyman glacier is visible. People can walk up and touch that glacier. The second photo was taken the next day, in September of 1997, after we had hiked through that awe-inspiring valley. We got to the valley the "easy way," hiking 3,600 feet and eight miles over Spider Gap. We were on our way to legendary Image Lake. The blueberries were harvestable, and my brother and I suffered from purple mouth disease for several days. Somebody has to do it. The last is a global warming picture, comparing Lyman Glacier from 1997 to 2005.



The first is on the way to White Pass, in 2000, with Sloan Peak in the background. The area was so spectacular that I returned the next year, with the second taken from the top of White Mountain. The meadow in the photo's middle is where we camped for a few nights, and I picked a half gallon of blueberries. The third is looking back up at White Mountain, with me standing on the Pacific Crest Trail, next to the meadow where we camped. That last photo was taken about the last time I was emotionally "up" (at least as I write this in December 2004), as the photo was taken on September 8, 2001.



The first is of me on Green Mountain (near Glacier Peak Wilderness Area), on a dazzling day in late October, 2002. The second is on the trail to Hidden Lake Peaks, in the North Cascades National Park, in 2003. The third is my brother crossing a creek near Cutthroat Pass, in the North Cascades National Park, in early summer 2004.

Next Section: [Lies I Was Raised With](#) (241K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Lies I Was Raised With

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[Big Lies: The News](#)

[More Big Lies: History](#)

[Colonialism, the First Stage of Global Capitalism](#)

[Objectivity, Sources and the Historian's Ideal](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

Although I began questioning my indoctrination when I left college, it took brutal experiences with [Dennis Lee](#) to “radicalize” me. As far as “radical” goes, that means uncovering the unquestioned assumptions of my society. I eventually realized I had been sold a set of lies. It was not that everybody was in on the joke except me. The lies I discovered are those nearly universally believed. When my accounting professor told me about why [auditors make so much money](#), he believed it. In the wake of the [Savings and Loan Scandal](#), he may have changed his mind, or as the burgeoning [Enron scandal](#) has been heating up.

Since 1990, all of my spare time, and five years of full-time work, has been devoted to researching what I was taught, comparing it to my adult research, and creating this web site. What follows is some of what I discovered.

I was lied to, in many ways. The lies I was sold were sometimes different lies than others were sold. Americans growing up in regions dominated by English settlers, such as the Eastern United States, were probably not taught much about [Junípero Serra](#), as I was. They were probably taught about [Columbus](#), however. Although I cannot get my money back, I have discarded much of what I was taught, from kindergarten through my college diploma and beyond.

Big Lies: The News

Soon after graduating from college I began questioning my indoctrination, and eventually realized that [my profession was worthless](#). Just before [moving to Ohio](#), I heard of a new magazine that analyzed the *New York Times*' content. It was *Lies of Our Times*. It was my first exposure to the alternative media. In Los Angeles, before I met Dennis, I subscribed to the *Christian Science Monitor*, thinking I was getting alternative news. When Dennis was in jail, I had a roommate who talked about Noam Chomsky, and told me Chomsky's work would be educational. I had never heard of him.

Reading my first issue of *Lies of Our Times* (LOOT) is a vivid memory. It was the November 1990 issue, which came out as George Bush was whipping America into a frenzy to [attack Iraq](#). I got LOOT until they went out of business in late 1994, but my first issue's first page is still the one I remember best. That page produced a small article titled "More Translation Problems." The Bank of Kuwait's logo accompanied the article. The logo had a camel in its center, and was ringed with Arabic script. Here is the article.

"Back in March (p.19) we ran a letter Nabeel Abraham sent to the *New York Times* complaining about a mistranslation of the Arabic in the photo caption. Lebanese journalists were shown carrying a sign which actually read 'Freedom of the press. Yes to the printed word, no to terror.' The *Times* said the sign said 'In Allah's hands we are safe.' The letter, of course, was not published by the *Times*.

"Now they are at it again.

"The first page of the business section on September 12 (p.C1) presented a piece about the Bank of Kuwait. Illustrating it was the logo of the bank, shown below, with this caption: 'The logotype of the National Bank of Kuwait proclaims, "There is no deity but Allah."

"Abraham sent off another letter, which reads in part: 'The logotype says no such thing. The Arabic inscription merely says, "National Bank of Kuwait, Kuwait, 1952."

"He concluded: 'These glaring errors leave me wondering how the *Times* goes about translating Arabic language materials into English. Surely, you did not consult someone who actually reads the language, for those errors are so wide off the mark that they are laughable. I must conclude that either the *Times* is paying good money for bogus translations, or that the reporters and/or editors are making up the translations as they go along. Either way the "translators" are not drawing on their knowledge of the language, but on their storehouse of racist and demeaning stereotypes which "perceive" religious fatalism, zealotry, fanaticism every time they see an Arabic inscription. In this way the 'translators' say more about themselves than about the material they are purportedly translating.'

"We are not holding our breath while waiting to see if the *Times* prints Abraham's letter."[\[1\]](#)

That opened my eyes. The world's most influential publication could stoop below the journalistic integrity of the *National Enquirer* when the need suited them. The *New York Times*' effort on "translating" Arabic script, especially as George Bush and company were whipping up a murderous anti-Arab fervor in America, may have made Goebbels beam with approval, if he did not think it a little heavy-handed. Below are the photographs in question.



[Click on image to enlarge](#)

Soon after that, I subscribed to the *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, now called *Covert Action Quarterly*. I subscribed to the Christic Institute's *Journal of Emergence* before they were legally raped, similar to how [Mr. Big Time Attorney](#) was dealt with by the federal courts in California, but much worse.[\[2\]](#)

I began reading [Chomsky's work](#). I read *Manufacturing Consent* and *Unreliable Sources*. *LOOT* went out of business in 1994, as all alternative media organizations operate on a shoestring. Challenging the official version of reality does not pay well. Chomsky calls the *New York Times* a leader in the "agenda setting media," which means that most mainstream American newspapers follow the *Times*' lead in deciding what is newsworthy, and the *Times*' reporting also dominates the tenor that other papers give to their reporting. I have subscribed to *Z Magazine* for many years, and other "alternative" periodicals. I have studied the far right, subscribing to *The Spotlight* for years, and have read plenty of conspiratorial scholarship. During the past twelve years I studied the media far more than I ever studied accounting or chemistry.

The fact that the media presents a highly slanted view of the world is not the result of one big conspiracy. Media defenders have often stated, "How can all reporters get their orders from the same place?" It is not that simple.

In the first chapter of *Manufacturing Consent*, [Edward Herman](#) (the *LOOT* editor) and Chomsky present their *Propaganda Model* and discuss the various "news filters" that determine what news is printed. The first filter is called the "size, ownership, and profit orientation of the mass media." Because media organizations are profit-making corporations, and are increasingly large corporations that are part of even larger corporate conglomerates, the economic interests of the ownership impacts the news process significantly. The authors show how market forces have driven alternative viewpoints from the media. They present the example of the British working-class media. The government tried wiping them out with punitive laws, but in the end, the sheer market

forces of advertising revenues, affluent audiences and economy-of-scale factors drove the working-class press out of business.

In America, there has never been anything resembling a working-class press. The situation today is far less favorable toward establishing a working-class press than it was early in the 20th century. The ultra-rich own the media, and it is nonsensical to think that their interests would not be attended to by the organizations they own.

During the Gulf War of 1991, General Electric owned NBC. General Electric was one of the world's largest defense contractors, contributing to nearly every weapons system deployed in the Gulf War. The gushing coverage given to America's "smart bombs," Patriot Missiles, Tomahawks and the like, when presented on NBC, was admiring its owner's handiwork. The NBC president [killed a story](#) that even Tom Brokaw wanted aired about the "collateral" damage that the U.S. bombing inflicted onto Iraq's civilian population. Those conflicts of interest pervade America's mainstream media.

Because of the [global economy](#) that has been developing for centuries, we now have a global media. The owners' interests are greatly attended to by the companies they own. As Ben Bagdikian demonstrated in his *Media Monopoly*, the trend is toward increasing concentration of ownership, with fewer and larger corporations owning the mainstream media, a trend that has been dramatic during the past generation. That is [normal capitalism at work](#). Capitalism always tends toward monopoly. How much media diversity can there be when a few rich interests own it all? How can news be aired that challenges the powerful, when the powerful own the media? Capitalism has little or nothing to do with democracy. The rich run capitalism, by definition. They own the capital. Corporations operate in a top-down fashion, with orders coming from the top, being carried out by those down below. They are economic dictatorships. *CBS Evening News* Executive Director [Tom Bettag](#) was fired the day he tried running the clip about Iraqi civilian devastation that the NBC president killed.

The second news filter presented by Herman and Chomsky is advertising. The media serves not only the owners' interests. Because the media is commercial, the advertisers' interests are also attended to. For many years cigarette advertising had a significant influence over editorial policies. Magazines such as *Time*, *Newsweek* and *U.S. News and World Report* derived substantial revenues from cigarette companies. "Coincidentally," they never went on editorial crusades against smoking, although *Reader's Digest* [had been doing so for generations](#).^[3] In 1980, *Mother Jones* ran a series of articles regarding cigarettes being a major cause of cancer and heart disease. Immediately, the tobacco companies pulled their advertising from *Mother Jones*.

The tobacco companies marshal their clout against media organizations that step out of line. They are looking after their interests and selling as much of their product as possible and making money, not caring how many millions of people their product kills. It is the very reason corporations exist: [making money any way they can](#). One undeniable consequence is that biased news is produced. Knowledge is power.

The third news filter presented is the source of mass media news. In the corporate media, news is a product sold like anything else. Just as coffee grows on bushes in Central America and oil is found under the Middle East sand, "news" is usually found in a few choice locations. Newspaper reporters do not canvass Creation everyday, looking for a story. Reporters are assigned to places such as the White House, the Pentagon, the State Department, the county courthouse, City Hall, etc. Consequently, news organizations come to rely upon those sources of information. A few things happen because of those relationships. One is that the media gets cozy with power. The temptation is to abandon the adversarial or independent stance the media ideally takes. It happens all the time, and it becomes a working relationship instead. If reporters assigned to City Hall talks to the same people every day to get their news, how cooperative will those news sources be with the reporter who prints unflattering news? Not very. A [cub reporter](#) can end his career by reporting the wrong story, or reporting it the "wrong" way.

The media have largely become stenographers to power. With increasing regularity, powerful news sources produce the news itself. The Pentagon and large corporations have [public relations](#) departments that often dwarf the media that covers them. They produce "news" regularly, which they disseminate to news organizations. It used to be called a press release, and today extends to slickly produced videos. Downsized news organizations are handed a video of commercial quality, ready to air, presenting corporate or governmental pre-packaged news.

When [Mr. Deputy](#) orchestrated his spectacular arrest of Dennis, a video was given to the Los Angeles TV stations at the same time. A friend called me the day after Dennis was arrested, saying he saw a video of Dennis on the evening news, slanted to make Dennis look like the crook of the century. Perhaps Mr. Deputy's video was slightly edited by the TV station, and perhaps not. Viewers are rarely informed that a corporation or government agency, not the news organization, produced the "news" they just saw.

The fourth filter Herman and Chomsky present is called "flak and the enforcers." The first three filters act as coercive forces, ensuring that powerful interests are served. However, sometimes the media begins publishing stories that the powerful would rather keep quiet, or it presents the "wrong" side of the story. There is an array of punitive strategies to corral rogue newsmen or news agencies. Affiliated with powerful corporations and often bankrolled directly by them are media "watchdog" organizations that "police" the media. When the media runs a story that gores an ox that the powerful own, such as reporting corporate or governmental malfeasance, the "flak" and "enforcer" organizations pounce on them. Often the powerful groups provide their flak directly. A recent and spectacular instance was when CNN's April Oliver and Jack Smith reported on the alleged use of Sarin nerve gas by the United States in Laos in 1970, during a secret mission known as Operation Tailwind.

The reporters worked on the story for several months, interviewing people involved in the operation and Major General John Singlaub and Admiral Thomas Moorer, who were privy to operations such as Tailwind during those days. A story accusing the United States of using nerve gas would obviously be big news, and it was no surprise that CNN ran it rather than the big three: NBC, CBS and ABC, who did not touch the story. CNN's Peter Arnett also helped report the story. It was

aired on June 7 and June 14, 1998, and *Time* ran it in its June 15, 1998 edition.

CNN was prepared to support its reporters, but did not anticipate how bad the flak would get. Flak organizations such as Accuracy in Media (AIM - a far right media watchdog group that has a cozy relationship to power) went on the attack. The big heat came from the Pentagon and Henry Kissinger. CNN was quickly brought to its knees and it served up Oliver and Smith as sacrificial lambs. CNN hired two attorneys to "critique" Oliver and Smith's report. It was a slanted effort that appeared to be a hack job to justify what happened next: CNN retracted the story and Oliver and Smith were fired. The establishment press accounts of the Tailwind flap made it appear as if CNN responsibly retracted a story that its loose cannon reporters snuck through.

Whatever inaccuracies there may have been in their story, they were fired because of whom they offended. Peter Arnett's career with CNN ended in April 1999 because of the flap. He was one of America's finest mainstream reporters, but his continual reporting of the "wrong" story, such as his [uncensored reports from Baghdad in 1991](#), won him the enmity of many powerful people.

Reed Irvine, who runs AIM, publicly called for the firing of those responsible for that story airing, and he got his wish. Oliver and her colleagues were eventually vindicated. Singlaub sued Oliver to clear his name, besmirched in the Tailwind flap. On January 17, 2000, Thomas Moorer, in the presence of Oliver and Singlaub, was deposed as part of the lawsuit. The transcript of that deposition has been posted to the Internet, and Moorer confirmed all the essentials of what Oliver reported, including:

- Sarin gas (also known as "BG" and "CBU-15") was stockpiled at the Nakhorn Phanom base in Thailand, where the Tailwind mission was launched;
- The mission was seeking to find U.S. "defectors," and that killing them would have been a mission option;
- Sarin was regularly used on the secret missions, the pilots knew they carried it and knew how, when and why to deploy it; Moorer justified its deployment if it would save American lives, and admitted that the Montagnards had gas masks that were too large to fit properly, which allowed the nerve gas to kill them, prompting the U.S. to begin making smaller gas masks;
- He believed that Sarin was used on the mission and that it was successful.

In essence, Oliver's reporting was accurate. Although the Tailwind flap was huge news when it happened, the revelations of Moorer's testimony failed to receive mainstream media coverage. Singlaub's lawsuit was quietly settled, with Oliver getting a substantial settlement, although the nature of those kinds of settlements are that Oliver cannot publicly say that she was vindicated, but the silence of Singlaub and others speaks volumes, and Oliver still stands by her story. The career

of Oliver and others was ruined, but not a hint of "sorry" can be heard from Irvine or the others who attacked Oliver and her colleagues.

Similarly, reporter Gary Webb ran a series of reports in the *San Jose Mercury News* in 1996 regarding the issue of Contra complicity in the drug trafficking in South Central Los Angeles and elsewhere. They were the same stories that came out during the Iran-Contra scandal, and it put the powerful in a bad light. There was no substantive objection to Webb's powerfully supported story, and the CIA and Justice Department confirmed key elements in his story, but nevertheless, Webb lost his job.[\[4\]](#)

New York Times reporter Ray Bonner was another famous sacrificial lamb. In 1982, he accurately reported on the El Mozote massacre, committed by the U.S.-trained El Salvadoran forces. Several hundred people were murdered, mainly women and children. That was a mass murder committed by Reagan's "fledgling democracy," and reporting the truth cost Bonner his job.[\[5\]](#)

Immediately after the public professional executions of Oliver and Smith came the story of Mike Gallagher of the *Cincinnati Inquirer*, who published a series of articles about Chiquita Brand International in May 1998. Chiquita used to be known as United Fruit. The United States overthrew the Guatemalan government in 1954 so United Fruit could continue to "own" the country. [\[6\]](#) Gallagher reported that what goes on today in Central America was merely more of the same, and he found himself legally attacked by Chiquita, accusing him of illegally accessing their voicemail system.

The attacks on those who tell the wrong story are not limited to the news. All across America, college professors who fail to toe the establishment line, and lean in any way toward the "left," often have a hard time keeping their jobs and careers, and are often fired outright and then blackballed from the profession.[\[7\]](#)

In the case of [Ralph McGehee and the CIA](#), there are structural controls in place, such as how the CIA psychologically screens candidates in order to select people who blindly follow orders. The CIA almost did not hire Ralph because he did not think in the simplistic black/white way the CIA preferred its "mesomorphs" to think. Even so, it took Ralph a major intelligence breakthrough in Thailand and 16 years to finally figure out what the CIA was all about. Other structural controls existed. By the time Ralph figured it out, he was trapped in the CIA, with no other career options. [Others like him](#) lived lives of quiet desperation, counting their days to retirement.

Those constraints made it highly unlikely that a Ralph McGehee would ever figure it out and go public with what he knew. When Ralph tried going public, the CIA [abused the national security laws](#) to try preventing publication of his work, even going to the absurd extent that they tried *reclassifying* public domain material in his book. Even so, after a monumental legal battle, his final book was riddled with censorship deletions, the mainstream media has ignored him when they have not smeared him, and the CIA even went to the extent of buying his *Deadly Deceits* off bookstore shelves to limit its circulation. Then Ralph created his CIABASE web site, using public domain

material to tell what the CIA was up to. Ralph was then subjected to having his home bugged, and he would be followed to the grocery store, and they tried framing him for crimes such as shoplifting. The local police (near Washington D.C.) worked with the CIA and FBI in harassing Ralph, to the point of threatening his family. That not being enough to silence Ralph, they would periodically escalate the intimidation and dirty tricks, and spiked his food on more than one occasion, which damaged his mouth. Their efforts finally succeeded in silencing Ralph in the year 2000. Even when he moved away and stopped his CIABASE efforts, the FBI went to his new town of residence, telling local merchants to be on the lookout for Ralph, as he was a dangerous "national security threat." Those who think America has free speech should ponder Ralph's case.

When Noam Chomsky and Edward Herman [tried publishing their book](#) on U.S. international fascism and how the American establishment is a vital part of how that system works, a member of America's media oligarchy destroyed his own publishing company to try preventing the book's publication. That not being enough (the book was finally published), the media (even Chomsky and Herman's "friends" in the left and academia) have misrepresented their work ever since, while calling Chomsky a supporter of the Khmer Rouge, which is in the Big Lie category.

The [Savings and Loan Scandal](#) had a few genuinely good investigative reporting efforts on how America was defrauded by people such as George Bush and friends. The two best efforts are probably *Inside Job* by Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo and *The Mafia, CIA and George Bush* by Pete Brewton of the *Houston Post*. Although those reporters did not end up as [Danny Casolaro](#) and [Paul Wilcher](#) did, Brewton had the publication of his book essentially blocked by his publishing company until after the 1992 presidential election.^[8] During the summer of 2002, a friend co-wrote a book by an [Enron](#) whistleblower, and the major book company pulled the same stunt that Brewton's publisher did. My friend is now trying to get it published through other channels.

That is not a new phenomenon in America, of silencing reporters and others who try speaking out. The powerful do not want the public knowing of their dark acts, and skewering reporters and media organizations that have the audacity to report on it is standard operating practice. There is no "free press" in America. Those kinds of factors led to [Project Censored](#). Establishment hacks can be vicious. If they ever get into a public debate with people such as Noam Chomsky, they quickly stoop to calling them names and even yelling at them and lying, as John Silber, the president of Boston College, did during a 1985 debate with Chomsky over the Contra situation.^[9]

The real reasons for [dropping atom bombs on Japan](#) had little or nothing to do with saving American lives. It was mainly a demonstration of power to the Soviet Union, and can be considered the Cold War's first salvo. Leslie Groves, who ran the Manhattan Project, candidly admitted as much in the presence of Nobel (Peace Prize, 1995) Laureate Joseph Rotblat, who then quit the Manhattan Project and asked to return home to Britain. Rotblat attended a 1986 debate between then-vice president George Bush, American defense establishment pundit Richard Perle, and a Soviet representative regarding the beginnings of the Cold War. The debate was heated, with the Soviet debater claiming that the United States was intending to threaten the Soviet Union with atomic weapons as early as 1944. Bush and Perle hotly contested the Soviet debater's assertion. Then Rotblat stood and related the conversation that Groves had in his presence. Rotblat had

already published that conversation with Groves. Perle then rushed off the debating platform and shook his fist furiously in Rotblat's face, saying, "You have no right to be saying anything like that!"[\[10\]](#)

The final filter presented by Herman and Chomsky is an ideological one. Chomsky today says he thought the description of the filter in *Manufacturing Consent* was too narrow.[\[11\]](#) It was called anticommunism. The anticommunist mentality became an ideological rallying point through which communism was seen as a great and evil threat to rich property owners. It shaded many areas of American discourse, and anticommunist dogma was as deeply ingrained into the American psyche as any catechism ever was. Today Chomsky says the ideological filter is broader than that - mainly the portrayal of a malevolent external threat to make people submit to state power, to "protect" them. With the communist bogeyman gone, America has had to stoop lower and lower to conjure malevolent external threats, such as [Noriega](#), [Hussein](#), and drug dealers. Maybe it will be extraterrestrials next year. The media portrays the bad guy of the hour as we attack him, vanquishing a "great threat" to our nation. Sometimes it gets ludicrous, such as saying that Grenada was a threat to U.S. shipping lanes.

In late 2001, the [World Trade Center attacks](#) answered the warmongers' prayers, and as if the script was taken directly from [George Orwell's 1984](#), George Bush the Second declared a virtually perpetual war on "terror." Finally, a real threat may exist beyond all the paper tigers that were paraded in front of Americans during the 1990s. Even though the United States government has been the [world's leading terror organization](#) for the past fifty years,[\[12\]](#) the current "war on terror" will become the new Cold War, [lining the pockets](#) of the "defense" establishment and further securing U.S. global hegemony.

In *Manufacturing Consent*, Herman and Chomsky present a concept known as worthy and unworthy victims. Worthy victims are victims of our enemies. Unworthy victims are victims of our friends or of us. The authors analyzed the American media's treatment of Central American murders of Catholic priests and nuns by the security forces of national governments. The repeated murders of priests and nuns in El Salvador and Guatemala seemed a sport of their police forces. When a priest would speak out against the government's murder of its citizens, he could be expected to get it next, as Archbishop Romero did. El Salvador and Guatemala were favored client states of the United States while those murders were taking place, with American officials [covering for them](#). At the same time, Poland was undergoing its own struggles against its oppressive Soviet influence (those events were from the 1980s, when *Manufacturing Consent* was first published). In Poland, members of the Catholic Church spoke out in favor of human rights. In 1984, one Polish priest was murdered by the Polish secret police.

Herman and Chomsky compared the media's coverage of the murder of one Polish priest (a victim of our enemy, hence a worthy victim) to its coverage of the murder of 100 priests and nuns in Central America (victims of our friends, hence unworthy victims). Herman and Chomsky merely added up the amount of coverage the murders received in the mainstream American press. Their sample was the *New York Times*, *Time*, *Newsweek*, and *CBS News*. They added up column-inches and prominence of stories (front page or not) in the printed material, and airtime and

prominence (lead story or not) for TV news. The murder of the Polish priest elicited outrage in the American press, garnering headlines and top-of-the-hour coverage. The priest was eulogized as a victim of the evil empire, and the American press pointed its finger straight at the Kremlin.

The cumulative coverage of the murders of 100 priests and nuns in Central America did not exceed the coverage of that Polish priest's murder. There were no eulogies or humanizing coverage for the priests and nuns murdered in our client states, and the American media could never seem to identify the murderers. According to our media and government, they were anonymous death squad members, murdering for the hell of it, not connected to our client governments in any way. When four American nuns were murdered (when it could not be denied that the El Salvadoran National Guard did the deed, after raping the women), Alexander Haig and Jean Kirkpatrick went so far as to say the women deserved it, that they were working with El Salvadoran guerillas. Those statements by our government officials have since been proven bold-faced lies. Herman and Chomsky dryly presented their data and concluded that a dead Polish priest was more than 100 times as media-worthy in America as a dead Central American priest or American nun murdered by our friends.

The media bias presents itself in many other ways. David Croteau and William Hoynes performed an analysis on what many regarded as the best news show on television, *Nightline* with Ted Koppel. Their analysis was published in *By Invitation Only: How the Media Limit Political Debate*. Croteau and Hoynes stated that analyzing debate content was subject to a wide range of interpretation. They focused on something not subject to interpretation: their race, gender, occupation, nationality, if they appeared in the program alone or with somebody else, how long were they on, etc.

The results' publication created a stir in media circles. Their study of several hundred *Nightlines* showed that of *Nightline*'s guests, 82% were male, 89% were white and 78% were government officials, professionals and corporate representatives.^[13] They also presented the same data taken from another highly respected news show, *The MacNeil/Lehrer Hour*. Those numbers were even more skewed, at 87% male, 90% white, and 89% government officials, professionals and corporate representatives. From that data, a strong case was made for the shows' biases. In nutshell, those "news shows" were little more than platforms for the rich and powerful to air their views. The study was far ranging, and something this essay cannot do justice to. It was a sophisticated piece of analysis and difficult to deny.

When confronted with the study's results, Ted Koppel came up with a number of rationales for the show's bias. The main defense was that the rich and powerful men who ran the country were invited to the show, and when White House administrations changed, those new powerful people would be interviewed. Koppel handled his interviewees with kid gloves, and was even buddies with some of them, such as Henry Kissinger, one of his most frequent guests. [Fairness and Accuracy in Reporting's](#) (FAIR) Jeff Cohen said their response,

"...could have been uttered by a Soviet TV news programmer - pre-glasnost. American television news is not supposed to be strictly a forum for representatives of the state. FAIR does not criticize *Nightline* for inviting policy makers to appear on the show, but for its exclusion of forceful American critics of the policy. Critics, and critical sources, are part of a news story."[\[14\]](#)

In *Manufacturing Consent*, Herman and Chomsky found a tripled example, not merely a paired one, which aptly demonstrated the situation. In Central America, the nations of Guatemala, El Salvador and Nicaragua are neighbors, lined up along the narrow strip of land that joins the continents. Guatemala and El Salvador were favored client states of the United States during the 1980s, El Salvador receiving six billion dollars in military and other aid from the United States, while Ronald Reagan called it a "fledgling democracy." By almost any standard applied to Guatemala and El Salvador during those years, they had two of the 20th century's most brutal and murderous regimes. The only reason the leaders of those governments did not attain the bloody stature of Hitler, Stalin and other despots was because their nations were relatively small.

Guatemala and El Salvador were terror states that butchered their populations. The butchers that ran them were U.S. puppets, and the leaders of their "security forces" were largely trained in the United States at the School of the Americas and other facilities. When they graduated from their American schools, their first acts upon returning home were often killing women and children in sadistic fashion. Here is an example of the kinds of activities engaged in by America-trained El Salvadoran soldiers, used to keep the population terrorized, written by human rights activist and Catholic priest Daniel Santiago,

"People are not just killed by death squads in El Salvador - they are decapitated and their heads are placed on pikes and used to dot the landscape. Men are not just disemboweled by the Salvadoran Treasury Police; their severed genitalia are stuffed into their mouths. Salvadoran women are not just raped by the National Guard; their wombs are cut from their bodies and used to cover their faces. It is not enough to kill children; they are dragged over barbed wire until the flesh falls from their bones and their parents are forced to watch...The aesthetics of terror in El Salvador is religious."[\[15\]](#)

Santiago reported the story of a peasant woman returning home to find her family seated around the kitchen table. Sitting around the table was her mother, sister and three children. Placed on the table in front of each of them were their decapitated heads. Their hands were placed on their heads, as if each body was stroking its own head. The El Salvadoran National Guardsmen who created that artistic tableau found it difficult for the youngest actor in the scene, an eighteen-month-old baby, to keep its hands on its head, so they nailed its hands onto its head. Completing the scene, in the center of the table was a large plastic bowl, filled with blood.[\[16\]](#) Many Americans

wonder how people such as Jeffrey Dahmer walk the earth. America trains them.

Dan Mitrione, a CIA man and boyhood friend of James Jones of [Jonestown](#) fame, was a torture specialist. He considered torture an art form. Mitrione's motto was "The precise pain, in the precise place, in the precise amount, for the desired effect." Mitrione was a true torture professional, stating, "A premature death means a failure by the technician...It's important to know in advance if we can permit ourselves the luxury of the subject's death." Mitrione taught his Uruguayan pupils how to refine the art of torture. Mitrione had slender wires brought in by diplomatic pouch. The wires were used for one of Mitrione's specialties, inserting the wires between an interrogation victim's teeth, to administer an electric shock, which produced exquisite pain. A Uruguayan commission looked into the use of torture by the government against its own citizens. Among the tortures the commission discovered were electric shocks administered to genitals, needles under fingernails, putting testicles in vices, and using torture on pregnant women and women nursing infants. Mitrione built a soundproof torture chamber in the cellar of his home in Uruguay. In 1970, a group whose members he was torturing kidnapped Mitrione. They held him for ransom: the return of 150 of their people. When Uruguay refused, with the firm backing of the United States, they killed Mitrione. Mitrione was eulogized in America by the White House (the Secretary of State attended his funeral) as a devoted servant of "peaceful progress." His daughter called him "a great humanitarian."[\[17\]](#)

The satanic atrocities committed against its citizens were merely days at the office for the El Salvadoran security forces. Father Ignacio Martín-Baró was one of six Jesuit priests murdered in an El Salvadoran massacre in 1989, which finally spurred the U.S. media to take a deeper look into El Salvador's "fledgling democracy," after nearly a decade of Reagan-inspired butchery. A few months before he was murdered, Martín-Baró gave a talk in California regarding "The Psychological Consequences of Political Terrorism." His first point was that the most significant terrorism is that [inflicted by the state onto its domestic population](#). His second point was that terror's purpose was serving the elite needs of that nation, as the terror is part of a "government-imposed sociopolitical project." His third point was briefly addressed, but Chomsky said it was the most important one for his Californian audience, which was:

"The sociopolitical project and the state terrorism that helps to implement it are not specific to El Salvador, but are common features of the Third World domains of the United States, for reasons deeply rooted in Western culture, institutions, and policy planning, and fully in accord with the values of enlightened opinion. These crucial factors explain much more than the fate of El Salvador."[\[18\]](#)

About 75,000 civilians died during El Salvador's reign of terror. In Guatemala, the reign of terror began in 1954 when the U.S. and CIA overthrew their democratic government on behalf of the company that brings us Chiquita bananas. The Guatemalan death toll is about 200,000 people,

and the killing escalated in the 1980s. The same kinds of atrocities found in El Salvador could be seen in Guatemala, with the soldiers being trained in the United States, using U.S. weapons, with money and arms flowing from U.S. coffers.

While the butchery was happening in El Salvador and Guatemala, one Central American nation finally overthrew the U.S.-sponsored butchers. In 1979 in Nicaragua, the Sandinista revolution overthrew the Somoza regime, which was a brutal dictatorship that the United States propped up for generations. As with any military revolution, there are no choirboys on either side. What happened in Nicaragua was the closest that any Central American nation had ever come to democracy. The Sandinistas have some things to answer for, such as their treatment of the natives of the Miskitia region, but the Sandinistas' great crime was the same crime Castro committed. It was the same crime that Arbenz of Guatemala, Allende of Chile and [Torrijos of Panama](#) committed. Their crime was that committing themselves to the welfare of their nation's average people. They committed themselves to succoring the poor. They embarked on creating a society that took care of everybody, where the people would share and share alike. They took the rhetoric of America's [Founding Fathers](#) seriously, and believed that all people were created equal and deserved equal opportunity and a minimum standard of comfort.

Those who wish to challenge that characterization of those Latin American leaders are encouraged to study the parallels of those leaders, what they strove for, what they succeeded at, and what the U.S. position was towards them. U.S. rhetoric always accused them of being communist and inferred they were Soviet pawns, but in looking at the early days of each movement, they obviously had no relationship to the Soviet Union, and even their ideological links were tenuous. Arbenz was a fan of Franklin Roosevelt and consciously tried structuring a New Deal-style economy. With that fifth media filter mentioned by Herman and Chomsky working, any notion a nation had of shedding the United States' neocolonial yoke was [rubber-stamped "communist,"](#) setting the stage for attacking and destroying the social movement. The U.S. goal was always putting the plutocratic elite back in charge in those nations, while the American business interests raped them, although the anticommunist "religion" sometimes even took precedence over that.

Allende was a committed Marxist, yet had no allegiance to the Soviet Union. As with virtually every other case of American hysteria over the Soviet threat, there is no credible evidence that the Soviet Union had anything to do with Allende's rise in Chile. The Soviet Union even cautioned Chile that with its commitments to Cuba, it really could not spare Chile much time or effort. The evidence shows that while Allende's program would "hurt" American mining and other interests in Chile, the real reason that Henry Kissinger went on the warpath to overthrow Allende was not because his policies would hurt U.S. business interests. Kissinger's real passion was the "ideology" of it.[\[19\]](#) An *elected* Marxist in the Western Hemisphere was intolerable. A generation of the bloody Pinochet dictatorship left Chile in ruins, with the seventh greatest national income disparity on earth, tied with Kenya and Zimbabwe.[\[20\]](#) The plutocratic elite thinks that life there is great, but do not ask the average Chilean citizen how great it is.

Herman and Chomsky compared the nature of Guatemalan, El Salvadoran and Nicaraguan (Sandinista) elections and how free they really were, based upon independent observation. They

then compared that reality to how the American mainstream media portrayed them. In Guatemala and El Salvador, the elections were frauds. One reason was because the U.S.-backed dictatorships slaughtered the political opposition. Anybody who thought of running for office on any kind of humanitarian platform could expect a death squad visitation. Any media organization that dared criticize the dictatorships was wiped out. Blowing up their headquarters and murdering the editor were handy ways to do it. On Election Day, peasants could vote for the dictatorship of their choice. It was a one party system. In El Salvador, voting was mandatory. They could vote for their candidate if he/she was still alive. Guatemala had a similar situation. Nicaragua, on the other hand, was a nation under siege from the U.S.-financed Contra terror war. The CIA engaged in its standard activities of paying off anybody in Nicaragua who could help destabilize the government, running its own candidates in the elections, etc. In light of the outside pressure that Nicaragua was under, its elections were arguably fairer than any elections the United States has ever held.

Herman and Chomsky painstakingly analyzed the mainstream media's accounts of those elections. The media continually painted the El Salvadoran and Guatemalan elections as paragons of fairness, and constantly attacked the Nicaraguan elections as shams. For three nations sitting along the same strip of land, with the situations so starkly different, the hypocrisy of the American press was spectacularly laid bare.

In *Manufacturing Consent*, the media's performance in covering the Southeast Asian wars was also analyzed. In any war, the first casualty is the truth. Noam Chomsky, among others, makes very impressive arguments that the so-called war in Vietnam to "save them" from communism was anything but that. It was an invasion designed to keep them [enslaved to a neocolonial system](#). There is such large body of impressive literature on that subject that cannot be rationally denied, although it has never been admitted [or even discussed](#) in the American mainstream media before. America has not admitted that it invaded Vietnam. Similarly, the Soviet Union did not admit that it invaded Afghanistan. We were "saving" those invaded countries, although the Soviet Union had much more excuse than the United States had, and a key U.S. official recently bragged that he helped [lure the Soviet Union into the "Afghan trap."](#)

Some "side effects" of bludgeoning Vietnam were the secret wars carried out in Laos and Cambodia by the United States. Laos and Cambodia were two sleepy nations, among the poorest on earth, wanting to be left alone. The United States could not allow that, in its noble fight against communism. It began secretly carpet-bombing Cambodia in 1969. It was not a secret to the Cambodians, but the American press kept it secret from the American people. The five-year "war" killed about 600,000 people in a nation with a population less than eight million. Two million were made refugees, with about a million of those predicted to die in the war's aftermath due to disease, starvation, etc.[\[21\]](#)

While the United States was fighting communism and bludgeoning Southeast Asia, there were also victories. In 1965, the United States assisted a military coup in nearby Indonesia. The military strongman Suharto came to power. Communism was a "threat" in that region. The peasants thought that communism was a great improvement over the colonial oppression they received at Europe's hands. The United States [hired death camp Nazis after World War II](#). America would

embrace anybody as long as they were "anticommunist." Suharto's rise is an excellent case in point.

Before Suharto seized power, there was a large peasant-based communist party in Indonesia, largely composed of ethnic Chinese. "Communist" has the same root as the word community, and community was the operative word for those communists. Suharto's plan to consolidate his power was eliminating the political competition. The Mafia was gentler. Suharto had CIA help in executing his plan: murder every communist in Indonesia. The CIA used its intelligence methods to draw lists of communists for Suharto's troops to roundup. Then the slaughter commenced. It is estimated that between 500,000 and 1,000,000 people were wiped out by Suharto's armed forces. [22] It was more than just a slaughter. It was an ideological and instructive one. A *New York Times* account said:

"Nearly 100 Communists, or suspected Communists, were herded into the town's botanical garden and mowed down with a machine gun...the head that had belonged to the school principal, a P.K.I. (Communist Party) member, was stuck on a pole and paraded among his former pupils, convened in special assembly." [23]

The [postwar collapse of Europe's empires](#) lasted for many years. The Portuguese were able to hold onto East Timor until the 1970s, partly because the East Timorese were so tame and easygoing. In the late colonial year of 1975 there was a popular revolution, and the winner was a peasant-based leftist party named FRETILIN. East Timor was on the east end of an island a few hundred miles north of Australia. The west end was part of Indonesia, a [Dutch colony](#) that gained its independence in 1949. Indonesia was a neocolonial nation, although the generals who skimmed the economy's cream were excessively greedy even for the foreign investors, demanding steep bribes and kickbacks. [24]

The dust had barely settled on the East Timorese revolution when Indonesia invaded on December 7, 1975. As fate would have it, U.S. President Gerald Ford and Henry Kissinger were visiting with Suharto when the invasion was mounted, so Indonesia put off its invasion until Ford and Kissinger left the country, apparently to prevent embarrassment for the United States. Within a few hours after Ford and Kissinger's departure, the invasion began. Nearly as many soldiers invaded Dili, the capital city, as there were residents of the city. The soldiers killed everything that moved. Indonesia admitted that it had no legal claim on East Timor, but was taking it anyway. The United States and other nations such as Australia not only stood by and watched, but actively assisted Indonesia's effort. During those years, Daniel P. Moynihan was the U.S. ambassador to the United Nations, and he actively stifled any U.N. response to the Indonesian invasion of East Timor. Moynihan would later write in his memoirs,

"The United States wished things to turn out as they did and worked to bring this about. The Department of State desired that the United Nations prove utterly ineffective in whatever measures it took. This task was given to me, and I carried it forward with no inconsiderable success."[\[25\]](#)

The same year that East Timor was invaded, Pol Pot came to power in Cambodia. The United States' "secret war" in Cambodia created the devastation that brought Pol Pot to power. If not for the exploitation and violence of the French, followed by the violence of the Americans, Cambodia would have stayed a sleepy nation of several million people, mostly living in the jungle. France and America caused the tragedy of Cambodia.

When Pol Pot came to power, the American media immediately began a drumbeat of genocide, pinning all those American-caused deaths from the bombings, and deaths to come from the aftermath, onto Pol Pot's tally sheet. Many Cambodians did die in Pol Pot's programs, but in the American media nobody heard a whisper about the Cambodian blood on America's hands.

Meanwhile, the slaughter in East Timor progressed. Indonesia was using American weapons. Although the American media gave substantial coverage of East Timor's political ferment that led to the revolution, Indonesia's invasion and resultant genocide was not covered at all. In a few months, 60,000 of the original 690,000 inhabitants of East Timor were dead. It reached genocidal proportions after that, and as the carnage became the worst, the American media was the most silent. Indonesia began running out of bullets a couple years into their invasion, and that human rights saint, Jimmy Carter, hastily signed a bill to give Indonesia more arms. As Noam Chomsky says, in the case of East Timor the American media was not only guilty of distorting reality (or hiding it), they were actually complicit in genocide.[\[26\]](#)

If the American people had known what happened in East Timor, maybe they would not have supported it, but the [Iraqi death toll](#) is far less secret than the death toll in East Timor. It would have been more difficult to portray East Timor as a threat to American security, but Iraq, Grenada, Panama, Libya, Nicaragua and Vietnam possessed no threat either. Although the death toll is generally considered about 200,000 people, the death toll in East Timor may have reached over 300,000, for the greatest proportional genocide of an ethnic group in the 20th century.[\[27\]](#)

There are "gentler" paired examples to demonstrate the dynamics at work. One was a pair of military missile attacks on commercial airliners. The Soviet Union shot down one, and the United States shot down another. In 1983, a South Korean passenger jet flew hundreds of miles off its course, flying over sensitive Soviet airspace at night. The Soviet Union shot it down. Five years later, an Iranian airliner took off from Tehran in broad daylight, flying over the Persian Gulf. The United States shot down that airliner. They make an instructive paired example. The Soviet shooting was far more understandable than the United States'. Soon after the Soviet attack, the United States had intelligence showing that the Soviet Union thought it was shooting down a spy plane.

How did the American media respond to those tragedies? The U.S. media's condemnation of the Soviet shoot down was universal. Dan Rather called it a "barbaric act." *Nightline* devoted eight consecutive shows to the event. Koppel had viewers call in, asking whether the Reagan Administration "should take strong action against the Soviets." More than 90 percent said yes. The portrayal of the Soviets as inhuman monsters fit perfectly with Reagan's propaganda objectives, whipping up support for his Star Wars plan. On *Nightline*, right wing hawks dominated the guest list - George Will, William F. Buckley, William Safire, Jesse Helms and others. Condemnation was nearly universal, and Koppel himself chimed in, stating there was not "any question that the Soviet Union deserves to be accused of murder, it's only a question of whether it's first degree or second degree." Right-winger Terry Dolan even stated, "anyone who would suggest the U.S. would ever consider shooting down an unarmed civilian plane is downright foolish and irresponsible."

Five years later, America was faced with *exactly* that. In what was an obvious prelude to the Gulf War, the *USS Vincennes* had been playing bully of the Gulf, trying to provoke Iran into military action. When an airliner flew over the Persian Gulf, the trigger-happy captain of the *Vincennes* blew it out of the sky. What the Soviet Union did was a hundred times more justifiable than what the United States did, but the American media went into overdrive as it explained away the Iranian airliner's downing, which killed 290 people. It was a tragic accident in the American media. Nobody in the mainstream media could see *any* parallel between the downings of the Korean and Iranian airliners. It was as if the Korean Airliner tragedy never happened, flushed down Orwell's memory hole. In *Unreliable Sources* they laid the editorials of the *New York Times* side-by-side. [28] It was not even enough to call it a tragic accident. The *New York Times* editorial, as with the media frenzy the day after the [U.S. bombed the Baghdad bomb shelter](#), killing hundreds of women and children, tried spinning the blame onto Iran. To wit,

"The episode also raises stern questions for Iran. If the Navy's version of events is largely correct, blame may lie with the Iran Air pilot for failing to acknowledge the ship's warnings and flying outside the civilian corridor. Iran, too may bear responsibility for failing to warn civilian planes away from the combat zone of an action it had initiated." [29]

There were a few big lies in that editorial, such as the airliner had strayed from its legal route (it had not) and that Iran was mainly responsible for the Gulf hostilities, with the U.S. playing selfless cop (a laughable notion).

The sorry state of the American media has never been more apparent than the years between 9/11 and the 2003 invasion of Iraq. Right wing attack dogs such as Rush Limbaugh, Sean Hannity, Ann Coulter and Bill O'Reilly had free reign to attack anybody who did not wave their flags fervently enough. A right-wing campaign got [Peter Arnett](#) fired from the job he obtained *after* he lost his job at CNN over the Tailwind flap, because he had the audacity to speak some *truth* about current

events. Many other journalists lost their jobs for daring to contradict the right wing propaganda barrage. People such as *New York Times* reporter Judith Miller became White House mouthpieces, spraying Bush administration disinformation across America's media as if it were fact, to conjure American support for the invasion of Iraq. When some people could no longer keep quiet about the Bush administration's [daily lies](#), Miller and other journalists were accomplices to the crime of exposing Valerie Plame, the CIA employee and wife of Joseph Wilson, as vengeance for Wilson's exposure of the Bush administration's lies about Iraq trying to procure uranium from Africa. The American media has descended to around the level of the Soviet media, pre-Glasnost, except the American people largely still drink from that poisoned well, thinking it provides the "news."[\[30\]](#)

The structural analysis of [Noam Chomsky](#), [Edward Herman](#), [Fairness and Accuracy in Reporting](#), Michael Albert, [Michael Parenti](#) and many others of their stature is compelling. Structural analysis probably explains more facets of the dynamic than anything else, although the "conspiratorial" perspective (conscious manipulation toward a desired end) can also bring important dynamics into view.

Our media, as with our government, is owned by the rich and powerful. Their primary mission is manipulating the public, not informing them. They exist to make money for their owners and serve their interests. How *could* it be any other way?

Although an American president will probably never don clothing as an Indy Car driver does, covered with patches announcing his corporate sponsors, most Americans realize that the rich run Washington D.C., which is the main reason why Americans have the "free world's" lowest voter turnout. They realize it does not matter whom they vote for, as the same people own them all, something that Chomsky has observed. The same corporations that run the government legally own the media. Ben Bagdikian's *The Media Monopoly* has been prescient in predicting the current trend towards a media monopoly. It is largely here already, and is the logical conclusion for any capitalistic society. That is the nature of capitalism, and the rapidly evolving global media monopoly is merely one feature of global capitalism.

Probably the most widely read political book of the 20th century was George Orwell's *Animal Farm*. I had to read it in eighth grade, as have many millions of American schoolchildren. *Animal Farm* was an allegory on the Russian Revolution and how the Soviet Union performed its mind control and social control of the masses. Some animals being "more equal than others" is an immortal example of how nonsense is presented as accepted fact. Orwell began writing *Animal Farm* in 1943, when the Soviet Union was the ally of Great Britain and the United States in the war against Nazi Germany. *Animal Farm* originally had a hostile reception among the British intelligentsia because it made fun of the British ally of the moment, [Uncle Joe's Soviet Union](#). Orwell had difficulty finding a publisher. Orwell wrote a preface to *Animal Farm*. In it, he wrote about how the Soviet Union suppressed dissent and silenced unpopular ideas by direct government intervention, but the West produced the same outcome by different means. In the West, dissident writing is censored not by the government, but by the commercial interests, voluntarily. Orwell noted that genuine but dogma-contradicting news is silenced by the British press not through government

intervention but a “general tacit agreement” in the press that “‘it wouldn’t do’ to mention that particular fact.”^[31] Orwell wrote in his preface that the “[patent medicine racket](#)” was a pressure group that could censor unflattering news about itself, as could the Catholic Church. Orwell wrote regarding dogmatism,

“To exchange one orthodoxy for another is not necessarily an advance. The enemy is the gramophone mind, whether or not one agrees with the record that is being played at the moment.”^[32]

Orwell wrote that freedom of the press was almost non-existent in the British press of his day, and was not due to outside pressure, but the press themselves, censoring that which they did not see fit to print. As A.J. Liebling wrote in 1960, “Freedom of the press is guaranteed to those who own one.”^[33]

As if to demonstrate the truth of Orwell’s preface, the publishers of *Animal Farm* completely censored it. Orwell’s preface was completely missing in the original edition, and was not discovered and published until 1972. The censorship exists to this day. I have picked up several editions of *Animal Farm*, and the only version that even produces Orwell’s original preface is the Everyman’s Library edition, and even then it is not restored to its rightful place, but put in an appendix. In the wake of the World Trade Center attacks, Orwell’s 1984 [makes for timely reading](#).

There are other examples of the totalitarian nature of the Western press, although it calls itself free. Mark Twain is known for his fiction such as *Tom Sawyer* and *The Jumping Frog of Calaveras County*. Virtually unknown are the many [anti-imperialist writings of the last fifteen years of his life](#), which gave the ruling class in Europe and America a black eye. Twain probably thought it was his most important work, but it was completely censored in the West for eighty years, until an obscure book reproduced them in the 1990s, to quickly disappear from circulation. I have tried obtaining that book for years, and have never been successful. That level of suppression was probably not even possible in Stalin’s Soviet Union. When Twain wrote *King Leopold’s Soliloquy* in 1905, which outlined the genocide taking place in the Belgian Congo, with American industrialists eagerly sidling up to the trough as investors, the suppression was so complete by the American media establishment that it was never published in the United States, except as a pamphlet issued by some Congo reform groups.^[34] I have tried getting my hands on it for years, and have never been successful. The “free market” [censorship of Zora Neale Hurston’s work](#) is one of countless instances of how lesser-known authors have been regularly censored in the West.

The notion of a “free press” is one the biggest fabrications in American history - a myth concocted by the media itself. The biggest lie that our media serves up is the self-serving pretense that it is objective, merely seeking the truth. All the first amendment says is that the government cannot tell

the media what to write or not write. America has never really had true freedom of speech. It is the world's freest in significant ways, but it still is not *that* free, as [Mumia Abu Jamal](#), a journalist who has spent many years on death row, knows well. The American media is also the most manipulative of its consumers. We may have relative freedom to speak, but it does not mean that anybody will hear us. Ever since the [Sedition Act was passed in the 1700's](#), free speech has had a rough ride in America. During World War I, the [Espionage Act was passed](#), making it illegal to speak out against the war, and the U.S. imprisoned hundreds of Americans for the crime of speaking out.

If the same interests that run the government also own the media, how free can the media truly be? They are stenographers to power.[\[35\]](#) On a lighter side, the funniest and perhaps the best political cartoonist I have ever seen, [Tom Tomorrow](#), summarizes the American news process in a hilarious cartoon, below.



Click
on image to enlarge

More Big Lies: History

Who controls the past controls the future: who controls the present controls the past. - George Orwell, 1984.

As Orwell said, whoever writes the news also writes the history. My historical investigations, which have taken several years, were to see if anything I had been taught as a student was true. My media studies were necessarily complemented with studying history and politics. They cannot be effectively separated. If you are an American and more than forty years old, compare this site's essay on [Columbus](#) to the tales you were told in school. The man who initiated history's first complete genocide of millions of people became an American national hero.

As [James Loewen](#) stated in his best-selling *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, the hero in American high school textbooks is America. American history is designed to make unthinking patriots, ready to march off to war and otherwise defend our great nation. It is an exercise in nationalism. Those history lessons in school are warm ups for the continual stream of what the media produces for our

consumption each day.

I was raised in Ventura, California, and attended Junípero Serra elementary school in grades four through six. Serra founded the California mission system, and is credited with bringing "civilization" to California, a land of triple heritage. The names of the towns reflected that heritage. Ventura was named after the Spanish mission founded there in 1782. A couple miles from my home was the town of Saticoy, named after an extinct local Indian tribe. A couple miles in another direction was Oxnard, named after white settlers who built a beet-processing factory. The Chumash tribe occupied the coastline from Ventura to San Luis Obispo, and in fourth grade, our teacher read to us *Island of the Blue Dolphins*, a story of the Chumash and their life, which included settling the islands off the coast, now known as the Channel Islands.

That same year we watched a film of Junípero Serra's life, the man who established the mission system. The film depicted Serra as a gentle man, tirelessly "civilizing" the poor natives of California, bringing them God's Word. We also took field trips to the Ventura and Santa Barbara missions. That same year we performed a play for our parents about the Gold Rush. My role was a prospector's mule, and I enjoyed running around on all fours, braying loudly.

When I was in college, I attended Cal Poly at San Luis Obispo, another mission town founded by Serra. During my last year of college, I worked as a graveyard shift cook at a restaurant a couple blocks from that mission in the center of town. After graduation, I ended up living and working in Los Angeles, another mission town. For a couple years, I audited the city of Santa Barbara, another mission town. In Santa Barbara there is a large, preserved religious facility next to city hall, and the Spanish heritage is evident everywhere. Serra and his missions were *very* ubiquitous aspects of my early years. The schools in Ventura were mainly named after other Spaniards. Half of my Serra school chums attended Balboa junior high school, named after the [conquistador who "discovered" the Pacific Ocean](#). Another junior high school was named after [Cabrillo](#), the first Spaniard to "discover" the California coast. The two public high schools were Buena and Ventura, the two halves of Ventura's legal name San Buenaventura (literally, the saint of good venture). I attended the latter school.

I always heard what a great man Serra was, and how he pioneered "civilization" in California. The tales of Serra and those pioneering 49ers were part of a general trend of celebrating the "pioneers" all over the Western United States. I lived in Houston for a year when my father worked for NASA. Texas also had a triple heritage, but just as in California, I recall little mention of the natives. In Texas, the exploits of Sam Houston and the Alamo story were the standard schoolboy fare. I visited the monument at San Jacinto, which memorialized Houston's great feat of slaughtering nearly a thousand sleeping Mexican soldiers in less than twenty minutes, [winning Texas' battle for "independence"](#) in 1836.

While I grew up in Ventura, I took three years of California history. Other than *Island of the Blue Dolphins*, the natives were rarely mentioned, and how they passed from the scene was never discussed. The wresting of California and the entire American Southwest from Spain and Mexico was also lightly covered. The emphasis was usually on the 49ers, the pioneers, the tragedy of the

Donner party, and the Spanish mission heritage. My historical investigations have researched just how Ventura came to have a triple heritage, comparing what I learned through research to what I was taught in school.

The [coming of the Spanish](#) was a horror without precedent in world history. Spanish disease, greed, slavery, violence and famine depopulated entire regions. After a century of uninterrupted plunder, the New World's natives were reduced to about 10% of their "prediscovery" population.

When the [English](#) realized there was no easy gold in North America, they came to settle the land, bringing their women with them. Although raping the native women was not the pastime for the English that it was for the Spanish, it also reflected a difference in attitude. The Spanish were extremely racist, and the lighter a mestizo's skin, the better off he/she was. The Spanish generally saw the natives as human, but inferior. The English usually saw the natives as inhuman savages.

I found that there really was an original Thanksgiving, where the Pilgrims feasted with the Wampanoag who helped them survive. The feast, with sports and games being played, lasted a few days. It really happened.

What did not make my grade school history books was that the armed Pilgrims had already chased local Indians, stolen their corn and robbed their graves before they settled at what is now called Plymouth. Plymouth was the site of the Pawtuxet Wampanoag tribe that Captain [John Smith's](#) men plundered. As with Columbus, the English had a practice of kidnapping natives to establish themselves in the New World. The strategy was to kidnap natives, enslave them, teach them English in Europe, and then return with a native interpreter to help pave the way for invasion a little more gently than simply using arms. The [Portuguese](#) used that strategy in the African slave trade. Squanto, the man who taught the Pilgrims survival skills, was a Pawtuxet Wampanoag captured by one of Smith's men in 1614 and was scheduled for slavery in Spain along with dozens of his tribesmen. Selling the natives into slavery was a favorite moneymaker for the European invaders for centuries.

When Smith left for Europe, his men left behind a calling card (it also may have been shipwrecked French sailors who left it). A European-introduced disease killed ninety percent of the Wampanoag tribe. It may have been an intentional introduction of disease.[\[36\]](#) Squanto arrived back at his tribal grounds in 1619 as an English expedition's interpreter, and found that nearly his entire village had died from the epidemic. When the Pilgrims invaded in 1620, they "settled" where Squanto's tribe had lived. The Wampanoag were rivals of the neighboring Narragansett tribe. When the Pilgrims arrived, the regional balance of power had been drastically altered, since the Narragansett had not suffered a European-introduced plague quite yet, they were trading with the Dutch, and Massasoit (the Wampanoag chief) saw a potential beneficial alliance for the remnant of his tribe.

For ten years, the settlers (about 300 of them) and Wampanoag lived in peace. When word got out about the paradisiacal life of the settlers and their benefactors, Puritans began coming by the boatload.[\[37\]](#) The original Pilgrims, to their credit, respected their benefactor, and in later years as the new settlers took more and more land that was Wampanoag, the original Pilgrims protested that

violation of their relationship with Massasoit. Those protesting Pilgrims soon found themselves expelled from their church.

Although the Pilgrims got along with the Wampanoag, by instigation of Massasoit, Miles Standish and friends murdered a number of chiefs of the neighboring Massachusetts tribe. Around New England, the natives were finding out about European benevolence. In 1641, the Dutch governor of Manhattan offered the first scalp bounty.

Eventually, Thanksgiving took on a more macabre meaning. The white invaders would have a Thanksgiving celebration each time they wiped out a native tribe. Europeans introduced a new tactic to the annals of invasion. They would surround a village at night, burn it and kill every man, woman, and child in it. At other times, the women and children of a working age (over 14 generally) would be sold into slavery and the rest slaughtered. An early and notorious instance of that tactic was the burning of the fortified Pequot village on the Mystic River in 1637, by English soldiers and their [Narragansett and Mohegan](#) native allies. They surprised the sleeping village of several hundred, burned the village to the ground and killed the fleeing natives. Neither women nor children were spared in the massacre. Native allies who had not already fled (not really having the stomach for war) were horrified at the English savagery. Captain John Underhill, who led the slaughter, would later find justification for killing those women and children by citing Kind David's Old Testament genocidal slaughters.[\[38\]](#)

Manhattan's churches declared the [second Thanksgiving](#) after a successful raid against the natives in what is now Stamford, Connecticut, where Underhill wiped out another sleeping village, killing about 500 people. Thanksgiving celebrations, given when natives were wiped out, were getting out of hand around the colonies, and eventually George Washington tried to bring some order to the affair, and named one day a year as Thanksgiving. Abe Lincoln declared the official Thanksgiving Day that we celebrate today. The day Lincoln declared the national holiday he sent troops against the Sioux in Minnesota.

Massasoit helped the Pilgrims stay alive. It was not because he was a great humanitarian, although kindness was evident at times. He thought the white people would make good allies in the region's tribal struggles. Massasoit had considerable diplomatic skill, and there was relative peace during the last forty years of his life. Although the natives were being decimated across what is now called New England, Massasoit and the Pilgrims forged a relatively peaceful and mutually beneficial arrangement.

When Massasoit died in 1661, however, his tribe was doomed, and the insatiable European greed for land initiated a war with his successor son, Metacom, called King Philip by the Europeans. One reason for the war was the native suspicion that the Puritans were intentionally introducing European disease amongst them to further clear the land. Germ warfare is an integral part of European history, and it is not farfetched to think that the English began that practice in their earliest days of invading North America.[\[39\]](#) [King Philip's war in 1675](#) was one of the few instances of a relatively successful war carried out by New World natives. It ended in about a year with the destruction of nearly the entire Wampanoag tribe, and Metacom's head was displayed on a pike at

Plymouth for 24 years. Thus ended the tribe that welcomed the Pilgrims to America,[\[40\]](#) also ending one of the most peaceful relationships that the European invaders and natives had: complete genocide was staved off for more than fifty years. Elsewhere genocide came much more swiftly, and befell all native tribes that the [European invaders encountered on today's United States East Coast](#).

The genocide of the natives of eastern North America is a horrific tale. When America won its independence, it [continued marching across the continent](#), with its deceptive treaties used as a means of swindling the natives out of their land, using a strategy that [George Washington](#) originally proposed.[\[41\]](#) Washington's profession was a surveyor, but surveying native lands for acquisition was really Washington's profession. Washington is far from the only murderous thief glorified in American myth. [Daniel Boone](#), that grand pioneer of Kentucky, was a land speculator, just like Washington. Also, as with Washington, Boone specialized in killing natives and taking their land. Boone participated in intrusive military campaigns against natives, such as George Rogers Clark's genocidal invasions.[\[42\]](#) Whether the natives were "friendly" or "hostile" often made no difference to the marauding white men.

In great irony, the [Iroquois Confederacy](#) inspired the American Constitution in no small measure, and George Washington initiated exterminatory campaigns against them. Washington's armies were particularly brutal. Scalping living natives was some of the fun that Washington's men enjoyed, but skinning natives from the hips downward procured the ultimate frontiersman's apparel: native-skin trousers.[\[43\]](#) Later, [Andrew Jackson](#), another American President-hero, had his troops cut off several hundred native noses (men, women and children) to commemorate the body count of a [successful "battle"](#). Jackson supervised his men as they stripped native skins to make into bridle reins, and Jackson even saw that trophies cut from native corpses were given to the "ladies of Tennessee" as souvenirs.[\[44\]](#) The issue of dispossessing the natives of their land was the leading issue of Jackson's presidency, but a modern historian such as [Arthur Schlesinger](#) could write a Pulitzer-Prize-winning book about Jackson (*The Age of Jackson*) without mentioning *one word* about Jackson's Indian policy.[\[45\]](#)

Similar to the [Spanish soldiers](#), the favorite quarry of the American frontiersman was human. Boone's mythmaking biographer, John Filson, once wrote that Boone killed two Indians with one bullet. Frontiersman Adam Poe was said to have relished hunting "Injins" as the best "game," more satisfying than hunting bears and cougars.[\[46\]](#) America's greed for land and gold [propelled the empire across the continent](#), wiping out the natives in its way, and was not much different than the Romans' modus operandi. Concocting Ideology to turn the natives into subhumans was an essential and time-honored tactic.

I eventually discovered there was more to the Padre Serra story than I was taught in grade school. Serra was beatified in 1988, and is up for sainthood today. He was the chief inquisitor in northern Mexico, called New Spain in those days. Among his duties was supervising the torture of confessions out of witches. Historians consider the mission system that Serra founded the first prison system established on what became American soil. Those lovingly preserved missions were

the first institutions of the genocide of California's natives.

The gentle climate of California's coast made for easy living. The natives did not need clothes for half the year, and life was easy. They were a gentle people, and among them violence was rare. The missions were their "first introduction to civilization." They had already been treated to the white man's diseases. California, as with the rest of the New World, is a source of controversy regarding its pre-Columbian population. Some scholars think it was as high as a million people. When [Cabrillo "discovered" the California coast](#) in 1542, his welcome was not always warm, as natives attacked him. The reason for the harsh welcome was that Spaniards had already been marauding through the area, killing the natives. Spaniards pillaged the land, raped the women and killed the men, spreading disease wherever they went in the New World. Cabrillo wrote of how thickly populated the islands off the coast were (the Channel Islands, right off Ventura where I was raised, now uninhabited), and other early explorers remarked on how thickly the land was settled with natives.

When Serra showed up in San Diego in 1769, the native Californian population had likely already been severely decimated by European disease. The explorers of California in the 1700s found old smallpox scars on the natives. Was the pre-Columbian population of California a million? Who knows? The prevailing estimate is that 300,000 natives lived in California in 1769, but estimates go as high as 600,000 to one million. New Spain's northern periphery was considered largely as a defensive bulwark against the intrusions of its European rivals, protecting its silver mines in Mexico. When the Russians began colonizing the California Coast, Serra made his move.

The Jesuit mission system of Baja California had reduced the natives from a "pre-mission" population of about 60,000, to 5000 in 1770. The Spanish mission system in Florida, begun as an adjunct to protecting Spain's plunder route from South America and Mesoamerica, had long ago decimated the natives through slave labor and disease. By 1700, the pre-Columbian Timucuan population of Florida had declined from perhaps 200,000 to 1000. The priests were in one way much like their soldier counterparts. The Spanish mines and plantations were instruments of genocide, and when the natives were "used up," the soldiers moved on to find more natives to rape, murder and enslave. The missions were really prisons, with the natives being penned into them, treated like slaves and animals, and dying of disease, etc, and when the natives of Baja California got used up, the priests moved on to find more natives to "save." A child's life expectancy if he/she was born in the mission could be as many as ten years. In some missions, their life expectancy was two years. I have not heard of such a low life expectancy, anywhere else in history. The largest disease vector was the syphilis that the Spanish rapists injected into the native populations. [\[47\]](#) The missions were death camps, and Serra could not have been happier.[\[48\]](#) He wrote, "In San Antonio [one of his missions - Ed.] they are faced with two harvests, that is, of the wheat, and of a plague among the children, who are dying."[\[49\]](#) The children's deaths were a "harvest" for the pious padre, just like the Grim Reaper.

The Spanish missionizing process obviously would never have succeeded without brute force. Spanish soldiers were required for the mission system to function. In California and elsewhere, it took few soldiers because the natives were so gentle, but they were required. The "deal" the

natives entered into was not something they chose freely. If they had known that they punched a one-way ticket at the missions when accepting baptism, none would have come. The priests lured them in with trinkets, food and other goodies, and many natives eventually submitted to baptism, not knowing what it implied. Once they did, it was like joining a Mafia family: there was no escape.

There were many instances of soldiers "recruiting" neophytes by scouring the countryside for them. Once a neophyte had "signed on," they were essentially mission prisoners. The padres did not always lock everybody up. They found that locking up the women usually worked fine. There were women's dormitories in the missions, where they slept locked up every night. Those dorms were hellholes, breeding disease. The children died off at incredible rates. Governor Diego de Borica identified poor sanitation as a reason for the missions' high death rates, advice the Franciscans ignored. De Borica wrote of visiting one dorm, where he was driven from it by the overpowering stench of feces.[\[50\]](#) The missions had "living quarters" for a captive native that measured seven feet by two feet. It was about the size of a cattle pen...or a coffin.[\[51\]](#)

The rapist lifestyle that the Spanish mission soldiers enjoyed in California enraged the native men (and women), leading to their few instances of violent resistance. In 1772, immediately after the Spaniards established the mission at San Gabriel, a soldier raped the local Indian chief's wife. The chief gathered some warriors and confronted the rapist. The rapist's response was to kill the chief with his musket. The warriors fled at that act. The Spanish corporal in charge had the chief's head cut off and mounted on a pole at the mission, as a lesson to the natives.[\[52\]](#)

After that episode, gangs of mission soldiers, emboldened by the mission's approval of rape and murder, marauded through the countryside each morning, hunting for native women. When they found them, they lassoed them like cattle and raped them on the spot. Resisting native men were shot with muskets. That was the "civilization" that Serra brought to California. The most common form of native resistance was flight. Some escaped numerous times, even chopping off parts of their bodies to escape their shackles.

Priestly concern for the natives' earthly welfare was practically nowhere in evidence. The game was baptizing them before they died in captivity. The priests often tried to become martyrs. Since martyrdom was the coveted way for a priest to die, the first step to sainthood, Serra eagerly sought opportunities to martyr himself, but never found one, mainly because the natives were not violent.

Drinking urine, and burning and beating one's self was normal priestly behavior in those days. Serra wore coarse clothing that scratched his flesh. That not being enough, he inserted broken wire into his clothing, constantly gouging himself. He burned his chest with candles and hot coals. For years, he beat his chest with heavy rocks while preaching, leading to shortness of breath in later life. His church superiors disapproved of Serra's activities, as they were more fanatical than most priests' practices. Serra may have been the New World's most fanatical priest at that time, a fanaticism that served him well in building the California mission system.

While preaching in Mexico City, Serra shouted for his flock to renounce their sins. As he shouted, he produced a chain that he kept for just such occasions, and began beating himself. The crowd

was swept up into the spectacle, sobbing at the display of such a righteous man beating himself for his god. A man leapt to the pulpit, seized Serra's chain and declared, "I am the sinner who is ungrateful to god who ought to do penance for my many sins, not the padre, who is a saint." The man beat himself until he collapsed. After being revived and given his last rites, he died.[\[53\]](#)

Serra was not that kind toward the natives he was "saving." When some of his captive natives escaped and took supplies to aid their escape, Serra had to be restrained by his fellow priests from hanging them. Serra shouted that "such a race of people deserved to be put to the knife."[\[54\]](#) A mission Indian never smiled, but instead [manifested symptoms of chronic depression](#). When America stole California in 1846, the native population of California was about 150,000. Serra's legacy was the death of at least half of California's native population, and a much greater extermination rate in mission country, of around 90%.

The authors of *Indians, Franciscans, and Spanish Colonization* stated,

"Indian demographic collapse in the missions was not intended but intentional, since Franciscan congregación [forcing the Indians into the missions and keeping them there under force - Ed.] continued despite the negative impacts on Indians even though one civil official, governor Diego de Borica in the 1790s, identified the problem and suggested solutions never implemented by the Franciscans."[\[55\]](#)

Those missions were the professional ancestors of Dachau. If Hitler had prevailed in World War II, the Auschwitz death camp would probably be a museum today, and would have exhibits describing Hitler's attempts to rescue the Jews from their self-imposed ignorance. Auschwitz would have been described as a place where the Nazis tried saving the Jews through honest work, reforming their lazy and greedy tendencies. Unmentioned would be their fate. They were just gone. The town would have been renamed Hitlerville, or something similar. Down the street would have been Adolf Hitler grammar school, a statue of der Führer would have been erected, and the children would have learned what a great man he was, bringing the light of Aryan civilization to the region. Is that going too far? I attended the California equivalent of Adolf Hitler grammar school, and it was not fun to discover it.

If I had lived a few blocks further north than I had, I would have attended Balboa Junior High School. [Balboa](#), the first European to see the Pacific Ocean, specialized in feeding natives to his dogs and attacking sleeping villages, seizing women for concubines and torturing chiefs to death to tell them where their gold was hidden, gold they did not have.

[Sir Francis Drake](#) was another hero of California history, the first Englishman to see California and the first to sail around the world. I have now discovered that his epic voyage was a pirate

expedition taken on behalf of Queen Elizabeth, to plunder the Spanish Empire's Pacific Coast. They reasoned that the Spanish would never suspect an attack from that side. They were right. The plundering of the Spanish Empire's Pacific ports was easy. Drake was a slave runner and pirate, but that expedition put him in the history books. The ship was leaking because it was so heavily weighted down with stolen silver. After seeking a way back to England (the elusive Northwest Passage), sailing as far north as Puget Sound, they stopped on the West Coast to repair the ship's seams, with the natives hosting them in style while they repaired their ship. They went home the only way that they could. Drake sailed back to England across the Pacific Ocean, becoming the first Englishman to sail around the world. Drake's haul was so lucrative that Queen Elizabeth knighted him ("Sir" Francis), and Drake's share made him England's richest private citizen. Serra, Drake, [Columbus](#) and [Washington](#), those were the heroes I was raised to admire.

Although Serra's mission system initiated the native genocide, there was worse to come. When California was stolen in the [fabricated Mexican-American war](#), and gold discovered soon thereafter, the "settlers" came in a rush of greed, [as in all gold rushes](#), at which time the natives were actively exterminated.

The miners and ranchers of Northern California had a hunting season on California's natives that lasted for a generation. California's first governor declared an open season on natives, and the white settlers hunted Indians every weekend. Those mass murderers became local heroes. Hunting expeditions sought out native villages, usually finding encampments of fifty to sixty people. They slaughtered them all. It was during the 1850s and 1860s that the slaughter took place in earnest. When California was admitted to the Union, it was a "free state." That meant that African slaves were outlawed. Native slaves were fine, and made more docile slaves than the Africans, who often lacked the humility required for slaves. When the 49ers annihilated a camp of natives, they often spared the children and sold them into slavery, a long-standing New World practice by the white man. There were many eager buyers in Sacramento and San Francisco. A native girl cost nearly double the price of a native boy because, as the *Marysville Appeal* phrased it, the native girls served the double duty of "labor and of lust."[\[56\]](#)

Similar to the Spanish rapists, American "settlers" also raped the native women as a favorite pastime. Richard Drinnon was raised in Oregon by immigrant homesteaders. His father was a rancher-immigrant in the late 19th century, and a pleasant rancher pastime was riding out on horseback, hunting for native women to lasso and rape. Drinnon's father enjoyed telling the story of a "squaw chase" where the prey thought quickly, squatted down and threw sand into her "privates," thwarting the ranchers' ardor. Drinnon grew up hearing that story many times, and everybody had a good belly laugh when hearing it. Drinnon thought the tale immensely humorous, and later admitted that his youthful appreciation of it showed how stunted his sensitivity was toward the native peoples.[\[57\]](#)

By 1900, the California native population was about 15,000. I never read or heard about the California genocide until these past several years. The only native reference I remember was reading a brief mention that Ventura's last Indian lived in the river bottom near my house, dying around 1900.

The nineteenth century was the [American century of genocide](#), and the most assured way of getting votes was running for office as an "Indian fighter." Custer's famous "last stand" was apparently a failed presidential campaign. Custer was an extremely vain soldier who had been hobnobbing with New York's elite during the winter of 1875-76, and they saw in him presidential material. He had just turned thirty-five, the minimum presidential age.^[58] The morning of the Little Big Horn Battle, Custer told two of his scouts, "If we beat the Sioux, I will be President of the United States - the Grandfather. If you Arikaras do as well as I tell you and kill enough Sioux for me and capture many Sioux ponies, I will take care of you when I come into my power!"^[59] Indian killers becoming presidents was as American as apple pie, and the apparent plan (more like a conspiracy at that stage) was for Custer to find glory on the battlefield that summer, sweeping him to the presidency that autumn.

Custer originally made a name for himself as an Indian fighter by sneaking up on a friendly Indian camp on the Washita River in the winter of 1868, where a dawn attack killed scores of women and children, sleeping in their teepees. That attack killed Black Kettle, the Cheyenne chief and one of history's most tragic Indians. Black Kettle made peace with the invading white men from the moment they came marching across the plains in search of gold.^[60] No matter how friendly the natives were to the invaders, Custer's boss General Sheridan soon articulated the American mentality when he said the only good Indians he ever saw were dead.

Black Kettle even [went to Denver](#) with other chiefs, smoking their peace pipes, trying to forestall the genocidal violence, violence the belligerent "settlers" took delight in. Colorado's governor was embarrassed by the chiefs' overture, as he had asked the federal government for authorization to raise an Indian-killing militia. Black Kettle and the chiefs thought they made peace, and Black Kettle took his people in sight of a fort on their reservation land, turned in all their weapons except the ones they used for hunting, and considered themselves charges of the government. It was far more than any government could ask for. Soon after, the tribe was ordered to move away from the fort, and they moved off to Sand Creek, still on their reservation. While the men were away on a buffalo hunt, an ex-minister, Colonel John Chivington, marched that militia to Sand Creek. There were truly hostile Indians in the vicinity, braves not taking kindly to the white man's invasion. They were carefully avoided while Chivington led his troops to Sand Creek.

When told of the peaceful camp of Black Kettle, Chivington said, "I long to be wading in gore." They surrounded the camp at night, attacking at dawn. Chivington ordered his eager volunteers to "Kill and scalp all. Nits make lice." They were spotted before attacking, and Black Kettle came out of his teepee to see soldiers ringing his camp. He raised a white flag and an American flag on a pole outside his tent, and stood there with his family, trying to keep his people calm. Then the attack began, which was one of the most brutal and cowardly attacks at anytime and anywhere. They killed women, children and the elderly, carving the genitals off women and men, making tobacco pouches and other fashionable items from them. They raped dying women before finishing them off, scalping them and cutting off their genitalia and other body parts as "souvenirs." They even carved open pregnant women to liberate their prized fetuses, treating their bodies like Cracker Jack boxes.

Sand Creek was one of the more egregious massacres in American history, but it also reflected typical American sentiments of the day. Attacking sleeping encampments while the men were away hunting, *especially* while the men were away hunting, was standard frontier practice. When the women, children and elderly were finally dispatched, the glowing reports from the "battlefield" almost invariably told of daringly fighting hordes of bloodthirsty braves. Those heroes at Sand Creek became the toast of Denver, proudly showing off women's genitalia they had cut from their victims, and parading around the few children they had "taken prisoner." The frontier press, whether it was in California or Colorado, exulted at each massacre. Those events were taking place while the Union was "heroically" [fighting a war](#) to free the slaves of the South. Even today, numerous streets in Denver are named after participants in the Sand Creek Massacre, there is a monument at the state capital in honor of their volunteer regiment, and a town near the "battleground" at Sand Creek bears Chivington's hallowed name. Colorado generally still beams with pride over Sand Creek.[\[61\]](#)

In February 1871, a band of Apaches arrived at Camp Grant, near Tucson, Arizona. The Apaches today have the reputation of being one of the most militant and savage of the Native American tribes. Apaches had alternately resisted and accepted the [Spanish Invasion](#) for centuries, at times fighting back, at others allowing themselves to be herded onto Spanish reservations and into missions. After centuries of genocide, as European disease epidemics regularly swept through their ranks, with periodic violence from the "settlers," the Apache fought back, led in their twilight years by Geronimo, who began fighting after Mexicans had slaughtered his entire family.

Those Apaches in 1871 were in the surrender mode, asking to live on the reservation land, as they had been rendered nomadic by the marauding U.S. cavalry. They voluntarily disarmed themselves and settled down to farming and working on the local ranches. They were under the care of Lieutenant Royal Whitman, an anomaly among American military men, one who conscientiously tried executing the U.S.' duty to those dispossessed natives. The word got out about a sanctuary at Camp Grant, and within weeks, more than five hundred Apaches had come to live there. They came and went under a pass system that Whitman used, and began their spring plantings in April. One camp on the reservation had a couple hundred people living there. The residents of nearby Tucson heard of those Apaches who had retired to reservation life. On April 28th, a group of prominent Tucson citizens left Tucson, led by the ex-mayor, William Oury. They armed themselves from the Arizona armory and marched to Camp Grant. On the morning of April 30th, Whitman heard of the vigilante band from Tucson and immediately sent word to the natives to flee to the fort, under his protection. He was too late. The vigilantes came upon the encampment, which was populated at the time by about 150 women and children, and less than ten men, as the others were gone, performing their springtime chores.

Those prominent Tucson residents proceeded to slaughter nearly all the women and children, gang-raping the women before killing them, then mutilating their bodies. They spared about thirty children and sold them into slavery in Mexico. It was one of countless massacres of peaceful natives that the white men inflicted on Native Americans during the previous four centuries, and that would be one of the last, because the Native Americans were nearly all dead by that time. What was the reaction of the "noble pioneers" who were "settling" the West? One Denver newspaper

openly cheered the massacre. Under the headline "Victory for Peace," the newspaper stated,

"We give this act of the citizens of Arizona most hearty and unqualified endorsement. We congratulate them on the fact that permanent peace negotiations have been made with so many, and we only regret that the number was not double. Camp Grant is the last of those victories for civilization which have made Sand Creek, Washita...and other similar occurrences famous in western history. It is just and right and fully demanded by the circumstances of the times."

A Tucson paper noted, "The California papers quite generally approve of the Camp Grant massacres." A San Francisco newspaper went to lengths to justify such "self-defense." A Sacramento newspaper "heartily endorsed the slaughter," and the San Diego newspapers called it "joyful news."[\[62\]](#)

Such cheering of genocidal slaughter continued right up until the last one, at Wounded Knee in 1890. About a week *before* the [Wounded Knee massacre](#), one of America's most celebrated authors, L. Frank Baum, who wrote that children's tale *The Wizard of Oz*, and who was at the time the editor of South Dakota's *Aberdeen Sunday Pioneer*, wrote the following.

"The nobility of the Redskin is extinguished, and what few are left are a pack of whining curs who lick the hand that smites them. The Whites, by law of conquest, by justice of civilization, are masters of the American continent, and the best safety of the frontier settlements will be secured by the total annihilation of the few remaining Indians. Why not annihilation? Their glory has fled, their spirit broken, their manhood effaced; better that they should die than live the miserable wretches that they are."[\[63\]](#)

When Baum wrote those words, in Austria a child was waddling around in his diapers, a child who would take the name Adolf Hitler. What is the difference between what the [Nazis did to the Jews, Gypsies and Slavs in World War II](#), and what America did to its natives? The only significant difference appears to be the level of technology and sophistication the Nazis employed. Also, while Hitler's boys tried hiding their Final Solution, America openly cheered its Final Solution. Hitler took inspiration from America's genocide of its natives, to give them "living space."[\[64\]](#) Both the Nazis and Americans were "clearing the land" of undesirable races in order to [provide land for their "settlers."](#) The Jews cleared [Israel](#) of Palestinians by slightly more genteel methods, giving them their living space. They secured their Promised Land slightly more gently than their ancestor Joshua did. Only after the land has been cleansed of the native taint do those invaders begin

developing consciences and settle into their comfortable lives, reveling in what providence and "[Manifest Destiny](#)" brought them.

If the Nazis had succeeded, Eastern Europe today would be populated with German "settlers," and they would be living lives probably not much different today than people in America's Midwest. By about now, German historians might be questioning the nature of the Holocaust, a subject that received scant mention when those years of Reich-building glory were retold, and Hitler's heroic image as the father of the Reich might finally be getting questioned in "radical" corners. They would still celebrate Hitler Day, but there might be an increasing swell of discontent with the facts versus the myths in Hitler's image. It has taken far longer for Americans to begin questioning the saintly qualities of [George Washington](#) and [Christopher Columbus](#), fathers of different kinds of Reichs.

In the Eastern Establishment, with their natives long ago exterminated, they had the opportunity to develop consciences, and a congressional inquiry was convened to look into Sand Creek. As with many "Indian fighters," Chivington was planning to capitalize on his new fame, running for Congress after his glorious victory. His fame was short lived, when even the American people were shocked by what happened there. Even so, for years he worked the talk circuit throughout America, basking in his fame. He eventually came to an obscure end in Ohio.

David Stannard nearly dedicated his *American Holocaust* to the memory of a native boy who died at Sand Creek. His death was described by Major Scott J. Anthony, First Colorado Cavalry, in testimony before the United States Congress in 1865 on the massacre at Sand Creek.

"There was one little child, probably three years old, just big enough to walk through the sand. The Indians had gone ahead, and this little child was behind following after them. The little fellow was perfectly naked, travelling on the sand. I saw one man get off his horse, at a distance of about seventy-five yards, and draw up his rifle and fire - he missed the child. Another man came up and said, 'Let me try the son of a bitch; I can hit him.' He got down off his horse, kneeled down and fired at the little child, but he missed him. A third man came up and made a similar remark, and fired, and the little fellow dropped."[\[65\]](#)

John Terrell wrote about twenty books, mainly writing about the Old West, the frontier days, etc. In the twilight of his career, he broke with his past a little and wrote *Land Grab, the Truth about "The Winning of the West."* At the book's beginning he states,

"This is a polemical book. A friend who was formerly editor-in-chief of a large publishing house advised me not to compile it. 'It's the West that Americans would like to forget,' he said.

"Obviously I did not heed his counsel. It is incomprehensible to me how a people can benefit by deliberately suppressing and ignoring opprobrious episodes of their past. By what means can they measure their social, economic and cultural progress without taking into account the mistakes, faults and crimes of their ancestors? Persons whose minds are open only to pleasant legends of bygone years are, in effect, condoning the half-truths customarily disseminated by chambers of commerce and advertising agencies and abetting the immoral practices of pseudopatriots and political demagogues.

"In this collection I present in brief form some facets of three important parts of western history. There is nothing in it that can't be substantiated in a good library."

In *Land Grab*, Terrell laid out the mentality of the 49ers and all those brave pioneers who settled the West. Of the many scholarly accounts of "settling" the American West, Terrell's informal summary is still one of the best I have seen.

"The ideas that dominated the thinking, if it may be termed that, of Americans who flooded the West during the nineteenth century are not beyond explanation. To achieve an understanding of them one only need remember that by far the larger number of persons, both male and female, who crossed the Missouri as emigrants were not blessed with great intellects. They were people of the backwoods, of the city slums, unlettered common laborers and farmers and hunters and trappers, a vast proportion of them the dregs of American society. They were, with some notable exceptions, uncouth, crude, ignorant and greedy. They were religious and racial bigots. All of them were looking for something for nothing.

"The great fallacy still harbored by a regrettably large number of Americans and still promoted by hypocritical patriots and politicians is that every man and woman who chose to enter Indian Country beyond the Missouri was a hero or heroine. Paeans still ring throughout the land for the brave souls who set out for the unknown, facing great perils of the wilderness with a burning dream to build a greater America.

"They didn't do any such thing. They thought least of all, and most likely not at all, of their country's future. The only dreams they had - except nightmares caused by fear - were of free land and free gold, of becoming rich and secure, with a minimum of exertion and little expense.

"It could hardly be expected that people afflicted with such deficiencies, of such low levels and backgrounds, could be expected to display intelligence in their relations with the Indians. Obviously they could not make use of qualities they did not possess. They were governed entirely by animalistic and materialistic instincts, and the purity of those characteristics was seldom adulterated by even small doses of compassion, consideration, or justice. As they were unable to understand

Indians, they treated them with disdain, hatred and contempt, all thoroughly normal reactions.

"The colorful euphemisms that newspapers, books and periodicals showered on the settlers who crossed the western plains enhanced the public's overall picture of the Golden West, but they concealed the ingredients of depravity and viciousness that existed. Most of the frontiersmen, pioneers and conquerors of the wild western domain, were, and still are, highly lauded and eulogized for moral principles they did not possess.

"'God-fearing' was a term generously applied to them. True, they attended church and listened to sermons and sang hymns on Sunday, but it was also true that they conveniently forgot all Biblical admonitions as soon as they left the church services. They turned their religion on and off with an effective mental spigot. They advocated and practiced a method of putting the Indian in touch with Heaven that was more certain and less complicated than that commanded by the doctrines of Christianity. It was, 'Shoot them where you find them.'"[\[66\]](#)

My grandfather was [raised on a Kansas homestead](#) nearly a century ago, and he told me that as a child, he and his friends "shot anything that moved." His attitude toward Native Americans evolved during his lifetime, and he came to finally realize the awesome injustice that his ancestors inflicted onto North America's aboriginal inhabitants. In the early days of Kansas homesteading, selling bones from the incredible destruction of the bison herds paid well. The bones were sent to factories in the east, where literal mountains were made of bison bones.[\[67\]](#) During drought years, plowing Kansas' homesteads for Indian bones paid better than plowing to raise wheat. An Indian skull brought as much as \$1.25 in Dodge City. The skulls were made into fancy combs. Indian arm and leg bones, properly "cleaned and polished," made knife handles "beautiful to behold."[\[68\]](#)

Here is an excerpt from Stannard's *American Holocaust* regarding the Sand Creek Massacre, an event that Theodore Roosevelt would later call, "as righteous and beneficial a deed that ever took place on the frontier."

"Outside of Colorado, however, not everyone was pleased. Congressional investigations were ordered, and some among the investigators were shocked at what they found. One of them, a senator who visited the site of the massacre and 'picked up skulls of infants whose milk teeth had not been shed,' later reported that the concerned men of Congress had decided to confront Colorado's governor and Colonel Chivington openly on the matter, and so assembled their committee and the invited general public in the Denver Opera House. During the course of discussion and debate, someone raised a question: Would it be best, henceforward, to try to 'civilize' the Indians or simply to exterminate them? Whereupon the senator wrote in a letter to a friend, 'there suddenly arose such a shout as is never heard unless upon some battlefield - a shout almost loud enough to raise the roof of the opera house - 'EXTERMINATE THEM! EXTERMINATE THEM!'"[\[69\]](#)

That was the voice of the average frontier American.

Black Kettle survived the Sand Creek Massacre because the few men in camp forcibly pulled him away with them. After Sand Creek, Black Kettle incredibly still attended peace conferences and did all he could to promote peace. Then one day he awoke to the call of a bugle, as Custer led the charge in the "battle" that earned him the reputation as a great Indian fighter. What Chivington could not finish, [Custer did](#). Custer's original account of the battle said that his troops killed mostly braves, which was one of many lies that he told. He probably would have made an apt president. The Battle of the Little Big Horn has been immortalized in song and legend. Custer's Last Stand was another surprise attack on an Indian encampment. Custer disobeyed orders in order to get in on the killing first, knowing that he would have to place the glorious mantle on his shoulders alone to be swept into the presidency.

As with the Washita massacre, Custer proved himself a notoriously sloppy soldier by not reconnoitering the "enemy" before attacking. That time his "Custer's Luck" ran out, and he led a charge into the heart of a camp of several thousand natives, natives that had recently crippled a nearby U.S. Army, fighting under the brilliant leadership of Crazy Horse. Custer led slightly more than two hundred men into a camp of several thousand armed natives who were following the fast-dwindling bison herds. He was in for a rude surprise. Custer's presidential campaign ended ignominiously, sending all his men to their deaths as he sought glory and the White House on the battlefield.[\[70\]](#)

What kept happening as I researched the New World's rape was a feeling of missing something important about native cultures. The Spanish actively eradicated them. The English and Americans rarely made attempts to understand them, unless it was studying the last few survivors before their race became extinct, as with Ishi early in the 20th century. The natives were not saints, but they were far from inferior human beings or the subhumans the Europeans and Americans nearly invariably portrayed them as.

Here are some examples of the cultural differences between native and European cultures, differences that surprised me.

- There were many proscriptions on behavior in Aztec society, one of which was against drinking. The Aztecs had an alcoholic beverage called pulque (fermented cactus pulp), but except on special occasions such as feast days, drinking was forbidden for most people. The penalty for a noble being caught drunk was death, but commoners received much reduced punishment.[\[71\]](#)
- In eastern North America, when natives captured a white woman, the native men never

raped her. From the native viewpoint, a woman's body was her own. That was nearly incomprehensible to European men, where raping captured women had been standard operating practice for millennia.[\[72\]](#)

- In the [Iroquois Confederacy](#) (the vicinity of present day New York State) the chiefs were men, but the women elected them. If the women did not like how a chief voted in clan meetings, they picked a new chief, for a balance of power between the sexes still never approached in any Western culture.[\[73\]](#)
- Throughout North America, particularly as native populations declined as a result of European disease, the natives tried replenishing their numbers by capturing other tribes' members and adopting them into their tribe. That capture and tribal adoption even happened to white people. In the Huron tribe, which lived in present-day Quebec, the [Hurons](#) battled with the adjacent tribes of the Iroquois Confederacy, especially the Mohawks. During those conflicts, when a wife's husband was killed in battle, the tribal remedy for being widowed was to capture a warrior from the other tribe. As recompense to the widow, the warrior was either tortured to death or adopted into the tribe as the widow's husband and given all the rights of the previous husband.[\[74\]](#)
- The natives definitely had their wars, but they were rarely, if ever, the large battles of extermination that characterized Europe. In North America, the tribes of the [Great Plains](#) were considered among the most warlike. There are reasons for that; one was the horse's introduction and the resulting nomadic lifestyle that developed, making traditional tribal boundaries a thing of the past. In those warlike tribes, the greatest battle honor was not killing the enemy. It was counting "coup." Coup was an act of bravery. The greatest act of coup was touching an armed enemy while one was unarmed. There was a stick a warrior would carry into battle, called a coup stick, which was what they touched the enemy with. It reminds me of the childhood game of tag.
- Compared to Europe and its proto-capitalistic culture, there was little greed to be found among New World natives, and in many tribes it was not only unheard of, but unthinkable. In the [Pacific Northwest](#), there was a tribal event called a potlatch. The chiefs would vie for prestige by seeing who could give away the most possessions. Sometimes they vied to destroy the most possessions (even killing highly valued slaves), for a dark side to it. Of course, one had to accumulate in order to give away, but that attitude, as with many other native attitudes, was virtually incomprehensible to Westerners. Tribal stature was gained by how well one provided for others. Hospitality was a nearly universal virtue among the Western Hemisphere's natives, as virtually every [first-contact account](#) by a European "explorer" confirms.
- The meeting of European and native cultures often brought surprises. One tactic that Europeans had long-used to terrify the enemy or to demonstrate who "won," was to decapitate enemies and put their heads on poles. It had an unintended result with the [Incas](#). Many native cultures revered the dead, and sometimes kept their bodies around, or pieces of them, as a way of honoring their ancestors. When one of the Inca rulers, Tupac Amaru, was given a kangaroo court trial and beheaded, the Spaniards put his head on a pole. The Inca subjects crowded around the pole, expressing their sorrow and reverence to the severed

head. That was not the intended effect, so the Spaniards had the head buried.[\[75\]](#)

- The New World's chiefs often bore little resemblance to European royalty. They generally had little coercive power. Nobody obeyed their orders because they did not give any. The West's view of the "chiefs" is largely our projection onto them. Tribal councils and councils of elders were often the governing bodies. The early invaders assumed that there was somebody "in charge" among the natives, and treated the "chief" accordingly. A chief could be a woman (though not often), and a tribe could have a number of chiefs, such as a chief of planting, a chief of war, a chief of harvest, etc. The lack of command authority was evident in battles between natives and the Europeans. The chiefs could never control and command their braves as the Europeans did their soldiers, which was a primary reason the Europeans usually won.[\[76\]](#)
- The natives had very different ways of treating their elderly. Among most tribes, the elderly were cherished for the wisdom they had gained through their long lives. Councils of elders were highly influential in making tribal decisions throughout the New World. Paradoxically, among the tribes of present-day northern Canada and Alaska, when somebody became old and "useless," they were often killed or abandoned to the elements, likely reflecting their harsh environment.
- While dishonesty was a European/American art form, exercised in devious ways, even for [America's greatest heroes](#), Native Americans had a markedly different perspective. While dishonesty and lying was not unknown among Native Americans, it was [seen as a sign of insanity](#). Honesty and honor were considered the mark of a healthy person, and Native Americans saw European/American dishonesty as a sign of their craziness.
- Because few tribes had a written language, the elderly were cherished, because they were the tribal libraries. The [biggest influence](#) in drafting the American Constitution was probably the [Iroquois Confederation](#). They had a working democracy that was centuries old when the Constitution was drafted, the world's only living example of democracy, and a much more inspiring example than [ancient Athens](#), where slaves outnumbered the "free" people. The Iroquois strongly influenced [Ben Franklin](#). The establishment and their "skeptics" call the Iroquois influence apocryphal, but that is partly because the Iroquois have never committed their laws to paper.[\[77\]](#)
- The New World's natives were often superior artists. The natives of California, for all the subhuman appellations bestowed on them by the white man, such as "digger" (because they dug roots as a significant part of their diets), may have been the finest basket-weavers humanity has yet produced, and the women did that work.[\[78\]](#) The Spaniards melted down 99.999% of the gold and silver artifacts that they plundered from New World cultures, but the early examples of pre-Columbian gold and silversmithing astounded the European artists who saw them. When Cortés sent back the first royal bribe from the plunder of Mesoamerica, no less than Albrecht Dürer, one the greatest artists Europe ever produced, saw the treasures on display in 1520 and was awestruck. Dürer was once an apprentice goldsmith himself, and his appreciation of Mesoamerican artistry rendered him mute. Dürer wrote "In all the days of my life, I have seen nothing which touches my heart so much as these for, among them, I have seen wonderfully artistic things, and have admired the subtle

ingenuity of man in foreign lands. Indeed, I do not know how to express my feelings about what I found there.”[\[79\]](#) When a subsequent bribe was sent by Cortés to Spain after the Aztecs were conquered, French pirates seized the biggest haul of loot to hit Europe's shores to that time, and the haul was eventually admired in the French Court. One of Europe's greatest goldsmiths, Benvenuto Cellini, saw the loot at the French Court and gave the opinion that Aztec goldsmithing was the most ingenious he had ever seen.[\[80\]](#) Those opinions by Europe's greatest artists did not prevent the director of the New York Metropolitan Museum of Art from defending the fact that not one piece of pre-Columbian native art was on display in his museum. He said that native art was not art at all, but a curiosity that belonged in the natural history museum, next to the stuffed polar bears.[\[81\]](#) That director's opinion is not from a hundred years ago, but was uttered in our "enlightened" generation.

Colonialism, the First Stage of Global Capitalism

The basic tenet of all economic systems is the capture and use of energy. Plants capture sunlight's energy by photosynthesis, and [all life on earth owes its existence to that process](#). A small fraction of that captured energy becomes plant parts that humans can digest, with that released energy fueling their bodies. Captured plant energy largely becomes cellulose, which comprises the cell walls. Burning wood releases the captured sunlight energy that made the cellulose. All organic fibers are created with captured energy. All fossil fuels release the energy captured from ancient sunlight. Humans and most animals cannot digest cellulose, but must consume other substances such as sugars, starches and fats to get their energy. Human history is largely concerned with the [pursuit of energy](#), securing either the energy of food, the land that can provide it, or controlling the energy of people, animals and machines.

All political and economic systems have been mainly concerned with controlling and concentrating energy. The rise of capitalism and the state created new ways of harnessing energy. Money generally buys energy or its fruits, whether it is food, manmade goods, metals, etc. The centralizing nature of states and corporations is largely about a select few getting their hands on energy and controlling it. The [Iroquois](#) did not have an executive branch in their government, something the [monarchical English settlers invented](#), as they nearly named George Washington the United States' first king. In the United States government, the balance of power between the three branches – legislative, executive, and judicial – has been continually eroded ever since George Washington, making the executive branch increasingly powerful and unaccountable. The concepts of wealth and power cannot be effectively separated, not in today's world, which is why the term *political-economic* is used. Ideologies such as “realism,” which try separating political factors from the economic, are not very realistic.

It has taken many years of study, after years of being brutally awakened by [my experiences in the "real world"](#), to finally realize how deeply I had been lied to during my capitalistic indoctrination.

The historical roots of today's global capitalism are deep. Capitalism is not an invention by people trying to devise a fair system, or one that "honors human nature." [Today's capitalism](#) is a system designed by [greedy people](#) trying to get rich. Adam Smith did not invent it, but helped establish an ideological framework for it.

Smith wrote that the [mercantilist system](#) of his day was designed to [wipe out competitors](#), not serve consumers. The beginnings of capitalism really began with colonialism. Arguments can be made that it began earlier, but [European colonialism](#) was the watershed.

Colonialism was simply a system of exploitation. The European powers got practice before sailing the seas by conquering their neighbors. [England's rape of Ireland](#) and Scotland is a case in point, as well as the general exploitation of Eastern Europe. The word "slave" comes from "Slav," as Eastern Europeans were among the first to endure Western Europe's rise.

Before [Columbus](#) "discovered" the New World, Spain and Portugal were busy conquering and ["settling" the islands of the Eastern Atlantic](#).

The Spanish Crown initiated the world's first capitalistic ventures; it rarely financed the [New World's "explorations."](#) Rich Spaniards did, and the Crown received a cut of the profits for sponsoring the expedition. Cortés greased as many royal palms as possible with plundered New World loot to gain official recognition for [commandeering the Cuban governor's invasion of the Mexican mainland](#). His bribery worked.

Soon, New World loot began flooding Europe. The [English, Dutch and French](#) joined the game and the [English and Dutch formed corporations](#). Corporations could be found as far back as ancient Rome and the medieval guilds, but the Dutch and English East and West Indies companies were the forerunners of modern corporations. The game was "trade." It is true that trade goods lured North American natives to deal with the Europeans, but it was dealing with the devil, as the most prominent trade goods were firearms and firewater (alcohol) from the Europeans, and furs from the natives. The firearms greatly escalated native violence, turning "wars" that were more like rugby matches into deadly affairs that extinguished entire tribes, with the white man's Machiavellian "help." Firewater was a [psychological crutch](#) for natives whose world was turned upside down by the white man's arrival. The fur trade was short lived, as it [drove the fur-bearing animals to extinction](#).

Because the Spanish were the first to arrive, raping "virgin" lands, they racked up by far the highest death toll. The [Dutch](#), [English](#) and [French](#) were no better, but because they came to the game a century later, they killed off far fewer natives than the Spanish did. Yet, annihilate them they did.

The English colonial experience in the New World was somewhat different. They [first sought gold](#), and when that failed, they turned to [tobacco](#), furs and taking the land from the natives with brute force. Wherever the climate was similar to Europe's, as in North America, New Zealand, Australia,

South Africa and Argentina, the Europeans invaded to exterminate the natives and make it their new home. In the tropical regions, the Europeans merely enslaved the natives.

I attended [business school](#), studying economics and capitalism. The atmosphere and ideology I was imbued with was that capitalism was far superior to that evil communism. As with the [American history](#) that students are taught, I now realize that I was indoctrinated into a fairy tale ideology. [Capitalism](#), especially after 1989 and the collapse of the Soviet Empire, has been portrayed as humanity's highest state, the flower of human economic evolution. What I was taught was heavily laden with [presentism](#). Presentism looks at the past through the eyes of the present, judging it by the present's standards. It is nearly impossible to entirely avoid. However, the greatest crime of presentism is to use the past to *justify* the present, rather than help explain it. The pejorative in history circles for many years has been to call such presentations of history "[Whiggish](#)," after an English style of telling history as one grand tale of "progress." The capitalistic history I learned was quite Whiggish.

What we today call capitalism was born in England, and was born due to a unique confluence of timing, geography, technology and culture.[\[82\]](#) England's early capitalism had little resemblance to today's version of it. The "bourgeoisie" concept of an urban middle class came from France, not England. The concept of the modern state came from France and its Enlightenment/revolutionary/Napoleonic era. The current notion of capitalistic development was partly fabricated retroactively to create the picture of capitalism we have today.

During the 19th century, France, England and the United States all carved out new kinds of empires. The United States was [busy securing the North American continent and periphery](#), taking land by force from its neighbors. England and France had been involved in interminable wars during the previous millennium, and competing in the plunder of distant lands complemented their rivalry. Capitalism and [industrialization](#) was making its rise, and the practice of chattel slavery ended, and instead people are rented today. During the 19th century, the European powers conquered and enslaved much of humanity.

When the Portuguese [rounded the southern tip of Africa in 1488](#), they began the era of European influence in Asia. At first, [their goal was the spice trade](#), and they had it to themselves, as far as any European rivalry went, for many years. They began defeating their Asian rivals militarily as early as 1507, and in 1510 they conquered the Muslim port of Goa. The Spanish established their presence in the Philippines in 1564, and the [Dutch](#) came in the early 17th century, and soon took control of the spice trade from Portugal. The British and French would also join the fray. Conquering the islands off Asia was the first step to European hegemony, although the Japanese knew the empire game and successfully [kept Europeans largely out of Japan](#) for centuries, until the diplomatic invasion of [Commodore Perry of America in 1853](#).

For the entire period of European imperialism, continuing to the present day, [superiority of violence](#) and ruthlessness nearly always allowed the Europeans to prevail. The imperial effort is led today by the United States, with the world's most irresistible military, as it now attempts to [militarize](#)

[space](#). Warfare in Europe long ago abandoned any notions of fighting honorably or obeying any “rules.” The only rule was winning, and the more ruthless, the better. The exterminatory [Thirty Years’ War](#) that began in 1618 entrenched the idea of total warfare to Europe. Nobody in the world could match Europe’s viciousness and mastery of violence.

The Asian mainland, however, was too challenging to invade and conquer. The Europeans were too few and the natives too well armed and organized. In addition, European diseases could not decimate the natives as they did in the New World and elsewhere. China and India, as they do today, possessed a large fraction of the world’s population, and had long-standing imperial cultures. Until the British conquered the Bengal region in 1764, about the best the Europeans could do was establish coastal trade ports, as well as plenty of Christian evangelism.

The Bengal region was possibly the wealthiest on earth when the British conquered it. With the British East Indian Company in charge, the British mercilessly plundered Bengal. With Bengal being exploited, in 1770 a drought, combined with British rapacity, created a famine that killed off one third of Bengal’s peasantry.[\[83\]](#) Similar to Spain’s rape of the New World, local imperial agents skimmed off great sums for themselves, cheating both the natives and their superiors in the mother nation. Britain subsequently refined its revenue collection efforts, which trimmed corruption in the field but also refined the process of native exploitation. Dacca was Bengal’s textile center, and in 1757, British observers called it every bit as wealthy as London. By 1840, Dacca had been bled dry, its population collapsing from 150,000 to 30,000.[\[84\]](#) The British implemented the [standard imperial formula](#): it outlawed local industries in order to protect those of the mother country. Bengali textile manufacture was outlawed, and Britain even amputated the thumbs of Bengali weavers. As with the Spanish in Mesoamerica and South America, the British exploited a fractious imperial environment to their benefit, taking advantage of the disintegration of the Mughal Empire to expand its hegemony over all of India. The British East Indian Company was soon raking it in hand over fist.

India was ahead of Britain on the modernization curve in ways, and was even better at steel making than Britain was at first. British industrialization was accomplished partly by exploiting India. As India’s industries died from being outlawed, the natives were forced into raising crops for export; Bengal became the land where indigo, jute, and then opium was raised for export. The economic concept of “value added” industries was fully implemented. The basic idea is forcing the natives to grow crops for export, such as food, cotton, jute, etc. Then it is exported to the mother country and processed in their factories (and/or consumed). Then finished product is shipped back to the subject nation, the price manipulated by the mother nation’s dominance to achieve unfair terms, economically bleeding the subject nation dry. No mills were made in India under British rule. They were forced to raise crops for raw materials, and then it was shipped to the mother country.

Most notoriously, the native society was forced to raise food for export as they starved. The British built an infrastructure to transport those export crops. British “philanthropists” made a big deal about how much they “helped” India by building their rail system. To astute observers, however, those rails took food and crops *from* India, not delivering them to needy natives. That dynamic was dreadfully evident when El Niño-created droughts descended on India and China in two events,

from 1876 to 1879, and 1896 to 1900. The British system of plunder destroyed the fabric of Indian society, and during those drought years particularly, the spectacle was often seen of masses of starving people standing next to rail cars full of grain, accompanied by armed guards, on its way to Europe. From 1875 to 1877, as the Indian famine peaked, wheat exports to England quadrupled. [85] Tens of millions died in those two famines, and many if not most deaths would not have occurred if not for the European plunder system that prevailed. As the European plunder system became its most refined, India's population growth nearly halted from 1870 to 1920. A similar thing happened to China. As in Mexico, the coming of the Europeans had anti-Malthusian effects, the subject populations stagnating or collapsing in number as they also became poorer under Europe's lash. In the two thousand years before British hegemony in India, there had been only seventeen famines. By 1878, during the previous 120 years of British rule, India endured 31 famines, increasing in frequency by about 3000%. It was no coincidence.

The "free market" created those holocausts. The food went to Europe instead of feeding the society that grew it, because they could not pay for it. It was a "free-market" genocide, while Europeans lived in a [golden age](#) and obesity began becoming commonplace. That dynamic exists to this day, but is more refined, with the [World Bank and International Monetary Fund](#) cracking the whip, where peasants are forced to grow crops for export to the West instead of local consumption. The last time I looked a few years ago, of the forty poorest nations in the world, thirty-six exported food to the United States. "Trade" engaged in at gunpoint is anything but "free."

Probably the most telling statistic of the British experience in India was that from 1757 to 1947, there was no increase in India's per capita income, while Britain became the world's richest nation, to be surpassed by its descendent, the United States. [86] In 1750, China and India comprised 57% of world manufacturing output. By 1900, it was 8%. [87] The relationship of Britain to India was a parasitic one. In 1910, India provided 60 million pounds of net income to Britain, for the world's largest international transfer of wealth. [88] India is still recovering from that two-century-long raping. The British did the same thing to China, forcing China to open itself to opium addiction, beginning with the 1839 Opium War. Bengal was forced to raise opium so Britain could force it on China. In ultimate evil, it may rival what Europe did to Africa and the New World in its triangular trade of slaves, sugar and rum. To demonstrate that it was not an aberration from a distant past, in the 1980s the Reagan administration did nearly the same thing, threatening retribution on several Asian nations if they did not open their nations to American tobacco companies, who purvey the world's deadliest addictive substance. Those [Asian nations knuckled under to the U.S. blackmail](#), and tobacco addiction rates in those nations have subsequently skyrocketed.

Jawaharlal Nehru, India's first post-colonial prime minister, spent much of his adult life in British prisons, as Gandhi did. In 1944, Nehru wrote *The Discovery of India* from his prison cell. With great irony he wrote:

"The solicitude which British industrialists and economists have shown for the Indian peasant has been truly gratifying. In view of this, as well as of the tender care lavished upon him by the British

Government in India, one can only conclude that some all-powerful and malign fate, some supernatural agency, has countered their intentions and measures and made that peasant one of the poorest and most miserable beings on earth.”[\[89\]](#)

Nehru noted that the longer the British controlled an Indian province, the poorer it became. Nehru described the rape of Bengal by the British:

“A significant fact which stands out is that those parts of India which have been longest under British rule are the poorest today. Indeed some kind of chart might be drawn up to indicate the close connection between length of British rule and progressive growth of poverty.”[\[90\]](#)

The Bengal region, once among the world’s richest, it is today known as Bangladesh, one of the world’s poorest. That is a prime example of the chief legacy of European colonialism. In grim irony, the Bengal region is once again a textile center. The [women of Bangladesh work in sweatshops](#) for Western corporations such as Wal-Mart, making pennies an hour to make clothing for export to the United States, in classic [neocolonial](#) fashion. The game is still rigged, with the only things changing being the names, faces and techniques.

During the last half of the 19th century, Europe did a similar thing to Africa, in its famed “Scramble for Africa.”[\[91\]](#) Although evangelical zeal motivated some of the early explorers and missionaries, it soon gave way to the usual dynamic of superior European violence subjugating the natives and forcing them into mining and plantation work, the fruits of their labor being exported to Europe. The same thing happened as with the British in India: an infrastructure was built to export the products of exploitation.[\[92\]](#) Nearly the entire African continent was turned into a slave camp, and they called it “progress.” Also, corporate monopolies were often the agents of Africa’s exploitation. Hand-in-hand with the exploitation and genocide were strained ideological rationales such as the [White Man’s Burden](#) (a cousin to [Manifest Destiny](#)), and outright censorship, as when [Mark Twain](#) wrote about the genocidal exploitation in the [Belgian Congo](#) under King Leopold’s benevolence, which killed about ten million people. A prominent way that Europe rebuilt itself after World War II was bleeding Africa still more, with plantation and mining activities.

Today we have more of the same, but now it is the World Trade Organization, the [World Bank and International Monetary Fund](#) oppressing the world’s poor in favor of the rich, and using military might and other punitive measures to enforce the “free market,” while saying we do it to help the world’s poor. Bigger lies have seldom been told. Today’s [global capitalist system](#) is little more than colonialism with new rhetoric, techniques and technology.

If those slaves harbor any notion of breaking away from the capitalist system, we overthrow their government, first by using the subtle tactics of the [CIA](#), such as bankrolling our favorite candidate and arming "rebels" or the military, depending on which one is our pawn. When all else fails, we invade or bomb them, as [we did to Southeast Asia](#), as we want to do to Cuba, et cetera. We think we own the world. Today's [genocide in Iraq](#) has everything to do with securing cheap access to oil. In 2004, John Perkins pulled a [Ralph McGehee](#), and [revealed the real neocolonial](#) game for what it is, from an insider's perspective.

We are not the good guys, and never have been. Europe and its descendants have visited more death and suffering onto the world's people than anyone in history. There are no contenders. The Mongol hordes were disastrous in their own way, but the last five hundred years has been the reign of the white man, and nothing has been more horrific or bloodier than that. If humanity survives the coming transition, the entire second millennium will be seen as the Dark Ages, with the twentieth century possibly the blackest.

Objectivity, Sources and the Historian's Ideal

In theory, the historian has a task, which is to tell what happened. In America, there is an ideal of objectivity that also the journalistic profession supposedly adheres to. Peter Novick wrote *That Noble Dream* to discuss the "objectivity question" in the American historical profession. [Howard Zinn](#) seriously questions whether history should be objective, as do many others. Zinn felt that if telling the story of slavery from the perspective of the slave helped the slaves become free, he was all for it. Objectivity may not be the historian's ideal objective. Staughton Lynd wrote, "Should we be content with measuring the dimensions of our prison instead of chipping, however inadequately, against the bars?"^[93]

In the arena of history, there are rules, ideals and methods that historians supposedly adhere and aspire to. A worthy historian relies heavily on "primary" evidence, which is the evidence of the eyewitness or the participants.

If somebody writes about the "criminal career" of Dennis Lee, for instance, as [Mr. Skeptic did](#), a historian would adhere to the primary evidence, which was the testimony of those who witnessed Dennis' acts. [My account of my days with Dennis](#) is considered primary history, because I was there, witnessed it, and participated in it. Other primary evidence would be a court transcript from Dennis' Ventura trial. Police reports and other witness documents can constitute primary evidence. Secondary evidence would be a newspaper account of Dennis' "criminal record." The risk of relying on secondary history is relying on the interpretation of the primary history by the author of the secondary history. In Dennis' case, Mr. Skeptic failed spectacularly as a reporter of history or the news, because the secondary history that he relied on was false. That newspaper account contradicted the primary evidence given by the official records, so Mr. Skeptic relied on a false account of history. In Mr. Skeptic's case, his rendering of false history is more egregious than

simply getting it wrong, reporting that Dennis was prosecuted and confessed to criminal acts when he in fact had not. Mr. Skeptic actively ignored the primary evidence so he could report a false secondary history, one that told the story he wanted to tell.

In looking at the Aztec conquest, for instance, and Hugh Thomas' *Conquest*, his sources are an array of primary and secondary sources. Thomas performed archival research in Seville, which is how a historian ideally does his/her work. Thomas relied on primary accounts and secondary histories, but he tried using secondary histories written close to when the events happened. He did a creditable historian's job of seeking sources that were most primary. Yet, how reliable are they? The two main primary sources regarding the Aztec conquest are the accounts of Hernan Cortés and Bernal Díaz del Castillo. Cortés wrote five letters to the king of Spain, and the first one has been lost to history. Cortés was stealing command of the expedition from the Cuban governor, Velázquez, who carefully chose Cortés, even over family members, because there were few Spaniards that he trusted. In light of Cortés' performance, it appears that there were *no* Spaniards to trust. Velázquez first distinguished himself militarily in the New World during the treacherous [Xaraguá massacre](#), and slaked Cuba with native blood. Cortés sent a huge royal bribe to Spain - the largest haul of loot to ever hit Europe's shores until that time - which [French pirates stole](#).

Cortés was writing his letters in part to impress the king, in part to justify his theft of the expedition, and historians consider his account to be self-serving in numerous aspects. The other primary account, by Bernal Díaz del Castillo, was written sixty years after the events happened, when Castillo was blind and in his eighties. How trustworthy his account is has been a matter of debate for many years.

There are native accounts of what life was like before the Spaniards showed up, but Spanish chroniclers working for the Catholic Church recorded them. What kind of bias crept into those accounts? They were generally recorded more than a generation after the conquest, so people were looking back at those days through the eyes of old age, after their world had been turned upside down, and they had survived the devastating consequences of their enslavement by the Spanish. The greatest chronicler of those native accounts, the priest Sahagún, stated in the introduction of his history that he was studying the native culture and memories so he could cure the "disease" of their culture. Thousands of Aztec and Mayan books were burned by the Spanish priests in those days, and only a handful have survived, and what survived gives evidence that priceless knowledge of native cultures was lost in the Catholic bonfires.

During the centuries since those accounts, other evidence has come to light, such as the excavation of the Great Temple of Tenochtitlán, which was discovered in the 1970s in Mexico City. The excavation apparently confirms the trustworthiness of Spanish accounts of human sacrifice. The sacrificial altar is exactly where Spanish writings put it, and the stone skull racks give impressive testimony to the Spanish and "native" accounts of real skull racks where the heads of sacrificed natives were strung like an obscene abacus. Accounts such as Díaz's, where the Aztecs even strung up the heads of sacrificed horses alongside the human heads, seem true in light of the excavation. In addition, the offering caches unearthed in the excavation, including one cache of the skeletons of more than forty sacrificed children, give impressive evidence of institutional human

sacrifice among the Aztecs. The excavation of the Great Temple has largely settled the issue of institutional human sacrifice, but the extent of it may be argued. [Pedro de Cieza de León](#) wrote that human sacrifice among the Incas did happen, but the Spaniards greatly exaggerated it to justify their conquest.

Although the issue of human sacrifice has largely been settled, the issue of Aztec cannibalism has not. [Columbus began the cannibalism myth](#) in the New World on his first voyage, and no convincing evidence of cultural cannibalism by the pre-Columbian New World natives has ever come to light.^[94] Thomas gives numerous accounts of native cannibalism in *Conquest*, but the accounts are arguably more in the tradition of myths that were universally held than of actual deeds being performed. The first mention of Aztec cannibalism comes from Cortés, after he had worn out his "welcome" with the Aztecs, and attempted to justify his conquest. He wrote, "they are all cannibals, of which I send Your Majesty no evidence because it is so infamous."^[95] His next accounts of cannibalism are given while [retelling the war against the Aztecs](#), and Cortés reported that their enemies had abandoned "sacks of maize and roasted babies" when pursued by the Spaniards.^[96] Roasted babies. That sounds exactly like the [wartime propaganda](#) that has characterized the dehumanization of the enemy, practiced from time immemorial.

No independent evidence of cultural cannibalism has ever been adduced for those native cultures, and other accounts deny them. For instance, during the siege of Tenochtitlán, the Spaniards and their native (chump) allies reduced the Aztecs to starvation. While the bodies of their fallen surrounded them, they starved, and there is no account of them eating human flesh to stay alive.

In coming to my own conclusions of the nature of the Spanish conquest and aftermath, I have read primary accounts (Columbus and his friends, also Las Casas, Cortés, Castillo, Zorita, Cieza de León) and numerous secondary accounts. I have had to partly rely on the scholarship of others. Relying on secondary scholarship is perilous for the historian. I have tried mitigating my potential errors by reading a spectrum of secondary history on the issues. If I read sympathetic and antagonistic histories, I have a fair chance of seeing the entire spectrum of evidence that exists, and making my own determinations.

Yet, even primary evidence is subject to being questioned. For instance, my writings regarding [my days with Dennis](#) are considered primary history. Yet, others who rode in the saddle with Dennis will not see things quite the way that I did. My controller, who [engineered the theft of Dennis' company](#), would surely give a starkly different account of events in Seattle than I did. I *know* the man is dishonest; I saw him in action. I cannot be rationally disputed that he committed theft, but he may present a case for his noble efforts in stealing Dennis' company. A historian may give his account and mine the same weight in arriving at the picture of what really happened in Seattle. That is the historian's right and duty, but is more evidence that there may not be an "objective" history to report, anywhere.

[Washington Irving](#), a novelist, wrote the first great American history of Columbus. He relied on primary and secondary evidence for his tale, which is a salient example of how "historians" can lie.

He sifted through the bloody facts for the few that [justified making Columbus into a hero](#), and even invented new "facts." That a novelist committed that crime is one thing, but that no American historian challenged that fabrication until my lifetime is a profound commentary on the state of the American history profession. In that light, the American history taught to American schoolchildren has been worse than worthless, if truly educating them was the goal.

Big lies were being told in virtually every area I have researched. How can any of us develop a semblance of intelligent and coherent solutions to our problems, when he have been so badly lied to, on all fronts? If all we are fed are lies, be it about [Columbus](#), [George Washington](#), [Junípero Serra](#), [George Bush](#), [fluoridation](#), [mainstream cancer treatment](#), the [energy industry](#), the [assassination of JFK](#), [data from NASA](#), what is happening in [Iraq](#) and [Yugoslavia](#), etc., how can we ever arrive at effective solutions to our problems? We cannot, given how misinformed we are, but one way to cut through all of it is to act from the heart, and realize that the [ends never justify the means](#).

When Americans were being fed lies that bombing Yugoslavia and Iraq, or invading [Panama](#) and [Vietnam](#), were regrettable yet necessary actions to make this world a better place, my response is that violence only makes the world more violent. So far, I have never seen any violent "good guys." Violence is *always* a violation. If we want a loving world, we need to act loving. [Teddy Roosevelt's corollary](#) to the [Monroe Doctrine](#) was "tough love," a doctrine that has led to the [enslavement, misery and deaths](#) of millions of Latin Americans. I see no love in that doctrine, just the flowery justification for violence and exploitation. Violence *always* violates somebody's free will.

In 1988, James Sandos, writing in the *American Historical Review*, discussed the issue of [Junípero Serra's](#) proposed canonization and the task of the historian.^[97] In the 1930s, Serra was the first person subject to the revised process of naming somebody a saint. The first stage was the compilation of the historical record of the person's life. America's most prominent historian on the Spanish experience in North America was Herbert Eugene Bolton. He was the only person outside the Catholic Church who was part of compiling Serra's life story. Bolton was supposed to impart historical objectivity to the Vatican commission that accumulated the historical documents. To be fair to Bolton, he was more than seventy years old and had his hands full with other matters. In the later years of his academic life, Bolton became aware of an incipient trend in American scholarship, one that began telling the story of the white man "civilizing" North America from the native's perspective.

Anthropologist John Harrington heavily relied on Bolton's original archival work. In 1930, Harrington sent Bolton a copy of his essay "The Reaction of the American Indian to his European Conquerors." Harrington wrote:

"...any amount of study of the American Indian only confirms the opinion that he was from start to finish a reluctant recipient of the European civilization brought to him by his discovers and

conquerors. The initial fear passed rapidly through the cycle of loving and returned to a long twilight of dread, mistrust and suffering."

Bolton read Harrington's work with a

"...great deal of interest and high approval...One of the great shortcomings in the early history of the western hemisphere is our lack of a record of what the Indians thought about things. If we only knew what he said and thought about our ancestors we probably would hang our heads in shame. This work of yours is in the right direction."

Bolton was leading a healthy trend in American historical scholarship toward a more balanced view, where our history was not only told from the viewpoint of the bloody conquerors (my ancestors), but also by the voice of the conquered. His performance on the issue of Serra's canonization process was another matter entirely, and served to show how entrenched is the white man's bias toward himself and his ancestors, even in the most "objective" of us. Around World War II, other scholars such as Sherburne Cook were doing intensive research into the historical record, which showed that the coming of the Spanish was anything but glorious to the natives. Cook's research showed that the Indians [interned in the missions](#) endured a genocidal population collapse.^[98] The experience in Baja California demonstrated that the mission system was an instrument of genocide, and the Franciscans ignored the California governor's advice (stop imprisoning the natives in the filthy "dormitories," for instance) to end the incredible death rates of native children behind the mission walls.

In the revelations that attended opening the [Nazi death camps](#), Carey McWilliams published *Southern California Country, An Island on the Land*, in 1946. McWilliams aptly compared the California mission system to the Nazi death camps.^[99] Although the expressed purpose of the Nazi death camps was to exterminate the Jew and other "subhumans," and the California mission system was intended to "save the native's souls," both produced the same result: the extermination of the inmates. Bolton and others on the Serra commission were aware of those trends in scholarship when they testified in 1948 regarding Serra's life and work, most particularly his establishment of the California mission system. Bolton actively engaged in the whitewash, painting Serra's legacy in glowing tones, helping to put him on the fast track to sainthood.

The most common response to the mission system by the natives was fleeing, and the fugitive rate in California was about ten percent, with the highest, 15.6%, at the mission that Serra is most closely associated with, the San Carlos mission. After 1790, the "marketing" tactic of the Spanish priests was often sending Spanish soldiers into the countryside to bring back "recruits." Even with the secularization of the missions, the carnage continued and even escalated, with the ranchers in

charge. One non-Spanish witness reported that as the soldiers were driving the fresh "recruits" to "civilization," the native children being driven along began falling behind. The leader of the recruiting mission did the logical thing: he hastily baptized the children and then killed them by beating their heads against the rocks. They were "saved."[\[100\]](#)

Bolton actively sanctified Serra's image, testifying that his considerable research on the missionizing work of the Spanish priests gave him a "partial indication of my competence to testify to the merits of Fray Junípero Serra, the greatest of all this galaxy of apostles to the heathen in North America." To this day, scholars do not have access to the full proceedings of the commission, but what has come forward indicates that Bolton completely abandoned his "historian's" perspective and actively participated in the whitewash. In Bolton's instance, it was literally a case of a historian playing hagiographer. Bolton knew of the work being done by Cook and McWilliams, as did others on the commission. Yet, Bolton and others apparently disregarded the highly unsettling nature of their revelations. Sandos wrote, "One might understand a seventy-nine-year-old man succumbing to romantic rhetoric, much of it his own..." Yet, the product that Bolton helped package was not history, but hagiography. The many dark aspects of [Serra](#) and his legacy were swept under the carpet, with the complicity of one of America's most respected historians.

Sandos wrote:

"Compilation of the historical record in Serra's case presents disturbing issues to the historian. If we are to avoid withering criticisms such as Voltaire's that history is a trick played on the dead or Napoleon's that it is a fable agreed upon, we must insure that all sides of an issue are presented. Historians have been taught for well over a century that contradictory evidence ought to be evaluated, not dismissed; and, if it cannot be explained, then readers should be allowed to judge it themselves."

Bolton is in good company. In 1986, the Church again turned to historians for an accounting of Serra's record. Regarding the 1986 inquiry, Sandos wrote,

"Not only was Cook's analysis disregarded but also were Serra's own words, the growing body of evidence from Indians, and the insights available from anthropology, all of which would have contributed to a balanced view of the past. Why were professional standards again suspended?"

Good question. Professional standards are easily suspended in [every profession](#), especially

[science](#) and [medicine](#), and including my erstwhile profession of [public accounting](#), if there is money or other gain in it. For the historian, the gain is a whitewashed version of the past, serving the current power structure.

Sandos finished his essay with some profound questions and observations.

"Tensions in the controversy presented here suggest two major difficulties in trying to use history in the service of religion: advocacy and presentism. Advocacy represents a suspension of the quest for objectivity in favor of a search for supporting material. In the case of sainthood, the operational hypothesis is not "What did the candidate do?" but rather "What did the candidate do that demonstrates proof of a holy (by Euro-American Christian standards) life? The questions are fundamentally different: the first is speculative and historical, the second, which presupposes the conclusion, is utilitarian and pragmatic. The purpose of assembling a historical record for a potential saint is to generate, among other products, a life of the individual that stresses the candidate's heroic virtues. This written product is hagiography. When serving a religious institution, the historian risks sacrificing a dispassionate reconstruction of the past in favor of justifying a foreordained conclusion.

"Disregarding Cook's assessment that mission punishment of Indians constituted 'severe and unwarranted punitive discipline' for the time suggests a more difficult challenge than mere advocacy faces the historian. Here, the historical record is being manipulated, probably in an unconscious way, by a variation of the fallacy of presentism. Since historical writing is the active reflecting on the past in the present, there is danger that the present can distort the historian's perspective. Because we now know how events turned out, it becomes imperative to maintain a sense of historical time lest the present moment be portrayed as inevitable and all sense of historical contingency be lost. In the quest for sainthood, an idealized past is sought in the present to be used as the basis for guiding the future.

"When religious advocates of the Serra cause ask us to judge Junípero Serra by eighteenth-century standards, not twentieth, they strike a resonant note with historians. But their request is simultaneously disingenuous, given their purpose, which is canonization. Sainthood requires that Serra's experiences, especially those with the California Indian, transcend time and place. Sainthood means that his is a universal example for all Catholics to follow. Phrased another way, if Serra is canonized, the eighteenth century would judge the twentieth and all the centuries to come.

"...Judging Father Serra by the standards of his time is what the historical record ought to permit. The failure of Bolton in 1948 and of the historians interviewed for Bishop Shubsda in 1986 to present both sides of Serra's story profoundly challenges the ethics of the historical profession. Personal bias, either in advocacy or apology, seems to be preventing objectivity by historians in public service. These episodes demand that historians re-examine the role their colleagues play in the service of religion. At the very least, the lesson for us all is *caveat scriptor*."

If [history](#) and the [news](#) are fabrications, how can we learn the lessons of history and relate them to current events? We cannot. A major reason why history repeats itself is that we are taught lies about it, so the lessons are not learned and not applied to the present day's events. The primary delusion that [Americans](#) labor under is that we are the good guys as we unleash death, destruction and exploitation onto the world on an unprecedented scale.

For all the presentism arguments, [Columbus](#), Cortés and [Serra](#) did have standards to hold them to. They self-righteously dictated those standards to others many times, and unless hypocrisy is a relative historical value, they can be held to account. Their standard was Jesus and his message of love. They were Christians who wore their faith on their sleeves, Columbus calling himself the [Christ-bearer](#), and Cortés putting up Christian images wherever he went, preaching his faith as he slaughtered countless natives. Is there something wrong with that picture? Can they be held to the standards they dictated to others? I think so.

If American historians were an honest lot, on every Columbus Day there would be picket lines of historians in front of the White House, decrying the travesty of naming a national holiday after Columbus. In one sense, American historians have prostituted themselves, as has probably every professional group. They bow to the prevailing winds of wealth and power, and if the powers that be want national holidays named after mass murderers, or want to grant sainthood to an initiator of genocide, the historians will produce a "history" to justify it.

When some of the [CIA's](#) (or other secret organization's) activities have crept into the public eye too visibly to be denied any longer, a strategy of partial disclosure is followed. Part of the story is told that is true, the part they can no longer deny. They tell that story, the one everybody already knows, accompanied with other "confessions" and context. They are usually fabrications designed to lead people away from the deeper truth of matters. It is a standard disinformation tactic.

In the mainstream media today, racism is still alive and well, but subtler than it used to be. *Time Magazine* ran an article soon after *Silence of the Lambs* debuted, and gave an example of how the FBI does its forensic sleuthing to catch those Hannibal Lecter-like criminals. The only example they gave was a blond-haired, blue-eyed woman, raped and murdered by a black teen-aged boy.[\[101\]](#) *Time* and the FBI were guilty of promoting, however subtly, the long-standing myth that black men rape white women whenever they get the chance. That is a myth spun long ago in America's slave-owning culture. The incidence of black men raping white women is not remarkably different from white men raping white women, etc.[\[102\]](#) Yet, the myth has persisted in order to keep black men in their place. Where did all those not-so-black Americans come from? Was it black slave men sleeping with the wives of their masters? Or, was it all those white masters who essentially raped their slave women? Which one outweighed the other by a ratio of about ten-thousand-to-one? It used to be a felony act for a white woman to have sex with a black man in Virginia. If black men took up raping white women as a habit, it could be considered an act of vengeance by the race, but they do not. The defunct [Lies of our Times](#) regularly pointed out that kind of subtle racism. Today, [Z Magazine](#) and other progressive publications point out the subtle and not-so-subtle racism,

sexism and classism that still pervade American society.

For an example of the kinds of subtle racism that infects works by white men attempting balanced scholarship regarding Native Americans, David Weber's *The Spanish Frontier in North America* will suffice. It is not the flag-waving exercise of earlier works of history, yet there are biases that Weber was probably unaware of. He attempts balance, but took it fairly easy on the Spanish genocidists who marauded through the Spanish frontier. From the Caribbean to [Mexico](#) to [South America](#) to [North America](#), the story was the same: the Spanish slaughter of the natives, followed or accompanied (or even preceded) by European disease, with the natives enslaved and worked to death, with the priests sometimes at the effort's forefront.

Spanish violence inflicted on the natives was so far beyond the violence that went the other way - native violence inflicted on the Spaniards - that native violence barely bears mention. The casualty ratio was more than 1000 to one, regularly. The Spanish frontier in North America was more sparsely populated than the Caribbean, Mexico or the Incan Empire, especially after [Soto](#) and others spread diseases among the natives that depopulated entire regions. Although Weber mentioned some of the innumerable acts of Spanish violence against the natives, in the book he presents some art of the day. Twice he presented images of Spanish-native violence. In both instances, it was natives killing Spaniards.[\[103\]](#) Weber may have been unaware of that disparity in his depictions. Where the real death toll by violence was about 1000-to-one in favor of the Spaniards, Weber *pictorially* depicts a score of the natives two, the Spanish zero.

Weber can probably present a convincing rationale for such a skewed depiction, but his bias is typical for white men who think they are being "balanced." It is similar to [Sir Hugh Thomas continually minimizing the pre-Columbian native population of the Caribbean](#), holding to estimates of sixty years ago, estimates that are considered the ultra-conservative extreme today. If Thomas was asked about it, he might protest that it had nothing to do with minimizing the white man's crime of "settling" the New World. He may even believe it. That kind of bias is surely less pronounced than the halcyonic writings about Columbus in days of yore, but it demonstrates how far Western scholarship has to go before it can aspire to be "objective."

In the end, having primary source documents means far less than the bias of the historian sifting through them.

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) *Lies of Our Times*, November 1990, p. 2

[\[2\]](#) The Christic Institute was given an unprecedented million-dollar fine for daring to bring the lawsuit. See a brief description of what happened to them in Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 310-314.

- [3] See Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, pp. 4-7.
- [4] Webb later wrote the widely hailed *Dark Alliance* about the Contra-Cocaine story.
- [5] The alternative media covered the El Mozote and Bonner story extensively in the 1980s, and Bonner was vindicated when the mass grave was discovered. See Pedelty, *War Stories*, pp. 93-97. See Herman and Chomsky, *Manufacturing Consent*, p. 49, 62, 102. See Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, pp. 99-100.
- [6] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 72-83 and Kwitny, *Endless Enemies*, pp. 220-237.
- [7] See, for instance, Michael Parenti's *Dirty Truths*, pp. 235-252 and his *Against Empire*, pp. 175-196.
- [8] See Pete Brewton's *The Mafia, CIA and George Bush*, pp. 368-379.
- [9] Silber's performance can be seen in the documentary *Manufacturing Consent, Noam Chomsky and the Media*. In that video can also be seen a name-calling exercise by a Dutch official in a debate with Chomsky.
- [10] See Schwartz, *The Creative Moment*, p. 86.
- [11] Chomsky, *The Common Good*, pp. 41-42.
- [12] See, for instance, Edward Herman's *The Real Terror Network*.
- [13] Croteau and Hoynes, *By Invitation Only*, p. 112.
- [14] See Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, p. 29.
- [15] See Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*, p. 391.
- [16] See Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*, p. 390.
- [17] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, p. 200-204.
- [18] See Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*, pp. 386-387.
- [19] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, p. 215.
- [20] See Bob Harris, "Pinochet," *Z Magazine*, December 1998, pp. 8-10.
- [21] A summary of events in Cambodia and Laos is in Herman and Chomsky, *Manufacturing Consent*, pp. 253-296.

[22] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 193-197.

[23] *New York Times Magazine*, May 8, 1966, p. 89. Quoted in Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 193

[24] Herman and Chomsky, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism*, p. 210-211.

[25] See Chomsky, *Powers and Prospects*, p. 209.

[26] An excellent and accessible summary of East Timor contrasted with Cambodia is in the video documentary *Manufacturing Consent: Noam Chomsky and the Media*. Otherwise, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism*, and *Manufacturing Consent* provide excellent summaries.

[27] From a pre-invasion population of about 700,000, the death toll to the East Timorese people is reckoned conservatively at 100,000 and more realistically at 200,000. Those numbers may understate the true death toll. Gabriel Defert authored what is considered by some to be the best analysis of the Timorese deaths in his *Timor Est le Genocide Oublié*. That 1992 paper estimates that 308,000 people may have lost their lives in the Indonesian invasion and occupation. That is 44% of the population. The Jewish people may have lost "only" 33% of their population in the [World War II Holocaust](#). In addition, Indonesian professor George Aditjondro estimated 300,000 Timorese deaths based on his analysis of Indonesian Army data. See *East Timor: A People Shattered By Lies and Silence*, by Professor António Barbedo de Magalhães, of the Oporto University, Portugal (published July 17, 1996). It has been available on the Internet. A death toll of 200,000 deaths appears reasonable.

[28] See Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, p. 279 for the NYT editorials, and pp. 278-283 for coverage of the incident in general.

[29] *New York Times*, July 5, 1988 editorial. See Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, p. 279 for the editorial.

[30] See Rampton and Stauber's *Banana Republicans and Weapons of Mass Deception* or Norman Solomon's *War Made Easy* for analysis of the media's performance in the post 9/11 years and run up to the invasion of Iraq. By 2005, many documentaries came out on the media's performance after 9/11, and how it cozied up to the Bush administration, such as *Outfoxed*, *Weapons of Mass Deception* and *Orwell Rolls in his Grave*.

[31] See Orwell, *Animal Farm*, the Everyman's Library edition, p. 99.

[32] See Orwell, *Animal Farm*, the Everyman's Library edition, p. 106.

[33] See George Seldes' *The Great Thoughts*, p. 243.

[34] See, for instance, Milton Meltzer's *Mark Twain, Himself*, pp. 256-257.

[35] David Barsamian's book *Stenographers to Power: media and propaganda*, is a series of interviews of people such as [Chomsky](#), [Parenti](#), Bagdikian, etc.

[36] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 169-170.

[37] There is a distinction to be made here, although it is not very important. William Bradford was one of the Mayflower Pilgrims, and wrote the original history of the Plymouth Colony, but it was lost for a couple of centuries. They were not really Puritans, being a more radical group called Separatists, who left the Church of England, feeling it was too corrupt. The Puritans were members of the Church of England who also thought it was corrupt, and they tried reforming it from within. The twenty-year period of English Civil Wars and conflicts that began in 1640s is also known as the Puritan Revolution. Whether Puritan or Pilgrim, they were all still Calvinist Christians, and dourness was one of their more salient characteristics.

[38] See Cave, *The Pequot War*, pp. 122-167. See Steele, *Warpaths*, pp. 92-93.

[39] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 151-156.

[40] See Loewen, *Lies my Teacher Told Me*, pp. 75-97. See Steele, *Warpaths*, pp. 80-109.

[41] See a discussion of Washington's plan, called nothing less than "criminal" and a "conspiracy" by its author, in Allan Eckert's *That Dark and Bloody River*, pp. 439-442. See also the discussion of Washington's plan in Sword's *President Washington's Indian War*, p. 27.

[42] See Sword's *President Washington's Indian War*, pp. 31-44. See Richard Slotkin's *Regeneration Through Violence*, esp. pp. 268-312. See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, esp. pp. 131-164. See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 208-209.

[43] See Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 185.

[44] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, pp. 120-125, and esp. p. 252.

[45] See Howard Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, pp. 124-146. Actually, there is a mention, and it amount to a few words. Schlesinger deals with [Jackson's famous rejection](#) of the Supreme Court's decision to recognize the Cherokee's rights. He covers it with this phrase, "Jackson refused to intercede," on page 350. That is the only mention.

[46] See Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 149.

[47] See Daniel Fogel's *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*, p. 122. Spanish-introduced syphilis also devastated the natives of Baja California, see Fogel, p. 50.

[48] It is almost impossible to find a book on Serra that is not hagiographic, but the truth shines through, even in the adoring books. A Franciscan friar wrote an upbeat biography of Serra, but most telling of all was the book's title, *The Last of the Conquistadors, Junípero Serra* (Omer Englebert, 1956). See Jackson,

Robert H. and Castillo, Edward. *Indians, Franciscans, and Spanish Colonization - The Impact of the Mission System on California Indians*. See Fogel, Daniel. *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*. See *The Life and Times of Junípero Serra*, by Msgr. Francis Weber, which an abridged edition of Maynard Geiger's hagiographic book, published in 1959. See Rawls, James J. *Indians of California, The Changing Image*. See Sandos, "Junípero Serra's Canonization and the Historical Record" in *American Historical Review*, pp. 1253-1269. See Weatherford's *Native Roots*, pp. 129-147.

[49] See Fogel, *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*, p. 76.

[50] See Jackson and Castillo, *Indians, Franciscans, and Spanish Colonization*, p. 48.

[51] See Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 140-143.

[52] See Fogel, *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*, p. 56.

[53] See Fogel, *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*, p. 48. See also Englebert, *The Last of the Conquistadors, Junípero Serra*, p. 49.

[54] Recorded by his biographer Father Palóu. See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 140.

[55] See Jackson and Castillo, *Indians, Franciscans, and Spanish Colonization*, p. 109.

[56] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 143.

[57] See Drinnon's *Facing West*, 1990 edition, pp. xxviii-xxix.

[58] See an account of the presidential controversy surrounding the winter before the Little Big Horn in Miller's *Custer's Fall*, pp. 22-45. Miller's work is not easily dismissed. He interviewed 72 native participants in the Little Bighorn battle, and Miller interviewed them in their own tongue.

[59] See Miller, *Custer's Fall*, p. 13.

[60] See Stan Hoig's *The Peace Chiefs of the Cheyennes*.

[61] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 234.

[62] See a detailed account of the Camp Grant massacre in Terrell, *Land Grab*, pp. 4-10.

[63] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 126.

[64] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 153.

[65] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. xi.

[66] See Terrell, *Land Grab*, pp. 15-17.

[67] See a photo of a mountain of bison skulls in Welch and Stekler, *Killing Custer*, p. 76.

[68] See David Humphreys Miller's *Custer's Fall*, p. 32.

[69] Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 133-134.

[70] There is plenty of Custer scholarship. Some of my sources for his career were: Andrist, *The Long Death*; Welch and Stekler, *Killing Custer*, Miller, *Custer's Fall*, and Slotkin, *Fatal Environment*.

[71] See Clendinnen, *Aztecs*, p. 48-49.

[72] See Drimmer, Frederick. *Captured by the Indians*. pp. 12-13.

[73] See discussion in Zinn, *A People's History of the United States*. pp. 19-20.

[74] I do not know how many tribes of North America did this, but the Iroquois did, as did others. See Graymont. *The Iroquois*, pp.45-46, for a mention of that practice.

[75] See Hemming, *The Conquest of the Incas*. pp. 445-450.

[76] There are many accounts of that "disorganized" native behavior in battle. For an example of the difficulty the chiefs had in controlling their braves in a [battle they won over an invading American army](#), see Sword, *President Washington's Indian War*. pp. 171-191.

[77] For documentation on the Iroquois Confederation's influence on America's Founding Fathers, see Bruce Johansen's *Forgotten Founders*, which explores the profound impact the Iroquoian political system (and Native American thought in general) had on America's Founding Fathers, particularly Ben Franklin, Thomas Jefferson and Thomas Paine. See also Weatherford, *Indian Givers*. pp. 133-150. See Graymont, *The Iroquois*, pp. 23-33. See Mander, *The Absence of the Sacred*. pp. 225-245. See Wright, *Stolen Continents*. pp. 114-140.

[78] See Fogel, *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*, p. 89.

[79] Reproduced in Thomas, *Conquest*. p. 536.

[80] See Jenifer Marx's *The Magic of Gold*, p. 341. Cellini unsuccessfully tried to reproduce the Aztec goldsmiths' artwork.

[81] See Wuthenau, *Unexpected Faces in Ancient America*, p. 10.

- [82] See Ellen Meiksins Wood's *The Origin of Capitalism* and *The Pristine Culture of Capitalism*.
- [83] See Stanley Wolpert's *A New History of India*, pp. 174-188.
- [84] See Chomsky, *Year 501, The Conquest Continues*, pp. 11-14.
- [85] See Mike Davis' *Late Victorian Holocausts*, p. 27.
- [86] See Mike Davis' *Late Victorian Holocausts*, p. 311.
- [87] See Mike Davis' *Late Victorian Holocausts*, p. 294.
- [88] See Mike Davis' *Late Victorian Holocausts*, p. 297.
- [89] Nehru. *The Discovery of India*. p. 301.
- [90] Nehru. *The Discovery of India*. p. 296.
- [91] See Thomas Pakenham's *The Scramble for Africa*.
- [92] See Kim, Millen, Irwin and Gershman's *Dying for Growth*, pp. 91-125.
- [93] See Novick, *That Noble Dream*, p. 431.
- [94] See Arens, *The Man Eating Myth*.
- [95] See Cortés, The Second Letter, *Letters from Mexico*, translated by Anthony Pagden, p. 146.
- [96] See Cortés, The Third Letter, *Letters from Mexico*, translated by Anthony Pagden, p. 245.
- [97] See Sandos, "Junípero Serra's Canonization and the Historical Record." *American Historical Review*, 1988, p. 1253-1269.
- [98] Cook's work is largely contained in the research papers published in the periodical *Ibero-Americana*. His research and scholarship was seminal and crucial in developing the more accurate views today toward the indigenous Californians and the effect of the white man's arrival.
- [99] See McWilliams, *Southern California Country, An Island on the Land*, pp. 21-48, esp. p. 29.
- [100] See Rawls, James J. *Indians of California, The Changing Image*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1984, p. 60.

[101] Anastasia Toufexis, "Mind Games with Monsters," *Time*, May 6, 1991, pp. 68-70. I wrote to *Time* when that article came out, letting them know what I thought about it. I never heard back from them.

[102] See, for instance, Angela Davis', *Women, Race, Class*, pp. 172-201. She made the case that white men committing rape is a situation far more prevalent because of their special status in America. Men of color are far more likely to be punished for that crime than white men are.

[103] Weber, *The Spanish Frontier in North America*, p. 73 and 170.

The Next Section: [Columbus, The Original American Hero](#) (148K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Columbus, The Original American Hero

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[The First Voyage, The Discovery](#)

[The Second Voyage, The Invasion](#)

[Genocide](#)

[Why Do We Celebrate Columbus Day?](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

Every year, Bill Bigelow, an Oregon high school teacher, plays out the same scene for his students. He seizes a student's purse and announces that the purse is his. He holds it. Is possession enough? He takes out the lipstick and announces that it is his. He now knows the purse's contents; is that enough? His arguments ring hollow, particularly when the students saw his crime in the making. They do not yet know that the student whose purse was seized was the teacher's confederate. When all his arguments have failed to convince, he then asks, "What if I *discovered* it?" The students chuckle a little, but reject that argument as well. Then Bigelow asks, "So why do we say that Columbus 'discovered' America?" In that spirit, this essay will investigate the feat of Christopher Columbus, the original American hero.

I worked in Columbus, Ohio for five years, and in 1992 during the 500th anniversary of the New World's discovery. The town mounted a celebration that lasted the entire year. In Columbus they have a replica of the Santa Maria, the ship Christopher Columbus sailed on during his epic voyage. The replica is a tourist attraction. There were even plans to erect a statue of Columbus, hundreds of feet tall. He is the original [Founding Father](#).

Most Americans are aware of recent significant revision of Columbus' feat. The celebration of 1992 was starkly different from 1892, the Chicago Columbian Exposition (actually staged in 1893). The 1893 Exposition was a huge event that attracted 24 million visitors, for the largest event attendance in world history to that time. In 1992, however, there were protests and events such as Indigenous People's Days, instead of Columbus Day celebrations. The year 1992 marked the release of a number of "revisionist" works. It coincided with research I was already doing into the news and history.

I originally became aware of blemishes to Columbus' image after reading [Howard Zinn](#)'s revolutionary *A People's History of the United States*. As a good scholar does, Zinn began his "revisionist" look at Columbus by studying the primary evidence, namely Columbus' log, prepared during his voyage of discovery. As with so much of history, we know little for sure.

For instance, Zinn did not really read the captain's log. He read a translation of a partial copy of the log that

Bartolomé Las Casas made nearly 500 years ago. The original log was lost centuries ago. Over the centuries there have been many portraits drawn of Columbus, and they all look different because nobody really knows what Columbus looked like. He may have had no portrait made while alive. Columbus' birthplace and year of birth have been enduring controversies. The standard view is that Columbus was born in Genoa, part of today's Italy, in around 1451, give or take a year, but there are arguments that Columbus was Spanish, Portuguese, Jewish and several other European nationalities. Debate has raged for centuries over where Columbus first landed in the New World. His very name means "Christ-bearing colonizer," so was possibly not this birth name, an incredible coincidence, a creative translation or a sign of "God's hand."[\[1\]](#)

The best "revisionist" histories attempt a determination of what may have really happened. In Zinn's "revisionism," he read the captain's log and reported what Columbus was after: gold.

The First Voyage, The Discovery

On Friday, October 12, 1492 the ships sighted land and the New World was discovered, although the men aboard did not know it yet. There was a reward of 10,000 maravedis (\$540, a large sum in those days, more than a year's wages for a typical sailor) from the Spanish Crown to the man who first sighted land. Columbus claimed the reward because the night land was sighted he thought he earlier saw a light in the West.[\[2\]](#) It was flimsy evidence, but Columbus stole the reward from the sailor who first sighted land.

According to his log, Columbus thought he had reached Asia and was near Japan and the Chinese Empire. At dawn, Columbus and his armed Spaniards went ashore, unfurled their flags, planted a cross, and claimed the land in the name of the king and queen of Spain. That ceremony attended the Spanish wherever they went.

Immediately after Columbus finished making his announcement (to the empty air) of taking possession, the natives began showing up on the beach. They were all naked and friendly, and Columbus described those new Spanish subjects at some length. Some natives carried short wooden spears, but were so unacquainted with weaponry that when Columbus showed a native his sword, the man grabbed the sword by the blade and cut himself.

On that epic day of first contact, three dynamics were evident that would figure largely in future events. They obviously had no common language or culture, and Columbus badly misunderstood much of what the natives tried telling him using gestures. Second was Columbus' judgment of how easily the natives could be turned into Christians. Third was the event Columbus finished that day's log with. Columbus inferred from native gestures that natives from other islands enslaved them. He thought those natives would make fine servants himself, so he captured six of them that first day.

On the second day of discovery, Columbus made first mention of the subject that dominated his logs thereafter: gold. He noticed that some natives had gold jewelry in their noses, so he made the first inquiry, an inquiry that presaged the [Spanish obsession for the next century](#): "Where's the gold?"

The standard sequence of events was going ashore to new land, claiming it for Spain, planting a cross and asking where the gold was. Columbus' voyage of discovery was really a gold hunt. In Columbus' log of December 26, 1492, he made his journey's purpose clear: to find enough gold to finance another [Crusade](#) to conquer Jerusalem.

While reading Columbus' log, I was struck by how many times Columbus ordered his men to not steal from the natives. Columbus made sure the Spaniards would be on their best behavior for those initial encounters. The natives freely gave all they had, or would trade objects of immense value for baubles. Columbus continually expressed his amazement that the natives gave all manner of goods to the Spaniards for trinkets, or simply gave it

away. As the boats sailed from island to island, the most common native reaction was fleeing when the Spaniards showed up (some apparently thought the ships were sea monsters, while others timidly fled from the strange men and boats). The other reaction was warmly welcoming the Spaniards. Columbus and his men never received a hostile reception.

In his log, Columbus regularly remarked on the astounding beauty of the islands and the natives' friendly, happy, peaceful nature, but the obsession of his writings was always where the gold was and how the islands' wealth could be exploited. A mere three days into his gold quest, on October 14th, Columbus made clear what he thought of the natives' military might. His log informed his king and queen that, "with fifty men you could subject every one and make them do what you wished."

On October 15th the ships anchored at an island where the natives "let us go anywhere we desired and gave us anything we asked." After staying a couple hours and determining there was no gold, they prepared to leave. One of the captives then escaped by jumping overboard, as another had done the night before. Columbus' men tried capturing the natives, but their boat was too quick. Columbus indicated to the local natives that his captives were with him because they had harmed him, but that ruse was probably unconvincing.

After sailing through the islands, visiting and trading with natives who had not fled, the ships came to another island on November 11. There a canoe with six "youths" in it approached the ship, and five came aboard. Columbus captured them. Then he sent his men ashore, where they captured seven women and three children. Columbus was modifying a standard [Portuguese](#) practice used in Africa, one he said he used many times when he was a slave runner: capturing the natives, taking them back to Europe, teaching them his language, and bringing them back as interpreters. It had not worked well with Africans, because the natives were not happy with their treatment, but Columbus thought that if he abducted entire families, he might have better luck. That evening, with his slave stock replenished, Columbus was delighted when a man came to the ship and asked to come aboard, as among the new captives were his wife and three children. Columbus gladly allowed the man to become enslaved with his family.

On November 21, gold fever may have overcome the Pinta's captain, as he sailed away in search of gold. Columbus was outraged, but had no option but to continue with his two remaining ships.

After sailing along the coast of Cuba, asking about gold and riches, Columbus reached the island that he named La Isla Española, on December 6, 1492. [Haiti](#) and the Dominican Republic are on that island today. It was the first place permanently colonized by Europeans in the Western Hemisphere.

As usual, the natives fled when they saw the ships. Columbus and his men had to work hard at convincing the natives of their friendly intentions, especially when they had captured natives aboard. As they sailed along the coast, their reception was either friendly or the natives fled. Columbus began to understand the political order, and discovered men called caciques were leaders of some sort. It was a hereditary office, with minor similarity to European royalty.

By "discovering" the Caribbean's inhabitants, Columbus had stumbled into a civilization about 1500 years old. Española was the center of that island civilization, and a people known today as the Taino dominated it. They had [migrated from South America](#), along the archipelago of Caribbean islands at about the time Jesus lived, gradually absorbing/displacing a hunter-gatherer culture. The Taino were Arawakan people. There were other ethnic groups in the Caribbean, such as the Caribs, Guanahatabey and Ciguayo, although the Taino were by far the largest group and occupied the greatest portion of Caribbean land. The Taino's material and spiritual culture was what all other Caribbean groups based their culture on. The Taino were settled in agricultural communities and possessed a rich and diverse food supply. Life was easy in the pre-Columbian Caribbean, and if there could be any generalizations made of the Taino, particularly as compared to today, it would be their happiness and gentleness. Their world was about as close to earthly paradise as human existence has ever come, a fact that was not lost on Columbus, as he

often remarked upon it in his log. He regularly observed that the natives did not seem [capable of dishonesty](#).

On December 25, 1492, with Columbus aboard, the Santa Maria ran aground at night while a boy was steering. The local village came to the rescue and unloaded the sinking ship. Columbus was amazed at the natives' helpfulness, and assured his king and queen that "not even a shoe string [more literally "lace point," used to secure shoes and clothes - Ed.] was lost!" The cacique of the helpful local village, Guacanagarí, welcomed the stranded sailors.

Because their largest ship was destroyed, Columbus left behind about 40 Spaniards and they built a fort from the ship's timbers. Many of Columbus' men begged to stay instead of sailing back to Spain. Columbus admitted that no fort was necessary among such friendly and peaceful people, but he could not put aside his European conditioning. Columbus wanted to condition the natives to obey their new Spanish overlords (although they did not know they had overlords yet) out of "love and fear."^[3] So Columbus had a lombard and musket fired in a demonstration of power, frightening those happy, helpful natives.

The Pinta eventually rejoined the Niña, its captain's gold quest profitably concluded. The captain claimed he was innocently separated from the other ships, which may have been true. Columbus felt the explanation was a lie, but could do nothing about it, so he did not punish the Pinta's captain.^[4] On January 16, 1493, the ships were sailing back across the Atlantic, soon after they had murdered two natives while trading on January 13th.^[5] Columbus described those murdered natives and their people as "evil, and I believe they are from the island of Caribe, and that they eat men."^[6] That characterized the attitude that prevailed during the second voyage and beyond. If the natives were friendly and welcoming, they were the gentle Taino.^[7] If they were less than welcoming or were unfortunate enough to be murdered by the Spaniards, they were cannibalistic savages, deserving whatever fate the Spaniards could dish out.

On that first epic voyage, Columbus began the unfounded myth that the Caribbean natives practiced cannibalism. About the only evidence there ever was for Caribbean cannibalism came from Columbus' imagination while he interpreted native gestures. His misunderstandings correlated with European mythology. Columbus wrote of savage cannibals, people with an eye in the middle of their forehead (log entries of November 4th and 23rd, 1492), and dog-like noses that drink the blood of their victims after cutting their throats and castrating them (log entry of November 4th, 1492). Columbus found in native gestures what he expected to find. For all the writing of what a Renaissance man Columbus was, he had many medieval fantasies. Late in his life he labored on an apocalyptic work that was eventually titled the *Book of Prophecies*, which Kirkpatrick Sale says has been "an acute embarrassment to most Columbus hagiographers, since it is so at odds with the scientific Renaissance rationalist they like to depict as the forerunner of European conquest..."^[8]

When Columbus arrived back in Spain, his sponsors were pleased to hear of new lands to exploit. Let there be no misunderstanding their intentions - they were not benevolent. It is true that Queen Isabella did not want to enslave the natives. She wanted loyal subjects. Yet, the sovereigns frowned on slavery only after it became evident that the natives made poor and unprofitable slaves, because they quickly died when shipped to Europe. In addition, in Europe the difference between slave and subject was sometimes little more than a semantics exercise.

It is true that "converting" them to Christianity was a goal. Conversion is a dubious goal for any religion, and the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella was notable for initiating the [Spanish Inquisition](#), which was mainly an attack against Jews who had lived fairly peacefully and prosperously for centuries under [Moorish rule](#). Jews converted to Christianity in order to continue to live in Spain, at least those who survived the mass murders that dotted Spain over the previous hundred years.

In January of 1492, Grenada, the last city held by the Moors on the Iberian Peninsula, fell to the Spanish armies, ending several centuries of warfare. The Islamic and Jewish people who had lived there for centuries were given

the option of converting to Christianity or being expelled from the country. The Jews had been [kicked out of European countries for centuries](#), and Spain had been a safe place for them, but no longer. The Inquisition especially targeted *conversos*, who were Jews forced to convert to Christianity. The suspected crime of *conversos* was continuing to practice their Jewish faith in secret. For that crime they could be burned at the stake, and thousands were.

What happened to the Canary Islanders off Africa's coast was a preview of the Caribbean Islanders' fate. The Guanches, who came across the ocean long before Jesus was born, had settled the Canary Islands. It is believed they came from North Africa, perhaps from Berber stock. They built step pyramids and made mummies as the Egyptians did. Many Guanches were tall and blond. Castile and Portugal were involved in conquering the Canaries. Pope Clement VI “awarded” the islands to Castile in 1344. They were first invaded in 1402, but the final Spanish conquest that destroyed the Guanches was mounted during the 1490s, directed by Queen Isabella, who began her campaign in 1477.^[9] The rationale was the same one used for Spain's Reconquest: the people they were conquering were not Christians. The invasion was to “save their souls.” That was an audacious rationale for thievery and murder. The process of saving them destroyed them.

In 1494, the Spaniards invaded the Canaries' largest island, Tenerife, for the first time. The Spaniards were defeated decisively by the Guanches, but mounted another campaign in 1496, and that time were successful, aided by an epidemic disease (obviously introduced by the invaders) that swept through the Guanches, killing large numbers of them. The Guanches were enslaved, the [islands deforested](#), and the settlers flocked there. In 1504, The Inquisition came to the Canaries to enforce the new faith and hunt Guanches still practicing their pagan faith in secret, and any Jewish settlers who thought they could escape the long arm of Spain. As a culture, the Guanches were largely extinct by 1600, but genetically their remnants were absorbed into the colonial settler populations, which can still be seen in Canary Islanders today.

Returning to the Spanish court with the six Indian captives who survived the return voyage (most of his captives had already died, and only two would survive a whole year), along with gold nuggets, parrots and other New World paraphernalia, was Columbus' finest hour. He was named Admiral of the Ocean Sea, cut in on 10% of the New World's loot, and a second voyage was immediately planned. Before he met with Ferdinand and Isabella, Columbus drafted a memorial regarding future colonization plans. Nearly two-thirds of the document was concerned with how to handle the gold.^[10] Inserted between paragraphs about securing the gold was a paragraph about building a church and converting the Indians. The sovereigns agreed with the document in principle and the second voyage was planned. The Spanish names of the sovereigns were Fernando and Isabel, and Columbus' Spanish name was Cristóbal Colón, but this essay uses their anglicized names.

The Second Voyage, The Invasion

The second voyage was not the three-ship excursion into the unknown of the previous year. A full-scale invasion was planned, with seventeen ships and far more than one thousand men, including well-armed soldiers, a troop of cavalry lancers, six priests to convert the heathens, man-eating dogs (those infamous dogs of war) and not one woman. It was no friendly expedition, going to dance and sing with the natives, asking politely if they had gold. It appears that the second expedition was partly financed by wealth seized from the Jews, as on May 23rd, 1493, the day the second voyage was authorized, the sovereigns issued royal orders stepping up Jewish wealth confiscation.^[11] Not many, if any, of those gentle New World islanders had any idea what the future held, but history was about to be made.

There is no surviving admiral's log, but others of the invading force chronicled that voyage's events. An Italian nobleman, Michele de Cuneo, one of the two hundred “adventurers” on the voyage, wrote a letter in 1495. A Spaniard, Guillermo Coma, wrote a few letters to the folks back home. The fleet surgeon, Dr. Diego Alvarez

Chanca, also wrote a letter, and those three accounts are the main surviving primary records of the second voyage. Columbus' son Ferdinand wrote a second-hand account of Columbus' second voyage, writing from Columbus' admiral's log, which has since been lost.[\[12\]](#)

The invasion force was prepared for the "inhuman savagery" of the natives. On the first day land was sighted, November 3, 1493, Coma had this to say, before he had even seen a native (besides those already in Spanish captivity):

"These islands are inhabited by Cannabali, a wild, unconquered race which feeds on human flesh. I would be right to call them anthropophagi. They wage unceasing wars against gentle and timid Indians to supply flesh; this is their booty and is what they hunt. They ravage, despoil, and terrorize the Indians ruthlessly."[\[13\]](#)

Descriptions such as Coma's, typical of the European perspective, said far more about Europeans than the natives. The Spaniards, led by Columbus, had already dehumanized people they had not yet seen. They were engaging in a time-honored practice of dehumanizing those they were about to prey upon.

No convincing evidence exists that the natives of the Caribbean were particularly warlike, fierce, or cannibals, even the legendary Caribs, although they raided the Taino islands, generally to take "brides." In one of many ironies of the New World's "discovery," the second voyage first made landfall at Guadeloupe (after a brief stop for Columbus to "claim" Martinique). Guadeloupe is considered the island furthest north that the Caribs inhabited. It was Columbus' best and nearly only chance to meet a real Carib on that voyage, and it is doubtful that he ever met a Carib in the flesh, except some possibly Carib women and children that he captured during a later voyage, in his standard exploration style.[\[14\]](#) The fleet stayed at Guadeloupe for a week. What kind of encounter did the Spaniards have with those fierce cannibals? The natives all fled inland when the Spaniards showed up, and the Spaniards failed to meet any.[\[15\]](#) On Guadeloupe, Columbus' men invaded the island, one party getting itself lost for days, while others seized the women they found, possibly Carib women, but also possibly "bride captured" Taino.

On November 14, two weeks before the fleet arrived at the fort manned by the forty Spaniards left behind on the first voyage, Columbus, Cuneo, Coma and Chanca recorded a native encounter on St. Croix. The seventeen ships were anchored off the island, and longboats had gone ashore to capture slaves. Just then a canoe appeared, paddling along the shoreline. The canoe held four men, two women and a child. The sight of the large ships left the canoe's passengers spellbound. The canoe just sat there for an hour, the natives mutely staring at the ships.

To the Spaniards, those awestruck natives were merely more slaves to capture. They sent boats after the canoe, sneaking up on it. The surprise attack worked, and the natives did not see the boat until escaping the two-dozen armed men was impossible. Then the men and women shot arrows at their attackers. One European was wounded and later died. The natives were captured and brought aboard. One man was severely wounded, his intestines hanging from his wound. The Spaniards knew he would not live, so they threw him overboard. The Spaniards then watched the native hold his intestines with one hand and swim to shore. Their captive Tainos apparently said they should not let the man escape to tell his people what happened, as they might retaliate. So the Spaniards caught him on shore and brought him back, where they tied him up and threw him overboard again. When he amazingly began swimming to shore again, they shot him several times until he died as he struggled for shore.

Those natives were the first ones the Spaniards met who tried defending themselves. Accordingly, the invaders called those unfortunate natives "Caribs." They were not Caribs, but it was in keeping with the good native/bad

native tradition Columbus had already begun on his first voyage. Whether they were Caribs or not, their treatment ended up the same.

Cuneo (probably Columbus' close friend, maybe from childhood) wrote the first recorded account of sexual relations between Europeans and natives. Cuneo received a "gift" from Columbus. The gift was one of the captured native women. In the words of Cuneo:

"While I was in the boat I captured a very beautiful Carib woman the said Lord Admiral gave to me, and with whom, having taken her into my cabin, she being naked according to their custom, I conceived desire to take pleasure. I wanted to put my desire into execution but she did not want it and treated me with her fingernails in such a manner that I wished I had never begun. But seeing that (to tell you the end of it all), I took a rope and thrashed her well, for which she raised such unheard of screams that you would not have believed your ears. Finally we came to an agreement in such manner that I can tell you that she seemed to have been brought up in a school of harlots."[\[16\]](#)

The fleet left a swath of terror wherever it went, and had not yet arrived at its destination: the fort at La Villa de la Navidad. On November 28th they arrived, looking for those forty men left behind near Guacanagarí's friendly village. The reception was different from what they had envisioned.

When Columbus sailed back to Spain, he gave the men at the fort several admonitions. They amounted to behaving themselves around their native hosts and finding the gold. The men at the fort, being creatures of their age, acted normally for fifteenth century Spaniards around naked women and gold. According to Guacanagarí, they fought with each other the moment Columbus' ship was out of sight. Some seized about five women each as their concubines while others marauded across the island in search of villages with gold. Their infighting climaxed when two Spaniards killed another one, then eleven of them marched across the island to where they thought the gold mines were. Some had already left the fort for good, striking out on their own in that land of naked women and gold. Some had already died of illness. God only knows what predatory excesses accompanied their trek across the island, but their reception in the "mining region" was likely not welcoming, as they encountered Caonabó, the cacique that reigned there. Caonabó was not a Taino, but from the less gentle Macorix ethnic group. He did not suffer the predatory Spaniards long. He had them killed, then marched to Columbus' fort. The remaining Spaniards had taken up residence in Guacanagarí's village with their concubines. Caonabó had the village burned in a night attack. Only eleven Spaniards remained, and eight of those died by drowning as they tried escaping. Guacanagarí tried protecting the Spaniards as his village burned, and was wounded.[\[17\]](#)

Columbus could not have been too surprised; he had already been handing out captured women as sex gifts to his men. The only ally the Spaniards had was Guacanagarí, and the head priest on the expedition, Friar Buil, wanted Guacanagarí executed as an example. Columbus was not about to execute his only ally, church advice or not. Instead he had the fort site dug up, to see if the men buried any gold they might have seized (as Columbus instructed them to), and they moved off to establish another settlement.

On the first voyage, the natives who did not flee were exceedingly friendly, and at times seemed to worship the Spaniards as heavenly beings visiting earth. The Spaniards' reputation preceded them then, and most local natives fled before them. The fort had been built near a shipwreck, so was not a great harbor. The fleet sailed seventy-five miles away to establish a beachhead, closer to potential gold mines in the island's mountains. Columbus picked the new site, yet the harbor was poor and there was no fresh water nearby, among other problems. That is where Columbus' ambition became focused, and the town of Isabela (in honor of his queen) was built there. He even gave his house (one of the few stone structures built there) the ostentatious name of "the royal palace" in case the sovereigns should stay there when surveying their empire.

The town of Isabela lasted two miserable years before it was abandoned in favor of the site at Santo Domingo. Isabela was plagued with disasters, including greed, famine, disease and violence. Pigs picked up in the Canary Islands may have carried swine flu, making a third of the Spaniards deathly ill, and killing the natives in droves. The dead natives lay in great stinking piles, in the words of the Spanish historian Oviedo, so many that “they could not be counted.”[\[18\]](#) European-introduced disease killed tens of millions of natives during the sixteenth century.

The Spaniards would always wear out any welcome the New World natives might give them. The [first-contact accounts](#) of Spaniards and other Europeans throughout the New World unfailingly recorded the friendly welcome they received. When a “first-contact” account recorded a hostile native reception, historians use that as evidence that white men had previously visited, such as [Ponce de León’s reception as he invaded Florida](#), or [Coronado’s as he invaded pueblo land](#).[\[19\]](#) Spanish cruelty was readily evident throughout the surviving accounts. In August 1493, as Columbus explored the Española coastline, they discovered an uninhabited island populated with seals and birds. The Spaniards killed eight seals and numerous birds, apparently for no other reason than they could, as those creatures had not yet learned to fear humans.[\[20\]](#) On his last voyage, one of Columbus’ men shot a spider monkey out of a tree with a crossbow; then cut off one of its arms. While the monkey was dying, impaled on the arrow with one arm missing, Columbus noted how the sight of the dying monkey frightened one of his dogs and even a native peccary on board. Columbus then performed an experiment: he threw the monkey and peccary together to watch the reaction. The monkey grappled and subdued the pig with its tail and remaining arm, and Columbus concluded that the monkey hunted pigs, what was not true. Columbus reported that event and finding to the Spanish sovereigns. Hans Koning wrote that such petty cruelty paled beside the human toll that Columbus’ reign and legacy would inflict on the natives, but for Columbus to write of the incident in an offhand, even scientific, way was sad.[\[21\]](#)

Admiral Columbus may have been a good or even great sailor. That issue is controversial, however. He lost a number of ships due to poor judgment, and there are other problems with his reputation as a great seaman. Kirkpatrick Sale takes Columbus’ image as a “great seaman” to task numerous times in *The Conquest of Paradise*. Whatever his merits may have been as a mariner, Columbus was a grossly incompetent colonial administrator. Columbus was about forty-three years old, a white-haired sailor for those times, especially to be sailing into adventurous waters.

Trying to transplant European civilization to new lands is not easy, and Columbus did not exactly bring with him the best people to do it. They all, probably even the priests, had visions of gold dancing in their heads. When it came time to build dwellings and other structures, the freebooters who were not sick were not eager laborers. The ground was not paved with gold, either. Many of those disappointed freebooters-turned-construction-workers “mutinied” in early 1494, led by the royal accountant (whose job was counting the crown’s loot), and tried seizing ships to sail back to Castile. They were imprisoned and sent back on the next boat to Spain. Columbus disfigured those who had stashed away gold by slicing their noses and ears, to little effect. The thievery was rampant.

Columbus was ill for a few months in late 1493. When he recovered, he sailed to Cuba in search of the Asian mainland, leaving one of his brothers behind as governor. Nepotism was a prominent feature of Columbus’ reign. Columbus sailed to Cuba and Jamaica - killing natives, enjoying a hearty welcome, or both - and he always searched for gold.

Columbus was so intent on saying that he found Asia that he engaged in a bizarre act in Cuba. In June 1494, after sailing along the Cuban coast for a month, he compelled his crew to swear that Cuba was not an island but was in fact, “the mainland of the commencement of the Indies.” He made his crew swear out a notarized statement to that effect, and told them they were subject to a “penalty of 10,000 maravedis and the cutting out of the tongue that each one hereafter should say contrary.” He also threatened whippings.[\[22\]](#) Columbus’ hagiographers again have a difficult time explaining such behavior, which was possibly to fulfill royal objectives to search for Asia. If Columbus could dot that “I” he could go back to Española and keep looking for gold.[\[23\]](#)

Columbus' behavior accords well with a devout Catholic of the day. A little more than a century later, the Inquisition would silence Bruno and [Galileo](#) for saying the earth was not the center of the universe (Bruno being burned alive). Galileo's crime was demonstrating it to anybody who dared look through a telescope. Columbus tried to create reality by decree.

Columbus became ill again in September 1494 and was bedridden for several months. His men ran wild. More than a thousand men swarmed across the island, looking for gold, sex and food. They had been ransacking the island before then, but when Columbus was sick it was a free for all. They raped, murdered and pillaged without mercy. Not everybody on the expedition was a fiend. Some were probably shocked by their comrades' depravity, but their shock did little to abate the atrocities. Friar Buil became disillusioned with the New World affair and went home. Because the battles on the Iberian Peninsula had ended (the Moors had been defeated), many unemployed soldiers and adventurers signed up for the expedition. It did not turn out as they had hoped, and many died of starvation and disease, alone in an alien world.

When the Spanish eventually invaded Mexico and the Florida region, it was evident that those more urbanized native cultures were more familiar with warfare than the naked Caribbean people. The mainlanders put up a better fight, but they too were no match for Spanish steel and bloodthirstiness. Events in the Caribbean were not really a collision of two cultures, as has been written. One devoured the other.

By the time Columbus had recovered enough to take control of his men, perhaps 50,000 natives had died, and possibly far more. By that time, the natives were trying to fight back, but were largely ineffectual against armed and armored men with a lust for gold and murder. In March 1495, Columbus regained control of his men and mounted an armed expedition that marched across the island. Hundreds of armed men slaughtered thousands more natives in battle, if "battle" can be used to describe the spectacle of naked people against Spanish swords, firearms, and man-eating dogs. It was a "pacification" campaign.

The purpose of the pacification campaign was to begin turning the native population into submissive and pliant slaves. Columbus sold the western voyages on the premise that the return on investment would be great. Although converting the heathen masses to Christianity was given lip service, nobody should take that notion seriously, and in fact no conversions took place. As with nearly every other exploration in world history, the bottom line of the expedition was the bottom line: how profitable would such an undertaking be? Columbus' extravagant claims of mountains of gold had yet to bear fruit. In February of 1494, Columbus hurriedly sent back to Spain the expedition's first dividends: slaves and gold. All gold taken from the natives was shipped back to the monarchy, to keep their interest up. Twenty-six natives survived the trip back to the Spain.

The cleverness of the Spaniards (and a sense of humor?) shines through from time to time. One anecdote which was funny, in a sick way, was how Columbus' men captured an uncooperative cacique, Caonabó, who Columbus said was the "principal king of the island." Caonabó initiated the killing of those rapacious men at the fort. The Spaniards had a pair of handcuffs and leg irons polished so they shined. One of Columbus' men went to Caonabó with the "gifts." Caonabó was told that the handcuffs and leg irons were jewelry of great status. He was told that the King of Spain wore them. Caonabó put them on and was shackled in short order. The Spaniards must have laughed about that one for days. After being put on display at Columbus' "royal palace," he was shipped to Spain with his fancy jewelry. He died en route, as usual for a native.[\[24\]](#)

In February 1495, Columbus shipped 550 of those "gentle Tainos" to Spain for the slave markets. Only 350 survived the voyage, and on arrival half of those were dying. In 1495, Columbus instituted policies that would prove more effective at exterminating the population than pure violence had so far, and would pay handsome dividends to the Crown.

Columbus designed a tribute system. Spaniards would not deign to dig any gold for themselves, so the natives had to. Every Taino over 14 years of age was to give a hawk's bell (about the size of a thimble) of gold to the rulers

(Columbus and his men) every three months. Upon receipt of the gold, the natives were given tokens to wear around their necks as proof of payment. It was a simple system. When the Spaniards found Tainos without the appropriate tokens, they chopped their hands off, leaving them to bleed to death and making examples of them. It is estimated that about ten thousand Taino died handless that way.

The quota was impossible to meet. The natives had to stop growing food and taking care of themselves to try mining gold. They began starving, falling prey to European disease and all manner of horror, even if the Spanish did not murder them for “sport.” The natives fled as far as they could go: across the island, up into the hills, even to other islands. There was no permanent escape, except by death. Mothers began killing their children before they took their own lives. The Tainos had mass suicides by jumping from cliffs and poisoning themselves, yet the Spanish killed far more, and in ingenious ways. Guacanagarí, Europe’s first ally in the New World, was eventually driven into the mountains himself by the Spanish depredations, dying alone, wandering the mountains of his ruined world.

Genocide

What happened on La Isla Española in significant ways has no precedent in world history. Until the gold strike in the island’s mountains in 1499, which made Columbus a rich man and was the first vindication of the whole Indies business, there was no gold found in significant quantities. Instead of chopping off endless hands, a new variant of a Castilian traditional system was imposed in response to a revolt by Columbus’ men, who wanted land and slaves for themselves. It quickly evolved into the “encomienda” system. It was slavery in everything but the name. The natives were given to Spanish “care” and taught good Christian principles while they were being worked to death, if they were not beheaded on a whim.

For all of Columbus’ rhetoric, conversion apparently was never implemented on Española, except when they began enslaving the natives in the “encomienda” program. That is a rich irony, as Columbus immediately began calling himself the “Christ-bearer,” although his efforts did not convert any natives.[\[25\]](#) “Death-bearer” would have been more apt. The gold strike of 1499 was when Columbus finally hit pay dirt. While the natives lasted, there was finally a genuine gold rush on Española, [the first of many in the New World](#).

Columbus’ passion for gold was more than mere greed. He invested it with supernatural, divine, qualities. A few years before he died he wrote,

“Gold is the most precious of all commodities; gold constitutes treasure, and he who possesses it has all he needs in the world, as also the means of rescuing souls from purgatory, and restoring them to the enjoyment of paradise.”[\[26\]](#)

Columbus thought that gold was the ticket to heaven. Apparently, he never heard the words: “You can’t take it with you.”

Columbus eventually fell out of favor with the Crown, and Francisco de Bobadilla and Nicolás de Ovando succeeded Columbus as the governor of Española in 1500 and 1501. The devastation of Española continued unabated, and Ovando was even more ruthless than Columbus. The mines were being worked furiously, and natives were dying at an incredible rate. In 1503, the island’s southeastern and southwestern regions had not been

completely conquered. Presiding over the southwestern region, known as Xaraguá, was Anacaona, the highly respected widow of Caonabó, the cacique who received the gift of those shiny manacles.

In 1503, Ovando went with 360 soldiers to Xaraguá for the stated purpose of improving relations with the Taino. Anacaona graciously welcomed Ovando and his men, housing and feeding them. All the region's caciques were summoned to welcome the Spaniards. The natives were either amazingly forgiving, or naïve. During that celebration, at a sign from Ovando, his soldiers fell upon their unsuspecting hosts. They slaughtered everybody in sadistic fashion - cutting children's legs off, etc. After enough people had been killed to satisfy the Spanish bloodlust, the soldiers herded the remaining caciques into the royal hut and set it ablaze, burning them to death. What Anacaona must have felt, after the deceitful capture of her husband years before, can only be imagined. Ovando had some warped sense of honor. Instead of disemboweling or burning Anacaona alive, they hanged her. [27] Eighty-four caciques (nearly all the region's leadership) died in the massacre, and that region was swiftly conquered. The next year the southeastern region of the island was "pacified" using standard Spanish brutality, and there was not much resistance from the fast-dwindling native population, although in their twilight years a native named Enrique eventually created a native stronghold in the mountains that held out for years, and they easily defeated the Spanish attacks while demonstrating vastly greater humanity than the Spaniards.

The dogs the Spaniards brought were large, strong breeds such as mastiffs and greyhounds, trained to kill. Dogs had been used in European warfare clear back to the ancient Romans, Greeks and Persians, which is where the phrase "let loose the dogs of war" came from. In Europe, the warfare was against armored opponents, and the dogs often wore armor themselves. In the Caribbean, where the people were naked, and in the New World in general where warfare was practically unknown in the European sense (large battles of extermination), the dogs were murderously effective. The invaders would let loose the dogs and they would easily kill and maim the terrorized people.

Infants' bodies are soft, and were quite a tasty treat for the dogs, so the Spaniards regularly fed infants to their dogs, alive, and at times while the horrorstricken parents watched.[28] The Spaniards had contests to see who could cut a living person in half with one stroke of the sword. They would test the sharpness of their blades by beheading the nearest handy native.[29]

During the Western Hemisphere's rape [during the next century](#), natives often became nothing more than dog food. An Inca conquistador described a dog food storage technique:

"...when I came from Cartagena, I saw a Portuguese named Roque Martín, who had the quarters of Indians hanging on a porch to feed his dogs with, as if they were wild beasts..."[30]

There were butcher shops throughout the Caribbean region during the years of conquest, where Indian bodies were sold as dog food.[31] One practice, used on the Guanches as another prelude to New World events, was known as the *montería infernal*, the infernal chase, or manhunt. Instead of hunting foxes, the conquistadors would hunt natives with their dogs in a jaunty outing. The dogs feasted on their hapless prey. The *montería infernal* became a favorite pastime of many conquistadors, such as [Hernando de Soto](#). Another event to pass the time and provide entertainment was to pit a naked native, sometimes armed with a stick, against a dog. It was reminiscent of the Roman Coliseum. The dogs killed their human prey by disemboweling them, although jugular attack was also used, sometimes leading to decapitation. The natives came to fear being thrown to the dogs more than any other fate.[32]

For various reasons, the New World's natives had few [domesticated animals](#). The llama of South America was the New World's largest domesticated animal. Parrots, turkeys, ducks, guinea pigs and a small dog the Aztecs raised for food were about the only other domesticated animals in the New World. There were no domestic herds of cattle, horses, goats, sheep or pigs for the Spaniards to slaughter. The natives were largely vegetarian, especially those not living near the oceans. The Spaniards took herds of European pigs with them as a cafeteria on the hoof, as Hernando de Soto did in southeastern North America. Those were exceptions, not the rule. When the Spaniards invaded and plundered the native people, the most available dog food was human flesh. Those dogs had been trained to kill human beings, and there were already instances in Europe of feeding the enemy to the dogs of war.

Ironically, the other animals the Spaniards took along for food were the dogs themselves. When the Spaniards found themselves starving in uninhabited territory while looking for natives to plunder, the dogs became the food of last resort. No historian has yet made this point (that I am aware of), but as the Spaniards made many unsubstantiated accusations of native cannibalism, they ate human-fed dogs.

As those acts became known and were seized upon by Spain's European rivals for propaganda purposes, the term "[Black Legend](#)" came into being to dismiss such events as mere propaganda. The events *were* used to score propaganda points, but that did not make them less true. As David Stannard and others have made the case, the Spanish genocidal temperament was far from unique. The English and their political descendants, the Americans, had attitudes every bit as genocidal as the Spanish. They just had fewer opportunities for slaughter.[\[33\]](#)

To Spanish credit, there were *some* people who lamented the slaughter, the priest Bartolomé Las Casas most prominent among them. He was the chief critic and most prominent witness of the Spanish atrocities. Las Casas and people like him were an extreme minority in Spain, although his and other Dominican efforts affected Spanish royalty, which resulted in some laws of limited effect, such as the Laws of Burgos in 1512 (which also spawned the insane, legalistic [Requerimiento](#)). Las Casas' attitude hinted at the Spanish attitude towards the natives: the Spanish generally saw them as human beings (when not using them for dog food), although of an "inferior" race and culture. At least on paper sometimes, the Spanish wanted to civilize the natives and turn them into "good Christians," whatever that may mean. The [English](#), on the other hand, generally felt the natives were subhuman. There is no record of a native advocate among the English, one who remotely approached the effort of Las Casas, who became known as the "Apostle of the Indians."

Las Casas is the primary chronicler of the Caribbean's devastation. He came to the Caribbean in 1502 as a conqueror. He lived in Cuba with his own Indian slaves. He was prosperous. He had a [breakthrough of conscience](#) in 1514 that was a long time in coming, but when it did, he gave away his Indians and dedicated the rest of his life to the natives' welfare, becoming their most outspoken advocate among the Europeans. He wrote a number of tracts and books, and no account of what happened in the Caribbean is complete without some of Las Casas' descriptions of what he saw.

One event that Las Casas witnessed is recorded in his [A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies](#), the classic, polemic account of how the Spaniards treated the natives. A cacique named Hatuey escaped the butchery on Española and fled to Cuba after the 1503 [massacre at Xaraguá](#), taking his people with him. In 1511, the Spaniards were looking for new lands to plunder after Española had been devastated, and they invaded Cuba. Diego Velázquez, one of Ovando's captains at the Xaraguá massacre, led the first invasion of Cuba, partly because they knew Hatuey and his people fled there. Velázquez became Cuba's governor.

When Hatuey heard the Spaniards were coming, he gathered his people, telling them that the Spaniards had a god, and they would kill to get their hands on it. The Spanish god was a basket of gold jewelry. Hatuey and his people honored the Spanish god with a dance. Hatuey said that the only safety from the Spanish was not having their god around, so they threw the jewelry into the nearest river.

That strategy did not save them. After fleeing across Cuba, Hatuey was captured by Velázquez and his men, while his people were slaughtered and enslaved. Las Casas was a Dominican priest and witnessed a Franciscan brother doing his duty at Hatuey's execution. Hatuey was tied to a stake, to be burned alive in the Christian style. The Franciscan tried converting Hatuey as he stood there, tied to the stake. If Hatuey converted to Christianity, they would *merely* have executed him with a sword, and the Franciscan would have "saved" one more soul. The priest told him about heaven and hell, of eternal rest or damnation, depending on the choice Hatuey took. Hatuey carefully considered the priest's words. He asked the priest if Christians went to heaven. When the priest said that the good ones did, Hatuey replied that he would rather go to hell than be around those monstrous Christians.[\[34\]](#) Then the flames took him.

Multitudes died in the horrific mine conditions. During the early 1500s, the Spaniards were faced with a new problem: it was becoming difficult to find enough natives to do the work. In 1496, when the tribute system was still in place, Columbus' brother Bartolomé, the acting governor while Columbus returned to Spain, apparently surveyed the population to get an idea of how much tribute would pour in. The count tallied 1.1 million people. That was just counting the adults, in the region the Spaniards controlled at that time, which came after two years of severe population decline from violence, starvation, disease, etc.[\[35\]](#) In 1508, the count tallied 60,000 people. By 1535, the original inhabitants of La Isla Española were virtually extinct, and were *completely extinct* a generation later. The Taino were completely exterminated throughout the entire Caribbean long before the year 1600.

Today, there is a revival of the Taino people, and there are stories and some evidence of some mixed-blood survival in mountainous pockets in the Greater Antilles and survivors who fled to South America, but by 1600 the Taino were extinct for practical purposes in the Caribbean. Today's prevailing estimate is that they numbered somewhere between two to three million in 1492, but they may have numbered more than ten million. It is history's only *complete extermination of millions of people*. There is nothing to compare it to. Some of the Old Testament's Jewish [battles of extermination](#) are quite bloody, but the *complete extermination of millions of people* is unique. The 1,500 years of Taino inhabitation of the Caribbean was plenty of time to have populated the islands with numbers in the millions, and with the perfect climate, nearly zero violence, zero epidemic disease, superior agriculture and other benefits that Europe did not remotely enjoy, to number less than millions would be surprising.

The pre-European-contact headcount on La Isla Española and the entire Western Hemisphere is a matter of fierce academic controversy. The notion of the Western Hemisphere as a primeval wilderness waiting to be tamed is a fantasy. With archeology coming into its own during the past fifty years, today's evidence is that people have been living in the Western Hemisphere possibly as long as they have in Europe. North and South America comprise about sixteen million square miles, only slightly less than Asia, which has more than seventeen million square miles. People have been living in the New World for tens of thousands of years. The "primeval wilderness" myths were partly self-serving lies invented by Europeans to make the New World's rape look more benign. Americans are not alone with those delusions. South Africa is another "settler-state" (where the Europeans invaded and stayed) that conjured similar myths to soothe their national conscience. The pre-invasion head count is consequently probably underestimated, perhaps severely so, in all "settler states."

The Western Hemisphere's natives were reverent towards nature, whereas Europeans were afraid of it, and the European goal (so obvious even today in the Western mentality) was to conquer and subjugate it.[\[36\]](#) Although the natives [rarely raped the land as the Europeans did](#), it is illogical to think they did not have many children, and increased their population.

There is plenty of evidence for a New World population in 1492 of 100 million people. There is speculation it could have been higher. Today, mainstream estimates of ninety million can be found, which is naturally a piece of sophisticated guesswork.[\[37\]](#) It is estimated that Europe had about [80 million people in 1500 AD](#), and Asia somewhere around 300 million, with a margin of error of 10 to 25% because there was no census anywhere in the world.[\[38\]](#) The surface area of the Western Hemisphere is about four times that of Europe. One early, authoritative "scientific" estimate, which is regrettably still influential today, by Alfred Kroeber of the University of California at

Berkeley in 1939, estimated slightly more than eight million people for the entire Western Hemisphere in 1492. The British Isles alone had nearly five million in 1492. Spain's population was about eight million in 1492, or a population equivalent to (in Kroeber's estimate) the entire Western Hemisphere's, which had land just as inhabitable or more, people living at about the same level of technology, and often more so, for a preposterous population density about fifty times greater than the New World's. One reason for such a low estimate was the now-discredited notion that the natives migrated to the New World only a few thousand years ago, an estimate that was upheld for generations by attacking any scientist who found evidence suggesting otherwise. A more likely estimate now is 40,000 years, and nobody in academia is arguing for less than 13,000 years ago.[\[39\]](#)

To Kroeber's credit, he stated that his estimate was based on many guesses, and suggested that detailed scientific work be undertaken. The challenge was accepted by scholars who also taught at Berkeley, most notably Carl Sauer, Sherburne Cook and Woodrow Borah. They used a multidisciplinary scientific methodology to arrive at better estimates, first by doing intensive work on a selected area, for instance, and extrapolating it. The numbers the "Berkeley School" generated were startling: eight million for Española alone and twenty-five million for Central Mexico, leading Borah to conclude the population of the Western Hemisphere was more than one hundred million. Based on the higher estimates, the decline of the New World population in the 16th century was by about seventy million people, perhaps more.[\[40\]](#) The main side effect of the [Spanish gold rush that lasted for a hundred years](#) was the extermination of about 90% of the Western Hemisphere's population.

The new estimates sparked intense scholarly debate, which has been raging for many years now.[\[41\]](#) There is no good reason for believing that the Western Hemisphere's population was orders of magnitude less dense than the other continents in 1492. There are credible arguments for it being more densely populated than other parts of the world: no epidemic disease, no mass warfare, superior agriculture[\[42\]](#), and idyllic climates and environs for significant parts of the Hemisphere. All [early chroniclers of the New World's invasion](#) remarked on how thickly populated the lands were.

The Caribbean natives lived in a state Columbus described as Edenic during his first voyage. They did not need clothes, food grew the year-round with crops and environment far superior to Europe's, the ocean was bountiful, epidemic disease was unknown and many of them did not know what a weapon was. According to Las Casas and others, no Spaniard ever witnessed two Tainos fighting each other. If Española only had the population density of the hellhole that was England in 1500, with its poor climate, rampant disease, starvation and violence, it would have had more than a million people.

David Stannard, author of the devastating *American Holocaust*, uses the high end estimates in his book, but for good reason: he has authored the most sophisticated existing pre-contact population estimate for the Hawaiian islands.[\[43\]](#) Stannard makes the impressive and nearly unchallenged case that the Hawaiian islanders may have numbered about a million people before Captain Cook "discovered" them. That challenges the conventional wisdom that has put the population at a few hundred thousand at most. Hawaii has less than one-quarter of Española's land, with similar climactic conditions.

Las Casas made the estimate of three million people on Española prior to Columbus, as have other scholars. This essay will use two million for argument's sake (a million is widely accepted by today's scholarship[\[44\]](#)), something Stannard would call conservative.

The depopulation to 60,000 people by 1508 was a 97% depopulation in fifteen years. That might seem an unparalleled holocaust, but a 95% depopulation ratio is the standard for the world's natives after contacting the filthy, disease-ridden Europeans.[\[45\]](#) The major culprits were the disease epidemics that swept through the natives like wildfire. Across the planet, the cultures that had been isolated from the Asia/Europe/Africa pathogens had a disastrous time when first exposed to them, whether they lived in Iceland, Australia, the South Pacific, Hawaii, or the New World. The Spaniards obviously killed many thousands of natives, and ended up working and starving thousands (millions?) more to death (or the one-two-three whammy of starvation and overwork leading to

susceptibility to disease), but nobody is suggesting that the Spaniards killed two million people on Española with their swords.

There are numerous accounts of the psychological dislocation that the natives manifested. Imposing one culture on top of another, with the expressed purpose of eliminating it, as the Spanish priests did for centuries, takes a tremendous psychic toll. The native responses varied from drunkenness to chronic depression to infanticide to suicide to simply lying down and dying.[\[46\]](#) Two side effects of those psychological dislocations were a collapsing birth rate and high infant mortality rate. Even if disease, starvation, overwork and murder did not eliminate the natives, the [low numbers of surviving infants](#) may have done the job.[\[47\]](#) The Spaniards noticed the collapsing infant survival rates, and at times attempted to force the natives to have children.

Kirkpatrick Sale summarized the native puzzlement toward their exterminators:

"It is said, by Las Casas among others, that what perplexed the Tainos of Española most about the strange white people from the large ships was not their violence, not even their greed, nor in fact their peculiar attitudes toward property, but rather their coldness, their hardness, their lack of love."[\[48\]](#)

The Bahamas, where Columbus first made landfall in the Western Hemisphere,[\[49\]](#) was the home of perhaps a half million happy people. They became extinct within a few years.[\[50\]](#) Similar decimation happened to the entire Caribbean region.

As the natives died by the millions, the slave stock had to be replenished, and the [Spaniards raided further and further away](#), which eventually took them to the mainland. One more important source of slaves to mine the gold and work the plantations was exploited: Africa. As the natives became extinct, the Spaniards and [Portuguese](#) began importing Africans to the Caribbean. The African slave trade is another dark chapter in world history. The European-African-American slave trade killed many millions of million people, perhaps reaching as high as 30 to 60 million people.[\[51\]](#) For what it is worth, Columbus, who worked in the African slave trade in Europe, and who helped initiate what became the encomienda policy on Española, and was a primary architect of the Caribbean genocide, was not directly responsible for bringing African slaves to the Caribbean.

In Columbus' log of his first voyage, the primary accounts of the second voyage, or Columbus' and others' accounts of his other voyages, the mentality of the conquerors was striking.[\[52\]](#) Columbus specialized in kidnapping natives as interpreters as he explored the coastlines in and around the Caribbean. Capturing women for his men to use as sex slaves was typical behavior, when his men were candid enough to admit it (Columbus was writing to the queen, after all). Getting rich quickly (and/or famous) was the preoccupation of all of them.

The accounts were disquieting when describing the native flora and fauna in one section, as Cuneo did, then casually describing killing more than twenty natives with crossbows and firearms from their ships, as a prelude to "trading" with them.[\[53\]](#) Columbus made it a policy not to allow his men to leave the ships unchaperoned, because they robbed and raped with abandon when left on their own.

The Spaniards were quick to suspect their "hosts" were plotting against them. Then they would then [launch a "preemptive" strike against the natives](#), slaughtering hundreds or thousands of them. What betrayed the fact that there was likely no plot was that the Spaniards' preemptive strikes nearly always caught the natives by surprise. The natives were shocked and totally unprepared for the Spanish violence that was unleashed against them. Nearly 100% of the time, there was no trap about to be sprung. As with Columbus' [fanciful interpretations](#) of Taino

gestures, the Spaniards concluded from native gestures what they wanted to find, and justifying a surprise attack on their "hosts" seemed a Spanish penchant.[\[54\]](#)

In no instance that I have seen or heard of, did anybody in Spain ever question the conquest's propriety. It was a universally held concept that conquering the Western Hemisphere was a God-given right. Not even sympathetic historians, such as Las Casas and Cieza de León, questioned if conquering the natives was justified. For Las Casas, who was a great admirer of Columbus, the conquest was bringing the light of Christianity. Las Casas [came the closest to asking that Spain bring its ships home](#), but never quite went that far. For soldier-historian Cieza de León, conquest was merely what he did for a living. Although Cieza de León [lamented the awesome destruction](#) that the Spanish invasion inflicted on the native populations, the question of whether the Spaniards should have even come across the Atlantic was never given consideration. It is a revealing commentary that nobody ever asked if invading the New World was "right." The only debate was whether it could have been done more gently. Such an assumption can be seen throughout history's imperial cultures, including the United States.

Much has been made of Columbus over the centuries. Sailor-historians have worshipped Columbus as one of history's great navigators, and have engaged in senseless debates regarding where Columbus first landed in the New World.[\[55\]](#) Others have extolled his renaissance virtues. During the 19th-century, there was an attempt to make Columbus a saint. There has also been plenty of vilification, particularly lately.

If it were not Columbus, it would have been another European. Columbus was little better or worse than his contemporaries, as far as his regard for the human beings he exterminated. The awesome bloodshed of the first century of conquest was a standard "frontier" situation. The people who manned the voyages to the New World during the years of discovery [were not the best and brightest](#) Europe had to offer. Soldiers of fortune and "gentleman adventurers" would not make an enlightened first contact with the natives, and the men of the cloth often made things worse. Many of the New World's early "settlers" had clipped ears and noses, denoting criminal status in Europe.

After the mercenary elements of European society secured the frontier, then came the "settlers," also not from European society's premier ranks. Although they did not usually inflict the bloodshed of the "frontier" warriors and conquistadors, they finished wiping out the native people and their cultures as they made their homes on native lands and fleshed out the system of exploitation. They became participants in the system and found people below them in society's hierarchy. Having natives to exploit moved them up one notch.

What happened on Española is a phenomenon seen many times during the research for this site. The resources (natives and land) seemed so limitless and abundant that few thought of the consequences of their depredations. While everybody was trying to get rich by mining gold and turning the Caribbean into one big plantation, the natives and local environments were devastated. Hardly anybody bothered to extrapolate the trends to see where they would lead until it was too late. By 1517, the gold had been mined and the Españolan natives were about one percent of their pre-contact population. Nearly the entire Caribbean had been depopulated by then. The priests, led by Las Casas, campaigned to have African slaves brought in to do the plantation work, as they had proven heartier than natives in the mines, and there were few natives left.

By 1518, the priests' campaign succeeded, and the official policy was to have African slaves replace the native slaves. The few remaining natives were to be freed and moved into villages to live somewhat as they had before Columbus arrived. The plan might have worked to rescue the Caribbean natives from the brink of extinction, but fate had another card to play. European diseases had already killed countless natives, but 1518 saw the first recorded epidemic of smallpox in the New World. It wiped out more than half of the remaining natives on Española, quickly driving them to extinction. Thus ends the story of the happy people who greeted Columbus.

Around 1990, I as began to study these areas, I believed that the black-skinned people of today's Caribbean were indigenous people, some kind of equatorial New World natives. I had no idea that they were *all* originally from

Africa. The *complete genocide* of the original Caribbean inhabitants was never emphasized in my schooling.

Columbus made four voyages to the New World. He eventually suspected that those islands were not off of Asia, but that he had discovered a new continent.^[56] He was shipwrecked on his fourth voyage, and the natives of Jamaica fed the surviving crewmembers for a year, while Columbus' men had a mutiny and not only killed each other, but natives. For all his adventures, Columbus died in bed in 1506, in Spain, surrounded by his family, friends and his seven servants, a man made rich from the New World's plunder.

There is more to Columbus' story than this essay tells. He spent one return voyage to Spain in chains (not really as a prisoner, but in a display of self-pity). He was the first to realize that native genocide would be bad for Spain in the end, as dead slaves cannot do any work.

What this essay presents is not controversial to those who have studied Columbus. Today, most Americans have some passing acquaintance with the real story. That Columbus initiated the genocide of the natives is not really debated, even by his admirers. [Washington Irving](#) published a mammoth and hugely popular biography of Columbus in 1828, where he invented, among other myths, the story of Columbus proving that the world was not flat. There is something significant about a novelist writing the first major American work on Columbus.

With most good propaganda, most frequent are the lies of omission, not commission. Nevertheless, some historians deride the work of Sale and Stannard as "ideological." Las Casas entered the political arena and Sauer taught at Berkeley. Some scholars make the case that the New World was not as pristine as "revisionist" scholars would have people believe.^[57] The point made throughout this site's essays is that we know little for sure.

With all the uncertainty, there is *some* warranted confidence regarding what may have happened. People lived in the Western Hemisphere in large numbers. They altered the landscape somewhat, and could destroy their environment to where it no longer sustained them, as how the Mayans had a population collapse that ended their "classic" phase a thousand years ago. Yet, compared to what the Europeans did to their land, the Western Hemisphere generally was pristine. We can never come close to knowing what it was really like before Columbus showed up, partly because the Europeans actively destroyed the culture they invaded.

Why Do We Celebrate Columbus Day?

Why does America celebrate Columbus Day? Modern scholarship does not take the heroic image of Columbus seriously, and yet the "revisionists" are taken to task for their critiques of Columbus' image and other popular myths.

America's capital is named after Columbus (he jointly holds that honor with another American hero, [George Washington](#)), and America was nearly named after him. Cities, streets, a river and other places are named for him. According to an official at the 1893 Columbian Exhibition in Chicago, Columbus' likeness was second place to Jesus in how often it had been produced.^[58]

Americans celebrate the "discovery" of the Western Hemisphere because our ancestors erected European-style civilizations on the bones and ashes of its dead inhabitants. The Columbus Day celebrations are the dysfunctional rituals of a conqueror society. It is true that there were dark sides to native cultures. They apparently practiced human sacrifice in *some* of the New World cultures, sometimes. Warfare was not unknown. The people of the New World were human, but in the areas of viciousness and avarice, on a scale of ten the Western Hemisphere's natives probably ranked a two or three, and the Europeans a nine. America celebrates Columbus Day because Columbus was a "winner."

During the past several centuries, the apologists for Europe's conquest of the New World have gladly told graphic tales of human sacrifice, cannibalism, torture of captives and other native atrocities. The record is nearly devoid of a European witness to those acts.

[Howard Zinn](#) summed up the position America and its scholarship has taken towards Columbus. He wrote about the brainwashing American students receive, how they rarely learn differently, and how scholars have abetted the situation. Zinn wrote:

"Past the elementary and high schools, there are only occasional hints of something else. Samuel Elliott Morison, the Harvard historian, was the most distinguished writer on Columbus, the author of a multi-volume biography, and was himself a sailor who retraced Columbus' route across the Atlantic. In his popular book *Christopher Columbus, Mariner*, written in 1954, he tells about the enslavement and the killing: 'The cruel policy initiated by Columbus and his successors resulted in complete genocide.'

"That is on one page, buried halfway into the telling of a grand romance. In the book's last paragraph, Morison sums up his view of Columbus: 'He had his faults and his defects, but they were largely the defects of the qualities that made him great - his indomitable will, his superb faith in God and his own mission as the Christ-bearer to lands beyond the seas, his stubborn persistence despite neglect, poverty and discouragement. But there was no flaw, no dark side to the most outstanding and essential of all his qualities - his seamanship.'

"One can outright lie about the past. Or one can omit facts that might lead to unacceptable conclusions. Morison does neither. He refuses to lie about Columbus. He does not omit the story of mass murder; indeed he describes it with the harshest word one can use: genocide.

"But he does something else - he mentions the truth quickly and goes on to other things more important to him. Outright lying or quiet omission takes the risk of discovery which, when made, might arouse the reader to rebel against the writer. To state the facts, however, and then to bury them in a mass of other information is to say to the reader with a certain infectious calm: yes, mass murder took place, but it's not important - it should weigh very little in our final judgments; it should affect very little what we do in the world.

"...To emphasize the heroism of Columbus and his successors as navigators, and to de-emphasize their genocide, is not a technical necessity but an ideological choice. It serves - unwittingly - to justify what was done.

"My point is not that we must, in telling history, accuse, judge, condemn Columbus in absentia. It is too late for that; it would be a useless scholarly exercise in morality. But the easy acceptance of atrocities as a deplorable but necessary price to pay for progress (Hiroshima and Vietnam, to save Western civilization; Kronstadt and Hungary, to save socialism; nuclear proliferation, to save us all) - that is still with us. One reason these atrocities are still with us is that we have learned to bury them in a mass of other facts, as radioactive wastes are buried in containers in the earth. We have learned to give them exactly the same proportion of attention that teachers and writers often give them in the most respected classrooms and textbooks. This learned sense of moral proportion, coming from the apparent objectivity of the scholar, is accepted more easily than when it comes from politicians at press conferences. It is therefore more deadly.

"The treatment of heroes (Columbus) and their victims (the Arawaks) - the quiet acceptance of conquest and murder in the name of progress - is only one aspect of a certain approach to history, in which the past is told from the point of view of governments, conquerors, diplomats, leaders. It is as if they, like Columbus, deserve universal acceptance, as if they, - the Founding Fathers, Jackson, Lincoln, Wilson, Roosevelt, Kennedy, the leading members of Congress, the famous Justices of the Supreme Court - represent the nation as a whole.

"... 'History is a memory of states,' wrote Henry Kissinger in his first book, *A World Restored*, in which he proceeded to tell the history of nineteenth-century Europe from the viewpoint of the leaders of Austria and England, ignoring the millions who suffered from those statesmen's policies. From his standpoint, the 'peace' that Europe had before the French Revolution was 'restored' by the diplomacy of a few national leaders. But for factory workers in England, farmers in France, colored people in Asia and Africa, women and children everywhere except the upper classes, it was a world of conquest, violence, hunger, exploitation - a world not restored but disintegrated." [\[59\]](#).

Zinn's *A People's History of the United States* is filled with insightful nuggets. His book should be read in American classrooms instead of the paeans to Columbus.

What has happened during the past generation, with Columbus' heroic image being tarnished, is not new facts arising, but looking at the facts objectively. The picture that then emerged can rightly be called horrifying. Indeed, what have our ancestors been cheering about? Yet, we still have a national holiday called Columbus Day.

We cannot all get on boats and sail back to Europe. The acts of our ancestors are not pretty, and if we had been born then, we might have done the same. The past is the past, and we can do nothing about it except learn from it, and perhaps try healing some of the damage that our ancestors inflicted, such as treating the remnants of the native tribes a lot better, even giving back some of the land that our ancestors murderously stole from theirs. Celebrating what our ancestors did and lying about the past seem the most inappropriate responses, and probably [underlie a mass psychosis](#).

Along with Zinn, there have been other efforts to counter the Columbus Myth propaganda. Hans Koning's *Columbus, His Enterprise*, was published in 1976, which was Zinn's first inkling that the story that Zinn, a Ph.D. in history, had been taught about Columbus might be a little awry. My college history textbook also [did nothing to try challenging the Columbus Myth](#). In the 1991 edition of *Columbus, His Enterprise*, the final chapter is titled "Columbus in the Classroom," written by Bill Bigelow. Bigelow described that [presentation he makes to his classes every year](#), and then led them down the inexorable path of understanding that the European "discovery" of the New World was really invasion, murder and theft from the people who had been living here for millennia.

Bigelow uses *Columbus, His Enterprise* as a textbook for his class, and the students then studied history textbooks and critiqued their highly slanted presentations of the New World's "discovery." The people being discovered may as well have not existed as far as the textbooks went. The focus was all on the Spaniards and their awe of the new land, taking possession of it in the name of the King and Queen, the glory, etc. Who likes to hear they have been lied to their entire lives? At least regarding the Columbus Myth, those students began getting their brains unwashed, which helped them cast a critical eye at other myths they had been told. If only every American history class did the same.

Zinn was a professionally trained historian, ironically earning his doctorate at *Columbia*, and he openly admits that he did not realize what a whitewash the Columbus story was until he began researching *A People's History of the United States*. *Professional American historians* have gone their entire lives and never learned about the dark side of Columbus' legacy. One student said:

"It seemed to me as if the publishers had just printed up some "glory story" that was supposed to make us feel more patriotic about our country. In our group, we talked about the possibility of the government trying to protect young students from such violence. We soon decided that was probably one of the farthest things from their minds. They want us to look at our country as great, and powerful, and forever right. They want us to believe Columbus was a real hero. We're being fed lies. We don't question the facts, we just absorb information that is

handed to us because we trust the role models that are handing it out."[\[60\]](#)

In 2006, I heard from a college professor who has used this essay in his class curriculum for several years. He told me that the information on Columbus in this essay is a shock to about 99% of his pupils. As James Loewen remarked in his seminal [Lies my Teacher Told Me](#), the real hero in American history textbooks is America itself. The story is of the state as hero, always right, forever unstained, marching off to greater feats of glory and righteousness. That is the Big Lie of American "history." That mentality is needed, however, in order to get boys to [march off to distant wars](#), to defend our great nation from "threats" such as [Iraq](#) and [Vietnam](#).

America's entertainment industry has a long-standing tradition of depicting invading armies from other planets, from the 1938 radio broadcast of *War of the Worlds* to the 1996 movie *Independence Day*. The themes of those works of art tap deep into our national psyches and memories. In those stories, we are the natives. Unlike *War of the Worlds*, where invisible disease vanquished the invaders, or *Independence Day*, where a small group of unlikely heroes pulled off an unlikely upset, the Tainos (and most natives of the Western Hemisphere) were not so fortunate. Imagine the Martian invasion was successful. Humanity quickly became a dying species as the invaders "cleared" the land for settlement, while importing their people, culture, crops, animals and technology. Maybe humanity was not totally exterminated, but small surviving groups were allowed to exist on land the invaders deemed useless, where they barely eked out an existence. Then imagine the anniversary of the invasion's first day became a great day of celebration for the conquering extra-terrestrials, their invading fleet's captain a hero, with their rhetoric stating they had displaced an inferior species, beings who were not properly taking advantage of what their planet offered. How *advanced* would such a conquering culture be?

Or turn the story of Columbus around a little. Imagine that Native Americans discovered the British Isles in 1492. They were searching for flint, because they used it as currency. Because they had a military prowess that nobody could resist, they quickly enslaved the British Isles' natives, and in a couple of generations had exterminated the Isles' entire population, while the natives were forced to mine flint. It was also a mere prelude to invading Europe and killing off about 95% its inhabitants. The Indians, after they had secured Europe, wrote histories that extolled the virtues of their race and European culture was nearly wiped off the map. The English and Celtic languages became as extinct as their culture and people, and the Indians could not have cared less, and never even mentioned or cared about the people they exterminated. Would the Indians therefore be a "great people"? Or, might some legitimately lament the passing of a people and culture that might have contributed much to humankind? Imagine a world with no Shakespearean writings. Would that be something to celebrate, or something to lament? Some might think it would be have been great, given the course of world history. Not me. *Everybody* can have something worthwhile to offer. Perhaps the gentle Taino could have taught the world profound lessons about loving one's neighbor, which they may have done better than any other culture. We will never know. It is one of history's ironies that Christians completely exterminated them.

Will Americans ever stop celebrating (or overlooking) the murderous acts of our ancestors? That is something only we can answer. Progress has been made. Columbus Day is not the frenzied celebration it was a hundred years ago, or even forty. The day we unmake that national holiday and replace it with one for native remembrance, for instance, (and maybe give some land back) will be an important one for our progress as a people. Maybe then we will be on our way to becoming "great."

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) See Barreiro, "A Note on the Tainos," in *Confronting Columbus*, p. 30. See also Todorov, *The Conquest of America*, pp.

25-27.

[2] Columbus. Log of October 11-12, 1492. Reproduced in Fuson, *The Log of Christopher Columbus*, pp. 73-74.

[3] Columbus. Log of December 26, 1492. Reproduced in Fuson, *The Log of Christopher Columbus*, p. 155.

[4] The side trip the Pinta took was eventually the subject of litigation. The Pinzón family helped finance the voyage and captained the Niña and Pinta. Carl Sauer believed the evidence weighed in favor of a mix-up leading to the separation of the Pinta, and Martín Pinzón was not taking a disloyal side-trip to fill his pockets. See Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, pp. 27-29.

[5] I write, "murdered," because the last the Spaniards saw of them they fled into the jungle with wounds that were probably mortal. The incident was almost certainly one where the Spaniards interpreted harmless native gestures incorrectly and attacked their hosts. The "shoot first and ask questions later" (if ever) mentality would characterize European attitudes toward New World natives for the next few centuries. See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, pp. 120-121. See also Fernando Colón's *The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus*, pp. 88-90. Colón's account is typical in how it projected hostile motivation onto what were likely innocent native activities. It strains credibility to think that Columbus, just as he was heading back to Spain, received his first hostile response, especially if one reads the accounts of it. After buying some bows and arrows from the natives, Columbus' men tried buying more, as Columbus instructed them to. After selling them some bows and arrows, the natives (they were not the Taino, but the nearby Ciguayo) brought forward some rope to trade, which Columbus' men interpreted to mean they were going to try to tie them up. Columbus' men then ferociously attacked the natives, severely wounding two, who likely died. The natives fled at the attack by Columbus' men. The landing boat's pilot helped restrain the attacking Spaniards, and prevented it from becoming the first wholesale slaughter of the Columbian era. Columbus heartily approved of the attack. He thought them Caribs (they were not), and thought that when word got around that a few Spaniards could chase off more than fifty Caribs, they would fear the Spaniards and leave the men left behind at the fort alone. It appeared that Columbus and his men were looking for a reason to make an example out of some natives, and found the opportunity just as they were "leaving town."

[6] Columbus. Log of January 13, 1493. Reproduced in Fuson, *The Log of Christopher Columbus*, p. 173.

[7] Taino is a name given to the Arawakan people of the Greater Antilles, related to their mainland cousins in South America, from where they originally emigrated. "Taino" is the name of convention today, and what they called themselves, so I use it on this site. Columbus called them "Indios," and believed them to be people of Asia.

[8] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*. p. 189. The *Book of Prophecies* was not really a book, but a collection of writings that Columbus planned to present to the Spanish sovereigns. It was largely composed of excerpts from the Bible and other Christian writings. The general theme was Christian evangelism and the "liberation" of Jerusalem. Columbus was trying to draw parallels from scripture to his discoveries across the Atlantic Ocean. To be fair to Columbus, the issue of geography and the Bible was significant then. Bible scholars before Columbus' voyages asserted that there could be no other lands than what were described in the Bible, and the [Isabella-instigated Spanish Inquisition](#), with its flaming stakes and hot tongs, enforced the Bible's certitude. Columbus, in part, was trying to justify his enterprise with the Bible, draw a line through his discoveries, convert the entire world to Christianity, and mount another Crusade to Jerusalem, and prepare for the coming battle with the Antichrist. It partly reflected the times he lived in, as well as his ambition and fanaticism. As Sale wrote, there is little of the Renaissance's influence evident in that work. See the scholarly edition of *The Book of Prophecies* by Roberto Rusconi, translated by Blair Sullivan, University of California Press, Berkeley, 1997.

[9] See Lyle McAlister, *Spain and Portugal in the New World*, 1492-1700. p. 63.

[10] See Columbus' memorial to the sovereigns of April 1493 in Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, pp. 199-202.

[11] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, p. 128.

- [12] See Fernando Colón's *The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus*, Benjamin Keen, translator, Rutgers University Press, New Brunswick, New Jersey, 1959.
- [13] Coma, in Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, pp. 233-234.
- [14] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, pp. 130-131.
- [15] On Guadeloupe, Columbus may have rescued Taino women the Caribs had "bride captured," and returned them home (although Cuneo wrote that they were sent to Spain as a "sample"). It may have been one of Columbus' "noble" acts. Unfortunately, the fate of those women would have been better if he had left them there, and the "rescued" women acted just as the other natives Columbus had captured, jumping overboard to escape when the ship was anchored off Española (see Chanca's letter in *Christopher Columbus, The Four Voyages*, J.M. Cohen, translator, p. 151).
- [16] Cuneo, in Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, p. 212. Kirkpatrick Sale writes of the encounter, "One longs to know the young woman's version [of events – Ed]."
- [17] See Fernando Colón's *The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus*, Benjamin Keen, translator, pp. 117-121. See also Chanca's letter in *Christopher Columbus, The Four Voyages*, J.M. Cohen, translator, pp. 144-152).
- [18] See discussion of the controversy of just what disease it was in Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 68-69. Stannard believes swine flu to be the likeliest candidate, with good reason.
- [19] See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, p. 22. See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, p. 301.
- [20] See Fernando Colón, *The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus*, Benjamin Keen, translator, p. 144.
- [21] See Fernando Colón, *The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus*, Benjamin Keen, translator, pp. 240-241. See also Koning, *Columbus: His Enterprise*, pp. 108-109.
- [22] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, p. 147.
- [23] That speculation is in Sauer's *The Early Spanish Main*, pp. 81-82.
- [24] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*. p. 154.
- [25] Columbus began calling himself the Christ-bearer immediately after the first voyage, but the tally for Columbus' reign was: native deaths = millions; native conversions = zero. See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, p. 127. See Morison's *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, p. 202,
- [26] Written during his fourth and final voyage to the New World, in a letter to the King and Queen. McAlister, Lyle. *Spain and Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p. 81. A different translation is in Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, p. 383, which states, "O, most excellent gold! Who has gold has a treasure with which he gets what he wants, imposes his will on the world, and even helps souls to paradise."
- [27] It was perhaps not so warped. The Tainos regarded hanging as the worst way to die. See Barreiro, "A Note on the Tainos," *Confronting Columbus*, p. 41.
- [28] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 71-72, 83-84. See Las Casas, *The Destruction of the Indies*, pp. 74, 125. See Todorov, *The Conquest of America*, pp. 138-139. One phenomenon deserves mention here. Events on the New World's frontier were sparsely documented. When an atrocity such as feeding a live infant to a dog was witnessed and recorded by

concerned priests, or a historian wrote of seeing Indian parts hanging from a porch, being used for dog food, it is guaranteed those practices happened far more than were documented.

[29] On the Caribbean colonization, the following are some sources I used and liked, where readers can find out more. Fuson, *The Log of Christopher Columbus*; Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*; Benjamin Keen, translator, Fernando Colón, *The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus*; J. M. Cohen, translator, *Christopher Columbus, The Four Voyages*; Koning, *Columbus: His Enterprise*; Todorov, *The Conquest of America*; Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*; Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*; Las Casas, *A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies*; McAlister, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*; Jacobs, *The Tainos, The People who Welcomed Columbus*; Rouse, *The Tainos, Rise and Decline of the People who Greeted Columbus*; Stannard, *American Holocaust*, chapter 3 in particular; Bitterli: *Cultures in Conflict*, chapter 3 in particular; Zinn, *A People's History of the United States*, chapter 1; Loewen, *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, chapter 2; Yewell, Dodge, DeSirey eds., *Confronting Columbus*.

[30] Pedro de Cieza de León, *The Incas*. Translated by Harriet de Onis. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1959. p. lix.

[31] Las Casas remarked on herds of natives being used for dog food, and that the more "compassionate" Spaniards would first kill the natives before feeding them to the dogs. The less genteel ones would just set the dogs on their live food. For a contemporary reproduction of one of those butcher shops, see Varner and Varner, *The Dogs of Conquest*, pp. 30-31, which is from a version of Las Casas' *Destruction of the Indies*.

[32] These "dogging" practices are documented in Varner and Varner, *The Dogs of Conquest*.

[33] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, chapter 4.

[34] This story is recounted in Las Casas, *A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies*, pp. 27-29. See also Barreiro, "A Note on the Tainos," *Confronting Columbus*, p. 42.

[35] A number of modern scholars dismiss virtually all estimates made by the Spanish at that time. The rationale is that soldiers, "adventurers" and priests (virtually the only European visitors to the New World for many years) wildly inflated the numbers to make their conquests or potential conversions seem grander, or Las Casas inflated his numbers to make the horror greater. When Cortés estimated the number of warriors he faced in battle, he was almost undoubtedly engaging in that medieval practice, but the count of natives on Española in 1496 was influenced by neither soldierly nor priestly "heroism." It was a bureaucratic attempt to determine the future flows of gold from the tribute system. To disregard the number of 1,130,000 adult natives apparently counted on the controlled part of the island is questionable scholarship. The count may not have been the most accurate of all time, but it is the only count performed back then, and modern scholarship and scientific investigation has determined that number is by no means unreasonable, and neither is such a large population's collapse. It may be unreasonable to those trying to minimize the devastation the European invasion inflicted on the New World natives, and those who prefer the myth of an untamed wilderness awaiting the conquering heroes from Europe. See discussion by Carl Sauer in *The Early Spanish Main*, pp. 65-67, 200-204. The Spaniards could certainly count. They were great at counting up how many pesos of gold they plundered from the New World. Columbus used a method of navigation on his first voyage known as dead reckoning. Dead reckoning is sailing without any landmarks, and estimating how many miles you traveled by simply watching the water go by. Robert Fuson, one of the sailor-historian types, stated that Columbus might have been the "greatest dead-reckoning sailor who ever lived." (Fuson, *The Log of Christopher Columbus*, page 29, and his sentiment is held by many others.) Only fifteen years after "discovery," the Spanish were taking accurate head counts of the remaining natives. Angel Rosenblat, the leading minimalist scholar on the pre-contact population of the New World, believes the count of one million was more of Columbus' hyperbole. See his argument in Denevan's *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*, pp. 43-66.

[36] Kirkpatrick Sale covers the topic in *The Conquest of Paradise*, with a good literature review. For instance, William Leiss' *The Domination of Nature* and Keith Thomas' *Man and the Natural World* are two excellent reviews of the European attitude toward the natural world and how they developed it.

[37] *Encarta Encyclopedia*, 2001 edition, estimates ninety million. Denevan's *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*,

p xxviii, weighs in at fifty-four million, from its 1992 edition. This site uses an eighty million estimate.

[38] See Thornton, *American Indian Holocaust and Survival*, p. 57.

[39] It is one more area of intense debate. See Adams, *Prehistoric Mesoamerica*, pp. 20-2; Diamond, *Guns, Germs and Steel*, pp. 35-52; Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 261-266; Churchill, *Since Predator Came*, pp. 265-296; Mann, *1491*, pp. 137-173. Charles Ginenthal summarizes the political situation regarding the supposed migration date in his *The Extinction of the Mammoth*, pp. 13-36. For a generation Ales Hrdlicka, who in 1903 became the first curator of the Smithsonian Institution's department of physical anthropology, attacked anybody who questioned his pet theory that mankind did not migrate to the New World earlier than a few thousand years ago. Even Louis Leakey drew Hrdlicka's ire. Scientists' careers were ruined when they proposed that mankind was here before Hrdlicka's magic date. Scientists even suppressed their own data when it suggested an earlier migration date than dogma dictated, in order to preserve their careers. Such inquisitorial behavior set back the science considerably, and such dogmatism persists in the field today. The dark journey of Dr. Virginia Steen-McIntyre will serve as an example of that phenomenon. In the 1960s, a major archeological find was discovered in Hueyatlatco, Mexico, where sophisticated stone tools were unearthed. Three geologists working for the U.S. Geological survey were given the task of dating the finds. Steen-McIntyre was one of them. They used four independent methods of dating the find, including the radioactive decay of uranium. Their results were startling: an age of 250,000 years. If valid, such evidence would jeopardize entire bodies of evolutionary and anthropological theory. The scientific establishment acted predictably: it suppressed the findings' publication. Worse than that, in the words of Steen-McIntyre, the establishment's efforts "killed my career." She lost her university teaching position and was blackballed from the profession. In a letter written in June of 1995, Steen-McIntyre wrote "...the only work I can get now is as a flower gardener in a local nursing home!" See Cremo and Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology* and Cremo, *Forbidden Archeology's Impact* for documentation of Steen-McIntyre's tale. See also Mary Owen Webb and Susan Clark's (from Texas Tech University) "Anatomy of an Anomaly," in *Disputatio* 6, May 1999. Today, it is [on the Internet](#). Unfortunately, hers is far from the [only modern account](#) of that type of treatment of anomalous evidence. Anthropologist Thomas Lee excavated stone implements in glacial till in Canada in the 1950s that were dated to more than 65,000 years old, also challenging the prevailing dogma. The establishment treated Lee similarly, also documented in *Forbidden Archeology*. George Carter, Louis Leakey and others have had their anomalous findings received similarly. Wipe out all the disquieting evidence, and the theories can survive.

[40] See discussion in Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 95, 305-306.

[41] The classic summary of the situation today is found in William Denevan's *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*. Denevan took the average of the scholars in the various New World regions that they studied, and arrived at an estimate of the 1492 population of 54 million people in the 1992 edition of the book, with a likely range from 43 to 65 million. With all the work that has been done, they are no more than sophisticated guesses, as they always will be. In contrast to Hugh Thomas' assertion that the maximalists have clouded the issue and largely prevailed, in the United States the minimalists prevailed for a long time. Denevan admits that 100 million is reasonable. The crux of the matter is how devastating the first instances of European-introduced disease were. The numerous studies favor a particularly high mortality rate, with entire regions being quickly depopulated.

[42] New World natives developed more than half of the world's crops grown today, such as potatoes, sweet potatoes, corn, tomatoes, cassava, many varieties of beans, and peanuts. The introduction of New World crops is largely credited with the [tremendously expanding world population](#) during the past few centuries. See Weatherford, *Indian Givers*, pp. 59-115. See Rouse, *The Tainos*, p. 170.

[43] See Stannard, *Before the Horror*. See also O. A. Bushnell, *The Gifts of Civilization, Germs and Genocide in Hawai'i*.

[44] For instance, Denevan uses the estimate of one million for Española in the 1992 edition of *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*, down from the two million estimated in the 1976 edition. The several million estimated for Española is still respected in many scholarly quarters.

[45] See Stannard, *Before the Horror*, pp.46-47 for a review of twenty examples of comparative depopulations due to Western contact, in Iceland, Australia, Guatemala, etc. See Diamond, *Guns, Germs and Steel*.

[46] See Jackson and Castillo, *Indians, Franciscans, and Spanish Colonization*. pp. 51-53, 85. See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 74. See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, p. 7, 150, 409. See Fogel, *Junípero Serra, the Vatican, and Enslavement Theology*, pp. 114-164. See Hemming, *The Conquest of the Incas*, pp. 350-351. The same phenomenon happened to the Hawaiians after they were "discovered" in 1778. There was one hallucinogenic plant in Hawaii, which only the chiefs enjoyed. Alcohol caught on as the natives underwent the profound psychological dislocations of being introduced to the white man's "civilization," and the natives drank with abandon as they succumbed to the genocide that the white culture and germs inflicted on them. See O. A. Bushnell, *The Gifts of Civilization, Germs and Genocide in Hawai'i*, especially pp. 193-194.

[47] See census results of children in the collapsing population of Española in Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, pp. 200-204. See Hemming, *The Conquest of the Incas*, pp. 350-351. See Todorov, *The Conquest of America*, p. 134.

[48] Sale. *The Conquest of Paradise*. p. 151.

[49] On one Bahaman island, we do not know which. The sailor-historians have been wrestling about which one it was for hundreds of years. I suppose the debate is so they can put the monument to Columbus on the correct island.

[50] See discussion in Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 72-73.

[51] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 317-318, n. 9 for a good discussion, referencing numerous research papers, on the issue of the African slave trade's death toll. Of course, there are lower estimates, such as Basil Davidson's estimate of nine million deaths between 1650-1850 in his *The African Slave Trade*. Stannard's *Before the Horror* was a groundbreaking study of the pre-discovery Hawaiian population. A popular scholar whose estimates of the Caribbean pre-Columbian population are among the lowest existing is Sir Hugh Thomas. Thomas recently wrote *The Slave Trade*. He also wrote a recent popular and critically acclaimed account of those early days of Spanish conquest, *Conquest*, which deals with the Aztec conquest. Although scholarly and mammoth, some of Thomas' biases, as with much of mainstream history writing, were evident. On the subject of Mexico's pre-contact population, Thomas writes at length, devoting an appendix to the issue. He semi-humorously portrayed the debate regarding the pre-contact population levels as a battle between the "maximalists" and the "minimalists." He concluded his survey by stating that nobody really knows what the numbers were, but when he has made an estimate of the pre-Columbian Caribbean population, he is a staunch minimalist. On p. 67 he states that the pre-contact population on "Hispaniola...may have been over 100,000." That is the lowest existing estimate, and such an estimate neglects (among other things) Bartolomé Colón's (Columbus' brother) apparent 1496 estimate of 1.1 million adults on only part of the island, for tribute calculation purposes. What is difficult to reconcile with Thomas' minimalist estimate is the fact that after fifteen years of wanton slaughter, disease, starvation, mass suicide, and being worked to death in the mines and plantations, the Spanish royal treasurer took a careful count in 1508 and counted about 60,000 natives (and perhaps only counted the natives of working age. Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, p. 65-67, 155-156, 200-204). The trajectory after that count was a swift slide to extinction: less than 30,000 by 1514 (after the entire Caribbean had been scoured for natives to work on Española), less than 20,000 by 1518, and virtual extinction by 1535 (200 counted in 1542, Las Casas, in Sale, p.161. See also Las Casas *The Destruction of the Indies*, p. 26 and 27, where he remarked that Puerto Rico, Jamaica and Cuba were similarly depopulated), and total extinction well before the end of the century. Thomas sides with the scholar Angel Rosenblat and his estimates of more than sixty years ago, estimates considered the ultra-conservative extreme by modern scholars. See Denevan *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*, pp. xvii - xxix. Even Columbus remarked that more than 80% of the native population alive in 1500 died by 1504 (see Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, p. 155). Regarding the pre-Columbian population of Cuba, the estimates run from 600,000 to the preposterously low 16,000. A number of 16,000 is less than half a person per square mile. Tibet, with one of the planet's most inhospitable climates, is ten times more densely populated than that. On page 1512 of *Cuba, The Pursuit of Freedom* (New York: Harper and Row, 1971), Thomas states, "The lowest estimate and the one to which I incline is 16,000." Thomas is the minimalist's minimalist. On page 65 of *Conquest* Thomas wrote that Columbus' men "seduced" the native women. [Cuneo's pre](#)y probably would not have called herself "seduced." Thomas seemed to consistently side with the Spanish accounts of events, such as the death of Montezuma and the myth of Aztec cannibalism. All that stated, I read *Conquest*, though warily, and found it a useful source of history on the Aztec conquest. In Thomas' *The Slave Trade* I find no quantification of the African death toll due to the slave trade. He put a number on how many slaves made it to the New World in his appendices, but not how many died in the process. For a scholar who is lauded, even knighted, for his scholarship, and whose work is held up for how balanced it is, it consistently minimized or overlooked native suffering due to Europe's devastation of Africa and the New World.

[52] Several are presented in Morison, *Journals and other Documents in the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*. See also *Christopher Columbus, The Four Voyages*, translated by J.M. Cohen.

[53] See Cuneo's account in Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, especially p. 222.

[54] The [Xaraguá](#) massacre was one of many. On the way to Tenochtitlán, the Spanish mercenaries were constantly looking for plotters against them. Cortés accused the city of Cholula, a religious center, of plotting against him, and virtually destroyed the town while slaughtering several thousand people. The Spaniards never saw any opposition to their approach, were welcomed by Montezuma, who they quickly kidnapped and held for ransom. While Cortés was away defeating the army the [Cuban governor had sent against him](#), his men slaughtered thousands of Aztec citizens at their spring festival, once again invoking the “plot” against them. While the evidence for a Cholula plot was extremely weak, there was absolutely no evidence that the residents of Tenochtitlán were plotting against the Spaniards. After the slaughter, however, the populace laid siege to the imperial palace, and the Spaniards were caught sneaking out of town and the resultant battle during their flight is today called “[The Night of Sorrows](#)” by Spanish chroniclers. Thomas’ *Conquest* ably covers those events.

[55] See Fuson, *The Log of Christopher Columbus*, pp. 201-202 for a listing of several dozen guesses over the past four centuries where Columbus first landed. Fuson himself weighs in with his theory that it was Samana Cay.

[56] See Las Casas' abstract of Columbus' third voyage in Morison, ed., *Journals and Other Documents on the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus*, especially pp. 278-280.

[57] For one example of a summary of the “revisionism” by a mainstream historian, where his opinions are of the establishment variety, see Axtell, James. "Columbian Encounters: 1992-95." *The William and Mary Quarterly*, 3rd Series, Vol. LII, No. 4, October 1995. Ward Churchill takes Axtell’s scholarship to task in his *A Little Matter of Genocide*.

[58] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*. p. 348.

[59] See Zinn, *A People's History of the United States*, pp. 7-9.

[60] See Bigelow, "Reading the Past," in *Confronting Columbus*, p. 72.

The Next Section: [The American Empire](#) (1098K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The American Empire

By Wade Frazier

[Purpose and Disclaimer](#)

[Timeline](#)

[Introduction](#)

[The New World Before “Discovery,” and the First Contacts](#)

[The First Century of the New World’s Invasion](#)

[Imperial Jockeying](#)

[The English and Their Rivals in North America](#)

[Fathers of a Different Kind of Empire](#)

[To Steal a Continent – An Empire Begins](#)

[To Steal a Continent – Finishing the Job](#)

[The Empire Goes Global](#)

[Sitting on Top of the World](#)

[The New Era Looked a Lot Like the Old Era](#)

[Attacking Iraq](#)

[The Continuing War and the Body Count](#)

[Subsequent Events](#)

[Yugoslavia and East Timor](#)

[America’s Humanitarian Record](#)

[The Kurdish Plight](#)

[Helping Kosovo](#)

[Helping East Timor](#)

[Helping Colombia](#)

[A World Trade Center Postscript](#)

[Invading and Occupying Iraq – A Postscript](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Purpose and Disclaimer

Summer 2002

Not many Americans will find this essay an enjoyable read, but that is not its purpose. I am an accountant by profession, not a historian, political scientist, economist or scientist, and this essay should to be read with that in mind.

The [radicalizing experience](#) of pursuing alternative energy woke me up to the extent that I created this website. This essay is not just an exercise in scholarship, but also tells what it has been like to be an American while my nation throws its weight around. Please do not take my word for anything, but find out for yourself what is true for you.

Timeline

This essay contains many names and dates. This timeline is an abbreviated version of this [site's timeline](#), and is intended to make the reading experience easier.

[Timeline from 1492 onward.](#)

	This timeline presents events related to this site, with links to pertinent parts of it.	

Date	Event	Human Population Statistics
c. 30,000 BC	Humans probably first appear in North and South America.	
c. 10,000 BC	The most recent ice age ends.	
c. 9000 BC	Extinction of most large mammals in North America, possibly caused by human over-hunting, probably also influenced by climate changes.	
c. 8500 - 8000 BC	Large mammals become extinct in South America , which was not covered in a continental ice sheet, probably from human over-hunting. Hunter-gatherer lifestyle is increasingly unsustainable. Domestication Revolution begins in Fertile Crescent and the Americas. Wheat, peas and olives domesticated in Fertile Crescent. Squash and pumpkins first domesticated in Mesoamerica. Beginnings of marine-based culture of North America's Pacific Northwest.	4 million
c. 5000 BC	Civilization begins forming in the Fertile Crescent. Early societies are egalitarian. The agricultural societies have goddess-based religions, while the pastoral, herd-tending societies develop male-based religions. The mobile pastoral societies begin invading the sedentary agricultural societies. Metallurgy first practiced near mountains of Eastern Europe. Copper weapons developed by herder societies of steppe regions.	5 million
c. 4500 BC	First large religious facilities built at site of today's Iraq. Stratification of early society begins, with elites - priest class, craftsmen, rulers and probably the first medical doctors. Earliest known bronze implements are made in Thailand.	

c. 4000 BC	Horse domesticated in steppe region north of Black Sea. Llama and Alpaca domesticated in South America. Camel first domesticated near Fertile Crescent. Invasions from steppe regions wash across Europe, Fertile Crescent and Middle East. Warfare practiced on large scale. Iberians migrate to today's Spain, from either northern Africa or central Europe. They also become the British Isles ' first permanent inhabitants during the historical period.	
c. 3500 BC	Migrating farmers from Fertile Crescent settle Indus valley in present day Pakistan. Bronze age begins in Fertile Crescent . The wheel is invented in Mesopotamia. By this time, corn, potatoes, manioc, beans and turkeys are domesticated in the Americas.	
c. 3000 BC	Sumeria becomes the world's first literate society. History begins. State bureaucracy and military establishment are developed. Plow agriculture begins in Fertile Crescent. The Pacific Northwest marine-based culture begins fully developing, from southern Alaska to Northern California.	14 million
c. 2400 BC	Sumerian wheat yields decline by 42% between 2400 and 2100 BC.	
c. 2000 BC	Great migration wave of pastoral societies from steppe regions (generally between the Caspian and Black Seas) into the Fertile Crescent, India and Europe. Intense deforestation of the region from Morocco to Afghanistan commences. Today, only about 10% of that forest remains; much has turned to desert.	
c. 1700 BC	Wheat yields in Sumeria decline by 65% since 2400 BC. Fields turn white from salt. Sumer declines as a power, and the center of Mesopotamian civilization shifts north.	
c. 1500 BC	A four hundred year period of chaos and warfare begins to sweep Europe, the Fertile Crescent and Mediterranean region. The violent, male sky-gods come to dominate religion, including one named Jehovah. The Aryan (pastoral tribes of the steppe regions) invasion of India leads to their caste system; the invaders are the favored class.	38 million

c. 1400 BC	Iron first smelted by Hittite civilization in present-day Turkey . Agriculture begins in Japan.	
c. 1200 BC	Iron made into weaponry. Iron weapons rapidly replace bronze and become common throughout Europe, the Fertile Crescent, Egypt and elsewhere. The feminine-friendly Minoan civilization on Crete collapses, as does Mycenaean civilization. Joshua's Israelites lay siege to Jericho . Celts invade from region of today's Austria into France and Germany. The Polynesian expansion, from the region near New Guinea to the South Pacific's islands, begins.	
c. 1000 BC	Agriculture collapses in central Mesopotamia due to soil salination. In 1990, Iraq imported 70% of its food. The anti-feminine culture of ancient Greece develops, known as Greece's "dark age." Women are gradually excluded from public life. Although male gods dominated Greek mythology, women were also present, if subservient. The Picts migrate to Scotland from Europe. The Greeks make the first heat-treated iron weapons .	50 million
c. 700 BC	A village that began with shepherds' huts, eventually known as Rome, is growing.	
509 BC	Republic of Rome begins, which takes power away from local kings. The Roman republic tries balancing the needs of peasants and aristocrats.	
c. 500 BC	Celts begin invading the British Isles, absorbing the Iberians. Etruscan civilization is at its peak influence, to eventually fall to neighboring states.	
480 BC	Persians sack and nearly destroy Athens. Themistocles, and later Pericles, rebuilds Athens into a great city. At its height, of its 200,000 inhabitants, only 50,000 were citizens (men). The rest were women, slaves and foreigners.	

c. 450 BC	Roman law codified on twelve wooden tablets. The laws make men the absolute rulers of family households, giving them the authority to sell their children into slavery, among other rights.	
432 BC	Peak of the Greek classic period. Hippocrates , Socrates, Thucydides and Aristophanes are alive.	
c. 400 BC	Rome begins rising as a power, eventually defeating the Etruscans of today's northern Italy, and incorporate Etruria's cultural and technical achievements. By the time of Jesus, Etruscan culture was almost completely absorbed into Roman culture.	
334 BC	Alexander the Great of Macedonia conquers Persia and tries uniting East and West. The short-lived Macedonian Empire helps pave the way for the Roman Empire.	
264 BC	After subduing Italy, Rome engages in its first war against Carthage. Italy and Sicily are rapidly deforested to meet Rome's needs.	
202 BC	Rome defeats the forces of Carthaginian general Hannibal, ending the second Punic War.	
c. 200 BC	Picts migrate to Ireland from Scotland. Lion and leopard are extinct in Greece and coastal regions of Asia Minor. Beaver is extinct in northern Greece due to trapping.	
197 BC	Rome invades Greece and conquers them. Rome would incorporate much of Greek culture into its own, borrowing its gods and technology.	
146 BC	Greek resistance to Roman rule leads to the complete destruction of Corinth and the sale of its inhabitants into slavery. That same year, Rome does the same to Carthage . The Roman Republic begins expanding across Europe, northern Africa and the Middle East.	

58 BC	Rome begins handing out free food. Eventually, hundred of thousands of Rome's citizens received free food for political reasons. Intensive agricultural exploitation of imperial lands are undertaken to feed the empire. Places such as today's Libya are forced to become farms for Rome, with the agricultural practices eventually turning Libya into the desert nation it is today.	
54 BC	Julius Caesar's armies defeat the inhabitants of southern Britain.	
31 BC	Cleopatra and Anthony's forces defeated by Rome, and Egypt comes under Roman rule the next year.	
27 BC	After a century of bitter civil war, the Roman Republic ends with the naming of Augustus Caesar as the first Roman Emperor. Rome's citizens cease having representation in government.	
1 AD	Jesus is alive. Much of Palestine, Syria, Lebanon and surrounding regions are deforested by Rome, eventually turning it into desert. In the Caribbean, agricultural Arawakan peoples begin migrating along the archipelago from South America, eventually displacing/absorbing the hunter-gatherer peoples there. They populate the Greater Antilles in the millions by 1492 , and are loosely known as the Taino. At this time, and perhaps a few centuries earlier, Polynesians begin colonizing the Hawaiian Islands.	World population: 170 million.
251 AD	An epidemic sweeps through the Roman Empire until 270, killing 5000 of Rome's citizens each day during the epidemic's peak, including the Emperor Claudius in 270. Rome was forced by the population loss to recruit barbarian troops. The first mass conversions to Christianity were apparently a consequence of the epidemic.	
324 AD	Roman Emperor Constantine convenes the Council of Nicea, his gambit to hold the fragmenting empire together through a state religion	

410 AD	Visigoths invade Rome, for the first invasion of the city in eight centuries.	
451 AD	Hun invasion of Roman Empire stopped by a great battle in France. Hundreds of thousands die in battle.	
476 AD	Western Roman Empire falls. Germanic peoples invade the Roman Empire's lands in Europe during the late 400s, including the Anglo-Saxon invasion of Britain. The Eastern Roman Empire lasts nearly continually for the next 1000 years, with Constantinople (earlier named Byzantium and later Istanbul) as its capital city. Europe, however, fell into its Dark Ages.	
562	32-year drought begins to afflict the Moche culture in South America. El Niño cycles regularly affect South American civilization , and elaborate food production and storage systems are designed to cope with them, as well as other environmental challenges. That region's people become the world's greatest agricultural experimenters.	250 million
c. 570	Muhammad born, founder of Islam.	
632	Muhammad dies, after an amazing life that founds one of the world's great religions. Islam sweeps throughout the Arab world, spreading widely.	
c. 650	Mesoamerican empire centered in city of Teotihuacan begins its collapse, to be replaced in power by the militaristic Toltecs, similar to the way empires rose and fell in the Fertile Crescent.	
711	Islamic armies invade the Iberian Peninsula. Jews live under Moorish rule in Iberia , and it is their golden age in Europe, lasting for 300 years.	

C. 800	Mayan civilization begins its collapse. It attained a peak population of several million, before its overtaxed environment failed to support the population. Famine, war and disease accompanied the collapse of the Mayan population to perhaps a million before 1000 AD, similar to Fertile Crescent dynamics. The forest recovers and covers the Mayan ruins. Charlemagne tries to create a new Western Roman Empire, with a unity of church and state. The Holy Roman Empire lasted until Napoleon. Vikings begin raiding the British Isles, and some settle in France and become the Normans. Others go inland and become the Russians.	
c. 1000	Leif Ericson extends Viking colonization past Greenland settlements to North America, probably in today's Newfoundland. They may have driven Irish monks from Iceland before them to North America. The Vikings' violent ways quickly create resistance from the local Algonquin people, and their colonization is not permanent. In Iceland, the Vikings are unable to easily plunder neighboring lands and quickly become a peaceful people, engaging in trade.	
1036	Umayyad dynasty ends in Moorish Iberia, and fractures into mutually hostile, petty kingdoms.	
c. 1050	Northern and central Europe, especially the Germanic lands, engage in great age of deforestation , making way for civilization, clearing about a third of the forest in a couple of centuries, and up to 75% deforestation by the end of the medieval era. This is the beginning of the High Middle Ages. In 1900, about 25% of the forest remains.	
1056	Ferdinand I, who proclaimed himself the Emperor of Spain, undertakes "Reconquest" of the Iberian peninsula.	
1066	William the Conqueror leads the Norman invasion of Britain. Islamic preachers incite anti-Jew riot in Granada , which kills about 5000 Jews.	

1085	Christian conquest of Toledo , which introduces European scholars to the ancient Greek writings via Islam. The introduction of the Greek writings leads to humanism, the Renaissance and Protestant Revolution.	
1096	Christian Europe makes its first united act: the first Crusade to Palestine . The first wide-scaled Jew slaughters in Europe take place as a warm-up for the first Crusade, in France and Germany. Jews would no longer be safe in Europe, and warfare would be the European way of life until World War II ended.	
c. 1170	Mesoamerican Toltec city of Tula is destroyed, probably due to major drought and population migrations that led to war.	
c. 1200	Polynesian people begin colonizing New Zealand. The Islamic culture attains the world's highest standard of living. Incan people conquer the land around Lake Titicaca, the first step in their empire building. Human hunters render large mammals on Madagascar extinct.	
1204	Fourth Crusade ends up sacking its "ally" Constantinople.	
1212	In a great battle near Toledo, Christian armies defeat the Islamic forces in the decisive conflict of the "Reconquest" of the Iberian Peninsula.	
1215	Magna Carta sealed by England's King John I. Pope Innocent III convenes the Fourth Lateran Council .	
1221	Genghis Khan's Mongol armies conquer Islamic armies in Indus valley. Islamic peoples are devastated by the Mongol invasion, and Islam begins its decline as a social force.	
1244	Massacre at Montségur, the last stronghold of the Cathars . The Catholic Church eliminates the greatest threat to its religious monopoly, until Martin Luther posts his Ninety-Five Theses in 1517.	360 million

1295	Marco Polo returns to Venice from many years in the court of Kublai Khan in China. His account deeply influences European merchants.	
1314	Europe is gripped by major famine that lasts until 1317.	
c. 1325	Immigrants to Valley of Mexico settle in marsh in the valley's lake, the only land available to them. They are known as the Mexica, and eventually form the Aztec Empire.	
1326	Ottoman Empire is born, as the Turks attack the Eastern Roman Empire.	
1337	England and France begin the 100 Years War. Originally invented in China several centuries earlier, but used for fireworks, gunpowder for weaponry begins to be manufactured in England and Germany at about this time.	
1344	The Pope "awards" the Canary Islands to Castile.	
1346	The Black Death probably originated in China. In 1347 it swept across Asia to Europe. The death toll for Europe and Asia was about 50 million people by 1351, wiping out one quarter to one-third of Europe's population, and periodically recurring for the next three centuries. War and death imagery would become prevalent in European art.	Europe's population declines from about 75 million to 50 million. It would not regain 1345 levels until the 16 th century.
Late 1300s	Beginning in northern Italy's city-states, a multifaceted phenomenon begins which is now called the Renaissance. Humanism takes root, which eventually undermines the Catholic Church's influence.	
1400	After a century of unrelenting epidemics, warfare and calamity, Europe's population is two-thirds-to-half of what it had been in 1300.	400 million.

1405	Ming Dynasty begins mounting great naval expeditions along southern Asia, which reach Africa. They <i>do not</i> plunder the people or lands they sail to. The last expedition is in 1433.	
1410	Christian Reconquest of the Iberian Peninsula reenergized with attack on Granada.	
1415	Portuguese defeat Moors at Ceuta in North Africa . Prince Henry subsequently encourages and helps fund the study of maritime science. Henry's motivation is outflanking Islamic rivals in the gold trade.	
1418	Portugal begins colonizing the Madeira Islands , the Azores in 1427 and the Cape Verde Islands in 1450.	
1428	Itzcoatl leads Mexica to military victory and Aztec Empire begins.	
c. 1430	"Little Ice Age" begins, and runs for four centuries, until about 1850.	
1444	Portugal enters the African slave trade.	
c. 1450	Gutenberg invents printing press in the German city of Mainz.	
1453	Ottoman armies capture Constantinople, which terminates the Eastern Roman Empire, controls Europe's trade route to the Orient, and inspires effort to find another European route.	
1455	The Wars of the Roses, which are several dynastic civil wars that last until 1485, begin in England.	
1469	Isabella I of Castile marries Ferdinand V of Aragon.	
c. 1470	Incas conquer the imperial city of Chan Chan and the Chimoran people, completing their imperial consolidation.	

1474	Paolo Toscanelli of Florence suggests to Prince Alfonso V of Portugal that the quickest way to the Indies (spice trade) is sailing across the Atlantic. Toscanelli was wrong. Christopher Columbus eventually obtains the letter from Toscanelli that makes the suggestion. Castile and Aragon formerly united under Isabella and Ferdinand.	
1479	Portugal cedes Canary Islands to Castile, and Queen Isabella I mounts their invasion. The conquest of the Guanches was complete in 1496 , and the Guanches became an extinct culture by 1600.	
1480	Isabella I initiates the Spanish Inquisition , which is largely concerned with hunting down Moors and Jews who were forced to convert to Christianity, but may still practice their erstwhile faith in secret.	
1488	Portuguese explorer Bartolomeu Dias rounds the southern tip of Africa, and Portugal abandons the idea of reaching Asia by crossing the Atlantic Ocean. Columbus, who made a living in the Portuguese slave trade, takes his plan to sail across the Atlantic Ocean to Castile, which the experts thought was an impossible plan because the distance to Asia would be too great. Columbus had badly miscalculated the earth's circumference. His early attempts to convince the Castilian court fail.	

**Timeline
from
1492
Onward**

1492	The Spanish “Reconquest” of the Iberian peninsula ends in January with the conquest of Granada, the last city held by the Moors. Jews are given the options of conversion, expulsion or death. In April, Columbus finally gets authorization for his doomed plan to reach Asia via the Atlantic Ocean. He stumbles into the New World in October, enslaving the first humans he meets. He builds a fort on Española from the wreckage of his flagship.	World population: 470 million, at least half in East Asia and India. Population in the Americas: 50 to 100 million (this site uses 80). Europe’s population: 70 to 80 million. Taino population: 2 to 10 million. At least one million on Española (this site uses 2)
1493	Columbus is named Admiral of the Ocean Sea and returns to Española to mount a large-scale invasion . The Incan Empire is at its peak in South America.	
1494	Treaty of Tordesillas delineates the eventual New World domains of Portugal and Spain.	
1496	The genocide of the Taino is well underway on Española. Selling the Taino in the European slave markets does not work, because they quickly die upon being shipped to Europe, and the Spanish sovereigns officially frown upon the idea when it proves unprofitable. Columbus devises a tribute system to force the Taino into mining gold.	
1497	Vasco da Gama sails from Portugal to India around Africa; Arab traders cure his crew of scurvy in 1498 , and he returns in 1499 with trade specimens, including valuable spices.	
1499	First major gold strike on Española.	
1502	Montezuma II crowned, the last pre-invasion Aztec emperor.	
1509	Henry VIII ascends throne of England.	

1510	Portuguese ships conquer the Muslim port of Goa in India, beginning the era of Portuguese dominance along southern Asia. Portugal makes its first official sale of African slaves in the New World .	
1511	Portuguese traders capture Malacca, in today's Malaysia, establishing themselves in the spice trade .	
1513	Vasco Núñez de Balboa "discovers" the Pacific Ocean in present-day Panama, and claims it in the name of the Spanish crown. Juan Ponce de León hunts for slaves for Caribbean gold mines and "discovers" Florida. Niccolò Machiavelli writes <i>The Prince</i> , which foreshadows future European political practice.	
1517	Martin Luther publishes his Ninety-Five Theses, which begins the Protestant Reformation.	
1518	First New World smallpox epidemic begins, wiping out most of the surviving Taino on Española, who were already only about 1% of their 1492 population.	
1519	Hernan Cortés and his men kidnap Aztec Emperor Montezuma and loot all the gold they can get . As Columbus did, Ferdinand Magellan seeks route across Atlantic to the Asian spice trade. He dies in 1521, battling the natives in the Philippines, but his mission circumnavigates the planet in 1522. Charles of Spain bribes his way into becoming the Holy Roman Emperor.	
1520	Smallpox epidemic that began on Española in 1518 comes across with the Cuban governor's army, probably killing several million people in Mesoamerica.	
1521	The Cortés-led siege of Tenochtitlán completely destroys what is probably the world's most spectacular city. Ponce de León invades Florida again, and dies from battle wounds.	

1524	Giovanni Verrazano , an Italian explorer in the employ of France, sails along the coast of North America.	
1525	European epidemic sweeps through Incan Empire, kills emperor and ignites civil war.	
1528	Pánfilo de Narváez ' <i>entrada</i> into Florida ends in disaster.	
1529	Ottoman armies lay siege to Vienna , but fail, in the greatest advance into Europe it would make.	
1530	The Portuguese begin their colonization of Brazil .	
1532	Francisco Pizarro invades Incan Empire , kidnaps Incan emperor and sacks empire. Anne Boleyn, Henry VIII's second wife, gives birth to Elizabeth.	
1535	Native American medicine man cures Jacques Cartier's crew of scurvy on Saint Lawrence River with evergreen foliage and tree bark tea, which was high in vitamin C. Henry VIII's England begins confiscating Roman Catholic properties.	
1539	Hernando de Soto invades southeastern North America, seeking gold.	
1540	Francisco Vázquez de Coronado invades southwestern North America, seeking gold.	
1542	Juan Rodríguez Cabrillo "discovers" the Californian coast. Hernando de Soto dies on banks of Mississippi River after his fruitless gold quest devastates southeastern North America . Spanish expedition asserts Spain's claims to the Philippines . Efforts of Bartolomé de Las Casas persuade emperor Charles V to sign laws repealing native slavery .	
1543	Portugal begins trading with Japan .	Taino population on Española: 200

1545	The great silver mine at Potosí (in modern-day Bolivia) is established.	
1549	A Portuguese expedition establishes a large colonial presence in Brazil.	
c. 1550	The English deforestation of Ireland is underway.	
1552	Las Casas publishes his A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies , which quickly becomes a bestseller, especially in Protestant Europe, and the “Black Legend” begins.	
1556	Portuguese establish port of Macau on Chinese coast.	
1557	Spanish crown goes bankrupt , the first of several bankruptcies that would chart Spain’s decline as an imperial power.	
1558	Elizabeth I becomes England’s first ruling queen.	
1559	Catholic Church publishes its index of banned books. Index survives until the 1960s. Tristán de Luna expedition goes where de Soto’s went, hoping to find rich lands to plunder as de Soto did, and finds the region depopulated from aftermath of de Soto expedition. Portuguese Crown gives official approval to begin shipping African slaves to Brazil .	
1562	Wars of Religion begin in France, a series of nine conflicts that last until 1598.	
1564	Spain begins conquest of the Philippines , and establishes Manila in 1572.	
1565	Saint Augustine , in today’s Florida, is established, originally a fort to protect Spain’s plunder route from pirates. It is the first permanent European settlement in North America.	

1566	Ottoman sultan Suleiman dies, and the Ottoman Empire begins its long decline.	
1568	Oppressive Spanish rule leads to Dutch revolt, which lasts until 1648. Spanish “discovery” of the Solomon Islands .	
c. 1570	Hiawatha and Deganawidah form the Great Law of Peace and the Iroquois Confederation, which influences the creation of the U.S. Constitution . It might have been formed as early as 1200 AD, however.	
1576	Martin Frobisher seeks gold near Baffin Island. He ravages natives and hauls back hundreds of tons of fool’s gold to England on the next voyage. .	
1577	Francis Drake mounts pirate expedition to plunder the Pacific ports of Spain’s empire. His successful voyage circumnavigates the world, returning home in 1580, and got him knighted as well as made him England’s richest private citizen.	
1580	Spain annexes Portugal , and remains in control of it for sixty years. Castile is no longer able to produce enough food to feed its population.	
1582	Russia invades Siberia in pursuit of fur trade.	
1585	Walter Raleigh establishes the ill-fated Roanoke colony.	
1586	Spain goes to war with England, to try ending the Dutch revolt.	
1588	Spanish Armada is destroyed in battle with English navy. The defeat marks the end of Spain’s imperial dominance.	
1595	Walter Raleigh seeks golden city of El Dorado in South America.	

1598	The year its Wars of Religion finally conclude, the French try to establish a colony on uninhabited Sable Island off of Nova Scotia, in a rich fishing area, and with no interference from natives or European rivals, the colony completely fails.	
1599	Spanish forces slaughter hundreds of Pueblo Indians at Acoma, in present day New Mexico, in revenge for the killing of eleven Spanish soldiers who had been plundering and raping the natives at will. Spain ends the 16th century probably worse off than it began it.	Native population of the Americas: 8 million
1600	The English East India Company is incorporated. The Dutch begin sailing to Asia for spices, and establish their own East India company in 1602.	
1603	Elizabethan Era ends with the death of Elizabeth I of England. England completes its conquest and subjugation of Ireland.	
1604	English war with Spain ends, and Spain never again rises to its former imperial dominance.	
1605	Squanto , of Puritan fame, first kidnapped by the English.	
1607	Jamestown established . The first task is finding gold.	
1609	With their French allies using guns, Huron warriors surprise a war party of their Mohawk rivals, with deadly effectiveness. On behalf of the Dutch, Henry Hudson, while searching for the Northwest Passage, explores the river that is named for him, in present-day New York.	
1614	Squanto is captured by John Smith's men.	
1618	The Thirty Years' War , Europe's last great religious war, begins. About 4 million people die in the conflict.	

1619	Squanto returns as interpreter with English, and discovers that his entire tribe had been wiped out by European disease. The Puritans would settle on that tribe's land. The Dutch establish Jakarta , which becomes the center of the Asian spice trade.	
1620	The Pilgrims land at Plymouth , and Squanto teaches them how to survive in the New World. Squanto dies in 1622 of disease.	
1626	The Dutch "buy" Manhattan Island from the natives.	
1628	Dutch ships seize entire Spanish silver fleet off of Cuba.	
1637	The English surround Pequot village of several hundred people on the Mystic River at night, then burn it to the ground while killing nearly every inhabitant, selling the few survivors into slavery.	
1638	Three million pounds of tobacco per year are exported from present-day Virginia, reaching 17 million in 1672. Caribbean sugar growing becomes a business on Barbados, and the great period of New World sugar growing begins. New Sweden established in present-day Delaware.	
1639	Japan kicks out Portuguese traders , and thereafter trades exclusively with the Dutch. Dutch fleet defeats Spanish fleet in the English Channel.	
1640	Fur trade renders the beaver extinct in the Hudson River Valley. English Civil War, also called the Puritan Revolution, begins. It is the last significant religious conflict in Europe.	
1641	The Dutch governor of Manhattan offers the first scalp bounty.	
1643	Spanish army destroyed by French army at Rocroi.	

1644	John Underhill successfully reproduces his strategy of strategy of surrounding Native American villages at night and annihilating all of its inhabitants. That time, he did it under hire to the Dutch, and the Manhattan church fathers declared the second Thanksgiving to celebrate the feat.	
1646	Pamunkey tribe (natives who initially fed the Jamestown invaders) is completely destroyed, and survivors sold into Caribbean slavery.	
1649	Only forty years after receiving military assistance from the French, the Huron tribe becomes extinct . King Charles I of England is publicly tried and beheaded.	
1652	English and Dutch navies begin a series of wars that last until 1684.	
1664	The Dutch lose their North American possessions to the English.	
1670	Charleston founded , which becomes the center of the early English-American slave trade.	
1675	The French East India Company establishes its first outpost in Bombay .	
1676	King Phillip's War results in the extinction of the tribe that welcomed the Puritans.	
1680	The Pueblo Indians revolt against brutal Spanish rule, and kick them out of today's New Mexico. The Spaniards begin their reconquest of them two years later. The revolt leads to horses becoming part of Native American life, especially benefiting the Plains Indians.	

1682	Frenchman La Salle explores Mississippi river , finds it deserted, depopulated by disease left by de Soto's expedition and other European-introduced epidemics.	
1688	England has its Glorious Revolution, which limits the power of English sovereigns and empowers its Parliament.	
1689	King William's War begins, between France and England, largely over dominance in North America, and it involves the native tribes. The English Bill of Rights is passed by Parliament, and the Toleration Act, which promotes religious toleration. Those laws become the model for the U.S. Bill of Rights.	
1692	Twenty people executed in Salem , Massachusetts, for practicing witchcraft.	
1700		600 million
1702	Queen Anne's War begins between the French and English in North America. It was known in Europe as the War of Spanish Succession.	
1707	England unites with Scotland, becoming Great Britain.	
1717	Voltaire spends his first stint in the Bastille, for his satirical writings. His work would come to embody the ideals of the Enlightenment.	
1739	Spain tries halting trade between England and its American colonies, and the conflict is called the War of Jenkins's Ear, and becomes part of the War of the Austrian Succession, which begins in 1740.	
1744	King George's War begins, which is waged in North America, but is also part of a larger war, the War of the Austrian Succession.	

1750	The Enlightenment becomes prominent in France at about this time. China and India comprise 57% of world industrial output.	
1754	French and Indian War begins in North America, which was the last war of dominance between England and France in North America. Benjamin Franklin, influenced by the Iroquoian model of government, introduces his Albany Plan of Union , which sought to unite the colonies. The plan becomes the first step toward creating the U.S. Constitution.	
1756	The Seven Years' War breaks out in Europe between the imperial powers, England and France most notably. The Third Carnatic War in India between France and England breaks out at this time.	
1763	Lord Jeffrey Amherst suggests deliberately introducing smallpox amongst the Native Americans who resisted the English invasion. The subsequent epidemic kills more than 100,000 natives. The French and Indian War ends in North America, with the English prevailing. The Third Carnatic War in India ends, with the English victorious over the French. The English announce the Royal Proclamation of 1763 , which forbids the American colonists to settle west of the Appalachians.	
1764	Battle of Buxar establishes British rule over Bengal. The British rape of India begins.	
1768	James Cook visits Australia, names it New South Wales, and targets it for British colonization.	

1769	James Cook visits New Zealand and claims it in the name of Great Britain. The Maoris had eliminated about a third of New Zealand's forests by that time, and large animals, such as the Moa, were about extinct. In the first century of the European invasion, more than 75% of the Maori population dies off. Similar population collapse accompanies the Europeans wherever they appear in the South Pacific. Junípero Serra establishes first mission at San Diego. James Watt patents the modern steam engine, and the Industrial Revolution begins. Daniel Boone begins the illegal invasion of Kentucky.	800 million worldwide
1770	British exploitation of Bengal leads to a great famine that killed one-third of Bengal's peasantry. Famines always greatly increased wherever Europe had colonial dominance.	
1773	James Cook makes the first visit to Antarctic icepack and surmises that it had to be formed in connection with a landmass. Boston Tea Party helps lead to the American Revolution.	
1776	The American Revolution begins. Adam Smith publishes his <i>Wealth of Nations</i> .	
1778	James Cook "discovers" the Hawaiian Islands, with the world's human-friendliest climate. His crew's venereal disease rapidly spreads through the islands, quickly depopulating Hawaii. The Hawaiian Islands' population possibly approaches one million inhabitants. Within 100 years, fewer than 50,000 Hawaiians were alive.	
1782	Kamehameha begins conquering the Hawaiian islands, using Western arms and waging bloody battles. It takes 13 years to complete his empire building. George Washington proposes a plan to the Continental Congress to swindle the Native Americans out of their land. His plan becomes national policy for the next century.	

1786	Because of the American Revolution, England can no longer ship its criminals to North American penal colonies. Australia is picked as the next English penal colony. The population of the aborigines in southeastern region of Australia (site of the penal colony) declines by about 95% in 60 years. Shays' Rebellion begins in the United States.	
1788	Britain claims Tasmania , and within 50 years, none of the 5000 aboriginal inhabitants remain on the island. Only 43 survived in 1843, and the last Tasmanian aborigine died in 1876.	
1789	French Revolution begins. George Washington becomes the first U.S. president. The U.S. Bill of Rights is passed, 100 years after the English Bill of Rights.	
1791	Inspired by the American and French revolutions, Haitian slaves lead a successful revolution against the French colonial masters. The U.S., with its millions of slaves, would not officially recognize Haiti until the American Civil War. The U.S. Army suffers its greatest proportional defeat ever, at the hands of Native Americans, as it invades the Ohio River Valley .	
1794	Whiskey Rebellion over American taxation begins. The Battle of Fallen Timbers completes the U.S. theft of the upper Ohio River Valley.	
1798	U.S. Congress passes the Alien Act and the Sedition Act . The Sedition Act makes it a crime to criticize American government officials. The Alien Act authorizes summary deportations of "aliens." It is specifically intended to rid the nation of people with revolutionary ideas, such as French and Irish immigrants.	
1799	Napoleon leads overthrow of French government. He begins war with neighbors in 1803 and crowns himself Emperor in 1804	

1802	French invasion to try reconquering Haiti fails.	
1803	The United States consummates Louisiana Purchase from France. Lewis and Clark expedition sets out to reconnoiter the new territory. The expedition initiates the short-lived exploitation of the fur trade 's last frontier.	
1804	Haiti declares itself independent, for the world's only successful slave rebellion.	
1807	Spain supports Napoleon in war against Portugal, which ignites the Peninsular War, which lasts until 1814.	
1808	In reaction to Napoleon crowning his brother as the King of Spain, Venezuelan colonists form self-government, and send Simón Bolívar to England as its emissary, to try gaining recognition.	
1811	Venezuela is first Spanish colony to declare its independence , a revolution that fails the next year.	
1812	Napoleon begins his disastrous invasion of Russia. War of 1812 begins.	
1814	British troops burn Washington DC. First self-contained cotton mill is built, in Waltham, Massachusetts. Napoleon's reign ends, as all of Europe unites against France.	
1815	Battle of Waterloo ends Napoleon's bid for a comeback to power, a year after he was finally defeated. The Congress of Vienna is convened by the European powers, to reestablish lines of political demarcation.	

1819	After years of battles and exile, Simón Bolívar and his troops overthrow the Spanish Crown in 1819 in New Granada, now called Colombia. It is the first successful Latin American revolution, with Bolívar becoming Colombia's first president. Bolívar seeks to unite South America on the model of North America's United States, a plan that fails.	
1822	Americans establish colony to ship slaves back to Africa . In 1847 the colony became Liberia. Brazil achieves its independence peacefully .	
1823	The Monroe Doctrine is formulated.	
1835	By this time, the beaver pelt trade has collapsed in western North America, after only 30 years of exploitation.	
1836	American settlers complete theft of Texas from Mexico .	
1838	Cherokee and other "civilized" tribes are forced into migrating to Oklahoma, even after the Cherokee prevailed in the U.S. Supreme Court. The genocidal relocation becomes known as the Trail of Tears .	
1839	Britain begins exploitation of China with first Opium War, and forces opium addiction on China by also forcing the Bengal region into opium production.	
1841	Britain captures Hong Kong.	
1843	Charles Dickens publishes <i>A Christmas Carol</i> .	
1845	Irish potato famine begins.	
1846	America wages war on Mexico to steal what becomes the Southwestern United States.	

1848	U.S. finishes stealing most of southwestern United States from Mexico. Gold discovered at Sutter's Mill in California . Revolution sweeps Europe. Karl Marx presents his <i>Communist Manifesto</i> .	
1850	California admitted to the union, and its first governor declares open season on the natives .	
1853	Diplomatic invasion of Japan by the American Commodore Perry forces Japan into the world economy. Expanding rail system allows mass "hunting" and shipping of passenger pigeons from American Midwest to markets in east. Passenger pigeon population begins collapsing. Seal fur trade collapses in North Atlantic. Crimean War begins, in the first great struggle of the great European powers, a conflict that would eventually lead to the World Wars of the 20 th century.	
1859	First American oil well drilled.	
1861	American Civil War begins.	
1862	The United States recognizes Haitian independence .	
1863	John Rockefeller enters the oil industry and concentrates on taking over oil refining.	
1864	Sand Creek massacre of Black Kettle's Cheyenne tribe in dawn attack.	
1865	American Civil War ends.	
1868	George Custer 's troops slaughter Black Kettle's Cheyenne tribe in dawn attack. Revolution in Japan leads to a unified nation, and Japan begins playing catch-up with the West.	
1870	Franco-Prussian War begins. It is the last major conflict on European soil until World War I.	

1876	“Custer’s luck” runs out at the Little Big Horn. El Niño-caused drought that lasts three years, combined with European export crop imperialism, devastates India, China and Brazil, causing as many as 30 million deaths from starvation and disease. Japan forces trade agreement on Korea; similar to what Perry did to Japan in 1853.	
1880	John Rockefeller’s empire controls 95% of U.S. oil refining. Pacific whaling industry has largely collapsed, in less than 80 years of Pacific whaling.	
1882	Jews expelled from Moscow, and Jewish pogroms spread in the Russian Empire.	
1885	Belgium begins plundering the Congo.	
1887	John Rockefeller begins rebuilding a Baptist seminary into the University of Chicago.	
1890	Massacre at Wounded Knee, ending Native American resistance to U.S. land theft. Extermination of Plains Indian sustenance, the bison, is also complete, as only 23 animals survive in the wild, compared to 40 to 60 million before the white man’s invasion.	
1893	Columbian Exhibition in Chicago, celebrating 400 years of European presence in the New World. Largest event attendance in world history to that time.	
1894	Japan wages a war and easily defeats China, supplanting China as the dominator of Korea.	
1896	Another El Niño-caused drought, combined with European exploitation, ravages India and China, causing perhaps another 30 million deaths over several years, similar to 1876 event.	

1899	Chinese uprising against foreign occupation becomes the Boxer “Rebellion.” It is put down by foreign troops, including American, British, French, Russian, Japanese and German troops.	
1900	After 150 years of European exploitation, beginning in Bengal , China and India produce 8% of world industrial output, versus 57% in 1750. The gray whale is thought to be extinct at this time.	
1903	U.S. steals Panama from Colombia , creating the divided nation of Panama so it can own the route for its proposed canal.	1.6 billion
1905	Japan beats Russia in war.	
1906	Mark Twain writes <i>King Leopold's Soliloquy</i> regarding the Belgian rape of the Congo , and the American publishing establishment completely suppresses its publication in the United States.	
1913	Federal Reserve Act sneaks through U.S. legislature.	
1914	World War I begins. The last passenger pigeon dies in captivity in Cincinnati.	
1915	The United States invades Haiti , overthrowing its government.	
1918	World War I ends. Prescott Bush , father of George Bush the First, allegedly robs the grave of Geronimo , and the remains were put on display at the Skull and Bones Society, an oligarchical secret society at Yale. George the First and Second also belong to the club . The Great Powers of Europe begin carving up the Ottoman Empire into controllable nation-states. Oil politics dominates the affair.	
1924	Hitler writes <i>Mein Kampf</i> .	

1926	Pancho Villa's tomb raided, and his skull allegedly acquired by the Skull and Bones Society at Yale .	
1927	Rockefeller's Empire enters into its first cartel agreement with I.G. Farben .	
1929	Wall Street collapses.	
1930		2.0 billion
1933	Hitler comes to power. Franklin Roosevelt takes office as president. American industrialists try to mount a Fascist coup of the White House .	
1935	Smedley Butler writes War is a Racket .	
1937	Japan invades China, and the Rape of Nanking is the first major atrocity of what became World War II.	
1939	World War II begins.	
1941	Japan attacks Pearl Harbor , and U.S. enters World War II. Hitler's Final Solution is underway.	
1942	Nazi disaster at Stalingrad late in the year. Father of George Bush the First is director and shareholder of company that U.S. government seizes because it helped arm and finance Nazi Germany. The Rockefeller Empire, which also helped Nazi Germany , escapes that fate.	
1945	Third Reich ends, as well as greatest war in human history, ending with two nuclear bombs being dropped onto civilian population centers .	
1946	Anti-Jewish sentiment in the United States reaches its all-time high.	

1947	The CIA and NSA are formed . The United Nations proposes the establishment of Israel. U.S. engages in first major manipulations of post-war era, as it overthrows popular communist movements in Greece and Italy.	
1948	Israel established, and Jewish oppression of Palestinian people begins.	
1949	George Orwell's 1984 published.	
1950	U.S. invasion of Korea begins.	
1953	U.S. prevents nationalization of British oil monopoly in Iran by overthrowing the government , installing the Shah and one of the 20 th century's more brutal regimes.	
1954	U.S. prevents nationalization of United Fruit's investments in Guatemala by overthrowing its U.S.-friendly government , leading to a generation of brutal rule by Guatemalan juntas. The U.S. takes over from the French failure of trying to recolonize Southeast Asia.	
1963	John Kennedy murdered . Gerald Ford of the Warren Commission would help concoct the "magic bullet" theory to pin the crime on "lone nut" Lee Harvey Oswald.	
1964	The U.S. fabricates the Gulf of Tonkin Incident , and begins the destruction of Southeast Asia.	
1965	CIA helps military junta take power in Indonesia . Suharto's forces "cleanse" Indonesia of about a million "communists" by murder.	
1967	Israel invades neighboring areas and seizes large swaths of land.	

1968	Martin Luther King, Jr. and Robert Kennedy are murdered by “lone nuts.” Nixon elected president. In Saigon, Ralph McGehee finally figures out what the CIA is all about.	
1969	United States “secret” war in Cambodia , killing hundreds of thousands of people and setting the stage for the Khmer Rouge’s reign.	
1972	Watergate burglary , planned by the CIA’s E. Howard Hunt , begins Nixon’s downfall. George Wallace shot by “lone nut” while campaigning for president.	
1973	OPEC oil price shocks create worldwide cycle of inflation until the 1980s. Vice president Agnew resigns to avoid criminal charges of bribery and income tax evasion. U.S. overthrows elected Marxist government of Chile and installs one of the world’s most repressive regimes.	
1974	Nixon resigns, taken down by his own people. Gerald Ford takes office, makes Nelson Rockefeller his vice president, and pardons Nixon for alleged crimes.	
1975	Two assassination attempts on Gerald Ford by “lone nuts,” nearly making Rockefeller the second appointed president, Ford being the first. With American approval, Indonesia invades East Timor using U.S. weapons, killing off about a third of East Timor’s inhabitants.	4.0 billion
1977	Jimmy Carter signs treaty to give Panama Canal back to Panama.	
1979	The Shah of Iran is overthrown in a revolution. The United States manipulates the Soviet Union into invading Afghanistan.	

1980	Ronald Reagan elected president. October Surprise operation , probably aided by George Bush, helps sabotage Carter's attempt for re-election. Iraq invades Iran , beginning eight-year war.	
1981	Ronald Reagan becomes president. " White paper " of fabricated documents "justifies" reign of terror that the U.S. begins in Central America . Reagan shot by "lone nut" friend of vice-president George Bush's family . Panamanian national hero Omar Torrijos dies in "plane crash," and Manuel Noriega takes over.	
1982	Ronald Reagan signs Savings and Loan deregulation law , setting the stage for America's greatest financial scandal.	
1984		5.0 billion
1985	U.S. ships weapons to "enemy" Iran through Israel. It becomes basis for Iran-Contra Scandal.	
1988	George Bush is elected president, and the next week the American people are told of the magnitude of the Savings and Loan Scandal .	
1989	Berlin Wall falls. U.S. invades Panama and Bush apprehends his former employee, Noriega.	
1990	With virtual encouragement from the United States, Iraq invades Kuwait. Tomb of Omar Torrijos robbed , probably by the Skull and Bones Society that both George Bushes belong to.	
1991	After actively avoiding negotiations for an Iraqi withdrawal, the U.S. bombs Iraq into the Stone Age, and the subsequent death toll is more than one million people.	
1999		6.0 billion

2000	George Bush the Second comes to office in a voting scandal.	
2001	Terrorist attacks on World Trade Center and Pentagon . George Bush the Second begins his “war on terror”	
2002	Enron Scandal makes news. America prepares to invade Iraq .	

Introduction

Ever since protohumans left their native habitat in the tropical forests, they had to exploit new [energy sources](#). Whether it was tools to scavenge predator kills, weapons that made humans into superpredators, fur from human prey worn as clothing, felling trees and using deforested land to grow crops and pasture animals, the game was *always* about securing or preserving human-usable energy.

The hunter-gatherer lifestyle began coming to an end about 10,000 years ago, on a global basis, as human superpredators [hunted all the easily killed and large animals to extinction](#). Then the [Domestication Revolution](#) began, with plants and animals made into human-controllable and human-digestible food. The “agricultural surplus” allowed humans to begin creating what is called “civilization.” According to today’s prevailing theories, the first place civilization made its appearance was in [Sumeria](#), which was in present-day Iraq. It took thousands of years to happen, but deforestation, irrigation, mass grazing, plow agriculture and continually increasing human populations eventually turned much of the Fertile Crescent into a desert. In 1990, Iraq imported 70% of its food.

Along with [civilization](#) came social stratification, with elites, professions, slaves and ideological justification of their hierarchical positions. The [Zero-Sum Game](#) came into being. As each civilization appeared, whether it was in China, the Fertile Crescent or Mesoamerica, the elites tried expanding their energy base, and empire building was one of humanity’s most common “civilized” activities. Because humans became superpredators during their evolutionary journey beyond the tropics, humans killing each other became one of the species’ most identifiable aspects. Energy capture, preservation and consumption is the basis of all the world’s ecosystems, and hence every economic and political system, with the word “power” having similar meaning in each discipline. Violence has usually been the primary method by which political-economic power has been amassed, whether the violence was against the environment or fellow humans.

The altering of earth’s ecosystems and mining its elements, to create human-friendly environments

and products, is called “[progress](#)” in the West. It has also been the dynamic of [earth’s destruction](#). One of humanity’s oldest histories is perhaps also the bloodiest, filled with tales of mass murder, largely to seize land and peoples to secure energy and resources. The Jews of the Old Testament, led by Moses, began an era of genocide as they acquired their Promised Land. The practice of invading and annihilating the inhabitants, with the Jewish god cheering them on, is a predominant Old Testament theme. The complete annihilation of [Jericho](#)’s residents was [Joshua](#)’s most famous feat in securing the Promised Land, with divine assistance, as his god crumbled Jericho’s walls. From the beginning, ideological justifications were concocted to make it seem that naked theft was not so naked, and the murders transform into righteous deeds, usually by making those who were annihilated, enslaved or forced to migrate somehow impure, worshipping the wrong gods, or subhuman. The people on the wrong end of the weaponry were thus made exploitable/expendable, and people could then commit their awesome crimes against each other with clear consciences.

Empires rose and fell in the Old World for millennia. The [Roman Empire](#) ruled over more than a quarter of humanity two millennia ago, and its bloody reign devastated the Mediterranean region, helping to turn such places as Libya into deserts. Environmental degradation has contributed to the decline and fall of nearly *all* earthly empires.[\[1\]](#)

When the Western Roman Empire collapsed in the 5th century AD, [Europe](#) reverted to a primarily agrarian economy; mining declined, and Islamic lands and the Eastern Roman Empire became vastly more civilized than Europe. European Crusading coincided with the [High Middle Ages](#), which was a great period of deforestation and city building. Europe’s High Middle Ages also took advantage of a global warming trend, and previously unsuitable lands were deforested and put under the plow. By 1300, earth was cooling off, Europe had bred to its Malthusian limit, and the High Middle Ages ended, with a [major famine beginning in 1314](#). England entered a new era of incessant battling with France, beginning with its Hundred Years’ War, in 1337. In 1347, the [Black Death](#) swept into Europe, and in 1400, Europe’s population was perhaps as low as half of what it had been in 1300, although two-thirds is a more common estimate.

The Renaissance began in the late 1300s in the city-states of northern Italy, and the 1400s were a period of ferment and change in Europe that would have a global impact. [Portugal](#) began exploring, colonizing and conquering the East Atlantic and African coast in the early 1400s, and as Spain completed wiping out [Moorish rule](#) on the Iberian Peninsula, it joined the game, leading to Christopher Columbus’ [fateful voyage](#).

The New World Before “Discovery,” and the First Contacts

What is today called North and South America, or the Western Hemisphere, has been a source of great speculation among anthropologists and other scholars, on a wide variety of topics. During the past century, especially during the past couple of generations, the New World’s pre-Columbian past, as viewed by academia and mainstream society, has changed drastically. Early in the 20th century, the prevailing view among anthropologists was that humans first inhabited the New World no more

than a few thousand years ago, and that the New World's pre-Columbian population was perhaps eight million. Those views were held [quite dogmatically](#) by academia, and it took a long time to overturn them.^[2] Beginning with the Berkeley School's efforts, represented by the groundbreaking work of Woodrow Borah, Sherburne Cook and Carl Sauer, both the early date of inhabitation and the [pre-Columbian population](#) have changed by an order of magnitude. Today, a first date of New World inhabitation of at least thirty thousand years ago is widely held in academia, and even the 2001 edition of *Encarta Encyclopedia* presents a pre-Columbian New World population of 90 million. There is credible speculation that the New World may have had well in excess of 100 million people in 1491. This site uses an estimate of 80 million, well within the range of current estimates.

From the Arctic ice cap to Tierra del Fuego, an astonishing diversity of terrains, climates and peoples existed. Pre-Columbian natives spoke about 2,000 languages from about 150 language families, for vast linguistic diversity, providing more evidence that the New World has been peopled for a very long time. As was the case elsewhere on earth, particularly in China and the Fertile Crescent, when the hunter-gatherer lifestyle became unsustainable, the [Domestication Revolution](#) began. In the New World, the Domestication Revolution [seems to have begun in Mesoamerica](#), where the New World's most advanced "civilized" activity took place, with squash and pumpkins being the New World's first domesticated plants.

Along the Andes mountain range appeared one of the world's most remarkable feats of human adaptation. From seashore to mountaintop, from desert to jungle, in a region that was extremely vulnerable to El Niño climate fluctuations, the feats of engineering and environmental adaptation of that region's pre-Columbian peoples are still marveled at by modern anthropologists. The Incan Empire "discovered" by the Spanish was merely the latest in a series of empires that rose and fell there.^[3] [Machu Picchu](#) may have been at least partly an agricultural laboratory, as those people were the world's greatest agricultural experimenters. Maize was probably first domesticated in Mesoamerica, and the potato along the Andes. Even during the 1990s, "academics" defended [Columbus Day](#), have called the pre-Columbian New World a sparsely populated land of primitive hunter-gatherers, with the coming of Europeans the best thing that ever happened to the New World.^[4] The facts are different.

Of the estimated 80 million people who lived in New World in 1491, the vast majority lived in sedentary agricultural communities. The natives had developed three thousand varieties each of maize and potatoes, and maize was grown from New England to Chile in 1491. Most of the crops raised worldwide today are of Native American origin.^[5] Agriculture was the basis of the two largest New World populations: the Mesoamerican and Andean civilizations. The Arawakan peoples of the Caribbean had an agriculture-based civilization, and along with the Hawaiian peoples (and the South Pacific, in general) lived in what was probably the closest thing to an earthly paradise that historic humans have seen. Agriculture was practiced in North America's eastern woodlands, today's American South, the Great Plains and today's Southwest U.S. In addition, food-procurement practices in many parts of the pre-Columbian New World have become the source of intriguing evidence, heated debate and a fair amount of amazement.

As with most animals, humans cannot digest cellulose, so most of the sun's energy that goes into

creating forests and grasslands is not directly digestible by humans. Forests are the world's greatest soil producers, with trees having unique abilities to break up rocks, extract minerals, circulate water through the soils, vent it to the sky, and dead leaves and trees provide vast nutrient deliveries to the forest biome. A temperate forest can produce a foot of topsoil in about 400 years. Grasslands create topsoil on a far more modest level. Human-caused deforestation began with the Agricultural Revolution, in order to create environments conducive to crop production. While [razing forests to raise crops](#) can be highly productive in the short run, it can create long-term environmental devastation, including soil loss, which also fills rivers with silt as the soil blows and washes away.

While there is evidence that environmental over-taxation led to the decline and fall of civilizations such as the Anasazi and Mayan people and at Cahokia, in general the New World natives had a much gentler tenure on their lands than Old World peoples.[6] Anthropologists have surmised that the situation was because the New World was "behind" the Old World in "progress," the "agricultural surplus" in Mexico being thousands of years behind the Fertile Crescent in its development, as maize ears were still only a few inches long in 1491. Although North America's eastern woodlands peoples' adoption of swidden agriculture apparently began because of the demands of the European introduction of depopulating disease and violence, and laborsaving metal axes, they did *not* use plow agriculture, which helped ensure long-term soil fertility. Parts of Mexico today have been using *milpa* agricultural methods for four thousand years continuously, with no decline in soil fertility.[7] Today, it is thought that the introduction of maize to today's Northeastern United States about a thousand years ago increased the agricultural yields and led to greater population density, making it more sedentary. That led to population pressures with its resultant warfare, which the Iroquois responded to with their [Great Law of Peace](#).

While anthropology is a respectable discipline, studying stones and bones is a perilous way to try reconstructing extinct cultures. There is a [spiritual facet too](#), and purely materialistic interpretations are limited by definition, which can lead to significant misinterpretations of the evidence.[8] In their interaction with their environment, for instance, New World humans may have been far ahead of the Old World. Here is some of the evidence.

One of the few sustainable civilizations that earth has ever seen was the [Pacific Northwest](#) culture, partly because spawning salmon provided a digestible energy delivery to a village's front door. The natives, depending on the calories of salmon-borne deliveries of sunlight energy that fell in the North Pacific, did not [deforest the land](#) to divert the sun's energy into crops, so when white men finally got around to conquering that part of the world, the trees they chopped down were prodigious and the soils were intact. That kind of culture *could* have been developed in some Old World environs, but it was not, not on that scale or duration. It is possible that maintaining such an environmentally gentle civilization was a conscious choice by New World natives, and it became ingrained in their culture.

The first Europeans to North America's eastern woodlands remarked on a park-like, open forest, which was a hunter's paradise. That open forest was maintained by humans burning the undergrowth every year, turning the woodlands into an environment conducive to feeding animals that humans could hunt and eat. There is significant evidence that the [Great Plains](#) was an environment husbanded by humans over millennia, burning the plains regularly so forests could not

recover, and turning it into the world's biggest pasture, where bison, elk and other edible animals could flourish.[\[9\]](#)

Similarly, the Amazon may at least partly be a human-created biome. It is controversial today, but there is persuasive evidence that the [Amazon](#) basin and vicinity was partly terraformed, millennia ago, on a scale so vast it is difficult for modern observers to even imagine, much less accept. Thousands of square miles of the Amazon basin were terraformed by mixing ceramics into the soil, thereby creating a kind of supersoil, and ancient earthworks in the plains above the Amazon basin are so vast that it is challenging to imagine the civilization that wrought them. The plants of the "wild" Amazon are highly unusual in their abundance of fruits, nuts and other human-usable nourishment, which is strong evidence that the biome was transformed by humans millennia ago. The Amazon rainforest may be the world's largest garden.[\[10\]](#)

History has shown that *all* cultures unravel when subjected to the stresses of disease, famine, warfare and the like, especially when large fractions of the population die off. Because European contact was so quickly and universally disastrous for Native Americans, what later chroniclers recorded were generally remnants of New World cultures that existed before Columbus.

What the New World was like before Europeans showed up will be a source of enduring controversy, but some pursuable evidence is the first contact accounts of Europeans in the New World. The early Europeans to North America, whether they saw the Great Plains, the Eastern Woodlands or California, described peoples who were not particularly hostile toward one another, even enemy tribes.[\[11\]](#) Few early European observers left behind detailed descriptions of the New World they encountered, and those that do can have major deficiencies. [Columbus](#) and [Cortés](#) chronicled the first contacts between Europeans and the intact cultures in the Caribbean and Mesoamerica, but both chroniclers had agendas. Although [his journal is dominated with his quest for gold](#) and how he might exploit the wealth of the discovered lands, Columbus regularly remarked on the incredible beauty of the islands and the happy, healthy, peaceful natives, and many of them did not know what weapons were. He described the islands as an Edenic paradise and the natives its worthy inhabitants, and he was right. Columbus and his invasions quickly destroyed it, however, so reconstructing that extinct culture has been a challenging task for modern anthropologists.

When Ponce de León first invaded Florida in 1513, for the first recorded contact with Florida's natives, they almost certainly had already suffered from Spanish slavers, as [they fought off the invasion](#). Cortés and Castillo described the first European encounters with the natives of inland Mesoamerica, meeting the Aztecs in 1519.[\[12\]](#) The Spaniards had already pillaged the Mesoamerican coastline, so their welcome was not friendly there, and they easily slaughtered the Mayans with their superior weaponry. As they marched toward Tenochtitlán however, they were welcomed along the entire route, except when they encountered a rival state, Tlaxcala. The Tlaxcalans ferociously fought them off, but when the Spanish invaders began slaughtering women, children and the elderly (unthinkable in Mesoamerican society), the Tlaxcalans realized they were facing barbarians of a kind they had never seen before. They then surrendered and became the Spaniards' first significant ally in Mesoamerica, a relationship they would [later regret](#).[\[13\]](#)

In 1519, the same year that Cortés invaded Mesoamerica, Ferdinand Magellan led the expedition that first sailed around the world. Magellan's voyage marked Europe's first encounters with many native peoples along his route. Magellan's men violated many of the natives they met along the way, as well as killed each other in mutinous behavior.[\[14\]](#) Magellan died fighting the natives in today's Philippines. In 1568, a Spanish expedition from Peru landed in the Solomon Islands (named after King Solomon and his mines, because the Spanish, as usual, [were seeking gold](#)), for the first European contact in that region. Although the natives were once again friendly and welcoming, there was little gold to be found, and the Spaniards wasted little time in waging war against them.[\[15\]](#)

Cortés and Castillo recorded a Mesoamerican civilization that overwhelmed them, with sights so incredible that some Spanish mercenaries thought they were dreaming. The Aztec capital city was more fantastic than anything the Old World had to offer, and some of the Spaniards had seen Constantinople and Venice. There was also the [grim spectacle of human sacrifice](#), although the cannibalism issue is probably the New World's first urban legend. Columbus made up the story of [Caribbean cannibalism nearly from thin air](#). Cortés concocted the tale of Aztec cannibalism in 1522 [after he conquered them](#), and his mention of his foes carrying "roasted babies" sounds like classic wartime propaganda. Consequently, various aspects of their reporting must be viewed with skepticism. Nearly every early interaction with Spanish and Native American cultures show that when given a choice, natives thought European culture an inferior one, even when [treated to the best that Europe had to offer](#).[\[16\]](#) While the Aztecs had a stratified society that was materialistic, violent and greedy to a degree found nowhere else in the New World, it still paled beside the European versions of those qualities. When some Brazilian Indians visited France in the 1560s, they were amazed at the disparity in French society, where gluttons turned away emaciated beggars at their doors. The Indians did not understand why the poor did not kill the rich.[\[17\]](#) When Charles Mann recently asked seven academics in the field where they would have chosen to live in 1491, Europe or with the [Iroquois](#), the scholars were wary of being asked such a question, them being acutely aware of the [presentism](#) issue. Nevertheless, with all their caveats, all seven scholars chose the Iroquois.[\[18\]](#) Native Americans also valued cleanliness, a virtue that Europeans would not appreciate for centuries.

When Portugal's [Corte Real](#) expedition landed in today's Newfoundland in 1501, or [Ayllón](#)'s ships sailed to South Carolina in 1521, or France's [Verrazano](#) expedition of 1524 explored the coastline from the Carolinas to Maine, or [Cartier](#)'s expedition explored the St. Lawrence River in 1535, they *always* captured natives, usually to make them slaves. *All* first contact situations along the east coast of North America were openly predatory on the Europeans' part, and they always preyed upon *friendly* natives. By the time the [Pilgrims showed up in the 1600s](#), the natives there had already been attacked numerous times, with their people carried off to short lives of slavery. Even then, the invading Pilgrims were welcomed and fed by the natives.

The Spanish invasions were called *entradas*, and the [Narváez](#) *entrada* invaded Florida in 1527 on the Gulf side, landing in Tampa Bay and outrunning the Spanish reputation in southern Florida. The natives the Narváez expedition encountered were generally timid or friendly, and although the Spaniards did plenty to provoke the natives, it rarely became violent. That *entrada* was doomed by its incompetence, not native malice.

By the time the Spaniards got around to discovering, conquering and sacking the [Incan Empire](#) in 1532, the Incas had already been devastated by a European epidemic several years earlier, which killed the emperor and led to a civil war, so *no* European ever saw anything close to pre-Columbian Incan culture. Even then, their welcome was initially good, although with [Soto](#) in charge, a reconnaissance foray raped an entire nunnery of several hundred virgins, and then slaughtered the local populace when they resisted it.[\[19\]](#) The surprise attack, capture, ransoming and murder of the Incan emperor made even [Charles V](#) uneasy, as his men did that to a *sovereign*, putting a dent in the Divine Right of Kings doctrine. The Spanish accounts of [Cuzco](#)'s subsequent sack give some hint of what their capital city was like, and along with Tenochtitlán, they were the New World's two most spectacular cities, and perhaps the world's.[\[20\]](#)

When the [Soto entrada](#) invaded Florida in 1539 and marauded through today's Southeast United States for three years, it may have been history's most destructive expedition, laying waste to the entire region, mainly from the diseases they left behind. One native empire had already been [devastated by European epidemics](#) when Soto passed through, so even then, Soto intruded upon a far from unsullied land, but the chroniclers of that expedition, as bent as they were for plunder, described intriguing peoples, ones who seemed largely at peace with their neighbors, although warfare was not unknown and apparently increased as populations became more dense. Soto was about the first and last white man to see the Mississippian culture, which had flourished for several centuries before becoming extinct from European invasion and disease. Some of the mounds are several thousand years old. The Mississippian period *may* have begun declining a century before Soto showed up. Why they declined is one of archeology's current mysteries, and there are educated *guesses* about what it was like then. It is not unreasonable to theorize that European epidemics washed through the Mississippian culture as early as the 1518 smallpox epidemic that raged through Mesoamerica and carried off millions of people, or even the unrecorded slavers that hit the Florida coastline before Ponce de León's *entrada* of 1513.

When the [Coronado](#) expedition invaded today's American Southwest in 1540, looking for cities gilt in gold, the natives had already been visited by Spanish slaving expeditions, so they resisted Coronado's invasion, the first Spanish *entrada* that tried treating the natives well. It ended up much as the other Spanish invasions did, however.[\[21\]](#) Although openly predatory, the Coronado *entrada* described gentle peoples, with even rival tribes living peacefully, including those who hunted bison on the plains.

In 1542, [Cabrillo](#) "discovered" the California coast, and the native welcome was not always warm, and he found out why. The supplier of the Coronado expedition, Melchor Díaz, had already marauded through Southern California, abusing the natives and amusing himself by [hunting natives from horseback](#), which was one of the Conquistadors' favorite activities. Cabrillo described a densely populated California coastline, and the natives were usually gentle and friendly. Epidemics tore through them long before [Serra showed up](#) to "civilize" them. .

In 1577, [Francis Drake](#) came through on a pirate expedition, sailing beyond the European reputation

and putting ashore in Northern California (some scholars argue that he really landed in Oregon). They stayed for several weeks as they repaired their ship, and the natives helped feed the expedition, treating the strange white men with great reverence. At about the same time, [Martin Frobisher](#) described gentle people that he captured in his voyages to the North Atlantic.

In short, in about every European first contact account that history offers during the 16th century, in the New World and Pacific islands, the Europeans described gentle and either timid or welcoming natives, and when the welcome was less than friendly, it is nearly certainly because Europeans had already visited the region, and the natives were acquainted with the greedy, kidnapping, murderous men with white skin.

There is a great deal of evidence, some of it quite compelling, that the New World was visited many times, by many world cultures, long before Columbus showed up.[\[22\]](#) It is questionable whether the Europeans did to the New World what anybody else would have done in their shoes. In the same century that Columbus stumbled into the New World, the [Ming Dynasty](#) mounted a series of massive naval expeditions along southern Asia, including trips to Africa. They *did not* rape and plunder the peoples they visited.[\[23\]](#) Similarly, [gunpowder](#) was invented in China, and they began using it several hundred years before Europe did. While the Chinese exclusively used it for firecrackers, Europe began using it in the 1330s, just before the Black Death epidemics, and Europeans invented its use in weaponry. Europeans were uniquely violent, and their mastery of violence allowed them to conquer the world.

The First Century of the New World's Invasion

The development of the Europe that gave birth to [Christopher Columbus](#) was a long time in coming. Arguments can be made that go back to the Fertile Crescent and the [dawn of the Old World's civilizations](#), when feminine-based religion was overthrown by male-based religion, leading to what is called the [dominator model of society](#). For the past several thousand years, men have uniquely dominated Old World cultures. The influence of Western men has been profound in numerous disciplines, and has greatly led them astray at times, such as in [Western Medicine](#). After [Rome fell](#), Germanic tribes conquered most of Europe. Islam made its rise during the 600s, and [Moors invaded](#) and conquered the Iberian Peninsula in 711 AD, wresting it from the Visigoths, and today's Spain was Europe's most civilized place during Moorish rule, with Jews living in their golden age in Europe. Vikings began their disastrous invasions of Europe in about 800, conquering and settling lands from Newfoundland to Russia. A global warming trend, beginning around 900, helped lead to Europe's High Middle Ages, which was a great period of [deforestation and city building](#). In 1036, the Umayyad dynasty ended in Moorish Iberia, and the Christian conquest of Moorish Spain began in 1056. The Normans (Vikings who settled in today's France) invaded and conquered England in 1066. The [Crusades](#), the first launched in 1096, were Europe's first united acts, with Europe's first great Jew slaughters being a warm-up for the first one.

The Catholic Church owned about a quarter of Western Europe's land, and it was Europe's dominant medieval institution. The Crusades backfired in ways the Church did not anticipate. Instead of the Church extending its religious monopoly, returning Crusaders brought back [Catharism](#), which flourished in southern France, Christian Europe's most culturally advanced region, which led Pope Innocent III to declare a Crusade on France. The resulting Albigensian Crusade killed about a million people, and also became an opportunity for the Parisian elite to extend their rule, helping lead to today's France.

In the century that the [Black Death](#) swept off at least a quarter of Europe's population, Europe became a hell on earth, with famine, disease and warfare continually raging throughout it. Europe's cities were extremely deadly, with the continual influx of the "surplus population" from the countryside being the only thing keeping the urban populations sustained. The Renaissance began in the late 1300s in northern Italy's city-states, and it led to humanism, which eventually undermined the Church's power. By the early 1400s, the "Reconquest" of Spain was reenergized with a renewed attack on Granada, which would be the last holdout of Islamic rule on the Iberian Peninsula.

Portugal is a tiny nation compared to Spain, both in land mass and population, having about a million people, compared to Spain's eight million, around 1500. It came into being during the Reconquest, and if the peoples of what is called Spain today were not busy fighting the Moors and friends, and each other, Portugal as a political entity may not have come into being. Its existence was aided by geography, being bounded by mountains, rivers and the Atlantic Ocean.

[Spices](#) can be tasty, and hide the taste of stale and rotting food, but the primary reason for using them was their antibacterial properties, to preserve food, especially in warmer climates, where food can spoil quickly. Spices generally came from Asia and the Spice Islands, and were not only lucrative trade items for the right players, but were seen as necessities by many, especially in the meat-eating culture of the Iberian Peninsula, as spoiling animal products are the deadliest foods of all. Luxury items also came from the Asian trade, such as silk and porcelain. The spice trade from Asia to the Middle East and Europe was an ancient one, with the Romans gaining control over the sea routes by its conquest of Egypt in 30 BC, and Alexandria became a hub of trade, which bypassed Arab traders, control they later regained with the fall of Rome and the rise of Islam.

Christian elites on the Iberian Peninsula had been seeking another route to Asian trade for some time, and Portugal's conquest of Ceuta in 1415 was an attempt to gain a trade route across Africa, to outflank its hated Islamic rivals. It would not be as easy as it first seemed, and Portugal began sailing along the Atlantic coast of Africa in the 1430s, seeking the West African gold trade, where most of the Old World's gold was mined. Those efforts led Portugal to enter the African slave trade in 1444.

There have been very few, if any, pre-industrial, sedentary cultures that did not have some form of forced servitude. History has seen a wide spectrum of coercive institutions, with great diversity in how they operated. Even today, relatively gentle Western taxation is a form of coerced servitude, where people are compelled to part with the fruits of their labor, to support violent states. In Western and Northern Europe, slavery was nearly an extinct institution by the late Middle Ages. It flourished in the Middle East however, with Arab slavers plying their trade in Africa and elsewhere. The Balkan

side of the Adriatic became a slave coast, the very word “slave” coming from “Slav.” Enslaving the Islamic “infidel” became a feature of the Spanish Reconquest, and would lead to slavery making its rise again in Western Europe. Christian rationales were the most prominent ones used during the coming age of slavery. Even during America’s push for abolition (after nearly the rest of the West had abandoned the institution), Southern defenders of slavery could often be found pointing to their Bibles to justify it. The new version of slavery also became a uniquely economic and racist institution, with scientific management principles and other sophistication that earlier incarnations of it did not possess.[\[24\]](#) Portugal’s quest for slaves and gold became a theme of “exploration” and “settlement” that would not quickly disappear.

Portugal helped advance Europe’s maritime science and technology (and also borrowed some from Islamic culture), and began exploring, conquering and settling the Eastern Atlantic’s islands. In 1418, the Portuguese discovered the uninhabited Madeiran islands and colonized them, the Azores in 1427 and the Cape Verde Islands in 1450.

The Fourth Crusade sacked its “ally” Constantinople in 1204, and the Eastern Roman Empire never fully recovered from it. Venice gained a monopoly on the Asian trade with Europe from Constantinople’s sack, and charged exorbitant prices to Europeans. Turkish expansionism and Byzantine weakness led to the fall of Constantinople (today’s Istanbul) in 1453, which ended Venice’s trading monopoly and led to its decline. It also led to renewed Portuguese attempts to find an alternate route to the Asian spice trade. The fall of Constantinople also hastened the rise of European humanism, as Byzantine scholars fled to Europe, with their knowledge of classical Greece. Beginning with the reign of John II in 1481, Portugal began launching ambitious expeditions down the African coast, and in 1488, Portuguese explorers rounded the southern tip of Africa. Christopher Columbus tried getting Portugal to finance his ideas for sailing across the Atlantic to Asia, but after rounding Africa’s tip, Portugal was no longer interested and doubted his strategy, which had been put forth by [Paolo Toscanelli long before.](#)[\[25\]](#)

[Columbus](#) finally sold Spain on the idea, getting the sovereigns of Iberia, who finally wiped Moorish rule off the Iberian Peninsula in early 1492 with its conquest of Granada, to finance his foolhardy journey.

After Bartolomeu Dias returned with news of his successful rounding of Africa’s southern end, in 1497 Vasco da Gama set sail down Africa with four ships. Two years later he returned with news of reaching India, and he brought back specimens of spices and other coveted trade goods. He had violent encounters along the way, and his trading overtures were not well received, as the Persian and Ottoman traders in India easily guessed what the Portuguese ships were up to. Of 168 men who began the voyage, only 44 survived to make it back to Lisbon.

At the time, a successful voyage to India was more useful news to the European powers than what Columbus had stumbled into across the Atlantic. In 1500, thirteen ships, with Dias captaining one of them, set sail toward India again. The fleet visited Brazil along the way, taking a circuitous route around Africa, and seven ships were lost, including Dias’. The six-month journey returned to Calicut on the western coast of India, and once again the reception was less than wonderful, and the Portuguese retaliated by bombarding the city with cannons and burning some boats. A series of

explicitly military voyages ensued, with the Portuguese violently establishing a trade route to India and conquering the Muslim port of Goa in 1510. In 1511, the Portuguese conquered Malacca, in today's Malaysia, which was the spice trade's heart. While the Portuguese found the Arabs and other Muslims relatively easy to defeat militarily, and seizing their trading ports was how Portugal established itself, the Chinese Empire was another matter. The [Ming Dynasty's voyages](#) in the early 1400s were tremendous, with more than 20,000 men on each excursion. The few Portuguese boats that showed up failed to overawe the Chinese, who were far more civilized than the European interlopers, and the Portuguese were reduced to smuggling as they continued to try gaining trading rights with China, and they began trading with Japan in 1543. In 1557, Portugal finally secured the rights to an easily watched and non-defendable tip of a peninsula. Their toehold became Macau. Pepper was by far the greatest import from Portugal's trade route to Asia, amounting to about 6000 tons annually by 1520, and accounted for about 40% of Crown revenues.[\[26\]](#)

Christian proselytizing accompanied the Portuguese trading missions, and it was fairly successful in Japan, perhaps too successful. While the Chinese sneered at missionary efforts in Macau, which generated only about 20 Chinese Christian converts, Portuguese successes in Japan were another matter. By 1580, there were an estimated 150,000 Japanese Christians, and Nagasaki was the heart of the proselytizing effort. The Japanese converted largely to gain the advantages that came from trading with the Portuguese. Apparently the Portuguese success went to their heads, and they began treating the Japanese converts shabbily and arrogantly. In 1587, a powerful Japanese ruler saw the "Christian invasion" as a threat, and began courting the Protestant, non-proselytizing Dutch. He also began a savage persecution of the missionaries and Japanese converts, and thousands were killed. In 1639, Portugal was completely expelled from Japan, and the leadership of a subsequent delegation from Macau was infamously beheaded. The Dutch then served as Japan's foreign trade conduit for the next two centuries.

It can be difficult for modern Westerners to comprehend the conditions that prevailed back then, for the Europeans who began sailing across the world. In 1500, Europeans had been living on the cusp of disaster for the previous two centuries. Earth began cooling off by 1300, and the High Middle Ages' aggressive deforestation and agriculture on previously unsuitable lands, combined with the resultant population explosion, left Europe in a precarious state. The first great famine that began in 1314 set the stage for what came afterward. The "Little Ice Age" continued until about 1850, and war, famine and disease were constant facts of life. During those centuries, there was no European city that went an entire generation without suffering an outbreak of famine, war or epidemic disease (or all three at once). Not that Europe was a paradise before then, but Europe became a hell on earth during those centuries.

Some recent motion pictures have attempted to recreate the ambience of those days, but no movie can do justice to the smells, feelings and general atmosphere. Heretics and witches burned across Europe. In "civilized" London, a man did not walk down the street without a weapon in hand. In European cities, criminals waited on every street, ready to pounce on the unwary. One favored method was dropping bricks and masonry onto unsuspecting passersby, and looting their body. Food riots became common, beginning around 1500, as Europe's population again began hitting the Malthusian limit. Modern Westerners can scarcely imagine the filth and stench of those days. People would go their entire lives without bathing, except for baptism. England's King James I, who

commissioned his famous Bible, would not have been allowed in many Western homes. He may have not washed his hands for his entire adult life, and was notable for his personal filthiness and boorish behavior. The streets of Europe were open sewers, as were its rivers and lakes. If Thomas Hobbes' famous phrase, "nasty, brutish and short" ever applied to the lives of any people, it was to average Europeans during the "Little Ice Age."

The Iberian Peninsula, during its several century "Reconquest," was the scene of continual warfare, disease and famine. The filthiness among Christians was enforced there on an even more stringent scale than the rest of Europe. The Queen of Aragon once boasted that she had two baths in her life: when she was born and when she was married. Bathing was a Moorish practice, and in 1500 bathing attracted the interest of the Spanish Inquisition, as it hunted down crypto-Moors and crypto-Jews, so filthiness was evidence of a Spaniard's true Christian nature. When the Spaniards encountered the Caribbean natives, they used the fact of the natives' regular bathing as evidence of their "primitive" condition. When the Spaniards eventually encountered the Aztecs, they remarked on their fanatical devotion to cleanliness, with daily baths and all manner of body and breath deodorant. The Aztecs found the stench of the Spaniards so overpowering that they held flowers to their noses when speaking to them, and rulers would have Spaniards bathed in clouds of incense before speaking to them. Tenochtitlán had an army of street cleaners, and was cleaner than any European city would be until the 20th century.

The filth, violence, starvation, disease and overall misery of Europe made life a pretty cheap commodity, which is made evident by some telling statistics. During the 1600s, the life expectancy of a male in Europe's ruling families was 28 years.[\[27\]](#) As noted above, that first Portuguese voyage to India had about a 25% survival rate, and the risk was so high on that voyage that criminals were forced into being crewmembers. A 75% mortality rate was a bit high, but during the next two centuries, Portugal launched about 15,000 men per year (and a few women) on its trade route. The *average* mortality rate for the two-year voyage to Asia and back was about 25%.[\[28\]](#) A death rate of a third of the passengers and crew was typical. It is difficult to imagine anybody loading up ships today, to distant lands, with that projected survival rate. As late as 1762, ten ships of the Dutch East India Company lost more than 1000 people, about 45% of those aboard, just sailing from the Netherlands to the Cape of Good Hope. [Scurvy](#) was the biggest killer on the high seas, but was far from the only one. Living on a ship of the day challenged even the European tolerance for squalor. Not surprisingly, mutiny was a constant risk, and drastic methods were used to keep the crews in line. In an early English attempt at colonization, at [Roanoke](#), the colony simply disappeared. The next attempt, at [Jamestown](#), was only sustained by the continual influx of colonists. During the first generation of the English invasion, nearly a third of the colonists died in the first year. In 1624, of about 7000 colonists who arrived in Jamestown since 1607, only 1200 still survived.

Not surprisingly, the best and brightest that Europe had to offer were rarely aboard those ships. They were not all impressed criminals, and the death rates aboard were not state secrets, although deception was usually used in recruiting efforts. The turnip truck could not keep showing up for two centuries, so imagine the kinds of people who accepted a 25% risk of death by hiring onto a ship bound for Asia. People coming from those backgrounds would not make many gentle and enlightened encounters with the peoples of distant lands, particularly when they came from the world's most violent culture, and the Iberian Peninsula was no exception. The Iberian Peninsula had

been the scene of innumerable invasions and forced migrations during the previous millennia, and four centuries of nearly continual warfare, raging across the peninsula, made the Spanish and Portuguese cultures thoroughly militaristic. The violence they were about to unleash, on a global scale, had never been seen before.

Columbus and his men usually abused the unfailing native hospitality during the [first voyage](#), and he returned to lead a [full-scale invasion](#) the next year, with more than 1000 men. The gold hunt soon degenerated into sending captured natives to Spain as slaves, which came naturally for a man who slaved in Africa with the Portuguese. The natives died off quickly when shipped across the Atlantic, and Columbus then resorted to a tribute system, where each native was supposed to give Columbus and his men a thimble's worth of gold every few months, or they had their hands chopped off. Thus began the [genocide](#) of the New World's natives, and history's [biggest gold rush](#).

The Guanches, who probably migrated from northern Africa more than a millennium earlier, [inhabited the Canary Islands](#). The Spanish completed their conquest of them in 1496, aided by a European-introduced epidemic, which devastated the virgin population. By 1600, the Canary Islands had been largely deforested and turned into a big plantation, and the Guanches were essentially an extinct people.

Several dynamics were evident in the early days of European colonialism. One was the environmental devastation inflicted onto the "discovered" lands. Deforestation leads to desertification, and a mere fifty years after discovery, Columbus remarked that the Cape Verde Islands seemed misnamed, as there was not a green thing on them. They were green when the Portuguese "discovered" them.^[29] He also noted that the Canary Islands had become much drier during the years he had been sailing to them, which was only a generation. What was done to the [previously forested Mediterranean region](#) over many centuries was quickly done to those Atlantic islands. Immediately after discovery, on the Madeiran island of Santo Porto, two rabbits were introduced. They bred rapidly, as rabbits are prone to do. Within a year, the entire island had been denuded of its vegetation by those rabbits and their progeny

In the early days of European global hegemony, ideology was a turbulent milieu. The Catholic Church still held its religious monopoly over Western Europe, and religion was a central issue for the Spaniards who conquered the New World. Spanish nationalism was also ascendant, with the rule of Isabella and Ferdinand forming the *idea* of Spain. Isabella initiated the Spanish Inquisition in 1480, which was mainly concerned with hunting Jews and Moors who had converted under duress to Christianity, but who might have been practicing their erstwhile faith in secret.

After Columbus came to an obscure end, [other Spaniards](#) kept the gold quest alive in the New World, as natives died off by the millions. The mining practices of the [Egyptians and Romans](#) were revived. The Native Americans became expendable commodities in the fevered quest for gold. Columbus was the [first person to realize](#) what the wanton slaughter and ill treatment of the natives would mean for Spain's burgeoning empire. Native labor was the source of harvestable wealth on Española, as they did all the work.^[30] His observation was ignored. Killing off the native population would ultimately cripple Spain's imperial ambitions.

By 1510, the Caribbean was being [dramatically depopulated](#) to keep Española's gold mines and plantations running. Jamaica, Puerto Rico, Cuba, and the Bahamas' indigenous human populations were soon extinct, and slavers were almost certainly visiting the Florida natives. The Spaniards then struck out, invading the Caribbean periphery. They invaded Florida, Panama and South America, looking for slaves and gold. For the first time, the Spaniards encountered armed native resistance, and numerous *entradas* ended in disaster. More often, the Spaniards easily conquered and enslaved the natives.

Enslaving the natives became the standard Spanish tactic during its first century of plunder. Ideological justifications were concocted to justify exploiting the “discovered” and enslaved peoples, with racial, religious and imperial justifications prominent. They all merely spruced up the might-makes-right mentality. The greater the violation, the more strained the ideology to justify it, usually by making the exploited peoples somehow subhuman. With their humanity thus removed, their treatment became justified as clearing valuable land of subhumans (English ideology), or putting them to work as beasts of burden or serving as sex toys (Spanish ideology).

The mining frenzy and other horrors [completely exterminated](#) the natives of the Greater Antilles, known today as the Taino. Today's prevailing estimate is that there were a [few million island Taino](#), but there may have been more than ten million of them in 1492. By 1520 they were nearly extinct on Española, and they were *completely* extinct long before the year 1600, and they suffered pretty much the same fate throughout the Greater Antilles. It is the only *complete* genocide of *millions* of people in world history.

In 1511 however, the Christian conscience peeked through the blackness. Just before Christmas, Dominican priest Antonio Montesinos delivered a startling sermon on Española. He quoted from the Bible, and noted the vast genocide that turned the pre-Spanish “paradise” on Española into a human desert. The priest called into question the Spaniards' very Christianity, asking how they could justify such treatment of their fellow human beings. The brave priest nearly lost his life at the hands of enraged Spaniards, and they tried getting him sent back to Spain.

In the audience for that audacious sermon was a prosperous, conquering Spaniard, with land and slaves of his own. He became the first priest ordained in the New World. [Bartolomé de Las Casas](#) did not indignantly receive Montesinos' sermon, but did not really see anything wrong with keeping slaves, either. Three years later, Las Casas was preparing for an Easter sermon when the Bible text suddenly made him question the Spanish slave system. He then gave his slaves away and dedicated the rest of his life to the natives' welfare, eventually becoming appointed the “Protector of the Indians.”[\[31\]](#)

Before Las Casas' moment of truth, some Spanish Dominicans were able to make the Spanish court uneasy with their reports from the New World, and in 1512-1513 the Laws of Burgos were passed. They dealt with native treatment. Although the laws sounded high-minded for the day, the reality was that they were paternalistic, unenforceable, and laughable when compared to New World reality. The most famous document from those laws became known as the Requirement, which is partly reproduced at this footnote.[\[32\]](#) The Requirement epitomized Spanish legalism. [Legalism](#) is a sign

of a degenerate system, where form prevails over substance. Spanish legalism resembled that of the late Western Roman Empire, and foreshadowed [today's United States](#). Las Casas wrote that he did not know whether to laugh or cry after reading the Requirement.

The Requirement was usually read to people who did not understand Spanish. Las Casas, who knew and admired Columbus, recorded that a typical Spanish strategy was to read the Requirement in the night jungle before attacking the villages. Care was taken so the Requirement would not be read where the natives could hear it, so they would not awaken.^[33] It was sometimes read from ship to the distant shoreline. For instance, during a 1518 *entrada* to the Yucatán, the Spaniards went ashore on the island of Cozumel. The Spaniards' reputation preceded them, and the local populace fled. Undeterred, the Spaniards climbed the town pyramid. They read the Requirement to the sky, and then posted it (unreadable to the natives) to the side of the pyramid. Duty was fulfilled.^[34]

Las Casas' efforts were inexhaustible regarding the natives' welfare, and he is seen today as the most radical Spaniard, the one who came the closest to questioning the entire business of Spain in the New World. He noted that African slaves seemed harder than the native slaves, and in 1518 his efforts were successful. The Spanish crown agreed to have African slaves replace the native slaves in the mines, and it might have rescued the last natives from extinction, but then the New World's first smallpox epidemic broke out in the mines, [killed off more than half of the remaining natives](#), and soon swept to the mainland as the Spaniards invaded the Aztec Empire, killing untold millions.

After observing that African slaves fared little better than the natives, Las Casas then sought to ban the use of African slaves, and eventually advocated the position of just having Spanish trading ports in the New World, with priests going forth to try converting the natives. That proposal was obviously not undertaken.

Other than the short-lived gold strike on Española, the entire New World business was a disappointment for the Spanish Crown, as not much loot was coming in. The Spanish invasion finally hit pay dirt when Hernan Cortés stole the *entrada* sent out by Cuba's governor, [Velázquez](#), in 1519. Cortés conquered the Aztec Empire with a few hundred men. One historian accurately stated that it was a grand tale with everything in it but a hero. The Aztecs were vastly more civilized than the Spaniards. The center of their empire, Tenochtitlán, was quite possibly the world's most spectacular city, a sparkling, manmade island, sitting in the middle of a vast lake, in the midst of a majestic valley ringed with mountains and snow-capped volcanoes

The Valley of Mexico and surrounding region had the largest New World population, generally estimated at somewhere between 10 and 25 million people. There is nothing the Spaniards did worth cheering about in Mexico, unless rape, plunder, bloodshed and genocide qualify. The loot began flowing in from the Aztec plunder, Spain got excited, and European freebooters began flooding the New World. The Spanish Crown continually enacted measures to reduce native abuse, but in practice, the effects were minimal. The Crown's primary preoccupation was the flow of loot into its coffers.^[35] The first Crown officials to the New World were treasury officials.

In 1519, the year the Spaniards began invading the Aztec Empire, [Ferdinand Magellan](#), who was

Portuguese, tried finding a way across the Atlantic to the Indies, and sailed around South America. Although he died fighting the natives in today's Philippines, his crew made it back to Spain in 1522, with enough cloves picked up in the Spice Islands to make a profit on the world's first circumnavigation, even when four of the five ships were lost, and only 18 of the original 250 men completed the journey.

Pánfilo de Narváez, the rapist of Jamaica, led the [Cuban governor](#)'s army to Mesoamerica to try ending Cortés' usurpation of the *entrada*, and Cortés easily won the engagement, bribing most of Narváez' men with the promise of Aztec gold before the short-lived battle even took place.[\[36\]](#)

Narváez ended up losing an eye in the fracas. In 1527, seeking an empire for himself, he led an *entrada* of hundreds of men into Florida, landing in Tampa Bay, outrunning the Spanish reputation in southern Florida. The *entrada* was doomed by its brutality and incompetence, and it spread disease among the natives. After eating their horses, some Spaniards resorted to cannibalism. Only a few members of the Narváez *entrada* survived the ordeal.[\[37\]](#)

Taking his cue from Cortés' success, the illiterate Pizarro conquered the Incas in South America the same way a decade later. The main strategy was kidnapping the emperor, something the natives could not conceive of. After capturing the Incan emperor during a surprise attack that killed thousands of his unarmed retainers, Pizarro's men ransomed the Incan sovereign for tons of gold and silver, and killed him after the ransom was delivered. Pizarro's own men eventually murdered him, as they vied for power. The initial Incan and Aztec plunderings, although they created great excitement in Europe, were modest when compared to the silver mines discovered at Zacatecas (today's Mexico) and Potosí (today's Bolivia). At Zacatecas, the labor was scarce in the desert, so the natives were treated *relatively* well. At Potosí, the "personnel" practices used on Española were evident. The natives died at rates that rivaled Auschwitz.[\[38\]](#) The Potosí and other South American mines consumed several million native lives. Along the streams and rivers that flowed from the Andes, natives dying under the Spanish lash worked the mines furiously. In South America, the Spaniards could not lose their way when traveling between New Granada and Popayán, because the bones of dead men formed an unmistakable path.[\[39\]](#) The vultures would circle each time a new mine was dug. In Mexico, where the natives were treated somewhat better, the natives were still forced into mining and becoming beasts of burden for the Spaniards, dying in heaps in the mines and along the roads. The Spanish labor practices, in a macabre continuation of what they did to the Taino in the Caribbean, may have been the greatest contributing factor to the native genocide [\[40\]](#)

The [Egyptian](#), [Roman](#) and Spanish mining practices were not universal. Professionals, not slaves, performed gold mining in India. The natives of the Incan empire saw their mines as sacred places, as the gold for their sun-god religion came from there. The Incan miners were all married, as the Incan system had a miner's wife care for him while he mined, and neighboring provinces would work his fields while he mined. Bachelors could not mine. No Incan miner ever died from overwork while the Incas ran the mines, and they were exceedingly well fed. Mining for the Incan Empire was not even considered hard work.[\[41\]](#)

Cuzco, the seat of the Incan Empire and the center of Incan sun worship, may have contained the most amazing gold treasures the world has ever seen. The Spanish mercenaries came upon an Incan Empire wracked by civil war, caused by another Spanish-introduced epidemic that carried off

vast numbers of people, including the emperor. When they sacked the capital city, Cuzco, they stripped it of its treasures and melted it all down. While the Spanish plunderers were busily stripping and melting all the Incan art, some were aware enough to lament what was happening, and they wrote of seeing life-sized statues of people and animals, made of gold, and a garden full of plants and a herd of llamas (including their shepherd), all in gold and silver.

Pedro de Cieza de León wrote what many consider the finest history of the Incan people before they were "discovered." Cieza de León was a soldier of conquest, but became interested in those he was conquering. His Incan history and conquest was written with the Spanish Inquisition and royal censors in mind, as his work had to pass their review before publication. He was a soldier and never questioned the conquest's propriety. Yet, even he wrote the following:

"Thus, in the days of the Incas there was very little arable land in these kingdoms that was not under cultivation, and all as thickly settled, as the first Spaniards who entered this realm can testify. To be sure, it is a sad thing to reflect that these idol-worshipping Incas should have had such wisdom in knowing how to govern and preserve these far-flung lands, and that we, Christians, have destroyed so many kingdoms. For wherever the Spaniards have passed, conquering and discovering, it is as though a fire had gone, destroying everything in its path."[\[42\]](#)

For the millions of natives already dead from mining gold and working on plantations, the horrors of the Potosí silver mines may have been greater. Descending hundreds of feet into the earth for a week at a time, hauling hundred pound loads up ladders with only a candle to give light, most of the millions who went to the mines died there or along the way. One observer wrote that a Potosí mineshaft was "a mouth of hell." The natives were forced to use mercury in refining the ore, which added to their misery and death rates.[\[43\]](#)

Slightly preceding and concurrent with silver mining in South America, the region's coca plantations were native death factories. Life expectancy on the plantations was measured in months. The Aztecs had an alcoholic drink called pulque, made from fermented cactus. Drinking pulque was generally forbidden in Aztec society before Cortés "discovered" them. After the conquest, getting drunk became the native pastime as they underwent the [profound psychological dislocation](#) of being conquered, enslaved and their culture actively attacked by the Spanish priests, in an attempt to eradicate their culture and turn them into "good Spaniards."

As the Aztecs had restricted alcohol, consumption of the coca leaf was restricted in pre-conquest Peru. After conquest however, the coca habit swept the natives, and chewing it became their pastime, undoubtedly to soften the psychological and physical hardships that the natives endured due to the "unrestrained greed of the Spaniards."[\[44\]](#)

Accompanying the natives' genocide were numerous accounts by outraged Spanish observers and

attempts by the crown to limit the abuses, but it rarely slowed the carnage. Estimates of the death toll of Incan natives after a century of Spanish presence range from a “low” of a third of the population to more than 95%.[\[45\]](#) The natives in the Valley of Mexico were probably more than 90% decimated in the first century after conquest. In the sixteenth, seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, fifteen, sixteen and eighteen epidemics respectively swept through the Valley of Mexico.[\[46\]](#)

Cieza de León remarked that the Spaniards exaggerated human sacrifice and other unsavory aspects of the Incan culture to attempt to [justify conquest and exploitation](#), in a timeless dynamic. The Spaniards constantly inflicted surprise attacks on their “hosts,” from [Xaraguá](#) to [Cholula](#) to [Tenochtitlán](#) to the [Incas](#). Attacking sleeping villages was a Spanish tactic, with the [most capable and virtuous conquistador](#) practicing it, and it quickly became standard Spanish practice. Greed was a vice that the Aztecs nurtured, but they were about the only people of the pre-Columbian New World who did, which was partly why the Spaniards appreciated their culture and incomparable markets. Among most New World natives, greed was a terrible vice, and among many tribes, greed was not even a concept. The idea of owning land was as strange to many native tribes as owning the sky would be.

In South America, Central America or North America, when captured, natives were each loaded with about 75 pounds of loot, and then marched towards the coast. They were chained together at the neck, forming long marching lines. If a native faltered, collapsing under his load (women also met this fate), the Spaniards beheaded him as an easy way to remove him from his collar. The natives in line had to step past or over the headless body.[\[47\]](#) In one region where that practice flourished, the native word for “Christian” was the equivalent of “demon.”[\[48\]](#)

Spain had a steeply stratified society; 85% of the population was composed of landless peasants, while a few families owned more than half of Spain's land. About the only career options for ambitious peasants were becoming priests or soldiers. The Madonna/whore mentality was deeply ingrained in the Spanish men. The Spanish also picked up some of the worst traits of the Moors, such as embracing machismo and the practice of having harems. Sometimes even priests had them. In colonial Paraguay, the *average* Spaniard had nearly twenty native concubines.[\[49\]](#)

The Spanish soldiers who conquered the New World mainly came from the peasant class. The New World's soldierly leaders were generally *hidalgos*, which was the lowest form of Spanish nobility, usually meaning that an ancestor did well in battle against the Moors. From the moment they discovered the naked women of the Caribbean, they were like brutal kids in candy stores. Raping native women was perhaps the favorite pastime of Spanish soldiers, from 1492 until the 1800s, which is where the huge mestizo class of Latin America came from. Their role models were the grandees of Spain, who were rich landowners that did not take off their hats in the king's presence. The merchant and skilled classes of Spain were significantly composed of Jews and Moors, but they were run out of the country, which helped set the stage for Spain's decline in comparison to its European rivals.

[When Ponce de León “discovered” Florida](#) in 1513, the natives violently resisted the Spanish intrusion, for the first hostile welcome recorded in the New World.[\[50\]](#) The Spanish then began

raiding the coastline. In 1521, the same year that Ponce de León died battling Florida's natives as he again invaded, two Spanish ships visited the Bahamas, where Columbus first made landfall in the New World. The Bahamas had long since been depopulated by the Spanish slave trade. Not finding anybody to enslave, they then sailed along the coastline and landed in present-day South Carolina. They outran the Spanish reputation and the natives welcomed them. The Spanish gave food and other gifts to the great numbers of natives who greeted them. The Spaniards invited them onto their boats for further festivities. The number who came aboard is estimated at between 60 and 130. When the natives were safely aboard, the Spaniards set sail for Española. One ship was lost at sea, while the other delivered its human cargo to Santo Domingo. Those natives had to fend for themselves, and were reduced to scavenging garbage and eating carrion. In 1526, only one of those captured natives still lived.[\[51\]](#)

One young captive came under the control of Lucas Vázquez de Ayllón, an Españolan plantation owner who sponsored that slaving expedition and others, bringing several boatloads of hapless North American natives to Española. Ayllón became quite attached to the boy and practically adopted him. The boy was named Francisco Chicora. He quickly learned Spanish, was baptized, and was eventually presented at the Spanish Court. Chicora spun grand tales of his homeland, and Peter Martyr, who was uncharacteristically taken in by the boy's fantastic stories (Oviedo was skeptical of the boy's tales), eagerly wrote them up. Bedazzled with Chicora's stories, Ayllón planned to colonize Chicora's homeland, and an expedition sailed in 1526, with six ships and 500 men (and even some women). Ayllón had plans to establish a peaceful colony. Even [Montesinos](#) was involved. It was the first attempt at gentle New World settlement by the Spanish.

The Spanish treated Chicora as well as any Native American ever was, but his first act upon coming home was fleeing back to his people, abandoning his benefactors. As the [Jamestown](#) Englishmen later voted with their feet, so did the natives who were treated to the best that Europe had to offer. As early as Columbus' second voyage, as he ["rescued" natives](#), they almost always fled from their "benefactors" at the first opportunity. Ayllón did worse than misjudge Chicora's motivation; the Spaniards ran their flagship aground as they made landfall, losing the greater part of their food and equipment. Instead of the fantastic paradise that Chicora had painted, the Spaniards found themselves shipwrecked in swampland, and all natives fled inland. Ayllón sailed southward with the remaining ships, and found more suitable lands near present-day Savannah, Georgia. Ayllón soon died, Spaniards began killing one another and the colony fell apart. Some Spaniards strayed into native villages, quickly wore out their welcome and were killed. Only about 150 bedraggled Spaniards made their way back to Española.[\[52\]](#)

The failed colony left a lasting impact, however. Hernando de Soto had perhaps the most improbable career of any Conquistador. He is the only Spaniard to have been prominently involved in the first plunderings of Central America, South America *and* North America. Born in about 1500, he got an early start in raping Central America as one of Balboa's men, perhaps as early as 1514. Balboa was about the most capable and virtuous of all the Conquistadors, but he still wantonly killed natives and fed them to his [dogs](#), had gold fever and played a large part in the complete depopulation of Central America, as millions died.[\[53\]](#)

[Balboa](#) was beheaded in a power play by his father-in-law, in another example of how the most

dangerous New World enemies of the Spanish were often the Spanish.[\[54\]](#) After getting rich in Central America, Soto became an investor/participant in the 1532 *entrada* to the Incan Empire, and his share of that pillage made him fabulously wealthy.[\[55\]](#) For those in greed's thrall, there is no such thing as "enough." Not satisfied with his vast, bloody fortune, Soto mounted an invasion of North America in 1539, after scouring Cuba for men and supplies.

Although Ayllón tried a gentle colonization, and [Coronado](#) would invade what is today the Southwestern United States in 1540 pursuing gentle principles (although practice and theory were at odds once again), Soto's expedition was openly predatory, seeking another gold-plated civilization to rob. Even when Soto arrived, one region he visited was almost completely depopulated. The woman who presided over the remnants of her empire treated Soto's men to warehouses full of goods (before Soto kidnapped her, in the standard Spanish "exploration" style). Those lands were upriver from the failed Ayllón colony, which probably unleashed the epidemic that depopulated the region, if it was not from other European intruders.[\[56\]](#)

The Soto expedition's chroniclers described a densely populated southeastern North America. Entire civilizations were destroyed by Soto's *entrada*, and regions were devastated by its disease-ridden aftermath, perhaps spread by the pigs he brought along.

In 1559, the Tristán de Luna *entrada* marauded through the thickly populated lands that Soto plundered a generation earlier, and expected to prey upon the same natives. Starvation was the Luna expedition's constant companion, as they trudged through the ruins of depopulated regions. When the Frenchman La Salle traveled the Mississippi River about 140 years after Soto, in 1682, he was in for a surprise. Where there were about fifty settlements along the Mississippi when Soto came, there were perhaps ten when La Salle passed through, and some of those were due to recent native immigrants.[\[57\]](#) La Salle thought there must have been a mistake in the chronicles and maps of Soto's *entrada*, because the lands he visited were wilderness. In 1828, about 140 years after La Salle passed through, a French biologist could locate only four nations of the fifty-two that the La Salle expedition recorded in today's Texas.[\[58\]](#)

In 1542, the year that Soto died on the banks of the Mississippi River, [Las Casas](#)' efforts persuaded Holy Roman Emperor and King of Spain Charles V to sign laws repealing native slavery, but once more, theory and practice resided an ocean apart. In 1550-1551, Las Casas engaged in a famous debate regarding the humanity of Native Americans. Las Casas argued for the essential humanity of Native Americans and all people, while his opponent, another priest, Juan Ginés de Sepúlveda, refurbished Aristotle's philosophy and argued that the Native Americans were natural slaves, simple beasts of burden. In practice, Sepúlveda's argument prevailed, while the Crown gave an ambiguous answer to their arguments a decade later.

In 1552, Las Casas decided to publish his horrifying *A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies*, which he originally presented to the Spanish court in 1542. He published it without the Inquisition's permission, and it became his best-known work and Europe's second most popular book, behind the Bible. Las Casas died in 1566, and his greatest work, his history of the Indies, sat in the Vatican archives for more than three centuries, to finally be published in 1875. Pedro de Cieza de León's

history of pre-conquest Incan society met the same fate, not being published for three centuries. The reason for that treatment was that Las Casas' *Short Account* became a runaway bestseller, and the resultant "Black Legend" became used for propaganda purposes by Spain's imperial rivals, the English in particular. Burying the work of Las Casas, Cieza de León and others became a form of damage control for Spain and the Church, which was battling the Protestant Reformation.

Lack of readily plunderable gold and silver spared the North American natives from immediate, violent conquest. Coronado and Soto invaded North America, looking for the El Dorado, but none was discovered. Nevertheless, the diseases they brought along devastated the North American natives, destroying many tribes and civilizations before they even saw white men.

Those were the early days of European colonialism, celebrated in the United States with [Columbus Day](#). The Spaniards killed off nearly all the Greater Antilles' millions of natives in [one generation](#), so Caribbean colonialism is not a good example to chart European colonialism's development. The conquest of the Aztecs and Mesoamerica, however, is the earliest example of European colonialism in the Columbian phase.

The Valley of Mexico was the center of Mesoamerican civilization and the New World's most densely populated region, crowned by its most spectacular city, Tenochtitlán. The legalistic Spanish enacted many laws that exploited the natives, and the laws that supposedly protected them were largely ignored. The misery seen today in Mexico was partly created by a constellation of such laws and their enforcement.

A series of institutions came and went in colonial Mexico. First there was encomienda, then repartimiento, and finally there was the hacienda (the rancho was a related institution). Encomienda and repartimiento were systems that commandeered the native labor.[\[59\]](#) As epidemics and Spanish rule decimated the native population, farms and villages were abandoned, so the Spanish took the land. A spectrum of tactics existed for obtaining the native land "legally." Often natives "sold" the land, but it was rarely, if ever, a fair deal. Transactions were usually performed under duress or fraud.[\[60\]](#) Other times it was given to the petitioning Spanish directly. They ended up owning the land, and recreating the great ranches that dominated Spain. By 1600, most of the Valley of Mexico's arable land was in the hands of Spaniards.[\[61\]](#) Lower-class Spanish immigrants became lords in a New World. The hacienda system evolved from that seized land.

The hacienda system was the first one without forced labor, but it was not forced because it did not have to be. By the time the hacienda system appeared, the natives had been reduced to such abject poverty, as the white lords owned everything, that working for a hacienda could provide badly needed food and shelter. Forced labor institutions still existed, however. In the most notorious, the obraje system, which was a prison labor camp, the workers spent their entire lives locked up, producing textiles and other goods. One of the most dreaded forced labor systems was work on the aqueduct that was being built and maintained to slowly drain the Valley of Mexico's lakes, known as the Desagüe.

Gold, silver, mercury and salt were royal monopolies in Spain's New World territories. Commercial monopolies, granted by the Crown, greatly inflated the cost of European goods in the New World.

The net profit margin on goods shipped to the New World was 50%, according to one qualified observer.^[62] The moneylenders who financed New World expeditions received interest rates from 50% to 90%, partly because of the great risk of failure by shipwreck or piracy.^[63] Also, the Crown controlled or banned certain industries so they could not compete with those in Spain.

[Gold and silver](#) were by far the most lucrative Spanish exports from the New World. Also exported were hides, dyes and sugar, although they aggregated less than 10% of the value of gold and silver during the 1560's. The traffic of goods had virtually [no net beneficial effect for Europe](#), while the natives died off by the tens of millions. The substantial benefits to Europe and the world from Native Americans were the introduction of native foods such as corn and potatoes, the democratic ideals of the [Iroquois](#) and many other benefits, but virtually none of that had happened by 1600.^[64]

Corn had been the backbone of the native economy, where it was generally raised in communal plots. That changed too, and eventually haciendas raised most of the corn (and wheat cultivation began to dominate in some areas). The natives no longer had control over the food they ate. Capitalistic practices made their appearance, and hacendados speculated on prices by hoarding, undercutting native producers with bulk transactions and manipulating the markets with their control of supply.^[65] Those practices led to native hunger.

The Catholic Church was a major player in New Spain's transformation. Church-owned monasteries, haciendas, obrajos and other institutions dotted the landscape. Natives were required to give tribute to the church, and many priests became rich. For every friar who sincerely believed in his holy mission, others kept concubines, solicited women during confessionals, drank heavily, fed people to their dogs and so on. As with the monastic wineries in Europe, New Spain's versions often made pulque, although many priests tried stamping out drunkenness. The Jesuit hacienda of San Xavier was devoted almost exclusively to making pulque (they sold more than six million pounds of it in 1770), and had one of the highest incomes of any hacienda.^[66]

Another economic effect of European hegemony was the introduction of guilds. They were anti-competitive institutions, and the natives were often excluded from them. Blacksmiths and veterinarians, with their relationship to elite European horsemanship, made it clear that natives were not allowed in their professions. All apprentices were to be "Spaniards, pure and without stain, as demonstrated through their baptismal records, for ours is a noble profession."^[67]

Laws enacted in colonial Mexico, called New Spain in those days, were explicitly racist and designed to oppress the natives. Three races - European, African and Indian – met in the New World. The Spanish developed sixteen categories of interracial distinction in eighteenth-century New Spain.^[68] Of the 200,000 "Spaniards" in New Spain by 1570, it is estimated that two-thirds were of Jewish or Moorish descent, to cloud the racial picture further.^[69] Conquering Spaniards marauded from town to town, seizing the best looking women for their concubines and creating the huge mestizo class of Mexico.

Erstwhile Cortés allies Tlaxcala and Huexotzinco found themselves much worse off with the Spanish overlords than the hated Mexica, and they were the natives who got the "good deal" from the

Spanish. They would not have believed it, but the days when the Mexica ruled were the “good old days.” Helping Cortés conquer Tenochtitlán slit their own throats in the end.

By 1560, forty years after they performed their "heroic" service, the tribute extracted from the Huexotzincos by the Spanish was *seven times* what the Mexica had obtained from them. The deal Cortés made with the Tlaxcalans was that they would never have to pay tribute at all.[\[70\]](#) The Tlaxcalans eventually fared much the same.

Europeans honored their agreements when they were convenient or served their interests, but when an agreement obstructed European desires, it was not worth the paper it was printed on. Europeans would always find a legal rationale, no matter how strained, to justify their behavior. They backed up their legalistic arguments with deadly violence.

Occasionally the most abusive Spaniards would find themselves being imprisoned for their crimes against the natives, but that treatment was reserved for either the most evil of the lot or those with political enemies.[\[71\]](#) The crown-sponsored *residencias* and *audiencias* were tribunals that investigated the conduct of New World officials such as Cortés. The tribunals recorded many allegations and evidence of misdeeds, information that historians use today. While such investigations may seem to reflect the Spaniards' “just” nature, and indeed “justice” seemed to be served at times, the *residencias* were mainly used to trim the power of those posing the greatest threats to Crown authority.[\[72\]](#)

Fraud, corruption and exploitation were the facts of life in colonial Mexico, and the natives always bore the brunt of it.[\[73\]](#) The legal system was rigged to favor the Spaniards. One of the few honest lawyers in New Spain suggested a method to reduce the fraud and corruption: keep Spanish lawyers out of the natives' business.[\[74\]](#)

European cultural practices could be found in many facets of the colonial experience. Although Montezuma had a hunting island, the aristocratic "hunts" of Europe made their appearance, using thousands of natives to flush the animals out to be slaughtered at leisure by Spaniards trying to act like European lords.[\[75\]](#)

Before the middle of the seventeenth century, the native population in Mexico bottomed out at probably less than ten percent of the pre-conquest population.[\[76\]](#) After that, it began a slow recovery. After studying what the Spanish did to the Caribbean and periphery, what they did to the Aztecs and Mesoamerica, what they did to the Incas and South America, their “explorations” into North America, what the Portuguese did to Brazil, and after looking at the death rates in the mines, plantations and periphery, I estimate that between fifteen and twenty million natives died as a direct result of the violence and greed of the Spanish and Portuguese during the 1500s. Some can argue for as few as ten million (while others argue that there were not ten million natives in the whole hemisphere), and others can argue for as many as thirty million. European diseases killed off another fifty million natives or so in the 1500s, and the Spanish and Portuguese labor practices probably contributed substantially to those fifty million deaths. It is within the range of modern estimates to say that the New World's human population declined by 90% during the first century of

the European invasion, or by about 70 million people. It is an immense tally, with nothing in world history to compare it to.

Spaniards remade the New World's ecological systems. Imported cattle, sheep, pigs, horses and jackasses dominated the landscape. Chickens became a barnyard staple. Sugar, bananas, and citrus fruits were introduced and flourished.[\[77\]](#) In many places, the landscape was altered beyond recognition.[\[78\]](#) Spain was a land of shepherds and cattle ranchers, and many farmers in Spain were put out of business as the rich, herd-owning, land-owning aristocracy obtained the legal rights for their livestock to overrun the land.[\[79\]](#) Spain's great herds helped make it such an arid land.[\[80\]](#) South of the great bison herds of North America, there were no large roaming herds of grazing animals. Huge tracts of farmland were destroyed throughout the New World by those imported European grazers, with areas previously cultivated or unused quickly destroyed, leaving a desert-like environment behind. In Spain, the sheep dominated. In New Spain, the cattle dominated. Deforestation and mass grazing altered the landscape immensely.[\[81\]](#) In a replication of what happened to the Mediterranean and eastern Atlantic islands, the Spaniards noted that when they cut down the forests for their lifestyles, the streams dried up and eventually there was less rainfall.[\[82\]](#) The desert-like environment of Mexico is not completely natural, but is somewhat the result of Spanish depredations.[\[83\]](#) Not only was 90% of the human population exterminated, the first century of the Spanish invasion was also the greatest ecological catastrophe for native plants and animals in history, rivaled, and in ways exceeded, by what the English and Americans would later do to North America.

Native Mesoamericans were not always great environmentalists. The collapse of the Mayan "classic" phase before 1000 AD, the fall of Teotihuacan and other events in pre-Columbian Mesoamerica were probably related to an overtaxed environment. The Europeans, however, initiated what is called "The Rape of the World."[\[84\]](#) Their increasing technological prowess was largely directed at developing more effective methods of exploitation and killing each other.

There was a major effect of the Spanish gold rush on Europe: the money revolution.[\[85\]](#) Before Europe's money revolution, land was the primary basis of wealth. Money became the primary symbol of wealth during the Spanish gold rush, with Europe's money supply tripling during the first fifty years of conquest. By 1800, the money supply in places such as France and Italy increased by about twenty-fold. Because gold and silver were the basis of money in the Old World, it heralded Europe's ascent relative to its rivals, such as the Ottoman Empire. The flooding of Europe by New World gold and silver, although it made no European society wealthier, crippled the Ottoman Empire's monetary system. Ottoman coins fell to half their value in the first century of the New World's plunder, and the Ottoman Empire never regained its former prominence.

With the Spanish gold rush, [greed](#) became a mainstay of the European mind. While gold lust inflamed the Spanish mind, England and France were plundering Spanish ships coming back to the New World, laden with gold and silver. The pirate [Francis Drake](#) became England's richest private citizen and was knighted for his surprise pillage of Spain's Pacific ports.

Europe's money revolution resulted from tens of millions of Native American deaths, and brought no

real wealth to Europe. What the Spanish gold rush *did*, however, was change how Europeans viewed money and wealth. In his classic study, Tzvetan Todorov showed how contemporary Spanish chroniclers chalked up the motivation of Spaniards in the New World to sheer greed. It was a new phenomenon. Todorov wrote:

“Certainly the desire for riches is nothing new, the passion for gold has nothing specifically modern about it. What is new is the subordination of all values to this one. The conquistador has not ceased to aspire to aristocratic values, to titles of nobility, to honors, and to esteem; but it has become quite clear to him that everything can be obtained by money, that money is not only the universal equivalent of all material values, but also the possibility of acquiring all [spiritual values](#). It is certainly advantageous, in Montezuma’s Mexico as in preconquest Spain, to be rich; but one cannot purchase status, or in any case not directly. This homogenization of values by money is a new phenomenon and it heralds the modern mentality, egalitarian and economic.”[\[86\]](#)

Adam Smith noted in his *Wealth of Nations* that gold mining was [perhaps the most counterproductive economic activity that any nation could engage in](#). The only “wealth” that gold and silver had was what people bestowed on it. It was only valuable because it was scarce and difficult to produce, and so became a form of currency. Obtaining more of it would not grow one more crop, manufacture one more tool, or make society any wealthier, unless luxury goods such as gold plating and silverware counted. In fact, such activities made society *less* wealthy, because so much activity was devoted to such a worthless pursuit. Expendable natives were the only way that Spain’s 16th century gold rush could take place. Gold rushes are merely counterfeiting operations, in essence stealing from one’s neighbor.

The grim joke was on Spain in the end. In 1557, a mere generation after the huge Incan haul began hitting Spain’s shores, [the Spanish Crown went bankrupt](#). Although some Spanish scholars cautioned the Crown that simply importing shiploads of gold and silver would not improve Spain’s economy, if nothing were done to develop the real economy, their advice was ignored. By about 1580, Castile no longer raised enough food to feed its people, and by the 1590s, its textile industry was in steep decline. Price levels rose in Spain by 500% by 1600, the Spanish Armada was destroyed in battle with England in 1588, bubonic plague swept through Spain beginning in 1596, killing off nearly 10% of its population, and Spain was arguably worse off in 1600 than in 1500, for one of history’s greatest ironies. The 1500s had seen Spain rise to the height of European power, to decline into a backwater, imperial has-been, with its empire eventually seized by its rivals, or its imperial domains revolting and becoming independent. Gold, weapons and rapacity generate no real wealth, and Spain’s experience is instructive.

Among the most famous and best works on the early Spanish experience in the New World is Carl Sauer’s *The Early Spanish Main*, and the book’s cover sums up the character of those early days, stating that the book was,

“not so much a record of European villainy as of human stupidity. Columbus’ lack of understanding not merely of where he was but of the possible consequences of his being there established a pattern of conquest and settlement that was repeated all over Spanish America.”

The book’s foreword finishes with a quote from Sauer:

“the ‘frontier’ attitude has the recklessness of an optimism that has become habitual, but is residual from the brave days when north-European freebooters overran the world and put it under tribute. We have not yet learned the difference between yield and loot.”[\[87\]](#)

Long ago, Sauer saw the nature of the West’s “progress”:

“We have accustomed ourselves to think of ever expanding productive capacity, of ever fresh spaces of the world to be filled with people, of ever new discoveries of kinds and sources of raw materials, of continuous technical progress operating indefinitely to solve problems of supply. We have lived so long in what we have regarded as an expanding world, that we reject in our contemporary theories of economics and of population the realities that contradict such views. Yet our modern expansion has been effected in large measure at the cost of an actual and permanent impoverishment of the world.”[\[88\]](#)

As David Stannard, Ward Churchill and others have competently made the case, although Spain’s imperial rivals used the Black Legend for propaganda purposes, it did not make the so-called “legend” less real, and Spain’s European rivals were no better in their attitude toward the natives they encountered, especially the English.[\[89\]](#) About the only reason the Spanish depredations racked up the greatest death toll was that they had a “virgin” hemisphere to rape, having it nearly to themselves, for about a century.[\[90\]](#)

Study of the early Spanish experience in the New World identifies several dynamics that have been central to the West’s experience ever since: greed, violence, sexism, nationalism and proselytizing. Not that any of them were necessarily new phenomena, but they were all indulged on a level that had largely not been seen before. On a vast scale, women were raped, men were worked to death and children were used as [dog food](#). Spanish nationalism was a new phenomenon, and Christian

proselytizing hit the mother lode, just as the Church began losing its power. Christian ideology eventually gave way to secular religions, such as [materialism](#), [nationalism](#) and [capitalism](#).

The economic ideology known as mercantilism took root during those early colonial days. The basic idea was importing cheap raw materials from the subjected colonial peoples, and exporting one's way to prosperity. The Spanish were the first to practice it, in relatively primitive fashion, as [they exploited Mesoamerica](#). Spain's plunder of Mexico is the predecessor to the more refined exploitation that the British would later inflict on [India](#). Spain dominated the first century of Columbian-era colonialism, but they were not alone on stage.

The Portuguese experience was different. Each European power had distinctly different methods by which they pursued their colonial enterprises. While Spain had little trust in its freebooters, as they always tried carving out New World empires for themselves, and endless tribunals were held to try trimming their ambition, the Portuguese Crown did not continually hound its imperial agents, but maybe it should have. It is estimated that in those early days, only about a quarter of the revenues that should have made it into Portugal's royal coffers ever got there, the rest being skimmed off along the way by the corruption in Portugal's nascent imperial system. The lavish court and inefficiency of Portugal's imperial system left the Crown continually strapped for cash.

Lisbon became the heart of Europe's early imperial efforts. Portugal's African slaves became domestic servants in Lisbon. By 1550, Lisbon had about 100,000 people in it, nearly 10,000 of them Africans. The 1494 Treaty of Tordesillas divided the global romping grounds between Spain and Portugal. The early Portuguese success was with its trade route to Asia. The Portuguese originally viewed Africa as an obstacle to getting at Asia, although the slaves and gold from Africa came in handy. After Lisbon was satisfied with its number of African slaves, Portugal began using them on the sugar plantations on its Atlantic islands. The first instance of Portuguese slaving in the New World was when the Corte Real brothers seized more than a hundred gentle Beothuk Indians from the shores of Newfoundland in 1501, and delivered their cargo to Portugal.[\[91\]](#) Although the king was pleased, those were the only boatloads of slaves that Portugal obtained from that region.

The discovery, conquest, sack and destruction of the Aztec Empire brought great excitement to Europe. The Spanish gold rush began in earnest with that event. Until then, Europeans had largely encountered "primitive" natives in the New World, but the Aztecs were another matter. Their capital city was arguably the world's most spectacular, its markets more breathtaking than anything than anything the Spanish invaders had ever seen. After the Aztec discovery and sack, endless boatloads of European freebooters set sail for the New World, seeking fame, riches, and there was a virtually unlimited supply of native women to rape. The Treaty of Tordesillas unwittingly gave Portugal a chunk of South America as their domain of conquest, but Portugal was far too busy mining the "Golden Goa" route for the spice trade to devote any resources to the New World. French ships began landing in Brazil in 1504, and they had no respect for Portugal's theoretical claims to it. French pirates harried the returning Spanish ships as early as 1504, seized a huge Aztec plunder shipment in 1523, and began raiding Spain's Caribbean ports in the 1530s. Silver was relatively expensive in those days, and had been getting more expensive for centuries, as gold was the primary preoccupation of mercenaries and miners. In China there was a particular desire for silver, and it was better to pay them in silver for their goods than gold. Portugal began seeking silver.

In 1530, Portugal's King John III sought to establish a significant presence in Brazil, and sent an expedition to scout it. By that time, South American coastal natives were well acquainted with European intentions and fought off European settlement attempts. The 1530 expedition was successful, and captured some French ships that traded in brazilwood. In 1532, the Spaniards discovered, conquered and sacked the Incan Empire, including its capital city of [Cuzco](#), in what may have been history's most lucrative sack of a capital city. In 1534, Portugal began granting "captaincies" in Brazil to ambitious minor nobles. The captaincies were authorizations to invade and conquer Brazil. The discovery and sack of the Incan Empire was as good as it would get for Europe's pillagers, but it did not keep them from dreaming of finding more gold-plated empires in the New World's vastness. That insatiable lust drove [Coronado](#) into Pueblo land and [Soto](#) into southeast North America. The Portuguese captains eagerly invaded the Amazon basin, but to their great disappointment found no cities gilt in gold and silver. They also did not find vast settlements of sedentary natives, as the Spanish had done, although, as with the rest of the New World, increasing research keeps revising the estimate upward of pre-Columbian Amazonia's population. In 1992, the most prominent scholarly estimate put it at nearly six million.[\[92\]](#)

The Portuguese presence, as with all European invaders, meant native genocide, but the Portuguese colonial experience was gentler than Spain's. Probably mainly due to Portugal's past, with its many races and ethnic groups living together, due to its many invasions and forced migrations over the millennia, the Portuguese colonial experience was the least racist in character of the European powers. Consequently, Portugal had a more harmonious racial mixing with those it conquered and traded with, which is reflected in Brazil's *relative* multi-ethnic harmony today.

Untold numbers of Europeans died in the jungles, mountains and deserts of the New World, seeking El Dorados, Seven Cities of Cibolas and other mythical lands that dripped with riches. Portuguese enthusiasm for overrunning their chunk of South America quickly waned, and they tried reproducing the sugar plantation culture of its Atlantic island colonies, and instead of dumping its criminals on the Atlantic island of São Tomé, it began dumping them in Brazil in 1535. By 1545, the plantations of Brazil sent about fifty shiploads of sugar to Europe each year. In theory and practice, the early Portuguese experience in Brazil was similar to Spain's in the Greater Antilles. Lip service was given to converting the natives to Christianity, and zealous missionaries (in Portugal's instance it was the Jesuits, beginning in 1549) did their best to convert the natives, but the outcome was that the natives were enslaved as they were "christianized" and worked to death. Native Americans always died off quickly when subject to the rigors of plantation and mine slavery. The enslavers also introduced epidemic disease that carried off incredible numbers of natives, and the evil triplet of starvation, overwork and disease quickly eradicated the native population.

Fortunately for the Portuguese, they had already initiated the world's greatest era of slavery, and bringing in African slaves to replace the extinguished natives was a natural idea, which began in Brazil around 1550. In 1559 came royal approval for Portuguese slavers to sell their wares in Brazil. The Portuguese had been officially selling African slaves to the Spanish in the New World since 1510, when Lisbon authorized the sale of 250. In 1550, there were only about 15,000 African slaves registered in the New World.[\[93\]](#) As the native population became extinct, Caribbean plantation work became an expensive proposition. African slaves were far more expensive than Native American

slaves, and French pirates began plying the Caribbean waters in the 1530s as the plunder of mainland empires and mining activity took off. Spain stopped supporting the Caribbean plantation economy, and the Caribbean became little more than a port of entry to the lucrative mainland. Piracy of Spain's shipments to Europe began in earnest, and in 1565 the fort at St. Augustine was built to protect the plunder route, which became the first permanent European settlement in North America.

Because the Spanish were preoccupied with the gold and silver business, Portugal got into the plantation business, growing sugar in Brazil. In 1570, there were only about 3000 African slaves in Brazil, and as the sugar economy took off, so did the imports. In 1600, there were about 15,000 African slaves in Brazil. By 1650, another 200,000 were brought there.

Imperial Jockeying

While the Spanish and Portuguese were having their way in the New World, Renaissance Europe was in tumult. Similar to how the [Crusades turned out](#), the invention and use of the printing press, in about 1450, did not turn out as the Church had hoped. With the advent of the printed word, the Bible was Europe's biggest bestseller, and the Church hoped to expand its religious hegemony through literacy. It backfired. By 1500, literacy was growing in England's incipient middle class, and was becoming more common in Europe. During the 1400s, student enrollment in German universities quadrupled, and it was representative of Europe as a whole. Europe was slowly becoming educated. When Columbus made his way back to Spain in 1493, Europeans began reading of new lands. While Columbus called himself the "[Christ-bearer](#)," there were about zero conversions to Christianity among the quickly disappearing Caribbean natives. When Cortés and his mercenaries conquered the Aztecs, however, the Church hit the big time in Christian recruitment. In 1524, twelve Christian missionaries came to Mesoamerica to convert the natives who survived the conquest. The mass conversion of Mesoamerica began. There were baptisms of thousands of natives at a time. Although the conversions were rather compulsory, and burning Aztec books was part of the Christianizing process, with the Inquisition following closely behind the converting missionaries, the Catholic Church never before had such immediate and massive success in recruiting the sheep to its flock. However, just as the Catholic Church was enjoying its greatest recruitment success, its European downfall was beginning.

Ever since the fall of Rome and the invasion of Germanic tribes, Europe was the scene of constantly shifting royal alliances and musical crowns. In 1513, Niccolò Machiavelli wrote his most famous work, *The Prince*, and it, perhaps more than any other work, would describe European political reality for the next five centuries. Political "realists" of the 20th century saw his work as seminal.

King Charles of Spain, the grandson of Ferdinand and Isabella, bribed his way into becoming Charles V, Holy Roman Emperor and Europe's most powerful man, in 1519. His reign marked the peak of Hapsburg power. It also began falling apart under his rule. In 1517, Martin Luther posted his *Ninety-Five Theses*, and at the Diet of Worms in 1521, Charles V outlawed him. The Protestant Reformation thus began.

Charles V and England's Henry VIII allied against France, and Charles' armies were victorious against France in 1525, and they battled in Italy. Charles V's armies continued marching and captured the Pope in 1527. Charles V's brother Ferdinand ruled in Austria, but in 1526 the Ottoman armies began invading from the Balkans, and in 1529 they laid siege to Vienna. The continual wars, with Charles V's European neighbors and the Turks, led to a fragmenting empire, and suppressing the Reformation was proving hopeless,

In 1555, Charles handed the Netherlands over to his son Phillip II, who was Spanish by birth. The next year, Charles handed over his Holy Roman Emperor crown to his brother, and in 1557 the [Spanish Crown went bankrupt](#), the first of several bankruptcies that would chart Spain's [decline](#) as an imperial power.^[94] Charles retired to a monastery in 1558, his once mighty empire feeling the strain, and he died that same year.

Las Casas' [A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies](#), published in 1552, quickly became a runaway bestseller, especially in Protestant Northern Europe. That began the "Black Legend," and in 1559 the Church began publishing its infamous *Index Librorum Prohibitorum*, its list of banned books that lasted until the 1960s.

The Catholic Inquisition had its roots in the Church's efforts to exterminate the [Cathars](#) in the 1200s, but the Spanish Inquisition was more of a Spanish nationalistic institution than a Roman Catholic one. King Philip II had little liking for the Netherlands, and his solution to the Protestant Reformation there was to send the Spanish Inquisition. When the Spanish Inquisition was *only* persecuting Moors and Jews, few in Europe really cared, but when Phillip sent his inquisitors to the Netherlands, and the hot tongs began being used on white Christians, that was going too far, and then "The Inquisition" came into being in Protestant polemics.^[95] The Wars of Religion began in France in 1562, lasting until 1598, and a new era of inter-Christian warfare began in Europe. In 1568, the Dutch revolted against Spain's oppressive rule. The Netherlands declared its independence in 1581, becoming Europe's first republic, but the war with Spain lasted nearly continually for eighty years, until the Thirty Years' War ended.

Portugal was largely untouched by the furor that erupted in Europe. Its own Inquisition kept the populace in line and the Reformation did not touch it. However, it also overextended itself imperially. Its tenuous trade route was not the source of its overextension, ironically. Portugal's big mistake was trying to extend itself in Africa, near home. In 1557, King Sebastião came to the Portuguese throne at age three. At age fourteen, he began running his empire. He was virtually uneducated and had two passions, in the great European tradition: religion and warfare. In 1578, with Church assistance, he mounted an expedition to Africa. He had few plans, other than a glorious invasion against the infidel Moors. With an army of about 25,000 people, which included several thousand mercenaries and much of Portugal's nobility, Sebastião sallied forth. For most of the campaign he amused himself with hunting, and he felt that the Moors would flee at the sight of his army. In a ferocious battle in which 40,000 Moors fought, the Portuguese army was annihilated. Sebastião died heirless in Africa, and in 1580, Spain's King Phillip II simply annexed Portugal. A Sebastião cult quickly took root in Portugal's peasantry, which fantasized that Sebastião had not really died in Africa, and would return to lead Portugal back to greatness, the first Sebastião pretender appearing in 1584. The cult persisted while Portugal was under Spanish rule.

Even though Phillip II was careful to not extend Spain's rule over Portugal too oppressively, and left Portugal's imperial concessions alone, Portugal's lot had now been involuntarily thrown in with Spain's. Spain's enemies were now Portugal's, including the Dutch, who were suddenly cut off from Lisbon's trade. By being joined at the hip with Spain, Portugal's imperial fortunes were doomed when the Spanish Armada was destroyed in 1588. While there would be more wars fought with the European powers, the 1588 disaster marked the end of Spain's imperial dominance in Europe, further emphasizing the [bankruptcies](#) the Crown experienced during those years, and other factors of [Spain's decline](#).

By 1600, the Netherlands had cleared all Spanish troops from its lands, and began sailing to Asia to get spices. That same year, England established its East India Company, and it also sought Asian trade. The Dutch formed their East India Company in 1602. The Dutch and English soon became the two great mercantile empires. Their nations were better suited to commerce than Spain and Portugal. England and the Netherlands had rising middle classes and their merchants had not suffered the devastating blows that Spain and Portugal's had. The Spanish and Portuguese inquisitions oppressed Jews and Moors, who comprised a large share of their educated and merchant classes. Portugal, and to a greater extent Spain, had more primitive economies than England and the Netherlands. Throughout the 16th century, Spain exported raw materials such as wool, hides and the gold and silver it was plundering from the New World. England and the Netherlands had a much stronger craft and proto-industrial base, being large exporters of manufactured goods.

The Dutch revolt was part of a series of religious conflicts that culminated in the Thirty Years' War, which began in 1618. Until the French Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars in the early 1800s, the Thirty Years' War was Europe's most devastating war. It killed about four million people and left Germany in ruins, where most of the fighting took place. While Europeans had long ago abandoned any notion of "honorable" war, winning being the only thing that mattered, and the more ruthless the better, the Thirty Years' War took it to a new level, and the concept of "total war" came into being. As Europeans honed their craft in the Reconquest, Crusades, Hundred Years' War and countless other conflicts, they refined the art of violence. While non-European peoples across the world generally regarded organized violence more as a sport or religious experience, in Europe it became a science, which was mainly why Europe conquered the world. Nobody could match European viciousness and their winning-at-all-costs style of warfare, something the Thirty Years' War and related conflicts further ingrained. France had been harrying Spain since the early 1500s, while England was busy subduing its Celtic periphery. By 1600, the Dutch and English began seizing Spain and Portugal's imperial assets.

The new Dutch republic made Spain and Portugal pay for its oppression. The Dutch made their first attack on Bahia, the capital of Portuguese Brazil, in 1604, as the English had also done in 1587. In 1609, a truce was signed between Spain and the Netherlands, which gave the Dutch trading rights with peoples outside of Europe. Most particularly, that meant the Asian trade route, which the Dutch immediately undertook to seize. Arrogant Portuguese proselytizing had caused great animosity among many of the peoples along its trade route, and the Dutch were mainly interested in commerce, so were more welcome than the Portuguese.

In 1619 the Dutch founded what became Jakarta, which became the new center of the spice trade. In 1621, the Dutch incorporated its West India Company, and in 1623 it mounted an expedition that seized Bahia. By that time, its spice route had largely been lost to the English and Dutch, so Portugal devoted its effort toward Brazil and reconquered Bahia the next year. In 1628, the Dutch seized the Spanish silver fleet off Cuba, which was the first time that Spain lost an entire fleet. In 1630, the Dutch mounted another invasion of Brazil, which would be fought for several years. During the 1630s, the Dutch, English and French began growing sugar in the Lesser Antilles, which not only competed with Brazil but also initiated the great age of New World sugar growing, which led to a huge increase in the African-Atlantic-Americas slave trade.

The end of Spanish military dominance was further reinforced by the Dutch defeat of the Spanish fleet in the English Channel in 1639, and the French destruction of the Spanish army at the Battle of Rocroi in 1643. Those defeats marked the end of Spain's military might in Europe. Portugal got its independence back in 1640, the same year that England began having its civil wars.

The Dutch established a trading post on Manhattan Island in 1624, and in 1626 they "bought" Manhattan Island from the natives for a few trinkets. In 1638, the Dutch seized the Portuguese outpost of El Mina in western Africa. The Swedes and Danes even joined the Empire Game briefly, with a short-lived New Sweden in present-day Delaware, established in 1638 but captured by the Dutch in 1654, to be further lost to the English in 1664, when the Dutch lost all their North American colonies to the English.

The English also joined the spice trade, and in 1622 an English-Persian expedition seized Ormuz from Portugal, in present day Oman, at the mouth of the Persian Gulf. Dutch imperial supremacy did not last long. With the devastating Thirty Years' War ending in 1648, it did not take England and the Netherlands long to begin a new series of wars, the first beginning in 1652, with the wars lasting until 1684. In 1664, the New Amsterdam colony in North America was lost to the English, but it had other gains. The peak of the Dutch East India Company's supremacy was around 1669. The Dutch East India Company was a direct forerunner to modern corporations, and was a combination of corporation and state, and owning shares of its stock was a lucrative proposition, for a while. The French East India Company entered the fray in 1675, with its outpost at Bombay.

During the last half of the 17th century, the Asian trade route was the scene of continual battles between the Portuguese, Dutch, French and English traders. Portugal had largely lost out by 1620, and the Dutch by the early 1700s, leaving the English and French alone on the field.[\[96\]](#) The rivals also carved up the Caribbean and periphery into imperial chunks. By 1770, the Spanish kept a grip on Cuba, better than half of Española (today's Dominican Republic), Puerto Rico, New Granada (today's Colombia) and Venezuela. The French took Haiti on Española, and got Guadeloupe and Martinique in the Lesser Antilles, as well as part of the South American mainland, in what became French Guiana. The Dutch got Dutch Guiana and Surinam on the South American mainland, and the islands of Curacao and Saba. The English got Jamaica, and in the Lesser Antilles they got the Leeward Islands, Barbados and Grenada. The Danes were able to hold onto part of the Virgin Islands.

The main Caribbean game was plantation work, although Portugal finally joined the big game with a

gold strike, finally, in Minas Gerais in Brazil. Then the Portuguese had their very own gold rush, which saw about 600,000 Portuguese citizens migrate there by 1760. The Portuguese Crown tried keeping control and getting its cut, but greedy chaos prevailed regularly, as in all gold rushes. As with all New World gold rushes to that time, slaves were needed to make it work. The 18th century was the greatest era of the trans-Atlantic slave trade. Portugal, being the inventors of the African-Atlantic-Americas slave trade, was also its biggest beneficiary. More than half of the slave voyages to the New World were Portuguese, and of the estimated 11 million Africans who eventually became New World slaves (with probably at least an equal number dying, and perhaps as many as [30 to 60 million](#), in the process), more than 4.5 million ended up in Brazil, with the English in second place with 2.6 million slaves.[\[97\]](#) A Brazilian slave could be expected to provide about seven years of usefulness before dying.

The Portuguese, Dutch and Spanish were able to hold onto pieces of their empires, but the English and French dominated the scene after 1700, with the other powers reduced to gnawing on the bones of their former glory. The imperial jockeying during the 1600s, with constantly shifting alliances and endless wars, can make a reader dizzy, and the point of this essay is charting the American Empire, so it will begin focusing on the imperial powers and North America, and especially America's parent, England.

The English and Their Rivals in North America

When Spain's rivals appeared in the New World during the 1600s, they acted similarly to Spain. Spain was after slaves and [gold](#). England's first New World adventures also sought slaves and gold. In 1576, Martin Frobisher captured a native of Baffin Island while looking for the mythical Northwest Passage. Frobisher also found what appeared to be gold, and it was assayed as such in England. The next year Frobisher returned with a mining expedition that devastated the local natives and hauled two hundred tons of ore back to England. The year after that, Frobisher returned to mine two thousand more tons. It all turned out to be fool's gold.[\[98\]](#) In 1577, the same year that Frobisher hauled his fool's gold back to England, the slave runner and pirate [Francis Drake](#) raided Spain's Pacific ports and stole their loot, mainly silver. Drake also sought the Northwest Passage and circumnavigated the earth to complete his mission on behalf of Queen Elizabeth. When Drake returned with his haul, he was knighted and became England's richest private citizen.

Humphrey Gilbert was a soldier who eventually became the English governor in Ireland. Gilbert had a practice of lining the path to his tent with severed Irish heads, a strategy designed to induce a psychological effect when Irishmen led to his tent recognized their relatives among the heads. After an unsuccessful attempt at finding the Northwest Passage in 1578, Gilbert was lost at sea near the Azores in 1583 after a failed attempt at colonizing today's Newfoundland (some colonists mutinied). Gilbert's explorations inspired his half-brother, Walter Raleigh.

In 1585, Raleigh tried establishing a colony at Roanoke. Although the natives of the North American east coast, particularly the southerly shores, had already suffered from numerous Spanish

depredations and European-introduced epidemics,[\[99\]](#) the natives welcomed and fed the Roanoke pirate-colonists, who arrived via the Caribbean, where they plundered and traded with the Spanish colonists. The English pirate-colonists originally hunted for gold, and quickly wore out their native welcome, as they destroyed a town and burned its cornfields when a silver cup turned up missing. The colony failed, with the survivors probably adopted into the native tribes.[\[100\]](#)

Raleigh followed up the Roanoke failure with a fruitless quest for El Dorado, in South America in 1595. He also sought to establish a beachhead to attack and seize Spain's South American mines. Raleigh spent thirteen years in the Tower of London for alleged treason against James I, and was finally released to seek El Dorado again. James I forbade Raleigh to harass the Spanish, who were at peace with England at that time, but Raleigh's expedition attacked a Spanish outpost, his son dying in the process, and Raleigh ended up losing his head in 1618 to satisfy the Spanish Crown.

The first permanent English settlement in the New World was at Jamestown, which began in 1607. By that time, the Europeans had established their murderous intentions in that region, and Jamestown was a military outpost from the beginning, with no women accompanying the first landing. As usual, the invaders sought gold, and their first task was building a fort in the Pamunkey lands before the natives realized what was happening. Due to European-introduced disease, those lands already had a small fraction of the human population that it possessed a century earlier. It may have been no exaggeration when an elderly native told the English invaders in 1608 that he was the only surviving member of his family, going down his family tree for three generations.[\[101\]](#)

The Jamestown relationship between natives and invaders was largely hostile from the beginning. Powhatan was the Pamunkey chief, and his warriors attacked before the fort was finished. The English strategy was intimidating the natives with their weaponry, which included a cannon. Largely for self-serving reasons, Powhatan initially fed the starving invaders, and both sides played diplomatic games. Powhatan's younger brother, Opechancanough, captured John Smith, the most capable Jamestown leader, as Smith tried forming an alliance with a tribe independent of Powhatan. Powhatan studied Smith and adopted him. Powhatan probably thought he was installing his adopted relative as the chief of his new, dependent, white-skinned tribe. The English tried reversing the political situation by crowning Powhatan the next year, and making him a subject of King James by doing so. Neither side probably fully appreciated what the other tried accomplishing with its political gestures.

The English then tried allying themselves with Powhatan's enemies, and Powhatan stopped feeding the invaders in 1608. John Smith then raided the neighboring villages, holding people for ransom, including an infamous instance when he held a loaded gun against Opechancanough, as Smith extorted food. In 1609, the English were starving, sick and began spreading out along the shores in "self-sufficient" settlements. In one expedition, Smith compelled the natives to "sell" an entire village, with its ripening cornfields, to the invaders. War broke out, and Powhatan had his warriors encircle and starve out the Jamestown fort. The Englishmen resorted to cannibalism that winter, and many fled and took up residence with the natives, in the first recorded English instances of "going native" in the New World.

Jamestown was about to be abandoned in 1610 when ships arrived with veterans of the bloody Irish

wars. “Going native” was a capital crime to the English overlords, and in 1610 Jamestown governor Thomas West, known as Lord De La Warr (the state of Delaware is named after him), demanded that Powhatan hand over those English runaways. When Powhatan refused the demand, the English launched several exterminatory raids that wiped out entire villages, and concluded one particularly savage day by executing the children of the village’s chief.

During the first generation of “settlement,” Jamestown’s population was sustained by the continual influx of thousands of “settlers” to replace those who died of disease and starvation. In 1612, some of Jamestown’s settlers ran off to live with the Indians, preferring the native way of life. Governor Thomas Dale had them hunted down and executed. Hanging, burning, shooting and being tortured to death were among the treatments dealt out to those deserters.[\[102\]](#) “Settlers” running off and going native was an epidemic problem for the invading English for generations, and extremely harsh methods were devised to discourage such “abandonment.”

The first Jamestown war ended in 1614, when Powhatan refused to pay the astronomical ransom that the English were demanding for his captured daughter, Pocahontas. He instead accepted her marriage to an English settler who was experimenting with raising tobacco for export. Pocahontas’ forced marriage was one of only three recorded Anglo-Pamunkey marriages during the 17th century. The Smith-Pocahontas love story was originally a fabrication by Smith, with today’s tale a retread of a probably true story of a native woman sparing a member of the ill-fated [Narváez entrada](#), in Florida, nearly a century earlier.[\[103\]](#)

Powhatan died in 1618, and his successor Opechancanough was under increasing pressure from the heavily armed, increasingly well provisioned invaders. The invaders regularly entered into peace treaties that they fully intended to violate, and killing women, children and the elderly was a standard English tactic.

By 1622, the land-hungry English had seized all the good land around Jamestown, and European disease and warfare further thinned the Pamunkey’s ranks. Opechancanough demonstrated his misunderstanding of the English mind by planning what he thought would convince the invaders to quit Virginia. A surprise attack killed 347 of the 1240 English settlers, including the few women and children that lived there.[\[104\]](#) Opechancanough, thinking like a native, thought that such a devastating blow would convince all the English to leave. He reckoned incorrectly. The English retreated to their forts and began mounting attacks on the neighboring villages, which evolved to attacking and securing the fields, which led to hungry Pamunkey people. As the English destroyed or raided native fields, the natives had to make new ones, which the English then hunted for. During those attacks, the English mistakenly killed thirty native allies from the Patowomec tribe, who were helping the English find those new fields. Killing “friendly” natives was something the English and Americans did throughout their conquest of North America, and many times killing friendly natives was not all that accidental, the discovery of their “mistake” accompanied by a wink.

In 1623, English duplicity took a celebrated turn when they poisoned the wine at a peace conference with the Pamunkey, killing two hundred natives. The English then engaged in their first reported scalping, of another fifty Pamunkey killed in an ambush.[\[105\]](#) After Opechancanough’s failed strategy of surprise annihilation, it was open season on the natives. In 1644, Opechancanough was

nearly a hundred years old, and he mounted one last attack on the invaders, but by that time the Pamunkey were little more than nuisances to the vastly more numerous and heavily armed English. In 1646, Opechancanough was captured, chained and put on display at Jamestown, where an English soldier, who was guarding him and thought too him prideful in his captivity, shot him to death.

With Opechancanough's death, the Pamunkey were effectively an extinguished people, with most surviving women and children sold into slavery. In 1672, 17 million pounds of tobacco were exported from Chesapeake Bay, and Virginia's human population was about 44,000 in 1675. About 3500 of them were natives, 2500 were African slaves, and 38,000 were Europeans.[\[106\]](#) With their beachhead established, the English "settlers" quickly began invading their neighbors, seizing native lands and completely eliminating entire tribes.[\[107\]](#)

While the English were securing the lands of Virginia and vicinity, religious fanatics were conquering New England. The Pilgrims who landed at Plymouth Rock were Calvinist Christians, and their dour, fearful philosophy contained a catalog of sinful behaviors that boggle today's minds, such as laughing or kissing one's child on the Sabbath. Calvinist fanaticism would lead to one of the West's last witch trials and executions, in 1692 in Salem. American mythology has held that the Calvinists came to the New World for religious freedom, but the facts do not support that notion. The Mayflower Pilgrims came from the Netherlands, where they had already escaped their persecution in England. They sought economic opportunity, not religious freedom. They were sailing to the English colony at Virginia in 1620, but bad weather and poor navigation landed them in present-day Massachusetts. They came ashore on land that had already been depopulated by European disease, and the Wampanoag tribe fed them and taught the English city dwellers how to farm and survive in the New World.

There really was an original [Thanksgiving](#), where the Pilgrims and their native benefactors feasted and played games with each other, but the settlers eventually annihilated the tribe that welcomed them. The bloody record of the English in New England is probably worse than the English record in Virginia.[\[108\]](#) In 1637, the English slaughtered an entire sleeping village of several hundred people of the Pequot tribe, selling the few survivors into slavery. One leader of the massacre, John Underhill, would later [justify the attack](#) by citing King David's genocidal Old Testament activities. The complete extermination of the village alarmed the Mohegan and Narragansett allies who accompanied the attack, Underhill writing that they complained about the English manner of fighting, because, "it is too furious, and slays too many men."[\[109\]](#)

A Narragansett sachem, Miantonomi, whose tribe helped the English wipe out the Pequot, may have seen the writing on the wall. In 1642, he allegedly spoke to the Montauk tribe on Long Island, and noted that the English arrival was ominous, and unless the native tribes learned to put aside their differences and unite against the white man's invasion, before long there would not be any more natives.[\[110\]](#) The next year, citing rumors of that speech and other activities, the Massachusetts authorities had Miantonomi executed by the Mohegan, a rival tribe and Pequot offshoot. The Mohegan subsequently made themselves useful to the Europeans as warriors and guides, and their utility kept them alive, although repeated visits of epidemics reduced their numbers. Even after absorbing the remnants of tribes they helped extinguish, there were less than 1000 of them in 1680, and only about 200 in 1790. Their "loyalty" may have kept them alive, but settlers kept gobbling up

their lands, with the tribe possessing only 2300 acres in 1790, when their lands were broken up into individual plots. The 1910 census recorded only 22 of them. As with many other tribes that were seemingly extinct, the Mohegan have made a bit of a comeback, being reorganized as a tribe in the 1970s, and claiming about 1000 members today, with the standard casino accompanying their resurgence.

The Dutch, who colonized present day New York, were no better than the English, with the Manhattan governor offering the first known scalp bounty in 1641. Because Underhill proved himself so effective at dispatching sleeping villages, in 1643 the Dutch hired him. The first thing Underhill's men did was attack a friendly and tribute-paying local tribe, the Wappingers. When attacked, the tribe fled to the Dutch governor, asking for protection, not knowing that he had hired their attackers. The governor instead ordered their annihilation, and the subsequent attack killed about eighty men of fighting age, who were then scalped and skinned. The remaining women and children were slaughtered, and severed heads were kicked around the streets of Manhattan like soccer balls during the subsequent celebration. Then Underhill and his men tried exterminating the resisting local tribes, but usually only destroyed empty villages. In 1644 however, Underhill was able to successfully reproduce his night attack strategy, on a sleeping village of about 500 people.[\[111\]](#) After Underhill's men finished butchering them, the church leaders of Manhattan declared the second Thanksgiving. The white invaders then held Thanksgiving celebrations after mass murders of natives. That was the real Thanksgiving tradition in colonial America, one that my history lessons failed to teach me, as I made my construction paper Pilgrim outfit in kindergarten.

Similar to the Jamestown residents who ran off and "went native," in the earliest days of the Puritan invasion there were those who had high appreciation for the native way of life and their human virtues, which were in far greater abundance among the natives than contemporary Europeans. Thomas Morton arrived in the Massachusetts Bay colony in 1625 and lived at his home at Merry Mount, happily living among the natives. The New England of those days was a hunter and outdoorsman's paradise, a fact not lost on Morton, who eventually wrote *New English Canaan*, where he marveled over the paradise that was New England. Morton was first arrested by Miles Standish in 1628, and was shipped back to England to stand trial for selling guns and liquor to the Indians. The charges had slim justification and the case collapsed, with Morton soon returning to his home at Merry Mount. John Endicott then tried having Morton arrested in 1629 on a frivolous charge. John Winthrop had Morton arrested the next year. A kangaroo court ensued, and Morton's house was burned down and he was shipped back to England. The Puritanical colonial authorities worked to silence Morton's joyful voice for a generation.[\[112\]](#) Morton concluded that the colonial Puritan leaders were motivated by a joy in inflicting pain, agony and bloodshed onto others. As Richard Drinnon noted, Morton saw that the Puritan leaders,

"were not coldly righteous monsters, however great their hypocrisy, but men who found their cruelty great bloody fun."[\[113\]](#)

While the symbol of Morton was his happy Maypole, the symbol of the Puritans was the whipping post. The typical English pattern of invasion and genocide was using the slightest imagined affront as justification for exterminating entire tribes, while eagerly taking their land afterward. In the northeastern United States, numerous towns have the word “field” as part of their name, such as the many Springfields that exist. The “field” came from the fact that the town was established by stealing a native town (often obtained by annihilating its inhabitants), and the “field” was where the natives raised their crops.

Notable Puritan leaders such as Cotton Mather rejoiced in the butchery and genocide. Mather openly approved of [Underhill's annihilation of that Pequot village](#), writing that those women and children were “dismissed from a world that was burdened with them.”^[114] Mather wrote of that slaughter, “It was supposed that no less than 600 Pequot souls were brought down to hell that day.”^[115] Mather called the natives who fed and hosted the Puritans “ravenous howling wolves.” The insatiably greedy Puritans and the other English settlers eventually seized more and more land that was Wampanoag, leading to what is called King Philip's War in 1675, Philip being Massasoit's son (the chief who welcomed and fed the original Puritan invaders). The war ended with the annihilation of the Wampanoag, and Philip's head being mounted on a pole at Plymouth for 24 years. Thus ended the tribe that welcomed the Puritans. As with the [Spanish in the New World](#), the English process of invasion and settlement was devastating to New England's environment, which further doomed the natives.^[116]

Underhill also remarked on the method by which the “savages” carried out warfare. Their so-called warfare was highly ritualized, with symbolic gestures, such as firing arrows at the distant enemy and then going home. Underhill said that the Pequot battles seemed more for pastime than conquering and subduing enemies. Henry Spelman, who lived among the [Pamunkey](#), said that in their wars, “They might fight seven yeares and not kill seven men.” It has been estimated that as many as 70% of North American tribes were pacifists, a notion supported by the high status of women in many tribes and the fact that in perhaps two-thirds of the native tribes, warfare was so small a part of their existence that there were no “war stories or battle legends of any kind.”^[117]

The English practiced headhunting before they began invading the New World, as exemplified by [Gilbert's tactics in Ireland](#), as a way of instilling terror in the locals as well as confirming just who and how many they killed.^[118] In the New World, the English began paying people to deliver native heads. Heads were more positive proof of death than scalps, as people could survive scalping, but scalps were easier to haul, an adult human head weighing about eight pounds. The English practice was not just for fun; big money was paid for scalps and heads. During the 1600s, the English in New England offered scalp and head bounties. In 1704, the Massachusetts authorities raised their bounty to 100 pounds per man's scalp, 40 pounds per woman's and “only” 20 pounds for a child's. In those days, a good New England farmer earned only about 25 pounds in a year.^[119]

Indian killing became big business in colonial America, with such lucrative bounties. Nobody could tell if a scalp came from a “friendly” or “hostile” native, and it was easier to kill “friendlies” than “hostiles,” so there was a great deal of “scalp fraud” among the bounty hunters, as they *preferred* killing friendlies, and the less talented particularly went after women and children. Even though

women and children's scalps paid less, there was far less risk in obtaining them, and they were more plentiful than braves. In 1750, "pacifist" Pennsylvania lowered its definition of an adult native male to ten years old, to keep the bounty hunters happy and busy. The scalp bounty business was an immensely popular undertaking in colonial America. As an example, in 1757 the Reverend Thomas Smith of today's Maine was an investor in a bounty-hunter operation. In return for providing ammunition and provisions, Smith and his fellow investors received one-third of the bounty.[\[120\]](#) Scalp and head bounties became an American institution wherever natives were to be found along the "American frontier," clear up until the 1880s, when there were virtually no natives left to be scalped.

The French had a gentler tenure in the New World, but that had more to do with France's political-economic-demographic situation than benevolent intent. While it is true that the French respected Native American culture more than any other European power did, during the 1760s, when France's commitment to New World colonization was its greatest, they had fewer than 50,000 people in the New World, while the English had nearly a million members of its "surplus population" in the New World.[\[121\]](#) Hence, France manipulated the native tribes to its ends more effectively than its European rivals did. In 1536, Jacques Cartier impacted the native political situation by kidnapping leaders deemed obstructive to his aims. Although Cartier's men got [scurvy](#) and were cured by a native medicine man, an empirical observation that Europe would fail to embrace for the next three centuries, they left behind their calling card. The natives began falling prey to European disease almost as soon as they met Cartier and his men. Cartier began wearing out the native welcome early on, and after his last failed attempt at invasion/settlement, the French left the area, and did not return for 60 years.

In 1598, 250 French settlers (200 men and 50 women) tried establishing a colony on uninhabited Sable Island off of Nova Scotia, in a rich fishing area, and had it to themselves. With no interference from either the natives or France's European rivals, the colony completely failed, with murders and desertions. In 1603, the eleven survivors were rescued and brought back to France.[\[122\]](#)

When Samuel de Champlain returned to found Quebec in 1608, he found that the entire St. Lawrence Valley was depopulated. There is speculation as to its cause, but if other European experiences carry any weight, the diseases Cartier's men began spreading almost immediately in 1535 was at least partly responsible.[\[123\]](#) The "help" that Champlain provided the Hurons led to a fairly unique event in 1609. It is about the only surviving account of what North American warfare was like before the white man showed up. Champlain went with a Huron war party to go hunt their rivals, the Mohawks. Champlain was their secret weapon. The Huron and Mohawk met on the shores of Lake Champlain. The Huron sent a delegation to the Mohawks, to confirm their willingness to fight. The Mohawk then hastily made a barricade. That night, the two war parties camped within earshot of each other, singing songs and shouting insults. The next day, the groups approached each other, as three Mohawk chiefs advanced to meet the Huron, still with no arrows being fired or other hostile behavior, Champlain came from his hiding place behind the Huron warriors and shot the chiefs with his arquebus, immediately killing two of them and mortally wounding the third. The Huron killed many surprised and overmatched Mohawk warriors that day.[\[124\]](#) The event gave more evidence of the notion that pre-European Native American warfare, even among such "savage" tribes as the Mohawk, resembled rugby matches more than European-style warfare.

The Huron and Iroquois, as with other tribes, had an unfortunate habit of torturing a captive warrior to death, a practice that horrified Champlain. The Spanish were [horrified at human sacrifice](#), and the French at torturing captives. [Cannibalism](#) however, was a myth virtually made from whole cloth by Columbus on his first voyage (a favorite European myth, to describe “savage” people) and a self-serving one that did not go away. Those were definitely dark sides to Native American cultures, but it all depended on what “atrocities” captured the European fancy.^[125] Burning people to death was a European specialty, which horrified Native Americans. Being fed to the dogs (a [Spanish specialty](#)) was considered the worst way to die for the natives of today’s Latin America, and the Spanish fed native infants to their dogs as a canine delicacy. The Native American tribes, even the highly warlike Aztecs, did not kill women, children and the elderly; something that a warrior knew had no honor in it (although an offering cache of about forty sacrificed children was discovered during the excavation of Tenochtitlán’s great temple, during the 1970s). The Europeans *preferred* killing women, children and the elderly instead of native warriors, as they were far easier to kill, and that practice would eventually render the tribe extinct, which was the desired result. The Europeans were selective in what horrified them about Native American practices, and would usually [greatly exaggerate](#) the darker aspects.

That “help” that Champlain gave the Huron tribe was short-lived. The next year they marauded across the land, with their newfound military advantage, and annihilated a Mohawk party they came upon. The Mohawk did not raid Huron lands for a generation. The Mohawk fought a war with the Mahican in order to gain access to Dutch arms at Fort Orange in 1624. French Jesuit missionaries had been proselytizing in North America since 1611, and their tenure in North America was the gentlest European effort that those early days of invasion would see. Although there was sincere, soul-saving effort made by many Jesuits, it was part of a larger pattern of exploitation that the French would inflict on the natives. No matter how seemingly benevolent the Jesuit intent, their presence exterminated the natives. Priestly zeal was exploited by French elites, similar to how [Peace Corps](#) volunteer zeal is manipulated today, or how the CIA exploited [Ralph McGehee](#)’s zeal. Wherever the Jesuits showed up, smallpox broke out, beginning as early as 1625.

The Huron did not miss the “coincidence” of priests and smallpox arriving at the same time. Huron leaders contemplated wiping out all the priests, but did not, while smallpox repeatedly swept through their ranks. Similar to the Spanish experience with the Aztecs, the natives noticed that the European intruders seemed immune from the scourge that carried off so many of their people. While Cortés attained mythic status among the natives because the 1520 Mesoamerican smallpox epidemic failed to decimate the Spanish invaders, the Huron concluded that the Jesuits must have more powerful medicine and gods, because the epidemics left them untouched. As the Huron died in droves, many decided that the Christian god might be able to save them, and the Jesuits then had great success in converting the natives.

In 1630, there were about 30,000 Huron. By 1640, waves of smallpox reduced them to about 10,000, and half of the survivors were Christian. In the culture that existed before the French showed up, the decimated Huron would have come to an accommodation with the Mohawk, who after all were their cousins, both tribes being Iroquoian. Fired up with new crusading Christian zeal, however, the Huron began attacking the far more numerous Mohawk, who had long possessed

European arms, even though a peace agreement had been negotiated in 1645. The Mohawk and Seneca responded in kind. By 1649, when the Mohawk and Seneca destroyed Huron villages and adopted the surviving women and children into their tribes, the complete demise of the Huron tribe had come to pass.[\[126\]](#) From warfare that resembled rugby matches to the complete extinction of a people in forty years; that was the typical effect of the European invasion, even at its most benevolent.

Even though the French and Dutch efforts had disastrous effects on the natives, the English were by far the most murderous and overtly exterminatory of the European powers in North America, which is partly why they were the most successful. The story of the English in North America is a continual tale of invasion and genocide, with even deliberate introduction of European disease to the natives, which may have even begun in the Massachusetts colony in 1636.[\[127\]](#) As the Spanish did, the English hunted the natives with their [dogs](#).[\[128\]](#) Hunting humans was the ultimate sport for the Spanish and English “settlers.”

Not very different from the Spanish experience, ambitious Englishmen wanted to carve out empires of their own in the New World, and in 1776, a new kind of empire was born.

Fathers of a Different Kind of Empire

The [French and English](#), virtually alone on the world imperial stage during the 1700s, had several full-fledged wars in North America, beginning as early as 1689. In all those wars and heated rivalries, the big losers were the natives, whether they were in North America, Australia, Asia or the South Pacific. The Europeans did not show up to help anybody but themselves.

In 1756 the [Seven Years' War](#) broke out, and was largely about Britain and France competing in the Empire Game. The war was played out across the globe, foreshadowing the so-called World Wars of the 20th century. On Continental Europe, Russia and Austria allied with France, and Prussia with Britain, with other minor players in the mix. The most important impact on the world's people, however, was the imperial rivalry between Britain and France beyond Europe. In North America, the British/French war was called the French and Indian War, and in India it was called the Third Carnatic War. In 1763 the British were victorious, and the next year they began their [rape of India](#), which began in Bengal. After losing India and much of North America to the British, the French then began searching for new lands to claim, and a period of competition between the French and British ensued, especially in the South Pacific.[\[129\]](#) The French were losers there too, as James Cook visited Australia in 1768 and New Zealand in 1769, setting the stage for British invasion and colonization. In 1773, Cook made the first visit to the Antarctic icepack, and in 1778 Cook “discovered” the last great unconquered land: Hawaii, which was probably the closest thing there was to an earthly paradise.

Along with the imperial rivalry was a more salutary trend. The Renaissance marked the beginning of the end of the Catholic Church's dominance. The Protestant Reformation dominated European

affairs for a century, culminating in the Thirty Years' War. The 17th century saw the rise of science and reason, with Galileo, Newton, Descartes, Bacon and others making their contributions. By the early 1700s, [science](#) and reason were on the rise, and religion was on the wane. England's Civil War, also known as the Puritan Revolution, began in 1640 and initiated conflicts that lasted twenty years. It was the beginning of the end of royal absolutism in England, challenging the Divine Right of Kings that James I believed so fervently in. James' son, Charles I, ended up being publicly tried and headed in 1649. The "rabble" was beginning to have a say in their governing, with kings and popes having less influence.

In 1688, England had its Glorious Revolution, which permanently limited the power of English royalty. In 1689, English Parliament passed its Bill of Rights and Tolerance Act, which promoted religious tolerance. Both English legal acts of 1689 directly influenced the U.S. Bill of Rights. England united with Scotland in 1707, becoming Great Britain.

The Frenchman Voltaire spent his first stint behind bars in 1717 for his satirical writings, and his work came to epitomize an era known as the Enlightenment, which was well established by 1750, France being its heart, while philosophers across Western Europe, in Britain most particularly, embraced the movement. Paradoxically, as the imperial rivals were battling across the globe for supremacy, its Enlightenment theoreticians argued for the inherent equality of all people. Today's scholars legitimately wonder just how influential the European experience in the New World was to its Enlightenment philosophers, where truly egalitarian societies were witnessed; something far removed from the European experience.[\[130\]](#)

The collision of Britain and France's rivalry, the Enlightenment and the ambition of British colonists led to the American Revolution and the birth of a new kind of empire. The profits of slavery helped fuel British efforts, both the chattel slavery in North America and the Caribbean, as well as the imperial exploitation that Britain imposed on India. The most prominent British colonists in America were often slaveholders, with Founding Fathers such as George Washington, Thomas Jefferson and Ben Franklin (and even "Give-me-liberty-or-give-me-death" Patrick Henry) being affluent slaveholders. [Washington](#) was perhaps the richest man in America when he became president.

The Europeans played divide-and-conquer from the very beginnings of their invasions, and the natives rarely [realized the European game](#) and put aside their differences to form a united front. Far too often, testosterone overrode the brains and hearts of young men, which thwarted the attempts of elders to maintain peace among the tribes.[\[131\]](#) The French, partly because they had far fewer colonists in the New World, and partly because they were less arrogant and exterminatory than the English, had friendlier relations with the natives, although the French could also be genocidists. French attempts to exterminate the Fox tribe alienated their native allies, which ultimately diminished French efforts in the region.[\[132\]](#) After a generation of warfare, the fiercely independent Fox (who called themselves the Mesquaki) were very weakened by 1730, and living in present-day Wisconsin. They tried escaping, to go live with the Seneca, in present day New York, but their flight was detected. About three quarters of the remaining Fox were women, children and the elderly. After a siege of a hastily constructed fort in a stand of trees, the Fox asked to surrender, but the French would give no quarter and the tribe was nearly exterminated, with several hundred killed. The survivors were parceled out to the French-allied tribes.[\[133\]](#)

The Delaware tribe is of Algonquin origin, and they call themselves the Lenape. When the Europeans showed up, they had been living on the North America's east coast, occupying today's New Jersey and vicinity, for thousands of years. They were considered the eldest of the region's tribes, and had great respect. Their first contact with Europeans was with the Italian explorer Verrazano, working on behalf of France in 1524.[\[134\]](#) Verrazano tried kidnapping the friendly natives. Slave raids were about the only times the coastal natives saw white people for the next eighty years of European contact, which understandably made them a bit hostile toward the invaders. When the European invasion began in earnest, warfare and disease quickly decimated the Delaware, and they were forced to relocate about twenty times before ending up in today's Oklahoma.

A number of the Delaware diaspora became visionaries and prophets, influencing other tribes. Some were pacifists, others were warlike, and Pontiac became a disciple of one of them. An Indian only known today as the Delaware Prophet encouraged the natives to give up drunkenness, intertribal war, magic and other practices, and said that if the natives regenerated their culture, they would be strong again and able to resist the European invasion. In 1760, when the French left the scene, the natives were on their own with the British, whose arrogant, paternalistic, exterminatory attitudes and behaviors led to friction. After three years of dealing with the British, Pontiac had enough. He was chief of the Ottawa tribe, and tried uniting the natives from the Great Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico to attack the British encroachments into Indian lands. In 1763 the attacks began, and they were successful. The British invasion of the Ohio River Valley was especially targeted. Virginian land speculators such as George Washington led the invasion. The French captured Washington and his men in 1754.

As Pontiac's forces were laying siege to forts in Detroit and today's Pittsburgh (Fort Pitt), Jeffrey Amherst, who commanded the British army in North America, and for whom a town in Massachusetts is named, had a series of exchanges with his commanders, and the strategy of giving the Native Americans smallpox blankets was raised and approved by Amherst, rather offhandedly. They [gave out smallpox blankets](#), and a smallpox epidemic broke the siege. The timing of letters, handing out smallpox blankets and epidemics makes it doubtful whether giving out smallpox blankets led to the epidemic *during* the siege, but during the following year, smallpox annihilated the Ohio River Valley's natives, making its conquest by the United States, a generation later, an easier task. The intention of germ warfare is clear, and surely at least contributed to the resulting epidemic that killed more than 100,000 people. Amherst was one a long line of British genocidists, and he even wrote that he wished he could use the Spanish "[dog](#)" method on the Indians, but lamented the fact that he did not have enough dogs for the job.[\[135\]](#) Ben Franklin was a staunch advocate of using dogs on the Indians.[\[136\]](#)

Not long after Amherst mentioned his longing to use dogs on Native Americans, the English nearly replicated the Spanish experience in the Caribbean on the aboriginal inhabitants of [Tasmania](#). On Tasmania, the British invaders used natives for dog food, and three centuries after the [Spanish atrocities](#) the British did the same thing, when the opportunity presented itself. The colonization of the South Pacific and Australia was supposedly the "enlightened" colonization. There were only

about 5000 original Tasmanians, because they were hunter-gatherers and the hunter-gatherer lifestyle cannot support nearly the population densities that agricultural societies can, as the Caribbean islanders were. By 1843, only 43 Tasmanians were left alive, and the last Tasmanian died in 1876, for a complete genocide that the British were responsible for during the modern age.

There was a temporary positive effect for the natives due to Pontiac's war. King George III made the Royal Proclamation of 1763 that set aside the lands between the Appalachians and Mississippi River to be reserved for native tribes. That act enraged the land-hungry colonists, and led directly to the Revolutionary War. The colonists regularly ignored the proclamation. [Daniel Boone](#) was illegally penetrating into today's Kentucky by 1769. He had big dreams to build his empire there, but he was not nearly as successful in his empire-building dreams as Washington was.[\[137\]](#)

While tribes were regularly exterminated, some scattered survivors eked out existences here and there, to give rise to tribes/nations making a "comeback" today, the Taino, Huron and Wampanoag being examples of this trend. It can be seen as a healthy trend (although the casino phenomenon is anything but auspicious), there is reason for skepticism toward some claims, but critiques of white people appropriating Native American culture are accurate.[\[138\]](#) I am nearly an eighth Native American myself (Creek tribe, and perhaps a bit of another), although native blood in the family was something that my ancestors vehemently denied. The "taint" is obvious in some of my relatives; their bloodlines are supposedly all from Northern Europe, but some could have been convincing extras in *Dances with Wolves*. Although I have some native blood, I write this essay as a white American, which I consider myself to be.

In 1769, [James Watt](#) invented the modern steam engine, which was probably the 18th century's most important event, as it made the Industrial Revolution possible. In 1776, two events marked the rise of a new kind of empire. One was American elites signing the Declaration of Independence, and the other was the publication of Adam Smith's *Wealth of Nations*. Similar to how the Catholic Church's influence began unraveling as it reached new heights of power, just as Great Britain was reaching a truly global dominance, its most successful colonies revolted. The American Revolution probably would not have succeeded without French assistance, as France did what it could to thwart its rival. Capitalism already existed when Adam Smith wrote his monumental work, although the term would not be used until the 20th century. Smith, an Enlightenment philosopher, would have been [horrified by today's corporate capitalism](#), although he is considered its father today. Smith's work provided a theoretical framework that dogma would later harden around, as it was used to justify a new breed of thief: the capitalist.

Europe's money supply tripled during the first fifty years of the Spanish invasion, and wealth became seen as money, and money could buy everything, even a [ticket to heaven](#), in the Spaniards' eyes. [Greed](#) became a European mainstay from that time forward. European ideologists transformed a deadly sin into a virtue, and greed is *assumed* in today's capitalistic ideology, with the "law" of supply and demand, and [ever-increasing profits](#) (for the idle owners) being the primary reason for a corporation's existence. Once ideological principles are [assumed](#), they largely [become invisible](#) and are rarely examined afterward.

The European concept of wealth became abstracted with the money revolution, and it became further abstracted with the rise of capitalism. Shares of corporate stock are the ultimate symbols of wealth in today's world, defining the fortunes of the world's richest people, from Bill Gates and the Walton (Wal-Mart) family on downward. Not long ago, Bill Gates possessed more "wealth" than the 100 million poorest Americans combined, to reach surreal levels of wealth concentration. The rise of the corporation was evident when Britain began plundering India, and shares of the English East India Company became coveted as the money rolled in from the [rape of Bengal](#), and the East India Company became the acting government of India.

The United States' government is hailed as the world's oldest, and the best example of the virtues of democracy. The facts are something different. More than 400 years ago, and perhaps as many as 800 years ago, the Iroquois Confederation came into being, founded on its "[Great Law of Peace](#)." It still exists. American elites created the Constitution by borrowing heavily from the Iroquois Confederation's system. The Iroquois had a system that is still more democratic than any political system the West has ever devised. Women owned the village land, cast their children's vote in proxy, and elected the chiefs. The women could replace the chiefs if they did not act as the women liked. It was a balance of power between the sexes that no Western nation has ever approached. White men can still be found who deride the influence of the Iroquois system on the Constitution as "apocryphal," partly because the Iroquois have never put their law to paper. The Iroquois believe that ideas lose too much of their meaning when committed to a limiting form such as writing (and can more easily fall prey to dogmatism, not to mention legalism), a common understanding among the "primitive" natives.

The [Iroquois](#) government was highly decentralized and democratic, with decisions being made by consensus, with little power vested in the hands of any one person. When the United States used the Iroquois system as a model, those monarchical Europeans invented the executive branch (George Washington was almost named king, and to his credit did not like the idea), which has been the primary method by which the U.S. government has been undermined, with almost wholly unaccountable executive branch agencies such as the Internal Revenue Service, FBI, [CIA](#), Department of Justice, Department of Defense and the like, agencies that rely in large measure on secrecy, deception and violence. The balance of power between the branches of the U.S. government is more theoretical than actual, with the same rich interests largely owning all of them, but the presidency is the easiest to manipulate, as there is only one person in that branch, although his retinue is immense.

When the English colonists declared their independence in 1776, industrialization was in its early stages, and land was still seen as the greatest source of wealth. George Washington became America's richest man by "surveying" and stealing Native American land.[\[139\]](#) Stealing their land stole their lives.

American mythologists conjured stories from the thin air about Washington (as they did about [Columbus](#)), such as the story of him chopping down a cherry tree and admitting it to his father because he "[could not tell a lie](#)." Contrary to the fairy tales, Washington was one of U.S. history's most successful criminals, aptly described as the "father of our country." In 1782, as the dust was still settling on America's successful elite revolt (although the poor were drafted to fight in it),

Washington presented a plan to the Continental Congress to defraud the Native Americans. It was a blueprint for theft and genocide. Washington built his fortune partly by stealing native land, so his plan came to him quite naturally, although his initial, more openly militaristic, plan of theft was modified by General Philip Schuyler's "low intensity" method of swindling the natives.[\[140\]](#)

[Washington](#)'s plan was to compel Native Americans to sell their land by treaty. The U.S. agents would promise that their new nation would honor its treaties, but the promises would only be kept until the "settlers" showed up. Then the treaty was not worth the paper it was printed on, and the tribes would be coerced to "sell" their treaty-provided land and be forced ever westward. Washington advocated a divide-and-conquer strategy of negotiating with each tribe separately, and trying to incite animosity between them by playing one against the other. The new "settlers" would then exterminate the game and chop the trees down, thereby making the land even less desirable to the natives. Washington specifically recommended that Indian lands be promised to Revolutionary War veterans, and having those veterans "settle" in Indian lands would form a vanguard of invasion, and those veterans could be used to create a ready-made militia when the inevitable violence broke out, as the natives were forced off their land. That plan was consistent with Washington's view of the natives. Washington doubted that the natives were quite human. He wrote that buying out the natives was preferable to removing them by force, and that their eventual removal would be,

"like driving the Wild Beasts of the Forest...when the gradual extension of our Settlements will as certainly cause the Savage as the Wolf to retire; both being beasts of prey tho' they differ in shape."[\[141\]](#)

The new nation was weak, and Washington's plan was, in his words, "the cheapest and least distressing way" of eliminating the Indians. Allan Eckert observed that Washington's conspiracy was "immoral, unethical and actually criminal," but it "was so logical and well laid out that it was immediately accepted practically without opposition and at once put into action." Eckert concluded, "Without even realizing it occurred, the fate of all Indians in the country was sealed. They had lost virtually everything."[\[142\]](#) I was never told of Washington's clever plan, during four years of American history studies, including college.

History has shown how well Washington's plan worked. Of more than 370 treaties forced onto the native tribes by the United States during the succeeding century, historians cannot find even one that the United States honored. When natives were coerced into the "voluntary" ceding of lands, the U.S. government paid them between one and two *cents* per acre, and then turned around and sold it to land companies and "settlers" for between one and two *dollars* per acre.[\[143\]](#) Forced sales at 1% of the retail price probably is, in proportional terms and arguably even in absolute terms, history's greatest swindle. When Nazi Germany compelled Jews to sell off their properties in the 1930s for bottom dollar in their [Aryanization](#) program, the "buyers" received around half of the asking price.[\[144\]](#) My ancestors profited handsomely from the "cessions" of Native American land.[\[145\]](#) The

issue of dishonest treaty implementation still [exists today](#) in most of the United States' [dealings with foreign countries](#). Washington was the architect of America's Final Solution to the Indian Problem, and America has a national holiday in his name.

As [Zinn observed about Columbus](#), that little tidbit about Washington's plan, which cannot be found in the standard biographies, while American children are told outright [fairy tales](#) about him, is far from innocent. It is not merely good-natured story telling, to deceive American children into ranking Washington up there with Santa Claus. Washington's land grabs, both imperial and private, were the very *essence* of his life and career, and to sweep his greatest crime/achievement under the rug, while extolling his honesty with fabricated tales, is a form of reality-inversion.

The natives, to their credit, saw the likely outcome of a successful revolt by those elite colonists, and few supported the revolutionaries, and they generally backed Britain or hoped they would win. At that time, Britain was trying to honor its [Royal Proclamation of 1763](#). That angered the land-hungry colonists, especially the land speculators, Franklin and Washington among them, who set their sights on the Ohio River Valley.

About as many colonists were loyal to Britain as revolted. About 500,000 American colonists of the day would be considered "loyalists," about 20% of the colonist population.[\[146\]](#) The revolutionaries forced as many as 100,000 British loyalists to flee the colonies. Both "rebels" and "loyalists" were often more on the order of bloodthirsty, criminal rabble than bona fide soldiers.[\[147\]](#) Washington as general did not have a high regard for his Yankee soldiers, noting after a review of his troops in 1775, "an unaccountable kind of stupidity in the lower class of these people."[\[148\]](#) Washington disdained the militias, while they were probably a deciding factor in the war. As with all wars, the poor did the bulk of the fighting for the colonies during the American Revolution, and the war may have widened the gap between rich and poor in America.[\[149\]](#)

By the time Washington became the first U.S. president in 1789, the American invasion of westward lands was well underway. New York, the Ohio River Valley and Kentucky were the early prizes. After nearly two centuries of ultimately fruitless bloodshed, the Iroquois vacated their lands and went to reservation land in Canada, with hardly a shot being fired. Ironically, the Seneca, an Iroquois tribe, who had treaty rights to about half of present-day New York State in 1784, were devastated at Washington's instruction during the Revolutionary War, and Washington was known as "Town Destroyer" among the Seneca.[\[150\]](#) Seneca leader Red Jacket told Washington in 1792 that the mere mention of his name brought trembling fear to Seneca women and children.[\[151\]](#)

Washington was the first in a long line of American empire builders who made the United States into the global empire it is today. John Jay summed up the attitude of the Founding Fathers when he said that those who owned the country should run it. The hallowed Constitution made it clear just who were true citizens and who were not. Full-fledged citizens were white, land-owning men. Women, slaves, natives and white men who did not "own" stolen native land were specifically excluded. In Virginia, in those early days of the republic, about 1% of the population could vote; a proportion that approximates the Communist Party in China today. Just who were the real "patriots" during the American Revolution: the rebels, or those loyal to King George?[\[152\]](#)

The United States has been a *plutocracy* from its earliest days, and having its richest citizen as its first president was no coincidence. Interestingly, the slave-owning elites were the very people who often yelled for “liberty” the loudest.[\[153\]](#) Alexander Hamilton (who was one of the few Founding Fathers who actually freed his slaves), who wanted Washington to become America’s first king, unabashedly sought to give the rich a “permanent share in our government.”[\[154\]](#) The new American government immediately imposed heavy taxation onto America’s poor, generally without fair representation, the exact thing the Founding Fathers said they were fighting the British over. The oppression led to revolts such as Shays’ Rebellion in 1786. The Whiskey Rebellion in 1794 was waged over Hamilton’s whiskey excise tax, which fell heavily on Pennsylvanian farmers.

Hamilton wanted to make George Washington America’s first king, but Thomas Jefferson believed more strongly in democratic ideals. Hamilton and Jefferson were both in Washington’s cabinet, and their differences in philosophy led to the non-Constitutional phenomenon of political parties, the first two being the Federalist and Democrat Republican.

John Adams and Thomas Jefferson were members of a committee of five people that drafted the Declaration of Independence, as was Ben Franklin. The sacred Declaration of Independence is an interesting document. In its original draft, Jefferson charged King George III with waging a “cruel war against human nature” for Britain’s participation in the trans-Atlantic slave trade. Although Jefferson was casting blame on King George, the southern slave-owning “patriots” would not support anything that cast a harsh light on their hallowed institution, so those words were struck from it. What *all* the Founding Fathers heartily agreed upon, however, was the following passage,

“He has excited domestic insurrections amongst us, and has endeavoured to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers, the merciless Indian Savages, whose known rule of warfare, is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions.”

Interestingly, as the [English killed all men, women and children](#) from the earliest days of their invasion, the mass slaughters even [cheered on](#) by their religious leaders, they remarked that when the natives captured white women, [they never raped them](#), as had been standard operating practice for Europeans for millennia. So, while the Indians are uncontroversially merciless savages in the Declaration of Independence, the institution of slavery passed in silence and the reader is left with the high-minded rhetoric that stated, “all men are created equal,” and among their inalienable rights were the right of “Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.” The original statement by John Locke was the “pursuit of property,” but was changed to “happiness” by Jefferson to try appealing to the property-less, who comprised the majority of those living in the colonies. The notions of liberty and property were firmly conjoined in those days of the ascending British Empire.[\[155\]](#) What to make of such a document? Today’s defenders of the Founding Fathers make generous allowances for such a remarkable bifurcation of their minds. Perhaps it is an example of what George Orwell would call

“[doublethink](#)” in his 1984. Jefferson would later write that the choices left to the natives were “[extermination](#)” or expulsion from their lands.

Along with Declaration of Independence, Jefferson and Adams drafted the Articles of War for the new nation, and they simply retreaded the British laws when making it a crime for Americans to use “traitorous or disrespectful words” toward Congress or state legislatures.[\[156\]](#) Adams made that proposed wartime crime a peacetime crime, soon after he came to office. Two laws were passed in 1798, which reflected Adams’ elitist views. The laws were the Alien Act and the Sedition Act. Adams and friends did not want revolutionaries from France, Ireland or, God forbid, [Haiti](#), stirring up trouble, so the Alien Act authorized the summary deportations of “revolutionaries.” Adams did not use the Alien Act, but the Sedition Act was used effectively.

The Sedition Act made it a crime to criticize American officials. Even before the Sedition Act was passed, Ben Franklin’s grandson was jailed for criticizing Adams’ administration.[\[157\]](#) The Sedition Act helped lead to Adams’ political downfall, and the law expired in 1801, but various Sedition Acts were passed during the next two centuries. The Espionage Act, passed in 1917 to specifically curtail freedom of speech, with even presidential candidate Eugene Debs, a staunch pacifist, being jailed by its authority, is in force even today.

Other abridgments of freedom of speech exist today. Pondering the gauntlet that [Ralph McGehee](#) had to run to publish his memoirs, or all those [fired American journalists](#), can be a sobering experience for those who think that there is true freedom of speech in the United States.

Jefferson and John Adams both served as emissaries to France, as did Franklin. Adams and Jefferson were destined to represent two distinct philosophies of American politics. Jefferson nominally believed in democratic rule, and was sympathetic to the French Revolution. Adams saw what the French mobs did with their guillotines, wanted no part of it, and aligned himself with the royalist Hamilton. Jefferson and Adams became heated rivals during their political careers, but rekindled their friendship in their retirement, both dying on the same day.

Adams was a Puritan from Massachusetts, believed strongly in religion and admired English royalty. Jefferson, although a slave-owner, embodied the Enlightenment in America, and as with Washington and Franklin, Jefferson was a deist, not a Christian. Jefferson even created the *Jefferson Bible*, where he edited out all the “miracles” of Jesus and other parts that a rationalist/materialist had a difficult time swallowing. Jefferson rightfully thought highly of Jesus’ *ethics*, but wanted no part of religion’s baggage. There was no resurrection in the *Jefferson Bible*, which ended with Jesus’ entombment.

In the 1790s, the new nation was quite weak. Giving grants of Indian land to soldiers was partly done because the government could not afford to pay them, so the government gave away what was not theirs to give. Washington waged war against the natives as soon as he became president. His strategy of fraudulent diplomacy and low-intensity conflict was not always sufficient. In 1791 the American army, a fighting force more than two thousand strong, led by Major General Arthur St. Clair, invaded the Ohio River Valley and was trounced by a smaller contingent of native warriors in

present day Ohio, not far from Dayton. That defeat saw the greatest proportional casualties that the American army ever suffered. Washington, sobered by the disaster, was able to commit more than a million dollars, a large sum in those days, to making the American military more formidable.[\[158\]](#) Within a few years, the American conquest of the upper Ohio River Valley was complete, with the Battle of Fallen Timbers won in 1794, and the Greenville Treaty signed in 1795, which the U.S. violated in short order, with future president William Henry Harrison leading the swindle of the natives.[\[159\]](#) Harrison's efforts helped lead to [Tecumseh](#)'s campaign to unite the native tribes to resist further U.S. invasion. U.S. expansionism, not only against the native tribes, but also against its European rivals, helped lead to the War of 1812, although that aspect of the war's dynamic is generally minimized or missing from the mainstream histories.[\[160\]](#)

Washington, as was the case with most American plantation owners of the day, engaged in the triple evil of raising tobacco on stolen land with slave labor. It is said that Washington was "troubled" by the institution of slavery. Maybe so, but not troubled enough to actually *free* any of his slaves. He should be given *some* credit, however; his will called for freeing his slaves after his wife died, although he [illegally kept slaves](#) at his Philadelphia residence when president, and when one escaped (two escaped Philadelphia when he was president), Washington attempted recovery by having her kidnapped. He signed the *Fugitive Slave Act of 1793*, which made it a crime to assist a freed slave, and thereby created a slave-catching industry.

Washington was a typical Founding Father in significant ways. Thomas Jefferson shared many of Washington's sentiments. Perhaps more than any other Founding Father, Jefferson could pen the most impressive rhetoric, as with the Declaration of Independence. All too often however, his *actions* were a very different matter. While writing about unalienable rights, Jefferson owned quite a stable of slaves. Similar to Washington, while Jefferson was supposedly a father of freedom, he never freed any of his slaves while he was alive. His hagiographers can always be counted on to stress how well Jefferson treated his slaves, and that he could not afford to free any (and there is a raging debate today regarding Jefferson perhaps fathering the slaves he freed upon his death). He sold his personal library, America's largest private library, which contained more than 6000 books, for \$23,950 to the Library of Congress, a vast sum in those days. For the record, Jefferson's plantation went deeply into debt, up to \$120,000. The issue of freeing the slaves was purely economic. Jefferson could not *afford* to free his slaves, at least if he wanted to continue playing the aristocrat game; such was the logic of an economic system built on turning people into property.

Jefferson exemplified the deeply ingrained racism of America. In scale, intensity and duration, the United States is history's most racist nation. Jefferson, being a child of the Enlightenment, thus derived scientific rationales for his racism. In his *Notes on the State of Virginia*, Jefferson tried his hand at anthropology and wrote at length about African slaves. Jefferson thought they were equal to whites in feats of memory, but inferior in reasoning ability, and he put them well below Native Americans in ability to make art and speak.[\[161\]](#) That is not to indict Jefferson, but to demonstrate how thoroughly racist early America was, that the embodiment of the Enlightenment in America could speculate on the natural inferiority of Africans. If people such as him are hoisted into America's Pantheon, people Americans are supposed to look up to, it is only ethical to examine the saint's life. Jefferson later reasoned that the treatment of slaves might have contributed to their condition, a suspicion that his abolitionist friend [Benjamin Rush](#) was fully convinced of.

Other events further demonstrate Jefferson's humanity. Near his home was an Indian burial mound, and not a long abandoned one. Jefferson noted that about thirty years earlier, passing natives went twelve miles out of their way to visit the mound, where they solemnly stayed for "some time." The burial mound was about forty feet in diameter and twelve feet high. Jefferson made an excavation into the mound, cutting a ditch from end-to-end that he could walk through. He took bones and examined them, noting that skulls generally fell apart in his hands. Jefferson played archeologist, and estimated that about 1000 natives were interred there.[\[162\]](#) While Jefferson would declare that the "dead have no rights," the burial mounds were sacred in the Indian view, as cemeteries are respected in white culture. If Jefferson had played archeologist in a white cemetery, one not long ago visited by solemn descendants, he would have been called a grave robber.[\[163\]](#)

In 1792, Jefferson's notes record a meeting with the British ambassador, George Hammond. Hammond made the blunt observation that the Indians were the big losers in Europe's New World, and that U.S. intentions appeared to be to "exterminate the Indians and take their lands." Jefferson replied that the U.S. system was instead designed to protect the natives (too bad Hammond could not produce [Washington's plan](#) at that meeting), and that the United States had "no views of even purchasing any more lands from them for a long time." Between the meeting with Hammond and Jefferson's handing over the presidency to James Madison in 1809, the United States had acquired, partly by deception and force, nearly 110 million acres of Indian lands.[\[164\]](#)

In an 1803 letter to then Indiana governor William Henry Harrison, before the Lewis and Clark expedition was launched, Jefferson echoed Washington's strategy by admitting that,

"To promote this disposition to exchange lands, which they have to spare and we want, for necessities, which we have to spare and they want, we shall push our trading uses, and be glad to see the good and influential individuals among them run in debt, because we observe that when these debts get beyond what the individuals can pay, they become willing to lop them off by a cession of lands."

And later in his letter,

"As to their fear, we presume that our strength and their weakness is now so visible that they must see we have only to shut our hand to crush them, and that all our liberalities to them proceed from motives of pure humanity only. Should any tribe be fool-hardy enough to take up the hatchet at any time, the seizing the whole country of that tribe, and driving them across the Mississippi, as the only condition of peace, would be an example to others, and a furtherance of our final consolidation."

Jefferson concluded by telling Harrison that it would be “improper” to reveal the content of his letter to the natives.[\[165\]](#) The sitting president made his logic plain in 1807, and warned that “In war, they shall kill some of us; we shall destroy all of them.” In 1813 during his retirement, Jefferson made his intent clearer. There were two choices regarding the natives, “extermination, or drive them to new seats beyond our reach.”[\[166\]](#) Hitler drew inspiration from the way America pursued *its* Final Solution, and regarded it as a forerunner of his programs. Hitler sought to clear Eastern Europe of subhumans, for German “settlers.”[\[167\]](#)

The Big Three Founding Fathers were Washington, Jefferson and Franklin. Ben Franklin was the universal man of the English colonies, putting America on the intellectual map. He originally amassed a fortune in the printing business, and is considered the father of America’s free press. He then retired at a young age and pursued science, civics and politics.

In 1744, at a conference between Indians and the colonists, an Iroquois leader noted that the colonial system was impossible for the Indians to deal with, with thirteen different governments. If the colonies came together, as the Iroquois did, it would be far easier, administratively. Franklin took the Iroquois observation seriously, and in 1754 Franklin introduced his Albany Plan of Union, which is considered [the first step toward the creation of the U.S. Constitution.](#)[\[168\]](#) A large delegation of the Iroquois Grand Council was there to advise Franklin and the colonists on forming their confederacy. Franklin played a crucial role in the American Revolution, being the ambassador to France and parlaying his celebrity into gaining French assistance, without which the American Revolution probably would not have succeeded. While the Americans rarely had 10,000 soldiers in the field at any time, the French committed more than 30,000 soldiers to the American Revolution. At the final battle of the Revolutionary War, the siege of Yorktown, there were as many French soldiers and sailors as American soldiers. Thirty French warships, cutting off the British Army from receiving reinforcements, proved decisive. Little did the French know it, but their support of the American Revolution would help lead to their own, which began in 1789 but ended with Napoleon’s power grab.

Franklin is associated with Philadelphia, but he was from Boston and his attitude toward the Indians displayed the Puritans’ genocidal intentions more than Quaker pacifism. Even though Franklin was an emissary to the Iroquois, where he gained a deep appreciation of their government, he openly pondered the coming annihilation of the *all* Native Americans, writing, “...if it be the design of Providence to extirpate these Savages...” then he thought that rum was the preferred means.[\[169\]](#)

I discovered that although Franklin became the father of [American freedom of the press](#), once more practice and theory were at odds. While Franklin and his cohorts plotted their rebellion, religious pacifists in Pennsylvania wanted no part of an armed insurrection. The [false dichotomy](#) was directed at them. If they were not for armed insurrection, they must have been Loyalists to the Crown.

Europe’s imperial jockeying in the New World led to war after war against the natives and each other, and the pacifistic sects in Pennsylvania were hard-pressed to maintain their ideals. The religious idealism of William Penn soon degenerated into seizing native land.[\[170\]](#) Penn’s gang became

Pennsylvania's ruling class, and they eventually abandoned their pacifism, advocating an armed militia to keep the natives in line. Opposing the increasingly militant English Penn cadre were numerous German immigrants, who still held to the Quakers' pacifist ideals. Penn recruited religious sects throughout Europe, and the Church of the Brethren was one of many radical European religious groups that eventually came to Pennsylvania, to escape persecution as well as pursue economic opportunity. The Sauer family became prominent printers, especially Johann Christoph and his son Christopher II, although their story is obscure today.

The Sauers' tale dealt does not appear to be dealt with in American scholarship, even by America's radical left. The Sauers printed the first Bible in America, and it was printed in German. Franklin was a notorious anti-German bigot, and used his monopoly power in the printing business to try putting the Sauers out of business. Franklin had considerable control over the paper and ink trade, as well as publishing distribution, and his attempts to wipe out the Sauers led them to manufacture their supplies and create their own distribution network. The Sauers, just as the "patriot" presses did, wrote criticisms of the Stamp Act and other English colonial measures. When the "patriots" began advocating armed resistance, Christopher II backed off, due to his pacifism. He also was an advocate of humane and fair treatment of the Native Americans, their ongoing dispossession and genocide quite obvious. Christopher II did not align with either side during the American Revolution, but his son became a British Loyalist, as did Ben Franklin's illegitimate son William.

While some scholars today debate whether the famous kite-flying experiment ever took place, it may have been William Franklin who built and flew the famous kite in that dangerous thunderstorm, while his father hid in a nearby shelter. If the experiment took place, William was the witness. Father and son were both English loyalists before the 1770s. William became the New Jersey governor and headed the Board of American Loyalists. Father changed his stripes, while the son remained loyal to the Crown. Ben arranged for his son's harsh imprisonment during the American Revolution, and later compelled him to sign over his properties. Father and son did not part on good terms. While nearly disinheriting his son, Franklin's will stated a little vindictively,

"The part he acted against me in the late war, which is of public notoriety, will account for my leaving him no more of an estate he endeavoured to deprive me of."

Christopher Sauer II never advocated violent resistance, nor did he take sides, because *any* loyalty oath was against his religious convictions, but the "patriots" nevertheless seized and sold off his business and properties to their fellow rebels, cheaply. They imprisoned and tortured the elderly Sauer, and he died a pauper in 1784. Franklin apparently profited from the seizure of Christopher Sauer's printing property.[\[171\]](#) In the Sauers' case, Franklin's "free press" ideals did not comfortably mesh with the reality of his actions. He acted just like a capitalist, trying to wipe out the competition, and his huge fortune may not have been amassed as honestly as his hagiographers would have people believe. The original Constitutional Convention was a bona fide conspiracy, the Founding Fathers far overstepping their authority. The *Pennsylvania Herald* was bought out by the Founding

Fathers during the Constitutional Convention, because it was reporting the facts from that illegal convention. With the press thus bought out and silenced, the American people knew nothing about the most important issue of the day. That censorship also foreshadowed how the [American press is censored today](#), by capitalistic means, not direct government intervention. The Constitutional Convention was not exactly a democratic undertaking. In fact, the Founding Fathers generally dreaded democracy.^[172] Franklin headed the first abolitionist society in America, although he was a slave-owner and slave trader himself who partly built his fortune on running ads for recapturing runaway slaves. He never freed his slaves, and his stance on the issues is far less than heroic.^[173]

The only non-slave-owning, non-plantation-owning president of the first five was John Adams, who joined his Founding Father brethren in bestowing subhuman appellations upon the natives. In 1775, he called them “blood Hounds” when they fought alongside the French a decade earlier, but the next year, while calling them “Savages with their cruel, bloody dispositions,” Adams, when considering the early British military successes, thought that the revolutionaries “need not be so delicate as to refuse the assistance of Indians.”^[174] By happenstance, [Morton’s Merry Mount](#) was on the Adams’ family lands, and John sought long and hard for Morton’s *New English Canaan*, and after half a century of searching (because the Puritans’ suppression efforts were so effective), his son John Quincy finally found a copy of it in Europe. Adams concurred with his Puritan forefathers about the depraved nature of Morton and the degenerate spectacle of Morton and the natives dancing and playing together. With Morton and the natives long gone, his book was more of a curiosity than a threat, and Adams even found pleasure in Morton’s work and vision, from a safe two centuries later.

Adams allied himself with Alexander Hamilton (about the only Founding Father who freed his slaves). Adams was the vice president under Washington, but in those days, there was not a president/vice president ticket as America has today. Adams became vice president because he was in second place in receiving Electoral College votes cast for president. Adams generally sided with Washington’s policies as vice president, and when he became president, he did nothing to ameliorate the dispossession of the Native Americans, being the “blood Hounds” that they were.

The lustrous aura surrounding the Founding Fathers dims greatly when the minimized facets of their lives are considered. They were all-too mortal. As Howard Zinn has written, the American Revolution was “A Kind of Revolution.”^[175] Although there was some of the “rabble” effect of the common people, as in the English Civil War, the American Revolution was obviously a revolt of American elites, as shown by the names that signed the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution giving full citizens’ rights to white, land-owning men, and the fact that the oligarchy tried managing the “rabble” from the beginnings of the American Revolution, and quickly took over the American political system.

Although Mason Locke Weems began fabricating fairy tales about George Washington immediately after his death, with Weems eventually concocting the cherry tree story from thin air, Boston was indeed a hotbed of radicalism before the Revolution began, and there was some true heroism shown by the Founding Fathers, and the common people played a significant role. The “rabble” was given lip service, a Bill of Rights was passed, much as the English Parliament did exactly 100 years earlier, and some other measures that led to today’s America are reasons to look upon it with *some* respect.

However, a critical look at the American Revolution can be sobering. Studying how America celebrated its holidays in the early days, such as the Fourth of July, punctures a few myths. Events such as the protest of the Stamp Act, Boston Tea Party, Boston Massacre and Paul Revere's Ride look a lot different when the primary documents are considered and the patriotic veneer is stripped away. Not only was Revere captured during his ride, the vast majority of Americans had never heard of him before Henry Wadsworth Longfellow wrote a poem about him in 1863. Revere's memory was in oblivion during the early 19th century.

When appraised objectively, the 1773 Tea Party was a deliberately provocative, quasi-military, destructive act, and no American revolutionary could have been too surprised when events led to war. Why the Tea Party? The thinking was to protest British taxation. Fair enough, but the reasoning used by those "patriots" would fall flat today, when the nature of the cargo was contemplated. The tea shipment was from the English East India Company, and was bought with [India's blood](#). Today's radicals might have been impressed if the Tea Party radicals had protested in sympathy with the truly suffering colonized peoples of Asia, and not the self-serving motivation of tax avoidance. That observation is not in instance of [presentism](#), for some activists of the day held that enlightened understanding of the British tea "trade."[\[176\]](#) The American colonies, peopled by whites, were the *least* oppressed of the British colonies, and those who signed the Declaration of Independence were the colony's elites, about half of them owning slaves, and they deliberately provoked Britain into America's "War of Independence."

The Eastern Oligarchy quickly overcame Bostonian Radicalism, even before the Revolutionary War ended. Even during the Revolutionary War, "patriots" were drafted, and the rich easily got out of service. The American colonists had impressment riots during the 1760s, when the British Crown conscripted sailors, yet the American government was doing the same thing by 1779, before the war was won. In Connecticut, a law was passed that specifically exempted Yale's students and faculty from conscription, and even then, a drafted man could buy his way out of service for five pounds. [\[177\]](#) Even then, the U.S. government could not afford to pay the soldiers, which was partly why Washington proposed "giving" Native American land to Revolutionary War veterans, and piracy was a popular way to serve one's nation, getting a cut of the booty if one was lucky. The practice of government-sanctioned piracy was nearly identical to how the Spanish Crown financed its 16th century New World adventures, and was called "privateering." Official English pirates such as [Drake](#) became knighted. Official American pirates became "patriots."

Washington set the blueprint for what the United States concentrated on during the next century: stealing a continent.

To Steal a Continent – An Empire Begins

The first century of [Spanish tenure in the New World](#) was history's greatest genocide, and honor was not easily found among the mercenaries that conquered and annihilated the Native Americans. When the English showed up, they proved themselves as honorable as the Spanish, with [poisoning](#)

[the wine](#) at a peace conference being an early example of English tactics. Entering into treaties they had no intention of honoring was part of the English bag of tricks. Those behaviors led to the native saying, “White man speak with forked tongue.” Lying was not unknown among the native tribes, but somebody who lied was considered insane, one who lost touch with reality.[\[178\]](#) It was more of a sickness than a crime to many native tribes. [Washington’s strategy](#) was a more refined version of what Europeans had been doing to Native Americans for three centuries. European violence, dishonesty and greed are not pleasant subjects, but they go a long way toward explaining why I live in Seattle, and are critically important to understand what is happening in today’s world.

In American history circles, Meriwether Lewis and William Clark are heroic icons. No imperial taint besmirches their noble expedition of discovery...or does it? When he sent out the Lewis and Clark expedition to scout the ultimate reach of empire in North America, Jefferson lied so creatively to the Spanish ambassador about U.S. intentions that Eisenhower’s biographer, Stephen Ambrose, wrote that in the midst of his show, Jefferson was “into a third or fourth degree of indirection.”[\[179\]](#) Lewis, Jefferson’s emissary to the great unknown, had messages to deliver. On the Missouri River, at present day Council Bluffs, so named after the meeting between the expedition and the Oto tribe, Lewis and his men dressed in their military best, and made a show of their military precision as they marched and shot their guns. Then came the speech. In essence, it was no different than the [Requerimiento](#) that the Spanish invaders read to their victims.[\[180\]](#) Lewis began his speech by calling the natives “children,” and Jefferson the “Great Father.” Lewis’ speech to the natives, who would have had limited understanding at best, as it went through a French translator, stated in essence,

“You have never seen my kind before, but we are a mighty people, having sanction from the highest authority, and this land you have lived on for time immemorial is now ours. If you submit to our rule, it will go well for you, but if you resist, we will destroy you, and it will be your fault.”

European disease, especially smallpox, had already repeatedly decimated the Plains Indians. The trigger-happy soldiers almost ended the exploration before it began, threatening to shoot their boat’s cannon at the Sioux, and it was only the cool head of a native leader that saved the day.[\[181\]](#) Native tribes all along the way hosted and assisted the expedition. The expedition left a swath of destruction in its wake, wantonly chopping down trees and shooting anything that moved in order to provision themselves. Western North America was the Northern Hemisphere’s last place that had not been [shorn of its fur-bearing animals](#). The fur trade would eliminate the fur-bearing animals there too, very quickly, as well as [most Indian tribes](#) and the vast bison herds.

Later in the expedition, on the way back, immediately after notifying some teenage Blackfeet braves that America had just allied with the Blackfeet’s traditional enemies and would arm them, Lewis and his men killed a Blackfeet boy and wounded a young brave while they tried stealing rifles and horses. Lewis then hung a medal around the dead boy’s neck, to advertise the deed.[\[182\]](#) Although

Lewis and Clark were credited with great courage for mounting the expedition, how courageous was Clark's slave, who was forced to walk every step with him, served Clark hand and foot and then was beaten by Clark when they got back, when he became "insolent" when Clark refused to free him or reunite him with his wife?[\[183\]](#)

America's most humiliating war was the War of 1812, with the British burning Washington, D.C. American history textbooks rather lightly cover the War of 1812. Americans soon saw it as another war of independence, and it was not until after that war ended that Americans began creating the "patriotic" culture that is familiar today. The British, on the other hand, regarded the War of 1812 as little more than a sideshow. The British were fighting the Napoleonic Wars, battling their old nemesis, which was Europe's bloodiest era until World War I. For the United States, it was another war of expansion, with American "frontiersmen" wanting the U.S. government to conquer Canada, seize Spain's imperial lands in southern North America, and, as always, steal more Native American land.

The French Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars had far-reaching influence. France was the home of the Enlightenment, but it was ruled by the feudalistic *ancien régime*, and the American Revolution seemed to be an example of what the Enlightenment was capable of producing. In 1789, the same year that George Washington came to office as the first American president, French citizens stormed the Bastille. From an auspicious beginning, it did not take long for the French Revolution to go sour. By 1791, the royal family had become outright prisoners of the revolutionaries, and by 1792, the revolutionary government declared war on Austria and Prussia. The wars did not go well, and the revolutionaries took it out on the monarchy. Led by Maximilien Robespierre and the Jacobins, the revolutionaries beheaded Louis XVI with the revolutionaries' new contraption, the "humanitarian" guillotine.

By that time, England and Spain were also battling the revolutionary forces and whipping them. Faced with mounting defeats on the battlefield, the revolutionaries turned on each other, and in 1793 the Jacobins approved a reign of terror on the populace to consolidate the revolutionary government. A quarter million people were arrested during the reign of terror and the guillotines were used with vigor. In 1794, the Jacobins turned on each other, and Robespierre and his cohorts all met the business end of their guillotines. By 1795, France was in full retreat from its revolutionary zeal, and political rights were reserved for the wealthiest Frenchmen. France was winning battles and the European coalition collapsed, with only Austria and England opposing France militarily by 1796. In 1799, Napoleon came to power and things calmed down for a little while. Napoleon eventually crowned himself emperor and handed out crowns to family members.

By 1803, France and Britain were at war again. The English Channel would prove to be one of Britain's greatest assets, as it helped discourage invasion from France. Napoleon decided it would be easier to invade Austria than England, and Napoleon quickly conquered Europe. In 1807, Spain supported Napoleon in a war against Portugal, and for the next several years the Iberian Peninsula became the scene of the Peninsular War. Napoleon's continual battles with the British-supported Spanish guerillas weakened France's military efforts, helping lead to Napoleon's downfall.

Napoleon's biggest mistake, which [Hitler also fell prey to](#) a few wars later, was invading Russia.

After capturing a deserted and burned-out Moscow in the autumn of 1812, most of Napoleon's half-million-man army died during the winter retreat. While Britain had the English Channel as its greatest defense against invasion, Russia had its fierce winter as its greatest defensive asset. The French Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars killed about five million people, and was Europe's bloodiest period since the Thirty Years' War, nearly two centuries earlier. The Seven Years' War and Napoleon's reign foreshadowed the so-called World Wars of the 20th century, which were really wars of empire between the Great Powers. The Napoleonic Wars also marked the beginning of the end of Spain's empire. In the Seven Years' War, Britain and France battled across the world, with France being the loser. In North America, Britain got most of France's imperial lands, and it also got Florida from Spain. France held onto lands east of the Mississippi River, with Spain and Britain getting Louisiana.

In 1800, Napoleon forced Spain to give back Louisiana, which the United States bought in 1803 with the Louisiana Purchase. In 1802, Napoleon launched an invasion of Haiti to try putting down the slave rebellion, which began in 1791. As was the case with Britain and Russia, geography was Haiti's greatest defensive asset, and the tropical conditions decimated the French invasion. Of the 28,000 French troops sent to Haiti, which landed in January 1802, 20,000 were dead by September, due to yellow fever and the fierce resistance of the ex-slaves.[\[184\]](#)

As with all revolutions, theory and practice were at odds in Haiti. In events leading up to the original rebellion, mulatto ex-slaves tried becoming a new, intermediary class that rode atop the ones still enslaved. Encouraged by the French Revolution, which gave mulattoes some rights in 1791, a more popular rebellion took place. Haiti's revolution did not turn out as egalitarian as the revolutionaries hoped, although the Haitian constitution wisely forbade foreign land ownership. A republic of ex-slaves caused fear and loathing throughout the West, especially in the slave-owning United States. The United States would not recognize Haitian independence until 1862 during its Civil War, for obvious reasons. As with every other colonial power, a fair amount of "miscegenation" happened in Haiti. The offspring of French masters and slave women became house slaves, and had higher status than the pure African field slaves. Even today, the more French blood a Haitian mulatto can claim, the better. The mulattoes became Haiti's ruling class, while others settled in New Orleans and became part of the Creole culture. European racism still infects the New World. There is not a nation in the Western Hemisphere where the rule (officially or unofficially) is *not*: "the lighter your skin, the better off you are."

The European chaos encouraged the Spanish colonies to revolt, beginning in earnest when Napoleon put his brother on the Spanish throne in 1808. The colonists in Venezuela formed an independent government that refused to recognize Napoleon's rule, and one of Venezuela's elite, Simón Bolívar, became the junta's representative to Britain, to try gaining recognition. Bolívar's attempts failed, and in 1811 the junta declared itself an independent nation. The revolution failed the next year, as the royalists regained power, but the course was set, with Bolívar, a pupil of the Enlightenment, successfully ending Spanish rule in 1819 in what became Colombia. He became its first president. During the next several years, he led efforts to end Spain's rule in what became Peru, Bolivia and Ecuador.

In Southern Spanish America, José de St. Martín led revolutionary efforts in Argentina and Chile, and

he was the first to defeat royal forces in Peru, to later allow Bolivar to finish the job, which was not complete until 1825, when the Peruvian highlands were rid of the last royalist resistance. That upland region became Bolivia. Bolivar had grand plans to unite South America into a confederation, much as the English colonists had formed the United States, but his plans came to naught, and by 1828 he had become Colombia's dictator, and in 1829 Venezuela proclaimed its independence from Colombia, and by the time Bolivar died in 1830, he was largely a pariah, and Venezuela would not even allow his body to be buried on its soil.

Following Venezuela's lead, Mexico had its Hidalgo Rebellion in 1810, in another attempt at bringing Enlightenment ideals to a New World colony, at least for its elites. After numerous revolts and royalist counterattacks, Mexico gained its independence in 1821.

When Napoleon invaded Portugal in 1807, the Portuguese court fled to Brazil and set up operations there. Despite attempts to suppress it, Enlightenment ideals also infected the Brazilian populace. Portugal never quite had the fractious relationship with its colonies that Spain had, and Brazil was unique in Latin American by coming to its independence peacefully, in 1822.

The only holdings that Spain was able to hold onto were in the Caribbean. Cuba and Puerto Rico did not join the mainland revolts. Cuba was a competitor of Haiti in the sugar trade, and the Haitian Revolution created many dead and fled plantation owners, something the rich Spanish overlords did not want to see happen in Cuba, so it stayed quietly in the Spanish fold.

The post-9/11 patriotism that gripped the U.S. in late 2001 would have looked strange to the average American of 1810. In Boston, the hallowed Fourth of July celebration was completely taken over by Puritanical Harvard-types, not long after the Revolutionary War was over. The radical spirit that was sometimes seen in the American Revolution was wallpapered over by safe, conservative celebrations. Even elite radicals such as John Hancock and Samuel Adams were quickly written out of the histories. When Samuel Adams died in 1803, his passing was nearly greeted with a yawn, leading John Adams to state in 1809 that Hancock and his cousin were "almost buried in oblivion."[\[185\]](#) Washington was the only "hero" that Boston celebrated during the first fifty years after the American Revolution. In Boston, there was no celebrating the anniversary of the "Tea Party," the protests over the Stamp Act, the "Boston Massacre" or other revolutionary events. There were not any 50th anniversary celebrations of those events, even in Boston.

It was not until the 1820s that Americans began recovering American Revolution memories, and their revisionism typically had a bias, serving the day's agenda. The Puritans' reputation had faded to nothingness by 1820, especially as they made the mistake of supporting the British Crown during the American Revolution. With the rising nationalism, they were rescued from oblivion in the 1820s, and eventually became the "Pilgrims," although little about the popular representations of them is accurate.[\[186\]](#)

In 1825, ascendant nationalism led to a big bash, with Lafayette, the French general whose forces were the deciding factor in the American Revolution (and he also took a prominent role in the French Revolution), coming to Boston during his American tour, and commemorating the 50th anniversary of the Battle of Bunker Hill. The rising tide of nationalism led to a big celebration in 1826 of the fiftieth

anniversary of the American Revolution. When Thomas Jefferson and John Adams, adversaries who personified America's political philosophies, both died on July 4th, 1826, Americans felt it was the sign of providence.

George Robert Twelves Hewes was a shoemaker of modest means. Shoemaking was a poor man's trade in those days, and Hewes became one because he was too destitute and small (standing five feet, one inch) to pursue the more lucrative ones. He was a participant in the "Boston Tea Party," and eventually served in the American Revolution as a [privateer](#) (and his captain stole his lucrative share of the plunder) and was conscripted into the militia, and once bought his way out of conscription. He met with General Washington and even repaired John Hancock's shoes in his younger days, but his participation in the "Tea Party" brought him fame as America recovered its revolutionary memories. He was about the only living survivor of the "Tea Party" in the 1830s. The term "Tea Party" was never used to describe that event until the 1830s.[\[187\]](#) A figure so obscure that most of his life lies beyond the recovery of historians, Hewes bathed in his newfound fame during the 1830s. When seen in the golden glow of his celebrity and old age, Hewes recalled destroying the tea alongside John Hancock, a memory that was almost certainly false; the elite ringleaders of the tea action conspicuously stayed at the Old South facility when the "Tea Party" was arranged.[\[188\]](#)

[Christopher Columbus](#) died in obscurity in 1506, but when mercenaries began discovering gold-plated civilizations on the New World's mainland, Spain recovered Columbus from obscurity and he began becoming a heroic figure, although few, if any, facts support such stature. Accompanying the rise in American nationalism, [Washington Irving](#), a novelist, published a three-volume epic on the life of Columbus in 1828. It became a huge bestseller. Irving made up events from whole cloth, such as the Spanish Court doubting that the world was round, and Columbus setting out to prove it. When the fabrications of Irving, [Weems](#) and others were discovered, American ideologists defended them. The logic was that America needed its own mythology, separate from Europe's.[\[189\]](#) With all the fake hagiography being concocted by American mythologists, there was even an effort in the 19th century to make Columbus a saint. In 1831, a poem set to the tune of a drinking song won a contest, and the *Star Spangled Banner* became the U.S. national anthem.

James Madison, who drafted the Bill of Rights, was president from 1809-1817, and as with Washington and Jefferson, he was another slave owning, Virginian tobacco plantation owner, and the international embarrassment that those slave-owning presidents were accumulating began weighing heavily on their images, if not their hearts. As with the others, Madison tamely advocated slavery eventually becoming an extinct institution (long after he was gone), and was an early advocate of shipping the slaves back to Africa. Later in life, he used novel reasoning to support the expansion of slavery to new lands as a way to "dilute" it. He died in 1836, without having freed any of his slaves. Europe began abolishing the slave trade before 1800, and most of Europe abolished it before 1820, and the United States appeared increasingly anachronistic, especially with its many slave-owning presidents.

James Monroe was the U.S.' fifth president, serving from 1817 to 1825. Monroe, a protégé of Jefferson and another slave owning, Virginian tobacco planter, was another paternalistic racist who

also favored eventually eliminating American slavery by shipping them back to Africa. During his presidency, just such a colony was established in 1822, which later became Liberia. Monroe sized up Indian lands during the 1780s, and his efforts led to the Northwest Ordinance of 1787, which was designed to legitimate the American invasion, seizure and settlement of those lands. Those machinations were part of [Washington's grand plan](#), even as native tribes were petitioning the U.S. government regarding the "illegal treaties" that were already being foisted on them.[\[190\]](#) The U.S. government was planning on becoming solvent by selling off Indian lands, lands that were not theirs to sell. Monroe also negotiated the Louisiana Purchase from Napoleon's France, which really was the purchase of rights of conquest. It was the Indians' land, not France's, and no negotiations were made with the *natives*, as Jefferson's emissary [Lewis soon made clear](#).

Monroe was James Madison's Secretary of State. Monroe led a brutal repression of a slave revolt in 1800, and all those slave-owning presidents were highly aware of what had happened in Haiti, and wanted no threat that American slaves might actually rise up and free themselves. As governor of Virginia, Monroe refined the system of keeping the slaves suppressed and less likely to revolt. Monroe presided over the Missouri Compromise of 1820, which extended slavery to southern North America as the empire expanded westward. Madison and Jefferson both approved of the measure. Monroe was a Revolutionary War veteran, and he got back into uniform, leading American forces during the War of 1812, and he became Madison's Secretary of War after the British burned Washington D.C. Four of the first five American presidents were land-grabbing, slave-owning empire-builders.

All political systems have *always* [ridden atop economic systems](#), and all those slave-owning Founding Fathers' actions further highlighted that fact. In those pre-industrial days, unless one had slaves, or colonial lands and subjects to exploit, one could not live a life of leisure, to contemplate the affairs of state and other lofty issues. The ancient Greeks, in "democratic" Athens, had a similar philosophy, with slaves outnumbering citizens. In that respect, the allusions to ancient Greece in American government are accurate. The Founding Fathers saw the slavery economy as necessary to their livelihood, and no afflictions of conscience could persuade any of them to free their slaves and actually work for a living.

In 1823, Monroe gave a speech to the U.S. Congress that became the Monroe Doctrine. While his rhetoric sounded impressive, the reality was that he staked out Latin America as the United States' arena of influence, with no European powers allowed. Monroe virtually declared the United States a hemispheric empire in 1823, although there was still plenty of work to be done. History has borne that notion out. Between 1798 and 1945, the United States sent its soldiers abroad in 168 separate events. Of those 168 events, 85 times the troops were sent to what was or is known as Latin America.[\[191\]](#)

Andrew Jackson was America's first president not from the Eastern Oligarchy, although he was another slave owner. The son of Scotch-Irish immigrants, Jackson was born after his father died and was raised in today's Carolinas. A fighter and brawler from a young age, he fought in the Revolutionary War at age 13, and all of his immediate family members died in the war, leaving him on his own at age 14. Jackson became a lawyer, and in 1796 he became Tennessee's first U.S. Congressman. While in office, he aligned with Jefferson's Democratic-Republican Party and went on

the record, calling Washington's policy toward the Native Americans too *lenient*. Jackson left Congress in 1798 and became a judge, retiring from that position in 1804. Still having the fiery temper he displayed as a boy, Jackson brawled and dueled regularly. Jackson's violent, belligerent reputation got him elected to head the Tennessee militia in 1802, and when the War of 1812 broke out, Jackson offered to invade Canada, but was instead ordered to defend the imperial outpost of New Orleans. His men were forced to return when their orders were reversed, and short-provisioned by government inadequacy, Jackson looked out for his men on the march back to Tennessee, earning their admiration and the nickname "Old Hickory."

By that time, Native Americans were virtually extinct in today's Northeastern United States. [Washington's plan](#) was highly successful. William Henry Harrison, the governor of Indiana Territory, spent the first decade of the 19th century swindling the natives out of their treaty-provided lands, as he had been ordered to do. The great Shawnee leader Tecumseh tried uniting Native Americans against the white invaders. Tecumseh was at the [Battle of Fallen Timbers](#), but his resistance was more to not let the white men get any more Indian land. The natives he influenced were following Jefferson's prescription: settle down and adopt the white man's ways.^[192] Jefferson's advice was apparently more on the rhetorical level, seeming impressive, but to be avoided in practice.

Tecumseh did not believe that *any* tribe should cede lands without the consent of the others. Tecumseh, returning the Founding Fathers' racism in kind, adopted a cosmology that saw whites as a variety of pond scum. His brother reformed himself from being a drunken Indian to turning his life around and becoming "The Prophet" to his people. William Henry Harrison was surprised when the natives following Tecumseh's teachings refused whiskey. The natives were acting far too responsibly for Harrison's liking, and were forming a united front. Uniting the American colonies had won them independence from British rule, and a united native front might thwart U.S. imperial designs. When faced with dwindling prospects of swindling the natives, and the appearance of an effort that could resist further white invasion, Harrison launched a pre-emptive strike in 1811, while [Tecumseh was away on a recruiting mission](#). Harrison led an army to Tippecanoe, Tecumseh's headquarters. Tecumseh's brother, in charge while his brother was away, acted rashly and fell into Harrison's trap, and after a bloody battle that saw more white casualties than native, the whites drove the Indians away and burned Tippecanoe. Tecumseh returned months later to the ashes of his dreams.

In post-9/11 America, white people might begin developing *some* comprehension of what North American natives were facing back then. History has shown that cultures unravel when subjected to catastrophes that kill off large fractions of the population, such as what the [Black Death did to Europe](#) in the 1340s. Although [Osama bin Laden](#) and gang is biting the hand that fed them, nobody seriously thinks that waves of Islamic settlers will be coming across the oceans, to invade and exterminate Americans; Native Americans faced just that. By the American Revolution, the natives of Eastern North America clearly saw the trends, with many eastern tribes already extinct, and an inexorable march westward by the white invaders, destroying everything in its path in the name of "progress." Not only were the woods, creatures and natives disappearing under the boots and axes of the white juggernaut, but also there was active, exterminatory hatred directed at the natives from the very beginning of the white invasion...and it was successful. Invasion, disease and environmental devastation were inflicted in never-ending waves upon the natives. [Miantonomi](#) was

perhaps the first North American native to figure it out, but was far from the last. The [Delaware](#) sages clearly saw the disintegration of Native American culture, and as they were violently dispersed from their homelands, they influenced many inland tribes, [Pontiac](#)'s Ottawa tribe among them. Pontiac's efforts influenced Tecumseh's, and the confederacy the [tribes tried creating](#) during the American Revolution.

Tecumseh died in the War of 1812 a couple of years later. He was about the Indian equivalent of George Washington, so his corpse was eagerly scalped by the American troops, and the frenzy to get pieces of him was heated. One soldier contented himself with seizing a dime-sized piece of Tecumseh's flesh, attached to a mere tuft of hair, which he produced in an interview seventy-three years later. After being stripped and scalped, one enterprising soldier *flayed* Tecumseh's body, cutting his skin into foot-long strips to make razor straps for his pals.[\[193\]](#)

While Tecumseh was pursuing the shards of his shattered dreams in America's Midwest, Old Hickory was making progress in America's Southeast. From the very beginning of the European invasion of the New World, even on Columbus' [first voyage](#), it really did not matter much if the natives were friendly or hostile; they all eventually died under the European boot. Sometimes friendliness meant they were the first to be exterminated (such as scalps of friendly natives being easier to obtain than scalps of hostiles), and sometimes it meant they were the last to fall to their state (such as the [Tlaxcalans](#)). The Cherokee tale is important. Not only are they the largest surviving North American tribe, their journey demonstrates how even the most U.S.-friendly natives were doomed, if they lived on land the whites wanted. The Cherokee were one of the "five civilized tribes," which included the Creek, Choctaw, Chickasaw and Seminole.

The [Iroquois](#) lived at the north end of the Appalachians, and the Cherokee at the south end. The higher elevation of their lands probably spared them the worst of the early diseases that Europeans introduced. While the Iroquoian people engaged in the short-lived [fur trade](#) (the beaver was extinct in the Hudson River Valley by 1640), the Cherokee traded in deerskins for Europe's manufactured goods. In the early 1700s, England, Spain and France were jockeying for position in the region, with the English settlers doing their usual land grabbing, which led to numerous wars. The natives were largely battling for survival, and allied however they could. In the early 1700s, the Tuscarora were completely eliminated from their homeland in today's North Carolina. The survivors fled north and joined the Iroquois Confederation. The Shawnee were also losers, first being kicked out of Ohio during the late 1600s by the Iroquois, with most of the scattered tribe moving to today's Southeast U. S. The wars down there saw many of them flee back to Ohio, and the English invasion of the Ohio River Valley inspired [Tecumseh](#) to try uniting his Shawnee with other tribes, to form a united front. Other tribes simply disappeared in the mayhem.

In pre-Columbian times, the Cherokee probably controlled at least 100,000 square miles of territory, and may have had more than a half million people. America's Southeast was the most densely populated part of North America, and warfare and empire building were not unknown. The Cherokee lived in palisaded towns in their heartland. [Soto](#) was the last European to see those lands in close to their 1491 condition. The Mississippian cultures built large mounds, as palaces, cemeteries and temples. Those types of structures have only been built in densely populated regions. By the time

Soto saw those lands, the populations had probably already been reduced by European disease. After [Soto visited that desolate former empire](#), his *entrada* wandered through territory that was partly the Cherokee's, as well as other tribes. After Soto, a few more smallpox epidemics made their way through the area before the English began invading the region.

The Cherokee have an Iroquoian language, and probably migrated from the Great Lakes region, as did the Tuscarora, at least several centuries before Soto showed up. Iroquoian civilizations were matrilineal. The [high status of women](#) is generally the sign of a healthy and vibrant society. The other "civilized" tribes are from the Muskogean language family, and they also had matrilineal societies.[\[194\]](#)

By 1700, Florida's original inhabitants were nearing extinction. The largely hunter-gatherer Calusan and Timucuan peoples became extinct in Florida before 1800. The Apalachee people lived in northern Florida and were largely farmers, and did not become quite as extinct as the Timucuan and Calusan peoples. During the destructions of numerous tribes of America's Southeast, survivors joined with others, and the Seminole people are an amalgamation of tribal fragments of largely Muskogean peoples. Even former African slaves joined the Seminole. The word "Seminole" may be derived from the Spanish word for "runaway."

South Carolina was England's early slave coast in the New World. Just as the European slavers had done in Africa, the English armed coastal natives, turning them into pawns of the slave trade, encouraging them to use the English's superior weaponry to invade inland and capture neighboring tribes. Slave trains from inland were making their way to Charleston as early as the 1670s, to be sold into Caribbean slavery.[\[195\]](#) The English slave trade quickly decimated the natives, and fragments of tribes came together to make new "tribes," such as the Westos, who made a brief living enslaving other intact tribes. When their utility expired, the Westos also became extinct.[\[196\]](#) The English enslaved the Cherokee as early as 1681, and in 1693 the Cherokee sent a delegation to the South Carolina's Royal Governor to ask for protection from the native slave raiders. The year before, the Shawnee, who the Cherokee welcomed (to become a buffer tribe - it was not a completely humanitarian act) to their lands, destroyed a Cherokee village while the men were away hunting, and sold the women and children into slavery. It was an act of treachery that the Cherokee never forgot, and the Shawnee were eventually expelled back to the northern lands, with the Cherokee happy to see them go.

Because of South Carolina's continued pursuit of the flesh trade, the tribes united and began a war against South Carolina in 1715. The Cherokee began fighting as English allies as early as 1689, in England's imperial struggles with France. After the war of 1715 briefly interrupted their relationship, the Cherokee signed their first treaty in 1721, which ceded land to British colonists.

Similar to the Iroquois, the Cherokee were a democratic people. In 1730, there were less than 50,000 Cherokee left, and the English at Charleston tried making one of them an "emperor." Some young braves visited King George II in England, and supposedly gave fealty to the King, but those boys did not run the Cherokee people, although one of them subsequently became prominent. In 1738, a slave ship to Charleston brought smallpox, and killed off at least a quarter of the remaining Cherokee, while also sweeping through other local tribes, such as the Catawba. By 1730, the

Cherokee were as low as ten percent of their numbers of two centuries earlier, and another large fraction was taken away in one swoop in 1738. Another devastating plague swept through in 1753, bringing the Cherokee population to perhaps 25,000 (estimates vary, going as low as 10,000 in 1780), where it would largely remain until they were forcibly removed during the 19th century.

Largely because of epidemics, widowed lands were easier to give up than occupied ones, such as the Wampanoag welcome to the Puritans. The wars, epidemics and continually encroaching settlers created massive displacements among the native tribes. Tribes were forced away from the eastern coastline, and intruded upon neighboring tribes. Sometimes inland tribes would allow the coastal tribes to settle with them, and other times they might resist or otherwise give less than a friendly welcome. Surviving tribes would be crowded together, and formerly friendly relations would degenerate into hard feelings and warfare, as each tribe tried surviving. The Creek and Cherokee shared hunting grounds in today's northern Georgia, but settler pressures led to them fighting a war that began in 1752.

The British were arrogant, with a predilection for murder, and few natives liked them much, but they made the best trade goods, and were cheaper than what the French offered. The French had greater regard for the natives, and did not try imposing their notions of what people should be like, at least not nearly to the degree that the British did. The Cherokee were the region's dominant tribe, and the British worked hard at maintaining a good relationship with them.

The British were soon allying with the Creek to fight against the Spanish settlements, eventually laying siege to St. Augustine. The French were also in the picture, trying to form alliances with tribes, to fight the British. The French generally allied with the Algonquin tribes of the north, and they were able to ally with the less-warlike Choctaw in the south (the Choctaw-French alliance also split the tribe). The Chickasaw were bitter enemies of the French, as the French tried dominating the Mississippi River for trade purposes, and tried exterminating the Chickasaw during the early 1700s. The French never successfully penetrated the Cherokee region, largely because of Chickasaw resistance, which helped bring an end to France's imperial designs in North America.[\[197\]](#)

When the Cherokee-Creek war ended in 1755, with the Cherokee victorious, the Cherokee then supported the British in the French and Indian Wars, at least for a time. The Cherokee fought alongside the British during the wars, but there was continual uneasiness, as the colonists always coveted Indian land. The British built forts in Cherokee lands to protect the colonists, supposedly from the French and their allies, but the British always suspected the Cherokee of having French sympathies. There were sporadic conflicts with the Cherokee and white settlers, although the British tried hard to maintain the peace, at least while the Cherokee were useful.

In 1758, a Cherokee war party was traveling with British forces through Virginia when the Cherokee lost their provisions while crossing a river. Their "allies" abandoned them, leaving them to get home on their own. Some angry braves then helped themselves to local provisions, such as Virginian horses. Skirmishes broke out, with Virginians killing Cherokee warriors and selling their scalps for the Virginia bounty. An Indian scalp brought fifty pounds in Virginia, the equivalent of a year's income for a Virginian farm, and bounty hunters sold the scalps of "friendlies" as "hostiles" regularly. Attacks and counterattacks occurred along the Cherokee frontier, and angry braves prevailed over

the chiefs who sought peace. The British were beating the French by that time, had less use for their native “allies,” and a war broke out between the Cherokee and British in 1759. The British soldiers, who had been drunkenly raping the local natives, kidnapped a Cherokee peace delegation, then murdered them when Cherokee braves attacked the fort where they were held and killed one of the rapists. Those events inflamed matters. The killing escalated, with the Cherokee laying siege to Fort Loudon, and [Amherst](#) sending a huge expedition to the region in 1760. The Cherokee chiefs were dismayed that their English allies were making war against them. The Cherokee made several attempts to gain native allies against the English, but were unable to. After massacres on each side, and an English expedition that destroyed many Cherokee villages, a “peace” was negotiated in 1761, where the Cherokee ceded huge chunks of land along the Carolina frontier. Thousands more Cherokee died in the war.[\[198\]](#)

Watching the British turn on their allies made a deep impression on the natives along the northern frontiers, and helped lead to [Pontiac](#)’s “rebellion.” The British inflicted genocide on the Abenaki people at the same time, which made their intentions clear. Even so, the Cherokee became British allies again, even as greedy colonists ignored the [Royal Proclamation](#). Daniel Boone’s penetration of Cherokee hunting grounds led the Cherokee elders to give in to the inevitable, “selling” the lands in Kentucky and Tennessee to the speculators in 1775. The Cherokee chief Attakullakulla, who was the “emperor” that visited King George II in 1730, and who was raised in the Cherokee village that Tennessee is named after, acquiesced to the inevitable. He saw the teeming hordes of England and the writing on the wall. His son, however, did not. A young warrior who survived smallpox epidemics, with his skin heavily scarred, he defied the treaty, making the following prophetic speech before leaving.

“Where now are our grandfathers, the Delawares? We had hoped that the white men would not be willing to travel beyond the mountains. Now that hope is gone. They have passed the mountains, and have settled upon Cherokee land. They wished to have that usurpation sanctioned by treaty. When that land is gained, the same encroaching spirit will lead them upon other land of the Cherokees. New cessions will be asked. Finally the whole country, which the Cherokees and their fathers have so long occupied, will be demanded, and the remnant of Ani-Yunwiya, “The Real People,” once so great and formidable, will be compelled to seek refuge in some distant wilderness. There they will be permitted to stay only a short while, until they again behold the advancing banners of the same greedy host. Not being able to point out any further retreat for the miserable Cherokees, the extinction of the whole race will be proclaimed. Should we not therefore run all risks, and incur all consequences, rather than submit to further laceration of our country? Such treaties may be all right for men who are too old to hunt or fight. As for me, I have my young warriors about me. We will have our lands.”[\[199\]](#)

Attakullakulla’s son waged a guerilla war against the white invaders, in today’s Tennessee, for the next generation. When the American Revolution began, the Iroquois Confederacy and other hostile tribes such as the Shawnee saw where events were headed. If the colonists succeeded in breaking

away from their mother country, the Indians would be more certainly doomed. A delegation was sent to the Cherokee in 1776, as part of an effort to unite all tribes from the Great Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico against the colonists.

By that time, the British colonies had taken on characteristics that could be discerned during the next century, dynamics that can be easily seen in the United States today. From the earliest days of the [Spanish invasions](#), the losers of European society came to the New World. Europe's upper classes rarely made trips to the New World or other imperial lands, unless they were royal representatives. European sovereigns did not go abroad to survey their realms. The lower class invaders turned themselves into local elites, and Europe's rulers continually tried undermining colonial aspirations, and made grand pronouncements in Europe about respecting native lives. The colonists mostly laughed at the proclamations and laws, which was particularly evident in the Spanish and English colonial experience. English subjects even sold themselves into slavery, called indentured servitude, to gain passage to the New World.

Even though early [Jamestown](#) "settlers" ran off and lived with the natives, and [Morton](#) had high appreciation for the native way of life, and the spectacle of the "Unredeemed Captive" played itself out in the early 18th century [\[200\]](#), by the time of the American Revolution, the new elites had carved out estates in the settled east, and were the forerunners of today's Eastern Establishment. The opportunities for free land and dreams of estates lay on the frontiers of English/British encroachment, and was pursued by the losers of colonial life. Trappers, traders and soldiers were the early English vanguard, followed by settlers. While frontiersmen might wear buckskins and take native wives, they rarely thought like Indians, and the native ideal of harmony with nature was in stark contrast to how frontiersmen behaved. Eastern North America was completely deforested by those frontier settlers, which wiped out both native humans and animals. The white invaders would rarely make enlightened contact with the natives, and the genocidal aspirations in [Amherst's](#) letters to his men (a sentiment that was missing in his writings about his French adversaries) were more literate versions of the scalp-hunting attitudes of frontier settlers.

Attakullakulla's son waged warfare against the intruders, but his was the minority opinion among the Cherokee. Attakullakulla's niece married a white trader and distinguished herself in battle against the Creek. She sought peace with the whites, and even warned them about the plans of Attakullakulla's son. In the big picture, guerilla warfare by tribal minorities provided justification of slaughter and dispossession of entire tribes. When the northern delegation came in 1776, Attakullakulla's son gladly accepted the war belts, while the Cherokee elders held a sad silence. By 1777, the rebel colonists had overrun the Cherokee once more, launching extermination raids against Cherokee villages, mostly neutral ones. The elders then sued for peace, and signed a treaty at gunpoint that gave up nearly all their lands in the Carolinas. Another treaty in 1781 took more land. Most Native American tribes sided with the British, or more properly, *against* the rebel colonists. Not the Cherokee.

Although [Washington's secret plan of 1782](#) made U.S. goals evident, the first tribe the United States made a post-revolution treaty with was the Cherokee. The 1785 Hopewell Treaty was about the only one that did not make land cessions a part of it. High-minded happenings in Washington translated poorly to the frontier. White invaders had zero respect for the Hopewell Treaty, and the breakaway

“state” of Franklin ran the Cherokee off their lands, and in 1788 murdered several elderly chiefs under a truce flag. Although natives could perform atrocities, it was nearly always provoked, and a disinterested frontier observer remarked that the settlers were “in the wrong four times out of five.”[\[201\]](#)

Another of Attakullakulla’s sons participated in the [1791 annihilation of the American Army in the Ohio River Valley](#), but in 1794, all Cherokee factions signed another treaty with the U.S. In 1792, the United States allocated funding to begin trying to turn the Native Americans into European peasants, and the Cherokee were the logical tribe to begin the experiment on. The U.S. began providing plows, spinning wheels and other European technology. It was not exactly an altruistic move. Sedentary farmers and craftsmen needed far less land than hunter-gatherers, and the Cherokee adopted the white man’s ways in order to survive. That transformation caused upheaval within the Cherokee people, as many of the white man’s ways were disgusting to native sensibility. Nevertheless, the Cherokee adopted European methods to such an extent that the name “civilized” was applied to their tribe, and others who adopted similar practices. The Cherokee became cotton growers and cloth weavers instead of deer hunters and skinners. Apparently, George Washington genuinely tried the assimilation policy on the Cherokee, especially after the [1791 disaster](#).

The Cherokee kept ceding lands in “treaties,” in 1798, 1804, 1805 and 1806. Some pro-French Cherokee migrated to today’s Arkansas in 1763, after the French lost the war against the British and the Spanish granted them land. Pro-British Cherokee also began migrating there in 1782. After the United States “bought” the land by the Louisiana Purchase, in an 1817 treaty it officially recognized the Western Cherokee. Under pressure from white settlers, the Western Cherokee were induced to move to Oklahoma in 1828.

The Eastern Cherokee kept assimilating the white ways and giving up their lands. With white influence came tribal corruption, with lying and greed making their appearance among the warriors and chiefs, which was something new to the Cherokee. The more traditional Cherokee (usually the full-bloods) migrated to the western reservation, and the Eastern Cherokee adopted the white ways. In the 1806 treaty, the Cherokee ceded ten million acres, an area half as large as today’s South Carolina. The chief who negotiated the treaty, and got rich in the process of selling out his people, was assassinated by a faction of young men, led by a brave named Ridge. The chief was so hated that even his relatives did not mind his murder.[\[202\]](#)

Ridge became a prominent Cherokee leader, and led the effort to assimilate the white culture. The assimilation brought on problems that no society could easily manage. The entire fabric of Cherokee existence was under siege. Women were to stop tending plants in the fields and become textile makers, while the men performed plow agriculture. Native concepts of reciprocity and the concept of sufficiency did not mesh with the “[greed-as-a-virtue](#)” attitudes of whites, who grabbed whatever they could and always wanted more. Try imagining a female American president that dismantles the military, declares holidays to bake bread, Christianity is discarded as a male aberration, and she declares a Goddess-based, nature-worshipping religion as the national religion. The culture shock the Cherokee underwent was greater, but they underwent it, and it presented them with a chance to survive.

By 1811, more than 1000 traditional Cherokee had migrated west, and Ridge and others who favored adopting the white man's ways dominated the Eastern Cherokee. Great rifts rent the "civilized" tribes. During 1811, Tecumseh toured Eastern North America, trying to unite all tribes against the white invasion. Tecumseh gave symbolic red sticks to the tribes he spoke to. The sticks were prepared by his brother, the Prophet, and were to help tribes mark time until their uprising, each stick representing a moon cycle. Although his brother was known as The Prophet, prophetic ability was apparently a family talent, and Tecumseh had prophesied for several years that a great earthquake would mark the time when the tribes should make their move to present a united front to the whites. Tecumseh was born on the night of a "shooting star," and also prophesied that a shooting star would also be a sign that the Great Spirit supported his efforts.

At a huge meeting at the Creek capital, in present-day Alabama, attended by five thousand natives from numerous tribes, Tecumseh spoke of his plan, and the red stick bundles were only three moons large. At that meeting, Ridge threatened to kill Tecumseh if he came to speak to the Cherokee. A Creek chief challenged Tecumseh, and Tecumseh told the chief his blood was white and that when he went home to Tippecanoe, he would stomp on the ground and shake the land, to let the tribes know the truth. On November 7, 1811, the battle of Tippecanoe was fought, which was Harrison's pre-emptive strike against Tecumseh's efforts. On November 16th, a great meteor was seen in the sky, supposedly informing the natives that Tecumseh's efforts had the Great Spirit's approval, but [Tippecanoe's](#) ashes said otherwise. A month later, while traveling back to Tippecanoe, at a camp near New Madrid, Missouri, Tecumseh received word of the disaster of Tippecanoe. That same night, December 16, 1811, the first New Madrid quake hit, which was a series of quakes that are the strongest in U.S. history, measuring more than eight on the Richter scale, which caused church bells to ring in Boston. It stands today as a most curious testament to Tecumseh's alleged ability. Because of Tippecanoe, Tecumseh (some say it was his brother) also allegedly cast a curse on the United States, where every president elected in a year ending in zero would die in office. Harrison was the first to fall to this alleged curse, being elected in 1840 and dying soon after coming to office. [\[203\]](#)

With the destruction of Tippecanoe, The Prophet lost standing among the natives, Tecumseh's plans were ruined, and he died in battle against the Americans a couple years later. Many Creeks took his message to heart, and they dyed their war clubs red, becoming known as the Red Sticks. The last New Madrid quake was the most devastating, occurring on February 13, 1812. In June the War of 1812 began, and Tecumseh's alliance was in ruins. The Red Stick faction, acting on its own, initiated a civil war among the Creeks, warring against Creek villages that had adopted the white man's ways. The Spanish armed the Red Sticks, and in 1813, a group of U.S. soldiers stopped and looted a Red Stick pack train, which ignited war with the Red Sticks. The Red Sticks then laid siege to Fort Mims in Alabama, and about 250 settlers were killed, which made huge news that swept the U.S.

The Cherokee elders advocated neutrality in the latest white man's war, and wanted no part of the Creek civil war. Ridge however, was violently opposed to Tecumseh's movement, and he gathered hundreds of men and joined Andrew Jackson's motley crew. While "Old Hickory" gained the respect of his men during the march back from the aborted trip to New Orleans, as time wore on, with his men weary and under-provisioned, they lost their morale and wanted to go home. Old Hickory then became draconian, executing a teenage soldier who became unruly, making an example of him. He

took on Ridge's braves, about five hundred strong, and made Ridge a major in the Tennessee Militia, and Ridge called himself Major Ridge for the rest of his life. The Cherokee were much better fighters than the white soldiers, something Jackson readily admitted. Friendly Creeks also were part of the fighting force. Jackson did not trust his Cherokee fighters, but willingly used them as high-grade cannon fodder.

In March 1814, a force of 2000 whites and 500 Cherokee and Creek cornered the Red Stick army at what is today called Horseshoe Bend, on the Tallapoosa River in Alabama. Jackson had never led a battle before, and his strategy amounted to firing cannons at their fortifications. The action would have probably ended in failure if not for the Cherokee braves who swam the river and attacked the Red Sticks from the rear. Their efforts divided the Creek defense, and the whites then laid siege to the fortifications. In that fierce battle, eight hundred of the thousand Red Sticks died. The aftermath was as brutal as they come. The whites were not content with mere scalps. They skinned Red Stick bodies to make bridle reins, belts and other fashionable items. Jackson ordered cutting off the noses of dead Red Sticks to get an accurate body count. He later gave body parts to the "ladies of Tennessee" as souvenirs. Davy Crockett, who fought at Horseshoe Bend, as did Sam Houston, wrote that the troops ate potatoes that had been basted in the fat of Red Stick warriors. That battle made Jackson an *American hero*. Part of the Cherokee logic was that if they adopted the white man's ways and fought with him, they might be able to survive without being eliminated from their lands, as most other tribes had already suffered. On the way home, the Tennessee volunteers passed through Cherokee lands and ravaged them. When the Cherokee complained, Jackson was furious with them for making the scandal a public matter.[\[204\]](#)

Although the Creek saw the Red Stick War as a civil war among the Creek and not against the U.S., Jackson got himself appointed the treaty commissioner, and forced the Creek to cede the largest single cession the natives of the South ever made: 23 million acres, an area substantially *larger* than South Carolina. Even land of the white-friendly Creeks, Creeks who had fought *with* Jackson, was taken from them. Part of the "ceded" land the Creek and Cherokee had shared. Jackson and his friends bought up the choice lands that he forced the Creek and Cherokee to cede. It was an early example of Jackson's theory of government, where the winner gets the "spoils." Jackson should not be treated too harshly here; George Washington did virtually the same thing, speculating in lands that his troops violently wrested from the natives. The Cherokee protested Jackson's claim on the land they shared with the Creek, and Jackson acted typically: he bribed most of the Cherokee chiefs into acquiescence.[\[205\]](#) Where Washington's plan called for negotiating with tribes individually, to play divide-and-conquer, Jackson introduced a new tactic, breaking up tribal lands into individual plots, then being able to bribe and coerce individual landowners, cutting out the tribes altogether. [\[206\]](#) Bribery and threat of attack were Jackson's two primary methods of dealing with the Indians, especially when stealing their land, something that Jackson openly admitted, saying that treaties were secured by playing to the Indians' "avarice or fear."

Jackson's tactics were openly fraudulent, and characterized the legal treatment that the U.S. imposed on the natives. During the century that the U.S. entered into treaties with native tribes, a common tactic was getting the chiefs roaring drunk, and when they had sobered up, they realized that somebody got them to "sign" a treaty that ceded their lands. Treaties entered into at gunpoint, outright forgery of a chief's signature onto treaties (not a difficult task, when a chief did not know how

to read or write), straight bribes to a “chief” who was not empowered to negotiate for his tribe - those were typical U.S. tactics. When Major Ridge and another prominent chief discovered what the chiefs had “negotiated” with Jackson, the head chief was stripped of his powers. They protested, but the U. S. Senate ratified the fraudulent treaty. Jackson only got one million of the two million acres that he and his cronies set their sights on. Jackson was not happy.[\[207\]](#) Even back then, Jackson’s goal was the removal of *all* Indians. He did not believe that any Indian could ever become “civilized,” so removal or extermination was his goal. In that instance, Major Ridge and John Ross successfully lobbied the U.S. government and got the treaty rescinded, for the first time ever.

Jackson became a war hero again when his defense of New Orleans trounced the British a couple of weeks after the War of 1812 had ended. After beating Napoleon, the British came in a little too arrogant, and the militia-types slaughtered them as they marched across an open field, thinking the “rabble” would scatter when seeing lines of marching soldiers coming at them.

The fragments of destroyed Muskogean tribes fled to Florida, amalgamating with the Apalachee remnants, and became the Seminole. On his own initiative, Jackson attacked and took the British fort at Pensacola on the way to New Orleans. He wanted Florida, and was dismayed that he did not get it after the Battle of New Orleans. Not to be thwarted, Jackson invaded Florida in 1818, which was a Spanish possession at the time. John Quincy Adams was James Monroe’s Secretary of State when Jackson invaded Florida. Jackson had no authority to invade Florida as he had. Jackson had committed an unprovoked act of war against Spain, prosecuted with exceptional brutality. Jackson, like [Underhill](#) and others before him, cited Old Testament stories to justify his actions, imagining that he was some kind of avenger for Jehovah.[\[208\]](#)

Jackson’s invasion appeared less than godly, and more like a land-grabbing, bloody invasion of conquest, with the invasion’s leader getting rich off the lands he stole. John Quincy Adams stood alone in the Monroe administration, defending Jackson’s invasion, casting blame on the Spanish. Adams performed a remarkable Orwellian somersault, calling Jackson’s invasion, “defensive acts of hostility.”[\[209\]](#) All the surviving ex-presidents approved of Adams’ gymnastics. Adams became the sixth U.S. president, followed by Jackson. Adams was the primary architect of the Monroe Doctrine, and he became president in 1825. Jackson handpicked his successor, Martin Van Buren, who was his Secretary of State and campaign advisor.

Jackson might have died at Horseshoe Bend, if not for the daring efforts of his Cherokee warriors, and Jackson led the swindle of the Cherokee. Today, many Cherokees refuse to use twenty-dollar bills, because Jackson’s face is on them. From Washington’s original subsidy of civilizing them, to the 1830s when Jackson was president, the Cherokee engaged in what may be history’s most astonishing feat of cultural change.

The Cherokee were liberal in adopting people into their tribe, which is partly why they are the largest surviving tribe today. John Ross was only one-eighth Cherokee. There were blond haired and blue-eyed Cherokee. A Western Cherokee, the reclusive Sequoyah, performed one of the greatest intellectual feats of all time by creating a Cherokee alphabet. It was easy to learn, and most of the tribe became literate by 1825, with a literacy rate higher than most of the world, even the United States. The Cherokee created a true nation, with a constitution, electing John Ross as its “Principal

Chief.” By 1828, they had a national weekly newspaper, published in Cherokee and English. The Cherokee were out-whiting the whites. The Cherokee were more prosperous than the whites in the vicinity, with their groomed lands and society being the envy of its neighbors. They even had African slaves (the Cherokee’s slaves were largely treated better than African slaves of whites). Subsequent events betrayed the racist foundation of the white invasions and exterminations of Native Americans. Gold was found in northern Georgia in 1828 and 1829, creating a gold rush in Cherokee lands, with the white miners flooding in. History has rarely recorded a baser breed of people than gold rush miners, as greed and desperation are their most salient characteristics, whether it was [16th century Spain](#) or 19th century America. The Georgia gold rush foreshadowed the gold rushes that propelled the invasion and “settlement” of whites west of the Mississippi River. With a new lure of greed, the Georgia government then began plotting the Cherokee expulsion in earnest.

Andrew Jackson was the first president to bring the frontier mentality into the White House. His Indian-killing reputation got him elected. While all the previous presidents were dishonest land-grabbers, they at least adopted a “civilized” veneer to their murderous criminality. Jackson often dispensed with even that. Jackson openly bribed people, and adopted the “spoils” system of governance, where party loyalists were appointed to government posts. His reputation was so well known that people stayed at his inauguration until the wee hours, hoping that if they hung around long enough, they might be appointed to government positions. Jackson’s tenure marked the rise of machine politics in America.

When he ascended to the presidency, Jackson soon pressed his “Indian Removal” dreams. After he was elected but before he took office, Jackson wrote to a Georgia Congressman about the Cherokee, “Build a fire under them. When it gets hot enough, they’ll move.”[\[210\]](#) Indian removal was the biggest issue of his presidency. In seven of his eight annual addresses to Congress, he talked about the “Indian Problem.” Jackson pushed through his Indian Removal Act in 1830, which was called at the time the greatest issue ever to come before Congress, except for matters of war. Although Jackson was its architect, he was a master of political doubletalk, and feigned powerlessness when Cherokee delegations called on their “great friend” to aid their plight. A fraudulent subterfuge played out. Native American tribes were always forced to deal with the U.S. government, even though the U.S. never kept up its end of the deal. Now, Jackson played the “states’ rights” card, telling the Cherokee that the U.S. government was powerless in the face of the claims made by Georgia. Jackson’s pushed through his Indian Removal Act, but when meeting the Cherokee delegates, he wrung his hands in impotence, when faced with Georgia’s might. It was a genocidal con game, and helped lead to the American Civil War.

The Cherokee kept playing in the rigged system, and even won in the U.S. Supreme Court, with Chief Justice Marshall issuing his famous 1832 ruling on *Worcester v. Georgia*, where he ruled that the federal government had jurisdiction over native lands, not the states. Jackson made the infamous reply to Marshall’s ruling, stating, “John Marshall has made his decision; let him enforce it now if he can.”[\[211\]](#) Beginning in 1836, the civilized tribes were removed from their homes at gunpoint, interned in concentration camps and force-marched several hundred miles (in the winter) to their new “homes” west of the Mississippi, in a dynamic that would foreshadow how the [Nazis treated the Jews](#) during the 1940s. That forced removal is known as the Trail of Tears. Jackson left office, in 1837, and his successor, Martin Van Buren, presided over the removal of the Cherokee. White

historians and scholars can be counted on to continually underestimate or ignore the body counts caused by their kind. The death toll of the Trail of Tears (including internment, transport and resettlement) used to be estimated at only 15% to 25% of the removed populations, but the most recent and thorough study of the Cherokee removal estimates a 55% mortality rate, a rate that probably roughly applies to the other tribes that were force-marched.[\[212\]](#) The “first lady” of the Cherokee, John Ross’ wife, died on the march.

Major Ridge, who could not be bought when younger, and said he would kill anybody who sold off Cherokee lands, ended up signing the fraudulent “treaty” that led to the Cherokee’s forced removal. The case can be made that Ridge, similar to other Cherokee elders over the generations, was simply succumbing to the inevitable, but when he signed it, he said he was signing his own death warrant. He was right. His cadre relocated with the Western Cherokee before the Trail of Tears, but when Trail of Tears survivors were finally delivered to the Western Cherokee, Ridge died by his own code, being assassinated along with others who had signed away Eastern Cherokee land. The Seminole fought removal, beginning in 1835, and the U.S. waged a war of attrition against them for several years, with the Seminole finally surrendering in 1842.

As with [Las Casas](#) and other Spaniards of conscience, there were some American observers whose humanity would not allow them to keep silent. John Burnett was a U.S. soldier who participated in the Trail of Tears, and later wrote,

“School children today do not know that we are living on lands that were taken from a helpless race at the bayonet point to satisfy the white man’s greed...

“I fought through the Civil War and have seen men shot to pieces and slaughtered by thousands, but the Cherokee removal was the cruelest work I ever knew.”[\[213\]](#)

Land grabbing and dispossessing the natives was how America was built, and was the *essence* of Jackson’s career, but future CIA-asset Arthur Schlesinger won a Pulitzer Prize for his 1945 *Age of Jackson*, and in it there is no mention of Jackson the land grabber, no mention of the Trail of Tears, no mention of his slave ownership, no mention of the Battle of Horseshoe Bend, which made him famous and won him the presidency.[\[214\]](#) That is how a great deal of American “history” has been fabricated, by simply white washing over the greatest feats of the early robber-baron presidents, acting as if they never happened, and winning awards for doing so. Schlesinger is also the most prominent person to fabricate the Camelot image of the Kennedy presidency. The cultural awakening of the 1960s has helped ameliorate such nationalistic revisionism.

While Jackson and friends were securing the South, the Northwest boundary was being expanded. The Fox were [nearly exterminated by a French-led alliance in 1730](#). They barely survived, and lived with the Sac tribe in today’s Illinois and Wisconsin. A century later, after Tecumseh died and settlers

began flooding into today's Midwest, the Sac and Fox chiefs were made drunk and "signed" a "treaty" that ceded their lands east of the Mississippi. They acquiesced to the fraud and tried eking out a life in present-day Iowa, but many starved to death in the winter of 1831-1832, and the Sac chief Black Hawk led about two thousand of his people back to northern Illinois in early 1832 to plant crops, and the whites quickly began organizing a militia against them. When faced with the mounting military effort, Black Hawk tried surrendering, but the militia fired on his people and the "Black Hawk War" thus began. The Sac and Fox peoples then went on a fruitless quest to avoid the white troops, with braves raiding frontier farms and villages as they fled. The Sac and Fox tried to go settle with other tribes that had already been forced west of the Mississippi, but the white army caught them trying to cross the Mississippi in 1833, and even though the natives tried surrendering, the whites engaged in an outright extermination of the Sac and Fox peoples, virtually completing what the French could not accomplish. Two future presidents took part in the Black Hawk War, Zachary Taylor as an officer, and Abraham Lincoln as a foot soldier.[\[215\]](#) Black Hawk was captured and then sent around the United States as an exhibit of a "humbled savage." After Black Hawk died, his remains were disinterred and put on display as trophies in an Iowa museum, which later burned down. The tiny remnants of the Sac and Fox got a postage-stamp-sized reservation in Iowa, in return for officially "ceding" their last six million acres of land.

The Spanish government allowed Americans to settle in Texas beginning in 1820, and the Mexican government foolishly allowed the practice to continue the next year. The deal was for only American Catholics to settle Texas, but the American whites only pretended to be Catholic. As the fake Catholics flooded in, they quickly wore out their welcome, especially as they brought African slaves with them, and Mexico opposed slavery. The whites began trying to take Texas from Mexico as early as 1826, with its Fredonian Rebellion. The rebellion caused the Mexican government to forbid more white settlement in Texas. Afraid that Mexico would abolish slavery in Texas, the white settlers revolted, and stole Texas from Mexico in 1836.

By 1840, except for tiny Iroquois reservations in New York and the few Seminoles who were holding out in Florida, the Native American was virtually extinct east of the Mississippi. The vast tract of land between the Appalachian Mountains and the Mississippi River, which the British set aside for native tribes in 1763, was now completely in the hands of white Americans. The tiny remnants of the Eastern Woodlands' tribes were living largely in today's Arkansas and Oklahoma, although the trend was forcing all of them into Oklahoma, which was about the most inhospitable land then known and available. Every single American president to 1840 was an unabashed, land-grabbing empire builder. As the "frontier" kept being pushed back, killing Indians was the American way to fame and fortune. During the 19th century, being known as an Indian fighter was the quickest way to garner votes, a trend that would continue after 1840.

In 1840, there were about seventeen million Americans, as compared to less than four million in 1790, when the first U.S. census was taken. The 1840s saw the U.S. in the midst of trends that define its character today. Between Napoleon and World War I, European soil was largely free of warfare. That was partly because the United States acted as a safety valve for poorer Europeans. British subjects and Germans were the most common immigrants, and the Africans who came against their will as slaves. Early industrialization in Europe was a hellish experience, with Britain leading the way. British factories were known as "satanic mills" and dismal British urban life of the

late 18th and early 19th century is epitomized by the work of Charles Dickens. His *Christmas Carol* was published in 1843.

The United States began a rapid industrial development, but [Britain's was even faster](#). In 1830, the United States' industrial output per capita was higher than any other nation in Europe, except for Britain, which was nearly twice as high, and was more than three times higher in 1860.[\[216\]](#) The era of the corporation was on the rise. Cornelius Vanderbilt began making his fortune as a war profiteer during the War of 1812, getting the government contract to supply the forts guarding New York Harbor. He quickly built a shipping empire, then began building a railroad empire, and he was worth \$20 million when the Civil War broke out, when the robber barons *really* began their ascent in America. The du Pont commercial empire was begun in 1802, by a pupil of [Lavoisier](#). The du Pont company provided gunpowder during the War of 1812. Warfare and monopolies became the American way to build fortunes, which led to the Gilded Age in the late 19th century.

The Great Potato Famine of the 1840s caused millions of hungry Irish to leave for the New World, and millions of Germans and British also came during those years. Large families and greater life expectancy also contributed greatly to America's population increase. Slave populations, unless they are worked to death as the Native Americans were, tend to have life expectancies not far removed from the master population, which led to a phenomenon unique to the United States: the ability to breed slaves. By the Civil War, there were about 6 million Africans in the United States, but only about a half million slaves were brought to what became the United States.

By 1870, the U.S. population tripled from its 1830 population, to 39 million. American xenophobia also began during that time.[\[217\]](#) The natives had been exterminated or removed, and African slaves largely accepted their lot, and Anglos dominated, especially in the Eastern Establishment. The immigrants did not get the red carpet treatment, although their horrid living conditions were better than what they left in Europe. American life expectancy was far greater than Europe's early on, as the whites plundered such a rich continent. The United States became a relief valve for Europe's huddled masses. By 1900, the United States had 76 million people in it, nearly all of whom were of European extraction, except for the 9 million Africans.

Native Americans were virtually extinct by 1900, as were many of their fellow creatures. The period from 1700 to 1900, when the English/American Empire expanded across North America, is arguably the most single-minded and sustained effort of environmental destruction that any species has ever inflicted upon this planet. John Adams wrote that his family cut down more trees than any other family in America. As one author wrote, the ax was the appropriate symbol of the early American attitude toward nature.[\[218\]](#) North America probably had earth's greatest store of environmental wealth, and the English and Americans ruthlessly [plundered it](#). Eastern North America had the world's largest temperate forest, and the old saying that a squirrel could have run from the Atlantic Ocean to the Mississippi River, without ever touching ground, was not very fanciful. Eastern North America was almost completely deforested by those "pioneers." The passenger pigeon, which may have flown in the greatest flocks our planet has seen, was on the brink of being driven to extinction in 1840, in capitalistic fashion. Expanding railroads in the 1850s allowed for a short-lived industry of killing the pigeons in the Midwest and transporting them to East Coast markets. Passenger pigeons numbered in the billions, and migrating flocks turned day into night, but by the 1880s their

populations had collapsed, and the last passenger pigeon died in captivity in 1914. The woodland bison, which roamed today's Eastern United States, was rendered extinct by the early 19th century.

The single greatest cause of the explosion of world human population, which began growing with increasing rapidity during the last half of the 1700s, was probably the introduction of New World crops to the rest of humanity. For providing human-digestible calories, New World crops were superior in significant ways. Maize is earth's hardiest seed crop, and Native Americans developed more than three thousand varieties of it, so it could thrive from northern forest to arid desert, from mountaintop to seashore. Northern China came to subsist on the sweet potato. Ireland, Russia and other harsh climates came to rely on the potato, which provided nearly double the calories of a wheat crop in half the time for less work at cultivation. It was a healthier food than wheat (people can subsist solely on the potato) and was not as subject to the vagaries of weather. The cassava root and maize became the staple of Africa, which led to its population increase that began during the 19th century. When New World crops were introduced to Old World agriculture, famines decreased and populations exploded, in Malthusian fashion. With the introduction of the potato, Ireland grew from 3.2 million in 1754 to 8.2 million in 1845, while an additional 1.75 million migrated to the New World. Today, more than half of the world's crops are of New World origin.[\[219\]](#)

Native Americans developed more than three thousand varieties of potato, and the white man made fatal errors in adopting New World crops. The Irish came to depend solely on one variety of potato, which made the Irish subsistence crop vulnerable, and in 1845 a blight ripped through not only the Irish mono-crop, but also Europe's, leading to a famine. The Great Potato Blight and subsequent famine reduced Ireland's population by more than a million, and initiated another great wave of migration to the New World.

To Steal a Continent – Finishing the Job

The 1840s saw the ascendance of two cultural phenomena. One was the xenophobia directed toward non-Anglo whites, and the other was a concept known as *Manifest Destiny*. An American diplomat, when making the case for annexing Texas, first used the term in 1845. It borrowed from the Jewish idea of a land promised to them by God, and then killing the inhabitants to get it. Manifest Destiny provided a similar rationale for the U.S., and even retroactively sanctified its vast murders. The Indians of eastern North America were gone, so American racism needed a new target, and the immigrants, even though their skin was white, served that purpose. On the frontiers however, there were still natives to eradicate, and the hatred could still be focused on dark-skinned subhumans.

Manifest Destiny may have been an attempt to reduce “cognitive dissonance,” which is a psychological condition where beliefs conflict with experience, leading to “dissonance.” The healthy response is to question or modify one's beliefs. The pathological response takes two forms. One is to increase the “positive cognitions,” which means to stress information that supports the belief being challenged by experience. The other is to decrease the “negative cognitions,” which means to ignore, suppress and forget the experiences that contradict the belief in question.

It took extreme effort to paint early American nation building in a positive light. American nationalism began growing in the 1820s, and the events that could lead to negative cognitions were abundantly clear. Accordingly, they were largely minimized, such as “historians” omitting history’s greatest complete genocide from [Columbus’ story](#), or [Washington’s fraudulent strategy](#). A creative bag of tricks was used to decrease the negative cognitions, including making the Indians subhuman. Then [Weems](#), [Irving](#) and many others created fictional positive cognitions. Manifest Destiny was another case of fabricating positive cognitions, invoking the Creator’s sanction. The basic tenet of Manifest Destiny was that Americans were “destined” to rule from sea to shining sea, and anybody in the way was in *God’s* way.

Why deal with *anybody* fairly, if superior violence will prevail? The thief just takes what he wants, and lets violence decide the issue. Might makes right has been the rationale for every empire, but it has never been prudent to come right out and say it, so Machiavelli’s professional descendants have concocted a wide range of cover stories over the centuries. Early on, because the Bill of Rights and other factors limited the coercion that the U.S. could inflict on its citizens, those who ran the U.S. began refining the art of deluding the masses to unprecedented levels. Anti-sedition laws were too crude a means of control. The art of creating mass delusions became a science during the 20th century, with the rise of the [public relations](#) industry, among others.

In 1840, William Henry Harrison was elected president, and his campaign’s slogan was “[Tippecanoe](#) and Tyler too.” As with Jackson, Harrison’s claim to fame consisted of killing Indians. The Harrison campaign was nearly apolitical, and simply tried cashing in on Harrison’s Indian-killing celebrity. Harrison was the early example of a [Ronald Reagan](#)-type front man, Harrison being 67 when elected, similar to Reagan’s 69 - America’s two oldest elected presidents. Harrison’s campaign avoided dealing with *any* substantive issues. He died quickly while in office, and Tyler usurped power. Harrison was the first president to die in office, and the Constitution was unclear about what should happen. The general thinking was that the vice president should become acting president, and call for a new election. Tyler decided to grab the throne for himself, which was bitterly denounced in his day, but his move became the precedent that America has used ever since.

Tyler was another slave-owning Virginian plantation owner, who believed that the landed aristocracy should run things. As a congressman, Tyler was against the Missouri Compromise, not wanting any restrictions on slave ownership. Another slave-owning president was an embarrassing anachronism in the West during the 1840s. The abolition movement was strong by that time. The British Empire passed laws to free all of its slaves in 1833, and by 1838 ended the “apprenticeship” program for “ex-slaves” that permitted flogging. France was forced to by the European revolutions of 1848, leaving Latin American sugar plantations and the United States virtually alone on the world stage. About the sole feat of Tyler’s administration was bringing Texas into the national fold in 1845, something that he did in cahoots with the next president, Polk. A treaty to annex Texas was defeated in the Senate in 1844 due to the slavery issue, so Tyler and Polk fabricated a legal end-run around the abolitionists, making it so that only a majority vote was needed, instead of the two-thirds majority that the Constitution required for treaty-ratification. Tyler pushed through his strategy and signed the measure a few days before he left office.

James K. Polk took office in 1845 and immediately began planning a vigorous American expansion,

to make America's Manifest Destiny come to fruition. There were even discussions at Polk's inaugural about buying California from Mexico. Mexico considered Texas a renegade territory, and when the United States absorbed Texas, Mexico broke off diplomatic relations with the United States, and Polk's cohorts began immediately plotting to seize western lands from Mexico.

For hundreds of years, all references to New Spain's province of "Tejas" delineated its western boundary as the Nueces River, something that Mexican maps confirmed. The Texas land grabbers, however, claimed that Texas extended another 150 miles westward, to the Rio Grande River, in violation of the region's history. Mexico was understandably upset with the claims of Texas, not only becoming part of the United States, but also arbitrarily extending its boundaries another 150 miles into Mexico.

General Zachary Taylor, whose claim to fame was, as usual, [killing Indians](#), did not even like the idea of annexing Texas, but he was ordered to lead an army to the Rio Grande and start something. The U.S. army purposely created a "border" incident to justify launching an invasion. Hitler did a similar thing to Poland, to start World War II. Before word even got back to Polk of Taylor's successful baiting of Mexico into the trap, Polk was campaigning to his cabinet to declare war on Mexico. When news came of the expected incident, Polk immediately declared war. U.S. Congressman Abraham Lincoln, among others, heatedly contested the war declaration, calling it nothing more than a naked land grab. A young officer serving under Taylor, Ulysses S. Grant, helped lead the American army into Mexico, where the army marauded almost at will. Grant later wrote in his memoirs that he regarded the Mexican-American war as "one of the most unjust ever waged by a stronger against a weaker nation." Disinterested historians have generally agreed with Grant's assessment.

Mexico made the mistake of allowing Anglo settlers to come to California. With the bad experience of allowing American "Catholics" to settle in Texas, Mexico made it a requirement that all white settlers to California become Mexican citizens. They did, but it proved a worthless tactic. The California whites revolted even before news of the U.S.' war declaration reached them. Similar to the whites that seized Texas, the whites in California tried establishing a new nation, called the Bear Flag Republic. That new nation lasted less than a month, ending when the U.S. Navy showed up. The Mexican-American war was an easy one for America. Although about 12,000 Americans died in the war, less than 1800 were battle deaths, the rest being disease and the related miseries of invading tropical Mexico and laying siege to Mexico City, as [Cortés](#) had done more than three centuries earlier. The United States stole half of Mexico in that war, and made Taylor a "war hero." Although Taylor never voted in his life, the Whig party used his celebrity to sweep him into the presidency in 1848, as another war hero front man. Taylor used Jackson's "spoils system," and soon died in office. Although American establishment scholars downplay the evidence, with questionable logic, substantial evidence shows that Taylor's death may have been due to intentional poisoning, and he was hard to kill, so his assassins had to poison him more than once.[\[220\]](#)

Cuban plantation owners realized the precariousness of their situation, and Polk's Secretary of State, the pro-slavery James Buchanan, tried buying Cuba. Polk even tried taking all of Oregon Country, nearly all the way to today's Alaska, willing to risk war with Britain (at that time, still the world's greatest power) to do so. Arbitration set the line at 49 degrees north latitude, where the U.S. boundary with Canada is today. Polk's tremendous land grabs helped make him one of history's

“best,” in the eyes of presidential historians.

The “treaty” between Mexico and the United States, legitimating the U.S. seizure, was signed in early 1848, and before the U.S. Senate even ratified the treaty, gold was found on John Sutter’s land, in today’s Sacramento. America’s biggest gold rush was then underway, and the usual rabble got to California any way they could. Sailing around South America was one way, and going overland to California was another, which was by far the most common method for the more than 200,000 gold seekers that made it to California by 1852. The quickest and easiest way, however, was to sail to Colombia and go overland across the Isthmus of Panama. The U.S. signed a treaty with Colombia in 1846, as its empire began straddling North America, for rights to pass through the Isthmus and build a railroad across it, which was completed in 1857, and the trip from New York to San Francisco was then shortened to about two weeks.

Before Polk, Indian removal ideology held that natives could be always pushed westward as the empire expanded, but Polk’s rapid successes leapfrogged the continent. The natives could not be pushed further westward...or could they? The Indians of the California coastline, from San Francisco to the tip of Baja California, had suffered [almost complete genocide at the hands of Spanish priests and soldiers](#) by 1846. All of Southern California’s coastal tribes were extinct long ago; the only coastal natives that survived California’s mission era were those that fled inland. When the 49-ers showed up, there were only about 150,000 surviving California natives, from a pre-Columbian population of perhaps a million. The man who initiated the genocide of California’s natives [is up for sainthood today](#), and [I went to a school named after him](#), and that most important part of his legacy was never told me as a child. Indian removal westward was not practical in California, so the first governor of California, which joined the Union in 1850, called for an open season on California’s natives. There was a lucrative head bounty on the gentle natives of California, and in the 1850s and 1860s the slaughter of the remaining California natives may have been the most intense genocidal effort of the entire history of the white man in North America, something that also escaped my California history textbooks. When the 49-ers slaughtered entire villages every weekend for fun and profit, surviving children were often sold into slavery in Sacramento and San Francisco. Indian girls brought twice the price of Indian boys, [because they also served as concubines](#) for the “settlers.” Similar dynamics took place in Oregon Country.

Even though the genocide of Northern California’s natives proceeded, celebrated and unabated, there was still talk in the 1860s to “resettle” the natives even further westward, on unnamed islands in the Pacific Ocean.[\[221\]](#) By 1900, the Native American population in California was 15,000, for a greater than 95% extermination rate since 1769, the typical rate that all Native American tribes experienced at the white man’s hands, if they survived outright extinction.

The United States began thinking on a global basis fairly early. In 1853, Commodore Perry mounted his diplomatic invasion of Japan, forcing an insular, feudal people into the developing world economy. [Japan quickly began playing catch-up with the West](#), leading to their participation in World War II.

With eastern North American bereft of its native population, and the genocide of the West Coast’s

natives well underway, there was only one region still “unsettled” by the white man, the mountainous, desert-like interior of the American West, and the Great Plains north of Oklahoma. The beaver pelt trade collapsed in the 1830s, as the [fur trade](#) finally encircled the world. Gold was discovered in the Rocky Mountains in 1858, and Denver was established in 1860. Black Kettle’s Cheyenne tribe welcomed the white men, but no matter how warm the welcome, the “pioneers” were bent on collecting scalps, which led to the outrageous [Sand Creek Massacre in 1864](#). The “pioneer” press went delirious with [joy at each new massacre](#). The “frontier” Americans [cheered the slaughters the loudest](#). The “noble pioneer” archetype of the American settlers is [nearly a complete fabrication](#). [Few seem to want to remember the truth](#), however, at least in white America.

The American Civil War is probably best seen as a crisis of empire. Abraham Lincoln even openly admitted it, saying that keeping the Union whole was the point of the Civil War, and that keeping blacks in slavery was acceptable to him if it kept the Union together. Most empires, from the earliest days of civilization, through Rome, Spain, Britain and others, have largely collapsed from within, from internal corruption and imperial lands breaking away, seeking independence (to create their own empires). [No empire has ever given up its lands easily](#), and the United States is no exception, and it had been grabbing land as virtually no earthly empire had ever done before. Such unprecedented growth was bound to lead to internal friction, with imperial subjects breaking away and vying for power, just as the United States originally broke away from the British Empire, soon after *its* greatest moment of triumph.

Corporations originally had limited lives, being temporary vehicles for conducting business. During the Civil War, war profiteering became an American science, and the corporation became the real power in America, with laws being rewritten to give corporations the rights of people and even unlimited life. Graft and corruption were on the rise.

The United States still bears the scars from the Civil War. The Civil War was about the world’s first industrial war, with submarines and railroads seeing use, and other technologies. The North’s strategy, as represented by Grant’s philosophy, was to simply use the North’s greater industrial capacity to grind down the South through a war of attrition. That also became the strategy for how future wars would be won, notably [World War II](#). Early cameras recorded the Civil War’s carnage, bringing it into people’s living rooms, which considerably dimmed the glorious luster that is always falsely attributed to the organized murder known as warfare.

Slavery and abolition played its role in the Civil War, but Lincoln’s Emancipation Proclamation did not free one slave, being more of a politician’s gambit. Until Lincoln’s proclamation, the Civil War was explicitly one to hold the Union together. His proclamation gave the veneer of righteousness to the affair, and helped sway European opinion, as the northern half of the empire was now waging war against a barbaric anachronism. The European powers were toying with intervention, as the American empire threatened to fragment. Britain sent troops to Canada, and France sent troops to Mexico, both supporting the South. The Czar of Russia sent his navy to the U.S, anchored at New York and San Francisco, in a show of support for the North. Russia, Britain and France were jockeying in those days for supremacy, the [Crimean War](#) ending a few years earlier, and with U.S. instability, the New World became a theater for the jockeying of European powers, for a historical moment. Secretary of State Seward deftly handled the situation and avoided open war with Europe,

especially in 1861 when a northern ship stopped and boarded the *Trent*, a British ship, and seized two Southern diplomats bound for England. Seward, like his predecessors, grabbed what land he could, but failed with his plans to acquire Caribbean islands and Hawaii. His only success was “Seward’s Folly,” “buying” Alaska from the Czar of Russia.

When Ulysses Grant toured the South after the Civil War, he saw no problem with blacks becoming even worse slaves than before, working for the same masters they had before the Civil War, except with no guarantee of food or shelter, which was part of the slavery “deal.” Grant even called the freedmen’s refusal to submit to a new form of slavery lazy on their part.[\[222\]](#)

The slaughter and dispossession of the Indians continued unabated during the Civil War. Ironically, the demographic group to suffer the greatest was the Cherokee Nation. After the [Trail of Tears](#), and also being violently kicked out of Texas by white settlers, they made the best of their lives in Oklahoma, and when the Civil War broke out, they wanted no part of another white man’s war. Oklahoma, however, was strategically placed between North and South, and the Cherokee were pretty much forced to choose between the lesser of two great evils. They generally aligned with the South, and the resultant carnage killed off probably more than a third of the Cherokee. White America lost less than 2% of its population in the Civil War.

The Bozeman Trail to gold fields in Montana went right through Sioux hunting grounds, and the whites wreaked their usual devastation as they passed through. In 1866, the Sioux, led by Red Cloud, fought off the white invasion. In 1868 the U.S. relented and agreed to close its forts along the trail, for the only war that Native Americans ever won against the United States. However, the 1868 treaty was deceptive, in the U.S. tradition, with it calling for the Sioux to move to reservations in today’s South Dakota. Fittingly, that deceptive treaty with Red Cloud was the last treaty the United States would sign with a Native American tribe. Washington’s subterfuge worked brilliantly. More than 370 treaties were forced by the U.S. onto Native Americans, and the U.S. did not honor even one of them. After 1868, the stratagem was not needed any longer, as there were virtually no more natives left to swindle. The last remaining land to steal was in the northern plains, and the industrial giant would not need much more effort to subdue the last remaining natives...or so they thought.

In 1868, another famous “Indian fighter” made his mark, when [George Custer](#) attacked the sleeping, friendly camp of Black Kettle’s. Black Kettle survived the [Sand Creek Massacre](#) and amazingly kept advocating peace, to only die in Custer’s dawn attack on the [Washita River](#). Custer became a national hero because of Washita. He was also an accomplished liar. His first account of the Washita massacre stated that he killed a bunch of warriors, instead of sleeping women and children. He led a gold-hunting expedition into the Black Hills in 1874, in violation of the treaty. The Black Hills were sacred, spirit land to the Sioux, and they would never cede them. Custer lied about the gold that was found there on his illegal expedition, and a gold rush then descended on the Black Hills, when gold really was found. After more fraudulent diplomacy, the U.S. declared war on the Sioux in 1875.

Custer turned 35 during the winter of 1875-1876, the minimum age for presidential eligibility. He hobnobbed with New York’s elite that winter, and a conspiracy apparently hatched. The Grant administration was possibly America’s most corrupt ever, and the centennial celebration was coming

up that summer, with American nationalism reaching a deafening crescendo. The plan, [later admitted by his Indian scouts](#), was for Custer to kill more sleeping Indians that summer, and the resultant fervor would sweep him to the presidency that autumn. The Sioux were proving to be rather tough customers for the U.S. military, as Red Cloud's war demonstrated. In the spring of 1876, marauding armies were hunting for Indians to kill, and an army attacked a large bison-hunting party in early June. Led by Crazy Horse, those natives crippled the U.S. forces. A couple of weeks later, the army with Custer in it was in the vicinity, also hunting for natives, and happened upon the same Indians.

Custer deserted his post earlier in his career, but his Civil War reputation got him lenient treatment, and he was merely suspended from duty for a year. Custer nearly did not make it to the Great Plains that summer to mount his presidential campaign. Grant knew of Custer's ambition and tried clipping his wings, but Custer did some maneuvering, pulled some strings and got into position to kill Indians that summer.

Custer was not leading the army, and when they caught sign of a large group of natives, Custer was assigned to reconnoiter them, not attack them. His ambition was well known among the army brass, and when he went to scout the "enemy," his commander reminded him to follow orders, which Custer replied to jokingly as he rode off. Custer knew that he needed to place the heroic mantle on his shoulders alone, in order to be swept into the White House. He disobeyed orders so he could monopolize the killing. The [Washita Massacre](#) showed him to be a sloppy commander, not properly sizing up the situation before attacking. At the Little Big Horn his "Custer's luck" ran out, as he led a charge of less than three hundred men into a camp of four thousand armed natives. The surprised natives made short work of Custer and his men.

The news of "Custer's Last Stand" made it to Washington during the midst of the centennial celebration. Instead of Custer being hoisted onto the nation's shoulders as the greatest Indian-killer of all, America had a sobering moment. I have a special interest in the genocide of the Plains Indians, which is discussed at this footnote.[\[223\]](#)

During those days, [robber barons](#) were busily building their capitalistic empires, most of them getting their start in Civil War profiteering. Today's empires in [energy](#) and [medicine](#) had their beginnings during the Gilded Age, empires that largely hold Americans (and even humanity) hostage today. The defrauding of Native Americans out of their lands and lives would have been bad enough if it had stopped there, but it continued. In 1775, the revolutionaries formed a Committee of Indian Affairs, headed by Ben Franklin. Today's Bureau of Indian Affairs (BIA) was formed in 1824. The treaties the Indians signed often provided for government assistance, because the natives had the land taken away that sustained them. Similar to how the United States honored its treaties, the graft and corruption in the Indian Bureau was probably worse than in any other government agency, a notable feat. One of the quickest ways to riches in the mid-19th century was becoming an Indian agent at the Indian Bureau. A favorite Indian agent method was pocketing the money appropriated for Indian food and supplies, and then devoting a tiny fraction of the purloined funds toward largely worthless "supplies." The corruption was so bad that the Grant administration tried the strategy of hiring church members as agents.[\[224\]](#) Grant's "Quaker Policy" was not very successful.

In U.S. history, one of the greatest vehicles for mischief has proven to be “philanthropy.” Some has been disastrous, such as the “philanthropy” of [Rockefeller and Carnegie](#), which [helped create](#) today’s medical racket. It is challenging to put a humanitarian spin on the machinations of some of U.S. history’s greediest men. Their right hand would machine-gun striking employees, while their left hand “gave” money to “worthy causes.” Wink, nudge. Other “philanthropists” may have been well intended, but their actions were often based on arrogant paternalism, thinking that they knew what was best for the victims of the very system that garnered the philanthropists their wealth.

When the Civil War ended, the Cherokee clawed back from the edge of the abyss once again, and more of their land was taken, while railroads and other land-grabbing enterprises moved in. The Cherokee, as with all North American tribes, did not have the concept of individual land ownership. Tribal members owned their homes and other possessions, but the tribe owned the land. On the East Coast, “philanthropists” huddled together to decide how to “help” the dispossessed. American “philanthropy” was a cousin to the “[White Man’s Burden](#),” which was rooted in some sense of responsibility, at least superficially. Seemingly more often than not, the “help” given in the name of philanthropy and the White Man’s Burden made the situation worse.

A most curious instance of U.S. “philanthropy” was the “reform” that Massachusetts Senator Henry Dawes rammed through during the 1880s. In 1883, at a meeting of Eastern philanthropists, Dawes, an Indian “expert,” spoke of his recent visit to Indian Territory. Almost certainly speaking of the Cherokee, Dawes painted a portrait that even the most Indian-friendly observer would have blushed at. What Dawes said was true, about how there were no Cherokee homeless, how the Cherokee Nation had no debt, how high literacy was and the like. For what the Cherokee had endured, what they accomplished was truly astounding, although they still had their problems, as every society does. Dawes then came to the nub of the issue as he saw it,

“Yet the defect of their system was apparent. They got as far as they can go, because they own their land in common. It is Henry George’s system, and under that there is no enterprise to make your home any better than that of your neighbors. There is no selfishness, which is at the bottom of civilization. Till this people will consent to give up their lands, and divide them among their citizens so that each can own the land he cultivates, they will not make much more progress.”[\[225\]](#)

Seldom has there been a more frank admission about what really drives Western civilization. The Cherokee surely had a “civilization,” something arguably more civilized than anything the whites ever had, but it was not *selfish* enough. Dawes tried remedying that defect. Congress passed the Dawes Severalty Act in 1887. It broke up tribal lands into individual plots, at 160 acres for a head of household, down to 40 acres for a child. Such arithmetic took away 10,000 square miles of land that had been designated for the Cherokee tribe, and that land was used in the famous Oklahoma homesteader rush of 1893, complete with a starting line and gun to start the race. What Jackson could not do by outright fraud, Dawes accomplished under the rubric of “philanthropy.” The

Cherokee heatedly contested such “philanthropy,” and the U.S. government responded with the 1898 Curtis Act, which abolished the governments of the Civilized Tribes. The names, faces and tactics changed, but the game remained the same.

While the Oklahoma Indians did their best to put the shattered pieces back together, the last free natives of the northern plains were under siege. What happened on the plains was an industrial genocide. Early on, Americans used killing off the bison as a method of starving the Plains Indians out, related to [Washington’s strategy](#). Railroads were built into Indian Country, and there were even “railroad hunts,” where “hunters” would shoot out the windows of the trains, slaughtering the bison in awesome numbers. The railroad builders even fairly regularly [murdered their laborers](#), as it was cheaper than paying them. Great heaps of bison bones lined those early railways along the prairie. The U.S. government handed out free ammunition to “buffalo hunters.” Shooting bison was about the least sportsmanlike activity that an “outdoorsman” could engage in. Bison would stand in a herd, and shooting a “stand” of bison was the ideal. If done properly, the bison would fall one-by-one, as the marksman dropped each one, until they were all down. The record for a single man, shooting at a bison stand, was more than one hundred. From a pre-Columbian population of about 60 million animals, the bison were reduced to 23 wild ones, and less than a thousand of them in all, at about the same time that the Plains Indians were finally conquered and brought to the brink of extinction.

The Sioux may have prevailed momentarily during 1868 and the summer of 1876, but their triumphs were short-lived. The American juggernaut merely threw more resources at the problem, and the standard murderous duplicity was brought to bear. Sitting Bull and Crazy Horse met violent ends at the hands of white men; the usual fate for those who led the resistance, especially if it was successful. By the late 1880s, the Sioux joined their North American brethren, being ground under the white man’s boot. The American vengeance inflicted on the Sioux lasts to this day. The Pine Ridge reservation sits in the United States’ poorest county. Life expectancy there is at Third World levels, as it is on all Indian reservations. In 1980, the life expectancy of a Native American reservation man was 44.6 years, nearly 30 years less than their white American counterparts.[\[226\]](#) The reservation women lived less than three years longer.

During the late 1880s, the forlorn remnants of the Plains Indians engaged in something that Native Americans had done since at least the Aztec conquest: mourning the passing of their societies, and a desperate hope that if they beseeched the spirit world properly, the whites would disappear and the lands and peoples would be restored.[\[227\]](#) Local whites feared the Ghost Dance. They probably did not understand its purpose, but would have undoubtedly been more hostile if they had. The U.S. mobilized against the Ghost Dance “threat,” to prevent the natives from dancing. In late 1890, U.S. troops killed Sitting Bull and a dozen other Ghost Dancers, and the survivors fled to Wounded Knee. A few days after Sitting Bull died, Frank Baum, the author of the *Wizard of Oz*, [called for the complete extermination of all remaining Native Americans](#). A few days later, U.S. troops put an end to the Ghost Dancers, opening their guns on them at Wounded Knee, killing a few hundred men, women and children. The troops were so eager that they killed quite a few of their own with “friendly fire.” Native survivors of the massacre were tracked down and murdered. When he heard of Wounded Knee, Baum recorded his approval, urging his readers to “wipe these untamed and untamable creatures from the face of the earth.”[\[228\]](#) With the massacre at Wounded Knee, Manifest Destiny succeeded in securing the continent. From [Morton](#)’s Puritan persecutors to

Wounded Knee, dancing Indians were only good for killing.[\[229\]](#) In the words of David Stannard, “There was, at last, almost no one left to kill.”

The Empire Goes Global

In 1890, the American “frontier” was declared officially extinct. American settlement spanned the entire continent, from sea to shining sea. The 1900 census counted about 76 million people, and 250,000 Native Americans. The frontier was not the only thing extinct. The Eastern Woodlands were almost completely leveled, in history’s most spectacular deforestation. The passenger pigeon was nearing extinction, with the bison close behind it. The [European/American whaling industry](#) virtually wiped out several species of whales, and whaling was [becoming industrialized](#), eventually bringing what is probably [another sentient species](#) to the verge of extinction. Native Americans in the United States were reduced from their pre-Columbian population by probably somewhere between 95% and 98%. American cultural managers appeared to try reducing the [cognitive dissonance](#) of the nation’s people, because American nationalism was about to achieve orgiastic dimensions.

America in 1890 was turbulent, although the subsequent decade is known as the “Gay Nineties.” The robber baron empires had largely been built by that time. Monopolies were the rage, their excesses becoming so overt that the era of “trust-busting” began early in the early 20th century, with limited effectiveness. Modern medicine was well on its way to becoming [the racket it is today](#). By the 1890s, surgery vaulted from [barbaric obscurity](#) to [becoming a racket](#). In the South, the Ku Klux Klan, which was originally formed by Southern elites to harass the Reconstruction government, quickly degenerated into poor, uneducated whites lynching blacks - their primary economic competitors. American lynchings peaked during the early 1890s, and were highly popular, with people murdered in a carnival atmosphere, the lynchers making postcards from the scenes, [posing next to the burning or hanging \(or both\) corpse](#). The North was not noted for its [enlightened racial attitudes](#), either.

The 1880s saw a huge influx of immigrants from Eastern Europe, with Slavic peoples arriving by the millions, as well as Jews, Italians, Chinese and others who differed markedly from the Germanic, Anglo and Celtic immigrants of earlier generations. The United States was well on its way to [becoming an anti-Semitic society](#)[\[230\]](#), and American xenophobia was on the rise. Every non-Anglo American group had an unflattering epithet bestowed onto them, including nigger, chink, greaser, kike, spic, dago and so on.[\[231\]](#) The cognitive dissonance dynamic surely contributed, but also some sought to unify widely disparate groups.

Post-9/11 Americans might be surprised to know that today’s American flag worship had its roots in the modern era, not the American Revolution. England was the first Great Power to permanently undermine the power of royalty, with its revolutions during the 1600s, but the phenomenon of worshipping British royalty is regarded as a strange, pre-modern relic, something found nowhere else in Europe. Sober scholars see American flag worship as even more bizarre.[\[232\]](#)

The American flag was originally the British Union Jack with white stripes added. The American flag was created solely because ships needed to carry a flag. Adopting a flag was a trifling formality for the Founding Fathers. No flags flew in the early days of the American republic, and even the Founding Fathers were not sure what it looked like. A year after the American flag was adopted, a letter to the king of Naples, signed by Ben Franklin and John Adams, informed the king that the American flag "consists of thirteen stripes, alternately red, white and blue." In 1794, a bill was introduced to add two stars to the flag, because Vermont and Kentucky were admitted to the union. Congressmen objected that their important time was being wasted by such a trivial matter, and the bill was quickly adopted "as the quickest way of terminating" discussion of it.[\[233\]](#) The Betsy Ross "stitching-the-flag" story is a fabrication, concocted by her grandson. There are no contemporary depictions of the American flag in *any* American Revolution artwork. Francis Scott Key, who wrote the poem that was wedded to a drinking song to become the national anthem, thought that the U.S. had begun the War of 1812 and deserved to lose it.

American nationalism began its ascent during the 1820s, reaching a fevered pitch with [Manifest Destiny](#), as the United States began looking more like a proper empire. As the continental theft was completed, and "surplus" Europeans flooded in, there was a conscious attempt to create a new form of religion: state worship. Fittingly, a Marxist minister created the American pledge of allegiance in 1892, in a conscious attempt to create a new object of worship. The original pledge was not performed in the hand-over-heart way that we see today. The "Bellamy Salute" was originally given with an outstretched arm pointing to the flag, palm up. Imagine Romeo making his love speech, with his hand held toward Juliet's balcony, and we get an idea of what the original pledge of allegiance looked like. It stayed that way until 1942, when the fascist salutes of Hitler and Mussolini looked a little too close to the American pledge of allegiance, and Americans took their arms down and placed them over their hearts. The connection with Nazi Germany is more than coincidence. In the modern era, only three states have had a pledge of allegiance: the U.S., Nazi Germany and the U.S. vassal state, the [Philippines](#).

People I consider enlightened Christian Americans refuse to say the pledge of allegiance and salute the flag, because it is the worship of an inanimate object, which is idolatry and something that the Second Commandment forbids. They consider saluting the American flag the equivalent of Moses' followers worshipping the golden calf. Interestingly, as I was writing this essay in July 2002, a federal judge declared the pledge of allegiance unconstitutional, because of the words "under God" (added to the pledge in 1954, during the McCarthy witch hunts) in it. American politicians called the ruling ridiculous, but both the politicians and judge completely missed the real issue, which is that the entire pledge of allegiance amounts to an act of religion that American children are forced to undergo. Few Americans seem to think that flag and state worship are not acts of religion, even when laws pertaining to flag treatment use overtly religious terms such as "desecration."

The pledge of allegiance was given to American schoolchildren as a warm-up to the 400th anniversary of Columbus' "discovery" of the New World. The Columbian Exposition was held in 1893, because the affair was so colossal and took awhile to stage. It had the [highest event attendance in world history](#), to that time. The American continent was secured, and the empire then began to go global. In early 1893, white settlers overthrew the Hawaiian government (with the help

of the U.S. Marines), bringing the Pacific plum into the American hand. Some Congressmen decried the move as naked imperialism, and even the new president, Grover Cleveland, tried putting Hawaii's queen back in power. The whites in Hawaii, as with whites in California and Texas, created a short-lived republic, with Sanford Dole becoming Hawaii's president. Hawaii stayed a white republic until the openly imperial William McKinley came into office in 1897, and the U.S. soon annexed it. Dole, as in Dole Pineapple, became the Hawaiian territory's first governor. Land grabbing was still the road to riches in the pre-industrialized world.

The European powers did not idly sit by while the U.S. conquered a continent and began its global expansion. After losing the best parts of North America to its ambitious colonies, Britain busily conquered and colonized Australia, New Zealand, South Africa and Canada, while devastating the peoples of those lands. Britain ruthlessly pillaged [India and China](#). France also did not sit and watch. It secured some of the South Pacific, and during the 1860s it began conquering Indochina and inflicting its brutal reign. In the 1870s the [Scramble for Africa](#) was witnessed, as Europe began to carve up Africa, turning it into a big plantation and mine, with railroads installed to ship the loot to Europe. Russia and today's [Germany](#) were a little late in coming to the imperial table, and were largely landlocked. Russia and Prussia had to content themselves with more local conquests, and the Hapsburg Empire, headquartered in Austria, was feeling a bit hemmed in. Belgium was the first nation on the European mainland to industrialize. Belgium's King Leopold II wanted an empire, but it was difficult finding lands and people not already living under the European lash. After years of searching, Leopold finally engaged in "philanthropic" empire building in the Congo. The subsequent rubber boom became the source of Leopold's wealth, and one of history's greatest and most neglected genocides is what Belgium did to Congolese Africans during Leopold's rubber grab and afterward. During its first generation of conquest and exploitation, Belgium's efforts killed off about ten million Africans.[\[234\]](#)

Britain played the Great Game with Russia in Central Asia, with Afghanistan being an imperial battleground. While the Great Powers were securing the planet, there were also imperial losers. The Ottoman Empire began declining during the 1500s. Ironically, Europe had more ancient and lasting animosity with Islamic peoples than any other non-European culture, but it was about the planet's last place to have the European boot laid across its neck.

By 1800, about the only thing keeping the Ottoman Empire alive was the Great Powers preventing any one of them from seizing it. The issue of the Ottoman Empire's fate became known as the Eastern Question. The European powers nibbled away at it, however. Greece was carved away from it in the 1820s, Russia kept southward pressure on Ottoman lands and sought influence in the Balkans, and a series of events eventually led to the Crimean War, which began in 1853, with France, Britain and the Ottoman armies fighting against the Russians. The war blunted Russia's ambition for Black Sea hegemony, as seven hundred thousand people, most of them civilians, died.

The era from about 1870 to World War I is generally seen as a cultural golden age in imperial Europe, known as La Belle Époque. The Impressionist and post-Impressionist period was one Europe's more fecund artistic eras. Life expectancy in England began rising dramatically during the late 19th century, from about forty years for a man in 1860, to more than fifty in 1910. [Life insurance](#) companies began taking note of obesity and mortality, as obesity was no longer the sole province of

the rich. While Europe was having fun, the peoples in its imperial domains were devastated. King Leopold was just one of the gang. The imperial, capitalistic conquests of Britain in Asia dealt severe blows to the economic, political and cultural systems in India, and China also suffered. El Niño events in the late 1870s and late 1890s, combined with the effects of European imperialism, created two catastrophes that killed off between 40 and 60 million people in [India and China](#), while boxcars of food with armed guards were shipped to Europe. Between 1750 and 1900, Europe's population rose from 17 to 21% of world population, while South Asia's declined from 23 to 20%.^[235] It partly had to do with a resource transfer. The same resource-transfer situation prevails today, with more than a billion overweight people and more than a billion underweight people, with the [fat ones in the imperial world](#) and the skinny ones in the colonial world.

The United States was enjoying its Gilded Age at the same time. Life for the white man was good, sitting atop the world. By 1900, the world's only place of significance not under white domination was Japan, [and they were feverishly playing catch-up with the West](#). Taking their lead from the United States, Japan created a Manifest Destiny-type ideology that focused on China, making their Chinese cousins into subhuman dogs, something evident in the Rape of Nanking.^[236] The year after adding Hawaii to its larder, the United States waged a war against Spain, with Manifest Destiny cheerleader William Randolph Hearst giving an infamous message to his employee Frederick Remington, who was covering the non-events in Cuba, "You furnish the pictures. I'll furnish the war." Hearst's yellow journalism won the day, and the United States stole Cuba, Puerto Rico and the Philippines from Spain, as a former New World colony seized about the last shreds of Spain's imperial lands. Not far removed from how the [Spanish mercenaries treated the Incan emperor](#), President McKinley made demands of Spain as he rattled his saber, and even after Spain capitulated, meeting all U.S. demands, McKinley still declared war on them. The peoples of those lands that the U.S. seized became anything but free. They merely had new imperial overlords.

The Philippines' case was particularly egregious. The U.S. had designs on Caribbean islands for many years, and as they were in the U.S.' back yard, Americans could concoct some mildly plausible case for their conquest. The Philippines, however, lay across the world's largest ocean. "Discovered" by [Magellan](#) in 1521, who died while fighting the natives there, the Philippines were conquered by Spain during the 1560s, and Manila was established. The Philippines did not have the imperial culture of the [Aztecs](#) or [Incas](#), and there were no gold-plated civilizations to plunder. Also, the Philippines were conquered later in the imperial game than the New World was. The Spanish experience in the Philippines was kind of a cross between the mass conversions of Mexico and its hacienda economy, imposed on peoples more like Caribbean natives than Aztecs. Priests, ranchers and plantation owners dominated the Philippines during the colonial era, with the church being the Philippines' largest landowner. The Spanish never had a gentle colonial tenure anywhere, but at least the Philippine experience was not the vast genocide that marked their [New World efforts](#).

Cuba and the Philippines had independence revolts, and the Spanish brutally put them down. That became the U.S. excuse for invading: freeing the subjected peoples. Cortés mouthed some of the same rhetoric [as he laid siege to Tenochtitlán](#). As the United States took the global stage with its invasion of the Philippines, Britain's imperial bard, Rudyard Kipling, penned a poem titled "The White Man's Burden." Kipling was articulating British racism, framing the imperial venture as bringing

“civilization” to the world’s dark-skinned peoples, and his poem was specifically an exhortation to the Philippines to submit to America’s benevolent rule. Kipling was welcoming the United States to the intercontinental smorgasbord. U.S. Senator Albert Beveridge was a leading light of the day, eventually joining Teddy Roosevelt’s third party when he ran for president in 1912. In January of 1900, Beveridge gave a famous speech where he called the Filipino people “children,” totally incapable of “self-government.” It was a direct echo of Kipling’s sentiments. McKinley told a group of Methodist ministers,

“The truth is I did not want the Philippines and when they came to us as a gift from the gods, I did not know what to do with them.”[\[237\]](#)

The invasion’s benevolence quickly became evident. The Filipino people could not be kept from childish notions of self-government, and the United States quickly waged a war against them, in much the same way they prosecuted the exterminations of Native Americans, even using the same rhetoric at times. In the Philippines, while many thousands of “militant” natives were killed, the U.S. murdered about 200,000 civilians, using starvation and other tactics, including torture. The Americans called the Filipinos “goo-goos,” and waged scorched-earth campaigns. It was a preview of what the United States did to Southeast Asia during the 1950s, 1960s and 1970s. “Goo-goo” was a direct predecessor to “gook” and the same kinds of “kill-all-the-civilians” tactics were used in both wars, to “help” those people. Tacitus remarked on the Roman style of warfare and subjugation, “They make a desert and they call it peace.”

One American officer in the Philippines justified the exercise with,

“There is no use mincing words...If we decided to stay, we must bury all qualms and scruples about Weylerian cruelty, the consent of the governed, etc., and stay. We exterminated the American Indian, and I guess most of us are proud of it, or at least believe the end justified the means; and we must have no scruples about exterminating this other race standing in the way of progress and enlightenment, if it is necessary.”[\[238\]](#)

There was little domestic dissent to that latest American adventure.[\[239\]](#) When atrocity stories began trickling into the United States, Philippine hearings were held, but they were rigged by Henry Cabot Lodge, with Beveridge assisting in the whitewash, which has been a standard outcome in [virtually every governmental investigation into its own conduct](#), a pattern that holds to this day.

Not everybody in America cheered the Philippine invasion. There was a vigorous Anti-Imperialist

League, and Mark Twain was its leading spokesperson. Twain considered the last years of his life his most important, as he led campaigns against U.S. and European imperialism. Mark Twain wrote about [King Leopold's genocidal efforts](#), but because American corporations were big investors in the rape of Africa, the publication of Twain's [King Leopold's Soliloquy](#) was almost completely suppressed in the United States, and remains one of his least known works.

When [Las Casas](#) published his tract on the Spanish experience in the New World, it became a huge bestseller, although the Vatican suppressed his greatest work for three hundred years. At least Las Casas' work is readily available today. The suppression of Mark Twain's anti-imperial writings is one of the most impressive instances of how Western censorship works. Western censorship is not accomplished by government or church interests, but by corporate interests, reflecting who is really in charge. For nearly a century, it was virtually impossible to even know that Twain had ever written any anti-imperialist essays, as virtually all of his biographers silently passed over his life's most important work. His anti-imperialist essays were never included in anthologies of his work. Finally, in 1992 there was a publication of his work, in a small-volume printing titled *Mark Twain's Weapons of Satire: Anti-Imperialist Writings on the Philippines*. The book quickly went out of print and is nearly impossible to find today. Fortunately, [excerpts are on the Internet today](#). I have tried to locate the book several times over the years, and currently have a standing order for it at Amazon.com. That kind of suppression and censorship, done by the "free market," exceeded anything that the Stalinist Soviet Union or Maoist China accomplished. George Orwell, writing the forward to perhaps the 20th century's most read political book, *Animal Farm*, remarked on how the West's "free press" performs its censorship. His publishers, as if to prove him right, [censored that preface](#), and it has never been restored to its rightful place, and still is virtually unknown.

Here is a sample of Twain's neglected work, which has poignant application to today's post 9/11 world.

"A Patriot is merely a rebel at the start.

"In the beginning of a change the patriot is a scarce man, and brave, and hated and scorned. When his cause succeeds, the timid join him, for then it costs nothing to be a patriot. The soul and substance of what customarily ranks as patriotism is moral cowardice and always has been.

"In any civic crisis of a great and dangerous sort the common herd is not privately anxious about the rights and wrongs of the matter, it is only anxious to be on the winning side.

"In the North, before the war, the man who opposed slavery was despised and ostracised, and insulted. By the "patriots." Then, by and by, the "patriots" went over to *his* side, and thenceforth *his* attitude became patriotism.

"There are two kinds of patriotism -- monarchical patriotism and republican patriotism. In the one case the government and the king may rightfully furnish you their notions of patriotism; in the other,

neither the government nor the entire nation is privileged to dictate to any individual what the form of his patriotism shall be. The gospel of the monarchical patriotism is: "The King can do no wrong." We have adopted it with all its servility, with an unimportant change in the wording: "Our country, right or wrong!" We have thrown away the most valuable asset we had:-- the individual's right to oppose both flag and country when he (just *he*, by himself) believed them to be in the wrong. We have thrown it away; and with it all that was really respectable about that grotesque and laughable word, Patriotism."

The kind of "free market" censorship that [Twain](#) and [Orwell](#) were subjected to demonstrated new dynamics in the arena of power, control and wealth accumulation. If two of the West's most famous authors could have their critical political observations about the West censored so completely, most people would not even know about them, much less read them, keeping the [negative cognitions](#) at bay once again. It happened even more completely with [lesser-known authors](#). With the revolutions in Europe, probably beginning with England's civil wars, the Western states had limited ability to use violence on dissenting citizens, and so the cultural managers had to control what people *thought*. Therefore, British and American cultural managers have long been the world's most sophisticated practitioners of mind control, its effects easily seen in [American flag worship](#), British royalty worship and other cultural phenomena. Such behaviors are religious acts, but the participants seem to pretend that they are not.

The European colonial experience was different for each imperial player. The [Portuguese](#) experience was more purely mercantile than the [Spanish](#) one. Spain's imperial exploitation of Mesoamerica was relatively primitive. Raw materials were exported to Spain, but it was mainly gold and silver, which had no productive uses, but allowed Spain's elites to enjoy European manufactures while the mines lasted, while initiating a vast inflationary spiral. Spain's primitive imperial dynamic [largely destroyed it as an imperial power by 1600](#). Spain's early imperial projects were little more than rich Spaniards financing rape-and-plunder operations, with the Crown getting its cut. The [Netherlands](#), which was Europe's first republic, had a more refined strategy, and its East India Company was a combination of corporation and state, and was a direct forerunner to modern corporations. The [English](#) had a similar strategy, and its East India Company became the official ruler of [India](#). [France](#) played the game also, but never quite attained the Dutch and English levels of capitalistic/mercantilist thrust.

The United States came to the empire game much later, and by the time it took the global stage, the corporate order was firmly entrenched. Robber barons virtually ran the nation, with many politicians and government officials in their hip pockets. The European powers had national and colonial subjects. The American Empire had employees, customers and voters. Employees were supposed to follow orders, living as subjects in economic dictatorships. In the American system, freedom was reserved for the owners, customers and voters. At least, that was the carefully crafted fiction of how the American system functions. Customers supposedly had freedom of choice, but American capitalism was notable for how monopolies dominated the scene. When there is only one brand of product, there is little choice, especially regarding life's necessities. In America, all industries and professions [quickly became rackets](#), its owners and members attending to their mutual self-interest.

Wiping out competitors was how the monopolies were largely established and maintained, something that even [Adam Smith](#) remarked upon.

[John Taylor Gatto](#), one of America's finest schoolteachers, openly admits that today's American school system was designed by robber barons a century ago, and that "[dumbing us down](#)" has been the goal of the American school system ever since. The corporate goal is creating docile, childish customers who are easily manipulated. That is no "conspiracy theory," but simply social engineering, consciously designed by people working for the [Rockefellers](#) and others. After Rockefeller [strikebreakers turned machine guns on striking coal miners](#), Rockefeller hired J.P. Morgan's publicist, and the rise of [public relations](#) began, which was all about "image management." Rockefeller created institutions such as the [University of Chicago](#), which dominates mainstream economic theory today, framing the issues in capitalistic terms. Today's system is history's most sophisticated and subtle. Average Americans think they are getting the [news](#), [education](#) and entertainment, not brainwashing. The most effective propaganda systems are *supposed* to appear as something different than what they are. If cultural managers can get the masses to worship flags, movie stars, sports heroes and other largely meaningless symbols, they can be easily manipulated. America's imperial system is merely tactically different and more sophisticated than the European one; the goals of power, control and wealth accumulation at the expense of others remain the same. Regarding how it has deluded the masses, the American system was a triumph of form over substance.

Hawaii, Cuba, Guam, the Philippines and Puerto Rico became outright American colonies, no different than how the European powers operated. In 1900, American troops participated in putting down the Boxer "Rebellion," helping keep China under the white man's boot. The United States also began playing a slightly different version of the imperial game, and the earliest and perhaps greatest instance of its novel colonialism was how it invented Panama. There is a recent book on the subject, which clearly demonstrates how the early days of neocolonialism operated.[\[240\]](#) Neocolonialism is colonialism in everything but the name, and accordingly, the American Empire is an empire in everything but the name. The main difference is that the subject peoples get to fly their own flag as a symbol of their illusionary independence. The oppression and exploitation is simply carried out by [different institutions](#) than the traditional colonial ones.

Europeans used the Isthmus of Panama since the 1500s in crossing between the Atlantic and Pacific oceans. Spain had plans to build a canal across the Isthmus in the 1500s. Panama was independent [for a moment in 1821](#), before Colombia annexed it. Americans began using the Isthmus in earnest during the 1840s, with an [American railroad completed during the 1850s](#). The Isthmus was an important and strategic transportation lane.

The Frenchman who initiated the Suez Canal's construction formed a company to build a Panamanian canal. The Panama Canal was the largest human construction ever attempted, and the French seriously underestimated the issues that plagued the canal effort. The excavation was abandoned only one-fifth complete in 1889, after hundreds of millions of dollars had been spent, and twenty thousand workers had died. It was a financial and prestige disaster for France. Gustave Eiffel, designer of his famous tower and the Statue of Liberty, went to prison for fraud for

misappropriating the project's funds, which ruined his career, although he was later cleared of wrongdoing.

Panama had an uneasy relationship with Colombia for generations, with a number of revolts, but was relatively independent in 1900. Throughout the 1800s, the United States never supported Panamanian notions of independence from Colombia. The U.S. had a treaty with Colombia that it would put down any Panamanian revolts, keeping the region around its rail line stable. Because of the Isthmus traffic, the Panamanian region was relatively prosperous and something of a Colombian cash cow. When Grant was president, he had Central America surveyed several times, to scout out canal possibilities. With the collapse of the French effort, American interest began anew. It quickly came down to two possible routes: through Panama and Nicaragua. Lake Nicaragua was planned for part of the Nicaraguan route.

The milieu surrounding the building of the Panama Canal was complex, with several competing factions, but it could be seen as similar to the Spanish conquest of the Aztecs: it was a grand tale with everything in it but a hero. The Columbian authorities were willing to part with land to build the canal, for the right price. American railroad interests saw the canal as a potential threat, and tried opposing it. The French were willing to sign over the canal rights, for the right price. Similar to Cortés' rise from obscurity as he stumbled into opportunity in Mesoamerica, Philippe Bunau-Varilla was an obscure, puffed-up Frenchman who launched a personal campaign to have the canal built through Panama.

The corruption of Washington D.C. in those days was fairly open. Mark "Dollar" Hanna was Washington's most powerful man before Teddy Roosevelt took the throne. Hanna was deeply in the robber barons' hip pockets. While Teddy Roosevelt said that acquiring the Canal Zone and building the canal was his greatest achievement, and that he "took" it, [\[241\]](#) the dirty reality was that the effort of acquiring the Canal Zone was largely led by Wall Street lawyer William Nelson Cromwell, acting as front man for a syndicate which was mainly bankrolled by J.P. Morgan. Colombia, facing the inevitable, was trying to get the best price it could for Panama, but its representatives were naïve to the real game being played. The Panamanian "revolutionaries" were largely following the orders of their American backers. Panama's first president was an employee of the American rail line in Panama, and his "leading" the 1903 revolution was mostly confined to doing as he was told. Cromwell and his pals bankrolled and orchestrated the Panamanian "revolution," bribing the Colombian general in Panama, Manuel Amador Guerrero, to do America's bidding, not Colombia's. It is a contender for the most fake "revolution" in world history. After bribing and manipulating the Panamanian revolution into being, Bunau-Varilla quickly bilked Panama out of its sovereignty by pulling off a diplomatic swindle, ceding Panama's lands, much as [American "treaties" defrauded the Native Americans.](#)[\[242\]](#)

Not long after Panama achieved its "independence," Joseph Pulitzer's media empire began publishing allegations that Roosevelt worked with the Cromwell-Morgan syndicate to perform a huge stock swindle regarding the U.S.' \$40 million payment to France for the canal rights. Although Roosevelt sued Pulitzer for libel, Pulitzer was apparently right. The Cromwell-Morgan syndicate had surreptitiously bought up the worthless French canal company stock and received about \$24 million on an "investment" of about ten percent as much. The Cromwell-Morgan syndicate's maneuvers

were brilliant and secretive, with the full story unknown to this day, with offshore shenanigans, complete record destruction and other machinations.[\[243\]](#) J.P Morgan became the first treasurer of the Panamanian “republic.”

The cover-up was so good that Roosevelt’s relationship to the Cromwell-Morgan syndicate is still obscure. However, it was discovered that Roosevelt’s Secretary of War and future U.S. president and Supreme Court Chief Justice, William H. Taft, had an interest in the Cromwell-Morgan syndicate, using his wife to front for him. It is doubtful that Roosevelt had “clean” hands. What has been established, however, was that the Cromwell-Morgan syndicate got the lion’s share of the money paid for Panama, with healthy bribes also passing to the Panamanian “revolutionaries.” It was neocolonialism at its starkest. Those were the days of Teddy Roosevelt’s Big Stick Diplomacy. The [Monroe Doctrine](#) became appended in American politics with the Roosevelt Corollary, which stated that the U.S. was appointing itself the selfless task of sometimes exercising “international police power” on its Latin American neighbors, for their own good, of course. The crude neocolonialism of how Panama gained its “independence” eventually gave way to more refined methods.

The United States immediately sent its military to the Canal Zone and occupied it from 1903 to 1914, largely to put down those pesky Panamanians, who harbored childish notions of independence. The Panamanians, as with the Cubans, Filipinos and other neocolonial vassals, discovered that they merely had new overlords, but Panama got to fly its own flag. The robber barons made out like bandits in their Panama Canal swindle, with the American taxpayer left holding the bag. Cromwell initiated an era of U.S. manipulation of Central America, where Wall Street called the shots. Cromwell masterminded America’s Panamanian adventure, although he preferred staying in the background. Cromwell eventually handed over his empire to his handpicked successor, [John Foster Dulles](#), who capably continued in his footsteps. Dulles became Dwight Eisenhower’s Secretary of State while his brother Allen ran the CIA, and they jointly engineered the overthrow of the [democratic Guatemalan government in 1954](#) on behalf of United Fruit, which the Dulles brothers had a financial stake in. To put it mildly, the Dulles brothers had a conflict of interest, and the corruption coming into the open over the years has been breathtaking, and the public certainly has only seen the tip of the iceberg. John Foster’s private records during some of his most active years of running Cromwell’s empire have been destroyed or remain confidential.[\[244\]](#)

While America was securing its increasingly far-flung empire, Europe was reaching a crisis stage. It is probably wishful thinking to see either of the 20th century’s World Wars as little other than imperial conflicts, with latecomers to the game wanting their share of the global spoils, but the more established players kept the goodies for themselves. Instead of merely plundering the world’s non-industrialized peoples, it was white armies and navies fighting each other, while the colonial lands were milked for soldiers and supplies. The Germans trounced the French armies in the Franco-Prussian war of 1870-1871, which saw France humiliated with the capture of Napoleon III, the siege of Paris, an occupying German army, and a heavy war indemnity levied on France, which France paid. From then until 1914, there was peace in Europe. It was not a restful peace. During the 1880s and 1890s, the French, English and Russians formed the Triple Entente, and Germany, Austria and Italy formed the Triple Alliance. Those would be the major players of World War I, which began with conflict in the Balkans. World War I would be the bloodiest war the world had ever seen, at least until the next one. Far more than 20 million people died in World War I, about half of them civilians.

The Triple Alliance was composed of powers that did not have vast colonial lands to exploit, and the Germans, British and French clashed frequently over the African looting grounds. Germany supported Moroccan independence from France in 1911, which was part of the milieu that led to World War I. None of the imperial powers believed in imperialism...for their rivals. World War I saw the spectacle of each imperial power trying to incite uprisings amongst their rivals' subjects. Lawrence of Arabia tried doing just that during World War I. He was a British agent who tried getting the Arabs to rise up against the Ottoman Empire. Russia wanted to carve the Ottoman Empire into nation-states, for self-serving reasons, while Britain and Austria wanted to keep it a weak empire, easily controlled. With the rise of industrialization during the late 19th century, oil suddenly became the great new energy source, and the Ottoman Empire was sitting on most of it, and it leaned toward Germany. Accordingly, the Triple Entente made secret agreements to carve up the Ottoman Empire for themselves.

World War I had unintended consequences, one of which was the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia. As with all revolutions, early idealism soon gave way to "realism" and bloody power grabs. Initially however, Russia pulled out of World War I and the imperial game, which is about the only reason that Turkey exists today. Lenin advocated the opposite of the Empire Game, and a Marxist government ended up inspiring many colonial peoples to try the same thing, which made the imperial powers uneasy. The United States sent troops to try putting down the Russian Revolution, landing troops at Vladivostok and Archangel in 1918, with 500 casualties at Archangel. Astute observers call that the real beginning of the Cold War. Capitalism, [born of colonialism](#), waged war against communism for the next seventy years.

Warring empires have shaped the fortunes of the Middle East's people [for the past five thousand years](#). There were centuries of relative peace, punctuated by violent upheavals and invasions abroad, or being invaded at home.[\[245\]](#) The Ottoman Empire, which began its rise in the fourteenth century, by the sixteenth century ruled over most of the Arab peoples, then began its long decline. The heart of the Ottoman Empire was the Anatolian Peninsula, which composes most of today's Turkey. It was devastated far worse than any of the European belligerents during the World War I era, losing about 20% of its population.[\[246\]](#) The Great Powers, mainly Britain and France, carved the Ottoman Empire into easily controlled nation-states, in their first major experiments with neocolonialism. Imposing national identities onto lands of tribes has proven a disastrous strategy. The Great Powers carved Africa it into colonial holdings in the late 19th century, and those arbitrarily drawn borders are national borders today. Those machinations greatly contributed to the strife that Africa and the Middle East have endured ever since.

Britain preferred the constitutional monarchy model, and imposed it on what became Iraq. Iraq's first post-colonial ruler, King Feisal, was widely regarded as a British puppet. He was originally the "king" of Syria, before the French kicked him out. The British then used him to be Iraq's first "king." Kuwait was a puppet nation, almost invented out of whole cloth by the British, as a way to further their regional aims, particularly as related to Iraq. Carving Kuwait from Iraq nearly completely landlocked Iraq. Iraq has only 36 miles of coastline, and its main port is upstream on the Shatt al Arab (the waterway formed by the joining of the Tigris and Euphrates rivers) at Al Basrah, known as Basra to westerners. The oil-rich Mosul region in northern Iraq was forcefully separated from Turkey by

Britain in 1918. Winston Churchill was instrumental in leading the region's exploitation before and after World War I. Churchill has the distinction of being the first to wage chemical warfare in that part of the world, using it on Iraqis and proudly justifying it.[\[247\]](#) In addition, Britain wanted the Iraq region as a safe plunder route from its vast colonial holdings in India, and planned on building a railroad through there.[\[248\]](#)

In a moment of candor, Churchill let slip what the British game was all about, in a 1914 letter to his colleagues in the Cabinet,

“we are not a young people with *an innocent record and* a scanty inheritance. We have engrossed to ourselves...an *altogether disproportionate* share of the wealth and traffic of the world. We have got all we want in territory, and our claim to be left in the unmolested enjoyment of vast and splendid possessions, *mainly acquired by violence, largely maintained by force*, often seems less reasonable to others than to us.”[\[249\]](#)

During the 1920s, Churchill had his letter published in *The World Crisis*, but with the italicized words deleted, so the masses would not be burdened with digesting too much undiluted truth.

John D. Rockefeller was legendary for his use of front men and the surreptitious purchase of companies and people, to hide his hand. Accordingly, it is difficult to know exactly when the Rockefeller Empire began wrapping its tentacles around the Middle East, but scholars who have investigated those matters say that the world's first global oil cartel was formed in 1920, between Standard Oil, Royal Dutch Shell (today Shell Oil) and Anglo-Iranian (today British Petroleum).[\[250\]](#) Whatever the case may be, oil politics guided the dismemberment of the Ottoman Empire, and Britain largely took over Iran, with its Anglo-Iranian oil company having an eventual monopoly.

France got its revenge on Germany for the humiliation of the Franco-Prussian War, and heavy reparations were laid on Germany, a forced admission of guilt, as well as disarmament. Those dynamics led directly to World War II. With World War I, the United States took center stage. Woodrow Wilson ran for re-election in 1916 on the platform of not getting the United States involved in World War I. He quickly reneged on the deal, and the U.S. government's first big [PR](#) campaign in American history was manipulating Americans to support involvement in Europe's war.[\[251\]](#) The Espionage Act was passed, along with a related sedition amendment, making a crime to speak out against the war. Hundreds of Americans were imprisoned under those laws, including presidential candidate Eugene Debs, a socialist and noted pacifist. He even ran from prison in 1920 and received nearly a million votes. Silencing internal dissent was an imperial necessity. Wilson was a noted racist, and he segregated the federal government, bringing back Jim Crow.[\[252\]](#) The economic progress that blacks had made since the Civil War was curtailed and even reversed under Wilson's openly racist administration. In 1940, black families had a proportionally *lower* income compared to white families than they had in 1900, at about 30%.[\[253\]](#)

Under Wilson, the United States invaded Latin American nations nearly at will. Franklin Roosevelt worked in the Department of the Navy under Wilson, and after the United States invaded Haiti in 1915, Roosevelt was the author of Haiti's new constitution, and Roosevelt bragged that he worked in a major change in the Haitian constitution. [Ever since they freed themselves](#), the Haitian constitution forbid foreign land ownership, not wanting the white-owned plantation culture to reappear there. Roosevelt did away with it, paving the way for Haiti to become a neocolonial asset of the United States. Thousands of Haitians died resisting the American invasion. Wilson's racism and imperialism are minimized in the standard American histories, while American are told about Wilson the great diplomat who founded the League of Nations.

The American people were brainwashed into supporting the global ambitions of America's ruling class, and [my grandfather was crippled in World War I](#). The 1920s were notable for Prohibition, the rise of traditional organized crime and unbridled capitalism. Instead of monopoly trusts dominating, a speculative frenzy seized the stock market, with companies being formed and selling stock, with virtually nothing underlying it at all (known as "Blue Sky" companies, because that was about what they sold). The market frenzy was guided by the "greater fool theory," which was the notion that the stock I buy might not really be worth anything, but somebody might buy it from me for more, them being an even bigger fool than me. The 1929 stock market collapse led to the Great Depression, and laws were passed to supposedly prevent that from ever happening again, although [the laws were largely unenforceable](#), which was by conscious design by the corporate order, and the dot.com collapse and [Enron-initiated accounting scandals of 2002](#) seem like 1929 all over again.

[Smedley Butler](#) figured out the game after he retired from the military. Butler helped run the U.S. Marines for a generation. In 1935, in *Common Sense* magazine, he assessed his career:

"There isn't a trick in the racketeering bag that the military gang is blind to. It has its 'finger men' to point out enemies, its 'muscle men' to destroy enemies, its 'brain guys' to plan war preparations, and a 'Big Boss,' Supra-nationalistic Capitalism.

"It may seem odd for me a military man, to adopt such a comparison. Truthfulness compels me to do so. I spent thirty-five years and four months in active service as a member of our country's most agile military force, the Marine Corps. I served in all commissioned ranks, from second lieutenant to Major General. During that period I spent most of my life being a high class muscle man for big business, for Wall Street, and for the bankers. In short I was a racketeer - a gangster for Capitalism.

"I suspected I was just part of the racket at the time. Now I am sure of it. Like all members of the military profession I never had an original thought until I left the Service. My mental faculties remained in suspended animation, while I obeyed the orders of the higher-ups. This is typical with everyone in the military.

"Thus I helped to make Mexico, especially Tampico, safe for American oil interests in 1914. I helped to make Haiti and Cuba a decent place for the National City Bank boys to collect revenue. I helped

in the raping of half a dozen Central American republics for the benefit of Wall Street. The record of racketeering is long. I helped purify Nicaragua for the International Banking House of Brown Brothers in 1909 to 1912. I brought light to the Dominican Republic for American sugar interests in 1916. In China in 1927 I helped Standard Oil.

"During those years I had, as the boys in the back room would say, a swell racket. I was rewarded with honors, medals, and promotion. Looking back on it, I feel that I might have given Al Capone a few hints. The best he could do was operate in three city districts. I operated on three continents."

In 1935, Butler also wrote [War is a Racket](#), and campaigned on that theme for the rest of his life. The Great Depression of the 1930s was a global phenomenon, and it brought Hitler and others to power.

Life for the remnants of Native American tribes [did not improve much](#) after their conquest, dispossession and genocide was completed during the late 19th century. During the 20th century, the United States continued genocidal policies against Native Americans, including forced sterilization, forcible removal of children from their parents, to be raised in the white culture, more active undermining of tribal governance and still more theft of their lands. Canada also did the same things. It was not until America's Civil Rights era that Native Americans began making a comeback.[\[254\]](#)

Sitting on Top of the World

It is doubtful that any power in world history ever militarily "helped" others primarily from benevolent intent. Violence is not a humanitarian undertaking, as it always violates somebody. Regarding "benevolent" wars, history has shown that it was always a ruling class machination that the common people were blind to, as they cheered the warfare, to "help" other people. Those common people also served as cannon fodder for the ruling class' ambition. Much later, after it did not matter anymore, the truth came out. Covering up ulterior motivation is why "national security" secrecy exists, mainly used to cover-up crimes in high places, and foster and maintain deceptions, not to attend to "[national security](#)."

World War II was humanity's most devastating war...so far, with up to 100 million dead.[\[255\]](#) In the United States, it is known as America's greatest war, often called the "[good war](#)." World War II was obviously born of imperialism and the fact that the imperialist latecomers, Germany and Japan in particular, needed easy access to cheap foreign resources and labor in order to become imperial powers, but the other Great Powers already owned the world. [Hitler took a page](#) from America's handbook, seeing Eastern Europe in the same way that America's [Founding Fathers](#) saw the American continent: possessed by inferior races whose dispossession and extermination (if necessary) would clear the way for "living space" for the chosen race's settlement. Hitler's "crime" was targeting white people as inferior races (although far from unprecedented in Europe). [Japan](#)

developed a similar [Manifest Destiny](#) ideology toward China. While Germany and Japan were making imperial moves, the United States government and industrial leaders [held Germany in warm regard](#), and even when [Japan intentionally sank an American ship](#) as it [attacked China](#), Franklin Roosevelt actively covered for them, minimizing the incident in the American media.

When Germany and Japan began stepping on imperial toes, the situation became strained, although the United States declared war on Germany *after* Germany declared war on them, after the [Pearl Harbor attack, which was no surprise to the American military](#). When it came time to put down the imperial upstarts, the communists received a quick makeover, and one of history's bloodiest tyrants, Joseph Stalin, became [Uncle Joe](#) in the United States, at least while there were Nazis to defeat. The Pacific Theater was [largely an American race war against Japan](#), to [wipe out their burgeoning empire](#). As World War II ended, America quickly hired all the useful Nazis, even ones who performed human experiments in the death camps. The [CIA](#) epitomized [American foreign policy](#), being [headed by Wall Street lawyers and executives](#), while [hiring the Nazi intelligence network virtually intact](#), to wage covert war against Uncle Joe. There were even plans to [nuke the Soviet Union out of existence](#), with Nazi help. The reign of Joe McCarthy in those post-war years was no anomaly, but neatly aligned with U.S. [neocolonialism](#), fabricating the communist threat, which was really the threat that the [colonized world](#) might free itself from the West's shackles.

Few will baldly state what their true ambition is, especially when it is driven by [greed](#) and a lust for power. However, declassified documents from the war and early post-war years clearly spelled out U. S. government intentions. U.S. planners saw the colonized world in virtually the same way that Europe had, but their internal documents phrased things more clinically. Before World War II had even ended, U.S. planners saw nearly the entire globe as its "Grand Area," and the U.S.' destroyed imperial rivals were going to follow the "great workshops" example of Japan and Germany during the war, becoming producers of goods that the U.S. would find useful. The traditional colonial lands were to be a source of cheap labor, food and natural resources, and a captive market for manufactures, in mercantile fashion. The colonial domains were to be exploited to help rebuild Europe and Japan, Africa in particular.[\[256\]](#) U.S. plans were a blueprint for a truly global empire. Only the Soviet Union stood in its way (and later, China), and that was what the Cold War was all about, which the U.S. instigated and escalated at every opportunity.

One of America's leading diplomats, George Kennan, who was a Soviet Union expert and was considered the leading dove on the issue of foreign policy, authored Policy Planning Study 23 for the U.S. State Department in 1948. In it, Kennan wrote things that are now infamous in foreign-relations circles. It was a top-secret document long ago, and Kennan was writing to his own people. He stated that in the wake of World War II, America had only 6% of the world's population, but half of its wealth, and such a situation would invite "envy and resentment" from the rest of the world. Kennan advised that the U.S. foreign policy goal should be to "maintain this position of disparity." In order to keep that "disparity," Kennan recommended that we "dispense with all sentimentality and daydreaming; and our attention will have to be concentrated on our immediate national objectives." Kennan recommended that talk about "unreal objectives such as human rights, the raising of living standards, and democratization" stop, because the "day is not far off when we are going to have to deal with straight power concepts. The less we are then hampered by idealistic slogans, the better."

In other words, Kennan expected the “envy” of the world’s citizens, and thought that America should deal in “straight power concepts” to maintain the “disparity” that might cause the envy. Kennan was a *dove*. Paul Nitze, a hawk of the day, authored the 1950 National Security Council Memorandum 68 for the then Secretary of State, Paul Acheson. Whereas Kennan “gently” called for the use of “straight power concepts,” Nitze called for a subtle assault on the Soviet Union, to sow the “seeds of destruction,” and a militarization of the U.S. economy, where social services would be slashed in order to build the military machine that would be needed to maintain America’s position of “disparity.” In order to do that, the United States needed to silence opposition to the plan and stop its “excess of tolerance” toward dissent in the United States.[\[257\]](#) Joe McCarthy appears to have taken a page straight from Nitze’s work (or vice versa). Kennan and Nitze urged the United States to meet “envy” with violence. Nitze was still around, influencing American policy, during the Reagan administration. Lyndon Johnson once mouthed some of Kennan’s wealth-hoarding rhetoric, nearly verbatim, during the Vietnam era, talking about how America controlled the lion’s share of the world’s wealth, other nations wanted some, and they were not going to get any. When the *Pentagon Papers* were leaked, the government’s internal documents revealed that the main theme of the war planners was not freedom, democratic rule or any of those lofty ideas, but tin, rubber and oil. As with all those slave-owning [Founding Fathers](#), when the political rhetoric is stripped away, the [economic motivation](#) behind the institutions and actions is clear.

The U.S. has *never* exported democracy and freedom to the world’s people, and neither has anybody else. The [White Man’s Burden](#) is a racist canard. With [hiring Nazis](#) and other foreign policy machinations, the U.S. simply refined the methods of oppression, with rigged elections, coups that America armed and financed, and other tactics to have it appear (at least to the American people, who ultimately authorize and finance such activities) that the U.S. was not behind setting up draconian “governments” whose sole purpose was serving U.S. business interests, as in the rise and reign of Indonesia’s [Suharto](#). He was the world’s greatest butcher during the last half of the 20th century, performing most of his evil not only with U.S. approval, but also with U.S. weapons and subsidy. When all else failed, the U.S. would invade, as the wars along Eastern Asia during the 1950s and 1960s demonstrated.[\[258\]](#)

The wars in Southeast Asia during the 1960s and 1970s were obviously American attempts to recolonize that part of the world. The United States pledged to France that it would help them recover their colonial lands after World War II was finished. Regarding Britain and France, the “help” the United States gave them was more on the order of elbowing them out of the way, to grab the plunder for themselves, as Britain experienced when the United States helped them keep [Iran in their fold](#), but took over Iran’s oil industry in the process. Ho Chi Minh was an American ally during World War II, helping battle the Japanese. As the colonial era witnessed numerous times, the new whites on the scene spouted impressive rhetoric about helping the local people become or stay free; in reality, they came to be the new overlords, and it was no different with Vietnam. When World War II was finished, Vietnam declared itself independent, free from two millennia of foreign domination. It did not last long, however, with the Allies even using Japanese troops immediately after the war ended to try recolonizing Vietnam. By 1954, the Vietnamese defeated a weak French recolonizing effort (even with U.S. help), and were on the brink of independence, but the United States then manipulated the situation, putting a puppet, Ngo Dinh Diem, in charge in Vietnam and cutting it in

half, sabotaging efforts for Vietnamese independence and unification. The CIA assassinated Diem in late 1963, to John Kennedy's surprise, and he followed Diem to the grave a few weeks later (they were quite possibly [related assassinations](#)), and Lyndon Johnson's administration immediately began manipulating the Vietnam War into existence. Even Dwight Eisenhower admitted that there would have been only one Vietnam during the 1950s, if the United States had not actively scuttled the Vietnamese election called for by the United Nations.[\[259\]](#)

I know somebody from the U.S. military whose technical innovations were used in fabricating the Gulf of Tonkin Incident, which was the U.S. rationale to begin the wars of Southeast Asia. In intent and effect, the Gulf of Tonkin Incident was no different than what [Zachary Taylor](#) did to instigate the Mexican American War, or the border incident that the Nazis concocted in order to invade Poland, which set off World War II. The sinking of the *Maine* (by a boiler accident onboard) in Havana's harbor was a convenient excuse to wage the [Spanish-American War](#), for another huge land grab. To the credit of millions of Americans, they were not fooled for long by the obvious fraud used to instigate the Vietnam War, and displayed a collective conscience that is rarely found in imperial societies (it was also part of a general cultural awakening – thank you, [John Lennon](#)). American protests were related to the U.S. eventually withdrawing, although the U.S. government took vengeance on Vietnam in any way it could for the next generation. The CIA's Ralph McGehee finally [figured out the American game in Saigon in 1968](#). The greatest violent destruction of human life during the last half of the 20th century is what the United States did to Southeast Asia. There are no close contenders, except what America did up the coast in Korea. The "goo-goos" of the [Philippines](#) became the "gooks" of Southeast Asia, in another intensely racist and genocidal war that America waged against Asia's people, with atom bombs dropping on the "Japs" between the goo-goo and gook wars, as well as [millions of Korean and Chinese dead](#) during the 1950s.

I know Americans who were soldiers in Vietnam and other places, and although they usually are prevented from publicly talking about their experiences because of national security secrecy laws, I have heard many first and second hand accounts. [Dannion Brinkley](#), in his *Saved by the Light*, recounts his experiences of being killed by lightning and the awesome experiences that he had while dead and dying, frankly tells of his days as an assassin in Southeast Asia. It appears as if most of Brinkley's work was done in the "secret wars" in Laos and Cambodia. He was the triggerman on an assassination team. He described murdering people in those nations, blowing their heads off, sniping from the jungle. In one instance, Brinkley was part of a team that was assigned to assassinate an official, outside of Vietnam. The official was staying at a hotel. His security was good enough that Brinkley could never get a clear shot at him, after four days of staking out the hotel. Brinkley and his team then did the logical thing: they blew up the entire hotel, killing about fifty people while taking out their target. Brinkley said that he "laughed about it and told my control officer that all the people deserved to die because they were guilty by association."[\[260\]](#) Brinkley named no names, but that was a famous assassination.

A friend of mine was involved in Special Forces activities as Brinkley was, and told me how he was trained to sneak up on people at night and break their necks with his bare hands. He estimated that he killed about seventy people during one Special Forces mission, in a nation the U.S. was "secretly" at war with. I have also heard of [far worse](#) acts performed by our boys in Vietnam.

The so-called international “aid” agencies such as the [World Bank, International Monetary Fund](#), World Trade Organization and so forth are purely neocolonial institutions, either owned outright or dominated by Western interests, usually American. The Third World gets little say about the kind of “help” those organizations provide. Even supposedly idealistic organizations such as the [Peace Corps are largely neocolonial tools](#), often causing more harm than good to the foreign peoples they “help.” Although the names, faces and techniques may change, the dynamic is still that the world’s poorest nations, with large portions of their populations hungry or starving, export food to the United States instead of growing food to feed that nation’s hungry. The last time I looked several years ago, of the world’s poorest forty nations, thirty-six exported food to the United States.

Those dynamics are part of what astute commentators from both the political right and left call the [Third World War](#), or the War Against the Poor.[\[261\]](#) The United States has been dominating the neocolonial war against the world’s poor ever since World War II, keeping the boot on their neck, supplanting its European rivals as the global slave master.[\[262\]](#)

When the unsavory neocolonial activities become so obvious they can be denied no longer, American cultural managers and spin doctors labor to frame the exercise as attempts to do good that went bad, not what they really were: exploitation and violence designed to serve the dominant class’ interests, not the people who were “helped” and slaughtered.[\[263\]](#) Edward Herman and Noam Chomsky summarized the [American media](#)’s retrospective treatment of the Vietnam War:

"The war was a 'tragic error,' but not 'fundamentally wrong or immoral' (as the overwhelming majority of the American people continue to believe), and surely not criminal aggression - the judgment that would be reached at once on similar evidence if the responsible agent were not the United States, or an ally or client.

"Our point is not that the retrospectives fail to draw what seem to us, as to much of the population, the obvious conclusions; the more significant and instructive point is that principled objection to the war as 'fundamentally wrong and immoral,' or as an outright criminal aggression - a war crime - is *inexpressible*. It is not part of the spectrum of discussion. The background for such a principled critique cannot be developed in the media, and the conclusions cannot be drawn. It is not present even to be refuted. Rather, the idea is unthinkable.

"All of this reveals with great clarity how foreign to the mobilized media is a conception of the media as a free system of information and discussion, independent of state authority and elite interests."[\[264\]](#)

Since the Vietnam War ended, American cultural managers worked diligently to retroactively demonize American war protestors, the victims of U.S. aggression and anybody else who resisted

America's greatest and most disastrous neocolonial venture. It was a largely successful attempt to reconstruct imperial ideology. The Vietnam War protests were virtually unique in their scale, as far as appearing in imperial societies, meaning that the imperial ideology failed to mobilize *all* the masses to unthinkingly support the war; therefore, it needed to be reinvigorated.[\[265\]](#) Opposing the Vietnam War probably cost Martin Luther King, Jr. his life, and perhaps Bobby Kennedy. The FBI helped murder Malcolm X *after* he became *less* militant in pursuing social change.[\[266\]](#)

The toll from the Third World War has been immense, in human death and suffering, not to mention the environmental devastation that keeps escalating. Eight million dead and hundred of millions of people made miserable are well within the range of estimates for the Third World War, and the footnote at the end of this sentence shows one way those numbers are developed.[\[267\]](#)

The strategy that [Nitze](#) outlined in 1950 worked. While the West plundered its colonial and neocolonial domains, the Soviet Union actively *subsidized* its realm, the money and resources *flowing outward* from the homeland (such as the big subsidies for Cuba). That, combined with the arms race the United States instigated, along with the relatively primitive level of industrialization that the Soviet Union had, the Chernobyl disaster and being led into [Brzezinski](#)'s "Afghan trap," all contributed to its collapse. It was about the only peaceful collapse of an empire that humanity has seen, where the people of the Eastern Bloc took Gandhi and Martin Luther King Jr.'s lessons to heart. With the peaceful end of the Soviet Union, the United States was then left alone on the world stage as 1989 drew to a close, with unchallenged global hegemony. America's first act after the Berlin Wall fell demonstrated just how hollow its Cold War rhetoric was.

The New Era Looked a Lot Like the Old Era

When the Berlin Wall was falling and the world was cheering, I wondered what George Bush would have to say about it. Instead of an impassioned speech about freedom and the historic nature of the peaceful collapse of an empire, Bush seemed shocked and afraid by what happened, mumbling about needing to keep things under control. Two weeks later, the United States invaded Panama.

Anybody who thinks that America's 1989 Panamanian invasion had anything to do with "restoring democracy" or stopping the drug traffic is invited to watch *The Panama Deception*, which won the 1993 Academy Award for best documentary. Any war's first casualty is the truth, and the Pentagon got practice in manipulating/muzzling the Western press in Panama that came in handy the next year in Iraq. Not until *The Panama Deception* came out did many Americans find out what was hidden about America's blatant, illegal and murderous invasion of Panama. Napoleon once said that if the truth can be kept quiet long enough so the masses do the elite's bidding, the truth coming out later does not really matter.

The intent and effect of America's invasion of Panama was the opposite of restoring democracy, and the drug trade probably doubled through Panama after America invaded and installed a puppet government.[\[268\]](#) As with Saddam Hussein, Manuel Noriega is no saint. He came up through the

military's ranks, as most Latin American dictators did. Noriega's services were valuable to the United States, and he was well paid by the U.S., apparently more than \$100,000 a year by the CIA. Surely, Noriega had his hand in drug running, but almost as certainly did George Bush, Dan Quayle, Bill Clinton and many others of high stature.[\[269\]](#) Noriega succeeded Omar Torrijos as Panama's leader. Torrijos was not a typical banana-republic dictator. He was the closest thing to a democratic leader that Panama ever had, and was beloved by the Panamanian masses because he enacted many policies that benefited the average person, and he was decidedly wary of the United States' imperial influence. Torrijos died in a plane crash in 1981, an accident that many think was not accidental, but sabotage and murder by Noriega, with CIA help. If that is true, it was merely a day at the office for the CIA.[\[270\]](#) Economic Hit Man [John Perkins](#) was friends with Torrijos, and *knows* his death was a CIA assassination.

Lending more credence to the assassination angle on Torrijos' death, during Panama's invasion the Torrijos Museum was specifically targeted and bombed by America, and four months after the invasion, Torrijos' tomb was attacked, opened, and his remains stolen by white men. Torrijos was a thorn in America's side, negotiating the return of the Panama Canal, which was why [Wall Street invented Panama in the first place](#). The speculation is that the Skull and Bones Society, Yale's eastern establishment secret society that robs graves to steal the remains of those who were obstacles to the American Empire, performed the theft. George Bush the First belongs to the club, as did his father [Preston](#), whose contribution to the club was apparently robbing Geronimo's grave.[\[271\]](#) George Bush the Second also belongs to the club.

The CIA is about the world's premier drug runner, and George Bush once ran it. With the Soviet Empire collapsing, the United States could put aside pretenses it adopted with the 1980s wars [it mounted against Central America](#), where it used proxies. It was still having problems stuffing Nicaragua back into the neocolonial corral, and elections were coming up in February of 1990. The U.S. invasion of Panama may have been an instructive lesson to Nicaragua of what happened to nations that displeased the United States, especially now that the U.S.' main political-economic rival, however weak it was, had collapsed.[\[272\]](#) The Sandinistas lost that 1990 election, as the Nicaraguan people surrendered to the U.S. war against them, as Ronald Reagan openly wished for.

The American invasion of Panama was a classroom for honing methods of overthrowing a government, installing a dictatorship, wiping out the political opposition and keeping the American people in the dark. From the moment the United States invaded Panama, they engaged in extraordinary measures to keep the news from Americans about what was happening. The United States military's cover-up effort during the invasion's first three days was so successful that there exists virtually no independent video footage. The American media was tightly controlled, their correspondents not being allowed to independently witness or record anything. They sat under the military's watchful eye for the entire invasion, not allowed to go anywhere important. Media personnel from other countries were detained, jailed, and in the case of Spanish news photographer Juantxu Rodriguez, summarily executed by United States soldiers for the crime of taking pictures.

During the early stage of the American invasion of Panama, Juantxu Rodriguez recorded the below photograph of Panamanians lined up in a makeshift morgue.



[Click on image to enlarge](#)

American soldiers actively detained journalists and confiscating video cameras and film, and an American soldier summarily executed Rodriguez for the crime of taking pictures.



[Click on image to enlarge](#)

The camera is still wrapped around Rodriguez's neck, as he lay where he was shot. Those kinds of activities kept the American people ignorant of what kind of invasion really happened in Panama. Those images are from *The Panama Deception*.

U.S. soldiers raided, ransacked, shut down and arrested the personnel of every organization in Panama critical of the United States' invasion. The U.S. military immediately took over the television stations in Panama, and began broadcasting their own programming. The puppet government leaders that the United States installed upon invading drew up lists of people and groups who truly advocated democracy in Panama, and who might be politically opposed to the puppet regime. The United States military rounded up thousands of people on those lists and threw them into prison, sometimes for years, with no charges ever filed. The people who received that treatment were college professors, newspaper editors, union leaders, human rights activists, etc. In essence, all the truly democratic leaders in Panama were imprisoned. George Bush had audacity to say his invasion "restored democracy" in Panama. As Bush uttered those words, our politicians in Washington gave him a standing ovation.

A major reason the United States muzzled the media was so the invasion's true devastation of Panama would go unreported. The Pentagon said that only 250 Panamanian civilians died in the invasion. The reality was that thousands died, as many as 4000 people, perhaps more, and 15,000 were left homeless in the El Chorrillo district alone. The United States military invaded and burned the El Chorrillo district of Panama City, in a display of callous disregard for civilian casualties. By detaining or executing journalists, the military kept that news quiet. They wanted other things kept quiet. For instance, it appears that they tried out new weapons systems during the invasion. There were reports of people literally melting, and vehicles cut in two by what appeared to be a laser-type weapon. The Panama invasion would have been the ideal opportunity to try out such experimental weaponry, as acknowledged by [Ramsey Clark](#) and others.

The United States military tried covering up their mass murders as best it could. In echoes of the crematoria at Auschwitz, the military apparently bulldozed bodies into piles on the beaches and had bonfires, trying to destroy the bodies, then dumping the remnants into the ocean. They took over the

hospitals and morgues, seizing their records and detaining doctors and the hospital staff. There were ten doctors on duty at Santo Tomás Hospital on December 20, 1989. Nine of them were fired, arrested or driven into hiding. The Red Cross was denied access to El Chorrillo for several days. America's military heroes were not able to destroy all evidence of their mass murders. Months after the invasion, while the Pentagon was still saying with a straight face that only 250 civilians had died, mass graves were unearthed in Panama. Fifteen mass graves were discovered, and one more Big Lie of the U.S. government was exposed. As the mass graves were exhumed, the victims in them gave mute testimony to what kind of invasion really happened in Panama. There were victims with bullet holes in the backs of their skulls, victims with their wrists tied together, victims in their 70s, teenagers, victims wearing casts on their arms and legs, etc.[\[273\]](#)

The American people cheered the invasion, Manuel Noriega was transformed into public enemy number one, and America wanted him brought to "justice." Invading a nation to apprehend their head of state, for crimes he supposedly committed, is an act nearly without precedence in world history. It was a flagrant violation of all international law, condemned by the United Nations and throughout the world. The American people easily swallowed the rationale of invading Panama to apprehend Noriega. In exasperation, the scholar José de Jesús Martínez said that it was hard to believe "how Americans can be so stupid" as to believe the rationale they were fed regarding Panama's invasion. The U.S. had ample opportunities to apprehend its employee before the invasion.

Why did the United States invade Panama? The primary reason appears to be the same one why America attacked Iraq. The dictator became a little too independent. Jimmy Carter considered himself the "human rights" president. Compared to other presidents of his generation, he was. That is relative, however. The people of [East Timor](#), [El Salvador](#), South Korea and elsewhere may have a different opinion of Carter, but his administration was gentle compared to the Reagan-Bush or Johnson-Nixon-Ford years. Carter signed an agreement in 1977 with Torrijos to give the Canal Zone's control back to Panama in 1999. My militaristic father bewailed in sorrow when Carter signed the agreement, as did many right wingers around America. [Ronald Reagan](#) campaigned for president on the issue that we paid for the Panama Canal, and it is ours.

It appears that the Reagan-Bush gang felt they would live with Carter's agreement if they could control Panama. They almost certainly had a hand in [Torrijos' 1981 death](#), and Noriega was their kind of thug. They thought he would be obedient as long as he got his cut. Noriega began acting increasingly like a disobedient dictator (such as failing to enthusiastically support America's Contra proxy-war against Nicaragua), and the U.S. did not want him in power when the Canal went back to Panama. So America invaded Panama, installed its puppets, had them abolish Panama's army, and the U.S. turned Panama into an obedient client state again.[\[274\]](#) Apparently, a primary reason the United States acted so quickly in sending its troops to the Persian Gulf after Iraq's invasion of Kuwait was that Bush feared Hussein would duplicate his Panamanian success by invading and quickly withdrawing, leaving behind a puppet government.[\[275\]](#)

The exercise of controlling the press during the Panamanian invasion was a mere warm up for the Gulf War. The United States controlled the information regarding the invasion so well that it brings to mind Stalinist Russia or Nazi Germany.

Attacking Iraq

During 1990, I moved to Ohio and experienced the first war our nation waged since I became an adult. Bombing Libya and invading Grenada and Panama were unpleasant for me, but what happened in Iraq was on a vastly larger scale. In 1990, I was also recovering from my experiences with [Dennis Lee](#). I went from having idealistic [free-energy dreams](#) to the harsh realization that the energy industry was essentially run by criminals. The energy industry probably [does not deserve to exist](#), but by suppressing all viable alternatives, it keeps raking in the money. It also is a valuable lever for manipulating the world economy, as the "[oil crises](#)" during the 1970s demonstrated. The United States probably "needs" Middle East oil only because the energy industry has [ruthlessly eliminated alternatives to oil](#).[\[276\]](#)

I eventually realized that my indoctrination by [school](#), the [media](#) and other authority sources presented a worldview starkly different than what I saw with Dennis. I was beginning to read alternative media publications such as [Lies of Our Times](#), [Covert Action Information Bulletin](#), and joining the [Christic Institute](#).

At that time, I knew a little about the region's history, how Europe had been exploiting the region for many years, and when Britain officially pulled out in the 1920s, their actions nearly guaranteed the strife we see there today. Iraq was a nation created by the British drawing lines on a map.[\[277\]](#) When the British carved up the Middle East into nations, obviously the interests being served were not those of the Middle East's inhabitants, but Britain's. Kuwait was a district of Iraq and Kuwait during the Ottoman Empire days, until the British moved in. An oil rich region was landlocked by Britain's power politics.

I also knew that Iraq had legitimate grievances with Kuwait. Britain drew up their national borders, and Iraq had always maintained that Kuwait was part of Iraq, and was held back by Britain from simply invading and annexing Kuwait. The British High Commissioner in Baghdad in 1930 even "suggested to the government of the day that Britain should encourage the gradual absorption of Kuwait into Iraq," and that, "Kuwait was a small and expendable state which could be sacrificed without too much concern if the power struggles of the period demanded it."[\[278\]](#) The Kuwait/Iraq border was long disputed, particularly around the rich Rumaila oilfield. Kuwait may have drilled into Iraqi oil fields while Iraq was fighting Iran. A factor that led to Iraq's invasion of Kuwait was Kuwait's refusal to lease two uninhabited islands to Iraq, so Iraq could have a Persian Gulf port.[\[279\]](#)

I also caught the whiff of possible propaganda being purveyed to justify the subsequent devastation of Iraq. For instance, a friend angrily called me up one day in October of 1990, telling me the story of Iraqi soldiers taking babies out of incubators in Kuwait and letting them die so Iraqi babies could have the incubators. I also heard George Bush telling the world about Iraq's imminent threat to Saudi Arabia, and the American media swallowed it whole.

The incubator story sounded exactly like the wartime propaganda that nations have always used to dehumanize the enemy. The incubator story was eerily similar to [English tales during World War I that told of German soldiers killing babies](#), or [Christian stories of Jews killing babies](#), or [Roman/pagan stories of Christians killing babies](#). Baby killing/eating is a classic wartime propaganda ploy, but the American media repeated the story endlessly. I remember the bomb-disguised-as-a-toy story concocted about the Soviet Union during the 1980s, where they supposedly used them in Afghanistan. Such stories are always suspicious, particularly when a nation beats the war drums as hard as the U.S. was.

Seven U.S. Senators cited that incubator "incident" as part of their justification for voting for war. The incubator story was a prominent media story for months, as the Bush administration garnered support for the military action against Iraq. I had been exposed to enough wartime propaganda to doubt what I was hearing, and it later turned out that the incubator story, the Iraqi threat to Saudi Arabia and other influential stories (such as how the Iraqi army had the U.S. forces in a risky position) were fabrications. While the incubator story received widespread and repeated airing, the American media barely reported Iraq's willingness to negotiate a withdrawal. Several withdrawal proposals were tendered, and the Bush administration immediately rejected all of them.[\[280\]](#) Bush proudly said that he did not negotiate with people such as Hussein, whom he compared to Hitler. Bush even had the gall to call Hussein's invasion of Kuwait a "naked aggression." That came from a man who ordered the [invasion of Panama](#), which was a far more unjustified, murderous and "naked" aggression than the invasion of Kuwait was. Instead of laughing at Bush's hypocrisy, the media applauded his high principles.[\[281\]](#)

The tale of Iraqi soldiers taking babies out of incubators and leaving them to die was given in heart-wrenching testimony at the Congressional Human Rights Caucus by a young woman named Nayirah, who said she witnessed it. That "atrocities" was later exposed as a fabrication. It was discovered that Nayirah was the Kuwait ambassador's daughter, and an American [public relations firm](#), Hill and Knowlton, coached her performance. Nayirah's performance was a recitation of a script that Hill and Knowlton wrote for her. Kuwait hired Hill and Knowlton to "manage" the perception of Kuwait's situation.[\[282\]](#) She was *not even in Kuwait* when the fabricated atrocities supposedly happened, and the Kuwaiti hospital personnel on duty when it supposedly happened later denied that it happened. The incubator story may have been the deciding factor for the Senate's narrow approval for Bush's declaration of war on Iraq. George Bush's speech about the Iraq army massing in Kuwait in preparation for an [invasion of Saudi Arabia](#) also turned out to be a lie.

I lived in Dayton, and worked at a bank's headquarters in a small town named Wilmington. Nearly one hundred people worked at the headquarters. When the bombs finally started dropping in January of 1991, the office virtually erupted in cheering. The United States had fabricated its "coalition" by bribing and threatening nearly all the nations involved; forgiving billions of dollars of debt for nations that joined the coalition (for instance, Egypt, \$7 billion, the former Soviet Union, \$4 billion), and threatening aid cutoff and vengeance to those who did not.[\[283\]](#)

The region where Iraq resides has one of the world's richest histories. Iraq is in the region known as the [Fertile Crescent](#), where a series of events led to what is called civilization. [Sumeria](#) is the earliest

known civilization, existing about six thousand years ago, sitting largely between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers. Succeeding the Sumerian civilization was the Babylonian civilization, which in its turn rose and fell. The region has seen civilizations and empires rise and fall for the past six thousand years, the lands and people passing from empire to empire, with names such as Assyria and Mesopotamia describing the region at times. The rise of Islam during the seventh century AD eventually brought the region under theocratic control, with the mixed blessings that theocracies have always conferred.

The United States (with little buddy Britain helping) has essentially carved the Mosul region from Iraq with its unilaterally imposed and illegal “no-fly zones.” The Mosul region is the same one the Britain [carved from Turkey after World War I](#). America also coveted the Middle East's oil wealth, and eventually wrested control of Middle Eastern oil from its European rivals. When the United States overthrew Iran's government in 1953, installing one of the twentieth century's bloodier regimes, it also dominated the British monopoly that controlled Iran's oil production (Anglo-Iranian Oil Company). The event that sparked the American-led coup was Iranian politicians nationalizing the Anglo-Iranian Oil Company. War-crippled Britain asked the U.S. to help keep its grip on Iranian oil, and the U.S. obliged, but there was a price: the British went from 100% control to 40%, and the United States took over, with American oil companies controlling 40%.[\[284\]](#)

Iran's neighbor Iraq, however, successfully nationalized its oil industry between 1972 and 1975. Iraq, partly due to the artificiality that created it, has been a fractious nation, with numerous coups and political crises. It became fervently nationalistic however, and remained largely non-aligned in the global power game. Saddam Hussein began making his rise to power during the 1960s, helping to wipe out Iraq's left-leaning parties.[\[285\]](#) America has never minded anybody who wiped out leftists, especially during its war on communism. During the 1970s, America manipulated Iraq's Kurdish minority as cynically as Machiavelli might have recommended. After the Kurdish leadership was fed to the wolves, Henry Kissinger remarked on the betrayal, “Covert action should not be confused with missionary work.”[\[286\]](#)

Iraq was prominent in the Arab effort against Israel, eagerly fielding troops and aiding the Palestinian victims of Jewish nationalism. Iraq was the radical Arab nation, with strong secular roots, and partly because of that radicalism had the Middle East's highest standard of living. For all of Saddam Hussein's crimes and failures, Iraq was an anomaly in the Middle East, as a substantial share of Iraq's oil revenues were devoted to improving the standard of living of Iraq's citizenry. That attitude of benefiting the domestic population was the direct opposite of how U.S. puppet states have always operated. Iraq was the most socially advanced Arab nation in 1990. Iraq has one of the world's largest oil deposits, attracting the interest of the world's powers.

Saddam Hussein is no hero. He is a despot who used chemical weapons on Iraq's Kurdish population (with U.S. help and approval[\[287\]](#)), initiated a bloody war against Iran (with U.S. support), and invaded Kuwait (with tacit U.S. approval). Hussein is in good company regarding using chemical weapons on Iraqis, with [Churchill preceding him](#). The United States' ally Turkey has been comparably vicious on the Kurdish population within its borders, but those atrocities go largely unreported in the U.S. media to this day, and Saddam's atrocities were minimized...until he became an official enemy on August 2, 1990. The atrocities themselves have never been the issue in

America's media. The standard procedure is [exaggerating/fabricating the crimes of our enemies while ignoring our own or those of our friends](#), just as Jesus observed two thousand years ago, when he spoke of looking for the splinters in a neighbor's eye while ignoring the logs in one's own.[\[288\]](#)

My office in Wilmington had a sound system that played mellow music at low volume during the day. It was a pleasant background to work to. The men who ran the bank were fervent military boosters, their office walls adorned with photos of friends and relatives in uniform. The day after the bombs began dropping, the music was replaced with a news/talk show, played at high volume. The night before, as we began bombing them, ex-generals and other hawks dominated the U.S. media as they rhapsodized over the bombing. I heard one ex-general on the radio exulting over the air show over Iraq, calling it "a great day to be a soldier." The next day at the office I was treated to the loud blast of war coverage. During that day, the radio announced that America had destroyed Iraq's air force, so there was no air resistance from Iraq, and one of the bank's owners came running out of his office, listening raptly to the announcement, nearly thrusting his fist into the air. It was a struggle to maintain my composure, and difficult to get any work done.

Then a talk show interrupted the war coverage. The host sounded like Rush Limbaugh's protégé. There was *one* war protest in our corner of Ohio, at least that our media presented. About twenty students protested at the University of Cincinnati. Ohio has more than ten million people, and twenty people amounted to less than .001% of the region's population around Cincinnati. The talk-show host made those few protesting students the subject of his show. He asked his listening audience if those students were "stupid or evil." His callers were unanimous in condemning anybody who dared to protest our bombing of Iraq. One caller cleverly said that the students were "steveil."

A week later, the first letter to the editor I ever wrote was on its way to the *Dayton Daily News*. They published it on February 5, 1991. Here it is.

As the United States subdues another enemy in freedom's name, or so it is said, the blood of our children will again be spilled for the noble cause. It could be very profitable at this time to consider an ancient strategy. Many years ago, a radical genius offered a means to absolutely destroy one's enemies. The succeeding years have proven the tactic too outrageous and incomprehensible to even attempt. History tells us that practically nobody has ever gathered the courage to see the strategy through.

The ancient extremist theorized that his maneuver would not only win the day, but could be used over and over to annihilate any and all enemies. The bizarre theory involved the obscure and very, very rarely used strategy of loving the enemy.

This country was not officially founded in that radical's name, nor are his theories officially recognized here, but the person's work and life supposedly has many adherents in this country. You could fool me.

His ideas were far ahead of his time back then, and they seem equally far ahead of the present time.

When ever will the example of the life of Jesus actually be taken seriously? I hope soon, for the sake of us all, including those awful Iraqis.

It was my first experience in writing to a newspaper, it was the first thing I had published, and it was my first experience with editing. The newspaper edited out "or so it is said" from that first sentence. That changed the letter's tenor a little, particularly my intended irony in using the word "awful" to describe the Iraqis. I was glad that they published what they did, and maybe it caused a few people to reconsider their lusty cheers. Next to my letter was printed the wit and wisdom of Hughie Sprinkle, whose sentiments better reflected the public attitude. Hughie wrote, "The only sensible way to win the war and save American lives is to nuke (Iraq), using neutron bombs. Kill them all - man, woman and child. Kill 'em quick and kill 'em good. Then bulldoze the area over, and begin again."

Mr. Sprinkle's opinion might seem from the lunatic fringe, but it was not. At about the same time as my letter and Mr. Sprinkle's were published, the *Dayton Daily News* ran its weekly Cal Thomas column. Thomas is a nationally syndicated columnist, a man who calls himself a Christian from the conservative tradition. In Thomas' column, he also called for dropping nuclear weapons on Iraq, and he was not alone on the national stage with his opinion. Thomas wrote that nuking Iraq would "save lives." He obviously did not mean the lives of Iraqi citizens.

What made the sentiments of Thomas and Sprinkle surreal was that the events in Iraq and Kuwait were obviously not a "war" in any meaningful sense. In the words of American soldiers, what happened in Iraq was a "turkey shoot." Iraq was virtually defenseless to America's record bombing campaign. It was history's most intense bombing campaign. Nobody will ever know exactly how many Iraqi soldiers died in that "war." Credible estimates range from 100,000 to 200,000 soldiers dying, and even higher. Iraq's elite Republican Guard was not decimated. The dead were mainly Iraqi conscripts. The vast majority never even saw an American soldier before they died. They usually died in their shelters and trenches, huddling from the awesome devastation raining from the air.

The United States tried out many new weapons in Iraq. Americans generally only heard about the Patriot Missile system that was used to shoot at Iraqi Scuds. Barely reported was the Iraqi population's suffering, or the neat weapons used on Iraq. Those realities were hidden from the American people. Pentagon censors screened virtually every American news report that came from Iraq. The American people were treated to daily propaganda exercises led by Norman Schwarzkopf, now in America's pantheon of heroes. Once in a great while, some truth made it to the public, and it was usually by the *Los Angeles Times* and CNN, two non-members of the eastern oligarchy.

In the *Los Angeles Times* on February 24, 1991 John Balzar brought a little reality to his readers with his front page article titled "Apache Copters: Deadly Havoc in the Dark of Night." Balzar was able to watch night vision gunsight footage from the briefing room. He reported what he saw.

"They looked like ghostly sheep flushed from a pen - Iraqi infantrymen bewildered and terrified, jarred from sleep and fleeing their bunkers under a hellish fire. One by one, they were cut down by attackers they could not see or understand. Some were blown to bits by bursts of 30-millimeter exploding cannon shells. One man dropped, writhed on the ground, then struggled to his feet; another burst of fire tore him apart...Even hardened soldiers hold their breath as the Iraqi soldiers, as big as football players on the television screen, run with nowhere to hide. These are not bridges exploding or airplane hangers. These are men."[\[289\]](#)

The weapons used in the Gulf War were nightmarish. Bombs that explode at waist level were not the kinds of smart bombs that our newscasters oohed and aahed over. By the Pentagon's own numbers, ninety-three percent of the bomb tonnage used by America in the Gulf War was not "smart." Missiles that turned around buildings in pursuit of their targets were evening news fare, but the vast majority of what America dropped onto Iraq was the dumb kind, about 70% of it missing its target. If Americans had seen what was really happening in Iraq, they may not have cheered so loudly.

During the Gulf War, some of the weapons systems deployed are the most powerful weapons short of a nuclear bomb. One is a fuel-air bomb. The bomb works thus: there are two detonations; the first spreads a fine mist of fuel into the air, turning the area into an explosive mix of vast proportion; then a second detonation ignites the mixture, causing an awesome explosion. The explosion is about the most powerful "conventional" explosion we know of. At a pressure shock of up to 200 pounds per square inch (PSI), people in its detonation zone are often killed by the sheer compression of the air around them. Human beings can typically withstand up to about a 40-PSI shock. The bomb sucks oxygen out of the air, and can apparently even suck the lungs out through the mouths of people unfortunate enough to be in the detonation zone. Our military used it on helpless people. The U.S. also dropped a bomb called "Big Blue," with a specialized high-tech explosive mixture that can produce up to a 1000-PSI shock wave, a magnitude only exceeded by nuclear weapons.[\[290\]](#) That kind of shock wave turns a body into hamburger, even if no shrapnel hits it.

Some of the other weapons systems deployed are called "bouncing" bombs. "Adam" was one of those bombs used in the Gulf War. It is euphemistically called an "antipersonnel" bomb. What the bomb does is bounce up to about waist high after it hits the ground, so when it explodes it has a better chance of eviscerating the "personnel" unfortunate enough to be near it. Another novel weapon deployed in the Gulf War was "The Beehive." The Beehive is a bomb that spins at high velocity, spitting out 8,800 pieces of razor-edged shrapnel in all directions, producing a "Swiss-cheese" effect on anybody near it. In concept, those weapons were not exactly new, but are high-tech, refined versions of earlier ideas and weapons, nearly making death dealing into a macabre art form. As the *Los Angeles Times* reporter who wrote about those weapons in 1991 observed,

"The mechanics of death and destruction are a grim affair. The military's scientific approach and its philosophies - for example, its preference for wounding vital organs over blowing off limbs - can be deeply disquieting to anybody who imagines such matters are left to chance. Many people would

rather not know about the gruesome details."[\[291\]](#)

Norman Schwarzkopf never regaled the press with footage showing the results of those weapons.

While the bombing was happening, America leapt into a frenzy of jingoistic support. Yellow Ribbon campaigns blanketed the nation. The bank where I worked had a Red, White and Blue Day at the office, where everybody was supposed to wear those colors and pose for a company group picture. I was working as a temporary employee at the time, and decided to not toe the line, perhaps risking my job. I wore black and green that day, and found a way to disappear when the group photo was taken, amidst the chest-beating cheers. Concurrently, there was an office campaign to send valentines to American Persian Gulf soldiers. It was not an optional program. Over the sound system, each department was summoned to a room to sign those valentines. There was an irony: sending valentines to soldiers annihilating a helpless enemy, an enemy that was their ally a few months earlier. I also left the building when my department signed the valentines.

On Valentine's Day, the "news" blaring from the office speakers was the U.S. media spinning an event from February 13th, when the United States military bombed one of Baghdad's bomb shelters. The U.S. said their intelligence told them the bomb shelter housed military headquarters, and they sent a sophisticated bomb that penetrated the shelter, incinerating its interior. As had been happening throughout the bombing of Baghdad, and was well known by American surveillance, on that night the shelter was filled with women and children huddling from the nightly bombings. Several hundred women and children died. On Valentine's Day, "expert" opinions filled America's airwaves, trying to spin that disaster into a propaganda ploy by Saddam Hussein. One rationale was that since Baghdad had few bomb shelters, only a small percent of the population could hide there. Therefore, the women and children were not really hiding from the bombs, but were part of some strange propaganda maneuver by Hussein. According to such logic, their deaths were the responsibility of Iraq, not America.

CNN's Peter Arnett in Baghdad did things that made him [hated by the U.S. government](#): he made reports that the Pentagon could not censor. He visited the bomb shelter and witnessed the fact that there was no evidence of a military installation. Arnett did a similar thing when he witnessed a milk factory we bombed, while claiming that it was a chemical-weapon facility. Arnett toured the bombed ruins and found that it was indeed a milk factory. He toured the factory the summer before, as it was producing milk.[\[292\]](#)

Those incidents were similar to America's 1986 bombing of Libya, with Ronald Reagan telling the world that he had "irrefutable" proof that Libya was behind the bombing of a nightclub in Germany that killed some U.S. soldiers. That nightclub bombing was Reagan's rationale for bombing Libya, which killed up to 100 people, including children. It turned out that Reagan was lying when he said that, for he had no "irrefutable" proof. The "proof" was allegedly NSA-intercepted communications between Libya and its embassy in East Berlin. Not even the Germans, who helped decode the messages, believed the "proof."[\[293\]](#) The complete "intercepted" communications have never been made public, and the U.S. promised the "irrefutable" proof to Britain and France because we wanted

them to assist the bombing raid (it was launched from Britain, but France refused to let us use their air space, and we “accidentally” bombed their embassy during the raid on Libya). Our allies let us bomb first and provide proof later. When it came time to provide the proof, the U.S. admitted that it did not have any, a betrayal reported throughout the world...except in the U.S. mainstream media.

The same situation happened when America bombed a Sudanese pharmaceutical lab in the summer of 1998, in retaliation for "terrorist" bombings in Africa. Our government said there was incontrovertible evidence that the lab was being used for producing substances that could be used in chemical weapons. Again, America lied to the world, and that ironclad evidence has simply vanished when subjected to scrutiny. Sudan has been the stage for famine and other health disasters in recent years. That pharmaceutical lab produced half of Sudan's pharmaceuticals. How many children died because of that action? The American media never speculated about it. It went straight into the Memory Hole, so Americans could cheer the next time we bomb somebody on a whim.

Those days in 1991 were among my life's most alienating. I was never more ashamed of being an American. While the bombing continued, I was writing a letter that became a book. Writing it was a form of therapy, trying to make sense of and recover from my [experiences with Dennis Lee](#). I was putting my wife through graduate school for her doctorate in psychology. Consequently, she believed in the process and began insisting that I see a psychologist. She found one who specialized in treating post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD). His office was down the road from Wright Patterson Air Force Base, the world's premier Air Force base. He specialized in treating soldiers with PTSD. I was definitely a candidate for his therapy. I had a few months of it, and it helped. I finished my letter/book as part of my therapy. He assured me that I was quite sane, but living in an insane world.

As I talked about my traumas in that spring of 1991, outside my therapist's window I could see American flags flying from every light pole and sign. The flags fluttered, the yellow ribbons abounded, and the parades marched through American cities. George Bush rocketed to a public-approval rating of 82% as our "turkey shoot" in Iraq progressed. It had fallen to 56% the previous autumn, from its high of 80%, after U.S. troops invaded Panama to arrest Bush's former employee Noriega (they tried murdering him, but Noriega outwitted them by strolling into the Vatican embassy). The public was nearly delirious in its approval of our performance in Iraq, with about 90% of Americans thinking that we had performed a righteous and noble deed.

My therapist abandoned his professional role with me at times, and confided that the events sickened him. He told me that one of his clients was a young Navy SEAL, and one of the first Americans into Iraq for the short-lived "ground war." The SEAL saw America's handiwork up close. He saw many bodies of women and children, euphemistically termed "collateral damage" by the Pentagon and our national press. The young man was having difficulty dealing with his experiences, and found nothing honorable about what we did there. People like that never appear on [Nightline](#), describing their experiences. "National security" makes sure that cannot happen. Instead, Henry Kissinger lies to the public in his tuxedo.

Many of America's Gulf War actions qualified as war crimes. One was the infamous bombing of the

retreating Iraq army, on the highway leading from Mutlaa, Kuwait to Basra. It was a mass exodus from the city, including the Iraq military that was withdrawing to Iraq on Hussein's orders, and also civilians and prisoners. What the United States military did on that highway stands as one of the greatest and most defenseless mass murders of the modern era. What the U.S. did was disable the front and rear vehicles on that highway, trapping the two thousand vehicles and their occupants into a seven-mile-long parking lot. Then the planes flew mission after mission on the helpless vehicles and their occupants, annihilating and incinerating many thousands of people, perhaps tens of thousands. That highway became known as the "Highway of Death."

One pilot who flew the "Highway of Death" mission was quoted as describing it as "shooting fish in a barrel," and the pilots rushed back and forth from the aircraft carriers supplying them with bombs. According to the *Washington Post*, "Their preferred weapon, the Rockeye cluster bomb, was passed over for others because elevators were too slow getting them up to the flight deck in time for the next launch."[\[294\]](#) It was a quick trip to the parking lot to drop their payloads, then back to the aircraft carrier to get more bombs. Those activities were in direct violation of the Geneva Convention of 1949's common article 3, which outlaws killing soldiers who are "out of combat." In addition, cluster bombs are only effective at killing people, not destroying military targets. That was not the only highway treated that way. A sixty-mile stretch of highway further east was treated similarly. The general in charge of one of the mass slaughters during those days, Barry McCaffrey, headed Bill Clinton's "War on Drugs" and headed the effort to ["fight drugs"](#) in [Colombia](#).

In May 2000, an article by Seymour Hersh in the *New Yorker* stirred a small tempest regarding McCaffrey's bombing of the retreating Iraqi army. Predictably, the U.S. government moved to discredit Hersh's story. Those actions were part of the 19 war crimes that ex-Attorney General Ramsey Clark got George Bush and friends (Dan Quayle, Colin Powell, Norman Schwarzkopf, James Baker, Richard Cheney, etc.) prosecuted for. The International War Crimes Tribunal found them guilty, not that the U.S. citizens heard much about it over the cheers.[\[295\]](#) Winners never worry about minor things such as war crimes trials; only losers do.

Another innovative act by our armed forces was a new version of trench warfare. During the ground war, the United States deployed vehicles that were essentially tanks with bulldozer blades. The ground war, as with the air war, was not a war in any meaningful sense. It was another "turkey shoot," with entire armored divisions of Iraq's army decimated without returning even one effective shot. The surviving Iraqi soldiers were generally fleeing, hiding in their bunkers or rushing to surrender. Many thousands of Iraqi soldiers were huddled in trenches and bunkers, and some were attempting to mount a pitiful defense to the juggernaut bearing down on them. The tank-bulldozers performed an unprecedented act: they approached the trenches and bunkers, and filled them with earth, burying thousands of Iraqi soldiers alive. It qualified as another war crime. Not one American was killed in the live entombment of thousands of Iraqi soldiers.[\[296\]](#)

Again, what happened in the Gulf War was not "war." It was slaughter. War is what World War II was like, where both sides were fairly evenly matched, and [both sides endured similar levels of casualties](#). What the [Nazis did to the Jews](#) was not "war." In the "Gulf War," the casualty ratio was about 1000-to-1. America likely killed more than 100,000 Iraqi soldiers (other reasonable estimates go as high as 200,000 and higher), while fewer than 200 Americans died, and about half of those by

"friendly fire" by our own troops. As with Panama, the U.S. government had great motivation to keep the facts from the public that cheers and finances the bloodshed. America's armed forces actively prevented any accurate "enemy" body count in [Panama](#) or Iraq.

It would be a mistake to think that those American soldiers were all innocent lambs, having no idea what was going on, just following orders. To a degree that is true, as nations always send out [young men with no idea of their mortality or why they are fighting](#), but make able killers (one of my friends punned in 1991, "Support our dupes"). For a peek into our boys' mentality during the Gulf War, the U. S. Air Force's 77th Tactical Fighter Squadron published a songbook before the bombing began, describing their plans for Iraq. The only part that can be reproduced in polite company was this little ditty:

Phantom fliers in the sky,

Persian-pukes prepare to die,

Rolling in with snake and nape,

Allah creates but we cremate.

The rest of the songbook is, in the words of David Stannard, a "melange of sadism and obscenity, most of them employing personifications of entire Arabic and Islamic peoples as racially inferior, maggot-infested women whose mass destruction by the Americans is equated with brutal, violent sex." One honor America's soldiers got, which is a time-honored ritual, was writing messages on the bombs. The bombs had messages such as "Mrs. Saddam's sex toy" and a "suppository for Saddam" on them as they dropped, and again, those are the messages I can print in public.[\[297\]](#) One post-war study found that more than half of the American women in the Gulf War felt they were sexually harassed verbally by their fellow male soldiers, and eight percent reported attempted or completed sexual assaults by American soldiers (about 3000 instances).[\[298\]](#)

Stormin' Norman Schwarzkopf publicly admitted his disappointment with being unable to finish his job in Iraq. Schwarzkopf said, "We could have completely closed the door and made it a battle of annihilation...(it was) literally about to become the battle of Cannae, a battle of annihilation." To his disappointment, Schwarzkopf was prevented from exterminating the Iraqi army.[\[299\]](#)

The American media was [extremely complicit](#) with the warmongering. [Project Censored](#) has been tracking the censorship in America's "free press" for more than twenty years. For 1991, their top censored story was CBS and NBC refusing to air footage from Iraq that was initially commissioned by NBC and shot by Emmy-award-winning producers. The footage showed civilian devastation of Iraq that contradicted the propaganda being purveyed by the government and media, which gave the

impression of the Gulf War being a "clean" one, with minimal "collateral damage." *NBC Nightly News* Executive Producer Steven Friedman and anchor Tom Brokaw were enthusiastic about the film and wanted it aired. NBC President Michael Gartner killed the story. The producers then took the video to CBS. *CBS Evening News* Executive Director Tom Bettag told one of the producers that he would appear with Dan Rather the next evening. That same evening, Bettag was fired, the story was killed, and the cheering continued.

Project Censored's number-two story for 1991 was the heavy censorship that attended Gulf War reporting, where stories about Iraqi civilian casualties, fuel-air bombs, Highway of Death footage and the like were all suppressed, and U.S. battlefield casualties were disguised as training accidents. The media served as the government's propaganda organ, contradicting any notion of a "free press" in the United States.

Project Censored's number-six story for 1991 exposed one of the many lies and inventions George Bush told as he prepared the public for war. On September 11, 1990, Bush surprisingly announced that the main reason America had troops in the Gulf was because Iraq threatened to invade Saudi Arabia, and the Pentagon said Iraq had 250,000 troops and 1500 tanks in Kuwait, based on satellite images. The public never saw those images, but Russian satellite images showed that no such military buildup existed.[\[300\]](#)

Project Censored's number-one story of 1990 was how the U.S. press eagerly believed the government's propaganda regarding Iraq while it was whipping up support for the Gulf War, when hindsight regarding Vietnam, Panama and Grenada revealed how shamelessly the government lied to the press and public. It was as if the press would be lied to 99 times in a row, and eventually realize they were being lied to, but would fervently believe the 100th lie they were told. How "knowing" was that kind of stupidity?

The purpose of our bombing campaign was officially stated as driving Iraq from Kuwait. America was "liberating" Kuwait. When the imperial powers pulled out of the Middle East in the 1920s, the governments left behind were dictatorships that could be controlled, and would control the public in those nations. Kuwait was and is a bloody and brutal dictatorship, although relatively "free" as far as the Middle East goes. Saudi Arabia, the other nation America was theoretically defending, has one of earth's most brutal and oppressive regimes. The Saudis are notorious for executing political prisoners, keeping their women in virtual slavery, flogging children, kangaroo courts, etc. Saudi Arabia's method of public execution is using a sword to decapitate their prisoners, sometimes taking a few whacks to get the job done.

America immediately reinstalled a dictatorship in Kuwait. In Kuwait and Iraq were many activists for democratic reform, representing various oppressed groups. The United States never considered giving them any voice or influence. The dictatorship reinstalled in Kuwait immediately began throwing people into prison, torturing prisoners to death and ruthlessly stomping out any notion the populace might have harbored regarding freedom.[\[301\]](#)

The American government said it was driving Iraq from Kuwait. In a logical war, that would mean doing just that: invading Kuwait to beat the Iraqi army back into Iraq. That did not happen. Instead,

America unleashed the most intense bombing campaign in history onto Iraq. America specifically targeted the infrastructure of Iraq, including their transportation, electric, sewer and water-supply systems, and have since blocked attempts to rebuild them. It was a form of biological warfare, akin to starving out the enemy. Among other issues, targeting the civilian infrastructure is by definition a war crime.

Going back to the end of World War II (when America dropped nuclear weapons on Japan, in a move that respected historians now conclude had little to do with [saving American lives](#), and everything to do with a demonstration of power to the world, and to [impress the Soviet Union](#) in particular), the United States has excelled at fighting the coward's war. America's high-tech wars, where devastating weaponry is dropped on helpless populations, with the attacking soldiers never seeing the "enemy" face-to-face, and using the powers of state to ensure that the cheering people at home never know the truth, guarantees that such disasters continue.

Something happened after [Vietnam](#). The war planners realized that the American people would no longer stand to have their young men killed in foreign wars of dubious benefit. A new strategy was crafted, which events of the past generation have made obvious. The new strategy is this: we will only wage war against weak enemies. The strategy is to pick on enemies that cannot fight back, have our propaganda machine (the "free press" and government, working hand-in-hand) turn them into malevolent demons of tremendous stature, and then we resoundingly defeat them in mere weeks, enduring few or no casualties amongst our armed forces. The public will then be delighted that we overcame such an invincible adversary so easily, at little cost to ourselves.

The Gulf War was a textbook example of that strategy. The rhetoric of Norman Schwarzkopf, George Bush and the American media during the buildup to the Gulf War, with Saddam Hussein being compared to Hitler, and Schwarzkopf talking about how outnumbered America's forces were by Iraq, made the strategy clear. The new "Hitler" was America's ally until the day he invaded Kuwait, and he even told American ambassador April Glaspie that he was planning on invading Kuwait a week before his troops did, and she said the United States had "no position" on Arab border disputes.[\[302\]](#) Two days before Iraq's invasion of Kuwait, assistant Defense Secretary John Kelly said in the House Middle East subcommittee hearings, in direct response to the voiced possibility that Iraq might invade Kuwait, that the U.S. had no treaty obligations to defend any nations in the Middle East, a reply that was globally broadcast.[\[303\]](#) At best, Iraq was given mixed signals; at worst, America may have lured Iraq into invading Kuwait. Even the King of Saudi Arabia, King Fahd, apparently felt that the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait was largely because of Kuwait's intransigence in negotiations, and Fahd was initially quite reluctant to allow the United States to "come to the rescue" of Kuwait, or even "defend" Arabia, which had no quarrel with Iraq. George Bush and company eventually wore him down.[\[304\]](#)

Below are some samples of images that the average American never saw during those glory days in early 1991.



Click on image to enlarge.

The Iraq and Panama devastations may both be instances where George Bush the Fist Bush was double-crossing his business partners. Noriega was a drug runner and overall thug, but Bush ran the CIA, which specialized in drug running as a way to fund covert operations. That is well known. More explosive than the betrayal of his ex-employee was Bush's alleged relationship with Hussein. In *The Immaculate Deception*, by Russell Bowen, a retired brigadier general who did some of Bush's covert-action dirty work, the author relates documents that surfaced in a lawsuit in Illinois against the Federal Reserve System that documented a kickback system where Hussein and Bush jointly laundered \$250 *billion* in oil revenues.[\[305\]](#) It was related to the BCCI scandal. People who investigate the BCCI and related scandals often end up dead, as [Danny Casolaro](#) and [Paul Wilcher](#) did.[\[306\]](#) While the story sits there in black and white, the American media will not touch it. It may be that bludgeoning Iraq was a lot more than just killing more than a million of people, but Bush cutting out his partner in crime in history's biggest money-laundering operation.

The Continuing War and the Body Count

As the dust and shrapnel was settling in Iraq, the major suffering was just beginning. A public-health team from Harvard went into Iraq soon after the bombs stopped dropping. They issued a report based on their findings. They estimated that more than 46,000 children under the age of five had already died by August 1991 due to the destruction of Iraq's infrastructure by the U.S. bombing, and the holocaust was only beginning.[\[307\]](#) That news was barely reported in the U.S. mainstream media in 1991. About the only national mainstream American journalist who mentioned the tremendous death toll that the Iraqi children were about to endure was Mike Royko. Other than his voice in the mainstream American media wilderness, the American people were blissfully insulated from the looming children's holocaust that they were largely responsible for, while they congratulated themselves and had parades for returning soldiers. To add murderous insult to injury, America led an economic embargo of Iraq, a nation that bought 70% of its food from abroad. That embargo is standard American foreign policy, something we did to Vietnam, Cuba and Nicaragua - what we do to any militarily weak nation that stands up to us. The difference is that the Iraq embargo is unprecedented in its severity and scale.

The Iraqi children's death toll has mounted through the years. In 1995, the United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization (UNFAO) issued a report on the Iraqi food supply and health. The Iraq health minister stated that more than 500,000 children had died (in excess of normal rates before the Gulf War) in the previous four years due to starvation and disease. The report said they could not confirm that number, but it also did not seem unreasonable. The report discussed the current children's death rate in Iraq (several thousand a month), and their observation of starvation conditions among the children, such as marasmus and kwashiorkor, which was previously rare in Iraq.

Several thousand children and elderly die each month needlessly. In March 2000, seventy members of U.S. Congress moved to end the genocidal aspects of the sanctions. The coordinator of the so-called "oil-for-food" program, the Irishman Denis Halliday, resigned in September 1998, and was highly vocal about the genocidal aspect of the economic sanctions. The man who filled his position, Hans von Sponeck, similarly resigned his position in February 2000, saying the same things Halliday did. The U.S. government tried discrediting those men who failed to act as obedient bureaucrats, while many thousands of children and others died.

The issue of the magnitude of the American-led sanctions' impact on Iraq is not too controversial. Madeleine Albright was interviewed on *60 Minutes* in 1996, and was asked if the sanctions were justified in light of the half million estimated deaths of Iraqi children. Albright replied, "We think the price is worth it." Worth it for who? The death toll is not even denied, and it is "worth it." Ever since the U.S. government has acknowledged the gruesome death toll among the children of Iraq, our government has gone out of its way to blame Saddam Hussein for it. Bill Clinton was interviewed by [Amy Goodman](#) on *Democracy Now!* on Election Day 2000, the day Jeb Bush and [friends helped steal the American presidency for his brother](#). Clinton called the radio station to help get out the vote for Al Gore, to target the crowd who might be leaning for Ralph Nader. Clinton was asked about the death toll of the Iraqi children, and he presented some astounding misrepresentations regarding the Iraq situation. According to Clinton, Iraq had more money in the bank than ever, and that the starving Iraqi children were all Hussein's fault.

While nobody connected with the Iraq situation disputes that a vast human tragedy has happening there, the numbers themselves are subject to a wide range of interpretation. Putting numbers on the dead is a macabre task, but it needs to be done, especially deaths that we are primarily responsible for. In early 2000, the Iraq Health Department released a report that stated that since 1990 about 1.3 million children and elderly had died because of the U.S.-led actions against Iraq. In 1998, UNICEF estimated 1.5 million deaths. Add about two hundred thousand soldier and civilian war deaths to that total, and the tally is between 1.5 and 1.7 million deaths, courtesy of the United States. The Iraqi Minister of Health announced in January of 1999 that the Gulf War and the sanctions caused nearly 1.9 million Iraqi deaths. Regarding the Iraqi children, in 1999, Richard Garfield of Columbia University conservatively estimated more than 100,000 excess children's deaths, with a more likely estimate of about 227,000, and that is even highly conservative.[\[308\]](#) Partly because the United States has a vested interest in not obtaining an accurate body count, as it did regarding our [invasion of Panama](#), and partly because nations at war have reasons to overstate or understate the body count (for instance, the U.S. recently admitted that it had greatly inflated the American body count regarding the Korean War of the 1950s), neither the Iraqi nor the American governments can be wholly trusted on this matter.

There is a wide range of estimates on the body count of soldiers and civilians during the Gulf War, on the children's body count since the war was over, and the body count of other Iraqi citizens, such as the elderly and the ill. There is an easy analysis to perform to gain an idea of this tragedy's magnitude. In the *1990 World Almanac and Book of Facts*, the 1989 estimate of Iraq's population was 17.6 million people, with an annual growth rate of 3.6%, which was one of the world's largest.[\[309\]](#) The nearly twenty years since the oil price increases of 1973 saw a great increase in Iraq's

standard of living, with infant mortality plummeting, literacy rising, and with Iraq attaining the Middle East's highest standard of living. The CIA estimated a 1989 Iraq population of 18.1 million. The CIA estimated a 2000 Iraq population of 22.7 million. The Population Reference Bureau estimated a 2000 Iraq population of 23.1 million. Those estimates are close to those given by UNICEF and *Middle East Review*. Using the more conservative 17.6 million 1989 population and the 3.6% growth rate, an estimated 2000 Iraq population of about 26.0 million is derived, for three million missing Iraqis.

Using 2002 estimates of 24 million and a more conservative 2.8% growth rate, and assuming that growth rate since 1994, a projected 2002 population of 26 million is calculated. Using conservative numbers, two million Iraqi citizens are missing. In number, that qualifies as a genocide, and also in American intent.[\[310\]](#) How many lost lives were due to premature death, how many were due to children not being born because of the hardships the potential parents suffered, and how many were due to dead soldiers who could have fathered children, is a matter of conjecture. If the missing people were Iraqi children who were never born, instead of children, ill and elderly who died before their time, it is obviously not a population control program that the Iraqi people freely chose.

To analyze the numbers a little differently, in neighboring Iran, which had recently concluded a bloody war with Iraq, the 1989 population was estimated at 51.0 million, with a 3.1% growth rate. Iran's Islamic leadership then engaged in an active program of reducing Iran's population growth, as they saw where unchecked growth was headed. Ayatollah Sayyed Ali Khamenei issued edicts that allowed contraception and sterilization for both men and women, which reduced the population growth of Iran to around 1.0 % by 2000, with a birth rate about half of Iraq's, in one of history's most successful voluntary programs to reduce population growth.[\[311\]](#) Even with their aggressive program to reduce population growth, Iran's population grew from 51.0 million in 1989 to an estimated 67.4 million in 2000, for an increase of 32%.[\[312\]](#) Iran's 2000 population is about four million less than its 1989 growth rate projected to. Iraq, on the other hand, had no program for reducing the population growth, its citizens have been merely trying to survive, and its estimated growth rate in 2000 was 2.9%. Iraq's population grew from 17.6 to 23.0 million, for an increase of 31%. Indeed, millions of otherwise alive Iraqi citizens appear to be missing.

The economic sanctions that the United States is inflicting on Iraq comprise the most effective weapon of mass destruction on earth today. Ironically, America has continued to kill Iraqi children because there is a faint possibility that Iraq could rebuild its non-conventional weapons arsenal, even though America helped them build their first one, we have the world's largest, we are the world's only nation to [drop nuclear weapons on another](#), and we turn a blind eye to Israel's nuclear arsenal. Situations like that sparked [Edward Herman](#) to write *Beyond Hypocrisy*. It is genocidal hypocrisy. Even the people carrying out these murderous policies will sometimes admit it. British Prime Minister Tony Blair has a Personal Assistant for Foreign Affairs named Robert Cooper, who is an ex-diplomat himself. Cooper wrote in his *The Post-Modern State and the World Order*, "We need to get used to the idea of double standards," which is another way of saying, "Get over it, we are hypocrites (but powerful ones)." Cooper openly admitted the roots of America's Iraq policy: "the reasons for fighting the Gulf War were not that Iraq had violated the norms of international behaviour..." Cooper wrote that it was all about keeping control over "vital oil supplies," which is obvious to everybody on earth, except those who believe American propaganda.

The death rate of Iraqi children has more than doubled since 1991, and even Richard Garfield's conservative study concluded that the great increase in childhood mortality in Iraq was nearly unique in modern health literature.

The United States has been doing something novel to Iraq. A nation and its people are being systematically destroyed. Those dead children might be the lucky ones. Children in Iraq today are generally hungry, underweight, and have developmental deficiencies. They suffer from all manner of deprivation and psychic distress. Most Iraqi women (70%) are anemic. Iraq's economy had an 80% collapse after the Gulf War, easily the world's worst. Not even the disaster of Russia in the 1990s comes close. Iraqi adult literacy has been collapsing, as has life expectancy. Iraqi lives are becoming nasty, brutish and short. Previously rare social dysfunctions such as openly displayed greed have become increasingly common. Even under history's most brutal economic sanctions, the Iraqi people have been clawing back from the abyss' edge.

Nations had been defying the U.S.-imposed sanctions, as has increasingly happening regarding Cuba. In 2000, for the first time since the Gulf War, commercial airlines flew to Iraq. [Michael Parenti](#) was part of an international delegation that flew to Iraq in November 2000 on Olympic Airways, a Greek airline. Others on the flight were former Greek first lady Margarita Papandreou and members of Greek's parliament. Parenti observed that starving children were no longer as prevalent in Iraq hospitals as in earlier years. Unfortunately, the hospital occupants are increasingly Iraqi children who suffer from diseases such as leukemia.[\[313\]](#) The radioactive weapons that the United States used on Iraq in 1991 are likely the major contributor to Iraq now having the world's highest rate of childhood leukemia. Because of the embargo of medicines and other supplies to Iraq, no Iraqi children survive childhood leukemia today, whereas in the United States the survival rate is about 70%. Also being born in Iraq today are severely deformed children, obviously deformed by the radioactive debris and other poisons introduced by the United States.

Because of Parenti and others, there has been a growing awareness in the United States of the horrendous toll that America's actions have taken. Even the *New York Times* suggested that the United States might consider easing the sanctions a little. George Bush the Second, upon attaining office, acted as the Reagan administration did upon seizing the White House (both administrations came to power due to well-known fraud, the [October Surprise](#) operation for Reagan, and the [widespread vote fraud](#) in Florida for Bush Jr., although the official investigations, as usual, can never seem to find any foul play). Bush began nominating the most socially regressive cabinet members in recent history, such as John Ashcroft for Attorney General. His first day in office was marked with an attack on abortion options regarding American foreign aid. Before his first month in office was finished, America bombed Iraq again, with Bush Jr. saying that the bombing was "routine." Unfortunately, he was right. Even U.S. pawn Turkey expressed its dismay at the American bombings of February 2001. Obviously, the United States is going to play hardball with Iraq again, trying to goad the world back into line with our program of punishing Iraq, especially its children. It is a routine feature of American foreign policy. If there was ever a U.S. president safely in the oil companies' back pocket, it is [George the Second](#).

There are some dire footnotes to Iraq's situation. The "oil-for-food" program has largely swindled

Iraq. The U.S. manipulated the program so baldly that it would be hilarious if it were not costing so many lives. Iraq is forced to sell its oil for food and other life-saving supplies, and tries its best to not sell any of it to the hated United States. All the same, nearly 40% of Iraq's oil exports (sold at cut-rate prices) make it into the United States via middlemen, and the United States as of April 2000 was blocking more than a billion dollars of relief from getting to Iraq. The oil companies raked it in through cut-rate prices paid for Iraqi oil, Iraq became one of the U.S.' biggest oil suppliers (from zero imports in 1996 to the U.S.' fifth biggest supplier in 2000), the U.S. blocked dearly bought food and supplies from getting to Iraq, and the deaths continued to mount.[\[314\]](#) It has been among the world's deadliest rackets.

Back in late 1997, the United States began beating the war drums again over the "weapons of mass destruction" that Saddam Hussein supposedly still harbored. The U.S. government clearly mobilized the American masses again to cheer another bombing of Iraq. In November of 1997, I was moved for a second time to write a letter to the editor, that time to *The Seattle Times*, as I was back home in Washington. They ran my letter on November 30th, 1997. Here it is.

I have been watching Seattle's mainstream media while all the saber rattling has been going on over Iraq lately. *The Seattle Times* article of November 14 is the first time I have seen a substantive reference to the harm United States has inflicted on the Iraqi people over the past seven years ("Iraqi Sanctions Split U.S.-Arab Coalition").

It is not surprising that the first reference I have seen is not due to some "bleeding heart" American mainstream journalist digging up the facts, but was in response to our "Arab allies" refusing to fall into line and get behind a U.S. military action against Iraq.

The article, authored by Barbara Demick of Knight Ridder Newspapers, at least said that there is apparently a lot of suffering going on in Iraq. But her characterization of those "more virulent commentators" and the comparison to the atomic bomb attacks on Japan was highly misleading. So far, the United States' economic attack on Iraq has killed far more people than our atomic attacks on Japan. Two of the most prominent commentators have been former U.S. Attorney General Ramsey Clark and United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization investigators.

Two years ago, it was estimated that the death toll in Iraq, because of the UN embargo, was approaching one million people, including over a half-million children. Today the death toll is more than one million people, five percent of their population.

The children's death toll because of the embargo is about 700,000 as of today, and starvation conditions like kwashiorkor and marasmus are now common. That the American mainstream media fail to mention the horrendous human toll our economic attack has extracted from Iraq is a crime.

Oh yes, we can say the United Nations is doing this, but we are the ones making the sanctions happen, just like we fabricated the "coalition" in 1990. The mainstream media in America are accomplices in this great crime against humanity, and there is a lot of blood on their hands. Making

letters like mine public would help turn things around. The choice is yours.

A few months later, the war drums and propaganda were again reaching a fevered pitch. America was on the brink of bombing Iraq, and I was again compelled to write a letter to *The Seattle Times*. That one was a little more forceful. For that letter, *The Seattle Times* called me at home before running it. It was written on February 2, 1998 and run in the February 8th edition of *The Seattle Times*. Here it is.

Once again in America the drum beat has begun. It looks like we are going to unleash more death and destruction onto the people of Iraq. Once again, the pertinent questions are not being asked. One pertinent question would be, "What has Iraq ever done to us?" The answer is, "Nothing, except resist our attacks."

It is indeed ironic that the only nation to ever unleash weapons of mass destruction on another is the United States. It is also very illuminating to see that there are but two nations getting ready to bomb Iraq: the former and current masters of the world.

In another irony, during the seven-year saga between the United States and Iraq (allies until the day Iraq invaded Kuwait), the only mass destruction that has taken place has been to the nation and people of Iraq. The United States, through economic warfare following on the heels of an unprecedented bombardment, has killed over one million Iraqi citizens, most of them children under the age of five (800,000 and counting). That situation, which should assail the conscience of every American, still is barely being mentioned in the nation's media, amidst all the saber-rattling.

One of the greatest ironies of all is that back in April of 1990, when Saddam Hussein was still our ally, he made an offer to the United States that he would destroy his chemical and non-conventional weapons if Israel would also destroy theirs. And in another surreal twist, much if not most of the material that Iraq has for making "weapons of mass destruction" were purchased from the United States and Europe. Hussein's offer and the United States' response was reported in the *Boston Globe* on April 14, 1990 and by other publications around the world.[\[315\]](#) The reaction of United States government was interesting. We said that we would not be willing to enter into negotiations on that issue. Our politicians cleverly avoided mentioning Israel's nuclear arsenal as they rejected Hussein's offer. The Israeli arsenal (hundreds of nuclear bombs) is not that controversial an issue, as far as its existence goes, as Israel kidnapped and imprisoned one of their citizens for divulging its existence (the celebrated Vanunu case, and he is still in prison after a decade). But the United States cannot officially acknowledge Israel's nuclear arsenal, because to acknowledge that Israel has secretly built a nuclear arsenal would make all of our aid to Israel (billions of dollars a year) illegal, according to our own Foreign Aid Act.

The hypocrisy of the situation is evident to anybody who knows what is going on. The United States will go to the lengths of killing millions of people to prevent an ex-ally from being able to use what we

sold him. But, if a nation finds itself in the fortunate position of being one of our allies, we will go out of our way to ignore their weapons of mass destruction.

Amazingly, the American people are generally ignorant of the points I have made in this letter. People who live outside of this country are not so disinformed. What this country has done to the children of Iraq over the past seven years is terrifying and hard to forgive. The current global Imperial menace is engendering a lot of fear and hatred, particularly in the Arab countries. The ex-Soviet Union apparently cannot account for about 100 suitcase nuclear bombs. If one of those goes off one sunny day in Washington D.C., for instance, it will be no great surprise.

What Bill Clinton may have done with a woman who worked in the White House is an incredibly minor situation. But, unfortunately, the American media and people find what Bill Clinton may have done in a closet far more fascinating than the blood which is on the hands of all Americans today, the blood of children whose crime it was to be born in Iraq.

I was three-for-three in having my letters published. I was shocked that they ran that one, if for no other reason than at more than 600 words, it was more than twice as long as their recommended 300-word limit. The paper called me the day after they ran it, giving me the phone number of a man who wanted to talk to me. I called him. He was nearly 80 years old, and called to say he was "flabbergasted" that the paper would run a letter like mine, and that he had written letters for many years to the paper, and never had one published. During the 1980s, I doubt that any mainstream American paper would have published that letter. I sent that letter to ex-CIA operative [Ralph McGehee](#). Ralph said that he was "amazed" that any American mainstream newspaper would run a letter like that. He said that letter would never see print in the *New York Times* or *Washington Post*.

In February 1998, the federal government staged a "town meeting" at Ohio State University to air their rationale for their proposed bombing of Iraq. The public was invited, although the meeting was more for show, to fabricate a fig leaf of public consent for the bombing. Our government reckoned incorrectly. Students protested noisily, and even the "mature and responsible" citizens who were allowed to approach the microphone were anything but enthusiastic about bombing Iraq again. Their questions, even more than the rabble-rousers' protests, took the politicians by surprise. Secretary of State Madeleine Albright was practically stuttering in the face of the tough questions her team was being asked. The staged meeting became a public relations disaster for the United States government. At the 11th hour, America backed down from bombing Iraq.

I was cautiously optimistic, but doubted that our government officials would immediately begin behaving themselves. Iraqi children were still dying by the thousands, our government would look for another opportunity to bomb Iraq, and they had learned their lesson. The next time they moved to bomb Iraq, even the appearance of a democratic consensus being achieved with the public would not be risked. Our government will likely stage no more "town meetings" before they bomb somebody. The December 1998 bombing of Iraq validated my suspicion. That one had no warning or propaganda buildup. It happened the day Clinton was impeached. Similarly, the summer before, America bombed Sudan and Afghanistan when the Lewinsky scandal was headline news. With

China Syndrome and *Grand Canyon* timing, the movie *Wag the Dog* came out soon before we bombed Sudan and Afghanistan.[\[316\]](#) Did life imitate art again? In the autumn of 1998, the propaganda machine revved up again. The subsequent bombing of Yugoslavia was the same, with no selling of the war to the American people before it began.

My motivation for writing letters to the editor was not necessarily being published, but helping to let the newspaper know how many people out there felt like me, and perhaps they might run one letter like mine. If the people truly stand up, they will be counted, but the system is increasingly rigged against people participating in it. Noam Chomsky has written about how the system works for many years in many books. In nearly every society there are an elite few at the hierarchy's top, and they often view those below them as beings to be used for their own selfish ends. The West immediately attacks any nation that attempts to form an egalitarian society, as we think we own the world, and have for five hundred years. Ralph McGehee stated it clearly [while concluding *Deadly Deceits*](#). Egalitarianism is incompatible with elitism, and United States has long led the field in destroying egalitarian movements worldwide.

The coverage of the latest bombing attacks of 1998 was a much different affair than it was in 1991, or the saber rattling during the winter of 1997-1998. What happened in December 1998 literally made me sick. They impeached Clinton for the wrong crime. That time nearly the entire world was against America. Clinton, with a straight face, told America that the bombs we were dropping in Iraq as he spoke were dropped to protect Iraq's neighbors. Not one of Iraq's "threatened" neighbors voiced approval of the bombing. They all said to stop bombing Iraq. Even nations that supposedly hated Saddam Hussein, such as Syria and Iran, protested what the United States and Great Britain were doing. They knew that a devastated nation of starving people posed little threat to them, and the writing on the wall is obvious: if they displeased the United States, they could end up just like Iraq. *America could not even get Israel to support our December 1998 bombing of Iraq.*

The U.S.' hypocrisy regarding the United Nations was laid bare. If America could manipulate the United Nations into voting our way, we present their vote as authorizing our actions, speaking fair words about the need to obey international law and the United Nations' voice. When the UN does not vote the way we like, we give them the finger, doing as we please. The fact that we outraged two of the five permanent members of the UN Security Council, China and Russia, while France looked for a place to hide, spoke volumes about the United States' actions. The entire world saw that our actions in Iraq benefited nobody but us. Peace activists began saying that dropping a nuclear bomb once a year on Iraq would be more humane than the slow starvation and strangulation of its population.

The night of America's surprise bombing of Iraq on December 16th was not a happy one for me. I decided against writing another letter to the editor, and wrote a several page essay. I was up until about 3:00 AM writing it. I titled it "In the Service of Empire."[\[317\]](#) I had not had a web page up for a couple of years, and had not planned to go public until a book was published. My writings were being published around the Internet in various places, and I was getting more requests for my work. I decided to start another web page, putting my latest writings under one roof, which led to this web site. The Iraq portion of this essay was the first part of that project.

Subsequent Events

Since our attack on Iraq in December of 1998, there has been a continuous series of air battles and skirmishes between the United States and Iraq. The best analysis of events takes into consideration the United States' global political-economic aims and those of its junior partner, Great Britain. The reason the Bush administration did not [negotiate a withdrawal from Kuwait](#) with Iraq is that *bullies never negotiate*. George Bush said about the Persian Gulf War, it demonstrated that "What we say, goes." If one possesses the superior means of violence, there is no need to negotiate. Negotiation is even avoided, because the very nature of negotiation means giving up something. If one has the monopoly on violent means, the ultimatum is delivered: do it our way, or we destroy you.

"It would be some time before I fully realised that the United States sees little need for diplomacy. Power is enough. Only the weak rely on diplomacy... The Roman Empire had no need for diplomacy. Nor does the United States." - **United Nations Secretary-General Boutros Boutros-Ghali**

In January 1999, United States officials admitted what really happened during those so-called UN (UNSCOM) weapons inspections. United States officials admitted that spying on Iraq was an important part of the weapons inspection program. America had "inspectors" install spying devices while they performed their inspections in Iraq for "weapons of mass destruction," partly to gather information to locate and assassinate Saddam Hussein and key Iraqi government officials in America's 1998 bombing campaign. It was admitted that the bombing campaign did just that, killing important people in Hussein's administration, although failing to get Hussein himself.

In the March 2, 1999 *Washington Post*, U.S. officials, understandably speaking on condition of anonymity, confirmed what Iraq had been saying for years: the United States was using UNSCOM for spying operations. U.S. agents infiltrated the inspectors, installing spying devices unrelated to the supposed disarmament mission of UNSCOM.[\[318\]](#) United States officials tried spinning the revelations as minor, and that the world should have expected it. The next "Hitler" accused the U.S. of murderous dishonesty for years, and our own officials confirmed that he is right.

Brian Becker of the [International Action Center](#) (AIC) visited Iraq a week before the December 1998 bombing, along with the AIC team. Saleh Al-Mukhtar, the chairman of the Iraqi Solidarity and Friendship Organization, told the AIC that the United States would bomb Iraq "within a week." He made that prediction a week before America bombed them. Mukhtar predicted that Bill Clinton's visit to Israel immediately before the bombing was calculated to appear to offer concessions to the Arab people, so when the bombs dropped, the Arabs could be bribed into standing by and watching Iraq getting bombed once more.[\[319\]](#)

In an interview published in the *New York Times* on January 22nd, 1999, Bill Clinton spoke of the likelihood of a biological attack on America by "rogue states" and "terrorist groups." Clinton's "Fortress America" idea had a deceptive feeling to it. The United States has the power to label its enemies. Calling a nation we have bludgeoned a "rogue state" has a nice defensive sound to it, but there is another way of looking at it.

A bully makes sure his victims cannot fight back. Bullies never seek a fair fight, but pick on those smaller than themselves. The hatred America has engendered throughout the world as it has bludgeoned nation after nation will haunt us. Until the World Trade Center attacks of 2001, the United States never had its national boundaries threatened, except when Russian nuclear missiles were aimed at it; and that was never the active threat and real suffering that the Iraqi people endure today, or Nicaraguans or Cubans, etc. When the United States sends the world's biggest killing machine to Iraq and Panama, those nations cannot strike back at us, not by challenging our military aggression directly.

Sneaking a biological, chemical or nuclear weapon into Washington D.C. would be a form of retaliation they could do. We see the "terror," they see it as the only way they can fight back. The Gulf War and the aftermath the United States is responsible for has killed more than a million Iraqi people, nearly half of them children. Iraq only has about 24 million people in it, for a death toll approaching ten percent of the population. If a series of non-conventional weapon sneak attacks wiped out New York City, Washington D.C. and Los Angeles, it would kill somewhere around 30 million people, or about ten percent of our population. See what happened when the World Trade Center attacks killed a ten-thousandth that many. To an Iraqi, that might be considered "getting even." Imagine if somebody attacked America and killed 30 million people, and ten million of them were children. In relative terms, that is America has done to Iraq over the past eight years. *Killing Hope* clearly shows why many nations have good reason to hate America.

Instead of admitting the truth and working to lessen the hatred toward us, Clinton talked about "rogue states" and "terrorist groups." The "terrorist" legislation Clinton tried to push through for years would have given a fairly free hand in defining what a "terrorist" is. Many Americans were afraid that such legislation would make a "terrorist" of anybody who dared criticize our government. If one followed the asset seizure laws enacted by the Reagan administration, for things such as suspected "drug dealing," where 85% of those whose assets were seized were not even charged with anything, but had their assets seized because "they were there," the fears were not outlandish. If Clinton got his Fortress America wish (something George Bush the Second pushed for early on, with his outrageous Star Wars missile system, announced before he even took office), America moved one step closer to a police state and a future I would rather not ponder. As of September 11, 2001, those nightmares began coming to pass.

The Seattle Times on February 1, 1999 had a front-page story about how the CIA believed that Iraq used humans to test its weapons. Does Iraq have chemical and biological weapons salted away? Possibly. Did they use human beings for some of their testing? That would not be surprising, but if one compares the human experiments allegedly done by Iraq to the human experiments done by the United States, the Iraqis are obviously amateurs. There are so many instances of the United States government's callous disregard for human life that it can become numbing. For every instance of

human experiments that were undeniable (fallout tests on South Pacific natives, planned nuclear releases in America on unwitting populations, [Nagasaki](#), the Tuskegee syphilis experiments on black men, the CIA LSD experiments on unwitting people, the University of Rochester plutonium experiments, the entire [artificial fluoridation issue](#)), there is rumor of human experimentation that makes my skin crawl, such the Montauk Project and the Montauk Boys, the Philadelphia Experiment, the CIA's [MK-ULTRA program](#), [Jonestown](#), various military tests on soldiers, some told to me by the soldiers themselves, things done to involuntary prisoners, etc.

Involuntary human experimentation (and even "voluntary," as on prisoners) is evil, and Iraq has probably done it. Yet, the article was intended to portray Iraq as monsters, setting the stage to further justify America's attacks. America is one of the last nations that can point the human-experiment finger at Iraq, but it is in keeping with U.S. hypocrisy throughout the entire Iraq affair. The article admitted that it was a string of wild rumors and wishful thinking. They presented as much evidence for human experiments as existed for the [Iraqi incubator story](#), or that [Iraq planned to invade Saudi Arabia](#), which is none. It had little relationship to actual news reporting, but looked more like wartime propaganda.

A great irony of that human experiment speculation was a contemporaneous story that was a far more responsible speculation. A February 2, 1999 e-mail from the International Action Center stated that hoof and mouth disease broke out in Iraq when the December bombing happened. The disease threatened the nation's entire livestock population. It crippled over a million animals by that time. For a nation already starving, it was a terrible blow. The International Action Center openly wondered if the CIA intentionally introduced it into Iraq. If so, it would be no surprise. The CIA probably performed acts of biological warfare against Cuba, including introducing Newcastle disease to Cuba's turkey population, swine fever to its pigs, Dengue Fever to human Cubans, and even inducing killer storms through weather control.[\[320\]](#)

In Africa, there is compelling evidence that when Zimbabwe was vying for independence, when it was still called Rhodesia, the white minority engaged in biological warfare by giving the "rebel" regions anthrax, which not only killed people but decimated their livestock populations.[\[321\]](#) Biological warfare by white people against non-whites is [far from unknown](#).

Scott Ritter was the leading U.S. weapons inspector in Iraq, and he has gone public with information that the U.S. government would have rather kept quiet. In the June 2000 issue of *Arms Control Today*, Ritter wrote:

"...from 1994 to 1998 Iraq was subjected to a strenuous program of ongoing monitoring of industrial and research facilities that could be used to reconstitute proscribed activities. This monitoring provided weapons inspectors with detailed insight into the capabilities, both present and future, of Iraq's industrial infrastructure. It allowed UNSCOM to ascertain, with a high level of confidence, that Iraq was not rebuilding its prohibited weapons programs and that it lacked the means to do so without an infusion of advanced technology and a significant investment of time and money.

"Given the comprehensive nature of the monitoring regime put in place by UNSCOM, which included a strict export-import control regime, it was possible as early as 1997 to determine that, from a qualitative standpoint, Iraq had been disarmed. Iraq no longer possessed any meaningful quantities of chemical or biological agent, if it possessed any at all, and the industrial means to produce these agents had either been eliminated or were subject to stringent monitoring. The same was true of Iraq's nuclear and ballistic missile capabilities.

"...By the end of 1998, Iraq had, in fact, been disarmed to a level unprecedented in modern history, but UNSCOM and the Security Council were unable - and in some instances unwilling - to acknowledge this accomplishment."

During the summer of 2000, the U.S. government stepped up propaganda efforts against Iraq, and used mouthpieces such as the [New York Times](#) as its platform. In light of Ritter's revelations, the U. S. engaged in naked genocide in Iraq, its stated rationale in tatters.

There were been other media items worthy of comment. On February 18th, 1999 I passed by a *USA Today* street dispenser that looks like a television (not by accident). The front-page headline said "Price of cheap gas: Laid off oil workers." That is the price of cheap gas, according to the mainstream media. The price was not dead Iraqi children, not a devastated environment, genocide in [East Timor](#), the ruination of [Nigeria](#), etc. The price was workers losing their jobs. As usual, they did not mention the "p" word, and talk about the impact on oil company profits. Layoffs raise profits, and the dead are invisible.

There is a much broader framework to view these events from, a viewpoint voiced by Noam Chomsky and many others. With the Soviet Empire's collapse, there has been little obstacle to the United States establishing a de facto Global Empire, with China being only serious obstruction to that goal. William Blum ended *Killing Hope* with "Noam Chomsky has noted that the end of the Cold War has enabled the U.S. government to achieve its ultimate goal - 'to set the terms of discussion' for virtually any international issue, and thus become the ultimate empire."[\[322\]](#) When viewed through that lens, so much becomes clear that our propaganda systems obscure. The ethnic strife we see in Yugoslavia and the Indian subcontinent were partly due to conscious strategies implemented by the colonial powers to divide and conquer the people, in an ancient strategy.

Events in Iraq are more of the same. In the opinion of Chomsky, Becker, Mukhtar and others, America's strangulation of Iraq is destroying a regional power so that no Middle East nation dares oppose America's hegemony. What America [did to Southeast Asia](#) was similar. The goal is eliminating regional power structures across the globe, recolonizing the planet, turning it into our *Global Plantation*. As America eliminates regional powers such as Yugoslavia and Iraq, we eliminate any chance that those regions can resist our domination. Our genocidal policies towards Iraq are part of a long-term strategy by the United States and Britain to dismember Iraq, [Yugoslavia](#) and any other nation posing an obstacle to our global empire. The "dissident" analyses of Chomsky and others are not easily dismissed, but that kind of discussion [is never in our American mainstream](#)

[media](#). Cold War propaganda constantly focused on the evil "communist conspiracy" that would take over the world. Insert "capitalist" for "communist," and it describes the real situation more accurately.

America's Global Empire efforts are unlikely to succeed. One need not study biblical prophecy to see where events are probably headed, particularly in light of the World Trade Center attacks. No tyranny lasts forever, and as the United States has led the global proliferation of weaponry, it is becoming harder to monopolize the means of violence. The people that run the United States acted as if nobody could fight back against our murderous bullying. Long before the World Trade Center attacks, Whitley Strieber had visions of Washington D.C. being destroyed one day by a "terrorist" bomb.[\[323\]](#) When a bully backs somebody into a corner and keeps on beating, what recourse does the victim have? In order to survive, they may run home and get a gun, changing the terms of engagement. Lieutenant Colonel [Tom Bearden](#) publicly stated several years ago that people with the means and motive to crop-dust Washington D.C. with anthrax are already here, and the question is not if it will happen, but when.[\[324\]](#) William Blum downplayed the notion of such a "terrorist" attack, but the notion is not farfetched, particularly now.

The scenario could unfold in other ways. Living at the empire's heart makes for comfortable lives. Hundreds of thousands of citizens in ancient Rome received free food as it flowed from the imperial hinterlands. Today, [bananas](#) that should be feeding Central American children instead are sold in United States supermarkets. Land that should be growing food for African people instead grows food and other products for export to the industrialized world, in order to service African debt to western banks (at an unfair exchange rate), for money that went into a dictator's Swiss bank account. Those living in the imperial center (the United States) are generally oblivious to those situations. Similar to the slaughterhouse kept at a respectful distance from town, or the forest clear cuts that are hidden by a strip of trees left standing, the suffering of those [unwillingly supporting the empire](#) are carefully hidden from view, and the imperial class prefers it that way. It makes it easier to live with a "clean" conscience.

As Adam Smith made clear in his *Wealth of Nations*, nationalism is a handy tool to manipulate populations into marching off to war and other exploitations of average people, benefiting the elite at the top.[\[325\]](#) The people running the American Empire have no particular allegiance to the American people. [American stupidity has been cynically cultivated](#) and used to get Americans to cheer bombings, [wave flags](#), march off to war and other acts of nationalistic fervor. Every militaristic nation tells itself that it is the force of light of virtue, even when it kills off children.

The people heading America's food chain rake it in from the carnage. That is not to say that Americans do not enjoy cheap gasoline and bananas (that is part of the bribe), but [capitalists](#) have no particular allegiance to America. They will go wherever the profits are. Those cheap commodities come with being at the empire's heart. We are seeing the long-term effects of global profit-seeking, with American jobs being shipped off to places such as Indonesia, Mexico, the Caribbean, and Asia, where \$20-per-hour American jobs became \$2.00-per-hour Mexican jobs and \$2.00-per-day Indonesian jobs, while executive compensation (almost exclusively white men) skyrocketed. White, educated, American men are the most privileged demographic group in world history and will probably be so for some time. Women, the uneducated and people of color do not cheer too loudly

for America's state of affairs, with a large and growing homeless population, the [world's largest prison population](#), and many other social indicators that nobody can cheer about.[\[326\]](#)

The capitalists know what they are doing. The international treaties they rammed through, such as GATT and NAFTA, are designed to make the world safe for profits, having the owners' interests "peculiarly attended to." Real wages in America significantly declined since 1973, with a slight increase in the 1990s "boom times," but the 1929-like Wall Street Scandals, which began with the 2000 dot.com collapse and reached new heights in 2002 with [Enron](#) and many other accounting scandals, may usher in a new economic collapse. Average Americans are slowly joining the global oppressed class. The goal of global capitalism is turning the entire planet into the *Global Plantation*, where plutocratic pockets of cognac-sippers exist throughout the world, and the slave-driver class (corporate managers, academics, professionals, the military and CIA, etc., which are about 20% of the U.S. population) keeps the vast majority of humanity in the yoke. Under that scenario, which has been unfolding for many years, it will always be preferable to be Joe Six-Pack in America than toiling on a Guatemalan banana plantation, but the differences are slowly disappearing.

Yugoslavia and East Timor

In the spring of 1999, the United States was destroying two nations at once: Iraq and Yugoslavia. I had strange conversations with people who thought those situations were unrelated, who thought that in the midst of the genocide of Iraqi children over controlling Middle East oil, the very same politicians and diplomats had suddenly grown big hearts as they bombed Serbia to "free" Kosovo.

As with Iraq and most nations, Yugoslavia was an artificial entity created by drawing lines on a map. In Yugoslavia's situation, however, the nation's creation had more to do with the local population banding together to prevent further imperial intervention than it did the imperial powers drawing those map lines.

The Balkan region has one of the most culturally and historically diverse populations on earth. It is where the Western Roman Empire met the Eastern Roman Empire, where the Ottoman Empire met the Austro-Hungarian Empire, where Eastern Orthodox Christianity met Roman Catholicism, and where both met Islam. More than a dozen distinct ethnic groups inhabit what was recently known as Yugoslavia, with the Serbs, Croats and Muslims being the most populous, but also with significant populations of Slovenes, Albanians, Macedonians and others.[\[327\]](#) The region has seen numerous marauding armies, including Christian Crusaders, Islamic armies and Nazi Germany and its minions.

During the two World Wars of the 20th century, the region's people suffered greatly, especially the Serbs, who lost perhaps one million people in those wars, with hundreds of thousands of those deaths occurring in concentration camps. Post-war Yugoslavia feared attack from the Soviet Union for a long time, it being a disobedient communist nation, but ended up being invaded by the United States and its Western European underlings.

Scholars who study the Balkan region are wont to say, in jest, that it has "too much history."[\[328\]](#)

With such a long and tumultuous history of bloodshed and invading armies, mass migrations, population displacement, religious and ethnic friction and the like, it is guaranteed that very few Americans have even a passing understanding of what the issues, tensions and conflicts are there, yet we allowed our government to mount an immensely destructive invasion. To repair the war damage and recreate the Balkan stability that existed twenty years earlier will likely cost about \$100 billion[329], an amount greater than the annual Gross Domestic Product of the former Yugoslavia. [330] Immediately after the bombing stopped, Clinton informed the world that the United States' role in the region was bombing it to smithereens, not helping to rebuild it. In short, the nation was destroyed environmentally and economically, as well as politically.[331] Even if left alone, it would take the region generations to recover from the U.S.-led destruction, and it is guaranteed that it will not be left alone. Scholars have argued at length regarding the "real" reasons behind Yugoslavia's disintegration, and they can have sharply divergent theses, but this essay focuses on what my nation did to abet the situation. The United States was possibly the largest influence, and virtually none of the mainstream scholarship that I read even *addressed* the United States' role, even though *its* bombs devastated the region. I could not even find a *discussion* of the U.S. role at my local library, and again had to resort to reading "radical" U.S. scholarship, the kind that the mainstream media immediately dismisses, if it is even aware of it. Michael Parenti and Noam Chomsky, two of America's leading dissident scholars, authored the only books I saw that analyzed the U.S. role at length.[332] As usual, they have been subjected to a [hail of criticism](#) and vilification in America because of their work.

Yugoslavia was an anomaly in post-war Europe. It was a communist nation not under Soviet domination. I spent a week there in 1974, traveling its length by bus, from Greece to Austria. It was the only communist nation over there that welcomed people from the "free world." In many ways it was a hauntingly beautiful nation, and in others it was not. I was in Dubrovnik when Nixon resigned, and the hotel manager gave his condolences to our tour group. He was genuinely sympathetic, and told us that he had once visited the United States, and liked it. Dubrovnik was heavily shelled in the 1990s wars, killing many people. As in many regions, there was ethnic and cultural diversity and friction in Yugoslavia, but it stayed a relatively neutral nation in a difficult region, wedged between the great powers.

The U.S. government and mainstream media endlessly justified the bombing of Yugoslavia as a "humanitarian intervention." Even so-called "left" media sources stated the same thing.[333] America's bombs somehow saved the Albanians, even as they killed Albanians. The NATO bombs directly killed about 300 Albanians, the people they were supposedly saving. In only three previous instances in the twentieth century had a large power invaded another nation for "humanitarian" reasons, and America and Bill Clinton made the fourth. The other three were Hitler's invasion of Czechoslovakia, Mussolini's invasion of Ethiopia, and Japan's invasion of Manchuria.[334] In those three earlier instances, the invading imperial powers invoked lofty rationales for their invasions, their rhetoric accurately citing problems and abuses in the regions they invaded. Such rationales could be concocted for any place on earth. The Big Lie regarding each rationale was that their motivation was helping the nations they invaded. In each case, they invaded for murderously self-serving reasons.

One thing is certain: the application of violence, if justified (which I have not found a clear instance of yet, and doubt I ever will), should be the result of lengthy deliberations by those who authorize such

actions. As with all of our violent interventions, the American public (who ultimately authorized the violence) knew virtually nothing about what was happening as they cheered the violence. Not one in ten Americans could pick out Yugoslavia on a geophysical map (one with no national boundaries or names) of the world. In a 2002 global geographic literacy survey by *National Geographic*, more than ten percent of American adults between the ages of 18 and 24 could not even pick out the United States, and 87% could not pick out Iraq. Thirty percent could not even identify the Pacific Ocean. Americans cheer the bombs without really knowing where they fall.

America's Humanitarian Record

With all the self-congratulation about what a humanitarian nation America is, and how we saved the Albanians, a little investigation into our humanitarian record is warranted.

The genocide in Iraq, ongoing and concurrent with the bombing of Yugoslavia, should have made any thinking person at least question our motives regarding Yugoslavia. William Blum, in his recent *Rogue State*, sampled the UN voting record of the United States on various humanitarian issues. He selected votes from the Reagan years, but notes, as we will see, that the voting trend during the Reagan years is nearly the same today.

Our justification for the Iraqi genocide (harboring chemical/biological weapons, whose ingredients were largely purchased from the United States and its allies) looks a little odd compared to our voting record on chemical and biological weapon proliferation, and other weapons of mass destruction.

Here are UN resolutions to ban testing and development of chemical and biological weapons.

Resolution #	Date	Nation Vote
36/96B	December 9, 1981	109-1
37/98A	December 13, 1982	95-1
38/187A	December 20, 1983	98-1
39/65B	December 12, 1984	84-1

Here are resolutions on prohibiting the testing and development of nuclear weapons.

Resolution #	Date	Nation Vote

37/73	December 9, 1982	111-1
37/78A	December 9, 1982	95-1
38/183M	December 20, 1983	133-1
39/148N	December 17, 1984	123-1

To demonstrate that those votes are not from a distant, errant past, recently the U.S. Senate stood on the world stage and refused to ratify a nuclear-test-ban treaty.[\[335\]](#) The U.S. has been alone on the world stage numerous times, either refusing to limit nuclear weapons, or asserting its right to use them "preemptively," which means to [use them for offensive purposes](#).

Here are resolutions on prohibiting the testing and development of new systems of "weapons of mass destruction."

Resolution #	Date	Nation Vote
38/182	December 20, 1983	116-1
38/70	December 12, 1984	125-1

Here are resolutions calling for education, health care, nourishment and national development to be considered standard human rights.

Resolution #	Date	Nation Vote
36/133	December 14, 1981	135-1
37/199	December 18, 1982	131-1
38/124	December 16, 1983	132-1

Here are resolutions to affirm the right of every nation to control its own economic and social destiny, free of outside intervention.

Resolution #	Date	Nation Vote

36/19	November 9, 1981	126-1
38/25	November 22, 1983 [336]	131-1

Here is the resolution calling for a convention on the rights of children.

Resolution #	Date	Nation Vote
42/101	December 7, 1987	150-0-1

The United States abstained voting on the resolution regarding the rights of children, the world's only nation to do so. In all of the above UN vote tallies, the United States was the lone "no" vote.[\[337\]](#) The American media rarely informs the American public of those votes.

The Convention on the Rights of the Child was held, and one of its resolutions was banning the death penalty for people who commit crimes as children, and banning child soldiers. Only two nations have not ratified the treaty. Somalia did not, because it does not have a functioning government. The other was the United States, the only nation on earth that still executes children. How could Bill Clinton keep a straight face while talking about "rogue states"?

That litany of lone "no" votes can keep going, such as regarding resolutions condemning Israel's horrendous human-rights violations of the Palestinians, or the apartheid government of South Africa's treatment of the blacks there. The United States has a lengthy record of installing and/or propping up some of the most brutal regimes on earth, such [Suharto's Indonesia](#), Pinochet's [Chile](#), the [Shah's Iran](#), the death-squad regimes of [El Salvador and Guatemala](#), its support for [Pol Pot's Cambodia](#) and so on. The United States regularly stands alone on the world stage, rejecting principles of decency and humanity that the rest of the world has embraced. In that light, the sudden professed humanitarian concern for the Albanians should be viewed with a skeptical eye.

Indeed, try as one might, there is probably not one "humanitarian" military intervention to be found in world history.[\[338\]](#) Violence is not, has never been, and never will be, a humanitarian undertaking. Somebody is always violated, and invading armies have *never* inflicted violence out of humanitarian intent. It has always been self-serving on the part of those who created the armies and the situations they are used in, and they will *always* concoct a reasonable and seemingly noble rationale for their violence, and it is *never* the real reason. If America's activities happen to benefit Albanians or Kuwaitis or Iraqi Kurds, it is incidental, and our leaders will always look for a good cover story to sell to the masses, so minor population elements benefiting from America's interventions become the story of the day, not the majority's suffering. If the Albanians or Kuwaitis get in the way or become expendable, they will share the same fate as the Iraqi children.

Whenever people begin analyzing whether the Serbs are worse than the Croatians, or if the

Albanians deserve to be “free” in Kosovo, or how murderously the Muslims were treated, they usually have already made assumptions that I reject, which is that the United States government really cares about *any* of those people, and that we have a God-given right to intervene. The only right being exercised is the right of might, which America exercises regularly, accompanied each time with lies to justify it, just as Hitler and Mussolini did when they invaded Czechoslovakia and Ethiopia.

The Kurdish Plight

The Kurdish people compose the world's largest ethnic group without a home state. There are more than 16 million Kurds alive today, and about half of them live in Turkey. Turkey is another artificial entity that imposed a national identity on a land of tribes, being the remnant that the Great Powers could not carve into [controllable chunks after World War I](#).^[339] At World War I's conclusion, the Kurdish people were vying to establish a nation for themselves as the Ottoman Empire ended. [Woodrow Wilson](#) even remarked that the three ethnic groups that should have their own nation as the Ottoman Empire was carved up were Armenians, Kurds and Arabs. Unfortunately for the Kurds, Kurdistan was sitting on large oil deposits, and Britain's power politics (other colonial powers were also involved, including France and America) divided Kurdistan between the new artificial nations Turkey and Iraq (Kurdistan also was carved up into portions of Iran, Syria and the Soviet Union). The Kurds were neither Turks nor Arabs, having their own distinct identity, linguistically and culturally. ^[340]

The plight of the Kurdish people over the past century has been a grim one, with periodic revolt and repression throughout Kurdistan. The 1980s were a particularly difficult time for the Kurds. Although the Kurds were instrumental in deposing Iran's Shah, the Khomeini regime denied them autonomy, and the Kurds were partly used as pawns by Iran during the Iraq-Iran war in the 1980s, the Iraqi Kurds being armed and encouraged to fight against Iraq. In light of how [America sold them out earlier](#), the Kurds must have been desperate indeed to rise up again, with U.S. encouragement. As Iraq gained the upper hand militarily (enthusiastically armed by the West, America in particular^[341], and the U.S. also helped arm Iran, as the Iran/Contra scandal made clear), in 1987 it began a military campaign against the Kurdish rebels, and that is when Saddam Hussein's troops used chemical weapons on the Kurds. In 1987 and 1988, when Hussein was using chemical weapons on the Kurds, he was the U.S.' ally against Iran, so those atrocities went largely unreported in the mainstream American press. While chemical weapons were being used on Iraq's Kurds, Turkey was engaging in its own bloody repression of its Kurds. Beginning in 1984, the military effort of Turkey killed about 40,000 Kurds and made refugees of two million others. In *Censored 2000*, the number-five story of the year was the fact that Turkey had destroyed thousands of Kurdish villages with American weapons.

To this day, the Turkish government's atrocities against its Kurdish population go largely unmentioned in the U.S. media. The U.S. instigated another Kurdish rebellion that happened in Iraq as the Gulf War ended, then literally flew air cover for Iraq's Republican Guard, even denying the Kurds captured Iraqi weapons to fight back with.^[342] America did it in the name of "stability." The

hypocrisy was surreal, and awe-inspiring to witness.

The Kurds were unfortunate pawns again. As they fled Iraq for Turkey and Iran, the U.S. engaged in operation Provide Comfort, which was supposed to succor the Kurds who fled. More than seven times as much aid was spent on a Kurdish refugee in Turkey as one in Iran. The Kurds essentially were put into concentration camps along the Iraq-Turkey border, and then the Western press decided their plight was newsworthy (as it was partly caused by our new official enemy, Iraq) for a few moments. A notable aspect of those events was that Turkey was repressing the Kurds arguably worse, but the media made that relationship largely invisible to the American public. The U.S. unilaterally created a "no-fly zone" in northern Iraq, so Iraq could not exert much military influence in the Kurdish region. The "no fly zone" applied to Iraqi planes, but not Turkish ones, as the Turkish military, using American equipment, flew into Iraq to bomb the Kurds there; acts that our media has generally not reported.[\[343\]](#)

About 75% of Turkey's arms are of U.S. manufacture. Analyzing the U.S. media's performance regarding Turkey, Iraq, Iran and the Kurds is a good lesson in the "[good victim/bad victim](#)" paradigm that the U.S. press has adopted. Kurds being killed by Iraq, while Iraq was a U.S. ally (largely because they were at war with Iran) was largely unreported by the U.S. press...until Hussein became an official enemy on August 2, 1990.

Amnesty International stated,

"One of the clearest examples of the USA's changing attitude to human rights violations in different circumstances is that of Iraq. During the 1980s Iraqi forces committed gross and widespread abuses...Amnesty International repeatedly appealed for action, yet neither the US authorities nor the UN responded...after Iraq invaded Kuwait in August 1990...The USA repeatedly cited the Iraqi government's appalling human rights record to gather support for UN military intervention in the Gulf."[\[344\]](#)

Talk of Kurdish independence is rare in the U.S. mainstream press. The Turkish government has treated those Kurdish refugees as stateless persons with no rights. The American people have been treated to a mind-boggling inversion of reality regarding the Kurdish plight.[\[345\]](#) To be fair, the Kurds in Turkey have likely not aided their plight by massacring Turks, led by the Marxist guerilla group known as the Kurdistan Workers Party (PKK), and succumbing to Turkey's divide-and-conquer tactics that have fragmented their efforts. When thinking about those Albanians (who have a home state) that America so nobly helped, pondering the Kurdish situation might be fruitful.

Helping Kosovo

To find out what the American people were not told about the events in Yugoslavia and the region, [Project Censored](#) provided more rich reading. The number-six story in *Censored 2000* was one that the alternative media reported widely on: the attack on Yugoslavia "coincidentally" served numerous private interests.[\[346\]](#)

That issue became one of contention in leftist circles. Kosovo has large deposits of lead, zinc, silver, gold and other lucrative ores. The Yugoslavian government's mining company owned the mines. The capitalists did not have their hands on it yet. Ripping Kosovo from Serbia nearly guaranteed that the capitalists will own it. That part of the "freedom" deal the Kosovo Albanians are getting has received little notice in the American press. Those mines, however, are tiny compared to another goal of the capitalists. There is about five *trillion* dollars of oil sitting underneath the Caspian Sea region, and the United States has been busy negotiating rights to that oil, while cutting out local powers such as Russia and Iran. Yugoslavia sits on a favored route for the projected pipeline from the region, and is one more reason the capitalists want to control the Balkans. Breaking Yugoslavia into pieces is a good way to do it. It is another divide-and-conquer tactic. Noam Chomsky downplayed the strictly economic aspect of the Kosovo intervention,[\[347\]](#) likening our intervention to that of a Mafia Don: he may terrorize the shopkeeper for protection money, but the terror is more important than the money, as it helps keep all shopkeepers in line with the program. What did Al Capone want more of, money or power? To those he abused, it did not really matter.

The number-ten Project Censored story of 1999 was that the entire Kosovo intervention was a set up from the beginning. The negotiations with Milosevic's Serbia were a sham. The U.S.-produced Rambouillet "agreement" and Milosevic's refusal to sign it was the official reason that NATO bombed Yugoslavia. The U.S. did not negotiate in good faith. The Rambouillet proposal was one that no sovereign nation would agree to. The agreement gave NATO personnel unlimited power in the region and complete immunity from any crimes they might commit. Appendix B of the proposal gave NATO personnel "free and unrestricted passage and unimpeded access throughout the FRY (Federal Republic of Yugoslavia), including associated airspace and territorial waters." Clauses 11 and 15 granted NATO "the use of airports, roads, rails and ports without payment (and) the right to use all the electromagnetic spectrum." The proposal granted NATO arbitrary arrest and detention powers. In short, the Rambouillet proposal turned all of Yugoslavia (not just Kosovo) into occupied territory, a new colonial holding of the U.S. and friends. That "fine print" was not reported in the U.S. media, as Milosevic and the Serbs were vilified. As Yugoslavia rejected the Rambouillet proposal, it stated that it would work toward Kosovo self-management. That also went unreported in the mainstream media, and the day after Yugoslavia refused to ratify the Rambouillet proposal, while proposing its own counteroffer (Yugoslavia had already made their own proposals, some quite generous, which were immediately dismissed by the U.S. and not reported by our media, [just like we treated Iraq](#)), NATO began bombing them.

Dan Goure, of the Center of Strategic and International studies stated,

"The administration went to Rambouillet basically to arrange a trap for Milosevic. It was a no-win

situation for him and frankly, Albright was trying to find a pretext for bombing. They told the Kosovar Albanians that if they signed and Milosevic didn't, they'd bomb Serbia. Rambouillet was not a negotiation, it was a setup, a lynch party."[\[348\]](#)

A U.S. diplomat frankly admitted after the bombs began dropping that NATO deliberately "raised the bar" high enough at Rambouillet so Milosevic would not sign, because Serbia "needed to be bombed."[\[349\]](#) Those with the best weapons need not truly negotiate: simply deliver your ultimatum, then attack.

A senior official of the French foreign ministry told Eric Rouleau, the former French ambassador to Turkey, that the Rambouillet document was unacceptable. Even Henry Kissinger stated that "Rambouillet...was...an excuse to start bombing."[\[350\]](#)

Although the U.S. media endlessly played up the "genocide" that precipitated the bombing of Yugoslavia, there is no credible evidence of such a "genocide." Project Censored's number-twelve story of 1999 was the lack of credible evidence of genocide before, during or after the bombing. While U.S. officials and press were throwing around numbers such as 100,000 (U.S. Secretary of Defense William Cohen) and 500,000 (U.S. State Department) dead or missing, in the aftermath of the U.S. bombing, with forensic teams (such as an eager FBI team, among others) looking for all those mass graves, the final tally was about two thousand people killed, with most being buried individually.[\[351\]](#) The NATO bombing killed about two thousand civilians. Ironically, the U.S.-led bombing may have killed more people than the "genocidal" Serbs did. Just who was being "saved?"

In 1984, Ronald Reagan authored [U.S. National Security Decision Directive 133](#), which was eventually declassified and released. It stated, among other sobering revelations, that the United States would strive to "promote a trend toward an effective, market-oriented Yugoslav economic structure." That may sound innocent enough, but coupled with the now admitted (even bragged about by Reagan and others) secret plan to destabilize and overthrow the Soviet Empire with a "quiet revolution," bringing Eastern Europe back to the "world market," it boded ill for Yugoslavia's future. The U.S. had targeted the Yugoslavian economic system for destruction, to replace it with capitalism.[\[352\]](#)

The 1970s and 1980s saw a series of economic events that caught many nations in its maw. In the late 1960s, communist nations began borrowing from Western banks to finance their industrial expansion. By itself, it was no great error, but then came the oil price shocks of the 1970s, where oil prices were raised by OPEC in 1973, and escalated again in 1979, which set off a huge spiral of inflation, which, among other economic disasters, [led to the U.S. Savings and Loan Scandal](#). The West went into a recession, imports from the communist and developing nations were squeezed off with protectionism, oil prices kept skyrocketing and nations such as Yugoslavia found themselves deeper in debt all the time. Ironically, the new "petrodollar" deposits of the OPEC nations largely funded the bank loans. Many conspiracy theories surround that situation, and more than a few of them might be true.

The debt burden became crushing for many nations. Then the [International Monetary Fund](#) (IMF) rode to the “rescue.” The IMF is infamous for imposing “Structural Adjustment Programs” (SAPs). The IMF has imposed SAPs on dozens of nations, so they can repay their loans.

In the Third World nations, the deal was much worse than the communist nations received. In communist nations, the loans generally went to productive activity that benefited the domestic population. In the Third World nations, the loans all too often went to luxury items for the elite, public works projects that did not benefit the average citizen (but benefited Western capitalists), or the money went straight into the dictator’s Swiss bank account. When it came time to repay the loans, the dictators did not empty their Swiss bank accounts, and the elite did not sell their Mercedes luxury sedans bought with the loans.

The SAPs are notorious for how they restructured the national economies of the subject nations. Instead of growing food for domestic consumption, they had to grow food for export to the United States, to earn “foreign exchange.” SAPs played a major role in that situation. Under the SAPs, social spending is slashed for education, medical care, housing, affordable food, and so on. For instance, the African nations of Burkina Faso, Mozambique, Niger and Tanzania spend more than twice as much money servicing their foreign debt as they spend for primary medical care, nations where children are starving, illiterate, etc. To the people in those devastated nations, what is happening is merely [colonialism with new rhetoric](#). They still do not eat the food they grow. Their nation’s resources, whether they are crops, mining products, timber or their labor, still end up going to the imperial powers, while the common people starve and live in destitution. About the only difference is that they get to fly their own flag. Flags are not edible, unfortunately.

The [IMF and World Bank](#) are officially United Nations institutions, but as with the United Nations itself, the rich and powerful dominate them. Western banks, particularly American, control the IMF and World Bank. One can find many people in the IMF, World Bank and other neocolonial institutions such as the CIA, [Peace Corps](#), USAID, etc., who think they are truly helping those who are subject to their policies. A [Ralph McGehee](#) waking up to what really happens is rare in such institutions, and of course, there are those [who know exactly what their institutions really do](#), but it is unacceptable to publicly admit the real game, but [John Perkins broke ranks and did in 2004](#).

Pre-breakup Yugoslavia surely had plenty of ethnic tension, but if people are not on the brink of survival, different ethnic, religious, racial and cultural groups can generally live together in peace and even harmony. It is when they are pitted against one another, each trying to survive, that it gets ugly. World War II was born of the Great Depression, where anti-Semitism not only reached genocidal proportions in Germany, but also reached its [all-time high in the rest of Europe and America](#), to even *increase* in America during the Jewish Holocaust. When times are difficult in America, we hear strident anti-immigration rhetoric. Economic strain is a common factor in American divorce. The [Berga concentration camp](#) showed how quickly American soldiers could come to look and act like concentration camp inmates.

In much milder circumstances, [during my days with Dennis](#) I saw more than my fair share of people acting dishonorably and criminally when they felt their jobs were in jeopardy. With the pressure on,

otherwise valuable employees stole anything that was not nailed down, broke into our facilities to steal, and even held items for ransom. Losing a job one had held for a few months was tame compared to what the Yugoslavian people endured under the IMF's ministrations, as the United States covertly attempted to bring Yugoslavia into the "world market." For a further illustration of converting the communists to capitalism, see the "success" story of the Western capitalists and Russia since 1990, where the life expectancy of a Russian man declined by ten years, an awesome statistic only seen before during war, plague or famine.

[World Bank and International Monetary Fund](#) (IMF) activities devastated Yugoslavia's economy, which helped lead to its breakup. Inflation skyrocketed, industrial production declined, unemployment climbed and many companies went bankrupt. Project Censored's number-twenty story for 1999 was how the media covered up that situation. That kind of U.S.-imposed economic stress is a standard neocolonial tale. What America did to [Chile](#), with Nixon ordering his henchmen to make the Chilean economy "scream," as a prelude to overthrowing their government, is another example. The most knowledgeable observers in Yugoslavia all admitted that economics was the biggest problem that Yugoslavia faced before it disintegrated.[\[353\]](#)

Rounding out Project Censored's Balkan-related stories for 1999, story twenty-two was about how the U.S. and Germany armed and trained the Kosovo Liberation Army (KLA), who were portrayed as the freedom fighters of Kosovo. Very interestingly, in 1998 U.S. Special Envoy to Yugoslavia Robert Gelbard said that without a doubt the KLA was a "terrorist group."[\[354\]](#) He was not the only American official to state that opinion. When the KLA became useful for U.S. interests, they received a quick image change and became "freedom fighters." Very ironically, the very "terrorists" in Afghanistan that we bombed in 1998 and 2001 were the "freedom fighters" that we armed and incited to take on the Soviet military. Jimmy Carter's national security adviser [Zbigniew Brzezinski](#) admitted in a 1998 interview with a French magazine that the Afghanistan "freedom fighters" were actually armed and incited by the U.S. *before* the Soviet Union intervened in Afghanistan. Brzezinski called it the Soviet Union's "Vietnam," and gleefully said that it led to the Soviet Union's breakup.[\[355\]](#) Freedom fighters one day, terrorists the next, or vice versa; it can be confusing to be a U.S. propagandist.

As with mercenary groups everywhere, the worst enemies the KLA had were often its own members. In May 2000, more than twenty KLA leaders were assassinated by other KLA members, with most murders probably being initiated by KLA chief Hashim Thaci, buddy of NATO general Wesley Clark.[\[356\]](#) It was like an internecine Mafia gang war. The KLA is partly composed of a highly unsavory mix of soldiers of fortune and other criminals; some prominent members were not even Albanian. Some of the KLA's favorite murder targets were Kosovar Albanians who were trying to peacefully negotiate with Serbia.[\[357\]](#) Those "freedom fighters" in Kosovo appear to be more like mercenaries that the U.S. and its allies trained and armed. As with the Contras, the mountain fighters of Cambodia and others, the KLA appears to be another pawn of U.S. ambition. It is another standard CIA ploy. The American public was not treated to that possibility by the mainstream media.

The evidence is overwhelming that the U.S. media misrepresented and demonized Milosevic and the Serbs before and during the NATO bombing, which is a typical U.S. propaganda tactic.[\[358\]](#) During

the 1999 bombing, I was buying groceries one day, and there was *Newsweek* magazine at the checkout stand. On its cover was a picture of Milosevic, with the headline announcing, "The Face of Evil." That was a headline worthy of the tabloids.

The disintegration of Yugoslavia was a bloody affair, with all sides (Serbs, Croats, Muslims, Albanians, etc.) committing heinous atrocities. To single out the Serbs as the bad guys was a convenience for U.S. propagandists. While Milosevic was no angel, the Croatian president, Franjo Tudjman, was openly fascist. He wrote a 1989 book that justified Hitler's Holocaust of the Jews (in his words, Europe needed to be "rid of the Jews"), and he was friendly with some of the worst Nazi-aligned Croatian war criminals of World War II. He once told a crowd that he thanked god that his wife was not a Serb or a Jew. He originally was a seemingly responsible historical revisionist regarding how many people died at the hands of the Nazi-aligned Croatian government during World War II, but his scholarship eventually degenerated into outright [Holocaust denial](#) and Holocaust apologetics. He eventually took the position that less than a million Jews died during the Final Solution. The Muslims suffered greatly during Yugoslavia's breakup, perhaps more than any other single group, but they were also no angels, apparently bombing their own people and trying to blame it on the Serbs, as even admitted by UN investigators.[\[359\]](#) When Serbs overran Muslim positions during fighting, they found that Muslim soldiers were collecting the heads of fallen Serbian soldiers.[\[360\]](#) Those headhunting soldiers were often the same ones that the [U.S. trained in Afghanistan](#) to create the ["trap" for the Soviet Union](#).

The murderous hypocrisy of the United States regarding Yugoslavia was breathtaking. Not only was everything about the NATO intervention illegal (NATO was the fig leaf the U.S. used when it was obvious that the UN would never approve of the U.S. bombing Yugoslavia), the rationale fed the American people does not survive the barest scrutiny. The issue was supposedly Kosovo gaining its freedom. The bloodiest war in U.S. history was fought over the [right of states to secede from the Union](#). The U.S. recently supported the extremely bloody Russian campaign to keep Chechnya from seceding. Puerto Rico has a much more legitimate reason to secede from the U.S. than Kosovo had for seceding from Serbia, yet the CIA and other organizations devoted a great deal of effort toward derailing Puerto Rican movements for freedom from the United States, and remember the [Turkish Kurds](#).

In the final analysis, the conclusion is clear: the United States systematically destroyed Yugoslavia, although America does not deserve all the credit. Germany and Great Britain were also instrumental. Undoubtedly, the people of Yugoslavia all played their part, being divided and conquered. I respect the perspective of American "radicals" more than any other commentators I have read. Few other commentators even *discuss* the U.S. motivation. Michael Parenti's *To Kill a Nation* is the best work I have seen regarding the U.S. role in the breakup of Yugoslavia. Brief, tightly argued, impeccably documented, Parenti's book is devastating.

In reviewing the serious scholarship regarding Yugoslavia, I either found them agreeing with Parenti's thesis (but not devoting much detail to the issue), or ignoring the issue altogether, as Allcock did in his *Explaining Yugoslavia*. Christopher Bennett's *Yugoslavia's Bloody Collapse* laid a great deal of Yugoslavia's woes at Milosevic's feet, yet admitted that the Western policy toward Yugoslavia "has been determined in advance, and is based on the domestic political considerations

of the great powers, not an analysis of Yugoslav affairs.”[\[361\]](#) Misha Glenny, who does not see things the way Parenti does, and operates from various Western establishment assumptions (which nearly all mainstream journalists do), and whose work is light on dealing with the economic aspects of what has happened to Yugoslavia, fully admitted that the region’s economic problems are directly related to the Great Powers’ past militarily interventions. Glenny wrote that the military interventions led to the ethnic conflicts, and that NATO’s military adventure will probably be no different in effect, if not intent, than other Great Power interventions.[\[362\]](#) Parenti’s focus is not on who are the bad guys in the Balkans, but what the United States’ role was, and its motivation for intervening. Every attack I have seen on [Parenti’s work](#), most notably from the right wing, fails to comprehend that distinction. That same “misunderstanding” has been [directed toward Noam Chomsky’s work countless times](#). How much do they truly misunderstand that distinction, and how much of their criticism is a knowing misrepresentation of Parenti’s work, which is also the [straw man](#) logical fallacy? History is on Parenti’s side.

Studying the history of the Catholic Church, [European colonialism](#) for the past several centuries, the American medical establishment, the [energy industry](#), and so on, self-interest is *always* the primary motivation, and the means used are remarkably similar. Whether it is the Catholic Church and its Inquisitions, the Albigensian Crusade and other Holy Wars, or the [American medical inquisitions](#), imprisonments and outright murders of doctors who present alternatives to the cut/burn/poison cancer treatment paradigm, or the energy industry [wiping out all the alternative energy sources](#) that they cannot monopolize, the pattern is quite clear. It is all about wealth and power, and the powerful always conjure noble-sounding rhetoric about how selfless their oppressive actions are. People who believe the rhetoric are either ignorant, deeply deluded, or they get something out of the deal, usually economically, which often abets their ignorance and delusions.

The Catholic Church was the self-proclaimed custodian of Jesus’ message, which was obviously all about love. As it sought wealth and power, the Catholic Church [became the antithesis of Jesus’ message](#). The American [medical establishment](#) is the self-proclaimed custodian of America’s health. As it has sought wealth and power, it now delivers the exact opposite of health, its treatments harming and killing its patients instead of healing them. The United States is the world’s self-proclaimed leader, with its rhetoric stating that it exports freedom and democracy to the world. As it has sought wealth and power, it has come to export the exact opposite. Oppression and poverty are its two principal exports.

Authors who write about how “confused” American foreign policy can be have usually fallen for the false assumption that America’s leaders are trying to help the people beyond its shores (the self-serving myth of our “blundering efforts at doing good”), or those writers may be propagandists themselves. If one understands the true goals of American foreign policy, the picture no longer appears confusing. In brief, the goals are:

- Dominating the entire world political-economic system with what is variously called global capitalism, corporate capitalism, etc., which is largely dominated by American-based

transnational corporations;

- Preventing any alternatives to that system to exist or flourish, and destroying any that exist;
- Preventing the appearance of any regional powers or nations that can threaten the supremacy of capitalism or the United States, and destroying any that exist;
- Lining the pockets of the [defense contractors](#) and others who essentially own America's politicians.[\[363\]](#)

Our politicians even tacitly admit such goals. In their second presidential debate, George Bush the Second and Al Gore fielded the question of American foreign policy. They laid out their mentality clearly, and I never heard a word of dissent in the media toward their stance. Both made it clear that in American foreign policy, the most important question is always, "What is in the best interests of America?" That is always the salient question. The interests of those who America "intervenes with" or bombs are not in the equation; the clearly stated attitude is "What's in it for us?" It is the epitome of the [self-serving mentality](#), and America apparently agreed with them, as I did not hear a word of dissent. What Gore and Bush did not say is that "America" really means their constituency, and it is not the American people, but those they are beholden to, such as all those corporations that bankrolled their campaigns. What a breath of fresh air it would have been for one of them to say, "Justice for us and those we deal with is my goal." [Ralph Nader](#), the Green Party candidate for president, would have talked about justice, but he was forcibly removed from even being on the premises for the debates, even as a spectator, although he was invited by the media to attend.

With the true goals being completely self-serving, the "underdeveloped" nations and those nations that escaped capitalism's clutches during the Cold War have received a predictable and systematic treatment by the IMF, World Bank, CIA, U.S. Marines and so forth. For the [Third World](#) nations, keeping them where they are, enslaved to the industrialized nations, is the program. For those nations that strayed from the fold during the Cold War, they are being turned into exploitable domains, a process that Michael Parenti calls "Third Worldization."[\[364\]](#)

The contours of Third Worldization are:

- Preventing any nation from charting an independent course of self-development;
- Making their natural resources open for capitalistic exploitation;
- In the case of Eastern Europe, the goal is to also have a pool of literate and skilled workers (who also happen to be white) who will toil for minimal wages for Western corporations, in what has been called "the race for the bottom," which is a global phenomenon;
- Wipe out any independent industries that can compete with the West's, which is a standard colonial strategy, such as the [British in India](#) or the [Spanish in Mexico](#).

Third Worldization is a process of turning the entire planet into a readily exploitable pool of cheap labor, cheap resources, cheap imports and obscene profits for the capital class. If somebody is one of that system's few winners, life is relatively good. So far, the winners in this system comprise less than 10 percent of the industrialized world's population (a few percent of the world population, at best), with the biggest winners literally being less than one thousand human beings, who possess more wealth than the poorest half of humanity, for a wealth ratio of millions-to-one. People who live in the imperial heartland, in a situation similar to what ancient Rome's citizens enjoyed, also derive benefits in the form of cheap commodities, brought in from the imperial hinterlands. That bribe keeps them from challenging the system too strongly. Therefore, [Americans enjoy](#) cheap oil, bananas, coffee, tin, shoes, clothes, toys, wood, food and the like. This dynamic is quickly leading to the uninhabitability of planet earth, as such rapacity devastates the environment as well as human beings. Naturally, the reaction of the capitalist class (and its servile academics) is to lie about the devastation or cover it up, push it onto the subject peoples and lands as much as possible, and maintain a "strong" military to keep the subject peoples in submission, and call it "defense," in the best tradition of Orwell.

For instance, in the United States the environmental movement slowed down the chain saws and oil drilling. The reaction by U.S. industry has been to import more oil and chop down the forests in [Chile](#) and New Zealand, as they literally ship their logs to mills in Oregon for processing, and oil imports doubled since 1973, to reach more than half of American consumption.

In 1991, chief economist for the World Bank, Lawrence Summers, wrote an internal memo that encouraged the bank to promote the migration of the "dirty industries" to the less developed nations. Summers' rationale was that since the workers in those nations earn far less than workers in the developed nations, the health problems and deaths they would endure from those "dirty industries" would be less costly than the misery and death that would be inflicted on the industrialized world's workers. Summers wrote, "the economic logic behind dumping a load of toxic waste in the lowest-wage country is impeccable and we should face up to that."[\[365\]](#) The memo was eventually leaked, to widespread public condemnation. What kind of public disgrace and career scuttling did Summers endure? In 1999, Bill Clinton promoted him to be the U.S. Secretary of the Treasury.

[Edward Herman](#), whose work stacks up against anyone's regarding U.S. foreign policy and its context in world events, deeply studied the breakup of Yugoslavia, the [kangaroo court that Milosevic found himself in](#) during the summer of 2001 (he and Noriega are the only two heads of state behind bars), and other aspects of recent U.S. interventions. Herman noted that the serious scholarship regarding Yugoslavia's breakup also weighs important factors that the American propaganda machine has not touched, namely:

1. A strong central government was needed to hold the nation together in the face of

Yugoslavia's deep regional and ethnic fragmentation.

2. The roots of Yugoslavia's economic crisis of the 1990s were easily traceable the 1982 deflationary economic policies that the World Bank and [International Monetary Fund](#) imposed.
3. The collapse of the Soviet Union removed the motivation of the West to keep supporting the central Yugoslavian state.
4. Germany and Austria encouraged Slovenia to secede from Yugoslavia, without any democratic vote or provision for the welfare of Slovenia's large Serbian minority.
5. The West and Western Badinter Commission would not allow threatened ethnic minorities to withdraw from the new secession states.
6. The U.S. and the West encouraged Bosnia-Herzegovina's Muslim population to try establishing a state under its control, while the local Serbian and Croatian residents were opposed to it and fearful.
7. The U.S. and NATO supported Croatia and its massive ethnic cleansing of Serbs in Krajina.
8. Milosevic supported many diplomatic initiatives that were foiled, largely because of U.S. meddling (such as encouraging Muslim inflexibility), such as the Owen-Vance and Owen-Stoltenberg plans.[\[366\]](#)

I recently read that the term most applicable to the United States' campaign of murder and terror waged across the planet for the past fifty years is "politicide," which means killing people because they have a different political persuasion. It richly applies to the Korean and Vietnam wars, America's devastation of [Central America](#), America's support for [Suharto](#) and other butchers, and so on. I would like to introduce a new term. What the United States has done to Yugoslavia (and also the Cold War efforts against many nations) can be called "econocide," which means destroying any economic system that is not global, corporate capitalism. We are even doing it to our own economy, with the drive to privatize everything from prisons to Social Security. The evidence for econocide regarding Yugoslavia is impressive. The Confederation of Trade Unions of Serbia published a list of 164 factories destroyed by the NATO bombings. Every single one was state-owned.[\[367\]](#) *Not one* foreign-owned facility was targeted for bombing. Buildings that displayed such corporate logos as [McDonald's](#) and Coca-Cola received zero damage. When Michael Parenti visited Yugoslavia after the bombings, he was truly impressed when he saw that the NATO bombings badly damaged the state-run Hotel Yugoslavia, making it uninhabitable, while the Hyatt Hotel, with a bomb-inviting all-glass facade, did not receive a scratch. It does not get much clearer than that, regarding what the real goals of the NATO bombing were. Destroy all the state-owned institutions, and leave the corporate-owned ones alone. Then the neoliberals can crow about how socialism "does not work."

Montenegro is notable for being the only region that really tried holding Yugoslavia together with Serbia. Already, the capitalists are digesting Montenegro, with institutions such as USAID at the effort's forefront. Montenegro is undergoing intensive [Third Worldization](#) as I write this, virtually handing over its sovereignty to American-based transnational corporations.[\[368\]](#) Montenegro is

currently about the poorest place in Europe, and is about to get poorer, except, of course, for the plutocratic elite.

Panamanian scholar [José de Jesús Martínez](#) expressed his amazement that Americans could be so "stupid" as to believe the media propaganda about why America invaded Panama. I was rendered nearly speechless by the mindlessness of some I knew regarding events in Yugoslavia. A twenty-five year friendship ended when my patience ran out with a friend who called me one morning to cheer the violence, thinking that the United States was "saving" Kosovo with its bombs. When he called me, he voiced the rationale made by butchers throughout history: those people they are about to bludgeon "only understand violence."[\[369\]](#) He was the same person who called me in a rage about the [Iraqi incubator story](#). His life has been a continual quest to find examples of justified violence. He thought he finally found it in our bombing of Yugoslavia. Although he realized that the media lied to him many times in the past on matters of war, he thought that Yugoslavia was an exception. He ended the friendship, stating that I did not respect his opinion on the "helpful" violence that we were inflicting on Yugoslavia.

World opinion was united that the U.S. was committing a great crime against the people of Yugoslavia with its attack. It violated Yugoslavia's sovereignty as well as international law. That globally held understanding was not to be found in America's mainstream media.

Nearly every day during the Yugoslavian bombings, NATO admitted that it bombed refugees fleeing the area, towns of the civilians they were "saving," or other innocents. In a powerfully reported story on October 17, 1999, the *London Observer*, in conjunction with the Danish *Politiken*, cited several highly placed NATO sources who stated that the "accidental" American bombing of the Chinese embassy during the Yugoslavia bombing was intentional. The Chinese apparently used their embassy as a radio relay station for the Serbs, after America had destroyed the Serbian communication system. The bomb the U.S. used on the embassy was satellite-guided and could hit you in the chair you are sitting in as you read this. It apparently was not a case of mistaken identity. [Fairness and Accuracy in Reporting](#) took the U.S. media to task for not reporting that story to the American people, and the *New York Times* and *USA Today* have given the media's standard lame and hypocritical responses. When the story covers U.S. malfeasance, the U.S. newspapers will not give the story one line of ink if they cannot prove it in a court of law, beyond any shred of doubt (and even then, they often will not). If the story is about the crimes of Saddam Hussein or Milosevic, however, [any rumor will do](#), or even fabricated "news."

As in Iraq, the United States used radioactive weapons on Yugoslavia. Depleted Uranium (DU) is nuclear waste. When U-235 is refined from uranium[\[370\]](#), [U-238 is left over](#). It is not radioactive enough to make good reactor fuel or nuclear explosives, but works great as a penetrating missile, as DU is 1.6 times as dense as lead. DU is effective at penetrating tanks and other targets, but it is also radioactive for billions of years. DU is one suspected culprit in the Gulf War Syndrome and escalating Iraqi birth defects, as many thousands of people have been exposed to the radioactive debris of those weapons. In one sense, they get creativity points. Why spend billions on [burying nuclear waste](#) when America can make bombs from it and drop it on nations it destroys? Recently, America's European allies expressed surprise and alarm that their soldiers who participated in the

NATO bombings were exposed to DU debris. Why were they surprised?

With acts such as bombing Libya and Sudan, invading Grenada and Panama, and especially what America has recently done to Iraq and Yugoslavia, a significant question has been raised. By the definition of the word, what America has done to those nations amounts to torture. To inflict violence on those nations, while giving them no recourse except to do as they are told, amounts to what torturers do.

Particularly disturbing has been watching the world's most prominent human rights organizations sell themselves out to money and power. Human Rights Watch long ago largely adopted the U.S. interventionist paradigm (i.e., if the U.S. intervenes internationally, it must be for a good cause). That left Amnesty International as the premier mainstream human rights organization. I contributed to them for years. The tribunal at The Hague was set up for prosecuting war crimes. The United States funds it and nearly controls it completely. It is a kangaroo court, particularly used for political ends as the U.S. attacked Yugoslavia. Most aspects of impartial courts have been dispensed with at that tribunal, [with breathtaking hypocrisy.\[371\]](#) When the tribunal indicted Milosevic when the U.S. began bombing Yugoslavia (a nearly unprecedented judicial outrage), it was evident how the court would operate, and the succeeding years confirmed my suspicions. It was with a heavy heart that I began reading Amnesty International's mailings to me, which campaigned to have Milosevic arrested and tried at that tribunal. Even today, as the kangaroo court aspect of the court is clear to all impartial observers, Amnesty International keeps sending me funds pleas that make clear its unwavering support for that court. Violating Milosevic's human rights, to pursue human rights, is something right out of Machiavelli, and is always doomed to failure, if justice is its goal. With what has happened at that tribunal, virtually *anybody* could be tried for "war crimes." If Milosevic is actually guilty of war crimes, and I would not be surprised, then Clinton and Blair deserve to be sitting alongside Milosevic behind bars, a hundred times over. The tribunal is a winners' court, however, and winners never face war crimes trials. Amnesty International's stance was so shocking that I snooped around in the human rights community, asking those whose opinion I respected, and my sentiments were confirmed. I was told that Amnesty International began adopting the U.S. interventionist paradigm during the Gulf War. While they still do some good work, I did not renew my membership.

America's "humanitarian intervention" probably ended any chance that the Balkans will be at peace during my lifetime. Economically, they have been set back generations, with damage to their infrastructure estimated at many billions of dollars, with Bill Clinton telling the world that the United States would assume little part in rebuilding the nation that it destroyed. With unexploded cluster bombs everywhere, with DU dust everywhere, with toxic spills due to factories being bombed, the bombing of Yugoslavia was a great environmental disaster. The psychological devastation of being bombed and becoming refugees is something that no economist can put a price tag on. [John Pilger](#) wrote regarding the Yugoslavian situation, the actions of our leaders and how the media presented it, "George Orwell could not better it."[\[372\]](#)

Helping East Timor

The 1999 events in East Timor put America's "humanitarian" intervention in Yugoslavia in an even clearer light. The United States decisively supported the [Indonesian invasion of East Timor](#) and resultant genocide in the 1970s, while most Americans had never heard of the place. During 1999, Indonesia and East Timor were in tumult. First, the looting of Indonesia by Suharto and his cronies, with the virtual enslavement of Indonesia by Western corporations such as oil companies, shoe manufacturers and the like, led to a "debt crisis" whereby the IMF and the United States had to "ride to the rescue," something that hurt the Indonesian people even worse. The austerity programs imposed by the IMF led to the revolt of the Indonesian people, which toppled the world's greatest butcher of the late twentieth century.

Reading and watching the American media's accounts of Suharto's fall was illuminating. The media virtually never mentioned [Suharto's bloody record](#), a record built with U.S. assistance in money, arms, and CIA help. Suharto was continually called the "president" in media accounts. America's media handled him gently. It was like covering Hitler's fall, calling him "Chancellor Hitler," and not mentioning [what he did to the Jews](#) or how he came to power.

In 1999, East Timor held an election regarding its independence from Indonesia. The citizens overwhelmingly voted for independence, which led to an immediate escalation of military violence in East Timor, often engaged under the facade of vigilantes. It was little different than the paramilitary [El Salvadoran](#) death squads that the United States turned a blind eye to during the 1980s. This time, because of the tireless activism of Noam Chomsky and other during the previous twenty years, the slaughter in East Timor did not pass in silence as it did before. The "vigilantes" killed about ten thousand East Timorese people. They terrorized and slaughtered them for several months, while the U.S. quietly stood by and watched. Those events in East Timor made what Milosevic did to the Albanians in Kosovo before the U.S.-led bombings look like a picnic.

While the U.S. government could hardly wait to bomb Yugoslavia, they stood by as East Timor was bludgeoned once more, publicly wringing their hands, but privately supporting it.[\[373\]](#) The surreal aspect of the East Timor situation was that all the British needed to do was stop selling arms to the Indonesian military, or even threaten to stop selling them arms, and they would likely have backed down. At the time, the United States had more than twenty billion dollars in undelivered aid that they promised to Indonesia. Bill Clinton needed only to whisper that what Indonesia was doing to East Timor might jeopardize those U.S. funds, and they would have quickly stopped the slaughter. The analyses of [Chomsky](#), [Herman](#) and other radicals were vindicated, and I have never seen an honest and competent attempt to refute their work.[\[374\]](#)

In watching the American media's treatment of the East Timor situation, I did not see one news account disclose to the public the U.S.'s emphatic support of the East Timorese genocide during the 1970s. That history was invisible in the media accounts. In the Seattle media, for the first time I saw a hint about the conflict in America over U.S. ties to the Indonesian military.[\[375\]](#) The article was a whitewash of U.S. involvement. The article quoted one Senate dissident, Senator Tom Harkin of Iowa. Regarding U.S. support for the Indonesian special forces, who were training and arming those "vigilantes," Harkin was quoted as saying, "I can't see any benefit to it...what good did it do us?" As with nearly every foreign policy decision the United States has ever made, the question is framed as, "What's in it for us?" Harkin, one of the few American politicians with some backbone, was candid

enough to admit it. The question is never really framed as to how it is helping the people in those nations that we "helped," not behind closed doors. That is not the game and never has been. When the U.S. reinstalled Aristide in Haiti, they gutted his initial reforms, keeping the Haitian people in the yoke.[\[376\]](#)

With Suharto out of power, Bill Clinton became the world's leading war criminal. More blood was on his hands than anyone else's, at least for those who were still adding to their tally, and he was racking up the deaths at a much faster rate than Suharto did.[\[377\]](#) Clinton bombed Baghdad in 1993 as bizarre retribution for an alleged plot to kill George Bush when he was president. With that debut in international violence, Clinton was an able successor to George Bush the First's criminal ways.

America bombs other nations at will because it is the world's most powerful nation, and anybody who thinks there is another reason will have to make some compelling and well-founded arguments. The embargo of Cuba (forty years old), the continuing genocidal sanctions against Iraq, the recent bludgeoning of Yugoslavia, Clinton's complacent acquiescence to mass killing in East Timor and Rwanda, and so on, makes him the bloodiest tyrant since Stalin, Hitler and the Chinese purges.[\[378\]](#) Clinton did it because it is his job. Bush and Reagan would probably have been worse. Killing millions of innocent people comes with the job of being the American president.

Helping Colombia

As the title of William Blum's latest book evinces[\[379\]](#), the U.S. has been playing the Godzilla of global politics ever since the Soviet Union collapsed. Former CIA agent [Ralph McGehee](#) was busy during the spring of 2000, posting several articles about events in Colombia on his CIABASE web site, and disseminating them over the Internet. He has been called the CIA's number one critic by an intelligence publication. Soon after his Colombia warnings, the CIA and friends stepped up their harassment of him, leading to bodily injury (by spiking his food) and his CIABASE went off-line, and will never go back into business.

What Ralph saw in Colombia was eerily similar to the series of events that led to the Vietnam experience. Ralph was far from alone.[\[380\]](#) It was the most excited that I had seen Ralph write. The CIA simply makes up their intelligence estimates as they go, such as regarding the acreage under coca cultivation in Colombia, or how much of America's illegal drugs begin their journey in Colombia. Few CIA intelligence estimates can be trusted, as they are often fabricated to conform to policy already decided upon. The CIA acts as a propaganda organ, and lying to the American public is one of its chief functions, as Ralph has made clear in his work. The American media, however, has been using the CIA as a prime source of information regarding the situation in Colombia, the *Washington Post* particularly.

Political Killings: A Regional Perspective

Nation	Years under military dictatorship	Political Killings
Uruguay	16	220
Argentina	8	9,000
Brazil	15	125
Bolivia	17	243
Chile	17	2,666
	Years under Colombian "Democracy"	
President Barco (1986-1990)	5	13,635
President Gaviria (1990-1994)	4	14,856
Total		28,332
Source: Data Bank in the Comision Inter-Congregacional de Justicia y Paz [381]		

The above table compares well with other sources of information, and most notably, Amnesty International's tally.[\[382\]](#) For instance, while Amnesty International's Colombian political murder tally is close to the above table's,[\[383\]](#) the Comision Inter-Congregacional de Justicia y Paz documents more than 67,000 violent politically related deaths from 1988 to 1995. Of that count, "only" 6177 were explicitly political, another 10,566 were presumed to be political, with other "disappearances," "social cleansing" and "obscure assassinations" that likely had a political motive, but cannot be proven.[\[384\]](#) What such a tally cannot put a number to are the millions affected by such a reign of terror, and what it does to a society's fabric. Colombia is by far South America's most violent nation, and has been the world's most violent nation in recent years.

The political killings in Colombia today roll along at about the same clip as in those years documented in the table above, with about 3000 people a year dying at the hand of the government-sponsored death squads. Most Americans associate Colombia with [drugs](#) today, and the lawless drug cartels and the coca production in Colombia is the rationale for the U.S.' proposed 1.6 billion dollar military aid package to the Colombian government. During 1989 and 1990, when the most spectacular drug-related violence was taking place, murders that were widely covered in the American media, a careful count of the violent deaths in Colombia yielded the fact that drug-related

murder accounted for 0.18% of the violent deaths, and less than 10% of the level of violence committed by the state against its citizens.[\[385\]](#)

The conflict and unrest in Colombia has been a constant feature of that nation for the past two centuries, and has been particularly bad recently. When the Soviet Union was still around, the attacks on the peasant "guerillas" were characterized as killing the pawns of international communism. After the Soviet menace faded away, the same groups of people were being killed to allegedly stem the drug trade. Now, they [are being called terrorists](#). It is impolite to discuss that the "guerillas" are fighting in order to end their exploitation at the hands of the plutocratic elite, which is the standard situation throughout Latin America. Standard also has been America's response: heavily arm and train the governments that keep those peasants oppressed. In Colombia, the practice initiated with the [Spanish conquest of the New World](#) is still in place, where 3% of the Colombian population owns 70% of the arable land, and 57% of the poorest farmers try subsisting on 3% of the arable land.

From 1984 to 1992, more than six thousand Colombian soldiers were trained in the United States, the School of the Americas being the chief place where they honed their "counterinsurgency" skills. As is typical with that kind of U.S. "training," the soldiers return to their home nations to begin torturing their victims with chainsaws and other techniques that make the death camp Nazis appear as amateurs.[\[386\]](#) Javier Geraldo, one of the many courageous priests in Latin America who have risked ([and often lost](#)) their lives in their efforts for justice, wrote a booklet that became *Colombia, The Genocidal Democracy*. It makes for harrowing reading as Geraldo describes the unspeakable acts of the military and paramilitary soldiers of Colombia's government. Hacking "rebels" into little pieces, one piece at a time, until they finally died, was one sport of the psychopaths that populate the Colombian military. Often the "rebels" are women, or children not yet old enough to walk. Geraldo takes it easy on his readers, refusing to describe the events engaged in by the chain saw torturers, witnessed by the man who carried off the decapitated fruits of their labors and dumped them into a nearby river.[\[387\]](#) After years of Geraldo's courageous documenting of the human rights situation in Colombia, the government-sponsored death squads drove him into exile with death threats.

Today's Colombian government resembles a democracy about as much as Hitler's Germany did. The government may gird itself with the trappings of democracy, but the trappings are about all it can lay claim to. The official political landscape of Colombia is divided into two spheres. The first is a state bureaucracy that is as corrupt as they come. The other is the military that keeps the populace in line. Kangaroo Court is a salient feature of state justice against its opponents, with secret judges, secret witnesses and secret evidence, paid witnesses and arbitrary arrest and imprisonment, among other practices that make the notion of "democracy" ludicrous on its face. The loser in such a system is the vast majority of the populace. In the standard Latin American model, there is a plutocratic elite at the top, largely doing the bidding of the United States. A vanishingly small middle class largely performs a service function to the elite, and the other eighty or ninety percent of the population does all the work and suffers greatly, although American consumers receive cheap coffee, bananas, cocaine, etc., and the elite, both American and Latin American, rake it in.

The Colombian body count presented above probably severely underestimates the carnage. The atmosphere of state-sponsored violence is so pervasive in Colombia that in some areas eighty to

ninety percent of the killings go unreported for fear of retribution by the state-employed killers.

One thing is certain: funding the Colombian government to fight drug trafficking is like asking the wolf to take good care of the sheep. The paramilitary death squads of Colombia have openly declared that their funding often comes from the drug trade.[\[388\]](#) The [drug war](#), like so many other "wars" declared by America, is a fraud. Just as Ronald Reagan called the death squad regime of El Salvador a "[fledgling democracy](#)" a generation ago, as billions of dollars in U.S. military aid flooded into that nation, the Clinton administration described the Colombian president Gaviria as "...forward looking in building democratic institutions..."[\[389\]](#)

Violence *always* begets more violence. The only path to a non-violent world is non-violence, and there will never be a war to end all wars. The [means become the ends](#), something that the vast majority of humanity has yet to realize. The gentle *will* inherit the earth. That realization is beyond intellectual, materialistic understanding, and incomprehensible to the victim mentality. Jesus knew what he was talking about, but "love the enemy" is as incomprehensible today as it was in his time.

As my fellow American unendingly cheer our violence, I have been beset by a painful question: do Americans have a collective conscience? Our collective conscience is directly related to our consciences as individuals. It is up to each of us how we will fare as a species.

During the past fifty years, no nation has inflicted more death, destruction and exploitation onto the peoples beyond its borders than United States has. Indeed, no other nation comes close. Contrary to [Ronald Reagan](#)'s cue-card rhetoric, if there was an evil empire during the last half of the twentieth century, it was the United States. Our fate rests in our hands. If we keep cheering each time our military bombs a defenseless nation, readily believing the lies told to rationalize it, our day of reckoning will be much darker than the World Trade Center attacks.

The Pied Pipers of today's march to doom are accomplished students of the [dark spiritual path](#), and have found that a humanity seeking comfort above all else is easy to manipulate, and the American citizenry is putty in their hands. We need to develop a collective conscience.

A World Trade Center Postscript

"What we say, goes." - **George Bush the First**, speaking of the [lesson that Iraq and the world should have learned from the Gulf War](#).

"We think the price is worth it." **Madeleine Albright**, [on 60 Minutes in 1996](#), when asked if killing a half million Iraqi children, as a consequence of America's economic war against Iraq, was a justifiable side effect.

"The only way to make sense of why this happened is that we are a country that stands up for

freedom, democracy and human rights." - **Madeleine Albright**, when asked to make sense of the World Trade Center attacks, *Oprah Magazine*, December 2001.

"Americans are asking, 'Why do they hate us?' They hate what they see right here in this chamber: a democratically elected government. Their leaders are self-appointed. They hate our freedoms: our freedom of religion, our freedom of speech, our freedom to vote and assemble and disagree with each other." – the [unelected](#), court appointed **George Bush the Second**, September 20, 2001, in a national address at a joint session of Congress.

"...the essential act of the Party is to use conscious deception while retaining firmness of purpose that goes with complete honesty. To tell deliberate lies while genuinely believing in them, to forget any fact which becomes inconvenient, and then, when it becomes necessary again, to draw it back from oblivion for just so long as it is needed, to deny the existence of objective reality all the while to take into account the reality which one denies – all this is indispensably necessary. Even in using the word *doublethink* it is necessary to exercise *doublethink*. – **George Orwell**, 1984.[\[390\]](#)

"Why of course the people don't want war. Why should some poor slob on a farm want to risk his life in a war when the best he can get out of it is to come back to his farm in one piece? Naturally the common people don't want war neither in Russia, nor in England, nor for that matter in Germany. That is understood. But, after all, it is the leaders of the country who determine the policy and it is always a simple matter to drag the people along, whether it is a democracy, or a fascist dictatorship, or a parliament, or a communist dictatorship...Voice or no voice, the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders. That is easy. All you have to do is tell them they are being attacked, and denounce the pacifists for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger. It works the same in any country." - **Hermann Goering**, at the Nuremberg Trials, as told to Gustave Gilbert, in his *Nuremberg Diary*.

"The flag is a symbol of the fact that man is still a herd animal." - **Albert Einstein**, in Fred Jerome's *The Einstein File: J. Edgar Hoover's Secret War*

The United States of America is a democratic republic in name only, where form prevails over substance, with the [U.S. Constitution](#) rendered little more than a faded relic, where elections have largely become meaningless rituals, with most Americans no longer even going through the motions. America has the lowest voter turnout in the "free" world. America's government is more properly called a plutocracy. Simply observing how [Ralph Nader was treated at the year 2000 presidential debates](#), as two scions of political dynasties squared off in their stage-managed "debates," is sufficient to remove any doubts.

America has *always* been a plutocracy, ever since the new [nation's richest man became president](#), followed by a [string of slave-owning, land-grabbing aristocrats](#) parading through the White House. The first Chief Justice of the U.S. Supreme Court (John Jay) baldly stated that those who own the country should run it. More importantly, America is an empire. Rome was also a republic originally,

at least officially. Rome degenerated into becoming an empire, in its quest for wealth and power. It is impolite to declare that America is an empire, because the favored fantasy is that America is different from other nations, possessed of unique virtue. Also, it is impolite to call American colonialism what it is; so it is [colonialism in everything but the name](#), with subject peoples [getting to fly meaningless flags](#), providing the illusion of independence. If the pattern of other empires holds, American global hegemony is probably nearing its end.

American election campaigns are nearly indistinguishable from marketing campaigns, complete with the equivalent of taste testing. Political ads appropriately appear alongside ads for hamburgers and automobiles, with hamburger ads being more appealing and informative. Ballots look like menus, and politicians nearly come shrink-wrapped anymore. The power sold to Americans is the power to *consume*, and consequently Americans are [history's fattest people](#), and are threatening to [consume the entire planet](#).

With the [assassination of JFK](#), who obviously was not killed by “lone nut” Lee Harvey Oswald, the American government has been on a steep slide into corruption that has gradually disillusioned most Americans, although the national security state keeps the worst corruption out of the public eye. The corruption was even more open during the 19th century, with Enlightenment ideals fading quickly as the American Empire began its ascent with its [huge land grabs](#). Just as the American government began sliding headlong into open corruption, as epitomized by [Andrew Jackson](#)’s “spoils system,” Americans began focusing on the [nation’s trappings](#), adopting a national anthem, beginning to revere the flag and other acts of nationalistic fervor. It was a textbook case of [cognitive dissonance](#).

Power corrupts, and as the United States became the world’s most powerful nation during the 20th century, with [World War II](#) being an unprecedented watershed event, its corruption grew along with its wealth and power. The interests who had JFK murdered are probably the same ones that have been covertly manipulating the United States government ever since, and [murder seemed to have been a standard political tactic](#) for a generation.

America’s dirtiest political family of the late 20th century, at least for those in national office, may be the Bush family. From their early days of [carrying the Eastern Oligarchy’s bags, through their ardent support for Nazi Germany](#), through their [Skull and Bones](#) affiliations, through their [CIA and spook ties](#), to the [coup d’état “election”](#) to vault the semi-literate George Bush the Second into the presidency, the record is long and sordid. The “covert action” suspicions are not easily dismissed regarding the Florida election, as the CIA is full of election-rigging specialists, something they have done around the world for fifty years. George Bush the First was heavily involved in the [Savings and Loan Scandal](#), which bilked the American taxpayer out of hundreds of billions of dollars. The [Enron scandal](#) is simply more of the same, with the [Bush family](#) being the common denominator. With George Bush the Second in the White House, the [Constitution is being torn into confetti](#) on several fronts, not the least of which are the antics of the neo-McCarthy-ish Attorney General, John Ashcroft. The new TIPS (Terrorism Information and Prevention System) program would have been right at home in Nazi Germany, and is even beginning to alarm America’s white middle class.[\[391\]](#)

Jefferson was America's first [grave-robbing president](#), but not its last. George Bush the First quite possibly [had his Skull and Bones boys acquire Torrijos' skull](#), and the onus may now be on George Bush the Second to collect some bones. The theft of [Noriega](#)'s remains would not take much daring, as he already sits in a U.S. prison. Obtaining Osama bin Laden's skull might be George Bush the Second's mission, or perhaps collecting Saddam Hussein's. As with [Noriega](#) and [Hussein](#), Osama bin Laden is largely a creation of United States foreign policy.

During the 1970s and 1980s, the United States poured several billion dollars worth of weapons, training and supplies, in the CIA's largest covert action so far, into Afghanistan, largely through Pakistan.[\[392\]](#) Wherever the CIA has focused its effort, whether it has been Southeast Asia, Central America or Afghanistan, the [drug trade](#) increased geometrically, as it is a financing mechanism for American covert action. The [CIA has always been run by corporate America](#), and it helped build an Islamic fundamentalist *jihad* against the "evil" communists. Arab rich boy Osama bin Laden was just the thing the U.S. was looking for: a ruling class Arab to become the *jihad*'s figurehead. As with nearly every other CIA covert action, the principle result was wrecking the nation it intervened in. Afghanistan, due to its geographic location, the Khyber Pass long being a gateway from Central Asia into the Indian subcontinent, has seen marauding armies pass through, and battles waged there, for millennia. Afghanistan became a European battleground during the [Great Game](#) days of the 19th century.

[Zbigniew Brzezinski](#) was the Henry Kissinger of Jimmy Carter's administration, engineering U.S. foreign policy during the late 1970s. According to Brzezinski, in an interview he had with a French magazine in 1998, he helped create the Soviet Union's invasion of Afghanistan. According to the official story until Brzezinski's interview, the United States pumped billions of dollars in arms and training into the Afghanistan rebels as a reaction to the Soviet Union's invasion. Brzezinski set the record straight. He was behind arming and inciting the Afghanistan rebels six months *before* the Soviet Union invaded. In light of the devastation of Afghanistan (half its population either dead, disabled or refugees) and Islamic fundamentalist Taliban in charge, Brzezinski was asked if he regretted his decision to bait the Soviet Union into invading Afghanistan. Brzezinski replied:

"Regret what? That secret operation was an excellent idea. It had the effect of drawing the Russians into the Afghan trap and you want me to regret it? The day the Soviets officially crossed the border, I wrote to President Carter: 'We now have the opportunity of giving to the USSR its Vietnam War.' Indeed, for almost 10 years, Moscow had to carry on a war unsupportable by the government, a conflict that brought about the demoralization and finally the breakup of the Soviet empire."[\[393\]](#)

As Brzezinski saw things, sacrificing Afghanistan in the U.S.'s global chess game with communism was an acceptable price to pay. Brzezinski asked what was worse, the menace of the Soviet Union or the Taliban being in charge of Afghanistan.

In interviews over the years, particularly those with [Robert Fisk](#), Osama bin Laden made clear the source of his ire toward the United States:

1. The U.S. establishing a military presence in Saudi Arabia during the [Gulf War](#), as Arabia contains Islam's holiest sites;
2. The U.S.-inflicted [genocide of the Iraqi people](#) since the Gulf War;
3. The U.S.' unfailing support for [Israel](#), as it has brutally dispossessed the Palestinian people.

Using Osama bin Laden and friends as Cold War pawns has come back to haunt the United States. The World Trade Center and Pentagon attacks of September 11, 2001 are seen around the world as the [global Godzilla](#) finally getting a bloody nose. I was [far from alone](#) in publicly [predicting something like it](#). The shock and horror of the attacks were only a few hours old when talk of revenge began appearing. Osama bin Laden and friends were named almost immediately, and George Bush the Second's finger pointed straight at Afghanistan. The day after the 9/11 attacks, Bush said,

"We will make no distinction between the terrorists who committed these acts and those who harbor them."

Bush called for Afghanistan to hand over Osama bin Laden. Early on, Bush's rhetoric and actions failed to mesh. The Taliban offered to serve up bin Laden to a neutral nation for trial, but [just as his father did](#), George Bush refused to engage in any negotiations, as the war drums pounded once again. If justice was Bush's goal, he picked a strange way to show it, pointedly ignoring any attempts the Taliban made to respond to his demands, or even try to use international justice systems (which the U.S. has consistently undermined) to respond to the immense crimes of September 11, 2001. [\[394\]](#) Bush took the [bully's route](#), as nearly all American presidents have done.

America's economic inducements to attack Afghanistan were underplayed to the point of being nearly invisible in America's media. The world's last great region of unexploited oil and gas reserves is [Central Asia](#). Trillions of dollars of oil and gas sit beneath that region, and American oil companies had been trying for years to exploit it, something it could not do while the Soviet Union still survived. As with the [Gulf War](#), the World Trade Center attacks made for a convenient excuse to move in a military presence, in [neocolonial](#) fashion.

The [swirl of conspiracy theories](#) that quickly grew up around the World Trade Center attacks has been understandable. I am skeptical of the several of the conspiracy theories.[\[395\]](#) However, as [Michael Ruppert](#) and others have compellingly documented, there was ample foreknowledge of the World Trade Center attacks, and a great deal of short-selling (betting the stock price will decline) of the stock of American Airlines and United Airlines immediately before the attacks. I do not trust the U. S. government to perform credible investigations of those allegations.

The connections of the Bush family and friends to the WTC attacks are unsettling. The [flurry of short-selling activity was traced to Deutschebank/Alex Brown](#), which has deep CIA connections. Just as [Noriega](#) was George Bush the First's employee, and the [invasion of Panama](#) may have been at least partly a double-cross of a fellow [drug dealer](#) and [money launderer](#), and Saddam Hussein may have been another business partner that [George Bush the First double-crossed](#), the connections between bin Laden's family and Bush's are twenty years old, publicly known through the relationship between bin Laden's family and the Carlyle Group, one of America's biggest defense contractors, of which George Bush the First is an important member. The Carlyle Group has had a long-standing relationship with bin Laden's oil-rich family. Not surprisingly, neither the mainstream media, nor anybody on Capitol Hill, is bringing up that startling issue, which at least points to a conflict of interest with George Bush the Second. It is as if Roosevelt and Hitler owned stock in armaments companies in 1939 (and even the *same ones*), and nobody cared to examine their potential conflict of interest. As I write this in mid-August 2002, there have still been no indictments of any [Enron](#) personnel, while their auditor, Arthur Andersen, is out of the auditing business. It is a case where the cop has been *executed*, while the crooks he failed to catch still run around free. Will the Enron Scandal be partially swept under the carpet, somehow minimized? As long as George Bush is president, Americans can probably count on it.

Just as plenty was covered up about the U.S. government's mass murder at [Waco](#), and the [Oklahoma City](#) bombing, to even casual observers a lot is not adding up about the WTC attacks and the subsequent "War on Terror." The [American childishness](#) that the corporate order has been carefully cultivating for more than a century came into full view. [Flags were draped everywhere](#) (and still are, a year later), while vengeance was on everybody's lips. Any attempts to try *understanding* the motivation behind those who attacked the WTC and Pentagon were equated with trying to *justify* them, in another vivid instance of the [false dichotomy logical fallacy](#). Anybody who attempted to comprehend why it happened (so such events could be prevented in the future) was called a traitor, largely because attempts to understand it would bring to light very good reasons why America is hated in the Islamic world, instead of Bush's "[they hate our goodness](#)" explanation.

In the days immediately after the WTC attacks, I received an avalanche of emails from friends, family and cyberpals that reproduced a fatuous speech that a Canadian politician gave a generation ago about what a great nation and friendly neighbor America is. No [Latin American](#) politician would have given such a speech, unless he was a U.S. puppet. The Americans [waving flags](#) often wore a [dazed](#) expression. The post WTC orgy of "patriotism" made the [jingoism of 1991](#) pale by comparison. Those activities were a painful display of people trying to overwhelm the [negative cognitions](#) associated with the WTC attacks with bogus positive ones. I was not untouched by the sickness, as

Americans began [attacking me through vicious emails and threats](#).

Responses by American media pundits were breathtaking in their bloodthirstiness. Ann Coulter wrote:

"The nation has been invaded by a fanatical, murderous cult. And we welcome them. We are so good and so pure we would never engage in discriminatory racial or "religious" profiling..."We should invade their countries, kill their leaders and convert them to Christianity. We weren't punctilious about locating and punishing only Hitler and his top officers. We carpet-bombed German cities; we killed civilians. That's war. And this is war."

That was a typical American media response. In less strident days, Thomas Friedman candidly admitted, while writing about the wonders of global capitalism:

"The hidden hand of the market will never work without a hidden fist. McDonald's cannot flourish without McDonnell Douglas, the designer of the F-15. And the hidden fist that keeps the world safe for Silicon Valley's technologies is called the US Army, Air Force, Navy and Marine Corps."[\[396\]](#)

Friedman is one of the *New York Times*' leading columnists, holding forth with great confidence about events in Israel and elsewhere, and has been a leading pundit on the "War on Terror."

Bill O'Reilly, a right wing commentator on the *Fox* TV station, stated:

"The US should bomb the Afghan infrastructure to rubble - the airport, the power plants, their water facilities, the roads. The Afghans are responsible for the Taliban. We should not target civilians, but if they don't rise up against this criminal government, they starve, period."

Michael Kelly of the *Washington Post*, echoing [Hermann Goering](#), wrote:

"American pacifists are on the side of future mass murders of Americans,"

Kelly called pacifists "objectively pro-terrorist," "evil" and "liars."[\[397\]](#) The pacifism = terrorism equation played loud and long in America immediately after the WTC attacks. It was becoming [like World War I all over again](#).

George Bush the Second led America's descent into mental illness. He parlayed his own [false dichotomy](#), calling the vengeance that America was about to wreak on whoever was behind the WTC attacks a case of "good against evil," saying that the attacks were because those crazed Arabs hated American *goodness*. Bush stood on the global stage and told the world that either they were "with us, or against us," while his Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld stated that the United States would eliminate the nationhood of countries that got in the way, and his hit list was a few dozen nations long.

Bush then cooked up some comic-book rhetoric, calling Iran, Iraq and North Korea the "axis of evil" not long after the United States was unable to find and kill bin Laden and friends. Those nations had nothing to do with the WTC attacks, and have no relationship with each other (except for Iran and Iraq hating each other...strange "axis"...their main commonality is having oil deposits that the U.S. does not control today). My friends and associates in Europe and elsewhere could scarcely believe that Bush was alone on the world stage, mouthing such rhetoric. Some called it the most embarrassing imperial spectacle since Caligula's horse.

For all the hypocrisy and corruption in America's [Founding Fathers](#), at least they could be literate and thoughtful. [Ronald Reagan](#) ably read his cue cards during his presidency, even though he was [nearly a vegetable](#). Bush can barely string a sentence together. He is probably the least intelligent president America has had, and him [not even being elected](#) adds insult to injury. Bush tries taking the high moral ground, yet has been convicted of drunk driving, sort of takes the fifth amendment on whether he used cocaine, and he belongs to a [secret society that robs graves](#). He rather gleefully presided over more executions than any other modern governor, and a fair number were probably innocent. When one death row convict's court-appointed lawyer fell asleep in court, the higher courts ruled it to be a "fair trial," noting that there was nothing in the Constitution that said the defendant's lawyer had to be "conscious."

The dictionary definition of "terrorism" is "*a mode of governing*, or of opposing government, by intimidation."[\[398\]](#) As Edward Herman clearly demonstrates in his *The Real Terror Network*, the American propaganda system chopped off that italicized first part of the above definition, thereby defining out of existence the terrorism waged by governments. In the best tradition of Orwell, the powerful defined terrorism to only mean terrorism by the powerless. *Governing* by intimidation is by far the greatest instance of terrorism, and always has been. Terrorism as state policy was refined by the United States a generation ago, particularly by what it did to [Southeast Asia](#) during the 1960s and 1970s, and what it did to Latin America, its [terror wars peaking during the 1980s](#). Torture was a historical relic until the United States began training the security forces of its Latin American puppets,

especially at its School of the Americas at Fort Benning in Georgia. Latin America security forces were trained in torture and other “counterinsurgency” methods. American torturers also [went abroad to teach their craft](#). When returning to their Latin American home nations, the traditional homecoming was to use their new skills to perform [heinous atrocities on the local citizenry](#).

Those activities even came into general American awareness with the Iran-Contra Scandal. Elliott Abrams was a Reagan administration front man, lying to Congress and anybody else who would listen about what happened in Central America during the 1980s. According to Abrams, the El Salvadoran death squads were free-lance terrorists, not connected to anybody. All knowledgeable observers knew those death squad members were El Salvadoran soldiers who simply took off their uniforms when performing death squad duties. Abrams called America’s El Salvadoran policy a “fabulous achievement.” Abrams’ record of lying and obfuscation was long and ugly, and it finally caught up with him during the Iran Contra scandal. As a front man for genocidists, Abrams would have swung from a Nuremberg noose if his services had been rendered for Nazi Germany, but he instead swung a plea bargain, admitting to only some of his less onerous behaviors, gaining a lesser sentence, and even then, George Bush the First pardoned him soon before leaving office. The moral fiber of George Bush the Second’s administration quickly became evident when it placed Abrams on its National Security Council, as a *human rights* advisor. The School of the Americas is still in business, and is known throughout the world as terror central. Not only that, America has long harbored the world’s deadliest terrorists, such as Cuban exile terrorists, Orlando Bosch most notoriously.[399] Not only were such terrorists living in America, the U.S. government funded them and even actively protected them from international prosecution, similar to how it [protected death camp Nazis after World War II](#). If [Bush is taken at his word on September 12, 2001](#), the American military should have been launching missiles at Miami and the White House.

American propagandists have had a challenging job naming terrorists, with the same people called [terrorists one day and freedom fighters the next](#), depending on which way the political wind blew.

By the dictionary definition, the WTC and Pentagon attacks were terrorism, no doubt about it. They were heinous atrocities. However, America’s response to the attacks was also terrorism, and on a much vaster scale.

After Afghanistan [served its usefulness](#) as the “trap” for the Soviet Union, America left it to “rot.”[400] Afghanistan was littered with about ten million land mines. During the 1990s, thousands of Afghani people died each year from stepping on mines. The United States did not provide any effort to help rebuild its discarded pawn, so the sudden professed [humanitarian concern](#) for the Afghani people after the WTC attacks was ludicrous on its face. During the years before the WTC attacks, Afghanistan suffered through a horrendous drought, and was the world’s most devastated nation. Even calling it a nation is a misnomer. Afghanistan was more a collection of villages, warlords and fundamentalist preachers, with a civil war raging.

George Bush’s threats immediately after the WTC attacks amounted to terrorism. Winter was coming and the world knew what America was about to do to Afghanistan: the same thing it did to [Iraq](#) and [Yugoslavia](#), except probably worse. Afghani people began fleeing into the mountains,

where many thousands of people starved and froze to death last winter. The world's independent aid agencies begged the U.S. government and world community to forestall an American attack on Afghanistan, as a war that lasted into the winter would put about seven million people in danger of not surviving until spring.

When America was good and ready, the bombs began dropping onto Afghanistan. It was a terrorist bombing that far exceeded the WTC attacks. Few knowledgeable observers thought the Taliban and friends would successfully fight off the U.S., as the world's biggest killing machine was aimed at the world's most devastated people. The goal for a long time has been risking as few American troops as possible, and the terror bombing of Afghanistan was a keyboard war, with missiles being launched from vast distances. As the American military safely sat behind their keyboards, launching missiles at Afghanistan, the Afghani people were subject to unending aerial bombardment. As with bombing the [Chinese embassy](#) in Yugoslavia and the [French embassy in Libya](#), it appears that the two bombings of the Red Cross warehouses in Kabul were intentional.

About three thousand people were killed in the WTC and Pentagon attacks. In December 2001, professor Marc Herold of the University of New Hampshire released a summary of reporting on the U. S. bombing of Afghanistan.[401] Using only stories that made the media, Herold tallied 3767 civilian deaths directly attributable to American bombardment. It was the most conservative number attainable, and exceeded the toll of the WTC and Pentagon attacks. Afghani civilians, who were as innocent as those who died in the WTC attacks, died at the U.S.' hands. Similar to how Iraq's civilian casualties [were a non-story in America](#), there was virtually no American media coverage of Herold's tally, in another proof of the [worthy/unworthy victim thesis](#) of Herman and Chomsky. Many thousands of Afghanis also did not survive the winter, and today's Afghanistan is in ways a worse disaster than a year ago.

In the wake of the aid agencies' pleas, the United States engaged in one of history's most grotesque public relations stunts: dropping food-bombs onto Afghanistan. It dropped food rations with the cluster bombs, and *they looked alike* (they were both in yellow plastic packaging, and about the same size). All knowledgeable observers admitted that the food-bombs were useless in bringing aid to Afghanistan, and people were even blown up as they walked across minefields to recover those food-bombs, generally to sell them on the black market. For all the ["toy-bomb"](#) propaganda the U.S. spun about the Soviet Union, the U.S. exceeded its own propaganda and dropped food-bombs on the same people. [Robert Fisk](#) visited Afghanistan and wrote in August 2002 that many children had been killed by previously unexploded cluster bombs during the past year.[402] Children have been mistaking them for both food packages *and* toys. In addition, American troops have been marauding through Afghanistan during 2002, performing death squad activities, with summary executions and disappearances attending their surprise attacks on villages. As with [Panama](#), [Iraq](#) and so forth, the American people are hearing nothing about it through the mainstream media.

After the first draft of this essay was written, in what will surely be only one of numerous incidents of war crimes in Afghanistan, *Newsweek* reported that a U.N. investigation unearthed evidence that the U.S. ally warlord Abdul Rashid's troops Dostum murdered hundreds, if not thousands, of Taliban POWs, and the U.S. stonewalled an investigation ever since it happened several months earlier.

[403] If even *Newsweek* is reporting it, enough evidence may be rescued from oblivion to give Americans some pause about its War on Terror. There are about 5000 missing Taliban prisoners of war, and mass graves have been located. Edward Herman has also written about the [mass graves being investigated](#), and the U.S. media not touching it.[404] Time will tell, regarding how much the American people hear about it through the media.

What the United States inflicted on Afghanistan far exceeded the terror of 9/11, and would have been immensely worse if the bombing effort had not surprisingly routed the Taliban before winter set in. The U.S. effort destabilized the region, with two nuclear powers, Pakistan and India, rattling sabers during 2002. The “War on Terror” will not turn out well for the region’s people, and the U.S. has moved quickly to establish a military presence among those nations north of Afghanistan that were part of the Soviet Union. It appears that establishing military control over the world’s most lucrative oil and gas reserves is coming along nicely under the rubric of the “War on Terror.”

A useful book to understand today events is an old one. [George Orwell](#)’s *1984* makes for eerie reading. Published in 1949, Orwell wrote about a future that was far from utopian. Orwell partly got it wrong about how Big Brother kept control over information. The reality turned out more like Huxley’s *Brave New World* on that score, where people simply did not care to read anymore, or [even think much](#); the information was there, but nobody bothered to read it.[405] As with America’s Founding Fathers, Orwell did not envision that a power greater than the state would take over everything: the corporate state. With that misprediction acknowledged, Orwell foretold other dynamics with startling accuracy.

In *1984*, the masses had zero sense of history, information quickly going down the “memory hole,” to be retrieved if needed for [doublethink](#). The ruling party manipulated the masses to cheer *any* war. Allies one day, enemies the next, it did not matter. There was always a war to cheer on, accompanied by spectacular displays of [flag-waving patriotism](#). The world’s three power blocks were Oceania, Eurasia and Eastasia. Oceania, where Winston Smith, *1984*’s protagonist, lived, changed from being at war with Eastasia to being at war with Eurasia without missing a beat, and the public never caught on that enemies and allies had simply changed places (nearly exactly how the Soviet Union transformed overnight from ally to enemy, which happened by the time *1984* was published). There was one man who inspired terror in the citizenry’s minds and hearts. In *1984* he was a Jew, Emmanuel Goldstein. His face appeared on TV regularly, and the masses reacted with fear and hatred, especially during their “Two Minutes Hate” (about the length of today’s average nightly news story). Goldstein, like bin Laden, was the state’s greatest enemy, although they could never seem to find him.

There was also “Hate Week.” Winston saw through the game being played, but could not afford to appear a disobedient member of the herd, so Winston “voluntarily” contributed to the Hate Week fund. The planner of Hate Week in Winston’s neighborhood was going to drape the local “Victory Mansion” in huge flags for Hate Week.[406] “Terrorist” bombs went off regularly, killing many, but the mess would be cleaned up and spark further flag-waving furor, with Goldstein being burned in effigy. [407] Anybody who did not wave their flag as fervently as possible became suspected of being a subversive, and could be treated with the utmost harshness. Just as Secretary of Defense Rumsfeld

announced that the War on Terror could take generations, the strategy of Oceania's ruling party was having a continual, never-ending war. One closet "skeptic" of the ruling party propaganda thought the terrorist bombs were really launched by the ruling party, "just to keep people frightened."[\[408\]](#) Inflicting the most heinous atrocities onto the enemy was heroic, but evil when done by the enemy to "our side."[\[409\]](#) Orwell called orthodox "thinking" a form of unconsciousness.

Oceania's big, exciting cultural event was the lottery, which was the only time the masses demonstrated much intelligence, as they prayed for their numbers to come up, and performed amazing feats of memory and mental skill. For the working class, they were so dumbed down that sophisticated mind control techniques were not needed for them. They just shuffled along and did their jobs, while pumping out babies. The story always told was that everything was better than ever, and nearly everybody accepted it as fact. Sophisticated mind control was used to control the minds of the educated class.

Just as [Ronald Reagan](#) called a nuclear missile the "Peacekeeper," a slogan of Oceania's ruling party was: "War is peace." The mental state the people were to be kept in was "controlled insanity," where most words were completely inverted in meaning, where the Ministry of Truth disseminated lies, the Ministry of Peace was really the war department (just as the U.S. War Department was renamed the Defense Department), and so on.[\[410\]](#) In the United States, it was a little different, with the Pentagon announcing the creation of a new disinformation department after the WTC attacks. That was a little too blatant, so the department was scrapped, with George Bush the Second promising the people that the American government does not condone lying.[\[411\]](#)

When the year 1984 rolled around, there was wide discussion of why Orwell's' dark prophecy did not come true. Americans largely live in Orwell's' world, while boasting that they do not, as their society is "free."

[Fascists run America](#); fascists [also run Israel](#). Jewish ideology has been racist for millennia, which was partly how they kept their blood as "pure" as they have [during their long journeys](#). Bona fide terrorists were among Israel's Founding Fathers, and the leader of a terrorist group that openly supported Hitler became the [Israeli prime minister](#) (Yitzhak Shamir; and another terrorist and future prime minister, Menachem Begin of Irgun, had a hotel blown up, killing nearly 100 people). [Manifest Destiny](#) was a modern version of the Jews' Promised Land concept, and those lands [were secured by similar means](#). Israel was established largely because European hatred of Jews [did not even abate after the Jewish Holocaust was over](#). The early years of Israel were rocky ones, and using gangsters such as [Mick Cohen](#) to provide weaponry was part of the era's [very dirty realpolitik](#).

It was not until Israel proved itself a murderously capable land grabber in 1967 that the era of massive and virtually unconditional support for Israel came from the United States. Until that time, few Americans cared much about the [Jewish Holocaust](#) or Israel. When they became America's kind of fascists, and a useful imperial outpost in the oil-rich Middle East, then came the close relationship, with the U.S. turning a blind eye to [Israel building its own nuclear arsenal](#). Since then, [an industry](#) has grown around the Jewish Holocaust. The so-called Occupied Territories in Palestine were

secured by Israel similarly to how George Washington [proposed stealing Native American land](#): send the military and armed “settlers” into the native lands, and if the armed “settlers” can keep it from the natives, it is theirs.

In the United States, arguably the *least* reliable mainstream source of information on Israel and the Arab world is the [New York Times](#), which regarding Israel leans probably further to the right than the John Birch Society and the militias do in matters involving America. Yet, reporting on Israel in the West Coast’s mainstream media is often written by NYT staffers, such as [Thomas Friedman](#), William Safire and others like them.

There are no people on earth more misinformed about Israel’s situation than Americans, with media lies and obfuscations about Israel and Palestinians reaching unprecedented levels. The radical left, including [Z Magazine](#), [FAIR](#) and [Counterpunch](#), with many Jews in their ranks, including [Noam Chomsky](#) (who was about the first American intellectual to publicly support Israel, long before it became fashionable.^[412]), has taken on that highly distorted treatment of Israel in America’s media for many years.

One myth long promoted by Israel is portraying Palestinians as terrorists. The Israeli state used terror as a method of dispossessing and oppressing the Palestinian people from the very beginning. Another Israeli prime minister, Moshe Sharett, even admitted in his diary that Israel fabricated a “long chain of fake incidents and hostilities” to harm neighboring Arab states and create an atmosphere of fear and violence. Sharett even called it “Israel’s sacred terrorism.” From Israel’s 1948 inception to 1990, the Israeli state’s terrorist acts took more than twenty times as many lives as Palestinian acts of terrorism, but Israeli terrorism was never called that (called “retaliation” and other misleading terms), while Palestinian terrorism was played up endlessly in the American media.^[413] The Israeli state engaged in acts of large-scale terrorism that make the blood curdle, but with the American media’s double standard, Israel’s terrorism has never been called terrorism, while America’s image of a terrorist is a bearded Arab wearing an Islamic headdress. In mind-boggling irony, the very term “terrorism” was originally coined by the British when describing the violent acts of [Stern Gang](#) and Irgun.

A year before the WTC attacks, another fascist Israeli leader, Ariel Sharon, instigated a new era of brutal Israeli oppression against the Palestinian people. It became so bad that Palestinians became even more desperate, and suicide bombings became common, with even women suicide bombers making their appearance. Immediately after the WTC attacks, Benyamin Netanyahu, another fascist Israeli prime minister, was asked what the WTC attacks meant for U.S.-Israeli relations. Netanyahu responded with an ominous, “It’s very good.” In the wake of the WTC attacks, Israel took the gloves off, feeling that they now had carte blanche to inflict violence with impunity onto the Palestinian people as part of the War on Terror. Israel’s motto is to fight terrorism with terrorism on a far greater scale. Israeli tanks rolled into Palestinian towns and rolled through Palestinian living rooms.

America’s War on Terror has been a windfall for fascists across the globe, as they have been killing dissidents and others with gusto, calling it the War on Terror. In the United States, Attorney General Ashcroft (who calls himself simply “General” at the Justice Department) and friends have waged an

assault on civil rights that is America's most ominous since the McCarthy era, with sweeping police powers being granted, military courts, arbitrary detentions, the White House announcing that people need to watch what they say, and so on.

During the bloody campaign that Israel has waged against Palestinians during 2002, George Bush the Second took the stage and proposed a step toward a solution: demanding that Yasser Arafat step down from his position as the leader of the Palestinian people. Arafat is not a Vichy Palestinian, although as with all national leaders, he may be in it more for himself than the people he represents, but at least Arafat is an *elected* leader, [unlike Bush](#). Although the U.S. media did not report much about it, that "diplomatic" attempt by Bush was met throughout the world with shock. Even Tony Blair was forced into backing away, leaving Bush alone on the world stage, demonstrating that his grasp of political reality was as deep and thorough as a child's.

One nation that everybody agrees had no relationship to the WTC attacks was Iraq. Osama bin Laden and Saddam Hussein hate each other. There were some clumsy attempts by American propagandists to fabricate the link early on, but it was quickly abandoned. Even so, as soon as the Taliban fell and Osama bin Laden escaped, a new demon had to be brought onto center stage, and Saddam Hussein was quickly dusted off and presented as the next bad guy who had to go.^[414] Nobody outside the United States believes that America's current beating of the war drums against Iraq has anything to do with caring about the Iraqi people or any other Arabs.^[415]

As always in that part of the world, it is all about oil, with the current Bush administration dominated by oil interests, from Bush and Cheney on downward. Knowledgeable observers all know that however "evil" Saddam Hussein may be, he is not stupid, and the last thing he would do is provoke the United States into invading Iraq. If he has any "weapons of mass destruction," they will only be used if America attacks Iraq again. If that happens, Bush and his pals will almost certainly use the American people as cannon fodder, facing terror attacks while Bush and friends sit in their safe bunkers far below the earth, like the one Bush was ushered into immediately after the WTC attacks. His wife had to coax him out of his hiding place and "lead" the American people in its time of crisis, with the White House even concocting a tale that the terrorists were trying to shoot down Air Force One (that was later exposed as a fabrication, apparently created to try justifying Bush's disappearing act). Bill Clinton was out of the country, and he made it to Washington D.C. *before* Bush did.

Scarcely a hint of irony can be seen or heard as American officials and the media consider it America's God-given right to do whatever it can get away with regarding Iraq. Such arrogance on the world stage may be unprecedented. There has been some dissent in Washington DC, but with a few notable exceptions, it has largely been the hawk-versus-hawk style of debating, where toppling Saddam Hussein is a foregone conclusion, but the debate is mostly over how to do it.

America *is* the new Roman Empire, with an empire that spans the globe. Is Armageddon just around the corner? Will humanity survive America's reign? It [does not have to be this way](#), and we can change it.

Invading and Occupying Iraq – A Postscript

December 2005

I originally finished my site in September 2002. For somebody who has been writing about Iraq since 1991, the drumbeating for the invasion of Iraq was a nightmare in itself. I wrote a letter to a friend in November 2002, which has been [posted to the Internet](#). All of my public pre-invasion concerns were validated by post-invasion reality. That the Bush administration invaded Iraq while serving up a string of [continually-shifting rationales](#), that have *all* [proven to be lies](#), while never admitting that it was all about oil and empire, was no surprise to informed observers. The Iraqi oilfields comprise the world's biggest treasure chest, and the U.S. today sits on it, but is having a difficult time lifting the lid and making off with the plunder. There are no plans to leave Iraq anytime soon, no matter how much blood is spilled. The charade of giving Iraq “democracy” is an obscene joke. Economic Hit Man [John Perkins](#) knew well what the invasion of Iraq was about. In the nearly three years since the U.S. invaded, perhaps a quarter million Iraqis have died prematurely, mostly violently.^[416] The below photo collage sums up the noble nature of our Iraq adventure.



Click on image to enlarge

The invasion/occupation of Iraq section of this essay could easily be one hundred pages long, but I do not have the time or stomach for it these days. While the invasion/occupation has been one of history's great, evil deeds, the invasion has perhaps done some good. For one thing, the Empire is being derailed, in a classic instance of “imperial overreach,” and is having difficulty digesting what it seized. In America, it used to be relatively easy to shuffle along with the masses and not stand out too much. Not anymore. Those emblazoning their car bumpers with jingoistic slogans such as “The [Power of Pride](#)” have openly cast their lot with the imperialists, and staying silent in the face of recent events is like being a “Good German” in the 1930s and 1940s. In general, informed Americans did not support the invasion or Bush's policies, but if people were poorly informed or misinformed (as in those who get their “news” from *Fox News*), they supported Bush policies.^[417] The decline and fall of the American Empire will likely take some time, but its fall will bless the world.

Peace.

Footnotes

[1] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*.

[2] The early 21st century anthropologists' view of the pre-Columbian New World is presented in Charles C. Mann's *1491*, published in 2005; on the battles over the early inhabitation date, see *1491*, pp. 137-173.

[3] See, for instance, Michael Moseley's *The Incas and their Ancestors; The Archeology of Peru*.

[4] See, for instance, Michael Berliner of the Ayn Rand Institute defending the European invasion. His essay is easily found the Internet today. He did not have an elementary grasp of the facts, or seem to have much familiarity with the current state of scholarship on the issue. Another scholar, Dinesh D' Souza, from the right wing think tank Hoover Institution, also defends Columbus' efforts in the New World and all that came behind it, with a command of the facts and interpretation similar to Berliner's. His work is also easily found on the Internet.

[5] See Jack Weatherford's *Indian Givers*, pp. 59-115. See also the diffusion the other way in Alfred Crosby's *The Columbian Exchange*, pp. 64-121.

[6] On the Anasazi collapse, see Jared Diamond's *Collapse*, 136-156. On the Mayan collapse, see Diamond's *Collapse*, pp. 157-177, and Mann's *1491*, pp. 243-279. On the Cahokian collapse, see Mann's *1491*, pp. 259-267.

[7] See Mann's *1491*, pp. 196-201 on milpa agriculture, and pp. 299-300 on the adoption of swidden agriculture only after European contact.

[8] Jared Diamond's *Guns, Germs and Steel* is an example of a materialistic approach to reconstructing the human past. See a creditable critique of his work in J.M. Blaut's *Eight Eurocentric Historians*, pp. 149-172. While Blaut does not take on his materialism, a [spiritual perspective](#) is probably essential to try understanding those extinct cultures, and Diamond's effort suffers for its materialism, and even its admitted lack of cultural consideration. For instance, the [Michael material](#) has stated that the [Iroquois Confederation](#) was formed by an [Old Soul](#) culture (it also corresponds to Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs, for those who prefer a different model to the soul age idea), and the U.S. Founding Fathers comprehended its merits, using it as a model for the U.S. Constitution. Whereas the Old World was dominated with Baby and Young Soul ideas of controlling and conquering nature, the New World's peoples often had a different outlook, which anthropologists have often minimized or ignored. While hunter-gatherers often are Infant Souls, much of the New World's populations evidenced Mature and Old Soul awareness, as can be readily seen by their "religions" that revered nature.

[9] See Mann's *1491*, pp. 251-252.

[10] See Mann's *1491*, pp. 6-15, 280-311.

[11] See Sauer's, *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 302-304.

[12] See Bernal Díaz del Castillo's *The Discovery and Conquest of Mexico*, translated by A.P. Maudslay, and Hernan Cortés' *Letters from Mexico*, translated by Anthony Pagden.

[13] See Thomas' *Conquest*, pp. 227-250.

[14] See Antonio Pigafetta's diary of the voyage. See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, pp.22-23. That offensive bloodshed inflicted on peaceful natives was not an unusual "exploration" style in those days. "First contacts" where the native reception was hostile is evidence that previous "explorers" had probably already preyed upon the natives. See Laurence Bergreen's *Over the Edge of the World* for a recent account of Magellan's feat. That voyage of discovery was an exceedingly violent affair, with the first violence inflicted on each other, with a mutiny when they were in South America, with murders, executions, torture and maroonings among the events. Magellan did not inform his crew where they were going, as they would have certainly mutinied if they knew what Magellan was attempting. Events went downhill from the first mutiny (another occurred not long afterward), with bloodshed, kidnapping and other horrors accompanying most of the voyage's encounters with natives. Magellan practiced coerced conversion to Christianity and came to an ignominious end when he attacked an island where he had previously burned down a village after its chief refused to convert. The natives fought back that time and killed him while his men largely looked on, most either happy that the megalomaniac was being killed, or stupefied at the senselessness of Magellan's attack on natives who refused to convert (see pp. 284-285). Later in the voyage, slaughtering several natives whose boat just happened to be sailing by when the crew wanted to ask directions barely merited mention, the crew was so inured to the violence they inflicted (see p. 337). Spain quickly launched other expeditions to try wresting the spice trade from Portugal, but they were unmitigated disasters (see pp. 410-412). In 1498, Arab traders cured [Vasco de Gama's](#) crew of scurvy and by feeding them oranges, because the Arabs were more experienced with long voyages (see pp. 215-216). It was first of many encounters with natives who cured the Europeans of scurvy, but over the next three centuries more than a million Europeans died of scurvy on the high seas, [as Europeans ignored or derided the obvious cures](#).

[15] See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, pp. 155-156. After the invasion by the "explorer" Alvaro de Mandaña in 1568, the natives of the Solomon Islands were spared for two more centuries, until they were "rediscovered."

[16] See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 299-300.

[17] Written by the essayist Montaigne, in his 1595 "On the Cannibals" in *The Essays of Michel de Montaigne*. See Charles T. Mann's 1491. p. 335.

[18] See Charles T. Mann's 1491. p. 335. See Hugh Thomas' *Conquest*, p. 349.

[19] See Duncan's *Hernando de Soto*, pp. 134-136.

[20] See John Hemming's *The Conquest of the Incas*, pp. 118-136. See Michael Moseley's *The Incas and Their Ancestors*, pp. 7-9. See Duncan's *Hernando de Soto*, pp. 183-186.

[21] See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 130-151, 301, 304.

[22] Gunnar Thompson's *American Discovery* presents the evidence. James Loewen presents a more conservative summary of the evidence in his *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, pp. 47-48. The evidence for Viking colonization, in present day Newfoundland, is indisputable.

[23] See Jacques Gernet's *A History of Chinese Civilization*, pp. 398-405.

[24] Robin Blackburn's *The Making of New World Slavery* analyzes that issue.

[25] See Carl Sauer's *Northern Mists*, pp. 22-29.

[26] See Lyle McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p. 252.

[27] For some reading on those days, see Johan Huizinga's *The Waning of the Middle Ages*, esp. pp. 1-21
Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, esp. pp. 102-110, Stannard's *American Holocaust*, pp. 57-62.

[28] See Bitterli, *Cultures in Conflict*, p. 64.

[29] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, p. 165.

[30] See Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, p. 155.

[31] One might notice that Las Casas did not *free* his slaves, but gave them to somebody else. The humanitarian impulse of Las Casas, which was possibly the most pronounced one in Spain, still had its limits. Las Casas admired Columbus, and probably could not conceive of freeing his slaves, and it probably was not practical anyway, since there were no "free Indians" living near the white man in those days.

[32] Formal proclamations of taking land in the name of kings and empires was a Spanish tradition, and after 1513, at every new beach and every village or town the Spaniards encountered, the welcoming natives were treated to a reading of the Requirement, or *Requerimiento*. An example is when Pizarro made his first excursion to the Incan Empire in 1527. The first Incan noble he met was told the following:

"I, Francisco Pizarro, servant of the high and mighty kings of Castile and León, conquerors of barbarian peoples, and being their messenger and Captain, hereby notify and inform you...that God Our Lord, One and Eternal, created Heaven and Earth and a man and a woman from whom you and I and all the people of the world are descended...Because of the great multitude begotten from these over the past 5000 and some years since the world was made...God placed one called Saint Peter in charge over all these peoples...

"And so I request and require you... to recognize the Church as your mistress and as Governess of the World and Universe, and the High Priest, called the Pope, in Her name, and his Majesty (king of Spain) in Her place, as Ruler and Lord King...

"And if you do not do this...with the help of God I shall come mightily against you, and I shall make a war on you everywhere and in every way that I can, and I shall subject you to the yoke and obedience of the Church and His Majesty, and I shall seize your women and children, and I shall make them slaves, to sell and dispose of as his Majesty commands, and I shall do all the evil and damage to you that I am able. And I insist that the deaths and destruction that result from this will be your fault." See Wright's *Stolen Continents*, pp. 65-66. Also see discussion of the development and use of the document in McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p. 90. See Todorov's, *The Conquest of America*, pp. 146-149.

[33] See Las Casas, *A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies*. p. 33.

[34] See Thomas, *Conquest*, p. 103.

[35] By 1557, the flow of New World wealth into the Spanish court's coffers amounted to 11% of crown revenues. See Lyle McAlister's, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p.186-187.

[36] See Thomas' *Conquest*, pp. 358-382.

[37] See Alvar Núñez Cabeza de Vaca's *Castaways*, translated by Frances M. López-Morillas. Abbreviated accounts can be seen in Duncan's *Hernando de Soto* and Steele's *Warpaths*.

[38] The death rates of the native slaves at the gold mines on Española were about 50% per year, per Las Casas. See Sauer's *The Early Spanish Main*, p. 148. Stated another way, the life expectancy of a native in an Españolan gold mine was about a year, maybe less. After the conquest of the Incas, the life expectancy of a native in the South American silver mines was about four months. The life expectancy of a Jew in the Auschwitz rubber factory during World War II was about four months. See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 89. There was a difference in attitude, however. The Spanish genocide of the New World natives had greed as virtually its sole motivation. As Carl Sauer stated, the Spanish "operation was maintained by treating the natives as expendable." (*The Early Spanish Main*, p. 155) The Nazis' primary motivation was racism, with greed less obvious. On one hand, German corporations clamored for the cheap (nearly free, the modest fees went to the Nazis) Jewish labor for its factories. On the other, the Nazis were only too willing to provide them cheap labor, and the fewer workers who returned to the concentration camp at the end of the day, the better. There were always more subhumans (Untermenschen) being rounded up to fill the camps. Christopher Simpson deeply probed the relationship between the Nazis and the German corporations in *The Splendid Blond Beast*.

[39] See Alonso de Zorita's *The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, translated by Benjamin Keen, p. 210.

[40] See Alonso de Zorita's *The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, translated by Benjamin Keen, 1994 edition, pp. 206-218, and 6-10. On p. 66, Keen notes that although epidemics have generally received most of the credit for the collapsing native population over the recent decades, recent scholarship is showing that the labor policies might have been the greatest contributing factor in the native genocide. It paralleled what the Spanish did to the Taino in the Caribbean.

[41] See Pedro de Cieza de León's *The Incas*, translated by Harriet de Onis, p. 163.

[42] See Pedro de Cieza de León's *The Incas*, p.62.

[43] See Hemming, *The Conquest of the Incas*, pp. 368-373. See also Weatherford, *Indian Givers*, pp. 1-20.

[44] See Hemming, *The Conquest of the Incas*, pp. 367-369. See also Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 90-92.

[45] See Denevan, *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*, xxiv - xxv, 151-180, and Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 91.

[46] Those epidemics are summarized in Gibson, *The Aztecs under Spanish Rule*, pp. 448-451.

[47] Las Casas, *A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies*, p 38, 99, 103. See Alonso de Zorita's *The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, translated by Benjamin Keen, 1994 edition, p. 210. See also David Radell's account of the depopulation of Nicaragua by the slave trade after the Mexican conquest in Denevan's *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492*, pp. 67-76. Decapitating collapsed porters became a standard practice by the Spanish in the New World. In Venezuela, the load of the decapitated porter was distributed to the other natives in the chain.

[48] According to Friar Juan Fernández de Ángulo. Cited in Las Casas, *A Short Account of the Destruction of the Indies*, p 82.

[49] See Lyle McAlister, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*. pp. 126-127.

[50] See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, p. 22.

[51] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 101. See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 69-76.

[52] See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 69-76, and see also pp.299-300.

[53] See Sauer's *The Early Spanish Main*, pp. 218-277. See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 83, 218.

[54] Pizarro arrested [Balboa](#), and Pizarro was murdered by his own men.

[55] See David Duncan's *Hernando de Soto, A Savage Quest in the Americas*, pp. xxix-xxx. Soto's haul from the Incan plunder could have purchased more than 100 caravels of the day, which were Spain's best sailing vessels. In today's value put on gold and silver, his haul would have been worth about ten million dollars, but in purchasing strength, it would have been far greater. Building the equivalent of 100 caravels today would be immensely costly, far more than \$10 million.

[56] See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, p. 167, 302. The best account of Soto's adventures is generally considered to be David Ewing Duncan's *Hernando de Soto, A Savage Quest in the Americas*. See his account of the Soto expedition and those depopulated lands on pp. 327-351.

[57] See Herbert Priestley's *Tristán de Luna*. See p. 112, for instance, and pp. 117-159. See Charles Mann's *1491*, p. 98.

[58] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 129.

[59] As McAlister makes the point in his *Spain and Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, pp. 163-165, *encomienda* was a type of *repartimiento*. There were various shades of the institutions, but more benign *repartimientos* succeeded the *encomienda*. See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, chapter 9.

- [60] See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, p. 274 and chapter 10 in particular for what happened to the native lands in the Valley of Mexico.
- [61] See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, p. 277.
- [62] See McAlister, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p. 245.
- [63] See McAlister, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p. 240.
- [64] See Jack Weatherford's *Indian Givers* for a good overview of Native American contributions to today's world.
- [65] See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, chapter 11.
- [66] See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, pp. 329-330. See also Ruiz, *Triumphs and Tragedy*, pp. 107-112.
- [67] Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, p. 401. See also p. 399.
- [68] See a reproduction of that list in Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 107-108.
- [69] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 107. They were immigrants escaping The Inquisition and the hostile social/political/economic environment of the Iberian Peninsula. It was one of the few opportunities to create a new life. See also McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, pp. 115-116.
- [70] See Wright, *Stolen Continents*, pp. 156-157 for a reproduction of the plea the Huexotzincos made to the Emperor. See Thomas, *Conquest*, p. 428, for the deal the Tlaxcalans negotiated with Cortés in return for their support during the conquest of Tenochtitlán.
- [71] For instance, Nuño de Guzman, a lawyer who brutally conquered what is today northwestern Mexico, was notorious for his murderous cruelty. He was eventually tried and spent his last years as a prisoner in Spain. Perhaps his most notorious act was hanging six chieftains who failed to sweep the path where he was going to walk. See Ruiz, *Triumphs and Tragedy*, p. 57.
- [72] See McAlister, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p.186-194.
- [73] See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, pp. 220-256.
- [74] See Alonso de Zorita's *The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, translated by Benjamin Keen, 1994 edition, pp. 118-129.
- [75] See Gibson, *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, p 344.

- [76] See Elinor G. K. Melville's *A Plague of Sheep*, pp. 39-44.
- [77] See Alfred Crosby's *The Columbian Exchange*, pp. 64-121. See McAlister, Lyle N. *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, pp. 214-223.
- [78] See Alonso de Zorita's *The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, translated by Benjamin Keen, 1994 edition, pp. 6-10.
- [79] See McAlister, *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, pp. 20-24.
- [80] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, p. 78.
- [81] See a brief discussion of some of mass grazing's impact in Goudie's *The Human Impact*, pp. 49-52, and see Crosby's *The Columbian Exchange*, pp. 111-113.
- [82] See Gibson's *The Aztecs Under Spanish Rule*, p. 303.
- [83] See, for instance, Elinor G. K. Melville's *A Plague of Sheep*, which was the result of meticulous research into the Spanish impact in early New Spain, particularly the valley north of the Valley of Mexico known today as the Valle del Mesquital, which is a semi-arid valley that today benefits from the sewage runoff from Mexico City. The Valle de Mesquital was fertile farmland interspersed with large forested tracts when the Spaniards came conquering, and the steep decline in the native population combined with deforestation and the introduction of sheep on that farmland turned the Valle into semi-desert in less than a century. That phenomenon occurred throughout New Spain during the first century of conquest. Melville demonstrated that the same general trend accompanied the white invaders of Australia during the 19th century, as they introduced sheep and deforested the land.
- [84] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, pp. 161-193.
- [85] See discussion in Jack Weatherford's *Indian Givers*, pp. 1-20. See McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*, p.462-468 for a discussion. The inflation and money issue is contentious in ways, as far as what caused what (population pressures may have contributed the most), but the flooding of Europe with New World silver and gold had a major impact.
- [86] Todorov, *The Conquest of America*, pp. 142-143. Todorov showed, however, that greed did not explain all of the Spanish motivation. In the next paragraph, he showed that a lust for power, of life and death over the conquered natives, also fueled the Spanish drive.
- [87] See Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, p. x.
- [88] Sauer, "Destructive exploitation in modern colonial expansion." *International Geographical Congress*, Amsterdam, 1938, volume 3, section IIIC, 494-9, quoted in Goudie, *The Human Impact*, pp. 7-8.
- [89] See Stannard's *American Holocaust* and Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*.

[90] Among the sources for this narrative regarding the Spanish gold rush of the 1500s are: Carl Sauer's *The Early Spanish Main and Sixteenth Century North America*; Hernan Cortés' *Letters from Mexico*, translated by Anthony Pagden; Bernal Díaz del Castillo's *The Discovery and Conquest of Mexico*, translated by A.P. Maudslay; Hugh Thomas' *Conquest: Montezuma, Cortés, and the Fall of Old Mexico*; David Ewing Duncan's *Hernando De Soto: A Savage Quest in the Americas*; John Hemming's *The Conquest of the Incas*; Pedro de Cieza de León's *The Incas*, translated by Harriet de Onis; *Life and Labor in Ancient Mexico: The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, by Alonzo de Zorita, translated by Benjamin Keen; David Stannard's *American Holocaust*; Lyle McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*. See also the [sources](#) for this site's Columbus essay.

[91] See Sauer's *Northern Mists*, pp. 46-53.

[92] See Denevan's *The Native Population of the Americas in 1492, Second Edition*, p. xxviii.

[93] See Robin Blackburn's *The Making of New World Slavery*, p. 135.

[94] The other bankruptcies happened in 1575, 1596, 1607, 1627, 1647 and 1653. See Lyle McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*. p. 298.

[95] See, for instance, Edward Peters' *Inquisition*. The book's biases are made evident in its first sentence, as it characterizes one of the most brutal chapters in the history of religion as the Catholic Church's defense from the "attacks of heretics." Try Edward Burman's *The Inquisition* for a concise account of the evolution of the phenomenon. Burman finishes his book with a poignant question: "was Christianity worth preserving?" Henry Charles Lea's three-volume history of the Inquisition is the classic in its field, although it is a bit dated, being written in the 19th century.

[96] Among the sources used for the Portuguese and Dutch imperial efforts are: Boris Fausto's *A Concise History of Brazil*; James Anderson's *The History of Portugal*; Lyle McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*; Robin Blackburn's *The Making of New World Slavery*; Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*; Meltzer's *Slavery, A World History*; Stannard's *American Holocaust*; *Encarta Encyclopedia*.

[97] See Thomas' *The Slave Trade*, p. 804.

[98] See Sauer's, *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 237-242, and David Stannard's *American Holocaust*, pp. 99-100.

[99] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, pp. 101-103.

[100] See Sauer's, *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 250-265.

[101] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 103.

[102] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 105.

[103] See Duncan's *Hernando de Soto*, pp. 259-261. See Shenkman's *Legends, Lies and Cherished Myths*

of *American History*, pp. 110-111.

[104] See Ian Steele's, *Warpaths*, pp. 45-47.

[105] See Ian Steele's, *Warpaths*, pp. 46-47.

[106] See Ian Steele's, *Warpaths*, p. 49.

[107] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 167-168.

[108] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 169-177.

[109] See Cave's *The Pequot War*, p. 152.

[110] See Steele's, *Warpaths*, pp. 94-95. See Cave's *The Pequot War*, pp. 164-167. Cave relates contemporary doubts about Miantonomi's intentions and alleged speech.

[111] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 197-198.

[112] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West, The Metaphysics of Indian Hating and Empire Building*, esp. pp. 3-20.

[113] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, pp. 25-26.

[114] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 114.

[115] See Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, p. 15. See an excellent analysis of the English/Puritanical worldview as it collided with New England reality in Cave's *The Pequot War*, esp. pp. 13-48.

[116] See William Cronon's *Changes in the Land*, which documents the devastation of the aboriginal environment by the English invasion.

[117] See Sale, *The Conquest of Paradise*, pp. 317-319.

[118] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, pp. 98-99, 223-225.

[119] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 181.

[120] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 182.

[121] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 190-196. For a more sympathetic treatment, see Urs Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, pp. 87-108.

[122] See Steele's *Warpaths*, p. 61.

[123] See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, p. 302. See Steele's *Warpaths*, p. 63. There is also speculation that the valley became a no man's land due to battling tribes.

[124] See Steele's *Warpaths*, p. 63-65.

[125] An early instance of Spanish cultural justification for bloodshed was Balboa's quest for the Pacific Ocean. Balboa was about the most capable and virtuous conquistador. On his 1513 Pacific Ocean expedition, which was designed to claim it (history's largest claiming), he also sought gold constantly. Torturing chiefs to death to reveal where their (non-existent) mines were and feeding them to his dogs were among Balboa's activities (and then taking the surviving women as concubines). During one famous night, Balboa attacked a sleeping village and put several hundred people to death, and his favorite dog tore the chief's head off (a difficult feat), much to the delight of Balboa's entourage. About forty native men were dressed in what seemed feminine garb, and Balboa gave them special treatment: killing them and feeding them to his dogs. Balboa's justification was their "nefarious" practice of "sodomy." Balboa knew nearly nothing about what the feminine garb may have signified. I nearly attended [Balboa Junior High School](#). See Varner and Varner, *Dogs of Conquest*, pp. 36-39. See Sauer, *The Early Spanish Main*, pp. 231-237. See Duncan, *Hernando de Soto*, pp. 31-32.

[126] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 190-196. See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, pp. 87-108. See Steele's *Warpaths*, pp. 59-79. See Sauer's *Seventeenth Century North America*, pp. 77-125

[127] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 151-157.

[128] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 241.

[129] See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, pp. 155-177.

[130] That speculation is seen in Bruce Johansen's *Forgotten Founders*, p.120. While researching his book, Johansen encountered significant evidence that the Enlightenment was indeed influenced, perhaps even initiated, by Europe's encounters with Native American cultures. It was out of his book's scope, but he suggested that somebody could delve further into that issue. To my knowledge, that issue has not been explored in a scholarly manner.

[131] As an example, see R. David Edmunds and Joseph L. Peyser's *The Fox Wars*, esp. pp. 157.

[132] See R. David Edmunds and Joseph L. Peyser's *The Fox Wars*, esp. pp. 119-201, 219-220..

[133] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 151-157.

[134] See Sauer's *Sixteenth Century North America*, pp. 52-61.

[135] Amherst's letters were between him and Colonel Henry Bouquet and Captain Simeon Ecuyer. William Trent, who worked for Ecuyer at Fort Pitt, wrote of his successful efforts, "Out of our regard to them we gave

them two Blankets and an Handkerchief out of the Small Pox Hospital. I hope it will have the desired effect.” It did. See also Ward Churchill’s *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 154. Some of these letters have been [reproduced on the Internet](#), where the originals can be viewed.

[136] See Richard Shenkman’s *Legends, Lies and Cherished Myths of American History*, p. 113.

[137] See Richard Drinnon’s *Facing West*, esp. pp. 119-164.

[138] See, for instance, Churchill’s *Indians Are Us?*

[139] Estimates of Washington’s fortune, nearly all in land holdings, range up to \$500 million in 2005 dollars.

[140] See Reginald Horsman’s *Expansion and American Indian Policy*, 1783-1812, pp. 3-15.

[141] See Reginald Horsman’s *Expansion and American Indian Policy*, 1783-1812, p. 9.

[142] See Allan Eckert’s *That Dark and Bloody River*, pp. 439-442. See also the discussion of Washington’s plan in Sword’s *President Washington’s Indian War*, p. 27. See also Ward Churchill’s *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 209-211.

[143] See Reginald Horsman’s *Expansion and American Indian Policy*, 1783-1812, pp. 131, 150-153. For some particularly large, early sales, such as land in the acquired-by-conquest Ohio River Valley, the land companies sometimes paid only eight cents per acre for recently “ceded” Indian lands, as the U.S. government began using the land sales as a major source of federal revenue (see p. 42).

[144] See Christopher Simpson’s *The Splendid Blond Beast*, pp. 59-74.

[145] My father’s side of my family has a genealogy that traces the family name to Scotland, when my direct ancestor migrated to Pennsylvania in the 1730s. My father’s ancestors then migrated to North Carolina, and although Quakers, they moved to Ohio in 1811, Indiana in 1816 and Kansas in 1879. My ancestors essentially followed in the wake of fraudulent treaties and the U.S. Army as the Native Americans were dispossessed.

[146] See John Shy’s *A People Numerous and Armed*, pp. 177-178.

[147] According to the only detailed study done of a community during the Revolutionary War, the Hackensack Valley, a great deal of rebel and Loyalist militia fighting was of the “score settling” variety, where the rubric of revolution was used to attack rival ethnic groups, churches and neighbors. See John Shy’s *A People Numerous and Armed*, p. 206. See a discussion of the fractious nature of the evolution in Chomsky and Herman’s *After the Cataclysm*, pp. 40-46. In Alfred Young, Terry Fife’s and Mary Janzen’s *We the People*, the authors begin the book by noting that John Adams was writing as early as 1809 that American history was already “getting full of Falsehoods.” The authors noted that “The history of this period [the American Revolution – Ed.] is obscured by hero worship and sacred symbols” and it was difficult to “separate myth from reality, or to challenge the sacred.” (see p. viii).

- [148] See John Shy's *A People Numerous and Armed*, p. 146.
- [149] See John Shy's *A People Numerous and Armed*, pp. 173, 197-198.
- [150] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, pp. 329-332. See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 149.
- [151] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 276, n. 430.
- [152] Even a children's book, Robert Young's *The Real Patriots of the American Revolution*, poses that question.
- [153] Samuel Johnson made that observation. See Chomsky and Herman's *After the Cataclysm*, pp. 316-317, n. 46-51.
- [154] See Howard Zinn's *Declarations of Independence*, p. 152.
- [155] See David Waldstreicher's *Runaway America*, p. 22.
- [156] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, pp. 72-73.
- [157] Howard Zinn's *Declarations of Independence*, p. 185.
- [158] See Wiley Sword's *President Washington's Indian War; The Struggle for the Old Northwest, 1790-1795*, pp. 145-207.
- [159] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 213-215.
- [160] For discussions on how the mainstream history texts fail to deal with those dynamics of the War of 1812, see James Loewen's *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, pp. 99-136, and see Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, pp. 125-126.
- [161] See Jefferson, *Notes on the State of Virginia*, Query XIV.
- [162] See Jefferson, *Notes on the State of Virginia*, Query XI.
- [163] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, esp. pp. 92-93.
- [164] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, esp. pp. 81-82.
- [165] See Jefferson, letter of February 27, 1803. My source is *Jefferson Writings*, published by The Library of America, pp. 1117-1120.

- [166] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 98.
- [167] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 153.
- [168] See Bruce Johansen's *Forgotten Founders*, pp. 56-76.
- [169] See Richard Slotkin's *Regeneration Through Violence*, pp. 205-213.
- [170] See Bitterli's *Cultures in Conflict*, pp. 109-132.
- [171] See Donald Durnbaugh's *Fruit of the Vine, A History of the Brethren, 1708-1995*. The Sauers' tale is very obscure, and while [I have found some sources](#), I plan to look into this tale more fully one day.
- [172] See Richard Shenkman's *Legends, Lies and Cherished Myths of American History*, pp. 21-22.
- [173] See David Waldstreicher's *Runaway America: Benjamin Franklin, Slavery, and The American Revolution*.
- [174] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 70.
- [175] See chapter 5 of Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*.
- [176] Benjamin Lay was arguably the first modern abolitionist, and a friend of Ben Franklin. Lay made public demonstrations against the brutal effects of Britain's tea trade. See David Waldstreicher's *Runaway America*, pp. 80-83.
- [177] See John Shy's *A People Numerous and Armed*, p. 218. See Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, p. 78.
- [178] See Thomas Cooper's *A Time Before Deception*, p. 3
- [179] See Stephen Ambrose's *Undaunted Courage*, p. 77. Ambrose was Eisenhower's biographer and is nearly the epitome of today's establishment historian.
- [180] See Stephen Ambrose's *Undaunted Courage*, pp. 155-158.
- [181] See Stephen Ambrose's *Undaunted Courage*, pp. 165-175.
- [182] See Stephen Ambrose's *Undaunted Courage*, pp. 389-392.
- [183] See Stephen Ambrose's *Undaunted Courage*, pp. 457-458.
- [184] See Farmer's *The Uses of Haiti*. p. 70.

[185] See Alfred Young's *The Shoemaker and the Tea Party*, p. 116.

[186] See Richard Shenkman's "*I Love Paul Revere, Whether He Rode or Not*", pp. 16-33.

[187] See Alfred Young's *The Shoemaker and the Tea Party*, pp. 155-165.

[188] See Alfred Young's *The Shoemaker and the Tea Party*, pp. 56-57.

[189] Two mainstream books that deal with the American mythmakers and the reality they have misrepresented are Richard Shenkman's *Legends, Lies and Cherished Myths of American History* and "*I Love Paul Revere Whether he Rode or Not*".

[190] See Sword's *President Washington's Indian War*, pp. 45-68.

[191] See a summary of those events in Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 444-452.

[192] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 90-92.

[193] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 185-186.

[194] The labels and names that Europeans have bestowed upon the Native Americans were rarely terms of appreciation. There is debate over whether Native American polities should be called tribes, nations, bands, etc. Peoples who are commonly called by names such as the "Creek," often do not appreciate the appellations. There were about 100 tribes known by the name "Creek." Although I have "Creek" blood myself, I can appreciate that writing as a white man, not all Native Americans will agree with my terminology, nor all of the ideas I am using here. For whatever inaccuracies I may be promulgating in my work about Native Americans, they have my apologies. I am trying to write about "my people," which are white Americans, and that is the main focus of my work, always, although I believe that all humanity is one.

[195] See Alan Galway's *The Indian Slave Trade* for a history of early colonial South Carolina and the English slave trade in the region.

[196] See Alan Galway's *The Indian Slave Trade*, pp. 40-69. See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 200. See Steele's *Warpaths*, pp. 51-52.

[197] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 195-196.

[198] On the Cherokee and these early days with the British, among my sources are Steele's *Warpaths*, Wright's *Stolen Continents*, Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, and there are some good Internet sources, especially Lee Sultzman's work.

[199] See Wright's *Stolen Continents*, p. 113.

[200] See John Demos' book of that name.

[201] See Wright's *Stolen Continents*, p. 206.

[202] See John Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, p. 75.

[203] These can be written off as simple Indian legends, but serious scholars consider them. See Eckert's *A Sorrow in Our Heart*, pp. 672-675. See Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, pp. 102-103. On the zero year curse, Ronald Reagan apparently broke the curse by surviving an assassination attempt. It will be interesting to see how [George Bush the Second's](#) tenure fares.

[204] See John Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, p. 122.

[205] See John Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, p. 131.

[206] See Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, p. 127.

[207] See John Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, p. 132.

[208] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 108.

[209] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, pp. 104-111.

[210] See John Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, p. 220.

[211] See John Ehle's *Trail of Tears*, p. 255.

[212] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 144-145

[213] See Wright's *Stolen Continents*, p. 292. The second quote comes from the same writings that the first are lifted from.

[214] See Howard Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, pp. 128-129.

[215] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 217-218.

[216] See Paul Kennedy's *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers*, p. 149.

[217] Leonard Dinnerstein's *Anti-Semitism in America* deals with the rise of anti-Semitism in America, which began in the 1840s. It also applied to the other non-Anglo immigrants, such as the Irish and Eastern Europeans, but Jews suffered from the discrimination the worst.

[218] See Richard Drinnon's *Facing West*, pp. 73-74.

[219] See Jack Weatherford's *Indian Givers*, pp. 59-78.

[220] See Parenti, *History as Mystery*, pp. 209-240.

[221] See James Rawls' *Indians of California, The Changing Image*, pp. 168-169.

[222] See Grant's letter to President Andrew Johnson of December 18, 1865.

[223] My father's father was born in Plainville Kansas in 1907. His early years were spent living in a sod hut. He largely grew up in Wallace, in western Kansas. The Great Depression and Dust Bowl drove him, his young wife and their oldest daughter out of Kansas, along with numerous other family members. They moved around the nation, *Grapes of Wrath*-style, until coming to Washington State in 1935, with my grandmother starving and pregnant with my father, who was born with rickets and nearly died. I lived with my grandparents in Seattle for several months in the 1980s and became close to my grandfather. In early 1994 my grandmother died, and in May I flew from Ohio and met my grandfather and aunt in Denver, and we drove to Plainville, which was his last trip to Kansas. Kansas is surely its most beautiful in May, and the rolling plains in springtime were dazzling. The old homestead and sod hut was gone, becoming part of somebody's farm, although we visited the homestead of my grandfather's uncle, where he played as a child. It was still there, occupied by what are politely called uneducated rural whites. They lived in a dilapidated trailer home, with rusting cars, chickens and dogs running around, on a dirt road a long way from civilization. We also visited the cemeteries of my ancestors, some who were among the region's first homesteaders, dying in the late 1800s.

The Great Plains farms have undergone drastic changes during the era of corporatized, mechanized agriculture. Family farms are nearly gone, with most farmers living in town, and even the towns are drying up and blowing away, with children moving away to the big cities. I visited communities that were already nearly ghost towns. In one country cemetery, several of my ancestors were buried, including my great, great grandfather, whose life came to a miserable end in 1939, as the Great Depression and Dust Bowl tarnished his last years. My grandfather was sick on that trip and died a couple of years later, but one day I took the rental car and went back to that cemetery in the middle of nowhere. Much of the vicinity's land was not even farmed anymore. I sat on my great, great grandfather's gravestone, looking out across the green plains, then closed my eyes and meditated, trying to imagine what his life had been like. I also tried imagining what the land was like before the white man showed up. It must have been glorious. I was both joyful and saddened to think about those days of long ago, about what was and what had been lost.

On the way to Kansas, my grandfather had us turn off the highway, and I drove down dirt roads for many miles. There were no signs and the land was sparsely populated, with a farmhouse appearing now and then. We made turns here and there, with my grandfather probing his memory, not quite sure if he was remembering the way accurately. I had no idea where we were going, other than someplace he once knew. He found what he was looking for, and we got out of the car at the Arickaree battleground. In 1868, a few months before [Custer's triumph at the Washita](#), Civil War hero General Sherman was occupied with dispossessing the Plains Indians and moving them onto reservations. Short of troops, he had General Sheridan recruit "frontiersmen" to hunt Indians. Sheridan articulated the American mentality when he said the only good Indians he ever saw were dead. Fifty men went hunting Indians that summer, and like Custer did in 1876, they found more than they bargained for. They came upon a party of several hundred traveling Indians. The Indians then attacked their pursuers and the "battle" was on. Surprisingly, I had already read about that battle during my research, in Ralph Andrist's *The Long Death*, which is still considered one of the best histories of the genocide of the Plains Indians, although it was written in the early 1960s, before

America's cultural awakening.

My grandfather obviously regarded that battleground with reverence, and he talked animatedly about how the “battle” happened. It was only about sixty miles from Wallace, and it must have been a hallowed spot when he was growing up. Andrist's book was pretty iconoclastic when it came out in 1964, being one of the first works to see the events more from the Indians' perspective, not the Hollywood cowboy perspective. The “frontiersmen” quickly formed a defensive perimeter when the Indians attacked, and a few whites were killed. It then became a siege, with some men running back to Fort Wallace to get reinforcements. Andrist's account describes the battle, with the Indians soon leaving the scene, leaving the whites in their hasty fortifications, where they used dead horses as breastworks. There was no Indian honor in starving out an enemy. At the battleground are monuments for the five whites that died there. Andrist barely mentioned Indian casualties in his book, but the narrative at the battleground told a different story. As many as eighty Indians died in that battle, and on the hill above the battleground came the mournful cries of the native women, as their husbands, fathers and sons died fighting the white men. Other scholars have estimated the Indian dead at “only” thirty, but the iconoclastic work by Andrist did not even mention the Indian body count. White men get monuments, and the Indian dead are barely mentioned, even in the iconoclastic works.

My grandfather evidently relived childhood memories at that battlefield, and I could see his excitement, but he also gradually discarded his homesteader perspective as he aged, admitting in his later years the horrible crime that white America committed against the Indians, particularly that last group to be subdued, the Plains Indians. My grandfather served in World War II in the South Pacific, in the Solomon Islands and elsewhere. He rarely talked about those days, although he stayed in contact with his war buddies the rest of his life, and I visited some of them when I lived in Texas. My grandfather exemplified something I have now seen many times. Men who survive warfare seldom talk about their experiences. Men who really did not see much “action” are usually the ones telling war stories. My grandfather was “only” a Seabee, but for a time he was bombed by the Japanese every night, and was lucky to be alive. One morning he awoke to find a bomb that buried itself in a log next to him. It was a dud that miraculously did not explode. One time a bomb landed in the opening of his foxhole, but was another dud (those were the smaller, “anti-personnel” bombs.)

When my grandfather talked to me about his wartime experiences, it was briefly, and obviously something that he did not like dwelling on. He said that comrades adorned their quarters with Japanese skulls, and black American soldiers were treated like the lowest caste, something that he was pained to see even then. My grandfather was a poet of international reputation, but he did not have much nice to say about his World War II experiences, and it left deep scars on his psyche. I am the first man in my family, going up my family tree a hundred years, who did not serve in the American military, and my relatives' military experiences damaged them all, to one degree or another. My other grandfather [was crippled in World War I](#), and my father was in the Korean War, and they received deep emotional wounds.

Sometimes my grandfather would talk to me about his days growing up. Similar to [Terrell's observation about those “noble” pioneers](#), my grandfather said that he grew up in ignorant and unenlightened times. He grew up with a rifle in his hand, and he and his friends “shot at anything that moved.” That was a couple generations *after* the local natives had been exterminated, so imagine how trigger-happy they were in 1860 versus 1915. If somebody was mentally retarded or a little on the unintelligent side, the entire community would mercilessly make that person the butt of all jokes and pranks, everybody laughing mean-spiritedly at their affliction. My grandfather also enjoyed telling stories about funny or heartwarming events from those days, but he did not have a very large repertoire of such tales, with me hearing the same stories repeatedly over the years. When my grandfather would talk about those days, concluding with one of his more trenchant observations, I would say, “Ah, Grandpa, those good old days!” and he would respond with, “I don't know what was good about them.” I was saddened with his passing in 1996. He was my last living grandparent,

and I was blessed to have known him.

[224] See Andrist's *The Long Death*, pp. 167-169. The corruption and fraud in the BIA is not controversial. One cannot read about the dispossession of Native Americans during the 19th century without encountering numerous accounts of BIA malfeasance. See Dee Brown's *Bury My Heart at Wounded Knee* and Angie Debo's *And Still the Waters Run*.

[225] See Angie Debo's *And Still the Waters Run*, pp. 21-22.

[226] See Ward Churchill's *Since Predator Came*, p. 34.

[227] See Wright's *Stolen Continents*, pp. 153-154.

[228] See Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 146. See also his narrative of the *Wounded Knee Massacre* on pp., 126-127, and the book's photo section. See Dee Brown's *Bury My Heart at Wounded Knee*.

[229] There were some notable exceptions to the "exterminate the dancers" attitudes of whites. George Catlin was a prototype of the character that Kevin Costner played in *Dances with Wolves*, studying and painting the Plains Indians during the 1830s. Catlin appreciated the natives he saw, and understood some of the mystical significance of their dancing. See Drinnon's *Facing West*. Although there were some whites of the times that demonstrated respect and even some enlightenment in their dealings with the natives, there were very few of them.

[230] See Dinnerstein's *Anti-Semitism in America*. American anti-Semitism never quite reached Europe's genocidal levels, however.

[231] Most of those were in my vocabulary while growing up, and were rather casually applied to those groups. They were also on the lips of all my friends, and often their parents, also including beaner, coon, gook, Jap, Nip, wop, slant, slope, Polack and Kraut. And also, the epithets were not simply restricted to the color of somebody's skin or the ethnic group they came from. There are other terms worth mentioning: queer, faggot, dyke, and other terms to describe people who are not heterosexuals, including colorful language to describe all aspects of the sexual experience, anatomy and body functions. Those terms were also a standard part of conversation, and can be found today in certain circles, but there is a "counter PC" offensive taking place, seemingly trying to rehabilitate the attitudes, if not quite the terms, of the good old days.

[232] See, for instance, Ellen Meiskins Wood's *The Pristine Culture of Capitalism*, pp. 31-34.

[233] See Richard Shenkman's *"I Love Paul Revere, Whether He Rode or Not,"* p. 2.

[234] Because they were "mere Africans" who died under the Belgian lash, the first Western work that studies that holocaust is Adam Hochschild's *King Leopold's Ghost*, published in 1998.

[235] See Mike Davis' *Late Victorian Holocausts*, pp. 306-307.

[236] See Iris Chang's *The Rape of Nanking*.

[237] See Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 279.

[238] See Drinnon's *Facing West*, p. 314

[239] See a discussion of those events in Drinnon's *Facing West*.

[240] See Ovidio Diaz Espino's *How Wall Street Created a Nation; J.P. Morgan, Teddy Roosevelt, and the Panama Canal*.

[241] See Espino's *How Wall Street Created a Nation*, p. 190.

[242] See Espino's *How Wall Street Created a Nation*, pp. 133-149.

[243] See Espino's *How Wall Street Created a Nation*, pp. 151-196.

[244] See Christopher Simpson's *The Splendid Blond Beast*, pp. 48-49.

[245] For a brief summary of Iraq's rich history, see Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 79-146. Among other sources I used to gain a glimpse of the region's deep history are Hourani, *A History of the Arab Peoples*; Payne, *The History of Islam*; and Roebuck, *The World of Ancient Times*.

[246] See a brief summary in Erik Zürcher's *Turkey: A Modern History*, pp. 170-172. The devastation of the Anatolian peninsula was due to ten years of fighting, forced migrations, genocide, famine, disease and the like. World War I was the centerpiece of the suffering, but not the only component. For instance, the Turks "won" at Gallipoli, even though they suffered greater casualties than the French and British invaders did.

[247] Churchill wrote, "I do not understand this squeamishness about the use of gas...I am strongly in favour of using poisoned gas against uncivilised tribes...(Chemical weapons are only) the application of Western science to modern warfare." See Geoff Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 179-183. See also Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*, p. 182.

[248] See for instance, Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 148-150.

[249] See Chomsky, *Powers and Prospects*, p. 83.

[250] See Ralph Epperson's *The Unseen Hand*, pp. 73-74.

[251] See Stuart Ewen's *PR!, The Social History of Spin*, pp. 102-127.

[252] See Loewen's *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, pp. 22-36.

[253] See Simon's *The State of Humanity*, p. 183.

[254] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide* and *Since Predator Came* for accounts of those 20th century policies.

[255] See James Dunnigan and Albert Nofi's *Dirty Little Secrets of World War II*, pp. 48-50.

[256] See a discussion of those plans in Chomsky's *Deterring Democracy*, esp. pp. 45-64. An easily readable summary of it is in Chomsky's *What Uncle Sam Really Wants*.

[257] See a discussion of those documents in Noam Chomsky's *What Uncle Sam Really Wants*, and a broader discussion in Chomsky's *Deterring Democracy*.

[258] The best single-volume lesson on those post-war U.S. neocolonial efforts is William Blum's *Killing Hope*.

[259] In his *Mandate for Change: The White House Years, 1953-1956*, p. 372, Eisenhower wrote, "I have never talked or corresponded with a person knowledgeable in Indochinese affairs who did not agree that had elections been held at the time of the fighting, possibly 80% of the population would have voted for the Communist Ho Chi Minh." An *elected* communist leader was unacceptable, just as an elected communist was unacceptable in Chile, so the United States overthrew and murdered Chile's president in 1973, setting the stage for the bloody Pinochet rule. See also Drinnon's *Facing West*, esp. pp. 402-442.

[260] Brinkley, *Saved by the Light*, pp. 21-22.

[261] Bo Gritz from the far right (see his *Called to Serve*), and John Stockwell from the left (Ex-CIA) use the term "Third World War" term in their work, and mean the same thing, the neocolonial bludgeoning of the Third World. See Jack Neslon-Pallmeyer's *War Against the Poor*.

[262] For instance, see *Views from the South*, edited by Sarah Anderson. See also *The Struggle for Accountability*, edited by Jonathan Fox and David Brown.

[263] That phenomenon is well known and remarked on often. See, for instance, Bruce Franklin's *Vietnam and Other Fantasies*, pp. 1-4, although Franklin allows that the "bungling do-gooders" may even believe their rhetoric.

[264] See Herman and Chomsky, *Manufacturing Consent*, p. 252.

[265] See Bruce Franklin's *Vietnam and Other Fantasies*, Howard Zinn's *A People's History of the United States*, and Chomsky and Herman's *After the Cataclysm*.

[266] The FBI took credit for Malcolm X's murder in an internal document dated in 1969. See Churchill and Vander Wall's *The COINTELPRO Papers*, p. 102.

[267] The United States largely initiated both the Korean and Vietnam conflicts. Even during the post-Cold-War 1990s, South Korean schoolchildren were six times as fearful of the United States as they were of North Korea (see Blum's *Rogue State*, p. 17). Arguably, nearly all the Korean War and Vietnam War deaths were mainly the United States' responsibility, although this estimate will not put *all* those deaths on the United

States' scorecard. In all wars, accurate body counts are impossible. For example, the United States recently admitted that it inflated the Korean War American body count by about 50%, calling training accidents and deaths of American forces around the world all due to the Korean War.

There is a wide range of estimates of war deaths and who is responsible for them. Between a half million and a million South Koreans died in the Korean War. The Chinese and North Korean dead were more than a million. Numerous estimates of the Korean War dead reach three million. In Vietnam, most of the U.S.' firepower was directed at the people of South Vietnam, the people who were supposedly being saved. Assassination programs such as the Phoenix program were enacted by the United States during those years (see, for instance, Ralph McGehee's *Deadly Deceits*, pp. 125-159). The death toll in Southeast Asia from the U.S. attacks make up the greater part of this eight million estimate. The estimates are: about 250,000 (to 500,000) for the South Vietnamese military, 500,000 to 1,000,000 for the North Vietnamese military, 300,000 to 2,000,000 for South Vietnamese civilians (the higher end is more likely). About 65,000 North Vietnamese civilians also died. The estimates for Vietnam are often about 3 million people altogether, all unnecessary if the United States would have [allowed a free vote in Vietnam](#). While the United States was destroying Vietnam, it also "secretly" carpet-bombed Laos and Cambodia. The death toll from those bombings was about 500,000 Cambodians (the CIA estimated 600,000) and about 250,000 to 350,000 Laotians.

The United States also bears a huge burden of responsibility for the aftermath in Cambodia. The U.S. bombing is what largely brought Pol Pot to power, just as the U.S. proxy-war in Afghanistan largely brought the Taliban to power. Those are easily foreseeable consequences of waging war. Incredibly, the United States supported Pol Pot during his reign of terror, because he was an enemy of Vietnam (see Blum's *Rogue State*, pp. 86-90). The aftermath of America's "secret" bombing of Cambodia resulted in hundreds of thousands of deaths from disease and starvation, but the American propaganda machine spun it into the responsibility of Pol Pot, even while the United States was supporting him. Pol Pot's reign presided over the deaths of probably more than a million Cambodians.

Regarding Iraq, I write at length about the [body count](#) there. Between one and two million Iraqi citizens have died as a direct result of U.S. involvement there. From those grim events, I put numbers of 2 million Koreans and Chinese, 2 million Vietnamese, 1 million Cambodians and Laotians and more than 1 million Iraqis. Those numbers are obviously debatable. It is arguable that all those war deaths can be put on the United States' tally sheet, because none of those wars would have likely happened without the United States' involvement, as it pursued its agenda. If that is the case, and the high-end estimates are used, it totals 3 million for Korea, 3 million for Vietnam, 2 million (some will argue for 3 million) for Cambodia and Laos, and 2 million for Iraq, for 10 million.

Other military actions by our proxies should also be put on that list. The United States helped bring Suharto to power in Indonesia in 1965, then helped him slaughter the political opposition. Between 500,000 and 1,000,000 Indonesians (perhaps more), largely ethnic Chinese who made up the communist movement there, [were slaughtered outright by Suharto's boys](#). The CIA even drew up kill lists for Suharto. Then the Indonesian military rounded up all the political activists on the CIA's list and killed them. Indonesia then became a major recipient of U.S. military aid, as U.S. corporations flocked to invest in Indonesia, such as oil companies, and today shoe companies and other American-based firms have moved their factories there, where the Indonesians make pennies an hour while making American shoes and clothing in slave-like conditions. Nike called in the Indonesian military to put down a strike by workers there not long ago, as they protested their horrific working conditions. In the 1970s, Indonesia invaded [East Timor](#), using American weapons, and it enjoyed major diplomatic assistance from the United States. About 200,000 East Timorese (perhaps more) died in one of the 20th century's greatest proportional genocides. Suharto also mounted

another genocidal effort in West Papua, New Guinea, wiping out the indigenous people in favor of Indonesian "settlers." Add in the U.S.-backed slaughters in [Guatemala and El Salvador](#) for 300,000 more, and there is another 1.5 million deaths that the U.S. was directly responsible for.

Arguably far more than ten million, largely violent, deaths have happened since World War II, where the blood is mainly on the U.S.' hands. Others can argue for smaller numbers ([John Stockwell](#) estimates about six million, while acknowledging how uncertain the numbers are), and America establishment defenders can be counted on to spin the Korean, Vietnam and Iraq conflicts into tales where the United States was trying to protect the freedom of the world's people. The facts offer little support for such spin, but it is nevertheless done. During the 1960s and 1970s, the United States overthrew about ten *elected* Latin American governments, installing death squad regimes in places such as Chile (see Blum's *Killing Hope*). With its neocolonial empire, the United States has kept hundreds of millions of people in bondage. Most Latin Americans live miserable lives as a direct result of U.S. interventions. The same can be said for Indonesia, the Philippines, Southeast Asia, and parts of Africa (such as Angola). In some cases, the United States bears almost sole responsibility, such as in Southeast Asia, where in others, such as Angola, it was just one of the imperial players, although arguably the most meddlesome. Hundreds of millions of people live under the boot of the United States today, or are still trying to recover from being violated, as they are in Southeast Asia. The 1980s conflict in Afghanistan, as Zbigniew [Brzezinski bragged about](#), killed more than one million Afghans, and directly led to the dire situation there today, and the World Trade Center attacks are a classic instance of "blowback," where our foreign policy shenanigans came back to haunt us. This eight million estimate is debatable, but not outlandish. "Hundreds of millions" may even understate the number that live in misery as a direct result of the United States' actions during the past fifty years.

[\[268\]](#) The United States General Accounting Office issued a report titled "The War on Drugs: Narcotics Control Efforts in Panama" which estimated drug traffic through Panama may have doubled during the two years following the United States' invasion of Panama. The puppet government the United States installed in Panama is undoubtedly heavily involved in that drug trade, as do key elements in every government that has illegal drugs flowing through its nation.

[\[269\]](#) Studying the dark netherworld of United States covert operations quickly brings the realization that the CIA has long been involved in drug running. They did it in Southeast Asia during the Vietnam War era. They did it during the U.S.-sponsored wars in Central America in the 1980s, and are undoubtedly doing it today. [George Bush the First](#) has been involved in covert operations probably since he was a child. To get an idea of George Bush's pedigree, read the *Immaculate Deception: The Bush Crime Family Exposed*, by Russell Bowen. Bush ran the CIA in the 1970s, and Noriega was on his payroll at that time. The Carter administration kicked Noriega off its payroll, but the Reagan-Bush administration not only put him back on the payroll, but gave him a raise. Drug running is an effective way to raise money for covert operations and not have the funding subject to public scrutiny. Back when George Bush was running for president in 1988, Brett Kimberlin, a federal prison inmate in Oklahoma, claimed that Dan Quayle was a regular marijuana customer of his in the early 1970s. As Kimberlin was preparing for a press conference a few days before the election, prison officials suddenly canceled the press conference and threw Kimberlin into solitary confinement, in an obvious and illegal move to kill the story (see Lee and Solomon's *Unreliable Sources*, pp. 162-167). The Iran-Contra scandal brought to light many dark acts. One revelation that came out, which the U.S. government tried stifling, was that while America was running arms to our mercenary Contras in Central America, the pilots were flying drugs back to the United States. An important airstrip those planes came back to was in Mena Arkansas, in the backyard of then governor Bill Clinton, who was possibly taking a cut of the dough somehow, which is standard practice throughout America. CIA contract agent John Hull had a ranch in Costa Rica where many of those shipments came through, going both ways. Hull was deeply involved in the events

that produced the Iran-Contra scandal, and he eventually made Interpol's most wanted list due to the criminal activity he engaged in on behalf of the United States (the U.S. refused to honor attempts to extradite him to face trial in Costa Rica). CIA deep cover agent Gunther Russbacher said Quayle was a regular visitor to Hull's ranch while the arms/drug transshipments took place, and was deeply involved in the operation. Russbacher said, "Quayle was one of our bag boys." (see Rodney Stich's *Defrauding America*, p. 307) George Bush had the gall to say he was "out of the loop." The war on drugs has always been a fraud, and the biggest players are the CIA, law enforcement, politicians, etc. The British Opium Wars with China is a classic case of opening a new drug market by waging war against the nation trying to stop the drug from coming in. Today the world's largest official drug pusher is the United States. During the Reagan-Bush years the U.S. government used the threat of trade sanctions and other vengeance to the Asian nations of Japan, Thailand, Taiwan and South Korea to get them to open their nations to U.S. tobacco companies. Since U.S. muscle forced open those markets to [U.S. tobacco companies](#), the smoking rates in those countries, especially among teenagers, have skyrocketed (see INFAC, *Global Aggression*, pp. 24-25).

[270] The CIA has been involved in dozens of foreign assassination plots (see Blum, *Killing Hope*, p. 453). There were United States plans to assassinate Torrijos in the 1970s.

[271] See Mark Fried, "The Preppy Pirate", *Lies of Our Times*, December 1990, p. 10.

[272] See Blum's *Killing Hope*, p. 304.

[273] You can see the graves being exhumed in *The Panama Deception*. For an analysis of the disgraceful way the *New York Times* handled the issue of civilian Panamanian casualties, see Gary Grass, "Panama: Laundering Casualty Figures," *Lies of Our Times*, December 1990, pp. 9-11.

[274] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, pp. 173-181.

[275] Colin Powell even openly admitted it, saying Hussein would put "his puppet in [and] everyone in the Arab world will be happy." See also Chomsky, *World Orders Old and New*, pp. 13-14.

[276] If one seeks support for *that* bold claim, reading my [web site](#) might be in order.

[277] See David Fromkin's *A Peace to End All Peace*, particularly pp. 449-454. On pp. 450-451, an American missionary cautioned Gertrude Bell, assistant to the commissioner of British India, "You are flying in the face of four millenniums of history if you try to draw a line around Iraq and call it a political entity!" See also Geoff Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, especially pp. 148-189. British High Commissioner Percy Cox drew the borders of Iraq and Kuwait in 1922, and he did so rather capriciously. See also William Blum's *Killing Hope*, p. 321.

[278] See Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 176-177.

[279] See Chomsky, *World Orders Old and New*, pp. 13-14. See also William Blum's *Killing Hope*, p. 321.

[280] See, for instance, the chronology in Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 328-330, regarding the escalation of the crisis and the many peace overtures and withdrawal offers that George Bush rejected. The day after the Kuwait invasion, on August 3, 1990, Iraq declared that it would withdraw from Kuwait if nobody

threatened them militarily. On August 6, Saddam met with Joseph Wilson, an American diplomat, giving him his assurances regarding Kuwait; Wilson then praised Iraq's "professional standards." Saddam offered his first peace plan on August 12, which was immediately rejected by Bush. On August 15, Iraq foreign minister Tariq Aziz offered to begin talks, and Bush again rejected the offer. On August 28, King Hussein of Jordan proposed a peace plan. Iraq accepted it; Bush rejected it. On September 1, Libya proposed a peace plan, including the Iraqi withdrawal from Kuwait; Bush rejected it. September 19, King Hassan of Morocco proposed a peace plan; Bush rejected it. On September 24, France proposed a peace plan. Iraq responded positively; Bush rejected it. On October 1, Bush said the U.S. wanted "a peaceful outcome." : -) On October 28, a Soviet envoy visited Saddam, and Gorbachev reported that Saddam was willing to negotiate. On November 13, King Hassan's peace initiative failed. On November 30, Bush proposed talks with Iraq, Iraq accepted the next day, and Saddam released all remaining "hostages" (called "human shields" by Iraq), and on December 9, the U.S. rejected Iraq's proposed date for talks, then on December 15 the U.S. canceled the talks. On December 30, the Yugoslavian foreign minister took an Iraqi proposal to Washington, and a State Department spokesman called it a "serious pre-negotiating position." Bush rejected it. On January 3, 1991, Bush agreed to Aziz-Baker (U.S. Secretary of State) talks in Geneva; Iraq agreed the next day, and the talks on January 9th failed. The bombs began falling on January 16. On February 7, Iraq proposed a peace plan; there was no response from West. On February 15th, Iraq said it was willing to withdraw from Kuwait, the Soviet foreign minister welcomed the offer; Bush called it a "cruel hoax." On February 18, Gorbachev proposed a peace plan; Bush rejected it on February 22. On February 25, the Soviet Union proposed a peace plan, and Saddam ordered the withdrawal from Kuwait; Bush rejected the Soviet peace plan. On February 28, Bush ordered a cease-fire, whose terms Iraq immediately accepted. President Bush was an impressive negotiator.

[281] See *Seeing Through the Media: Persian Gulf War*, Jeffords and Rabinovitz, eds. It dissects the media's performance during the Gulf War quite well. See also Chomsky, Noam. *Deterring Democracy*. pp. 179-214.

[282] See Stauber and Rampton, *Toxic Sludge is Good for You!*, pp. 172-174. See also Jeffords and Rabinovitz, *Seeing Through the Media*, pp. 12-13. See also *The National Insecurity Council, It's a Conspiracy!*, pp. 115-116.

[283] For a good summary of how the U.S. bribed and blackmailed its way to forming the coalition, see Phyllis Bennis' "Bush's Tool and Victim", *Covert Information Bulletin*, Summer 1991, pp. 26-30. Bennis aptly described what America fabricated as the "Cash Register Coalition." See Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 319-325. Yemen and Cuba were the only two nations that could not be bribed or blackmailed into supporting (or abstaining from voting against) the U.N. Resolution 678, which supposedly authorized the U.S. to use force. After Yemen voted against the resolution, an American diplomat told the Yemen ambassador, "That was the most expensive 'no' vote you ever cast." The subsequent American vengeance on Yemen, one of the world's poorest nations, cost Yemen about \$1 billion. When an American warship was bombed off the Yemen coast in late 2000, I never saw one American media account that even suggested a connection between the American vengeance on Yemen and the "terrorist" attack on an American warship off Yemen's coast. Osama bin Laden is Yemeni.

[284] Unfortunately, the standard (American and British) histories of those events are covered less than adequately. Read *Encyclopedia Britannica's* version of that history. Nowhere is mentioned the cloak and dagger skullduggery by the CIA and British Intelligence that boosted the Shah into his position. Without their assistance, the Shah's coup probably would not have happened. *Microsoft Encarta* (1996 edition) does not mention that connection either. The accounts mention the anti-American fervor that led to the 1979 "hostage crisis," but were largely silent on why they might have felt that way. Even a thoroughly establishment account

of those events such as Daniel Yergin's *The Prize* (see pages 450-478) mentions the CIA and British Intelligence involvement, but downplays their importance. Yergin gave the "Soviet menace" fable plenty of ink as a rationale for what the U.S. did to Iran. For an antidote to those histories, try William Blum's *Killing Hope*, pp. 64-72, or try *Wall Street Journal* reporter Jonathan Kwitny's *Endless Enemies*, pp. 152-178. See also Phil Agee's *On the Run*, pp. 313-318. The recent *All the Shah's Men* by Stephen Kinzer, who also co-authored *Bitter Fruit*, about the 1954 overthrow of Guatemala's government, is the final word for now on what the U.S. did to Iran. Economic Hit Man [John Perkins](#) was taught that the overthrow of Iran, led by Kermit Roosevelt Jr., Teddy's grandson was the beginning of privatizing covert action, to make it less accountable to the public.

[285] See Blum's *Killing Hope*, pp. 242-244.

[286] See Blum's *Killing Hope*, p. 244.

[287] On August 17, 2002, just after the first the first draft of this essay was complete, an article appeared in America's media that proved what Chomsky and others have been saying for fifteen years: as Saddam Hussein's forces warred against Iraq's Kurds and used chemical weapons on them, the United States supported Iraq with intelligence to fight Iran, and Iraq's use of chemical weapons was no big deal to the Reagan administration; ironically, George Bush the First was heavily involved in that operation, being the ex-CIA director that he was. As long as they were fighting the hated Iran, there was nothing Iraq could do to raise the U.S.' eyebrows too much. It makes the "chemical weapons" rhetoric of the Clinton and Bush the Second administrations, as they have justified the economic war against Iraq, ring rather hollow. See the *Seattle Times*, August 18, 2002, "Officers say U.S. ignored Iraq's use of gas against Iran," by Patrick Tyler of the *New York Times*. That is a welcome admission by members of the U.S. government, but fifteen years too late.

[288] A great deal of scholarly attention is given to that notion in Herman and Chomsky's *Manufacturing Consent*, pp. 37-86.

[289] Quoted in Ray, Ellen. "The Killing Deserts", *Lies of Our Times*, April 1991, p. 3. See also Paul Rogers, "The Myth of the Clean War", *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Summer 1991, pp. 26-30.

[290] Rogers, Paul. "The Myth of the Clean War", *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Summer 1991, pp. 26-30.

[291] Vartabedian, Ralph. "Ordnance: High Tech's Gory Side." *Los Angeles Times*, February 24, 1991. Quoted in Ray, Ellen. "The Killing Deserts", *Lies of Our Times*, April 1991, p. 4.

[292] The bomb shelter, milk factory and similar incidents are covered in *Lies of Our Times*, March 1991, pp. 3-7.

[293] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 281-282. See also Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, pp. 128-130.

[294] *Washington Post*, February 27, 1991. Quoted in Ray, Ellen. "The Killing Deserts", *Lies of Our Times*, April 1991, p. 3. See also Paul Rogers, "The Myth of the Clean War", *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Summer 1991, pp. 26-30. The Rockeye is an antipersonnel bomb that can carpet an acre with about 500,000

high-velocity shrapnel fragments.

[295] The charges by Ramsey Clark, the tribunal judgment and the ongoing effort by his organization to stop what he calls "genocide" in Iraq is readily available on the Internet at the time of this writing.

[296] See Rosenfeld, Nancy. "Buried Alive", *Lies of Our Times*, October 1991, pp. 12-13.

[297] For the songbook quote, Stannard's words and those clever messages, see Stannard's *American Holocaust*, p. 253. For a *tame* message to the Iraqis, the cover of *Lies of Our Times* in the November 1990 issue features an American soldier on an M-1 tank, and the tank's gun barrel is adorned with the professional looking label "Baghdad Express", with a smiling soldier sitting on the barrel penning more artwork onto it.

[298] William Blum. *Killing Hope*, p. 337.

[299] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 253-254.

[300] Those Project Censored stories can be obtained today in *20 Years of Project Censored News*, by Carl Jensen and Project Censored. For a summary of Bush's constantly changing rationale for the Gulf War that he was about to wage and the Gulf War in general, see William Blum's *Killing Hope*, pp. 320-338.

[301] Those situations are amply documented by Amnesty International reports, readily available on the Internet. Their main report regarding Kuwait after "liberation" is titled "Five Years of Impunity: Human Rights Concerns Since the Withdrawal of Iraqi Forces." See also Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 19-24. In Arabia, the women are *only* executed with the firing squad, being spared decapitation.

[302] That meeting with Glaspie is well known. Iraq produced the transcript of that meeting. It is arguable that the United States knowingly lured Iraq into invading Kuwait. The text of that meeting, whose authenticity has never been effectively disputed by the U.S. government, can be found in *The Gulf War Reader* (Sifry and Cerf, eds.), pp. 122-133. See discussion of the possible conspiracy by America in Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 322-325. See also Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 305-317.

[303] See Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, pp. 316-317.

[304] See Simons' *Iraq: From Sumer to Saddam*, p 320.

[305] See Bowen, *The Immaculate Deception*, pp. 157-168.

[306] On Casolaro and Wilcher, there are many sources. For instance, see Rodney Stich's *Defrauding America* and Vankin and Whelan's *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*. I have a copy of the 101-page letter that Wilcher wrote to Attorney General Janet Reno a month before he died. According to the official investigations, both he and Casolaro "committed suicide." That conclusion is far less convincing than the Warren Commission's "[lone nut](#)" conclusion about Oswald and JFK. The deaths of Wilcher and Casolaro begin ranging into very dark conspiracy theories that are beyond the scope of this essay. Those two books are a good introduction.

[307] See Ascherio, A., R. Chase, et al. "Effect of the Gulf War on Infant and Child Mortality in Iraq." *New England Journal of Medicine* 327, no. 13 (1992): 931-36. Whatever the real numbers were, they were virtually unreported in America, with the emphasis on the parades for returning U.S. soldiers. Some critics might take my terminology to task and say it was an "allied" bombing. Great Britain, whose neocolonial interests were well served by the Gulf War, was the other "big" bomber with the U.S. By one count, the British dropped about 3,000 tons of bombs in the Gulf War, the United States dropped 88,500 tons. See Paul Rogers, "The Myth of the Clean War", *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Summer 1991, p. 28. By any tally, the U.S. was responsible for the vast majority of the bombing. Calling it the "US bombing" is not misstating the facts by much, and in spirit is correct. It was not much of a coalition. It was led by the current and former masters of the world (as it was in our 1998 bombing of Iraq again, when we acted alone against world opinion), with various bribed and blackmailed parties giving token support to the effort, like mercenaries.

[308] See Garfield, *Morbidity and Mortality Among Iraqi Children from 1990 Through 1998: Assessing the Impact of the Gulf War and Economic Sanctions*, Internet version dated July 1999.

[309] See the *1990 World Almanac and Book of Facts*, p. 721.

[310] According to the United Nations Convention on the Prevention and Punishment of the Crime of Genocide, Article II, genocide means, among other things, deliberately inflicting on a national, ethnic, racial or religious group, "serious bodily or mental harm...(and) inflicting...conditions of life calculated to bring about its physical destruction in whole or in part." The United States is notable in being the world's only "civilized" nation to not ratify the Genocide resolution when the others did, and to this day, the United States has not properly ratified the resolution. See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 363-398.

[311] See *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* editorial, October 20, 1999.

[312] Population Reference Bureau estimate for mid-2000.

[313] See Parenti, "Defying the Sanctions," *Z Magazine*, February 2001, pp. 31-34.

[314] See Lee Siu Hin's "US Using U.N. Program to Steal Iraq's Oil," *Covert Action Quarterly*, Spring/Summer 2000, pp. 32-33.

[315] The offer was concurrent with a visit by five U.S. senators with Hussein in Iraq. See the friendly chat that people like Senator Bob Dole had with Hussein on April 12, 1990 in Sifry and Cerf, eds., *The Gulf War Reader*, pp. 119-121.

[316] For those too young or who missed those movies, during the 1970s the movie *China Syndrome* was released, which depicted an American nuclear accident at a power plant, partly caused by corporate corruption. When the movie came out, establishment critics said things like "nice movie, but that can't happen in America." While the movie was still in the theaters, America had the Three Mile Island accident, which has had plenty of covering-up of its effects, as usual. During the early '90s, the movie *Grand Canyon* was released. It depicted life in Los Angeles, and in one scene in particular, a driver took a wrong turn after attending a Lakers game at the Inglewood Forum, and ended up in a neighborhood where he was nearly preyed upon by criminals. Critics said, "Nice movie, but it misrepresented the streets of Los Angeles." When I lived in Los Angeles, I had a similar experience to that scene in *Grand Canyon*, so I knew it was not far-fetched. Soon after *Grand Canyon* was released, the outrageous Rodney King beating verdict was handed

down and we had the LA Riots, where martial law eventually prevailed. The movie *Wag the Dog* was about manufacturing media events to distract the public from what was really happening. Although Noam Chomsky downplayed the notion, it seemed as if Bill Clinton was reading the script of *Wag the Dog* when he bombed Sudan and Afghanistan.

[317] That essay is too long to reproduce here, and is simply a condensed version of what became this American Empire essay. It was reproduced in a few places on the Internet.

[318] Numerous articles appeared in the U.S. media in January 1999 regarding the spying of the "weapons inspectors" (Washington Post, January 6th, 8th and 9th; New York Times, January 8th; Reuters, January 8th; *The Washington Post* January 6th article by Barton Gellman is the most informative and shocking of them all.).

[319] That analysis is published on the International Action Center web site, titled "After the Bombing, What is Next."

[320] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 188-189. Jonathan Kwitny discounts the notion that the Cuban outbreak of dengue fever was the work of the United States (*Endless Enemies*, pp. 266-267), but summarizes many other dirty tricks the U.S. played against Cuba (*Endless Enemies*, pp. 238-269.) In Blum's recent *Rogue State*, pp. 108-111, in a chapter where he described numerous instances of U.S. biological warfare and other "unconventional" activity, lent more evidence that the Dengue Fever outbreak in Cuba was due to U.S. biological warfare. The strain that hit Cuba was from Southeast Asia, and it was the first major Dengue Fever epidemic ever experienced in the Americas, effecting more than 300,000 Cubans and killing 158, mostly children. Long before the Dengue Fever outbreak, the U.S. had experimented with breeding the mosquitoes that carried that strain of Dengue Fever. It is quite possible that the U.S. indeed spread Dengue Fever in Cuba.

[321] Meryl Nass, "Zimbabwe's Anthrax Epizootic," *Covert Action Quarterly*, Winter 1992-1993, pp. 12-18.

[322] Blum, *Killing Hope*, p. 383.

[323] Strieber relates a number of stark future visions in his "Communion" books, the destruction of Washington D.C. only one of them. See Strieber, *The Secret School*, pp. 235-240. Ultimately however, Strieber's work is optimistic and hopeful, with more positive visions than negative ones.

[324] I heard Bearden make that statement at a conference hosted by Richard Hoagland in Seattle in September 1998.

[325] Smith wrote regarding imperial powers willingly giving up any part of their domains,

"No nation ever voluntarily gave up the dominion of any province, how troublesome soever it might be to govern it, and how small soever the revenue which it afforded might be in proportion to the expence which it occasioned. Such sacrifices, though they might frequently be agreeable to the interest, are always mortifying to the pride of every nation, and what is perhaps of still greater consequence, they are always contrary to the private interest of the governing part of it, who would thereby be deprived of the disposal of many places of trust and profit, of many opportunities of acquiring wealth and distinction, which the possession of the most turbulent, and, to the great body of the people, the most unprofitable province seldom fails to afford." See

Smith, *The Wealth of Nations*, Book IV, Ch. VII, Pt. III, p. 131-133.

About the mercantile system that existed in Smith's day, he wrote,

"It cannot be very difficult to determine who have been the contrivers of this whole mercantile system; not the consumers, we may believe, whose interest has been entirely neglected; but the producers, whose interest has been so carefully attended to; among this latter class our merchants and manufacturers have been by far the principal architects...In the mercantile regulations...the interest of our manufacturers has been most peculiarly attended to; and the interest, not so much of the consumers, as that of some other sets of producers, has been sacrificed to it." See Smith, *The Wealth of Nations*, Book IV, Ch. VIII, pp. 180-181, University of Chicago Press edition, 1976.

That pretty much sums up the [bizarre journey of Dennis Lee](#), where he was "some other set of producer" who was sacrificed to the powerful producers. In the end, however, the consumers have suffered greatly, although somewhat unknowingly, and such a sacrifice of better ways to the interest of power and [profit](#) may doom the human race.

[326] For harrowing reviews of that state of affairs, see David McGowan's *Derailing Democracy* or William Blum's *Rogue State*.

[327] See the census results in the 20th century for Yugoslavia in Tim Judah's *Serbs, History, Myth and the Destruction of Yugoslavia*, pp. 311-317.

[328] See, for instance, John Allcock's *Explaining Yugoslavia*, p. 19.

[329] As estimated by the Vienna Institute for Economics, which is an admittedly early estimate.

[330] In 1990, the Gross Domestic Product of Yugoslavia was about \$73 billion, according to *The World Bank Atlas 1991*.

[331] Among the works I have used to familiarize myself with the situation regarding what was known as Yugoslavia were: John Allcock, *Explaining Yugoslavia*; Tim Judah, *Serbs, History, Myth and the Destruction of Yugoslavia*, Christopher Bennett, *Yugoslavia's Bloody Collapse*, Misha Glenny, *The Balkans*, Julie Mertus, *Kosovo, How Myths and Truths Started a War*. Marcus Tanner, *Croatia: A Nation Forged in War*. Those are all fairly mainstream texts.

[332] See Michael Parenti's *To Kill a Nation* and Noam Chomsky's *The New Military Humanism*.

[333] For instance, *The Washington Spectator* stated in its May 15, 1999 issue that the NATO bombing was the "Just War." *The Washington Spectator* is a "liberal" publication, but its enthusiasm for the Kosovo bombing caused many of its readers to cancel their subscriptions, including me.

[334] See Sean Murphy's *Humanitarian Intervention*, pp. 33-64.

[335] On October 13, 1999, the U.S. Senate voted 51-48 to not ratify the Comprehensive Nuclear Test Ban

Treaty. Although the United States is not alone on the world stage regarding the non-ratification of the treaty, it is by far the most notable, undermining the notion of other nations ratifying it. As of April 2000, 55 nations had ratified the treaty, and Russia ratified it in May 2000.

[336] On the 20th anniversary of the [assassination of JFK](#), ironically.

[337] The UN vote tallies are taken from William Blum's *Killing Hope*, pp. 184-199. Also see McGowan, *Derailing Democracy*, pp. 22-24.

[338] See Sean Murphy's *Humanitarian Intervention*. See Chomsky, *The New Military Humanism*, pp. 38-80.

[339] For a brief history of Turkey in the recent centuries, try reading Erik Zürcher's *Turkey, A Modern History*.

[340] See *A People Without a Country, The Kurds and Kurdistan*, Gerard Chaliand, Ed., pp. 144-149 and 49-51.

[341] See Alan Friedman's *Spider's Web, The Secret History of How the White House Illegally Armed Iraq*.

[342] Hunter, Jane. "Sowing Disorder, Reaping Disaster", *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Summer 1991, p. 25

[343] See Voices in the Wilderness, "Myths and Realities Regarding Sanctions," in *Iraq Under Siege*, Anthony Arnove, ed., p. 73. See also pp. 43-44.

[344] Amnesty International "United States of America - Rights for All," October 1998, cited in David McGowan's *Derailing Democracy, The America the Media Don't Want You to See*, p. 19.

[345] See, for instance Kamran Karadaghi, "The Two Gulf Wars, The Kurds on the World Stage, 1979-1992" in *A People Without a Country, The Kurds and Kurdistan*, Gerard Chaliand, Ed., pp. 214-230 and Bill Frelick's "Operation Provide Comfort: False Promises to the Kurds," pp. 231-237, and Aliza Marcus, "Turkey's Kurds after the Gulf War, A Report from the Southeast," pp. 238-247. See also Kevin McKiernan, "Turkey's War on the Kurds" in the *Bulletin of Atomic Scientists*, March/April 1999.

[346] See *Censored 2000*, pp. 40-44.

[347] See Chomsky, *The New Military Humanism*, pp. 135-137.

[348] See *Censored 2000*, p. 53.

[349] See Black and Herman, "The Unindicted War Criminal," *Z Magazine*, February 2000, p. 28. See George Kenney's account in *The Nation*, June 14, 1999. Kenney was a Yugoslavian desk officer for the U.S. State department, who heard from an "unimpeachable press source" of a State Department official bragging that the U.S. "deliberately set the bar higher than the Serbs could accept." The official stated that the Serbs needed "a little bombing to see reason." James Petras, a foreign policy aid to Senate Republicans, told essentially the same story. See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, p. 113.

[350] See *Censored 2000*, p. 56.

[351] See Michael Parenti, "Where Are All the Bodies Buried?" *Z Magazine*, June 2000, pp. 35-37.

[352] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, pp. 25-26.

[353] See, for instance, Allcock, *Explaining Yugoslavia*, pp. 89-99. Allcock makes an impressive case that no theory regarding the breakup of Yugoslavia that does not have economics at its heart, "deserves to be taken seriously." Yet, like all the other mainstream scholars I read, he did not mention the destabilizing activities of the IMF or World Bank, or how the United States supported such activities, just as it has throughout the Third World. It is a typical blind spot in Western mainstream scholarship.

[354] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, p. 99.

[355] See Blum's *Killing Hope*, pp. 338-352 and *Rogue State*, pp. 4-5, 33-37, 155. When Ralph McGehee was still publicly visible, he wrote about the Afghanistan "terrorists" and the classic "blowback" that our activities there created. The devastation of Afghanistan and the repressive Taliban being in power there is a direct result of U.S. intervention. In the final result, it is almost a West Asian version of what America did to Cambodia. The Soviet Union's Afghanistan intervention was not all that responsible for bringing down the Soviet Empire, but it surely contributed.

[356] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, p. 100.

[357] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, pp. 98-107.

[358] See some of those disinformation campaigns in Parenti's *To Kill a Nation*, pp. 81-94; see Allcock's *Explaining Yugoslavia*, pp. 429-430, see Chomsky's *The New Military Humanism*, pp. 93-95.

[359] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, pp. 75-76.

[360] For instance, see one of those photographs in Judah's *Serbs*, photo 44.

[361] See Christopher Bennett's *Yugoslavia's Bloody Collapse*, p. ix.

[362] See Misha Glenny's *The Balkans*, pp., 659-662.

[363] William Blum's *Rogue State*, pp. 13-14 states nearly the identical points.

[364] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, pp. 17-22.

[365] See Blum, *Rogue State*, p. 6.

[366] See Herman, "Propaganda System Number One," *Z Magazine*, September 2001, pp. 42-50.

[367] See Parenti, *To Kill a Nation*, p. 166.

[368] See Alex Dajkovic, "A 'Model' for the Balkans," *Z Magazine*, January 2001, pp. 25-29.

[369] See Schmidt, *Maverick Marine*, p. 63 for an American diplomat making the statement that "Mexicans respect power and nothing else" as he called for military intervention when his other manipulations failed.

[370] Uranium-235 is much more radioactive than U-238. U-234 is also present in naturally occurring uranium, but at far smaller concentrations, and U-235 is less than one percent of naturally occurring uranium. U-235 is largely what made the nuclear age possible. See my fluoridation essay for some more information on that situation.

[371] The best summary I have yet seen on the matter is Edward Herman's two-part article in *Z Magazine*, in its [April 2002 edition](#), pp. 50-55 and May 2002, pp. 49-55.

[372] See *The New Statesman*, June 28, 1999.

[373] For instance, the work of [Allan Nairn](#) and Amy Goodman, the American journalists who really broke the East Timor story to the American public in the early 1990s, clearly demonstrates the real dynamics. Nairn and Goodman covered East Timor, and Nairn had his skull broken by an Indonesian soldier (by the butt of a U.S.-made rifle) while they massacred an East Timorese funeral procession, which was for people murdered by the Indonesian military. Nairn is one of America's most courageous journalists. In 1999, he snuck into East Timor (the Indonesian military strove mightily to keep him out) and kept reporting from there when no other journalist dared stay there. He kept reporting on the U.S. support for the violence in East Timor, when even our government was making public noises that Indonesia had gone too far there.

[374] See, for instance, Chomsky and Herman, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism*, or Chomsky, *Powers and Prospects*, or Herman and Chomsky, *Manufacturing Consent*, for examples of their scholarship regarding events such as the East Timorese genocide.

[375] See "Crisis Stirs Debate over US Aid to Indonesian Army," *The Seattle Times*, September 14, 1999. I may have missed other articles, but they are oddities. The main coverage did not mention the historic U.S. involvement at all. In September of 2000, one article on East Timor inspired me to do something I had not done for a year - write a letter to the editor. The paper called me to confirm that I wrote it, a standard prelude to printing it, but I was out of town, so they did not publish it. Here it is:

August 29, 2000

Dear *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*:

On your front page today was the most prominent article about East Timor that I have yet seen in a mainstream American newspaper ("Hope, fear in year after independence vote," by Daniel Cooney), with a full color photo dominating the page. I hoped the article would begin telling Americans what has happened in East Timor, and how it relates to the United States.

While the article mentioned the genocide in the 1970s, what went unmentioned was that the arms used in that massacre were of U.S. manufacture. Not only that, the U.S. emphatically supported the invasion of East Timor by Indonesia in 1975, with then President Gerald Ford and Secretary of State Henry Kissinger dining with Suharto a few hours before the invasion. The then U.S. ambassador to the United Nations, Daniel Moynihan, sabotaged UN attempts to react to the invasion, and bragged about it in his memoirs. After a couple of genocidal years, the Indonesian army was literally running out of bullets, and that human rights saint President Jimmy Carter hastily signed a deal giving the Indonesian army more arms.

During that slaughter, which was the greatest proportional genocide since the Jewish Holocaust, the U.S. press observed almost complete silence about the situation in East Timor, with virtually no American having ever heard of the place, as our tax dollars killed off the natives. In the East Timorese genocide, the U.S. press was actively complicit, the blood dripping from its hands. The U.S. public did not know in the 1970s that they financed the East Timorese genocide, and with articles like the one you ran today, it looks like they never will.

As I finished the article and found no mention of U.S. involvement in the tragedy of East Timor, an involvement that continues even today, I looked at the photo's caption. It did not depict an East Timorese trying to rebuild his life, but an Indonesian government-sponsored vigilante trying to find a livelihood after murdering East Timorese people for a living. I was stunned. That would be like reporting on the Jewish Holocaust for the first time, and alongside the story was a photo of an ex-gas chamber operator, trying to make a new life for himself in the post-war economy. Orwell was so right.

[376] See Chomsky, *World Orders Old and New*, pp. 62-67. See Farmer, *The Uses of Haiti*. See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 370-383. See Blum's *Rogue State*.

[377] Edward Herman wrote an article whose title summed it up: "Clinton is the World's Leading Active War Criminal. See *Z Magazine*, December 1999, pp. 36-41.

[378] As Herman stated, Suharto had a slight lead over Clinton, but Clinton was gaining fast and took much less time to rack up his tally.

[379] Blum's latest is *Rogue State: A Guide to the World's Only Superpower*.

[380] See Mark Cook, "US Intervention in Colombia and Ecuador" *Covert Action Quarterly*, Spring-Summer 2000, pp. 28-31.

[381] See Giraldo, *Colombia, The Genocidal Democracy*, p. 18.

[382] In Amnesty International's November 1996 *Crime Without Punishment: Impunity in Latin America*, they reported that the new civilian government of Argentina recorded 8960 cases of disappearances during the military dictatorship's reign in Argentina from 1976 to 1983. Regarding Bolivia, Amnesty International has noted the jailing and torture of political prisoners, but the political deaths in Bolivia measured in the *dozens* in the reports I saw, and although more than 2000 political prisoners were arrested after the U.S.-assisted coup in 1973 (see Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 221-229), the 243 death count appears within the range of the observer counts. In their October 29, 1998 news release, Amnesty International stated that the post-Pinochet Chilean state recognized 3197 "disappearances," death by torture and extra-judicial executions during the Pinochet years. Regarding Uruguay and Brazil, the relatively low number of "political killings" is also verified. Amnesty

International's May 20, 1996 report (*Uruguay: To Find the Truth is to Overcome the Past*) cited 32 "disappearances" of Uruguayan citizens, and another 100 or more who "disappeared" in Argentina in collaboration with the Uruguayan government. The U.S. overthrew the Brazilian government in 1964 (see Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 163-172), instituting fifteen years of military dictatorship, and the political killing tally of "only" 125 is also within the observed range. Those numbers do not take into account all violent deaths in those nations, but those of a political nature. For instance, the Brazilian police killed 111 prisoners in a São Paulo prison incident in 1992, but that was after the "military dictatorship" had ended, and calling it political murder is questionable. There have been numerous massacres and killings of peasants by the Brazilian police in recent years as the Amazon is being "developed." The Brazilian police engage in off-duty death-squad activity, and many people die in their custody (similar to the New York and Los Angeles police forces, but on a greater scale), but few of those deaths can be accorded a strictly political nature. That is similar to the notion of New York police killing a drug-addicted black teenager in their custody. That would not be generally considered a political killing, although it does get Amnesty International's attention.

[383] See Blum's *Rogue State*, p. 166, which cited a 1994 Amnesty International report that noted over 20,000 politically related murders from 1986 to 1994.

[384] See Giraldo, *Colombia, The Genocidal Democracy*, p. 17.

[385] See Giraldo, *Colombia, The Genocidal Democracy*, p. 20.

[386] See Noam Chomsky in Giraldo, *Colombia, The Genocidal Democracy*, p. 12. See also Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*.

[387] See Giraldo, *Colombia, The Genocidal Democracy*, p. 50.

[388] See Chomsky, "The Colombia Plan, April 2000" *Z Magazine*, June 2000, pp. 26-34.

[389] See Chomsky, "The Colombia Plan, April 2000" *Z Magazine*, June 2000, p.28.

[390] See George Orwell, *1984*, pp. 176-177, Signet Classic edition.

[391] See Frances M. Beal's "TIPS Domestic Spy Network May Go Too Far for White America," August 27, 2002, on [ZNet](#).

[392] See Blum's *Killing Hope*, pp. 338-352.

[393] Brzezinski gave his interview to *Le Nouvel Observateur* in their January 15-21, 1998 edition, p. 76. The American edition of that issue leaves out the Brzezinski interview. See Blum, *Rogue State*, pp. 4-5. People can also find the French original on the site of that French magazine, run it through a translator program (they are available on the Internet), and it comes out close to the text reproduced here.

[394] The U.S. proxy war against Nicaragua was a terror war, as were all its [proxy wars in Central America](#), with the Contras openly targeting civilians. When the World Court convicted the U.S. of crimes, particularly its mining of Nicaraguan harbors, and ordered them to stop and provide restitution, the U.S. ignored the ruling.

[Noam Chomsky's](#) work deals with that issue extensively.

[395] The word “skeptical” means I have doubt about it, but am willing to consider the evidence, not the Orwellian use of the tem that the “[skeptical](#)” community has arrogated.

[396] Friedman, *New York Times Magazine*, March 28, 1999.

[397] Russell Mokhiber and Robert Weissman had an article published on the [Counterpunch](#) site on November 15, 2001, which summarized the American media's more egregious editorial comments, including those above. The article was titled “Kill, Kill, Kill.”

[398] See Edward Herman's *The Real Terror Network*, p. 21.

[399] See Edward Herman's *The Real Terror Network*, pp. 65-69.

[400] The word [Robert Fisk](#) used to describe America and the West's treatment of Afghanistan during the 1990s.

[401] See Herold, "A Dossier on Civilian Victims of United States' Aerial Bombing of Afghanistan: A Comprehensive Accounting," December 2001. it was published in the Guardian in Britain and is also on the [ZNet site](#).

[402] See, for instance, Robert Fisk's “Return to Afghanistan: Explosives that US knew would kill innocents continue to take their toll” in [The Independent](#), 10 August 2002

[403] The story appeared in the media on August 19, 2002. The group Physicians for Human Rights has been pursuing the issue, trying to get the mass graved opened and analyzed.

[404] [Edward Herman](#), “News Not Fit to Print,” [ZNet](#) article, August 21, 2002.

[405] Neil Postman discusses Orwell and Huxley's “competing” visions in *Amusing Ourselves to Death*.

[406] I am using the Signet Classic edition of 1984. See pp. 13-15, 49-50.

[407] See Orwell, 1984, p. 124.

[408] See Orwell, 1984, p. 127.

[409] See Orwell, 1984, p. 153.

[410] See Orwell, 1984, p. 178.

[411] : -)

[412] See Finkelstein, *The Holocaust Industry*, p. 19.

[413] See Edward Herman and Gerry O'Sullivan's *The Terrorism Industry*, pp. 29-36.

[414] The American media has been putting Saddam Hussein onto magazine covers for several months now, with headlines such as "Tales of the Tyrant" (*Atlantic Magazine*, May 2002), "The Sinister World of Saddam" (*Time*, May 13, 2002) and so on. Indonesia's [Suharto](#) made Hussein look like a choirboy, but there has never been that kind of coverage of Suharto in America's media, as he was an American "ally," and there was never such coverage of Hussein while America found him useful, especially as he waged war against Iran.

[415] Just today (August 15, 2002), as I was finishing this essay, White House national security advisor Condoleezza Rice said about Hussein in a press conference, "This is an evil man who, left to his own devices, will wreak havoc again on his own population, his neighbors and, if he gets weapons of mass destruction and the means to deliver them, on all of us."

[416] In October of 2004, *Lancet* published the only scientific study to date of the Iraqi casualties, and estimated about a hundred thousand post-invasion civilian deaths, mainly from U.S. violence. That does not include the deaths of Iraqi soldiers trying to repel the U.S. invasion. There have been no credible critiques of the study's methodology by science professionals. In fact, the study's authors have produced widely cited work on demographic catastrophes in Africa, for instance. The only critiques leveled at their Iraq work have come from the imperial class in the U.S. and British media, and none have withstood scrutiny. By December of 2005, an Iraqi civilian death toll of 150,000 is well within the range of credible estimates, even on the low end, and between 50,000 and 100,000 Iraqi soldier deaths is a credible estimate. An Iraqi death toll of quarter million due to the invasion/occupation is well within the range of credible estimates. An Iraqi death toll of two million premature/violent deaths since 1991, courtesy of the United States, is well within the range of credible estimates. Contrary to the rhetoric of George Bush, they do not "hate us" because of our freedom or prosperity, but because of the devastation we have visited onto Iraq and elsewhere in that part of the world.

[417] See, for instance, [Mickey Huff's Dazed and Confused](#), published on AlterNet, May 2, 2003. For Americans who correctly knew that there was no credible link between Saddam Hussein and Al Qaeda, they were four-to-one *against* the invasion of Iraq. For those who incorrectly believed there was a connection, they were two-to-one *for* the invasion. In summary, those who believed the transparent lies of the Bush administration were for the war, while those who knew the truth were against it. As the perceptive 2003 article by [Gaius Publius](#) noted, such seeming stupidity on the part of the war-cheering Americans is largely intentional.

The Next Section: [Ralph McGehee, the CIA and Deadly Deceits](#) (30K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Ralph McGehee, the CIA and *Deadly Deceits*

By Wade Frazier

Introduction

Statement for Ralph's Protection

My 1999 Synopsis of *Deadly Deceits*

Introduction

In 1990, when I was getting educated in the alternative media and other areas, I obtained *Deadly Deceits*, the memoirs of an ex-CIA operative, Ralph McGehee. When I was writing my original web site in 1996, I wrote a brief synopsis of *Deadly Deceits*, in a section where I outlined the sources that influenced my worldview. I contacted Ralph before I published the pages, asking him if I could publish the *Deadly Deceits* excerpts that I quoted on my web pages. He replied that it was OK by him, so I did.

Ralph is an ex-CIA employee who publicly criticized the CIA, and only a handful ever have. McGehee is interviewed on Bill Moyers' *Secret Government* video. Ralph maintained his CIABASE archives on the Internet for years, exposing the CIA's activities using public domain sources. In running his CIABASE, Ralph was doing something that anyone could do. Still, he endured endless harassment from the CIA as they have tried silencing him. Ralph had more than my respect; he had my awe. After riding in the saddle with [Dennis Lee](#) for years, I discovered how rare a Dennis or a Ralph McGehee was. People of conscience, living it at those levels, are one in many thousands.

My web pages came down in early 1997 with no warning, something not entirely in my control. In early 1998, I discovered that some of my work survived and was being reproduced on the Internet. Not only had one person reproduced my entire 600-page web site, I also found that my synopsis of *Deadly Deceits* was reproduced in several places. I contacted Hank Roth's The Golem web site, one place my synopsis appeared, asking him where he got it. The surprising response from Hank was that he thought Ralph McGehee gave it to him. It turned out that Ralph had published my synopsis of his book across the Internet as the defining synopsis of *Deadly Deceits*, which is the summary of his career. I was deeply honored.

When I discovered that my hurriedly written synopsis still dominated Ralph's presentation of his work on his new web site, I wrote a version of it using more care. It is below. After escalating harassment by the CIA and friends, leading to bodily injury to Ralph, his CIABASE web site went down in the spring of 2000, and will probably never reappear.

Statement for Ralph's Protection

In August 2001, I received the below statement from Ralph. He wanted to have me post it on my site, and wherever else it can be posted, for his protection.

“I moved to Florida in July 2000. Immediately the harassment I experienced in Herndon transferred here. A major difference is that the FBI here openly advises I am a threat to National Security -- because, I assume, I tell unclassified truths to the American people.

“In 1990 the CIA officially advised me in writing that I may use any information in the public domain -- making the FBI's actions against me false if not illegal as I have never and will never expose secret persons or information.

“Harassment here has grown to such a degree that I fear staged incidents to arrest me for something -- anything.

“I base my actions on what is in the best interests of the United States. This may be difficult to believe given my negative commentary, but I participated in and watched CIA operations in Vietnam and other countries nearly destroy the US/us.

“The CIA said I was an analyst with few peers and awarded me its Career Intelligence Medal. I use this ability and those experiences to inform about the CIA's many opportunities and deficiencies.

“Anyone wishing to know more may find details via a Google search under my name.”

-- Ralph McGehee

Ralph has also asked me to post his letter from the CIA that informed him that his CIABASE activities were perfectly legal, and were no threat to “national security.” Here it is.



Click
on image to enlarge

My 1999 Synopsis of *Deadly Deceits*

Deadly Deceits became a college textbook. After a moving introduction it starts slowly, climaxing with a series of haunting revelations. During McGehee's twenty-five year CIA career, he heartily believed in its stated mission of "fighting communism." McGehee wrote that CIA fieldworker candidates are psychologically screened before being hired, and their most treasured quality is the willingness to blindly follow orders.

Ralph W. McGehee joined the CIA in 1952, after an All-American football career at Notre Dame (where Phil Agee also studied) during their national championship years. He was raised on and believed in the American dream - "the Protestant work ethic, truth, justice, freedom." He signed on as a dedicated cold warrior and spent the next ten years stationed at home and abroad: at Langley (the CIA headquarters in Washington), Taiwan, Japan, the Philippines, and then Thailand. McGehee was dedicated to stopping the scourge of communism, and enthusiastically helped keep the world free of its taint.

During the mid-1960s, communism was sweeping Southeast Asia. McGehee's job was saving Thai villages from communist insurgency. He viewed his career as a cross between "Peace Corps and missionary work." Building upon a British method used earlier in Thailand, McGehee developed an inexpensive method of intelligence gathering that identified communists and exposed their network. The strategy was partly intimidating the villagers through terror, such as holding a gun to a baby's head to get the mother to talk, yet was benign when compared to other "counterintelligence" methods of the time, among them torture and boiling suspected communists in oil.

The operation's goal was to make communists confess their "crimes," name their cohorts, return to the Thai government's fold and become "good peasants" again. Forgiveness was offered and given to those who talked, with escalating intimidation for those harder to crack. The Catholic Church successfully used a similar carrot-and-stick strategy during its [Inquisition days](#). The Thailand strategy was effective and Machiavellian, something that McGehee crafted and believed in. It obtained a quality of intelligence the region had never seen before. It also reversed communist inroads. The Thai government's brute force response to "communist insurgency," backed by its U.S. sponsors, alienated the villagers, driving them into the communists' arms. McGehee's method was far more subtle and effective.

The operation's results were awarded universal praise in intelligence circles in 1967. McGehee had his career's greatest success and was euphoric. He discovered a way of exposing and defeating the communists, and his future looked bright. He was at the top of his game. In the wake of the accolades, William Colby (future [CIA director](#), and then the Far East division chief) visited, and McGehee briefed him:

"I explained the procedures of the survey and then outlined my general conclusions, including my doubts about previous Agency reporting which said that the communists did not have the support of the local people and that they forced people to support them with threats and terrorism.

"Such a picture is inaccurate,' I told Colby...'We have found that the Communists concentrate the majority, almost the entirety, of their time winning the cooperation of the peasants.'"

McGehee exposed the communist movement as a grass roots movement with peasant support, mainly because their goal was freeing themselves from colonial and [neocolonial](#) oppression, enforced by the Thai ruling class

and their industrialized-nation sponsors. The Communist Revolution in Southeast Asia was an exercise in freedom, although McGehee would not attain that realization for years. In 1967, McGehee was ecstatic that his method reversed communist infiltration.

Colby silently received McGehee's presentation, finally muttering, "We always seem to be losing." McGehee was astonished by Colby's response.

Soon after Colby's visit, McGehee was removed from the field, his successful program was canceled, and he found himself behind a meaningless desk at Langley. He was shocked and confused for years. He eventually realized that his intelligence work, although arguably the most effective the West had ever seen in Southeast Asia, produced an undesirable answer. Communism could not be damned as an evil if the people wanted it. If that fact became widely known, our Vietnam adventure could be seen in an unsavory light: killing millions to prevent them from choosing a government we disapproved of. The American experience in Vietnam was an attempt at [reconquering the region](#), keeping it in the [capitalistic fold](#) and keeping those people enslaved.

McGehee still believed his indoctrination and volunteered for Saigon, something that no sane CIA employee did in 1968. McGehee was a true believer in America's good intentions, even if their tactics sometimes seemed regrettable. Defeating the communists was his great desire.

One pivotal evening in his quarters near Saigon in December of 1968, McGehee finally figured it out.

"I sat there in agony thinking about all that had led me to this private hell. My idealism, my patriotism, my ambition, my plans to be a good intelligence officer to help my country fight the communist scourge - what in the hell had happened? Why did we have to bomb the people we were trying to save? Why were we napalming young children? Why did the CIA, my employer for 16 years, report lies instead of the truth?

"I hated my part in the charade of murder and horror. My efforts were contributing to the deaths, to the burning alive of children - especially the children. The photographs of young Vietnamese children burned by napalm destroyed me."

McGehee will never lose the memory of the smell of burning Vietnamese flesh. McGehee thought of killing himself that night in Vietnam. He thought of various ways to kill himself to protest what was happening. In the end, however, he committed his life to telling the world what really happened in Vietnam and the true nature of America's fight against communism. McGehee embarked on the hard, lonely road of exposing what his nation was really up to.

When his devastating tour of duty in Vietnam was finished, McGehee left:

"I was glad to be going home. But I knew I would never be the same person again. All of my ideals of helping people, all my convictions about the processes of intelligence, all my respect for my work, all the feelings of joy in my life, all my concepts of honor, integrity, trust and love, all in fact that made me what I was, had died in Vietnam. Through its blindness and its murders, the Agency had stolen my life and my soul. Full of anger, hatred, and fear, I bitterly contemplated a dismal future."

The year was 1970, and McGehee had nearly twenty years of CIA service. He spent mere weeks in the United States before returning to Thailand. He sought somewhere to serve out his career's remaining years; somewhere he could stand living. Ironically, he saw the fruit of his anti-communist efforts in Thailand. The peaceful culture of Southeast Asia was destroyed by American involvement. Where McGehee had earlier witnessed pastoral scenes of Thai and Vietnamese people quietly living their lives, Southeast Asia had been turned into an armed camp, with violence, drug use and prostitution commonplace. A barbed-wire fence surrounded the Thai school that his children happily attended on an earlier tour of duty. The students were bodily searched as they entered the school's grounds. The Thai government destroyed the villages that McGehee had "helped" on his earlier tours. He helped establish the framework that destroyed those that he "helped." He became a squeaky cog in the machine and was put on probation.

McGehee soon returned to Langley, spending several years getting educated in the CIA's archives. He finally understood what communism meant to the communists, and realized that the Western view of communism was a fantasy to justify our violence against them. They were not trying to conquer the world. They sought freedom. For that crime, America [murdered millions of them](#). McGehee retired after spending 25 years with the agency, accepting a career achievement medal so his future work could not be called that of a CIA employee with a failed career. He began his book's conclusion with:

"The CIA is not now nor has it ever been a central intelligence agency. It is the covert action arm of the President's foreign policy advisers. In that capacity it overthrows or supports foreign governments while reporting "intelligence" justifying those activities. [McGehee says he has never once seen a CIA official tell the truth to Congress. Instead comes a steady stream of lies. - Ed.] It shapes its intelligence, even in such critical areas as Soviet nuclear weapon capability, to support presidential policy. Disinformation is a large part of its covert action responsibility, and the American people are the primary target of its lies.

"As noted in the Church Committee's final report, the Agency's task is to develop an international anti-communist ideology. The CIA then links every egalitarian [which means "all men are created equal" - Ed.] political movement to the scourge of international communism. This then prepares the American people and many in the world community for the second stage, the destruction of those movements. For egalitarianism is the enemy and it must not be allowed to exist."

McGehee called for the CIA's abolition in *Deadly Deceits*, describing it as an unsalvageable organization. In *Deadly Deceits'* appendix, McGehee reported on the gauntlet that he ran to publish the book. He did not want to lose his pension, go to jail or leave the country, so he abided by the secrecy agreement he signed when joining the CIA. The appendix begins:

"The secrecy agreement that I signed when I joined the CIA allows the Agency to review prior to publication all writings of present and former employees to ensure that classified information relating to national security is not revealed. This provision seems logical and necessary to protect legitimate interests. However, my experiences in getting this book approved show that the CIA uses the agreement not so much to protect national security as to prevent revelations and criticisms of its immoral, illegal, and ineffective operations. To that end it uses all

possible maneuvers, legal and illegal. Had I not been represented by my attorney, Mark Lynch of the American Civil Liberties Union, and had I not developed a massive catalog of information already cleared by the Agency's publication review board, this book could not have been published."

McGehee's dark journey in publishing *Deadly Deceits* is a damning indictment of U.S. secrecy laws and their enforcement. The CIA tried ambushing McGehee with a room full of lawyers, before they knew he hired a lawyer with the necessary security clearance to represent him. The CIA man assigned to work with McGehee made his feelings plain, telling him, "It's too bad you didn't work for the Israeli intelligence service. They know how to deal with people like you. They'd take you out and shoot you."

McGehee's original manuscript contained nothing that he felt was classified information, and he was careful. The CIA made 397 deletions from his original draft, after retracting hundreds of their more whimsical deletions, made before discovering that he had obtained competent counsel. The legal battle took more than two years, and the CIA went around in circles. They would permit certain passages after battling with McGehee, then they would retract that permission, then grant it again, then take it away once more, and on different grounds each time. The CIA's effort was an incredible feat of double-talk and duplicity. At one point, Ralph was threatened with prosecution for stealing state secrets if he could not prove that every fact in his book was obtained in the public domain. The published book is riddled with censorship deletions, with text such as "[19 words deleted]" in the middle of a sentence. McGehee states:

"John Marks and Victor Marchetti's book *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, published in 1974 (9 years before McGehee's book), was the last approved critical book written about the Agency by an ex-employee. In light of my own experiences the reason is obvious: the secrecy agreement and the way it is abused by the Agency. It is virtually impossible to write in an atmosphere where everything is secret until it is deemed otherwise....It is clear that the secrecy agreement does not halt the flow of information to our enemies, for it does not affect the CIA employee who sells information...What the CIA's secrecy agreement does quite effectively, however, is to stop critics of the Agency from explaining to the American public what the CIA is and does. It is sad to say, but the truth is that the primary purpose of the secrecy agreement is to suppress information that the American people are legitimately entitled to."

For all the mainstream media's rhetoric regarding the First Amendment, freedom of speech in America has had a rough ride. From the [Sedition Act of 1798](#), making it a crime to criticize high-ranking American officials (not dealt with by the [U.S. Supreme Court](#) until 1964, in the *New York Times* versus Sullivan decision), to pre-Civil War Southern laws making it a crime to speak or write about abolition, to the [Espionage Act](#) that made it a crime to criticize World War I, freedom of speech has often been more imagined than real in America. During my lifetime, freedom of speech has waxed and waned.

The Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) would be unnecessary if the principle of freedom truly guided the American legal system. The FOIA was originally passed during the Civil Rights days of the 1960s. The Nixon years saw the FOIA erode. The aftermath of the Watergate scandal tipped the scales back toward freedom. The Carter years saw a new openness in government and a focus on human rights, but that is relative. Under no U.S. president have we truly had freedom of information, nor have [human rights concerns](#) ever prominently guided America's foreign policy. Knowledge is power, and keeping information secret is a time-honored method

of amassing and maintaining power. The United States is no exception, and there is no reason why it should be. People can wave around the [Constitution](#), but America's freedom of information is scant for a nation that calls itself democratic, and has gotten worse since the [World Trade Center](#) attacks. America's military and spy establishment has the largest secrecy apparatus of any nation, by far.

The rich and powerful run the Democratic Party, the same as in the Republican Party, but the Democratic Party sometimes has at least an *appearance* of allegiance to average Americans. The FOIA has endured many vicissitudes in my lifetime, with the [Reagan-Bush](#) years witnessing the greatest assaults on the FOIA. The Reagan administration even tried *reclassifying* previously declassified information used in McGehee's book, to enter bizarre, Orwellian realms. [Bludgeoning Central America](#) was one of many dark acts committed during the Reagan-Bush years, and secrecy was its handmaiden, evident in the Iran-Contra scandal, among others. Although the pendulum swung marginally back to freedom's side during Bill Clinton's reign, freedom of speech in America is a farce if one offends or exposes the powerful. Today, the "anti-terrorist" legislation Clinton has championed, and his recent "Fortress America" ideas of protecting America from "terrorists," can easily be used to silence American critics of our government, by calling them "terrorists." Those fears, voiced continually in right wing circles, are not so farfetched (events since the [World Trade Center attacks](#) make the above writing quite dated, as [Bush](#), Ashcroft and friends seem to be trying to raise McCarthy from the grave).

To date, Ralph is one of a handful of ex-CIA employees to publicly criticize the CIA. Ralph does not agree with me, but I believe he did not attain his realizations due to his intelligence, which is considerable. He figured it out because he fervently digested his indoctrination and believed that his efforts made the world better. Because he was such a true believer he chased experiences (such as volunteering for Saigon in 1968) that eventually provided him with his devastating revelations. When he realized that his efforts helped murder millions of people in Southeast Asia, his conscience assailed him. His pure heart enabled him to figure it out, not his intelligence.

I can only wonder how often Ralph thinks back to those Southeast Asians that he "helped," abetting their horrific experiences at the United States' bloody hands. He probably thinks about it every day. His CIABASE and other efforts have been attempts to help balance *his* scales, while helping us awaken, to help prevent further murders in greed's name. Unfortunately, it is happening in [Iraq](#) today, and Armageddon might be just around the corner. Ralph's weathering of the CIA's continuing harassment has been inspiring. [John Stockwell](#) (another rare ex-CIA employee who spoke out, and has paid dearly for his efforts) has written, "More effectively than any other ex-CIA author, Ralph McGehee deals with the anguish of a principled man seeking a career in the CIA."

Ralph is the rare individual possessing the integrity to walk his arduous and heartbreaking path. Of the many thousands who have filed through the CIA's ranks during the past fifty years, Ralph is in an elite company of less than ten people who woke up and took a public stance. That list includes Philip Agee, John Stockwell, Victor Marchetti and David McMichael. There are not many more, and probably no others of their stature. They have my admiration, and even my awe. None of them think of themselves as heroes. As [Noam Chomsky](#) says, their motivation is partly being able to look themselves squarely in the eye while shaving. They are responding to the insistent call of their consciences, and feel compelled to act. Ralph McGehee and those few others like him rarely see themselves as heroes, but are doing what any decent person would do. The problem is, few will do the decent thing if it might really cost them. I will always be grateful for the "heroic" efforts of McGehee, Chomsky, Agee, Stockwell, McMichael, Marchetti, [Dennis Lee](#) and others. They helped me figure out how our system works.

Wade Frazier, Seattle, March 1999 (slightly revised since original publication)

P.S. in 2004, [John Perkins](#) spoke out like Ralph did, but from the privatized “middle management.”

The Next Section: [Investigating Possible Conspiracies and Cover-ups – JFK, The Moon Landings, etc.](#)
(429K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Investigating Possible Conspiracies and Cover-ups – JFK, The Moon Landings, etc.

By Wade Frazier

Introduction

Gary Wean and the JFK Assassination

Assessing the Credibility of Gary's Story, and How it Fits the Facts

The Backyard Photos

The Nature of the JFK Assassination Affair

Why Are There So Many Conspiracy Theories Today?

The Dangers of Investigating Conspiracies and Cover-ups

What about Those American Hostages in Iran?

9/11 – The Mother of all Conspiracy Theories

Is Anything Being Covered up about the Apollo Moon Landings?

Some Apollo Mission Anomalies

Possibilities regarding the Apollo anomalies

The Nature of the Moon Landings Debate

The Big Cover-up

Introduction

I was born in 1958, and had a fairly typical middle class suburban American childhood (fan of *Gilligan's Island* and *Star Trek*). I was largely raised in Ventura, California; my mother ran the household while my father worked to support the family. His entire career was spent working for the federal government, and all but one year was spent working for the Department of Defense. The nearby military bases employed most of the area's professionals, so some of my friends' fathers (as well as several of my father's friends) also worked for the military. If anything, the political outlook I was raised with was fairly Cold War, but not too pronounced. I was taught that the Soviets were the bad guys, and my family generally supported politicians

from the Democratic Party. My father was rather outraged when Nixon won the presidency in 1968, and I was saddened when Reagan beat Carter in 1980. My political outlook was a fairly mainstream one, which means that I was ignorant. I read the newspaper virtually everyday, from age 10 to 27, thinking that I was getting the “[news](#).” I had some [spiritual training that came in handy later on](#), but I was like most people of my age, assimilating my indoctrination. I kept my eyes open to see how closely reality matched my ideals, because I *needed* to honestly believe in my ideals.

Upon graduating from college, I had a rather rude awakening, and [indoctrination and ideals brutally collided with reality](#). I eventually realized that my profession was [virtually worthless](#), although that full realization was not clear for several years. Then I met [Dennis Lee](#), and was able to live my dreams of trying to bring alternative energy to the world. After meeting Dennis, I had a very rude awakening. That was when my political education began in earnest. Our efforts at developing alternative energy were definitely the targets of conspiracies. Policemen and others committed felonies while pursuing us, [leading to the death of one woman](#). We received offers to buy us out, which culminated in an offer probably in excess of \$1 billion, to bribe us to stop pursuing alternative energy. When [Dennis rejected the offer](#) made by “European interests,” given through a [CIA man](#), a month later Dennis was [thrown into jail](#) with a million dollar bail, on fabricated charges.^[1]

As Dennis attained national visibility with his free energy promotion, numerous people approached us who had tried similar ventures, and we were told nightmarish stories of being [wiped out by conspiratorial activities](#). Kangaroo courts, prison and murder; threatening phone calls in the night and hiding from the murderers were common tales, the kind that few Americans hear first-hand. It became obvious that the [energy industry](#) has maintained its technological monopoly by using extremely dirty tactics. It is one thing to hear the tales; it is quite another to live through them.

The first alternative political literature I read, other than the [Christian Science Monitor](#) (which is only *slightly* alternative), was conspiratorial literature, from conspiracies regarding instigating our wars, to [controlling the banking system](#), to eliminating the United States’ sovereignty. While Dennis was still in jail, I was introduced to [Noam Chomsky](#) and the political left. Ever since, I have studied scholarship such as Chomsky's far more than right-wing scholarship. I consider left wing scholarship superior. They both explain how the world works. Their perspectives can be divergent, but sometimes are nearly identical. It can be hazardous to over-generalize, but right-wing scholarship is often centered on conspiracies, while left-wing scholarship is more interested in the “structural” aspects of our system’s workings. The right sees the activities as more conscious (conspiratorial), while the left sees it as more unconscious (structural, institutional behavior). It probably has something to do with their spiritual outlook, with fundamentalist Christians populating the right, and scientists and rationalists populating the left. Both have their creation myths. The Christian right has the book of Genesis, while the left has the Big Bang and evolution. One was conscious, while the other was a big and unfathomable accident.

[Each perspective](#) has its strengths and weaknesses. The right can veer into outright paranoia, seeing a conspiracy behind every bush, ignoring or underplaying the structural aspects of what is happening. The police may throw people in jail for [curing cancer](#), but may not know the real reason they threw them in jail (or [even care](#)). They were just following orders.

The left often suffers from what Michael Parenti terms a “[conspiracy phobia](#).”^[2] It has a tendency to see everything as a big accident, with institutional forces at play and few, if any, individuals really controlling a

situation's outcome. It seems afflicted by too-often rejecting the notion that people can be consciously malicious and act in concert. Only a small proportion of our populace is devoted to "evil." In the minds of those devoted to "evil," they are simply devoted to themselves. They see themselves as good guys, too. The dark path is simply being devoted to one's self at the extreme, and they have made [self-service a science](#). All the same, conscious evil is a small fraction of how the world works, which [even Hitler admitted](#). The rest is due to people's actions when they feel threatened with loss, enticed by gain, and so forth. Those on the dark path easily manipulate the herd of average people, who are preoccupied with comfort and survival.

Gary Wean and the JFK Assassination

[In early 1989](#), it appeared as if Dennis had no chance of living to see this side of the bars again. There were a handful of people trying to save him from life in prison, and probably being murdered while he was in there. Although our effort was the target of a wide-ranging international conspiracy, Ventura County was also one of the United States' most corrupt counties, regularly ranking in the top ten most corrupt law enforcement jurisdictions (it has even been ranked number one). Dennis was far from alone in being raped by Ventura County's legal system.

In Ventura County, one person in particular was standing up to the corruption. Gary Wean was a sailor in World War II and became an LAPD policeman in 1946. Gary had the kind of career that they make movies about. He moved back and forth between Ventura County and Los Angeles a couple of times in the 1950s and 1960s. While in Los Angeles, Gary was at times a motorcycle cop directing traffic, while at others he was a detective. He worked out of the downtown and Hollywood precincts. Dealing with the escapades of politicians, celebrities and gangsters was simply part of his job.

In 1947, he was pursuing an armed robber through the streets of Los Angeles on a high-speed chase. The suspect crashed his car as it barreled along at ninety miles an hour through LA's streets. He tried escaping on foot, and Gary cornered him in the dark. The suspect begged for his life. As Gary approached, the man stuck his pistol (which had already killed somebody during the robbery) into Gary's abdomen and fired. He fired a second shot that hit Gary in his hand. Gary then emptied his pistol into the man, while his partner also fired, killing the robber instantly. Gary's partner rushed him to the hospital. Although Gary's abdomen was in great pain, he did not want to unbuckle his Sam Brown belt (a wide leather belt which held his firearm and other police equipment) as they rushed to the hospital, because he thought it might be all that was holding him together. When Gary finally took off his belt, his partner saw that the bullet hit the belt and did not penetrate Gary's skin.[\[3\]](#) That was a day in the life of an LAPD cop. Below are images from that day.



Click on image to enlarge.

Gary relates many amazing incidents in his book *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*. Gary was from the old school: he believed in the ideal of law enforcement, and that through a properly functioning legal system there could be a more just society.

When I met Gary in early 1989, he gave me the best advice I could get: no organization in America would help Dennis, either governmental or private. Dennis' experience was not that unusual. U.S. judicial gangsterism was normal, but nearly always [covered up or misrepresented by the media](#), as they are an integral part of the system. Gary's advice kept me from wasting my time seeking somebody in the United States government to help. Gary's insight helped lead to Dennis' miraculous release from jail. In my hour of need, Gary was generous with his time, sincere, and helpful.

The first edition of *There's a Fish in the Courthouse* was published in 1987, and tells of an incredible meeting that Gary attended in late 1963. One of Gary's friends was [Audie Murphy](#), America's most decorated war hero who became a Hollywood movie star. During World War II, Murphy took on hundreds of German soldiers and six tanks single-handedly near Holtzwihr France, while he was firing a machine gun from atop a burning vehicle filled with explosives. It stands as one of the most heroic feats from any war. Murphy suffered from "shell shock" (now called Post Traumatic Stress Syndrome) for the rest of his life.

One of Murphy's friends was Bill Decker, the sheriff of Dallas County. Decker came to California regularly on business, and when he came to town, Gary would arrange for Murphy, Decker, himself and his partner to dine at the Police Academy. About two weeks after the JFK assassination, in early December 1963, Decker was in town and they all had lunch together. The topic of conversation quickly turned to what arms experts across the nation were discussing: how could Oswald have made those shots with that poor shooting position and mediocre rifle to kill John Kennedy? Nobody at that table thought it was possible for Oswald to have made those shots. After they arrived at their conclusion, Decker told them that he *knew* Oswald had not fired the shots, and that a man in Dallas wanted to talk to somebody about it. Oswald died while being transferred to Decker's custody. Decker knew somebody who could set the record straight, and wanted to talk to somebody not connected to Dallas or Washington. Murphy was interested, and the next week, Murphy, Gary and his partner were flying to Ruidoso, New Mexico to meet Decker and his friend.

They met at the airport and went to a diner to talk. The man who came with Decker was named John. According to John, Oswald was anything but a "lone nut." He was a U.S. intelligence agent acting under the direction of E. Howard Hunt. Oswald had been recruited into military intelligence when he joined the Marines. His hanging out in an expensive Tokyo nightclub as a private, his learning Russian at the highly sensitive U-2 base in Japan, his defection to the Soviet Union and other oddities were all part of his intelligence career (which probably began even before his Marine days, when he was a cadet in 1955 in David Ferrie's Civil Air Patrol unit. "Coincidentally," Oswald began his "fascination" with communism at the same time). Oswald was developing "communist" credentials for his future activities in infiltrating communist organizations. It was a fairly normal American intelligence path.[\[4\]](#)

Oswald was inducted into CIA covert activities and came under Hunt's direction. Hunt was a major player in mounting the failed Bay of Pigs invasion, and he, as with many others in the military and CIA, blamed Kennedy for the failure (Kennedy refused to call in openly American air support). Hunt dreamed up the crazy assassination attempts on Castro that the United States tried. His mission in life was eliminating Castro. Oswald came into his control, and was thrown into the cauldron of the Cuban exile communities in Miami and New Orleans. Oswald did not initially know what his mission would be.

Hunt was paranoid about Oswald's Russian wife, thinking that she might be a Russian spy, so Oswald could tell her nothing about his activities. Oswald's joining Fair Play for Cuba and his staged "murder attempt" on General Walker were all part of giving Oswald "credentials" that would make his upcoming performance more believable. Hunt had concocted the most bizarre assassination intrigue of all time. Oswald was going to participate in a fake assassination attempt on John Kennedy, and frame Castro for it. Oswald's apparent visit to the Cuban Embassy in Mexico City was part of laying an elaborate trail to Cuba. Hunt believed that if Castro could be implicated in an assassination attempt on JFK, the American people could be riled up into supporting an outright invasion of Cuba.

JFK was not aware of the fake assassination plan, but high-ranking officials in the government and his administration were. Military intelligence, the FBI and the CIA were all involved. Oswald was initially leery of Hunt's plan, but with assurances and after seeing the high-level people involved, he went along with it. Oswald was to fire his rifle into the air, then go into hiding, and the false trail to Cuba was laid. He could come home to a hero's welcome and live a normal life after America had finished mopping up Cuba.

But something went horribly wrong. The fake assassination turned into a real one. Somebody had infiltrated the operation, interposed the mission and killed JFK. The real assassins tried killing Oswald after JFK was killed, but policeman Tippit was in the wrong place at the wrong time and was killed. Oswald escaped, to be captured alive. John said that he knew that Oswald would not have shot a policeman under any circumstances.

At the end of his mind-blowing tale, John handed over a thick manila envelope, sealed with wax with a thumbprint on it, that contained the documents John said would prove his story.

Murphy, Gary and his partner went back to California. They knew that the situation was too big and dangerous for them to pursue. John said that if he went public with his story, he would quickly disappear, never to be heard from again. A few days after that meeting, Decker called Murphy. As John was telling his story, the CIA and intelligence community was in shock. They did not know what to do, paralyzed with fear. As they recovered from their shock, they saw themselves facing the firing squad if their involvement in the assassination intrigue became known. The intelligence community decided they would do everything they could to cover their tracks, invoking "national security." Decker told Murphy that John had given him the envelope of documents in a moment of panic, and that if Murphy did not give the envelope back, he would be "destroyed." Murphy did some fast thinking and told Decker that they had torn the envelope into pieces and threw them out of the airplane as they were flying back to California.

That is what Gary says he witnessed, and I believe him. In the first edition of his book, Gary hid John's identity. Because John was dead when Gary published the second edition of his book in 1996, Gary revealed that "John" was John Tower, the Senator from Texas and George Bush's little buddy who he nominated to be the Secretary of Defense.

Gary wrote his book in the early 1970s. New evidence keeps coming to light regarding the JFK assassination. Because of what Gary saw, I knew that Oswald was not a lone nut. The center of gravity of my research into the JFK assassination has been to see how it correlated with Gary's testimony. Every piece of credible evidence I have seen supports Gary's story, and none contradicts it. Particularly impressive has been the recent revelations of [Operation Northwoods](#), where the U.S. government was going to stage terrorist acts in America to manipulate Americans into supporting an invasion of Cuba. Gary's story touches upon many facets of the JFK assassination evidence, including Oswald's military intelligence days, his association with the Cuban exiles, the "Texas Connection," the "Republican

Connection,” the oilman connection, the George Bush connection, the CIA connection, the FBI connection and others. Up until now (2002), Gary's testimony has been ignored by virtually everybody involved in investigating the JFK assassination. Gary is the only surviving member of that meeting with John Tower. Tower and Murphy both died in private plane “accidents” that may not have been accidental.

Gary's career ended in Ventura County when he stumbled into corruption that boggles the mind. Gary names names, and I knew some of the people he named in his book, and knew of many of the events. I independently believed his version of some events before I met him. When he encountered the corruption in Ventura, which ended his career, he fought back and survived a [murder attempt](#) himself. Those who run Ventura County are judges on the Superior Court, real estate developers, politicians and the like. According to Gary, political murder was common in Ventura County, where judges, lawyers and other people who got in the way or were expendable were murdered, sometimes by private plane “accidents,” mysterious drownings, etc.

Hollywood has made many movies and TV shows about the police and crime in Los Angeles, especially during the 1930s, 1940s and '50s, such as *LA Confidential* and *Chinatown*. Gary worked out of the downtown and Hollywood precincts during his days as an LAPD cop. Later in his career, he became an investigator for the LA District Attorney's Office. In the early days of Gary's career, he was assigned to keep watch on Mickey Cohen, who ran LA's organized crime operations. Cohen, Bugsy Siegel and Meyer Lansky were Jewish gangsters. Siegel “built” Las Vegas. Cohen ran the LA crime scene for many years. In typical gangster style, Cohen's hangouts were often boxing arenas, racetracks, restaurants, etc. Gary followed Cohen around as part of his job. One member of Cohen's entourage, who Gary saw regularly, was an aspiring lawyer who sat on the Ninth District Federal Court for many years. I saw his name in the news a few years ago, and he is still a judge, at nearly 80 years of age in 2002. The man is a gangster, and a federal judge, and the media and establishment has been lavishing praise on him lately, with awards and hagiographic articles.

The connection between Frank Sinatra and organized crime is one of many in the entertainment field (or the CIA, or [George Bush](#), or Joe Kennedy, or entertainment and law enforcement, such as Elvis Presley and the FBI, or the FBI and organized crime). Along with good food and pretty women, first-class entertainment is another gangster perk. Gangsters keep entertainers as their “pets” when they can. The Las Vegas connection and entertainment is a case in point. Cohen was deeply involved in the Hollywood scene.

One of Cohen's specialties was blackmailing celebrities, such as obtaining compromising photographs of them to use as leverage. The Mafia had the goods on FBI director J. Edgar Hoover, a transvestite. Because of their blackmail, Hoover publicly denied organized crime's existence, and the FBI rarely tried prosecuting them. When Robert Kennedy prosecuted organized crime when he was Attorney General, he was breaking the unwritten rules.

One of Cohen's successes involved Lana Turner. Johnny Stompanato was a good-looking, aspiring Italian gangster, one of the gangster wannabees that filled Los Angeles in those days. The LA hookers said that the Italian Stallion Stompanato was the best bedroom performer in LA, and Cohen arranged for him to meet Turner. The romance flourished. Cohen paid for a deluxe motel suite for the lovers. The bed was wired for sound. Cohen got a recording of Stompanato and Turner going at it. Cohen had two thousand copies pressed of Turner's squeals of ecstasy. It became a hit at Hollywood parties. Some said that it was one of Turner's finest performances. It made Cohen a lot of money, as he sold the record for fifty dollars a copy. Turner's daughter eventually murdered Stompanato, creating one of Hollywood's bigger scandals. That

recording became the “must have” item after Stompanato’s death, and Cohen pressed thousands more records, making big money.

As Gary followed Cohen, sometimes putting him under sophisticated surveillance, Gary met members of Cohen’s entourage. In 1946, Gary saw somebody new with Cohen at the racetrack. In 1947, he bumped into him at a restaurant he was watching. The man knew Gary was a cop, yet they had an interesting conversation. The man introduced himself as Jack Ruby. His real name was Jacob Rubenstein, and he worked with Mick Cohen. Ruby openly told Gary that the mob was focusing its operations on New Orleans and Havana, where the action was. With World War II over, the West Coast was not really the happening place anymore. Ruby murdered Oswald, and Gary presents intriguing evidence regarding the organized crime connection with the JFK assassination.

In 1948, the state of Israel was established. Menachem Begin eventually became Israel's Prime Minister. Begin was a member of the [Irgun terrorist group](#). He helped blow up a hotel, killing many people. When Begin was the Israeli Prime Minister, he could not visit Britain, because he was wanted for murder there. The people who established Israel were extremely violent. Mick Cohen became involved with Begin, and became an arms dealer for Israel, which is not surprising to anybody who has done any digging into the [CIA's alliances](#). Cohen said that his Jewish blood made him such a fervent supporter of Israel, but he was likely in it for the money, as usual.

In Israel’s early days, their relationship with the United States was not happy, and was particularly troubled during the Eisenhower administration.^[5] It was not until the war of 1967, when [Israel proved itself a murderously aggressive power](#) in the Middle East, grabbing huge chunks of land from its neighbors, that the United States began its massive and unconditional support of Israel, which is the biggest foreign aid project the world has ever seen. In 1960, the U.S. presidential election was between Nixon (Eisenhower’s vice president) and John Kennedy.

Kennedy was a legendary philanderer, and Cohen and friends tried exploiting JFK’s proclivities. According to legend, John Kennedy met Marilyn Monroe through a connection with Frank Sinatra. Right there is a possible organized crime connection, but Gary says that another member of the “rat pack,” Joey Bishop (who knew Cohen well - Gary says that Bishop even *worked* for Cohen), came up with the idea of introducing Monroe to JFK, and Gary looked in on Peter Lawford’s (JFK’s in-law) Malibu party where JFK and Monroe were introduced, in 1960, during the Democratic national convention.

As with Stompanato and Turner, Cohen underling Georgie Piscitelli became Monroe’s lover. Cohen got a tape of them in bed together and played it for Jimmy Hoffa, the Teamster boss who later received cement shoes from the Mafia, and who was then feeling the heat from Attorney General Bobby Kennedy. They promised Hoffa a tape of JFK and Monroe in bed together (so Hoffa could blackmail JFK into calling off Bobby Kennedy’s efforts), but could never deliver. Monroe was being used as the world’s highest-class hooker.^[6] Cohen and friends wanted to know what Kennedy's intentions towards Israel were. Monroe was supposed to elicit it during pillow talk. Monroe was controlled by mobsters and was kept on all manner of narcotic. When she became increasingly uncontrollable and potentially dangerous if she publicly talked about what was happening, she was murdered. Gary had Cohen under surveillance, and caught him and Begin having a conversation in Yiddish in a diner. They were talking about Kennedy, Israel, how much money Kennedy was wasting on the Peace Corps and other programs.

Gary’s testimony regarding JFK, John Tower, Marilyn Monroe, Menachem Begin, Jack Ruby and Mick Cohen is just part of his amazing tale, which he published at great risk. The only JFK assassination book I

am aware of that even mentions Gary is *Final Judgment*, by Michael Collins Piper, who heavily relies on Gary's testimony. Gary thinks that Jewish gangsters were involved in interposing Hunt's grand scheme. That does not mean that [Allen Dulles](#) (the CIA chief whom Kennedy fired over the Bay of Pigs, and who later served on the Warren Commission), J. Edgar Hoover, [George Bush](#) and others were not also involved in interposing Hunt's scheme, playing Hunt for a chump.

Piper is a reporter for *The Spotlight*, which I subscribed to for years. It has understandably been described as a neo-Nazi, anti-Semitic publication. The culmination of Gary's book is uncovering a vast Jewish crime organization. It is different from the Italian Mafia, as its members are judges, politicians and other public figures. It is a highly intelligent crime organization, using the pen more than the gun to achieve its goals. The most powerful criminals do not *break* the laws: they *make* and *enforce* the laws, to serve their own interests, not the public's.

Gary has suffered greatly at the hands of Jewish gangsters. Consequently, I believe he has taken his Jewish theorizing a little too far, but it is understandable. [During my days with Dennis](#) and the horror I lived through, I thought policeman and [lawyers](#) were among the lowest forms of life. I have since revised my views, but I understand how brutal treatment at the hands of Jewish gangsters can lead to overgeneralizations regarding the Jewish people.

[The Jewish people have had a very rough ride](#), especially at Christendom's hands. The flocking of Jews to Southern California was just one more chapter in their long journeys, trying to find a place in the Christian world where they would not be discriminated against, or murdered en masse. Consequently, Jews entered new industries such as the entertainment industry in Hollywood, and some took advantage of Prohibition, just as Italian criminals did. Cohen, Siegel and Lansky were part of a uniquely American phenomenon. What Gary ran into, a Jewish underworld where the criminals were bankers, judges, lawyers, politicians and others, is an understandable Jewish variation of organized crime. The Jewish gangsters also sought "invisibility," which is also common in corporate and other power games.

Even though Gary has taken his theorizing about the Jewish people too far, he is correct when he says that Jewish apologists have been using the cry of "anti-Semitism" as a club to prevent anybody from criticizing Israel (and Gary says the same tactic prevents the exposure of Jewish gangster activities). Noam Chomsky says the same thing about how the cry of anti-Semitism is being used to deflect criticism of the Israeli state.^[7] So does Native American scholar Ward Churchill.^[8] Jewish scholars are definitely guilty of [playing up the Jewish Holocaust](#) and its imagined historical exclusivity, to the point where some have denied the Gypsy Holocaust of World War II. Gypsies were subject to the same extermination policies as the Jews were, dying alongside the Jews in the same death camps. All the same, the far-right scholarship that argues that [the Jewish Holocaust never happened](#), or was never intended by the Nazis, is, in the words of Ward Churchill, "tripe." If one is not familiar with scholarship's "rules," the-Jewish-Holocaust-Never-Happened scholarship can appear reasonable. Far right scholarship on the subject is extremely biased, and is often appallingly bad. Typically, they use a few "facts" to establish their arguments, but then liberally add rumor, supposition and fabrication into the mix to construct their hypothesis.

All disinformation has "truth" and "facts" in it (which is what makes it plausible), and to the uninitiated can unfortunately be convincing. Probably the main reason Gary's testimony is dismissed is because of his fervent writings about Jewish gangsters, and generalizations about the Jewish people that can easily be labeled anti-Semitic. In 1998, I submitted a brief essay about Gary's testimony to a JFK assassination forum, and the only response was to flame me, call my writing a "fairy tale," call Murphy a "coward" and Gary a "Nazi." Yet, Gary's theories have virtually nothing to do with what Gary says he witnessed. I

believe everything that Gary says he saw, including his meeting with John Tower, and Jews do not come up in the John Tower conversation at all.

The surfacing of the [Operation Northwoods](#) documents in 2001, however, may make Gary's testimony vastly more credible, as Tower's tale is very similar to the plans as depicted in the Operations Northwoods documents. I have spent hundreds of hours looking into the JFK assassination evidence since 1989, and I have never seen any piece of credible evidence contradict Gary's testimony, and evidence has kept appearing during the past fourteen years that keeps confirming it. The next section will deal Gary's account of John Tower and JFK, and how it fits today's evidence.

Assessing the Credibility of Gary's Story, and How it Fits the Facts

Up until now, Gary's testimony regarding Tower and JFK has been ignored by, or unknown to, nearly everybody involved in the JFK assassination controversy. This section is written in the hope that the recent [Operation Northwoods](#) revelations will spark more interest in Gary's tale. James Bamford, the author who brought the Northwoods documents to American attention in his *Body of Secrets* (an Australian work, Jon Elliston's 1999 *Psy War on Cuba*, first publicly disclosed the documents, but the book was ignored in the U. S.), wrote that the Northwoods plan "may be the most corrupt plan ever created by the U.S. government."[\[9\]](#) There is plenty of competition for "most corrupt plan" in American history.

George Washington, probably America's richest man when he became president, whose fortune was anything but "clean," designed the blueprint to [steal the North American continent](#) from Native Americans, by forcing them to cede their lands in treaties that the U.S. government would never honor. Washington's plan was quickly adopted by the Continental Congress, and was U.S. official policy until there were virtually no more native lands left to steal. Thomas Jefferson told Big Lies to both the [British](#) and [Spanish](#) ambassadors about U.S. intentions toward North American lands. The U.S. government [during the 19th century](#) was more openly corrupt than in the twentieth century.

The 20th century began with the U.S. consolidating its theft of the last shreds of Spain's colonial lands, which began with robber baron William Randolph Hearst whipping up the American people to invade Cuba, to "free them" from Spain (under the false pretense that Cuba sank an American warship in Havana Harbor). The lie of the U.S.' "noble intentions" was immediately laid bare when it also [seized the Philippines](#), and then engaged in a genocidal attack against the Filipinos when they tried becoming independent of the new imperial overlords. To the Filipinos, it mattered little if the overlords were Spanish, American or Japanese. While the U.S. was still digesting its land grabs from Spain, it engaged in its first experiment in neocolonialism, with the [outright theft and fabrication of Panama, separating it from Colombia](#), and then the U.S. immediately split it with the Panama Canal Zone. The United States [invaded Latin America at will](#) after the creation of Panama.

Panama was a free nation in name only. Wall Street lawyer [William Nelson Cromwell](#) ran the "free Panama" operation. He was a founder of the Sullivan and Cromwell law firm. In the Panama operation, Cromwell ran a syndicate largely bankrolled by J.P. Morgan, and the American taxpayer was ultimately swindled by their subterfuge, in the biggest single payment the American government had ever made, up to that time. John Foster Dulles inherited Cromwell's empire. Dulles became Eisenhower's Secretary of State, and his brother Allen ran the CIA. Both men were partners in Sullivan and Cromwell. Allen and John

Foster were particularly fond of Nazi Germany, heavily investing in it during the 1930s. After World War II ended, Allen quickly “rehabilitated” [Hitler’s biggest cheerleaders in German banking and industry](#), and put them right back into the positions they enjoyed while supporting Hitler’s regime.

John Foster Dulles’ behaviors while serving as Eisenhower’s Secretary of State added a new word to the dictionary: brinksmanship. Dulles’ notion of diplomacy with the Soviet Union was threatening it with nuclear attack. The Cromwell-Dulles empire was quite active in Latin America. One of Sullivan and Cromwell’s clients was the Rockefeller-owned United Fruit, which “owned” Guatemala. In 1951, Jacobo Arbenz became Guatemala’s president, and he nationalized some of United Fruit’s unused land, with a plan to compensate them for it. Arbenz was a fan of Franklin Roosevelt, and tried building a New Deal-style economy in Guatemala. Citing the “international communist conspiracy” fantasy, the Dulles brothers [engineered the overthrow of Arbenz in 1954](#), and the Guatemalan people were treated to a string of brutal U.S.-puppet-dictators for more than the next thirty years, which took hundreds of thousands of lives, while the entire nation (except for the ruling class) lived in misery. The year before overthrowing the Guatemalan government, the Dulles brothers reacted to Iran’s attempt to nationalize Britain’s oil monopoly [by overthrowing the Iranian government](#). The U.S. began taking over Middle East oil on behalf of the American oil companies, which “coincidentally” also served Rockefeller interests. The Shah’s reign was one of the bloodier chapters in modern Middle East history.

The 1950s also saw the U.S. invasion of Korea, and millions were killed. Those were also the years of the McCarthy witch hunts and the [marketing of industrial waste](#) to Americans as “medicine.” So, corruption was far from unknown, especially during that era, and far right, anti-communist hysteria was imbedded in America’s psyche as deeply as any catechism ever was. People such as Ralph McGehee eventually realized [what a Big Lie the anti-communist ideology was](#). It was a smokescreen designed to disguise and protect imperial/corporate prerogatives.

When Castro’s boys finally overthrew a U.S. puppet in Latin America in 1959, the super-hawks in the Eisenhower administration could barely contain themselves. As with most who have been called “communist,” Castro was originally simply an anti-imperialist, and Cuba has long had Latin America’s highest standard of living, ever since the Cuban Revolution (there are no homeless in Cuba, something the U.S. could learn from). The thought that other Latin American nations might follow Cuba’s example and break free of American domination was intolerable, and in the 1960s and 1970s the U.S. overthrew more than a dozen elected Latin American governments and installed U.S.-backed dictatorships, some of which were among the 20th century’s bloodiest regimes.[\[10\]](#) The official reason why America has named Cuba a pariah nation, and led economic warfare against it for more than forty years, is because of its “human rights” violations. The American-puppet governments in [Guatemala and El Salvador](#) during the 1980s make Castro’s Cuba appear saintly on the human rights issue. The same goes for today’s Colombia (earth’s most violent nation), as the [Colombian government](#) receives vast sums of arms from the U.S., to “fight terror.” The rationale used to be to fight “communists,” and then “drug dealers” after the Soviet Union collapsed, and now we are fighting “terror” in Colombia. What will the next rationale be? The same peasants are being killed, and the same oil companies are rubbing their hands at the prospects of exploiting the region.

Eisenhower was rather incensed that the Cuban Revolution came during his watch, and asked his military leaders to “think of manufacturing something that would be generally acceptable” to justify invading Cuba. Eisenhower even harbored those ideas as a lame duck president, soon before JFK’s inauguration.[\[11\]](#) Shortly before Eisenhower left office, he appointed a hawk among hawks, General Lyman Lemnitzer, to be

the chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS). Lemnitzer thoroughly distrusted civilian politicians, and felt that the military should run the American government. Ironically, Lemnitzer's kind may be just what Eisenhower was warning against when he ominously spoke of the growing power of the "military-industrial complex," three days before he left office.

The antagonism between the military and CIA goes back to World War II, when Wild Bill Donovan and other Wall Street lawyers and executives founded and ran the Office of Strategic Services (OSS - the [direct forerunner of the CIA](#)), and they prevailed in the battle over who ran the U.S. intelligence scene, and quickly [hired Nazis to staff the CIA](#) after World War II was over.

JFK came to office as the CIA was about to mount an invasion of Cuba. Lemnitzer knew it would be a disaster, but remained silent. The Bay of Pigs debacle cost Allen Dulles his job, but did nothing to cool the hawks' ardor. While E. Howard Hunt, who planned the Bay of Pigs operation (and would later plan the Watergate break-in), was devising plans to assassinate Castro, with plans seemingly out of Maxwell Smart's spy manual, General Lemnitzer and friends devised plans to justify invading Cuba, and Operation Northwoods was conceived. Although some caution is warranted regarding the authenticity of the [Northwoods](#) documents, they are in step with the times, and what the Joint Chiefs of Staff were thinking in those days. Not even the establishment-defending mainstream media is disputing the documents' authenticity. Only some of the far right fringe is disputing them, to my knowledge, and they have yet to make a persuasive case. The documents appear genuine, and only came to light when Oliver Stone's film *JFK* inspired the creation of the Assassination Records Review Board (ARRB), which was formed in 1994.

An ARRB member allegedly tipped off Bamford as to the documents' existence, and they might be the only documents like them to survive Lemnitzer's document-destroying fervor. What kinds of plans are in the Northwoods documents? An early idea was to stage a fake attack on the Guantanamo Bay naval base in Cuba. The Northwoods ideas became increasingly extreme, and one plan was blowing up the rocket that John Glenn was about to fly in, and pin it on Cuba somehow. They planned plane hijackings and bombings of American cities. One plan that has received attention from the 9/11 conspiracy theorists was to stage an incident over Cuba with a drone plane made to look like an airliner. The plane would self-destruct over Cuba, to make it appear as if the Cubans shot it down. Lemnitzer reported to John McNamara, JFK's Secretary of Defense. Lemnitzer increasingly fell from grace in the JFK administration, and a few days after Lemnitzer tried broaching his grand plan to McNamara, JFK told Lemnitzer that there was no chance of the U.S. ever using direct military force against Cuba. That was in 1962, and Lemnitzer soon lost his job as the JCS chairman, but Bamford wrote, "Even after Lemnitzer lost his job, the Joint Chiefs kept planning 'pretext' operations at least into 1963."[\[12\]](#)

Having the military and government cooking up plans, no matter how insane, bloody or evil they might seem, does not mean they were ever approved or implemented. When McNamara was confronted with the Northwoods revelations, he denied that Lemnitzer ever showed him the plan, which may have been true. JFK's speechwriter Theodore Sorensen also denied such a plan, saying that it would have been "illegal" and "unwise." Being illegal and unwise has rarely stopped the U.S. government from doing anything, particularly during the current "[War on Terror](#)" and impending invasion of Iraq. Before the Soviet Union set off its first nuclear bomb, the U.S. military had a plan for dropping [dozens of atomic bombs on the Soviet Union](#), and then using the U.S.' Nazi-allies to finish the job. Cooler heads prevailed, thankfully. Similarly, after the U.S. dropped atom bombs on Japan, there were still die-hard Japanese generals who did not want to surrender. The man who designed the kamikaze attack strategy proposed a post-Hiroshima plan to sacrifice about twenty million Japanese citizens [in a special kamikaze attack](#). Once again, sanity prevailed. It is not imprudent to believe that the Northwoods documents are genuine, and that Lemnitzer

and friends seriously pondered them.

Whether the Northwoods plan was ever implemented, or capable of implementation, is not the point of this essay. The point is that the Northwoods plan was *eerily* similar to the tale that [Gary Wean reported](#). The plan that John Tower spoke of seems to have been a CIA parallel to the JCS plan, or perhaps its offspring. The plans are so similar in aims and means, that to not take Gary's testimony seriously is to ignore the evidence. Not only are the plans remarkably similar, with one targeting the America public for "terror," and the other targeting the head of state, but it is widely recognized that the Gulf of Tonkin incident of 1964 was either exaggerated or fabricated by the U.S. government, in the spirit of the Northwoods plan, something that was not lost on Bamford in his latest book. I know somebody who worked for the U.S. Navy in 1964, and he told me that some of his work was used by the Navy to fabricate the Gulf of Tonkin incident. The Gulf of Tonkin incident initiated the devastation of Southeast Asia, which [killed several million people](#), and the U.S. government's motives were [obviously fraudulent](#).

Fabricating incidents to justify invasion is a very old game. The United States initiated/fabricated a border incident to justify the huge land grab known as the [Mexican-American War](#). Hitler probably had his boys burn the Reichstag to "justify" his police state, and Hitler's lads dressed up concentration camp inmates in Polish uniforms to fabricate a border incident to justify invading Poland, which began World War II. The [Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor](#) was certainly no "surprise" to the American military brass, and there is substantial evidence that the American men in Pearl Harbor were sacrificed to lure the isolationist American people into World War II. [Michael Ruppert](#) and others have presented compelling evidence that the [World Trade Center](#) attacks had prior knowledge by many people, and may have been "allowed to happen," with foreknowledge perhaps extending to the White House. In 1998, [Zbigniew Brzezinski](#) openly bragged about the U.S. arming and inciting the Afghani "rebels" as a way to lure the Soviet Union into Afghanistan and its "Vietnam." Brzezinski's little plan killed and/or devastated many millions of people, as he played his global chess game. Thinking that Hunt's alleged plan is "too far out" is to be ignorant of history, and/or falling prey to the myth of American exceptionalism, as every nationalist ideology encourages.[\[13\]](#)

Gary wrote most of his book during the early 1970s, as he was trying to survive what the gangsters who ran Ventura County were dishing out, and his wife typed it up. He first published his book in 1987. Gary's book is more like a diary than anything else, and is certainly not a work of scholarship. Because I know Gary a little, and he and I [lived in the same milieu for awhile](#) (bearing the brunt of evil dished out by the same people), and I got to see his integrity and helpfulness in action, I have always believed what he reports as his *experiences*. Not only did I have experiences like his, I have since come into contact with a man who was a policeman in Ventura when Gary was working there, and he has vouched for some events that Gary described, as he saw them too. Gary's *theories*, particularly about the Jewish mob and Jewish people, I have considerable skepticism about. True *skepticism*, however, means pursuing the truth, not dismissing something out of hand, with *a priori* reasoning, as the "[skeptical crowd](#)" has a penchant for. People who survive Gary's kind of experiences are not going to publish a book like his in the hopes that it makes a lot of money, or deceives the public, but to tell a story that needs to be told. In that regard, Gary is like [Ralph McGehee](#), [Rodney Stich](#) and [Dennis Lee](#), and he will always have my greatest respect for his courage and willingness to face the dark underbelly of our vaunted system, and try to do something about it. There are not many like Gary, whatever extremes of theorizing his arduous journey may have led him to engage in.

Even if Gary's timing of the Tower conversation is discounted (three weeks after the assassination), or when Gary wrote about it (about ten years later), many details of the Tower conversation did not come into public awareness until after Gary first published his book in 1987. The Northwoods documents and the

plans for framing Cuba have not come into public awareness until relatively recently. The revelations of what really happened between the U.S. and Cuba during the 1960s did not start becoming public knowledge until the 1990s, after the Soviet Union collapsed and documents began coming forward from the former Soviet Union. Ironically, researchers have often encountered more document availability in the former Soviet Union than they have in the United States. Some revelations have been chilling, such as the fact that during the 1962 Cuban Missile Crisis, when JFK administration hawks wanted to invade Cuba, there were already numerous nuclear-armed missiles in Cuba, aimed at the U.S. and ready to go. The Soviet commander in charge of the Cuban nukes admitted that if the United States had invaded Cuba, he would have fired the nukes. It is the closest the world has ever come to a nuclear holocaust, and it was only JFK's overriding his hawks that kept (a very short lived) World War III from happening. In light of those revelations, a plan to frame Castro to justify invading Cuba is right out of *Dr. Strangelove*.

A significant possible connection between Lemnitzer's plan and Tower's tale is General Edwin Walker. Walker was Lemnitzer's soul brother, Walker being a John Birch Society member, as well as a KKK member. Walker helped initiate a "race riot" in Little Rock in 1961, and handed out John Birch material to his troops. Walker's antics cost him his career, and a pre-JFK-assassination Senate investigation into Walker suspected that Lemnitzer was connected to Walker's efforts. Oswald's "assassination attempt" on Walker sure raises more suspicion than it did before the Northwoods documents surfaced, particularly in light of Gary's tale. To top it off, they supposedly let Oswald keep the rifle he "shot at" Walker with, so he could "kill" JFK with it. That is one of many astounding irregularities in Oswald's tale, vis-à-vis law enforcement.

The framing Cuba angle was certainly not in public awareness in 1963 or 1987, and I believe that only with the Northwoods documents, which did not come to American public awareness until 2001, that the framing Cuba angle has become publicly known as government policy. For cautious researchers, it would be most prudent to compare Gary's book versus what was publicly known in 1987. There is plenty of JFK-associated evidence that has come to light since 1987, which further confirms Gary's tale, but it will be up to other researchers, not me, to nail down what *all* those pieces might be. I want to paint a possible picture that accounts for Gary's reporting, and I have little doubt that the bulk of his reporting of the John Tower conversation is straight as Gary can tell it, with perhaps some minor shading of it, unconsciously, by events that happened after the Tower conversation, and before Gary wrote about it.

If Gary's tale is true, many people around the "fake assassination" project were unaware that it would turn into a real assassination, especially Lee Harvey Oswald. Up until 11/22/63, America was in denial about a lot of things, and the naïveté of Americans back then was fairly astonishing, with about 85% of Americans having "great faith" in America's institutions (governments, corporations, churches, etc.), a number that is only about 15% today (or even lower, in these "[War on Terror](#)," priest-pedophilia, [Enron](#) days). However, many lived lives of quiet desperation, with American housewives being the biggest customer class of Valium when it was introduced in the 1950s, to keep them doped up so they could try acting the part of June Cleaver; getting the newspaper, dinner, slippers and pipe ready for her husband, as he returned home from the office or factory.

Until the bullets hit JFK, Oswald, Hunt, Tower and quite a few others were probably being played as chumps by whoever pulled off the JFK hit. The fabrication of Oswald's trail to Cuba, his "commie" credentials and the like were probably not done as carefully as they would be today. That is because the American public was so trusting, they would swallow anything that officialdom told them. Whether that was in fact true, it is reasonable to think that Hunt and friends operated under that assumption. In Hunt's designs, the trail to Cuba would not be subject to much public scrutiny, and would only be needed until the Cuban invasion and Castro overthrow was complete.

Oswald was seen in the book depository lunchroom soon after JFK's shooting, and the Warren Commission had to construct an involved scenario to explain Oswald's alleged movements. The evidence tends to support the idea that Oswald sat in the lunchroom the entire time period surrounding the assassination.[\[14\]](#) If the mission was interposed, Oswald would have certainly not have been in the "sniper's nest" as a real assassination was being carried out. The likeliest series of events was that Oswald was told to go to the lunchroom and await further orders, or perhaps wait for a phone call. It is hard to say when Oswald realized that he had been set up, but it was probably less than a minute after JFK was shot. The "fake" plan would have called for Oswald to leave the building anyway, as even a fake hit would have brought plenty of attention onto the book depository. Because of the Magic Bullet's wildly improbable tale, I think it likely that people on the real assassination team set up the "sniper's nest."[\[15\]](#)

If Hunt's operation was infiltrated, it is hard to know just who was on the "inside" and who was not. Even on Oswald's "team," it is hard to know who was really on the inside in Dallas, and who was among Hunt's chumps. The story generally agreed upon is that Oswald left the book depository before police sealed the building, and walked seven blocks to catch a bus. He soon left the bus and took a cab.[\[16\]](#) Depending on what testimony and evidence is believed, Oswald entered the movie theater *before* policeman J.D. Tippit was murdered, or soon afterward. If Oswald was the intelligence operative Tower said he was, he may have had a "double," and the double may have been in town as part of the real hit team. Whatever the real events were, according to Tower's tale, Oswald realized that he was set up, and was doing his best to stay out of jail, and alive. He always referred to himself as a patsy, which is not the stance one would expect for an assassin.

If Tower's tale is true, Oswald's trail to Cuba may have been fabricated, perhaps including his trip to the Cuban embassy in Mexico City. The photographic record in his military and CIA files may well be fabricated or altered. If Tower's tale is true, there is little information that came from the FBI or CIA that can be relied upon, which includes nearly all the evidence that the Warren Commission considered, because the "investigators" for the Warren Commission were the FBI and CIA. The Warren Commission accepted at face value the CIA and FBI-produced evidence, with [Allen Dulles](#) on the commission (probably a case of the fox watching over the hens).

When Gary said that Tower spoke of Hunt inventing the "exploding cigar" tactic to assassinate Castro, it could have been a slight mis-remembrance by Gary, or Tower had it slightly wrong (those events did not become public until after the Watergate Scandal and the Church Committee began looking into the CIA's adventures, which was after Gary first drafted his book), as Hunt tried *poisoning* Castro's cigar, not make an exploding one.[\[17\]](#) That is a minor quibble with Gary's work. However, the big picture of Gary's story - that Oswald was an intelligence agent working for Hunt, to stage a fake assassination attempt to frame Castro - has a rich correspondence with [several lines of evidence](#). Gary's story fits startlingly with the main lines of evidence and speculation that has cropped up about Oswald, and there is enough uncertainty regarding various details that I have seen no credible avenue of evidence and theory regarding a conspiracy that Gary's testimony may not fit with. With the Northwoods revelations, the JFK assassination community can no longer easily dismiss/ignore Gary's testimony, as it has been doing for the past fifteen years. Joseph Milteer's prediction of the JFK hit has been taken seriously by most JFK researchers, even though he was a right wing, KKK-type of guy. Gary was a policeman and investigator, with a solid career going until he ran afoul of the gangsters that run Ventura County. Does him being Audie Murphy's friend count for anything, as far as his credibility? If nothing else, the Northwoods documents may end up giving Gary's tale due consideration.

Gary's experiences with Jack Ruby, Mick Cohen and the Jewish mob angle also need to be considered, as Ruby assassinated Oswald, and Gary *was there* in that milieu, even [chatting with Ruby in 1947](#) about the mob's plans for New Orleans and Cuba.[\[18\]](#)

In 2006, I encountered two Internet forums that were earnestly discussing Gary's encounter with John Tower and Audie Murphy. They were about the first worthy discussions that I had seen of that issue, and I discovered that Gary passed away in 2004. I had rewarding exchanges with one forum, and had some exchanges with an impressive investigator. The investigator told me that he does not know of any piece of credible evidence that contradicts Gary's story, and knows of no reason why his tale would not be true.

There are numerous lines of JFK evidence to pursue, an undertaking that could take the rest of a person's life. This essay will deal with just one aspect of the JFK assassination evidence in detail, and people can make up their own minds regarding the truth of the issue, and see if it is worth pursuing further.

The Backyard Photos

On the day of JFK's assassination, after Oswald was arrested, the police searched the home where his estranged wife lived. Oswald was accused of murdering the head of state of the world's most powerful nation, and the investigation was underway. It is difficult to imagine a murder investigation that would have been carried out with more zeal and thoroughness than that one. The Dallas police descended on Ruth Paine's house on November 22nd, where Oswald's wife Marina lived, and where Oswald stayed the night before. Ms. Paine let the police come in and search, even though they did not have a search warrant. Oswald's possessions were largely stored in Ms. Paine's garage, which was attached to the house. The police thoroughly searched the premises that day. It is difficult to imagine any significant items of Oswald's left in that house or garage after they searched it. That place should have been stripped to the walls, and indeed the police seized many items that day.

After the Dallas police thoroughly searched the place the day of the assassination, another search "discovered" two photographs the next day. In the photos, Oswald is shown holding the rifle and radical newspapers. In the two inventories the police made of Oswald's possessions, those photos are not mentioned. Also, detective Gus Rose, the man who discovered the photos, testified that he found two negatives. Only one has ever been produced (a vast amount of evidence disappeared during the JFK investigation, the second negative just one piece of many[\[19\]](#)). To add more intrigue to the photos' discovery, assassination researcher Jim Marrs talked with Robert Hester, a photo technician who assisted the FBI and police in the assassination's wake. Hester said he saw the FBI in possession of a *color transparency* of the backyard photo the *day before* the Dallas police "discovered" it. Unfortunately, with Hester since passing on, it is only hearsay by Marrs at this time, and always will be, although Marrs says Hester's wife also confirmed the story.[\[20\]](#)

Oswald was shown those photos the day after the assassination, when they were "discovered." What did Oswald say about the photos? He said they were not photographs of him, but photos of somebody else with his head pasted on, and that he had never seen the photos before. Oswald said that he would be able to prove that those pictures were fakes. All Oswald was able to prove was his mortality, as Jack Ruby gunned him down the next day. With Oswald dead and unable to defend himself, the wheels of the government and media turned, and Oswald was eventually pronounced the lone assassin of JFK.

During the Warren Commission investigation those photographs became known as exhibits 133-A and 133-B.



Warren Exhibit 133-A



Warren Exhibit 133-B

Click on images to enlarge

Life put 133-A on its cover in 1964. The negative to 133-A has never been produced. Only the negative to 133-B has been found. If that ended the tale of "discovering" the photographs, it would be enigmatic enough, but the plot gets thicker.

In 1967, George de Mohrenschildt discovered another version of 133-A in his possessions after he moved back to America from Haiti. De Mohrenschildt did not know where the photograph came from, and suspected it was planted there to further frame Oswald. The strange thing about de Mohrenschildt's photo is that it is a clearer picture than the original 133-A, and views area outside the frame of the original 133-A. There is wide-ranging speculation about that situation. How did de Mohrenschildt come to possess a higher quality photo than the original, and how was it developed? Those questions bring up issues of authenticity not easily answered.

To further add to the controversy, another backyard photograph was discovered in 1976 in the possession of the widow of Dallas policeman Roscoe White. That photograph is now known as 133-C. One speculation is that White pocketed the photograph when the other two were found in Ms. Paine's garage. If that is the case, he did not keep the photograph to himself. The position of Oswald in 133-C is markedly different from 133-A or 133-B. In 133-C, Oswald is holding the newspapers up in the air with his right hand, and the rifle in the air with his left. Neither 133-A nor 133-B depict that posture. In 1964, as police were recreating the backyard photos scenario, photos were taken using the same posture as in 133-C.



Click on image to enlarge

The Dallas police department obviously knew about 133-C in 1964. The very origin of the photos is in question. What about the camera that took them? The camera allegedly used to take the photographs was an Imperial Reflex camera. How was that camera found? On the day of the assassination, when the

photos were not yet “discovered,” the police seized plenty of photographic equipment. The Dallas police discovered a miniature Minox camera, the kind that spies used. It is about the size of a large cigarette lighter. Oswald the starving commie certainly could not afford one of those. Even stranger was the serial number the Dallas police recorded off of that camera: serial # 27,259. Years later, Minox reported that the serial numbers of their cameras sold during 1963 were above 135,000. Oswald apparently had some vintage spy equipment. The FBI tried to get the Dallas police to restate their original report to record seizing a Minox light meter, not a camera. The Dallas police refused to reclassify the camera, and it disappeared during the FBI investigation. The FBI later listed it as a light meter. Gerald Posner claims to have solved that mystery. He says he interviewed Ruth Paine's husband Michael, who said it was his camera, one he had since the 1950's.[\[21\]](#)

That spy camera makes the mystery of the Imperial Reflex camera even more puzzling. Michael Paine did classified work for Bell Helicopter, which might explain his "spy" camera. It might be innocent, but it is one more odd connection with the intelligence community, where a woman married to a man who did classified work for the government took in Marina Oswald. Marina and Ms. Paine met because of Ms. Paine's avid interest in the Russian language, or so it is said. The FBI seized a number of cameras, and the Imperial Reflex camera was not taken in the first search, nor the second, nor even a later one by the FBI, when they came to cart off the rest of Oswald's possessions. The police even seized a camera that supposedly was not Oswald's, but it was up to Oswald's brother Robert to stumble upon that Imperial Reflex camera on December 8th, 1963, in that magical garage that kept spewing out evidence not discovered in earlier searches.

That Imperial Reflex camera officially became the one that took the infamous photographs. When Marina Oswald was first asked about the photographs, she claimed that she had never taken any. Later she would testify that she remembered one photograph being taken. Later her testimony was amended to say she had taken two photographs, in light of the fact that two photographs were introduced into evidence. Today she says she took all three photographs now known to exist. She may eventually remember more, because the original FBI inventory lists four of them. There was supposedly a photo of Oswald holding the rifle over his head, which his mother found and destroyed.

When asked when she took them, Marina originally said it was in the winter of 1963, nearly a year before the assassination. However, the scene depicted in those photographs shows a yard in bloom. Also, the newspapers Oswald held up were not published until the spring. After more prodding of Marina and investigation by the Warren Commission, it has been determined that the likeliest date for the photographs to have been taken was March 31st, 1963. That date corresponds to shortly after Oswald mail-ordered the rifle, pistol and papers he displays in those photos. It also corresponds to the timing of Oswald's “assassination attempt” on General Walker on April 10th. Soon after the Walker incident, de Mohrenschildt met Oswald one last time, and they never met again. There is an inscription on the back of the de Mohrenschildt photo in Russian that says, "Hunter of Fascists, Ha! Ha! Ha!" The handwriting has never been conclusively traced to either the Oswalds or the de Mohrenschildts, especially Oswald, because the date written on the photo, April 5th, 1963, is written in European-style (5/IV/63), which Oswald never did, as far as can be determined.

There are a few problems with the alleged photo date of March 31. March 31 may have been too early in the year for the plants and trees in the photos to be in bloom. That situation might be explained away, although I know of nobody who has. What is more problematic about the March 31 date is that the photographs were taken in bright sunshine, but the weather records for Dallas on that date show that it was cloudy with traces of rain all day. There are a couple more oddities to consider before getting to the actual

photo analysis. One is that when the FBI finally received custody of the Imperial Reflex camera in February of 1964, it did not work, and when it was first shown to Marina, she was unable to identify it as belonging to her husband, even though she supposedly used it. The other is that the Oswald in the photos is wearing a black shirt, black pants, and a distinctive wristwatch. After the assassination, the investigators could not find in Oswald's possessions the black shirt, black pants, or the wristwatch, and nobody ever remembered Oswald wearing that wristwatch. Maybe they should have looked in the garage!

While performing the research for producing this web site, I had to delve into many controversial areas. The only way to resolve the issues to my satisfaction was to try ignoring what all sides had to say, and evaluate the primary evidence for myself, and try to become my own expert. For a “one-man-show,” such a task is nearly impossible, so I have often relied on secondary evidence, but I also looked at the broad spectrum of secondary evidence (while correlating primary to secondary evidence when I could, to get a feeling for how reliable certain secondary evidence might be), and tried digesting all the available evidence into something coherent. The JFK issue was no exception.

Jack White deserves credit for his analysis of the backyard photos. White began his investigation with some expertise in photography, and devoted years to analyzing the backyard photos. The reason he did so was two-fold. The main one was that Oswald himself said the backyard photos were faked, with his head pasted onto somebody else's body. The other was that White asked for and was given advice on how to pursue the JFK evidence, and was told to become expert on just one piece of it, and focus his attention there. White did so, and a fair bit of the evidence produced in this essay relied in some measure on what he discovered. White deserves credit for the work he performed. However, White's analysis of the backyard photographs is not wholly reliable, because of his limitations as a photographic expert. Specifically, he has no training or expertise in the field of photogrammetrics, and all of his photogrammetric analysis is suspect.

For weeks I watched White post his analyses of Apollo lunar photographs to a JFK forum, to make the case that the moon landings were faked. None of his photo analysis stood up to the slightest scrutiny. To be fair, I have never seen *any* photo analysis of [“faked” Apollo footage](#) that has ever stood up to scrutiny, as far as it proving that the moon landings were faked, and White proved himself badly out of his element in analyzing the Apollo images. Recently, White tried proving that the Zapruder film was faked, and one of his central analyses, which David Mantik wrote produced “robust” data, has failed to impress upon scrutiny. [\[22\]](#)

So, White's work has its limitations. Proving his photographic analyses wanting, however, does not prove the case that the backyard photographs are genuine. Albert Einstein said that he had little respect for somebody who looked for the weakest spot of a board, and repeatedly drilled holes through it. White's “photogrammetric” analyses are the weakest parts of his work, and should be taken as such. White's critics have rarely strayed beyond his lack of photogrammetric expertise in critiquing his work. Even amateurs can stumble forward, as I did when [discovering Neil Armstrong's leap](#) back to the Apollo 11 LM. When a musician felt that he found evidence that disproved the acoustic evidence of the House Select Committee on Assassinations (HSCA), which was the linchpin in its “conspiracy” finding, the “lone gunman” theorists fell over themselves congratulating him on his find. Amateurs have made many of [science's breakthroughs](#).

Evidence can theoretically stand on its own, no matter who produces it. That is the ideal of the scientific method. The following analysis will focus on the evidence that most strongly argues for fakery in the backyard photos, and will also demonstrate that whatever White's limitations are, the official investigators

for the U.S. government performed incredibly flawed, if not intentionally flawed, analysis, which brings up the suspicion of conscious fraud.

After looking long and hard at the evidence, I think that the most impressive evidence, as far as photographic fakery in the backyard photos is concerned, exists in four areas:

1. The anomaly of Oswald's chin;
2. The nearly identical position of the camera in the photos;
3. The shadow anomalies;
4. The anomalies relating to Oswald's arms and hands, and the rifle and leftist newspapers he is holding, including some shadow anomalies;

Jack White adduced other evidence, such as Oswald's strange posture in 133-A and evidence of retouching. While the other evidence may provide supporting evidence of fakery, the lines of evidence listed above seem the most impressive, and are also areas where the official explanations sometimes dealt with the evidence in an unsatisfactory manner.

In 1994, Michael T. Griffith, one of the most prominent independent JFK investigators, spent three hours interviewing photographic expert Brian Mee, while examining the evidence. Griffith consulted several other specialists in the field, and their judgments concurred with Mee's and have influenced this essay. Mee had expertise in exactly the areas that concern the evidence discussed below.

Before beginning this analysis, I will present my opinion of how the photos were probably faked, if they *were* faked. They were probably faked just as Oswald said, by pasting his head onto somebody else's body. Also, there are enough strange anomalies with his hands, arms, and the rifle and newspaper he holds, that they may indeed be "special" effects that were also pasted into the picture (or altered), to further incriminate Oswald. The photos in evidence are probably at least one generation removed from the original composite photos, with each succeeding generation having degraded clarity, as with any analog copying process.

A legitimate question, in light of Gary Wean's tale and the notion that they were trying to fabricate Oswald's violent reputation, is this: why would they feel the need to falsify the backyard photographs, especially when Oswald was playing along with the game? I have long pondered that question, and I am not sure what the answer might be. Claiming that the backyard photos are genuine would eliminate that seeming contradiction, but for Oswald to call them fakes, and promise that he would be able to prove that they were, is significant. Also, there are so many inconsistencies in how the photographs made their way into the evidence, and conflicting evidence surrounding the photos themselves (such as 03/31/63 being a cloudy day, or how none of them were "discovered" when they should have been, with the [133-C photo's travels](#) casting grave doubts on the Dallas PD's investigative effort), that their authenticity must be seriously questioned. It is quite possible that the rifle Oswald ordered is not the one found in the book depository, and may not even be the one in the photographs. Perhaps Oswald had seen the forged photographs months earlier, and knew they had been forged for some reason. There are suspicions that there was an Oswald double, and his trail to Mexico City and Cuba may have been forged. The backyard photos may

have been part of an entire body of evidence that was being used to fabricate Oswald's "violent" tendencies and communist sympathies. There are many scenarios that could have played out, when Hunt's little plot and the plot-within-a-plot are considered. I acknowledge that faking the backyard photographs can seem initially inconsistent with fabricating Oswald's violent image, but only those who know the whole story know for sure, if anybody does, and any of them are still alive.

If Oswald's head was pasted on somebody else's body, it is legitimate to search for where that might be, and the area that leaps out to even casual observers is Oswald's chin. There are several pieces of impressive evidence relating to his chin and photographic fakery. The two most impressive pieces of evidence are the shape of his chin and a line that crosses it, from one edge of his neck to the other, looking exactly like a crop line, exactly where one might be expected.

If Gary Wean's tale is in any way true, nothing in the federal government's files about Oswald is above suspicion, and with the "double" speculations about him, the photographic evidence of Oswald's younger days must be viewed with suspicion. In Jack White's second video about the backyard photographs, he presents several photos of Oswald from the government-produced evidence, and made the case that several photos appear to be composites. I have not seen anybody effectively dispute White's analysis in that matter. What I doubt can be effectively disputed, however, are the mug shots of the man who was captured the day of the assassination, and who died in police custody. Below are comparisons of Oswald's chin from his mug shots, compared with backyard photo 133-A, and also a man with a square chin is on the right hand side of the below image.



Click on image to enlarge

Oswald transformed from a square-chinned guy in the backyard photos, to a pointy-chinned guy. How? The man with the square chin on the right is Roscoe White, who supposedly stole the 133-C picture. The square chin was a point of contention in the HSCA hearings, with HSCA expert Calvin McCamy trying to convince the HSCA panel that Oswald's chin was square in earlier photographs. Congressman Fithian was unimpressed with McCamy's attempts to give Oswald a square chin, and said,

"I did not visually at least identify any other chin that was even approximately as square as the one in the backyard photograph, from all of the pictures that you put up."

McCamy told the HSCA panel that Oswald's square chin was an illusion, and that a trick of the light, as it was coming almost directly from above, hid his pointy chin. He was not able to provide *even one photo* of Oswald to persuasively support his point.

McCamy's performance on the square chin issue was dubious. What was convincing, however, was the HSCA experts' "Penrose" study, although it was not convincing in the way it should have been. The Penrose study compared several photos of Oswald to the backyard photographs, to determine if the man in the backyard was indeed Oswald. The Penrose method measured and compared the dimensions of Oswald's face to various alleged photographs of him. The Penrose study concluded that the backyard

photographs were genuine depictions of Oswald. The data presented for the Penrose study tells the full tale. For three critical parts of Oswald's head in the backyard photos, *the committee omitted the data*. Most importantly, *they omitted the data regarding Oswald's chin*. That is *extremely* suspicious, as the chin was the primary area of contention. At best, such "editing" of the data invalidates the Penrose study. At worst, it brings up the suspicion of fraud. I have not seen anybody even provide a lame excuse.

[Lying by omission](#) is by far the most common method of lying. I am a professional in the creation, manipulation and presentation of numerical data. The HSCA experts appeared to have eliminated the data that did not conform to their foregone conclusion. In science, such a method is known as "rigging the data." In the world of accounting, it is known as fraud (as with [Enron](#) and friends). Of all the many criticisms I have seen of Jack White's work over the years, by all manner of conspiracy debunkers, I have never seen one "lone gunman" theorist deal with that issue, where the HSCA did something that seemed fraudulent.

Also in the images above, note the difference between where the neck, head and bottom of the right ear meet. The man in the backyard apparently had a larger neck than the man who died in Dallas PD custody (as did Roscoe White).

In 133-A, a line can be seen *exactly* where a forger might have pasted Oswald's face onto somebody else's body. The below image shows approximately where the line is.



Click on image to enlarge

How did McCamy explain the apparent crop line? He said that it was a water spot. Michael Griffith has yet to meet a photographic expert who has seen a water spot run in a straight line. Spots are just that; spots. They are circular in nature. Mee said during the Griffith interview,

"One thing is the sheer coincidence that this line just happens to fall in the chin area; that this one edge of this one particular water spot is supposed to have left deposits in such a way as to form a line that coincidentally starts at one side of the neck, crosses the chin, and then ends at the other side - right where Oswald's head could have been attached to the body. I mean, this would be a good place to join a head to a body in a composite, in the chin area, and here we have a line in that region, and it's supposed to be a water spot."

What *are* the odds that perhaps the only water spot that ever ran in a straight line happened to occur right where one would expect a crop line that forged a chin (that was obviously not Oswald's) onto his face? How far do we want to stretch coincidence?

The other anomaly that is extremely difficult to explain away, and Jack White is probably on the right track with his work, is that the backyard photos were all taken with the camera in virtually the same position. Marina Oswald was one of history's most fickle witnesses. The way she was repeatedly prodded to give

the Warren Commission testimony about the backyard photos, and had to keep amending it, as more photos cropped up as evidence or other evidence contradicted it, does not inspire much confidence in her rendition of the facts. The Warren Commission and others probably manipulated her. Many years after the assassination, she publicly stated that she believed her husband had been framed. However, Marina had virtually no experience with taking pictures, and when she described how she took the backyard photos, it is reasonable to accept her account. According to Marina, Lee Harvey brought her into their backyard, and had her take the pictures. He advanced the film and had her take a picture. Then he walked over, took the camera from her, advanced the film and handed her the camera back. Then she took another picture, until all four photos had been taken.

The background in the backyard photos is virtually unchanged from image to image. In order for that to be the case, Marina Oswald probably could not have even moved her feet, or changed where she held the camera. It is a highly unlikely scenario, given how Marina said the photo session was performed. The HSCA experts said there were minor differences in the camera's perspective, which could account for the camera moving between pictures. However, the apparent differences in perspective were so small that they may well have been done on a tripod. Jack White performed experiments with "keystoning," where the photo was slightly tilted and then photographed, which appeared to cause the slight variations. White says he was able to exactly align the backgrounds by that technique. I would not accept White's findings until I saw them independently reproduced, but Mee said the concept can easily explain the slight variances, particularly if they are the result of multigenerational copying. In copying 133-A from one generation to another, the slightest change in the planar alignment of the copying camera and photo can produce the differences that can be seen in the backgrounds between 133-A, B and C. I would like to see some quality independent analysis of such a theory before completely endorsing it, but at this time, I have to lean toward the tripod method of taking the images, with slight differences in the backgrounds due to slight planar and lateral differences in making the multigenerational copies.

By examining the 133-A and 133-B photographs above, it is evident that in 133-A Oswald's head is virtually perpendicular to the ground. In 133-B, Oswald's head is significantly tilted to his left. In both images, the shadow below his nose falls almost exactly at the midpoint of his upper lips (see the [chin close-up](#) above to see where that shadow hits his lips). Because of the tilt of his head in 133-B, the nose shadow should not have hit his lip in the same place. McCamy produced photographs of a mannequin at the HSCA hearings to explain this discrepancy. He provided a novel explanation, where the head twisted and tilted, to keep the shadow hitting the same spot on his lip. The HSCA panel was skeptical of McCamy's explanation, and when the mannequin achieved the posture where the shadow hit the same part of the lip, it was no longer looking at the camera. Once again, McCamy invoked a fortuitous set of improbable circumstances to explain away an anomaly that suggested photographic fakery. Because the mannequin no longer looked into the camera when the desired shadow was achieved, such an analysis cannot be accepted as explaining the anomaly. What appears more likely is that the same head was pasted onto the different pictures, but the forgery was not sophisticated enough to account for different head angles.

One area of evidence deals with photogrammetrics, and Jack White made the case that the shadows on his body did not fall in the same line as the shadows on his face, for further evidence of fakery. The HSCA investigators performed a sophisticated analysis where they drew lines from the places on Oswald's body that cast the shadow to where the shadow hit the ground. They performed what they called a "vanishing point" analysis, where the lines all converged on the source of light, the sun. The HSCA panel was also a bit skeptical of the vanishing point analysis, as the lines appeared to converge only slightly past Oswald's head, not at the distant sun. I performed my own crude analysis of the shadows on his face and ground, and from what I could see, the facial and body shadows were not very far from being parallel, not far enough for my crude analysis to catch anything impressive. One area of speculation has been the shadow

cast by Oswald's body in 133-A, versus his nose. In that matter, I have to tentatively conclude that the McCamy and friends may be right, or at least the conspiracy investigators have to do their photogrammetric work better. Contrary to Jack White's analysis, the shadow cast by his nose is not vertical, but slightly tilted to Oswald's left (think of minute hand of a clock pointing to a minute or two after the hour). When I shined a flashlight on my face from approximately the sun angle in the photos, I was able to reproduce the shadow "anomaly," where the left side of Oswald's neck was lit, while the left side of his neck was in shadow. White's analysis is not convincing on that matter. At this time, I have to lean toward the HSCA's analysis regarding the shadows running parallel in their vanishing point analysis, while their explanation with the mannequin is more of their strained logic. The independent investigators will have to do a better job of analyzing those face/body shadow variations if they want to present a convincing case.

The apparent falling off to the right of Oswald's body shadow in 133-A is partly an illusion caused by his bizarre posture. White thinks Oswald is standing to the right of his center of gravity, which should not be possible. However, still photos catch people who are never quite still, and Oswald could have been shifting his weight as the photo was taken, producing the effect. However, his strange stance, where his right leg is strangely bent inward, contributes to the illusion that the shadow cast by his body falls to his right. It *does* fall to his right, but not nearly as far as it appears, because of the strange position of his right leg. If you draw lines from his shadow on the ground to the parts of his body that cast them (in photo 133-A), they are nearly parallel to the shadow cast by his nose. Not quite, but close enough in my crude analysis to convince me that most of discrepancy, if not all of it, is caused by his strange posture.

All of Jack White's attempts to impute measured distances onto parts of the picture were dismissed by the HSCA (and all of Jack's many critics) because of his limitations as a photogrammetric analyst. So, has anybody pursued what Jack attempted, to reproduce the scene and use sophisticated photogrammetric analysis, to determine what the real height of the man in the photos was, or how long his rifle was? If anybody has done it, I have not heard of it.

I think the evidence is persuasive, however, that from the chin up it is Oswald, and from the chin down it is somebody else. Whose chin might that be? Jack White investigated the Roscoe White connection. Roscoe White was on the same ship to Japan as Oswald during their Marine days. They both may have worked for military intelligence. White began at the Dallas Police Department not long before the JFK assassination. A generation after Roscoe White's death, his son claimed to find his father's diary, where Roscoe admitted he was one of the Dealey Plaza shooters. Soon after the son publicly announced the existence of his father's diary, he said his home was burglarized, and the diary taken. The conspiracy debunkers mainly replied with "how convenient," and have largely dismissed the son's testimony. However, the 133-C photo had been taken from White's widow in a robbery (other accounts say that con men obtained them from White's widow), and was seized by the FBI. That was how it made its way into the evidence.[\[23\]](#) White's widow worked for Jack Ruby shortly before the JFK assassination.[\[24\]](#)

There are other correspondences between Roscoe White and the figure in the backyard photos. He had a similar posture to the "Oswald" in the backyard photos.



Click on image to enlarge

The 133-A De Mohrenschildt photo is difficult to account for. It is a clearer image than the “original” 133-A, and views area outside the frame of the original 133-A. Brian Mee thought this suspicious, as do I. If the photos were forged as Mee thinks they were, the De Mohrenschildt photo perfectly fits the evidence. If the backyard photos are fakes, the likeliest way to do it was to take the original photos with the highest resolution cameras possible, and perform the forgery work. Then the forged images would be photographed at least once more, as removing the images from their original generation would hide much of the evidence of forgery. The photographs will also lose their resolution in successive generations, and become grainier. Also, in successive generations, the image will often get slightly cropped along the way. The lower resolution and the graininess of the backyard photos (as Mee observed), as well as the cropping between the De Mohrenschildt photo and the “original” 133-A, gives compelling evidence that the “original” 133-A is a generation or more after the De Mohrenschildt image. That is not something one would expect that Oswald did, but fits impressively with the notion that the forgers made a slight mistake when planting evidence in De Mohrenschildt’s belongings.

In addition, the notion that the “original” 133-A is a later generation of the forged images makes some of the HSCA testing of dubious validity. The HSCA investigators performed tests such as measuring the depth of the negative and grain analysis, which would have been of questionable validity if they were generations removed from the original, altered photos.

Those are the main lines of evidence I was the most impressed with, as far as giving evidence of forgery, and where I thought the HSCA performed questionable, if not fraudulent, work.

The last area of evidence that I found compelling, but other investigators often have not, is in the area of his hands, arms and the newspapers and rifle he is holding. Those backyard photos about are the only evidence linking Oswald to the murder weapon. A nitrate test on his cheek on the day of the assassination (to determine if he fired the rifle) was negative. There was a belated finding of his palm print on an inside part of the rifle, after it had been dismantled, which has understandably been greeted with skepticism in the JFK “conspiracy” community. There were no fingerprints on either the rifle or the pistol that were identified as Oswald’s murder weapons.

Oswald had to be an idiot if he was the real assassin. Earlier in 1963, he was arrested for the attempted murder of Edwin Walker, and he obviously would have been suspect number one if he really shot JFK, employed in the building where the shots were fired, with a rifle he not only bought months earlier, but used in another assassination attempt. With all those incriminating circumstances, we are supposed to believe that he carefully wiped his fingerprints off the rifle before he snuck out of the depository? But he also was so stupid that he had no plan of escape, taking a bus and cab before lamely trying to hide in a theater? Far more likely is that the “safe house” plan that Hunt devised for Oswald evaporated when JFK was really shot, and Oswald did what he could, on his own, as the world’s most marked man.

The rest of this backyard photo section will deal with the rifle, newspapers and the hands and arms holding them.

Oswald's left arm, which holds the rifle, is peculiar. Below his upper arm, the only thing visible is his hand. His entire forearm and elbow are invisible. Jack White tried reproducing the phenomenon, but was unable to.



Click on image to enlarge

It may be possible that the way Oswald held the rifle hid his entire forearm, but I think that anomaly bears further scrutiny. His right hand that holds the newspapers is anomalous for more than one reason, and one anomaly is impressive indeed. The fingers on his right hand all appear chopped off, as if Oswald had an accident with the meat cleaver.



Click on image to enlarge

The photograph I am using is a pretty good one, from Groden's *The Killing of a President*, p. 112. The chopped off look is evident in the photo above. Whatever disparaging comments the critics may make about Jack White, one thing they cannot dispute is that Jack has about the best quality photographs that exist to work with. On the presentation in his video, the chopped-off look of his fingers is even more pronounced. Mee was skeptical. He thought the reflection of light from the papers could have produced an illusion. White calls the chopped-off fingers evidence of retouching. The other anomaly is even more impressive to me.

The shadow issue is highly contested. Oswald has a shadow below his nose, and his eyes are completely in shadow. It appears as if the sun is at a 45-degree angle to the ground. I arrived at that approximate angle by noting that the shadow's length under his nose is about equal to the distance his nose protrudes from his face. That is only an approximation, and does not need to be more accurate for the point I am about to make.

The HSCA investigation applied plenty of professional aptitude to the backyard photos, and McCamy made the case that the sun was coming in at such a high angle, that the bottom of Oswald's pointy chin was in shadow, creating the illusion that Oswald had a square chin. If one looks at the photo, McCamy's rationale uses strained logic, one the HSCA itself found difficult to swallow, but the point is taken that the sunlight is coming from a steep angle.^[25] Oswald is holding the newspapers against his chest at a nearly perpendicular angle; his right hand with the chopped-off fingers is holding the paper. There is something even stranger than the ends of the fingers missing. The nose's shadow is about the equivalent of how far it protrudes. Using the same logic, his index finger should cast a shadow on the newspaper it is holding, roughly equal to the height of the finger above the paper. Take a good look at the shadow cast by his right index finger.



Click on image to enlarge

There is no shadow. That is compelling evidence that the photo is faked, which would prove the case that Oswald was not a lone nut, if it was true. That logic is admitted to by virtually everybody who has studied the assassination. If those are faked photos, they are sophisticated fakes for 1963. It means that somebody went to a great deal of effort to forge the photos, not something that “Oswald the starving commie” would have had the time, resources or motive to do. There is also a complete lack of shadow under the bottom of Oswald's hand and little finger.

The final issue is the murder weapon itself. The backyard photos were highly damning because they showed Oswald posing with the murder weapon. There is compelling evidence that at least two rifles have been in evidence as the murder weapon, and that the rifle in the backyard photos is probably not the weapon in evidence today.

Jerry McLeer [has presented evidence of two different rifles](#) in evidence, with one cleverly forged to look like the other. The most convincing pieces of evidence are the numerous discrepancies between the rifle examined by the Warren Commission and the weapon that sits in the National Archives (which the Archives will not let anybody examine). *Life Magazine* took photographs of the rifle in 1983, and those images provide much of the evidence. There is also evidence that the “murder weapon” [is a vintage rifle](#), not something that Oswald would have been able to mail order.

Of the many discrepancies between the two rifles, what may be the most impressive for a lay audience are the discrepancies in the serial number, which are depicted in the image below.



Click on image to enlarge

the ad they presented was a duplicate of the ad Oswald used to purchase his rifle. The original ad that Oswald used was readily available, which made independent investigators scratch their heads. The reason for the Warren Commission's use of another, later, ad than the one Oswald used became evident. The rifle in the National Archives is a forty-inch rifle. The rifle in the ad Oswald used to purchase his rifle was a thirty-six-inch rifle. The Commission substituted a later ad that advertised a forty-inch rifle. That switch by the Warren Commission to force the rifle in evidence to correspond to the ad is a strange way to perform an investigation.

Another issue lends evidence to the notion that the rifle in the photos is not the “murder weapon” in the National Archives. [McLeer's analysis](#) provides the evidence, although the images in Groden's *The Killing of a President* are adequate. On the rifle's stock, about a foot from the barrel's end, on its underside, is a circular ring about an inch in diameter. It is used to attach a strap. The ring is quite clear in good reproductions of the photograph. The ring is round, and appears on the underside of the rifle stock. The

Warren Commission rifle had an oblong ring mounted to the side. The author of A Carcano Homepage theorizes that the ring is part of the bush behind Oswald, a contention nearly impossible to take seriously. Another explanation I have seen is that the rifle that Oswald holds is turned enough to where the oblong ring on the far side of the Warren Commission rifle is visible, providing the illusion that it is a circular, bottom-mounted ring strap. I am skeptical of that explanation also. The rifle appears slightly rotated, as can be seen by looking at the riflescope, but it appears far from being rotated onto its side, especially far enough to make the Warren Commission rifle side ring produce the alleged illusion. The only way to know for sure is to get the “murder weapon” and perform the reconstruction (I will not hold my breath waiting for the federal government’s cooperation on that matter). Also, the cheap rifle strap seen in the backyard photos is markedly at variance with the strap found on the murder weapon, a strap that appears dyed black, [as well as the rifle stock itself](#). It is difficult to imagine a starving commie shelling out for a designer strap for his rifle (which appears to be designed for the rifle, dyed that same color as the rifle’s stock), when he already had one. Here are some images of the controversial strap ring.



Click on image to enlarge

One of the difficult-to-explain-away aspects of Oswald’s tale, particularly regarding the rifle, is that Oswald was supposedly a starving commie. In 1962, he come up with enough money to repay several hundred dollars in loans (including a loan from the State Department), while making virtually no money and trying to support a wife and child. The “lone gunman” defenders have never satisfactorily explained Oswald’s finances, particularly during the time leading up to the assassination.^[26] Oswald the starving commie and family man somehow paid off loans and bought a rifle, while scarcely making ends meet. It is similar to the enigma to how Private Oswald could have been a regular customer at a highly expensive Tokyo nightclub, rubbing shoulders with the military brass (something way out of line with America’s military caste system). One night at that club cost as much as he made in a month.

The “murder weapon” was so poorly made that government investigators had to fix the sight’s alignment so it could hit what it shot at, and even then, the government’s best marksmen, after numerous trials, were never able to duplicate Oswald’s alleged feat of putting two bullets into a moving target of JFK’s size and distance, in the time the assassination took.^[27] Oswald was only a mediocre marksman in the Marines, and there is no evidence that he ever used a bolt-action rifle before November 22, 1963.

The evidence argues persuasively in favor of the hypothesis that the photos were forged and planted, and the camera was planted. In kind, it is nearly identical to the [magic bullet’s tale](#). After the bullet’s highly dubious entrance into the evidence ledgers, Arlen Specter and Gerald Ford concocted one of the most implausible tales ever.

JFK’s autopsy photos are probably also forgeries/composites. Nearly all the medical personnel who attended to JFK at the Parkland Hospital, where he was taken after he was shot, testified that the back of his head was blown out. Large blowouts are exit wounds, not entrance wounds. The back of his head being blown out is inconsistent with a bullet coming from Oswald’s rifle. The back of his head being blown out is nearly irrefutable evidence of a shot hitting him from the front, which brings up the legendary grassy knoll gunman.



Click on image to enlarge

In light of the backyard photos, altering or forging the JFK autopsy photos (and X-rays) would be consistent with how the entire affair has been manipulated.

There may have been several shooters in Dealey Plaza that fateful day.

The Nature of the JFK Assassination Affair

I have noticed a pattern in the JFK assassination that reappears in other cover-up attempts.

1. People in power do not want the rest of humanity to obtain information that may disrupt their power base, even if that information could benefit humanity (e.g. [free energy](#), [cancer cures](#), political information) because it would encroach on their power base. Noam Chomsky says that the current institutional ideology ranks hegemony above survival. Another way of stating it is that the elite do not really care if they destroy life on earth, as long as they are in charge (with survival enclaves secured for themselves, however).
2. Derailing access to this information is within the scope, motivation and resources of the power elite (e.g. the energy oligarchy, medical establishment and U.S. government).
3. There are often agent provocateurs involved in those obfuscations – an agent who [develops fake credentials](#) to allow him/her to infiltrate the ranks of researchers who attempt to uncover the truth of any suspected conspiracy, or propose solutions to the big problems.
4. The structural composition of the suppression includes prosecutors whose careers are measured by their “kill ratio.” The actual innocence of guilt of those prosecuted [makes no difference](#) to those people, who also employ others who are just “following orders.” So people who are *just doing their jobs* largely inflict the damage (the same dynamic is seen in the cancer racket, [where approved “treatments” kill off the patients, while the real cures are suppressed](#)).
5. Public apathy and lack of integrity of those trying to uncover the truth is by far the most important aspect of these situations. For example, many people suppose that because we do not have free energy, that it does not exist, thereby ignoring the possibility that these resources have been suppressed. Absence of evidence is not necessarily evidence of absence. Diogenes’ quest for the honest man would be as fruitless today as it was in ancient Greece.

Independent investigators of the JFK assassination often discuss how unhelpful the [CIA](#) and FBI have been. The [CIA](#) essentially [works for the Fortune 500](#), just as the American President does. They call themselves an intelligence agency, but their “intelligence” is usually [disinformation designed to fool the American public](#). Covert action is their main function, and it has contributed to the [death and misery of countless millions of people](#). The FBI has been liberally used to derail social movements in the United States. Outright murder of activists for native rights, black rights and the like has been merely days at the office for the FBI.[\[28\]](#) “Fighting crime” has been one of their minor functions. Those organizations are little

different than the Soviet Union's KGB, except that America's spooks have caused far more death and destruction than the KGB could have ever aspired to. It is well known that many in the American "intelligence community" were very happy when JFK was killed. On that day, in my father's office in the Department of Defense, one man walked down the halls, shouting his approval of Kennedy's murder, saying that JFK got what comes to all "tyrants."

What is obvious when researching the JFK assassination is that at least some theorists and investigators are provocateurs. A classic CIA disinformation ploy is to flood a certain subject with information, some of it true, and some or most of it fabrication. If anybody tries investigating the information, they will find so much false information that it taints whatever might be true. There are an incredible number of JFK assassination theories. One is that Kennedy was hit accidentally by a Secret Service man riding in the car behind him, whose gun accidentally discharged when Kennedy was under fire, giving him his fatal headshot. There is a bizarre theory that there was more than one gunman, but they coincidentally tried to kill Kennedy at the same instant (the *Washington Post* cooked that one up). That one invokes odds of trillions-to-one. There are even stranger theories than those. Prominent people, such as mainstream journalists, have concocted some of them. They were probably creating their surreal theories under the influence of the CIA or other spook organization. The CIA has operatives in virtually every major media organization. The circus atmosphere of strange theories has served to discredit all assassination theories besides the official "lone nut" one, and sincere researchers are nearly defeated before they begin.

Again, most importantly, what has hurt the independent assassination researchers the most has probably been the behavior of the researchers themselves. Those who independently spend years of their lives investigating the assassination have a trust fund or other source of passive income, are doing it in their spare time, or try to sell the results of their labors. Not too many people have the trust fund option. Also, those who are independently wealthy or have inherited wealth almost always obtained it through the workings of the system, and consequently are rarely going to have the inclination to challenge that system. I have never received a dime of compensation for this work, and have given up hundreds of thousands of dollars of lost income to pursue it, and not many people can do that.

If people put their JFK research out there with their name on it, the provocateurs and others generally take the tactic of discrediting them, and they are instead put into the position of defending themselves, and the evidence they have produced is not considered. It is a classic misdirection tactic. That phenomenon is not limited to investigating conspiracies. [My critics](#) do not want to discuss the merits of my propositions, such as whether we are engaging in genocide in Iraq to control Middle East oil, or that we are [putting poison in our water supply](#) and calling it medicine. Instead, they attack me for my style, call me names, and otherwise totally *avoid* the substance of my work.

I have looked into many areas like the JFK assassination, looking at the primary evidence for myself. I also rely on the work of historians and investigators whose work I have come to respect, through long investigation of their work, such as Noam Chomsky, Edward Herman, David Stannard, Carl Sauer and Rodney Stich, to name a few.

The fact that provocateurs have stirred up plenty of trouble, that independent JFK researchers have not always been pillars of virtue, that they often attack each other, that they become too attached to their theories, should not cloud the question of whether JFK was murdered by a conspiracy. Proving a researcher's theory wrong does *not* mean that JFK was *not* murdered by a conspiracy. The evidence can speak for itself, in those backyard photos.

The JFK assassination brings up extremely uncomfortable issues for Americans. If JFK was killed by a backfired covert operation (as [Gary's story](#) says), and the government acted to cover it up, what kind of government does America really have? Would it really be much more legitimate than ancient Rome's? I have found that nearly everybody who defends the lone gunman theory of the JFK assassination is also of a white bread political persuasion, with ideas that rarely stray from what officialdom says is so. Defending the lone gunman theory appears in large measure to be an attempt to defend the legitimacy of the U.S. government. Why? I think the [cognitive dissonance](#) dynamic explains much of it.

If Gary's story is true, a lot more than JFK's death was initiated by that backfired plot to frame Castro. The successful cover-up of JFK's murder appeared to *embolden* the intelligence community. The rash of assassinations and attempts after JFK, leading clear to the attempt on Ronald Reagan, all have [suspicious connections to the U.S. intelligence community](#), with a "lone nut" scapegoat served up each time. Hunt eventually got caught with his hand in the cookie jar with the [Watergate burglary](#), which may have far more sinister connotations than just some bumbling idiots trying to derail the Democratic challengers to Nixon. This essay will further deal with those issues of further assassinations and other dirty tricks.

Why Are There So Many Conspiracy Theories Today?

While investigating conspiracies and cover-ups, I wondered if this "conspiracy mania" was happening in America fifty years ago. The push to [fluoridate our water supplies](#) began more than fifty years ago. Much of it was a "structural" conspiracy. Scientists working for fluoride polluters would naturally, if largely unconsciously, massage the data to minimize the harm that fluoride caused, and amazingly, produced data showing that fluoride was *good* for people. Recently, declassified documents show the U.S. government covering up fluoride poisoning, because fluorine was used in the Manhattan Project extensively, and there were industrial fluoride accidents that harmed many people. Even though it turns out that fluoridation luminary [Harold Hodge](#) was secretly working to cover-up fluoride damage due to industrial accidents, and was doing secret research on the fluoride ion's effect on the human central nervous system, a lot of it was just doing his job and obeying the rules of "national security."

I once had exchanges with a college kid who thought that the political "realists" understood the global situation much better than "radicals" such as Chomsky. After reading some "realist" literature, I doubt it. Scholarship that *assumes away* economic factors is not very realistic.^[29] The kid said that the reason why only a few CIA employees have ever written books critical of the CIA is that almost all CIA employees believe that their careers serve their nation. My response was two-fold. One is that serving their nation obviously did not mean serving the interests of those in the nations the CIA helped rape. The other point is that the vast majority of CIA personnel will believe they are doing "good work" no matter how much their eyes tell them otherwise. People will always see themselves as "good guys," no matter what they are doing. That goes for [death camp Nazis killing Jewish children](#), American "pioneers" [killing Native American children](#), American soldiers [bombing Iraq, Vietnam, Yugoslavia](#), and doctors [whose cancer treatments kill their patients](#).

Today, conspiracy theories abound in the media and public awareness. Why? I think it is mainly because of the many shocks the American psyche has endured during the past forty years.

JFK's assassination marked the beginning of the end of innocence for many Americans. There were

definitely dark activities taking place before that, but the American people were largely in denial about them. After the JFK assassination, America had the Vietnam War, Watergate, the scandals of the Reagan-Bush years (Iran-Contra and [Savings and Loan](#) scandals), and America's confidence in its institutions and leaders [cannot sink much lower](#).

There is a strange dichotomy, however. On one hand, people are slowly realizing that they are continually lied to. Yet, they are selective in the lies they believe or disbelieve. It may be related to the [size of the lies](#). People will believe the lies that serve their interests, while maintaining a general attitude that they are being lied to. They inconsistently assess the dishonesty in their world, and the powerful fully encourage such inconsistency. For instance, the two biggest “scandals” in the media during the 1990s were the O.J. Simpson murder trial and Bill Clinton’s “zippergate” scandal with Monica Lewinsky. The [Savings and Loan scandal](#) will cost American taxpayers hundreds of billions of dollars, and it is already disappearing into the Memory Hole. Whether O.J. Simpson committed murder or Bill Clinton really had sex with Monica Lewinsky had virtually no bearing on the average American’s life. Yet, those were the big media “scandals” of the 1990s. As Chomsky has said, one of the main purposes of the mainstream media is distracting people from what is really happening. Our murderous oil policies can kill off [millions of Iraqi citizens](#), mainly children, and it barely makes the news or lodges in the public awareness, while O.J. and Clinton’s cigar make headline news. It is not entirely [the media’s fault](#). They are tending the herd, but the herd also desires the tending.

In the end, people suspect something is awry, and the great increase in conspiracy theories is evidence of it. Elisabeth Kübler-Ross performed the seminal research on the psychological aspects of death and dying in the West. She named five stages of the process. They are: denial, anger, bargaining, depression and acceptance. This process has been generalized to apply to any grieving process, and can apply to most things people do not want to face. In 1962, about 85% of Americans had “great faith” in society’s institutions, such as the government, corporations, and churches. Today, only about ten percent of Americans have that “great faith” anymore. What has replaced it is anger, the process’ next stage. Acceptance (some may think they are in acceptance, but they instead have apathetic feelings of powerlessness; it is not the same thing), and transcendence appear to be a long way off, but Mother Earth cannot wait that long. Bargaining and depression are stages that humanity has largely not experienced yet. As Americans have been staying in denial, [cognitive dissonance](#) has become more evident, particularly [after the World Trade Center attacks](#) of September 2001.

The long prophesied “[earth changes](#),” which are happening today, as with [global warming](#), is also going to accelerate the process. Will we wake up quickly enough to prevent our demise by our own hand? Conspiracy theories seem to be incomplete attempts to understand what is happening. What such a mentality seeks is to seemingly relieve us of our responsibility for what is happening, making us the victims of powerful forces, but the only “power” those forces have is what we gave them. Until we learn to accept our responsibility, the fascination with conspiracies will be one more way that we avoid taking responsibility for our lives. Investigating conspiracies or cover-ups can be dangerous business, however.

The Dangers of Investigating Conspiracies and Cover-ups

With our steeply hierarchical political, economic and social systems, not too many people at the top have to be “in on it” to make conspiratorial designs a reality. The conspiratorial and structural (or conscious and

unconscious) perspectives of the situations are important in understanding what is happening. Neither one, by itself, can fully explain the phenomenon.

Noam Chomsky and Edward Herman can write at length about the structural aspects of America's system, and how its media, for instance, can serve up an inverted view of reality, and they will suffer no harm. For instance, the documentary on Chomsky's life and career, titled [Manufacturing Consent](#), is the most popular documentary in Canadian history. Chomsky's thesis is virtually proven by the reception that it has received in United States. To my knowledge, no American television station has ever played it, except for [a small alternative station](#).

It is argued, and it is partly true, that Chomsky and Herman have not had their careers ruined, or been thrown in jail, or died mysteriously, because they are prominent academics in their own right, Chomsky arguably being the world's most prominent academic during the past fifty years. However, the most important reason they are still alive is probably because they are not unmasking conspirators. That is when the work can get dangerous.

Structural analysis is generally involved with studying documentation. Conspiracies, by their very nature, do not leave paper trails. Consequently, the "solid" evidence is often patchy, and can lead to various interpretations. Also, because of the spotty nature of the "hard" evidence, people can construct conspiracy theories from rather flimsy evidence, where there may have been no conspiracy. That is the nature of the beast. All too often, people dismiss any and all conspiracy theories because the evidence is not ironclad. Also, "conspiracy" has become a code word for "lunatic fringe." Deductive logic's conclusions are only as valid as its *assumptions*. Inductive logic begins with the factual information available, and is also valid reasoning.

Here are examples of the dangers of investigating conspiracies. When [Gary Wean](#) waged a legal battle against the gangsters who run Ventura County, who are the judges and their cronies, they tried murdering him in his front yard. Gary made a legal motion that obstructed the sale of bonds used to build the County Center ([where Dennis was jailed](#)), swindling the taxpayers out of many millions of dollars. Building the County Center was part of a plan to make a killing in real estate and other raids of the public coffers. The weekend before Gary's lawsuit delayed the issuance of revenue bonds, he came home one Saturday night to see a strange car parked near his house. Gary had been a policeman for many years, and his instincts saved his life. The assassin was sneaking into his yard in the twilight, and Gary grabbed his pistol from his car and hid behind a tree. The assassin fired and blew off a tree limb next to Gary's head. Gary returned fire as their car sped away. If they had killed Gary, his lawsuit would have been dismissed on Monday morning, and the revenue bonds would have sold without a hitch.[\[30\]](#) That is one way to deal with gadflies like Gary.

Chronicling mysterious drownings, mysterious plane crashes, a bloody murder of a lawyer and his wife in their bed a few miles from where I was raised, and other dark events, such as the county judges controlling the local drug trade, Gary's book makes for scary reading; but murders are the extreme acts. Bribes, framing people for crimes and scandals, media smears and Kangaroo Court were the more common *modus operandi* of the conspiracies.

Whereas Gary Wean is speculative in his work at times, [Rodney Stich](#) is a conservative writer. As with Gary, Stich did not become involved because he loved diving into nasty messes, but his job led him to the heart of darkness. Stich was a Federal Aviation Administration (FAA) investigator during the 1960s, and was assigned to investigate several fatal crashes of United Airlines jets. During the course of his

investigation, he stumbled into FAA corruption and complicity with United Airlines in covering up their negligence that led to the disasters. Worse than the negligence he discovered was the corruption that covered it up. He wrote *Unfriendly Skies*, and went on the radio and TV talk show circuit to expose what was happening. It won him few friends in the aviation establishment.

Most people in Stich's shoes keep their head down, stay quiet and keep punching the clock. A case in point is my [Justice Department friend](#) who investigated the death threat made by an automobile company to a man who invented a 100-MPG carburetor. The oil companies paid the quiet money of \$50 million to suppress the invention. My friend was no hero. He saw what happened and realized how the game was played. He kept his head down and later enlightened me with the story. He would not risk his neck by making his discovery public.

Stich's investigations took him deeper and deeper, and his *Defrauding America* shows how far he descended into the darkness. *Defrauding America* is about the most frightening book an American can read. In conservative style with little speculation, Stich chronicles theft after theft of the public's money by a series of related scams by the rich and ruthless. *Defrauding America* even chronicles a huge bribe that one of my relatives took, and from what I know of the person, Stich's revelation does not surprise me.

Stich investigated the black world of [CIA drug running](#), the criminal aspects of the [S&L scandal](#), Iran-Contra, October Surprise, etc., and the hard-to-believe corruption in the federal government, with federal judges part of the program, eagerly taking their cut (they are [lawyers](#)). With a prominent federal court judge in California whom Gary *knows* was a protégé of Mick Cohen, because he regularly saw them together when the judge was a young lawyer, the overlap in Stich's and Gary's stories are many.

Defrauding America's cover says it makes the "Godfather Saga Pale by Comparison." It does. One chapter is titled "Silencing Whistleblowers." In that chapter, Stich chronicles what establishment gangsters do to people who speak up. Murdering them is more common than is comfortable for me, yet more common is an array of kangaroo court tactics and other tricks. Stich notes that the pattern of murder accelerated during the 1990s, as the crimes escalated. No saints [have ever been American presidents](#). The Clinton Body Count, where many close to him have died suddenly and/or mysteriously, is well known. If most of them were liquidated, it is standard American politics. *Defrauding America* was published in 1994, and the worst scandals happened during the Reagan-Bush years. *Defrauding America*, Russell Bowen's *The Immaculate Deception*, Bo Gritz' *Called to Serve* and Pete Brewton's *The Mafia, CIA and George Bush* corroborate that information.

Before reading *Defrauding America*, I was aware of many of those whistleblowers' fates, and Stich's book told me of dozens more. Stich mentions Danny Casolaro, who was an investigative reporter who tried breaking the story on what he called "The Octopus." The Octopus was a pattern of scandals that seemed related, including the October Surprise. For those not familiar with October Surprise, it relates to Ronald Reagan's presidential campaign in 1980. The Iranians released their hostages the day Reagan was inaugurated.

Casolaro's Octopus was an alleged connection between the October Surprise, Iran-Contra, BCCI, Inslaw and other scandals. In early August of 1991, Casolaro felt that he had nearly solved the puzzle, and told his friends and family that he had nearly attained the big payoff to his investigations.

Just as he reached the brink, he began receiving anonymous threats, so ominous that Casolaro told his brother, a physician, "I have been getting some threatening phone calls. If anything happens to me, don't

believe it was accidental." A week later, Casolaro was on his life's most important trip, going to Martinsburg, West Virginia seeking his puzzle's final pieces. On August 10th, while Casolaro was in Martinsburg, a week after he told his brother to not accept "accidental" explanations of anything happening to him, the housekeeper at the Casolaro home picked up the ringing phone to hear, "You're dead, you bastard." The anonymous caller quickly hung up. On that same day, Danny Casolaro lay dying in a bathtub at the Sheraton Hotel in Martinsburg.

In life, Casolaro was squeamish, but the body in the bathtub had apparently hacked its wrists so forcefully that a tendon was severed. There was a suicide note, asking for forgiveness. His friends and family thought him unlikely to kill himself, especially his brother, who received Danny's warning the week before. Casolaro was outgoing and boyishly exuberant about life. The Martinsburg authorities did not contact his family the day Danny died. Instead they quickly and illegally had his body embalmed, something that made a valid autopsy (to answer questions such as, "had he been drugged?") impossible. The next day the *Village Voice* received an anonymous call, telling them that Casolaro had died. Casolaro's family was not notified until the day after the *Village Voice* received the news.

When looking into assassinations, mysterious suicides, etc., the same patterns repeat themselves. Inexplicably, the police abandon the most basic procedures of their profession, and cavalierly destroy or "misplace" evidence. Very strangely, a briefcase full of Casolaro's investigative notes, which he hauled everywhere he went, especially to Martinsburg, vanished without a trace. There was also evidence that somebody besides Casolaro was in the room after he died, because somebody had been trying to mop up the blood with towels, as told by the assistant housekeeper on duty at the hotel, who was on the scene before the authorities arrived. The housekeeper told of blood smeared all over the floor, and a wad of bloody towels lying under the sink. How strange. It was not strange enough for the local police to follow up on, however. It was a suicide, case closed.[\[31\]](#)

After his family raised hell when they discovered what the West Virginia authorities had done, there was an official "investigation," which naturally confirmed that Casolaro killed himself. In U.S. history, very few official investigations have concluded that something might be awry with the system. They are usually cover-ups more than they are investigations.

When the Warren Commission investigated JFK's murder, they could not deny foul play, but decided that a "lone nut" did it. The evidence for a conspiracy surrounding the JFK assassination is simply overwhelming, and studying debunking work such as Gerald Posner's *Case Closed* makes the case for conspiracy even *stronger*, even ignoring what Gary Wean knows. When the House Select Committee on Assassinations investigated the JFK assassination, one piece of evidence caused them to decide that a conspiracy killed JFK. Many other pieces of evidence should have also convinced them, but they settled on one. They backpedaled as well, saying that there was a conspiracy, but they had no idea who did it. Case closed.

Casolaro was probably silenced. He was kind of an amateur, and probably got in over his head. Casolaro ran his ideas by an FBI man. That FBI man told a House investigative committee, "There is cause for suspicions." Three days before Casolaro died, he told an FBI agent that he was warned that his pursuit of the Octopus would kill him.[\[32\]](#)

Another incident during the 1990s can make the pattern clearer. Paul Wilcher was a lawyer who deeply probed the world of CIA covert actions and conspiracies. On May 21st, 1993, Wilcher sent a 101-page document to U.S. Attorney General Janet Reno. His letter had similar allegations to Casolaro's "Octopus" investigation. To average Americans, Wilcher's allegations might seem like the most extreme conspiracy

theories that anybody could imagine.

There is an impressive body of evidence that the Jonestown "mass suicide" in Guyana was anything but mass suicide. Conscientious investigators unearthed that evidence long ago, but I have never seen the American mainstream media question the "mass suicide" Kool Aid story. There is strong evidence that Jonestown was a slave labor camp that Jones was running with CIA help. Jones had significant CIA ties. There were enough psychoactive drugs, such as Thorazine, at Jonestown to have kept a city of 200,000 doped up for a year. The coroner of Guyana, Dr. Mootoo, was on the scene quickly, and testified that almost all the dead had injection marks on their shoulder blades, or were shot or strangled. There was no evidence of mass suicide, but mass murder.

What appears to have happened is something that most Americans would rather not believe *could* happen. Jonestown appears to have been a continuation of the CIA's MK-ULTRA mind control experiments. The CIA told Congress that they stopped MK-ULTRA in the 1970's, but [Ralph McGehee](#) has never once seen the CIA tell the truth to Congress. It is so bad that it is almost guaranteed that the *exact opposite* of what the CIA tells Congress is true. One of the CIA's primary tasks is [lying to the American people](#). It appears that Jones was a CIA asset who ran a mind control experiment at Jonestown. Jones was the boyhood friend of CIA torture specialist [Dan Mitrione](#), who also operated out of South America. Most of Jonestown's "residents" were black. The people running Jonestown were white. The "church" they ran in the San Francisco Bay area did attract disturbed and gullible white people who wanted to join a cult, but many Jonestown "residents" apparently were abducted off the San Francisco's streets, while others were lured there under false pretenses. It appears that Jonestown may have been partially inspired by what the Nazis did in the death camps. Josef Mengele, of Auschwitz fame, may have known Jones. Mengele may have "consulted" at Jonestown.

Whatever they were doing in Jonestown, California Congressman Leo Ryan was getting heat from his constituents regarding their sons and daughters being spirited off to Guyana. Ryan decided to check out Jonestown himself, and flew down there. Ryan's appearance "blew" the operation's cover, and it had to be shut down. Ryan was murdered as he landed at Jonestown, which is the first and only time that a U.S. Congressman has died in the line of duty. Then they liquidated Jonestown's 900 residents. They apparently tried turning the Jonestown inmates into automatons, and they *tried* getting everybody to drink the cyanide-laced Kool Aid, but the people were not that far gone. Nearly everybody fled into the jungle. They were chased down, murdered, and hauled back to Jonestown.

Alleged CIA-agent and embassy official Richard Dwyer was apparently there when the killing began, and Jones himself was captured on audio tape yelling, "Get Dwyer out of here!" British and American Special Forces troops were "conducting operations" in the vicinity, and they rounded up and killed Jonestown's fleeing inmates. Bo Gritz knows a Special Forces operative who was on that operation. The man was so outraged that he wrote a manuscript, titling it with the message they radioed in when the job was done: "All the Niggers are Dead!" U.S. secrecy laws forbade the man from publishing it, but he at least had the satisfaction of writing it.[\[33\]](#)

Jonestown has apparently been repopulated by inmates from Asia, and is merely one of numerous camps like it. There apparently are other Jonestowns dotting the globe, run by the CIA and other spook agencies. America's tax dollars at work.

How many Americans have heard that story? Has Dan Rather talked about that one lately? A House committee "investigated," and concluded that the CIA had nothing to do with Jonestown. Case closed.

Wilcher heard about it, however. Jonestown was mentioned in his letter, along with the JFK, RFK, Martin Luther King, Malcolm X and John Lennon assassinations, as well as the deaths of J. Edgar Hoover, Martha Mitchell, John Tower, Senator John Heinz, Congressman Ted Weiss, as well as the attempts on Ronald Reagan and George Wallace. Wilcher also wrote about October Surprise, the FBI's COINTELPRO program wiping out the Black Panthers, and so on. Wilcher even alleged that the South Korean airliner's downing was not by the Soviet Union, but the CIA. Is there a conspiracy theory that Wilcher left out? The major thrust of Wilcher's letter was what happened at Waco. He also discussed the infamous Clinton Body Count. Wilcher's belief was that unless somebody like Reno found some courage, there would not be an America left before long.

Wilcher was snooping into the bank accounts of ex-presidents at BCCI. Janet Reno was far from alone in hearing from him. Most of Capitol Hill was aware of Wilcher's muckraking.

Wilcher was taping and attending conferences held by famous independent White House correspondent Sarah McClendon. In the meantime, Wilcher was in close contact with CIA agents and his friend [Rodney Stich](#). In early June 1993, a few weeks after he sent his letter to Janet Reno, Wilcher stopped attending McClendon's conferences. McClendon herself became concerned about Wilcher, and asked a woman friend of Wilcher's to ask Stich if he had heard from him. It is known that on June 16, 1993 Wilcher talked to one of his sources, a CIA contract agent in a federal penitentiary, and an informant of Stich's also.

A couple days before the woman called Stich, she went to Wilcher's apartment, looking for him. Not only was Wilcher not home, but the woman also rang the adjacent apartment's doorbell and was greeted with a recording saying that she had reached a disconnected government number.

Wilcher's friend called Stich on June 22, 1993, asking him what to do, and if he thought Wilcher was alive. Stich responded that based on what he knew, it was 75% likely that Wilcher was dead. In the meantime, McClendon, 83 at the time, was badgering the Washington D.C. police to do something about Wilcher's disappearance. On June 23rd, the Washington D.C. police finally broke into Wilcher's apartment to find his decomposing, naked corpse sitting upright on the toilet, as if he had died there.

The apartment was crawling with nearly thirty firemen, policemen and FBI investigators. The FBI seized all the records in Wilcher's apartment, while incredibly telling McClendon (who rushed to the scene) that they had "no interest" in the case. The local authorities inexplicably ruled Wilcher's death a suicide. The coroner's office refused to provide Stich with a copy of their autopsy report. Case closed.

Stich's informants are CIA/FBI/NSA types, and they end up dead from time to time (one was stuffed into a car trunk at an airport). I am surprised that Stich lived long enough to write *Defrauding America*. They got Stich, however, which I will cover soon.

Stich discovered that Wilcher was apparently lured out of his apartment and led to Vienna, Virginia. He was interrogated about what he knew about George Bush's, Jimmy Carter's and former CIA head William Webster's bank accounts at BCCI. BCCI insiders had given Wilcher a great deal of documentation. Wilcher was then fed a pizza and given a can of Pepsi. The Pepsi can was coated with a solution of curare dissolved in DMSO. DMSO is a chemical that carries throughout a person's body in seconds. When I was in collegiate track, I knew people who used it. If you put your finger in a cup of DMSO, you can taste it on your tongue in seconds. Curare is a highly toxic poison that paralyzes the muscles, causing death from asphyxiation. Wilcher was dead within minutes of grabbing that can of Pepsi.

Then his killers (CIA/NSA types) put his corpse into a fetal position, stuck it in a car's trunk and drove back to his apartment. By the time they arrived, rigor mortis had set in and Wilcher looked like a statue of *The Thinker*. They set his corpse on his toilet.[\[34\]](#) That is one way to end an investigation into corruption. The official opinion is that the deaths of Casolaro and Wilcher are unrelated suicides. More people besides Casolaro and Wilcher have died regarding the Octopus-like activities surrounding the BCCI, Inslaw and related scandals.[\[35\]](#)

Stich chronicles the many ways that they silence whistleblowers. Stich tells how they took care of him. The judges in California get creativity points in Stich's case; they used an angle I had never heard of. Stich was a multimillionaire, married many years ago, and in the 1960s he obtained a divorce in Texas. As Tom Bearden said about [game theory](#), they look for chinks in the target's armor and go for the weak spot. Although Stich had been divorced for 26 years, the judges in California said that California did not recognize his Texas divorce, declared him still legally married to his ex-wife, and then used the community property laws to seize his assets.[\[36\]](#) With no money, he was legally defenseless. Kangarooing somebody into prison from that point is often merely a formality.

They made it up as they went along, not bothering to have a shred of legal standing for what they did. The gangster judges handed down ruling after ruling that would make a lawyer's jaw drop. Then they all wolfed down a chunk of Stich's six-million-dollar net worth. Free drinks for everybody!

The Europeans always played off [Native Americans against each other](#), and few natives ever figured it out as they participated in their eventual annihilation. Similarly, with Stich they found a greedy ex-wife who was willing to participate in the legal abomination so she could get at her ex-husband's money. While reading Stich's account of events, I recalled seeing that game played before, many times. His ex-wife's participation in the fraud ruined her daughter's life, drove her daughter's husband to suicide, and shattered several lives.

A critical lesson that humanity has yet to learn is that the ends never justify the means. The [means become the ends](#). One cannot use a means inconsistent with the desired end. Good guys do not kill bad guys. That is a lie that too many believe. The devils in costume keep playing that game, as long as people are stupid enough to fall for it. It is idiocy to think that people can kill all the bad guys, and all that will be left are good guys. Maybe it happens in John Wayne Western movies, but not in real life. It is another case of inverted logic. [Orthodox cancer treatment](#) uses nearly the same premise: killing all the "bad" cells while sparing the good. It does not work.

As Ralph McGehee makes clear in his [Deadly Deceits](#), the CIA actively recruits people who blindly follow orders.[\[37\]](#) The indoctrination and propaganda is intense, but is also merely a continuation of the lies that children are taught in [grade school history classes](#) and [see on TV](#). I have known people who are part of "off-the-shelf" operations, where they do not officially work for the CIA, but try holding down real jobs between stints with the spooks.

They are often recruited with a pitch about how covert action serves their country. The appeal is usually to patriotism and/or the macho mentality. They are told that they are defending freedom. They are trained in the art of murder and other activities. I have friends with a lot of blood on their hands, whom I will not name, because blowing their cover could risk their lives. They were either young or gullible, and seduced into the program. Generally, their covert action jobs ruined them as human beings. Nobody murders somebody, even when told that they are killing "bad guys," with clean hands and consciences, except true

[dark path](#) initiates. The CIA's headquarters are [full of zombies who kind of figured it out](#), but are trapped in their careers and drink themselves silly until retirement.

Once in a great while, a covert action soldier wakes up and his conscience takes over. [Ralph McGehee](#) and Philip Agee are two such men. Ralph published his CIABASE on the Internet. He is more than 70 years old. His CIABASE was composed of public domain information. He used no classified information. Nevertheless, his activities exposed the CIA for what it is. They made [Ralph's life a living hell for daring to speak up](#). They tried to silence him for years, trying to frame him for crimes and other dirty tactics, but since he was doing nothing illegal, and the CIA's harassment of him was illegal, Ralph was hanging in there, though some days were worse than others. In early 2000, as Ralph was writing about how our "aid" to the [Colombian government](#) looked remarkably similar to how the [Vietnam experience](#) began, the CIA stepped up the harassment by spiking his food and causing injury to his mouth. Ralph's CIABASE is now out of business.

The CIA has been partly responsible for the [deaths of millions of people throughout the world](#), as it helps keep the majority of humanity enslaved to the [neocolonial](#) system. If humanity survives the transition we are in the early stages of today, the coming age will not have secret agencies and spies. Secrecy and deception are tools of [dark path initiates](#), not light path beings. When light path beings resort to such tactics to "fight the dark," they have already lost. The CIA, FBI, NSA and related institutions are primarily self-serving, or what most would call "evil." The American people are carefully brainwashed into believing that they need them, to "protect" them.

Phil Agee did not abide by the secrecy agreement as Ralph McGehee did, and he wrote *Inside the Company* abroad and named names. He had a rougher ride than Ralph. *Inside the Company* and *On the Run* documents what the CIA did to Agee. One trick was using a bugged typewriter to find his hiding place in Paris, while he was writing *Inside the Company*. They tried luring him to Spain to "neutralize" him before he finished the book. After he published *Inside the Company*, he was kicked out of several European countries before he gained political asylum in West Germany. He lost his homeland by publishing how the CIA works.

Some results of the CIA's machinations help to bring cheap oil and other commodities to America, and many Americans have consciously prostituted themselves. They realize that the CIA and gang are creating immense death and destruction throughout the world, but as long as they enjoy cheap gasoline, coffee, bananas and tennis shoes, they think it is great. Many in the upper classes think that the CIA, FBI and NSA are great institutions, keeping the chips flowing their way. Those who condone bloodshed and exploitation in the service of their lifestyles, often coming up with highly strained rationales, will create future circumstances where they will find the shoe on the other foot. They will experience what slavery is like, barely surviving while their masters live in opulence.

On the issue of UFOs, there has been credible data and testimony from impeccable sources. [Steven Greer](#), MD, founded and has run the Center for the Study of Extraterrestrial Intelligence (CSETI) since 1991. His strategy during the past several years has been honorable and difficult to defeat. Greer has been rounding up astronauts, politicians, military leaders (generals, and about 400 people in all), and other experts and high-ranking people, persuading them to testify about what they know about UFOs. As Dennis Lee has done, Greer knocked on the front door, walking right up to the White House, the military, Congress, the CIA, the United Nations and presenting his material. Of the 100 witnesses that Greer originally rounded up, more than fifty wanted immunity from the national security laws before they would testify. More than

forty wanted to testify, and as far as they were concerned, the national security laws could be damned. Those numbers were when Greer only had 100 witnesses willing to speak. His total numbers have quadrupled, but most of those 300 additional witnesses also want protection before they will testify.

Greer approached the establishment with their own people, making the impossible-to-fairly-attack case that in humanity's common interest, the national security laws should be waived, so those people can publicly tell what they know without being thrown into prison. If there was nothing to hide about UFOs, the government has no defense. The witnesses Greer assembled are impressive.[\[38\]](#) In April 1997, Greer presented eleven witnesses who testified under oath to the U.S. Congress in secret hearings. The co-host of the presentation was a man who walked on the moon, Apollo 14 astronaut Dr. Edgar Mitchell. The witnesses gave first-hand testimonies, given under oath, of UFO encounters and related events. One person who did not testify was, in words of Greer, an "Intelligence Officer privy to the disinformation plan to stage a mock attack using back-engineered alien reproduction vehicles (ARVs), was picked up and sequestered by Intelligence during the proceedings."

Greer and friends are trying to bring the issue into a public forum, and waiving the national security laws so they can testify without being sent straight to prison. Greer's plan *is* unassailable, yet the merciless attacks on Greer in 1997 were beyond bizarre. Even his supposed allies in the UFO field attacked him, trying to wrap him up in copyright issues and other drivel. People accused Greer of ridiculous things (such as he would make a killing and control the movement). How can he control anything by having public hearings where witnesses can testify without fear of reprisal? The plan *is* unassailable, which is why the attacks on him were so irrational. The glib attacks were largely made by organizations and people that I suspect have intelligence connections, posing publicly as UFO enthusiasts, but in reality working to discredit or otherwise attack the real deal coming forward. It is similar "logic" to prosecuting Dennis' Seattle company for "consumer protection," when the customers [risked none of the their money](#) as they purchased Dennis' heat pump. Logic does not matter if one has the bully pulpit to lie from.

The witnesses are not rabid, wild-eyed conspiracy theorists, but people such as astronauts who want to safely testify in a public forum. Those hearings would probably be one of human history's biggest events, and the man trying to make it happen is attacked from all sides.

A recent example of this nation's response to that secret Congressional testimony, and the threat of public knowledge that we are not alone in the universe, is David Adair. Adair has been on the *Art Bell Show* since he testified, and his story *is* incredible. Adair testified to an experience that he had at Area 51 in 1971. He says that he built a *fusion* rocket as a teenager, with U.S. government sponsorship and theoretical assistance from Stephen Hawking, before he developed Lou Gehrig's Disease. Hawking was involved because a partial black hole was used as the containment field for the fusion reaction. The rocket was launched in New Mexico and landed at Area 51 in Nevada. At Area 51, Arthur Rudolf, one of the [NASA Nazis](#), asked Adair to look at something. Adair was taken underground and shown what he believed to be a star drive from an alien craft. It was like his fusion engine, but a thousand times bigger, and it was alive, an organic fusion engine. Adair determined that it had a containment failure. Adair was only 17 years old, and was going to be locked up when the legendary Curtis LeMay came and rescued Adair from jail, because he was a friend of the family and suspected that Adair was in trouble.

LeMay ran the Strategic Air Command, and was Barry Goldwater's buddy. Goldwater, who lost the presidential election to Lyndon Johnson in 1964, was a brigadier general in the National Guard, one of America's highest-ranking politicians, and a pal of the highest-ranking military officials. One day at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Goldwater was shooting the breeze with LeMay and asked if he could see the

legendary Blue Room and Hangar 18, reputed home of captured craft, frozen aliens and other extraterrestrial paraphernalia. According to Goldwater, LeMay became the angriest he had ever seen him. He shouted at Goldwater that he had better never hear him ask that question again. It is the highest official admission of what might be going on behind the national security veil that I know of. Goldwater talked for years about that event, even on *Larry King Live* to a national audience. There are published letters that Goldwater wrote, confirming the story.[\[39\]](#)

Adair says that LeMay rescued him from Area 51, and on the way back home to Mount Vernon, Ohio, LeMay told Adair to stop making rockets, and Adair says that he readily complied, not wanting to risk what nearly happened at Area 51. Adair has been involved in the space program ever since, and is buddies with many astronauts, and his company's equipment goes up in the space shuttles regularly.

Adair testified to Congress, under oath, and told them that their own records can prove his story, as they provided the funding to build his rocket. He talked about it on *Art Bell* to a national audience. Adair said that if he was lying, they could lock him up tomorrow, as he would have perjured himself.[\[40\]](#) His story is unbelievable. It also might be true.

Where were the "skeptics," leaping all over Adair, proving him to be a fraud? There was barely a peep. Look on the Internet for commentary on Adair. His story and credentials cannot be hard to attack if they are bogus. Nobody made a credible effort.

Greer's right hand throughout his UFO activism was Shari Adamiak, who was with him every step of the way. When they held those hearings in April 1997, they were both about forty years old. How they could be stopped legally or ethically was difficult to imagine, walking in the government's front door with their witnesses. Two months after the hearings, Greer and Adamiak both came down with cancer. What are the odds of that "coincidence"? There may be a Curare and Cancer Department in one of America's intelligence agencies. The collective response by the UFO crowd to Greer and Adamiak's illness was a yawn. Adamiak died on January 20, 1998. Greer is still alive.

With America's collective catatonia and the government's stonewalling of Greer's activities, Greer has been forced into doing what he tried avoiding: bypassing the official channels in getting the information out there. Part of his Disclosure Project has been to publish *Extraterrestrial Contact*. His organization has been preparing documentation and video testimony, if nobody will allow it through the official channels. It will not be surprising if more "coincidental" problems befall Greer and his organization.

Those situations should have a certain resonance with right wing Americans. What the government did to the Branch Davidians at Waco, Texas in 1993 was obviously a diabolically planned mass murder. As with [The Panama Deception](#), the documentary *Rules of Engagement* was nominated for an Academy Award. It did not win, but stands as the best audio-visual summary regarding what our government did to those people. Americans should be justly outraged by what happened there. Yet, it is a microcosm of what America has done to Iraq, for instance. The American government murdered more than a dozen children at Waco. It has [murdered hundreds of thousands of Iraqi children](#), with the death toll still climbing. It [murdered millions of Southeast Asian people](#) during the 1960s and 1970s. The Waco Massacre was relatively mild when compared to what happened to [Black Kettle's](#) people, not all that far from Waco.

In a familiar pattern, the Branch Davidian survivors were prosecuted for the deaths of the storm troopers who attacked them (probably killed by their own Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms (BATF) buddies). The men who died in the attack were some of Bill Clinton's bodyguards, on loan from the Secret

Service. They are more people on the Bill Clinton Body Count, and may have known too much. The Branch Davidians fought back and waged their own unlawful death lawsuit against the murdering feds. Several experts were going to testify on the Branch Davidians' behalf regarding the infrared film footage that clearly depicts the government agents firing machine guns into the Davidian compound as they set it on fire. Expert Carlos Ghigliotti was going to testify regarding the footage. He conveniently died of a "heart attack," soon before he could testify. He was only 42. Edward Allard, another expert who was going to testify, had an incapacitating stroke a few weeks before Ghigliotti died. At about the same time Ghigliotti was dying, Fred Zegel, another expert who was going to testify, suddenly came down with blood poisoning and barely survived. Another expert who was going to testify, Maurice Cox, had a sudden worsening of his kidney problems at the same time those others had their "mishaps." Michael McNulty, who produced *Rules of Engagement*, has major doubts that they were coincidental. The sudden incapacitation and/or death of those experts pretty much destroyed the chance those Davidian plaintiffs had in court. Was it another string of fortunate "coincidences" for the American government? They ply their trade with more subtlety than when David Ferrie died of a "drug overdose" just before Jim Garrison's JFK assassination investigation could get to him, or George de Mohrenschildt "committing suicide" the very day that HSCA investigator Gaeton Fonzi contacted him, and many other amazing and unfortunate coincidences.[\[41\]](#)

Similarly, the evidence is strong that Timothy McVeigh's fertilizer bomb could not have done the damage to the Oklahoma City federal building that it did. The Air Force conducted tests at Eglin Air Force Base in Florida after the Oklahoma City bombing, and Brigadier General Benton K. Partin, one of the world's leading experts on explosives and ordnance, led the research. They found that an air bomb, which was what McVeigh set off, could not possibly do the damage to the Oklahoma City federal building that it supposedly did. An air bomb would have blown out the windows of the federal building and not much else. There had to be other bombs inside the building in order to take out those reinforced concrete columns, which meant that a sophisticated bombing took place, far more than McVeigh and his buddy could have done. McVeigh apparently was a fall guy, as were Oswald and Sirhan, but maybe it was not a government/spook action, but perhaps a backfired covert operation, as the JFK assassination was. There is a great deal of evidence of prior knowledge of the bombing. Everybody at the BATF in that building (except for the support staff) stayed home on the day of the bombing. The Oklahoma governor's brother wrote a novel *before* the Oklahoma City bombing, where he described a terrorist bombing of a federal building in Oklahoma City, performed by some nut named *Tom McVey*. How far do we want to stretch coincidence?

What about Those American Hostages in Iran?

Why *did* the Iranians release the hostages the day Reagan was inaugurated? The Iran-Contra scandal gave plenty of evidence why, as the United States was shipping arms to our "enemy," Iran. The Iranian hostage crisis was an albatross around Jimmy Carter's neck that helped derail his reelection bid. There is substantial evidence pointing to a deal being made between Ronald Reagan's election campaign team and the Iranian government, to hold onto the hostages until after the presidential election. It looks as if George Bush may have helped negotiate the deal.[\[42\]](#) The federal government "investigated" and dismissed the October Surprise allegation. They did not really put the allegations to bed, just as the Warren Commission did not regarding JFK's death.

America's political milieu around 1980-1981 is one of American history's scariest periods. Numerous conspiracy theories swirl around Ronald Reagan's choice of George Bush as his running mate. [Bush has a long pedigree](#) in the Eastern Oligarchy and covert activities. Bush ran the CIA and was a member of David

Rockefeller's Trilateral Commission, as were many members of the federal government. Bush has apparently admitted that David Rockefeller was his mentor.[\[43\]](#) Rumors abound that Reagan chose Bush because of Rockefeller's influence.

A little-known member of David Rockefeller's Trilateral Commission also became president, rising from obscurity to win the 1976 presidential election: Jimmy Carter. David's brother Nelson was vice president while two assassination attempts were made on Gerald Ford, bringing Nelson within a bullet of being the second president who was never on a ballot, and Ford was the first.

While Bush was apparently in Paris in October 1980, negotiating the hostage release with Iran, it looks like the wheels were moving to put some bona fide gangsters in charge of the federal government. Immediately after Reagan was elected, one man was coming out of a five-year hibernation, after barely escaping deportation proceedings that were only forestalled because Richard Nixon was run out of office. Ironically, both Nixon and Reagan ran on the law-and-order platform and probably had the two most lawless administrations in American history. John Lennon was coming out of seclusion after five years. Not only was he in the studio making his first album in five years, *Double Fantasy*, he was also coming out of his political hibernation. In light of what happened after Reagan's inauguration, Lennon was on a short list of those who could have mobilized average Americans against what Reagan's boys were about to do to [Central America](#) and other nations. Lennon won Nixon's hatred with his high-profile Vietnam protests, which was why they tried to deport him.

A controversial situation got CIA-man Bush on the ticket, a man who may have helped engineer October Surprise. A few weeks after Reagan was inaugurated, the State Department floated a white paper on February 23, 1981. The white paper was apparently a series of forged documents that were supposed to help justify the reign of terror that the Reagan administration was about to wage in [El Salvador](#), terrorizing the population and killing 75,000 civilians while using about \$6 billion in U.S. taxpayer money.[\[44\]](#)

Similar to the "assassins" of JFK, RFK, Martin Luther King, Jr. and John Lennon, those who attempted to assassinate George Wallace, Gerald Ford and Ronald Reagan were "lone nuts." It is amazing that those "lone nuts" all pulled their triggers at critical or intriguing political moments in American history. Oswald "killed" JFK soon after JFK declared that he planned to pull American troops out of Vietnam. JFK's executive order to pull the troops out of Vietnam was reversed before he was buried. Sirhan B. Sirhan "killed" RFK the night he won the California democratic primary in 1968, vaulting into the front-runner position for the presidency.

George Wallace came out of nowhere in 1968, in the first substantial third party threat in presidential politics since Teddy Roosevelt's Bull Moose party, splitting the democratic vote enough (especially with RFK gone) to usher repeated political loser Richard Nixon into the White House. Wallace won several southern states that were traditional democratic shoe-ins in presidential elections. Wallace ran again in 1972, and it looked as if he might gain enough support to where *no candidate* would win enough Electoral College votes to be elected president, where somebody like George McGovern might sneak into the White House. Right then, a "lone nut" came out of the woodwork and gunned Wallace down, taking him out of the running.[\[45\]](#)

We all know about the Watergate break-in. Or do we? What was that all about, a few bumbling idiots working on Nixon's behalf? One participant was [E. Howard Hunt](#), a man undoubtedly (at least to me) involved in the events that led to JFK's assassination. Harrison Livingstone is one of many who feels that the Watergate burglary was far from relatively innocent intrigue regarding Nixon's smear techniques, but an

attempt to cover up the political murders that accompanied Nixon's rise to power.[\[46\]](#) Then Nixon's own people brought him down.

When Nixon and Spiro Agnew were taken out one at a time, they were replaced with "Magic Bullet" Gerald Ford and Nelson Rockefeller.[\[47\]](#) Nelson Rockefeller was oligarchy personified. Soon after Ford took office, two "lone nuts" tried taking him out, nearly making Nelson Rockefeller the first president who was not on any ballot or picked by an elected president. Maybe it was merely a series of extraordinary coincidences.

Reagan was elected with the help of the Iranian hostage albatross that Carter wore around his neck, and a month later John Lennon was gunned down by another "lone nut." Then Reagan was inaugurated, with the Iranians releasing the hostages on the same day, followed a few weeks later by the fabricated white paper that helped set the stage for a ten-year reign of terror in Central America. John Lennon was eminently qualified to lead the American people in protesting the crucifixion of Central America. Just when Reagan was able to find the White House bathroom on his own, he was gunned down by another "lone nut." That man was "coincidentally" a friend of George Bush's family.

A few months later, [Omar Torrijos](#), the leader of Panama, died in a mysterious plane crash. It was similar to the "plane crashes" of John Tower and Audie Murphy, where the plane may have exploded in mid-air, as though a bomb went off in it. The CIA had earlier plotted to assassinate Torrijos, and it appears as if they may have finally succeeded.[\[48\]](#) That set the stage for the reign of Manuel Noriega. George Bush later led America in [invading Panama](#) to take out Noriega, supposedly for crimes Noriega committed while he was working for the CIA, which Bush once ran.[\[49\]](#) A few months before Torrijos' untimely demise, the helicopter of Ecuadorian president Jaime Roldós exploded in mid-air. Self-admitted economic hit man John Perkins knew both men, and is sure [the CIA assassinated them both](#). The deaths of Mel Carnahan and Paul Wellstone in 2000 and 2002 were domestic "plane crashes" that happened at opportune moments for the Republicans, as those deaths happened just before election day, and their candidates, who previously did not have a prayer, became shoo-ins on election day, except that Carnahan's opponent, John Ashcroft, lost to a dead man, as the people elected Carnahan's widow instead. [Gary Wean](#) saw that kind of "convenient" death of the incumbent in his travails in Ventura County, where the unknown challenger ran unopposed as the "untimely" death happened so close to election day.

After the assassination attempt, Reagan was a near vegetable for the next eight years of his presidency. The Alzheimer's disease he has today probably began its progress with the assassination attempt, if not earlier.

Alexander Cockburn related a revelation from *Washington Post* reporter Lou Cannon's *The Role of a Lifetime*. Four months after the assassination attempt, Cannon interviewed Reagan. In the *Washington Post* on July 23rd, 1981, he reported an interview with a tired but alert president, coming back from an international summit, talking about how successful it was.

Ten years later, in *The Role of a Lifetime*, Cannon had something very different to report. Cannon wrote,

"What was surprising to me was Reagan's condition. He was exhausted to the point of incoherence throughout much of the interview and could not remember the substance of any subject that had been

discussed apart from Mitterrand's expression of anticommunism. I had not seen Reagan at such close range since the assassination attempt nearly four months earlier, and was shocked at his condition... Reagan simply was unable to recall the content of the talks in which he just participated...The interview concluded...at a signal from Deaver, who did not seem to find the president's condition unusual."

Cockburn wrote,

"At the time of the shooting, the press was full of phrases like 'bouncing back,' 'iron constitution,' and other terms indicating that Reagan had emerged from the ordeal in good shape. In fact Reagan very nearly died on the operating table and was a dotard afterwards. He never fully recovered.

"Conclusion: Unless a president is actually dead, the White House press corps can be relied upon to present him as both sentient and sapient, no matter how decrepit his physical and mental condition."[\[50\]](#)

There are stories and film footage of President Reagan falling asleep at conferences and other embarrassing situations. When Reagan testified after he stepped down from the presidency about the Iran-Contra scandal, and said, "I can't remember" far more than one hundred times during his two days of testimony, he may have been telling the truth. His acting career came in handy, though, and he generally remembered his lines and read his cue cards for the rest of his presidency.

All those "coincidental" assassinations and assassination attempts have plenty surrounding them that make people wonder. For instance, every single one of those "lone nuts" was connected in some way to U.S. intelligence operations. The evidence on Oswald is overwhelming. Mark David Chapman, Lennon's assassin, worked for a CIA front organization. Sirhan had strange and shadowy connections to CIA-related mind control operations, and Sirhan acted like a *Manchurian Candidate*. See the movie of that name starring Frank Sinatra, which like *The China Syndrome* was a little too prescient, and was pulled from circulation and not shown for many years in America after the JFK assassination.

E. Howard Hunt was a novelist, among his many talents, and his writing colleague Gore Vidal all but accused Hunt of writing the "diary" of the lone nut Arthur Bremer, the man who shot George Wallace. Vidal thought that Bremer's diary was a little too writerly, something Vidal thought Hunt was just the man to write, doing his part in fabricating another "lone nut."[\[51\]](#)

Besides working for a CIA front organization, there are strange events surrounding Mark David Chapman's shooting of Lennon. Chapman originally purchased a plane ticket to Chicago, but ended up in New York. There were days of unaccounted time. When Chapman signed Lennon's name in Hawaii when he quit his job, it was odd. There is little evidence that Chapman was particularly interested in Lennon from a fan's point of view. Chapman was a big fan of Todd Rundgren, but Chapman was not even as big a Lennon fan as I am. What was going on in his head? Were his handlers preparing him for the deed in Chicago? Immediately after he gunned Lennon down, he sat down on the curb, reached into his pocket, pulled out *The Catcher in the Rye* and began reading it, a kind of *Manchurian Candidate* behavior one encounters if they begin looking into MK-ULTRA and related programs. Chapman has not acted crazy while he has been

in prison.[\[52\]](#)

When Ronald Reagan was shot, even though his limousine left the scene five minutes before James Brady's did, it arrived at the hospital *fifteen minutes after* Brady's did. What happened in those twenty missing minutes? Was Reagan told how it was going to be, while he lay there in agony? Reagan admitted that he did not feel anything until the Secret service agent jumped on top of him in the limousine. It appears that a strange bullet entered Reagan's ribs. The projectile created a small, nearly bloodless wound, and the doctors almost did not find the dime-shaped fléchette. More strangeness was a "lone nut" that was a long-time friend of the Bush family. Bush and Hinckley's dad went way back to the good old Texas oil days. The day of the assassination attempt, Hinckley's older brother had a dinner date with George's son Neil. It's a small world.[\[53\]](#)

In most of those assassinations and attempts, there was evidence of more bullets flying than the assassin's gun actually fired. The "lone nut" was usually immediately apprehended, and all other suspects were immediately released. "No conspiracy" was announced within hours of each shooting, even in the case of Martin Luther King, when there was no suspect immediately after his shooting.[\[54\]](#)

Was political assassination the standard policy by those who really ran America from 1963 to 1981, serving up a "lone nut" scapegoat each time? There were many, many other strange and/or untimely deaths of high-ranking CIA, FBI and political folks, such as J. Edgar Hoover, William Sullivan, William Casey, John Tower, Hale Boggs, William Colby and others. In the 1970s, there apparently was a "spook war" taking place, not much different than a Mafia gang war, except that politicians and bureaucrats were being murdered. As with the rash of strange, violent and untimely deaths surrounding the JFK assassination, political murder while killing more people to tie up the loose ends may be standard practice in America.

There may not have been even one "lone nut" in American presidential assassination history, going clear back to Lincoln. Lincoln's is the only undeniable conspiracy (except the House Select Committee on Assassinations' lame position on JFK's death), as the conspirators tried killing a number of people on the same night. There are interesting theories regarding how far that conspiracy may have reached. The standard right wing theory is that the European bankers bumped off Lincoln because he cut out the central banks and printed "greenbacks," and JFK was initiating a similar program soon before he died.[\[55\]](#)

9/11 – The Mother of all Conspiracy Theories

On the evening of September 10, 2001, I bought airplane tickets to Ohio to visit pals from my [trucking days](#). The next morning I called my old trucking mentor, letting him know I was flying out there in a couple of weeks. He replied, "No you're not," and told me to turn on the television. When I did, both World Trade Center towers were on fire but still standing. At that moment, I knew that my efforts to heal the planet were too little and too late. There have been no surprises since then for me. [Orwell's permanent war](#) was dusted off and used by George Bush the Second and the neoconservatives to justify all manner of imperial outrage. Aggressive invasions in "self defense," in defiance of international law and world opinion, torture centers, outlawed weapons used on invaded nations, police state tactics used on its domestic citizens and so forth - it is no mystery why America became a pariah nation so soon after 9/11, when the U.S. was the object of so much global sympathy.

What was also not surprising was the immediate suspicion among many that 9/11 was too convenient a

“gift” for Bush and neocons, and that they had something to do with 9/11. In 2004, half of New York City’s residents believed that the Bush administration had foreknowledge of 9/11 and allowed it to happen.[\[56\]](#) A friend living in Manhattan was skeptical of the “inside job” angle of 9/11, until Bush named Henry Kissinger, Mr. Cloak and Dagger, to head the 9/11 Commission. Kissinger resigned when he had to reveal his business relationships.

Partly because of my work on the [JFK Assassination](#), the [moon landings](#) and other controversies, I have some access to the 9/11 independent researcher community. In 2004, I made the suggestion that the 9/11 researchers should concentrate on the most provable findings and stay away from the more speculative theories, if they want to make a persuasive case to the public. My suggestion sparked a flame war amongst the researchers, which confirmed the observation I made about the [JFK researchers](#). In late 2005, a physics professor from BYU, a conservative bastion if there ever was one, published an academic paper that supported the theory that World Trade Center building number 7 was [taken down by controlled demolition](#), which led to the theory that the main World Trade Center (WTC) towers were also collapsed in a controlled demolition. The faculties of two Utah universities unanimously accepted his findings. In the wake of publishing his study, he made the same suggestion that I did: researchers should focus their efforts on the most provable aspects of the 9/11 controversy and stop fighting with each other.

Because of the time I spent looking into the JFK assassination, the moon landings and so forth, I realized that it would take time and effort beyond my means and inclination to do a creditable investigation of the 9/11 evidence. However, I have spent more than a hundred hours looking at the evidence over the years, and I think the most compelling and fruitful avenues of investigation today include:

- Only three steel-framed buildings have collapsed due to fire in world history - all WTC towers, all on the same day, and WTC7 was not hit by a plane and only had small fires in it when it collapsed, and all three collapsed in a manner consistent with controlled demolition;
- In the most protected airspace on earth (over Washington D.C.), America’s entire national security apparatus was caught flatfooted, and the Secretary of Defense himself sat in his office as a plane hit the Pentagon, where he was working, nearly an hour after the first World Trade Center tower was hit;
- On 9/11, there were numerous [war games](#) being engaged in by the U.S. Air Force and NORAD, with even one “live” hijacking plane in the air; this may help explain the non-response by the U.S. military to the hijackings, and is eerily similar to the fake assassination attempt on JFK that [turned into a real one](#) - and the Bush family is intimately connected to both events;
- A hijacker’s passport miraculously appeared on the ground after the WTC attacks, emerging unscathed from the fiery crash into the WTC; conversely, no black box information from any of the planes has ever been made public;
- The plane that allegedly hit the Pentagon performed aerial feats that the experts may not be able to reproduce, but a pilot who never trained beyond a simulator supposedly did it (again, similar to Oswald’s irreproducible feats of marksmanship to shoot JFK); all footage that may have shown a plane hitting the Pentagon has been seized by the federal government and never shown publicly, and there are numerous other anomalies with the plane that allegedly hit the Pentagon;
- In the days leading up to 9/11, a highly unusual number of share options of both United and American Airlines were [sold short](#) (betting the share price would decline), and the profits made by those speculators may have amounted to many millions of dollars;

- The plane that crashed in Pennsylvania left more than one debris field, and they were several miles apart, a fact inconsistent with the official version of events - the plane apparently began coming apart before crashing, evidence of either a bomb going off on it, or it being shot down.

Of course, if the U.S. government was complicit in 9/11, they are not going to mount an impartial investigation, and the official 9/11 Commission findings were deficient in numerous areas. At best, there is plenty that the American people are not being told about the events of September 1, 2005. At worst, 9/11 was staged or allowed to happen, to give Bush and the neocons free reign with their imperial ambitions. After all, they *were* the primary beneficiaries of 9/11 (along with perhaps Osama bin Laden). Cui bono?

Is Anything Being Covered up about the Apollo Moon Landings?

Warning: This part of this essay can seem technical and arcane, and will not interest many readers. In summary, after years of looking at the evidence, I proved to my satisfaction that the moon landings happened as officially portrayed, and did not discover anything of great significance covered up about them, while uncovering positive evidence that convinced me that the [moon landings really happened](#). To bypass this Apollo section and skip to the essay's end, take [this link](#).

The single year of my father's career not spent working for the Department of Defense was his year with NASA, working for Chris Kraft in the Mission Control Room in Houston. It was 1966-1967, in the heat of the space race. I was a Houston space brat, and have had an unflagging interest in NASA and the exploration of space. I watched many of the 1960s space shots live on television, and lived in Houston when those astronauts died in the 1967 fire, and its aftermath made my father decide to quit NASA, as the environment became hyper-political, with everybody trying to cover their backsides and pointing the finger at everybody else. As with [Brian O'Leary](#) (see his *The Making of an Ex-astronaut*), my father felt that Texas did not compare favorably to California. I will never forget when those astronauts died, with my father watching on television an event that he experienced at work that day. NASA personnel (including my father) eventually heard the horrifying sounds as those men died. When the Challenger shuttle exploded in 1986, it took me back to that day in 1967, and I felt sick.

My father had a top-secret security clearance, and NASA was quasi-military in its approach to the moon shots.

I have slowly become aware that NASA has been less than honest with the American people. [Richard Hoagland](#) used to be a NASA spokesman, sitting next to Walter Cronkite during the space shots. Similar to O'Leary, Hoagland left NASA's fold and became critical and suspicious of it. For many years, I have read of UFOs accompanying the astronauts through space, watched footage of some of those UFOs, heard legends about Armstrong and Aldrin freaking out on the moon when alien craft landed next to them (during a two-minute television "blackout"), checking the experimental equipment they set out. Through the Apollo program, all the astronauts had military backgrounds, and as such, national security laws could be held over their heads to keep them silent.

My first introduction to a possible NASA cover-up was around 1991 when I read William Brian's *Moongate*. Brian did not make the case that the moon landings were faked, but that there was plenty covered up about

them. He began his book with the well-known military-NASA connection. Then he discussed the “neutral point discrepancy,” which is the difference in various accounts of the point in space where the gravitational pull of the moon and earth would be equal on a spacecraft traveling between them. Brian cited several sources before the moon landings that calculated the neutral point about twenty thousand miles from the moon. Then he cited several sources that described the neutral point during the Apollo moon shots. Those sources cited a neutral point about forty thousand miles from the moon's surface. Brian asked what changed in those intervening years. He made the case that the neutral point should be about twenty thousand miles from the moon's surface, and if it was really forty thousand miles, then the moon has a much stronger surface gravity than previously supposed. Brian derived the neutral point calculation and the moon's surface gravity if the neutral point was forty thousand miles, and derived a surface gravity for the moon that was 64% of earth's, not the 16% we have been told.

Brian then followed a trail of other evidence, such as the astronauts' experiences on the moon, the evidence of a lunar atmosphere and other anomalies, and Brian made the case that NASA probably used non-rocket technology to land on the moon and take off from it, which means that if we have anti-gravity technology, we also have free energy technology. I was impressed with Brian's reasoning, and for years I threw down his work in front of the “skeptics,” challenging somebody to show me where Brian was wrong. For years, nobody ever did. I have seen Brian called a “kook” (see Donna Kossy's *Kooks*, pp. 65-66) and other names. Nobody, however, ever showed me where Brian was wrong; they would just smile.

Finally, in the late 1990s, Leroy Ellenberger directed me to Archie Roy's *Orbital Motion*, the leading text on orbital mechanics. *Orbital Motion* calculated the neutral point.^[57] It was the forty thousand miles in the Apollo-era literature. Brian found a neutral point discrepancy all right, but it apparently was a discrepancy between the less sophisticated equation that Brian and many others used, and the one that Roy derived. The neutral point discrepancy essentially vanished, as far as demonstrating that the moon's surface gravity was higher than one-sixth of earth's. Because the neutral point discrepancy was the foundation of Brian's arguments, I thought it made his entire case shaky, and let him know it.

Mine was apparently the first legitimate challenge that Brian ever received regarding his work. Far less substantial works often receive the full blast of the “skeptics.” My *Moongate* experience was educational, and it showed me one more way that establishment challenges can be flawed.

All that stated, Brian and others highlighted anomalies that made me think. Years after first reading *Moongate*, I slowly became aware of a small group of people who made the case that we never landed men on the moon. Even the seemingly crazy conspiracy theories have received my attention over the years.

The first person to publicly question the notion that we sent men to the moon was Bill Kaysing, with the 1976 publication of his *We Never Went to the Moon*, written with Randy Reid. Kaysing worked for the space program in the 1960s, with a security clearance. Kaysing's book is more of a booklet, less than one hundred pages long. Kaysing made the case that the moon landings were faked. He pointed to the shroud of secrecy that pervaded the entire space program, with accidents being covered up. That was true. The Space Race was more of a Cold War project than anything else. The military was heavily involved, along with many defense contractors, called “aerospace” firms. Kaysing pointed out numerous anomalies regarding the moon shots. Some anomalies had not yet been explained to my satisfaction, but Kaysing's effort in his *We Never Went to the Moon* was not convincing. He presented photos of the Apollo moon landings that he thought were faked. Some evidence was compelling, but more was easily explained. A plausible prosaic explanation does not mean that it is the *correct* explanation. “[Skeptics](#)” have continually

invoked Carl [Sagan](#)'s aphorism, "Extraordinary claims require extraordinary evidence." One problem is that Sagan was not an even-handed practitioner of the skeptical trade. He often played judge, jury and executioner regarding anomalous evidence, unfairly using his reputation to outweigh his arguments, making his own rulings on what an "extraordinary claim" and what "extraordinary evidence" was. If people can rig the game, they always win.

Kaysing admitted that his work was purely speculative, and was about the first to question whether men really landed on the moon.

In the 1990s, Ralph René weighed in. In *NASA Mooned America!* he advanced several lines of evidence that the moon landings were faked. Kaysing made the case, and René makes it more convincingly, that there were faked/alterd photographs from the moon landings and the space program in general. In one photo, René makes the case that a space walk photo of Michael Collins during the Gemini program was actually a composite image fabricated from a photo of him taken in that NASA zero-G plane, during a training mission. The photos in question were from a book by Collins titled *Carrying the Fire*.

René points out several anomalies in a photo of Charles Duke standing next to the Lunar Rover during the Apollo 16 mission. It is about the most famous "moon hoax" photograph. One anomaly is the Rover track that shows it making a ninety-degree turn in a few feet, while bounding over a boulder, a remarkable feat in one-sixth gravity. More intriguing is a rock in the foreground with the letter "C" on it, as if it was a stage prop on a movie set. The "C" has repeatedly been explained away as a fabrication perpetrated by "moon hoaxer" crowd, and has been explained as an innocent later generation image, where a NASA technician put the "C" there as a note to correct the color control for the image. In July 2001, Steve Troy, one of [Richard Hoagland's](#) sidekicks, posted his research on the "C" rock, showing that it was a "hair" that got on a lens in copying a later generation of the image. His work has been the most convincing of all.

René also noted something seen in numerous photos. The detailed foreground quickly becomes a distant background, as if the foreground was real and the background was a matte shot. NASA's explanation is that because the moon is so much smaller than the earth, its curvature is greater, and a fall off from close to far away happens much more abruptly. Also, there is the "crosshair" anomaly. In all the NASA moon photos are gridlines, which are part of the cameras. The gridlines should be superimposed over all images, meaning that they hide what is behind them. The gridlines are made from thin lines, so they do not mar the photographs. There are many NASA space photos with those grid lines going behind the objects. The problem with the "faked" hypothesis is they always seem to go behind white objects. It is possible that in printing the photographs, the white areas bleed over those thin black lines, creating the effect. That is a potentially innocent explanation, although the Collins space walk photo appears to be a composite, though perhaps "innocent." That Rover photograph is about the most impressive case of the white "bleeding" over a crosshair. There has been plenty of analysis on the Internet of the reticle-"bleeding" phenomenon, the moon hoax debunker explanation seems most persuasive at this time. Here is the photograph in question.



Click on image to enlarge

One of René's theories is that the radiation the astronauts would have been subject to after passing through the Van Allen belt (which shields earth from harmful solar radiation) would have fried them. René's calculations show that the astronauts would have been subject to hundreds of rems per day past the Van Allen belt, while on earth getting more than one rem *per year* is beyond the safety limits for most people.

There is substantial literature regarding the radiation risk and the exposure that the Apollo astronauts received. There were two radiation risks. The first was radiation within the Van Allen belt. The second was the radiation the astronauts would have been exposed to beyond the protection of the Van Allen belt.

The Van Allen belt is created by earth's magnetic field, and it protects earth from harmful solar and cosmic radiation. At the poles, the Van Allen belt is weakest and more radiation gets through, causing the northern and southern lights. Radiation workers have a maximum allowable annual dose of one-to-five rems per year. A rem (Roentgen Equivalent Man) is the standard unit of measure in the radiation sciences; it is related to the rad. In the Van Allen belt, an astronaut is exposed to about one rem per hour. The Apollo astronauts theoretically passed through the Van Allen belts quickly, only receiving about one rem for each pass through the belts. So, they received in a couple of hours about what radiation workers on earth should maximally receive in a year.

The National Council on Radiation Protection and Measurements (NCRP) proposed guidelines for astronauts in 1989 that NASA accepted. It set a 30-day skin exposure of 150 rems, and a career exposure of 600 rems. There are two basic kinds of radiation risks. One is the short-term acute risk, and the other is the long-term risk. The short-term risk is relatively uncontroversial. It has been documented in horrifying detail from accidents in America's nuclear program, the Chernobyl disaster, other nuclear accidents and [dropping nuclear bombs](#) on Japan. If a man receives a dose of 1000 rems in a day, he will die within a few days, his insides being literally cooked. If he *only* gets 350 rems, he will likely die within a month. A 35-rem dose will make him sick.

The second radiation risk is what the astronauts would be subjected to past the Van Allen belt. The Van Allen belt contains high-energy sub-atomic particles, but the belt also protects earth from the high-energy particles/waves from space. The two sources from space are the sun and the galaxy. The sun produces deadly radiation continually, and the Van Allen belt and earth's atmosphere (such as the ozone layer) protects us from the worst of it. The sun's most deadly radiation comes from eruptions known as solar flares. The other radiation is galactic cosmic radiation (GCR), which comes from the galaxy.

The largest solar flare ever recorded was in 1972, between the Apollo 16 and 17 missions. If astronauts were beyond the Van Allen belt during that flare, they could have been exposed to more than 1000 rem, which would have killed them before they came back to earth. That is a real risk in going into space, although the Apollo astronauts did not receive acute doses during the Apollo missions. As with today's weather, solar flares are not very predictable, although there can be some warning, and NASA tried to be solar weathermen before the Apollo missions. They were playing solar-flare roulette during the Apollo missions, but NASA assessed the probable risk of a solar flare hitting an Apollo mission and decided it was small.

The acute dose risk is well known. The long-term risk with non-acute doses is more problematic. The American military establishment manipulated and suppressed the data regarding the harm that [fluorine inflicts](#) on the human body. With declassified documents, it is now known that the Atomic Energy Commission [and other federal agencies actively covered up the harmful effects of fluorine and fluorides](#). The cover-up continues to this day. Those same agencies have also produced the data regarding the long-term harmful effects of radiation. A nightmarish Pandora's box is opened when researching the cover-up taking place regarding numerous chemicals produced by industry and government, such as [lead](#), dioxins and other organic compounds. The scientist in charge of the Chernobyl clean up, Dr. Chernousenko, risked his life to make public what he knew about the radiation damage the Chernobyl disaster caused. He estimated that perhaps one million lives will ultimately be lost due to the disaster, and he revealed that the

"International Atomic Mafia" has been actively covering up not only the Chernobyl disaster, but also the hazards of radiation in general. The American doctor John Gofman has been making the same arguments for many years, detailing how the radiation data is being manipulated to minimize the long-term radiation risks. That is a frightening area of research, but the Apollo astronauts would apparently not have been unusually exposed as compared to other radiation workers, and they have not yet died of long-term radiation poisoning, but those effects are not easy to identify, being more statistical effects (usually cancer deaths) rather than obvious symptomatology.

There are solar flares every day, but they are relatively small. In his book, René calculated that the astronauts subject to everyday solar flares would have been subjected to 375 rems per day. His calculations are suspect, partly because few of those solar flares would be "aimed" at earth. All the same, the radiation issue was a hazard that any manned lunar mission would have faced. It appears that the official analyses of the radiation risk involved with a lunar mission, and the subsequent exposures received by the astronauts, "explains away" this anomaly, although it is obvious that the radiation hazard meant that every Apollo astronaut that passed beyond the Van Allen belt was risking his life in more ways than one.

Then along came James Collier, who produced a video titled *Was it only a Paper Moon?* Collier pointed out numerous anomalies in the moon footage, including footage from Apollo 16 that shows the astronauts on two different days, in two locations, with the identical foreground. I practically fell off my chair when I saw it. However, the raw footage that Collier did not have, what NASA produced the footage from, actually took place a few minutes apart, and Collier misidentified the rock-holder sitting next to the astronaut as the Lunar Rover. While that showed that Collier performed a less-than-thorough investigation, it also showed the "Hollywood" aspect of what NASA did. The NASA movie had goofy narrative by Charles Duke as he rhapsodized about the moon's beauty. The raw footage has no dialogue of the sort. They were playing fast and loose in the editing room. It had me going for a while, before I saw the raw footage. That was about the *most impressive* anomaly that Collier presented, and it fell apart under scrutiny. Once again, the lunar hoax theorists failed to convince me.

Then along came David Percy and Mary Bennett with their *Dark Moon*. It presented the best case for faked moon landings yet, although it still failed to convince me. Their work has obvious flaws and is riddled with errors, although it gave food for thought.

Some of the Apollo Mission Anomalies

As I was writing this essay in early 2001, the TV network Fox aired a show about the moon landings, addressing the various anomalies presented by Kaysing, René and others. In July of 2001, members of a moon hoax forum critiqued my work (thanks guys!), and an aeronautical engineer, [Jay Windley](#), convinced me on several issues that I had residual doubt about. Among the issues being debated are:

1. [The American flag rippled in the "breeze" on the moon;](#)
2. [Shadows do not run in parallel lines;](#)
3. [Astronauts standing in shadows are illuminated;](#)
4. [No visible exhaust issues from the lunar lander's rockets;](#)

5. [There is no crater below the lunar landers;](#)
6. [The moon footage from Apollo 11 was of poor quality;](#)
7. [The radiation problem;](#)
8. [The “crosshair” problem;](#)
9. [Odd reflections;](#)
10. [People who might have talked died under mysterious circumstances;](#)
11. [The lack of athletic feats performed on the moon;](#)
12. [The Nazi connection;](#)
13. [The military-industrial complex connection;](#)
14. [The moon missions were relatively hitchless;](#)
15. [Faked photographs;](#)
16. [The Rover’s movement on the moon;](#)
17. [The Apollo 11 footage from Bart Sibrel’s video - a detailed analysis;](#)
18. [Other anomalies;](#)
19. [I hit pay dirt - evidence that convinced me that we landed men on the moon](#)

The American flag rippled in the “breeze” on the moon.

There is a great deal of moon footage where the American flag is flapping, as if in a breeze. Yet, in every scene, an astronaut is holding or touching the flagpole, or he let go a moment before. The astronaut holding the flagpole could easily cause the flapping. The events supposedly happened in a vacuum and low gravity. The flags would not act as they would on earth. That supposed anomaly fails to convince, but during Apollo 12 the solar wind trap bent as though a breeze were hitting it. The Apollo 12 astronauts made note of it, and Houston put forth the explanation that the solar wind did it.[\[58\]](#) The solar wind would have to be billions of times stronger than it is to have bent the solar wind trap. NASA qualified its explanation and ventured the theory that the difference in temperature between the sunlit and dark sides might have done it, although it stopped when the astronauts tried photographing it. This anomaly fails to convince.

The anomaly where shadows do not run in parallel lines.

There is no shadow analysis that is convincing regarding a moon hoax. If the only light source on the moon was the sun, the theory goes that all shadows on the ground should have run parallel to one another. One problem with shadow analysis is that uneven terrain can cause or contribute to the apparent shadow discrepancies. So far, no convincing evidence of this supposed anomaly exists, partly because it takes sophisticated analysis to prove such a notion, and nobody has made such an effort yet.

The anomaly where astronauts standing in shadows are illuminated.

The theory regarding this anomaly is that in the vacuum of space (the moon has precious little atmosphere), there is no atmospheric diffusion, and a shadow on the moon should be pitch black. That should be true, except for two facts. The first is that a reflection of light from the earth can put some light into the shadows, similar to moonshine except far more pronounced, because the earth is much larger. But the sun is 100,000 times brighter than the earth from the moon. That illumination would not be seen for the same reason that stars are rarely seen in the Apollo moon photographs. The second is that if there were any illuminated surfaces with a line of sight to the shadow, they would shine scattered light onto it. That second instance explains every existing lit-in-the-shadows anomaly. Shadows that look gray have always had, as far as the examples I have seen, something illuminated that had a line-of sight to it, usually close-by. Much has been made of astronauts standing in the shadow of the LM (Landing Module, also called Lunar Module), being lit up, or having a “hot spot” on their suits, which supposedly shows a secondary light source, not the sun. Again, the scattering “backward” of light from the surface onto an astronaut above the moon’s surface can explain every instance of the astronaut being “lit up” while in shadow, and it is surprising that this “anomaly” has had such a long life among the conspiracy theorists. The “hot spots” may have a similar explanation.

No visible exhaust issued from the lunar landers’ rockets. The fact of no visible rocket exhaust coming from the LMs when taking off is an impressive anomaly. Various explanations have been posited over the years. One answer is that a rocket firing in a vacuum looks much different from one firing in earth’s atmosphere. One debunker explanation is that in a vacuum, the rocket exhaust stops igniting immediately after it leaves the nozzle, so the bright blast we see in earth takeoffs is not there. Another explanation is that the video cameras during the Apollo 15, 16 and 17 missions were so poor that they would not have picked up the flash very well. Another explanation is that the takeoffs took place in the daytime, so it made the flame less visible than if it took off at night. Yet another explanation is that the fuels used with the LM did not produce a visible flame. All of those explanations may in fact help explain why there is no visible exhaust coming from the LM, except for a brief flash at the beginning, known as an “ignition transient.”

The fuels used on the Apollo Service Module, Landing Module and Space Shuttle stabilizer rockets were similar. They were a combination of a hydrazine mixture and dinitrogen tetroxide, or cousins of that combination. They are known as hypergolic fuels, because they need no ignition to light. The chemicals are so reactive that they ignite by merely coming into contact with each other. To clarify this, at this footnote is a little chemistry and rocketry narrative.^[59] The shuttle stabilizer rockets going off are in the vacuum of space, and are vastly smaller explosions than the blast needed to take off from the moon (the shuttle stabilizer rockets were less than a third as powerful as the LM ascent stage rocket). The fuels were slightly different, though, which may account for the light coming from the shuttle stabilizer rockets and the almost complete lack of light coming from the LM. See below some examples of NASA rockets firing in space.



Click on image to enlarge

On the poor video quality issue, it was definitely true on Apollo 11, and while the video quality is less than superb for the Apollo 15, 16 and 17 liftoffs, it appears good enough to pick up the flash, as for about a second, there is light seen below the nozzle, and it disappears before the LM is ten feet into the “air.” The takeoff appears to kick up some dust, but after the first few feet, there is no light of combustion seen, or ever any obvious exhaust. The best explanation of the rocket exhaust issue is probably at Jay Windley’s [Moon Base Clavius](#). He stated that the invisible exhaust from the LM was not too surprising, but could even appear anomalous to the expert, unless they did some homework. He performed considerable homework to make his case. I am 95% convinced by his explanation.

There is no crater below the lunar landers.

Though there is no crater below the lunar landers visible in any lunar landing missions, in some, a slight disturbance of dust can be seen. The reasons given by NASA and the debunkers is that the engines were throttled down heavily by the astronauts, and a couple of inches down the lunar dust gave way to virtual bedrock, which caused the astronauts many problems, such as taking core samples and planting the flags. The explanations put forth by NASA and the conspiracy debunkers are convincing.

The moon footage from Apollo 11 was of poor quality.

The moon video footage from the Apollo 11 landing was poor, extremely so. There has been much writing on the development of the film used on the moon, and how it withstood the lunar environment’s rigors to take those crystal clear photos we are all familiar with. On the Apollo 11 mission, a state-of-the-art color video camera was in the Command Module. On the moon it was a black and white camera. Not only that, but television stations around the world did not even get a feed of the footage, but had to film a screen provided by NASA. The press was *never* allowed in the Mission Control Room until late in the Apollo program, when *one* press representative was finally allowed into the viewing chamber, directly behind where my father used to sit. It is odd to have sophisticated research and development devoted to the print film and still cameras, but incredibly poor black-and-white live footage produced on the moon, when a state-of-the-art color video camera was in the Command Module.

I am not completely satisfied with the explanations, although [Jay Windley](#) has done a creditable job of explaining the technical issues and how NASA resolved them. That poor quality Apollo 11 video footage is also where I hit my [pay dirt](#).

The radiation problem.

Ralph René’s radiation analysis is not convincing. Even among the conspiracy debunkers, the radiation issue looms largely, with even the most ardent debunkers admitting that NASA was fortunate that a solar flare did not cook any astronauts. NASA stated that one astronaut had a little radiation sickness during an Apollo mission, but it was later chalked up to what he ate. Although the risk was supposedly low, the potential outcome was disastrous, and it makes one wonder about NASA’s control over the dissemination of data regarding the missions, and why they might have staged the moon landings. What kind of public relations disaster would it have been for the world to watch astronauts being killed by radiation as they tried

landing on the moon, especially during the heat of the Cold War? Today, one of the greatest barriers to attempting a manned mission to Mars is radiation. Astronauts going to Mars would be exposed to solar flare risk far longer than the ten days or so that Apollo astronauts were exposed, making the risk unacceptably high, and the radiation shielding needed to survive solar flares would be much heavier than anything that has been officially into space so far. Currently, it is one of the major limiting factors in extended manned missions in the solar system. All the same, NASA assessed the radiation risk, and decided that it was low enough to be acceptable, and they had astronomers carefully watching the sun before the Apollo launches so they could cancel a mission if it seemed that the sun was about to belch out a large solar flare.

The “crosshair” problem. The “crosshair” issue is where the reticles had objects superimposed over them, which should be impossible, and is [dealt with](#) above.

Odd reflections. The issue of odd reflections deserves scrutiny, and the anomalies are interesting. If the footage seemingly shot on the moon was really shot on earth in a set environment, simulating the sun could have been difficult. If it was shot in a set environment, reproducing the sun’s intensity may have required a spotlight larger than the sun appears from the earth or moon. Reproducing a light appearing the same size as the sun would have presented difficulties. One difficulty would be keeping the spotlight always the same distance from the action in order to not appear the wrong size if seen. A relatively small distance difference from the spotlight between “scenes” would make noticeable differences in the “sun’s” apparent size. About the only equipment used during the moon landings that reflected the sun, enabling the NASA cameras to pick it up, were helmet visors. The Apollo astronaut helmets, and that of all NASA astronauts, had convex faceplates. Anything reflected in a convex mirror would appear smaller than it would appear if seen directly. Look at your reflection in the underside of a spoon to get the idea.

The problem with all the “is-it-fake-footage?” analysis is that the published NASA Apollo footage is about the only data on what lunar conditions would look like. The Soviet Union took many thousands of images with its probes, and looks similar to the Apollo missions, but those images are also not easily available. Try to find any of them on the Internet. I found one, after lengthy searching. My local library, the King County library system (the second busiest in the nation, with heavy contributions from Bill Gates and friends) does not have anything on the Soviet moon probe images. One can special order some books, and that is about it. If somebody has nothing to compare it to, how can they tell if it is fake? That cloud hangs over all of the moon footage analysis, both pro and con. The readily available Soviet images, however, look similar to the Apollo images. There are some common aspects of what supposedly happened on the moon and other NASA missions. The rocket exhaust issue is one where we can compare the footage to other NASA missions, because the surface of the moon and the space above earth, where astronauts orbit, are both near-vacuums, but with different fuels and other parameters, the comparisons still have problems.

In [the lunar jump image below](#), images are presented of the sun as reflected in the visors of astronauts during two lunar missions: Apollo 14 and 17. The Apollo 14 image is how most of them appear, with the sun rather small in the faceplate. However, quite a few images, as with that one from Apollo 17, have been produced. See how large the sun’s image is. Many moon hoax theorists have used that anomaly as evidence of fakery, where the “sun” was far closer to the astronaut than 93 million miles. It had me wondering about it for a long time, and I amassed many visor images from lunar photos and footage. However, as [Jay Windley](#) and his [fellow debunkers](#) explained one day, every one of the “small” images were taken with still film, and all the large images are from video footage. That could lend evidence to the theory that the still images and video footage were taken in different sessions, but I believe the likeliest answer has to do with the vagaries of video cameras, especially those early ones, and the sun’s brilliance.

The sun's reflection "overexposed" in the video footage, making the reflection appear larger than it really was. That phenomenon can be easily seen in today's video cameras, if they try directly recording the sun. I consider that anomaly adequately explained by the differences between video and still photography.

There is another reflection anomaly that the *Dark Moon* authors brought up, but it is not as big an anomaly as they say. More evidence that the debunkers use to make the case that the Apollo landings were real events is that the Apollo astronauts put laser reflectors on the moon during their missions, and astronomers have been bouncing lasers off of them ever since. The authors of *Dark Moon* use the fact that the Apollo 11 reflector was 28° from horizontal, and that the Apollo 11 landed about at the lunar equator, so the reflector could not have reflected a laser back at the earth.^[60] Their argument is flawed, because it is a three-dimensional issue, not a two-dimensional one. If the landing site were at the equator and *in the center of the moon*, as seen from earth, then their argument would hold. However, the Apollo 11 landing site was 23.63° (according to NASA) from the center of the moon, as one moves "eastward" along the equator. Think of it as 23.63° of longitude, not latitude. Then the angle of the reflector makes more sense, although there is still a discrepancy of a few degrees, *if* the reflector was aligned properly. In looking at the landing site layout and a picture of the reflector with the flag behind it, it appears to be tilted in the general direction of where it should be. It is one more example of the flawed work that the Apollo conspiracy theorists have put forth. The *Dark Moon* authors brought up other problems with the reflector issue, but when they exaggerated the problem with the reflector-angle issue, it weakened their argument. To their credit however, they bring up the issue that the reflector was only placed 40 feet from the LM in one official account, while other accounts have placed it at different distances.

Those kinds of discrepancies abound with NASA, which is partly why it earned the nickname, Never A Straight Answer. It was claimed that earth-based lasers were hitting the reflector immediately after Armstrong set it up. Another account contradicted that notion, because the lasers apparently will not return a good enough signal during the lunar day. Even stranger, a laser aimed at the moon can return enough of a signal that a reflector *is not even needed*. According to the official explanation, of about one *sextillion* photons fired by an earth-based laser at the reflector in a burst, *one* photon will make it back to be recorded in the collector on earth. In 1962, scientists bounced lasers off the moon and caught the signal coming back.^[61] Apparently however, the signal strength back from lasers aimed at the reflectors on the moon is about a hundred times greater than areas of the moon without reflectors.

People who might have talked died under mysterious circumstances. The issue of mysterious and untimely deaths also plagues the moon shots. Were whistleblowers silenced? The January 1967 death of Gus Grissom, along with Ed White and Roger Chaffee in the Apollo 1 fire, is a possibility. One of the more prominent debunkers of the "we-never-went-to-the-moon" crowd has published his "disgust" that Bill Kaysing would suggest that Gus Grissom was murdered in order to silence him. Who else makes such a "disgusting" claim? Grissom's wife and son do. They both believe that the Apollo 1 fire was no accident, and that the truth is being covered up. They have evidence that such a notion might be true, and Grissom's son Scott is [calling for an official investigation into the matter](#) as of 2002. Grissom was critical of NASA, hanging a lemon on a NASA simulator before he died. People associated with the Apollo 1 simulation on the day of the fire remarked on the strange atmosphere that prevailed. Grissom told his wife that if somebody died in an "accident," it would likely be him, and not because he was accident prone. Straight-talking Grissom apparently made the NASA brass uneasy with his observations. During the Apollo 1 simulation, just before he died, the communications with the Command Module completely broke down, and Grissom said in exasperation, "How are we going to get to the moon if we can't talk between two buildings?"

Lola Morrow was the astronauts' secretary. On the show *Moon Shot* she can be heard describing the atmosphere on the morning of the fire. She described the mood of Grissom, White and Chaffee as one she had never seen before. Before each flight and major event, the astronauts were eager to get to it. Not that day. They obviously did not want to do the simulation. Clark MacDonald, an engineer working for McDonnell-Douglas, was hired by NASA to investigate the fire. He now has admitted that more than thirty years earlier, NASA destroyed the evidence he gathered, as well as the report he produced, for "public relations" reasons. MacDonald determined that an electrical short started the fire when the battery power was switched on. Grissom's son Scott was granted access to the Apollo 1 craft, where he gathered evidence that he says [pointed to sabotage](#), and that there has been a cover-up of it.

Grissom's death (taking White and Chaffee with him) is not the only strange one. Bill Kaysing thinks that another man was silenced by murder. Thomas Baron was an inspector for North American Rockwell, the contractor that built the Command Module. The astronauts are united in the opinion that what Rockwell produced was of initially poor quality. The astronauts comment on it in *Moon Shot*. Baron was not an engineer, and only had a high school education, but was the detail-oriented fanatic that all technical organizations need. His pals gave him the initials "DR," which stood for discrepancy report. His supervisor ran out of discrepancy report forms regularly, because Baron used so many of them. He was the squeaky wheel. He made some of his findings public, and Rockwell fired him about three weeks *before* the Apollo 1 fire. Baron originally produced a fifty-five-page report, and finished a 500-page report that he delivered when he testified to Congress in April of 1967. His testimony received a hostile reception. A few days later he was dead. His car was struck by a train, killing not only himself, but also his wife and stepdaughter. In shades of [Casolaro](#) and [Wilcher](#), his death was officially ruled a suicide. It was worse than that, because he did not only "kill" himself, but also murdered his wife and her child. It took some interesting psychology to arrive at that conclusion, going from being overly conscientious to becoming a murderer. One theory is that he was distraught over the Apollo 1 fire, so he killed himself and his family. I have not heard about anybody else connected to the Apollo program killing themselves or becoming murderers over the Apollo 1 "accident." How strange that the biggest whistleblower did. Just what *are* those odds? The 500-page report disappeared, and has not been seen since. The moon hoax debunkers have lined up behind the official explanation. Jay Windley thinks that Barons' report has come up missing partly because it had little investigative value, and that Baron may have indeed killed himself, but if he were murdered, it would have been a private contractor, not NASA, and if they wanted to silence him, they should have done it *before* he testified. Jay may be right, but I have encountered far too many conveniently timed deaths during my investigations to make my suspicion go away, especially when Grissom's son thinks he was murdered.

Killing whistleblowers such as Thomas Baron was standard operating procedure for the defense establishment, if it related to military matters. I know people who have been involved in Department of Defense whistle-blowing activities. It could get pretty scary. Sometimes, people would simply "disappear," Jimmy Hoffa-style. When billions of dollars are at stake, murdering a few people with "big mouths" or who otherwise stand in the way is standard activity. That is the nature of [American-style capitalism](#). Why should it be different regarding space matters? I was challenged to provide some evidence of what I know about whistle-blowers, and without naming names, this footnote presents a little of what I am aware of.[\[62\]](#)

James Irwin was an Apollo 15 astronaut. He became a Born Again Christian, leading an effort to find Noah's Ark. According to what I have read and heard, in 1991, Irwin contacted Kaysing to have a chat. Why would Irwin call a "kook" such as Kaysing? Four days after allegedly trying to contact Kaysing, Irwin was dead from a heart attack. Did "Born Again" Irwin want to unburden his conscience? Irwin had heart disease, so that may explain it, but the spooks can apparently [induce heart attacks using normally undetectable means](#).

The lack of athletic feats performed on the moon. Before the Apollo program, there were many predictions of what conditions would be encountered in one-sixth gravity. Many athletic feats were predicted, such as running with 14-foot strides, and feats that acrobats could only dream of. That kind of speculation was not from the 1800s, but in the November 1967 issue of *Science Digest*. Even in 1969, such predictions were being made. No feats were recorded of that nature during the Apollo missions. Every explanation for that lack of performance has been marginally valid. [Jay Windley](#) and I discovered what I consider [undeniable evidence](#) of a remarkable feat performed that *does* preclude earth gravity, and it was done on the very first lunar mission, Apollo 11. Millions of people saw it live back in 1969, including me, but it has been an unknown event in all the debates on the issue during the past ten years. The evidence was sitting under everybody's nose, but until now, nobody has brought it up.

The explanations for the lack of feats have centered around: how heavy and restrictive the suits were; how dangerous it would have been to attempt any feats; the feats that *were* performed were spectacular under the conditions; and the astronauts were too busy doing important things to bother with athletic feats; and there were feats, but they were not filmed.

The heavy and restrictive suit issue is pertinent. International Latex Corporation (ILC) made the suits that the Apollo astronauts wore. Hamilton Standard made the portable life support system (PLSS), which was the "backpack." There was fierce competition among various companies to provide the suits and backpacks. ILC produced the A7L model of its suit, which NASA bought. To test their A7L suit, they had a technician get onto a football field with it and run, fall, catch footballs and throw them.[\[63\]](#) NASA was an easy sell after that demonstration. The A7L suit was worn on all the Apollo missions up to Apollo 14. For the last three Apollo missions, the A7LB suit was used, which was even more flexible than the A7L suit. In 1968, Hamilton Standard demonstrated a suit that had a 93% of nude range of motion, which even those who saw the demonstration found hard to believe.[\[64\]](#) The A7LB suit allowed the astronauts to bend over, touch the ground and sit in the Lunar Rover. The Apollo 16 suit even had improved flexibility over the Apollo 15 suit.[\[65\]](#)

There have been numerous misrepresentations of the space suits' weight. The A7L and PLSS weighed about 180 pounds on earth, according to NASA. A fully loaded A7LB with PLSS weighed 212 earth pounds.[\[66\]](#) A 180-pound astronaut with an A7LB on theoretically weighed 392 pounds on earth, or about 65 moon pounds, or about one-third of his earth weight. To gain an idea of what an advantage that would be, try walking around carrying somebody of about your weight on your back, in piggyback fashion. See how long you can walk around. Then imagine carrying around somebody that weighs *twice* what you do. You would probably collapse. Then imagine the difference between carrying twice your own weight versus having no burden at all. The astronauts experienced that difference in the other direction. Weighing one-third of their earth weight would have made them feel as if they were floating. During the Apollo missions, the astronauts showed how flexible and tough their suits were, and took many spills and tumbles on the moon.

The astronauts were fiercely competitive. See *Moon Shot* for the athletic competitions that the Mercury astronauts had with each other, such as water skiing. The astronauts competed against each other, to see who could land closest to the planned landing site. Their competitiveness permeated the entire astronaut program. Until I hit [pay dirt](#), the most spectacular feat performed during the Apollo missions was John Young's Jump-Salute feat. Charles Duke had him jump next to the American flag, and Young whipped off a snappy salute in mid-vacuum. Until now, it was considered the greatest athletic feat that any Apollo astronaut ever displayed on the moon, and nearly 20 years ago William Brian made it a subject of analysis. The image below shows the analysis.



Click on image to enlarge

The debunkers and mainstream media have misrepresented the jumps that Young made. Mainstream captions have stated that he got three feet off the ground, and his leaps have been compared to Michael Jordan's feats. Neither claim is close to the truth. First of all, the leaps Young made got him eighteen inches off the ground, and the image shows how it is easily measured. A standing jump does not take much flexibility. I got about 27 inches off the ground with a standing leap when I was a young man. Eighteen inches is normal for an athletic man under forty years old. All a man needs to do is swing his arms and bend his knees (bending the knees is more important), something easily accomplished in the A7LB suits. Also presented in that above image are video captures of Young's leap. He bent his knees and lowered and raised his arms nearly as a normal earthman would. The official NASA site says that Young barely had to flex his knees to attain his jump. About that same flex is what a man would do for a standing leap on earth. The astronauts would have weighed about one-third of their earth weight in their suits on the moon. However, they would have gotten more than three times as high because it is the velocity at which they leave the ground that determines the leap's height. Because they would have felt so much lighter, they could have jumped more quickly, their leg muscles not burdened as much. The suits would have been somewhat restrictive, but in the Apollo footage, especially the footage from the last three missions, those astronauts moved easily, and their suits did not appear to hinder their movements much at all, especially for the relatively modest flexibility required for a standing leap.

William Brian calculated that a suited astronaut would have attained more than four times the height in a moon jump as an earth jump.^[67] Brian also doubted the 185-pound space suit weight, because the astronauts performed full-suit simulations in the Oregon desert. It is difficult to imagine walking around and performing duties while wearing a suit that weighed as much as the person did. Brian thought the suits might really have weighed on the order of seventy pounds on earth, which is doubtful, but an understandable suspicion.^[68] Young's effort was the equivalent of less than a *five-inch* leap. My grandmother could have done that. It takes more energy to jump up one stair on a staircase. That was the greatest athletic feat ever recorded on the moon. Not much of a performance, for those fiercely competitive and athletic astronauts. In most matters as these, NASA speaks with more than one voice, and they contradict each other. On NASA's site, the description of the jump says it required little effort to attain. Other NASA people have explained the modest altitude attained as due to the restrictive suits. It appears as if Young did not exert himself much to make the jump, particularly as he performed two jumps, back-to-back.

A prominent conspiracy theory is that the astronauts' activities on the moon were staged on earth, and games with the film speed, hidden wires and other tricks were used to simulate the moon's low gravity environment. Some of the footage, if played at twice "normal" speed, looks similar to earth-bound footage. The debunkers counter that not all footage looks earthbound at double speed, such as the Rover footage. It is plausible that only the footage of the astronauts moving around would have the speed altered, where footage such as the Rover driving would not. Until I hit "[pay dirt](#)," I was skeptical of the lack of any athletic feat that obviously precluded an earth-gravity environment.

The Nazi connection. [Henry Ford](#) and the Rockefeller family had close ties with Nazi Germany, [helping to build their war machine](#). As the war ended in Europe in 1945, United States and Soviet Union descended on to the V-2 rocket works. They both grabbed as many German scientists as possible. American space

heroes such as Werner von Braun, Walter Dornberger and Arthur Rudolf came from the V-2 program (the “V” in V-2 stood for “vengeance weapon”). The United States also hired the Nazi intelligence network, nearly in its entirety, and [built the CIA on it](#). The rationale was that the Nazis knew more about the Soviet Union than anybody else, so intelligence agents such as [Reinhard Gehlen](#) would be useful. Nazi spies helped initiate the Cold War, as they lied to the Americans about the Soviet Union's capabilities and intentions. The Nazis were largely playing the Americans as chumps.

Operation Overcast and Operation Paperclip were secret programs that the U.S. ran to bring in useful Germans, and von Braun came to America that way. Von Braun was an SS man and was present at such infamous concentration camps as Dora, Nordhausen and Buchenwald, where hundreds of Allied prisoners of war as well as Jews were tortured, worked to death and experimented on. He handpicked inmates from Buchenwald to become slaves at the rocket works.[\[69\]](#)

Launching V-2 missiles at London was not the only goal of the Nazi Rocketeers. When the war ended, they were experimenting with an “American” missile, which they could launch from Germany that would drop a payload on New York City. There are instances of Nazis performing human experiments at the death camps, and going on the U.S. payroll weeks later.[\[70\]](#) Some of the worst Nazi businessmen (Karl Blessing, for instance) were quickly “rehabilitated” by Allen Dulles of the CIA and placed right back into the positions of power they enjoyed while being ardent supporters of Hitler’s regime.[\[71\]](#)

Another Nazi scientist who became an American space hero was Dr. Hubertus Strughold, later called “the father of U.S. space medicine.” He had a long and distinguished career at NASA and even had an American library named after him. He ran a facility at Dachau where medical experiments were carried out on prisoners and he even had a traveling laboratory, going from camp to camp. He came over in Operation Paperclip. One area of Strughold’s research was a precursor to the CIA’s MK-ULTRA mind control experiments, where drugs were used on prisoners. But the Nazi-NASA connection that relates to my Apollo program concerns is the Nazi penchant for fabrication and deceit, and the Hollywood connection. Fritz Lang was the legendary German filmmaker who created *Metropolis* and the more obscure *Frau im Mond*, which translates to “woman on the moon.” Hermann Oberth, considered the “Father of the Space Age,” was the technical consultant on rocketry in the film.[\[72\]](#) They filmed a dummy rocket being dropped down a chimney, then ran the footage in reverse, creating the illusion of a rocket taking off. They created a promotional film that combined footage from real tests with Lang’s film, passing off the whole thing as a documentary. When they finally got a rocket to fly as it should, von Braun took that footage, combined cartoon footage with it, and produced a movie extravaganza that gulled a skeptical Hitler in 1943. Hitler was so impressed that he bestowed a professorship on von Braun and devoted all possible effort into developing the V-2. They failed to tell Hitler that nearly all their rocket launches were still failing.

The Gestapo confiscated Lang's models for his film. The situation is similar to what conspiracy theorists think may have been the dynamics surrounding the Apollo missions. I believe that the FBI and CIA investigated the Apollo 1 fire and the FBI destroyed all blueprints of the Apollo spacecraft and Saturn rockets.

One of the U.S. government's more reliable studios in the war effort was Disney Studios. During World War II, Disney received up to 90% of its money from federal contracts, and produced many military training and propaganda films. Donald Duck went to war. Walt Disney was a social Darwinist and anti-communist crusader, heartily approving of the McCarthy witch hunts, appearing as a friendly witness during the Un-American hearings and fervently endorsing the Hollywood blacklist.[\[73\]](#) Years before the Soviet Union launched Sputnik, von Braun worked closely with Disney Studios, even directing the animators and

designing Disneyland's Tomorrowland ride called Rocket to the Moon. Also, von Braun hosted the Disney show *Man in Space*. His co-host was Heinz Haber, another NASA Nazi. Haber worked for Strughold at Dachau, subjecting hundreds of prisoners to experiments that simulated the conditions of high speed, high altitude flight. Prisoners surviving the experiments were generally killed, then dissected. When the Eisenhower administration asked Disney to produce a propaganda film regarding the peaceful uses of nuclear energy, Haber was picked to host the Disney show, "Our Friend the Atom." Haber then wrote a popular children's book of the same title. I knew about the CIA and NASA Nazis, but I never thought I would read about the *Disney* Nazis.

In short, Nazi expertise and propaganda in faking film footage has been so inextricably involved with NASA that is not inconceivable that such expertise was employed during the Apollo missions.

The military-industrial complex connection. The Nazi connection is intertwined with the U.S. military connection. The military was deeply involved with NASA, as were the Nazi scientists. In the 1958 law that created NASA, it is described as a "defense" organization. The NSA (National Security Agency) is the military version of the CIA, at least in theory. All the astronauts through the Apollo program had military backgrounds. Virtually all the contractors that built NASA's equipment were military contractors, deeply involved in both the space and arms races. The very companies that produced an amazing array of inferior products for the military, while vastly overcharging for them, supposedly were the same companies that made all that equipment that performed so flawlessly during Apollo missions.

The Air Force has openly admitted that is developing an offensive military capability in space. The Star Wars program is part of it. Here is a quote from the Commander-in-chief of the U.S. Space Command, Joseph Ashy:

"Some people don't want to hear this, and it sure isn't in vogue, but - absolutely - we're going to fight in space. We're going to fight from space and were going to fight into space... we will engage terrestrial targets some day - ships, airplanes, land targets - from space."

Here is something from an Air Force publication in 1996,

"In the next two decades, new technologies will allow the fielding of space-based weapons of devastating effectiveness to be used to deliver energy and mass as force projection in tactical and strategic conflict... These advances will enable lasers with reasonable mass and cost to affect very many kills."

Here is an Air Force official talking about our space dominance, "With regard to space dominance, we have it, we like it and we're going to keep it."[\[74\]](#) As Noam Chomsky made clear in his summer 2001 article "Hegemony or Survival" regarding the Bush administration's push for a satellite based missile shield system, the nations that topped a list of potential future victims of U.S. international violence consider the Ballistic Missile Defense (BMD) system

as an offensive, not defensive weapon. The BMD system would further remove the ability of any nation to directly respond to U.S.-inflicted violence. It would be far easier to sneak a nuclear, chemical or biological weapon in four major cities then launch a missile, with its "return address" on it. If our survival instead of hegemony was the overriding goal, and if containing the spread of weapons to "rogue states" and "terrorists" was truly the U.S. goal, it would not plan on devoting more than 1000 times more money to the Star Wars program than trying to keep the ex-Soviet Union's nuclear weapons from falling into the "wrong hands." In the wake of the [World Trade Center](#) attacks of September 2001, the basic strategy still has not

appeared to change.

In reality, the military domination of space is a logical extension of Britain having the world's most powerful navy, U.S. building forts in Indian country, and other [imperial actions](#) designed to violently protect their interests. The latest version of Star Wars will only make other nations more eager to get better weapons. They do not want to be on the receiving end of U.S. violence, and nuclear weapons are seen as a deterrent, as the U.S. will not pick on nations that can strike back. It is the timeless story of trying to make better weapons than one's enemy. The U.S. attempt to militarize space renders the controversy around the moon landings a meaningless footnote.

The moon missions were relatively hitchless. The relatively hitchless nature of the Apollo missions, and events that seem to be the product of bad script writing, can seem odd. The history of NASA is filled with spectacular failures. The Ranger program was the first U.S. program to try landing on the moon. There were nine Ranger missions. The Ranger probes were supposed to go to the moon and crash into it, sending back data as it flew into the moon. The first six missions were all failures, and by Ranger 7, NASA abandoned the goal of successfully *crashing* into the moon. The Ranger 7 mission was launched in July 1964. The Ranger program followed the unsuccessful Pioneer program launches. The first five Pioneer launches, beginning in 1958, were failures. The sixth Pioneer mission (March 1960, called Pioneer 5) was successful, and was followed by two failed missions. Meanwhile in the Soviet Union, a lunar flyby, returning pictures of the far side of the moon, was achieved on the Luna 3 mission in 1959. The Soviet Union did not send another mission toward the moon for the next four years. The official story is that they were developing their new, larger booster, enabling greater payloads, although there is other speculation about the true reason for the four-year lag. In 1964, the Soviet Union attempted a soft landing on the moon with its Luna 5. It created a lunar crater as it landed at full speed. Luna 6 failed, and Luna 7 also failed to soft land on the moon. Luna 8 also crashed. Luna 9 made a successful lunar soft landing on February 3, 1966. It was the first soft-landing ever made on the moon.

The United States soft-landed the Surveyor 1 on the moon on June 2, 1966. Surveyor 2 crashed into the moon. Surveyor 3 had a strange landing. It bounced 35 feet above the moon when it landed because its rockets kept firing. Surveyor 4 failed, completely “disappearing” 2.5 minutes before touchdown. NASA never figured out what happened. Surveyor 5 nearly failed due to a helium leak, but a jury-rigged landing saved the mission. Surveyor 6 was the first craft to lift off from the moon. It did its takeoff maneuver (getting about 12 feet into the “air”) at the time of the Apollo 4 mission, in November 1967. Until Apollo 11, that was the only test in taking off.

Apollo 4 was unmanned, as all the Apollo launches would be through Apollo 6, because of the Apollo 1 disaster. Apollo 4 was also the first time that the Saturn V rocket was launched, which powered the manned Apollo missions. Apollo 5 used the Saturn 1B rocket, and that mission supposedly tested the LM in earth orbit, and the mission was completely run by remote control. Could they have sent unmanned Apollo missions to the moon? Apollo 6 was a demonstration of that possibility. It was the second launch of the Saturn V rocket, and the goal was to simulate the events needed to send the craft to the moon, and “man rate” the Apollo V rocket. The mission had twenty major failures, and it did not even attain the proper orbit, and the third stage burn that was supposed to send the astronauts to the moon failed to ignite. Not exactly a great record of success to build on to go the moon by 1970. The Apollo 6 mission was launched in April 1968, less than two years before Kennedy’s announced deadline. The official story is that von Braun and all of NASA pulled together and performed technical wizardry that is still hard to believe today, even by those who participated in it.

My father left NASA after the Apollo 1 fire because the environment at NASA became, in his words, “hyper-political,” with everybody trying to cover their backsides and pointing the finger at everybody else. That was not exactly an environment conducive to making the biggest technical achievement in history. Apollo 7 was the first manned Apollo mission, and it *did not use* the Saturn V rocket. The mission was nearly perfect, as were the next five manned Apollo missions. One reason for the vastly lower failure rate for the manned missions was that the precautions, effort expended and expense was far greater in launching human beings into space than hunks of lifeless metal. All those unmanned Apollo launches were due to a disaster on the ground that killed three men. Also, the most sophisticated piece of technology known to man, the human being, was part of the manned missions. Astronauts were continually solving problems during the missions. Humans are also the most error-prone piece of equipment that went to the moon, but the flexibility and problem-solving features apparently outweighed the errors. The satellites and probes of the day had limited problem-solving ability, and the remote control solutions had dimmer prospects than if a human being was on the scene.

The Landing Module was never tested in a “real” landing and takeoff situation until Armstrong and Aldrin supposedly landed on the moon and took off. When Armstrong tried flying a stripped down version of the LM on earth, he crashed it, nearly getting killed. The LM supposedly made six perfect landings and take offs from the moon.

Apollo 10 was the closest thing there was to a “live” test of the LM before landing on the moon. After the LM descended and was getting ready to ascend, it began spinning wildly, and its pilot, Eugene Cernan, thought it was going to crash. He got it under control and made it back to the Command Module. The official reason for that near-disaster is that an abort switch had been inadvertently turned on. That explanation shows how vulnerable the missions were to human error, but according to NASA, human error was minimal during the Apollo missions.

O’Leary was skeptical about the Apollo missions, and his skepticism was precisely where mine has been: the moon landings themselves. The LM had virtually no testing in the environment where it would be used, and the scariest parts of all, the lunar landing and ascent, had no live testing whatsoever before Armstrong and Aldrin supposedly landed and took off from the moon. The LM had to come in sideways, and its rockets to fire perfectly to make a horizontal landing on the moon. Nothing like it in manned space flight has been done before or since, and it was done without having been properly tested in a real environment before the Apollo 11 Mission. In kind, it is a situation similar to NASA never sending an animal beyond the Van Allen belt to test the radiation of space’s effects on living creatures before it sent men out there. Just before the Apollo 11 mission, NASA sent a monkey into earth orbit, to spend thirty days there. The monkey died in a week and the capsule was brought down on July 6, 1969.

If we really landed men on the moon, those astronauts were relatively expendable assets, which their military backgrounds prepared them for. The landing burn was remarkable, never having been tried in a live environment before people risked their lives doing it. Jay Windley informed me that the LM landing burn was relatively easy because there was no atmosphere to contend with. That is true that it would have been easier than an earth landing, but the “flying bedstead” was the only thing used to train for landing on the moon, and they did not do a sideways braking burn to quickly rotate for a vertical landing. They also trained in a stationary LM. NASA held its collective breath as Apollo 11 landed on the moon.

In *Dark Moon*, a series of images depicted the Surveyor 3 as Apollo 12 was landing (p. 160). I had my doubts we were seeing genuine footage taken by the LM in *Dark Moon*, and everybody knowledgeable I have asked about those pictures states that it is not genuine footage. At this time, the burden of proof is on the *Dark Moon* authors to prove it is genuine Surveyor 3 footage, and I think they have presented faulty

information.

I understand why conspiracy theorists have doubts about the moon landings' authenticity. I am not saying they are right, but their doubts are understandable. Apollo 12 supposedly made a pinpoint landing to be near Surveyor 3. Pinpoint is right, even though the lunar dust blinded them as they landed. They also may have landed several feet from their deaths. They landed so near the crater where Surveyor 3 was, that a few feet further would have landed two of the LM's legs into the crater, which could have possibly made a tragic end to the Apollo program. The LM was designed to be positioned no more than 6 degrees from a vertical orientation. It appears that the crater slope had more than a 6-degree slope to it, and appears that as few as ten feet further toward the crater would have had the LM at greater than a 6-degree angle, and they may not have been able to take off. I have not done the work to prove it, but the terrain at the crater's lip appears to be greater than a six-degree slope.



Click on image to enlarge

Another issue regarding the lunar missions was that the re-entry to earth on return from the moon was a maneuver virtually never attempted before. It was extremely dangerous, with a small margin of error. NASA never performed an unmanned test of that maneuver either, except a jury-rigged simulation to try salvaging the failed Apollo 6 mission, which did not quite attain the velocity of a return-from-the-moon situation. In those early days of NASA, with animals going into space long before humans, and the incessant ground-based testing, they never made a "real world" test of that re-entry, nor the lunar landing, nor taking off from the moon. They could have tested those maneuvers with smaller and less costly unmanned craft. At the time of Apollo 11, the Soviet Union tried sending an unmanned probe to the moon, Luna 15, to bring back moon rocks. Officially, the effort failed (the *Dark Moon* authors theorize that Luna 15 brought back the Apollo 11 moon rocks). The Soviet Union successfully returned from the lunar surface with Luna 16 in September 1970, with retrieved moon dust.

At best, giving NASA every benefit of the doubt, it was an extremely hazardous undertaking, with numerous untested, little tested, or poorly tested maneuvers, to land on the moon before 1970. John Glenn was genuinely afraid of the risks associated with landing on the moon. My father told me that Glenn was asked if he wanted to be the first man on the moon. Glenn replied that he would not mind being the first man *safely back from the moon*.

It is interesting to see how NASA spun the missions and tests. NASA pronounced the Apollo 6 Mission a success, with nearly all mission objectives achieved. There were many design problems with the LM, and many test failures. The unmanned LM1 test on earth apparently was a disaster. The Ascent Propulsion System blew apart and caught on fire when tested, and it malfunctioned on the second test, sending the LM into a tumble. The next LM they tested was the LM3, which flew with Apollo 9. The conspiracy debunkers say that practice makes perfect, but when the LM4 on Apollo 10 spun wildly while supposedly above the lunar surface because a switch was thrown by mistake, it had to make the Apollo 11 landing a breath-holding event. It is awesome to consider all the things that had to go *right* on a lunar mission.

NASA called the LM a "skittish" craft mere months before the Apollo 11 mission. To date, a successful landing rocket for earth conditions has never been developed. In the 1990s, the DC-X rocket was tested. It took off and landed vertically. After several successful test flights, the DC-X program was abandoned after the rocket tipped over and exploded during a test in 1996. Part of the reason we have no landing rockets is

the earth's atmosphere and higher gravity, but it is another issue that brings up skepticism in the moon hoaxers' minds.

Beginning with Apollo 11, the rest of the Apollo program went nearly flawlessly...all except for Apollo 13, which appears to be bad script writing. One strange connection with the Apollo program was Stanley Kubrick's *2001: A Space Odyssey*. It was released during our big push for the moon, in 1968. Arthur C. Clarke, the author of *2001*, was not a mere science fiction author. He is an astronomer and space expert. His name comes up regularly in the official histories of space exploration.^[75] He was the first person to describe a geo-synchronous orbit, in 1945. He was a technical contributor to the space effort, a Jules Verne-like visionary. The plot of *2001* revolves around covering up a discovery on the moon and the errant computer HAL. HAL utters a famous line, "Sorry to interrupt the festivities, but we have a problem." For lucky number Apollo 13, launched at 13:13 military time, with a date whose digits add up to 13 (4/11/70), James Lovell, the mission commander, picked the name of the command module: *Odyssey*. On the way to the moon, as they signed off for the night, they played a tape of *Also Sprach Zarathustra*, the famous theme song from *2001*. A few minutes later, they had their famous accident. What did they tell NASA? "Houston, we've had a problem." Was that another strange set of coincidences, or rather unimaginative script writing? Maybe it was synchronicity, or Lovell's fascination with *2001*. These speculations touch on other conspiratorial musings made by the *Dark Moon* authors and others, such as Richard Hoagland's gang. All the 13s associated with Apollo 13 could be part of a conscious numerological staging of events. Hoagland and Bara have been showing for years how NASA events are timed to coincide with significant alignments in the stars and planets. Buzz Aldrin is a 33rd degree Mason, and there is a whole body of conspiracy lore that includes the Masons, especially those at the 33rd level.

The official Apollo 13 story is that an oxygen tank exploded in the Service Module. The tank likely had a fire inside it, and then ruptured. Very near to it were liquid hydrogen tanks. The oxygen tank was at about 1000 PSI pressure when it ruptured. If a hydrogen tank also ruptured, or the nearby hypergolic fuel tanks, Apollo 13 would have become a fireball. As it was, it blew off the side of the command module and created a leak in the other oxygen tank that soon killed the Service Module. If any event during the Apollo program was seemingly influenced by divine providence, the relatively gentle explosion of that oxygen tank was probably it. A tank holding hundreds of pounds of liquid oxygen, exploding at 1000 PSI, sounds scary.

How did NASA resolve that problem of the blast's effect? The official story is that Apollo 13 made it back to earth by an amazing feat of jury-rigging. They used the LM rockets, as the Service Module was dead, they created a contraption to remove their carbon dioxide from the air, and they used admittedly "primitive" means to determine where they were and point the ship in the right direction to get home safely. It was high drama that kept the world on the edge of its seat. The Apollo missions became old news by Apollo 12, and Apollo 13 put Apollo back in the headlines. The timing was fortuitous. When Ron Howard's movie on Apollo 13 came out on 1994, instead of the *Zarathustra* music, they played other music. Why? For a movie that purported to tell the real story, why change the real music which was played?

There are "reasonable" explanations for those strange events, but there are issues with the Apollo 13 mission that will not go away easily. People involved with Apollo 13 have written as if there was divine providence or other strangeness happening. Apollo 13's alarm system engineer, Jerry Woodfill, has posted his account to the Internet, where he states that the Apollo 13 drama seemed to be guided by an "unrehearsed script," and the Apollo 13 drama led him to finding God and religion. NASA sent Arthur C. Clark a report on Apollo 13, and a NASA administrator wrote on it, "Just as you always said it would be." If there was not something funny going on there, it can make one start believing in strange coincidence. Jim Lovell was also on Apollo 8, and the crew later told Clarke that they were tempted to report sighting a large

black monolith on the far side of the moon. Instead, they read from the book of Genesis and Lovell announced that there was a Santa Claus. Is that funny, or “funny?”

There are a number of video shots from the Apollo 13 mission, when they are supposedly well beyond earth orbit, and blue can be seen through the windows of the Apollo 13 craft. The conspiracy theorists believe we should see blue through the windows when the earth is below the window. How can that be? For Apollo 11, there are similar shots. Here are some of those frames.



Click on image to enlarge

As [discussed below](#), I satisfied myself that the Apollo 11 photographs taken on the way to the moon are genuine. One “reasonable” answer has been that ice crystals caused the blue color. Another is that the windows’ coating did it. Could be.

The Apollo 13 drama supposedly showed what great problem solvers NASA was. Here is an anecdote that my father told me many years ago, regarding what great problem solvers the Mission Control boys were. A common phenomenon regarding technical efforts such as the space program is that flying was not just what the astronauts did. Most people in the Mission Control Room were avid amateur aeronauts. They either flew private planes, were ex-fighter pilots such as Gene Kranz, or they were “nerds” who flew model airplanes, balloons and model blimps. One day at the water cooler, the amateur model balloonists were talking about their blimps and balloons, and how high they could go. They were having a lively conversation about how they could get their blimps and dirigibles to go higher. They decided that if they could somehow increase the air pressure in the balloons, they could accomplish their goal. They were brainstorming on how to get increased pressure in the blimps. My father walked by and took in their conversation. It is elementary physics that increasing the pressure in a blimp would increase its weight, thus make it *denser*, not lighter. Increasing the pressure would make the blimp *sink*, not go higher. My father listened to their conversation in amazement, and butted in. He asked them to remember Archimedes and why things float. He said that their brainstorming was going in the opposite direction of making their blimps to go higher. They looked at my father as if he were crazy. As he told me that story many years ago, he said in awe, “And those people put men on the moon!” That may not lend much evidence to the “faking it” hypothesis, but is an example of some pretty poor problem solving. The “problem solving” that happened on the Apollo 13 mission was orders of magnitude more difficult than that. That kind of thoughtless behavior displayed at the water cooler [is common with scientists too](#). It is called “forgetting the basics.”

Faked photographs. Beginning with Bill Kaysing and continuing through virtually every moon hoax theorist since, faked photographs are cornerstones of their arguments. If NASA faked the moon landings, then the images returned would obviously have to be fabricated. There have been times when I thought I found fabricated or altered images, as have many people who looked at the data. I have looked at this area of evidence at great length. With some minor possible exceptions, I have not seen any supposed image fabrication/alteration that has held up to scrutiny, especially regarding the notion that it was consciously done to misrepresent the reality of the moon landings. The shadow-angle analyses, the astronauts lit in the shadows, the disappearing reticles, the lack of stars, the anomalous reflections, the seeming discrepancies between video and still images, and all the rest, do not stand up to scrutiny, as far as it lending evidence to the faked landing hypothesis. There are a number of reasons for this whole “faked image” cottage industry

that has developed. One is that we have nothing to compare lunar images to. We do not live in the lunar environment, and the moon was the first extraterrestrial body we visited. Of course it would look different from earth. There were plenty of artistic conceptions through the ages of how the moon's surface would appear up close, and a gallery of artist's conceptions of the lunar surface over the ages would look pretty funny today, if compared to NASA's lunar images.

I have some areas of professional expertise, mainly with the design and management of information systems, as well as presenting data from them. One axiom of my profession is that those who are not trained in the art of data management, and end up dealing with the outputted data and making decisions from them, often know just enough to be dangerous (often to themselves), and I have ruefully discovered that they cannot be trusted to assess the data on their own, but need to be guided through it, at best. I think that a similar phenomenon relates to the moon images. Most people who have asserted the "faked image" hypothesis for the moon landings are not trained in photography or image analysis. I barely know the rudiments myself. We can get into trouble when diving into image analysis when we are not familiar with the discipline's basics. The experts are not necessarily oracles of truth, either. My work argues just the opposite quite often, but non-specialists can get into trouble when diving into areas where specialists try exercising due caution.

I think that the unique and strange lunar environment, the (at the time) unique event of visiting an extraterrestrial body, the non-specialists who have tried making technical image analyses, as well as lack of caution on their part, have contributed to most of the "faked image" controversy. Factor in some people who may be consciously dishonest (for money or other gain), ego factors, potential provocateurs, a lay audience that is viewing it and people hating to admit they are wrong, and we have the situation today.

The Lunar Rover's movements on the moon. For Apollo 11, the astronauts did not venture far from the LM. For Apollo 12, they ventured further and visited Surveyor 3 (they landed near it, apparently almost too near). For Apollo 14 they had lengthy excursions, and they drug along a cart that held their exploratory and experimental gear, while huffing and puffing (which ran against expectation, in one-sixth gravity). For the last three Apollo missions, the Lunar Rover made its appearance. The Lunar Rovers were the most expensive dune buggies ever made, costing about \$40 million each. They had an earth weight of 460 pounds, and could carry a load of 1080 earth pounds. On the moon, the empty Rover and equipment on it weighed about 120 pounds. The deployment of the Rover from the LM was a more difficult task for the astronauts on the moon than it had been in practice sessions on earth.[\[76\]](#) Why was that, when it weighed one-sixth of its earth weight?

In 1966, Lawrence Maisak published *Survival on the Moon*. One of the book's concerns was with designing vehicles for lunar travel. The one-sixth gravity of the moon presented serious design issues. A ground-based vehicle on the moon would not closely resemble one that worked on earth. Maisak calculated that a Rover-type vehicle would need a tread width of twenty feet (with a center of gravity of six feet high and clearance of three) to keep from tipping over as it negotiated rough terrain.[\[77\]](#) The Lunar Rovers had a tread width of six feet. Not only that, they were top heavy because of the astronauts sitting in them with the heavy backpacks they wore, their center of gravity being at least three feet above the ground. Not only were the Rover dimensions dissimilar from what was predicted, but also it looked almost exactly like an earth-based dune buggy. One plausible explanation was that if it traveled slowly, it could get away with having an unstable design. The Rover was rated to go about ten miles per hour at top speed. The Apollo 16 astronauts put the Rover through a "Grand Prix" test where they drove rapidly and whipped it around, bouncing and skidding. The Rover's wheels left the ground, and it "fishtailed" near the end of the demonstration. That might have been the most foolish activity that the astronauts performed on the moon.

If the Rover had tipped over, it could have come down on the Young, possibly puncturing his suit, if not worse. That would have been a disastrous end to the Apollo program, an astronaut dying to get some redneck thrills. The official movie even played banjo music during the Grand Prix. According to William Brian's analysis, it would have taken little for the Rover to flip over, and the performance during the Grand Prix demonstration seemed to defy a one-sixth gravity situation.^[78] Even if such a performance was possible, having it bounce into the air during the stunt was running dangerously.

Various conspiracy theorists have used the Rover's activities on the moon as evidence of a cover-up or fabrication. There has been considerable speculation regarding the dust the Rover kicked up. The way the moon dust behaved is one of the best pieces of evidence that it is genuine lunar activity. The dust never hangs in the "air" for an appreciable length of time, and many times the astronauts kicked up dust that flew a long way. When watching astronauts walking, dust often sprays out from a footfall. When the astronauts fell, sometimes the dust was kicked a great distance. Unless they made some kind of special moon dust in the fabrication factory, that is impressive evidence of a vacuum. Nobody is theorizing that they built a huge vacuum stage on earth.

If they could play boulder-soccer on the moon, do jump-salutes, play golf, throw around equipment, roll and tumble around and play racecar, why did they never record *any* athletic feat that would have hinted that they were in one-sixth gravity? Much looks like it is not happening in earth gravity, but it could be similar to a magic trick: there is no way of knowing how they did it unless they let you in on the secret. The behavior of the moon dust, however, makes the conspiracy theories harder to support. Until I hit [pay dirt](#) in July 2001, this area of evidence, where no feat was obviously done in low gravity conditions, was one of my primary areas of residual skepticism.

The Apollo 11 footage from Bart Sibrel's video - a detailed analysis. The Fox TV show on the possibly hoaxed moon landings interviewed a TV producer named Bart Sibrel. Sibrel said that he came upon some obscure footage while researching the Apollo 11 mission, which proves that Apollo 11 never went to the moon. He released a video (*A Funny Thing Happened on the Way to the Moon*) that presents some of the footage.

As I played Sibrel's footage repeatedly, something about it made me suspect that while it was potentially embarrassing for NASA, it was not evidence that we never went to the moon, but evidence of NASA playing Hollywood with the mission, trying to give the folks back home a good show. For a couple of days, I thought that I discovered evidence that the photographic record of Apollo 11 was at least partly fabricated, and tried presenting my evidence to the experts, but was snubbed or ignored, and I figured out on my own that I was probably wrong.

I spent long hours analyzing the earth's phase, the visible portions of earth's land, the timeline of the Apollo 11 mission, the time stamps on Sibrel's footage, the NASA images and other data. Basically, it mostly added up, except for some possible issues such as the orientation of Apollo 11 to earth's equator during the mission, and what appears to be incorrect time stamps on Sibrel's footage, and if the cloud pattern over the Eastern Pacific Ocean can be nearly static for two days. It probably can.

One dynamic that makes analysis difficult and can lead to suspicion are all the "errors" that NASA makes in presenting its data. In the official film of Apollo 11, there is a scene where earth is seen from space, and the concurrent conversation has NASA asking how far from earth Apollo 11 is. The astronauts reply that it is 50,000 miles. The view is of Africa. That is wrong. At 50,000 nautical miles from earth, Apollo 11 would have been able to see California, about 12 hours into the mission.^[79] On NASA's web site, they have a

caption on that frame which states that Apollo 11 was 10,000 miles from earth when the picture was taken. With those kinds of discrepancies in NASA's presentation of the data, it is easy to see how conspiracy researchers can develop suspicions, and show how unreliable NASA's information can be. [Richard Hoagland](#) has discussed at length the "Hollywood" aspect of NASA, with its public relations arm altering photographs and performing other manipulations. Never-A-Straight-Answer NASA can give the conspiracy theorists fuel for their fire, and such incompetence (or playing fast and loose with the data) does not help matters. However, when I got my hands on the primary data, or closer to it, the anomalies would often get chalked up to bad editing, sketchy data leading to invalid suspicions, etc.

Some time stamps on the raw footage that Sibrel discovered appear to be incorrect. For instance, one piece of footage was stamped about 36 hours into the mission, but the footage is of the Command Module's computer, which was displaying a time about 30 hours into the mission. Importantly, the footage where Neil Armstrong says Apollo 11 is 130,000 miles from earth has a time stamp on it, and it agrees with the time when Apollo 11 *should* have been 130,000 nautical miles from earth, about 34 hours into the mission.

There was an antenna on the ground in California, called Goldstone, which was specifically designed to collect the TV signal from space. The TV shows from Apollo 11 were transmitted when that antenna was facing Apollo 11. For three days in a row, on the way to the moon, the astronauts beamed down footage to the Goldstone antenna. That is some of the "raw" TV footage that Sibrel received from NASA by mistake.

They also took still images with their cameras. I found these three images. The middle is from the "raw" footage that Sibrel discovered, and the others are from the still frames of the Apollo 11 Mission. There are better resolution images of what I will present here, and anybody who wants to pursue this line of evidence should get the best versions of these images that they can ("GET" means ground elapsed time, or the time since liftoff).



Click on image to enlarge

The images are each taken about one day apart, according to the times I have been able to assign them. In the first image, that is supposedly California peeking out from the clouds. For weeks, I thought that had to be Vancouver Island, because it appears to be a peninsula, but it looked too far south and too large to be Vancouver Island. The latitude of California looks correct, but the land mass does not. It appears as if the "sea" east of the "peninsula" may be the San Joaquin Valley, and I do not know why there appears to be a "sea" to the north of the peninsula. The same appearance is in NASA frame AS11-36-5367. It does not appear to be a valley, but water. I pulled down some satellite images, however, and that illusion was reproduced.

For those three days, the same cross-shaped hole in the clouds hovers over California. For the second and third days, there are entire regions of the clouds that appear to be nearly identical. I doubted it was possible for those clouds to remain unchanged for days. It could be one of the famous high-pressure systems that form over California, and the clouds end up getting shifted where the air pressure sends them. A cloud pattern can remain the same while the actual clouds keep moving. That is most likely what happened, even though the astronauts talked about the Alaska storm that is seen northwest of the cross over California. Also, in the southern hemisphere we have similar cloud patterns that are nearly identical.

For the entire eastern Pacific, there are nearly identical cloud patterns for three days. That is where I thought I found something worth reporting. When I looked at some of Bart Sibrel's "raw" footage, I came to feel that I was wrong with my initial impression. I also informed Bart of that.

Bart Sibrel's theory is that the shots of earth are a cutout, and the earth is being shot from low earth orbit. I doubt that is true. It does appear, however, that the astronauts had trouble filming the earth through the Command Module hatch window. There are quite a few images, both in comparing the still footage with the TV footage, and still images[80], that appear to be where terminator (the line that divides day from night) games are being played. Terminator games I would call a minor deception, but there may also be a more innocent explanation. I was not looking at the best quality images, and I may have been seeing something that was not there. For a few days I thought it was evidence of fabricating earth phases, to make the day the image was taken appear to be different. Those cloud patterns seemed odd to me at first. I then began watching the satellite images for the ocean off America's West Coast, and it appears that it is *possible* for them to look close each day. For the entire hemisphere to look nearly the same I thought was nearly impossible. After getting some of Sibrel's footage (some of it was given an improper time, it appears), some of the patterns are not as identical as it appeared, and now I believe the three-day pattern is genuine. The Sibrel footage was a month-long detour, but was a valuable experience.

Again, as with William Brian's neutral point discrepancy and James Collier's discovery of identical Apollo footage on two separate days, there is a more innocent explanation for the Sibrel footage than it would appear at first glance. There is some controversy over the meeting of Sibrel and Aldrin. I believed that when Bart showed the "raw" footage to Buzz Aldrin, Aldrin became interested in how Bart obtained the footage and asked him probing questions. According to what I understood, Aldrin then said, "If you show this publicly, you are open for a lawsuit, OK?" You can hear Buzz saying that on a video clip on Sibrel's web site. When Aldrin was asked to explain the footage, according to Sibrel, Aldrin replied, "Well you're talking to the wrong guy! Why don't you talk to the administrator at NASA? We're passengers!" The debunkers have stated that Aldrin's response to Sibrel, (they said he "slammed" the door on Sibrel) was because he did not deal with Sibrel's kind. Another version I heard was that Bart "ambushed" Aldrin at his home, and Aldrin then made his threat, but not about the Apollo 11 footage. In September 2002, Sibrel ambushed Aldrin at his hotel and harassed him, and 72-year-old Aldrin punched Sibrel. Somebody related to Apollo, that Sibrel has used for credibly, recently told me that he thought Sibrel was a "flake," as well as Kaysing.

Bart had some horrible things happen to him as he tried taking his footage public. The evidence he discovered may not be proof of faking the Apollo landings, but they may have thought that he *might* have had it. When somebody gets the treatment that Bart did, it can turn one more than a little fanatical, which is an aspect of the psychology that the debunkers never touch. What happened to Bart happens to Americans every day. Even if his footage does not prove that there was faking of Apollo 11's photographic record, he was courageous in coming forward as he has. Also, because of what he went through, it is unlikely that he will ever believe that he does not have evidence that proves we faked the moon landings.

My skepticism had been about where Brian O'Leary's had been: the moon landings themselves. It does not appear that the astronauts shot that Sibrel-discovered film in low earth orbit. Ralph René's radiation analysis is flawed. While radiation was a danger, and NASA was playing the odds, I doubt it prevented humans from going into space beyond low earth orbit. It is possible that the moon landings themselves were staged, but the more I looked into the evidence, the less I thought that was the case, and my hitting "[pay dirt](#)" removed all my doubt that those men were not walking around on the moon.

Other Anomalies. There are many other anomalies regarding the moon landings that the conspiracy researchers address. The NASA defenders have easily explained most of them.

I hit pay dirt. After I finished a draft of this essay in the spring of 2001, I emailed a link to it to some JFK assassination researchers, to get their feedback. The next thing I knew, somebody kicked it into a JFK assassination forum and then an Apollo Hoax forum became aware of my work and invited me to submit it to them. That led to some rewarding exchanges. Regarding the lack of athletic feats performed on the moon, I lamented that although Neil Armstrong said that he leapt up to the third stair of the LM when leaving the lunar surface, the best *visual* record we had was Young's mundane jump-salute.^[81] [Jay Windley](#) replied that it might have been possible to see Armstrong's leap in the film. I got the footage, looked at it, and Jay was right. I still find it amazing the footage of Armstrong's leap was never mentioned in all the long years of debates. I must have seen it live in 1969, as did many millions of other people, but it was a forgotten feat. This evidence sealed it for me. Neil Armstrong performed that leap on the moon.

Most of what I have presented is in the form of negative evidence. The conspiracy theorists present evidence that says photographs were faked, or the LM rocket had no visible exhaust plume, or that the moon dust sure acted strangely, or they ask "what *were* those Nazis and military contractors really up to?" or "why are there no stars?" or "how did they safely get past the Van Allen Belt?" The debunkers counter with their evidence, answering those questions with mundane explanations, but what did we see that *really* told us that we landed men on the moon? Unmanned probes could have brought back the moon rocks; if the laser reflectors were even necessary to bounce back one photon out of one sextillion, probes could have also set them out. Although the debunkers give plausible answers to the questions about why the images were not faked, what about them would give anybody *proof* that they were taken on the moon? Why were they not taken on a billion-dollar set in Area 51, with state-of-the-art (and secret) methods that would have made Kubrick's *2001* seem like a *Godzilla* movie with cardboard cities? Why not?

Then the Clementine lunar probe sends back images that show moon dust being disturbed at the Apollo 15 landing site. Clementine was a military mission. So, the same gang that many suspect of faking the moon landings sends us military probe images that "prove" that Apollo 15 really landed on the moon. It would be far easier to fake what is interpreted as disturbed dust in those Clementine images than it would be to fake the moon landings.

Again, we are brought back to, "where is the *proof* that we really landed on the moon?" Could even Mission Control have been pumped with fake data from the satellite that admittedly was pumping faked data before Apollo 11, hoodwinking them too? At some point, the overarching conspiracy theory begins showing its strain, and people begin brandishing Occam's razor and say that the simplest explanation is the right one, "We went to the moon, period."

When Young leaped 18 inches off the moon, or the astronauts loped across the lunar surface, they did nothing that could not be easily done on earth, with perhaps some film-speed tricks being played. Until I hit my pay dirt, the best evidence I saw of astronaut activities happening on the moon was the way that dust flew and other flying objects behaved, as though they were in a vacuum. If that stuff was faked, my mind went numb trying to figure out how they could have done it. The feather-dropping demonstration was something that could also have easily been faked. Here is the closest thing to "proof" that I have seen.



Click on image to enlarge

Why is it proof to me? For one thing, this is obscure footage, and Armstrong's leap is not easily noticed unless one knows what to look for. Nobody from NASA or the hoax debunker gang has ever used that footage as evidence, as far as I know. The debate has always been involved with Young's jump, the loping astronauts, etc. It is so obscure that I have a difficult time imagining it being staged with wires or some other ruse.

Even though the video quality is poor, the event is unmistakable, and it confirms what Armstrong talked about in Apollo 11's technical debriefing. Armstrong was the first to step onto and the last to leave the lunar surface during the Apollo 11 mission. In the frames presented above, Armstrong put his hands along the rail of the LM's ladder to guide him, bent his knees, and leapt up the ladder. The step he landed on appears to be about chest height, or four feet above the lunar surface. One reason this excited me is that I was a jumping specialist in my youth. From about age 12, I became a jumping bean. I was a high jumper and javelin thrower in college, and was a student of technique. I could achieve about a standing 27-inch vertical jump in my best days. Today's NBA stars, especially the great leapers, have around a 36-inch standing vertical leap. David Thompson, the legendary American Basketball Association star, had a 42-inch vertical leap. The man who holds the world record for the greatest height cleared above his head, Franklin Jacobs, who cleared a bar nearly two feet taller than he stood, had a standing vertical leap of 44 inches, which is the greatest I have heard of. Nobody has ever leapt four feet high in a standing vertical jump on earth, but Armstrong did as he leapt onto the LM. Not bad for a white guy in a space suit. They either played wire games, dressed up a monkey as Armstrong and the spacesuit was only made of cloth, and we are seeing a special effect that they totally wasted because nobody noticed, or he performed his leap in low gravity. I vote for the last option, and it is the "proof" I sought for a long time.

The only rebuttal I have received for this evidence has been that it was staged with wires. There are several pieces of Apollo footage where the hoaxers say it is evidence of wires. I have closely scrutinized all of that footage, and none of them are convincing evidence of wires being used. They are all apparently lens flares (reflecting off the astronauts' antennas, for instance) or what are obviously "strange" movements that are easily explained as the effect of one-sixth-earth gravity, which the moon hoax theorists seem to keep forgetting.

This evidence puts to rest William Brian's theory of high lunar gravity. It also collapses the debunker and NASA defender explanations about how heavy and restrictive the spacesuits were, which precluded any spectacular feats. The astronauts in later missions could have done even better, but nobody tried, partly because the backpacks shifted their center of gravity, and Armstrong had to touch a rail for guidance and leap forward (even adding to his feat of four feet of vertical distance, as he also moved a few feet forward). Armstrong said it was hazardous to jump straight up because of the unbalancing effects of his backpack. It is understandable why nobody on later missions bounded like stags through the lunar vacuum.

As Americans, we are [brainwashed every day](#) with all manner of lies. Regarding the moon landings, at least, I feel that I know the truth. This "proof" has been far more fun to discover. For me, the notion that we may have faked the moon landings has been laid to rest. It still was an effort dominated by the military establishment, and the current push by the U.S. to [militarize space](#) should make *every human being* shudder in terror. *Every* tyrant says that he acts in self-defense. We are [playing with our self-annihilation](#)

in more ways than one.

In August 2001, I spent time with [Brian O'Leary](#), trying to get the California governor interested in [alternative energy](#), being that his job was in jeopardy with the blackouts that California experienced in the winter of 2000-2001. Now, it turns out that [Enron](#) and friends raped California, as hordes of "free market" bandits raided the coffers. The response from the bureaucracy was predictable, similar to what [Dennis has encountered](#) over the years. I had little high hope that the light bulb would go in the governor's head (we never got past his front office, and the governor's energy advisers canceled a planned meeting with us at the last minute), but I went to hang out with Brian. Brian told me that the Fox program misrepresented his interview, excerpting ten seconds from a two-hour interview where they "ambushed" him with a camera crew. Brian had some residual skepticism about the moon landings themselves, but it was a small one. Seeing Armstrong's leap removed Brian's residual skepticism, and he is now *certain* that the Apollo astronauts in fact landed on the moon. He is not happy with how Fox presented his views, and it jeopardized his relationship with his astronaut pals, Mitchell and Aldrin among them.

Possibilities Regarding the Apollo Anomalies

I would like to help raise the bar for the moon hoax theorists to make a compelling case. First of all, they can explain Armstrong's leap.

I have seen no evidence put forth by the conspiracy theorists that has stood up to scrutiny, as far as it helping to prove that we never landed on the moon, although there are quite a few points on where I will agree with the conspiracy theorists, such as:

1. With our national security state and its penchant for secrecy and record of fabrication and cover-up, *nobody* in the public can say for certain what really happened during the Apollo program. There were definitely national security games being played at NASA during the Apollo program. If these kinds of conspiracy musings are to be avoided in the future, the national security state needs to be dismantled. Dismantling the national security state, however, is far more important for the survival of the human species than it is to avoid the propagation of conspiracy theories.
2. Apollo whistle-blowers have probably been murdered or silenced. [Thomas Baron's](#) death is suspicious (and the disappearance of his 500-page report). There is reason for suspicion regarding the Apollo 1 fire, concern regarding Jim Irwin's sudden death, and less violent suppression efforts directed toward people such as Bart Sibrel (him being silenced until his evidence was analyzed). The defense establishment has silenced or murdered many whistle-blowers when it related to military matters, and the same defense establishment players built the equipment that went to the moon. However, when I have encountered dead and silenced whistle-blowers, it was usually for the understandable defense contractor motivation of *money*. Defense contractors do not want whistle-blowers airing the fact that they made substandard equipment or were wasteful. The contractors could get disciplined, lose contracts and get a public black eye. Killing "big mouths" has been typical behavior in the defense establishment, and I am particularly aware of that kind of activity happening back during the Apollo days, while the very same defense establishment was committing [genocide in Southeast Asia](#). They could have silenced whistle-blowers but also taken their criticisms seriously and attempted to make their equipment better. Before Baron died, Major General Samuel Phillips was making observations similar to Baron's, and issued his own report. Murdering a low level

technician would have been a much easier task than bumping off a major general.

3. NASA played fast and loose in the editing room with its official movies, and their web sites cannot be relied on to always give the correct information. There are inconsistencies in the images, such as disappearing and off-center reticles, visor reflections and other anomalies that can appear suspicious, although none appear to be the smoking gun of faked footage.
4. There were definitely screw-ups that can lead to suspicion, such as the inconsistencies in calculating the neutral point in academia, but they have been more innocent errors than proof of a cover-up.
5. There were many substantial risks regarding the Apollo missions. They were awesomely dangerous undertakings. Moon hoax debunkers have agreed with me regarding NASA continually minimizing the problems overcome and the dangers faced. There was plenty of held breath at NASA during the moon shots. Little about them was really "routine."
6. The relatively hitchless nature of the Apollo missions, and the seemingly scripted nature of the Apollo 13 drama, can give one pause. It is awe-inspiring to ponder all the things that had to go *right* for the moon landings to be successful, and when even [Robert Seamans](#) says that it is hard to believe that we went, for the moon hoax theorists to have doubts is understandable.
7. The fact of no visible exhaust coming from the LMs during lift off appears strange, and the moon hoax debunkers have had to invoke several phenomena to explain the situation. However, I heavily lean toward thinking they are right.
8. The poor video quality of Apollo 11 on the moon and the way the TV networks were forced to record it, lends itself to suspicion.
9. Hiring Nazis to help make the space program a reality (as well as [staffing the CIA with Nazis](#)) was one of history's more disgusting instances of realpolitik, and the very Nazis America hired demonstrated their ruthlessness and penchant for deceit numerous times during their Third Reich days. Nazi fabrications at the CIA greatly contributed to the Cold War tensions, and it is legitimate to wonder if von Braun and pals pulled some of their Nazi tricks out of their bag for NASA.
10. With our government's penchant for secrecy it is difficult to know just what really happened, but [John Glenn](#)'s recent strange appearance on television, Gordon Cooper and Ed Mitchell's support for Steven Greer's Disclosure Project, Brian O'Leary's skepticism, Aldrin's seemingly strange reaction to the footage that Bart Sibrel showed him, [David Adair](#)'s incredible testimony and so on, leads to legitimate suspicion regarding things not being as NASA would have them appear. Factor in strange events such as NASA giving the rights to Mars images to a private contractor, the [Brookings Institute](#)'s recommendation to hide signs of intelligent extraterrestrial life from the public, and there is plenty to be suspicious of.

However, although the above points can be compelling, they do not add up to NASA faking the moon landings. They may have tried faking it if they felt they had to, but there are too many strong pieces of evidence that argue for legitimate landings, such as how the moon dust behaved, aerodynamically clumsy objects flying horizontally for quite a ways and other things flying as if they were in a vacuum, and now there is Armstrong's leap to deal with. It has been tiring to watch the conspiracy theorists sift through the same worthless mine tailings over and over. Very little of the photographic analysis, such as shadows not running parallel, astronauts lit up in while standing in shadows, supposed differences between video and still footage, moving mountains and the like have stood up to the slightest scrutiny, and an area of evidence is easily and thoroughly explained, and then a new researcher presents the same evidence. That kind of behavior gives many of the moon hoax debunkers, with more than a little justification, the feeling that all moon hoax theorists are brainless, dishonest, or gullible. Regarding how both sides have behaved, I have this question: is the goal discovering the truth, or attacking or defending the establishment?

If we really landed men on the moon and returned them to earth using 1969 rocket technology, it was probably the technical achievement of all time. It was also extremely risky and foolhardy, with numerous dangerous activities never tested in a real environment until men performed them in space and on the moon. Why? To win a war that we started?

It is not crazy to doubt that men landed on the moon, and it *is* hard to believe that NASA made it there and back with people. For instance, in an article posted to the Internet, written by Elizabeth Thomson, she describes a talk where Neil Armstrong and Robert C. Seamans addressed an audience at MIT. Buzz Aldrin was also in attendance. Seamans was deeply involved with the Apollo program. Seamans and Armstrong talked at length about the various technical problems that were overcome to land on the moon, especially regarding the Lunar Lander. Seamans put the Apollo feats in perspective when he told the audience, "Sometimes I have to admit that when I see the Moon coming over the horizon I find it hard to believe that it really happened." If one of the key technical members of the Apollo effort has a hard time believing it happened, how "unreasonable" is it for the conspiracy theorists to wonder the same thing?

If NASA faked landing on the moon, the explanation that seems to hold the most water is that we had to make it seem as if we landed on the moon in order to beat the Russians, gain national prestige (at least in our eyes), and make it by when Kennedy said we would. It could have become a bureaucratic imperative, and they may have tapped the experiences and talents of Werner von Braun, Stanley Kubrick and others to pull it off. Also, if it was faked, relatively few people had to be "in on it." Before the Apollo missions, there was a satellite put into orbit to beam admittedly fake data to NASA, to test its systems. It could have been the conduit to pump fake data to Mission Control. With the compartmentalization and other dynamics that are common to large governmental operations, people could have created a moon set without knowing it was to be used for faking it, but for "realistic" training exercises. No conspiracy theorist argues that if the moon landings were faked, many people were in on it. Few of the hundreds of thousands of people working on the Manhattan Project knew they were making nuclear bombs, and the true motivation for [dropping nuclear bombs on Japan](#) has only come to light relatively recently, thanks to declassified documents. Of course, in light of [Armstrong's leap](#), the likelihood of that scenario approximating reality is on the order of a small fraction of one percent, in my opinion.

Although I think we landed on the moon with human beings, I have little doubt that the powers that be were not above trying to fake it if they had to. In significant ways, the space race was a grotesque display of nationalism, where we made a big deal of planting the flag each time (it looks like [Columbus in 1492](#)) with the Stars and Stripes all over the Apollo equipment (did somebody think they might be Chinese astronauts?). In addition, I doubt we are being told the whole truth about the Apollo program and its findings.

The Nature of the Moon Landings Debate

On both sides of the issue, the conversation is extremely polarized. On the conspiracy side, most of the moon hoax theorists have not dealt with evidence in an evenhanded manner. Stridency, name-calling, glibness and other deficiencies can readily be seen. Also, there is a bit of paranoia fueling their fire, although some have good reason for being paranoid. Some may be consciously dishonest, and there are also "provocateur" suspicions. Richard Hoagland has called David Percy a possible British intelligence agent. It might seem far-fetched, but with the Machiavellian workings of our system, it is possible that some

moon hoax theorists are trying to keep the controversy alive as a red herring, distracting the public from considering the really important things that NASA is covering up.

On the debunker side there is also stridency, name-calling, condescension and far too much of the style that characterizes the “[skeptical](#)” societies. They are generally better than the conspiracy theorists at sticking to the facts and dealing with them, and have a far better command of the science than most conspiracy theorists. Some have even put forth gentlemanly efforts at doing their debunking. They have, almost to a person, failed to seriously consider or comprehend why so many people think the moon landings may have been faked. Virtually without exception, they chalk it up to paranoid lunacy, idiocy, greed or dishonesty. Although those may all be aspects of various conspiracy theorists’ motivations, [Americans are lied to](#) by the power structure everyday, from all directions, and at some level many people realize it. What most debunkers have in common is being part of the scientific establishment, which in America usually means being part of the military-industrial complex, and few in that arena have avoided absorbing the ideological indoctrination that belonging to that establishment entails.

The Big Cover-up

Whether the moon landings were faked or not is a minor issue compared to what else may have been covered up: humanity is not alone in the universe.

Hand-in-hand with the military connection are “national security” and secrecy, with plenty of deception, which are wonderful tools for the [self-servers](#) who are running the world. Recently (March 2001) there was a strange event on television. My wife was watching one of her favorite shows, *Fraser*, and John Glenn appeared and said,

“Back in those glory days, I was very uncomfortable when they asked us to say things we didn't want to say and deny other things. Some people asked, you know, were you alone out there? We never gave the real answer, and yet we see things out there, strange things, but we know what we saw out there. And we couldn't really say anything. The bosses were really afraid of this, they were afraid of the *War of the Worlds* type stuff, and about panic in the streets. So we had to keep quiet. And now we only see these things in our nightmares or maybe in the movies, and some of them are pretty close to being the truth.”

It was bizarre, coming out of nowhere, not fitting into the show's context. It was “funny,” not funny. It appears that Glenn may have snuck in a disclosure in a forum where it could be passed off as entertainment. In his twilight years, that performance on *Fraser* could be considered a cousin to a deathbed confession. That event also perfectly fits a favored model of how the powers that be will begin disclosure, by first putting it in benign places such as TV programs and tabloids, under the rubric of entertainment. The veil of secrecy and “[national security](#)” virtually never protects national security.

What John Glenn was talking about is far more interesting than if humans have landed on the moon or not. I know many people who have seen UFOs. Some have been taken aboard them, and [I went and saw one for myself in 2005](#). They are very real. It is estimated that tens of millions of Americans have seen UFOs.

I have spent many years looking at UFO evidence. There is a great deal of “unexplained” phenomena. It is even admitted today that the Air Force’s Project Blue Book was more of a disinformation effort than an investigation (Allen Hynek, who *worked* for Project Blue Book, admitted it), designed to discourage public interest in UFOs, rather than resolve the issue. In the *Project Blue Book Special Report*, it was admitted that more than 20% of the incidents remained unexplained by prosaic explanations, even when the game was rigged.

The government disinformation effort is apt at confusing issues it does not want resolved. For an instance of relatively recent government disinformation, those two old geezers who claimed in the early 1990s to make all the [crop circles](#) were probably part of a British Intelligence operation. Immediately after an English tabloid broke the story, the mainstream media immediately and uncritically put it on the front page around the world. Try imagining any other story that a publication such as the *Weekly World News* would break, that would be immediately broadcast on the evening news with Dan Rather, with zero investigation by the TV networks. It perfectly fits Herman and Chomsky’s [propaganda model](#) of the media. Soon after those geezers made their “confession,” I heard a European UFO investigator talk about that event. When they tried tracing the story to its source, the trail passed through a tabloid, which broke the story, and led to a front organization for British Intelligence. It is the standard story. I will not deal with all the UFO evidence that I have seen over the years. There are plenty of resources out there for those who want to do the research.

The establishment UFO debunkers, the “skeptics” Philip Klass and James Oberg in particular, have not done their movement many favors with their behavior. UFO investigator Don Ecker once interviewed Klass on a radio show. When Klass gave one of his standard answers on an aspect of the UFO controversy, Ecker (one of the most personable UFO investigators out there) politely challenged him, and Klass yelled a stream of curses, which Ecker had to keep beeping off the air, as he asked Klass to please stop cussing. Klass then hung up on Ecker and the listening audience. Oberg has more class, but he is irascible. I have rarely seen him do any debunking work where he does not unleash an insult or invective at those who he is dealing with, and he can be gloriously wrong in his analyses.^[82] It is no accident that Klass and Oberg are both august members of the “[skeptical](#)” Committee for the Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal (CSICOP). For those challenging the establishment on such issues, the road is rough.

There is plenty to be disturbed about regarding NASA. Most Americans do not know it, but NASA has privatized the images coming back from Mars, giving the rights to Michael Malin’s company. NASA has been less than forthright regarding the Face on Mars issue. Malin and the Face on Mars crowd played cat and mouse over the data for years. Recently a full image of the face was released, and NASA says that it is a natural formation because it is asymmetrical. I still wonder. There are strikingly geometric aspects of the face and head. It could be ancient and eroded. Whatever the case may be, privatizing the Mars images not only is contrary to NASA’s charter, but also ridiculous. Imagine if NASA gave the rights to the moon rocks to the contractor who built the LM. Giving Malin rights to the Mars images, because his company provided the camera, amounts to the same thing. It is outrageous, but passes in silence. If the NASA defenders want more credibility with those who are skeptical of NASA, taking on that issue might give them some, instead of the standard apologetics. Oberg recently wrote an Op Ed in *USA Today* (April 24, 2001) where he complained about NASA’s increasing penchant for secrecy. If even Oberg is making that observation, it is difficult to deny.

An impressive strategy to try resolving the extraterrestrial issue has been the Disclosure Project, run by [Steven Greer](#). How can anybody argue with waiving the national securities laws so people can tell what they know? What kind of “nuts” does Greer have lined up to testify? One of them is Mercury astronaut

Gordon Cooper. Greer's co-chair for the secret Congressional hearings was Apollo 14's Ed Mitchell. There are also high-ranking members of government who want to testify. So far, the American government has stonewalled the effort, and Greer is being forced into doing it outside the official channels, if he lives long enough. The situation speaks volumes about our system's legitimacy. Greer's book *Extraterrestrial Contact* confirms most of what I am aware of regarding UFOs. It is well worth reading.

Edwards Air Force Base in California is prominent in UFO lore. A famous meeting supposedly happened there in 1954. Several alien craft landed at Edwards Air Force Base, and had an "open house," allowing scientists to crawl over them. President Eisenhower was there, as allegedly were representatives of the Rockefellers and Rothschilds. Many years ago I read an account by a scientist who supposedly attended that meeting. He wrote that the scientists examining the craft had strange expressions. Here we were, the most powerful nation on earth and the most technologically advanced. We were full of national pride, thinking we were so smart and powerful. As they examined the craft, those scientists realized that we were not far removed from the cave. The scientist who wrote his account was sympathetic toward those bewildered scientists, as their intellectual edifices crumbled. His account reminded me of the [Brookings Institute's report to NASA in 1960](#), where they warned that the scientists might be the group most threatened by the discovery of extra-terrestrial beings of superior intelligence. One event that Cooper wants to testify to is when his squadron filmed a landed UFO at Edwards Air Force Base, which Cooper is certain was not of earthly origin.[\[83\]](#)

For many years I have read accounts of UFO encounters and activity, as well as how our government dealt with it, and the surrounding milieu. There is far more to the situation than just the nuts and bolts of UFOs. Greer has been talking to heads of state about the UFO situation, briefing the CIA director as well as the White House. There apparently is virtually no hostile intent from the ETs. Most extraterrestrial civilizations with representatives on earth are of benevolent intent, trying to help us get over the hump. We are [playing with destroying ourselves](#) these days, but they cannot violate the Prime Directive (*Star Trek* is not *that* fictional). A fair number are neutral, and some are of less-than-benevolent intent. As Creation has apparently been designed, like attracts like, and the power hungry people who run our country have generally interacted with negatively oriented extraterrestrials. The benevolent ones have tried interacting with our governments, but all our power structure wants are new weapons and technologies of domination. The benevolent ETs will have no part of that, so the people who run our planet (called the Sinister Secret Government by [Zoosh](#), the World Management Team by others, and yes, they are related to the various secret societies that have tried running things from behind the scenes for millennia) end up dealing with the "bad" aliens.

Greer confirms the kind of story that Philip Corso wrote of, and others who have come forward. Apparently, our high tech revolution has the aliens to thank in some measure. Part of the technology was given to us, but a lot of it is from reverse engineering captured alien craft. One of the more startling revelations of Greer's book is that the world's governments are not even in charge. The UFO situation began falling out of Eisenhower's grasp when he was President, which may be partly why he warned about the military-industrial complex becoming too powerful when he left office. By the time John Kennedy got into office, he not only had no control over the situation, he could not even find out much about it. Other presidents after Kennedy have tried finding out more about it, Carter and Clinton for example, but they ran into the brick wall of *supranational* security. For the people running the show, United States presidents are irrelevant, left out of the loop, and do not even know where the loop is. The group in control of the UFO situation is largely composed of a variety of private corporations, largely the same defense contractors who built the equipment for NASA to go to the moon.[\[84\]](#) Isn't *that* interesting?

Technology has come a long way since the Apollo days, and the spooks apparently have the technology to create *Star-Trek*-like Holodeck experiences, where those subject to it think they are experiencing actual events, but it is virtual reality. Sound crazy? Try getting into their secret areas to find out, as [Barry Goldwater](#) did. Would they be “above” foisting such technologies on us?

The famous shuttle STS-48 footage, where a ground-based weapon at the super-secret Pine Gap base in Australia apparently shot at a nimble UFO, is also a situation that Greer’s sources confirm.

There is even a Marilyn Monroe connection. Stephen Greer [obtained a CIA document](#) that came from a wiretap on Monroe’s telephone. In a document dated two days before her death, according to the CIA, she talked on the phone about [JFK](#) having a private viewing of a crashed ET spacecraft and dead alien bodies, and she threatened the Kennedys that she would hold a press conference and “tell all.”[\[85\]](#) Maybe that had something to do with why she and Kennedy were killed.

Greer was an MD before he became involved in trying to bring the extraterrestrial situation into public awareness, and was admittedly rather naïve about many things when he began his quest. One area where I disagree with him is where he cautions the Secret Government against making public free energy and anti-gravity technology.[\[86\]](#) I have seen virtually no evidence that the people running the show have any benevolent intent towards the human race. If there is any benevolent intent, it is related to the benevolent intent that a farmer might have for his cows. He wants to keep them healthy because after milking them for years he eventually slaughters and eats them. My [free energy adventures](#) have shown me that free energy is not suppressed because of fears of war, but people protecting their wealth and power. If the self-selected “illuminated ones” (called “Illuminati” in one of the group’s incarnations) had benevolent intent at one time, it long ago became corrupted, largely because of playing with dark path tactics of secrecy and deception, playing at being the elite, and light workers eventually became dark workers. Humanity is doing a fine job of destroying our planet by suppressing clean, renewable energy and other earth-friendly technologies. There are plenty of alternative energy technologies that do not readily become weapons. Humanity has never tried harnessing the tides, nor aggressively pursued solar energy (because oil companies are the biggest “solar” companies), or even geothermal energy (just drill down a ways, anywhere on earth, for steam to run turbines).

Free energy does not have to come from alien technology. Humanity’s energy problems have little to do with technology, per se, but our degenerate [spiritual condition](#), where greed becomes a virtue, winning is everything, we have great national pride ([greed](#) and [pride](#) are two of the [seven deadly sins](#)), and many think if they tell a lie often enough, it makes it true. As a species, we are locked into our third chakra (power). The fourth (the heart) is waiting to be awakened. Jesus was a forerunner of where we are headed, if [we choose to go there](#). The [emotionally crippled condition of Western men](#) is one symptom of our malaise. We may not awaken in time to avoid our self-destruction as a species. It is up to us. The [answers are here](#), if we care to pursue them

After I finished a draft of this essay, Greer assembled twenty witnesses who talked on May 9, 2001 in Washington D.C. The twenty witnesses were apparently the best Greer could come up with, for those who were willing to talk without getting national securities laws protection. They were almost all ex-military personnel. Only one of them said they had actually seen an alien in the flesh. The others talked about tracking UFOs in planes and similar events. The witnesses with the juicy testimony apparently will not talk until they get protection. Greer has done the best he can with what he has, and there is some reason for optimism, but the media dismissed the testimonies as maybe those witnesses did not see what they

thought they saw, even when most witnesses added to their testimony that they were told not to talk about what they saw. The “it will waste congress’ time” angle is again being used. Is it worth waiving the national securities laws so astronauts and generals can testify to what they have experienced?

Footnotes

[1] See Dennis' description of that offer and his rejection in *The Alternative*, p. 20.

[2] See Parenti, *Dirty Truths*, pp. 172-191. America's radical left made their ideology explicit after the [World Trade Center attacks](#) of September 2001. See Stephen Shalom and Michael Albert's "Conspiracies or Institutions? - 9-11 and Beyond," in *Z Magazine*, July/August 2002, pp. 3-7.

[3] A photograph of Gary, with his partner pointing to where the bullet hit his belt is in Gary Wean's *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*, facing p. 114.

[4] In Anthony Summers' *Conspiracy* (p. 144-145) he reported a conversation with Victor Marchetti (the first [CIA](#) employee to go public with criticism of the CIA; [Ralph McGehee](#) was the second and perhaps last to do it “legally”), where he asked Marchetti if he knew anything about the ONI espionage operations against the Soviet Union. Marchetti was an expert in Soviet affairs, as the CIA had recruited him out of college in 1955, where he had majored in Soviet studies. Marchetti responded with:

"At the time, in 1959, the United States was having real difficulty in acquiring information out of the Soviet Union; the technical systems had, of course, not developed to the point that they are at today, and we were resorting to all sorts of activities. One of these activities was an ONI program which involved three dozen, maybe forty, young men who were made to appear disenchanted, poor, American youths who had become turned off and wanted to see what communism was all about. Some of these people lasted only a few weeks. They were sent into the Soviet Union, or into Eastern Europe, with the specific intention the Soviets would pick them up and 'double' them if they suspected them of being U.S. agents, or recruit them as KGB agents. They were trained at various naval installations both here and abroad, but the operation was being run out of Nag's Head, North Carolina."

Marchetti seemed to describe Oswald almost exactly. Significantly, the night Oswald was arrested after JFK's death, he tried twice to call a man named "Hurt." His calls were intercepted and disconnected by the jail, possibly at the direction of the Secret Service. Apparently Oswald was trying to call a man in North Carolina, in the Nag's Head vicinity, and the Hurt in question was probably a military intelligence man.

[5] For background on this situation, I recommend Andrew and Leslie Cockburn's *Dangerous Liaison* or Noam Chomsky's *The Fateful Triangle* and his other works.

[6] For more evidence of this tale's possible veracity, several years ago I read a news item about Marilyn Monroe's former home in Los Angeles. The people who bought her house discovered that the crawl space above her bedroom was filled with a jumble of wiring, which was probably related to surveillance equipment. Whether it was the CIA's wiring, the Mafia's or somebody else's is a mystery, but *somebody* knew what was happening in Marilyn's bedroom.

[7] See Chomsky's *The Fateful Triangle*, especially pp. 13-17.

[8] See his brilliant arguments in his *A Little Matter of Genocide*.

[9] See Bamford's *Body of Secrets*, p. 82, in the chapter titled "Fists."

[10] See William Blum's *Killing Hope* for a summary of those American interventions.

[11] See Bamford's *Body of Secrets*, p. 83.

[12] See Bamford's *Body of Secrets*, p. 89.

[13] *All* nationalism is a false consciousness, which fictionally invests the peoples of a political jurisdiction with unique virtue. It is an appeal to human egotism, in order to manipulate people. Such a tactic has *always* been used by ruling classes to manipulate the masses, usually into supporting violence against those not in the same political jurisdiction, or even those in the same jurisdiction, but not of the same political orientation. The masses always have to be deceived/enticed/coerced into doing the elites' dirty work. If there is any trend of history that can be called a "law," it may be that one. When people begin [taking their power back](#), and see themselves (and everybody else) as sovereign, divine beings, that game will end.

[14] Oswald was seen just before and just after the assassination. Carolyn Arnold saw Oswald in the second floor lunchroom fifteen minutes before the assassination, eating lunch, and saw him on the book depository's first floor only five minutes before the assassination. He was seen in the lunchroom two minutes after the assassination, by a few people. The "sniper's nest" was on the sixth floor. See the timeline in Fetzer's *Murder in Dealey Plaza*, for instance.

[15] Perhaps the greatest work of fiction in my lifetime is the Magic Bullet's tale. The official story is that the military-jacketed round was fired by Oswald's rifle, entered JFK's back, exited his throat, entered John Connally's back, made several wounds and shattered bones, to somehow lodge in Connally's clothing, to be found in virtually undamaged condition on an unused stretcher in Parkland Hospital. Here are two pieces of evidence that collapse the Magic Bullet theory. In order for the bullet to traverse JFK's back and exit his throat, it would in all likelihood have passed through the bones of his spine (see David Mantik's diagram in Fetzer's *Murder in Dealey Plaza*, p. 3). If it hit bone, there was no way for it to have exited JFK's body without leaving a very messy exit wound (and even if it did not hit bone, its exit would not have been a "clean" one), and shattering, as the bullet that supposedly hit JFK's head (the next bullet fired) did. In the infamous "Stare-of-Death" autopsy photo of JFK (See Harrison Livingstone's *High Treason 2*, the photo section after p. 432), on the lower edge of the wound made by the emergency tracheotomy, the edge of the bullet wound can clearly be seen, and it is a clean, circular wound, as would be made by an *entrance* wound, not an exit wound (the doctors who saw it at Parkland described it as an entrance wound). The shattering, tumbling bullet that supposedly passed through JFK's spine could not have made that wound. In addition, the back wound was probed during the autopsy, and it shortly ended, not passing through his body. That is only a small part of the evidence that contradicts the Magic Bullet's amazing story. People with ballistics backgrounds have long told me how ridiculous the Magic Bullet's tale is.

[16] See the timeline in *Murder in Dealey Plaza*, edited by Jim Fetzer. It brings up pieces of evidence that contradict the official series of events. It is hard to know just what might be the true series of events regarding Oswald's movements between the assassination and his capture little more than an hour later.

[17] See Gary Wean's *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*, pp. 581-582.

[18] See Gary Wean's *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*, pp. 567-572.

[19] The list of evidence that has disappeared, been destroyed, or is still classified, is vast. For a sketch of the pieces of crucial evidence that have disappeared, consider the following: still pictures and film taken by witnesses of the assassination in Dealey Plaza, bullet fragments found in Dealey Plaza, bullet fragments removed from John Connally's body, as well as fragments removed from JFK; Lyndon Johnson ordering JFK's limousine cleaned out mere minutes after the assassination, which thereby destroyed a great deal of evidence; the Minox camera, the negative to 133-A, the fourth backyard photo, JFK's brain, and one doctor *burning* his notes from the JFK autopsy. That is a minimal portion of the list of missing evidence. Then factor in the many strange and/or sudden deaths of witnesses and others connected to the possible conspiracy, and the holes in the JFK evidence are gaping.

[20] There is a documentary titled *Fake: The Forged Photo That Framed Oswald* that features Jack White's investigation of the photos, and has Marrs talking about the Hesters' experience.

[21] Posner. *Case Closed*. p. 344, n. Then again, Posner may have not solved the mystery. Posner is notorious for misrepresenting or fabricating the evidence he presented in *Case Closed*. See, for instance, David Starks' *The Posner Report: A Study In Propaganda: One Hundred Errors in Gerald Posner's Case Closed: Lee Harvey Oswald and the Assassination of JFK*. See also Michael Parenti's *History as Mystery*, pp. 190-198. That Posner produced flawed scholarship is fairly easy to discern. More important was how the media establishment uncritically embraced his work, when the same establishment mercilessly derided Oliver Stone's *JFK* movie before it was even released. The establishment did not embrace Posner's work because it had any merit, but because it told the story the establishment wanted told. Posner exonerated the government in his next book about the Martin Luther King Jr. assassination. Maybe he will write his next work about the Bobby Kennedy assassination, completing a government-defending assassination trilogy.

[22] See Fetzer's *Murder in Dealey Plaza*, pp. 324-360. See the analysis on John McAdams' site, a page titled "Bogus Conspiracy Photo Experts" and the sub-link "Was Mary Moorman Standing in Elm Street?" I have to side with the analysis that McAdams presents. White apparently made a significant error in his reconstruction, and it defeated his thesis that Mary Moorman was standing in the street when she was taking pictures of the motorcade, while JFK was being shot.

[23] See Harrison Livingstone's *High Treason 2*, p. 464. David Perry wrote "Who Speaks for Roscoe White?" His essay can be found on the Internet, which questions aspects of the Roscoe White evidence, and his connection to Oswald and Ruby.

[24] Robert Groden, who had what is widely believed to be the best cache of photographic materials on the JFK assassination, had his home burglarized and his material stolen in 1999. This is a common theme in the JFK milieu, and the suspicion that people working for the real assassins have been tying up loose ends (or the CIA and FBI covering their tracks), is not easy to dismiss.

[25] *HSCA Report*, Testimony of Calvin S. McCamy. Cecil W. Kirk was the other expert witness to testify regarding the backyard photographs. The HSCA discussion and conclusions are published in Volume VI of their report.

[26] See Anthony Summers' *Conspiracy*, p. 212, for instance. Gerald Posner makes a number of mildly plausible attempts to explain the situation in his *Case Closed*.

[27] For instance, Carlos Hathcock, the senior instructor at the Marine sniper school at Quantico, led an effort to reproduce Oswald's feat at Quantico, reproducing the firing angle, the range, the moving target, the timing, and every nuance of the official scenario, and made many attempts to reproduce Oswald's feat. The Marine's best marksmen could not reproduce Oswald's feat. According to Israeli Mossad agent Victor Ostrovsky, Mossad also attempted to reproduce Oswald's feat, with the best equipment and people, and deemed Oswald's feat "impossible." See, for instance, Fetzer's *Murder in Dealey Plaza*, pp. 42-43.

[28] See, for instance, M. Wesley Swearingen's *FBI Secrets*, written from the inside, as was [Ralph McGehee's *Deadly Deceits*](#). See also Ward Churchill and Jim Vander Wall's trilogy of *Cages of Steel*, *Agents of Repression* and *The COINTELPRO Papers*. See also William Blum's *Killing Hope* and *Rogue State*, Noam Chomsky's *Deterring Democracy* and many of his other works.

[29] See, for instance, a summary of "realist" theory in *The Perils of Anarchy*, edited by Brown, Lynn-Jones and Miller, pp. ix-xxi. See Howard Zinn's response to realist theory in his *Declarations of Independence*, pp. 9-31. I consider the "radical" position far more explanatory than the realist position.

[30] Wean, *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*, pp. 189-195.

[31] See Vankin and Whelan, *The 50 Greatest Conspiracies of All-Time*, pp. 119-127. See Stich, *Defrauding America*, pp 435-463.

[32] See Stich, *Defrauding America*, p. 440. Featherstone and Rothberg, "Suicide or Murder?" *Lies of our Times*, November

1991, pp. 5-6. Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 119-127.

[33] See Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 288-294. Gritz, *Called to Serve*, pp. 583-587.

[34] Stich, *Defrauding America*, pp. 580-583.

[35] For instance, see [Michael Ruppert](#)'s "The PROMIS Threat," *Nexus*, January-February 2001, pp. 27-32, 73-74.

[36] Stich, *Defrauding America*, pp. 69-78.

[37] McGehee, *Deadly Deceits*, pp. 1-16.

[38] For a sampling of the witnesses, their experiences and their credentials, see Greer's *Extraterrestrial Contact*, pp. 355-359.

[39] See Beckley and Crockett, *Prophecies of the Presidents*, p. 115. See Good, *Above Top Secret*, pp. 404-405. See also Greer, *Extraterrestrial Contact*, p. 468.

[40] See the transcript of Adair's *Art Bell Show* appearance in *The Sedona Journal of Emergence*, February 1998, pp. 26-39. A transcript may be available from Art Bell's organization.

[41] See Garrison, *On the Trail of the Assassins*, pp. 160-168. See Fonzi, *The Last Investigation*, pp. 191-192.

[42] See Bowen, *Immaculate Deception*, pp. 67-94. See Stich, *Defrauding America*, pp. 235-262. See Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 165-173.

[43] Gritz, *Called to Serve*, p. 497.

[44] See Agee and Poelchau, *White Paper Whitewash*. See also Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 352-369.

[45] See discussion in Harrison, *High Treason II*, pp. 403-407. Although Wallace was running as a Democrat in 1972, if he had not won the Democratic nomination, he might have run as an independent again. He ran for president again in 1976.

[46] See discussion in Harrison, *High Treason II*, pp. 421-433.

[47] Ford proposed the Magic Bullet theory when he served on the Warren Commission, helped out by Arlen Specter, who has had a highly successful political career after concocting the Magic Bullet theory.

[48] See Ellen Ray's "Noriega, Torrijos, and the CIA," *Lies of Our Times*, February 1990, p. 10. See the letter from Graham Greene, in *Lies of Our Times*, March 1990, p. 3. See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 453, 306.

[49] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, pp. 305-314.

[50] See Cockburn's "Through a Glass Darkly," *Lies of Our Times*, November 1991, pp. 12-13.

[51] See Vidal, *United States, Essays, 1952-1992*, pp. 857-883.

[52] See Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 325-331. The more orthodox interpretation is Jack Jones' *Let Me Take You Down*.

[53] See Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 332-337. Gritz, *Called to Serve*, pp. 548-550.

[54] Gritz, *Called to Serve*, pp. 492-554.

[55] See Epperson, *The Unseen Hand*, pp. 151-163.

[56] [Zogby International poll](#), published August 30, 2004.

[57] Moon's sphere of influence = (moon's mass/earth's mass) to the 0.4th power multiplied by the distance from the earth's to moon's centers. (See *Orbital Motion*, equation 12.1, p. 371)

Using a mass of 1/81 of earth and 230,000 miles, the calculation is as follows:

$(1/81)^{0.4} \times 230,000 \text{ miles} = 39,658 \text{ miles}.$

[58] See Richard Lewis, *Voyages of Apollo*, p. 116.

[59] Rockets work by controlled explosions. The entire principle behind conventional rocketry is the violent reaction of expanding gases. The fuel reacts and burns, the burn being done in controlled fashion, where the gases expand in one direction: out of the rocket nozzle. An explosion is simply a quick expansion caused by a violently quick chemical reaction. The reaction causes a great increase in temperature, which makes the gases expand, hence the gases issuing from the rocket. The quick reaction and explosive expansion of the hot gases is accompanied by light given off, which is because some of the radiation given off makes it into the visible spectrum of light. The quicker the reaction, the hotter it is, and the more light produced, such as the difference between "red hot" and "white hot." Not all the electromagnetic radiation given off is in the spectrum of visible light, and different substances give off light in different frequencies. All the same, the hotter a reaction is, the more electromagnetic radiation it will produce. Burning a piece of wood is a quick release of energy that the sun slowly gave to the tree over many years. The hypergolic fuels used in the Apollo missions were used for two reasons. One reason is that if the fuel exploded on contact, no ignition system would be needed, which brings up the second, more important, reason. The fuel on the Service and Landing Modules had to be lifted into space first. Therefore, the more "efficient:" the fuel was (i.e., the more explosion per pound of propellant), the better it was to take aboard the Service and Landing Modules. It meant that less fuel would be needed to send it into space. The hypergolic fuels used on the Service and Landing Modules were the most powerful propellants that NASA had. They created more powerful explosions than the fuels used in the earlier stages. Thus, they burned at a greater temperature, which would have made the light given off relatively even *greater* than the earlier stages, in theory. This footnote was corrected by Jay Windley, who said that the spectrum of light given off by different fuels would be different for each fuel, and a fuel that burned hotter would not necessarily look brighter than a colder one, because of the spectral properties of each substance. He is right. Even though the hotter a reaction is, the more electromagnetic energy given off, it may not be in the visible spectrum, and the tendency of giving off of electromagnetic radiation will vary from substance to substance. Jay also presented an image of the exact fuel used in the LM ascent stage, and it did look fainter than other fuels, but not close to invisible. Jay said that it took him significant time and research to finally explain the lack of visible exhaust plume to his satisfaction, and it could look anomalous even to rocket scientists, until they had done some homework.

[60] See Bennett and Percy, *Dark Moon*, pp. 325-330.

[61] *National Geographic* reported that in its December 1966 issue. See Bennett and Percy, *Dark Moon*, pp. 503, 529, n. 26.

[62] A close relative of mine was a whistleblower in the Department of Defense. Long ago, during the Apollo era, he was on a project where a defense contractor was supplying timing equipment for an oceanographic project. They were similar to atomic clocks, where Mickey Mouse watches would have been adequate. He had seen prodigious waste in the Defense Department before (such as \$500 million studies that nobody would read, stacked in a warehouse, collecting dust), but that one got him more bothered than usual, and he began making noise. He eventually got some attention, and the government did not buy those extraordinarily expensive timing mechanisms, and used the equivalent of Mickey Mouse watches to get the job done. It saved the government about \$400 million. When it came time to award the whistleblower, my relative's boss

stepped up and said that it was his doing. My relative's boss received the highest award a civilian can receive, directly from the president; he also received a check for about the equivalent of two years' wages, and an annual annuity, and my relative got zero. No recognition, no money; typical defense establishment behavior. In fact, his superiors scuttled his career. My relative was fairly early in his career, and was rather naïve. Years later, as a defense contractor tried recruiting him, the issue of that instance of his whistle-blowing came up, and the contractor told him that he was lucky to be alive. For saving a \$400 million contract, the contractor said, quite a few defense contractors would have had him murdered. He was lucky. As my relative's career progressed, he began seeing instances of how other whistle-blowers were silenced. In one case, a federal magistrate disappeared, Jimmy Hoffa-style, as he was about to render an unfavorable ruling regarding a defense contractor. I am not a deeply connected insider, but I know whistleblowers.

A few years ago, a friend of mine testified in a whistleblower lawsuit. Back in the 1980s, he worked for a defense contractor in Silicon Valley, where they built some of the equipment that was used in Desert Storm. He was a computer programmer and analyst, and developed an accounting and inventory system for defective parts. There is plenty of red tape involved in government cost-plus contracts. The contractor needed to account for their defective pieces (they would be paid for them). They would build an assembly for the equipment. If during inspection the assembly was found defective, it was put in a defective bin. A book-to-physical reconciliation, where the accounting system will say there should be 100 items on hand, and the items on hand are counted, to see if there really are 100, assesses an accounting system's accuracy. That defense contractor had production deadlines and other pressures, which were typical situations in manufacturing processes, except the customer was the government, so it really did not have to work all that well (if you have been in the business, you know what I mean). They would periodically run out of parts, but they had deadlines to meet. So, somebody would sneak back to the defective bins, take out the defective assemblies, and put them into the equipment. When it would come time to account for the defective pieces, they would be short. An engineer began making noise. He knew that they were putting out defective product because of that practice (and others), and overcharging the government.

The reason whistleblower laws exist today is because of what happened to them. That engineer was fired and blackballed from the industry. He was an early case of why there are whistleblower laws today. My friend no longer worked for the defense contractor when the situation began making the news, but he followed the events. In Silicon Valley and other defense industry havens, the marketing practices were a little unusual, but not *that* unusual, if one has been in the corporate world much. A local house of prostitution was hired by the defense contractor to service the many Pentagon officials that came visiting. Probably all the local defense contractors periodically hired that establishment, with "the best girls in town." I saw similar things in the [trucking industry](#), and they were minor leaguers compared to the defense establishment. Just as a stink began brewing over the ruckus the whistleblower was making, and just as eyes began being focused on a certain house of prostitution, the madam disappeared. My friend watched what happened, and stayed quiet for several years.

Some sense of justice prevailed in that case. The original whistleblowing engineer received restitution, and waged a class-action lawsuit on behalf of the taxpayer against the defense contractor, asking for more than a billion dollars in damages. It became high profile, easily researched. I will not name names here. Naming names is what gets people in trouble. With enough of a spotlight on the situation, and a defense contractor backed up a few steps, after a bunch of soul-searching and dealing with genuine fear, my friend contacted the engineer's legal team. He was willing to testify about what he saw, how he developed the accounting system and how the defective parts inventory came up short and why. In normal courtroom situations, surprise witnesses are rarely used, but each side knows who is going to testify. When my friend's name was put on the witness list, he no longer lived in California, but lived about 1000 miles away. Suddenly, a private investigator for the defense contractor began beating the bushes hard in my friend's neighborhood. The investigator found my friend's brother's ex-wife, in a distant county, trying to dig up dirt. He contacted my friend and told him what he was doing. It was obviously intended to intimidate my friend. I have been in [kangaroo court before](#), where public officials tried intimidating me as I testified. I counseled my friend on what he could expect, and fortunately they did not try to intimidate him on the witness stand. They probably did not find anything to use against him. The whistleblower won the lawsuit, but such situations are rarely resolved to the plaintiff's benefit. The defense contractor usually assigns a team of lawyers to appeal the ruling indefinitely, and they quite possibly will never part with a dime in damages from the ruling. That is how it works most of the time, if it even gets to the point of a favorable ruling.

The most depressing aspect of whistleblowing, however, is not that their employers try silencing them and ruining their lives (it is part of their "job"), but that their friends and colleagues disown them, ostracizing them for speaking up, because it "rocked the boat." The crime of the whistleblowers has even been called "committing the truth." In whistleblowing circles, that is the most dismaying part of their experience. Some whistleblowers were driven over the edge not because how their

employers treated them, but how their friends and families did.

[63] See Lillian Kozloski's, *U.S. Space Gear: Outfitting the Astronaut*, p. 81.

[64] See Brian, *Moongate*, p. 69.

[65] See Brian, *Moongate*, p. 78.

[66] See Lillian Kozloski's, *U.S. Space Gear: Outfitting the Astronaut*, pp. 91, 96.

[67] See Brian, *Moongate*, pp. 209-212.

[68] Reading Kozloski's *U.S. Space Gear* does not lend evidence to Brian's suspicion, as the A7L suits weighed in the range of other suits like it.

[69] See Dennis Piskiewicz, *The Nazi Rocketeers: Dreams of Space and Crimes of War*, p. 167.

[70] Probably the best account regarding the post-war hiring of the Nazis, and what it cost America, is in Christopher Simpson's *Blowback*.

[71] See Christopher Simpson's *The Splendid Blond Beast*, especially pp. 217-231.

[72] See Frank Winter's *Rockets into Space*, for a discussion of those early days of rocketry.

[73] See Eric Schlosser's *Fast Food Nation*, p. 37.

[74] Those quotes can be found in David McGowan's *Derailing Democracy*, pp. 194-195.

[75] See, for instance, von Braun, et al, *Space Travel: A History*, or White's *Rockets into Space*.

[76] See Richard Lewis, *Voyages of Apollo*, p. 212.

[77] See Maisak, *Survival on the Moon*, pp. 133-136.

[78] See William Brian's, *Moongate*, pp. 75-78.

[79] At about that time, they took still frame AS11-36-5337.

[80] Such as Sibrel's third day image and NASA frame AS11-44-6674, according to my calculations, or images AS11-44-6672 and 6673.

[81] See Armstrong's statement in the Apollo 11's crew in the technical debriefing on July 31, 1969, in Robert Godwin's *Apollo 11: The NASA Mission Reports, Volume Two*, p. 89.

[82] Richard Hoagland and Oberg squared off on the STS-48 space shuttle footage. If you have not seen that footage, seeing it before reading this might be advisable. The STS-48 footage is the single most spectacular piece of evidence I have ever seen regarding UFOs. The footage was taken in 1991 by the space shuttle Discovery, by a camera that was pointing at earth. What is seen is a point of light that appears near the horizon of earth, apparently many miles above the earth's surface. It moves in independent fashion across the earth. Its appearance and movement alone are strange. For about fifteen seconds the object crosses the screen, then a flash lights up the sky. Instantly, the object makes a greater-than-

ninety-degree turn, launching itself into space, away from the earth. The movement is spectacular. The object can be seen for about ten seconds after its turn, dimming slowly as it leaves earth behind.

A few seconds after the object made its turn, something that looked like a shotgun blast came ripping up through the atmosphere, almost exactly where the object made its turn. By all appearances, it looked like a ground-based weapon shot at an intelligently piloted craft, which dodged the shot. That is *exactly* the kind of situation that Don Corso wrote about. It is *exactly* the kind of activity that Steven Greer writes about, in which highly placed officials have admitted that we are shooting at alien craft, and have even shot some down. Even the high officials think that the "cowboys" who are shooting at non-hostile alien craft are not only stupid, but are endangering the human race if they make the aliens angry.

The implications of that footage are profound. One reason the footage is so spectacular is that there is no debate regarding its authenticity. The footage was beamed down-to-earth and seen live. A college student first obtained the footage from NASA's link, and nobody has disputed the authenticity of the video, unlike nearly all the other UFO images that have been obtained under a wide array of circumstances during the past fifty years.

If objects in the footage are the distances from the camera that they appear to be, which is many, many miles, nobody can laugh at tales of UFOs again. Richard Hoagland has publicized the Face on Mars controversy more than anybody else. Hoagland also presents image analysis that promotes the idea that artificial structures are on the moon. Hoagland belongs to the school of thought that believes that UFO's are likely earth-based craft, made by humans, by military or quasi-military organizations. Hoagland theorizes that the footage may have recorded a test of Star Wars technology on a drone craft controlled by human beings. In late 1998, I saw Hoagland present more shuttle footage that caught a similar "energy beam" event coming from South America. Something strange is happening up there.

The "shotgun blast" appeared to be a much-improved variation of admitted Star Wars technology. The "blast" appeared to be moving hundreds of miles *per second*. No officially admitted earthly technology can fire a projectile that fast. The Star Wars technology could apparently fire a projectile at up to fifteen miles per second. In Corso's *The Day After Roswell*, he described technology that is *exactly* like that "shotgun blast," and he wrote that the whole Star Wars program was designed specifically to shoot at extraterrestrial craft. Hundreds of miles per second is far beyond what has been made public. A craft that made that sudden turn and acceleration is far, far beyond anything that our government has admitted to having. The turn and acceleration produced G-force and acceleration numbers that blow the mind. The calculations show that the object was moving at Mach 73 (about 53,000 miles an hour) *before* it was shot at. After the "muzzle flash" the craft instantly turned and flew away at Mach 285, for a G-force acceleration of 14,000 G's. The most an astronaut has ever experienced is less than ten G's. That kind of nimble maneuvering has been described by thousands of people who have seen UFOs. Subsequent analysis of the tape has determined that the object was near the Pine Gap military base in Australia when it was shot at. Pine Gap in a super-secret U.S. military base in the Australian outback, a perfect spot for such an awesome, ground-based weapon to shoot at UFO's. (See Graham Stewart, "'Star Wars' over Australia?", *Nexus*, April-May 1996, pp. 55-56.)

Hoagland published his analysis. He ventured the opinion that the video records a Star Wars test against a drone. Hoagland has his reasons for thinking that all we were seeing was our own stuff. Hoagland also theorizes that the structures on Mars and the moon are ancient ruins. He has always been reluctant to admit that there might be "aliens" among us. I tend to believe that the shuttle footage recorded a pot shot taken at an extraterrestrial craft. The evidence argues convincingly that if we are seeing earthbound technology, it has been borrowed or stolen from extraterrestrials.

The point of this discussion is contrasting the work of Hoagland and Oberg. Hoagland produced his analysis and made note of possibly related issues, such as NASA ending its policy of producing live, unscrambled footage from the shuttle, immediately after the STS-48 mission. Oberg then produced a rebuttal to Hoagland. Oberg's rebuttal has been published on the Internet, and one place to find it is on Mike Bara's web site. Any analysis of that shuttle footage must deal with the two most spectacular events on it: the sudden turn and acceleration of the "craft," and the "shotgun blast" ripping through the atmosphere right behind it. Looking at the footage is necessary to understand the nature of Oberg's analysis.

Oberg works for NASA, and like Klass is a prominent "[skeptic](#)" and august member of CSICOP. Oberg and Klass are the two most prominent UFO debunkers in the "skeptical" movement. Oberg's analysis is quite technical regarding the footage and space shuttle telemetry when it was taken. He made the case that the footage shows not a craft flying hundreds of miles away over earth, but ice crystals a few feet from the shuttle's camera. He also made the case that the "ice crystal" made its

incredible turn and acceleration not due to intelligent piloting, but it was blown that way by the firing of one of the shuttle's stabilizing rockets. That flash in the sky when the "ice crystal" turned was not the muzzle blast of Star Wars technology, but the flash of the rocket firing.

Oberg states that the event is not occurring hundreds of miles away, but is a remarkable illusion caused by ice crystals and a firing rocket. It was a debunker performance at its finest. Most of Oberg's points have been effectively rebutted by Hoagland and independently by Dr. Jack Kasher, but what blew me away was what Oberg did not see fit to discuss. Again, there are two dramatic events within seconds of each other: a dramatic turn and acceleration of the "craft" and the "shotgun blast" that was apparently fired at it. In order to explain away the entire event as an illusion, both have to be explained away as a remarkable series of coincidental illusions. With all the technical talk by Oberg, he *does not even mention* the "shotgun blast." For his in-depth "analysis" to completely ignore the blast, while giving reams of technical data on ancillary items, makes it a shockingly poor exercise in debunking. Watch the video, and then read Oberg's explanation. His explanation collapses of its own weight. In addition, image analysis expert Dr. Mark Carlotto published an analysis of the STS-48 footage in the *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, Vol. 9, No. 1, pp. 45-63, 1995. It is also available on the Internet from his web site. Carlotto makes the case that what we see in the footage is not debris near the shuttle blowing by a rocket blast, but something in the distance, just as it appears to be. Jack Kasher also performed an intense analysis of that footage. NASA has published its debunking of the footage, and after STS-48, they immediately and "coincidentally" stopped allowing the public to see live shuttle footage, to protect the astronauts' privacy.

Apparently Oberg eventually heard enough about his "critique" that he published an addendum to his explanation. He stated that the "projectile" was an ice crystal that followed the "rocket blast," blown out by the blast and following the other "ice crystal." There is a video produced titled *UFOs and Star Wars*. I got my copy from the publishing house Adventures Unlimited. The footage can also be downloaded on the Internet. *UFOs and Star Wars* gives great analysis and close ups of that footage. For one thing, those two coincidental ice crystals move in decidedly different directions, which is questionable if they were both propelled by the same rocket blast. Another thing is that the second crystal suddenly appears in the middle of the field of vision, looking exactly as if it came up through the atmosphere, hundreds of miles away. If it really were an ejected ice crystal, it would not suddenly appear in the middle of the screen, but appear in the left corner and progress across the screen. Similarly, the first "ice crystal" can be seen moving away for about ten seconds, getting progressively dimmer as it appears to move far away from earth. Oberg's explanation does not account for that, among other anomalies.

Also, there was a second projectile that moved across the sky when the obvious one did. There were other "ice crystals" during that event that also made strange movements, looking as if they were other intelligently piloted craft reacting to the Star Wars show. Oberg also defended NASA's new policy of delaying and scrambling its footage, coming up with another rationale for government secrecy in a supposedly public agency.

Oberg could not help himself from launching inflammatory words while debunking the footage. I have rarely seen a debunking performance that did not call its target names, seriously question their state of mind or motivation, or make glib jokes at their target's expense. Oberg used words of certitude when critiquing Hoagland, using words such as "invalid," "false" and "wrong," when Oberg only had a difference of opinion, garbing himself in the mantle of rectitude while making his critique. In Oberg's essay, he inserted comments when describing Hoagland's critique, such as "I have checked with a NASA Public Affairs official, and have personally verified, that things (as usual) are not quite what Richard Hoagland alleges." In defending NASA's new secrecy policy, Oberg finished up with "Outside of avoiding whines about censorship, there's no reason to do so."

I might be gentler regarding Oberg's analysis if I had not seen similar examples of his craft. Oberg was one of Sagan's comrades in their dubious [debunking effort](#) on the Sirius-Dogon mystery. For another instance of Oberg's efforts, an interaction with Charles Ginenthal will suffice. Ginenthal may be the most vigorous defender of Immanuel Velikovsky's theories. I originally stumbled into Velikovsky's work and the field of [catastrophism](#) by reading Ginenthal's *Carl Sagan and Immanuel Velikovsky* when I was tracking Carl Sagan's debunker career. I have gotten into catastrophism over the past several years, and have read about 10,000 pages of material from all sides of the controversy. Even some of Ginenthal's pro-Velikovskian comrades have called Ginenthal an apologist for Velikovsky. Ginenthal is carrying Velikovsky's torch, but it has been a fairly honorable torch to carry, defending a man whom the scientific establishment mercilessly derided for nearly thirty years. How right or wrong Velikovsky or Ginenthal may be is still an open question for me, although Charles has perhaps bent too far at times in defending Velikovsky's work.

The catastrophic issue is vast, with the Velikovskian thesis so broad and interdisciplinary that it would take many years of study to effectively evaluate. His work delves into seemingly unrelated areas such as mythology, ancient history, archeology, geology, space probe data, physics, astronomy, dendrochronology, glaciology and a host of disciplines. It is not a thesis for quick study artists. Velikovsky's theories exercised Einstein's brain. Most catastrophists do not believe Velikovsky's planetary billiards scenario of near misses between earth, Venus, Mars and the moon, but much about his related theses are not easily dismissed. I have taken up catastrophic theory as a hobby the past few years, getting sucked in far deeper than I had originally intended. I was merely tracking Carl Sagan and slipped into an area that I originally had no intention of pursuing. There is plenty about catastrophic theory to intrigue me for the rest of my life.

There is so much uncertainty and controversy surrounding Velikovsky's theses that nobody can easily and honestly dismiss Velikovsky's work. I doubt that *anyone* can be an "expert" in all the areas Velikovsky tackled, including Velikovsky. Many things often taken for granted in modern physics and cosmology, such as the Big Bang, the nature of the Red Shift, how the planets and galaxies formed, the nature of gravity and electromagnetism, the accuracy of dating methods such as carbon dating and dendrochronology, etc., are subject to enduring controversy.

Leroy Ellenberger has been Ginenthal's harshest critic for years. Ellenberger used to be in the Velikovsky camp, even an assistant of Velikovsky's before he died in 1979. Ellenberger left the Velikovsky camp during the 1980's, and has been the harshest critic of those pursuing his theories ever since. Leroy and I have corresponded many times, as I have investigated the nature of the controversy. Leroy has been quite helpful and cordial with me, although he is merciless in his derision of Ginenthal and other Velikovskians. I will not comment on Leroy's work except to say that Tom van Flandern told me that he thinks part of Leroy's rage has something to do with the verve of an apostate. Henry Bauer says the same thing in his latest book.

Ginenthal publishes his own journal that he named *The Velikovskian*. In the first issue of *The Velikovskian*, published in 1993, Ginenthal wrote an article titled "The Moon in Upheaval," which delved into Velikovsky's theories about the rough time our moon has had in recent history. Ginenthal responsibly fished for "expert" responses to his work, and Oberg penned a response to Ginenthal's article on the moon. Ginenthal published Oberg's response, along with his response to Oberg in the fourth issue of *The Velikovskian*. I cannot say for certain how much Oberg or Ginenthal were "right" in their debate, but I could assess some of it. My point is not about who was right, but how the scientific establishment reacts to fringe stuff such as Ginenthal's.

Oberg again could not contain himself from making snide comments regarding work he criticized. For instance, Ginenthal made a case for explosive projectiles from Io's surface. Oberg's response was,

"The middle paragraph, on page 73, is probably the worst example of confusion and misrepresentation, of arrogant ignorance, of classic pseudoscientific illogic. It refers to Io's 'tidally-induced volcanic explosions,' which eject surface matter upward at 3000 (feet per second). 'In one second, a motionless body sitting on Io's surface will have been struck by a force of such power that will be ejected upward to a height of 3000 feet.' First, some high school physics student should tell Ginenthal that a body starting at zero and winding up at 3000 (feet per second) in one second will travel only 1500 feet in the first second, not 3000 feet."

That is not unusually caustic commentary for Oberg. He is the voice of NASA on many issues, and a prominent member of the "skeptical" movement, a movement that prides itself in its impeccable "rational" worldview and its pure exercise of the scientific method while investigating the strange and offbeat. One might expect such pillars of scientific reason to be far above such name-calling behavior. Unfortunately, the "skeptics" seldom are.

Oberg's attack on Ginenthal would be bad enough, with his insult about high school physics students showing Ginenthal how wrong his analysis was, and how wanting was his understanding of rudimentary physics. Incredibly, on that issue of those hypothetical projectile velocities, Ginenthal was correct, and Oberg dead wrong! To attack somebody as Oberg did was indefensible, but for his critique to also be gloriously wrong moves his attack into bizarre realms.

In his haste to insult Ginenthal, Oberg apparently forgot to think through the problem. For the kind of hypothetical projectile Ginenthal theorized, the projectile would leave the ground at 3000 feet per second. Oberg incorrectly assumed that the projectile would begin accelerating from a velocity of zero at ground level, accelerating like a race car for the next second,

and only reaching the 3000 feet per second velocity after accelerating for a second, and therefore traveling only 1500 feet in that first second. That high school physics student could have told Oberg the result of that thought experiment.

That kind of thought experiment can be tricky, and there have been many problems like that published over the years in brainteaser books. It is a deserving problem to think about for a high school physics student, but most students would derive an approximately correct answer, not Oberg's wrong one. For Oberg to get it wrong is no great crime, and shows that he does not always think things through, and how our scientists are not immune from coming up with wrong answers on relatively easy questions such as what the "muzzle velocity" would be for that hypothetical projectile. The invective Oberg unleashed came back at him 100-fold.

Instead of firing back at Oberg in kind, Ginenthal enlisted George Talbott to compute that distance traveled in one second by that hypothetical projectile. Talbott performed a rigorous calculation, cautioning his readers that it is not as easy as it looks, and many scientists can come up with the wrong answer if they are not careful. Talbott calculates a distance of 2997 feet in that first second (*The Velikovskian*, Vol. 1, No. 4, p. 21.). Talbott then makes astute observations about the nature of the "scientific" criticisms of Velikovsky's work over the generations. Oberg's performance is not unusual when criticizing Velikovsky's theories or his followers.

[83] See Greer, *Extraterrestrial Contact*, p. 359.

[84] See Greer, *Extraterrestrial Contact*, pp. 313-315.

[85] See Greer, *Extraterrestrial Contact*, p. 455.

[86] See Greer, *Extraterrestrial Contact*, pp. 32-35.

The Next Section: [Racketeering for Fun and Profit](#) (14K)

[Return to My Home Page](#)

Racketeering for Fun and Profit

By Wade Frazier

[Racketeering for Fun and Profit](#)

[Footnote](#)

Racketeering for Fun and Profit

A major thesis of this site is that at least half of the U.S. economy is unproductive; with no net benefit to society regarding those activities. They are either intrinsically worthless or they take on a greatly inflated "value" due to an industry or profession protecting its turf. In several instances, it is much worse than that, because some worthless industries and professions are also hastening the demise of earth's inhabitability. Virtually every group of people that ever came together did so to [serve their mutual self-interest](#).

Exceptions to that dynamic can be argued for some groups, such as Peace Corps volunteers. However, the organization itself has often proved disillusioning to its often-idealistic volunteers, when they realized that the native problem was not that they were ignorant farmers, but that the good land to raise crops on was taken away, or they were enslaved to a system that did not look after their needs. The Peace Corps often did far more damage than good as it helped manipulate communities in Africa, for instance, to stop growing food for themselves and instead grow food for export to America. When the volunteers figure *that* out, they are threatened into silence or otherwise dealt with. During the 1990s, the Peace Corps served as a capitalistic vanguard in the rape of the former Soviet Union, where life expectancy collapsed. It is sad to say, but the Peace Corps is really a tool of the American Empire.^[1] Self-confessed "economic hit man" [John Perkins](#) got his start working for the Peace Corps, as a way to test him.

Even an "untouchable" organization such as Mother Teresa's ministry is not above suspicion. I am probably going straight to hell for writing it, but Christopher Hitchens' *Missionary Position: Mother Teresa in Theory and Practice* presents convincing evidence that most of her image

was the result of a public relations campaign. As was the case with [Junípero Serra](#) and too many missionaries over the centuries, attention to the earthly comfort of their charges was seldom in evidence. Similar to Serra, Mother Teresa's efforts seemed to be more directed into making sainthood than really helping her charges. That is surely a bold claim, and Hitchens competently makes his case, presenting photographs of Teresa having photo ops with a very disreputable gang of people, where her name was being used in fund-raising schemes. Besides hanging out with dictators, Charles Keating, the [S&L scandal](#)'s poster boy, generously funded her. Keating did so to the tune of \$1.25 million (using the public's money). Mother Teresa interceded on Keating's behalf, writing a letter to the judge, asking for his mercy. She stated that Keating "has always been kind and generous to God's poor." The prosecutor wrote Mother Teresa back, telling her that the money Keating gave her was stolen money, and asked her to give it back. They never heard back from Mother Teresa.

Some fundraising schemes that Mother Teresa was involved with were garish. Corporate magnate Robert Maxwell shamelessly used her image for a fundraising scheme, and pocketed the money that was raised. In another instance, Mother Teresa posed almost like a cutout of the celebrity she was, with a California "guru" cult leader standing next to her. The photo was taken as a condition of giving her the dough, in a studio setting. Later a scene was inserted into the photo's background, showing Calcutta's poor.

It could be argued that yes, she prostituted herself, but for a good cause. How about all those beneficiaries of that donated money, how did they benefit? The finances of Mother Teresa's ministry were somewhat of a mystery, with nobody really quite knowing how much money came in or where it went. That is strange "charitable" activity. No American charity can get away with that. Hitchens openly wondered where it went. It was not evident in her ministry.

It can be depressing to ask what "good works" she really performed. Nobody can really explain what she did to earn the Nobel Peace Prize. Her acceptance speech was about decrying the evil of abortion, and she remained a staunch opponent of birth control while she ran her houses for the poor and dying. Her response to the Bhopal disaster, brought to India courtesy of Union Carbide, where she rushed to the scene, was little more than saying "forgive, forgive." She said nothing about preventing such a disaster from happening again, or about Union Carbide mitigating its damage.

Many independent doctors and journalists visited Teresa's Calcutta Home for the Dying and other facilities, and a common response was how inhumane the environments were. Although people there were dying and in great pain, painkiller was against Mother Teresa's austere philosophy. Dr. Robin Fox, the editor of *Lancet*, perhaps the world's leading medical journal, visited the Calcutta operation in 1994 and published his impressions. He expected to be impressed, but after remarking on the philosophical approach there that was anti-medical, Fox stated,

"Finally, how competent are the sisters at managing pain? On a short visit, I could not judge the power of their spiritual approach, but I was disturbed to learn that the formulary includes no strong analgesics [painkiller - Ed.]. Along with the neglect of diagnosis, the lack of good analgesia marks Mother Teresa's approach as clearly separate from the hospice movement. I know which I prefer."

Mary Loudon, a Calcutta volunteer who has written extensively about the lives of nuns, said this about the atmosphere at Mother Teresa's Home for the Dying,

"My initial impression was of all the photographs and footage I've seen of (Bergen) Belsen and places like that, because all the patients have shaved heads. No chairs anywhere, there were just these stretcher beds...There's no garden, no yard even."

Loudon told a story of a young boy of fifteen who came there with a simple kidney problem that could have been easily remedied with antibiotics. An American doctor there was trying to treat him, and was begging the sisters to let him be taken to a hospital. It was against their philosophy, so the frustrated and resigned doctor watched the boy slowly dying. As Hitchens stated, the situation there is purposeful:

"The neglect of what is commonly understood as proper medicine is not a superficial contradiction. It is the essence of the endeavor, the same essence that is evident in a cheerful sign which has been filmed on the wall of Mother Teresa's morgue. It reads 'I am going to heaven today.'"

Mother Theresa's Home for the Dying appears to be just that, a Christian death factory, where the people going there are supposed to die. Getting better is not a part of the program. Mother Teresa taught the sisters how to surreptitiously give baptisms to dying Hindus and Moslems in their care, secretly sending souls to the Christian Heaven, racking up their Christian tally.

Hitchens helped produce the British documentary *Hell's Angel*, screened in 1994. In the documentary's wake, he was contacted many times, and by some who worked in Mother Teresa's homes.

One of Hitchens' contacts was Susan Shields, a nun from Mother Teresa's order who worked in her homes in the Bronx, Rome and San Francisco for nearly ten years. She left Mother Teresa's employ because she could not stand it anymore, and wrote *In Mother's House*, an apparently fine manuscript that cannot find a publisher, seemingly because it frankly deals with her experiences of working in Mother Teresa's employ. It was far from a hagiographic account. The nuns working for Mother Teresa were pushed to the extremities of austerity. Upon occupying a convent's premises in San Francisco, they immediately rid it of furniture, carpeting and any creature comforts, including heat in the wintertime. Several nuns developed tuberculosis while Shields worked there. Hitchens stated, "If her memoir reads like the testimony of a former cult member, it is because in many ways it is." The nuns were all indoctrinated that Mother Teresa is divinely guided, and no questioning of her authority is thinkable. The atmosphere cultivated was a total and mindless obedience to Teresa's divinely inspired authority.

Hitchens' assessment was frank,

"Bear in mind that Mother Teresa's global income is more than enough to outfit several first class medical clinics in Bengal. The decision not to do so, and indeed to run instead a haphazard and cranky institution which would expose itself to litigation and protest were it run by any branch of the medical profession, is a deliberate one. The point is not honest relief of suffering but the promulgation of a cult based on death and suffering and subjection."

Mother Teresa herself flew around the world, getting the finest medical care money could buy in her last years. This iconoclastic segment on Mother Teresa may come as a shock. Her defenders are many. Maybe she did some genuine good in the world, but there may be far more image than substance in Mother Teresa's legacy.

If such "saintly" institutions such as the Peace Corps and Mother Teresa's Home for the Dying fail to impress upon further scrutiny, imagine how various industries and highly paid professions fare in the following analyses.

Footnote

[1] For that challenging idea, see Charles MacMartin's "Peace Corps and Empire", *Covert Action Information Bulletin* (Now called *Covert Action Quarterly*), Winter 1991-1992. Even internal U.S. government documents made part of the *Pentagon Papers* make the Peace Corps' role in foreign policy explicit. Generally, whatever beleaguered nation the U.S. military, [CIA](#) and corporate world was focusing its attention on, the Peace Corps would soon flood their volunteers there. The Peace Corps is part of a novel neocolonial strategy.

The Next Section: [The Energy Racket](#) (284K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Energy Racket

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction and Summary](#)

[A Brief Prehistory of Energy and Life on Earth](#)

[Early Civilization, Energy and the Zero-Sum Game](#)

[The Rise of Europe and Energy Exploitation](#)

[The Industrial Revolution and the Science of Energy](#)

[The Energy Racket Takes Shape](#)

[Science and the "Real World"](#)

[My First Glimpse](#)

[World Energy Economics](#)

[A Case History in Alternative Energy Suppression](#)

[Why Is There No Alternative Energy?](#)

[The Greatest Energy of All](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction and Summary

Today's energy industry is perhaps the world's most powerful. Energy is the basis of *all* this world's wealth, and for perhaps earth's entire history, the sun's energy has fueled all ecological and economic systems. If early humans did not learn to exploit new sources of energy, humankind would still be living with its ape cousins in the tropical forests. Without the continual exploitation of new energy sources, there would have been no civilization, no Industrial Revolution and no looming global catastrophe.

All [life on earth](#) consumes the sun's energy, originally captured by the process of photosynthesis, except for [chemical-synthesizing bacteria](#), which might be responsible for part of the world's oil deposits. There is an audacious theory recently posited by Thomas Gold of Cornell that all the so-called "fossil fuels" were not created by life processes, but by purely chemical processes of earth's formation. If that is so, the news is worse for humanity's long-term prospects, as we are rapidly depleting a resource, with no way to make more, as well as creating environmental devastation by mining and using it.

Millions of years ago, humanity's evolutionary ancestors lived in [Africa's tropic forests](#), as did their great ape cousins, and fruit was their dietary mainstay. By walking upright and making tools, humanity's

ancestors exploited new energy resources, such as animal remains scavenged from predator kills. Early protohumans migrated from Africa about two million years ago, probably following migrating African predators. They eventually harnessed [fire](#) and invented other energy-consuming/preserving adaptations, such as clothing, which allowed them to survive past their natural range in the tropics.

About 100,000 years ago, [anatomically modern humans](#) appeared on the scene. By about 40,000 years ago, humans improved their weapons technology to the point where they became earth's first and only superpredator, expanding its range across the entire planet. By about 10,000 years ago, humanity had [exterminated all the easily hunted large animals](#), and the hunter-gatherer lifestyle was no longer sustainable on a global basis. Domestication of animals and food crops led to civilization. Domesticating animals, plants and enslaving humans were the significant activities of [early civilization](#), and ideological indoctrination began in those early days, as the slaves needed to be conditioned to accept their status. The positions of the new elite classes also needed an acceptable justification. Often the most ruthless and successful elites became "royalty."

The human journey has largely been about refining methods of exploiting energy and manipulating the natural environment to human benefit. The West calls that process "progress." The extinction of large, easily killed animals was probably the earliest instance of humans exhausting their primary energy source (although original migrations from Africa might have been due to outstripping energy supplies - largely fruit - in the tropical forests). Early agricultural practices also exhausted the lands, although the dynamic of [deforestation](#), farming and desertification persists to this day. As the energy of wood was used up, and the resultant deforested lands were devastated by agricultural practices, other sources of energy were exploited, leading to the "fossil fuel" revolution, which began with [coal mining](#) in Europe and [China](#) about a millennium ago. Less than 150 years ago, [oil](#) became the next fuel to undergo large-scale exploitation, and its use coincided with amassing capitalistic, monopolistic empires, significantly by United States robber barons, [John Rockefeller](#) most notably. His oil companies still dominate the oil industry, and [fossil fuels](#) comprise about 85% of world energy production today. The process of extracting and using fossil fuels is environmentally disastrous. Rapid [global warming](#), mainly caused by burning fossil fuels, is one of the [greatest threats](#) that humanity faces today.

The West's [capitalistic ideology](#) has transformed a traditional deadly sin, [greed](#), into a virtue, and the [racketeering impulse](#) has guided the creation of *all* capitalistic empires. *Every* significant industry and profession is largely a self-serving racket, and the larger and more powerful the industry or profession is, the more it resembles an outright racket, something I discovered that the hard way during [my adventures](#). I participated in a significant effort to bring alternative energy to the marketplace. What happened to the venture that Dennis Lee headed is a [case study](#) of how alternative energy is suppressed. [Alternative energy](#) has been systematically suppressed, on a global scale, for the past century, and free energy technology has probably existed for a long time. Free energy would eliminate the energy industry, help heal the earth, increase humanity's standard of living by perhaps a few orders of magnitude, and could end the [Zero-Sum Game](#) that humanity has been playing for the past 10,000 years. [Tom Bearden](#) and friends are mounting the latest run at it. The extent to which they succeed will probably be directly proportional to the public support they receive. The exploitation of energy may exterminate the human species, but it does not have to be that way. If we wake up and begin caring, solving our problems is easy. If we stay asleep, we are doomed. The problem has a lot more to do with integrity than technology or intelligence. Personal integrity is [the world's scarcest commodity](#), and it needs to become more plentiful if humanity is to avoid its self-extinction. It is up to us.

A Brief Prehistory of Energy and Life on Earth

Ninety-three million miles away is the star my planet orbits. It is an average star, one of about 200 billion in its galaxy, placed on one of the galaxy's outer arms. Our galaxy is unremarkable, one of perhaps a trillion that are within range of today's telescopes. According to today's theories, our star has been burning for about 4.6 billion years, and will burn for seven billion more before it consumes its fuel and dies. As our star settled into its life, something happened on a tiny fragment that orbits it. That fragment - a mere mote in the cosmos - is nearly completely metallic, largely composed of iron, but on its surface a thin layer of lighter elements "rose" and settled. That layer is relatively as thick as an apple's skin, a layer that humanity calls home. Eight elements

- oxygen, silicon, aluminum, iron, calcium, sodium, potassium and magnesium - make up nearly 99% of the earth's crust. Some even lighter elements ride atop those elements, with an oxygen-hydrogen compound covering most of earth's surface, and nitrogen, oxygen and argon comprising 99.9% of the atmosphere. There are merely trace amounts of carbon, sulfur, chlorine, fluorine and some others, with most elements occurring in tiny amounts in the earth's crust.

Scientists have developed theories, partly based upon observations, which guess what [may have happened](#) a long time ago. The oxygen-hydrogen compound that blankets earth, known as water, would be a gas instead of a liquid, except for the peculiar way that [water molecules are attracted to each other](#), due to their electrical polarity. In the atmosphere is carbon dioxide, which makes up less than 0.04% of the atmosphere. However, if it were not there, helping to capture the sun's energy, earth's surface would [probably be about 10-15° F colder than today](#). The fortuitous properties of water and carbon dioxide helped set the stage for something apparently unique in our star system. Today, it is theorized that life [began more than three billion years ago on earth](#). For about three billion years, life was largely confined to unicellular organisms, which lived in the ocean. In order for life to exist, it needed energy, and from the earliest examples we know of, the sun's energy was captured to fuel that life.

According to today's understanding, stars are fusion reactors, mostly composed of hydrogen, the universe's simplest element. Hydrogen is fused into helium, the next simplest element, in a star's core, and a vast amount of energy is thereby given off. The processes of fusion and fission involve an atom's nucleus. When the fusion reaction occurs, energy is given off in the form of electromagnetic radiation (ER), called light when it occurs at particular wavelengths. Light is still an enigma to science, because it seems to be a wave at times and a particle at others. In its wave state, the length of the wave determines how much energy it carries. Radio waves are long waves of ER, and the energy they carry is relatively small. X-rays are short waves, and their relative energy is great. What is called light has a wavelength between those of radio waves and X-rays. The sun produces ER in a wide array of wavelengths (also known as frequencies; the longer the wavelength, the less the frequency, as the velocity is constant). Also, the sun shoots out electrons and other subatomic particles at an extremely high velocity.

If not for earth's atmosphere and magnetic field, its surface would be bombarded with high-energy ER and subatomic particles, and life as we know it would not exist. Earth, however, has a magnetic belt (called the Van Allen belt) and atmospheric layers such as the ozone layer that deflect and absorb much of the high-energy ER that the sun emits. Most of the sun's energy that hits earth's surface is in the visible spectrum of light. Although light acts as a wave, that wave comes in discrete "packets" known as quanta.

An atom is made of a nucleus orbited by electrons. The electrons orbit at varying distances from [the nucleus in "shells"](#), depending on the electrons' energy levels. That variable energy level of the electron shell is what makes life possible.

As life first came into existence on earth, whether through evolution or being "planted" here by our galactic neighbors or from beyond this dimension, there was a trick it "learned" that made life on earth possible: it captured the sun's energy. There is more than one way it happens, but they all fall under the category of photosynthesis (except for heat-synthesizing, subterranean bacteria). The chemistry is complicated, but in essence the photons of sunlight hit the chlorophyll in plant cells, and the electron shells absorb that energy. With that increased energy, the atom can form bonds with other atoms that it could not previously accomplish. Usually, the energy from photosynthesis allows a plant to combine water and carbon dioxide into a sugar known as glucose. Animals fuel their bodies with glucose. Glucose is a sugar, and is the simplest member of a class of substances known as carbohydrates. Other simple sugars are fructose and galactose. Through that captured sunlight energy more bonds can be formed, and glucose can bond with itself and other substances such as water to create more complicated sugars, such as sucrose, lactose and maltose. The bonding can become even more complicated to create complex carbohydrates such as starches and cellulose. Next to glucose, cellulose may be the most important carbohydrate as far as earthly life is concerned, because cellulose comprises the cell walls, and hence most of the structure, of plants. Without cellulose, there would not be trees, flowers, grass, or much of anything living beyond the oceans, and little in them.

A little less than [600 million years ago](#), there was a great leap of evolution. The three billion years of

microscopic organism evolution gave way to a myriad of complicated plant and animal life. Complex sea animals developed, with fish appearing about 500 million years ago. By 430 million years ago, land plants with vascular systems developed. Amphibians and insects appeared about 410 years ago, and by 360 million years ago, great fern forests had developed in the tropical heat. About 330 million years ago, reptiles made their appearance, with dinosaurs and mammals making their debut 240 million years ago, and birds appearing 205 million years ago. Flowering plants appeared about 135 million years ago. About 65 million years ago, [dinosaurs died out](#) and primates appeared. That is about the accepted story in scientific circles today, of course subject to revision, perhaps radical, as more evidence comes to light.

Less than 600 million years ago, when evolution took its great leap forward, the oceans teemed with life. The ocean bottom became the resting place for dead marine organisms, mainly plankton. Those seabeds became layered thicker with dead matter, and where conditions were favorable they eventually formed today's oil deposits ([Gold's theory](#) to the contrary). Beginning about 360 million years ago and continuing for about 70 million years, those fern forests initiated the [carboniferous period](#). Those fern forests probably created earth's coal deposits. With coal and oil, the oxygen was eventually released, as well as most of the hydrogen, leaving behind compounds rich in carbon. Carbon is the chemical basis for all life on earth, due to its unique properties, which [have to do with its electron shell](#). The eight electron outer shell of carbon has four electrons. Its half-empty or half-full electron shell is similar to hydrogen's, but carbon can create amazing bonding arrangements with other elements, forming long chains, and carbon atoms can make double and triple bonds with each other. There is an entire branch of chemistry devoted to carbon. On the first day of my organic chemistry class in 1977, my professor said that although the modern age is known by many names, for organic chemists the modern age would be known as the "age of waste." All those carbon compounds in coal and oil, with all of its complicated bonds, are a treasure trove of potential chemistry, and were probably created from the solar energy captured by photosynthesis. While burning them has powered the Industrial Revolution and today's world, organic chemists see it as an immense waste of a resource. Mining and burning it is about its crudest possible use.

Carbon, oxygen and hydrogen comprise most of living organisms. Nitrogen makes up 78% of earth's atmosphere. Nitrogen is the primary atmospheric gas because it is practically inert. Nitrogen needs temperatures in excess of 3000° F in order to react with other elements. Consequently, it almost never does. There is one major exception, however. The earliest organisms were bacteria, and bacteria are probably still [poorly understood by today's orthodox science](#). Bacteria are essential to all "higher" forms of life. Although nitrogen is generally inert on earth, bacteria are able to incorporate nitrogen into their chemical reactions, and nitrogen is the next most vital element to life. If bacteria did not capture nitrogen in its chemical reactions, life as we know it would not exist. Carbohydrates and fats are composed of carbon, hydrogen and oxygen and provide nearly all of life's fuel, but nitrogen is the essential element that makes DNA, proteins, enzymes and other vital chemicals possible. The human body is about 60% water. If the water is removed, about half of what remains is protein.

Bacteria continually take nitrogen from the atmosphere and combine it with other elements, such as hydrogen (ammonia is made of one nitrogen and three hydrogen atoms), in a process known as *nitrogen fixing*, and that captured nitrogen becomes incorporated into plants, through their roots. Animals eat plants, and that nitrogen becomes part of their chemistry. There are several "nitrogen cycles" in earth's ecosystems, with bacteria taking nitrogen from the atmosphere, and returning it (*denitrifying* bacteria do that) as they digest dead plant and animal material. As evolution continued, animals appeared that ate other animals. In "food chains," energy would cycle through life forms, with predators sitting atop those chains. There cannot be too many predators atop those energy pyramids. Predators are the rarest class of life forms, especially mammalian predators.

Over the eons, the sun's energy shined upon Earth, fueling earth's ecosystems. About 30% of the sun's energy that reaches earth is immediately reflected away by the atmosphere, clouds and earth's surface. The other 70% is radiated back into space more slowly, 90% of the 70% remainder is from the atmosphere radiating energy to space. The energy absorbed and more slowly radiated back to space is what makes air at the earth's surface average about 60° F., makes the rest of the earth's atmosphere as warm as it is, is the main cause of its circulation, and drives what is called the hydrological cycle, which is how water circulates through the earth. The sun's energy makes water evaporate from the earth's surface (mainly the oceans), form clouds, fall as precipitation, and on land circulates through our lakes, rivers and underground aquifers, leading back to the oceans, where the cycle begins anew. A tiny fraction of 1% (one-twentieth of 1%) of the

sun's energy is captured by photosynthesis.

That solar energy captured by photosynthesis is the basis for all life and all "wealth" on earth. In human terms, wealth is what sustains our lives and makes them more livable. In its simplest terms, wealth is food, and for the majority of humanity today, it remains that way. Getting enough food to eat is the primary preoccupation of most people, and it has been that way for humanity's entire journey on earth. Only recently, as humanity learned to mine coal and oil, have humans had to deal with obesity on a large scale, as the West does today. [More than half of all adults are overweight](#). That obesity is directly related to starving other humans, however. There are a little more than a billion each of overweight and underweight people on earth today, [and the relationship is a direct one](#).

There is far more than enough water on earth's surface to have entirely covered it with water. Fortunately, earth's crust has slight irregularities, and the crust poked up through the water in a few places, those high points forming the continents, covering about 28% of earth's surface. Earth does not orbit the sun in a circle, but in a slight ellipse. The earth also has an axis of rotation out of alignment of its plane of orbit, which causes the seasons. That axis of rotation wobbles and has changed over the eons, both relative to earth's surface and relative to its plane of orbit (called the ecliptic). Also, those bits of crust that poke up through the oceans have drifted across earth's surface, colliding with each other, breaking up and drifting apart. Ocean floors became mountain ranges, and vice versa. Ocean sediments and fern forests became buried, forming rock-like substances, containing the energy of that sunlight that was captured eons ago.

There are various theories regarding earth's climate changes, the most dramatic being the ice ages that have come and gone for billions of years, and when comets and other celestial objects have slammed into earth and released energies that make nuclear weapons no more than children's toys. Changing rotational axes and orbital variations, drifting continents, variations in how much energy the sun gives off, possible interstellar dust clouds and the like have been proposed for earth's variable climate, and all may play their role. The eleven-year sunspot cycle is an obvious variable, and the lack of observed sunspots during the late 17th century correlated strikingly with the heart of the "[Little Ice Age](#)" from about 1430 to 1850.

In the latest ice ages, they have predominantly happened in the northern hemisphere, related to the fact that the Arctic Ocean is virtually landlocked. The Pleistocene Ice Age began about 1.6 million years ago, and the latest interglacial period began about twelve thousand years ago.

As life on earth evolved, incredibly complicated and diverse ecosystems developed. Bacteria and other microscopic organisms led to complex plants and animals, and biology became increasingly "sophisticated." Fish evolved more complicated and sophisticated biology, such as in fins and respiration systems. Plants became more complicated and sophisticated, in both forms of growth and reproduction. Land animals became vastly more diverse and complicated. Larger animals learned to fly, and warm-blooded animals appeared. Awesome forms of symbiosis developed between plants, animals and microscopic organisms, where entire ecosystems evolved from the life form interactions. Flowering plants appeared about 135 years ago, with a novel reproductive strategy. Flowers are attractive to insects, birds and other animals, and as they feed from flowers, they spread pollen. Fruit forms from pollinated flowers, and is largely comprised of sugars, from which animals can easily extract energy. Animals in turn [spread the seeds within the fruit](#). Many animals adapted to take advantage of fruit's energy. Producing fruit is a great concentration of a plant's available energy, something done far more easily in tropical regions than otherwise, with the tropics' greater available energy.

Today, scientists think that dinosaurs eventually evolved to be endothermic, which means that they regulated their body temperatures. Mammals further enhanced the endothermic process, and their fur allowed them to survive in colder areas better than exothermic animals, and therefore less dependent on direct solar energy, as today's reptiles, amphibians and fish are.

Primates appeared about the time dinosaurs became extinct. The opposable thumb of primates allowed for manipulative abilities previously unseen on earth. Primates were originally tree dwelling, living in tropical forests, and thumbs probably evolved in response to the arboreal environment, to make navigating branches and eating fruit and other tree foods easier.

With molecular biology coming into its own, the analysis of DNA and genes has provided evidence

previously unavailable. In the United States, DNA testing is proving the innocence of many people who have been on death row, wrongly convicted of murder. DNA research has also determined that humanity's closest biological cousin is the chimpanzee, followed by gorillas and orangutans. More than 98% of a chimpanzee's DNA is identical to human DNA. Although a global effort is trying hard to [suppress all evidence of extraterrestrial influence](#), the day is probably not far off when it is acknowledged that earth is not the universe's only place with intelligent life, and that humanoid life on earth has probably had plenty of help from its galactic neighbors. The various theories of evolution are due for some major revisions once the extraterrestrial/inter-dimensional influence is acknowledged, as well as the role of consciousness. Still, such a revelation will not completely invalidate evolutionary theory. It will simply make it more complete, and will probably eliminate the [materialism](#) from it, something long overdue.

Today's human race probably appeared first in Africa, the first erect, large-brained protohumans appearing more than two million years ago. Today's great ape diet is about 65% live fruit, and the rest is blossoms, seeds, leaves, insects and a slight amount of animal flesh (although the most carnivorous part of the mountain gorilla's diet is insects). Humans, as with all animals, [are designed to eat living food](#), and live fruit should ideally comprise more than half of the human diet. It does not, however, and that is because of the human journey and today's impoverished human diet, as it migrated past its natural range in the tropics.

Those early protohumans are the first animals that began making tools, and those surviving to be analyzed by modern anthropologists are made of stone. Early stone implements were crude, but worked better than hands and strength. The first stone tools obviously made more food available, crushing nuts and exposing difficult-to-reach digestible plant parts. Also, early stone tools probably allowed for more effective scavenging of animals, such as cracking open bones to eat the marrow. Those were the first energy-enhancing inventions of intelligent apes. Over the millennia, more effective tools and uses of them were invented. Bones, wood and other objects were incorporated into early tool-making activities.

The rise of human beings was dependent on three factors. The first was common to all life: the sun's energy. The second was the opposable thumb, which appeared about 65 million years ago, and it created a level of manipulative ability that no other animal had. The third was increasing intelligence, which used that manipulative ability to make tools, and thereby harness more energy than other creatures had available. The requisite intelligence began appearing about two million years ago.

Originally, those early innovations allowed humanoid apes to increase the available food energy in their local environment. It is thought that early protohumans followed African predators such as lions, scavenging from their kills, competing with other scavengers. That relationship is probably why early protohumans left Africa, following the African predators as they migrated from Africa about two million years ago. Humans are slow, weak animals, and could do little hunting on their own at first. Potential prey easily eluded them, and were difficult to kill with the available means. When early protohumans followed those African predators, they largely expanded their range across Asia, staying in the tropical and near-tropical zones, which were similar to their native environment. The problem, however, with moving away from the tropics was that the growing season would not be year-round, and that essential fruit would not be available. As humans followed the African predators, they began modifying their diets, eating less fruit and other plant material, and eating more animal flesh. Although humans have been able to adapt to a more flesh-based diet, it came at considerable cost. Protein constitutes half the dehydrated human body, but the consumption of the amino acids needed to create protein was largely done for structure and chemistry, not fuel. Protein provides about ten percent of the human diet's calories today, although mother's milk is only a few percent protein, when humans do their greatest body-building. As humans became more carnivorous, they began using animal flesh for fuel, not to provide amino acids and nutrients. Humans [are far from ideal carnivores](#). Many serious health problems, including nearly [all epidemic diseases](#), have resulted from humanity's carnivorous ways.

As protohumans continued evolving, their range expanding across Asia and leaving the tropics, they invented means to survive. As they ranged to colder climates, they learned to wear the fur of other mammals, either found dead or killed by enterprising protohumans.

At least 500,000 years ago, protohumans created their first truly great invention, which exploited energy in a way never done before: harnessing fire. By 400,000 years ago, artificially created fire was a regular part of early human life. Wood is largely made from cellulose, which is formed from the bonds created by linking water with carbon dioxide. Wood is mainly made of air and water. When it is burned, the energy captured

by photosynthesis is released, and the water and carbon dioxide are released back to the environment. Ashes are made from the minerals (mainly metals) that the plant extracted from the soil as it grew. By harnessing fire, early humans could exploit the sun's energy of hundreds of years, not just what fell to earth that year. Fire provided warmth, protection from predators, and fire was the first food processor. Again, that invention exacted a great cost, while it allowed for "progress."

About 100,000 years ago, modern humans appeared on the evolutionary scene. They probably first appeared in Africa.^[1] Anthropologists have identified quite a few protohuman species, appearing and disappearing. When modern humans appeared, the Neanderthal people were well established, but died out. All protohuman "competitors" eventually died out (whether "naturally" or by extraterrestrial and/or inter-dimensional intervention is an open question for me), leaving *Homo sapiens sapiens* alone on the human scene.

Ice sheets advanced and retreated in the northern hemisphere during the evolutionary journey of early humans. As near as anthropologists can tell today, about 40,000 years ago, stone tools took a leap forward in sophistication, and humans were able to refine the art of survival and exploit opportunities previously unavailable. About 40,000 years ago, humans greatly expanded their range. They probably invented the first boats then, allowing them to expand their range to Australia and the New World. They also refined hunting to a science, and the extinction of large animals in Australia and the New World seems to roughly coincide with when humans showed up. Human hunters probably drove many large animals species to extinction. Changing interglacial climates and ecosystems surely had their effect, but the over-kill hypothesis is persuasive.^[2]

In historical times, humans migrating to islands such as New Zealand, Hawaii and Madagascar quickly drove many native bird (and large animals, such as a pygmy hippopotamus on Madagascar) species to extinction. When Europeans took over the world, they also drove island human populations to extinction, such as the [Taino of the Caribbean](#) and the [aboriginal inhabitants of Tasmania](#).^[3] What history has seen when humans migrated to islands was probably a microcosm of what happened when humans migrated to Australia and the New World. Although there remains plenty of controversy about the megafauna extinctions in North America, because retreating ice sheets changed the topography and vegetation, South America and Australia did not have ice sheets, and experienced similar megafauna extinctions. The appearance of humans appears to be the most significant variable related to those extinctions.^[4]

The destruction of large mammals probably made for the golden age of hunter-gatherers, and lasted for many human generations. Humankind became a superpredator, excelling at killing and eating anything that moved, and while they hunted large animals to extinction, they also began killing each other. Today's hunter-gatherer people are proportionally more violent than civilized peoples. Although it can be hazardous to extrapolate today's observations to human culture 40,000 years ago, becoming a superpredator also created the means to prey upon each other, a situation nearly unknown in the animal world.

The bow-and-arrow was invented about 25,000 years ago, in the vicinity of Europe, a couple thousand years before pottery appeared in the same region. Pottery allowed for better food preservation and preparation. Fire, clothing, refined tools, weapons, shelter, boats, pottery and the like contributed to rising human lifestyles outside its natural range. It all had to do with the capture of energy, either reducing the loss of body heat, as with clothes and shelter, exploiting new sources of energy, as with hunting large animals and burning wood, or preserving digestible energy, as with pottery and other food preservation and storage techniques.

Early Civilization, Energy and the Zero-Sum Game

The hunter-gatherer lifestyle allowed humanity to migrate to earth's furthest reaches. By 10,000 years ago, there were about 4 million humans on earth, and most of the easily hunted big animals had been rendered extinct. The time scale of those events is vast in comparison to a human life, and relatively rapid events on the geologic or evolutionary timescale happened with few, if any, humans perceiving the trends. The process was far from uniform, but about ten thousand years ago the hunter-gatherer lifestyle was no longer sustainable on a global scale. The [Malthusian limit](#) had been reached. Relatively little wild vegetation provides the energy that humans can digest, particularly in lands beyond the tropics, with their seasons. In at least three separate places, China, the "Fertile Crescent" and Mesoamerica, [humans began domesticating plants and animals](#).

The plant parts that can provide human-digestible energy, mainly in the form of sugars, starches and fats, were largely found in the fruits, seeds and roots of certain plants. Today, it is thought that women began domesticating plants, as an adjunct to their gathering activities (it was not easy dragging along infants on hunts, and men were faster and stronger, better suited for hunting activity). Women experimented with the plants they gathered, and eventually bred plants to possess larger parts that humans could digest, especially seeds and roots. Animals also were domesticated, especially mammals that could digest cellulose: cattle, sheep, horses, goats, llamas, etc. Women also probably domesticated the first animals, breastfeeding infant mammals that had been taken from their parents (that were probably killed by humans). Large tracts of land could not support plants that could provide human crops, due to climate, geology, elevation and the like, but could support grasses and other cellulose-rich plants. Animals that could digest such fare were domesticated, expanding the energy resources that humans could exploit. Those animals were exploited in many ways. Horses and llamas became a source of transportation. Cattle became a source of meat and leather, and could also be put to work pulling a plow. Sheep and llamas could provide heat-conserving wool, as well as meat.

In the Fertile Crescent region, people began consuming the milk of cattle and goats. Today, [70% of the world's adult humans cannot effectively digest milk products](#). Those who can, however, have generally descended from herders who ate milk products, so there has been a slight evolutionary adaptation, although eating milk products is far from ideal. Many allergies and respiratory problems are related to milk product consumption.

Earth cannot support that many millions of people using the hunter-gatherer lifestyle, because of digestible energy. The domestication of plants and animals allowed humans to greatly increase their population densities. Fossil evidence shows, however, that humans became smaller when they [abandoned their hunter-gatherer lifestyles for domesticated life](#). The domestication revolution began with humans having poorer health than they formerly enjoyed. When people were hunter-gatherers, they were always on the move, as no place could provide them the calories they needed for long. Hence, possessions were minimal, largely limited to clothing, gathering and food processing tools, and weapons. Human social conditions were egalitarian, with very little hierarchy, as hunters lived in small bands, traveling the land. As human populations filled up the available land, the bands became competitive, and territories were carved out. People venturing into another band's territory could get killed. It is theorized that somewhere in the misty beginnings of civilization, instead of killing a hunter from a rival band, the hunter was compelled to serve the band that captured him. It was the beginning of slavery, and may have been [the beginning of civilization](#). Harnessing the energy of others quite possibly began with the domestication of plants and animals, as it created the "agricultural surplus" which has fueled all civilizations.[\[5\]](#)

Harnessing human energy can be more productive than harnessing animal energy, because humans possess high intelligence and hands. Draft animals can digest the cellulose that humans cannot, but do not have the intelligence or manipulative ability of humans, although they are much stronger. Also, draft animals are edible, whereas no culture has ever eaten people as a regular food source, at least that anthropologists are aware of.[\[6\]](#) Slaves ate food that could feed the masters, but their intelligence and manipulative ability could be put to tasks that animals could not perform. However, slaves could harbor notions of freedom that would be difficult to stifle. Brute force could keep the slaves subservient, but in the long run would be difficult to maintain. Consequently, methods to teach slaves to accept their condition were implemented from slavery's very beginning, and may have been the beginning of ideological indoctrination. If slaves accept their condition, they are easier to control, which is partly why people born into slavery, never knowing freedom, were easier to keep as slaves. In one form or another, such indoctrination to convince the exploited to accept their position continues to the present day. Without energy however, intelligence and manipulative ability count for nothing.

About 40,000 years ago, as increasing technology led to the human superpredator, humanity began altering earth's environment. They ascended to the top of the food chain, killing off large mammals that had no or few natural predators, and they killed competing predators, as well as all other digestible animals. Wiping out other animals created ecological dislocations, which has been a part of evolutionary activity for eons. However, human intelligence and manipulative ability allowed humans to take over earth's ecosystems as no other animal ever had before. Killing off large mammals and competing predators was probably humanity's earliest large-scale alteration of earth's ecosystems. Such disruptions can lead to population explosions and collapses of animals that were preyed upon, or depended on those missing creatures.

The most significant early use of technology to begin creating the human-dominated ecosystem was probably the introduction of fire as a vegetation-clearing tool. When [Europeans first came to the New World](#) during the Columbian era, the natives of North America's eastern woodlands used fire annually to clear the forest of undergrowth, creating an environment that was conducive to foraging deer and other preferable animals. There is tantalizing evidence that the Great Plains of North America may have been the world's largest pasture, an environment created by millennia of Indians burning the plains, to create an environment that encouraged bison, elk, and deer to flourish. When the diseases and violence of invading Europeans [wiped out the natives](#), woodlands quickly reclaimed the plains.[\[7\]](#)

Burning the vegetation was apparently a sustainable practice, although it altered the landscape immensely, and drove out certain species in favor of others. Far more significantly on a global scale, humans began cultivating the earth to raise domesticated crops. Sunlight that went into making the cellulose in trees was diverted to creating sugars, starches, proteins and fats in domestic crops, as the forests were cleared for crop production, and pastures for domestic animals. The trees were also used for fuel, shelter and other civilized amenities. Deforestation accompanied the earliest agriculture. Earth's [most deforested places](#) are where "civilization" first appeared on a large scale. Forest ecosystems are the greatest soil makers, and wiping out forests has also wiped out soils, not only by erosion. Trees are the greatest circulators of water in ground-based ecosystems, drawing water through the roots and sending it to the atmosphere through their leaves, thus creating a "suction." Rainwater can percolate into the soil, in a great cycle that ecosystems depend on. Killing off the trees killed off that circulation, leading to rising groundwater and eventually soil salination. Without healthy soil, there are no crops. Forests gave way to farms, and farms gave way to deserts. That has been civilization in action, as human methods destroy the very environment that supports life.[\[8\]](#)

In some places, such as the land between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers, diverted water made the land capable of raising crops, at least for a time. Deforestation and irrigation had long-term harmful effects, generally through soil destruction and salination. Rivers that ran clearly before the domestication revolution became clouded with silt, which was soil washed away downstream from deforested land. Creating artificial environments to extract more of the sun's energy carried with it a great environmental cost. In more tropical lands, the soils usually had less organic material in them than in temperate lands, and early agriculture in the Fertile Crescent was disastrous. Sumeria, the world's earliest known civilization, began having serious [soil salination problems](#) within two thousand years of establishment. By 2100 BC, [Ur](#) had abandoned wheat cultivation due to soil salinity, and wheat only amounted to 2% of Sumerian crops. In 1990, Iraq, the seat of civilization, imported 70% of its food. The people of the Nile river valley successfully engaged in agriculture for thousands of years, but largely because silt from upstream deforestation fertilized the land in the annual flood.

As civilization began forming around the world, technology kept increasing in its sophistication. People began working metals. Today, it is thought that copper may have been the first worked metal, in about 10,000 BC. It was first used artistically. Thousands of years later, it is thought, [gold working began](#). Gold was only useful for artwork, because it was so soft and pretty. It later became currency, because it was so rare. All early use of each prehistorically used metal seems to have been artistic. Practical uses were developed later. The primitive fire pit became the hearth, and people eventually created sufficient temperatures to separate metal from other elements in the ore, and metal smelting began. Copper is thought to have been the first metal smelted, more than 6000 years ago. Copper has a melting point of nearly 2000°F, and until humans created high enough temperatures in hearths, copper was obtained from discovered nuggets.

Copper is a relatively soft metal, and although [copper was made into weaponry](#) as early as 5000 BC, it has serious limitations. Bronze is an alloy of copper and other metals, and when copper-smelting cultures learned to alloy other metals with copper, notably tin, then that culture graduated from its Copper Age to its Bronze Age. Bronze is quite sturdy when compared to copper, and weapons and tools made from bronze were superior. The Bronze Age began in Sumeria by about 3500 BC, and the plow was invented about five hundred years later. For about two thousand years, plows, tools and weapons were made of bronze in the Fertile Crescent region. Plow agriculture is great at creating soil conditions favorable for crop production, but also leads to rapid soil erosion, largely from rain and wind. As agriculture and warfare flourished in the Fertile Crescent region, technological advance also marched along, with the wheel being invented in about 3500 BC, and Sumeria became the world's first literate society in about 3000 BC. Written history then began.

With civilization in the Fertile Crescent region, social stratification began. The agricultural surplus allowed for human specialization. Professions developed, with soldiers, priests, rulers, craftsmen, medical doctors and others appearing. Much of what is “bad” about the human species came with the baggage of becoming civilized. Along with specialization and innovation came classes of people who dealt with ideas. Ideologies developed, and the rise of civilized ideology often dealt with justifying the positions of the new elite classes, and those they exploited. The Zero-Sum Game appeared, although it was not called that at the time. The Zero-Sum Game, in the way I use it, is the idea that the only way to improve one’s life was by exploiting others. Jared Diamond and others call the transition to civilization the journey from [egalitarianism to kleptocracy](#). In one form or another, kleptocratic ideologies have survived to the present day. [Capitalism](#) and nationalism, especially the [American](#) variety, are little more than justifications for enslaving the world’s people. The West also plunders their natural resources, as today’s [genocide in Iraq](#) makes painfully clear. In his *Politics and the English Language*, George Orwell wrote,

“In our time, political speech and writing are largely the defense of the indefensible.”^[9]

Little has changed since Orwell’s time. Not all ideologists attempted to justify exploitation. Jesus and Buddha could be considered ideologists (or even anti-ideologists, as they challenged their day’s religious ideology). [Adam Smith](#) and Karl Marx both created economic ideologies that attempted to assist humanity. Those men had enlightening things to say, but the establishments erected in their names often had little to do with them, even turning their visions upside down, as the establishments’ main concerns were amassing and maintaining power (another energy concept), as full of [self-servers](#) as they were, as all earthly establishments have proven to be.

As humanity kept refining its ability to manipulate its environment, the blast furnace and charcoal were created. Higher temperatures were achieved. In about [1400 BC](#), iron was first smelted in the Hittite culture, which occupied today’s Turkey. Iron has a melting point of nearly 2800°F, and early blast furnaces achieved the requisite temperature. Iron was more available than the relatively scarce tin that was required to make the day’s bronze, and its ability to hold an edge made iron a superior metal for tools and weapons. The Hittites did not maintain their technological advantage for long, and by 1200 BC, about the time the Hittite Empire fell, iron weapons were appearing throughout today’s Middle East. By about 1000 BC, the Celtic culture was making iron swords, and they came to dominate most of Western Europe. At about the same time, the Greeks learned how to create heat-treated iron weapons. Warfare became a bloodier affair when iron weapons appeared. Iron plows and tools also allowed agriculture to spread to lands previously considered too challenging to exploit. Warring empires became the theme of early history, a theme that continues to this day. Various cultures became intensely militaristic, such as Sparta’s and Assyria’s.

The struggles and hierarchies were all about securing and consuming energy, and the agricultural and pastoral surplus was the basis of it all. Hearths, kilns and furnaces were ways of refining the exploitation of energy to gain better methods of manipulating the environment and each other, to gain further energy security. Slavery was about exploiting human energy, intelligence and manipulative ability. In various wars, the idea could simply be exterminating the human inhabitants and taking their land and other wealth. The Jews secured their Promised Land by outright genocide of its inhabitants, with their God’s blessing (and demand), with Joshua’s army annihilating not only all of Jericho’s inhabitants, [but also all their livestock, and seizing all their metal](#). That was also the logic behind the [European/American “settling” of North America](#), where they stole what may have been the [world’s richest continent](#) from its inhabitants, while annihilating them. Even today, Christian sites on the Internet serve up religious ideology to justify Joshua’s annihilation of Jericho’s inhabitants.

By about 1000 BC, humanity began exploiting fossil fuel, as coal was used in China to make copper coins. Before the Western Roman Empire fell, they began using coal, as evidence from Britain has suggested.

Empires rose and fell throughout the “known” world, i.e., Europe, northern Africa and the Fertile Crescent. Those ideologies that began with civilization became quite abstract, especially the religious ones, and Egypt

was the first place that gold mining was practiced on a large scale. The Egyptians had a sun god religion, with gold reserved for royal use, as its symbol. The economic logic of the day demanded that [slaves be worked to death to obtain it](#). No Egyptian slaves returned from those early gold mines. Their bones littered mines discovered by modern archeologists. Human energy, intelligence and manipulative ability were put to that use, and the fruit of those labors became seen in early civilization as the universal measure of wealth. Gold became the ultimate currency. It was really a symbol, not the real thing, but many early civilizations became mesmerized by it, throwing away true wealth in pursuit of its symbol.

By 600 BC, Greek agricultural practices severely eroded the land, and in 560 BC [a bounty was given to Greek farmers to plant olive trees](#), the only productive crop that could be raised on hills that had been eroded to the limestone bedrock.

Eventually the Roman Empire made its ascendancy, and the environmental deterioration of the Mediterranean region accelerated. As Rome conquered its neighbors, Italy and Sicily were quickly deforested to meet Rome's needs. After Rome conquered Carthage, today's Libya and vicinity was forced into becoming a big farm. There was no single event that signified what happened, but centuries of those practices rendered Libya the desert nation it is today. Rome helped deforest the Middle East, the cedars of Lebanon becoming nearly extinct. Only 10% of the forest remains that used to run from Morocco to Afghanistan, and much is desert today. The land's ability to sustain life was destroyed in humanity's quest for usable energy. [Whales were extinct in the Mediterranean](#) by the time the Western Roman Empire collapsed. Early civilization's methods of extracting useable energy were not sustainable and often cruel. Little has fundamentally changed.

Rome was the ancient world's most refined practitioner of "Rape and Plunder Economics." Exploiting the peoples and lands of the continually growing empire was the whole point of the Roman Empire, as with all empires. It does not matter if it is olive oil, furs, gold, timber, wheat, fish or other goods; it nearly always boils down to energy.

Not all energy-exploitation systems were so hard on the immediate environment. The world's most sophisticated agricultural system, the paddy system, was developed in China [around 500 BC](#), and spread across Southeast Asia during the next millennium. It was a more sustainable system than dry farming, and its nitrogen-fixing feature, as well as the ability to recycle a great deal of decaying animal and plant matter, allowed for greatly increased crop yields. Southeast Asia's human population always increased to the maximum available yield of the agricultural system (the Malthusian dynamic), leaving most people on the brink of starvation most of the time. The chinampas system of the Aztecs was similar to the paddy system, helping keep [Tenochtitlán](#) about the world's cleanest city, as human waste from the city helped fertilize the chinampas. The peoples along the Andes range of South America created an amazing sustenance system in a hostile environment, through crop experimentation (Machu Picchu may have partly been an agricultural laboratory, testing crops for high-altitude agriculture[\[10\]](#)), terracing, irrigation, high-altitude storage, fertilizer and other means.

No empire lasts forever, because either the imperial activities exterminate the imperial subjects, as [Spain's short-lived plunder](#) in the New World demonstrated, or the environment becomes so degraded that it cannot support human life any longer, as happened in [Sumeria](#) (and neighboring empires invade and conquer declining empires), or the empire's victims rise up from within, overthrowing the imperial overlords (usually after the empire has already severely declined). *All* earthly empires are primarily exploitative, and they all had ideologues who conjured justifications for the exploitation. In the earliest days, the rationales were often religious. Religious rationales exist to the present day (early 2002), as the United States, the [world's first truly global empire](#), is targeting Islamic people, with the current, [unelected, "god-fearing" American president](#) calling the latest "[war on terror](#)" a "Crusade," just as Roman Catholic popes used to do. Religious rationales largely gave way to other ones, such as racial (Europe's [plundering of Africa and the New World](#) being apt examples), social, ethnic, political, economic and "[humanitarian](#)," etc. What *all* those rationales really did, however, was justify exploitation and violence in order to secure the energy of lands and peoples. They were *all* variations on might makes right, and different ways of playing the Zero-Sum Game.

The Rise of Europe and Energy Exploitation

When the Western Roman Empire fell in the 5th century AD, Europe reverted back to a primarily agrarian state and entered what are called the Dark Ages. The Eastern Roman Empire, however, flourished, and the rise of Islam in the 7th century was a cultural awakening. Europe became backward, compared to the Middle East. “Barbarians” who joined the Western Roman armies became the rulers of Dark Ages Europe. Visigothic kings ruled today’s Spain (until the Muslim invasion of 711) and parts of France. Frankish kings ruled over the parts of today’s France, Belgium, Germany and Switzerland. Anglo-Saxons invaded the British Isles, and the Ostrogoths invaded Italy. Carolingian kings from today’s Austria eventually wrested the throne from the Frankish line, the most famous being Charlemagne, who in 800 tried recreating the union of Church and State that characterized the late Western Roman Empire. His attempt to recreate the Western Roman Empire failed, but his empire became the direct ancestor of today’s France and Germany. Around 800, Vikings began invading continental Europe and the British Isles from Scandinavia. Vikings also invaded and conquered the Slavic peoples of Eastern Europe, establishing Russia and adopting Byzantine Christianity. The Normans descended from Vikings who settled in today’s France, and the invasion of 1066 established their rule in England.

The Catholic Church dominated Europe, owning about a quarter of its land. It created a religious monopoly over Western Europe, and the [first Crusade](#) that had its bloody climax in Jerusalem in 1096 is considered Europe’s first united act, with knights and peasants from France, Germany, Italy and England marching to the Holy Land via Constantinople. As a warm-up for the First Crusade, the Christian armies perpetrated the first great European Jew slaughters, in today’s France and Germany. Slaughtering Jews became a European sport from that time forward. In 1056, the Christian “Reconquest” of Spain from the Moorish rulers began, not reaching its completion until 1492. Europe became a milieu of tension between Church and state, serf and lord, Christian and non-Christian, and constantly warring states. Warfare became the European way of life for the next millennium, and technological advances were often devoted to weaponry and warfare.

With historical trends, there is interplay of culture, environment, economics, politics, technology and other factors. The [soul age](#) of the studied cultures should also be taken into account. The materialistic West has yet to discover this. About the time Christian armies began “reconquering” the Iberian Peninsula, Europe entered its High Middle Ages. Cities are devices that concentrate energy. Every city survives by exploiting its hinterland, with the agricultural surplus sustaining the cities. There is no exception to that rule in world history. City dwellers, being freed from agricultural duties, then learned specialized skills, and Europe’s great period of city building was the High Middle Ages. Paris was rebuilt after the Viking invasions, and Notre Dame Cathedral, for instance, began construction in 1163. The Romans founded London, with the population declining when Roman rule ended. It was not until the Norman invasion in 1066 that London began growing into the city it is today. Florence began its rise to prominence in the late 1000s. Munich was founded in 1158. Germanic peoples began invading Slavic Eastern Europe. Accordingly, northern and central Europe began its great age of deforestation. About 75% of northern and central Europe was deforested during the medieval period, and it accelerated after 1050.[\[11\]](#) Today, only about 25% of that forest remains. The trees provided fuel, building material and made land available for crops and pastures. Marshes were drained, and nearly everything was domesticated that could be. New plow technology enabled exploitation of lands previously unavailable for cultivation. By 1200 however, all the good land was under the plow, and increasingly marginal lands were exploited, with the resultant environmental devastation that such methods always bring.

From the earliest days of civilization, the agricultural surplus allowed the elite to pursue luxury items, indulging their senses and egos, usually at the great expense of others. The pharaohs [working their slaves to death in Egypt’s gold mines](#) is an early example. Conspicuous wealth display and consumption has been a characteristic of the elites of probably *all* societies for *all of history*. In Europe, obesity became a sign of wealth. Early humans stole the fur of their fellow mammals, taking advantage of its heat-conserving ability, and as Europeans became more affluent, fashion became a factor.[\[12\]](#) The fur supply and markets were originally local, but as it became a business, fur centers developed, such as the one at Kiev. By 1240, when the Mongol hordes destroyed Kiev, there was hardly a fur-bearing animal to be found in the surrounding valley. Fur-bearing animals were largely driven to extinction in Europe by the 16th century, and the last untrapped region was exploited: Siberia. The demand for fur drove the Russians to expand eastward, eventually to California. The early allure of northern North America for Europe was the fur trade. Beginning on the Atlantic side of North America, the fur trade largely exterminated fur-bearing animals east of the Mississippi

River by 1800, and the European fur rush met, coming from both directions, in the Pacific Northwest. The demand for fur finally circled the globe. A great deal was simply for fashion.

Northern and Central Europe had an advantage over the Fertile Crescent, Middle East and Mediterranean region in that its soils contained more organic matter, and were more resilient than those more southerly soils. Nevertheless, Europe will look like those southern desert lands one day, if the current methods of extracting environmental energy continue their use. That plunder of Europe's lands resulted in a great increase in human population, growing from about 36 million in 1000 to 80 million in 1300. Also, the world's climate was relatively warm from 900 to about 1200, allowing agriculture on lands previously unsuited for it.

European technology began advancing again with the rise of European cities, as did new social institutions. Armor began improving during the High Middle Ages. The fully armored knight, charging on his horse with his lance under his arm, came into being during the 11th century. Crossbows began improving, to overcome the better armor. Crusades became a European constant after the first one in 1096. In order to preserve its religious monopoly, Pope Innocent III declared a Crusade on France to wipe out [Catharism](#) in the early 1200s, which killed about one million people, and was Europe's first great religious war.

The Chinese invented and used gunpowder, but only for firecrackers, and used it several hundred years before Europeans did. Gunpowder began to be used in European warfare just before the Black Death epidemic of the 1340s. Gunpowder was a way to get an explosive *burst of energy*, in order to kill more effectively.

Europe's High Middle Ages, which ended during the 1300s, were partly made possible by a global warming trend (making more *energy* available) that lasted from about 900 to the late 1200s, peaking between 1100 and 1250.[\[13\]](#) It was a great period of deforestation, agriculture and population explosion. By 1300, all the easily cultivated land was under the plow, marginal lands were being exploited, and earth began cooling. The good times were over, and Europe was at its Malthusian limit. Europe constantly hovered on the brink of famine. In 1314 a major famine hit Europe, lasting until 1317. Northern Europeans ate cats and dogs during that famine. As is typical in history, when the pressures of lack of *available energy* (hunger) are keenly felt, people become violent. France and England began their Hundred Years' War in 1337, fighting over control of land. In the midst of the fighting and starving came the plague.

The Black Death probably originated in China, and swept across Asia, via the trade routes, hitting Europe in 1347. It is estimated that it killed between a quarter and a third of all those in its path, with estimates of up to half of Europe dying off. Europeans took vengeance on Jews, lepers and other social outcasts for "bringing the plague," and tens of thousands died from mob violence. Art became obsessed with death. Works depicting the *danse macabre* made their appearance. The four horsemen of the apocalypse were riding during those years, and the fourteenth century was one of unending calamity in Europe.[\[14\]](#) When the century came to a close with another visit of the plague in 1399, Europe's population may have been as low as half of what it had been in 1300.

Gradually, Europe's population grew, and recovered to its 1300 levels during the 1500s. A cultural awakening, which eventually became known as the Renaissance, began in the late 1300s in northern Italy's city-states. Probably the most significant Renaissance outcome was the advent of humanism and the eventual undermining of Roman Catholic authority. The Cathars formed the first threat to Catholic religious hegemony in Europe, and the cultural awakening of the Renaissance eventually brought forth Martin Luther's Ninety-Five Theses in 1517. Concurrent with that cultural awakening was the advent of the "Little Ice Age," which lasted from about 1430 to 1850. Winters became severe in Europe, and growing seasons shortened, with glaciers growing, rivers freezing over and Europe continually living on the cusp of disaster.

The British Isles are an illustrative microcosm of what Europe eventually did to the world. The British Isles have been the scene of successive invasions. The Cro-Magnon and Neanderthal people lived there during the last ice age, and when that ice age ended about 12,000 years ago, the British Isles became islands, separated from mainland Europe. Iberian people settled the British Isles by 3000 BC and farmed the land. The Picts migrated to Scotland in about 1000 BC, and to Ireland in 200 AD. During the first millennium BC, the Celtic people overran Western Europe and also invaded the British Isles, displacing/absorbing the Iberian and Pictish peoples. The Picts battled the Romans, who invaded and conquered England in 54 BC. [Hadrian's Wall](#) began construction in 122 AD, to keep the Picts of Scotland out of England. When the Western

Roman Empire collapsed, the Germanic Anglo-Saxon peoples next invaded the British Isles. Beginning around 800 AD, the Vikings began invading the British Isles and northern continental Europe. The Vikings drove the Irish from the seas, and the Irish were never again a seafaring people.[\[15\]](#) They also settled in northern France and became the Normans (from “Norsemen”). The Normans invaded the British Isles in 1066, setting up the rule of Norman kings in England. Those events led to the Hundred Years’ War, and nearly continual war with France for centuries.

The British Isles were steeped in invasion and warfare. Also, all non-human competitors for energy were driven from the scene, beginning with competing predators. By 900 AD, the brown bear was nearly extinct in the British Isles. In 1486, the last wolf was sighted in England. The wolf was last sighted in Wales in 1576, and the last one in Scotland in 1743. With competing predators exterminated, attention turned to competitors for crops. In 1533, the English Parliament passed a law requiring churches to have nets to catch crows and other birds. In 1566, churches were authorized to pay a bounty on a wide array of birds and mammals. In 1668, John Worlidge’s calendar demonstrated the English attitude toward animals that were “harmful” to agriculture. In February, killing all snails, frogs and tadpoles was the task. In June, it was destroying ants, and in July it was killing wasps and flies.[\[16\]](#) The crane became extinct in Britain during the 1500s, as did the beaver. There were walrus on the Thames as late as 1456. The great auk, which once blanketed North Atlantic Islands, and was the Northern Hemisphere’s version of the penguin, began being hunted in the 1500s for food, and was rendered extinct in 1844. The global [whale rush](#) also began in the 1500s, nearly rendering extinct what is possibly earth’s only other sentient species.

England was largely deforested by the 1500s, and then Elizabethan England needed ships to [join the global empire game](#) that Europe was beginning to play. England’s solution was to [invade Ireland](#) and chop down its forests to build its navy. Ireland has yet to recover its forest. All these activities can be seen as involved with gaining/preserving energy by using trees for fuel and structure, using that newly denuded land to raise crops, killing off all animal competitors for that crop energy, and consuming energy by eating all those animals.

The Carboniferous Period likely laid down great coal deposits in what became Northern and Central Europe, North America, and eastern Asia. Europeans began mining that *great source of energy* during the 13th century. Coal provided household heat, fuel for blacksmiths, and eventually powered the Industrial Revolution. Coal is a rocklike substance, and burning coal not only produced carbon dioxide and water, but coal also contained sulfur and other elements.

Before the British Isles were completely deforested, coal began replacing wood as fuel. Coal smoke from the local vicinity drove Queen Eleanor from Nottingham Castle in 1257. By 1307, coal burning was banned in London, but the edict was ignored.[\[17\]](#) The human world’s first great air pollution came from burning coal, and by the 1600s, residents of London, with its perpetual cloud of coal smoke, had more respiratory disease than [the rest of the world combined](#). Today, China is the great coal-burning nation (as well as the greatest tobacco smoking nation), so, as might be expected, China has more respiratory problems than any other nation. Air pollution is still a great killer of children worldwide, nearly all caused by energy-producing activities.

Europe’s first imperial ventures were about acquiring native land and the fruit of native labor. Marco Polo spent the late 1200s in the court of Kublai Khan, and brought back his amazing tale to Venice. It is thought today that people have used [spice](#) largely to better preserve food (by killing bacteria), again an energy concept, and it also made preserved food taste better, as dead food loses its flavor. Venice had a virtual monopoly on the European spice trade, and charged exorbitant prices. In 1453, Ottoman Turks conquered Constantinople, ending the Eastern Roman Empire, which never completely recovered from being sacked in 1204 by its European “allies” during the Fourth Crusade. With the Turks newly in control of the spice trade route to Europe, [Portugal](#) and Spain began seeking new routes.

Portugal had already been expanding its domain when the Turks conquered Constantinople. Sugar first came to Europe as Arab traders brought it to Moorish Spain. Portugal began colonizing the uninhabited Madeira Islands in 1418. They immediately turned the islands into sugar plantations. Sugar provided two things: calories and sweetness. Similar to the spices, sugar helped provide useful calories, but more importantly, it played to humanity’s ape heritage of eating fruit: the sweet tooth. Refined sugar is an addictive substance and disastrous to health, arguably being the single greatest cause of tooth decay and also [the single greatest cause of diabetes](#), as well as contributing to obesity.[\[18\]](#) European teeth [really began rotting](#) when refined

sugar became a mainstay. Before civilization made its appearance, tooth decay was rare.

On the very first day he met the New World's natives, Columbus observed that those friendly natives would make good Christians *and* slaves, and he [captured six natives that first day](#). The Christian/slave dynamic would figure largely in [Spain's imperial foray into the New World](#). Columbus' very name translated to "[Christ-bearing colonizer](#)," and he called himself the "Christ bearer" immediately after his first voyage. Practice and theory, or reality and rhetoric, were on nearly opposite ends of the spectrum, however. Española, where Europeans first colonized the New World, became history's only instance of [complete genocide](#) of millions of people, as the Greater Antilles' inhabitants were extinct well within a century after "discovery." Although Columbus would [write about his desire to convert the natives](#), his main preoccupation was becoming rich by forcing the natives to mine gold. Columbus literally thought that [gold was the ticket to heaven](#). There was little Renaissance humanism to be found in Columbus' practices.

The first twenty years of Spanish presence in the New World was an unmitigated and genocidal disaster for the natives, with millions dying. Enslaving the natives was the standard Spanish practice, although plenty of semantic games were played. Officially, slavery was outlawed for "friendly" natives, when it became obvious that they quickly died upon being shipped to Spain's slave markets. So, the New World's natives were enslaved and put to work locally, to turn them into "good Christians." The Spanish experience during the early years of the New World's "discovery" is history's only era when people were regularly used as food, as the Spanish [used the natives as dog food](#).^[19] Native Americans had few domestic animals, so the natives themselves were the most available meat, and the soft bodies of native infants made for a canine delicacy. The exploitation and waste of *human energy* was prodigious during those days, as it was seemingly limitless.

As mining operations declined because the natives were so numerically reduced and the easy gold was gone, [sugar became the primary export](#) from the New World's tropics, which is *concentrated, addictive energy*. From northern North America the fur trade flourished (for *energy conservation* and fashion), which drove fur-bearing animals to extinction. From temperate North America came tobacco, the export that funded the English colonies in Virginia and southward. In 1638, three million pounds of tobacco per year made its way from present-day Virginia to Europe. It reached 17 million pounds in 1672, the same year that [American whaling became an industry](#), largely to obtain the *energy-rich* whale oil. Tobacco was different from sugar in that it had *no* beneficial health effects as Europeans used it, being solely an addictive substance, the deadliest consumer good that humanity has seen. As early as 1604, [King James I was campaigning against tobacco consumption](#), noting its deleterious health effects, among other unsavory aspects of its use.

As with sugar, tobacco was raised with slave labor, and both crops depleted soil fertility. Everywhere the Europeans showed up, whether it was Africa, Australia, the New World or the South Pacific, the effect on the natives was disastrous and/or genocidal. The only partial exception was Asia, partly because the natives were better armed and did not fall prey to European diseases.

The Renaissance helped lead to [the rise of science in Europe](#), and waning Church influence. Copernicus' heliocentric theory, first published in 1543, heralded the rise of Western Science, although the Catholic Church fought fiercely against it, as well as the Protestant Reformation, for generations. During the 1600s, telescopes, microscopes, higher mathematics and other tools came into use, and technology began vastly improving. In the early 1700s, Englishman Abraham Darby developed a scientific understanding of brass making and invented coke smelting, using coal to forge brass and iron. It led to a great increase in demand in coal use, and many metallurgical advances. Science and technology interacted. Warfare became a prominent use of technological advances, as Europeans continually [jostled for power](#).

When Europeans invaded North America (the [English most prominently](#)), they stumbled into one of the [world's greatest reservoirs of wealth](#). Eastern North America was almost entirely forested, and it was a human-friendly forest, open and park-like, as the natives burned the undergrowth each year, fostering game for hunting, such as deer. The soils were intact, and agriculture was performed in an environmentally gentle way. The Ohio River ran blue before the white man showed up. The [Great Plains](#) may have been another artificially husbanded environment, creating earth's greatest herds.

Europe plundered North America's real wealth with a vengeance that may have no historical equal. The

[Spanish New World experience](#) during the 1500s exploited human effort for no real wealth gain, but ultimately the wealth is in the environment. The Spanish did not alter their New World domains as drastically as the English and Americans altered North America. Eastern North America was 95% deforested by the invaders, completely exterminating the [passenger pigeon](#), which probably numbered five billion birds before the deforestation and slaughter began. When the woodlands were decimated for fuel, housing and to clear virgin soils for agriculture, coal mining began in earnest, and the Great Plains were ravaged in another prodigious display of destruction. The bison were reduced from 40 to 60 million animals to 23 wild ones in less than a century. The white man did not get around to invading the Pacific Northwest until 150 years ago, and for that reason the Northwest probably has the most intact ecosystems in the continental United States, although that is relative. I have hiked through the few remaining unlogged river valleys in the Cascades, and pondering what Western Washington looked like before the white man showed up is an awe-inspiring experience.

Not only is there evidence that the Great Plains may be at least partly an artificial construction, but there is also evidence that the Amazon rain forest may be the world's largest garden, with the land terraformed millennia ago, turning a rather human-unfriendly environment into earth's most diverse and fecund land-based ecosystem.^[20] It appears that the Pacific Northwest Culture, which stretched from Alaska to California, was probably humanity's first large-scale sedentary culture. The salmon spawning runs were a form of *energy delivery*, taking sunlight that fell on the Pacific Ocean, working its way up the food chain, to be finally delivered directly to the natives' villages. A pipeline could not have done it more effectively. Because of the salmon-based economy (sea mammals provided the fur), the world's first environmentally stable civilization flourished. They did not need to chop down their forests to divert the sun's energy to raising crops, and when the white man finally got around to plundering that part of the world, the trees they chopped down were tremendous.

It may *not* have always been the Rape and Plunder Economy in historical times. The relationship to nature that the Native Americans often manifested may have been a result of a spiritual maturity that the Old World's people had not achieved. North America and large parts of the New World may have been relatively intact not so much because Native Americans were "behind" the Old World in their development, but they had wisdom in relating to nature that was missing in the Old World. The nature-based religions of the Native Americans are evidence of it. It may have to do with [soul age](#) and other factors unrecognized by mainstream science.

Also, their relatively hostile environment may have helped hone the Old World's mentality, especially Europe's. The Puritanical attitude and the Protestant work ethic may have partly derived from the fact that people living in poor conditions, with severe seasons, had to make hay while the sun shined or they would not survive the winter. There may be a negative feedback effect where humans would continually stress their environment through uncontrolled breeding and environmentally-destructive practices, which in turn made for harsh times, which made people's outlooks harsher, greedy and more prone to violence. I once asked [Hinono](#) what the European rape of the world was all about, as nothing happens by accident (in the [mystical perspective](#)), and he said it was about "the dilution of bad ideas," as if Europe was about to become a spiritual black hole unless the "pressure" was released.

About the same time that English colonies in North America became restless, England began conquering Asia, beginning with what may have been the world's richest region, [Bengal](#), as far as readily plunderable wealth went. The triumvirate of energy, intelligence and *manipulative ability* in wealth creation was starkly evident in England's rape of Bengal. Bengal had a thriving textile industry, and England imposed a mercantile exploitation from the beginning, actually amputating the thumbs of weavers so they could no longer manufacture fabric. After several years of English rule, a drought-caused famine (greatly aided by English destruction of the society, [famine accompanied English rule in India](#)) killed off a third of Bengal's peasantry. The country was forced into growing raw materials such as jute and indigo for English factories and consumption, and opium for China. India became a major raw material exporter. Tea sweetened with sugar is an imperial drink, as is coffee and hot chocolate. The Europeans plundered [Africa](#) in the late 19th century, with similar dynamics.

The Industrial Revolution and the Science of Energy

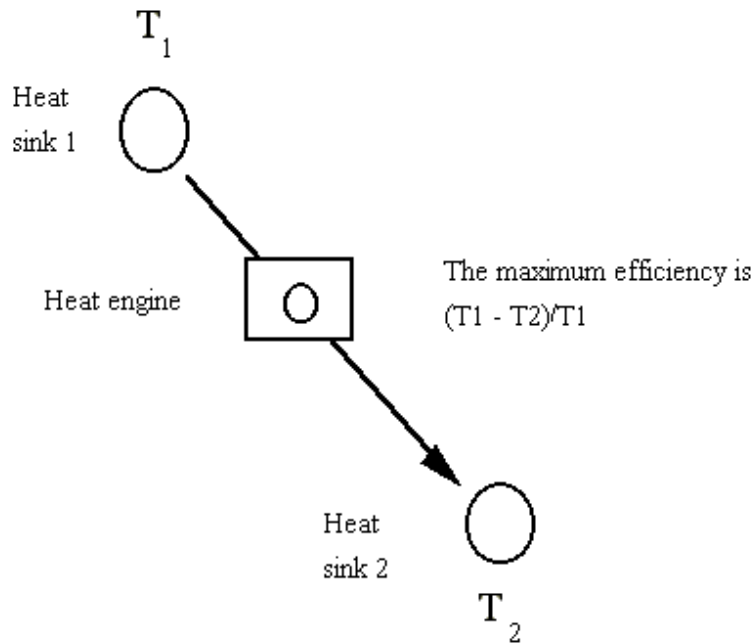
In retrospect, the major event of the 1700s was James Watt's invention of the modern steam engine in 1769. It was a great improvement over the Newcomen steam engine that was first developed in 1712, as it had a steam condenser, making it vastly more efficient. Watt's engine made the Industrial Revolution possible. With steam engines, energy could be harnessed at a level never before dreamed of. The invention of the modern steam engine coincided with the beginnings of the anti-slavery movement in Europe. Machines could perform labor that humans formerly did.

The Industrial Revolution is one where theory lagged behind practice. Adam Smith's *The Wealth of Nations* did not invent capitalism, but formalized an ideological framework that unwittingly prepared the conditions for dogma to take root. Similarly, the steam engine was powering the Industrial Revolution long before the theory was developed to explain it. Capitalism was born in England, and the modern state was born in France. One could be considered economic and the other political, but the two have never been truly separated. Disciplines that attempt that extractive surgery, such as "realism," which tries separating politics from economics, analyzing politics separately, can fail spectacularly. Economic and political activities are about amassing and controlling *energy*; it is no accident that the word "power" describes political "wealth." Terms such as "political capital" demonstrate that "political-economic" is a more appropriate term than either one by itself. Political power derives from economic power, and violence has accompanied the garnering of economic power since the earliest days of humanity. In the [United States](#), history's most materialistic nation, money dominates politics, with all politicians at the national level being essentially owned by the interests that fund their campaigns.

Ever since humans began making machines, attempts were made to make them independent of fuel. All manner of "perpetual motion" devices were dreamed up. None ever worked. When Napoleon tried conquering his corner of the world, forcing the Enlightenment onto his neighbors, a military engineer in his service was Lazare Nicolas Marguerite Carnot, whose military strategies won every battle that he planned. Carnot also was a mathematician who helped develop the mathematical basis for the reason why a perpetual motion machine was impossible. His son was also a soldier, and Nicolas Léonard Sadi Carnot, known as Sadi today, took his father's work further, and in 1824 published his conception of the perfect engine, 55 years after Watt's steam engine made its appearance. When Carnot published his seminal work, heat had only recently been scientifically described. Before the work of Antoine Lavoisier, European scientists thought that combustion was the release of a substance called phlogiston. Lavoisier, before his neck met the business end of a guillotine in 1794, demonstrated that combustion was due to oxygen reacting with the combusted material. In 1798 and 1799, Benjamin Thompson and Humphry Davy demonstrated that heat transfer was an *exchange of energy*, similar in concept to work being done, and that idea eventually displaced the old theories.

Carnot's theory on his ideal heat engine would become known as the second law of thermodynamics, introducing the concept of entropy. Just as theory lagged behind practice, the second law preceded the first, which states that energy cannot be created or destroyed (and the "zeroth," which defines temperature, sort of). The term *thermodynamics* defines the essence of the science; dealing with the relationship between temperature (thermo) and motion (dynamics). The crux of Carnot's theory is that hot things cool off, giving their heat to the surrounding environment.

Carnot theorized that the temperatures it operated between determined a heat engine's maximum possible efficiency. According to Carnot's theory, the hotter an engine ran, the greater percentage of its consumed energy could be converted to work. Today, calculating the maximum possible efficiency of a heat engine is performed by using the temperatures of the heat source and exhaust medium. The heat source and exhaust medium are known as "heat sinks" in thermodynamics jargon. The formula is known as Carnot's equation, and the maximum possible efficiency is the temperature difference between the two heat sinks. See the diagram below.

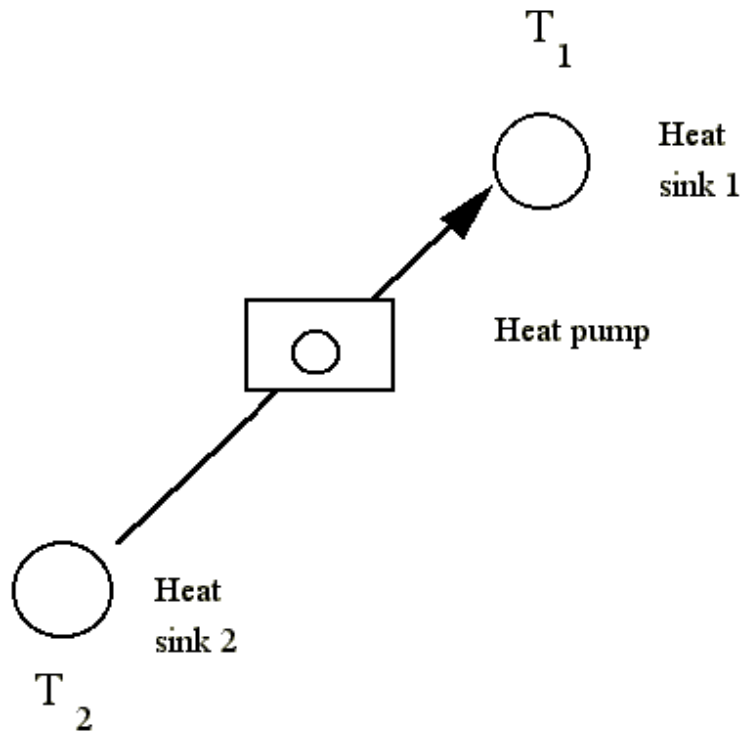


The $(T_1 - T_2)/T_1$ formula is learned by all thermodynamics students in their first week of class. Putting in some real numbers shows what Carnot's equation means. In today's electric companies, a coal-fired power plant generates about 2000° F in its boiler, where water is made into high-temperature steam. After the steam is run through turbines, a large body of water cools it back down into liquid water, so it can be reintroduced into the boiler. That is also the essence of Watt's steam engine, and the introduction of the steam condenser was what allowed the Industrial Revolution to take off.

If the body of water that cools the condenser is 55° F, the arithmetic works out to 80% efficiency, and the calculation is at this footnote.[\[21\]](#)

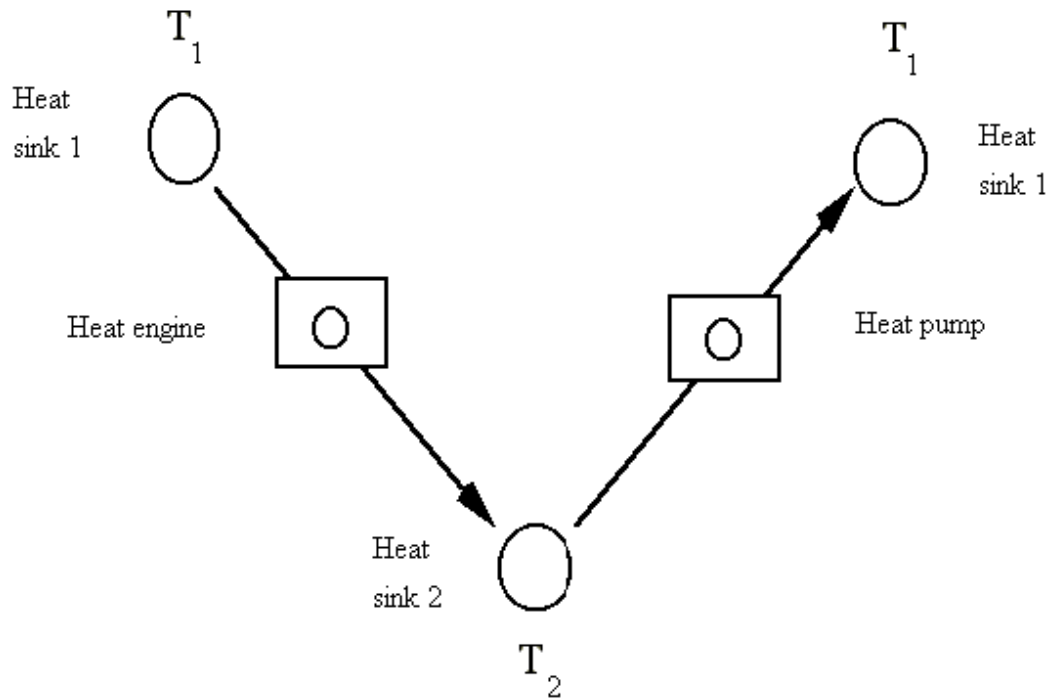
That means that for every 100 units of heat introduced at the boiler, the turbines will produce 80 units of mechanical energy, at most. In reality however, the steam turbine's thermal efficiency will be far less than 80%. Today, the national average for heat engine efficiency at the electric companies is about 30%. The highest thermal efficiencies obtained by state-of-the-art equipment is about 40%, or about half the Carnot ideal. The research on gaining higher efficiencies is largely devoted to developing boiler and turbine materials that can withstand higher temperatures. The "visionaries" in the field think that 4000° F boiler temperatures can be reached in the next generation, and 60% thermal efficiencies may be attainable.

As I first began studying thermodynamics in the late 1980s, I wondered where Carnot's equation came from. It turns out to be quite simple. There is a process that reverses the heat engine dynamic, and it is called a heat pump. Where a heat engine takes advantage of the differential between heat sink temperatures to produce mechanical energy, a heat pump uses mechanical energy to move heat between two heat sinks. Take those steam turbine temperatures and imagine a heat pump operating within those parameters. The heat pump would take heat from the 55° F heat sink and raise its temperature to 2000° F, by using mechanical energy. That might seem nonsensical at first, but that is what heat pumps do. Using those temperatures and inverting the Carnot equation, the maximum theoretical heat pump efficiency is developed. See the diagram below.



The maximum efficiency is $T_1/(T_1 - T_2)$

Inserting the previous temperatures into that equation, we get 1.25.^[22] That means that for every 100 units of mechanical energy that is put into the heat pump, 125 units of heat will be moved from the 55° F heat sink and delivered to the 2000° F heat sink, at most. That ratio of 1.25 is known as a coefficient of performance (COP).^[23] Combining both Carnot equations is what makes Carnot's theory clear. See the diagram below.



The maximum efficiency is

$$(T_1 - T_2)/T_1 \times T_1/(T_1 - T_2) = 1$$

Combining the equations yields a result of one. In that ideal Carnot arrangement, all of the mechanical energy that was farmed from the system in the heat engine was used to drive the heat pump, taking the heat from the lower heat sink and depositing it back into the high temperature heat sink. In that ideal world, the perfect heat engine could be hooked up to the perfect heat pump, and it would run forever on its own energy. In the real world, however, hot always goes to cold, and there are always heat losses from any system where heat is converted to work. As shown above, the electric company only gets about half the Carnot ideal in practice, and heat pumps get far less than half the Carnot ideal. Instead of $80\% \times 1.25 = 100\%$, it is more like $40\% \times 0.2 = 8\%$. The 8% number means that in reality, only 8% of the energy farmed from the boiler by the heat engine would make its way back to the boiler to start the cycle again. The other 92% would be largely lost to heat losses, so the majority of energy released by burning fuel would simply be vented to the environment, creating thermal pollution. Electrical power plants, for instance, are notorious for warming up the bodies of water that are used to condense the steam.

Steam turbines at electric companies work by a simple principle. Liquid water is turned into a high-temperature steam at the boiler, its newly liberated molecules rocketing at immense velocities, and then directed at a turbine blade. The energy exchanged during the collision of the water molecule and turbine blade is how the heat energy of the boiler is converted into mechanical energy. It is no different in essence from using my muscles to push my car down the road, or a river pushing a waterwheel. In the case of the steam turbine, it is a high-velocity water molecule banging against a turbine blade.

The heat pump requires a little more explanation. When Carnot came up with his famous equation, heat pumps did not exist. They only existed in theory. They have since been invented and have been put to many uses. The heat pump application that all Americans are familiar with is the household refrigerator. It removes heat from inside the cold refrigerator and dumps it into the warm kitchen, moving the heat from a cold heat sink to a higher temperature one. A brief description of how a refrigerator works is at this footnote.[\[21\]](#)

Physicists have asked if thermodynamics had more debt to the steam engine than the steam engine had to thermodynamics. With Watt's steam engine coming onto the scene, the West entered the age of machines. The motive power of steam could be harnessed in many ways. Richard Trevithick built the first locomotive in

1804. In 1807, Robert Fulton made his famous steamboat run up the Hudson River. Railroads and steamships began crossing the globe.

The forerunners to modern factories began development in England in the early 1700s, in the textile industry. England's [rape of Bengal](#) boosted its industrial advance at India's expense. Machines for transportation and manipulation became feasible with the steam engine, and England's textile factories no longer needed to be situated next to rivers, to take advantage of river power. In 1814 the first cotton mill was built, in Waltham Massachusetts. Raw cotton entered, and finished goods emerged. In the early days of factory textile production, women were hired to work in them, partly because they could be paid less than men. It is not an accident that the women's suffrage movement, the communist movement, and efforts to abolish slavery began in those early days of industrialization. With the ability to *exploit energy* on a scale never before dreamed of, strong backs and hands were no longer as necessary for the creation of human-usable wealth. Wage slavery eventually replaced chattel slavery. Slave owners made the case that people do not take care of things they rent as well as things they own. Their arguments were not easily dismissed, and the world of Charles Dickens came from the Industrial Revolution. In England, the advent of industrial capitalism was a disaster for the masses, as life expectancy fell during the late 18th century, in the hellish conditions of early industrialization. A rich, fat capitalist class developed, while the lower classes labored in horrific conditions, in the factories and mines, with children and women working in virtual slavery.

In the United States, wood was the first fuel exploited, as it was so readily abundant. As the trees quickly disappeared, Americans reverted to coal, just as the English had done. As far as nature's "wealth bank" went, burning trees was the use of sunlight that had fallen on the tree during the years that it grew, while coal was the exploitation of sunlight captured by plants hundreds of millions of years ago (or if [Gold](#) is right, energy put there at earth's creation, and not renewable). Because such a rich continent was plundered, the United States quickly reached the world's highest standard of living, living easily off the land, while exterminating its former inhabitants, as well as incredible numbers of passenger pigeons, and later bison. As [Carl Sauer](#) remarked, all that so-called wealth creation was actually wealth consumption, draining the world's real wealth. [Brian O'Leary](#) stated it succinctly one day when he said there could be no economy on a planet that cannot support life.

The Industrial Revolution is seen as the most important event in human history since the Agricultural Revolution. Mechanized farming eliminated the need for farmers. In the 1830s, the American John Deere began making steel plows, and the American Cyrus McCormick invented the reaper. By the late 19th century, heat-engine-powered machines replaced teams of horses and oxen. The Dickensian world has not quite disappeared. It has partly been exported from the West to sweatshop factories abroad, in places such as [Indonesia](#), where people work in virtual slavery for Western corporations, making clothing for Americans and other Westerners.

The "agricultural surplus" allowed for specialization of labor. In "primitive" societies, nearly everybody was involved in food production. As agricultural systems became more efficient, from a human standpoint (not for the exterminated "pests" or the depleted soils and ecosystems), the surplus grew, and fewer people were needed for food production. Long before the Industrial Revolution, England developed the most efficient agricultural systems, yet even on the cusp of the Industrial Revolution, about half of England's workforce was engaged in agriculture. Although the United States was the world's most industrialized nation when the Great Depression of the 1930s arrived, about a third of the workforce was still engaged in agriculture. That number is 3% today. Today's Western Civilization is possible because of *energy exploitation*, but it is still a Zero-Sum Game being played, with the rise of new ideologies to justify the positions of the [capital](#) and elite classes. The craziness of ideology was not confined to political-economic activities. The growing scientific establishment was intimately involved.

The Energy Racket Takes Shape

Before the Industrial Revolution, economics was a Zero-Sum Game and land was the primary basis of wealth. In Spain, a few rich families owned most of the land. In England, a similar manifestation of greed was taking shape. In Spain, the great sheep herds of the grandees overran Spain, devastating Spanish farms

and helping to make Spain as arid as it is. In England in the 16th century, rich landowners began fencing in the land and kicking the peasants off it. The movement was known as “Enclosure,” and helped spur the [English invasion of North America](#). Enclosure was a way for landowners to kick the peasants off land that they lived off, and turn a profit using the land for either sheep pasturage or saleable crops. Enclosure riots punctuated 16th and 17th century England, and helped lead to the English Civil War, which began in 1640. [25] In England, the evolution of first wiping out predatory competitors for energy, then agricultural “pests,” and then humans themselves, is evident.

Capitalism was born in England, due to a confluence of geography, culture, technology, and unique historical trends. When Adam Smith published his *Wealth of Nations* in 1776, capitalism already existed, although that name would not be used until the 20th century. Ellen Meiksins Wood and other Marxist historians have documented the long process of England’s transformation from feudalism to capitalism, and Wood shows how it grew from the rural agrarian milieu of greedy landowners, not the urban factory. [26] Adam Smith is associated with the “invisible hand of competition” and the notion that everybody pursuing their narrow self-interest, competing against each other, would make life better for everybody. That concept is a cornerstone of today’s [corporate capitalism](#), but Smith had little to do with it. Smith was an Enlightenment philosopher, and to him, more important than his *Wealth of Nations* was his *The Theory of Moral Sentiments*, which he had reprinted several times during his lifetime. The very first sentence of *Moral Sentiments* states:

“How selfish soever man may be supposed, there are evidently some principles in his nature, which may interest him in the fortune of others, and render their happiness necessary to him, though he derives nothing from it except the pleasure of seeing it.” [27]

[Greed](#) was not a virtue in Smith’s perspective. Scholars familiar with Smith’s corpus agree that he would be aghast at today’s corporate capitalism, and would be particularly horrified that he is considered its father. Today’s capitalism bears far more resemblance to Charles Darwin’s vision than Smith’s. Darwin theorized that from the “war of nature,” with everything in competition, comes progress. [28] Darwin’s theories were partly a projection of the English mind onto what he saw in nature.

England industrialized on the workers’ backs, and partly by raping India. With Watt’s steam engine, coal became the Industrial Revolution’s fuel, because the British Isles and Europe had mineable coal and the trees were gone. The famous London Fog was not true fog, but coal smoke. Pictures from European urban life in the early 20th century are readily obtainable today. Everybody is soot-stained in the pictures. London was bathed in a pall of coal smoke from the 1600s to the 1900s, and eventually all of urban Europe looked the same. As with Britain, European invaders first razed eastern North America’s forests, as well as exterminating its human inhabitants. While that was happening, they also [hunted the world’s whales to the brink of extinction](#), mainly for the whale’s *energy-rich* oil. As those resources became scarce, the United States also sat on mineable coal, and coal mining eventually dominated Appalachia’s economy.

New kinds of empires were built in those early days of capitalism and industrialization. Britain was in the early lead, being more than twice as industrialized as France and nearly twice as much as the United States in 1830. [29] By 1860, Britain was three times as industrialized as France and the United States, and nearly six times as industrialized as the Hapsburg Empire. The year 1860 marked the beginning of the United States’ great leap forward as compared to its imperial rivals. As usual, warfare initiated the “progress.” The American Civil War was the most devastating war in American history.

On the brink of the Civil War, American whaling was in decline, because [whales were nearly extinct](#). In 1859 in Pennsylvania, Edwin Drake drilled the first American oil well, and the oil industry began. In the early days of the industry, oil was used for “medicine,” and because whale oil was becoming scarce as lamp oil, petroleum quickly replaced whale oil in the United States. The Civil War was also the first great era of American war profiteering. A class of men known as “robber barons” all got their starts during the Civil War, building new kinds of empires. Corporate capitalism was a new political-economic form. Today,

corporations only exist to [make money for the owners](#), an idle class that skims off the cream. Also, the Industrial Revolution, with its exploitation of energy on a scale never before seen, moved the concept of wealth further from early concepts of controlling land and labor. Controlling *energy sources* eventually became an overriding imperative.

The robber barons got their start during the [Civil War](#), and the fledgling industries all came under the control of a few people, each industry turning into a racket. Empires in steel, [banking](#), railroads and others were built during those days. The most successful robber baron of all, however, was John Rockefeller. As with the other robber barons, Rockefeller avoided military service during the Civil War and, after careful inspection, entered the oil industry in 1863. [Rockefeller](#), the son of a snake oil salesman, realized that if he could control the industry's refining arm, he would control the entire industry, as all oil would have to pass through his hands on its way to market. It was a gatekeeper concept. Soon after he entered the industry, he embarked on a strategy of buying out or wiping out all of his competitors - the hundreds of small refiners that dotted the northeastern United States. By 1880, Rockefeller controlled 95% of U.S. refining. Rockefeller personified a new, ingenious ruthlessness in American industry.

The decades after the Civil War became known as The Gilded Age, with the robber barons ridding the new industries of competitors and creating vast economic empires, empires that still exist. By the early 20th century, monopolies dominated the American economy, and the era of "trust-busting" was supposed to loosen the stranglehold that a few capitalists had over the American economy. The trust-busting activity had limited effectiveness. Rockefeller's Standard Oil was broken up into a few large oil companies, but the oil companies colluded behind the scenes, and the world's largest oil companies were known as the "seven sisters." Two of those Rockefeller oil companies merged back together recently, forming the world's largest corporation, Exxon Mobil (the neocolonial Wal Mart has now exceeded them in revenues).

Corporate power soon dominated America's political-economic environment. As robber barons such as Rockefeller, Morgan, Carnegie, Mellon, Vanderbilt, Astor, Harriman and friends consolidated their empires, they often turned to "philanthropy," a strange term to use for those men, and their philanthropy became a means of social engineering and control, and diversifications of their empires. In the early 20th century, Rockefeller and Carnegie's foundations, working with the American Medical Association, used their "philanthropy" to entrench what became [today's medical racket](#). The hegemony became ideological, as Rockefeller established the [University of Chicago](#), which has created the ideology that dominates today's economic theory, favoring the capitalistic perspective.

The [lies told to American children](#) nearly begin in the cradle. If people can be brainwashed while they are young and impressionable, just forming their personalities and core beliefs, they will largely be unable to critically examine them for the rest of their lives. Today, major corporations are trying to form brand loyalty in children (such as the late 20th century's Joe Camel campaign to addict children to [cigarettes](#)), so they will have customers for life. It is that way in every ideological endeavor, and no different in science, which prides itself in the exercise of reason and observation. Similar to the American media's [self-serving pretense that it is objective](#), the scientific establishment characterizes its membership as being open-minded, seeking scientific truth.

Science and the "Real World"

One of history's greatest physicists, Max Planck, stated,

"a new scientific truth does not triumph by convincing its opponents and making them see the light, but rather because its opponents eventually die and a new generation grows up that is familiar with it."[\[30\]](#)

[Semmelweis](#), the pioneer of sterile medical practices, died in an insane asylum. Those who discovered [anesthesia](#) died penniless. The pioneers of sterile surgical practices, [Lister](#) and [Keen](#), were treated shabbily. [Louis Pasteur](#) may have marched microbiology, and hence medicine, off in the wrong direction, by plagiarizing [Antoine Béchamp](#). [Emil Grubbé](#) was not exactly "welcomed" for discovering radium therapy. [Rife](#), [Naessens](#), [Reich](#) and many other pioneers of medicine have been subjected to vilification and [endless legal and professional attacks](#). Those are standard examples of the fates of scientific pioneers. Nikola Tesla has been written out of the history books. That list can go on and on. A craving for power and control typifies the members of the American government, those who run the world's institutions, most corporate leaders, etc. The world of science is no different, especially as [men dominate it](#). A pithy observation made by a Robber Baron during the Gilded Age was that "pioneering don't pay."

With the rise of science came the Industrial Revolution, and science was an integral part of its progress. Consequently, science needed to be controlled by the capitalists, and it has been. Attacks on scientific pioneers by their "peers" is standard human behavior, no different with scientists than any other group of people. Also, certain scientific and technological breakthroughs can be very bad for business, upsetting the rackets. Therefore, true innovation is largely dead in many industries, such as [transportation](#), energy, [medicine](#), etc. The greater the concentration of power in the industry, the more scientific advances are stifled and crushed. Also, as an example, industrially-sponsored/influenced "scientists" such as [Harold Hodge](#), Gerald Cox, Trendley Dean, David Ast, Edward Largent and others turned an industrial waste, [fluoride](#), into a "medicine," while scientists such as [Phyllis Mullenix](#) had their careers destroyed for reporting data that contradicted the propaganda.

Not only are the obscure pioneers mercilessly attacked and derided. Few Americans know anything about [Royal Rife](#). Few know who [Gaston Naessens](#) is. How many Americans have heard of Thomas Edison and his light bulb?

In 1879, Edison was basking in fame. The year before, he had demonstrated the phonograph. He had more than 150 patents to his name, and was known as the "Wizard of Menlo Park." Edison's crew devoted most of 1879 to solving a problem that had defeated the world's most prominent electrical engineers: electrical lighting. After testing thousands of materials for a filament that would work, and playing with vacuum and various resistances, Edison hit on a combination that worked, a high resistance filament in a vacuum. When the "Napoleon of Science" announced that he had successfully created a practical electrical lamp, how did the world of science react?

England's most distinguished electrical engineer, Sir William Siemens, who had tried solving the electrical lighting problem for ten years, greeted Edison's announcement with, "Such startling announcements should be deprecated as being unworthy of science and mischievous to its true progress." Edison soon perfected his light and publicly demonstrated electrical lighting in Menlo Park, lighting the streets around his laboratory. The public came from miles away to see the night lit up by electrical lighting. Edison was demonstrating the "impossible" to the public. What was the reaction of science then?

Professor Henry Morton lived near Menlo Park, and could not be bothered to stretch his legs to go see for himself. Morton instead wrote that he protested "in behalf of true science." Morton wrote that Edison's experiments were "a conspicuous failure, trumpeted as a wonderful success. A fraud upon the public." Professor Du Moncel said, "One must have lost all recollection of *American hoaxes* to accept such claims. The Sorcerer of Menlo Park appears not to be acquainted with the subtleties of the electrical science. Mr. Edison takes us backwards." Edwin Weston, an expert in arc lighting, said that Edison's claims were "so manifestly absurd as to indicate a positive want of knowledge of the electric circuit and the principles governing the construction and operation of electrical machines." While the public was strolling under the radiance of the electrical lighting in Menlo Park, Sir William Preece, who had studied under Faraday, and was the chief engineer of Britain's Post Office, addressed the Royal Society in London, where he read a paper under the day's murky gaslights. Preece said that Edison's electric lamp was "a completely idiotic idea."

Edison was probably the world's most famous scientist at the time, and he was publicly demonstrating something said to be "impossible." Not one scientist could be bothered to go to Menlo Park and see it for themselves. Human feeble-mindedness also applies to scientists, in spades. Scientists had abandoned one of their most sacred principles, the principle of observation. That is not an anomaly. Today, more than

seventy years since [Royal Rife](#) invented his Universal Microscope, most scientists have not even heard of it, much less tried to reproduce it, so they can view *life processes* on a scale that is still impossible today with "modern" technology. [Gaston Naessens](#) is doing almost the very same thing today, and if his name comes up in scientific circles, it is treated with contempt. Instead of taking the time to look through that microscope themselves, or even buy one (they are cheap), Naessens is treated as if he has the plague, if he is acknowledged at all. The Catholic Inquisitors, who refused to look through [Galileo's](#) telescope to see the moons of Jupiter for themselves, have professional descendents that fill the ranks of today's scientific establishment.

If the world's most famous scientist was treated that insanely, imagine how two obscure bicycle mechanics were received when they achieved the "impossible" - heavier-than-air flight. Perhaps the most amazing sight of the entire Industrial Revolution was human flight, which the Wright brothers accomplished in December of 1903. Similar to electrical lighting, heavier-than-air flight had frustrated science. A few weeks before the Wright brothers first flew, Simon Newcomb, the professor of mathematics and astronomy at Johns Hopkins University, published an article in *The Independent* that scientifically demonstrated that human-powered flight was "utterly impossible." In 1902, the chief engineer of the Navy, Rear-Admiral George Melville, wrote in the *North American Review* that attempting to fly was "absurd." Two months before the Wright brothers flew, Professor Samuel Langley tried flying a craft from a houseboat on the Potomac, and it plunged into the river. He tried it again nine days before the Wright Brothers flew, and his plane was destroyed.

The Wright brothers did not listen to the "experts" and flew at Kitty Hawk in North Carolina. They returned to their bicycle shop in Dayton Ohio, and continued refining their airplanes. They wrote to newspapers and politicians, inviting them to come see human-powered flight, and even sent out pictures of their planes in flight. They were ignored. It did not stop them from continuing to work on their airplanes. They practiced their flying in a field owned by a Dayton bank president, and regularly flew their planes. A rail line ran next to the field. During one flight in 1905, the Wright brothers were flying when a passenger train was rolling past the field. The general manager of the rail line and his chief engineer were on the train, and the manager ordered the train stopped. They and the passengers stared in wide-eyed amazement at the sight of a man flying through the air. Many of those dazed witnesses wrote to the *Dayton Daily News*, and asked why they were not reading about those men flying over "Huffman Prairie."

Not only did the newspapers not send a reporter out to look at such a sight, but letters from people who had seen the Wright brothers in flight were burying them, and the papers complained about the volume of letters they were receiving. Two highways also bordered the field. All the while, the Wright brothers were mailing invitations across the country to media and others to see them fly, an effort that was generally futile. The local newspapers could not be bothered to send even one reporter to check out the story that was happening nearly in sight of the newspaper offices. The managing editor of the *Dayton Daily News* once spoke with Orville Wright, who told him that he flew for about five minutes that day. The editor did not believe him, and no story ever ran. Maybe if they flew a plane *into* the newspaper building, somebody might have come out to investigate.

In January 1905, more than a year after they first flew, science weighed in on the persistent reports that the Wright brothers were flying. [Scientific American](#) ran an article about the Wright brothers' flights. They implied the Wright brothers were hoaxers, and cited the primary reason for not believing the reports:

"If such sensational and tremendously important experiments are being conducted in a not very remote part of the country, on a subject in which almost everybody feels the most profound interest, is it possible to believe that the enterprising American reporter, who, it is well-known, comes down the chimney when the door is locked in his face - even if he has to scale a fifteen-story skyscraper to do so - would not have ascertained all about them and published the broadcast long ago?"

There it is, the [myth of the vigilant, free press](#). The house organ of science stated its reason for not believing the Wright brothers and their claims of flight: because they had not read about it in the papers. It was not until September 1908, when President Roosevelt ordered tests at Fort Myer, Virginia, and the Wright brothers

flew over the town for a week (after first flying over Paris, where they first found fame, because the French were far more receptive to the Wright brothers than Americans were), that the Wright brothers' flights were accepted. It could be denied no longer. Science was finally forced to accept it.^[31] Even then, the Smithsonian Institution, which helped fund Langley's failed experiments, clouded the issue for generations, trying to deny the Wright Brothers their rightful place as the fathers of powered flight.

I lived in Dayton, where Wright-Patterson Air Force Base is (it is built on Huffman Prairie), the biggest Air Force base in the world, and the source of legends such as the Blue Room and Hangar 18, where [extraterrestrial craft](#) and the remains of their hapless occupants were allegedly stored. The Air Force Museum is also there, in the town where the Wright brothers lived and whose feats were ignored for nearly five years. In the museum is exhibited the Wright brothers story and their early days, but the exhibit does not deal with the incredible denial that the American establishment engaged in for nearly five years after they first flew.

Einstein once observed that human stupidity is seemingly infinite. The danger is thinking that scientists possess less of it than the public at large, when sometimes they possess *more*.

Department of Energy scientists tried explaining away what their Geiger counters told them about [Brown's Gas](#) transmuting radioactive material during the 1990s. They had to perform mental summersaults and nearly gouge their eyes out to deny what their eyes and brains told them, but they accomplished it. Getting a diploma from a university does not confer intelligence or make somebody a true scientist. About 99% of those with engineering degrees have little creative talent. [Mr. Mentor](#) once told me that most engineers are plodders. They can be given some numbers to crunch or drawings to make, and they will dutifully perform their tasks, bringing back their results when finished. Not that the work may not be valuable, but there is often little creativity or mental horsepower brought to bear on such activities. Those mundane activities are similar to what [Kuhn](#) called "normal science." The vast majority of educated people cannot think past their textbooks, whether it is in science, mathematics, [history](#), politics, [accounting](#), etc. Creative insight is what drives scientific and technical advances. Without that "right side" of the brain working, analysis and technical drudgery provide little insight, and for those mired in such quagmires, comprehending the possibility of flight or other textbook-challenging ideas is nearly impossible, as [Planck](#) observed.

The academic experience proves little, and negative learning often takes place. Some of the best inventors and engineers were either self-taught or were mediocre students. Einstein barely made it through his curriculum. Edison was self-taught, attending school for three months of his life.

Werner Heisenberg wrote of attending a meeting of atomic physicists in 1952, when he had a chat with Niels Bohr and Wolfgang Pauli. Bohr talked about a lecture that he gave to a group of philosophers, whom he called mostly "positivists," on the subject of quantum theory. After his talk, Bohr was disappointed that nobody asked any questions. Bohr wondered if he had failed in his talk, because quantum theory is so strange that it should have elicited a great deal of questioning. Pauli responded that Bohr should not be so hard on himself, that the positivists accepted Bohr's explanation as received wisdom, and had no questions. Pauli essentially said if that was the case, they did not really understand anything that Bohr had said. Heisenberg wrote,

"The positivists have a simple solution: the world must be divided into that which we can say clearly, and the rest; which we had better pass over in silence. But can anyone conceive of a more pointless philosophy, seeing that what we can say clearly amounts to next to nothing? If we omitted all that is unclear, we would probably be left with completely uninteresting and trivial tautologies."^[32]

Those were the all-too-rare true scientists, shaking their heads. Then Heisenberg and Pauli talked about the nature of the soul.

In the real world, theft has been a primary factor in human interaction. When Europe [sailed the high seas](#), it engaged in history's greatest act of plunder and piracy.

In science, theft has been all-too-common. The theft is not of land and resources, however; it is the theft of ideas, discoveries and [inventions](#). Theft and suppression is typical. Ralph Moss' observation that the pioneers in cancer treatment have been ignored, [while the establishment eventually steals their work](#), is standard. Isaac Newton engaged in a grotesque effort to claim precedence over Leibniz in inventing calculus.[\[33\]](#) The theft of math breakthroughs by college professors from their students is far from unknown. Professors have become famous, while the students they stole from are still unknown.

For centuries, scientists attempted to explain what the auroras were. In 1896, Kristian Birkeland of Norway boldly struck out in the right direction in explaining the auroras when he theorized that electrons from the sun caused the auroras, being deflected to the poles by earth's magnetic field, and the resultant auroras were like magnetic storms. His bold theory was on the right track, but not embraced. Instead, he was fiercely attacked by his peers for his "crazy" theory, and died a broken man in 1917. His work was derided and suppressed for many years, the effort being led by an English physicist named Sydney Chapman. Eventually Hannes Alfvén challenged the auroric citadel that Chapman perched atop, revived Birkeland's theories, and Alfvén was stonewalled by academia. It was not until 1970, when Alfvén picked up his Nobel Prize, that Birkeland was posthumously vindicated. The ghost of Birkeland must have been smiling.[\[34\]](#)

A primary example of how the establishment works today against threatening scientific breakthroughs is cold fusion. When Pons and Fleischmann made their startling announcement of achieving cold fusion in 1989, it came on the heels of superconductors being created at much higher temperatures than was thought possible. After the initial cold fusion announcement, there was a worldwide frenzy, but soon after, it was dismissed as a chimera, a non-reproducible phenomenon. Pons and Fleischmann's names have become anathema in the halls of science. They had to leave America to continue their research, which has now been confirmed more than *one hundred times* in research institutes throughout the world. [Brian O'Leary](#) and [Richard Milton](#) are familiar with the data, which strongly suggests that cold fusion is real. So, why does everybody I talk to think that it was disproven years ago? MIT was the first to attack cold fusion's experimental results, saying they were not reproducible, but it is now known that they fudged the numbers to make their claim. Essentially, they lied. Their voice, and others who were heavily invested in the status quo, as they collect billions of dollars to pursue high temperature fusion (which would be subsequently monopolized), carried the day. It happened recently, and the cover-up continues to this day. [\[35\]](#) Brian O'Leary recently told me that it is even worse today than in the days of the Wright brothers, as breakthroughs such as cold fusion have been mercilessly attacked and dismissed by the scientific establishment. It comes down to money, power, egos and dogma, not what is called science.

I became [mired in the issue of catastrophism](#) while tracking Carl Sagan's debunker career. Ten thousand pages of reading later and a great deal of correspondence, I have concluded that to assess the validity of catastrophic theory, particularly the multi-disciplinary approach that the psychiatrist Immanuel Velikovsky first championed in this century, and has been further pursued by more respectable scientists such as Victor Clube and Bill Napier, is a vast undertaking.

Velikovsky is one in a long line of catastrophic theorists, a body of theory that is becoming respectable again. For one person to fairly assess Velikovsky's theory in whole would take at least twenty years of intense study in fields as diverse as physics, astronomy, mythology, glaciology, archeology, dendrochronology, geology and other fields. *Velikovsky* did not have the time to completely assess his thesis. His theories stretch the imagination, but I cannot call them right or wrong with great confidence. The debate over those issues is fierce and relegated to the margins of scientific discourse, with the catastrophists generally called pseudoscientists and crackpots. [Sagan](#) unfairly used his reputation to hammer the nails into Velikovsky's public coffin, something Sagan did repeatedly. The scientific establishment treated Velikovsky disgracefully, with Einstein being one of the few scientists who treated Velikovsky cordially. If only the rest of the scientists could have been as graceful.[\[36\]](#)

[Richard Milton's](#) *Alternative Science* (formerly titled *Forbidden Science*) is an excellent introduction to how scientific pioneers have been maligned, and how the scientific establishment works today. Joseph Schwartz's *The Creative Moment* is a neat recounting of the fatal turns that science has made over the centuries.

A major reason the world knows about Einstein's theories of relativity is because they posed no immediate economic threat to powerful interests in 1905. If relativity posed an immediate threat to the

Rockefeller Empire or the other robber baron industries, the world may have never heard of relativity, as it would have been suppressed from the outset.

Nikola Tesla's story is a prime example. His theories and inventions had a potentially dramatic impact on the world. Thomas Edison engaged in a disgraceful attack on Tesla's work. Tesla invented the technology to use alternating current, which powers the world today. Edison promoted his direct current. Direct current had the great limitation of only being transmittable over short distances, because its voltage was low, and therefore the resistance relatively high. The voltage of alternating current, however, could be stepped up by transformers and be transmitted great distances while losing very little of its power. Tesla had to forgo the royalties that would have made him one of the world's richest men, so George Westinghouse could survive the battle against Edison. Then [J.P. Morgan](#) bankrolled Tesla...until Tesla began pursuing directions that could have provided free energy. Morgan was a classic robber baron, knowing full well how the racketeering aspect of capitalism worked, and quickly pulled the plug on Tesla when he began making free energy noises. A famous quote, though apocryphal, is that when Tesla showed Morgan how every person could have free energy by simply putting a collector stake into the ground (Tesla was going to build a tower that tapped the electric potential between the upper atmosphere and the ground, to power the entire planet), Morgan responded with, "But where does the meter go?"

Tesla may have invented free energy, or came close. There is plenty of conjecture about what has been suppressed regarding his work. Tesla's inventions are legion. He invented radio before Marconi. He had about 700 patents.

An excellent book that covers the "suppression syndrome," as Brian O'Leary brilliantly puts it, is *Suppressed Inventions and other Discoveries*, edited by Jonathan Eisen. The stories of people discussed on this web site, such as [Naessens](#), [Rife](#), [Hoxsey](#), [Gerson](#), [Moss](#), [Reich](#) and others are covered in its pages. The epic work on Tesla's life is *Wizard, the Life and Times of Nikola Tesla*, by Marc Seifer, but it does not discuss some possible aspects of the Tesla story that are intriguing, such as the alleged Philadelphia Experiment. Although his alternating current prevailed, the electric companies are often named "Edison" companies. Even though Tesla founded an electric company, there is no Tesla Electric Company, except for the one that [Dennis Lee](#) tried reviving. Recently there has been controversy over the Smithsonian Institution's display on Edison and electricity. The Smithsonian is making the bogus claim that Edison invented the modern era of power and that Marconi invented the radio. Tesla has been shunted off to a dark corner by the establishment, while Edison is a household word. Interestingly, Tesla was incensed with Einstein's theories of relativity and assailed them, proposing his own counter-theories.

Jonathan Swift once wrote:

"When a true genius appears in this world you may know him by this sign, that the dunces are all in confederacy against him."[\[37\]](#)

In his [1984](#), Orwell called orthodox thinking a form of unconsciousness. In order for the dunces to think like geniuses, they have to abandon their assumptions and dogmas, and gain some flexibility of thought. Such unthinking has been called inverted logic. That phenomenon has been discernable in every field of mental endeavor, whether it is science, economics, [journalism](#), [medicine](#), [history](#), etc.

Genius is simple, sees the forest *and* the trees, and cuts to the heart of the issue. The greatest geniuses I have known combine creative insight with the power of discrimination. I know some geniuses with great creative insight, but less developed discrimination, which can make them appear "ungrounded." Quite often, geniuses like that need a partner or mate whose feet are more firmly grounded, to keep the balance. Einstein was kind of like that; he never learned to drive a car or work any machinery. It is rare for the genius to have a full balance of creativity and discrimination, and to have it in balance with the heart is rarer still. They exist, but are extremely rare.

Galileo and Newton were devoutly religious. Newton pursued theology for the rest of his life after about age thirty, proving that he was much better in math and science. As with Einstein and numerous other physicists, Newton's major contributions to science and mathematics were made before he was thirty years old. Werner Heisenberg invented quantum physics, which stands with relativity as the two pillars of modern physics, and invented it in a fevered weekend when he was twenty-four years old. Leibniz and Newton invented calculus independently at around the same time. Leibniz was also in his twenties when he invented calculus, and Newton was only twenty-three. Leibniz published his work before Newton did, although Newton invented his calculus first. Erwin Schroedinger was the other father of quantum theory. Schroedinger was an old man in theoretical physics, nearly forty years old, when he published his wave mechanics theory.

What happens is that those fresh to the field, who can look at the problems with new eyes, make the great breakthroughs. After that, they can fall prey to their point of view, and rarely make great contributions later.

The rise of science in the West coincided with the loosening of Christianity's grip, the Catholic Church's in particular, on the minds and hearts of men. Galileo, Newton, Einstein, Heisenberg, Schroedinger... modern physics rides on those men's shoulders. Others also contributed greatly, such as Niels Bohr, Wolfgang Pauli, Arthur Eddington, Max Planck, Louis De Broglie, and others. It is not a very large group of men. In our present day, the closest thing that we have (at least publicly) to those giants of physics is probably Stephen Hawking, the man who lives in a wheelchair with Lou Gehrig's disease. Would it be surprising to know that all those scientists named above were profoundly religious or mystical in their worldview? Every single one of them knew that there was far more to the world than the materialistic worldview espoused by people such as [Carl Sagan](#). The giants of physics were deeply spiritual, each in their own way.

In Ken Wilber's *Quantum Questions*, he put the mystical writings of the fathers of twentieth century physics in one book. The mystical writings of Einstein, Heisenberg, Schroedinger, Eddington, de Broglie, and others are reproduced. Here are some quotes from the world's greatest physicists.

"I don't know what I may seem to the world, but, as to myself, I seem to have been only like a boy playing on the sea shore, and diverting myself in now and then finding a smoother pebble or a prettier shell than ordinary, whilst the great ocean of truth lay all undiscovered before me." - **Isaac Newton**, to a companion, not long before his death.[\[38\]](#)

"The scientific picture of the real world around me is very deficient. It gives a lot of factual information, puts all our experience in a magnificently consistent order, but it is ghastly silent about all and sundry that is really near to our heart, that really matters to us. It cannot tell us a word about red and blue, bitter and sweet, physical pain and physical delight; it knows nothing of beautiful and ugly, good and bad, God and eternity. Science sometimes pretends to answer questions in these domains, but the answers are very often so silly that we're not inclined to take them seriously...The scientific world-picture vouchsafes a very complete understanding of all that happens - it makes it just a little too understandable. It allows you to imagine the total display as that of a mechanical clockwork which, for all that science knows, could go on just the same as it does, without there being consciousness, will, endeavor, pain and delight and responsibility connected with it - though they actually are. And the reason for this disconcerting situation is just this: that, for the purpose of constructing the picture of the external world, we have used the greatly simplifying device of cutting our own personality out, removing it; hence it is gone, it has evaporated, it is ostensibly not needed...Whence come I, and whither go I? That is the great unfathomable question, the same for every one of us. Science has no answer to it." - **Erwin Schroedinger**[\[39\]](#)

"Please note that the very recent advance [of quantum and relativistic physics - Ed.] does not lie in the world of physics having acquired this shadowy character; it had ever since Democritus and Abdera and even before, but we were not aware of it; we thought we were dealing with the world itself." - **Erwin Schroedinger**[\[40\]](#)

"I should like to stress the following:

1. Modern science, in its beginning, was characterized by a conscious modesty; it made statements about strictly limited relations that are only valid within the framework of these limitations.
2. This modesty was largely lost during the nineteenth century. Physical knowledge was considered to make assertions about nature as a whole. Physics wished to turn philosopher, and the demand was voiced from many quarters that all true philosophers must be scientific.
3. Today physics has undergone a basic change, the most characteristic trait of which is to return to its original self-limitation.
4. The philosophic content of science is only preserved if science is conscious of its limits. Great discoveries of the properties of individual phenomena are possible only if the nature of the phenomena are not generalized *a priori*. Only by leaving open the question of the ultimate essence of a body, of matter, of energy, etc. can physics reach an understanding of the individual properties of the phenomena that we designate by these concepts, an understanding which alone may lead us to real philosophical insight." - **Werner Heisenberg**[\[41\]](#)

"The essential fact is simply that all the pictures that science draws of nature, and which alone seem capable of according with observational fact, are mathematical pictures...They are nothing more than pictures - fictions if you like, if by fiction you mean that science is not yet in contact with ultimate reality. Many would hold that, from the broad philosophical standpoint, the outstanding achievement of twentieth-century physics is not the theory of relativity with its welding together of space and time, or the theory of quanta with its present apparent negation of the laws of causation, or the dissection of the atom with the resultant discovery that things are not what they seem; it is the general recognition that we are not yet in contact with ultimate reality. We are still imprisoned in our cave, with our backs to the light, and can only watch shadows on the wall." - **James Jeans**[\[42\]](#)

"The fact is that there is a point, one single point in the immeasurable world of mind and matter, where science and therefore every causal method of research is inapplicable, not only on practical grounds but also on logical grounds, and will always remain inapplicable. This point is the individual ego. It is a small point in the universal realm of being, but, in itself, it is a whole world, embracing our emotional life, our will, and our thought." - **Max Planck**[\[43\]](#)

"You will hardly find one among the profounder sort of scientific minds without a religious feeling of his own... His religious feeling takes the form of a rapturous amazement at the harmony of natural law, which reveals an intelligence of such superiority that, compared with it, all the systematic thinking and acting of human beings is an utterly insignificant reflection...[regarding this feeling - Ed.] It is beyond question closely akin to that which has possessed the religious geniuses of all ages." - **Albert Einstein**[\[44\]](#)

Those are the words of the giants of physics. Here are the words of the "skeptics."

"...when I say I am glad I live in the century when the universe is essentially understood, I think I am justified." - **Isaac Asimov**[\[45\]](#)

"I am a collection of water, calcium and organic molecules called Carl Sagan." - **Carl Sagan**[\[46\]](#)

“... attitudes and beliefs can have nothing to do with properly conducted research and conclusions drawn therefrom.” - [James Randi](#) [47]

“Parapsychology is a farce and a delusion...” - [James Randi](#) [48]

“This is also a book about God... or perhaps about the absence of God. Hawking is attempting, as he explicitly states, to understand the mind of God... And this makes all the more unexpected the conclusion of the effort, at least so far: a universe with no edge in space, no beginning or end to time, and nothing for a Creator to do.” - [Carl Sagan](#) [49]

“There are only four different forces in existence...” - [Milton Rothman](#) [50]

Wilber made clear that the great physicists saw no conflict between religion and science. Wilber could have said "spirituality and science," but he said "religion," and I will deal with that. Wilber stated that the greatest physicists saw the conflict as not between science and religion, but between the bogus and the genuine, and science and religion has plenty of both. Bogus science and religion are the dogmatic and authoritarian aspects of them. "Religion" has "proofs" as science does. It can be tested. It is not a matter of blind faith or suspending one's mental faculties. I have pursued the mystical and the paranormal, and [I have my own proofs](#), but I cannot prove anything about it to anybody else. Each of us can only find our own proof, which is partly why our current science cannot truly investigate the nature of consciousness. Today's science *assumes* objectivity. Objectivity is probably a myth propagated by our five physical senses. The authoritarian dogmas in science *and* religion were what those physicists had a problem with.

As Heisenberg, Jeans and Schroedinger wrote, the theories and data of relativity and quantum theory showed those scientists that something was awry with the notion that science dealt with *reality*. It became obvious to the giants of physics that science was another artificial way of viewing the world, and had no ultimate answers, which helped propel them to their mystical worldviews. Although the greatest physicists of all time gladly admitted that we barely know anything, and kept science in perspective, realizing its limitations, those such as Sagan and Asimov were confident that science had it all figured out, or nearly. They typified the delusions of every age, thinking they were on the brink of knowing it all, or that they even had the tools and ability to figure it out.

There is a word for the attitude of the Sagans, Asimovs and "skeptics." It is called scientism. It is the worship of science and its methods, believing that it alone has the valid perspective of reality. It is another religion, with its priests and popes. Almost without exception, "[skeptics](#)" have proven themselves establishment defenders, scientific and otherwise. They are true believers of a different kind, and their political-economic situations have everything to do with their perspectives. "Pure science" does not exist.

My First Glimpse

I lived in an area with many professionals and scientists, largely serving the local military bases. Among the adults I knew during my childhood years, I was kind of "adopted" by most of my friends' parents, and one mentor in particular took me under his wing. He was one of the 20th century's greatest inventive minds, with inventions that [revolutionized entire industries](#). Others were so revolutionary that they were suppressed in the interest of preserving the status quo. *Every* invention was either stolen or suppressed, and he never made a dime from any of them.

Mr. Mentor was an engineer, and he spent many years doing mechanical work with his hands, and continually expressed his amazement at how poorly engineered the day's automobiles were, as he worked on them. One day, more than thirty years ago, he was pondering the problems of modern automobiles, and how they utilize energy. He began considering what an energy-efficient car might look like, if he could build one from scratch. Aspects of the issue had been rolling around in his head for years, but one day he was sitting

at a stoplight, and a vision suddenly came upon him. He saw the ideal car engine in his mind's eye, complete. He drove home, got a pencil and paper, and in a few minutes had sketched out his ideal engine for powering a car.

The patent for Mr. Mentor's engine expired long ago, and anybody can try to build one, but patents are meaningless when inventions such as Mr. Mentor's are considered. The protection people need when pursuing such technologies are not patents, but get-out-of-jail-free cards, bulletproof vests and guardian angels. I will present a brief description of Mr. Mentor's engine, to show not only that there are numerous viable alternatives to today's business-as-usual, but to also demonstrate how genius works. Dennis Lee was pursuing this very technology when he was first thrown into jail in 1988.

In the instance of Mr. Mentor's engine, it was not immediately stolen, partly because it was so radically different that it was not easy to initially comprehend. However, he had produced so many startling innovations by that time, even though many of the best were stolen from him, that the higher-ups took him seriously when he proposed one of his new "crazy" ideas. The federal government spent about \$250,000 to have Mr. Mentor's engine patented, and the government claimed rights to its use, because they funded the patent process. The government brought in an outside expert to assess it. He was a rocket scientist who helped save the U. S. space program in the early 1960s. He figured out why so many rockets were exploding as they took off (inconsistent combustion, similar to how a match head flickers when burning, except amplified zillions of times in a rocket, creating stresses that blew apart the early rockets) and also solved the problem. He met with Mr. Mentor, and after a lot of hand waving and blackboard drawings, the rocket scientist comprehended the fullness of what Mr. Mentor had come up with, and became its greatest champion.[\[51\]](#)

Then Mr. Mentor's engine became a big deal. During the hoopla, one person close to the situation told Mr. Mentor that he hoped he was not serious about actually developing his engine and making the internal combustion engine obsolete, because the Detroit car companies would then [have him murdered](#). The engine was a big deal nevertheless, and a rich industrialist offered to go into business with Mr. Mentor and the rocket scientist to develop and sell that engine. The only hitch was that the industrialist would own 95% of the company, with Mr. Mentor and the rocket scientist sharing in the other 5%. With a deal like that, all pursuit of the engine ended, and Mr. Mentor ended his career soon afterward, a bitter man. His engine was not forgotten, however.

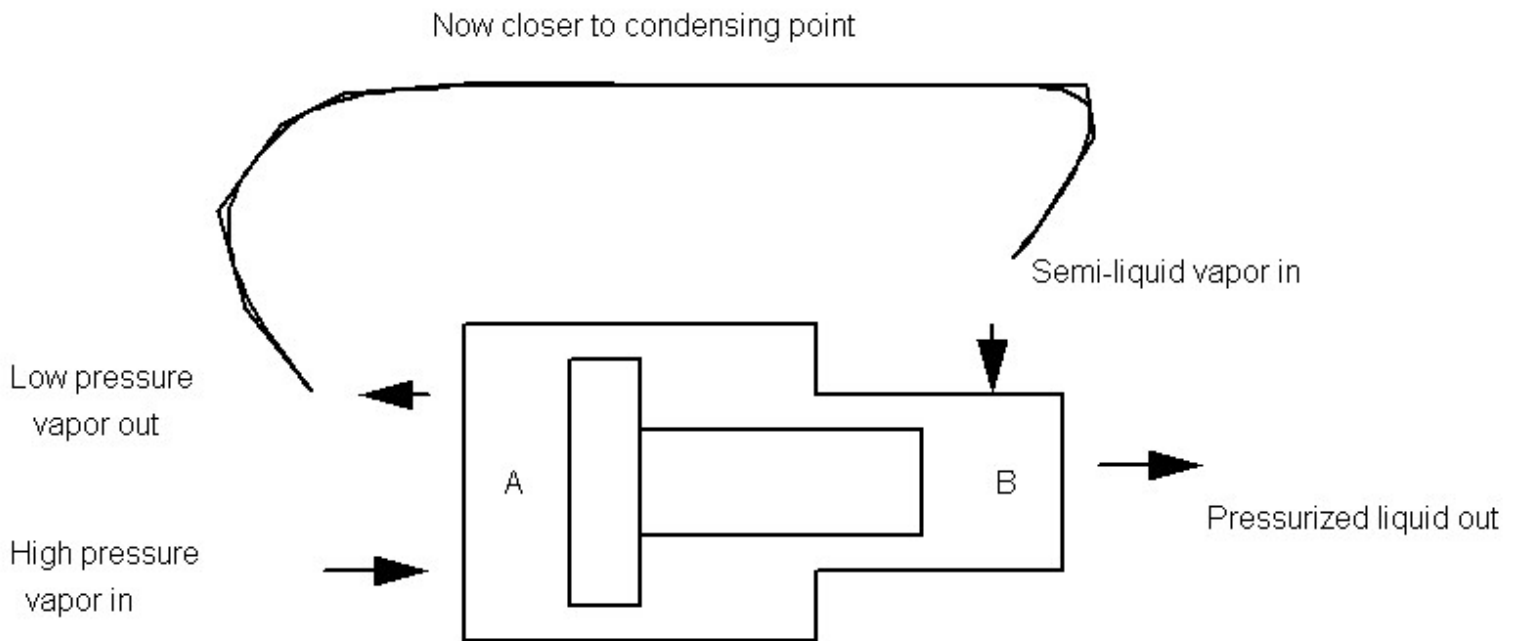
Not long after that engine created a stir in the government, 1973 rolled around and the OPEC oil embargo made the world energy situation headline news. In the wake of the energy crisis and Jimmy Carter's "declaration of war" on the energy issue, a huge federal study was launched regarding alternative engine designs, to conserve energy, oil in particular. Building on earlier analytical work performed by the government, the study quickly focused on Mr. Mentor's engine, and devoted about a third of its effort to analyzing it. Many man-years were spent analyzing Mr. Mentor's engine design. The study concluded that Mr. Mentor's engine was by far the most effective engine in the world for powering a car. A United States Senator, who had made a reputation as the alternative energy Senator, began calling Mr. Mentor at home in the wake of the study's published results. He begged Mr. Mentor to come to Washington D.C. to host congressional hearings regarding having his engine developed. By that time, Mr. Mentor was retiring an angry and bitter man, recalled the "make your funeral plans" advice he was given if he seriously considered pursuing the development of his engine, and the engine was pursued no further, although a company *did* make his engine (without consulting him) and drove it in a Rose Bowl parade in the 1970s, announcing that it was going to revolutionize the automobile industry. They quickly disappeared from the scene, probably [suffering the fate](#) that other companies had when they tried challenging Detroit's automotive oligopoly.

The rocket scientist was awed by Mr. Mentor's invention. He said that there were numerous "wrong turns" that his engine design could have taken, and that he estimated that Mr. Mentor's engine should have taken a team of engineers twenty years to design. It came to him in a flash at a stoplight. That was how Tesla also did his inventing. It had a lot to do with [psychic ability](#). The intuitive aspect of human consciousness is almost wholly neglected by the scientific paradigm, though its greatest theoreticians almost always had to thank their imaginations and intuitive ability for their breakthroughs, not their intellects.

Here is how Mr. Mentor's engine worked, my understanding coming partly from studying his expired patents, and partly from conversations with him many years ago. The engine, as with all engines, operated in a cycle.

The engine was an external combustion engine, not an internal combustion engine, meaning that the

combustion took place outside the engine and not inside it, as with a car engine. The working fluid began its journey in a boiler. The boiler was subjected to a flame created by burning the fuel. As the working fluid boiled, the gas expanded and left the boiler through a pipe. The working fluid's steam then met what Mr. Mentor called a pressure intensifier, which was one of his engine's major innovations. A drawing of the pressure intensifier and its position in the engine is presented below.



Crude drawing of pressure intensifier

The principle of the pressure intensifier was that high-pressure steam would come from the boiler and meet the piston head (area A in the drawing). As it pushed the piston down, it gave its energy to the piston, becoming a cooler gas at a lower pressure as it left the cylinder. The boiling point of any substance is determined by the attraction of the molecules to each other, and the temperature and the pressure it is subjected to. A pot of water, for instance, boils at 212° F at sea level on earth, but at less than 150° F on top of Mount Everest. If we put water in a jar and hook up a vacuum pump to create a vacuum, the water will boil at room temperature. The fluid that left the boiler was turned into steam by the heat applied by the flame. It gave energy picked up in the boiler to the piston, as it pushed it down. It left the cylinder cooler and at less pressure, which was closer to its condensing point than when it entered the cylinder. The journey of the working fluid makes its way to the piston's other side in the pressure intensifier (area B in my drawing). The amount of force exerted by the piston is easily calculated, and is the pressure of the gas multiplied by the piston head's surface. If the gas pressure was 100 PSI and the piston head's surface area was 10 square inches, 1000 pounds of force would be applied to the piston (100×10) on side A. On the piston's other side is another head. The pressure the piston exerted on the steam in area B would be the force exerted divided by the surface area of the piston's head. So, if the piston's other head was only two square inches in area, and 1000 pounds of pressure were exerted, the pressure the gas would be subjected to would be 500 PSI ($1000 / 2$). By knowing the pressure of the working fluid leaving the boiler (mainly determined by the boiler's temperature), and adjusting the surface areas of both heads of the piston, any desired pressure could be applied to the working fluid in the back end of the cylinder.

At a certain pressure and temperature, the working fluid would re-condense. Studying my [refrigerator discussion](#) may make some of this easier to understand. Not only would the working fluid re-condense, it could be made to be any pressure needed, just by varying the surface areas of the pressure intensifier piston's two heads. Let us say that 2000 PSI was desired, and the boiler sent out steam at 100 PSI. Then, the surface area of the piston's front end would need to be 20 times the surface area of the far end. In essence, the working fluid worked on itself, making a low-pressure liquid in the boiler a high-pressure liquid in the far end of the pressure intensifier. Some of the energy delivered at the boiler would have been expended driving the

piston downward, and that energy would be stored in the liquid's pressure on the other end. The high-pressure liquid would then enter a hydraulic accumulator, which was simply a reservoir where the high-pressure liquid rested. Because the boiler and pressure intensifier determined the pressure the reservoir was subjected to, the cooling liquid in the hydraulic accumulator would not affect the accumulator's pressure. As it cooled, the pressure would decrease, but would be offset by the pressure coming from the intensifier. A steady state would be achieved in the system, with the hydraulic accumulator's liquid awaiting its further journey. When the accumulator achieved the desired pressure, the boiler would turn off, just as the thermostat in one's home turns off the furnace, except it was pressure, not temperature, sensitive.

Hydraulic motors are highly efficient, at more than 90% efficiency. The fluid in the hydraulic accumulator would be fed to hydraulic motors. In the case of an automobile, the motors would be at the wheels. Each wheel could have its own motor. The car could run with one motor or four. The only limitation was if the car owner wanted to pay for four motors, three, two or one. Four would have been ideal, with every car having four-wheel drive, which is superior to two-wheel drive for safety and other reasons. Yet, three of the four motors could fail, and the car could still run. After the working fluid gave its energy to the hydraulic motor process, it would have been a low pressure liquid, perhaps near its boiling point, and would have been ready to go back into the boiler.

That is a brief description of the working fluid's travels through the engine, but there is more to tell. As a car drove down a city street and the stoplight turned red, when the driver put her foot on the brake, the hydraulic motors would reverse direction and act as pumps, pumping the hydraulic fluid back into the accumulator. Instead of making brake linings hot and wearing them out, the kinetic energy of the car would be put back into the system, not wasted. It was like putting the gasoline back into the tank after it had been burned. That was one of the more ingenious aspects of Mr. Mentor's engine.

Here are the problems that Mr. Mentor's engine solved.

- It was an external combustion engine, and solved several problems that plague internal combustion engines. The pollutants that resulted from incomplete combustion due to the rapid mechanical processes in internal combustion engines, such as carbon monoxide, would no longer be produced. Another issue was the high temperatures and pressures of internal combustion engines making atmospheric nitrogen react with atmospheric oxygen, creating the nitrogen oxides that not only make the air brown, but are also a component of acid rain and a greenhouse gas. With an external combustion engine, the burn could be perfected to the ideal burn, at a lower temperature and pressure than was in internal combustion engines. Mr. Mentor's engine would have produced almost exclusively carbon dioxide and water, which is the least polluting form of combustion there is.
- The prime mover (pressure intensifier) would operate at one speed, and in doing so could be made to operate at its ideal speed for maximum efficiency. No more running up and down the efficiency curve, as with today's car engines, as they operate over a wide spectrum of engine speeds. That was accomplished largely by uncoupling the prime mover from the drive train. Think of the engine and transmission of a car. The transmission directly relied on the engine moving in order to operate and propel the car. Another source of the pollution was the variable speed at which today's engines operate. The widely variable combustion is not only inefficient, but also partly how pollutants are created. In Mr. Mentor's engine, the pressure intensifier and hydraulic motors were separated by the hydraulic accumulator, which made them operate independently of each other, increasing the prime mover's efficiency.
- Mr. Mentor's engine would have reclaimed the energy lost due to braking in today's vehicles, putting it back into the hydraulic accumulator. That had numerous benefits, some not immediately obvious. One was that city driving MPG would have skyrocketed. The experts estimated that a mail truck driving through neighborhoods might achieve 200 MPG with Mr. Mentor's engine, mainly because it would be traveling so slowly that air resistance would have been minimal, which is where most energy is used in a car traveling down the highway at 60 MPH. Air resistance increases at the square of the vehicle's velocity. If city MPG for cars leapt to a mere 100 MPG, it would mean that only 20% as much fuel would be burned in town, meaning that 80% of the potential air pollution would have been eliminated, as well as reducing the thermal pollution that all Western cities experience. Not only that, the external combustion engine would have had near-perfect burning, and most American urban air pollution problems would have immediately disappeared. Also, it would have been a quiet engine, eliminating a great deal of noise pollution.

Not bad, for coming to him in a flash at a stoplight. Heisenberg's quantum physics came to him in a fevered weekend. Einstein's relativity came to him, complete one morning, as he woke up.^[52] They had the technical/analytical ability and training to assess how feasible their bright idea was. Many years later, I had a more mundane version of how Mr. Mentor had his stoplight vision, when I saw a way to get [every American truck driver home every night](#). I know that the intellect cannot claim credit for that flash of creative insight.

As with others like him, Mr. Mentor was intimately familiar with the technical issues, spending many years pondering the automobile's internal combustion engine and its problems. He had enormous analytical ability, getting the highest math score on a standardized test in his home state, earning him a full-ride scholarship to a major university. Without his great technical ability, what came to him at a stoplight would not have gotten very far, and the vision probably would not have come to him in the first place.

His long pondering of the issues brought him to the place where his insightful moment at the stoplight was valuable. Practical genius needs both the left and right sides of the brain to be working together, or stated another way, the creative and analytic abilities working in harmony. The creative spark can make itself known in a flash, while the analytical part often has to spend years validating it. Analysis without the creative spark can be virtually worthless, or worse. Many scientists have been frozen into the analytic and intellectual mode, and are unable to comprehend or experience the creative spark that illuminated the greatest geniuses, both scientific and spiritual. Even a far lesser light such as [Carl Sagan](#) had some idea regarding the importance of the intuitive side. Sagan was an inveterate marijuana smoker, believing that his best ideas came while stoned.

Mr. Mentor's engine never went anywhere, largely due to the inertia and corruption in today's system. The major government study was dutifully filed away and forgotten. Our system wastes a vast amount of talent and genius. Mr. Mentor was far from alone in being stolen from or ignored for his genius. It is [standard operating procedure in today's world](#). The military base Mr. Mentor worked at had many thousands of employees. Mr. Mentor estimated that the only creative talent there that amounted to much consisted of a handful of people. Birds of a feather flock together, and he knew the other great talents there. Generally, they were treated like he was. Mr. Mentor's superiors and "peers" even waited for people such as Mr. Mentor to come along, so they could steal their ideas. One thief actually laughed in Mr. Mentor's face, telling him that he was "stupid" enough to allow him to steal his idea.

His superiors would not even be sly about their theft. For instance, one standard procedure was when a scientist or engineer would write a scientific paper worthy of publication or oral delivery to a symposium, the bosses would step in, call the paper their work, and deliver it to accolades at the symposia. One oceanographer pal of Mr. Mentor wrote an outstanding paper. His boss told him that he would deliver it to a symposium and call it his own. The oceanographer was able to get into the symposium, watch his boss deliver the paper as his own, and see the accolades it received, with his boss bathing in the spotlight. He at least had the satisfaction of seeing that his work was well received, even though he received no credit for it. A major university try to recruit another one of Mr. Mentor's pals. One of the perks they waved under his nose was telling him that he would have many bright graduate students working for him, and when they came up with anything good, he could steal it and call it his own. It was standard operating practice at the university. That is how the "real world" works.

The thieves often could not even steal properly. They knew Mr. Mentor's inventions were something worth stealing, but they often could not even understand the rudiments. One system Mr. Mentor designed was stolen by one of the thieves, who rushed it into production. The thief had such a poor understanding of what he stole that it was made and installed upside down. Mr. Mentor laughed about it, but in truth, he would have been happier if the thieves had actually built it right side up.

How long will an inventor invent, when everything he does is suppressed or stolen? Not forever. Although nearly every home in the West uses technology that Mr. Mentor's inventions made possible, and companies made billions of dollars off of them, Mr. Mentor never received a dime of compensation or recognition. His tale is not that unusual. The military base where he worked raped all inventors such as Mr. Mentor, and all his buddies with any talent soon left that base, and most abandoned their careers. When Mr. Mentor slipped into his rocking chair in the 1970s, that base, which employed many thousands of people and made up the majority

of the local economy, did not have one operational system. The entire base and surrounding community was completely worthless, if deriving any benefit to the American people was its goal, all due to greed and stupidity.

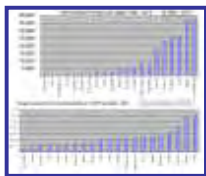
At age 16, I gained some understanding of what Mr. Mentor's engine could mean for the world, and how there were people "in charge" who would not welcome such innovations. At age 16, I began having my alternative energy dreams, and when that [voice spoke to me twelve years later, in 1986](#), I was able to pursue those dreams, although it did not turn out as I had hoped. We were trying to [marry Mr. Mentor's engine to the panels of Dennis Lee's heat pump](#) when the Big Boys lowered the boom on us.

World Energy Economics

With the U.S. leading the way, the world's white people (Europeans and their descendants, such as white Americans, Canadians, Australians, South Africans, New Zealanders, white residents of the former Soviet Union, etc.) comprise about 18% of the world population but consume more than 60% of its energy. Today, there is scarcely an ecosystem on earth that has not been plundered past its near-term recoverability, or has not been put under humanity's yoke, to primarily serve human needs and desires. The goal of ecosystem exploitation is nearly invariably the extraction of useful energy, usually in the form of food.

It is well known that the most reliable indicator of economic production is *energy consumption*. The first table below shows the gross domestic product for various nations, from the poorest to the richest. The per capita income of a Swiss citizen is more than 400 times higher than the per capita income of an Ethiopian citizen. The disparity is vast, but as the second table shows, the per capita income divided by the energy consumed is nearly a constant number. For Great Britain and Ethiopia, with a 200-fold disparity in income per capita, the ratio of income to energy consumption is 0.30 to 0.32, nearly identical.

In the table below, the nations on each end of the scale evidence special circumstances, such as Switzerland's reliance on efficient hydroelectric production, Japan's lack of control over its energy sources, or the economic hardship cases of India, Pakistan, Poland and Russia, largely because of the penalty they have paid for escaping the West's domination ("free market" exchange rates also affect this ratio), however temporarily. The ratio of income and energy consumption per person is fairly constant among the world's nations, from richest to poorest, from \$0.20 to \$0.50 of income per unit of energy (the energy derived from burning one KG of coal) consumed.



Click on image to enlarge.

In 2000, 23% of the United States' energy consumption came from burning coal, 24% by burning natural gas and 39% by burning oil; about 86% of U.S. consumption thusly came from burning fossil fuels. Nuclear energy was 8%, with hydroelectric and biomass at 3% each, with the typical "renewable" energy (geothermal, solar and wind) totaling about half of one percent of U.S. energy consumption. The United States accounts for slightly more than 25% of global energy consumption. Globally, the fossil fuel percentages of consumptions were nearly identical, and nuclear and hydroelectric energy were about 7% each, and "renewable" energy accounted for less than 1%.[\[53\]](#)

The "developing world" is "undeveloped" because the white world [actively prevented its development](#). With only so much of the world's resources to go around, preventing the world's poor from industrial development ensured that they would not compete for the world's resources, especially energy resources.

In the United States, more than 90% of its coal production is burned to make electricity (most of the remainder

is exported). Burning coal fuels about half of the United States' electricity production. Going back to [Carnot](#) and the limitations of heat engines, about two-thirds of the heat generated by burning coal is lost to the electric production process. In the parlance of the energy industry, such losses are known as "conversion losses," or "waste heat." Largely due to those losses of conversion, electricity is more expensive than other fuels, per unit of energy delivered to the home. Of the 97 quadrillion BTUs consumed in the United States in 1999, about 26 quadrillion were "wasted" in conversion losses during electricity production.

In summary, nearly 100% of U.S. consumption is used for the creation of heat energy (hydroelectric power generation is the only significant exception), and about 50% of that heat is directly used to heat things (mainly to create human-friendly environments), about 30% is wasted in conversion losses, and about 20% creates mechanical energy, to either propel transportation equipment or run electric devices (air conditioners count in that category). Those are rough numbers.

Because of those conversion losses, the cost of building and maintaining electricity plants and the electric grid, and the vast and still largely unaccounted costs of nuclear energy, electricity is nearly four times as expensive as natural gas. There are regional variations, and electric companies can give preferential pricing to consumers who use electricity for heating, but the 1999 price differential of 3.75 (residential electricity costs divided by residential natural gas costs) is close to the 4.0 rate that existed in 1980, when U.S. energy costs were near their all time highs in constant dollars. This discussion will use the 4.0 rate.

Of that 50% of U.S. energy consumption that goes to heat, most is used to heat human environments. Natural gas is used for about 70% of American residential space heating, with electricity used for less than 8%. The U. S. residential heating market is around \$45 billion per year, with the residential electric market around \$90 billion, and the U.S. energy bill is around \$600 billion.

A Case History in Alternative Energy Suppression

The adventures of Dennis Lee constitute an extraordinary case history of how alternative energy has been suppressed in America. His effort is perhaps the most sustained ever made to try bringing alternative energy to the American marketplace. An [ancillary essay](#) tells his tale, with the highlights presented here.

Dennis was raised in a family of migrant farm workers, left home at age 13, was a medic in the army and [ended up in combat in Southeast Asia](#). He had a [timely paranormal experience](#), just as he was about to commit suicide, and he devoted his life from that time forward to making the world a better place. After nearly being murdered by [organized crime](#) in Alaska, he fled to New Jersey and went to college, studying Utopian literature and social psychology. After his [college days](#) he went into the [construction business](#), trying to bring craftsmanship back to home building. His business was destroyed during America's first energy crisis, and he then [invented a card](#) that today has reincarnated in watered-down form as the Discover Card. He began that company with no capital and learned many hard lessons about how the business world operated. The [Mafia tried killing him](#), he became a Christian, and eventually the company went out of business. Dennis tried [giving it away](#) to the Christian community, but the company died.

Then Dennis got into the [energy conservation business](#), and eventually the [insulation business](#). He invented the energy industry's first [shared savings program](#). He had companies stolen from him, and just as another gangster was about to break his legs, Dennis became [paralyzed with Guillaine Barre Syndrome](#), from the neck down. The VA hospital that treated him nearly killed him three times due to their negligence. As he recovered from his paralysis, he [became involved with a company](#) that invented the [world's best heating system](#). He immediately became the most prolific seller of that equipment ever, and was flying high when the owners of the [heating system company stole all his money](#), and then the Mafia stole the rest. Dennis was on the brink of a [billion-dollar deal](#) to carpet America with that heating system when those criminals made their move.

Dennis ended up in [his home state of Washington](#), just when the "Whoops" energy disaster hit, and tried making the heating business happen in his hometown. His business associates again thwarted him, and [he went](#)

[to Seattle in 1984](#) to try it there. In [Seattle in 1985](#) he mounted what may be the greatest effort ever made to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace, and discovered that the energy establishment and the Mafia have a lot in common, except the Mafia may act more honorably. In the energy industry's attempt to wipe Dennis' company out, they were responsible for the [death of one of his employees](#).

[I met Dennis in Seattle](#), and worked for the company until my [boss helped steal it](#). Dennis was run out of the state and tried rebuilding his effort in Boston. [I followed him](#). In Boston, Dennis got his "[free energy](#)" idea, and we moved to California to tie into talent and money to make it happen, and that is when it *really* got rough. Technical innovations came to us that might have made free energy possible, and then they [lowered the sledgehammer on us](#), with Dennis nearly going to prison for life, and many lives were shattered. A handful of us stood up to the judicial establishment's criminal actions as it did the energy industry's bidding, and we prevailed, sort of. Dennis *only* spent two years behind bars, and has continued his free energy quest ever since.

Why Is There No Alternative Energy?

My [journey with Dennis](#) was a traumatic learning experience, and I went through years of slow disillusionment, with various salient moments ([1](#) - [2](#) - [3](#) - [4](#)) punctuating the process. It hit rock bottom for me when I, a committed pacifist, saw myself [in my mind's eye killing people](#), and liking it. When I had my lowest moment, I instead mortgaged my life to spring Dennis out of jail, and it worked.

It was in those days that my most surprising and painful realization hit me: [personal integrity is the world's scarcest commodity](#), and the reason we not only do not enjoy alternative or free energy today is not because there are energy gangsters doing their dirty deeds, but that not enough people care enough. As I began looking into [medicine](#), [American foreign policy](#) and elsewhere, I saw the same phenomenon. People to whom doing the right thing is more important than their reward for doing it is on the order of one in thousands. With that level of integrity, we just might be doomed. The only answer I can see is for more people to care more, and those who care more can also begin seeing vistas that have previously been largely invisible, which this web site is trying to help them see. Paradoxically, caring for others is probably the only way we can save ourselves.

The point of this essay is not if free energy is possible or not, with what Dennis is promoting or not. The point is that there is an energy establishment, and any move to try bringing innovation to the marketplace is met with the sledgehammer, Dennis' adventures being a historic example. With what happened to a relatively mundane effort to bring alternative energy to the marketplace, who can confidently say what else has, or has not, been suppressed? What happened to us [was fairly typical](#), but harsher, because Dennis' efforts threatened to have an *immediate impact in the marketplace*. That is when they take the gloves off. Inventors [tinkering in their garages](#) are largely left alone, unless they try getting something market-ready, or begin making noise.

On several fronts, our energy-production practices threaten to doom humanity. Today, the United States is engaging in [genocide in Iraq](#), as part of an effort to control the Middle East's oil. Under the rubric of the [War on Terror](#), the U.S. is moving to militarily control the world's most lucrative store of unexploited oil and gas deposits, in Central Asia. Atmospheric carbon dioxide makes the earth's surface 60° F warmer than it would otherwise be, making life on earth possible. During the 1700s, before the Industrial Revolution, there were about 275 parts per million (PPM) of carbon dioxide in earth's atmosphere. Burning fossil fuels has been almost entirely responsible for increasing the PPM to 365 today, for an increase of about 33%.

Other greenhouse gases have been increasing rapidly, due to humanity's ways. Methane is the other naturally occurring greenhouse gas. The destruction of the world's forests have increased the termite populations, as they feed off of the wreckage, and they produce methane as a byproduct of their digestion, as do domestic cellulose-digesting animals, which have also greatly increased. In addition, the paddy system of China creates a great deal of methane, from decaying manure and plant matter. Those factors have created more than a 140% increase in atmospheric methane since the 18th century. Methane makes up less than 2 PPM in earth's atmosphere, but it is also twenty times as effective at trapping infrared radiation as carbon dioxide is,

and makes up about 17% of today's greenhouse effect.

Chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs) are artificial chemicals made for refrigeration and other uses, and although they make up a tiny fraction of the atmosphere, their effect is tremendous. They not only are probably part of why the ozone layer is under duress, but they are thousands of times as effective as carbon dioxide at trapping infrared radiation, and CFCs make up 12% of the greenhouse gas effect.

Lastly, all the nitrous oxides created by high-temperature combustion (the brown haze in urban smog) are 120 times as potent a greenhouse gas as carbon dioxide, and nitrous oxides comprise 5% of the greenhouse effect.[\[54\]](#)

It does not take a rocket scientist to figure out what the effects may be, and we are seeing it today. Global warming is already happening. In the Northern Hemisphere, the glaciers have been rapidly shrinking. In the summer of 2001, I was on an arm of Glacier Peak, looking in awe at where the glaciers *were*. It appears that in about twenty years, Glacier Peak will be misnamed. People who have hiked in the Cascade Mountains for more than sixty years have told me that the rapid disappearance of the glaciers has been incredible to witness. I may witness the complete disappearance of the Arctic icepack. The effects will be far more dramatic than the polar bear becoming extinct. With the Arctic permafrost melting today, it is predicted that great amounts of methane will be released from that process, among the many catastrophic effects such a melting will bring (such as killing off all the far northern forests). There are also other theories about what is behind global warming, such as increased solar output[\[55\]](#) and increased volcanic activity, but those theories do not invalidate the increase in atmospheric carbon dioxide or its radiation-trapping effect.

Humanity has already commandeered more than half of the fruit of the world's ecosystems, and the greatest mass extinction episode since the [dinosaurs became extinct](#) 65 million years ago is underway. Today, one-fourth of earth's mammal species are in immediate threat of extinction, and one-eighth of earth's bird species.[\[56\]](#) Most of the world's fishing grounds have either collapsed due to over-fishing, or are on the verge of it. Wiping out the world's ecosystems for human benefit cannot continue much longer, and ecosystem collapses are already happening, initiated by human exploitation.[\[57\]](#)

The energy racket works on many levels. The automobile and oil companies banded together to create an industry front group called the Global Climate Coalition. They have tried defeating all international efforts to curb fossil fuel emissions. Their undermining of the Kyoto Protocol, which called for extremely modest reductions in fossil fuel emissions, is a case in point, especially with the current, [un-elected American president](#) in their back pocket. In 2000, even oil companies began admitting that global warming was a real phenomenon, and they abandoned the Global Climate Coalition, which then had to reorganize. Ideology and disinformation are two powerful tools they use. Academics such as [Julian Simon](#) purvey "scholarship" that shows that all is well. As [David Edwards](#) and others have been noting for many years, the oil companies bought up a handful of scientists to publicly display their "skepticism" that global warming is real, or a hazard.[\[58\]](#) Then, people such as Julian Simon and our [supine media](#) feature them as [credible scientists](#), their interest-conflicted opinions counting just as much as that of the 3000 scientists that make up the United Nations' Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC). It goes further than that.

The IPCC has been charting the effects of global warming, and the potentially catastrophic effects that are just around the corner. The only real debate is whether earth's surface will increase by "only" a few degrees or ten in the next century, an event that may be unique in earth's multi-billion-year history. Oceans will rise, perhaps dramatically, as the polar ice caps disappear. Superstorms are already happening, with natural disasters increasing at a rate of 6% per year for the past generation, as the casualty insurance industry well knows. Island nations such as the Maldives will simply disappear under the rising ocean. Where I sit as I write these words may be underwater in my lifetime, if the oil companies have their way. If we get the predicted several degree rise in temperatures, under the current methods and technologies employed, it may mean the deaths of billions of people from [starvation](#) and [disease](#), which will likely trigger nuclear wars, or worse, even if we do not [wage Armageddon](#) over the energy sources. Each IPCC report has been more ominous than the last, and the mainstream news today is filled with articles on shrinking and collapsing ice caps.[\[59\]](#)

There is a plethora of other problems created by burning fossil fuels. Atmospheric oxygen is captured

and combined into water when hydrocarbons are burned, which has been [decreasing atmospheric oxygen](#). Atmospheric oxygen is the raw material for the ozone layer. So, declining atmospheric oxygen may be contributing to the ozone layer hole. Polluting the oceans is killing off the photosynthesis that ocean algae produces, which comprises about 80% of all earthly photosynthesis, which creates oxygen as a byproduct.

The United States is the only nation on earth that has [consistently opposed any limitations on the use of nuclear weapons](#), undermining every treaty it can. Nuclear weapons are the ultimate energy weapons these days, creating a horrific *burst of energy*. In April 2002, the United States snubbed the Comprehensive Test Ban Treaty meeting in Vienna. It has attacked and undermined every organization, and attempted to sack every official, who attempts to limit chemical weapons (Jose Bustani was sacked in April also), unconventional weapons inspectors (Hans Blix was "investigated" by the [CIA](#) in April, because his findings did not support the "weapons of mass destruction" fraud angle the U.S. is trying to use to justify [invading Iraq](#)) and anything or anybody else who gets in the U.S.' way.[\[60\]](#) If there ever was a rogue state, it is the United States.

Demagogues throughout the millennia have exploited human gullibility and complacency, and quite effectively. Adolf Hitler wrote in his *Mein Kampf*,

"The great masses of people in the very bottom of their hearts tend to be corrupted rather than consciously and purposely evil...therefore, in view of the primitive simplicity of their minds, they more easily fall a victim to a big lie than to a little one, since they themselves lie in little things, but would be ashamed of lies that were too big."

Hitler exploited that human tendency to deceive to mount [history's most destructive war](#), born of economic hardship. Germany and [Japan](#) wanted to come to the imperial card game with the other big players - Britain, France and the United States in particular - but the [imperial powers already "owned" the world](#). Today's political-economic systems are simply more refined means of exploitation, with most Americans scarcely realizing the ways in which they are exploited. The [Zero-Sum Game](#) is still being played, but a [huge body of lies](#) has been erected (in America, at least) to make it seem that it is not. The term "[American Empire](#)" seems like an oxymoron to most Americans, which demonstrates how effective the indoctrination systems are.[\[61\]](#)

In theory, the [Industrial Revolution](#) increased humanity's real wealth, as human-friendly products were made in factories. The world's *real wealth* bank account, however, shows no such thing. In reality, the bank account has been drained at an unprecedented rate. All those fossil fuels were the result of life forms putting energy into earth's "wealth bank" (or even worse, if [Gold](#) is right). Drawing that energy wealth out "of the bank," at a rate about one million times greater than it went in, has fueled the past 200 years of Western "progress." *Hundreds of millions of years* of fossil fuel creation will be burned up in mere *hundreds of years*.

As [Carl Sauer](#) wisely perceived, the so-called wealth created during the Industrial Revolution is largely fictitious; our system measures the output, but not the cost. If our fossil energy sources went away tomorrow, the West would largely and quickly revert to the pre-industrial economy of Europe, using feet and animals for transportation, and most who survived the transition would become farmers again. The human population would decline, commensurate with the available food energy, which would decline with de-industrialization. Plundering ancient reserves of sunlight is not wealth-creating activity, and the long-term environmental devastation is a cost that humanity will be repaying for a long, long time, if we even survive it.

The energy industry probably does not deserve to exist. Dennis was working toward a thermodynamic answer to free energy. Others work with vortex energy, magnets, energy from the "vacuum" and other things. What is coming soon for humanity is the end of moving part technology. Future free energy machines will have no moving parts and last nearly indefinitely, eliminating the energy industry. Even conventional solar technology could probably meet the world's energy needs today, but the energy oligopolies have bought up those technologies and seem to be developing them at a snail's pace. Why is this?

During the past generation, the energy bill in America has fluctuated between 7% and 10% of the national economy. Right there is 8% of the economy that is total deadweight, lining the pockets of the energy gangsters while devastating the environment, and murdering millions of people in places such as [East Timor](#), [Nigeria](#) and [Iraq](#) to keep the cheap oil flowing. Eight percent is conservative. Most of America's [defense budget](#) today (around 4% of the economy) is there to secure access to foreign oil supplies and other commodities. The interest on the national debt is about 40% of the energy industry's revenues, and is mainly the result of all the military spending since World War II. A significant chunk of that is related to keeping the international arena safe for oil production and importation to the United States. Between 1973 and 1995, the share of foreign oil in America's consumption doubled, from 26% to 52%.^[62] The number will only climb, and is one more factor that brings recent events in Iraq and [Afghanistan](#) into a sharper focus.

When discussing the *real* economy, where price tags are put on things the market does not value (such as environmental devastation, the cost of the military, interest on the national debt, the human cost of mass murder and genocide to keep control over the oil), the total become immense. Could the true cost of the energy industry be half of our economy? More? Putting a price on human life is macabre. If our oil greed leads to World War III, what price tag goes on destroying humanity and the planet? I doubt the economists can perform that analysis.

When Dennis teamed up with [Yull Brown](#), Dennis and I spoke at Department of Energy (DOE) hearings regarding the disposal of nuclear waste in America. Brown's Gas can apparently transmute nuclear material, once again doing something that [conventional physics](#) regards as "impossible." The Brown's Gas and nuclear material demonstration has been done many times, even in front of DOE personnel with their Geiger counters in hand. The nuclear waste hearings were a ruse to create a fig leaf of consent for the program that was already chosen by the Big Boys. At the hearings, I spoke first about Brown's Gas and its potential, and Dennis went next, trying to convince the DOE to at least look into the Brown's Gas solution, instead of burying the waste in the earth, hoping that nothing happens to it for the next 250,000 years.

The meeting we attended was in South Carolina, next to the Savannah nuclear facility that nearly glows at night from the waste of America's nuclear weapons program. The hearings were sparsely attended, mainly by the contractors who stand to make a killing from "managing" nuclear waste. As it stands today, there will probably be more than one trillion dollars spent to "manage" the nuclear waste problem, and managing it just means sticking it in the ground and hoping it never comes back up. It is similar to whistling in the dark, but if something bad happens, future generations (if there are any) will likely pay for it, not us. The Brown's Gas proposal could do the job for a few percent of the trillion dollar total, and it would be a permanent solution, not something that would come back to haunt future generations.

When I began speaking, it got people's attention as I related the facts of Brown's Gas and the numerous demonstrations of its transmutational properties. The recent motion picture *Chain Reaction* is a thinly disguised story about Yull Brown and his discoveries. The people who made that movie picked Brown's brain for a few days, years ago, leading him to believe they were going to help his project get off the ground. After they picked his brain they disappeared, and a couple years later their movie *Chain Reaction* appeared, without giving Brown a cent.

After I related the facts, Dennis went into his salesman's mode and a DOE man who ran the hearings approached us in the parking lot after our first presentation. He said that we were the *third group* that had spoken at the hearings, presenting a neutralization technology to solve the problem. He said he was excited about what we had presented and would do what he could at the DOE, but admitted that he was an underling with little power. Then he said something I will never forget,

"There are people who stand to make a lot of money in managing nuclear waste. If your solution does not make them money, it will not go anywhere."

That is the reality of nuclear waste management. The point is making a financial killing today, and setting up

a racket that will see the [dollars flow in for generations](#).

When I was with Dennis briefly in 1996 -1997, there was an “inventor” who was making bootlegged versions of Brown’s Gas machines, while saying that there was no real patent protection that Brown had, which was probably true, but it was not exactly an ethical position to take. He also criticized Dennis, saying that he treated Brown poorly. The opposite was true. We treated Brown like a king, and paid him like one. Back in 1996, Dennis told me that the Brown’s Gas “inventor” was a different kind of provocateur than [Mr. Hit Man](#) was. Mr. Hit Man worked on a ruthless level, [where people can die](#). The Brown’s Gas “inventor” however, just copied whatever Dennis did, trying to take the wind out of his sails by offering a pirated version of his wares. I did not know why Dennis thought that way about the inventor, besides seeing what he was doing with Brown’s Gas. The next year however, a “fringe science” journalist wrote a book about the “coming energy revolution.” She featured that Brown’s Gas “inventor,” and featured his “Low Temperature Phase Change” invention, where he was going to try making free energy by using heat pump energy to try running a heat engine.^[63] When I read that, I began thinking that he might be exactly what Dennis said he was, because “[Low Temperature Phase Change](#)” was the exact term that Dennis coined when he began making his free energy noise in 1986.

Marginalizing the true pioneers is how the establishment works, even on its fringes. [Tom Bearden](#) has documented the T. Henry Moray story well, as have others.^[64] Moray was a generation ahead of his time in developing the first semiconductors we know of, in the 1920s, and developed a free energy device that was demonstrated many times in conditions that seemed to preclude any other conceivable energy source. The device was disassembled and reassembled many times. Franklin Roosevelt directed the U.S. Rural Electrical Administration (REA) to work with Moray, and an agent from the REA destroyed Moray’s prototype with a hammer. Moray had gunfights in his lab with various saboteurs. His car was fired on and bullets passed through his car. It is one of the more high profile cases of how a free energy pioneer was wiped out. Writing [Tesla](#) out of the history books is standard operating procedure, while his failed rival Edison is a household word.

What this essay has not yet discussed are “free energy” demonstrations that members of our organizations have witnessed over the years. [Tom Bearden’s talk](#) at Hoagland’s conference might seem to be paranoid conspiracy theorizing but Bearden was talking about *experiences*, not theory. One free energy demonstration we had was from an inventor that Bearden also worked with. The technology appeared extremely genuine, but the inventors were receiving awe-inspiring suppression. There are also stories about technologies being violently wiped out, entire families murdered, and their houses set on fire and bulldozed, tales not told me by “conspiracy theorists,” but hard-nosed scientists.

It appears as if Tom Bearden, as he has reached his 70s, has finally [decided to go for it](#). The free energy technology that he and his friends hope to put on the market is similar to technology that I have known of for many years. As with [Fischer challenging Carnot’s assumption of an ideal gas](#), or Einstein’s challenging of Newton’s *assumption* of absolute time and space, the technical paper that Bearden and friends have published challenges the [theories of electricity at their root](#), going clear back to when James Maxwell was doing the original work. I know highly qualified scientists who have watched that technology in action. It is very real.

Whether Bearden and friends live long enough to make it happen depends on many factors, including how the public supports them, or does not. Hearing Bearden talk about his technology is an amazing experience, and not something the layman can easily follow. It was difficult to keep up with him, and the explanation borders on the surreal, where Bearden says the key is taking advantage of a “negative time wave,” making time run backward, and taking advantage of the fourth dimension. It might seem ludicrous, but the proof is watching it work, and scientists I respect have done so. With no moving parts, and being able to send excess energy back where it came from, for zero environmental impact (not even thermal pollution), this may be the energy of the future.

The potential of free energy is a lot bigger than just eliminating earth’s most destructive industry. Free energy is probably the greatest single step in toppling the [Zero-Sum-Game](#) paradigm that humanity has been operating under for the past 10,000 years. With free, renewable, non-polluting energy, especially when combined with machines, robotics and computers (going back to the basics of the [rise of humanity](#) - energy, manipulative ability and intelligence) the reasons why humans exploit each other and the environment can evaporate, and humanity can finally begin to grow up. The kill-and-be-killed game that humanity has played

for the entirety of history can end, and free energy is probably the most important first step. Without free energy, the rest may be close to impossible, unless the world human population declines to a tiny fraction of today's.

Accordingly, it is collective insanity to sit and wait for Dennis Lee or Tom Bearden to make it happen, or criticize them if they do not. It is time for humanity to grow up and accept responsibility for what is, and [dare to create](#) the world that prophets such as Jesus spoke of: heaven on earth. Technically, it is child's play, but if we do not wake up and care, it is an impossible dream, and this nightmare will continue until humanity exterminates itself.

The Greatest Energy of All

There is a lot more to this energy business than Dennis Lee, burning oil, and razing forests to burn it and plant crops. Einstein's immortal $E=MC^2$ makes everything in our universe equivalent to energy.[\[65\]](#) Few scientists will try disputing Einstein's equation. However, what is the basis of energy? What happened before the Big Bang? Did everything come from nothing, as the Big Bang asserts, in a theory that seems to be a warmed-over version of "Let there be light"?

The greatest scientific minds I have known were mystical in their perspective, realizing science's limits. History's greatest physicists [thought similarly](#). If I may be so foolish, I am going to hazard some speculations about the nature of energy and its relationship to this alternative/free energy conundrum.

Mystical literature often discusses the emotional journey that humanity is on. Emotions are a source of truly unimaginable power. [Seth](#) once said that an average, garden-variety human emotion, the kind one might experience while reading the newspaper, has more energy in it than it takes to send a rocket to the moon. If that is the case, it sure does not appear that way to earthly humans, though the fear of strong emotional states is highly evident in American culture. Many American men, especially those of older generations, are [emotional cripples](#).

Nevertheless, sources I respect, such as Robert Shapiro's [Zoosh](#), say that human emotions are incredibly powerful, and the uncontrolled (or unconscious) aspect of human emotions can be highly dangerous for other physical species to be around. That is apparently one reason why "[alien abductions](#)" seem to always happen with the humans losing consciousness. "Abducted" humans are put to sleep partly because if they were awake, their emotional reactions can kill the "aliens" in the vicinity. Most humans will agree to the power that emotions possess, although it is not always pleasant to have them. Yet, what underlies emotions? There is interplay of emotion and mind happening. They do not seem to be the same thing, and mystical sources state that that is the nature of the polarity and paradox of our world. Beyond this plane, there comes a point where feelings and thoughts unify into the same thing, as all of creation is one. Nice idea, but nobody here can really experience such a concept.

Humanity is on an [evolutionary journey](#), and the critical goal at this time is to come to a new level of emotional maturity, and bring the heart into its rightful place, which is being awake and in charge. Mystical sources have long stated that all emotions are aspects of love energy, which is what God *is*, and it is the energy that has created this universe, and all of Creation. Emotions can be seen as aspects of love, and rigidly (fearfully) holding onto any of them is where we get into trouble. Embracing all emotional states at once reduces it all to love. That is partly what Jesus was all about: demonstrating the power of love. With love, anything is possible, in terms we can barely glimpse. Love can move mountains, because mountains *are* love, as are we.

As we walk this immense spiritual journey, learning who and what we are, in this dense dimension of limitation, some are using us, [feeding off of our negative emotional energy](#). [Michael Roads' encounters with them](#) are mind-blowing. Although [George Bush and friends](#) may think they are "only" grubbing for money and power, and inducing fear and misery in the general population for dark ends, beings are above them in the food chain, feasting off of Bush and friends as well, and the fear they induce and experience themselves. In this system, *everybody* is ultimately a loser, in ways that most cannot, and dare not, imagine.

Even if that seems too way out, the tactic of taking advantage of fear, and controlling the great herd of people, is easily comprehensible. Even a materialistic rationalist such as Noam Chomsky says that “induced fear” is how the ruling classes manipulate the masses, especially in “democratic” societies. [Orwell's 1984](#) stated the same thing. That is what drives the “war on drugs,” the “war on terror,” the “war on communism,” the “war on cancer,” etc. Chomsky sees little hope that humanity will manifest enough collective intelligence to prevent its demise by its own hand. He is one of the most humane and courageous people that America has produced, and he is having a difficult time staying optimistic, particularly after the [World Trade Center attacks](#).

A great deal of the manipulation can be chalked up to reality control, as Orwell also wrote about in his prophetic [1984](#). I was told a [steady stream of lies for my entire childhood](#), which apparently was to set me up to believe all the “reasonable” lies I would be fed as an adult. As we unthinkingly adopt the paradigms that are fed us, they [blind us](#), so we can be easily manipulated and controlled. The scientists who laugh at “free energy” as “impossible” are the professional descendants of those who laughed at the notion of [Edison's light bulb](#), the [Wright brothers' airplane](#), the findings of [Naessens'](#) and [Rife's](#) microscopes, the transmutational properties of [Brown's Gas](#) and [LamCo COPs of seven](#). Until they investigate with an open mind, they *cannot have* an informed opinion on the issue. Also, they will need to use a little creativity, so they can see past the barriers to comprehension that reductionistic analysis can produce.

As we are brainwashed into what is “possible,” we are easily manipulated. As “scientists” and others automatically reject “free energy” as “absurd,” the [Zero-Sum Game](#) is further enforced, on a subtle and largely unconscious level. Then, transparently false rationales are concocted to create a superficially noble cover story for [killing off a generation of Iraqi children](#), so the United States secures [cheap access to oil](#) and big profits for the oil companies who own the American president. All the exploitation is justified, because everybody is operating from the Zero-Sum-Game *assumption*. There has been some “[progress](#),” where legal slavery has supposedly been abolished, but it has largely been replaced with subtler forms of slavery. That is what ideology is mainly about: getting the exploited to accept their circumstances, and making the violators and exploiters “right.”

The foundation of earth's ecosystems - the acquisition and use of energy - which humanity rides atop, has never changed. Kill-or-be-killed is not only a tired game; humanity has reached the stage where the arena is being destroyed, due to the game itself. The, “I win, you lose” game is the epitome of the [Young Soul](#) awareness. Free, gentle, non-polluting, forever renewable energy [can trigger the next step in our journey back to our divine origins](#), to where we were before we took our “[fall](#).”

In very real terms, the love for humanity that Dennis Lee has is directly related to his “free energy” quest. Love *is* energy, and love is the *only* answer.

Peace.

Footnotes

[1] Nobody working in the field of anthropology disputes that the fossil evidence supports the notion that humanity's evolutionary ancestors lived in Africa. In early 21st century anthropology, the primary question is if *Homo sapiens sapiens* evolved in Africa or among descendents of the members of *Homo erectus* that began migrating beyond Africa somewhat less than two million years ago. The majority view today is that *Homo sapiens sapiens* evolved in East Africa somewhere between 200,000 and 100,000 year ago, and as they migrated across the planet, particularly after their “great leap forward” about 40,000 years ago, they displaced all other hominid species, including Neanderthals, who are likely also descended from *Homo erectus*. Recent advances in molecular biology (where DNA can be tested) have tended to support the “Out of Africa” hypothesis, although there is controversy swirling around even some of the most elementary concepts. For some relatively recent popular books on the subject, see Ian Tattersall's *The Fossil Trail*, Jared Diamond's *The Third Chimpanzee* and Christopher Stringer and Robin McKie's *African Exodus*.

[2] For this early history of energy and humanity, I have used many sources. The Internet has helped at times, as have encyclopedias such as *Encarta*. Also, books such as Andrew Goudie's *The Human Impact on the Natural*

Environment, Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, Jared Diamond's *Guns, Germs and Steel*, and other works have helped, such as some of my college textbooks. There is plenty of controversy about numerous aspects of the distant human past, and this rendition hews more toward the orthodox viewpoint today. This web site points out numerous suppressions of data that have failed to conform to the orthodox theories, such as what happened to [Virginia Steen-McIntyre](#). All views of the ancient past are subject to radical revision as more becomes known. If the [UFO phenomenon finally comes into the open](#), a lot may change.

[3] Jared Diamond's *The Third Chimpanzee* surveys the mass extinctions that followed in humanity's wake, including how the English completely exterminated the native inhabitants of Tasmania in the 18th and 19th centuries.

[4] Paul Martin of the University of Arizona first presented the "overkill" hypothesis for North American megafauna extinctions in 1967. Peter Ward of the University of Washington is considered a leading investigator/author in the field of mass extinctions. Don Grayson, also of the University of Washington, is the leading voice on refuting the idea that humanity drove the megafauna to extinction, particularly in North America.

In his *The Call of Distant Mammoths*, published in 1997, Ward presents a multi-disciplinary inquiry of the subject and shows how driving the megafauna to extinction did not mean killing off every last one, but reducing their numbers to a level where they could easily go extinct if other factors impacted them, such as a few years of bad weather or other natural disaster. Ward finished his book by presenting what he considered the last word on the subject (at least for now), which was the research of Dan Fisher on mammoth tusks. By studying the growth rings on mammoth tusks (like tree rings), Fisher was able to determine gestation rates for females, because their tusks have little growth when gestating, as their available nutrients (especially calcium, as far as tusk growth goes) are dedicated toward the growing fetus. The ring study showed that as mammoths were going extinct, the females were reproducing at vibrant rate, a rate that would not occur if they were starving, and a rate (a birth every four years) that suggested they bred quickly to make up for rapidly declining numbers, as the birth rate equaled the birth rate of today's elephants that are actively hunted by humans. Grayson has been also publishing his research findings, and recently made the case that there is not enough evidence of humans at megafauna kill sites to support the notion that humans hunted them all to extinction.

There are other concepts such as "keystone" species that support arguments that the Pleistocene hunters did not need to kill off every member of every species to tip the scales in the direction of mass extinctions. The debate will probably rage for many years, but I consider the evidence for mass extinctions soon after humans first arrived to be quite persuasive, particularly when there is so much evidence for it happening in historical times. Also, the primary other theory of late-Pleistocene mass extinction, climate change, has serious shortcomings, such all those extinct species survived drastic climate changes during the previous millions of years of glaciation cycles, to "coincidentally" go extinct when the latest interglacial period was accompanied by a new super-predator that those species had never encountered before. Also, mass extinctions happened where there was no drastic climate change (as in South America and Australia), but the megafauna all became extinct soon after humans arrived. It is theorized that humans did not necessarily hunt the Australian megafauna to extinction, but used fire to clear the land as a subsistence tool, and thereby drove the megafauna there to extinction.

[5] See Milton Meltzer's *Slavery, A World History*, pp. 1-3.

[6] See Arens, *The Man-Eating Myth*.

[7] See Charles Mann's "1491," *The Atlantic Monthly*, March 2002, p. 50. See also Goudie, *The Human Impact*, pp. 78-80.

[8] A good book that summarizes this process is Thom Hartmann's *The Last Hours of Ancient Sunlight*. See also Goudie's *The Human Impact*, pp. 160-202; 37-105.

[9] See Orwell, *The Orwell Reader*, 1984 edition, p. 363.

[10] See Jack Weatherford's *Indian Givers*, pp. 59-63. His idea is not so radical anymore, and is becoming accepted.

[11] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, p. 121.

[12] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, p. 178.

[13] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, p. 99.

[14] See Barbara Tuchman's *A Distant Mirror*.

[15] See Carl Sauer's *Northern Mists*.

[16] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, p. 164.

[17] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, p. 358.

[18] William Duffy's *Sugar Blues* is the classic treatment of the ills that refined sugar causes "civilized" humankind.

[19] The English "settlers" also used the natives of Tasmania for dog food as they "settled it." There were *only* 5,000 aboriginal Tasmanians, so the dog food period could not have lasted long.

[20] See Charles Mann's "1491," *The Atlantic Monthly*, March 2002.

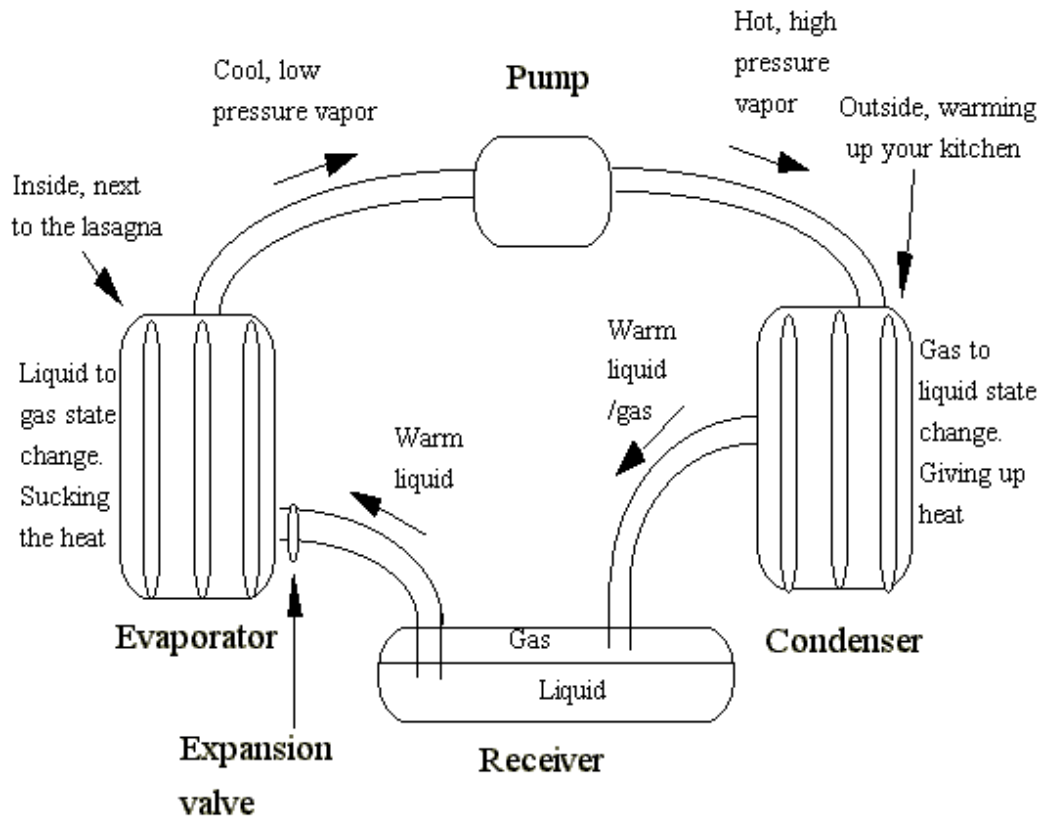
[21] Fahrenheit is known as a relative temperature scale. The temperature needs to be converted into an absolute temperature in order to calculate the maximum possible efficiency. William Kelvin was knighted for his work with gases, and he theorized a minimum possible temperature, known today as absolute zero. The Rankine (R) temperature scale is the absolute temperature scale that uses the Fahrenheit degree interval. 0° F is equal to 460° R. So 2000° F and 55° F convert to 2560° R and 515° R, and the Carnot equation equals $(2560-515)/2560 = 80\%$. That means that the steam turbine at the local electric company can get no more than an 80% efficiency.

[22] $2560/(2560-515) = 1.25$

[23] The reason why heat engines combined with heat pumps can provide more energy than simply burning heat engine fuel for heat is because the heat pump is not heating the exhaust medium back to the temperature of the heat engine's boiler. If a steam turbine burned coal to get 2000° F boiler temperatures (as today's electric companies do), getting electricity-conversion 35% efficiency, and a heat pump used the resultant electric energy to heat up a lake to 2000° F, its COP would obviously be low, probably far less than 0.5. Then $35\% \times 0.5$ is 17.5%. If the coal was burned in the home, it would be burned at more than 90% efficiency, so it would obviously be cheaper to heat the home with coal. In the real world, however, most heating energy is used to merely create human-friendly environments, so coal burned in the home is only used to heat a home to 72° F, not an electric company boiler to 2000° F. A heat pump taking heat from the environment at 40° F, and moving it inside a home to heat it up, could theoretically reach a COP of 16.6 $((532)/(532-500))$, in degrees Rankine). If heat pumps could reach half the Carnot ideal, as steam turbines do, then we have a COP of about 8, which, combined with steam turbine efficiency of 35%, means that for every unit of heat released when coal was burned at the electric company, 2.8 (0.35×8) units of heat could be delivered into the home. On a macroeconomic basis, this is highly energy efficient, nearly three times as efficient as burning coal to create heated, human-friendly environments.

[24] In an electric company steam turbine, water is the working medium, going through its cycle of liquid to gas and back to liquid. In a household refrigerator, a substance called Freon is most often used. Freon is an artificial compound made from carbon, chlorine and fluorine, which has a low boiling point, -22° F at atmospheric pressure. Every substance has a melting and boiling point, and the pressure it is subjected to will determine that point. Water can boil at room temperature if it is subjected to a vacuum. Pressure cookers work by the reverse principle. Subjecting water to greater than atmospheric pressure will raise its boiling point. So, the pressure cookers that Americans use in their kitchens may operate at 230° F instead of the usual 212° F at sea level, so the food cooks faster.

In a refrigerator, the boiling and condensing point of the Freon is manipulated by altering the pressure it is subjected to. The diagram below depicts Freon's journey through a kitchen refrigerator.



In this illustration, the Freon's journey will begin in the receiver, as a liquid, lying in the receiver's bottom. It is at 80° F. The Freon will boil at -22° F at atmospheric pressure, but in the receiver, it is under about 100 pounds per square inch (PSI). The pump circulates the Freon through its cycle, and the Freon is pushed through a tube where it meets an expansion valve. An expansion valve merely allows the liquid Freon through at a measured rate, where the other side of the valve has a lower pressure. As the Freon goes through the valve (the valve works just like the valve on an aerosol can), it meets a lower pressure past the valve, of 37 PSI. At that pressure, Freon will boil at 40° F, and boil it does. When something boils, it takes a great deal of energy to break the bonds that attract the molecules to each other. It takes about six times as much energy to make water boil when it is at 212° F than it does to raise its temperature from 55° F to 212° F. To test that number, if you put a pan of water on the stove to boil, it will take about six times as long for it to boil dry than it took to make it boil in the first place. That threshold at the boiling point is known as a state or phase change (the water changes from one state to another, liquid to gas in this case), and it is an immense energy sponge. The energy is going into breaking the inter-molecular attraction of the water molecules.

As that Freon boils at 40° F in the evaporator (it is obvious why that component is so named), the evaporator attains a 40° F temperature. The air in the refrigerator compartment, where the lasagna sits, is 45° F. According to Carnot's observation, the air in the refrigerator compartment will give its heat to the evaporator, because the air is warmer. In a running refrigerator, that evaporator is where the heat is being continually sucked from the refrigerator, keeping the lasagna cool, slowing its decay rate. As the Freon boils, the pressure goes up, and oddly, the high-pressure liquid becomes a low-pressure gas at a much cooler temperature. As the Freon gas continues its journey through the refrigerator, it encounters the pump that makes it all work. The pump slams the Freon to the other side, and the Freon gets "squeezed." As it is "squeezed" by the pumping process it attains a much higher pressure, such as 100 PSI, and accordingly gets much hotter. Energy systems have entropy and enthalpy, or disorder and useful energy. In that instance, increasing entropy would be greater disorder of the molecules, and increasing enthalpy would be the increase of temperature. With nowhere to go, even losing its entropy, as the molecules are forced closer together, the temperature increases.

The Freon reaches 130° F on the pump's other side. The high temperature gas then enters the condenser. The condenser is exposed to the kitchen air. Sometimes a fan will force the kitchen's air across the condenser. Again, going back to Carnot, the 130° F condenser (usually put on the back of refrigerators or underneath them, so nobody gets burned touching it) will give its heat to the 72° F kitchen. As the Freon gives its heat to the kitchen air through its contact with the condenser, it cools down. As it cools down, it again crosses the temperature/pressure boiling/condensing "line," and turns back into a liquid, which is why that component is called a condenser. The resultant liquid/

gas mixture is dumped into the receiver, the liquid settling to the bottom, where the intake tube sends it to the expansion valve to begin the cycle anew.

That is how a refrigerator works, continually sucking heat from inside the refrigerator and dumping it into America's kitchens. It is a heat pump.

[25] See brief discussion in Ellen Meiksins Wood's *The Origin of Capitalism*, pp. 83-84.

[26] See Ellen Meiksins Wood's *The Origin of Capitalism* and *The Pristine Culture of Capitalism*.

[27] See David Korten's discussion of the corruption of Smith's work in *The Post-Corporate World*, pp. 151-162.

[28] See Darwin's conclusion in his *The Origin of the Species*.

[29] See Paul Kennedy's *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers*, p. 149.

[30] Planck, *Scientific Autobiography and Other Papers*, pp. 33-34. Quoted in Kuhn, *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*, p. 151.

[31] The stories of Edison, the Wright brothers and other idiocies of science, can be found in Richard Milton's *Forbidden Science* (now titled *Alternative Science*), pp. 11-23.

[32] Heisenberg, "Truth Dwells in the Deepes" in Wilber *Quantum Questions*, p. 33-38.

[33] See Westfall, *The Life of Isaac Newton*, for a fairly sympathetic treatment of that situation. Stephen Hawking, who sits in Newton's chair at Cambridge, and is one of the greatest scientific minds of our time, is less charitable regarding Newton's behavior. See Hawking, *A Brief History of Time*, pp. 181-182.

[34] See a brief account of the Birkeland-Chapman-Alfvén tale in Candace Savage's *Auroras*, pp. 92-110.

[35] See Milton, *Alternative Science*, pp. 24-36.

[36] It is easy to descend into that fray. On the Internet are numerous sources of information on that debate. Books such as Henry Bauer's *Beyond Velikovsky*, Pensee's *Velikovsky Reconsidered*, Charles Ginenthal's *Carl Sagan and Immanuel Velikovsky*, *Scientists Confront Velikovsky*, edited by Donald Goldsmith, and *Stephen J. Gould and Immanuel Velikovsky*, edited by Dale Ann Pearlman, are a good introduction to the Velikovsky controversy, with, of course, the book that started it all, Velikovsky's *Worlds in Collision*, which is not easy to find today. There are journals published regarding the work of Velikovsky such as *The Velikovskian* and *Aeon*. David Talbott's Kronia Group is also carrying on the work of Velikovsky. There are forums that have "debunked" much of the pro-Velikovsky crowd, such as the Talk Origins group. Leroy Ellenberger is a Velikovskian apostate who is glad to provide evidence of his thesis, which is that the pro-Velikovsky crowd is largely delusional. It is an invitation to madness to descend into that fray. There is a lot of mud wrestling going on there. My opinion on the issue today is a big "maybe, but I doubt it." The issue is intriguing, and I will probably keep my hand in it. If I ever find the time, I plan on resuming my science studies, and study the dating issue, which impacts a number of areas of interest for me, including Velikovsky's thesis. Velikovsky's thesis exercised Einstein's mind, and it is easy to see why.

[37] From his *Thoughts on Various Subjects*, published in 1706.

[38] Westfall. *The Life of Isaac Newton*. p. 309.

[39] From Schroedinger, "Why not talk Physics.?" See Wilber, *Quantum Questions*, pp. 82-83.

[40] From Schroedinger, *Mind and Matter*. See Wilber. *Quantum Questions*. p. 9.

[41] Heisenberg. In a paper he wrote, reproduced in Wilber. *Quantum Questions*. p. 73.

[42] Jeans. "In the Mind of Some Eternal Spirit." reproduced in Wilber, *Quantum Questions*, p. 129. Jeans was knighted

for his work, and one of the giants of twentieth century physics.

[43] Planck. From *Where is Science Going?* New York: Norton, 1932. Reproduced in Wilber. *Quantum Questions*. p. 150.

[44] Einstein. *Mein Weltbild*, Amsterdam: Querido Verlag, 1934. In *Albert Einstein, Ideas and Opinions*, p. 40.

[45] Asimov. "The Relativity of Wrong." *The Skeptical Inquirer*. Fall 1989. p. 44.

[46] Sagan, Carl. *Cosmos*. New York: Random House, 1980, p. 127.

[47] Randi. *The Mask of Nostradamus*. p. 7.

[48] Randi. *Flim-Flam*. p. 326.

[49] Sagan. From the Introduction to Hawking, Stephen. *A Brief History of Time*. p. x.

[50] Rothman. "Myths about Science...and Belief in the Paranormal." *The Skeptical Enquirer*. Fall 1989, p. 34.

[51] Many years later, I interviewed that rocket scientist as I was on a document hunt regarding Mr. Mentor's engine, and while the rocket scientist indeed was awed by the engine, he recalled how he came to comprehend its potential differently. He said he largely came to understand its potential on the basis of his own analysis, with little help from Mr. Mentor. They are probably both right, to a degree, but it also shows how we all remember things differently.

[52] See Denis Brian's *Einstein, a Life*, pp. 60-61.

[53] The sources of my information regarding energy use, prices and sources comes from the U.S. Department of Energy's data, mainly from its *2001 Annual Energy Review* and associated reports. I have also used *The American Almanac, 1996-1997* for some of this information, such as tables 1334 and 1358, for my economics/energy analyses.

[54] See Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, pp. 387-389. See also Goudie's *The Human Impact*, pp. 333-343.

[55] Unmanned probes to Mars during the 1990s have recorded what appears to be rapid melting of the carbon dioxide ice pack. Those stories hit the global media in late 2001.

[56] In late 2000, the World Conservation Union published its Year 2000 *Red List of Threatened Species*. More than 11,000 species risk extinction today. That list is only composed of those species that have been identified. More than 14 million species of life are estimated to live on earth, and less than two million have been identified. Perhaps a half million or more species became extinct during the 1990s.

[57] For instance, the decline in perch and herring populations off the Alaskan coast depressed the populations of seals and sea lions, which were killer whale prey. The killer whales ate otters in the absence of their usual prey, which collapsed the otter population, which in turn caused a population explosion in one of the otter's favorite foods - sea urchins. The sea urchin population explosion in turn devastated the kelp beds on which they feed. The disappearance of the kelp beds in turn threatens the existence of numerous species that depend on them, including fish, birds, marine mammals and numerous other creatures. See Chris Bright's "Anticipating Environmental 'Surprise'" in *State of the World 2000*, pp. 22-38. Numerous fish species also face human-caused extinction; something that orthodox theory previously held was impossible.

[58] For instance, Fred Singer is a leading scientist who downplays the notion of global warming, and has "consulted" for several oil companies. Patrick Michaels is another prominent scientist who downplays global warming, who also makes big money "consulting" for coal companies and other energy interests (they both are prominent authors in [Julian Simon's](#) *The State of Humanity*. See also Ehrlich and Ehrlich, *Betrayal of Science and Reason*). In the year 2000, several events happened which should take most of the air out of the sails of the oil company "skeptics" regarding global warming. According to the National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration (NOAA), the U.S. winter of 1999-2000 was the warmest on record. The spring of 2000 was also the warmest spring in U.S. history. Since measurements began over a century ago, the eleven hottest years on record, globally, have all been since 1980. Though the *New York Times* reported a mile-wide hole in the Arctic ice at the North Pole in the summer of 2000,

a report that has been discredited as normal summer thawing, the Arctic ice pack is 40% thinner than it was fifty years ago, and the Antarctic ice shelves have been breaking up. Glaciers have been retreating across the planet. The polar bear will be extinct in the wild in a generation at the rate that warming is happening today. The U.S. National Research Council in January 2000 issued a report titled, "Reconciling Observations of Global Temperature Change." The report states that "the warming of surface temperature that has taken place during the past 20 years is undoubtedly real, and it is at a rate substantially larger than the average warming during the twentieth century." In February 2000, scientists at the NOAA's National Climate Data Center (NCDC) reported that the rate of global warming is increasing over the past twenty-five years (in a report published in the March 1 issue of *Geophysical Research Letters*). The evidence is strong that the rate of increase since 1976 is likely human-induced, according to the NCDC scientists. In June 2000, the U.S. Global Change Research Program released a report that predicted that global fossil fuel emissions would increase the U.S. temperatures by 5 to 10 degrees Fahrenheit by the year 2100. In the September 15, 2000 issue of *Science*, the findings of an international scientific expedition were published. Lonnie Thompson of Ohio State University led the 1997 expedition, and it obtained ice core samples from the Dasuopu Glacier on the Himalayan mountain Xixabangma. The ice cores were obtained at 23,500 feet of elevation above sea level, the highest elevation ice cores ever obtained. The global warming models predict that higher elevations and higher latitudes will show the effects first. The highest latitudes are the Polar Regions, and the Himalayan ice cores reveal what is happening at high altitude. The ice cores showed that the past fifty years have been the warmest in the past thousand years. Dust particles had increased four-fold in the past century, and the ice layers gave signs of desertification happening in the region. Thompson said, "There is no question in my mind that the warming is in part, if not totally, driven by human activity. I think the evidence for that is so clear - not only from this site but also from Kilimanjaro in Africa." Thompson led a team to Kilimanjaro in 2000, where the ice on it has declined by over 75% in the past century. Such dramatic warming can create unprecedented human suffering, with droughts and other climate changes that could kill off billions of people and destroy entire ecosystems. Recently, companies like Texaco, Shell, British Petroleum, Ford, DaimlerChrysler and General Motors quit their membership in the Global Climate Coalition, which is an industry front group that is determined to undermine any global efforts to reduce fossil fuel emissions. In the wake of the massive corporate abandonment of the coalition, it had to reorganize. Those were items from 2000, and in 2002, each report coming out for the past two years has been more alarming than the previous one.

[59] For a mere sampling of current information that is easily available, on May 14, 2002, the World Wildlife Fund (WWF) issued a report on the peril the polar bears face. *Reuters*, a non-U.S.-based media organization, reported it. (Will Dunham, *Reuters*, "Arctic Warming Imperils Polar Bears, Report Says." May 14, 2002). The WWF report noted that industrial pollution, including mercury and other heavy metals, radioactive waste, pesticides and industrial toxic waste are imperiling the polar bear, but the effects of global warming are the most ominous. The polar ice has declined in thickness by about 40% since World War II, and current computer models show that summer sea ice may decline by 60% in the next 50 years. The polar bears in the Hudson Bay area are already exhibiting early signs of what is in store for them. Going into the birthing season, female bears are in poorer condition than they used to be, reflecting a decline in food sources, among other stresses. On the same day, *Reuters* ran an article on the breakup of the Antarctic ice cap. (Michael Byrnes, *Reuters*, "Antarctic Ice Melt Poses Worldwide Threat." May 14, 2002.) Scientists are already calling the breakup of the Antarctic ice cap the biggest one since the end of the last ice age, 12,000 years ago. In April 2002, a 500-billion-ton chunk of the Larsen Ice Shelf - more than a thousand square miles and 650 feet thick - broke off, climaxing an unprecedented summer of ice shelf disintegration, in the Antarctic's warmest recorded summer. That is highly abnormal activity, and is one of a series of recent events that may presage a catastrophic disintegration of the Antarctic ice cap.

Whether tracking species threatened with extinction or global warming, today's common dynamic is scientists eventually realize that their earlier reports, though alarming, have often been understating the true threat, as conditions conflate, creating mutually reinforcing runaway events that the models do not predict. The IPCC reports have become more ominous with each one. The rapid disintegration of the Antarctic ice shelves will not immediately raise the world's sea levels, because they are largely floating, so their net displacement is small (similar to an ice cube floating in a drink not raise the drink's level in the glass as it melts). However, as they disintegrate and float away from Antarctica, it will expose the continental ice shelves, and their melting *will* increase the world's sea levels. The reality is that nobody really knows how fast the continental ice shelves can collapse. The disintegration of the Larsen B ice shelf was dramatic and not predicted, and could herald similar rapid collapse around the entire Antarctic ice shelf.

At this time, the predicted rise in the global ocean level is perhaps "only" a meter or two in the coming century. The leading scientists readily admit, though, that models are only guesses, no matter how sophisticated, and in light of the Larsen B ice shelf collapse the past few months, a "snowball" effect is admittedly quite possible. Also, the rising of ocean levels is but one component of the environmental effect. The release of fresh water from Antarctic melting could also affect the circulation patterns of earth's oceans. The Gulf Stream, that makes European winters as relatively warm as they are, for how far north Europe is, could be diminished by Antarctic melting, and Antarctica is the main source of introducing oxygenated water to the ocean floor. That dynamic will also be diminished. It is already estimated that the "bottom water" production by Antarctica has already declined by 20% since pre-industrial times. The continued decline in "bottom water" production will further threaten earth's marine life. These dynamics are part of "[cascading](#)"

environmental disasters, which defy the relatively simple models that scientists have developed.

Corporate mouthpieces such as Rush Limbaugh have been crusading against the notion of global warming or any true environmental problems being created by corporate greed. With these recent, alarming developments, Big Oil has been making its countermoves. Not only is the United States giving the finger to the world on issues of controlling greenhouse gas emissions, but a recent memo from ExxonMobil to George Bush the Second, brought to light by a Freedom of Information Act action, called for the removal of the IPCC head, Robert Watson, because his stance was a little too "aggressive" in trying to confront and solve the issues of global warming. On April 20, 2002 ExxonMobil got its wish, as Watson was replaced. (See George Monbiot's "Diplomacy, U.S. Style," in *The Guardian*, April 23, 2002. See also Paul Brown's "Oil giant bids to replace climate expert" in *The Guardian*, April 5, 2002.) That is [typical](#) ["diplomatic" behavior](#) by the United States. Tellingly, the [U.S. media](#) is not where I am finding these reports, but in Europe's media.

[60] See George Monbiot's "Diplomatic Impunity" a [ZNet](#) article, published on April 24, 2002.

[61] See Blum's *Rogue State*.

[62] See *The American Almanac*, 1996-1997 edition, table 932, derived from U.S. Energy Information Administration data.

[63] See Jeanne Manning's *The Coming Energy Revolution*, pp. 122-124.

[64] See Tom Bearden's *Excalibur Briefing*, or *Suppressed Inventions and other Discoveries*, edited by Jonathan Eisen.

[65] The next big step is realizing that it is all [comprised of consciousness](#).

The Next Section: [Making a Run at Alternative and Free Energy](#) (187K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Medical Racket

By Wade Frazier

[Disclaimer](#)

[Timeline to 1491](#)

[Timeline from 1492](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Masculine, Feminine and "Modern" Medicine](#)

[Lessons in Reversing Heart Disease](#)

[Early Western Medicine](#)

[The Beginnings of Today's Medical Establishment](#)

[Science, Medicine and Money in the 19th Century](#)

[Investigating Life's Mysteries](#)

[A Paradigm Lost?](#)

[The Developing American Medical Racket](#)

[The Cancer Racket Begins](#)

[Royal Rife and Morris Fishbein](#)

[The "War on Quacks"](#)

[Béchamp's Professional Descendants](#)

[Pasteur's Germ Theory, Vaccines and Alternate Paradigms](#)

[The March of the Lemmings](#)

[Why the System Works the Way it Does](#)

[My Early Experience with the Medical Racket](#)

[Modern American "Justice"](#)

[Are They Really That Blind?](#)

[Are We Really That Free?](#)

[My Personal Encounters with 714X](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Disclaimer: I am a layman, and do not give medical advice. Please do not take my word, or anybody else's, regarding your health. Take responsibility for your health, and do not give it to "experts" or anybody else. Your life is *your* life, and giving the responsibility for your health to others is a dangerous path. Talk to your doctor, read this essay, research the areas presented here if you feel inclined, but in the end, please make your own decisions. Doctors only know what they are taught, and if they are taught incorrectly, their advice can be less than helpful, and their treatments can kill you. Please do nothing simply because an "expert" or other authority figure tells you to.

Timeline

This essay is overflowing with names, dates and events, and takes an iconoclastic look at today's medical establishment and how it came to be, while also arguing that legitimate alternative paradigms exist, and far preferable to today's. Early readers informed me that it could be an overwhelming amount of information to digest, as well as emotionally trying. This timeline is designed to make the reading experience easier, so readers can refer to names, dates and events in the larger scheme of this essay. The early human data is controversial in many quarters, and this timeline hews more toward today's orthodox theories. The early population estimates, until the modern age, are probably within 25% of the actual population, at least as far as orthodoxy is concerned. The timeline is broken into two pieces, to 1491, directly below, and [from 1492 onward](#). There are far more links to this medical essay from the [1492 onward piece](#). This timeline is an abbreviated version of the [site timeline](#).

	This timeline relates to the rise of today's Western/ American medical establishment and its prevailing paradigm	
Date	Event	Human Population Statistics
> 4 million BC	First erect protohumans appear in Africa, differentiating from their great ape cousins.	Human population = 0
> 2 million BC	Large-brained bipedal hominids, of the genus <i>homo</i> , appear in Africa.	
< 2 million BC	Homo erectus begins migrating from Africa, and fire was first used as a tool. The African ape diet was partly abandoned as fruit, blossoms, seeds and leaves were less available beyond the tropics, meaning more meat eating.	Human population <100,000
c. 400,000 BC	Fire consistently used. First regular food processing practiced – cooking.	>100,000
c. 130,000 - 100,000 BC	First anatomically modern humans appear in Africa and migrate across Asia, eventually displacing other hominid species.	
c. 40,000 BC	Advances in hunting skill and technology allow humans to hunt larger animals . Boats invented. Modern humans first appear in Europe and Australia.	

c. 30,000 BC	Extinction of most large animals in Australia possibly caused by human over-hunting. Humans probably first appear in North and South America. Cave murals are first drawn, in European caves. One of the earliest artistic works, and possibly a religious artifact, the Venus of Willendorf, is made in central Europe. It, and many works like it, is evidence that goddess-based religion flourished from humanity's earliest days.	
c. 25,000 BC	Pottery first appears, in Europe.	
c. 23,000 BC	Bow and arrow invented, probably in Europe.	
c. 11,000 BC	Methods for processing and storing food appear in Fertile Crescent.	
c. 10,000 BC	Extinction of most large mammals in the Americas, also possibly caused by human over-hunting, probably also influenced by climate changes. Dogs are the first domestic animals, appearing in the Fertile Crescent region.	
c. 8500 - 8000 BC	Hunter-gatherer lifestyle is increasingly unsustainable. Domestication revolution begins in Fertile Crescent and the Americas. Wheat, peas and olives domesticated in Fertile Crescent. Squash and pumpkins first domesticated in Mesoamerica.	4 million
c. 7500 BC	Domestication revolution begins in east Asia.	
c. 7000 BC	Sheep and goats begin domestication in Fertile Crescent region.	
c. 6500 BC	First large human communities, such as Catal Huyuk, appear in present-day Turkey. The clearing of forest to make farm fields, and the resultant puddles, led to the spread of malaria, probably originating in Africa.	
c. 6000 BC	Cattle and pigs begin domestication in Fertile Crescent region. Chicken and rice begin domestication in east Asia.	
c. 5500 BC	Agricultural communities appear along the Nile river.	
c. 5000 BC	Civilization begins forming in the Fertile Crescent. Early societies are egalitarian. The agricultural societies have goddess-based religions, while the pastoral, herd-tending societies develop male-based religions. The mobile pastoral societies begin invading the sedentary agricultural societies. Irrigation is first used in the land between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers, and in Nile river valley. Metallurgy first practiced near mountains of Eastern Europe. Copper weapons developed by herder societies of steppe regions. People of Greece and the southern Balkans adopt agricultural practices.	5 million
c. 4500 BC	First large religious facilities built at site of today's Iraq. Stratification of early society begins, with elites - priest class, craftsmen, rulers and probably the first medical doctors.	
c. 4000 BC	Horse domesticated in steppe region north of Black Sea. Llama and Alpaca domesticated in South America. Camel first domesticated near Fertile Crescent. Invasions from steppe regions wash across Europe, Fertile Crescent and Middle East. Warfare practiced on large scale.	

c. 3500 BC	Migrating farmers from Fertile Crescent settle Indus valley in present day Pakistan. Bronze age begins in Fertile Crescent, and plow agriculture begins there. Soil salination begins affecting Mesopotamian agriculture, and salt resistant barley is raised in place of wheat, comprising half of southern Mesopotamian grain production. Siltation of river water from upstream deforestation also contributes to environmental degradation. The wheel is invented in Mesopotamia. By this time, corn, potatoes, manioc, beans and turkeys are domesticated in the Americas.	
c. 3000 BC	Sumeria becomes the world's first literate society. History begins. State bureaucracy and military establishment are developed. The earth-based Mother Goddess begins being replaced by thunderous, male, sky gods in Middle Eastern mythology.	14 million
c. 2600 BC	Imhotep is credited with building the world's first large stone building, a step pyramid in Egypt. Imhotep was also a physician. He was later deified, and was probably the model for the Greek god of medicine, Asclepius.	
c. 2400 BC	Crop yields continue declining in Sumerian fields. Wheat yields decline by 42% between 2400 and 2100 BC.	
c. 2100 BC	Ur abandons wheat cultivation. Wheat comprises only 2% of Sumerian crops.	
c. 2000 BC	Great migration wave of pastoral societies from steppe regions (generally between the Caspian and Black Seas) into the Fertile Crescent, India and Europe. Third Dynasty of Ur collapses. Violent, male, sky-god religion accompanies the invaders. Feminine, earth-based religion and mythology in the Fertile Crescent, Mediterranean region and Europe are eventually overthrown by the invaders, replaced with male, sky-god religions. Helen of Troy becomes a famous female healer and mythological figure, but female healers begin disappearing from medicine at this time. Intense deforestation of the region from Morocco to Afghanistan commences. Today, only about 10% of that forest remains; much has turned to desert.	
c. 1900 BC	Indus valley society collapses. Declining food production due to soil salination probably led to population decline and internal collapse, combined with foreign invasion.	
c. 1700 BC	Wheat yields in Sumeria decline by 65% since 2400 BC. Fields turn white from salt. Sumer declines as a power, and the center of Mesopotamian civilization shifts north.	
c. 1500 BC	A four hundred year period of chaos and warfare begins to sweep Europe, the Fertile Crescent and Mediterranean region. The violent, male sky-gods come to dominate religion, including one named Jehovah.	38 million
c. 1400 BC	Iron first smelted by Hittite civilization in present-day Turkey. Agriculture begins in Japan.	

c. 1200 BC	Iron made into weaponry. Iron weapons rapidly replace bronze and become common throughout Europe, the Fertile Crescent, Egypt and elsewhere. The feminine-friendly Minoan civilization on Crete collapses, as does Mycenaean civilization.	
c. 1000 BC	Agriculture collapses in central Mesopotamia due to soil salination. In 1990, Iraq imported 70% of its food. The anti-feminine culture of ancient Greece develops, known as Greece's "dark age." Women are gradually excluded from public life. Although male gods dominated Greek mythology, women were also present, if subservient.	50 million
c. 900 BC	Asclepius lives at this time, and eventually became "sainted" in Greek culture and became the Greek god of healing during its classical period. The mythological Asclepius was the son of Apollo, who was the son of Zeus. Hygeia and Panacea were Asclepius' daughters.	
c. 700 BC	A village that began with shepherd's huts, eventually known as Rome, is growing.	
c. 650 BC	Expanding Greek settlements begin causing noticeable environmental degradation.	
590 BC	Solon argues against agriculture on steep slopes in Greece because of rapid erosion.	
560 BC	Peisistratus becomes tyrant of Athens, and pays bounty for farmers to plant olive trees, as they can survive on the badly eroded land, and put down roots to penetrate the exposed rock.	
c. 500 BC	Celts begin invading the British Isles, absorbing the Iberians. Women enter the healing profession in Danish Celtic culture. Pythagoras, the world's first mathematician and the West's first vegetarian, dies. His followers taught that the earth orbited the sun. Etruscan civilization is at its peak influence, to eventually fall to neighboring states.	
432 BC	Peak of the Greek classic period. Hippocrates , Socrates, Thucydides and Aristophanes are alive. During Peloponnesian War (begun in 431 BC), war-crowded Athens is afflicted with a plague (probably smallpox or typhus) in 430 that lasts three years, killing about a third of the population and leading to Athens' decline.	
c. 400 BC	Centuries of Greek deforestation and agricultural practices devastate the environment and soils, remarked upon by Plato and other observers. The degraded environment led to falling crop yields and Greece's decline, as had been happening to other empires for thousands of years. Rome begins rising as a power, eventually defeating the Etruscans of today's northern Italy, and incorporate Etruria's cultural and technical achievements. By the time of Jesus, Etruscan culture was almost entirely absorbed into Roman culture.	

334 BC	Alexander the Great of Macedonia conquers Persia and tries uniting East and West. The short-lived Macedonian Empire helps pave the way for the Roman Empire. Alexander supposedly said that he “died by the help of too many physicians.”	
264 BC	After subduing Italy, Rome engages in its first war against Carthage. Italy and Sicily are rapidly deforested to meet Rome’s needs.	
202 BC	Rome defeats the forces of Carthaginian general Hannibal, ending the second Punic War.	
197 BC	Rome invades Greece and conquers them. Rome would incorporate much of Greek culture into its own, borrowing its gods and technology, although denigration of Greek physicians and medicine was typical.	
146 BC	Greek resistance to Roman rule leads to the complete destruction of Corinth and the sale of its inhabitants into slavery. That same year, Rome does the same to Carthage. The Roman Republic begins expanding across Europe, northern Africa and the Middle East.	
58 BC	Rome begins handing out free food. Eventually, hundred of thousands of Rome’s citizens received free food for political reasons. Intensive agricultural exploitation of imperial lands are undertaken to feed the empire. Places such as today’s Libya are forced to become farms for Rome, with the agricultural practices eventually turning Libya into the desert nation it is today.	
1 AD	Jesus is alive. Much of Palestine, Syria, Lebanon and surrounding regions are deforested by Rome, eventually turning it into desert.	World population: 170 million.
C. 30 AD	Roman writer Celsus translates works of Hippocrates, writes a mammoth series of books, and the eight devoted to medicine have survived.	Roman Empire’s population: 50 million
66 AD	First Jewish revolt against Roman rule. Rome responds with typical brutality, the revolt ending with the mass suicide at Masada in 73 AD. Jews begin their dispersal from Palestine.	
132 AD	Jews revolt against Roman rule again. Rome responds in standard fashion, completely destroying the Jewish state in 135 AD and laying waste to the entire region. Hundreds of thousands of Jews die, the survivors sold into slavery, and dispersed across the Roman Empire and beyond.	
165 AD	The Antonine plague, probably smallpox, sweeps through the Roman Empire, brought back by returning soldiers from Syria. It rages for 15 years, killing about five million people, or about a quarter to a third of all of those exposed to the disease, including Emperor Marcus Aurelius in 180, as it did his predecessor in 169.	
c. 169 AD	Marcus Aurelius appoints Galen to be personal physician to his heir, Commodus. Galen writes prodigiously, his work guiding Western medicine until the 1500s.	
c. 200 AD		200 million

251 AD	An epidemic again sweeps through the Roman Empire until 270, killing 5000 of Rome's citizens each day during the epidemic's peak, including the Emperor Claudius in 270. Rome was forced by the population loss to recruit barbarian troops. The first mass conversions to Christianity were apparently a consequence of the epidemic.	
476 AD	Western Roman Empire falls. Germanic peoples invade the Roman Empire's lands in Europe during the late 400s, including the Anglo-Saxon invasion of Britain. The Eastern Roman Empire lasts nearly continually for the next 1000 years, with Constantinople (earlier named Byzantium and later Istanbul) as its capital city. Europe, however, fell into its Dark Ages. Ancient Greek texts were burned as pagan, including Hippocrates' works. The Roman Catholic Church largely took over medicine, and Galen's work became dogmatized by the Church. That situation would dominate Western medicine for more than 1000 years.	
541	First recorded instance of bubonic plague, beginning in Egypt and racing to Constantinople, where it killed off as many as 10,000 people per day and 40% of the population. Epidemic diseases would periodically sweep Europe and Asia, with cities such as Rome suffering greatly.	
562	32-year drought begins to afflict the Moche culture in South America. El Niño cycles regularly affect South American civilization, and elaborate food production and storage systems are designed to cope with them, as well as other environmental challenges. That region's people become the world's greatest agricultural experimenters.	250 million
711	Islamic armies invade the Iberian Peninsula. Jews live under Moorish rule in Iberia, and it is their golden age in Europe, lasting for 300 years. Learning was an Islamic ideal, and Islamic scholars kept the teachings of the ancient Greeks alive in the West. Influential doctors such as Abu'l Qasim (936-1013) and Maimonides (1135-1204) came from Moorish Iberia.	
C. 800	Mayan civilization begins its collapse. It attained a peak population of several million, before its overtaxed environment failed to support the population. Famine, war and disease accompanied the collapse of the Mayan population to perhaps a million before 1000 AD, similar to Fertile Crescent dynamics. The forest recovers and covers the Mayan ruins.	
c. 1050	Northern and central Europe, especially the Germanic lands, engage in great age of deforestation, making way for civilization, clearing about a third of the forest in a couple of centuries. By 1900, about 25% of the forest remains.	
1056	Ferdinand I, who proclaimed himself the Emperor of Spain, undertakes "Reconquest" of the Iberian peninsula.	

1066	William the Conqueror leads the Norman invasion of Britain.	
1096	Christian Europe makes its first united act: the first Crusade to Palestine. The first wide-scaled Jew slaughters in Europe take place as a warm-up for the first Crusade, in France and Germany. Jews would no longer be safe in Europe, and warfare would be the European way of life until World War II ended.	
c. 1200	Polynesian people begin colonizing New Zealand. The Islamic culture attains the world's highest standard of living.	
1244	Massacre at Montségur, the last stronghold of the Cathars . The Catholic Church eliminates the greatest threat to its religious monopoly, until Martin Luther posts his Ninety-Five Theses in 1517.	360 million
1314	Europe is gripped by major famine that lasts until 1317.	
1346	The Black Death probably originated in China. In 1347 it swept across Asia to Europe. The death toll for Europe and Asia was about 50 million people by 1351, wiping out one quarter to one-third of Europe's population, and periodically recurring for the next three centuries. Epidemiology being what it was in those days, Jews were accused throughout Europe of causing the plague, and 50,000 Jews were consequently killed. War and death imagery would become prevalent in European art.	Europe's population declines from about 75 million to 50 million. It would not regain 1345 levels until the 16 th century.
c. 1385	Turkish ruler Tamerlane's armies catapult smallpox victims into cities they are besieging, in perhaps history's first instance of biological warfare.	
Late 1300s	Beginning in northern Italy's city-states, a multifaceted phenomenon begins which is now called the Renaissance. Humanism takes root, which eventually undermines the Catholic Church's influence.	
1399	The Black Death makes a final visit to Europe, and then disappears for many years.	
1400	After a century of unrelenting epidemics, warfare and calamity, Europe's population is about half of what it had been in 1300.	400 million.
1418	Portugal begins colonizing the Madeira Islands, the Azores in 1427 and the Cape Verde Islands in 1450. The prominent cash crop is sugar, which played to the biological predisposition of humans to sweet food, reflecting the distant ape past in Africa, when fruit comprised most of the diet. Settlers to Madeiran island of Santo Porto introduce two rabbits, and soon they rapidly reproduce and denude the entire island.	
1444	Portugal enters the African slave trade.	
c. 1450	"Little Ice Age" begins, and runs for four centuries, until about 1850.	
1453	Ottoman armies capture Constantinople, which puts an end to the Eastern Roman Empire, controls Europe's trade route to the Orient, and inspires effort to find another European route.	

1474	Paolo Toscanelli of Florence suggests to Prince Alfonso V of Portugal that the quickest way to the Indies (spice trade) is sailing across the Atlantic. Toscanelli was wrong. Christopher Columbus eventually obtains the letter from Toscanelli that makes the suggestion.	
1479	Portugal cedes Canary Islands to Castile, and Queen Isabella I mounts their invasion. The conquest of the Guanche was complete in 1496 , and the Guanche became an extinct culture by 1600.	
1488	Portuguese explorer Bartolomeu Dias rounds the southern tip of Africa , and Portugal abandons the idea of reaching Asia by crossing the Atlantic Ocean. Columbus, who made a living in the Portuguese slave trade, takes his plan to sail across the Atlantic Ocean to Castile, which the experts thought was an impossible plan because the distance to Asia would be too great. Columbus had badly miscalculated the earth's circumference. His early attempts to convince the Castilian court fail.	

**Timeline
from
1492
Onward**

1492	The Spanish "Reconquest" of the Iberian peninsula ends in January with the conquest of Granada, the last city held by the Moors. Jews are given the options of conversion, expulsion or death. In April, Columbus finally gets authorization for his doomed plan to reach Asia via the Atlantic Ocean. He stumbles into the New World in October, enslaving the first humans he meets.	World population: 470 million, at least half in East Asia and India. Population in the Americas: 50 to 100 million (this site uses 80). Europe's population: 70 to 80 million. Taino population: 2 to 10 million. At least one million on Española (this site uses 2)
1496	The genocide of the Taino is well underway on Española.	
1497	Vasco da Gama sails from Portugal to India around Africa; Arab traders cure his crew of scurvy in 1498 , and he returns in 1499 with trade specimens, including valuable spices.	
1511	Portuguese traders capture Malacca, in today's Malaysia, establishing themselves in the spice trade.	

1517	Martin Luther publishes his Ninety-Five Theses, which leads to the Protestant Reformation.	
1518	First New World smallpox epidemic begins, wiping out most of the surviving Taino on Española, who were already only about 1% of their 1492 population.	
1520	Smallpox epidemic that began on Española in 1518 comes across with the Cuban governor's army, probably killing several million people in Mesoamerica.	
1525	European epidemic sweeps through Incan Empire, kills emperor and ignites civil war.	
1535	Native American medicine man cures Jacques Cartier's crew of scurvy on Saint Lawrence River with evergreen foliage and tree bark tea, which was high in vitamin C.	
1537	Ambroise Paré accidentally ends the practice of pouring boiling oil on battlefield wounds and initiates more gentle treatment.	
1543	Nicolas Copernicus ' posthumously published work theorizes that the earth orbits the sun, re-establishing what Pythagoras thought 2000 years earlier. Considered the first work of the scientific revolution. Andreas Vesalius ' <i>De Humani Corporis Fabrica</i> is considered the first work of modern scientific medicine. It challenges a thousand years of dogma based on Galen's work. The Catholic Church increases its efforts to ban books.	Taino population on Española: 200
1553	Michael Servetus publishes an accurate description of pulmonary circulation. Escapes Spanish Inquisition to only be burned at the stake in Calvin's Geneva for his heresies.	
1559	Catholic Church publishes its index of banned books. Index survives until the 1960s. Tristán de Luna expedition goes where de Soto's went, hoping to find rich lands to plunder as de Soto did, and finds the region depopulated from aftermath of de Soto expedition.	
c. 1570	Hiawatha and Deganawidah form the Great Law of Peace and the Iroquois Confederation, which influences the creation of the U.S. Constitution .	
1585	Walter Raleigh establishes the ill-fated Roanoke colony, to try growing tobacco for export.	
1593	South Pacific islanders cure Richard Hawkins' crew of scurvy with citrus fruit.	
1599	Bubonic plague visits Spain, carrying off 10% of its population. Spain ends the 16th century probably worse off than it began it .	Native population of the Americas: 8 million
1600	Giordano Bruno burned at the stake for his heresies, notably for stating that the earth orbits the sun.	
1604	King James I publishes A Counter-Blaste to Tobacco , and tours England to warn of its dangers.	
1610	Galileo Galilee publishes his discovery of Jupiter's moons, using the newly invented telescope.	
1614	Squanto is captured by John Smith's men.	

1618	Thirty Years' War, Europe's last great religious war, begins.	
1619	Squanto returns as interpreter with English, and discovers that his entire tribe had been wiped out by European disease. The Puritans would settle on that tribe's land.	
1620	Puritans land at Plymouth, and Squanto teaches them how to survive in the New World. Squanto dies in 1622 of disease.	
1628	William Harvey publishes his research on function of human heart.	
1638	Three million pounds of tobacco per year are exported from present-day Virginia, reaching 17 million in 1672. Caribbean sugar growing becomes a business on Barbados, the great period of New World sugar growing begins.	
1650	By this time, the Dutch have taken the Asian spice trade from the Portuguese.	
1668	Antoni van Leeuwenhoek invents the microscope.	
1682	Frenchman La Salle explores Mississippi river , finds it deserted, depopulated by disease left by de Soto's expedition.	
1687	Isaac Newton's <i>Principia</i> is published.	
1750	The Enlightenment begins in France at about this time.	
1754	James Lind's experiments aboard HMS Salisbury prove that citrus fruit cures scurvy .	
1763	Lord Jeffrey Amherst suggests deliberately introducing smallpox amongst the Native Americans who resisted the English invasion. The subsequent epidemic kills more than 100,000 natives.	
1769	James Cook visits New Zealand and claims it in the name of Great Britain. The Maoris had eliminated about a third of New Zealand's forests by that time, and large animals, such as the Moa, were about extinct. In the first century after the European invasion, more than 75% of the Maori population dies off. Similar population collapse accompanies the Europeans wherever they appear in the South pacific. James Watt patents the modern steam engine.	
1770	British exploitation of Bengal leads to a great famine that killed one-third of Bengal's peasantry. Famines always greatly increased wherever Europe had colonial dominance.	
1776	American Revolution begins. Adam Smith published his <i>Wealth of Nations</i> .	
1778	James Cook "discovers" the Hawaiian Islands. His crew's venereal disease rapidly spreads through the islands, quickly depopulating Hawaii. The Hawaiian population possibly approaches one million inhabitants. Within 100 years, fewer than 50,000 Hawaiians were alive.	
1881	William Halsted begins his surgical career in the United States.	

1786	Because of the American Revolution, England can no longer ship its criminals to North American penal colonies. Australia is picked as the next English penal colony. The population of the aborigines in southeastern region of Australia (site of the penal colony) declines by about 95% in 60 years.	
1788	Britain claims Tasmania, and the 5000 aboriginal inhabitants are rendered extinct in only 40 years.	
1789	French Revolution begins.	
1793	Benjamin Rush begins era of “heroic” medicine in U. S. during yellow-fever epidemic.	
1794	Antoine Laurent Lavoisier is beheaded in France. His work with oxygen, combustion and respiration founds modern chemistry.	
1795	260 years after Jacques Cartier’s crew is cured of scurvy , and more than one million preventable deaths later, the British navy begins issuing citrus juice to its sailors.	
1796	Samuel Hahnemann first uses the term homeopathy to describe a new system of medicine that he was developing. Edward Jenner performs first smallpox inoculation.	
1825	Homeopathy comes to the United States.	Humanity passes 1 billion
1835	Charles Cagniard-Latour works with yeast, and theorizes that it is alive. Theodor Schwann , the father of histology, confirms Cagniard-Latour’s work at about the same time and takes it further.	
1839	Three million Americans use Samuel Thomson’s brand of medicine.	
1844	American Institute of Homeopathy founded. Anesthetic properties of nitrous oxide first used by American dentist Horace Wells.	
1845	American Medical Association (AMA) founded. Irish potato famine begins.	
1847	Ignaz Semmelweis invents Western medicine’s first sterile practices, used in maternity wards.	
1848	Louis Pasteur discovers molecular chirality , beginning his career. Revolution sweeps Europe. Marx presents his <i>Communist Manifesto</i> .	
1854	Antoine Béchamp begins his Beacon Experiments . German parasitologists have documented parasitic pleomorphic life cycles , ending the spontaneous-generation controversy regarding parasites.	
1858	Rudolf Virchow publishes his <i>Cellular Pathology</i> .	
1859	First American oil well drilled. Charles Darwin publishes his Origin of the Species.	
1861	American Civil War begins. Calomel is the standard medicine for the troops. Antiseptic surgery is not yet invented. Pasteur tried taking credit for discovery of Béchamp. Semmelweis publishes his great work on sanitary practices.	

1863	John Rockefeller enters the oil industry and concentrates on taking over oil refining.	
1864	Pasteur publicly takes credit for overturning spontaneous-generation theory. The germ theory of disease follows from his work. The AMA steps up its anti-abortion campaign .	
1866	Béchamp calls the sub-cellular life forms that he discovered <i>microzyma</i> .	
1870	Joseph Lister produces his first report of the success of sterile surgical procedures.	
1876	El Niño-caused drought that lasts three years, combined with European export crop imperialism, devastates India, China and Brazil , causing as many as 30 million deaths from starvation and disease. William W. Keen begins using Joseph Lister's sterile surgical procedures at the St. Mary's Hospital in Philadelphia.	
1878	Yellow-fever epidemic begins in New Orleans. People treated with homeopathy have less than half the death rate of the general population. Congress is impressed. One million American families use homeopathy.	
1880	Homeopathy movement splits in United States, leading to its demise. John Rockefeller's empire controls 95% of U.S. oil refining.	
1881	William Halsted begins his surgical career in the United States.	
1884	New York Cancer Hospital opens . Later named Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center, the world's most influential cancer research organization.	
1887	John Rockefeller begins rebuilding a Baptist seminary into the University of Chicago .	
1896	Emil Grubbé invents X-Ray treatment of cancer.	
1899	George Simmons hired by the AMA. He soon takes it over.	1.6 billion
1910	Flexner Report is issued, and directs Carnegie and Rockefeller "philanthropic" funding of medical schools.	
1913	Ludlow Massacre committed by Rockefeller strikebreakers. Rockefeller founds American Cancer Society predecessor organization. Morris Fishbein is recruited to the AMA by Simmons.	
1914	Pasteur Institute confirms bacterial pleomorphism.	
1924	Divorce scandal forces Simmons to step down at AMA. Fishbein takes over . He tries to buy out Hoxsey's cancer treatment and begins persecuting Dinshah Ghadiali .	
1927	John Rockefeller begins funding the Memorial Hospital, later named Sloan-Kettering. Rockefeller's Empire enters into its first cartel agreement with I.G. Farben .	

1929	American Tobacco Company begins campaign to addict American women to tobacco . Wall Street collapses later that year.	
1930		2.0 billion
1931	The findings of Royal Rife's microscopes begin generating great scientific interest, and Thomas Rivers of the Rockefeller Institute tries discouraging it. Three independent studies conclude that the fluorine ion is responsible for tooth mottling .	
1935	Under Fishbein's guidance, Phillip Morris launches an ad campaign for its cigarettes , making a health claim to do so, quickly becoming the biggest U.S. cigarette seller. JAMA's pages are filled with cigarette ads for a generation.	
1939	After hearing of miraculous success with Rife's treatment , Fishbein tries buying into Rife's company. When that fails, the AMA wages lawsuit, destroying Rife's company. Nazi Germany is in midst of anti-smoking campaign led by Hitler , as well as beginning World War II.	
1942	The FDA has Dr. William Koch thrown into jail.	
1946	Dr. Max Gerson presents recovered cancer patients using his treatment to a U.S. Senate committee.	
1947	Oscar Ewing , ALCOA's lead counsel and the world's largest fluoride polluter, heads government effort to fluoridate America's water supplies.	
1949	In the wake of Harry Hoxsey's victory in court, Morris Fishbein is dumped from the AMA, ending his 25-year reign. Fishbein goes to work for cigarette-maker Lorillard .	
1950	Right after Fishbein's fall, JAMA publishes its first report on the link between smoking and cancer . ALCOA is selling its sodium fluoride refining waste to municipal water districts in the most profitable hazardous waste disposal program in history.	
1952	With Fishbein's well-paid help, Lorillard begins an ad blitz promoting its asbestos cigarette filter , using research that Fishbein helped design.	
1953	Fitzgerald Report finds that organized medicine wiped out a dozen alternative cancer treatments, including Krebiozen and Hoxsey's treatment.	
1954	JAMA finally discontinues running cigarette ads , because the drug advertisers complained.	
1957	Wilhelm Reich dies in a U.S. federal penitentiary. His work was burned, in U.S. and Nazi Germany.	
1960	John Crane thrown into prison for pursuing Rife's work.	3.0 billion
1964	American Surgeon General releases report that makes smoking hazard clear . The AMA and tobacco companies produce their own "research" that attempts to counter the Surgeon General's report. Gaston Naessens is run out of France.	

1977	Sloan-Kettering rejects laetrile as a cancer treatment, although its famous chemotherapy researcher Kanematsu Sugiura found positive results. It fires Ralph Moss for making that contradiction public.	
1983	Dr. Ernst Krebs , the discoverer of laetrile, goes to jail.	
1984		5.0 billion
1989	Gaston Naessens is put on trial.	
1991	Jimmy Keller is kidnapped by U.S. Justice Department from Mexico.	
1996	Dr. Stanislaw Burzynski is put on trial.	
1998	Charles Pixley is released from prison. His crime was trying to make 714X a legal import. Jimmy Keller is put back into prison.	
1999		6.0 billion
2001	714X treatment making news in the U.S. Keller gets outs of prison again, has stroke.	

Introduction

Thomas Kuhn coined the modern definition of the word “paradigm” in *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*, published in 1962. A paradigm, according to Kuhn, is a conceptual model that explains a set of scientific observations, creating a framework to fit the observations. Paradigms are structures that scientists use to order information, and are similar to what we call “worldviews.” Kuhn described how paradigms changed. Scientists perform “normal science,” staying within their paradigm as they perform experiments. When observations occur that fail to fit into their paradigm, those stray observations are often discarded as experimental error, or the prevailing paradigm is patched up to account for them. When the prevailing paradigm becomes increasingly unable to explain the strange observations piling up, eventually somebody would see that those stray observations pointed to a different paradigm. Kuhn presented several instances of that happening, and the most famous was the paradigm shift that Einstein ushered in.

The oddity of the Michelson-Morley experiment’s results - that the speed of light was independent of the speed of the light’s source - was a classic instance of an anomalous result while pursuing normal science. Physicists wrestled with the meaning of the Michelson-Morley experiment for a generation. Then a young clerk in the Swiss patent office proposed a theory that accounted for the experimental results, although Einstein said he was only indirectly aware of them. He proposed his relativity theory, and the Newtonian paradigm was subsequently overturned by the Einsteinian paradigm, and 20th century physics was born. Einstein challenged Newton’s assumptions of absolute time and absolute space, instead seeing them as relative. Previous assumptions were challenged and replaced, which overturned the paradigm.

Einstein realized that his theories would fall by the wayside one day, stating that every theory is eventually killed by a fact. Einstein also realized the limitations of scientific theories. He wrote that a theory “determines what we can observe.”^[1] A paradigm can illuminate, [but it can also blind](#). The trick is keeping one’s eyes and mind open, and not become captive to one’s point of view. In science, unfortunately, scientists are rarely able to see beyond the paradigm they were inculcated with. Max Planck best put it when he wrote,

“a new scientific truth does not triumph by convincing its opponents and making them see the light, but rather because its opponents eventually die, and a new generation grows up that is familiar with it.”^[2]

It is no accident that the greatest theoretical breakthroughs in scientific history were usually made by men less than thirty years of age, such as Newton, Einstein, Heisenberg, Maxwell and Bohr. They saw the old paradigms with fresh eyes, and proposed new ones. Even Einstein could become dogmatic, as late in his life, as he “reproached” Heisenberg, saying that he surely could not believe that “God plays at dice.”[3]

Kuhn argued that scientists adopt new paradigms not because the new one is more accurate, but because it becomes something they believe in. Kuhn’s observations helped ignite raging controversies about science, truth and reality. Those debates will not end anytime soon. Today, a materialistic paradigm rules the [scientific establishment](#). Everything is seen as a mechanism. There is no role for consciousness to play.

Ironically, the very men whose shoulders modern physics rides on – Einstein, Heisenberg, Schroedinger, Bohr, and others - did not subscribe to the scientific establishment’s materialism. They were all, to one degree or another, [mystics](#). [4] That has not stopped the various “[skeptical](#)” [societies](#) from mounting holy wars against anything not conforming to scientific materialism. There are striking similarities between the views of the scientific fundamentalists and the religious fundamentalists, as their worldviews have little to do with the visions of their prophets, and can be inversions of it. The members of skeptical societies often operate from a faith, a faith known today as *scientism*, which is the worship of science, believing its methods to be the only valid path to knowledge. Einstein wrote that “cosmic religious feeling” motivated the greatest religious *and scientific* heretics of history. [5]

Today, paradigms are being challenged across the entire spectrum of human thought. Mark Woodhouse’s *Paradigm Wars* is a formidable introduction and review of the current state of paradigm challenge and defense. Woodhouse discussed paradigm challenges in the areas of: environment, education, society, patriarchy, economics, religion, personal identity, science, and extraterrestrials. [6] The paradigms often center around dualities, such as patriarchy/matriarchy, but there is also seen a third way that attempts to integrate the polarities, such as Riane Eisler’s conception of gylany, which posits a harmonious co-existence of male and female principles. [7] Dualities being examined these days include: male/female, fear/love, destroy/create, objectivity/subjectivity, control/freedom, victim/creator, competition/cooperation and materialism/spiritualism.

One trap can be falling into the either/or [false dichotomy](#) regarding the dualities. One can be for neither patriarchy nor matriarchy, but gylany, which honors both genders. During the Cold War, Americans were fed the false dichotomy of choosing capitalism or communism, and falsely calling capitalism the “free” system, and communism the one that imprisons people. When the United States overthrew the *elected* Marxist government of Chile (and many others like it), the false dichotomy the United States purveyed of free/unfree about capitalism/communism was laid bare. Any attempt by the [colonized peoples to shed Western domination](#) was [rubber-stamped “communism,”](#) thus demonized, then subjected to military and covert attack by the United States, with [millions of people dying in the colonized world](#). Some dichotomies appear to have little middle ground, such as [love/fear](#). Various paradigms have become entrenched, with great economic, political and sociological consequences attending the adherence to paradigms, or challenging them. Each of the prevailing ideologies, whether it is [capitalism](#), nationalism, [materialism](#) or consumerism, has its foot soldiers, defending the paradigm that puts food on their table.

In medicine, there is a broad picture to see, which has numerous facets, some of which will be presented in this essay.

Masculine, Feminine and "Modern" Medicine

As Riane Eisler and others have made clear, two powers have been worshipped throughout human history: the power to make life, and the power to take it. Their correspondence to female and male principles is obvious. There is substantial evidence of goddess-based religions in the past, and evidence that the male, sky-god Judeo-Christian religions are ideological successors to a time when male-based religion wiped out

female-based religion.[8] Although feminists write about that issue at length, so did Joseph Campbell, the United States' greatest mythologist.[9] Campbell wrote that ancient mythology in west Asia (today's Middle East, Fertile Crescent region, etc.) evolved from female-dominated creation myths to male-dominated creation myths. It reflected the power struggles of the day, when herd-tending warrior societies, with their violent, male, sky-god deities invaded and conquered the agricultural societies with their feminine, earth-based, life-giving deities. The mythology eventually reflected who was in charge.

A prominent instance of the male-based corruption of feminine mythology was the evolution of the snake in symbology. Snakes were associated with women, healing and the regeneration of life (related to how snakes shed their skin) in ancient times. The Adam and Eve story in the book of Genesis turned feminine mythology upside down. Instead of being the source of life, Eve and the serpent were relegated to inferior, even malevolent, roles as they ruined the paradise deal that the Jewish god dictated to humankind.[10] Even though such refashioning of ancient myths to favor men persists to this day, the feminine symbolism persists in less obvious ways. Asclepius was the Greek god of medicine. His staff was entwined with a serpent, and the serpent-entwined caduceus is the symbol of today's American Medical Association (AMA). Among Asclepius' offspring were Hygeia and Panacea, the goddesses of health and healing. The word *hygiene* derives from the same word that Hygeia does. Hygeia represented the principles of prevention, sanitation, nutrition and healthy living. Hygeia represented the gentle principles of feminine-oriented medicine. They have largely been denigrated or ignored by male-dominated medicine for thousands of years, coming back into vogue only recently. They are largely minimized in medical circles even today, as there is no money in *preventing* disease. The current paradigm provides funding for treating diseases, not for preventing them. "Cure" can be sold by the pound, while prevention is only needed by the ounce, as Ben Franklin observed.

Below are some images related to the evolution of the serpent in Western mythology and iconography.



Click on image to enlarge

The West has engaged in a war against women for thousands of years; women are history's most consistently oppressed group. The power to give life is a decidedly feminine undertaking, but in the war against women, men have dominated and have exalted the power to take life as the ultimate power, hence our wars against each other, mother earth, our bodies, etc. Healing the human body is the province of the feminine principle, but men have taken it over. In a might-makes-right world, the mightiest rule.

Historically, women have dispensed most health care, but it was usually done for family members, and those women were not financially compensated. Even when saint-like figures such as Florence Nightingale brought women into the modern healing profession, along with the principle of sanitation, they initially had to work for free, and had to be completely subservient to the male doctors. In the standard, male-written histories of medicine, women are so scarce that they stand out as remarkable when mentioned.[11] There are debates about how many women died in the witch hunts (likely several tens of thousands, at least – and about 75% of all witch executions); how many were healers and midwives is also a source of debate, but what is not debatable is that when the Catholic Church's ideological dominance eventually gave way to the rise of Western science, the baton passed from one male-dominated establishment to another. When science rose in the West, generally considered to have begun with [Copernicus](#)' heliocentric theory, women were conspicuously absent. That was partly due to women often being forbidden formal education. Western religion and science were united in their misogyny. The conquest-of-nature attitude that still dominates Western thinking also reflected the denigration of all things feminine.

The witch-hunting centuries nearly wiped out herbal medicine in Western Europe, even though Paracelsus, the great Renaissance medical iconoclast, claimed that the best medicines he had seen came from women healers.[12] Medicine evolved from the gentle medicine of women healers to the leeches, purgatives, bleedings, mercury and other barbarities of male-based medicine. Even men of the day knew that women's medicine worked vastly better than the male-based tortures that masqueraded as medicine, but that did not stop the burning of "witches" and other suppressions of women healers. The archbishop of Saint

Andrews summoned a woman healer to cure him, which she did. He then had her burned to death for practicing "witchcraft" on him, partly to prevent having to pay her bill.[\[13\]](#)

Feminine medicine operates from the principle that prevention is best, that well treated bodies take care of themselves, being their own best medicine. When the body needs healing, feminine medicine is gentle. Remedies such as herbs and nutrition coax the body back to health.

Masculine medicine sees the body as a soldier on a battlefield. Not gentle, masculine medicine does not see the body as able to care for itself. As in cowboy movies, it is always riding to the rescue. It is the body versus the hostile world, or even against itself. The body becomes a battlefield, needing the intervention of medical violence.[\[14\]](#) It is life-taking, instead of life-giving. It uses antibiotics to kill off "invading" microorganisms. It violates the body with knives. It uses powerful drugs that violently manipulate the body's chemistry. It does not give the body what it needs to heal itself. It does not trust the body's wisdom, certain that it is clever and powerful enough to manipulate the body into health. It operates from the victim principle.

In the case of cancer and vascular disease, masculine medicine sees the body itself as the enemy. With cancer, parts of the body "turn traitor" and the goal of masculine medicine is annihilation. Surgery, chemotherapy and radiation all operate under the paradigm of attacking the body, asserting that it is discerning enough to kill the "bad guys" while sparing the "good guys."

The issue of masculine versus feminine medicine is a conflict between paradigms. That mentality can be seen throughout Western Medicine, from childbirth interventions (and even before, as with amniocentesis) until a patient's deathbed.

The masculine medical paradigm has waged war specifically against women's bodies. Women used to give birth in a squatting position, which is by far the most effective method. Louis XIV changed the practice from women squatting to them lying on their backs. It was done so he could have a good look at one of his mistresses giving birth. The birthing stools of the day did not afford him a clear and salacious view, and he had the practice changed so he could peek from behind a curtain at the festivities. Giving birth on one's back is much harder on the mother than letting gravity help. Fortunately, that practice is waning somewhat. It has taken "medicine" three centuries to begin undoing the damage of a perverse king.

Changing the childbirth position is the least of it. Male, Western doctors devised fiendish methods of "treating" women's problems. Clitoridectomy was used in the nineteenth century, prescribed for maladies such as hysteria. The Greek word *hysterikós* meant womb, and is the root of the word *hysteria*, a decidedly misogynistic word. If a woman was insufficiently obedient to her husband, a diagnosis of hysteria could be obtained, and a clitoridectomy was performed. In the 1870s, a London doctor specialized in performing clitoridectomies without obtaining informed consent from his patients, which got him kicked out of the business, not for performing the operation, but for doing them without consent, and also because he was a self-promoter. He simply moved to the lax regulatory atmosphere of the United States and continued practicing his treatments. Suspicion of the vile behavior of masturbation was grounds for the operation. If a woman was too orgasmic during sexual intercourse, the operation was also the recommended "cure."[\[15\]](#) Part of that practice's justification was contraception, as the day's theory stated that if a woman did not attain orgasm, she could not conceive. Male Western doctors have never advocated castration or penisectomies for "curing" male maladies.

In the 20th century, lobotomy was one method of "curing" many maladies, prominently used on women. Hysterectomy and mastectomy have been very "popular" over the past century, invented and performed almost exclusively by male doctors. They operate from the principle of "when in doubt, cut it out." From foot binding in China, to Suttee in India, to hunting witches in Europe, to clitoridectomy in Africa, to the "enlightened" practices of modern medicine, the record is long and grim.[\[16\]](#)

In America, Caesarean section "childbirth" is performed in about a quarter of all births. In Europe, where they did not wipe out all the midwives, the rate is half of America's, and in Japan, the rate is only 7%. In profit-making hospitals, the rate in America is more than a third, and some doctors warn that it will go over 50% in

the current legal climate, where the "when in doubt, cut it out" philosophy guides hospital doctors. It already is 50% in some hospitals, if the woman is white with medical insurance. As America's Caesarian rate has gone up, its infant mortality ranking among the world's nations has correspondingly dropped. The Caesarian rate in the United States is more than three times Japan's, and its infant mortality rate is nearly twice as high, and is higher than that of any nation in Western Europe.

When a Kansas insurance company began paying doctors the same amount for delivering a child, whether the birth was Caesarean or not, Caesarean sections declined by over half within one year. In a hospital in Pithiviers, France, supervised for many years by an enlightened male obstetrician, where they do not induce labor or unduly interfere, the Caesarian rate is less than 7%, substantially less than nearly any Western hospital. At a home birth community in Tennessee known as The Farm, the Caesarean rate was less than 2%. The stress on the infant and mother is enormously higher with Caesarean birth, as well as "complications" that risk their lives. Even with "normal" births, the episiotomy rate in U.S. hospitals approaches 100%, where it is about 6% in Scandinavian hospitals.[\[17\]](#) Episiotomy is a painful and dangerous practice that causes severe complications with mothers, but in the rush to cut, the practice is standard in American hospitals. Midwifed births have a far lower infant mortality rate than doctor-supervised hospital births. Women report far more satisfaction with the childbirth process if they can deliver it outside of a hospital environment, particularly in America, where women are often seen as little more than packages to be opened to remove the prize. A mother's complication rate is many times higher with Caesarian section births than vaginal delivery, and their death rate much higher.[\[18\]](#)

There have been some victories in the area of childbirth. After the medical profession nearly rendered them extinct, midwives have staged a comeback in America. In Washington State in the year 2000, House Bill 2031 was passed, and my medical insurance company was forced to provide coverage for midwifed births.

Western medicine is a money machine. America spends more than one trillion dollars a year (\$1.3 trillion in 2001) on health care. A tiny fraction is spent on prevention, and the prevention is worse than the disease in many instances, and even causes disease.[\[19\]](#) Instead, nearly all the money goes to dramatic interventions, dominated by drugs and surgery. Dr. Julian Whitaker once challenged his readers to try naming a common mainstream medical treatment in America that *was not* a drug or surgical procedure. Whitaker bet that they could not.[\[20\]](#) The entire Western medical paradigm may be built on a shaky foundation.

Lessons in Reversing Heart Disease

During my father's career, he gradually gained weight. He was an exceptional athlete in his youth, but by age 34 the American diet combined with his desk job took its toll. He went from about 155 muscular pounds in his youth to more than two hundred. He also drank heavily. Early in 1970, he began having kidney problems, quit drinking cold turkey, and has not had a drop since. He quit smoking around 1960 the same way.

In June of 1970, although he had stopped drinking, he weighed about 200 pounds, had high blood pressure and incipient angina. He was developing arthritis. His father had similar problems, and soon had a string of heart attacks that forced him into retirement. The naval base where my father worked was a high-stress environment, and the coronary care unit in nearby Oxnard was filled with professionals from the base. My father was obviously heading for a heart attack, and he wanted to prevent it.

My father was suffering from arteriosclerosis. Arteriosclerosis, like atherosclerosis, is a disease of the blood vessels. Those and related diseases kill one million Americans annually today. What happens is that the blood becomes "polluted" with matter that helps form deposits on the blood vessel walls. A deposit breaks off from the wall, or the turbulence created by the rough cell walls allows a blood clot to form, which eventually lodges in a blood vessel supplying the heart, brain or other vital organ, which often kills the person. The process of arterial clogging and hardening begins very early with Americans. Recent research has found that the process can even begin in the womb. In 1970, Western medicine considered hardening of the arteries to be a normal aging process. The blood pressure tables of the day had the ideal blood pressure steadily increasing as one got older. When I told that to an uncle recently, he said, "Yes, the formula we

were taught was 80 plus your age.” I was able to look that advice up in *The Book of Health*, published in 1973.[\[21\]](#)

Since arteriosclerosis was considered a normal part of the aging process, my father was told that the hardening and clogging of his arteries was normal, and that the only hope of avoiding a future heart attack was taking some pills. That was the best that “medicine” could do. Essentially, my father was given his death sentence, to be executed at some future date, perhaps before long. In those days, medical doctors in America were a short step below God in the hierarchy of existence, yet my father sought a second opinion, and not from another physician.

He obtained a booklet titled *Stale Food vs. Fresh Food: The Cause and Cure of Arteriosclerosis*. It was the result of research by American biologists from Arkansas. It presented the theory that arteriosclerosis was a disease of civilization, particularly the consumption of “civilized” food. Wild animals and “primitive” humankind had virtually no hardening of the arteries. Only modern man “[preserves](#)” his food. The booklet stated that the process of “preserving” food robbed it of its nutritional value. More than that, the process of “preserving” food created the substances responsible for hardening the arteries.

According to *Stale Food vs. Fresh Food*, dead food, particularly flour products, caused hardening of the arteries, and live food was its cure. The vast majority of Americans are so addicted to processed food that they cannot imagine changing their diets. I have seen only a few people significantly change their diets, even when their eating habits were killing them and they knew it. I have never seen an adult change his/her diet when their spouse and/or family did not support it. People are creatures of habit, and the eating habit is perhaps the most ingrained one we have, but my father was trying to save his life. When he stopped smoking and drinking, and when he decided to eat live food, he just did it. Nobody else in the family smoked or drank, but we ate like the average American family. In California, there was more fresh produce available than in other states, so we already ate more fresh food than most Americans, but our family diet was not otherwise remarkable.

At that time, my breakfast consisted of a huge bowl of Cornflakes, drowned in sugar. My culinary specialty was making inch-thick peanut-butter-and-jelly sandwiches, eaten with a soft drink. Twelve-year-old boys can eat like there is no tomorrow. I was the average American kid, diet-wise. One memorable day in June 1970, as I sat at the kitchen counter, eating my bowl of Cornflakes, my mother walked into the kitchen and said, “Do you know those Cornflakes are bad for you?”

My father embraced *Stale Food vs. Fresh Food*’s findings and was determined to try it, and decided the family would follow suit. I read *Stale Food vs. Fresh Food* and was impressed. The booklet laid out its thesis and research clearly. It presented numerous case histories of health miracles attending the change of diet from processed food to live food. Old people suddenly began acting and looking twenty years younger when put onto live-food diets.

The booklet had photos of cadavers' arteries sliced open and laid flat. The photos were of arteries at various ages, from age three to seventy, of *average* Americans. At age three, the plaque could be seen beginning to finely coat the artery wall. By age twenty, the process had begun in earnest. As the person aged, the artery became distorted, no longer running straight. The artery walls got thicker and thicker with the deposits, and instead of running straight they began looking serpentine, like question marks. By age seventy, the artery was almost unrecognizable. They were some of the most obscene pictures I have ever seen, and those were *average* American arteries.

My entire family changed eating habits, and I was a willing participant. It was not a complete change to live food with no looking back, but it was radical. We ate junk food from time to time, and I know firsthand how hard it is to swim against the current of society in something as fundamental as eating. My father was trying to save his life, however, and followed it to the letter. It worked. Results were seen almost immediately, and in two years my father’s health made a complete turnaround. He lost forty pounds. The angina and arthritis disappeared. His blood pressure went from abnormally high to “abnormally” low. It was not really abnormally low, but according to the inflated blood pressure tables of the day, where arteriosclerosis was considered normal, it was. He turned himself into a superman. He later said it was the healthiest he had ever felt. He spread the news of his cure to all who would listen. He began preaching the virtues of live food to relatives, friends

and coworkers.

That was 1970, and it was radical talk to state that your diet could make you well. To a degree, it still is. The mainstream medical doctrine of the day stated that hardening of the arteries was irreversible. That belief is still entrenched today, even though they now admit that when they said that hardening of the arteries was a normal aging process, *they did not know what they were talking about*. The issue of irreversibility is a medical dogma even today. I just reviewed my *Mayo Clinic Family Health 1996 Edition* CD ROM, and regarding vascular disease and diet there was virtually no mention, and no mention at all of diet as a way of treating it. The Mayo Clinic's advice was solely devoted to drugs and surgical procedures.

To date, I know of nobody who radically changed their diet to live food and did not benefit immensely from it. The problem is that very few people do it. Hardening of the arteries is indeed reversible. Modern medical doctrine aside, [Dr. Dean Ornish](#) has had success in reversing heart disease with his health regimen, which is mainly about eating a live food diet.[\[22\]](#)

My father convinced some of his coworkers to try out a live food diet, and one man lost more than fifty pounds while eating more than ever, and reversed his health problems. A few coworkers and his immediate family were about the only people that my father ever persuaded to change their diets. The most common reaction was to call it all "crazy." The term "health nut" came into use around that time. That my father was living proof that it worked made no difference to people addicted to processed food. They looked to the pronouncements of the medical establishment for guidance, and there was nearly complete silence on the issue of diet. I talked to people about it, and was amazed at the hostile reactions I received. At age 12 I learned that few want to hear that their addictions are harmful, and it was no different with processed food.

I learned to be cautious about voicing unpopular opinions. I only give health advice to those around me when it appears it will be received, which is rarely. I have watched numerous people die at the hands of Western medicine over the years, and it has not been easy to watch. American physicians receive almost zero nutritional training, and what little they do receive is often propaganda from the food processing industry. Consequently, they *cannot have an informed opinion* on the issue.

When I was 17, my father brought home Paul Bragg's *The Miracle of Fasting*, which was his magnum opus. Today, evidence points to Bragg lying about his age and other things. I present the evidence in [this essay](#), with the background at this footnote.[\[23\]](#) With the fraudulent misrepresentations aside, [Jack LaLanne](#) was one of Bragg's pupils (he was the classic 98-pound weakling when he met Bragg as a teenager), and Jack is still going strong in his 90s. Bragg promoted other health ideas such as regular fasting, which has been part of my health regimen [for more than thirty years](#). His charlatanry aside, Bragg's advice is about all I have ever needed, and I doubt that anybody will come along and improve on it much. The ways of health are quite simple: eat live food, exercise, fast, drink pure water, have pure thoughts, get out in nature. That is about all anybody needs to know. It is the essence of Hygeia's role in medicine. There is nothing of significance to add, except perhaps realizing that humans are poorly designed to eat animal flesh. I have been a [vegetarian](#) for many years, with no ill effects and many positive ones.

The medical paradigm regarding the biggest killer in America is obviously false. Prevention is the only answer worth talking about, and what prevents heart disease also cures it.

The same kind of gangsterism that we encountered in the [energy industry](#) is possibly worse in medicine. In 1990, I obtained a book titled *Medical Dark Ages*, by Ralph Hovnanian.[\[24\]](#) The book chronicled the studies that have been performed with alternative cancer treatments, and their success rates. They nearly all had higher batting averages than surgery, chemotherapy and radiation. They are, nearly without exception, harmless. They are nearly all vastly cheaper than mainstream methods, *and they are all illegal in the United States*. In many states, doctors have gone to prison for prescribing them to their patients. *Medical Dark Ages* listed the results of hundreds of studies that covered dozens of treatments. I had already been obtaining other material about alternative cancer treatments, but *Medical Dark Ages* was my wake-up call.

For all the information involving alternative cancer treatments, what bowled me over in *Medical Dark Ages* were

the more than [100 pages of quotations](#). I would read the quotes for an hour or so and get a kind of intellectual vertigo, overwhelmed by the quotes. With Ralph's enthusiastic permission, I reproduce many of them [on this web site](#), organized slightly more than Ralph has. Ralph spent years collecting a vast array of quotes from various sources about the medical industry, the cancer industry in particular. Before I deal with the cancer industry, here is a quote that lays out another aspect of the medical establishment. Here it is.

"Although I found that the booklet (*Stale Food vs. Fresh Food*) contained some helpful suggestions and its author, Mr. Robert Ford, is a knowledgeable and sincere person (i.e. no intent to defraud), I found the representations in the Respondent's booklet to be unproven and contrary to the weight of informed medical and scientific opinion. As indicated by Dr.____, (the only U.S. Post Office medical witness) a danger of this publication is that it will deceive people who have arterio-sclerotic problems into believing that they can cure these problems by diet alone instead of seeking medical (AMA) help. Because the ads and this booklet contain materially false representations, they violate the provisions of 39 US Code Section 3005. Therefore...a mail stop order...should be issued..." - **E.S. Bernstein, Administrative Law Judge, (1982)**.

That booklet saved my father's life. The mail stop order made it illegal to send it through the U.S. mail system, effectively banning it in America. In effect, it was similar to the Nazi/Catholic book burnings. [Using the U.S. Post office](#) is an effective tactic to wipe out alternative health practitioners. It is only one weapon in the medical establishment's arsenal, but it is an effective one. Here is a [link](#) to a full account of the banning of *Stale Food vs. Fresh Food*.

One million people per year in America die of vascular disease, and our dietary and health habits are nearly solely responsible for it. The most obvious factors are things such as smoking tobacco and drinking alcohol, but diet may be responsible for most of it.

In short, our bodies are designed to eat live food, as are all animals. We are the only animal that eats dead food, and the diseases we fall prey to are almost unique in the animal kingdom, particularly in their frequency. Living processes provide the nutrition that we get from food. When food is killed, those life processes cease, and it begins decomposing. Enzymes, vitamins and other vital substances can rapidly decompose. When [humanity ventured out of its natural range in the tropics](#), we eventually learned to domesticate plants and animals and preserve food in order to survive the seasons. We have done it so long that it is taken for granted, yet it is not a natural or ideal process.

We have huge industries based upon food processing, and through their wealth and power they have completely obscured the issue of how harmful dead food is to human biology. It is related to the corruption of medical science discussed in this site's [fluoridation essay](#). In the materialistic and reductionistic way that modern science has defined nutrition, a bowl of shredded cardboard sprayed with vitamins (which is close to describing most breakfast cereals) can be more nutritious than a bowl of fresh strawberries.

Pets also suffer from the degenerative diseases that humans manifest, because they are the only non-human animals to eat processed food. It can be argued that we get degenerative disease (degenerative disease kills two-thirds of all Americans) because we live so long, but the experiences with the Hunzas and other "primitive" societies, demonstrate that age may have little to do with it.

Degenerative diseases are cumulative chronic conditions, so they largely show up in later ages, although there has recently been a great increase in cancers in American children, for instance. The medical profession incredibly still advocates drugs and surgery to "correct" heart disease. That is arguably not because it is the best answer, or even really works, but because they make big money from providing their "treatment."

In the 1970s and 1980s, three major studies were published on the effects of coronary bypass surgery, and they are the only studies published to date. None of them demonstrated a significantly higher survival rate for

the group that had bypass surgery versus those who did not.[25] Even the angiogram that supposedly diagnoses people who “need” bypass surgery is virtually worthless, as attested to by all the studies published to date.[26] Even though the diagnosis and treatment are worthless, the coronary bypass business is among earth’s most lucrative, raking in more than \$50 billion per year in America. When Dr. Henry McIntosh at the Baylor College of Medicine, where the first bypass surgery was performed, published an assessment of the first ten years of bypass surgery results, he stated that there were virtually no measurable benefits from bypass surgery. Soon after publishing his paper, he was forced to leave Baylor.[27] His is not an [unusual fate](#). People with private insurance are 80% more likely to have an angiogram than a Medicaid (welfare) patient, and are 40% more likely to have bypass surgery.[28] In his book, *Heart Frauds*, after Charles T. McGee, M.D. exposes the scam that American medicine is regarding artery and heart disease, he then recommends what people should do to prevent those diseases. His advice is almost all about eating live food, just as in [Stale Food vs. Fresh Food](#). [29] Fortunately, his book has not yet been banned.

The medical profession is not alone in its anti-scientific methods. The food processors, similar to the fluoride polluters, have been busily buying up scientists who will tell Americans that processed food is good for them. The food processors, chemical companies and [agribusiness](#) companies all have a mutual self-interest in making their products appear safe and beneficial to the public eye. They are not really safe or beneficial, but people such [Frederick Stare](#), [Elizabeth Whelan](#) or [Steve Milloy](#), who are scientists in their employ, will tell us that most of what they produce is healthy. Tobacco company front man Milloy then has the gall to turn around and state that, “One in three Americans develops cancer as a function of being alive.”[30] Those overlapping areas of self-interest form what can be variously called a “power structure,” an “industrial complex” or an “establishment.”

Early Western Medicine

The study of anthropology impinges directly on the issue of medicine. As a science, anthropology is multifaceted, multidisciplinary, and has come a long way from its Victorian-era roots. The aspect of anthropology that deals with the distant human past is fascinating, replete with controversy, competing theories, new tools (such as DNA testing of fossils), and varying degrees of agreement regarding the human past. Again, as Kuhn observed, agreement does not mean that anthropologists as a whole are “right,” but that they agree. Nevertheless, there are areas of general agreement that appear to conform to the evidence adduced thus far, when the evidence has not been suppressed, such as how the findings of [Dr. Virginia Steen-McIntyre](#) apparently were, when they suggested a far earlier date of human habitation of the New World than the prevailing theories. Such suppression of anomalous data is far more common in the sciences than most think. [Dr. Phyllis Mullenix](#) encountered similar career destruction when she discovered that the fluorine ion damaged the brain. There is evidence that can argue for technologically advanced civilizations long ago, extraterrestrial genetic intervention in evolving humanity, greatly shortened or lengthened timelines, and room for the use of such tools as psychometry. Reintroducing a creator and consciousness into the framework is necessary if humankind is to escape the materialistic orientation that [threatens it with self-extinction](#). [31] Anthropology has a long way to go, but with all those caveats, there is a generally agreed upon story of the human past.

According to today’s prevailing theories, humankind on earth evolved in Africa long ago, as an evolutionary offshoot of the tropical apes that lived there. *Homo erectus*, the first erect, large-brained protohuman, appeared on the evolutionary scene more than two million years ago. *Homo erectus* migrated beyond Africa and the tropics more than one million years ago. *Homo sapiens* also likely first appeared in Africa, eventually displacing all other hominid species. As *Homo erectus* migrated beyond the tropics, the year-round supply of fruits, blossoms and seeds that make up about 80% of today’s great-ape diet could not be found in the harsher climates, with their seasons. *Homo erectus* had poor plant-scavenging prospects beyond the tropics for most of the year, mainly because they could not digest cellulose the way that ruminant animals can. [Cellulose](#) makes up the majority of plant structure (it forms the cell walls), and most animals cannot digest it. Gorillas have that ability, to a degree (chimpanzees also, to a lesser extent), and can thus adapt to leafier diets better than other apes. Dormant plants cannot provide much of the starch, sugar and fat that hominids use to fuel their

bodies in their native habitats. In order to survive beyond the tropics, early humans adapted their behavior. They hunted and ate animals, and wore the fur of their prey. They sought shelter from the elements, as in caves. They developed tools to help them hunt and eat, made of stone, wood and bone. Early humans learned how to control and use fire. Some of those behaviors originated in Africa, but they were refined to an art form in order to survive beyond the tropics.

Life was far from easy, and early humans died from injuries, starvation, infections, parasites, and some diseases. Also, those early hunter-gatherer humans invented a new behavior, nearly unknown in the animal world: as humans learned to kill large animals, [they also killed each other](#). What are called modern humans appeared on the evolutionary scene perhaps around 100,000 years ago. They learned other adaptive behaviors, such as building dwellings and boats. Those innovations enabled humankind to migrate further than before. The arrival of humans to the continents known today as Australia and North and South America is commonly thought to have coincided with the [extinction of large mammals](#). Humans may have caused the so-called megafauna extinctions. The issue is not settled, but the “overkill” hypothesis is persuasive.[\[32\]](#) [Humans are poorly designed to eat flesh](#). For one thing, true carnivores have high acid concentrations in their stomachs, which not only digest the rotting flesh rapidly, but the high concentrations kill parasites and deadly bacteria in the meat. Carnivores produce ten times as much hydrochloric acid as humans, cows, horses and other herbivorous species do, at twice the concentration, for twenty times the amount. A carnivore has a stomach pH of between one and two while the stomach is full, while a human stomach has a pH of between four and five. Humans do not enjoy the carnivorous stomach’s protection, and parasitic and bacterial infection was one effect of eating flesh, particularly in the large quantities that the early hunter-gatherers could ingest.

As humans pursued the hunter-gatherer lifestyle, their numbers grew as they migrated across the planet. What led humans to domesticate plants and animals? The Victorian era’s dominant hypothesis was that the domestication revolution of about ten thousand years ago was merely part of humankind’s endless progress. Today, it is more generally thought that population pressures forced the issue, in Malthusian fashion.[\[33\]](#) The big, easily killed game was extinct, hunter-gatherer methods cannot sustain dense human populations, and domestication may have been more a child of necessity than progressive invention, although there was probably interplay of those factors. So, beginning around ten thousand years ago, most earthly animals and plants that could be effectively domesticated were. There have been few species of plants or animals domesticated in recorded history. The last large mammal productively domesticated was the camel, about 4500 years ago. In modern times, moose, bison and other large mammals have been subjected to domestication attempts, with limited success.[\[34\]](#) Strawberries, raspberries, pecans and some other plants have been domesticated during history, but nearly all human plant consumption is of species domesticated before history was recorded. However, the fossil record does not tell a healthy story about the transition from hunter-gatherer to shepherd and farmer. Human skeletons became significantly smaller when the domestication revolution happened.

Violence is apparently proportionally greater in the hunter-gatherer lifestyle than in “civilization,” even including civilization’s innumerable wars. Civilization spawned many things both beneficial and disastrous for the human species. Permanent dwellings, writing, specialized professions and other “advancements” were part of civilization’s seeming benefits. Their companions, however, were [organized warfare](#), environmental degeneration, social hierarchies, exploitation on a grand scale, and - what concerns this essay - epidemic and degenerative disease. Hunter-gatherers ate living food. They had to constantly move around, because there was little vegetation that humans could eat, especially during periods of plant dormancy. Although chimpanzees are the most carnivorous of the great apes, flesh only amounts to about 1 to 2% of their diet, and they do not eat carrion. The mountain gorilla eats insects sometimes, and that is the most carnivorous part of its diet.

The great apes subsist mainly on live fruit, not hunter-gatherer fare, and the domestication revolution further altered the human diet. Not only were great amounts of flesh eaten, but grasses were domesticated for their seeds, hence wheat, corn, barley, millet, oats, etc. Legumes (mainly beans) were domesticated, as well as root crops. Domestic grains, legumes and root crops are relatively new innovations in the human diet, yet they make up the majority of it today, and humans have not evolved to ideally eat them. In addition, [fruits are designed to be eaten by animals](#), as a way of dispersing the seeds. Fruit’s sweetness is attractive to

great apes and other animals, hence the human sweet tooth. Such is not the case with grains, legumes, roots and much of what are called vegetables. That is why a sweet dessert rewards eating an unsweet and often disagreeable main course.

Flowering plants appeared on the evolutionary scene about [135 million](#) years ago, about 70 million years before primates did. When flowers are fertilized, they grow into fruit, which is an evolutionary adaptation where the plant is not eaten to satisfy animal hunger, but the fruit provides the animal with energy, and the plant a means to distribute its seed. Primates are primarily tree dwellers, and fruit comprises 65% of the great ape diet. It is a perfect symbiosis of plant and animal. That symbiosis is not evident in roots, for instance, as eating a plant's root kills the plant. The same goes for vegetables. Grains and legumes are seeds, and are not ideal foods, and many are highly toxic, and even through domestication, there are toxic and other properties of grains and legumes that make them difficult to digest. Humans eat only about 2% of all legume species. The natives of California used acorns as a staple food. However, they had to leach the tannic acid from the acorns in order to eat them. Seeds rarely have symbiotic relationships with animals, and plants have many adaptations to minimize animal predation, such as thorns, thick husks, etc. The castor bean is toxic to all animals, even insects. Some insects eat toxic seeds and use the seed's toxic properties to make *themselves* toxic to animals that would otherwise eat them. Those non-fruit plant parts are not ideal foods, which is partly why organs such as livers and kidneys exist, to deal with the toxins. Those crops have not had all their toxic and non-digestive properties bred from them, and it may not be entirely possible.

Cooking and other food processing can minimize certain toxic chemicals (such as acid in acorns and the cassava root), make more of certain substances digestible (such as protein in grains), and kill parasites and bacteria in flesh, but such processing also destroys enzymes, vitamins and other nutritious substances. Domesticating and growing those plant parts that humans can digest (largely non-cellulose parts) is a mixed bag. The same goes for the domestication of animals and eating large quantities of flesh and milk products. Also, our food animals are often raised on grain diets, which they are not suited for, and they become fatter than normal (among other health problems) also [by design](#) (feed, genetics, drugs, hormones, etc.), but obviously not ideal for those consuming their flesh. Most of adult humanity (about 70%) is lactose-intolerant, which means that they cannot effectively digest milk products. There has been some evolutionary adaptation in adults who can digest milk, but as somebody who has eliminated milk products from his diet more than once, I can say that even descendants of pastoral societies are far from ideally adapted to consume milk products. We are the only creatures on earth that consume milk as adults, and it is not from our species. Less than one percent of humanity is gluten-intolerant, which is a protein found in wheat. I cannot comfortably digest quinoa, a New World grain. Many people have allergic reactions to corn, peanuts, eggs, milk, meat, the nightshade family, etc. (although some of those reactions are undoubtedly due to how the food was raised and prepared, or attendant chemicals such as pesticides). Those are some of the prices humanity has paid for leaving its natural habitat.

Civilized people developed methods to survive the seasons, which were largely based upon food preservation. Cooking, grinding, salting and other methods were used to preserve food. What is largely overlooked is that preserving food means preventing further decay. Food preservation is often a method of decaying food to a level where it takes a long time to decay further. Cooking destroys enzymes and robs food of its nutritional value. Grinding food destroys its structure and hence creates a rapid deterioration in what remains. Modern methods of bleaching flour further rob it of nutritional value, and are performed by design. Bleached flour is far less inviting to insects that eat unbleached flour, because there is little nutritional value left. One way to kill the mice that infest mills is to let them eat all the bleached flour they want. They then quickly die. Spicing, salting and drying are other methods of food preservation, but living food is obviously far more nutritious than the cooked, spiced, salted, or dried versions. With animals, domesticating them allowed humans to keep living food around during the winter, killing the animals as needed. The prevailing theories today hold that nearly every epidemic disease is a consequence of domesticating animals, civilization's dense human populations, and civilization's filth. Accordingly, measles came from dogs or cattle, bubonic plague from rodents, influenza from pigs and ducks, smallpox from cattle, the common cold from horses, and so on. Infectious disease needed dense human populations in order to spread to epidemic proportions. The sparse, relatively clean hunter-gatherer populations did not experience epidemic disease.

With the rise of civilization, humanity began soiling its nest. In the early days of civilization, there were no

sewers, dumps and other measures for keeping civilization clean. Filth accumulated and disease flourished. The filth was closely related to “germs,” and improving sanitation and nutrition ended most epidemic disease, with [vaccination](#) receiving little or no credit (perhaps even negative credit).

Civilization began before history, as it took time for writing to develop. The first known writings were the cuneiform tablets used in Sumeria, and of the 30,000 surviving cuneiform clay tablets discovered in Mesopotamia (literally “land between the rivers,” today’s Iraq, part of the Fertile Crescent), about 1,000 dealt with medicine.[35] Women’s status declined during the Sumerian centuries, reflecting not only the culture’s degeneration, but also the conflict between masculine and feminine principles. In addition, the agricultural methods, relying on irrigation, eventually [degraded and salinated the soil, making it infertile](#).[36] Filthy urban conditions, undernutrition and malnutrition lead to susceptibility to epidemic and degenerative disease, and in conjunction with Old World civilization. The earliest medical professionals undoubtedly noted the contribution of filthiness and poor nutrition to disease. While the historical record of long ago is sparse, and was written to favor the victors (men and masculine principles), the notion of sanitation and nutrition as disease prevention survives in the mythological Greek figure of Hygieia, a woman.

By the time of Hippocrates, when the foundations of Western medicine (and modern democracy) were supposedly laid, men had taken over the medical profession. Aristotle theorized that women were inherently inferior because of their biology. In ancient Rome, women were treated relatively better and were better represented in the healing arts. Even though Rome had sewers (they first showed up in Assyria and Crete, as far as today’s archeological evidence suggests, but they also may have existed earlier in civilization) epidemic disease swept through ancient Greece and Rome, and is thought of as partly a consequence of their imperialism, bringing new diseases back with the soldiers, slaves and imperial commerce.

One problem with historical investigation of early medicine or any ancient culture is that the analysis is often of stones, bones, the writings of the elite, the lives of kings and so on. It is difficult to get an intimate sense of the times, and what life was really like back then. My [paranormal experiences](#) showed me that there is far more to consciousness than the West admits. When modern commentators scoff at ancient “superstitions” and “witch doctors,” how much of that is a self-serving projection? Psychic healing is real, and the “placebo effect” only hints at the potential of human consciousness to create disease or health. People used to be much more connected to their dreams, and they had importance in their waking lives. Some of today’s scientists pass off dreams as some kind of garbage that the mind sheds during sleep. The most open-minded of them may have little appreciation for the inter-dimensional doorway that dreams could represent. What were the dreams of ancient humans like? Studying stone axes, pottery fragments and bones provides little evidence.

While the West *has* “advanced” in some important ways, it is also evident that even though there surely was superstition in ancient healing, and a poor understanding of anatomy, in some ways those “primitive” doctors are still ahead of Western medicine. Socrates could well have been speaking of today’s medical establishment when he said, “The cure of many diseases remains unknown to the physicians of Hellos because they do not study the whole person.” Holistic medicine is still marginalized in Western medicine, more than two thousand years later. The feminine-oriented (they did not have to be women to be feminine-oriented) healers of an earlier era may have had a better grasp of the role of the patient’s personality and spirit in healing than those Hellos doctors, or today’s.

Today’s books about Western medicine’s history largely focus on two men from ancient times: Hippocrates and Galen. Their work formed the foundation of Western medicine. Hippocrates lived during Greece’s classic period, about 400 years before Jesus was born. Many works attributed to Hippocrates are not his, but from the school of thought he came to represent. The Hippocratic method was founded upon observation and reason, and its primary dictum was “first, do no harm.” Western doctors take the Hippocratic oath today.

Galen was also Greek, lived during the second century AD, but made his mark in Rome. Galen was a prolific writer, and he furthered the Hippocratic notion of observation. Galen dissected animals and applied his findings to human anatomy. Unfortunately for the West, Hippocrates’ work fell victim to Roman Catholic hostility toward all things Greek, and Galen’s work became dogmatized. The principle of observing nature was abandoned, Galen’s works ironically became a bulwark *against* observing nature, and medical authorities uncritically repeated his work for more than a millennium.

The Catholic Church, which largely took over the healing profession when the Western Roman Empire collapsed, helped dogmatize Galen's work. The Church was a misogynistic institution, the Western healing profession largely passed into its control, and women were shut out. Early Christian theorists denied that women, being made from Adam's rib, had souls. There were still plenty of women midwives and herbalists, but they were rarely part of the Church-dominated healing profession. During the Middle Ages men dominated professional medicine, with some women healers, such as Trotula of Salerno and Hildegard of Bingen becoming prominent in the late Middle Ages, although many male doctors today cannot believe that Trotula could have been a woman, as prominent as "she" was.[\[37\]](#)

The Catholic Church had all the classic Greek texts burned as pagan, and about the only reason the West knows much about Hippocrates, Socrates, Pythagoras and friends is that Islamic scholars translated their works into Arabic, to finally come back to Europe in Latin after 1000 AD. The "[Reconquest](#)" of the Iberian Peninsula opened the great Islamic libraries to European Christians, and the logic and reason of the Greeks began "infecting" Italy and elsewhere in Europe during the High Middle Ages. The fall of Constantinople to the Ottoman Turks in 1453 helped further the revival of Greek scholarship in the West. The fall of Constantinople also set in motion [Portuguese](#) and [Spanish](#) attempts to find another route to gain [Asian spices](#) and goods, followed by the Portuguese sailing around Africa and [Columbus' fateful voyage](#).

In the healing arts and science, the Islamic culture far outstripped Church-dominated Europe. Around 1200 AD, the Islamic culture had perhaps the world's highest standard of living. Islamic medicine expanded the West's pharmacopoeia, kept the classic Greek teachings alive, and Jewish doctors such as Maimonides were influential in European medicine. The Renaissance era saw a European revival of interest in ancient Greek teachings, and discoveries across the Atlantic Ocean spurred [genocides](#), [gold rushes](#), massive population movements and [empire building](#). The [printing press and widespread literacy](#), instead of becoming a tool of a proselytizing Catholic Church, became a tool of the Protestant Reformation and political revolutions. From the ferment of renaissance and imperial Europe came the rise of modern science and medicine.

In 1543, Nicolaus Copernicus lay on his deathbed and happily examined an advance copy of his newly published book, a work that ultimately overturned more than a millennium of Ptolemaic theory that made earth the center of the universe.[\[38\]](#) Copernicus, although he was a devout Catholic, eventually defeated Catholic dogma with his book, a work so influential that it is widely considered to have initiated the rise of Western science. Although Giordano Bruno was burned alive for holding to Copernicus' view (and other radical notions) and [Galileo Galilei](#) was forced to recant (which dissuaded people such as René Descartes from further considering heliocentric theory), Copernicus' work eventually prevailed.

Galen's work guided "knowledge" of the human body until Andreas Vesalius appeared. A native of Brussels, Vesalius published another work that overturned a millennium of dogma. It was published in the same year as Copernicus' seminal work. As with Galen, Vesalius dissected animals, but he also dissected human beings (by raiding gallows and other grim places) in a way the West had never seen before. He eventually discovered that hundreds of Galen's findings were incorrect, largely because Galen extrapolated findings on dissected animals to humans. Vesalius' book, *De Humani Corporis Fabrica*, is considered the first work of modern scientific medicine.

Galen and Vesalius had important similarities. Galen parlayed his work into becoming the personal physician to the West's most powerful men: Roman Emperor Marcus Aurelius and his heir Commodus. Vesalius also used his work to become the personal physician to the West's most powerful man: Charles V, Holy Roman Emperor and King of Spain during the peak of Spain's power. Although Galen and Vesalius' names are hallowed in the annals of medicine, there are other parallels less savory. Both men not only dissected animals, they both dissected *living* animals. Those men were the West's first vivisectionists. That fact demonstrates the life-taking, masculine paradigm, and it is also spiritually primitive. The [spiritual](#) probably cannot be effectively divorced from the material, and Western science has eliminated the spiritual to its detriment.

Spiritual perspectives will be presented throughout this medical essay. My first major mystical influence, [Seth](#), once said that when a scientist robs a frog of its life in order to dissect it, the scientist ends up knowing *less* about life, not more, when the dissection is complete. Dissecting an animal *while it still lives* is far

more degenerate. When Western science justified the sacrifice of “lesser” life forms in its quest for knowledge, it was taking large steps *backwards* in its understanding of life and reality, although such a sentiment is largely unrecognized even today, while tens of millions of animals are [killed in experiments in the United States each year](#), in the name of science and medicine. Taking a life to “save” a life, in the long run, is arguably taking two steps backwards to take one step forward, and the step “forward” may be in the wrong direction.

With the works of Copernicus and Vesalius, Western science began its fitful rise, and religion gradually lost its grip over the masses. In the 1600s, William Harvey further proved Galen’s work wrong. Although [Chinese writings](#) from nearly 5000 years ago stated that the human heart was a pump that circulated blood throughout the body, that understanding in the West did not occur until William Harvey’s work appeared. Just as Copernicus did not immediately overturn Ptolemaic dogma regarding an earth-centered universe, Vesalius did not immediately overturn all Galenic dogma. In 1628, Harvey published his research into the heart and its function. Similar to Galen and Vesalius, Harvey was a court physician, in his case to England’s King James I. In addition (and this is a central concern of this medical essay), Galen, Vesalius and Harvey were all viciously attacked by their colleagues, who [defended the day’s dogma](#). Vesalius became so disgusted by the attacks that he lit a bonfire, destroying his notes and works, and got out of anatomy altogether. Harvey endured years of attacks, to finally see his theories vindicated before he died.^[39] Not coincidentally, that warfare over those theories and dogma was entirely waged by men, and Harvey was another vivisectionist.

The Beginnings of Today’s Medical Establishment

The rise of Western science is inextricably connected to the rise of Western medicine, as is [European imperialism](#), the decline of the Catholic Church, the [Industrial Revolution](#), modern [warfare](#), political-economic ideologies such as [capitalism](#) and communism, and other factors. When studying the development of medical science and its attendant establishment, the interplay of scientists, their nations of origin, dominant religious sects and other factors can be seen to influence the course of scientific theory as well as the data. There is no such thing as “pure science.”

It is no coincidence that Copernicus and Vesalius both published their works in 1543. Long-standing dogma was challenged on many fronts, not least of which was the Protestant Reformation. In 1543, the Catholic Church, although it had burned books many times in the past, dramatically toughened its policy and levied heavy penalties for selling books that the Church had banned. Cardinal Carafa went so far as to declare that no books could be published without permission from the Inquisition.^[40] In 1559, the infamous *Index Auctorum et Librorum Prohibitorum* was first published, a list of banned books that would endure until the 1960s.

Harvey was not the first European to describe the heart’s circulation of the blood. In 1553, Michael Servetus anonymously published *The Restoration of Christianity*. In his work, he challenged Galenic dogma and correctly described the pulmonary circulation between the heart and lungs, although it was in the context of how the Holy Spirit enters man. He escaped the Spanish Inquisition only to land in Calvin’s Geneva, where both he and his work were burned. Burning the heretic and his books ensured that his theory about the heart and circulation would not influence European science.

Joseph Schwartz persuasively made the case that [Galileo](#) and Newton couched their work in mathematics to make it less susceptible to the Church’s attacks. Those strategic decisions helped send science awry, making it too reliant on mathematics, and more occult than it needed to be.^[41] I have virtually never needed to use mathematics to explain a scientific theory.

Ambroise Paré, a contemporary of Vesalius, advanced the science of surgery, honing his craft in battlefield hospitals, introducing the practice of binding arteries to reduce hemorrhage, and ending the practice of pouring boiling oil on wounds to cauterize them. That was discovered accidentally when one day he ran out of oil and used soothing lotions instead. Paré brought to Western surgery the notion of gentle treatment of wounds, and he engaged in the customary academic fisticuffs with his rivals. As with the others, Paré became

the surgeon to several kings of France.

During the next three centuries, Western science made its advances. Vivisection became the norm in medical research. Witches and heretics burned across Europe, and devastating wars endlessly raged back and forth, often over religion. The distinction between saint, heretic and witch was largely a *political-economic* one.

The gradual elimination of the spiritual perspective was a complex affair, with various schools of thought rising and falling. The writings of Francis Bacon (1561-1626), an English statesman and philosopher, were influential in their materialistic perspective. Bacon argued for relying on what our senses tell us, using reason to interpret it, and staying within that framework. The materialism of Bacon would influence the materialism of Marx and others. Newton explained the effect of gravity with equations, and he, along with Copernicus, Kepler and Galileo helped initiate the science of celestial mechanics. Seeking the mechanism behind everything became science's Holy Grail. The world of the spirit gradually fell away, and Western science put nature "on the rack," torturing her secrets out of her (vivisection being an obvious example of that approach). A wide array of scientific and medical theories proliferated. Bacon, Descartes and other philosophers initiated an age of rational thought, although the outright rejection of religion would not occur until the Enlightenment, during the 18th century. Materialist and spiritualist theories vied with one another, some explaining life as a mechanism, others denying that mechanics could ever explain the ineffable spark of life.

The new lens-making technologies that made telescopes possible also made microscopes possible, exploration of the previously invisible world began, as well as exploration of the earth's farthest corners (usually in the name of conquest). Midwives and herbalists still practiced, although they were increasingly subject to repression. Disease was studied by the new science of medicine. The practice of Western medicine, however, did not change much during the 16th through 18th centuries. While women specialized in the gentle medicine of herbs and nutrition, the male-dominated medical profession used leeches, purgatives, emetics, surgery and other violent methods. European women healers found it increasingly difficult to work from the time of Vesalius onward.^[42] Epidemic disease swept through Europe regularly. European cities were [hellish arenas of violence, filth and disease](#). With numbing regularity, famine, disease or warfare (or all three) would march through, carrying off vast numbers of souls. The only way that Europe's cities kept their populations stable was through a constant influx of "surplus population" from the countryside, to replace those who died off in the cities. As Europeans sailed the high seas, natives in the New World, Australia, the South Pacific and elsewhere died off from European-introduced disease in stupefying numbers. Fifty million Native Americans may have died off from European-introduced disease during the 16th century, with perhaps another twenty million being worked to death, in the [greatest single demographic catastrophe](#) in history, killing off 90% of a hemisphere's human population.

The Enlightenment era, with its egalitarian ideals, a faith in science, reason and a promotion of humane principles, was the fruit of centuries of ferment. That era saw the creation of the greatest music that humanity has yet produced. Medicine for the masses became popular. To be sure, there were men who subscribed to the principles of Hygeia, such as William Buchan, John Wesley, Johann Frank and others of the Enlightenment era. Also, the age of quackery largely coincided with those days. While "quack" may have described many folk healers and their seemingly nonsensical medicine, the notion has also been greatly abused ever since to suppress medical innovation. Less than a month before I wrote these words, a "skeptic" challenged me about [Dennis Lee](#) and alternative energy's plight. He stated that the *unmistakable mark of a quack*, medical or otherwise, was the *claim of being persecuted*. As we shall see, it is also the unmistakable mark of a pioneer. In 1761, the German physician Leopold Auenbrugger invented the method of rapping on a person's chest, listening to the sound produced, a method familiar to any American who has ever had a physical examination. An amateur musician, Auenbrugger began cataloguing what the various sounds might mean. He realized the importance of his work, but had no illusions of becoming a medical hero. He wrote,

"In making public my discoveries I have not been unconscious of the dangers I must encounter, since it has always been the fate of those who have illustrated or improved the arts and sciences by their discoveries to be beset by envy, malice, hatred, destruction and calumny."^[43]

In North America's colonial settlements, women had a freer hand to practice medicine. The restrictive atmosphere of European medicine could not entirely prevail an ocean away. The Enlightenment also helped spawn political revolutions, beginning with the [American Revolution](#). Also, finally, Western medicine began understanding how to cure some diseases.

When Europeans began sailing the high seas, scurvy attended their voyages. In 1498, Arab traders [cured Vasco de Gama's crew of scurvy](#) by feeding them oranges. In 1535, [Jacques Cartier's](#) crew came down with scurvy on the Saint Lawrence River. Twenty-five members of his crew died before a local Indian showed them how to make bark and evergreen needles into a drink. The drink was high in vitamin C, and his men were cured. When Cartier reported the incident to the medical authorities upon his return, they laughed at the ignorant practices of the "savages," and never followed up on it. In 1593, Richard Hawkins, [Francis Drake's](#) relative and fellow pirate-explorer, sailed to the South Pacific and noted that the natives used citrus fruit to cure scurvy, something that also cured his men. His observation was also not acted upon by the day's medical profession. In 1601, Captain James Lancaster sailed his fleet of four ships, and gave lemon juice to the crew on the ship he sailed. The other three vessels' crews came down with scurvy. In 1636, John Woodall published *The Surgeon's Mate*, where he unequivocally wrote that scurvy could be prevented by eating fresh vegetables and citrus fruit. The medical establishment ignored those findings, while an estimated million sailors lost their lives to scurvy (5000 per year, from 1600 to 1800). It was not until the Scottish James Lind performed an experiment that Western medicine began considering the cure. His experiments aboard the HMS Salisbury in 1754 proved that citrus fruit cured scurvy, although he did not know why. In the 1760s, James Cook sailed around the world, embracing hygienic principles, and he used citrus fruit to cure scurvy in his crew. Cook only lost one man from disease during the three-year voyage, and it was to tuberculosis. Many thousands more sailors died on the high seas, and it was not until 1795, largely due to the efforts of Gilbert Bane, that the British began issuing citrus juice to its sailors, and "limeys" soon ruled the high seas. Establishment histories of medicine, such as Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, often do not mention anything about people curing scurvy before Lind's work. That is always a hazard of reading mainstream history. The official story can leave plenty out, incidents that can cast an importantly different light on the story.

The Enlightenment came to an end with the French Revolution and Napoleon. The Industrial Revolution was underway, capitalism was evolving in ways that Adam Smith did not foresee, and the world of Charles Dickens came to pass. The early years of the 19th century are typically considered the beginning of the modern era. In the early 19th century the stethoscope was invented. [Auenbrugger's method](#), neglected for more than forty years, was finally used. Diagnosis finally began being earnestly practiced in Western medicine. Again, was that a step forward? [Seth](#) said that cataloguing disease is not dealing with the issue in the most enlightened way. He said that focusing on health and how to be healthy (Hygeia's principles once again) is far preferable to studying and treating disease. Studying disease has helped lead to today's medicine refining the art of symptom management, instead of the underlying cause. Also, any treatment that does anything other than suppress symptoms (with male-oriented knives and drugs) has largely been outlawed in the United States.

In the United States, one of the Declaration of Independence's signers, Dr. Benjamin Rush, became America's most famous doctor. He taught at the University of Pennsylvania for more than forty years, and his impact on American medicine can still be felt today. Rush represented the early medical establishment in the United States. He did, however, write this prescient paragraph,

"Unless we put medical freedom into the Constitution, the time will come when medicine will organize into an undercover dictatorship...To restrict the art of healing to one class of men and deny equal privileges to others will constitute the Bastille of medical science. All such laws are un-American and despotic... and have no place in a republic...The Constitution of this Republic should make special provisions for medical freedom as well as religious freedom."[\[44\]](#)

Rush's friend Thomas Jefferson wrote,

"If people let the government decide what foods they eat and what medicines they take, their bodies will soon be in as sorry a state as are the souls who live under tyranny."

Although Rush warned against a medical racket taking shape in the United States, his work was the epitome of masculine medicine. Rush began using mercury in large doses to "cure" patients during a yellow-fever epidemic in Philadelphia in 1793. Rush patented his "cure," and his Rush's Pills became a mainstay of American medicine. Rush's pills were a violent purgative made from calomel (mercury chloride) and jalap. A person's bowels would virtually explode after ingesting Rush's cure-all. Rush' pills were informally known as "Thunderclappers." Rush believed that nearly every disease condition could be cured with Rush's Pills.

The deadly effects of mercury have been well known since ancient times. Mercury poisoning may have killed Isaac Newton as well as destroyed his mind, as he worked with it in alchemical experiments, probably trying to make gold. Rush's logic was that the ingestion of mercury and jalap would blast out any diseased matter in the intestines. If that failed to provide the cure, the patient would also get mercury poisoning, which "altered" the original disease, somehow combining it with the mercury poisoning. The logic was that if patients survived the mercury poisoning, their recovery would also cure their original disease.[45] That type of treatment, in typical masculine fashion, became known as "heroic" medicine. In those years of heroic mercury therapy, there were instances of cadavers being dissected, and mercury would run from their bodies.

Using large doses of mercury was not the only innovation that Rush blessed America with. He was probably the person who initiated "heroic" bleeding. The bleeding practices of the past were not enough. Rush believed in bleeding the better part of a gallon (the adult human body only holds about five quarts) of blood from his sicker patients. Not only adults were bled under Rush's ministrations, but also infants as young as three months old. Because newborns are so small, the jugular vein was often the only one large enough to be opened for bleeding. Rush noticed that newborns could not survive being bled as much and as often as adults, so he could not be quite as heroic with infants.

Calomel was not banned as "medicine" until my lifetime, to demonstrate how influential Rush was to Western medicine. Mercury, bleeding and other "heroic" methods clearly reflected masculine medicine's principles. Rush distrusted nature. He saw disease as a failure of nature, so heroic intervention was the only effective approach. Rush's outlook became the orthodox American medical paradigm of the 19th century, and that medical establishment had the audacity to call alternative practitioners "quacks."

Rush, the physician general to [George Washington](#)'s revolutionary army, subscribed to warfare ideology in his medical approach. Said Rush, "It is necessary that (the remedies) be so - that is, more powerful than the disease, or they cannot overcome it." [46] Washington was probably [bloodlet to death](#) by doctors practicing "heroic" medicine. That heroic philosophy is still prevalent in today's American medicine. Rush pointed to surviving patients as proof that his treatments worked, but millions of people paid the price of his certitude. Rush was hostile toward plant-based remedies, but believed in metallic medicine. Highly toxic heavy metals such as mercury, lead and antimony (in the same chemical family as arsenic) found their way into the day's orthodox medicine. Rush's methods were in keeping with the assembly-line strategies that accompanied the Industrial Revolution. Orthodox doctors could treat up to thirty patients in an average morning, prescribing nearly the same treatment to every one, no matter their condition. It was a "one-size-fits-all" medicine.

The Enlightenment began in France, and in no small measure had the European experience in North America to thank. Although the Enlightenment looked back to ancient Greece's democracy for political inspiration, in major ways classical Greece was a poor example: slaves outnumbered citizens in Athens, and women were

nearly prisoners in their homes. When the Enlightenment began, humanity's only functioning democracy was the [Iroquois Confederation](#), in the area of present-day New York State. Iroquoian women elected the chiefs, ran village life and cast their children's vote in proxy, for a balance of power between the sexes that no Western society has yet approached. History being the ultimate ironist, George Washington led the effort to eliminate Iroquois society. The [Iroquois saw Washington](#) in much the same way as 1940s Jews saw Adolf Hitler. The largely classless societies among the North American natives, and the freedom that was such a natural part of native life, were attractive to Europeans, which led to a long-standing colonial problem: colonists [running off and "going native."](#)^[47] Later theorists such as Friedrich Engels drew upon the Iroquoian example.^[48] The Iroquoian government was very democratic with decentralized power and had no executive branch, something that monarchical Europe could not countenance, so the framers of the United States Constitution invented the executive branch, which has undermined the other branches ever since, amassing power to itself (so those who control the president control the government). Ben Franklin, the American ambassador to France, [was profoundly influenced by the Iroquoian form of government](#).

One Enlightenment outcome was the improvement of women's lives. Gone were the days of being burned alive as a "witch," although full citizen rights for American women would not come until the 20th century, on paper at least. Victorian prudery would soon appear, transforming women's sexuality from something to be feared into something to be repressed. Chattel slavery was transformed into wage slavery, communism would appear as a challenge to capitalism (although both movements would betray the spirit of their founding theorists), and revolutionary activities characterized the nineteenth century, as well as European imperial land grabs throughout the world. Throughout the chaos, social movements grew, counterattacks by various establishments were waged, and the 19th century was humanity's most tumultuous...until the 20th.

What happened in Western medicine parallels what happened in Western politics. While the divine right of kings was challenged, to more violent effect in France than in Britain, male-dominated heroic medicine was also challenged. Understandably, people feared the day's orthodox medicine, with their bleedings, mercury, lead and other deadly methods that passed for medicine. The foundation of orthodox medical practice and philosophy came under fire from several quarters, largely motivated by disgust with orthodox medical practice. In the early 19th century, there were three major challenges to American orthodox medicine. One was a revival of herbal medicine, largely based upon Native American remedies. Those practitioners became known as "Indian Doctors."

Samuel Thomson mounted another challenge to orthodox medicine. Thomson was a New Hampshire farmer who devised a medical system for the masses that utilized Native American steam baths and an herbal pharmacopoeia that eventually encompassed 65 herbal remedies. Thomson learned his herbal medicine from a woman herbalist. Thomson's system created an army of folk healers, where the ideal was "every man his own doctor." By 1839, one-sixth of the United States (three million people) used his system of medicine.^[49] Orthodox doctors saw Thomson as such a dire threat that they had a law passed that named Thomson specifically. What did the law state? Thomson was [forbidden to treat people without charging them](#). Those challenges to orthodox medicine were nearly the antithesis of heroic medicine.

The third challenge to American orthodox medicine came from within its ranks, from Europe. It was the most substantial challenge to American orthodox medicine, as it was the most professional. In the late 18th century a German physician, Samuel Hahnemann, developed a system of medicine wholly at variance with orthodox medical theory. He rejected the materialistic perspective of science and medicine, and saw disease and health as spiritual conditions. Hahnemann thought that dissection and attempts to describe the mechanics of the human body, as a way to guide treatment, was a useless undertaking. Hahnemann borrowed from the ancient Greeks and Paracelsus in developing a "law of similars." Hahnemann's theory was that if a healthy person were given a medicine that produced certain symptoms, an ill person with those same symptoms would be cured by the same medicine. It was a case of "paradoxical" therapy. It was not the first, and not the last, paradoxical therapy. Ericksonian therapy in psychology, for instance, is used today with great success. Hahnemann's style of medicine became known as homeopathy. While purgatives and other violent medicines were given by orthodoxy, and the more concentrated the better, Hahnemann took the opposite approach, *based on his experience with treating patients*.

Hahnemann's medicines were highly dilute, and the more dilute, the more powerful the apparent healing

properties, even when so dilute that not even one molecule remained of the original substance. It might seem like nonsense, but it worked, and there is experimental data to support the notion. The effect and philosophy of homeopathy markedly differs from drug therapy. Homeopathy uses dilute substances to help stimulate the body to heal itself, a helpful reminder of sorts. Drug therapy, on the other hand, overwhelms the body, taking over its chemistry, manipulating it to “health.” Whereas homeopathy stimulates the body to heal itself and to correct the underlying condition, which is classic feminine medicine, drug therapy reflects masculine principles of warfare and domination, taking over the body’s processes, usually acting by suppressing disease symptoms.

I have used homeopathy to dramatic effect, and have seen it work miracles. It is similar in some ways to the concept of vaccination, stimulating the body to ward off disease. In the attacks against homeopathy that continue to this day, the orthodox assailants always say how “absurd” homeopathy is, while the homeopaths respond, “OK, it may seem that way to our conditioned minds, but it works, and nobody is harmed by it.” In fact, there *is* a theoretical basis for homeopathy, which is largely unchanged from Hahnemann’s day, but it is radically different from orthodox theory.^[50] Hahnemann was banned from practicing in Germany. He had to keep moving his place of residence because of the attacks, and homeopathy was introduced to the United States in 1825.^[51]

During the early 19th century, the United States’ citizenry began abandoning orthodox medicine. Monopolistic medical laws were overturned across America, and orthodox doctors had to compete with the alternative movements. As far as millions of Americans were concerned, abandoning orthodox medicine was an exercise in freedom. In the words of one senator who introduced a law that helped overturn the orthodox medical monopoly,

“A people accustomed to govern themselves and boasting of their intelligence are impatient of restraint. They want no protection but freedom of inquiry and freedom of action.”^[52]

That statement was similar in spirit to Ben Franklin’s observation that people who give up freedom for security will get (and deserve) neither. Orthodox medicine had plenty going against it. For one thing, their “medicine” was widely considered to be deadly. Another factor was the minimal training that orthodox doctors received. Orthodox training was so poor that between 1853 and 1873 only about a third of all applicants, with medical school diplomas in hand, passed the examination to become a naval doctor.^[53] The director of naval medicine thought another ten percent could have passed an easier examination, but the remaining majority of applicants were hopelessly unqualified.

Medical schools flooded America with those unqualified doctors, dispensing their “medicine.” Homeopaths made far more money per practitioner than orthodox doctors, because demand for them was relatively higher. The “Indian Doctors” and Thomsonian practitioners merged in the 1840s to form the “eclectic” school of medicine. About one-sixth of America’s homeopathic practitioners were converted orthodox doctors. In 1844, homeopaths formed the American Institute of Homeopathy. Orthodox medicine was being rapidly abandoned. Accordingly, it mounted a counterattack. The first blast came from Oliver Wendell Holmes, who published *Homeopathy and its Kindred Delusions* in 1842. Holmes led the attack on feminine-oriented medicine and its, “nature-trusting heresy.”^[54] It is no accident that Holmes invoked the Inquisition’s terminology. To this day, the American medical establishment has never performed *any* scientific investigation into homeopathy or its results.^[55] A quote from Herbert Spencer is appropriate here, as it will apply to the medical establishment in dozens of instances before this essay is finished.

“There is a principle which is a bar against all information, which is proof against all argument, and which cannot fail to keep man in everlasting ignorance. That principle is condemnation without investigation.”

One of the greatest minds in American history, William James, said in 1898 to the Massachusetts legislature, as he argued against a law that would make psychology into a monopoly run by orthodox medical doctors,

“When I was a medical student I feel sure that any one of us would have been ashamed to be caught looking into a homeopathic book by a professor. We had to sneer at homeopathy by word of command. Such was the school opinion at that time, and I imagine that similar encouragement to superficiality in various directions exist in the medical schools of today.”[\[56\]](#)

More than a century later, the situation is identical. A couple of months before writing this, an orthodox doctor gave me his opinion that homeopathy and alternative cancer treatments were worthless scams, as they did not have solid science behind them. He stated that the very principle of homeopathy, of dilute medicines, was absurd on its face and not worthy of serious consideration. Had he performed any investigation himself? Had he even read the results of a scientific investigation that found homeopathy wanting? I believe that the answer was no, although my homeopathist lived in the same town. What was the basis for his opinion? As far as I could tell, he was reciting the fairy tales that American orthodox doctors have been indoctrinated into for the past 150 years. In kind, it was nearly identical to the [fairy tales](#) I was told about capitalism in business school.

In 1845, in direct response to the threat of alternative medicine, the American Medical Association (AMA) was formed. As has been the case with probably every professional group in world history, the AMA was primarily concerned with serving the well-being of its members. They couched their public image as coming together to serve the public, which is the standard *modus operandi* of EVERY [self-serving](#) operation. The AMA is the doctor’s union, and protecting the public is *the world’s biggest protection racket*. Nathan Smith Davis formed the AMA, and although one of his goals was improving medical education and training, it was politically inexpedient to push for it. Davis needed allies in the war against feminine-oriented medicine, and few of the day’s orthodox practitioners would have met Smith’s proposed standard of medical training and competence. One early AMA strategy was banning consultation with non-orthodox doctors. This helped stanch the bleeding of orthodox conversions to homeopathy. Using standard business strategy, in order to compete with the homeopaths and other gentle medical approaches, orthodox medicine had to abandon some of its more egregious practices such as bloodletting. The gigantic doses of calomel and other “medicines” continued late into the 19th century. Davis was about the first great American crusader against “quacks,” although somehow the practice of administering calomel did not qualify as quackery.

As orthodox medicine waged its war against competition from alternative therapies, surgery was not really part of the battle. That is because surgery was not held in high esteem, although some successful surgeons could command hefty sums in Europe. Many people considered surgery a last resort, fit mainly for battlefield hospitals; to try putting soldiers back together. The surgery of Rush’s time was similarly heroic, with doctors vying to see who could remove the greatest portion of a patient’s body without causing death.[\[57\]](#) No [life insurance company](#) would insure a surgeon’s wife in those days. If patients did not die from the pain or too many removed organs, they would likely die from infection. Sanitation was not a concept in orthodox medical practice, and surgery was the ultimate in pain, surpassing even explosive purgatives and the ghastly effects of mercury poisoning. Events in the 19th century would eventually rescue surgery from its disrepute.

Science, Medicine and Money in the 19th Century

The life-giving and life-taking aspects of Western medicine are in strange juxtaposition regarding the first breakthrough that would change Western interventional medicine for the better. Sanitation, Hygeia’s principle, was first practiced in places where life begins and ends: maternity wards and battlefield hospitals.

John Pringle, the physician-general of the British army and physician to the royal family, studied infection, disease and antiseptics and in 1752 strongly recommended that cleanliness and hygiene were the best preventives.^[58] His observation did not become a universal practice, far from it, but battlefield hospitals were real-world laboratories that have led to a great deal of today's emergency medicine.

The earliest Western medical doctor to establish sanitary practices was Hungarian obstetrician Ignaz Semmelweis, who made his discovery at the Vienna General Hospital in 1847. Vienna was the heart of the Austrian empire and Europe's most progressive city, and the Vienna General Hospital was a teaching hospital. Men and women were both trained there, men to be doctors, women to be midwives. Semmelweis was a bright young doctor from Hungary, but being from the imperial hinterland, with foreign dress and speech, he was subjected to numerous harassments. He weathered those difficulties and was appointed as assistant to the director of obstetrics at the Vienna hospital. Although obstetrics was not a glamorous branch of medicine, Semmelweis was doing well for a foreigner. In that era, pathology was popular and male medical students learned their craft by dissecting cadavers and handling diseased organs. In those days, puerperal fever raged through maternity wards. Puerperal fever was killing off great numbers of women who gave birth in European hospitals, especially its teaching hospitals. At times it galloped across swaths of Europe. In the Lombardy region of today's Italy, not one woman survived a teaching hospital-delivered childbirth for an entire year, during the 1770s.^[59]

Two maternity wards were in the Vienna General Hospital. The male medical students served the first ward; midwives-in-training serviced the other. The maternity wards of the teaching hospital only attracted desperate patients, the poor women of Dickens' Europe. Semmelweis witnessed cases where expectant women would be admitted to the hospital when only the first ward was open. Women got on their knees and begged to be admitted to the second ward. Semmelweis once watched a woman leave the hospital to give birth in an alley rather than be admitted to the first ward. What did those desperate women fear? It turned out that the death rate from puerperal fever was more than 20% in the first ward, served by the medical students. The ward served by the midwives-in-training had about a 2% mortality rate. What those desperate women obviously knew, Semmelweis eventually noticed.

As he began wondering why, one of his favorite teachers accidentally cut himself during an autopsy and died in the same fashion that those poor mothers did. Semmelweis then theorized that something was passing from the cadavers in the autopsy rooms to the mothers in the first ward. In those days, surgeons gloried in the gore they became coated in as they performed their heroic labors. The Vienna medical students would go straight from the autopsy room to perform pelvic examinations on the women in the first ward. Their hands smelled cadaverous. Semmelweis theorized that there were "invisible cadaver particles" that clung to the medical students' skin. Semmelweis had his medical students thoroughly wash and scrub their hands, then rinse them in a chlorine solution until the cadaverous smell was gone. During the first month of that program, the mortality rate in the first ward fell to 2%. Semmelweis was on his way to making the history books.

Although the initial reception to his work by his superiors was positive, Semmelweis' tale is one of medical history's more tragic. Probably at least partly because of impediments he had already encountered because he was foreign, he did not immediately approach the Viennese medical establishment with his findings. An immediate realization of Semmelweis' findings was that the doctors were inadvertently killing their patients. Not surprisingly, many doctors contemptuously dismissed his findings. Also, those were the days before the germ theory of disease, and the idea that invisible "particles" could cause death were laughed out of medical meetings. Semmelweis was also part of the revolutionary movement that swept Europe in 1848, and his political views helped get him shut out of any employment opportunities in Vienna. He lost his job at the Vienna General Hospital and went back to Hungary. His findings and preventive method fell into obscurity. In 1843, Oliver Wendell Holmes suggested that hospital attendants might transmit childbirth fever to the mothers, but his theory was quickly dismissed by orthodox medicine.

Many subsequent observers have blamed Semmelweis for not promoting his findings as vigorously and properly as he might have. Semmelweis obviously deserved some of the responsibility, but the greater share probably rests with the medical establishment. There was an anti-Semmelweis movement among European orthodoxy, with even a luminary such as [Rudolf Virchow](#) chiming in with his negative view. Semmelweis did not weather the opposition well. In 1861, he finally published his great work on his findings. He was only about 43 years

old, but aged greatly during those years of attacks from his professional brethren.[\[60\]](#)

Although he is a major figure in Western medicine's history, his 1861 magnum opus receives negative reviews even today. The most recent treatment of the Semmelweis affair is Hal Hellman's.[\[61\]](#) Hellman is more sympathetic than other recent writers, and rounded up doctors of Semmelweis' day and medical historians of the 20th century who thought that his work was epochal, one recent specialist calling Semmelweis' book one of the "most moving, persuasive and revolutionary works in the history of science."[\[62\]](#) Semmelweis came to a dismal end, dying in an insane asylum in 1865. His mental faculties rapidly diminished during his last years. An investigation into his final days has unearthed harsh facts. His body was exhumed and examined in 1963, and further research was undertaken in the 1970s, with a summary published in 1995. Semmelweis was lured to one of Vienna's shabbier asylums under false pretenses, and then involuntarily committed by three physicians who had no psychiatric training. He soon died of infection that apparently resulted from severe and untreated beatings administered by the asylum staff.[\[63\]](#) Semmelweis was a forgotten figure for many years, with his "crazy" treatment abandoned. In 1891, in the wake of the successes of sanitary practices, his body was exhumed and moved to Hungary, and he was honored in 1906 by a statue in Budapest. Semmelweis' theories went beyond "cadaver particles." Before there was a germ theory, Semmelweis had broadened his theory to include any putrid and decaying matter, which will have relevance later in this essay.

It would not be until [Joseph Lister](#)'s work became embraced, Lister beginning to pioneer sanitary surgical techniques soon after Semmelweis died, that Semmelweis' discovery would begin recovering from its neglect.

From the earliest days of the New World's invasion by Europe, the [quest for riches and fame](#) would characterize the West, especially the United States. The quest for riches and fame casts a dark shadow over the story of the first great innovation to rescue surgery from its barbaric status: anesthesia.

Dentists, not surgeons, brought anesthesia to medicine. Painless dentistry and tooth extraction would also rescue dentistry from its reputation. One of mercury poisoning's chief effects is damage to and loss of the teeth. Rush's medicine created business for dentists. Mercury is put into dental fillings even today, and its toxic effects are minimized by the same kinds of scientific groups that have minimized the damage that [lead](#) and [fluoride](#) do to the human body. At nearly the same time that Semmelweis was watching women begging to be admitted to the Vienna General Hospital's midwife-served maternity ward, general anesthesia was discovered in the United States. Humphry Davy experimented in England during the 1790s on the intoxicating effects of nitrous oxide, and recommended that it might be used for painless surgery. His discovery was quickly forgotten.

Nitrous oxide would eventually become famous as "laughing gas," a party favorite among the educated class. In 1844, a young dentist named Horace Wells attended a laughing gas show in Connecticut and saw one of the inebriants wound himself, which he did not feel until the gas' effects wore off. The point was not lost on Wells, who arranged to have a tooth painlessly extracted that same evening while under a nitrous-oxide-induced stupor. As he regained consciousness, Wells envisioned a new era of tooth extraction. Wells enlisted the assistance of William Morton, a former student of his, in gaining an introduction to Boston's surgical community.[\[64\]](#) Morton successfully used ether in 1846 to anesthetize a patient for a leg amputation. Unlike the statistical and theoretical case made by Semmelweis, the effects of anesthesia were dramatically obvious to any observer, and anesthesia quickly became an integral part of Western medicine. Its pioneers, however, received no benefit. The battle for priority and money over the discovery of anesthesia is a sordid tale.

Morton studied chemistry under Charles Jackson, who gave Morton some important information and suggestions about using ether. Subsequently, Wells, Morton and Jackson became embroiled in the battle of who had precedence in discovering anesthesia. Wells became a chloroform addict and committed suicide in prison in 1848, after throwing acid on two prostitutes. Morton engaged in many fruitless legal battles over his rights to anesthesia, and died in 1868. Jackson also tried cashing in, lost his mind, and spent his last years in a psychotic state, dying in 1880. Crawford Long, a country doctor, used ether successfully in 1842, but did not engage in the self-promotion of the others. He died in obscurity, and his discovery was not vindicated until after his death in 1878.[\[65\]](#)

It was not until Joseph Lister began experimenting with the sterilization of surgical implements that surgery became relatively painless and safe. Before Lister, death rates from post-surgical infection ranged from 25% to 60% in Western Europe's hospitals. Lister came upon Pasteur's work and his germ theory, and invented a carbolic acid treatment of surgical implements, wounds and dressings. In 1870, he published the first results of his new technique: death from infection quickly fell from 45% to 15%. Lister was also spraying the air with his acid, however, a misdirection that came from Pasteur's work, which did not help his patients much, but still the death rate fell. Lister taught in Scotland during the years of his great advances. Similar to Semmelweis, Lister's findings were not immediately embraced by surgeons, although he did not receive the vociferous attacks that Semmelweis' work did. Doctors proposed other theories to explain his findings. Lister himself thought it would take a generation for orthodox medicine to wake up and embrace his findings. He was right. In the late 1880s, Lister's discoveries were still held in contempt by many in the medical establishment, although he had many successes and converts.^[66] The early reception in the United States was also poor. A quote from [Medical Dark Ages](#), about one of America's most famous surgeons, is appropriate here:

"I spent a part of ...1923 with...Dr. W.W. Keen...In the...Civil War...he was a surgeon...and had seen many men die from suppuration of wounds after he had operated. ...He would hold the sutures in his teeth and sharpen his knife on the sole of his boot, after he had raised up his boot from the muddy ground. That was the accepted practice at the time."

"...He went to Scotland and studied under Lister...("Lister was persecuted by the British Medical Association. He was threatened with having his license revoked.") Yet in Lister's hospital virtually no one died as a result of operations because Lister had developed a carbolic acid wash and disinfectant. Dr. Keen came back from Scotland...He was referred to as a crazy Listerite...He was denied an opportunity to practice in every hospital in Philadelphia."

"Finally there was one open-minded surgeon in the great Pennsylvania General Hospital. He said, 'Let us give this young fellow a chance.' So they let him operate."

"...No one died from infection under Keen. ...He (Keen) began to chronicle the results in statistical articles. He was threatened with expulsion from the Pennsylvania Medical Association...This was in the 1890's...Finally was accepted as the greatest surgeon in the US. The old man told me - and he started to cry...'I nearly went under. I was nearly shut off.' - **US Senator Paul Douglas, Congressional Record, 1963.**

There have been three great watershed events in United States history, and they have been wars: the [American Revolution](#), the [American Civil War](#) and [World War II](#). Each marked the beginning of an epoch in American history. One effect of those wars was that great fortunes were made. [George Washington](#) became the richest man in America, partly from native land that his armies helped steal. World War II was the greatest era of war profiteering, even worse than during World War I, but the Civil War was when war profiteering became an American science. A group of young men seized the initiative during the Civil War. They all bought their way out of military service (an option in all American wars), and then engaged in war profiteering on a vast scale. The Civil War kicked the American Industrial Revolution into high gear, initiated The Gilded Age and made vast sums for a group of men who became known as robber barons.^[67] Their legacies can be felt today, with men such as [John Rockefeller](#), James Mellon, J.P. Morgan, Philip Armour and Andrew Carnegie beginning their empire building during the Civil War. American empires in railroads, steel, oil, [banking](#) and other industries were founded during the Civil War. They became the great trusts that the American government tried breaking up in the early 20th century.

The American pharmaceutical industry also got its start during the Civil War. Pharmaceutical empires such as Squibb's and Stearns' received their starts making pharmaceuticals during the Civil War, to be soon joined by Lilly, Merck, Abbott, and others.^[68] The specter of [Benjamin Rush](#) loomed over the Civil War, as the

major “medicine” vended to the Union Army was [calomel](#), the cure-all. Along with vending calomel, the new pharmaceutical companies vied with one another, each vending its own “patent medicine,” which was a misnomer, because not only were the formulas not patented, they were secret, which was officially frowned upon by the AMA. In 1876, Frederick Stearns invented the concept of proprietary medicine, which solved the problem of divulging ingredients yet retaining monopoly rights, which unleashed a flood of mixed drugs and other substances, designed to cure one malady or another. Thousands of those proprietary “medicines” were on the market by 1880. Many items in the eclectic and homeopathic pharmacopoeia were adopted directly into the new proprietary medicines.

The AMA also condemned the proprietary-medicine craze, but was economically subservient to it, allowing proprietary and “secret ingredient” medicine ads in the *Journal of the American Medical Association* (JAMA). Prescription medicine also got its start in those days, with doctors prescribing proprietary medicines to their patients. The doctors had almost no idea about the efficacy of the drugs pumped into the marketplace. Prescribing the new medicines was an American fad, and drug stores began dotting the landscape. That dynamic still dominates today’s orthodox medical paradigm. Financial incentives were waved under doctors’ noses to prescribe certain drugs, and true “medicine” was the last thing being practiced. A handful of “cure-all” drugs (fever reducers) became standard ingredients, used by orthodox doctors for nearly every disease condition. Assembly-line medicine continued to be practiced by orthodoxy, as it is today. American orthodox doctors eventually became highly paid marketing and administration conduits for the pharmaceutical companies.

Investigating Life’s Mysteries

While heated battles were waged by American orthodox medicine against alternative practitioners from the 1840s onward, events in Europe would initiate big changes in medical practice. Although Semmelweis would endure many attacks for his work, as is typical for medical pioneers, there was great scientific ferment in Europe. Science and industry helped transform the West in the 1800s, and medicine was not immune to its march. Paris, the hotbed of political revolution, became the center of a revolution in Western medicine in the early 19th century. Hospitals became laboratories in France, and the science of pathology was established, with autopsy results compared to bedside diagnoses. The Enlightenment ideals of empirical investigation took root in medical research, although that was relative. Medical students flocked from across the West to Paris to learn the new medicine. In Germany, laboratory science began its rise, partly due to improvements in microscopes, and by 1850, laboratory science was an important part of medical research, which used chemistry, dissection, vivisection, microscopes and other empirical techniques to learn about life and nature.

The 1850s were a time of radical new theories and discoveries in European science and medicine. There were distinct schools of German, English and French thought and practice. In England, clinical medicine and private medical practice dominated, with little emphasis on research that was not directly applicable to medicine. England and the United States were considered relatively backward with respect to research and the application of science to the medical arts. German science and medicine was publicly institutionalized, locally supported, with emphasis on the laboratory. Germany was the center of “pure” research. France had a centralized system that focused on Paris. Their hospitals were the center of treatment and research, but it was mainly concerned with training doctors. The French, however, have long been renowned among Europeans for their creativity. All three imperial rivals played their role in dealing with a hot issue in the 1850s: what is life, and how did it come to be?

With the ascendancy of Western science, those issues were earnestly addressed. Paracelsus and Descartes taught that the spontaneous appearance of life from dead matter was a normal chemical occurrence. In those days, many considered such a materialistic understanding to be common sense. Eels came from mud, parasites formed inside humans, rotting meat created flies. The idea had been around since antiquity (see Genesis and the creation of Adam from mud). As experimental science became established, the source of life became the focus of a debate that continues to this day, although today’s scientific establishment generally subscribes to a materialistic interpretation of evolution.

In the 1600s, Robert Boyle was impressed with the experiments of Jean-Baptiste van Helmont. Van Helmont put a 5-pound willow shoot into a pot of soil. After five years, the willow tree weighed 168 pounds but the soil weighed the same, leading van Helmont to conclude, “All vegetables do materially arise whole out of the element of water.”[\[69\]](#)

Microscopes made possible the discovery of an amazingly complex microscopic world, and sexual reproduction in the smallest insects. English and French philosophers in the late 1600s rejected Descartes’ notion of the spontaneous emergence of life from laws of motion acting on inanimate matter. Antoine Lavoisier eventually demonstrated in the late 18th century, before his neck met the business end of a guillotine, that water was only nourishment for the plants, not its source. Lavoisier was the first to describe plant and animal respiration, and his work with oxygen, respiration and combustion became the foundation of modern chemistry, and was one of Kuhn’s examples of revolutionary, paradigm-founding work. Religious philosophy was also involved in the spontaneous-generation debate, as life coming from random processes, by mere “chance,” was directly opposed to the day’s theology. In the late 17th century, the pre-existence of souls and the seeds of life were popular ideas. [William Harvey](#) wrote *Generation of Animals*, and was concerned with sexual reproduction, but he was rather neutral about the ultimate spontaneity of life. The issue was a chicken-or-egg argument, with the egg position prevailing at times.

By the end of the 18th century, spontaneous-generation theory was again in vogue. Its rehabilitation was mainly due to evidence and theory involving parasitic worms. Largely because the parasitic life cycle had yet to be understood, the prevailing theory was that parasitic worms must spontaneously manifest within the host organism. In the 19th century’s early decades, spontaneous generation was largely accepted, and there were different schools of thought. Germany, led by its parasitologists, accepted spontaneous generation. In France it was also largely accepted. In Britain during the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries, there was open hostility to the notion, as it was “atheistic” and “contrary to an unerring law of nature.”[\[70\]](#)

Beginning around 1830, spontaneous-generation theory was subject to challenges in France and Germany. Experiments were showing that the organisms associated with decay were not spontaneously generated, and chemical and biological theories vied for supremacy.

During 1835-36, the Frenchman Charles Cagniard-Latour studied beer yeast and determined that fermentation was the result of the yeast’s biological processes. He concluded that yeast was a living organism. His conception of fermentation was original, and was confirmed at about the same time and taken further by Theodor Schwann. Schwann, a German, is today considered the father of histology, the study of plant and animal tissues. Schwann investigated cellular structure, putrefaction and fermentation, and concluded that yeast was a living fungus. He also demonstrated that vacuum-sealed boiled meat did not rot or produce the microscopic organisms associated with rotting. With Cagniard-Latour and Schwann’s work, the notion of fermentation as a purely chemical process was challenged. There were counterattacks to that idea, most prominently from the German chemist Justus von Liebig. Liebig refused to look through microscopes. He did not subscribe to spontaneous-generation theory, but also saw fermentation as a purely chemical process, with no life involved. During the 1840s and 1850s, there was a plethora of confused theories about fermentation and spontaneous generation.

The Whigs were a British political party, and what was called “Whig history” was writing history as a tale of progress, a linear story beginning in a primitive past to climax with humanity’s crowning achievement: modern Western civilization.[\[71\]](#) About thirty years ago, John Farley took a sabbatical from his teaching position at Harvard. His sabbatical produced *The Spontaneous Generation Controversy*, published in 1974. Farley partly wrote his book because many episodes in science history were still written in Whiggish terms.[\[72\]](#) Farley thought that the textbook treatment of the spontaneous-generation controversy was a “paradigmatic” case of Whig history in science. His book sought to help curtail spontaneous generation’s Whiggish treatment, particularly in how its major figure, Louis Pasteur, has been seen by history. The standard histories of the spontaneous-generation issue have it slowly discredited by scientific experiments until Pasteur came along and ended the controversy for all time with his “brilliant” experiments, winning a public contest to resolve the issue. Pasteur will be a focus of this medical essay, not because of his unique virtue, but because his triumph may have placed modern biology and medicine on a false foundation.

In the 1850s, the spontaneous-generation controversy was contested in three areas. One dealt with parasites, another was the area of fermentation, and the third was an overarching theory that largely ended the controversy in the scientific community, not in the 1850s, but in the 20th century. The new overarching theory was Charles Darwin's theory of evolution, which exploded onto the scene with the *Origin of the Species*, published in 1859. Darwin was influenced by the gradualist theory of geology produced by fellow British citizen Charles Lyell (as contrasted with [catastrophic theory](#)) and the theories of the British economist Thomas Malthus, which posited that humanity would always be struggling to survive because of its uncontrolled breeding. Darwin's work would bring Britain back to the spontaneous-generation issue because the logical outcome of evolutionary theory was that life somehow came into being by a gradual evolution from non-living matter. That theory would not be more fully worked out until the 20th century, however.

In the early 1850s Western scientists, largely German, discovered the life cycles of parasitic worms. The pleomorphic (it means "changing shape," the way a caterpillar and butterfly are the same species, but in different "morphic" stages) properties of parasitic worms were not discovered until the 1850s. That discovery was a severe blow to spontaneous-generation theory. Similar to [Semmelweis](#) in Vienna, Rudolf Virchow lost his job in Berlin because of his revolutionary activities in the late 1840s. Virchow performed extensive work with parasitic worms in the 1850s, which further justified his belief that spontaneous generation was an invalid theory. In 1858 Virchow published his *Cellular Pathology*, which theorized that the cell was the smallest unit of life. Where Schwann theorized that cells could "crystallize" from a disorganized "mother" medium, Virchow firmly stated that cells only arise from the division of existing cells. Cells have largely been seen ever since by orthodox science as the elementary unit of life, although it somehow evolved from protoplasm (today called cytoplasm). Virchow theorized that the health of an organism was dependent on the health of its cells. Today's study of healthy and diseased cells, such as Pap smears and biopsies, grew from his work.

Darwin's evolutionary theory and the findings in parasitology created more debate about spontaneous generation. The logical conclusion of evolutionary theory would demand an abiogenetic (life coming from inanimate material) explanation of the ultimate source of life, although parasite research discovered that they do not spontaneously form within host organisms. In the 1860s, both Germany and England grappled with the issue of spontaneous generation, generally agreeing with it. As Farley notes, their stance may seem at odds with the textbook story of Pasteur's work sounding the death knell to spontaneous-generation theory in the 1860s. Pasteur battled for many years against the spontaneous-generation theorists after his work supposedly gave spontaneous-generation theory its fatal blow.

A brief summary of Louis Pasteur's life is in order. Born in 1822 in a French village to a tanner who served in Napoleon's army, Pasteur came from humble roots. A morally rigid young man, Pasteur did well in school and had artistic talent. He took the academic route, going to school in Paris. He had some major academic failures early in his collegiate career, but through extra effort was able to get into college and eventually earn his doctorate. As with the men who discovered anesthesia, Pasteur was consumed with ambition to become rich and famous. In 1844, Pasteur the chemistry student performed his first experiment, isolating phosphorous from cattle bones. It was successful, and Pasteur advertised his feat by putting a big blue label on the flask that held his result.[\[73\]](#)

In 1848, Pasteur was working in crystallography, a subdiscipline of geology. During 1848, revolution gripped Paris, and Pasteur left his laboratory for a few moments to show some of his patriotism (he must be categorized as a political conservative). If he lived in the United States today, he would probably be a [George Bush](#) supporter, or perhaps lean even further to the right. In 1848, Pasteur made his first discovery, and it was a worthy one. Solutions of dissolved substances could evidence optical activity, which meant that if polarized light were shined through it, the light would become rotated from its original orientation when it came out the other side. French physicist Jean-Baptiste Biot discovered the phenomenon in 1815. Nobody knew why some substances rotated light. Pasteur discovered why in 1848. He was making crystals of sodium ammonium tartrate, which is not an optically active solution. As the crystals formed in solution, Pasteur noticed that some crystals were mirror images of each other. He picked them out by using tweezers, and separated them into two piles. He then made solutions of them. One solution rotated light to the right, and one to the left. It was a major discovery, and Pasteur immediately rushed out and dragged a physics instructor who was passing by into his laboratory, and explained his discovery to him. Pasteur would later theorize that the rotation

of the light was due to the molecule's structure. He was correct.

My organic chemistry textbook gave Pasteur high praise for his finding.^[74] Pasteur's discovery had profound implications for the life sciences. It turns out that stereoisomers (molecules that are identical except for being mirror images of each other) are one of life's mysteries that remain unresolved. Optically active substances only come from living organisms. They use one version of a substance, but will not use its mirror image, because of the way it fits with the other molecules. To imagine the situation, try shaking a person's left hand with your right hand. Nobody can really shake hands that way. Try right hand to right hand, and it works.

How living organisms came to incorporate chiral (right and left handed) molecules into their chemistry is a mystery to evolutionary theorists today. Nevertheless, optically active solutions are only made from living organisms (or, as in Pasteur's fortunate case, he was able to pick out the right handed and left handed crystals). Solutions derived from chiral molecules not produced by life processes will have equal distributions of right-handed and left-handed molecules, making the solutions optically inactive. Pasteur correctly theorized that optical activity was related to life processes. He successfully repeated the experiment for the skeptical, elderly Biot, and gained an academic patron.

Unable to land a suitable position in Paris upon completing his doctoral studies, in January 1849 Pasteur moved to Strasbourg to take a position as a chemistry teacher. Within three weeks of his arrival, Pasteur proposed to marry the college rector's daughter, a move that may have reflected his ambition more than his ardor.^[75] The college head was cautious, but Pasteur was persistent and married the woman in May of that year. Pasteur worked hard in his laboratory with his crystals, and an insight into his motivation may be reflected in an incident early in his marriage. He told his wife, who scolded him about his long hours in the laboratory, that he would make it up to her by "lead(ing) her to fame."^[76] His wife anticipated that fame and the benefits it brought, writing to Louis' father one day that, "Louis always worries a little too much about his experiments. You know that those he is planning for this year will give us, if they succeed, a Newton or Galileo."^[77]

Pasteur is a controversial figure. During the 1990s, Gerald Geison, a history professor at Princeton, spent a year reading Pasteur's experimental notebooks. In 1995 he published *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*. In the final analysis, Geison respected Pasteur's contributions to science and medicine, but he found a disparity between Pasteur the public scientist and Pasteur the experimenter. Geison's book created an uproar in France, and he received plenty of scorn. One irony of Geison's work is that Pasteur tried to ensure that his laboratory notes were never made public, partly because a row erupted over the posthumous publication of Claude Bernard's notes. Bernard, Pasteur's friend, was shown to subscribe to a more chemical theory of fermentation. Pasteur published a devastating critique of Bernard's notes, and Pasteur then made his family promise to never make his notebooks public, a promise that his grandson eventually betrayed.

Geison presents several events where the public and private science of Pasteur were at odds, the first of which was Pasteur's discovery of chirality. Pasteur made public presentations about his discovery of crystal chirality, and Geison shows that they were highly abbreviated versions that were in part self-serving. Geison's central figure of Pasteur's presentation of his discovery is Auguste Laurent. Laurent was a major figure in the early days of crystallography, and Pasteur studied under his tutelage. Pasteur changed the subject of his doctoral chemistry thesis at Laurent's suggestion, which set him on his path of discovery.

By analyzing Pasteur's notes, Geison could find little evidence in Pasteur's early work that suggested how he came upon his discovery of chirality. Pasteur was treading down paths that Laurent and others had blazed for him. He was dealing with complicated issues regarding crystal formation, and he was not focused on the optical activity of crystals for most of his doctoral work. He was researching anomalies that arose from Laurent's work. Pasteur's discovery was unexpected, and his laboratory notes do not show how he stumbled onto it. It is a mystery. Nevertheless, nobody has suggested that Pasteur's discovery was not his own. However, when it came time to present his findings, Pasteur wrote Laurent completely out of the picture. His wallpapering over Laurent not only happened during his future talks about his discovery, but Pasteur began minimizing Laurent's contributions to his work in the early drafts of his papers.^[78] By the time Pasteur published the first major paper about his discovery, Laurent's contributions had been completely eliminated. Pasteur went further than that, making clear his low opinion of Laurent's work in

private correspondence with one of Laurent's chief rivals, Jean-Baptiste Dumas.

Geison speculates that Pasteur's disavowal of Laurent likely had much to do with his maneuvering in the day's fierce political climate. Laurent was a political radical. Jean-Baptiste Dumas was Laurent's rival in matters of molecular theory, and Dumas was the epitome of the establishment scientist, holding high positions in France's academic establishment, eventually parlaying his activities into being named a senator by Napoleon III, the autocrat of France, a man who named himself emperor, just as his uncle did.^[79]

Pasteur sought the fame and prosperity that he promised his wife. When a promised medal from Dumas did not arrive quickly enough for his liking, Pasteur complained.^[80] While it would be a mistake to say that Pasteur did not have friends, he was not a particularly likeable fellow. In interviews and speeches, Geison stated that Pasteur "was by no means always humble, selfless, ethically superior...Quite the opposite." Geison found Pasteur's "behavior and conduct in general unlikable through much of his career."^[81]

Pasteur cultivated patronage and fame while he worked with crystals. His theory of the relationship between chirality and life led him into the spontaneous-generation controversy. Pasteur gained a prestigious appointment to the University of Lille in 1854, and became involved with fermentation in 1856 due to his position as a chemistry instructor and the industrial problems of the local beet sugar industry.

A few years earlier, parasite research had shown that intestinal worms do not spontaneously manifest. Regarding the issue of intestinal worms, an unfortunate dynamic was evident in the practice of science. The French Academy of Sciences held contests to decide the truth of scientific matters. In 1852 it offered a prize for the best explanation of how intestinal worms are transmitted. The winner, P.J. van Beneden, held a powerful university position in Belgium, and John Farley thinks that van Beneden's political connections, more than his scientific efforts, may have won him his prize. In addition, van Beneden made claims of priority of discovery that were obviously false, the true credit due to German scientists.^[82] When scientific truth is decided by contest, objectivity can easily go flying out the window. The practice continues today and further underscores Kuhn's point that paradigms prevail because scientists believe in them, not because they are more accurate than other paradigms.

With discoveries in parasitology disproving the notion that parasitic worms were generated spontaneously, fermentation was the last great, unresolved area of contest. Pasteur was one of many scientists investigating the area, and Pasteur had about zero training in biology. He originally subscribed to the notion of spontaneous generation, those theorists called *sponteparists*.

According to the official stories, Pasteur quickly discovered that yeast was alive, and he published his first results in 1857. In his 1857 writings, Pasteur described the yeast and its associated fermentation products as taking "birth spontaneously...every time that the conditions are favorable."^[83] While Pasteur theorized that the yeast was alive, he also thought the yeast had spontaneously generated, reflecting his early *sponteparist* position. Pasteur's position was far from original. There was a strong minority position that yeast was alive, and Pasteur's position was merely a rehash of Cagniard-Latour's work a generation earlier. Although Pasteur campaigned heavily to be admitted to the French Academy of Sciences in 1857, he failed. His residency in Lille weighed against him. Paris was the center of French academic life, and Pasteur knew that he would not realize his ambitions in the relative hinterland of Lille. He received a promotion and moved to Paris in 1857. In the classroom, Pasteur was notoriously unpopular with his students and academic colleagues. He was a humorless martinet, running the classroom as if it were a boot camp.^[84]

As late as 1860, Pasteur was describing yeast and the products of fermentation as spontaneously produced. In 1862 he finally gained admittance to the French Academy of Sciences, in its mineralogy section. In all the accounts of Pasteur's career I have read, he clearly was a showman and self-promoter. Around 1860, Pasteur began theorizing that there were germs in the air, and that they were responsible for fermentation. In late 1860, he performed a theatrical experiment where he traveled across France and into the high Alps, sampling the air, his experiment proving that germs exist in the air. The history books portray the issue as one in which Pasteur had a conflict with Felix-Archimède Pouchet, who had a theory of heterogenesis, as opposed to abiogenesis. Heterogenetic theory states that life arose from life or organic matter, and abiogenetic theory avers that life ultimately came from non-living substances. The distinction was vitally important in the debate

on spontaneous generation.

In France, spontaneous-generation theory was unpopular by the time Pasteur became embroiled in it, and Pasteur was considered to have only delivered spontaneous-generation theory's deathblow. The French Academy of Sciences held contests on the issue, in 1862 and 1864. As Farley pointed out, both the 1862 and 1864 juries were composed of men hostile to spontaneous generation. The 1864 jury was even more biased than the 1862 jury, with Pasteur patrons Dumas and Antoine Balard presiding. History books have told of Pasteur's triumph, but Farley's account portrays them as shamelessly rigged.^[85]

Before the 1864 jury convened, Pasteur gave a public speech about his findings and the mortal blow it gave to spontaneous-generation theory. It was given at the Sorbonne, and was attended by the Parisian literati, including Alexandre Dumas, George Sand, and Princess Mathilde. It was an educated audience, but not really a scientific one. Pasteur was embarking on his career as a popularizer. Pasteur gave a brief account of the controversy, as well as its religious and philosophical implications. Then he delivered his coupe de grâce, announcing that his experimental findings had shown that when he was able to keep airborne organisms from touching a nutrient-rich medium, no life was seen to take place, because, "I have kept away from it the germs that are floating in the air, I have kept it away from life, for life is the germ, and the germ is life."^[86] The largely lay audience greeted his pronouncement with thunderous applause. Pasteur's reputation was thereby made. He became the savant of germs in the air. In Pasteur's work at the time, he failed to even mention the role of parasitic worms in the controversy, and he regularly assailed rival scientists. He became famous for his thunderous orations at meetings of the French Academy of Sciences.

Even sympathetic historians and biographers admit that Pasteur's fame was due in no small part to his efforts at self-promotion and his rhetorical talent. In 1863, soon after his election to the French Academy of Sciences, Pasteur was introduced to Napoleon III, and he told Napoleon of his ambition to understand and cure disease. Pasteur was realizing his ambition, and was subsequently seen hobnobbing regularly with French royalty, Pasteur "always being receptive to flattery from high places..."^[87] While exhibiting artistic talent in his youth, Pasteur was aghast at innovation in art, and consistently supported the old school, being highly contemptuous of Manet and the Impressionists.

With imperial patronage under his belt and his avowal to cure disease (even though he still had no medical or biological training), Pasteur was asked to look into diseases that were plaguing French industries. Pasteur's germs-in-the-air philosophy led to the germ theory of disease. In 1863, Pasteur was asked to look into a disease that was harming French grapes and their wine industry, and in 1865, he was commissioned to look into a disease that was devastating silkworms and the French silk industry. The history books give Pasteur full credit for resolving those issues and saving those industries, to later take on such diseases as anthrax and rabies. For his entire career, Pasteur battled his rivals and critics. Even his friends were not immune, as with his posthumous attack on Bernard's notes.

Pasteur's germ theory led to introducing those germs to people as a way of preventing disease, hence his anthrax and rabies vaccines. Geison presented cases where Pasteur "cooked" his data, getting the data to conform to his theories. In dealing with his anthrax work, Geison crosses the line and accuses Pasteur of outright fraud, telling his readers that, "Pasteur deliberately deceived the public and scientific community about the nature of the vaccine actually used..." in his famous demonstration of his anthrax vaccine in 1881.^[88] Pasteur misrepresented how his vaccine was prepared, apparently to triumph over his rival Jean-Joseph Henri Toussaint over the anthrax vaccine. Pasteur's public victory over the anthrax issue appears to have been the final blow for Toussaint, who lost his mind the next year and never recovered. Geison notes that one must consider the financial considerations that may have prompted Pasteur's deception. Pasteur soon began building a financial empire on his work, and by the mid-1880s his laboratory earned a 130,000-franc profit from anthrax-vaccine sales.^[89]

Pasteur ventured into outright human experimentation, using his rabies treatment on humans before he had used it on animals.^[90] His private notebooks yielded that finding, but it comes as no surprise to those who have read a letter that Pasteur wrote to the emperor of Brazil. In 1884, Pasteur wrote that people condemned to death should become subjects of human experiments, given the option on the eve of their planned executions. The choice presented would be execution or becoming subjects for rabies vaccine testing, injecting them

with rabies and seeing if the vaccine would cure them. Pasteur predicted that the condemned would all consent to becoming experimental subjects, as a “person condemned to death only fears death.”^[91] Pasteur performed his experiments on his patients after he wrote his letter to the Brazilian emperor. Patrice Debré, who authored a sympathetic biography of Pasteur, wrote that one could not read Pasteur’s letter to the emperor without thinking of the Nazi’s death-camp experiments.^[92] Even one of Pasteur’s disciples said about Pasteur’s human rabies experiments, “The scientist’s conscience smothered the conscience of the man.”^[93]

It should be made clear that Geison, Debré, Rene Dubos, John Farley and others have generally praised Pasteur’s contributions to science and medicine, even if their work has removed some of the luster from Pasteur’s heroic journey.

Geison’s book created quite a splash when published, as Pasteur is in science’s Pantheon of the great, and a French national hero. Not everybody agreed with Geison’s assessment of Pasteur’s work, both public and private. Hal Hellman wrote that while Geison’s work was careful and not easily dismissed, it “does much to smudge a shining image of a real medical hero.”^[94] Hellman felt that there were few true “heroes” in science’s history, and he did not like to see Pasteur’s image deconstructed.

Unfortunately, Farley’s work had little impact on the Whiggish history that first-year microbiology students are taught. All the microbiology books I obtained, written long after Farley’s book was published, all told the same utilitarian fairy tale of Pasteur and spontaneous generation.^[95] The spontaneous-generation debate was not finally settled in scientific circles until Aleksandr Oparin and the 1936 publication of his *The Origin of Life on Earth*. Oparin was a Russian biochemist whose work was influenced by the dialectical materialism of Karl Marx and friends. Marx’s influence went far beyond political-economic theory, which may surprise most Americans, as Marx is a discredited, even demonized, figure in the West. Oparin theorized that the primordial soup of the young earth gave rise to higher orders of molecular organization, leading eventually to an abiogenetic origin of life. The scientific community has embraced Oparin’s work as completing the theory of how life arose on earth, and there the matter rests...for now.

Pasteur’s legacy is enormous. Today’s germ theory grew from his work. Pasteurization wears his name. He pioneered vaccination. Robert Lister based his carbolic-acid treatment on Pasteur’s work, making surgery largely free of infection. Pasteur industrialized science, applying scientific findings to industry, and helped create the academic institutions that feed industry with scientists. Before Pasteur died, Pasteur Institutes dotted France, becoming major institutions of science and medicine. René Dubos wrote a number of books about Pasteur, his work and legacy. Under a heading of “The Benefits of Precise Knowledge,” Dubos listed dozens of major corporations that are primary beneficiaries of Pasteur’s legacy. All the major oil companies headed Dubos’ list, followed by food-processing, pharmaceutical and biomedical companies.^[96]

This essay is not intended to assassinate Pasteur’s character. He was human, as with all of us. Hellman noted that Geison’s critics stated that his critique veered from purely scientific matters, taking Pasteur’s legacy to task perhaps unfairly. Hellman is convinced that Pasteur fudged his data, but it was understandable given the circumstances. This essay’s point is that if he fudged the data, how accurate were his findings? We go back to Kuhn here. Pasteur prevailed, but was he *right*? Probably more than any other single figure, Pasteur’s work founded the paradigm under which today’s medicine operates. Is our health *better* because of his work? Was there another paradigm that could have been adopted? That is a major crux of this essay. What if Pasteur was wrong? Not just a little wrong, but profoundly wrong, so wrong that his legacy has killed far more people than it has helped? Are microbiology textbooks understandably expedient in telling the Whiggish tale of the germ theory’s foundation, or do they march students off in the wrong direction on their first day of class?

There is a large and impressive body of evidence that suggests that the Pasteurian paradigm prevailed due to considerations of money and power more than the accuracy of his science. This essay will now explore that allegation.

A Paradigm Lost?

In the several biographies of Pasteur I have read through, as well as works such as Farley's, there is an obscure figure who receives little mention, and the only place I saw his work dealt with at all was in Geison's book. While dealing with the Pasteur myth, Geison spent a paragraph dealing with a book by Ethel Douglas Hume titled *Béchamp or Pasteur*. It was originally published in 1923. Geison felt that the book was plagued with a "ludicrous incomprehension" of the true nature of Pasteur's work and science. Geison, while admitting that Pasteur probably treated Béchamp poorly, did not feel that Pasteur plagiarized him.^[97] Who was Béchamp, and what plagiarism was Pasteur accused of?

Pierre Jacques Antoine Béchamp lived from 1816 to 1908. Béchamp, a physician, unlike Pasteur, had plenty of biological and medical training. He was also a doctor of science, a pharmacist and a college chemistry, physics, pharmacology and toxicology professor. He is a known figure in industrial science, as he developed an economical process to produce aniline and the many dyes and drugs based on it. Regarding his life's work, however, he is virtually unknown today. He was a leading figure in his time, but today his name is all but unknown in the orthodox histories of biology and medicine. I first heard of Béchamp in 1990 as I began my education in alternative [media](#), [history](#), medicine and related areas. His story is worth telling, and the rest of this medical essay will deal at length with the idea that Béchamp was only the first in a long line of researchers whose work pointed toward a different paradigm in biology and medicine, a paradigm that still may be adopted one day.

In the 1850s, Béchamp was one of many scientists investigating fermentation. By 1854, the chemical explanation of fermentation was the prevailing one, the work of Cagniard-Latour and Schwann disregarded by the mainstream. It was known that yeast initiated fermentation, and was seen as a chemical reagent by the mainstream and chemists such as Liebig. As such, yeast was called a "ferment," since it initiated fermentation. However, Cagniard-Latour and Schwann's theory that yeast was a living organism was not altogether discarded. Yeast was not the only focus of research into fermentation. In May of 1854, Béchamp performed an experiment investigating a phenomenon known as the inversion of sugar. If cane sugar (sucrose) were put into water and left to sit, the sugar would slowly transform into glucose and fructose (which is also called grape sugar). That process was called the inversion of sugar, and was thought to be a strictly chemical transformation. The transformation could be detected by using polarized light and a polarimeter, seeing if the angle of rotation changed. If the angle changed, it meant that inversion took place.

In Béchamp's 1854 experiment, he took four flasks and filled them with a sucrose solution, sealed them, and left a small amount of air in the flasks. One flask held distilled water and cane sugar. The other three solutions held calcium and zinc chlorides and cane sugar. The first flask had inversion while the other three did not. Also, mold appeared in the distilled water solution and not the others. Béchamp published the result of that experiment in February 1855 in the French Academy of Sciences' official record, the *Comptes Rendus*. It was the first in a series of experiments now known as the Beacon Experiment. Another researcher published similar results to his in 1856, and Béchamp considered two questions:

1. Are molds endowed with chemical activity?
2. What is the origin of the molds that appear in the sugared water?^[98]

As Pasteur did in 1854, Béchamp moved on from Strasbourg to greener academic pastures, Béchamp taking a position at the university at Montpellier in southern France, where he spent many happy years. For an eighteen-month period, beginning in June 1856, Béchamp performed a new set of experiments designed to answer those two questions. Pasteur had yet to involve himself in fermentation when Béchamp began publishing his Beacon Experiment findings. Béchamp's new round of experiments introduced several substances into cane-sugar solutions, including creosote and several metallic salts. Creosote is a close cousin of carbolic acid, the substance that [Lister](#) would make famous with his sterile surgical procedures. The zinc, calcium and mercury chlorides prevented inversion, while other substances seemed to promote inversion, with some inverted solutions becoming very moldy. Béchamp also performed a litmus test and found the inverted solutions acidic.

In March 1857, Béchamp set out to investigate the role of creosote more fully. He prepared several cane-sugar solutions. In some, he boiled the water, and the air was passed through a sulfuric acid solution before introduction to the flasks. In others, he allowed no air and the flasks were completely filled with boiled

water and cane sugar. In others, he added creosote, both with filtered and unfiltered air. Two of his filtered-air flasks with only sugar and water displayed inversions. Béchamp noted that those two flasks were imperfectly manipulated and contaminated by unfiltered air. He also noted that the more mold seen, the greater the rotation of light, hence greater inversion. The perfectly sealed flasks of boiled water and filtered air had no change in light rotation, and no mold. It became obvious to Béchamp that inversion was not a strictly chemical process. Béchamp deduced two conclusions from those experiments.

1. Boiled water and cane sugar, when put into an airless flask, will not undergo inversion.
2. The same solution, boiled or not, enclosed with air, would invert, with mold forming and the solution becoming acidic. To prove that air alone could not account for the inversion, no matter its volume, a little added creosote would prevent it whether the flask was sealed or not.[\[99\]](#)

It was common knowledge in those days that nitrogen was present in albuminoid matter. Albumin is a simple protein. There is no nitrogen in sugar or water. In those days, the prevailing view was that fermentation could not occur in the absence of albuminoid matter, which was why Pasteur worked with sour milk. Because mold accompanied the inversions, Béchamp reasoned that they were responsible for them, because his work had shown that air alone did not do it, although air was a required component of inversion and mold formation. Schwann was the first to perform experiments to prove that the organisms that accompanied fermentation, seen through microscopes, were introduced through the atmosphere. Béchamp analyzed the mold and discovered that they had nitrogen in them. The only place the nitrogen could have come from was the air in the flask. Béchamp's conclusions from his Beacon Experiment were firm, and he first submitted them to the French Academy of Sciences in December 1857. An extract of his findings was published by the Academy in January 1858, with the full paper included in *Annales de Chimie et de Physique*, published in September 1858. Béchamp's conclusion was very clear, writing that the,

“germs brought by the air found in the sugared solution a favorable medium for their development.”

Béchamp wrote that the,

“new organism, making use of the materials present, effects the synthesis of the nitrogenized and non-nitrogenized materials of its substance.”[\[100\]](#)

With his Beacon Experiment, Béchamp was the first to prove that not only could fermentation take place without the presence of albuminoid matter, but also that the organisms responsible for the fermentation actually created them by incorporating nitrogen from the air. When Béchamp submitted his findings to the French Academy of Sciences in late 1857, Pasteur was still experimenting with sour milk and calling fermentation a spontaneous process. Béchamp was far more interested in investigating nature's mysteries than becoming rich and famous. Béchamp sought no fanfare, and after submitting his seminal experimental results, pursued the implications of them. Béchamp had conclusively demonstrated that fermentation was not due to spontaneous processes in 1857.

Most official stories of Pasteur do not even mention Béchamp, and Geison's quick dismissal is misleading. Ethel Douglas Hume published under the names E. Douglas Hume and Douglas Hume, to hide the fact that she was a woman, to further demonstrate Western civilization's ingrained misogyny. Geison disparaged and dismissed Hume's work, also stating that Hume's book did not persuade him that Pasteur had “plagiarized” Béchamp. In reading Geison's brief account, the impression is easily received that Hume was about the only person making the case. Béchamp makes the case for Pasteur's plagiarism in his work, notably in the preface to his *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*. Hume's work was largely based on

Béchamp's account of events, and he did not mince words, describing in detail four instances where Pasteur apparently plagiarized him, then Pasteur added indignity to injury when he led a campaign against Béchamp. Béchamp noted the fate of [Galileo](#) and others who run up against the establishment, and he finished his summary of the issue of Pasteur with,

"It is that part of mankind which allows the plagiarist to calumniate and vilify the victim whose work he has plagiarized."[\[101\]](#)

In dealing with Pasteur and Béchamp, a quote from William James is pertinent.

"First...a new theory is attacked as absurd. Then it is admitted to be true but obvious and insignificant. Finally it is seen to be so important that its adversaries claim that they themselves discovered it."[\[102\]](#)

Pasteur's alleged plagiarisms of Béchamp were not innocuous: they may have marched biology and medicine off in the wrong direction. When Béchamp had proven that fermentation in sugared water was initiated by the "germs brought by the air," Pasteur was still adhering to his *sponteparist* view. Pasteur observed the lactic ferment created by one of his experiments, and wrote that the ferment "takes birth spontaneously as easily as beer-yeast every time that the conditions are favorable."[\[103\]](#) An extract of Béchamp's work appeared in the Academy's Reports on January 4, 1858, while Pasteur's report appeared in April 1858. It appears that Pasteur was aware of Béchamp's discovery when he published his paper. Accompanying the sentence "takes birth spontaneously as easily as beer-yeast every time that the conditions are favorable" is a footnote stating that he used the word "spontaneously" as "the expression of a fact," but he backpedaled on its truly spontaneous nature. Pasteur then threw in some platitudes about his results that others had discovered earlier. There was nothing original in Pasteur's work to that time. Pasteur was badly out of his field in interpreting his experimental results, partly because he had no biological training. He was a chemist. By 1857, Pasteur had made no original statements about the nature of fermentation, and hewed toward the *sponteparist* position.

In December 1857, Pasteur published the results of his experiment with putting yeast into sugared water and observing the fermentation. In his conclusion, Pasteur stated, "Fermentation then takes place as it does in a natural sugared liquid, juice of the grape, or sugar cane, etc., that is to say, spontaneously..."[\[104\]](#)

Pasteur adhered to the *sponteparist* position long after Béchamp had produced his enlightening results. In 1859, Pasteur seems to have glimpsed the importance of Béchamp's work. He performed an experiment but omitted the yeast, and described the origin of the yeast as coming from the air. Pasteur persisted in giving the phenomenon a spontaneous-generation explanation. He wrote, "As to the origin of the lactic yeast in the experiments, it is solely due to the atmospheric air: we fall back here upon the facts of spontaneous generation...On this point the question of spontaneous generation has made progress."[\[105\]](#) In an 1860 memoir, Pasteur still referred to the spontaneous generation of yeasts and fermentations. Béchamp would later criticize Pasteur's experimental conclusions, stating that Pasteur's deductions proved that he did not understand "the chemico-physiological phenomena of transformation, called fermentation, which are processes of nutrition, that is to say, of digestion, followed by absorption, assimilation, excretion, etc,"[\[106\]](#)

In 1860, Pasteur finally grasped the importance of Béchamp's work. Instead of acknowledging Béchamp's trouncing of the whole field, Pasteur seemingly labored to make Béchamp's discoveries his own.

In September 1860, Pasteur performed the experiment that put him in the history books. Two German

scientists had already performed the experiment he proposed, but not so flamboyantly. Working quietly in a laboratory, filtering air into flasks to prove that "germs" were in the air, had already been done. Pasteur embarked on a tour of France, carrying 73 vials with him. He opened and sealed the vials at different locations and altitudes, ending with the famous opening and sealing of 20 vials on a French Alp, above Chamonix. Pasteur was "proving" that germs existed in the air. He was also making a radical U-turn from his *sponteparist* convictions.

The campaign that Pasteur waged to claim credit for the work of others began soon thereafter. In a meeting at the Sorbonne in 1861, Pasteur, in the presence of Béchamp, tried claiming credit for proving that living organisms can appear in a medium devoid of albuminoid matter. Since that claim was a direct theft from Béchamp, Béchamp did something he was not accustomed to: he spoke up regarding Pasteur's attempted theft. Béchamp did not accuse Pasteur of plagiarism in that meeting, but merely recounted the results of his Beacon Experiments and his published conclusions derived from them. As he returned to his seat (Pasteur sat next to him), he asked Pasteur to be so kind as to admit his knowledge of the Beacon Experiment work. Pasteur hastily admitted his knowledge of Béchamp's work, and stated that the results Béchamp put forth were of the "most rigid exactness."[\[107\]](#)

Years later, Pasteur would attack Béchamp's work, calling his conclusions "an enormity." In what appears to be an instance of opportunism, Pasteur quickly abandoned a theory that he had held for years (spontaneous generation), did a complete about face based upon the work of others, then tried to claim credit for the discovery.

Béchamp was not immediately hailed for his breakthrough. Because his results and conclusions were so novel and far ahead of his day, scientists attempted to explain his results as due to impurities in the sugar he used. Even when that was disproved, they continued to question Béchamp's work.

As late as 1872, Pasteur was still woefully ignorant about what fermentation really was. He wrote "That which separates the chemical phenomenon of fermentation from a crowd of other acts and especially from the acts of ordinary life is the fact of the decomposition of a weight of fermentative matter much superior to the weight of the ferment."[\[108\]](#) Pasteur was repeating the day's misunderstanding that many scientists subscribed to. Béchamp put forth a simple explanation of fermentation that should have made it clear why a ferment could affect a medium of vastly larger proportion than itself. Béchamp proposed the following analogy:

"Suppose an adult man to have lived for a century, to weigh on an average 60 kilograms; he will have consumed in that time, besides other foods, the equivalent of 20,000 kilograms of flesh and produced about 800 kilograms of urea. Shall it be said that it is impossible to admit that this mass of flesh and of urea could at any moment of his life form part of his being? Just as a man consumes all that food by repeating the same act a great many times, the yeast cell consumes a great mass of sugar only by constantly assimilating and disassimilating it bit by bit. Now, that which only one man will consume in a century, a sufficient number of men would absorb and form in a day. It is the same in yeast; the sugar that a small number of cells would only consume in a year, a greater number would destroy in a day; in both cases, the more numerous the individuals, the more rapid the consumption."[\[109\]](#)

[Jonathan Swift](#) wrote that the way to spot a genius was by the dunces who unite in confederation against him/her. Pasteur used his position, with imperial patronage and help from his friends, to begin a campaign to discredit and suppress Béchamp's work, organizing, in Béchamp's words, a "conspiracy of silence."[\[110\]](#)

After Pasteur's failed 1861 attempt to claim credit for his "germs in the air" theory, his public speech in 1864 at the Sorbonne apparently completed his plagiarism. While Béchamp is not mentioned in any microbiology or biology textbook I could find, Pasteur's "discovery" of "germs in the air" is supposedly what overturned spontaneous-generation theory. Geison is not convinced of Pasteur's plagiarism in that matter, but at this time, I am.

In the wake of his 1864 speech, Pasteur became the toast of Parisian intellectual life, and by invitation he spent a week at the Emperor's palace in 1865. Pasteur eagerly lapped it up. His imperial patronage gave him the "Teflon effect" for the rest of his life. Many scientists, particularly French ones, became decidedly timid in confronting or criticizing a man who had blessings from French society's highest levels. While Pasteur was realizing his lifelong ambition to rub shoulders with the rich and powerful, as a ticket to wealth and fame for himself, Béchamp had unceasingly continued his investigations into life's mysteries.

Pasteur took the position that life was in the air, and that bacteria came from the air. Although Pasteur would deny that flesh could be alive independently of the organism that housed it, Charlton Bastian was producing experimental results that had no easy answer, particularly in light of Pasteur's germs-in-the-air evangelizing. Bastian found bacteria on the inside of animal organs and fruits and vegetables. Pasteur's air-germ theory did not account for them. In fact, Pasteur's air-germ theory misled scientists for some time. [Lister](#) encountered Pasteur's germs-in-the-air theory, and sprayed his carbolic acid spray into the air around his patients, trying to kill those germs in the air. That led to many unnecessary deaths. Lister would later reject that idea, and admit that the only germs of consequence were the ones introduced by "other than atmospheric sources."^[111]

Béchamp took his fermentation studies much further, and the microscope became a source of revelation in Béchamp's hands. Preceding Béchamp, other scientists had noticed minute "granulations" that appeared to be organized and perhaps alive. They were smaller than cells. [Rudolf Virchow](#) postulated in 1858 that cells were the primary unit of life, which Béchamp's findings contradicted. In Béchamp's early experiments, he noted the granulations and movements, and called them "little bodies." He had nothing further to add in those early days, so the little bodies were merely noted.

During Béchamp's fermentation experiments, he added various salts to the sugar solutions. In one experiment, he substituted calcium carbonate for potassium carbonate. The calcium carbonate's source was a form of chalk. When he added creosote to the sugared water, inversion still took place. Béchamp had already proven that creosote inhibited the formation of mold from exterior sources. The experiment with chalk was a contradiction. Béchamp believed the results were due to some faultiness in his procedures, left out the chalk results from his published work, and resolved to investigate them further.

Béchamp then began a series of intensive investigations into chalk that should have shaken the foundations of biology, but today few know his name. He undertook many experiments with chalk and fermentation. Béchamp performed numerous experiments where he created an air-free environment. When chemically pure calcium carbonate was added, no inversion took place. Ordinary chalk inverted the sugar. Béchamp took elaborate precautions to ensure that atmospheric germs could not gain access to the flasks, yet chalk still inverted the sugared water.

Béchamp then obtained chalk, and subsequently a block of limestone from a quarry, where he engaged in great precautions to ensure they did not contact the air. The limestone inverted the sugar, even when creosote was added. Béchamp was shocked to find that a mineral such as limestone would invert the sugar. It became obvious that there was a difference between chalk and pure calcium carbonate. Béchamp then began his epochal observations with his microscope. He was amazed to find the same "little bodies" in the chalk as he had earlier seen in living cells. The little bodies moved rapidly, similar to what was known as Brownian movement, but Béchamp noticed a difference between Brownian movement and what the "little bodies" were doing. The little bodies refracted light from their surroundings differently from particles agitated by Brownian movement. Béchamp determined that the "little bodies" were inducing the fermentation. Although they were much smaller than [Virchow's](#) cell, they were more powerful at inducing fermentation than anything else Béchamp had seen.

There were two tenets that guided Béchamp's work at that time, based on his experiences. One was that no chemical change takes place without a cause. The other was that there is no spontaneous generation of living organisms. Béchamp concluded that if the little bodies were truly alive, then he should be able to isolate them, prove them to be insoluble in water, and find them composed of organic matter. Through rigorous procedures, Béchamp proved those notions. He also was able to "kill" the little bodies by heating

them. When he heated chalk to 300° C (572° F) it no longer inverted the sugar, and the little bodies no longer made their characteristic movements.

His experimental results brought him to strange musings. If the little bodies were alive, as Béchamp had proven to his own satisfaction, how did they get into limestone and chalk? The limestone block that Béchamp obtained was considered to be millions of years old, and was a powerful fermentative agent. How could something survive in limestone for millions of years? He experimented with tufa limestone, coal deposits, peat bogs and the dust of cities. Ancient peat bogs and city dust proved to be powerful fermentative agents, while the coal and tufa proved weak.

The pursuit of his "error" in observing chalk initiate fermentation took him into territory never trod by science before. Béchamp discovered new realms of investigation and left his contemporaries far, far behind. What Béchamp discovered was that the little bodies were indeed alive, and apparently capable of lying dormant for millions of years. Furthermore, they were far smaller than Virchow's cell, and seemed to be building blocks and the organizers of cells. Béchamp's microscopic investigations of chalk, limestone, peat and the like showed him that the little bodies might be the living remnants of ancient cells. Béchamp recalled that Jacob Henle had earlier (1841) observed that the little bodies were structured, and suspected that they might be the cells' building blocks. Béchamp was not much given to speculation, but built his theories upon what he observed. His experiments took place in the late 1850s and early 1860s. Béchamp soon bestowed his own term to the little bodies, calling them *microzymas*, which meant "tiny ferment" in Greek.

Alfred Estor, a physician and surgeon at Montpellier's hospital, was captivated by Béchamp's discoveries. Estor wrote enthusiastically about Béchamp's work, and the two men became partners in further investigating the microzyma. Béchamp also discovered the cause of fermentation in beer yeast, and called it *zymase*. Although Béchamp coined the term *zymase* and its purpose in 1864, credit was given to E. Büchner for "discovering" it in 1897.[\[112\]](#)

In 1863, Pasteur's most powerful patron, Napoleon III, gave him his first task: researching the disease that was decimating France's vineyards. The year before, in 1862, Béchamp was already investigating the vineyard disease, on his own. Through his experiments he concluded that the disease's cause was a mold that was found on the leaves and stalks of the grapes. He thoroughly published his results in 1864, while Pasteur had barely begun his investigation.[\[113\]](#)

In 1865, Pasteur was assigned another task: discovering the cause of the disease of silkworms, which was destroying France's silk industry. Pasteur was handsomely paid by the state for his efforts in the vineyard problem and silkworm disease, known at the time as *pébrine*. Again, before Pasteur had even laid eyes on a silkworm, Béchamp, working on his own and unpaid, had solved the riddle of *pébrine*. Béchamp's experimentation yielded the fact that *pébrine* was a parasitical disease, and could be prevented with an application of creosote. Béchamp spoke before the agricultural society in 1865 about his findings. Pasteur, again demonstrating his misunderstanding of life processes, performed his own experiments and in 1865 announced that *pébrine* was neither animal or vegetable, but something akin to pus or starch. Pasteur's understanding was abysmal, but he had imperial patronage and France's ear.

While Béchamp was explaining the parasitical nature of *pébrine* and how to prevent it, Pasteur stated that thinking of the disease as parasitic "would be an error." Béchamp called the disease the result of a vegetative ferment, transmitted by spore. Béchamp differentiated *pébrine* from another silkworm disease called *flacherie*. He discovered that *flacherie* was not due to an outside disease, but was related to ill health in the silkworm's microzymas, and appeared to be hereditary. In other words, *flacherie* was a degenerative disease of the silkworms' constitutions, and *pébrine* was a parasitical disease that attacked the silkworms. Béchamp solved those problems in his *spare time* at his own expense, while Pasteur was blindly wandering on behalf of the Emperor. In 1866, Pasteur admitted that his earlier conclusion of *pébrine* resembling starch or pus was badly mistaken.[\[114\]](#)

Because Béchamp understood the diseases, he also suggested treatments: use creosote to prevent infection of *pébrine* and do not breed moths with *flacherie*. Here is where Pasteur apparently began inflicting damage on Western science and medicine due to his lust for fame, wealth and power. The ingenious investigations

of Béchamp were far ahead of his time, and although they were clear and precise, the bureaucracies of the day looked to the oracle of Napoleon III for his pronouncement. Pasteur demonstrated his complete misunderstanding of the disease, stating that *pébrine* was contagious and hereditary, and his preventive was finding eggs free of the disease, and only breeding those. Although the history books today credit Pasteur with saving the silkworm industry (called sericulture), the numbers tell a different story. When the troubles began with sericulture in about 1850, France produced about 30 million kilograms of cocoons annually. By 1866-67, the production had fallen to 15 million kilograms. After Pasteur's "preventive" was introduced, it fell to 8 million kilograms in 1873 and as low as 2 million kilograms in subsequent years.[\[115\]](#)

After summarizing the plunge in silkworm production, apparently accelerated by Pasteur's "preventive," here is what Dr. Lutaud, the one-time editor of Paris' journal of medicine, had to say about Pasteur's "miracle."

"This is the way in which Pasteur saved sericulture! The reputation, which he still preserves in this respect among ignoramuses and short-sighted savants, has been brought into being, (1) by himself, by means of inaccurate assertions, (2) by the sellers of microscopic seeds on the Pasteur system, who have realized big benefits at the expense of the cultivators, (3) by the complicity of the Academies in the Public Bodies, which, without any investigation, reply to the complaints of the cultivators - 'But sericulture is saved! Make use of Pasteur's system!' However, everybody is not disposed to employ a system that consists of enriching oneself by the ruination of others."[\[116\]](#)

Hume observed that perhaps the greatest harm that Pasteur inflicted on science was deflecting notice from Béchamp's discoveries, marching biology and medicine off in the wrong direction as he continued claiming credit for Béchamp's discoveries, while being so ignorant that he did not understand what he stole. Pasteur tried taking credit for Béchamp's silkworm discoveries, particularly Béchamp's explanation of *flacherie*, which was founded on his microzyma investigations, of which Pasteur knew literally nothing, and had done no original work on.[\[117\]](#) When Pasteur tried taking credit for Béchamp's silkworm discoveries at the Academy of Sciences, Béchamp was once more compelled to make reference to his earlier publications, and even told of how a French bureaucrat had quietly approached him about his solution to the problem.

In the meantime, Béchamp was continuing his investigations into the world of the microzyma. Béchamp and Estor labored long and hard at Montpellier, microscopes in hand. Their discoveries were startling.

Microzymas could be seen moving about inside cells. In healthy cells the microzymas looked one way, and appeared to be vital for the cells' healthy functioning. It seemed that microzymas were required for cells to form, and were essential building blocks of life. When tissue was diseased, microzymas seemed related to the bacteria they were seeing. The microzymas in chalk and limestone appeared to be surviving remnants of the creatures that became the rock, and incredibly came alive after millions of years of dormancy.

Béchamp and Estor tirelessly performed experiments that lasted for years. When a freak frost hit Montpellier in the winter of 1867-1868, Béchamp obtained a large cactus that had frozen. It was a cactus with a large, thick skin, impervious to invasion by organisms. Béchamp sectioned the cactus and looked deep within its interior. He found it teeming with destructive bacteria. They concluded that the bacteria they saw in damaged tissue, as in the frostbitten cactus, *came from the microzymas*.

Béchamp held that microzymas were both the beginning and end of life, in a category all their own. Microzymas initiated the formation of cells, and also initiated the cells' destruction. Béchamp stated that nothing is the prey of death, but everything is the prey of life. When animals and plants decay, organisms are nourished by consuming them. The organisms that live inside them are apparently responsible for their life in the first place. The decay initiated by the microzymas when cells die is identical to the fermentation process in wine, beer, and the inversion of sugar. Microzymas exist at the beginning of life, and when the cell dies, microzymas are eventually the only organized material left, and the rest is broken down into its constituent elements. The microzymas can survive in limestone for millions of years. The recent "revival" of ancient bacteria by

today's scientists is more confirmation of Béchamp's work. Microzymas, not the cell, appear to be the smallest unit of life, and its building block. A cell is a higher level of organization of life processes, similar to the manner in which a multicellular creature is another, higher level.

Béchamp and Estor were discovering a dynamic that has profound implications for today's medicine. They set forth a theory known today as pleomorphism. What it meant was this: one day a microbiologist looks through his microscope, seeing a rod-shaped bacterium; the next day he sees a spherical-shaped bacterium; with his microbiology training, based in large measure upon Pasteur's germ theory of disease, those bacteria are considered separate species; according to pleomorphic theory, that rod-shaped bacterium one day and spherical-shaped bacterium the next is the same organism, but has "mutated."

That might seem a minor difference, but it has profound implications for the entire foundation of modern medicine. In the view of Béchamp, a bacterium was not the *cause* of disease, but one of its *effects*. Béchamp noted otherwise healthy microzymas going through pathological mutations when cells were ill or dying, mutating into bacterial and other forms.

Pasteur apparently unsuccessfully tried plagiarizing Béchamp's microzyman work when he tried taking credit for Béchamp's explanation of the wine-grape problem. Béchamp was eight years ahead of Pasteur, and provided a much fuller explanation than Pasteur's terse explanation.^[118] Pasteur's 1872 attempt at plagiarizing Béchamp's analysis of the wine-grape problem, was in Béchamp's words, "his boldest plagiarism; he discovered all of a sudden, eight years after my discovery thereof, that the ferment of vinous fermentation exists naturally upon the grape." Béchamp said that Pasteur's announcement of his "new discoveries," and his claim that he "has opened a new path to physiology and medical pathology" was "too much: up until that time I had treated the man with consideration; but now he must be properly exposed."^[119]

When Pasteur's alleged attempted plagiarism of Béchamp's microzyman work was thwarted, Pasteur used his considerable powers to banish microzyman theory from French science, and he largely succeeded. Maybe Pasteur's appropriation of Béchamp's work was not as consciously dishonest as Béchamp averred. Maybe Pasteur was right and Béchamp wrong. The case is not that Béchamp's evidence and theories were carefully researched and found wanting. It is not that today's microbiology students are introduced to the subject in a way that develops the history of the germ theory and deals with rival theories and why they may be incorrect. Béchamp's work has never been pursued by mainstream microbiology, and Pasteur led an effort to erase Béchamp's name from the history books, and it largely succeeded. Estor was greatly grieved at Pasteur's plagiarism and corruption of their discoveries, and Béchamp wrote that Estor died with a broken heart over what Pasteur had done.^[120] I have tried for several years to obtain an English language copy of Béchamp's magnum opus, *Les Microzymas*, without success. If Béchamp's work is never investigated or reproduced, how can anybody tell if it is wrong? It looks as if Pasteur *did* investigate Béchamp's work to steal what he deemed useful, and then buried the rest. The good news is that many scientists have pursued the line of Béchamp's research, sometimes independently. They are still at it. Béchamp's paradigm may yet prevail, and if we want to be healthy, it probably should.

Today's germ theory of disease guides every medical student from the first day of class. Béchamp's work has shown the shaky foundation that the germ theory may rest upon. Pasteur later applied his germ theory to diseases such as anthrax and rabies. While the history books laud Pasteur's achievements, along with his "saving" of the silkworm industry, an analysis of the original data from Pasteur's treatments of anthrax and rabies not only show that he arguably did not cure anybody of anything, his treatments caused their death rates to go up.^[121]

Pasteur's germ theory of disease and the [vaccination](#) paradigm it inspired are examples of male-oriented medicine in action. Vaccination proceeds from a premise that there are particular organisms that cause disease by attacking the host body, and by injecting weakened organisms through vaccination, the body builds up immunity to the real thing. It is based upon Pasteur's germ theory. There is an impressively large body of evidence that shows that vaccination does not really work. Furthermore, it creates new diseases while making the disease it supposedly fights more deadly. Just as [fluoridation's proponents](#) cannot realistically claim credit for a decrease in tooth decay in America during the past generation, or as [Benjamin Rush](#) could hardly claim today that his calomel and bleedings really helped his patients, vaccination can claim little credit, if any, for

eradicating diseases. What deserves most and maybe all the credit for the elimination of mass diseases such as tuberculosis and whooping cough is the introduction of public sanitation, a healthier diet and a reduction in absolute poverty.[\[122\]](#) Vaccination just might be a major component in the great increase of cancer in the West, because it harms the immune system, and cancer and other degenerative diseases are related to immune-system failures.

Is there such a thing as infectious disease? Sure, but what is it, and how is it really transmitted? Is there really a species of disease organism that induces the disease, or is it a pleomorphic stage that any diseased tissue will eventually manifest under certain conditions? The early data from vaccination research shows it was a disaster, arguably never preventing one instance of disease, and causing endless death and suffering for millions of people.[\[123\]](#) Whatever benefits vaccination may appear to convey may be outweighed by other disease dynamics that vaccination sets in motion. Vaccination may help make one disease "disappear," but another takes its place. Many respected scientists have believed that vaccination is responsible for the increase in cancer rates in this century. Many think that AIDS was born via vaccination. When one understands how poorly the current disease theories may be founded, those ideas do not seem farfetched.

There is a major obstacle to challenging the dogma, however: a multi-trillion-dollar industry has grown up around it, and it fiercely protects itself, as all power structures do. In Hume's book, her main lament is that Pasteur pioneered the corruption of modern medicine. Dubos was not being ironic when he described Pasteur's legacy and how the corporate world is heavily invested in Pasteurian medicine. There may be no greater enemy of the public's health than the collective effort of those corporations, working hand-in-hand with Western physicians.

Hume noted with irony that Pasteur was not even a doctor, but he was the first to prostitute modern medicine by commercializing it. Vaccines became a big money maker. His "preventive" for silkworm disease was lucrative, even though it probably did not work. Pasteur founded institutes bearing his name, in order to further his work. Nobody knows where medicine may have led if Béchamp's discoveries had been given their due. All the Whiggish presentations do not even address that possibility.

A scientist at the Pasteur Institute performed one of the first modern confirmations of Béchamp's pleomorphic theory. In 1914, Madame Victor Henri subjected bacteria to ultraviolet light, and created a new species of bacteria from a species already known, transforming a rod-shaped bacterium into a spheroid bacterium.[\[124\]](#) With great irony, a woman at the Pasteur Institute confirmed the accuracy of Antoine Béchamp's theories, pariah that he was.

One problem with microscopic investigation into biology is the microscope itself. The wavelength of visible light is the theoretical limiting factor in optical microscopes. The smaller the wavelength of light shined upon something, the finer the image resolution. Resolution of optical microscopes is traditionally described in terms of diameters. The limit of optical microscopes has been around 2000-2500 diameters for many years. It does not matter how fine your lenses are, and it does not matter how hard you look, 2000-2500 diameters is the limit of optical microscopes, because of the wavelength of visible light, which is about 4000 angstroms. I doubt they attained 2000 diameters in Béchamp's time. Microzymas existed at the limits of resolution back then, and even today, optical microscopes have difficulty viewing the microzyman world.

A dynamic surrounding Béchamp played itself out repeatedly in succeeding generations of microbiologists. Béchamp seemed to be a man of high spiritual attainment. He sought to prevent cruelty to animals, while Pasteur engaged in numerous cruel animal experiments with dogs, rabbits and other mammals.[\[125\]](#) Pasteur pioneered a process whereby a dog's skull would be opened while it was alive, and the brain studied. Pasteur's trephination practices were merely one more instance of his spiritual perspective and the degeneracy of scientific practices that do not respect life. Pasteur's animal experiments, like those of his colleague Claude Bernard, became the target of animal-rights groups in the 1800s, even Bernard's wife and daughters campaigned against his experimentation on live animals.

Béchamp seemed to have a spiritual affinity with the microzyma, which was quite possibly related to his discoveries. That offends the scientific notion of objectivity, but other microbiologists had similar proclivities. Barbara McClintock won the Nobel Prize in Medicine in 1983 for her work on corn genetics. For

many years she worked in obscurity, and was even derided for seeing things in her microscope that others could not. She later said that she "had a feeling for the organism."[\[126\]](#)

One thing that primed me for Béchamp's revelations was that many years earlier I had read Jane Robert's [Seth](#) state the facts of pleomorphism. Seth said that viruses were constantly "mutating" according to what the host body told them to do. Seth said that a scientist would look through a microscope one day and see Virus A, and the next day he would see Virus B, and little did he know that it was the same virus, but it had "mutated."[\[127\]](#) It is a harmless virus one day, and harmful the next, depending the conditions it is subject to. Seth wove a fascinating tale regarding the interrelationship between body, mind and spirit, making the case that to study one without taking the others into account was a dead end, similar to sawing the legs off a chair, thinking it would serve as well with two legs as four.

The Developing American Medical Racket

During the first half of the 19th century, Great Britain was the world's leading industrial nation. Its per capita level of industrialization was more than twice as high as France's and nearly twice the United States' in 1830, and its gross industrial output was significantly larger than France's and the United States' combined. American industrialization per capita increased by 50 percent between 1830 and 1860, while British industrialization nearly tripled. In 1860, the United States had a per capita industrialization greater than every nation but Great Britain's, which was three times higher. In gross industrial output, the United States' was about a third of Britain's in 1860.[\[128\]](#) The American economy was a dichotomy of an industrialized north and an agricultural south. Although the reasons for the [American Civil War](#) were multiple, with the slavery issue and European influence receiving nods of recognition, my perception is that the overriding issue was holding the empire together, a motivation of every nation and empire in history. Lincoln even said that he would allow slavery if it would keep the "union" whole.

The United States still bears the scars of the Civil War, the bloodiest war it has fought, as far as domestic casualties are concerned. Disparagement of "Yankees" still can be heard in Southern conversation. Although the slaves were freed, they were in near-slave status for a long-time. At the dawn of World War II, black income per capita was only about 30% of white America's, an even lower ratio than it was in 1900. Lynching blacks was an American pastime well into the 20th century, where entire communities would assemble to celebrate the murder of people whose crime was having black skin. Women would pose in their Sunday best in front of the burning or hanging corpse, while the local newspaper reporter [would take pictures of the event suitable for framing.](#)[\[129\]](#) It was common for those "dead nigger" photographs to be made into postcards and mailed to family and friends, commemorating America's civilized ways. While the North was supposedly fighting to free the South's slaves, the genocide of Native Americans in Western North America was at about [its zenith](#). American women would not obtain voting rights until after World War I. The humanitarian impulse was muted at best, and the veneer of American civilization thin.

Beginning with the Civil War, the United States rapidly caught up and surpassed Great Britain in industrialization. By 1928, the United States' industrialization per capita was 50% higher than Great Britain's, and its gross industrial output was higher than Britain, France, Germany, the Soviet Union, Italy and Japan combined.[\[130\]](#) Industry dominated the United States, and what is known as the medical-industrial complex was well on the way to its current hegemony.

If that milieu is considered, it is not surprising that a class of men largely took over American industry, beginning during the Civil War. They all bought their way out of military service, and not because they were pacifists. They then began building industrial empires, and war profiteering during the Civil War was where they got their start. Of the big name robber barons, it is generally acknowledged that the most ingenious, ruthless and successful of them all was [John D. Rockefeller](#). The first American oil well was drilled in 1859 in Pennsylvania. After carefully sizing up the new industry, Rockefeller joined it in 1863. He quickly realized that if he could control the industry's refining arm, he could control it all. All oil production would have to pass through his hands if he controlled refining. His strategy was diabolically ingenious. He

used the business of his competitors to get kickbacks from the railroads. He then marched through the new industry, giving his competitors two options: sell out or be wiped out. Those who resisted his offer were quickly run out of business. There were mysterious refinery explosions and deaths in those days for those who refused to sell out. By 1880, Rockefeller controlled 95% of U.S. refining. When he wiped out or bought out a competitor, if his prey put up a vigorous and talented fight, he would try to hire them. He soon amassed a team of the most capable and ruthless businessmen around.[\[131\]](#) Once he controlled the oil industry, he began diversifying. Through direct investment and “philanthropy,” Rockefeller would eventually cast a long shadow over mining, [banking](#), government, the [media](#), [education](#), and - what concerns this essay - medicine. Rockefeller’s father was a genuine snake oil salesman and con man who sold cancer “cures.” John D. learned the business at his father’s knee, when he was around. His father funded his early ventures.

While Rockefeller and the other robber barons built their empires, the AMA was also building its monopoly. The AMA charter stated that one of its goals was “eliminating the competition.” In the 1850s, the AMA launched its first political campaign, which sought to ban abortion. Before the AMA's campaign, abortions were legal if they were performed before the baby could be felt kicking, and even the Catholic Church did not oppose it. The AMA campaign was stepped up in 1864, decrying abortion’s evils, eventually calling abortionists murderers and executioners. It worked, as between 1875 and 1900, every state but Kentucky passed laws banning all abortions. Hundreds of thousands of American women died during the years that abortion was illegal, as they had back alley abortions and died from the complications. Not only was the AMA campaigning to ban abortion, it also actively discouraged contraception and even information on fertility. While the AMA clothed itself in righteousness, an examination of the internal record revealed that the AMA’s motivation had nothing whatsoever to do with the sanctity of life. Their war was waged to wipe out female healers. Midwives were the traditional administrators of abortion and contraception.[\[132\]](#) It would take nearly a hundred years before abortion was made legal again, and today the right is under siege once again in America, although the effort is unlikely to succeed. The effort is about controlling and punishing women, and has little to do with a reverence toward life, as evidenced by most anti-abortionists’ support of capital punishment (their attitude epitomized by today’s American president, [George Bush the Second](#)), as well as murdered doctors and blown-up clinics.

Also in the 1850s, the AMA began campaigning against homeopaths. As with most inquisitorial behavior, the early campaign was relatively gentle. Books were written to ridicule “alternative” medicine, AMA members were forbidden from associating with homeopaths, and AMA pressure began getting homeopaths expelled from medical societies. The Thomsonian school of medicine also came under fire, but as they were generally laypeople, they were not as much of a threat as homeopaths were.

Although it would be a mistake to chalk it all up to a conspiracy, there is a familiar pattern when rival movements are attacked and destroyed. For instance, the Catholic Inquisition got its start in the early 1200s, as a response to internal corruption that left the Catholic Church’s religious monopoly in Europe vulnerable to challenges from reformists. By the early 1200s, the Catholic Church was holding ecumenical councils that [attempted to curb the corruption in its priestly ranks](#). Christian Europe’s most socially progressive and cosmopolitan region was France’s Languedoc region. Returning from the Balkans with Crusading soldiers was Catharism, a dualistic sect whose roots predated Christianity. The [Cathars](#) lived the austere lives that people imagined Jesus lived, and the pious example of the Cathars’ spiritual practice was a marked contrast to the Catholic Church’s priests’. The Cathars took vows of poverty, fasted, and apparently the most advanced of them could heal with a touch. Catharism spread like wildfire throughout Languedoc, and by the early 1200s, about half of the Languedoc region was Cathar. The Church had to deal with other threats in those days. The followers of Peter Waldo comprised an internal challenge to the Church’s corruption. Waldo’s attempts to reform the Church and bring Christianity back to its humble roots got him excommunicated.

The early attempts to curb Catharism were largely restricted to counter-preaching, with Dominic leading the effort to bring the Languedoc citizens back to the fold. He had little success, and Pope Innocent III crafted an effective solution. In businessmen’s parlance, it consisted of putting cement shoes on the competition while marketing an ersatz version of their product. Innocent called a Crusade on Languedoc and simultaneously sanctioned the mendicant orders, the Dominicans and Franciscans, who imitated the austere practices of the Cathars. The Albigensian Crusade was waged over decades, completely depopulating parts of France and killing about one million people. The Cathar threat to the Catholic

Church's monopoly was wiped out in a prodigious bloodbath, and the Church enjoyed another three hundred years of religious racketeering, until Martin Luther came along. The [Dominicans and Franciscans](#) became the Inquisition's foot soldiers, enforcing the faith with the rack, hot tongs and flaming stakes.

In significant ways, the offensive mounted by orthodox medicine is reminiscent of how the Catholic Church operated. Orthodox medicine abandoned its more egregious practices. The public rightly feared the heroic bleedings and large doses of "medicines" such as calomel. The highly dilute doses administered by homeopaths had great appeal. During its crusade against the competition, American orthodox medicine curtailed its heroic bleeding practices, as well as its heroic doses of calomel and other "medicines." It began co-opting homeopathic medicines into its pharmacopoeia. There was a trend ever since the 1830s, when the alternative movements began in earnest, to begin trusting nature again. Orthodox doctors began allowing the body to heal itself, or at least assist it, instead of bludgeoning it with heroic medicine. Orthodox medicine was raiding the alternatives for what it deemed useful, so it could offer a competing product. At the same time, orthodox medicine tried putting cement shoes on its competition. Getting homeopaths kicked out of medical societies were some of the early AMA successes in the 1850s.

The spiritual, political and social perspectives often have parallel in one's scientific and professional orientation. The homeopathic movement was not only revolutionary in the medical field. Most American homeopaths in the 1850s were also abolitionists and members of the nascent Republican Party. When Abraham Lincoln came into office in 1861, his Secretary of State, William Seward, had a homeopath as his personal physician. Homeopathy enjoyed political support in Washington in the 1860s, helping to blunt the orthodox assault.

The 1860s through 1880s were the period of greatest influence for homeopathic practitioners. The press and public were fairly unanimous in their criticisms of the orthodox medical establishment, and sympathetic toward homeopathy. By the 1870s, about a million American families were loyal to homeopathy. In 1878, a yellow-fever epidemic swept from New Orleans into the Mississippi Valley. There were about 20,000 deaths. Yellow fever was the most feared disease in the South, and official commissions were launched to investigate the 1878 epidemic. One commission investigated the records of homeopathic physicians where the epidemic raged. It turned out that people treated by homeopaths had a yellow-fever death rate of less than 7%, which was less than half the death rate of the general public. When the results were announced to the U. S. Congress, they were impressed.[\[133\]](#) The attacks on homeopathy by orthodoxy relaxed during those years, although homeopathy had been so demonized in the AMA's ranks that many orthodox practitioners would go berserk at the mere mention of it. There were various factors that doomed homeopathy. Orthodox medicine's alliance with the drug companies loomed largely, but the seeds of its destruction came largely from within its ranks.

Hahnemann's system was developed through experience with patients, and his practice made the homeopath both diagnostician and pharmacist. The homeopathic pharmacopoeia was vast, and the proper application of it took years of careful study. Homeopathy was not for quick study artists. There was no one-size-fits-all treatment, no universal "medicine" such as calomel, no assembly line to run the patients through. Not surprisingly, a movement arose in homeopathy that tried making homeopathy easier to learn and use. Its practitioners were influenced by the universal prescriptions that orthodox practitioners were handing out. With the relaxation of attacks from orthodox medicine, the internal division of homeopathy became evident. In 1880, it divided into the "purists" who followed Hahnemann's teachings to the letter, and the revisionists who tried making homeopathy easier to learn and apply. The subsequent internecine warfare was the major reason the homeopathic movement began disintegrating in the late 19th century. The homeopaths that I have dealt with or been aware of in my life have usually been from the "purist" school.

Another factor deserves mention. Although the heroic treatments of orthodox medicine were feared by millions of people, and rightfully so, they were by no means the majority of Americans, at least to the point of refusing to submit to them. Heroic medicine enjoyed the benefit of being spectacular. When a patient ingested calomel, the effect *was* dramatic. *Something* happened, even if it nearly killed the patient. I have experienced and watched homeopathy produce instant and dramatic results, for many ailments. For chronic conditions, however, the treatment could take many months, as the body gradually healed itself, in subtle, feminine fashion. There was often self-discipline involved with homeopathic treatment, and most people preferred to take a quick-acting pill for their afflictions. That dynamic can readily be seen today. True health in today's United

States comes from taking care of one's self. Eating well, exercising, refraining from tobacco, alcohol and other stimulants/depressants, and other aspects of a healthy regimen require some self-discipline, the kind that most people do not exercise. Most people would rather take a pill to make their symptoms disappear, so they can continue to pursue their addictions and deadly lifestyles. Symptom suppression is the essence of Western medicine today, and its appeal is largely to people who refuse to take responsibility for their health. Most want a pill or spectacular intervention, such as surgery, to make the problem "go away."

The homeopathic movement largely had itself to blame for its demise, but its internal weakness was also exploited by other competitors, the most damaging among them orthodox doctors, who teamed up with the burgeoning pharmaceutical empires. The homeopathic remedies administered by the "purists" were highly dilute and never mixed with other substances. It was the opposite approach to the polypharmacy of the proprietary medicine craze that gripped orthodoxy during the Gilded Age.

The final blow to homeopathy, however, was dealt by diversifying robber barons, John D. Rockefeller and Andrew Carnegie in particular. Rockefeller and Carnegie amassed enormous fortunes during the Gilded Age, through ingenuity and ruthlessness. As they came to dominate their respective industries, they branched out and became "philanthropists." Their "philanthropy" was more directed toward social engineering than humanitarian activity. Rockefeller and Carnegie exercised "institutional control" over American medicine.

By 1900, homeopathic schools had largely abandoned Hahnemann's methods, and the "make homeopathy easy" faction dominated. That "short cut" school of homeopathy was close in spirit and practice to orthodox medicine, and both pumped great numbers of graduates into the medical marketplace. Homeopathy suffered from the internal division, and its colleges relied almost solely upon student fees. Homeopathy also probably lost its effectiveness as Hahnemann's methods were abandoned. The same economic situation in relation to student fees existed in orthodox medical schools until 1910 and the Flexner Report, which was funded by the Carnegie Endowment. Medical schools that received Flexner's approval received Carnegie and Rockefeller funding, while those that failed to gain approval did not. Not surprisingly, the favored paradigm prevailed, with the AMA and drug industry allying itself with Rockefeller and Carnegie, forming a power structure that dominates Western medicine to this day.

The AMA worked hand-in-hand with Flexner, and government was soon a player. State boards refused to license doctors that did not come from AMA-approved schools. That interlocking institutional control spelled the death knell for homeopathy. In 1900, there were 22 homeopathic colleges. In 1918, there were only seven. Homeopathic colleges were not the only casualties of the institutional control that Rockefeller, Carnegie, the AMA, licensing boards and drug companies would exercise over medicine. That process also closed most medical schools for women and blacks. The alleged strategy was bringing science and education to medicine, but it was also obviously a power play to consolidate wealth and power. Ironically, Rockefeller would not take the drugs that his empire promoted. His personal physician was a homeopath, and John D. lived to be nearly 100 years old. To gain some insight into Rockefeller's motivation, a quote from *Medical Dark Ages* is appropriate:

"...a surgeon told John D. (Rockefeller) that everyone should have an appendectomy before the age of 16 as a preventative. The oil wizard saw the point at once. 'Why, you've got a better thing than Standard Oil!', he exclaimed." - **In Nat Morris, *The Cancer Blackout***.

Rockefeller was creating paradigms in Western society, using his ill-gotten money to shape and dominate institutions that he funded, and it goes far beyond the drugs and knives paradigm that rules Western medicine. Soon before he began taking over medicine, he was reshaping the University of Chicago, remaking it to his liking. The University of Chicago would spawn social control ideologies. [John Taylor Gatto](#), one of America's finest teachers, noted that today's grade schools were designed by theorists from the University of Chicago, where they were honed their "instruments of scientific management of a mass population." Gatto's thesis is that our educational system "dumbs us down," so we can be controlled.

From 1990 through 1997, in the wake of the Soviet Empire's collapse, in every year but two, the Nobel Prize in Economic Sciences was awarded to a University of Chicago economist, their work generally concerned with scientific, capitalistic, means of managing the world economy. There was about zero humanitarian impulse in Rockefeller's "philanthropy." He only became excited when pondering how rich he would become.

The knives and drugs paradigm prevailed due to considerations of wealth and power, not because it works. In 1913, a few years after the publication of Flexner's report, Rockefeller strikebreakers turned machine guns on a camp of striking miners in Colorado, killing forty people, including women and children. Exploiting workers was always the way the [capitalists](#) primarily amassed their fortunes. Several years ago, a member of Dennis Lee's organization had lunch with a Rockefeller heir. The heir said that he knew of no rich American family (at the level of dynastic wealth) that made its fortune honestly. In America at least, behind every great fortune is a great crime. Even the "radical" Carnegie was a crafty strikebreaker, the bloody Homestead Strike staining his reign. Machine-gunning one's employees could be effective, but was a crude method of exerting control. Rockefeller and the other robber barons pioneered and refined methods of manipulating public opinion and shaping the public mind. Rockefeller's image in the wake of the Ludlow Massacre, especially as it became evident that he authorized it, was at about the level of Attila the Hun, and Rockefeller then waged one of history's first public relations campaigns. He hired Ivy Lee in 1914 to help manage the Rockefeller Empire's image. Lee is considered the leading pioneer of today's [public relations industry](#), working first for J. P. Morgan, then for Rockefeller.^[134] John D. Rockefeller soon engaged in the charade of carrying around a bag of dimes, handing one to everyone he met.

Before Rockefeller and Carnegie became involved, the AMA was getting its act together. In 1899, the AMA hired George Simmons as the new editor for its *Journal of the American Medical Association* (JAMA). Harris Coulter described Simmons as one who had considerable "political abilities."^[135] JAMA was a deeply hypocritical publication. Its primary source of revenue was drug ads, and the ads it ran for "secret ingredient" and "proprietary" medicines violated the AMA's code of ethics. In the 1890s, the AMA came under fire from state boards and other organizations for its unethical ads, and was on its way to becoming a laughingstock. Simmons rescued the AMA, largely by turning JAMA into a money machine by closely allying itself with the drug industry. Drug ads bankrolled the AMA, especially after Simmons became involved in 1899. Coulter did not delve into Simmons' credentials in his work, but Eustace Mullins did, in his *Murder by Injection*.

An Englishman, Simmons settled in the Midwest in 1870 and began a journalism career. After several years as editor of the *Nebraska Farmer*, Simmons opened a medical practice, advertising that he specialized in homeopathy and the "diseases of women."^[136] He apparently was an abortionist when the AMA was campaigning to ban abortion. Simmons advertised that he received his training and diploma at Rotunda Hospital in Dublin, Ireland. That hospital never issued diplomas. There is no evidence that Simmons ever received any medical training. Simmons then got a diploma from Rush Medical School. There is no evidence that Simmons ever set foot on the medical school campus. He apparently received a mail order degree. Simmons appears to have been the classic "quack."

Simmons was ambitious and resourceful. He organized a Nebraska chapter of the AMA. In 1899, he was invited to Chicago to take over the editorship of JAMA. Simmons saw that the AMA was not properly seizing its opportunities. He quickly named himself the AMA's secretary and general manager. Simmons then found a capable assistant, a man who had been arrested for embezzlement as the Secretary of the Kentucky Board of Health, who may have bought his way to a pardon, and was then encouraged to leave the state. He became Simmons' right hand man.^[137]

Simmons turned the AMA into a gold mine when he initiated an approval racket. For a price, the AMA gave its "Seal of Approval" to drugs. It was a form of extortion, and the AMA engaged in no real research. Their "research" was a form of "green research." Simmons, like a shrewd horse trader, would set his price based on how badly a drug company wanted the AMA's Seal of Approval. The racket soon led to a troubled situation with Wallace Abbott, the founder of Abbott Laboratories. Abbott refused to knuckle under to Simmons' blackmail, and therefore the AMA never approved Abbott's drugs. One day, so the story goes, Abbott went to see Simmons and showed him the investigative file that he had built on Simmons' "career." Simmons had sex charges brought by some of his patients, and charges of negligence in the deaths

of others. That, combined with the fact that Simmons had no credible medical credentials, caused a sudden change of heart at the AMA. Abbott's drugs were suddenly approved every time, and Abbott did not have to pay for them.[\[138\]](#)

Simmons was soon raking it in hand over fist. *JAMA's* advertising revenue rose from \$34,000 per year in 1899 to \$89,000 in 1903. By 1909, *JAMA* was making \$150,000 per year, becoming the AMA's cash cow. Other racketeering strategies involved threatening firms that advertised anywhere except in the pages of *JAMA*. Simmons was ingenious in making *JAMA* the icon it became, exerting institutional control over the up and coming industry. Simmons' efforts made the AMA and drug companies into natural allies of the Rockefeller and Carnegie foundations.

Simmons recruited Morris Fishbein to the AMA in 1913. Simmons was a wealthy man by the 1920s, sitting at the AMA's helm. He openly had a mistress, and attempted to get rid of his wife. A standard technique in those days was having one's wife committed to an insane asylum. Simmons heavily drugged his wife and then tried convincing her that she was going insane. His strategy backfired. Mrs. Simmons took her husband to court in 1924, and the sensational trial ruined Simmons' image. The trial inspired numerous books, plays and movies, the most famous of which was *Gaslight*, starring Charles Boyer and Ingrid Bergman. Simmons stepped down at the AMA and his protégé, Morris Fishbein, took over. Fishbein ran American medicine with an iron fist for the next twenty-five years, becoming a household name and a rich man.

Fishbein soon extended the drug approval racket to food, where for a price a food would garner the AMA's Seal of Acceptance. The testing involved seemed limited to seeing how much money was in the bank account of the companies seeking AMA approval. At the same time Fishbein was announcing the Seal of Approval and citing two tuna companies as meeting the AMA's stringent requirements, the FDA was seizing shipments of those very brands because "they consisted in whole or in part of decomposed animal substance."[\[139\]](#) Fishbein's first customer for his food approval racket was Land O'Lakes Butter Company, a company that had been criminally prosecuted many times for adulterating its product to hide spoilage and watering it down.[\[140\]](#) It widely advertised its new, AMA-approved, status. The AMA's Seal of Approval racket for food lasted until the 1940s, and it always teetered on the verge of damage lawsuits, as it performed virtually no testing on its "approved" foods. The drug Seal of Approval racket, however, proved long lasting, but drugs comprised only one pillar of the developing racket. The other was surgery. When anesthesia and antiseptics made surgery respectable, the surgeons sought to make surgery into a monopoly.

Surgery was not rescued from its barbaric status in the United States until the 1880s. Keen was not the only American pioneer of antiseptic procedures. The most famous is William Halsted. Germany, with its focus on laboratory science, became the center of medical research and training during the last half of the 19th century, not France or England. Halsted was a rich boy from Yale who studied in Germany and brought back the German philosophy of medical practice. Halsted pioneered sterile surgical procedures in Baltimore. As happened often in those days, Halsted became a cocaine and morphine addict, and never beat his addiction. Along with pioneering sterile surgery, Halsted also refined the practice of invasive surgery. Halsted invented the radical mastectomy.

This essay will now largely concern itself with the development of today's cancer racket. With Halsted's innovations helping it along, surgery became the favored, even sole, way to treat cancer in the late 19th century. Cancer is a disease of civilization, and the greatest doctors of history knew that treating cancer by attacking the tumor was futile. Cancer was also seen long ago as a disease of the "humors," the body's fluids. Western medicine gradually abandoned the humoral perspective to adopt the "solidist" one. Studying and treating the humors (blood, lymph, bile) was largely abandoned in favor of treating the body's "solids." Such a change was partly based on the cell theories of Virchow and others, but the rise of surgery also contributed greatly, because it is impossible to use a scalpel on blood.

The world's most influential cancer research institution is Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center in New York. Its "spiritual founder" was J. Marion Sims. Sims received minimal training during the 1840s before he began performing experimental surgeries on slave women. Slave women were at the bottom of the America's social hierarchy, and as such made ideal subjects for human experiments. Performed without anesthesia, Sims' surgeries were accomplished by having friends hold down the slaves as he

operated. According to his sympathetic biographer, his operations were “little short of murderous.” Sims’ friends could only endure about one stint of holding down his experimental subjects, as the subjects’ thrashing and shrieking were too much for them to endure. When local plantation owners refused to lend Sims any more subjects for his experiments, he bought a slave woman for \$500 and performed 30 operations on her in a few months. After a few years of his experimental surgeries, he may have been run out of town, as he had the reputation of being some kind of Dr. Frankenstein.

Sims abruptly moved to New York City from the South, and in 1855 helped found Women’s Hospital, a charity hospital. He again began performing experimental surgeries, that time on immigrant women, and the Dr. Frankenstein rumors began anew. In the 1870s, he began performing experimental cancer surgeries. His brutal experiments, called life threatening by the hospital trustees, combined with his open contempt of his women subjects, got him expelled from the hospital. Sims cultivated wealthy women as his professional clientele (his specialty was operating on vesico-vaginal fistulas), and those contacts got him reinstated. An Astor heir died of cancer, and the Astor family offered the Women’s Hospital \$150,000 if they would open a cancer treatment wing of the hospital. The trustees associated cancer treatment and research with Sims’ barbarities, and hesitated to accept the money. Sims double-crossed the trustees and negotiated directly with the Astors to set up a new hospital with the money. His negotiation worked, although he died before New York Cancer Hospital opened in 1884. He would have been its first director had he lived. The name was changed to Memorial Hospital in the 1890s, and to its current name in the 1950s.[\[141\]](#)

Cancer treatment by surgery grew during the late 19th century and well into the 20th. Ever more drastic surgeries were devised to treat cancer. Using war terminology and imagery, one cancer treatment that removed the entire jaw was known as the “commando” because it reminded the doctors of the slashing attacks of World War I commandos. Memorial Hospital surgeons invented procedures that virtually hollowed out the entire body, trying to get every last potential piece of cancerous flesh. Another innovative surgery at Memorial Hospital was called a hemicorporectomy, where half the body would be carved away (everything below the pelvis) as a way to treat advanced pelvic region malignancy. Many patients elected to die rather than submit to such surgeries.[\[142\]](#)

James Douglas, who owned the world’s largest copper mine, also owned large pitchblende deposits, from which come radium and uranium. Douglas began experimenting with radium as a cure all, and not long before World War I became the leading “philanthropist” of Memorial Hospital. His \$100,000 donation was attached to the condition that Memorial Hospital would begin using radium treatments for cancer. With the adoption of radium as “medicine,” the price of radium instantly increased by more than 1000%. Douglas died in 1913, probably from radiation poisoning. By the 1920s, Memorial Hospital’s radium treatments constituted its single largest source of income.

In 1927, John D. Rockefeller and his son began contributing millions of dollars to Memorial Hospital, including money and land to build a new hospital in the 1930s. The same year that the Rockefellers began “donating” to Memorial Hospital, Standard Oil of New Jersey signed its first agreement with I.G. Farben. Farben was Europe’s largest and most notorious cartel. Farben ran the rubber works at Auschwitz, and invented Sarin, Tabun and the Zyklon B used in the gas chambers. In 1934, the Rockefeller Empire sent its PR wizard Ivy Lee to Germany to help improve Farben and the Third Reich’s image.[\[143\]](#) The Rockefeller Empire worked hand-in-hand with Nazi Germany, [as did many other American industrialists](#), including Hitler’s hero, [Henry Ford](#). The Rockefellers even renewed their contract with Farben in 1939, the contract stating that they would continue doing business even if the United States and Germany went to war, an agreement that was kept clear until 1942, after Germany had declared war on the United States. It was not until the American government investigated the Rockefeller companies, one investigator calling their relationship with Germany bordering on “treason,” with a resultant publicity black eye, that the Rockefellers discontinued their open support of Nazi Germany, although they apparently kept dealing with Hitler’s regime clear to the end of World War II.

The Rockefeller/Farben connection influenced Memorial Hospital to begin pursuing chemotherapy research before World War II broke out, with Standard Oil executive Frank Howard sitting on Memorial Hospital’s Research Committee. Before World War II was over, Howard recruited two General Motors executives, Alfred P. Sloan and Charles Kettering, into becoming donors for an ambitious plan to make Memorial Hospital into

a research and treatment center. Kettering also bankrolled [Kettering Laboratories](#) in Cincinnati, which was notable for producing “research” that proved the “benign” properties of industrial substances such as lead, fluoride and aluminum. Sloan was a long-time representative of the Morgan family interests, and the Rockefeller and Morgan interests shared power in running Memorial Sloan-Kettering.^[144] Today more than ever, Wall Street runs Memorial Sloan-Kettering, and Memorial Sloan-Kettering dominates the direction of Western cancer research and treatment. “Corporate philanthropy” is an oxymoron. Corporations “give” money with an eye toward the benefits that might accrue in the end. Everything a corporation does is ultimately designed to increase its profits. [Earning a profit is about the only reason that corporations exist](#), but few will ever state it that baldly.

Today’s cancer treatment paradigm attacks the tumor as a way to eradicate cancer. What did the great doctors of history have to say about attacking cancer tumors? From [Medical Dark Ages](#) I obtained these quotes:

"It is better not to apply any treatment in cases of occult cancer; for if treated (by surgery), the patients die quickly; but if not treated, they hold out for a long time." - **Hippocrates, (460-370 BC)**.

(Advanced cancer is)" irritated by treatment; and the more so the more vigorous it is."

"Some have used caustic medicaments, some the cautery, some excision with a scalpel; but no medicament has ever given relief; the parts cauterized are excited immediately to an increase until they cause death."

"After excision, even when a scar has formed, nonetheless the disease has returned, and caused death; while ... the majority of patients, although no violent measures are applied in the attempt to remove the tumor, but only mild applications in order to sooth it, attain a ripe old age in spite of it." - **Celsus, (1st century AD)**.

"When [a tumor] is of long standing and large, you should leave it alone. For myself have never been able to cure any such, nor have I seen anyone else succeed before me." – **Abu'l Qasim, (936-1013 AD)**.

"It should be forbidden and severely punished to remove cancer by cutting, burning, cautery, and other fiendish tortures. It is from nature that the disease comes, and from nature comes the cure, not from physicians." - **Paracelsus, (1493-1541 AD)**.

The same mentality was held by the Hawaiian kahunas. The kahuna lore stated that "If it is (cancer), do not treat it."^[145]

The heroic medicine of [Benjamin Rush](#) was diametrically opposed to such a sentiment. He wrote that one of the “Vulgar Errors in Medicine” was to “let tumors alone.”^[146]

With surgery coming into vogue, it became a monopoly as a way to treat cancer. Today, there are basically three legal ways to treat cancer in America: surgery, radiation and chemotherapy. The second legal way to treat cancer was discovered in the 1890s. How was that pioneer treated? Again, from [Medical Dark Ages](#):

"The surgeons. They controlled medicine, and they regarded the X-ray as a threat to surgery. At the time surgery was the only approved method of treating cancer. They meant to keep it the *only* approved method by ignoring or rejecting any new methods or ideas. This is why I was called a 'quack' and nearly ejected from hospitals where I had practiced for years." - **Dr. Emil Grubbé**. Dr. Emil Grubbé, ...discovered...X-ray therapy (for cancer) in 1896...X-ray was not recognized as an agent for treating cancer by the American College of Surgeons until 1937...Dr. Grubbé...still was not recognized as late as 1951." - in **Herbert Bailey, *Vitamin E, Your Key to a Healthy Heart***

The third legal way, chemotherapy, came directly from World War II chemical warfare experiments. Using chemicals to treat cancer had been around since Paracelsus, but the chemicals killed the patients more often than not, since they were based on arsenic, lead and other deadly substances. In the early 20th century, chemical treatments and finding the "magic bullet" (more masculine imagery) to kill cancer cells became an intensive area of study. In the 1930s, chemotherapy research was noted for its deadly and barbaric effects, and those who used surgery and radiation battled against chemotherapy. World War II was a watershed in the use of chemicals. [DDT](#) was first used during World War II, the Nazis invented nerve gases, the allies invented [napalm](#) and [nuclear weapons](#), and the notion of "better living through chemistry" became entrenched due to the experience of [World War II](#).^[147]

The racketeering impulse has been with Western medicine for many years and is deeply embedded today. The rise of the Western medical paradigm coincided with the rise of the corporation and new kinds of empires. The reason that American medical doctors are the highest-paid professionals on earth is not because they perform valuable work. They are technicians in what is arguably the West's greatest racket, where the power of life and death is in the hands of the world's most lucrative professions and industries. The fact that only violent methods of cancer treatment are legal is no accident. Here are two quotes from *Medical Dark Ages*.

"The thing that bugs me is that people think the FDA is protecting them. It isn't. What the FDA is doing and what the public thinks it's doing are as different as night and day." **Dr. Herbert Ley, Commissioner of the FDA**. (*San Francisco Chronicle*, 1-2-70).

(In response to above quote) "What *is* the FDA doing? As will be shown by the material that follows, the FDA is "doing" three things:

"First, it is providing a means whereby key individuals on its payroll are able to obtain both power and wealth through granting special favors to certain politically influential groups that are subject to its regulation. This activity is similar to the 'protection racket' of organized crime: for a price, one can induce FDA administrators to provide 'protection' from the FDA itself.

"Secondly, as a result of this political favoritism, the FDA has become a primary factor in that formula whereby cartel-oriented companies in the food and drug industry are able to use the police powers of government to harass or destroy their free-market competitors.

"And thirdly, the FDA occasionally does some genuine public good with whatever energies it has left over after serving the vested political and commercial interest of its first two activities." - **G. Edward Griffin, *World Without Cancer***.

Ley was the commissioner of the FDA in the 1960s. That quote of Ley has some history and previously incorrect reporting, including in earlier versions of my work, and its tale is told at this footnote.^[148] The

FDA apparently acts as [Mr. Deputy](#), [Ms. Prosecutor](#) and [Ms. Deputy Attorney General](#) did in protecting the turf of its patrons.

The insurance companies are an integral part of the racket, keeping the money from the alternatives because they are "not approved." "Not approved" becomes a self-fulfilling Catch-22 by mainstream medicine, as they refuse to investigate alternatives, so therefore they are not approved. It goes even further, as laws are passed making it a criminal offense for a doctor to use an "unapproved" treatment.[\[149\]](#) It is an impressive use of circular logic to produce an insulated racket. Evidence for that bold charge will be presented in this essay.

The Cancer Racket Begins

This essay sketched the path the big three took in becoming about the only approved cancer treatments in America, although the data shows that cancer patients usually do not live longer by using their treatments. The evidence suggests that people can live much longer by doing nothing rather than allowing themselves to be treated by orthodox, attack-the-tumor methods. For instance, Hardin B. Jones, a professor at the University of California at Berkeley, studied 23 years worth of cancer mortality statistics. His research was simple: when was somebody diagnosed with cancer, how long did they live after diagnosis, and did they have mainstream cancer treatment? His study was done in the 1950s and was published in 1956. For treated patients, their life expectancy after diagnosis was three years, a number that is about the same today. For untreated patients, those who generally refused treatment, their life expectancy was 12.5 years.[\[150\]](#) For mainstream treatment, Jones found no evidence that early detection or "aggressive" treatment increased patients' life expectancies, and that the data that showed that we were "winning" the war on cancer was largely due to statistical games.[\[151\]](#) Researchers have collected those kinds of statistics only a few times since Jones' work, and their data always confirmed Jones' findings.[\[152\]](#) Ironically, as alternatives are attacked because they allegedly do not work, there is no evidence that the mainstream treatments work, if by "working" we mean increasing a patient's life expectancy. By the standards imposed on alternative cancer treatments, the mainstream treatments are worse than complete failures, causing immense suffering while they do not work, and "coincidentally" making huge sums of money for the cancer treatment industry.

The "improvement" in cancer statistics since the 1950s is largely a statistical chimera, gained by factors such as earlier detection of the cancer, giving other reasons for the patient's death, calling benign conditions cancerous, etc. One of the statistical sleights of hand played in the cancer game is nearly identical to the one they played with heart disease a generation ago. Blood pressure tables were age-adjusted, making hardening of the arteries appear to be a normal aging process. Although cancer rates sharply increased during the 20th century in America, if one "age adjusts" the data, the increase does not appear so large. Again, it *assumes* that cancer is a normal aging process. Although nearly a quarter of all Americans die of cancer, it is no "epidemic" in the mind of [Elizabeth Whelan](#).[\[153\]](#) Maybe in another generation, the geniuses who dreamed up age adjusting the cancer data will make the same admission the blood pressure age adjusters did: they did not know what they were talking about.

One of the potentially hilarious, if it were not so tragic, aspects of modern manipulation of the cancer game is the statement, "We got the cancer, but lost the patient." The evidence strongly points to cancer being a systemic disease, not one part of the body "turning traitor." Where the tumor first manifests is merely the result of the body's weakest part manifesting a tumor first. Attacking that part of the body to "kill the cancer" would therefore be insane, but that is how the paradigm operates.

As with most of Western medicine, attacking a tumor has nothing to do with curing the disease, but suppressing its symptoms. When oncologists talk about how successful their treatment is, it is nearly always in terms of how responsive the tumor is. Cancer patients hear the hopeful news that their type of tumor usually has a high response rate to the treatment proposed. Sure, the tumor responds. It is being attacked, but the attack is similar to America's attacks on [Iraq during the 1990s](#): most of the bombs miss the target, causing "collateral damage." When people undergoing chemotherapy lose their hair and have other maladies, that is "collateral damage." Their hair falls out because the chemotherapy kills all dividing cells, so it not only kills off tumor cells, it kills off hair follicles and tissue much more vital than hair.

See John Robbins' *Reclaiming Our Health* for an excellent summary of where American cancer treatment stands today. In [Ralph Moss](#)' *Questioning Chemotherapy*, he presents the results of more than 400 technical papers regarding the results of chemotherapy clinical trials. Time and time again, Moss demonstrates that the data itself shows no increase in the patients' life expectancies.^[154] They sure suffer a lot however, and big money rolls in by treating them. At its most optimistic, chemotherapy "works" for about 4% of all cancers, although 90% of mainstream cancer patients receive at least some chemotherapy.

Although Western medicine's history is not an inspiring one, and the rise of the AMA and the robber baron empires during the last half of the 19th century were ominous trends, Morris Fishbein is largely credited with turning cancer treatment into the racket it is today. Fishbein took over American medicine in 1924 when Simmons was forced to step down in the wake of the scandal over his divorce.

As with Simmons, Morris Fishbein graduated from Rush Medical School, even though he failed his anatomy course. He interned for only six months and never practiced medicine a day in his life. He refused to go through a two-year internship at an accredited hospital, which was the standard back then. Fishbein was seriously considering a career as a circus acrobat, and was working part-time as an extra at an opera company. Before he could leave medicine, Simmons recruited him to work at the AMA's offices in 1913.

The name "American Medical Association" said a lot about the organization. The very name "medical" was a smokescreen designed to hide the fact that the organization was formed to look after the interests of its doctors, but calling it "medical" gave it a benign, selfless feel. It was an [Orwellism](#) before there was Orwell. How many people would be fooled if the American Bar Association suddenly changed its name to the American Justice Association? Would people then believe the organization was not primarily concerned with the welfare of its lawyers, but was about selflessly seeking justice in America?^[155] Yet, the AMA is portrayed as an association of selfless healers, although its members make more money than lawyers. Of course, the AMA cultivates that image, just as the [mainstream media](#) characterizes itself as "free." American lawyers and doctors are about earth's two highest-paid professional groups. It is no coincidence. One capitalizes on conflict and misery, while the other capitalizes on illness and misery.

As I was graduating from high school in the 1970s, doctors' incomes were skyrocketing, and becoming a doctor was the ultimate goal for many of the best students. During the mid-1970s it was nearly impossible to get into medical school. Only about ten percent of the applicants were accepted. Something quite interesting happened by the mid-1980s: applications for medical school had declined drastically. I read a business analyst's opinion during those days. He stated that the kind of the people who tried getting into medical school in the 1970s were going into investment banking and other "hot" professions in the 1980s. The implication was obvious. The big money was easier to make as a corporate raider and other 1980s glamour professions than as a doctor.

The grand gentleman of alternative cancer treatment, [Ralph Moss](#), wrote,

"Over the past twenty years I have heard many stories of how people are treated by their oncologists. Some of these are truly heartening and there are clearly many caring individuals out there. More often, however, I have been shocked by some of the profession's lack of empathy and sensitivity in both language and behavior... In my own experience at Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center, the way I heard doctors speaking to and about their patients added to my growing disillusionment with the war on cancer. For instance, I routinely heard some doctors refer to their advanced patients as 'waste-basket cases.' I heard the widely used drug BCNU jokingly referred to as 'Be seen' you,' and 5-FU as 'Five Feet Under.'

"At Grand Rounds early one morning, a prominent doctor displayed a *Playboy* centerfold and said, 'Some of our patients look like this.' He then displayed the picture of a seriously overweight woman, her breasts hanging down to her waist. 'Others,' he said, 'look like this.' Another celebrated surgeon who I interviewed for *Center News* had a lamp in the shape of a woman's breast on his office desk. I was so astonished I could hardly get out a single question. Have doctors changed? In 1994, the *New York Times* described a

top clinical researcher as "self-confidence with a manner that is often perceived as arrogant and abrasive."[\[156\]](#)

History demonstrates that outlawing abortion and/or birth control has always been part of the war against women. The Third Reich and Ceausescu's Romania outlawed abortion. The AMA's anti-abortion campaign that began in the 1850s is easily seen in a similar light. High abortion rates usually accompany low contraception rates. The practice of abortion reflects an ignorant or repressed population, but banning it is even more repressive, compounding the problem, not ameliorating it. Similar to the [war on drugs](#), crime, and the renewed [war on terror](#), abortion is not a cause of the problem, but a symptom, and criminalizing it is always the path of disaster, a lesson that America never seems to learn, but is doomed to repeat over and over.

Texas oilman Harry Hoxsey made a deathbed pledge to his father to distribute a family remedy discovered by one of their horses, a remedy that cured cancer. It is an herbal remedy. The Hoxsey method treated tens of thousands of American patients during the 1920s and 1930s.

Hoxsey looked like the classic "quack." He was a fast-talking Texas oilman. He never claimed, however, that he developed his remedy. He was merely passing on a family tradition and making it available to humanity. He opened his first clinic in early 1924, with immediate and spectacular results. An impressed doctor arranged to have Hoxsey treat a Chicago policeman who had terminal cancer and was given only a few weeks to live. Hoxsey's treatment was used only to determine if it was toxic. The doctor who arranged the trial was not expecting the policeman to improve, as he had already been subjected to surgery and radiation, and his condition was rapidly deteriorating. The doctors were using the policeman as a human guinea pig, but Hoxsey felt that his treatment could cure the man.

See the attached image for the progress of the policeman's condition with Hoxsey's treatment.



Click on image to enlarge

When the policeman astoundingly recovered, Morris Fishbein, through his agents, offered to buy the rights to Hoxsey's treatment. The sticking point in negotiations related to the deathbed pledge that Hoxsey made to his father: people would get the treatment regardless of their ability to pay. Hoxsey made that a non-negotiable issue, and he treated countless patients for free over the years. The response of Fishbein and his pals was that they would charge whatever they wanted for the cure, once they bought it. That ended negotiations, and thus began a vendetta against Hoxsey, led by Fishbein and the AMA, that lasted for a generation. Fishbein, who never practiced a day of medicine in his life, led a "war on quacks." Eventually the Hoxsey clinics were run out of America, and today the only one operates in Mexico, run by one of Hoxsey's nurses until she recently died. Kenny Ausubel produced a documentary on Hoxsey's story in 1987, and a superb book in 2000 of the same title: *When Healing Becomes a Crime*.

Immediately upon assuming the AMA's helm in 1924 (although his official position was merely JAMA's editor), Fishbein began cancer treatment racketeering. Hoxsey's was only one in a long line of harmless, effective and cheap cancer treatments that Fishbein helped wipe out.

My mystical mentors have informed me that light will be one of the remedies of the future. Subjecting the body to varying frequencies and intensities of light can eliminate disease and keep a body well. When one begins studying the [human aura](#), the idea becomes a natural one. Dinshah Ghadiali was a gifted scientist who rubbed shoulders with Edison and Tesla, and came to America from India in the 1890s, believing the "land of the free" propaganda and Horatio Alger tales. In the 1920s, Ghadiali developed and used with great success what he called "Spectro-Chrome Therapy" (SCT). It was simply subjecting people to light waves. In certain respects, it was little different from Royal Rife's therapy (presented in this essay soon). As soon as he came into power, Fishbein attacked Ghadiali and SCT in the January 24, 1924 JAMA. Fishbein led the attacks that saw Ghadiali put on trial eight times, and he eventually spent eighteen months in prison.[\[157\]](#) In a pattern that will become familiar, a 1945 fire of mysterious origin destroyed Ghadiali's main research building

just before an important trial. At that trial, with the fire eliminating most of the evidence that he could defend himself with, part of the judgment was to *burn his books*.

Royal Rife and Morris Fishbein

While Fishbein was wiping out cancer cures that he could not monopolize, a San Diego biologist was developing a microscope that today stands as one of biology's greatest breakthroughs. [Royal Rife](#) originally attempted to find an electromagnetic means to cure disease. The direction of Rife's work can be considered male-based medicine, to a degree. Rife sought a way to kill the bad guys while sparing the good guys. Although Rife may not have attained the ideal solution, he still stands among science's giants.

Rife was trying to cure tuberculosis by electromagnetically killing the organism responsible for it. He needed a microscope that could view the tuberculosis organism, but such a device did not exist, so Rife conceived and built his own. He began building his first one in 1917, and completed it in 1920. For the next five years, Rife prepared and viewed about 20,000 tissue specimens, but his microscope was not powerful enough. Rife completed a second microscope in 1929, and in 1933 a third microscope was built, named the Universal Microscope. It was an impressive contraption, containing about 5000 parts. Below is a photograph of it, from [Barry Lynes](#)' definitive account of Rife's discoveries, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, on page 162.



Click on image to enlarge

Modern optical theory cannot explain how Rife's microscope worked. The 1929 microscope attained a resolution of 17,000 diameters, far greater than the 2000 diameter limit that optical microscopes have. His 1933 Universal Microscope attained a resolution of 31,000 diameters. In September 1998, I heard [Tom Bearden](#) talk about Rife's microscope. Bearden speculated that Rife may have been generating gravitons (a mythical subatomic particle) to gain that high resolution. Rife's Universal Microscope was by far the world's most powerful microscope. It attained new vistas of microbiology. Rife had such incredible personal focus that he was able to sit at his microscope for days at a time, barely moving. Many years later, one of his colleagues would say,

"I've seen Roy sit at that doggone seat (his Universal Microscope) without moving, watching the changes in the frequency, watching when the time would come when the virus in the slide would be destroyed. Twenty-four hours was nothing for him. Forty-eight hours. He had done it many times. Sit there without moving. He wouldn't touch anything except the little water. His nerves were just like cold steel. He never moved. His hands never quivered.

"Of course he would train beforehand and go through a very careful workout afterward to build himself up again. But that is what I would call one of the most magnificent sights of human control and endurance I'd ever seen.

"...I'll always remember Roy as my ideal. [after expressing his awe of Rife's mind – Ed.]... He had so many wrinkles [ways to make money with his discoveries – Ed.] that he could have cashed in and made millions out of it if he wanted to, and I mean millions of dollars. Which would have benefited the human race, irrespective

of this tremendous thing that he built which we call the Rife ray machine.

"...In my estimation Roy was one of the most gentle, genteel, self-effacing moral men I ever met. Not once in all the years I was going over there to the lab, and that was approximately 30 years, did I ever hear him say one word out of place.

"All the doctors used to beat a path to Rife's lab door and that was a beautiful lab at one time."[\[158\]](#)

Because there was nothing else like it, doctors and scientists beat a path to Rife's door. Peering deeper into the microbiological milieu than anyone had ever done before, Rife clearly saw the pleomorphism that Béchamp had documented. Rife was able to stain his specimens with light, not the crude staining procedures of the day, which killed what was observed. Rife was able to see his specimens *in vivo* and *in vitro*. In watching life processes under unprecedented magnification, Rife accomplished a feat that has still not been reproduced by modern orthodox science.

In 1931, Arthur Kendall was challenging the dogmatic assertions of Thomas Rivers, the father of virology, and Kendall heard of Rife's microscope. Rife and Kendall had a historic meeting in San Diego. With Rife's microscope, they observed a typhoid culture that Kendall produced, which he called his "K Medium." The typhoid bacillus was theoretically filtered out of the K Medium, but they could see the typhoid bacillus in its smaller, previously invisible stage.[\[159\]](#) It should have been a momentous event in medical history. The *Los Angeles Times* first broke the story in November 1931, under the heading "The World's Most Powerful Microscope." Rife was making demonstrations of his microscope to hundreds of scientists. His laboratory became a scientific Mecca, but it was a threat to the medical racket that was steamrolling along.

In 1932, Kendall was invited to deliver a paper to the Association of American Physicians. There he presented his epochal observations. In a crass demonstration of raw power, Rivers tried having Kendall's talk canceled. When that proved impossible, Rivers ascended the podium after Kendall presented his results. Rivers and Hans Zinsser of Harvard proceeded to tear Kendall limb-from-limb professionally, concluding that since they could not reproduce Kendall's results, he was lying to the audience. Just as Pasteur's apparent plagiarism prevailed partly because his imperial patronage and public image cowed other scientists, nearly all the doctors in attendance were cowed by Rivers' and Zinsser's performance. Rivers had the Rockefeller Institute, a highly powerful and rich institute during the depths of the Great Depression, behind him. Naturally, Rivers and Zinsser could not reproduce Kendall's results if they did not have the world's most powerful microscope at their disposal, but the herd of physicians and scientists was easily dissuaded from taking such a novel direction in microbiological research.

Rife took his cue from Kendall, using the K Medium in his further work. Kendall obtained a Rife microscope and used it in his Chicago laboratory. In 1932, Rife had a fortuitous "accident." He had been experimenting with the field produced by an argon-filled electrified tube. It seemingly altered the culture he was observing, and through that serendipity, Rife isolated what he dubbed the "BX cancer virus." Rife performed hundreds of experiments, and described a four stage life-cycle of the virus:

1. BX (carcinoma)
2. BY (sarcoma - larger than BX)
3. Monococcoid form of the monocytes of the blood of over 90 percent of cancer patients. When properly stained, this form can readily be seen with a standard research microscope
4. Crytomyces pleomorphia fungi - identical morphologically to that of the orchid and of the mushroom.[\[160\]](#)

Besides isolating the cancer virus (something never before seen) Rife had also proven the pleomorphic theory of microbiology that was first elucidated by Béchamp. In 1932, Rife was using his frequency device to destroy the typhus bacteria, the poliovirus, the herpes virus, the cancer virus and others using experimental animals. Human treatment was not far off.

Rife fortunately had a powerful ally in Milbank Johnson, an influential doctor in Los Angeles circles, and a

member of the Pasadena Hospital's board. Johnson began laying the political groundwork for Rife's cure to be used on humans. In 1934, Rife began using his frequency device on humans, and Johnson began the University of Southern California Medical Research Committee, a committee that Johnson ran until his death in 1944.

The Rife frequency treatment worked on cancer from the beginning. Fourteen of his first sixteen cancer patients were cured using his device within three months. The patients all had "terminal" cancer that orthodox medicine had given up on.[\[161\]](#) The device was simple. It created an electromagnetic field that Rife calibrated to the resonant frequency of the cancer virus. Once every three days, a patient was subject to the field for a few minutes. The patients felt nothing, and no tissue was damaged. All signs of cancer quickly left those patients. The device could also be calibrated for other diseases such as syphilis, and several diseases could be cured at the same time.

In 1935, Johnson's clinic was going full steam, clinical results were carefully documented, and Rife was perfecting a production model frequency device. Rife was also making a microscope that could be produced for under \$1000, and would give a magnification of "only" 10,000 to 15,000 diameters. That was still several times what conventional optical microscopes could give, and was high enough to see the pleomorphic forms that Rife had discovered and described.

In 1936, Rife met with the International Cancer Research Foundation, in hopes of getting their support for his methods. In an illustrative instance of bureaucratic stupidity, the research foundation took the arrogant position that they did not need guidance from Rife to replicate his results. Sailing blindly, they failed. Meanwhile, Dr. E.L. Walker at the Hooper foundation in San Francisco isolated one of the BX virus forms, using one of Rife's microscopes.[\[162\]](#)

Rife began having trouble with his eyes, and his doctor restricted his time spent at the microscope. Those events transpired during the depths of the Great Depression, and money was scarce. Rife had help refining his frequency device from an electrical engineer named Philip Hoyland. A company was formed to build and sell the frequency generators. It was called Beam Ray, and Hoyland, Rife, James Couche (a doctor who had been using the frequency device to treat patients for years), Ben Cullen (a long-time friend of Rife's) and a promoter named Hutcheson were the company's owners. The company made 14 frequency devices, and they were used with phenomenal success. Cancer, cataracts and other diseases simply melted away with the device, properly calibrated to the disease forms.

One doctor, Richard Hamer, was running forty cases a day through his San Diego clinic, and the results were miraculous.[\[163\]](#) One of Hamer's patients was an elderly man from Chicago, in his eighties. He had skin cancer on his face and neck. His face looked like hamburger. He had already lost the lower half of one eyelid, the lower lobe of one ear, and it was eradicating other facial features. After six months of treatment at Hamer's clinic, the man only had a small black spot on the side of his head, and that was about to fall off. The man returned to Chicago with skin as smooth as a baby's bottom.[\[164\]](#) Milbank Johnson was trying to gather enough clinical evidence to prove beyond any doubt that Rife's treatment worked, and they were trying to keep their patients quiet about their treatment.

The old man returned to Chicago, but could not remain quiet about his miraculous cure. He came to the attention of Fishbein. Fishbein was a household word in those days, so famous that his name was used in a Marx Brothers movie and his face graced the cover of *Time*.

Fishbein heard of the man's miracle cure, and invited him to his office. The AMA's headquarters were in Chicago, and still are today. The old man was reticent about his cure, but Fishbein wine and dined him, and eventually pried the information out of him that Dr. Hamer in San Diego had cured him.[\[165\]](#) Those events with the old man and Fishbein happened in 1938-1939. Through his agents in Los Angeles, Fishbein approached Beam Ray and tried buying into the company, and their offer was rebuffed. Hoyland was the weak link that Fishbein went after. After Beam Ray rejected the AMA's offer, the AMA bankrolled a lawsuit by Hoyland to try seizing the company. The lawsuit led to a trial. The brutal realities of [America's legal system](#) were too much for Rife's constitution. The trial destroyed Rife and stopped Beam Ray in its tracks. The lawsuit would be considered a frivolous one today, and Hoyland would have never waged it if not goaded and bankrolled by

the AMA.

Rife was subpoenaed in 1939, and the AMA attorney tore into him on the witness stand in a way that Rife had never experienced. Rife had never been in a courtroom before, and [I can sympathize](#) with what he lived through. Rife's doctor suggested that he take a drink to calm his nerves, and Rife's alcoholism began. If Fishbein and his pals could not own the Rife device, they would destroy it.[\[166\]](#) They hunted down all the doctors using the device. Everybody was threatened with losing their license if they kept using the Rife frequency device. Hamer quickly gave up his device.

Milbank Johnson was not intimidated. Johnson had demonstrated his motivation years earlier. He was a doctor who had seen the suffering of countless patients, and he had dedicated his life to discovering a cure for cancer. While Fishbein and his buddies tried wiping out the Rife frequency device and discrediting Rife's research, Johnson continued to amass data, getting authorities (even international) involved, and led the effort to get Rife's device the recognition it deserved. Apparently on the brink of making a very public announcement about Rife's device, Johnson suddenly took ill in 1944 and died. His death remains mysterious. In the late 1950s and early 1960s, two federal inspectors examined Johnson's hospital records and concluded that he was likely poisoned.[\[167\]](#)

During the same period when Johnson suddenly died, a new technician in Rife's lab stole one of the quartz prisms from Rife's microscope, rendering it inoperable. Just before that theft, Dr. Raymond Sidel published a description of Rife's microscope in the *Smithsonian*, where Sidel ran the censorship gauntlet that the AMA had dropped on Rife's work. In the *Smithsonian*, Sidel described how the cancer virus "may be observed to succumb when exposed to certain lethal frequencies." That public exposure made somebody irate, for soon after the article was published, Sidel became aware that somebody was following his car and a bullet crashed through his windshield. Dr. Couche defied the AMA and continued using Rife's frequency device until the 1950s, when they revoked his license.[\[168\]](#) The judge in Hoyland's lawsuit was accusatory of Hoyland when rendering the verdict, telling Hoyland that he thought he was crooked, and he ruled in favor of Beam Ray. The judge even told Beam Ray that he would be happy to represent them in a lawsuit against the AMA, but the trial had bankrupted Beam Ray. Ben Cullen even lost his house in the ordeal.[\[169\]](#) Rife was a ruined man who never recovered from the 1939 trial.

Just prior to the AMA-funded attack on Rife, the other quality "electronic medicine research lab" in America mysteriously burned to the ground in New Jersey, while that lab's owners were visiting Rife's lab in California, for another "coincidence."[\[170\]](#)

With Rife, the spiritual perspective once again comes into play. While Pasteur and orthodox medical researchers performed horrific experiments on animals and even humans, Rife also performed animal experiments, but his animals were not sacrificed. He would induce cancer and other diseases to his animals, then cure them. He performed exacting operations on them. His experimental subjects were his pets, and they died of old age, not from his experiments.

[From my experiences with Dennis Lee](#), I discovered that few people can weather even a "fair" trial, being smeared in the media, and bearing the brunt of other establishment attacks. [Sammelweis'](#) fate is not unusual or perplexing. Rife was never the same man after Fishbein waged the 1939 trial, yet he never completely gave up.

In 1950, John Crane became aware of Rife's story and approached him, proposing to collaborate with him in producing his frequency device again. For the next decade, Crane devoted his life to doing just that. After a decade of research, corresponding with the medical authorities and hiring experts to further develop the Rife frequency device, Crane made some major breakthroughs, making the device far more effective than it was in the 1930s.

In 1960, Crane was making and selling the device, along with a detailed technical manual on how to use it, and was attempting to get it patented. The medical authorities raided Crane's facility in California and seized everything: machines, engineering data, research records and reports, pictures off the walls, etc. They did not even have a search warrant. Then the railroad treatment began, with the [kangaroo court tactics](#) I know so well: none of the seized material was made available to Crane so he could defend himself; no testimony of

the other doctors and researchers working with the technology around the country was allowed into evidence, much of it impeccable in its methods and findings; the jury foreman was an AMA doctor, and the rest of the jury was carefully stacked. The only medical authority allowed to testify was an "expert" from the AMA who had never actually seen the device working. Crane was convicted and sentenced to ten years in prison, and Rife fled to Mexico. Crane was not the only Rife follower to go to prison. Another of Rife's assistants was imprisoned.

Crane got out of prison in a little over three years. An insanely dedicated man, he went right back at it, trying to get the frequency machine out there. In October 1965, he submitted an application to the California Board of Public Health, trying to get official sanction for the frequency device, as he tried doing before they threw him into prison. The authorities threw up the "there's not enough evidence" roadblock, one of their favorite tactics, while they were busily hunting down and wiping out doctors who used the device.

Rife died in 1971, and his Universal Microscope eventually ended up in Crane's home, being cannibalized for spare parts for a radio! In the mid-1970s, Christopher Bird began researching the Rife saga, and began the search for his microscope. The results were published in *New Age Journal* in March 1976, under the title "What has Become of the Rife Microscope?" In 1978, Wilhelm Reich's daughter told Bird that there was another Rife, who was working in Canada, and Bird found Gaston Naessens. Naessens' story is coming soon enough, but this essay will first cover the rest of Fishbein's illustrious career.

Shaking down the food and drug companies was only part of the racket. Wiping out cancer cures was another. Fishbein also helped cover up health disasters, such as an outbreak of amoebic dysentery at the World's Fair held in Chicago in 1933. His complicity in the hush job caused many people to contract the disease.^[171] Fishbein regularly approved drugs with his Seal of Approval program that later proved deadly or ruinous to health.^[172] Most deadly, however, was his *promotion of tobacco*.

Native Americans used tobacco for medicine and ceremonies, but they were not addicted to it. The Spaniards first brought tobacco to the Old World. When the [English began colonizing North America](#) they sought gold, [just as the Spanish did](#). When gold proved scarce in North America, another economic gold mine had to justify the New World's invasion. For the English it became tobacco and furs. [Jamestown](#) would not have survived if not for tobacco revenues, which kept the colony afloat. [Walter Raleigh](#) had big plans for tobacco and his Roanoke colony, but failed. By 1638, three million pounds of tobacco a year were making their way to Europe from the Chesapeake. By 1672, it had grown to 17 million pounds a year. Europeans were becoming addicted.

Although the science of epidemiology did not exist in those days, it did not take a rocket scientist to realize that regularly inhaling smoke into one's lungs was unhealthy. Smokers had the most atrocious coughs and often died of respiratory diseases. Here are some *Medical Dark Ages* quotes to bring some perspective to what people suspected about smoke in the lungs all those years ago.

"Smoke... makes a kitchen also oftentimes in the inward parts of men, soiling and infecting them, with an unctuous and oily kinde of Soote as hath been found in some great Tobacco takers, that after their death were opened." - **James I, A Counter-Blaste to Tobacco, p. 32; 1604 AD.**

"The Hellish and dismal cloud of...Coal...perpetually imminent over (London) ...that her inhabitants breathe nothing but impure and thick mist...corrupting the lungs and disordering the entire habit of their bodies; so the Catarrhs, ...Cough, and Consumption, range more in this one City, than in the whole Earth besides." - **John Evelyn, 1661 AD.**

Although "science" did not begin making a "persuasive" connection between smoking and disease until the 20th century, many people could easily see the connection between smoking and ill health. The cigarette was

an industrial idea applied to tobacco consumption, and the tobacco company propaganda was clever.

In the 1929 Easter Parade in New York City, marching in the parade was a group of attractive young women, smoking cigarettes. It was seen at the time as a great victory for women's freedom. It was later discovered that those marching, smoking debutantes were fashion models hired by [Edward Bernays](#) at the behest of the American Tobacco Company. Bernays is considered the "father of public relations," a professional descendant of Ivy Lee. He was a nephew of Sigmund Freud, and Joseph Goebbels used Bernays' *Crystallizing Public Opinion* in his campaign against the Jews. The tobacco companies were cynically manipulating American women into thinking that smoking was a badge of freedom.^[173] Bernays was a non-smoker who lived to be 103, who also designed the [propaganda campaign to fluoridate America's water supplies](#).

Although Hitler's propaganda minister took pages from the tobacco guru's book in his campaign against the Jews, the Third Reich itself was not keen on cigarettes. Germany, the world's center of scientific medical research, began its own war on cancer in the 1920s, as it had one of the world's highest cancer rates. German doctors were documenting the health hazards of tobacco during World War I, and before that, many German researchers suspected that cancer did not involve local disturbances, but was a systemic condition and was based on numerous factors, such as diet, stress, genetics and other factors. Those researchers proposed largely dietetic solutions that were low in fat, sugar and protein, and high in fruit and fiber.^[174] During the 1920s, German researchers were documenting the link between smoking and cancer. In 1939, Franz Lickint published *Tobacco and the Organism*, which Robert Proctor called "arguably the most comprehensive scholarly indictment of tobacco ever published."^[175]

Hitler's goal was turning Germany (and Eastern Europe, once the "subhumans" were removed) into a land of Aryan supermen. The Third Reich investigated cigarettes, tobacco consumption and health, finding them to be bad news indeed. Hitler said that tobacco was the red man's vengeance from the grave upon the white man. Hitler became the centerpiece of a German propaganda campaign against smoking. Hitler was also against drinking and eating meat, but it appears to be partly a PR stunt to project an ascetic image. Hitler apparently liked beer and meat once in awhile, although he correctly considered live food to be humankind's natural diet. Hitler took gleeful satisfaction in the fact that he did not smoke, but Churchill, Roosevelt and Stalin did. Hitler and Nazi Germany was a strange combination of the enlightened and the insane, but when it came to improving the health of the chosen race, German researchers were far ahead their Western rivals.

While the Third Reich was trying to discourage tobacco consumption in Germany, because it was harmful to health, the United States was actively promoting the same substance for its populace. George Seldes, considered by many to be the father of investigative journalism, was writing back in the 1930s about the American press covering up the dangers of cigarette smoking, while taking big money from the tobacco companies for cigarette ads.^[176]

Fishbein applied Simmons' "Seal of Approval" racket to food for a generation. Fishbein also began an active campaign of *promoting cigarettes* in the 1930s. From the 1930s to the 1950s, the pages of *JAMA* were filled with cigarette ads, and they were making medical claims. What follows are some of the witty slogans that graced cigarette ads in those days. "Not a cough in a carload" (for Old Gold). "Not one single case of throat irritation due to smoking Camels." "More doctors smoke Camels than any other cigarette." "Just what the doctor ordered" (slogan of L&M cigarettes). Philip Morris said its cigarettes were "recognized by eminent medical authorities." "For Digestion's Sake, Smoke Camels" because the magical Camel cigarettes would "stimulate the flow of digestive fluids." Another was "Chesterfield Is Best for You." Former smoker turned smoking reformer, Senator Maurine Neuberger (D-Oregon) said, "The American smoker during the '30s and '40s could have been forgiven for confusing his favorite brand of cigarettes with the latest wonder drug."^[177]

Not only was Fishbein raking in money from cigarette ads, he was advising cigarette companies on how to structure their "research" so they could make ever-grander medical claims. In 1935, Philip Morris began a new ad campaign, *JAMA* being the most prominent place for its ads, touting a new additive that made its cigarettes superior to the competition's. The additive was diethylene glycol. Philip Morris stated that its research showed its additive was superior to the rest of the industry, which used glycerine as its

moistener. Ethylene glycol is what goes into car radiators today as antifreeze. Diethylene glycol is its cousin.

What Americans did not know about diethylene glycol was that Fishbein was working behind the scenes with Philip Morris, helping design their research. After looking at the original data that Philip Morris produced, Fishbein told them how to create "good data" that they could promote. They took his advice and hired Michael Mulinos, a pharmacologist at the Columbia University College of Physicians and Surgeons, to perform a study on diethylene glycol. Mulinos' study appeared in the *New York State Journal of Medicine* in June 1935. Mulinos reported that rabbits that smoked Philip Morris cigarettes with diethylene glycol had three times less swelling of their eyes than those who smoked the brands using glycerine. That study became the cornerstone of Philip Morris' promotional campaign. Philip Morris' chief chemist and nine of his assistants canvassed the nation, speaking at major medical conferences, hyping the research results and targeting doctors in particular. Their ads offered free cigarettes to doctors, and Philip Morris even sent representatives to doctors' offices to give them free cigarettes while hyping diethylene glycol.^[178]

The Philip Morris campaign was a major success, making Philip Morris the America's leading cigarette seller. Those experimental results were used in Philip Morris' ad campaigns clear into the 1950s. Philip Morris was so grateful to Fishbein that they offered him a retainer for his continued good advice. Fishbein uncharacteristically declined their offer, probably because it might show favoritism to the other tobacco companies. Fishbein was raking it in from the ad money anyway.^[179]

As fate would have it, diethylene glycol made headlines in 1937 when a drug company put diethylene glycol, without first testing it, in the first antibacterial medicine ever sold in America, sulfanilamide. Within weeks of introduction, sulfanilamide began killing people across America, including children. About 100 people died. The AMA even helped prove that diethylene glycol was the culprit. Fishbein had a problem on his hands, and he acted characteristically. He ran an editorial in the midst of the tragedy, noting that diethylene glycol was used safely in many American products, including cigarettes. Helped by Fishbein's damage management, Philip Morris was able to continue promoting its diethylene glycol for another generation.

In 1949, Fishbein was finally overthrown as the dictator of American medicine, largely due to the legal victories that [Harry Hoxsey](#) was winning. As with his mentor Simmons, Fishbein was thrown out when his public image suffered. Even President Truman's brother testified on Hoxsey's behalf, as Hoxsey's treatment cured his skin cancer. Truman's brother talked to the sitting president about saving Hoxsey from the AMA's vendetta, but the President said his hands were tied because of the political-economic realities of the medical establishment.^[180] Truman would call the AMA, "just another mean trust." Fishbein soon went to work for the cigarette manufacturer Lorillard at a retainer of \$25,000 a year. That was big money in those days, the equivalent of about \$160,000 a year today.

Probably not coincidentally, in 1950 (the year after Fishbein was deposed at the AMA), for the first time *JAMA* published research results about the harmfulness of tobacco. Medical student Ernst Wynder and surgeon Evarts Graham of Washington University in St. Louis found that 96.5% of lung cancer patients in their hospitals had been smokers.^[181] American science and medicine finally produced research results that confirmed the obvious. Nearly 400 years ago, King James I toured England, holding up the blackened lungs extracted from dead smokers, blasting the effects of smoking. The Nazis quickly found out how deadly smoking was. George Seldes was excoriating the American press in the 1930s for covering up the ill effects of smoking. *Reader's Digest* began a heroic campaign in 1941 against smoking, a campaign that continues to the present day. It took *JAMA* until 1950 to produce their first word on the hazards of smoking, and that did not even slow the ad campaigns for cigarettes in *JAMA*.

Fishbein was working hard for his new employers, helping to design more research that Lorillard could promote. Fishbein helped mastermind the last advertising blitz for cigarettes that graced *JAMA*. The hullabaloo centered on Lorillard's Micronite filter, a "breakthrough" in cigarette technology. It was the first "mineral" filter. During the cigarette advertising wars that raged on *JAMA*'s pages, the AMA Advertising Committee directed their chemical laboratory to study the effectiveness of cigarette filters. None of the filters worked very well, and actually worked against the desired effect of cigarettes in the first place: filling the lungs with smoke. There was a marginal improvement with the Micronite filter, the only mineral filter tested. Lorillard was attempting to reproduce the resounding success that Philip Morris had with its

diethylene glycol blitz of the 1930s. In 1952, Lorillard began running ads in *JAMA* with headlines announcing, "Have you Heard the Story of New Kent Cigarettes, Doctor?" And "Doctor, Have You Tried the New KENT Cigarette?" In their ad campaign Lorillard proudly announced, "At the recent convention of the American Medical Association, thousands of physicians heard the Kent story, and saw a convincing demonstration of the MICRONITE FILTER'S phenomenal effectiveness."[\[182\]](#)

Physicians began complaining to the AMA about those shameless displays, especially when increasing evidence was submitted from the American scientific community about the harmfulness of cigarettes. *Reader's Digest* was in the midst of a tremendous anti-tobacco campaign at the same time that Lorillard's Fishbein-inspired ad blitz was taking America by storm. *Reader's Digest* was running articles with titles such as "Cancer by the Carton," and cigarette smoking began declining in the early 1950s, as America began waking up. [Reader's Digest](#) took one of the most heroic stands that any American media organization ever took, as its competitors had their pages filled with cigarette ads.

It finally came to a head in 1953. It was not due to an episode of conscience overcoming the AMA. The drug companies, which had long been the financial backbone of the AMA, began complaining. They thought that cigarette ads running alongside their drug ads in *JAMA* were discrediting them, because cigarettes were likened to miracle drugs. Faced with that economic reality, *JAMA* announced that it would no longer accept cigarette ads beginning January 1, 1954. It was a decision that cost *JAMA* \$100,000 a year in cigarette ad revenues, but that did not stop Lorillard's ad campaign. In 1954, Lorillard ran ads in *Time*, *Life* and other popular magazines, citing the AMA experiments that "proved" how superior Kent's Micronite filter was to other cigarette brands' filters. In 1954, a war broke out in between the AMA and Lorillard. *JAMA* editorials blasted Lorillard for using its name without permission, while Lorillard countered with ads that told its readers that while the AMA did not endorse any particular brand of cigarette over another, their research still showed that Lorillard's Kent filter was the best of the bunch.[\[183\]](#)

In one of many ironic twists to the Lorillard story, guess what the magical ingredient was in the Micronite filter? Asbestos! Asbestos had already been linked by researchers to a number of respiratory diseases, including lung cancer. Truth can be stranger than fiction. In Fishbein's autobiography, published in 1969, he lauded the Micronite filter, and wrote how it spurred all the cigarette companies to put filters on their cigarettes, but that:

"Within two years, however, the talk about the relationship of cigarette smoking to cancer began to assume the proportions of a great propaganda. Now many years have passed, the campaign is intensified, and one begins to wonder how long it will be before some definitive answers are found for the questions that make people anxious and doctors despondent."[\[184\]](#)

On the same page that Fishbein displayed his stalwart allegiance to the tobacco companies (without mentioning the hefty sums he also earned from them), he stated that he campaigned for [fluoridation](#) at the same time. There was Fishbein, campaigning for fluoride and asbestos, and calling the effort against smoking a "great propaganda."

Even after the Lorillard affair, the AMA and the tobacco interests stayed in bed together for nearly another forty years. Immediately after the U.S. Surgeon General issued a report in January 1964, which was damning of smoking and cigarettes, the AMA spent \$500,000 of its own money, and the tobacco companies kicked in another \$10 million, to fund a "study" to counteract the Surgeon General's report. The AMA issued a brochure in May 1964 titled: *Smoking: Facts you Should Know*. The brochure downplayed the hazards of smoking, stating that smoking's greatest health hazard was smoking in bed and burning the house down. The brochure tamely suggested that some research pointed to some health problems, although "some equally competent physicians and research personnel are less sure of the effect of cigarette smoking and health." The brochure concluded with "Smoke if you feel you should, but be moderate." The tobacco companies were so pleased with the AMA's stance on smoking that they kicked in another \$8 million for

further AMA "research."[\[185\]](#)

It was not until a 1980s investigation revealed that two AMA board members owned a farm where tobacco was raised, and that the AMA's retirement fund was invested in tobacco stocks, that the AMA finally began speaking out against cigarette smoking. In the 1980s, some young, idealistic doctors in the AMA's ranks began making noise. Even then, the AMA has rarely been at the battle's forefront. Until the 1980s, if people walked into the AMA's headquarters they could find cigarette vending machines in the bathrooms and lobbies.[\[186\]](#)

Fishbein was the face of modern medicine in those days, a household name, writing his health column in hundreds of American newspapers and the editor of two AMA publications, including *JAMA* (the other publication that Fishbein edited was named *Hygeia*, of all things). Eustace Mullins, the author of *Murder by Injection*, is derided as a conspiracy theorist. Conservative and highly respected writers such as Ralph Moss prefer the "structural analysis" view of the racket. The conspiracy theorists are nearly always tagged as delusional and paranoid nut cases.

Consider Morris Fishbein. Here is a theory that few are willing to ponder, because few will admit that anybody could be so diabolical, especially somebody who runs the medical establishment. The "[spiritual perspective](#)" section of this web site gives a glimpse into what may have motivated Fishbein. Here is an unpleasant thought to consider: Fishbein was actively promoting the single greatest cause of cancer while simultaneously wiping out the cancer cures that worked, cures that were harmless, and Fishbein knew *exactly* what he was doing. His cigarette promotion was creating a market (patients) for a racket where the cash registers rang resoundingly, and anything that could cheaply cure the disease was ruthlessly wiped out.

I have never seen anybody make that argument for Fishbein before. If we accept that some people are actively committed to evil, and it probably has to be admitted if one believes in free will, then this argument about Fishbein is not easily dismissed. Maybe he was merely greedy and blind, with low intelligence. Although Fishbein has been compared to Hitler a number of times, I will be gentler and call him the Al Capone of modern medicine, whose racketeering efforts greatly contributed, wittingly or unwittingly, to the suffering and deaths of many millions of people around the world in the 20th century. He gets my vote for medical gangster of the 20th century. However, in significant ways, the medical racket is worse today than it was in Fishbein's time.

The "War on Quacks"

[Hoxsey](#), [Rife](#) and [Ghadiali](#) were far from the only cancer treatment pioneers wiped out by Fishbein and his boys. Fishbein led a war on "quackery" during the 1940s, and eventually the AMA's "quack" files included 300,000 names. Parallels to the 1950s communist black lists are not coincidental.

Dr. William Koch developed glyoxylide in the 1940s and found himself in Fishbein's gunsight. [This link](#) presents some pertinent *Medical Dark Ages* quotes about Koch. Koch apparently experienced numerous attempts on his life. Doctors who supported his treatment were physically attacked and some died violently or mysteriously. Koch died in disgrace, his treatment abandoned. Today, modern medical orthodox research has borrowed from his work, without giving him any credit or mention. Koch's fate was part of Fishbein's self-proclaimed "war on quacks," an AMA dynamic going clear back to the [AMA's founder](#). It was really a war on the competition, Al Capone-style.

Another 1940s snuff job was on Max Gerson, another genius who came to the land of the free, trying to make the world a better place. More *Medical Dark Ages* quotes lay out a [brief version of Gerson's tale](#). Gerson also survived murder attempts, his clinic was also run out of the country, where like Hoxsey's clinic it now resides in Mexico. Gerson's daughter Charlotte Gerson runs the clinic, and Norman Fritz helps out.[\[187\]](#)

Another casualty of the Fishbein era was Howard Beard. More *Medical Dark Ages* quotes give a [brief overview](#)

of [Beard's fate](#). In Beard's case, it was the relatively gentle methods of repeatedly burning down his laboratory and throwing him into prison.

Over and over, the pattern repeats itself. Sometimes it is an attempted buyout. When that is rejected, the attacks come. Gunshots, poisoning, hit and run "accidents," kangaroo courts, prison, media smears, mysterious fires, the litany goes on and on. It is frighteningly similar to [Dennis' story](#). The Fishbein era was probably the most notorious, but the same tactics have been repeated in different combinations to the present day. There are dozens of instances of alternative cancer cures being wiped out in America during the 20th century.

Fishbein was not a lone crusader against "quacks." In 1913, the same year as his men were machine-gunning striking workers, John D. Rockefeller founded the organization that would reincarnate as the American Cancer Society (ACS). The ACS was also part of the "war on quacks." When Fishbein had to admit in court, during his battles against Hoxsey, that he never practiced medicine, failed anatomy (and Fishbein's lawyer even admitted that Hoxsey's treatment worked), his star fell quickly, and he went to work promoting cigarettes and fluoride. After Fishbein was deposed, the "war on quacks" did not abate.

In the 1950s, the cancer treatment known as Krebiozen was championed by one of America's most respected doctors, Andrew C. Ivy. Ivy held many high positions in the medical profession during his career, including a board member of the American Cancer Society, a dozen international awards, a dozen honorary degrees, high-ranking university positions, etc. Krebiozen and Ivy were wiped out in the early 1950s, after Fishbein was forced down at the AMA. Ivy's career was ruined because of his support of Krebiozen and Dr. Durovic. The attacks on Hoxsey and Ivy became the focus of a congressional investigation in 1953. The [Fitzgerald Report](#) found that more than a dozen promising cancer treatments were wiped out by organized medicine. Under oath, Dr. Durovic told a familiar story. Durovic alleged that J.J. Moore, the AMA's treasurer at the time, asked him to give distribution rights to Krebiozen to two businessmen who were friends of his. When he was rebuffed, Moore threatened to use his power at the AMA and the university to destroy Durovic, Ivy and Krebiozen, which subsequently happened.^[188] *Medical Dark Ages* provides pertinent quotes about [Ivy and Krebiozen](#).

The attacks that Hoxsey, Rife and Durovic endured have little documentation to support the conscious and conspiratorial nature of what happened. The kinds of offers that Fishbein, his friends and Moore made to Hoxsey, Durovic and Beam Ray would not initially be in writing. Gangsters and government officials have long known the game of not leaving a paper trail for those kinds of offers. It is part of the plausible denial strategy, not letting the right hand know what the left hand was doing. When [Dennis was given the billion-dollar offer to go away](#) and leave the energy racket intact, the offer was not in writing, and those giving the payoff would not beseech the courts for recourse. They would simply resort to murder. All that can be pointed to are the testimonies of their victims. When one sees the same pattern repeated over and over, of poisonings, shootings, buyout offers, public and legal attacks, mysterious fires and the like, how can it be all dismissed as "coincidence" or "delusion," especially when the motive is so clear?

Eustace Mullins is a scholar of the political right. Scholars of the right often [propose conspiracy theories to explain events](#). One major problem is that by their very nature, conspiracies do not leave much of a paper trail.

Generally, the right's scholarship can seem uneducated and paranoid when compared to the left's scholarship. On the cancer issue, Mullins' *Murder by Injection* comes from the right's perspective, and Ralph Moss' *The Cancer Industry* comes from the left. Mullins' book is not worthless, or even wrong in its assertions. It is a valuable piece of work, but it has no footnotes or index. Although many of his assertions are backed up by plenty of documentation and are hard to dispute, he does not always present them with the factualness of a scholar. His work is decidedly informal, as if he knows he is not addressing a sophisticated audience. On the other hand, Moss' *The Cancer Industry* is an awe-inspiring piece of scholarship.

Mullins writes about the "Rockefeller Syndicate." There may in fact be a "Rockefeller Syndicate." The Rockefeller name has popped up so many times during the research that went into making this site, that if they were at the heart of the global conspiratorial octopus (or one of its biggest arms) it would not be surprising.

I *would* be surprised if the Rockefeller interests were *not* somehow involved with [the offer that Dennis received](#), especially as it was delivered in *Chicago*. Mullins is decidedly conspiratorial in his outlook, further reinforced if other work of his are read, such as [The Secrets of the Federal Reserve](#). Compare Mullins' writings with Moss'. In the politics of the right and left, the conspiracy theory versus structural analysis dynamic is easily seen. In wrapping up his research into the "Cancer Industry" Moss wrote,

"Distant circles of power have formed which, while differing among themselves on many issues, are sufficiently cohesive and interlocking to form a 'cancer establishment.' This establishment effectively controls the shape and direction of cancer prevention, diagnosis, and therapy in the United States...Within the cancer field it appears that the major decisions are made at the top of four or five organizations. If a doctor or scientist exercises real decision-making power, it is as a result of his or her inclusion in one of these groups, rather than through professional expertise per se."

"Doctors who still believe that they are free to give whatever treatment they consider best for a willing patient are, in fact, toying with "quackery," as it is defined by these leading bodies."[\[189\]](#)

In one respect, the perspectives of Moss and Mullins are not far apart. Moss views it as more of an institutional phenomenon, but a select few people are making the decisions that direct the entire industry. Mullins says virtually the same thing, but he sees another layer of control behind those people, such as the "Rockefeller Syndicate." Moss sees the issue as more institutional, where the people at the top, making the decisions, may not realize the full implications of their actions, guided by merely protecting their industry's turf, and not really thinking through the full impact of their selfish actions. Mullins thinks that the actions at some level are quite conscious, and engaged in by a few diabolical people.

One "[skeptic](#)" who might leap to Fishbein's defense is Martin Gardner, the granddaddy of the modern skeptical movement. He outranks even [James Randi](#). In 1952, he published *Fads and Fallacies in the Name of Science*. The book's cover states that it is "a study in human gullibility," and it is still in print. Chapter 16 of *Fads and Fallacies* is titled "Medical Cults." Gardner calls homeopathy and naturopathic medicine "world-wide medical cult(s)."[\[190\]](#) Gardner also calls osteopathy a cult. He finishes the chapter by calling chiropractic "the greatest of American medical follies." In Chapter 17, titled "Medical Quacks," Gardner tells the story of Dinshah Ghadiali, from a point of view decidedly less sympathetic than the article I read. Gardner also tells the story of Koch, telling his readers, "There is not the slightest doubt about the complete worthlessness of the 'Koch treatment'." In the appendix of *Fads and Fallacies*, Gardner gives a brief review of the fates of Hoxsey, Ivy and Krebiozen. Gardner candidly admits that the primary source for most of his chapter on medical cults was Morris Fishbein's *Fads and Quackery in Healing*.[\[191\]](#) When *Fads and Fallacies* was published, Fishbein was spearheading the asbestos cigarette filter "research" scheme for Lorillard, while being paid the equivalent of \$160,000 per year for his efforts. I would be careful about how I threw around the word quack (Fishbein even looked kind of like a duck).

In the same book where Gardner shows his great respect for Fishbein, he also writes a very unflattering account about Hoxsey, obviously influenced by Fishbein's version of events. By the time *Fads and Fallacies* was written, Hoxsey had already won a libel suit against Fishbein, which ruined Fishbein's AMA career. One will not see that little fact appear in Gardner's work, even although the award was one dollar.

Gardner ends *Fads and Fallacies* with a paean to the scientific establishment. His message is that establishment scientists almost unerringly reject the "preposterous" and are alone in telling us which scientific unorthodoxies may have merit and which do not. He ends his book with "By all means let the Don Quixotes of science be heard. But let them be heard in a manner befitting their position on the spectrum of unorthodoxy, and let that position be determined by those who alone are qualified to do so."[\[192\]](#) In medicine, Gardner appears to mean that Morris Fishbein was "alone" in being qualified to determine who is a quack and who is not.

Fishbein was far from alone in abusing his power from the medical racket throne. [Steve Milloy](#) is about the closest thing to his professional descendant today, as far as his relationship to the tobacco companies goes. One of Fishbein's direct professional descendants is Dr. George Lundberg, who was *JAMA*'s editor until he was fired in January of 1999, when right in the middle of the Bill Clinton-Monica Lewinsky scandal, Lundberg published a survey of college students that questioned whether having oral sex was really having sex. That was not exactly a pressing medical issue (related to making a medical determination on whether Bill Clinton really smoked pot, if he did not inhale). That was the last straw, and Lundberg was fired, after about seventeen years as the *JAMA* editor.

The AMA leapt into the [JFK assassination fray](#), acting as the establishment bulwark that they are.^[193] In 1992, Lundberg called a press conference where he gave his own "case closed" speech on the medical evidence, again supporting the "lone nut" contentions. In his speech, accompanied by articles in *JAMA* by *JAMA* staff writer Dennis Breo, Lundberg went further than his lone nut announcement. He slandered Charles Crenshaw, one of the doctors who attended Kennedy in Dallas. Lundberg called Crenshaw's book, *JFK: Conspiracy of Silence* a "sad fabrication." One of Breo's articles stated that Crenshaw was probably not even in the same room with JFK in Dallas, and none of the other doctors remembered seeing him, and Breo wrote that Crenshaw is not mentioned in the *Warren Report*. There was a sad fabrication. Crenshaw is mentioned several times in the *Warren Report*, by staff in the emergency room who worked with Crenshaw on JFK. Confirming that Crenshaw is in the *Warren Report* is one of the easiest things to do. I looked it up in the *Warren Report* in about a minute. For Breo to make the statement that Crenshaw was not even in the same room with JFK in Dallas is the kind of mistake that a *National Enquirer* cub reporter would probably avoid making. Breo had no defense. He published libelous statements while attacking Crenshaw.

That Breo and Lundberg made such statements about Crenshaw was bad enough. What made their actions worse was not letting Crenshaw respond to set the record straight. They failed to apologize for writing something about him that was grievously false, something that anybody with the *Warren Report* in their hands could see was not true. All Crenshaw originally wanted was a retraction printed in the same journal where the lie was published. His request was denied.

Goaded by the AMA's impudent stance, Crenshaw took them to court for libel, and won. The settlement of more than \$200,000 to Crenshaw caused *JAMA* to lose its liability insurance. *JAMA* was forced to publish Crenshaw's rebuttal, more than three years after they first libeled him. Even then, they censored and truncated his rebuttal, and buried it in the obituary section in fine print. Then they launched another smear attack on Crenshaw.^[194]

Regarding medical pioneers, Ralph Moss echoed [William James](#) when he wrote,

"More often than not, attempts are made to deprive the pioneer of all credit. For example, hundreds of articles have been written about the role of free-radical scavengers in cancer; few have acknowledged their debt to disgraced pioneer William Koch and his Glyoxylide. Dactinomycin was marketed as an orthodox anticancer drug without any recognition of the fact that it comes from the same ray fungus as was used in the production of Krebiozen. Emanuel Revici was exploring the relationship of a nontoxic form of selenium to cancer as early as 1955, yet this fact is never mentioned in current articles on that mineral. The discussion of vitamin A and cancer is totally devoid of any recognition of the pioneering work of Max Gerson, a pattern of neglect Albert Schweitzer already discerned in 1959." "In 1976 the author was in a private conversation with a high official of Sloan-Kettering Institute, during which the man closed the door and asked, 'Do you want to know where we get all our new ideas?' This leading scientist proceeded to take down from his shelf a copy of the American Cancer Society's *Unproven Methods in Cancer Management*. 'This is our Bible,' he said simply and eloquently."^[195]

The American Cancer Society's *Unproven Methods in Cancer Management* is the cancer industry's black list. People who are listed in that book can pretty much consider their career finished. The people on that list go

to prison, get shot at, have their licenses revoked, that sort of thing. The ACS is an integral part of the racket.

Ralph Moss is the most conservative writer on alternative cancer methods working today. He has a doctorate in biochemistry, and was a science writer for the Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center. He was originally a big believer in chemotherapy and the war on cancer. He gradually became disillusioned, and when Sloan-Kettering essentially lied about their research results with Laetrile, Moss called a press conference in 1977 to publicize the positive Laetrile results by one of the world's most respected cancer researchers, Kanematsu Sugiura, who did his research at Sloan-Kettering. Although silenced by his employers, Sugiura never backed down from his findings. Sloan-Kettering fired Moss the next day.^[196] Although Moss has written extensively about Sloan-Kettering in his subsequent work, I have never seen or heard of Moss uttering a bitter word about Sloan-Kettering.

In chapter six of *The Cancer Industry*, Moss dismembered the ACS' Unproven Methods blacklist, and he did it like the gentleman he is. As with the best critiques of such things, Moss lets the ACS hang themselves with their own rope. The ACS used to call their Unproven Methods Committee the "Committee on Quackery." Their descriptions of those practitioners of those "unproven methods" include, "ignorant, uneducated, misguided persons, to highly educated scientists who are out of their area of competence supporting a particular form of treatment. A few hold Ph.D. or M.D. degrees."^[197] Then Moss analyzed the credentials of those on the Unproven Methods list, and found that 77% of them have either M.D.s, often from major medical schools, or scientific doctorates. Moss dryly summarizes the ACS position on the credentials of those on the black list, "Recall, however, that the ACS primer on unproven methods states that 'a few' hold M.D. or Ph.D. degrees; a few in this case is 77%."^[198]

It does not get any better for the ACS and its list. The *Unproven Methods* list calls to mind the Inquisition's Index. The list is one of the most concrete indicators of the racket's existence. In one *Unproven Methods* list, of sixty-three methods on the list, 44% of them were *not investigated at all* by any independent agency before making the list. In 11% of the cases, the investigative results were *positive*.^[199] In only *one* case that I am aware of, was an Unproven Method subject to a medical double-blind study, which is the only way, according to the medical establishment's own rules, that it could be proven or disproven (something that the orthodox treatments have never really been subject to).^[200] In that case, with [laetrile](#), the [trial was arguably rigged](#).

Here is the classic Catch-22. If they never test an Unproven Method, there is no chance that the treatment could ever be proven, according to their standards. Then states pass laws outlawing the use of an Unproven Method, and about ten states have criminal laws where the doctor can go to jail for even recommending it to a patient. That is why I call it a racket. It is designed so that there never can be any competition to cut-burn-poison methods of cancer "treatment." It is a totally insulated racket, engaging in circular logic to wipe out the threat of an actual cure appearing on the scene, and the United States is [called a free nation](#).

Perhaps the greatest irony is that the actual data shows that orthodox methods not only do not work, but they hasten the deaths of the patients, causing agonizing pain and suffering, while making huge amounts of money for the racket. Radiation, surgery and chemotherapy are spectacular failures, "proven" only in fantasy, while methods that are vastly more effective, and also cheap and harmless, are banned for being "unproven." The great fear of the people running the racket is the appearance of an actual cure, because then the game would be over.

Investigating "unproven" cancer treatments quickly yields "quacks" such as double Nobel Laureate Linus Pauling promoting "moonshine" such as Vitamin C. Here are some quotes from Nobel Laureates about the cancer industry in America.

"Everybody should know that the 'war on cancer' is largely a fraud, and that the NCI and the ACS are derelict in their duties to the American people who support them." - **Linus Pauling 1954 Nobel Prize in Chemistry for "his research into the nature of the chemical bond and its application to the elucidation of the**

structure of complex substances," and 1962 Nobel Peace Prize.

"(The National Cancer Program is) a bunch of (obscenity)."

"The American public is being sold a very nasty bill of goods about cancer." - **James Watson, co-discoverer of the DNA double helix, and 1962 Nobel Laureate in Medicine for that discovery and related work.**

"The American Cancer Society tried to ruin my research foundation." - **Albert Szent-Gyorgyi, discoverer of vitamins C and P, 1937 Nobel Prize , " for his discoveries in connection with the biological combustion process, with special reference to Vitamin C and the catalysis of fumaric acid."**

"The American Cancer Society has done the American public a really great disservice." - **Dr. David Baltimore, 1975 Nobel Laureate in Medicine for, "their discoveries concerning the interaction between tumor viruses and the genetic material of the cell."**

"...The truly fraudulent claims must be discarded. But novel methods of therapy should not be rejected because they are novel, or because they run counter to some generally accepted belief, or because we do not understand the mechanism of the proposed treatment, or because it has come from an unconventional source." - **Linus Pauling**

"...cancer...there is no disease whose prime cause is better known...In the meantime, millions of men must die unnecessarily." - **Otto Warburg, Nobel Laureate in Medicine in 1931 "for his discovery of the nature and mode of action of the respiratory enzyme."**

"But how long prevention will be avoided depends on how long the prophets of unbelief will succeed in obstructing the application of scientific knowledge in the cancer field. In the meantime, millions must die of cancer unnecessarily." **Otto Warburg.**

"...It would be possible to make much more progress than has been made if the NCI (National Cancer Institute) knew its job better, knew how to make discoveries...The NCI really does not know how to make discoveries...So long as the NCI is not willing to follow up ideas that seem good to people who have had experience making discoveries, the work of the NCI is going to be pedestrian." - **Linus Pauling.**

"...What kills science in this country now, (is) that you must tell in advance what you will find, and what you will do exactly, and what you will spend your money on. And if you knew it all, then you wouldn't need to do it. ... And so you cannot have (any) new discoveries. - **Albert Szent-Gyorgyi.**

Béchamp's Professional Descendants

Many scientists continued Béchamp's line of investigation during the 20th century, either directly, finding their path independently, or taking a parallel route. They include [Rife](#), [Kendall](#), Guenther Enderlein (his work followed directly from Béchamp's, and he called his tiny bodies "endobionts"), Ernst Almquist, Edward Rosenow, Roger Wyburn-Mason, Lida Mattman, Wilhelm Reich and Gaston Naessens. They usually endured similar slings and arrows to what Béchamp experienced, and some experienced far worse.

Wilhelm Reich saw organisms through his microscope that he called "bions." Reich had an extraordinary life and career. A pupil and colleague of Freud, Reich blazed paths of scientific inquiry that orthodoxy still has not explored. Reich was a Jew and Communist who left Germany after Hitler came to power, and lived in Norway before coming to his final refuge: America. Reich was the first experimenter (and is still about the only one) who made the subjective feelings of his subjects an integral part of his experiments. He experimented with the electrical charge of one's skin and the feelings of pleasure. He theorized that the building and releasing of electrical charge accompanied sexual behavior, and his experimental evidence supported it. He investigated the connection between consciousness and the human body, something largely taboo even today in science, and his research into sexuality may never get a fair hearing in our Puritanical culture.

Reich's bions were similar if not identical to Béchamp's microzymas. In his defense, Reich said that he saw bions when others could not, because good microscopists had to learn to "resonate" with the specimen. Reich's work on sexuality and electricity led him to his bion research, which in turn led him to investigating something that he called "orgone" energy. He performed numerous experiments with the energy, and built orgone accumulators that defied present notions of physics, where the temperature inside the accumulator was greater than outside it. Reich even had the interest of Albert Einstein for awhile, before Einstein came up with untested explanations for the temperature increase and lost interest (World War II was raging at the time, so Einstein can be perhaps somewhat forgiven for that unscientific attitude). When Reich had advanced cancer patients sit in his accumulators, they lived much longer than those who did not. Numerous people and animals that sat in orgone accumulators experienced remarkable healing episodes.

Reich's work has influenced fields as diverse as psychology and physical therapy. Near where I lived in Ventura worked a chiropractor that called himself a "Neo-Reichian." He could induce an out-of-body experience by simply pressing on certain parts of one's spine and body. I know people who he did that to, who were in the medical field and knew that he did something quite beyond what orthodox medical science had acknowledged was possible.

Nazi Germany cheerfully burned Reich's books, *The Mass Psychology of Fascism* among them. During the early 1950s and the McCarthy witch hunt years, while the medical establishment was forcing [fluoridation](#) onto the American population and concurrently covering up its harmful effects (including [brain damage](#)), while the pages of the *Journal of the American Medical Association* were filled with cigarette ads making medical claims, and while it was relentlessly wiping out doctors and scientists who had developed cancer cures that did not involve surgery, chemotherapy or radiation, the Food and Drug Administration (FDA) targeted Reich. While Reich never claimed that his orgone accumulators cured cancer, the FDA misrepresented his work and performed badly flawed (if not *intentionally* flawed) "reproductions" of his research.

The story of Reich is similar to that of many other pioneers. The genius of Reich was accompanied by personal idiosyncrasies and character "flaws" that everybody can lay claim to. The nature of his research led him far beyond the prevailing paradigm, and his work was generations ahead of its time. He lived with the frustration of having nobody whom he could fully collaborate with, because nobody could truly comprehend the full scope of his work. Orthodoxy quickly dismissed his work as of no consequence, and the highly charged nature of his work (sexuality, emotional health, cancer, etc.) resulted in a career that suffered attacks from all quarters. [Genius](#) and insanity have a lot in common. In addition, men such as Reich are susceptible to paranoia, especially considering the circumstances he lived through. Reich became somewhat mentally unbalanced and strident during the FDA's inquisition. Few have the emotional resources to survive being the object of that kind of vendetta without receiving deep psychic scars. Usually, those who endure such treatment receive emotional and mental wounds that cripple them.

The FDA investigators, for their part, acted like Dominican inquisitors, openly admitting that they made up their minds before they ever "investigated" Reich's work. The fruits of genius are often [incomprehensible to minds mired in orthodox paradigms](#), and it was no different with the FDA and Reich. The FDA was more interested in stopping Reich than in stopping people from pursuing his work, yet it accomplished both. As with most people, Reich was naïve about how the U.S. legal system really worked, and he provided essentially no legal defense against the FDA, even refusing to appear in court to defend himself, saying that he was a researcher and the FDA had no jurisdiction in the area of pure science.

Reich did make extra-legal defenses of his work. He made an "orgone gun" called a "cloudbuster," which could apparently affect the weather. During the FDA's attack, Reich announced that he would create an unexpected storm around his laboratory in Maine, and an unexpected one appeared. His demonstrations and wide-ranging body of work were no help, and he was arrested and put on trial in 1956. As is standard with those kinds of court activities, whether there was merit in Reich's work was specifically *not* the issue, and the judge even had a prosecution witness' testimony stricken from the record when he admitted that his use of the orgone accumulator had ameliorated his medical condition.

Reich was predictably found guilty of violating the FDA's injunction. Then came the tactics of the Catholic Inquisition and Nazi Germany. Reich (who was nearly sixty years old at the time) was ordered to prison for two years, he was forced to destroy his accumulators, and his *books were burned*. The FDA would not do the dirty work themselves. Reich was ordered to destroy his own work. The FDA would merely supervise. That was similar to the Catholic Church's stance when they would not burn their heretics themselves, but "relax" them to the secular authorities for their execution. Reich's organization was even forced to pay for the expenses of destroying its work. One of Reich's followers, who was a member of the book-burning event, which burned six *tons* of literature, wrote,

"All the expenses and labor had to be provided by the (Orgone Institute) Press. A huge truck with three to help was hired. I felt like people who, when they are to be executed, are made to dig their own graves first and are then shot and thrown in. We carried box after box of the literature."[\[201\]](#)

Reich's twelve-year-old son had to take an ax to his father's accumulators, under the FDA's watchful eyes. Technically, the books to be burned were only those dealing with orgone energy, but not being too particular, the FDA also burned his earlier works such as *The Mass Psychology of Fascism*; one of the books that the Nazis burned with glee. As Reich watched his books burn in the FDA bonfire, he commented to the FDA agent standing next to him that his books had been burned in Nazi Germany, but he never dreamed that he would see his work burned again.[\[202\]](#) To this day, neither the American mainstream media nor the history books give much notice to one of the most outrageous acts of inquisitorial behavior in American history. George Orwell wrote in his *Notes on Nationalism*, "The nationalist does not disapprove of atrocities committed by his own side, but he has a remarkable capacity for not even hearing about them."

In another show of bureaucratic vindictiveness, the FDA issued a report, full of distortions of the record, which tried to influence the prison officials into denying Reich parole and to treat him harshly in prison. Reich died in prison a year later, and his work has ever since been legally forbidden by the FDA and ignored by orthodoxy. An entire body of research, which could lead to brand new ways of looking at the universe and life, has been marginalized, burned and buried. Those who pursue Reich's work do so at their peril. New psychological therapies have incorporated Reich's work since his death, generally without acknowledging his contribution, which is another standard fate of the pioneers. The FDA has even bragged that wiping out Reich's work was one of its greatest achievements.

The work of Béchamp, McClintock and other pioneers was limited by the resolution of their microscopes. Science has developed electron microscopes that get resolutions measured in millions of diameters, yet they cannot research life *processes*, because an electron microscope kills what it looks at. There are other microscopes today, such as ultraviolet microscopes and near field microscopes, that slightly increase

the resolution by reducing the wavelength of light, getting slightly more than that 2000-2500 diameter limit.

Eighty years ago, when Hume was writing about Béchamp and Pasteur, optical microscopes were all that existed. Electron microscopes did not appear until after World War II. The resolution limit of optical microscopes had a significant bearing in coining a new biological term: virus. The size of viruses versus bacteria became a major point of distinction between them. Only one "virus" could be seen with an optical microscope: the smallpox virus. The others were too small to see. Dr. Thomas Rivers of the Rockefeller Institute was influential in establishing the science of virology as a subdiscipline of microbiology in the 1920s. It appears that the distinction between bacteria and viruses may be a rather arbitrary one.

[203] Pleomorphic dynamics have finally been admitted to be of significance by mainstream science, but are still pushed toward the margins. When it is finally admitted how important it is - I predict it will be critical in overturning the current false foundation of Western medicine - it would be advisable to recall what [William James](#) said.

Fortunately, Fishbein and his pals could not entirely eradicate Rife's work. In the 1940s, a French biologist began pursuing an independent path that ended up in the same territory that Béchamp and Rife trod. [Gaston Naessens](#) was another gifted scientist who came upon the problems of the resolution limits of optical microscopes. After intensive work with lenses, Naessens realized that playing with the wavelength of light was the only avenue open to him in seeing life processes at higher resolutions. He experimented with magnetic fields, polarizing filters and ultraviolet light and developed a microscope that got up to a 30,000-diameter resolution, and could resolve objects as small as 150 angstroms, far less than the 4000-angstrom wavelength of visible light. As is the case with Rife's microscope, current optical theory cannot explain how it works, but again, one does not need optical theory to believe what one's eyes reveal. Newton's optical theories are due for an overhaul; just as Einstein and friends modified his celestial mechanics work.

As with [Rife](#), when Naessens began his microscopic explorations, viewing life processes that nobody else could see, he confirmed Béchamp's pleomorphic observations and theories. Unlike Rife, electron microscopes existed when Naessens developed his microscope, but electron microscopes cannot view life *processes*. Because electron microscopy subjects its specimens to a vacuum, electronic bombardment, and desiccation, it kills or seriously distorts any life process it might view. Thus, electron microscopes produce snapshots of dead matter, which is another variation on masculine research, terminating life in order to observe it. Because orthodox research does not use microscopes that can see it, the discoveries of Naessens are as ignored today as Béchamp's and Rife's were. It is obvious that what [Béchamp](#) discovered is available to today's technology, but technology is far from the only ingredient of successful research. It is similar to the forest and trees analogy. Microbiologists have been seeing the forms that Béchamp, Rife and Naessens have described for more than a hundred years, but when one is asked what they are, the responses are usually a variation of,

"Oh that, it is only a bacterium."

"It is an artifact of the staining process."

"It is merely intercellular debris" (platelets were seen exactly that way a century ago).

"That junk? Whatever it is, it can't be important."

As Ralph Moss notes in his *Cancer Chronicles*, the medical and microbiological textbooks are completely silent on the forms discovered by Naessens and others.[204] Once in awhile, I hear of an honest and open-minded reaction by orthodox microbiologists after glimpsing the world of the microzyma and bion. They stagger away from the microscope (usually dark field), dazzled and overwhelmed, seeing a world they never

knew existed, even though it had been under their noses for their entire careers. Most react with thinly veiled fear, with the paradigm they were indoctrinated into wobbling before their very eyes. The shaky laughter of denial can sometimes be heard.

Naessens delved into that dazzling world. Naessens coined his own term, naming those little guys somatids, meaning "little body" in Greek. While giving full credit to the pioneering work of Béchamp and his numerous professional descendants, Naessens seems to have taken the work further than anyone has yet done. After many years of research, work that began in the 1950s and even earlier, Naessens documented a sixteen-stage somatid-mutation cycle. As with Béchamp, Naessens concluded that the somatid was essential to life. Naessens believes that the somatid may be a precursor to DNA, and might be the elusive link between inanimate matter and life. Naessens discovered that in a healthy body the tiny somatid is found in its three primary forms. In a healthy body, the somatid-mutation cycle would be confined to its initial state and a single and double-spore stage.

When a body's biochemistry becomes unbalanced, through factors such as smoking, drinking, poor diet, stress and chemical poisoning, the somatids undergo thirteen more stages of their mutation cycle, which is a pathological process. Naessens found that the somatids would mutate into bacterial, yeast and other forms. Again, the pleomorphic observations of Béchamp were confirmed. Naessens dubbed his microscope a Somatoscope, after the little bodies it was able to see.

Here is a diagram of the somatid cycle that Naessens discovered, accompanied by some images from his Somatoscope.



Click on image to enlarge

Naessens discovered, just as Béchamp had, that somatids are virtually indestructible. He tried killing them with radiation, acids, even cutting them, breaking diamond micro-knives in the process before he was finally able to cut one. The notion of somatids surviving in limestone for millions of years does not seem farfetched in light of those derided pioneers' discoveries. In the 1940s, Naessens developed an anti-cancer substance that was successfully used in Europe. Later, in a horse-related experiment, Naessens developed an antibody serum he called *Anablast*. It became very successful, in fact, too successful. Medical gangsterism is not the exclusive province of the United States. Twice the French medical authorities dropped the hammer on Naessens, closing his laboratory, heavily fining him, and confiscating most of his equipment, but somehow sparing his microscope. When he was practically run out of France, he was invited to establish his laboratory on the island of Corsica, which, although part of France, is more like an occupied nation than a willing part of the French Empire.

Armed with his Somatoscope, Naessens soon developed more treatments for cancer and degenerative diseases, and word got out about the miracle cures coming from Corsica. Soon, desperate patients besieged Corsica, flying to Naessens' lab from across the world. When one begins flying high, it attracts the establishment's attention, and in the wake of people flocking to Naessens' lab from across the world the French medical authorities convened an inquisition. Naessens was run out of Europe and fled to Quebec in 1964.^[205]

Naessens lived under a hailstorm of bad publicity and retired from the medical field to become a handyman, fixing electronics devices and car engines. He kept a low profile for years, just trying to get by. In 1971, fortune smiled upon him. David Stewart, head of the prestigious McDonald-Stewart Foundation, which was devoted to cancer research, had witnessed the bottomless pit of orthodox cancer research (more than a trillion dollars by some estimates) that has to this day produced very little that can be said to truly help cancer patients. As with [Milbank Johnson](#), Stewart was extremely moved by the suffering of cancer patients, and would look anywhere that seemed promising for a cure, even if it meant going against the attack-the-tumor dogma.

Stewart became aware of Naessens the handyman, and discovered that he was *that* Naessens. He set up Naessens in his own lab in Montreal to continue pursuing his cancer research, but the outrage by the orthodox cancer crowd in Canada became so heated that Stewart decided to put Naessens' lab in the country, out of the limelight. Naessens moved to the small town of Rock Forest where his bride-to-be lived. The lab stands there to this day.

Naessens continued his research, and there he developed the treatment I would use if I got cancer. If one has the microscope that can see things that others cannot, then one will make discoveries that others cannot. One common denominator of those microscopic pioneers was that they were usually using *dark-field* microscopes. A dark field microscope works quite differently from the light field microscopes that most Americans are familiar with. A dark-field microscope creates different lighting conditions for the specimen, whereby the field of vision is dark, but the organisms are lit up, usually in outline. The above image demonstrates that difference. In that unusual lighting, the world of the somatid, bion and microzyma light up.

What follows is what Naessens discovered. The single and double-spore stages of somatid development appear to be healthy and even necessary stages for cellular life. That mutation dynamic appears to be required for cellular division to occur. When the body's biochemistry becomes unbalanced from factors such as poor diet, stress, chemical poisoning and the like (our industrialized world has created many new stresses on the human body that it was not designed to withstand), the next thirteen stages of the mutation dynamic are in evidence, where bacterial and yeast forms, among others, are seen. Naessens discovered that during the normal mutation cycle, a substance was secreted that initiated cellular division. Naessens called it a *trephone*, a name originally coined by Nobel Prize winner Alexis Carrel, who first discovered it.

In a healthy body, trephone production is normal and necessary for life. In an unhealthy body, those next thirteen mutation stages are accompanied by tremendous trephone production. When that occurs, two things happen to the cells. The first is that they undergo a fermentation process (remember [Béchamp](#)) whereby the cells lose their differentiation, undergoing a kind of reverse evolution where they become amoeba-like, and look like primitive, unicellular organisms. The second effect is that the cells begin dividing wildly, stimulated by the trephone production, or more properly, trephones produced because the trephone inhibitors (chemicals in the blood) have largely disappeared. That series of events leads to the production of cells that are called cancerous, i.e., typical cancer cells. They lose their differentiation and rapidly divide. They stop becoming team players in the body, stop doing anything useful, and instead hog nutrients as they wildly divide. In a sense, the cancer cells are helping to break down the body, similar to the way in which Béchamp's microzymas would break down the body after death. With cancer, however, the person is not quite dead yet.

Naessens discovered that all of us have that dynamic in our body every day, as [Béchamp also stated](#). In a healthy body, those are unusual conditions, probably due to localized trauma. When a pocket of cells acts that way, our immune system rides to the rescue and absorbs those errant cells. It happens in healthy bodies, but not that much, and our immune system easily takes care of such aberrations. In anybody who is chronically unhealthy, that dynamic is more widespread within his/her body.

After pondering those dynamics for years, I have an anthropomorphized way of describing what is happening. This may make it easier to understand. Every part of our bodies is a community of cells, working together in a marvelous and barely understood fashion that enables them to function. The inner workings of our best-run cities bear only the faintest resemblance to the miracle of cooperation that happens within our bodies every moment. The human body *is* a miracle. When those cells undergo those mutations due to poor body chemistry, the immune system is like a fire station, sending out the firemen to put out the fire.

What Naessens discovered was that in an unhealthy body, the sixteen-stage pathological-mutation dynamic gallops along. Trephones are created in great quantities, and cells are rapidly dividing, fermenting and losing their differentiation. The body's immune system then rides to the rescue, putting out the fires, absorbing those "bad" cells, treating them as if they were an infection. In most parts of the body, the fire station is well manned, with the best equipment, and the fire is just around the corner. Not all the body is so fireman-friendly. In the lung tissue of a smoker, for instance, the "streets" have already been damaged by daily ingestion of smoke, and what are clean, readily accessible city streets in the liver, for instance, in the lung are streets clogged with burned out cars, and buildings have collapsed into the streets. The fire there is as bad as anywhere else, or even worse, but the fire crews have to work extra hard to get there. The water mains may

have also been damaged on those burned-out streets, so when they turn on the hoses nothing comes out, and they have to rely on the water in their truck, if the truck could even make it down the street to the burning building.

I have to have a little fun in writing about the cancer racket, and this illustration is about all the fun I get, so please bear with me. In the "bad neighborhoods," the firefighters have a difficult job. Just when they put out one fire, another springs up a few blocks away. The immune-system firemen in damaged lung tissue, for instance, are much more beleaguered than firefighters elsewhere. Eventually the fires in the bad neighborhoods rage for days. Naessens found that a fire left to burn long enough takes on a new characteristic. Like Dr. Frankenstein's monster, lying on the table, it opens its eyes and becomes self-aware. Those errant cells, left alone to ferment and divide wildly for long enough, become a pocket of cells that redirects its biochemistry. Those cells are long past the stage of doing useful work for the body as lung cells, for instance, and begin pursuing their own agenda.

Naessens discovered that when a "critical mass" of errant cells was reached, those cells secreted a new substance. It is well known in orthodox cancer research that the nutritional needs of cancerous cells are markedly different from those of normal cells. Naessens noted that those pockets of cancerous cells became "nitrogen traps." Their altered biochemistry gave them an avid thirst for nitrogenous substances.

Naessens discovered that the new substance produced by the pocket of errant cells did two things. What it did was easy to understand, and seemed almost diabolical. The substance attacked the neighboring healthy cells, robbing them of nitrogenous compounds, and it paralyzed the immune system in the local vicinity. That seems natural and logical. The pocket of errant cells needs nitrogen, and robbing the neighboring cells is the only way to get it. Simultaneously putting the local firemen to sleep is logical, because attacking the neighboring cells should turn a local disturbance into a five-alarm fire, where the body's entire immune system would rush to the lungs and put out the fire that was threatening to destroy the entire city. In putting the local firefighters to sleep, the errant cells could feast on the spoils of intercellular plunder without interruption by annoying firefighters. The fire rages out of control, the cancerous pirates devastate the cellular neighborhoods of the lung, and the body now has full-blown cancer. The fire begins to spread throughout the body. The immune system is disabled wherever the fire spreads to next, and eventually the entire body becomes an inferno of cancer.[\[206\]](#)

Without a microscope that could observe the sub-cellular milieu of the somatid, and with a mind blindered by modern microbiological training, orthodox cancer researchers could not reach square one in blazing the path that Naessens' research discovered. As with Béchamp and Rife, Naessens left his contemporaries far, far behind.

Armed with the knowledge of how cancer really worked, Naessens invented a brilliant solution. He also discovered what the ancient doctors knew but "modern" medicine had completely forgotten. Ancient doctors saw diseases such as cancer as a problem in the body's fluids, or "humors." Modern medicine has rejected the "humors" philosophy, particularly regarding cancer research and treatment. The "modern" paradigm looks solely at the tumor, and devises strategies to get those bad guys. In looking at the humors again after centuries of neglect, Naessens and others have discovered that cancer is a systemic disease, directly related to the humors' state. Attacking the tumor is insanity when the systemic nature of cancer is understood.

Naessens discovered the reason why those pockets of pirate cells attacked their neighbors, and secreted the substance that robbed them of nitrogen compounds and paralyzed the immune system. He called that substance CKF, for Cocancerogenic K Factor. He then experimented with substances that were high in nitrogen content, and eventually decided on a derivative of camphor. The substance he developed and patented in Canada was composed of camphor, ammonium chloride, ammonium nitrate, sodium chloride, ethanol and water. He dubbed it 714X, after the initials in his name. Here is what he did with his 714X.

The lymphatic system circulates body fluids, as the bloodstream does, but the lymphatic system is largely ignored, since it only circulates "humors." Modern cancer research and treatment knows that the lymphatic system is how cancer metastasizes in the body, but they do not really treat the lymphatic system, at least not in the ingenious way that Naessens does. What Naessens did was take his 714X and inject it into a lymph node of a cancer patient. The lymph nodes in the groin have proven the easiest to inject, and the most effective for distribution throughout the body. The 714X then flushes into the lymphatic system and is carried throughout

the body. The cancer tumors have been secreting the CKF and attacking their neighbors to extract nitrogen, while simultaneously paralyzing the local immune system. When the 714X hit, those pirate cells would suddenly find themselves awash in nitrogenous booty beyond their wildest imaginings.

When a pirate suddenly gets wagonloads of plunder delivered onto his ship's deck, he is too busy counting up the booty to get too excited about plundering the next port. He quickly becomes complacent and may even settle down to a life of luxury, perhaps even becoming respectable, because that was his dream in the first place. Similarly, when those cancer colonies found themselves awash in 714X, they began feasting on the booty the lymphatic system so kindly delivered to their front door, and stopped attacking their neighboring cells. They stopped secreting the CKF. Then the firemen in the immune system gradually awakened. They heard about those fat pirates feasting down the street. Those pirates were oblivious to the fact that the firemen were awake. They were not very smart pirates. The immune system came back to life and easily mopped up the cancer cells so intent on their feast that they forgot they were unwelcome members of multicellular society. That was the end of the cancer. Again, please forgive these anthropomorphic excesses here, but it was fun to write. It might make the cancer dynamic easier to understand for some, as well as Naessens' brilliant solution.

Also, a little sympathy for the pirate is in order. The pirate originally was a happy member of multicellular society. It was only when society began letting the pirate down, with him going hungry periodically, that he began reverting to the primitive behaviors his ancestors engaged in, when it was every man for himself. He was going to survive, and if society could not provide the proper nourishment, he would take the matter into his own hands. Eventually, he would recruit others to his little band, and they would embark on their new careers as pirates. The breakdown of intercellular society (poor diet, smoking, etc.) was what led to their life of crime. Importantly, the dynamic that Naessens discovered for degenerative disease - when the cells were not properly nourished, they ceased becoming productive members of the body and looked out for their interests at the expense of the body – is also the most prominent dynamic yet proposed for [why civilizations collapse](#).

It can be breathtaking to consider how Naessens had flipped the entire cancer paradigm upside down: instead of attacking the tumor, Naessens was feeding it! When I read Bird's book on Naessens in 1990, I was primed to devour its revelations. I had not yet heard of Béchamp, and Naessens' 714X treatment was one of the first alternative cancer treatments I had ever heard of.

[Seth](#) discussed exactly what Béchamp, Rife, Naessens and others had discovered. Jane Roberts was a poet, and very probably had no earthly knowledge of the work of Béchamp or Rife when [Seth talked about virus mutations](#). There have been many scientific confirmations over the years of channeled material, and I leapt all over Naessens' pleomorphic somatid-mutational dynamic when I read it. Naessens' inversion of the prevailing paradigm was something I had seen Dennis and other [ingenious mentors](#) of mine do many times. When Seth talked about pleomorphism, the stories of Béchamp and Rife were deeply buried in obscurity. It was only when Christopher Bird, Barry Lynes and others began researching Rife's story that the pleomorphic tales of Béchamp and others were revived in Western thought. Their discoveries should have overturned the entire medical paradigm long ago, but there is a money machine hooked up to it, and it will not willingly turn itself off so people can have reasonable things such as cheap, harmless and effective cancer cures.

Of course, the medical establishment would not acknowledge that Naessens' miracle treatment actually worked. The medical establishment will not easily let an actual *cure* get into mass circulation. In 1989, Naessens was arrested, thrown into a filthy jail cell, and prosecuted for practicing medicine without a license and other "crimes." They were going for life imprisonment. That trial is the centerpiece of Bird's *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*. The railroad tactics used by Fishbein and friends were readily evident in Naessens' trial.

Naessens developed his 714X elixir, and it is not a drug. There are no known side effects of its use. It is so dilute that it is considered in the class of homeopathic remedies. 714X is essentially food for cancer cells, something completely harmless to the human body. Naessens began giving the 714X to cancer patients. He even showed them how to self-administer it. In a few hours, a person would be trained to give himself/herself the treatment. Naessens would then send them on their way with a bottle of 714X. With Naessens' treatment, as with all alternative treatments, patients will virtually never pursue alternative

treatments when they get cancer or other diseases. They always go the conventional route first. It is only when their doctors pronounce their death sentences that some decide they will not give up so easily, and they look into alternatives. It was no exception in Naessens' case. The people who came to him for 714X treatment were usually people that orthodox medicine had already given up on, their bodies usually already badly damaged by the orthodox therapies, not to mention the original disease. Charlatan that Naessens was, people often got 714X for free. By 1989, about 1000 people had used the 714X treatment. The 714X treatment completely cured 75% of those patients. Here is a 75% cure rate with a harmless treatment for cancers usually deemed terminal, and the people did not lose their hair, had no missing organs to show for their trouble, were out virtually no money, and had new leases on life.

There is much, much more to Naessens' research and story not yet told here. He discovered that the somatid mutation dynamic he chronicled for cancer was common for every degenerative disease he studied, including rheumatoid arthritis, multiple sclerosis and AIDS. Naessens found that the somatid cycle leading to the various diseases were simply different manifestations of the same underlying dynamic, and 714X works for them all. The nature of somatidian theory is so deep and startling that our very understanding of life itself will be radically altered if the medical racket does not succeed in snuffing out the revival of the lines of inquiry that Béchamp initiated so long ago.

One patient that testified at Naessens' trial was Roland Caty. Caty developed a form of prostate cancer that is almost invariably fatal. Caty was working in Africa, building a university. The orthodox treatment his doctors prescribed for him was removing all his genitalia, for starters. Caty was understandably not too keen on such a treatment, and refused to go through with it. His doctors told him he was "crazy," and that he would be dead in three months. Caty heard of Naessens' 714X treatment. He visited Naessens' lab, got a bottle of 714X, learned how to inject himself in a few hours, and went back to work in Africa, injecting himself with 714X. He quickly and completely recovered, something considered impossible in the halls of orthodoxy. Eleven years after he was cured, he testified at Naessens' trial.[\[207\]](#) Bizarrely, he was called to the stand by the prosecution, in order to show what a crime Naessens' treatment was.

Jacques Viens was only 39 years old when he developed stomach cancer. Nearly his entire stomach was surgically removed. It did not work, the cancer had infected his lymph nodes, and Viens went home to die. On his deathbed he heard of 714X treatment, and was secretly given it by a member of the medical establishment, whose name he refused to reveal, because of the repercussions that he knew would be visited on him/her. A few months later, Viens had recovered to the point where he went hunting. He returned to work, fully recovered.[\[208\]](#)

In 1981, Gary Diamond, who lived in California during the 1989 trial, was diagnosed with Hodgkin's Disease. His doctors recommended chemotherapy and radiation, to which Diamond submitted, and his condition gradually worsened. In 1983, while he was slowly dying of Hodgkin's Disease, which the treatments he was getting did nothing to arrest, he visited Naessens' lab in Quebec. He received about sixty days of 714X injections while he completed his orthodox chemotherapy. After the 714X injections, Diamond made a quick and complete recovery.[\[209\]](#)

At Naessens' trial, many of his patients showed up on their own initiative to tell their stories. One was Bernard Baril, a thirty-three year old Quebec-born restaurant and catering consultant. He contracted HIV while living in Paris. HIV is theoretically what causes AIDS, although many alternative practitioners will dispute that. Again, with the germ theory of disease being such a poorly understood distortion of Béchamp's work with the microzyma, as well as what the same work shows about degenerative disease, nobody should take for gospel *any* mainstream theories on disease or its treatment. After Baril was diagnosed with HIV, he came down with cancer tumors that filled his mouth, and a Kaposi's Sarcoma that attacked his palate. The doctors at the Montreal General Hospital excised the Kaposi's Sarcoma, and the biopsy was classified as type IV-D, which is termed "extremely advanced." The doctors told him that treatment was pointless, and Baril refused conventional treatment and waited to die. He was going to become one more AIDS statistic.

The tumor soon reappeared, and Baril's weight declined from 165 to 115 pounds. It got so bad that he was barely able to eat. On his deathbed he heard about Naessens through a friend, and began taking the 714X treatment. In a few weeks the tumor began shrinking, and within three months the lesions began disappearing. Barely holding back his tears at the press conference, Baril exclaimed, "Look at me! I

now weigh 170 pounds! I feel entirely fit! Don't I look in the pink of health?"[\[210\]](#) Dozens of AIDS patients had similar results with the 714X treatment by 1990.

Naessens' trial demonstrates that the Canadian medical racket is not as powerful and corrupt as it is in America. They tried turning it into kangaroo court, but there was too much public outcry. There were picketers at the trial, mainly cured patients. The trial became highly visible in Quebec.

In Quebec, Augustin Roy was its highest-ranking medical official, and he led the attack against Naessens. Bird aptly compared Roy to Fishbein, a "doctor" who had virtually never practiced medicine, but ruled the Quebec medical establishment with an iron fist. As patient after patient paraded to the witness stand, telling of their miraculous cures after mainstream doctors had given up on them, the prosecution's response was astonishing: none of those miracle cures were cures at all; they had all been misdiagnosed in the first place, and none of them had cancer to begin with! When Hoxsey was on trial, the prosecution made the same motion to dismiss the testimonies of an army of patients who were cured with his treatment, including President Truman's brother.

The prosecution was going for life in prison for Naessens. Just before the jury verdict was rendered, Quebec's most famous poet and songwriter, Gilles Vigneault, suddenly appeared at the trial after taking a red eye flight from France, where he had been on tour. He was coming to show his support for Naessens. In Quebec, it was as if Bruce Springsteen had showed up.

Naessens was acquitted, which made headlines in Quebec. Not a peep was heard in America when that happened. I found out about Naessens because I was mail-ordering mystical material from Canada, and read of the trial and book. For years, I mail ordered the book from Canada. In 1991, a mystical book company began publishing an American printing of the book, and slowly, over the years, more Americans have been finding out about the stories of Naessens, Rife, Béchamp, etc.

There are other amazing aspects of Naessens' story. Like Béchamp, Naessens has not just invented a cure for diseases, he has ventured so far out onto the leading edge of science, and his discoveries are so hard to believe that the most common reaction to them by mainstream scientists is "impossible!" For instance, one of his experiments reminded Bird of doctor Dr. Frankenstein's lab. Naessens took a piece of meat, the kind anybody can get straight from a butcher's shop. He separated out somatids from an *in vitro* culture and injected them into the meat. The meat was then placed in a sealed vessel in a vacuum. Not only will the meat not rot, it will retain its healthy looking color, and even continue to grow, as if it were still part of the cow.[\[211\]](#)

Another "impossible" experiment is to take two rabbits, one white and one black. Somatids are extracted from the blood of the white rabbit. A solution of the somatids is prepared and injected into the blood of the black rabbit, at a rate of about 1CC per day. After about a month of that treatment, the fur of the black rabbit begins turning gray. A close examination of the fur yields the fact that the rabbit's fur is composed of 50% black hairs and 50% white hairs. The same effect is observed in a white rabbit that is injected by the somatids of a black rabbit. Furthermore, when a patch of skin from the white rabbit is subsequently grafted onto the black rabbit who is now a gray rabbit, there is no rejection of the graft. According to orthodox biological theory, the experimental results are not only impossible, but also ridiculous. Yet, that experiment has been reproduced many times.[\[212\]](#) Again, those results are so startling and profound that the entire foundation of microbiology may have to be eventually discarded, in a much needed paradigm shift. Here are pictures of some I consider to be the true heroes of science and medicine, with their subtle, feminine, humanitarian and profound work:



Click on image to enlarge

Unlike his professional ancestors, Naessens is alive and does not have to die in obscurity, disgrace or prison. Whether he does or not is not up to the medical and scientific establishments, as much as I would like to see them wake up. It is up to the average person, probably most importantly, the average American.

His discoveries can have immediate and dramatic effect on the lives of millions, if not billions. The French can trade in their questionable national hero for two genuine ones.

One of the awe-inspiring parts of Naessens' work is that the somatidian-mutation dynamic is easy to see when one is properly trained. The somatids and their mutational forms have been seen by microbiologists for the past century and longer. The somatid-mutation forms are not invisible to modern optical microscopes, although they are more easily seen with the rarely used (by mainstream microbiologists) dark-field microscope. The somatid mutation forms are far larger than the single somatids themselves. If a microbiologist operating under the mainstream paradigm looks under the microscope, he might see what Naessens calls a stage-six somatid mutation, but the mainstream microbiologist would call it a rod-shaped bacterium. Naessens would agree with the microbiologist, but would add that yesterday it was a double bacteria form, and next week it might become a yeast form.

The final stage, stage sixteen of the somatid-mutation dynamic, is a husk Naessens calls a fibrous thallus. The thallus is left over after the mutation forms eventually develop into something like a cocoon. One day the cocoon explodes, spreading zillions more somatids into the area, where each somatid then begins the mutation cycle anew. Microbiologists throughout this century have seen that empty thallus, but in their understandable ignorance they have always thought that the thallus was an artifact of the staining process. They could see the trees, but had no idea what the forest looked like.

When one looks through a dark-field microscope at a drop of live blood, and have the proper paradigm to guide one's eyes and brain, a world of information previously invisible becomes available. Ten years ago, I had had my own living blood analyzed by a dark-field microscope, where I saw it myself on a television screen. For an hour of my time and \$35, a man told me more about my health than thousands of dollars of conventional medical tests could. Naessens does the same thing. When somebody comes to his lab and asks for his help and insight, he draws a drop of their blood and they both look at it on the TV monitor that is hooked up to the Somatoscope. Right away, by looking at what the somatid forms are doing in that drop of blood, Naessens can tell the state of his/her immune system, and much more. The man that read my blood (not affiliated with Naessens, but who knew his work well) was able to point out a stage-six somatid mutation in my blood, and many other things.

By looking at a drop of blood, Naessens and others can tell people how healthy they are, and here is the stupefying part: they can tell if somebody is on the road to getting cancer, *up to two years before there is a tumor to find*. Since the late 1990s, Naessens and his wife have run a school in Quebec to train technicians to do just that. Think of that potential. There is evidence that mammograms may cause as much cancer as they discover. Even the conservative Ralph Moss recently wrote about research results that show that there is no credible evidence to show that mammograms have anything to do with an increased survival rate of women with breast cancer.[\[213\]](#) The same holds for cervical cancer. Early detection combined with orthodox treatment does not increase life expectancy at all. Naessens produces a video that shows and explains the somatidian forms and shows people how to treat themselves using 714X. The entire current paradigm can come crashing down and be replaced with sanity. It is up to the average person whether the insanity ends and sanity begins. Looking to the medical establishment to lead the way is like asking the wolf to stop eating the sheep, and believing him when he says that he ceased indulging that habit long ago, even when there is a little wool hanging from his chin.

Pasteur's Germ Theory, Vaccines and Alternate Paradigms

[Semmelweis](#) eventually enlarged his sanitation theory to include any decaying matter as infectious. He died before [Pasteur](#) developed his germ theory of disease. [Béchamp](#)'s work supported Semmelweis' theory that any rotting material can induce infection. Rotting, put more scientifically, is fermentation, or the digestive processes of microscopic organisms. Béchamp ended his *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element* with,

“The living being, filled with microzymas, carries in himself the elements essential for life, for disease, for death and for destruction. And that this variety in results may not too much surprise us, the processes are the same. Our cellules [cells – Ed.], it is a matter of constant observation, are being continually destroyed by means of a fermentation very analogous to that which follows death. Penetrating into the heart of these phenomena we might really say, were it not for the offensiveness of the expression, that we are constantly rotting!”[\[214\]](#)

It is a testament to Béchamp’s keen talent that he documented the microzyman world with his day’s microscopes. With bacterial and fungal forms (and recall Rife’s cancer virus) as morphic stages of microzyman/somatidian/bionic/endobiontic evolution, there is a direct connection between degenerative and infectious disease.

Pasteur’s germ theory sees the body is a victim to organisms that attack from outside the body. Microzyman theory sees the destruction as coming from within. Béchamp was not alone in his theorizing about “harmful” organisms being created by the disease, not the other way around. Pasteur’s friend Claude Bernard thought the same way, as eventually even [Rudolf Virchow](#) did. Bernard theorized that the environment the germs lived in was all-important, not the germ. The “harmful” germs were only reacting to a dangerous environment. Legend even has it that Pasteur acknowledged the same thing on his death bed, saying that Bernard was right, the “the microbe is nothing, the terrain everything.”[\[215\]](#)

Béchamp theorized that the so-called germs in the air were only the floating microzymas of dead organisms, and would initiate fermentation and turn to bacteria if given a favorable medium. They would not cause disease, in Béchamp’s opinion. Lister eventually abandoned Pasteur’s air-germ theory and stopped spraying carbolic acid into the air, and eventually stated that only germs from non-air sources were harmful. From that time forward, Lister only sterilized surgical implements, wounds and dressings, which led to today’s sterile surgical procedures.

Pasteurization, antibiotics and vaccination derive directly from Pasteur’s germ theory. Pasteurization involves subjecting fluids such as milk, beer and orange juice to high heat, to kill microorganisms that can lead to illness. According to microzyman theory, Pasteurization stops the fermentation process by halting the microzyman nutritive process. Pasteurization also destroys all enzymes and most vitamins. The nutritional value of food is greatly reduced through pasteurization. Pasteurization is the ancestor of today’s irradiation. Those processes are attempting to overcome filth and putrefaction with scorched-earth-style destruction. Far healthier is a clean product that has not been subjected to destructive heat or radiation. Then there would not be any need for such practices. Even better is adopting a live food diet, eliminating those processed foods.

Antibiotic theory comes directly from the germ theory, where powerful drugs and organisms kill those invading germs. According to microzyman theory, the deadly germs are usually not of the invading variety, but are local germs reacting to a diseased environment, taking a new shape in response, in the germ’s *struggle for survival*. That is similar to Naessens’ theory of how healthy cells become pirates when their environment is poor, and diseases such as cancer result.

The antibiotic era began in 1928 with the discovery of penicillin. In the 1940s, penicillin became publicly known and immediately became the Wonder Drug. Penicillin, however, was another scorched-earth treatment. It killed all bacteria, not just the “bad guys.” According to microzyman theory, something such as penicillin did not make the diseased “terrain” healthy, it just wiped out all bacteria in the environment, or more precisely, a morphic stage of a pleomorphic life cycle. The other stages still existed. The bacteria also adapted to the new scourge, as they have adapted to change for billions of years.

In 1952, staphylococcus infections were about 100% curable with penicillin; today that number is less than 5%. New antibiotics are continually invented to overcome the developing resistance of bacteria. The weakening and destruction of the immune system is one outcome of antibiotic use. Antibiotic use is nearly universal in the American population, and new “super bugs” appear every year, so more powerful antibiotics are developed. Now, hospitals are the realm of those super bugs, and about 80,000 Americans die

each year due to infection that they acquired in hospitals, infections that will not respond to antibiotics. At the rate it is going, the antibiotic age will be over soon, as the “bad” bacteria will have adapted to all the antibiotics that have been thrown at them. The effect on the immune systems of those who have taken antibiotics has been immense, especially as Americans take antibiotics these days for the slightest sniffles. The price for short-term relief will likely be long-term disaster, and [Naessens](#)’ work demonstrates what other problems collapsing immune systems can lead to. The antibiotic age is a form of arms race, in typical masculine fashion, always seeking ways to make the perfect weapon. Arms races never have a happy ending.

Vaccination is another outcome of Pasteur’s germ theory. Pasteur was not the first vaccinator, as Edward Jenner and others had the idea for smallpox much earlier, but Pasteur provided the theoretical basis, and he was the first great commercializer of the process. His anthrax and rabies vaccinations were two early instances of the commercialization of vaccination. As with [fluoridation](#), assessing vaccine effectiveness is a numbers game. In Hume’s book, she deals at length with the effectiveness of vaccination, especially Pasteur’s. Before Pasteur pursued his vaccines, smallpox vaccination became mandatory in England, and the numbers are illuminating. In 1840, smallpox vaccines became free in England and Wales. In 1853, the vaccine became compulsory. In 1867, those who did not submit to vaccination were prosecuted. The deaths in England and Wales from smallpox are presented for the pertinent years.[\[216\]](#)

Epidemic years	England and Wales smallpox deaths
1857-1859	14,244
1863-1865	20,059
1870-1872	44,840

In addition, smallpox mortality increases in vaccinated populations. While the U.S. fatality rate from smallpox was less than 3% of cases around 1900, in the far more vaccinated U.S. Army in the Philippines, the fatality rate was more than 25%.[\[217\]](#) The highest death rate in the Philippines during the smallpox epidemic of a century ago was in Manila, with a fatality rate of 65%, and Manila was the most heavily vaccinated place in the Philippines. Vaccination makes the disease more deadly when contracted. [George Bernard Shaw](#) remarked on the statistical fraud that took place in England in trying to make vaccination appear more successful than it was.

The standard history books fail to mention that Pasteur’s early experiments with his vaccine were disastrous. Pasteur’s plagiarized vaccine was used on thousands of sheep in Southern Russia. The vaccine was administered to 4564 sheep, and 3696 died almost immediately from the vaccine.[\[218\]](#) Pasteur had to pay for all the animals he killed with his “preventive.” The numbers show similar success with Pasteur’s rabies vaccine. He may have even invented a new disease with that vaccine. Time and again, the actual effects of vaccination show something very different from unqualified success. A chapter of Hume’s book is devoted to the vaccination lessons of World War I. Disease caused nearly as many casualties during the disaster at Gallipoli as those dead and wounded in battle, with heavily inoculated troops. The grand finale of World War I was an “influenza” epidemic that swept the world in 1918-1919, beginning at a U.S. military base and killing probably at least 25 million people and crippling my grandfather, who was in the trenches during World War I. They thought he was dead, and put him in a makeshift morgue with other soldiers. He awoke days later in the charnel house, and nearby soldiers were spooked to watch a man crawl out of there. Rheumatoid arthritis accompanied his illness, which crippled him.

If Hume’s work was all I had seen about the “success” of vaccination, Geison’s criticism of Hume’s poor understanding of Pasteur’s work might have been convincing, but there is little evidence that vaccination gets any credit for preventing or eradicating disease. The Hygienic principles of sanitation and nutrition have apparently eliminated most epidemic disease, not vaccination. The tuberculosis death rate in Great Britain was 4000 per million people in 1840. The tuberculosis bacillus was identified in the 1880, when the

death rate had fallen to less than 2000. Antibiotics were introduced at the end of World War II, when the rate had fallen to about 400, and the tuberculosis vaccine was introduced in the early 1950s, when the death rate had fallen below 300. How can vaccination receive any of the credit? Measles mortality, as a death rate per million people, had fallen from 1100 per million in 1910 to only a few in the 1970s in Great Britain, when immunization was introduced.[\[219\]](#) Whooping cough, now called pertussis, had already declined by more than 80% from 1900 in Great Britain when the vaccine was introduced, in the late 1930s. In 1984, 46% of children contracting whooping cough in the United States had previously been vaccinated, as well as 58% of all children contracting measles.[\[220\]](#)

There are far more ominous aspects of childhood vaccination to report than merely not preventing disease. In 1985, Dr. Viera Scheibner developed a baby-breathing monitor with a biomedical engineer in order to study and prevent Sudden Infant Death Syndrome (SIDS), which used to be called “crib death” in the United States, and is called “cot death” in Australia, where Scheibner is from. Scheibner put 150 of the Cotwatch units into the field, and began amassing data. It turned out that babies reacted to stress by breathing shallowly during sleep. In extreme cases, their breathing would stop. The Cotwatch alarms sounded with shallow breathing as well as when breathing stopped. Of the first babies monitored, 28 actually stopped breathing, but the Cotwatch alarm allowed them to be resuscitated. Scheibner began documenting the breathing incidents and various stresses, such as illness and tooth cutting. One area of highly significant evidence was the DPT (diphtheria-pertussis-tetanus) vaccine. DPT injections caused infant breathing incidents for about two months after administration.[\[221\]](#) In an American study of SIDS, of 103 children who died of SIDS, more than two-thirds had been vaccinated prior to death, 70% of them within three weeks of death, with 13% dying within 24 hours of injection.[\[222\]](#) In 1975, Japan raised the minimum vaccination age to two years, and SIDS virtually disappeared. In the 1980s, Japan lowered its vaccination age to three months, and SIDS reappeared.

Between 1973 and 1983, according to the U.S. Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, 87% of all U.S. polio cases were *caused by the vaccine*.[\[223\]](#) Polio was also quickly disappearing well before the vaccine was invented and administered, declining by 60% from 1923 to 1953, the year the vaccine was introduced, and polio cases *increased* in the New England states when the vaccine was introduced.[\[224\]](#) By 1930, U.S. diphtheria deaths had already declined by 90% since 1900. In 1939, Germany instituted mandatory diphtheria vaccination, and immediately there were 150,000 cases of it. Occupied France was forced to submit to diphtheria vaccinations, and had 47,000 cases by 1943. Norway successfully resisted implementing the Nazi diphtheria vaccine, and only had 50 cases.[\[225\]](#)

There are arguably no cases where vaccination vanquished a disease. In England and Wales, smallpox disappeared only when people refused to be inoculated. In 1881 there were nearly 4000 smallpox deaths per one million population, and the population was 96% vaccinated. By 1941, only 40% of the population was vaccinated, and smallpox deaths declined to one death per million. In heavily vaccinated Japan, 29,000 people died of smallpox in a seven-year period during the late 19th century. At the same time in Australia, mandatory vaccination was terminated when two children died from the vaccine, and there were subsequently only three cases of smallpox in Australia in fifteen years.[\[226\]](#) The smallpox vaccine not only failed to prevent the disease, it actually introduced it, and the fatality rates of those vaccinated were higher than those who were not. Today, the smallpox vaccine is officially credited with eliminating smallpox in 1977. As Scheibner demonstrates from the scientific literature, today Africans are dying from “monkeypox,” not smallpox.[\[227\]](#) It is partly a semantics game happening, to declare humankind free of smallpox. Yes, there is little smallpox today, but there is also little bubonic plague. No mass bubonic plague vaccine program was ever introduced.[\[228\]](#)

Again, my experience in reading [Seth](#) primed me to accept what science uncorrupted by commercial considerations has discovered. Seth stated that our vaccines are not a genuine disease, and injecting them into the body confuses it. Our medical systems ultimately create as much disease as they “cure.” Seth stated that epidemic diseases are more psychic in nature than anything else. Every soul leaves earth when it is ready, and mass death events are to some extent a mass protest by the participants to the times they live in. Seth said that with epidemic disease,

“Initially there is psychic contagion: Despair moves faster than a mosquito, or any outward carrier of a

given disease. The mental state brings about the activation of a virus that is, in those terms, passive.[229]

If humanity is to survive on earth much longer, perspectives such as Seth's need to be heard, to help form the new paradigms. Seth also talks about sanitation and poverty as factors, but they are also outward manifestations of inward realities. Poverty and disease [will be eliminated](#) by love, not technology and ideologies, although they will play their role. Mystical material has always stressed the spiritual nature of health and illness. The greatest healer of all time is probably Jesus, and he carried no medicine bag. According to a book I read everyday for years, the [Aquarian Gospel](#), when Jesus was in India, during the "lost years" of his life in the *New Testament*, Jesus became a pupil of India's greatest healer, Udraka. Udraka spoke of obeying nature's laws, and that obeying them would ensure health, and Udraka taught about physical medicine and the laws of harmony, and that there was a remedy in nature for every physical ailment. Udraka, however, taught:

"Of course the will of man is remedy supreme; and by the vigorous exercise of will, man may make tense a cord that is relaxed or may relax one that is too tense, and thus heal himself.

"When man has reached the place where he has faith in God, in nature and himself, he knows the Word of power; his word is balm for every wound, is cure for all the ills of life.

"The healer is the man who can inspire faith. The tongue may speak to human ears, but souls are reached by souls that speak to souls." [230]

Udraka spoke of herbs, water, earth and other substances as having healing properties in the proper situations, but that "Thought, reinforced by love, is God's great sovereign balm." Jesus, "bowed his head in recognition of the wisdom of this master soul, and went his way."

I have participated in and witnessed amazing psychic healings. The phenomenon goes far beyond the "placebo effect."

Scheibner makes the case that today's vaccinations for childhood diseases actually impair the immune system's development, and that measles, mumps and chicken pox are not fatal diseases, but necessary steps the body takes in developing its immune system. Vaccinating against those childhood diseases leads to chronic illness later in life, as well as causing neurological damage.

Scheibner also writes at length that the adverse reactions to vaccines support Hahnemann's homeopathic theories.[231] A century after it was vanquished, homeopathy may yet stage a comeback. In studying homeopathic theory one encounters Hering's Law, which states that diseases pass from acute to chronic forms, and when they do so, the symptoms move from the surface of the body to the interior, from the lower body to the upper, from less vital organs to more vital ones. That dynamic is evident in vaccine reactions, where mild childhood diseases can become killers.

Beginning with Pasteur, vaccination became a huge money machine. As with [fluoridation](#) and the cancer racket, the vaccine makers are not going to let their grip on the money relax, even if their treatments ruin people's health and kill them. At this time, only laymen such as Neil Miller or myself, or retired scientists such as Dr. Scheibner, are able to publicly deal with the findings that do not support vaccination, because they cannot destroy our careers for speaking out. The racket is well in hand, and it up to average people whether it continues.

Fortunately, not only laymen are writing about Pasteur's grim legacy. Dr. Nancy Appleton's Ph.D. dissertation was titled, "An Alternative to the Germ Theory," and her *The Curse of Louis Pasteur: Why Medicine is not Healing a Diseased World* was published in 1999. In the end, Pasteur's batting average, as far as helping humanity, may be nearly zero. Appleton covers much of the same territory this essay does, and her work was

helpful. Appleton concludes her book on a Hygeiac note, reviewing the mental, dietary (as well as other substances we put into our bodies), environmental and harmonic aspects of our health. Her regimen is based on feminine, gentle, preventive practices. Her dietary advice is nearly all about eating live food.

Appleton writes about the pleomorphic discoveries of Béchamp and his professional descendants, “Now that it is possible to view these pleomorphic changes through a camera, it is hard to ignore these filtrationists’ views.” Bird’s first title for his book called Naessens the “[Galileo](#) of the microscope,” because just as those who condemned Galileo’s discoveries about Jupiter’s moons refused to look through his telescope, orthodoxy has generally refused to look through Naessens’ Somatoscope, as his work has been simultaneously denigrated.

There are many valid avenues of investigation and practice taking place today. The danger is not adopting new paradigms, it is turning them into dogmas and rackets. While there are numerous schools of thought, and I will not invalidate them (except to poke holes through orthodox dogma), I believe that the upcoming new medical paradigm will complement new perspectives in politics, science, economics, history and spirituality. In general, the new medical paradigm will incorporate the following:

1. The principles of Hygeia will take their rightful place at the head of the new paradigm. Prevention, nutrition, sanitation – these will be seen as the key principles of health. Humans, as with all animals, are designed to eat live food, and the human diet should be two-thirds live fruit, and most of the rest live vegetable matter. [Vegetarianism](#) will probably become the norm, although meat eating will still be allowed (in the world [I envision](#), *everything* will be allowed), although the less sentient (a descending scale of humans/cetaceans, mammals/birds, fish, insects and microorganisms), the better for them and all involved. Virtually all animal experiments will cease, especially those that harm or kill the subjects. Instead of studying disease, people will study health, and how to be well.
2. Masculine medicine will be largely discarded, as life-taking principles have little place in a life-giving discipline. Some masculine principles and treatments may have their place in certain situations, such as Rife’s treatment. There may be a place for *some* drugs, sometimes. Maybe *some* antibiotics, sometimes. Although it is doubtful, maybe the vaccination concept will survive in some muted form. The racket aspect is making them the only way to practice medicine (even compulsory, as in vaccination and [fluoridation](#)), and forbidding all else. The masculine (disease coming from outside) victim-oriented germ theory will be replaced with feminine (disease coming from inside) creator-oriented theories. Invasive and violent “medicine,” or “torture as treatment,” (Ralph Hovnanian’s phrase) will rightly be seen for the barbaric insanity that it is, and gentle, effective and inexpensive treatments will take their place. Surgery, drugs and most of today’s “medicine,” especially for the degenerative diseases that kill most Americans, will largely be abandoned. Interventional medicine will become less and less invasive, and will eventually lead to predominantly using light (e.g. Ghadiali) and conscious energy, and preventive medicine will be the dominant practice. Homeopathic and other gentle principles will return to prominence.
3. The principle of consciousness will enter medicine, as it will enter science. Consciousness will not only be seen as an intellectual phenomenon, but intuition and emotions will be seen as parts of the whole. The soul will be recognized, as will the Creator. Currently unrecognized energy systems, such as the ones that acupuncture and aura reading deal with, will be “discovered” by science and medicine. Love will be seen as the greatest healer, and the greatest power.
4. [Greed](#), which has been elevated to a virtue in today’s ideology, will no longer be the primary operating principle, for medicine or any other human endeavor. Love will reign, not fear.

That is the good news, as far as what is possible. New paradigms such as those will not be achieved, however, until humanity has accepted responsibility for what exists today. For Pasteur, Rockefeller, Fishbein and gang could not have played their games if the human race did not allow them to. We are all sovereign, divine beings, yet the medical racket could not function if people did not give their responsibility away. There truly are no victims, and until people stop giving their responsibility and power to others, this deadly game will continue until humanity exterminates itself. The choice is ours. Many people are pursuing the paradigms outlined in this essay, but they are a tiny fraction of humanity. This essay must now deal with an issue that not many readers will enjoy reading, but it must be understood, if the current paradigm is to

be overturned. We always have been, and currently are, responsible for our fate. Nobody needs to blame John D. Rockefeller for today's situation.

The March of the Lemmings

The alternative cancer treatments that I have investigated nearly without exception abandon the attack-the-tumor paradigm. They are examples of feminine-based medicine, and almost without exception, the treatments are harmless. They generally rehabilitate the body's natural defenses so it can deal with the cancer itself.

How on earth could we have a system where only violent medicine is legal, and gentle, harmless medicine is outlawed? The give life/take life duality is nowhere more evident than in understanding the modern cancer racket.

As I discovered at age 12, nobody wants to hear that they have an unhealthy diet, especially one they are addicted to. The American medical paradigm plays into people's sense of learned helplessness and their desire for immediate self-gratification at all costs. In believing their diets to be "adequate," they do not have to engage in any self-discipline to change. When the day comes that they face health problems, the doctor will make it better by giving them a pill or surgically removing the offending organ. Their worldview requires no self-discipline, and puts their fate in the hands of a highly paid specialist who can easily remedy the problem. The medical racket relies on people's complacency and addictions. Modern medicine says, "Don't worry, your diet is fine, and if you get heart disease as a function of being alive, well, we have the answer to that, but your death may be 'normal.'" More than thirty years ago, [my father was told exactly that](#) by his doctor.

Today, nearly the same thing is told to cancer patients. Modern medicine says, "Give us your responsibility, and we will make everything OK. You must trust us." One doctor friend I recently talked to encourages his patients to change their health habits to be healthy (mainly diet, exercise, and the obvious "stop smoking"), but they do not want to hear it. They want a pill to make them well.

From the feminine perspective, cancer does not occur because some part of our bodies "turned traitor" and needs to be killed, but because our organisms are run down, and cancer is one way that our bodies self-destruct. Virtually all alternative cancer treatments operate from the premise of seeing cancer as part of a systemic condition. An integral part of their approach is addressing our lifestyle. The centerpiece of the feminine answer is making changes to give us more life-giving energy. That nearly always means changing our diet from dead food to live food, because that was a big part of our getting cancer (arterial disease, diabetes, etc.) in the first place.

The medical profession has various ways of categorizing cancer: type I, II, III and IV (often used for breast cancer), and the TNM system, which refers to tumors, lymph nodes, and distant metastases, for example. The methodology has changed over the years, but there is a stage where your doctor says, "You are going to die." It used to be called "terminal" cancer. Today there comes a stage where the patient's likelihood of recovering using conventional methods is so low that the doctor gives up, often refusing to treat the patient, and asks if he/she wants to die at home or the hospital. That is something that the more compassionate doctors do. There are many, many instances of patients with no hope given treatment until they die, while the hospital racks up big money for providing their worse-than-worthless treatments.

Of those patients given no hope by orthodoxy, very few are willing to make the lifestyle (mainly dietary) changes required to pursue the alternative treatment. Here is a *Medical Dark Ages* quote to make that idea clearer.

"Though it is a great frustration to realize that less than 10% of all cancer patients are willing to make necessary lifestyle changes required by most alternative cancer therapies, all we can really do is inform the patient as thoroughly as possible and then let him or her make the final decision. ...(:) To undergo the Orwellian nightmare of conventional cancer treatments or ..(the) non-toxic alternative, the Utopia choice of Earth as a beautiful place...Pro-Life Freedom of Choice..." - **Hellfried Sartori, MD, MPH, MS, U. of Graz**

Medical School, Austria, President, Life Sciences Universal (1200 Medical Centers Worldwide) *Cancer 1984.*

A guess has been made that as high as 25% of cancer patients are willing to make those changes, but is the optimistic extreme.^[232] My experience is that fewer than 10% of terminal (doomed by orthodoxy) cancer patients are willing to make the dietary changes in order to have a chance at surviving. If I had not seen it with my own eyes, I would not have believed it. In nearly thirty years of never seeing *anybody* take my advice of changing their diets to reverse their health problems, I have had the same batting average in trying to introduce people to alternative cancer treatments. I have never pushed it on anybody. I have watched loved ones go to their graves at the hands of modern medicine, because I knew they could not believe that the doctors *were not* God, and I silently watched them get butchered by their doctors and die. It was not easy to watch, especially when I knew it was unnecessary.

Since I became aware of 714X in 1990, I have spent hundreds of dollars getting literature into the hands of cancer patients who gave me an indication that they were willing to consider alternative cancer treatment. Two of those people had AIDS. That happened more than ten years ago, when having AIDS was a death sentence with no negotiation. By 1990, 714X treatment had reversed AIDS in dozens of patients.

I had Bird's book on Naessens mailed from Canada to those two men, one of them an in-law of mine. I spent hours on the phone, telling him the theory behind it, the data behind it, and he had the book in his hands that repeated what I was saying. He could have taken two days out of his life, driven to Canada, visited the lab, and observed and obtained the treatment for himself at very low cost. His doctors had given him the death sentence. What did he have to lose? The only thing he had to lose was a couple days and a few hundred dollars for a chance at life. But...he would also have had to rethink the whole medical game he had been taught, and question authority. He was not willing to pay that price. I would talk to him for awhile, and he would get excited about looking into the treatment, and when I called a month later to see how it was going, he would wonder what I was talking about.

The last time I called him, asking him if he had any more questions about the process, he brushed me off in seconds, saying that he had to get ready for a party that evening. I stop trying. He died two years later in unspeakable agony. My in-law went through the entire spectrum of horror that AIDS patients went through. He would probably be alive today if he had taken two days out of his life and gone to Quebec.

Another man with AIDS was directed to me at about the same time. I give a lucid explanation on how 714X works and the dynamics of immune deficiency diseases. I do not even want to talk to anybody unless they are interested, and I spent hours talking to that man. He worked for an airline, and could have flown to Quebec for free, on a day off from work. He could have checked it out with nearly no effort. I bought the book and mailed it to him, then had a long talk with him. He never pursued it, and died in agony several years ago. My friends nursed him on his deathbed, and said his death was the most horrible and agonizing thing they ever witnessed. The man never looked any further into 714X treatment after talking to me, and accepted the certain death verdict of his doctors. Those were AIDS patients.

If *AIDS patients* were not even willing to consider a cheap and painless alternative to the death sentence that their doctors gave them, what are the chances that mere cancer patients are willing to consider alternatives? I have tried turning about a dozen people over the years on to alternative cancer treatments. I never convinced anybody to pursue alternatives. Instead, I watched them lose their hair, have parts of their bodies chopped off, be fried by radiation, go through horrific sufferings and usually die as the coup de grâce. As I have watched them file into the hospitals and morgues, dying terrifying deaths at the hands of modern medicine, I have come to call it the March of the Lemmings. Their blind and dogmatic faith in modern medicine is what also keeps the alternatives at the margins.

In recent years I have been bombarded with cases of women close to me getting breast and other cancers. It has been extremely difficult to sit and listen to story after story of women having "preventive" double mastectomies, "preventive" chemotherapy and radiation. I have watched women gulp down "medicine" that poisons their bodies. I have had to hear about how the cancer spread and went to their brains. They

had surgery followed by radiation, and died within weeks in appalling agony, and their relatives have even admitted that it was not the cancer that killed them, but the treatment itself. I have looked at photos of bald women, taken while they were having their chemotherapy. None of them can conceive of trying an alternative.

Nobody like me begins their journey by being political in their perspective. How it nearly always starts is with the naïve belief that we can help the world become a better place, and we think the world will welcome our efforts. Only after we are crucified, while the very people we were attempting to help are cheering our fate, do we begin to realize why the better mousetraps are not sold. It is because the people selling the old, inferior mousetraps wipe out or buy out anybody who comes along with a better mousetrap, and the masses are so easily manipulated that they fall right in line with the program, against their own interests. Dostoyevsky's parable of the grand inquisitor described a less fictional dynamic than it might seem.[\[233\]](#)

With cancer patients, I never begin by talking about the corruption in the medical establishment. I try explaining how the new technologies or methods work, and wait to see the person's eyes light up when they understand. What they usually come back with is, "If it really worked, why isn't it available? Has the FDA approved it?" The dynamic is nearly identical when I talk about [alternative energy](#) and [my adventures](#). When I discuss free energy possibilities, the reply is "If it is so great, why can't I buy it?" Then I have to begin the long, grim story of why the better mousetraps are nearly *always* suppressed. I do not go into chapter and verse, but I present a few examples of how the real world works. What happens next is predictable: I am goring their sacred cow. I am telling them that the medical establishment might not know what is best for them, or worse, may be actively killing its patients. I then watch the light go out of their eyes. Sometimes I have seen them consider what I have said, and then say they will ask their oncologist what he thinks. That outcome is predictable, and is like asking a *Fortune* 500 executive what he thinks about Karl Marx's work, or reading what priests during the early 1200s were writing about the [Cathars](#). Asking an orthodox oncologist what he/she thinks about alternative cancer treatment is a similar situation.

In a number of states, a doctor can go to prison if he/she merely tells a patient an alternative treatment might work. In California, if a doctor even tells you that 714X treatment might work, he/she is subject to going to prison for five years.

I finish wasting my breath, and the next time I see those friends, they are on chemotherapy and their hair is falling out. I stay quiet, biting my tongue. It is not easy to watch.

Naessens is living proof that the medical establishment's grip on the medical racket in Canada is not nearly as firm as it is in the United States. Not only was Naessens acquitted, but also legislation was passed in Canada to allow people to legally use 714X treatment. Under the emergency drug section of Canadian law, article C.08.010 of the Food and Drug Law, a patient can take 714X at their own risk. To date far more than 10,000 people have had 714X treatment, and there has not been one case of an adverse effect with it.

Why the System Works the Way it Does

We are all responsible for what happens in our world, and it is a clear dynamic in the system of modern medicine. Modern medicine is a holocaust of immense proportions, with its death camps hospitals and oncology clinics, and its death chambers are operating rooms and radiation chambers. It dwarfs what happened in Auschwitz, and is happening every day in America and around the industrialized world. In that light, the comparisons of [Fishbein](#) to Hitler I have seen are not so outrageous.

It appears that most people go into American medicine today because of the big money in it. If the people who enter the profession are mainly motivated by money, how much will they really care whether the treatments they provide really work, as long as they are well paid to administer them? If their experience begins telling them it does not work, how many are willing to consider questioning what they have been taught, as long as the big money keeps rolling in?

Doctors receive about zero nutritional training in medical school, and what little they *are* taught is

largely agribusiness propaganda, not true nutritional training. Their indoctrination is all about knives and drugs. For instance, a survey several years ago asked new, first-year medical students if they thought that nutritional advice and prevention would be a significant part of their future medical practices, and about 80% of them answered that it would be. Those same students were asked the same question in their last year of medical school, and around 15% thought the same way. Even when people go into Western medicine with the best intentions, their ideals are usually slowly beaten out of them. The same thing has happened to [lawyers that I know](#). They go in starry-eyed, to emerge bitterly cynical years later. I remember when I [believed in the Easter Bunny](#). Without people willingly playing the game, giving away their responsibility, this system could not function.

The alternative treatment Mecca of the world is Mexico. The doctors' offices are often in California, but the patients go to Mexico for treatment.^[234] There are many "skeptical" shills of the medical establishment who have traveled to Mexico and loudly proclaimed that all that is practiced down there is quackery, and they get loud cheers from the orthodox medical crowd. I happen to know better.

As an example, [Mr. Professor](#) developed diabetes in the 1960s. It ran in his family, and America's industrialized diet, environment and sedentary lifestyle (Americans are history's [most sedentary and obese people](#)) makes it the world's capital for heart disease, cancer, diabetes and a host of degenerative diseases (with new ones catalogued regularly), where the body self-destructs.

Mr. Professor's doctor in Ventura County had diabetes, and advertised himself as an "alternative" diabetes practitioner. Diabetics often lose their legs because their disease destroys the blood circulation. The feet, then the legs, are usually the first to go. In about 1990, with the stress of the [Ventura events](#) contributing, Mr. Professor's feet began turning black, as were his calves, with pits forming on his skin. His "alternative" doctor said that Mr. Professor's legs were exhibiting the first signs of gangrene. He said that the condition was irreversible, that he could do some things (involving drugs, of course) to slow the progress, but Mr. Professor would have his legs amputated one day, perhaps soon.

Meanwhile, Mr. Professor's wife had developed severe allergies in the 1960s. She was so highly allergic to nearly everything that she became a prisoner in her own home. Driving to the store would expose her to so many environmental toxins that she would be incapacitated for days. After many years of going to one orthodox specialist after another, none of whom were able to help her, although they would prescribe the awesomely expensive "treatments" vended by the pharmaceutical industry, Mrs. Professor eventually began investigating alternative treatments.

During Mrs. Professor's research, she eventually connected with the alternative medical field, and when the doctor pronounced his sentence on Mr. Professor's legs, she said, "We're going to Mexico." They spent a few weeks at a Mexican clinic while Mr. Professor was treated. Mr. Professor had chelation therapy, a blood treatment that has also been largely driven from the United States, in the standard medical gangster style. After a few weeks of treatment, the condition of Mr. Professor's legs was completely reversed, and the gangrenous condition disappeared. There were not even any scars on his legs. It was as if he never had gangrene. He had new legs and feet. According to today's orthodox medical doctrine, reversing gangrene in that fashion is impossible. Mr. Professor was living proof of the "impossible."

Mr. Professor went back home and visited his "alternative" doctor. As the doctor examined Mr. Professor's legs, he could not believe his eyes. "These aren't the legs I saw a few weeks ago. It is a miracle! The state I saw your legs in is impossible to reverse. What in God's name happened?!" Mr. Professor began his response with, "Well, my wife and I went to Mexico..." That was all the "alternative" doctor needed to hear. "Mexico?!" he shrieked. He ran out of the room, nearly holding his head in his hands. He did not want to hear any more, even when he saw its "impossible" results. He was genuinely afraid to hear any more.

Most Americans have only heard about Steve McQueen dying of cancer after he visited Mexico for laetrile treatment (actually, he was doing OK until he acquiesced to his doctor's request to perform surgery). Numerous medical doctors in America know that alternatives work, and often far better than what they are administering to their patients. They are terrified to use them, however, knowing what happens to doctors who do, and often they engage in sophisticated games of denial in order to live with themselves.

A "barrier of entry" protects the racket. In the unholy union between the FDA and the drug companies, today it takes hundreds of millions of dollars of "testing" to approve any substance for medical use. As the long arm of the FDA seeks to regulate herbs and vitamins (and who knows what else is on their wish list?) the issue of health is increasingly one that only large corporations can play. The way the FDA paved that road was a reinterpretation of its mission in the 1960s. Originally, they were charged with food and drug *safety*. Then they appended the word "effective" to their charge, which the drug companies initially fought, but subsequently perverted into a great way of protecting the racket. All those alternative cancer treatments are "safe" because they are harmless, unlike the mainstream treatments, which are anything but "safe." The FDA creatively defined "safe" so it exempted chemotherapy treatments that destroyed the body (as well as surgery and radiation). Then they creatively defined "effective" so that mainstream cancer treatments that drastically shorten patients' life expectancies were surreally labeled "effective." Then they got creative in the other direction to define harmless treatments as "ineffective." Then they used their police powers to wipe them out.

Even though the FDA is an immensely corrupt racketeering organization, with an actual mission almost the opposite of its publicly stated one, most of those doing the dirty work believe in the publicly stated mission. As I [discovered in my profession](#), most people will do plenty of lying to themselves in order to sustain that belief in what they are doing, and do it quite creatively. [Orwell](#) called it [doublethink](#).

To hold beliefs contradictory to a person's experience is difficult, and leads to the condition known as [cognitive dissonance](#). When that contradiction happens, there are three ways to deal with it. The healthy reaction is to change the beliefs to account for the experience, which also can lead to *knowledge*. The other reactions are pathological. The most common pathological reaction is eliminating the "negative cognition" by quickly averting the eyes or otherwise [denying the experience](#). The other reaction is burying the negative cognition with "positive cognitions," so the negative cognition is simply overwhelmed by the positive cognitions. The [American flag-waving after the World Trade Center attacks](#) is a textbook example of trying to overwhelm the negative cognitions (people hate America, and for good reason) with positive ones (America is the greatest and most noble nation). Eventually, if whatever is behind the belief-challenging experiences are not addressed, those events keep occurring, and often keep escalating. If validating the experience is not done, and instead negative cognitions are suppressed and positive ones are emphasized, or even manufactured from whole cloth, at some stage there will be a breakdown.

That dynamic is a cousin to how paradigms shift in science, the "anomalous" evidence piling up in the corner, often ignored, until somebody comes along and accounts for it with a new paradigm. People rarely are willing to change their beliefs (or replace it with *knowledge* gained from experience, a far superior treasure), especially deeply inculcated ones, as it can call for an exercise of personal integrity that most appear incapable of mustering, particularly when the belief is self-serving.

Even big names in medicine have their careers ruined when they run afoul of the dogma. For instance, one of the world's most prominent virus researchers, [Peter Duesberg](#), has challenged the orthodox perspective of AIDS. He argues that HIV does not cause AIDS. He has a radically different way of looking at AIDS, a perspective that echoes [Seth's](#). This essay is not concerned with whether Duesberg is right or not. Before he began challenging the emerging dogma in the late 1980s, Duesberg was a leading figure in viral research. He received the Outstanding Investigator Grant from the National Institutes of Health (NIH). When he challenged the dogma, his perspective was not carefully considered, to finally be rejected when it proved inaccurate. Instead, all funding to test his hypothesis has been cut off, in a familiar pattern. Two-time Nobel laureate Linus Pauling ran afoul of the cancer establishment when he began investigating vitamin C as a cancer treatment.

The cancer racket also devours its own. The denial theme plays well, even when it kills those who work for it. It might be surprising to know how many oncologists will be the first to try an alternative cancer treatment, or prominent chemotherapists refusing to undergo chemotherapy, as they can see how much the results of their labors "help" their patients.[\[235\]](#) The reaction of Mr. Professor's "alternative" diabetes doctor is telling. Although there are a disturbing number of orthodox oncologists who will opt for alternative treatments for themselves and their families, most go the orthodox route, fully swallowing their indoctrination, even when

their eyes tell them what a deadly disaster orthodox cancer treatment is. Even then, the machine they are a part of can devour them. For instance, in 1992 the *New York Times* published the story of Norman Paradis, the director of emergency medicine at Bellevue Hospital in New York, and his father, also an M.D. The elder Paradis, who had been in perfect health his entire life, was diagnosed with advanced pancreatic cancer at age 75. Advanced pancreatic cancer has about a zero survival rate with mainstream treatment (but about 100% recovery has been documented with some alternatives). The father implored his son,

“I have been a surgeon for almost 50 years. In that time, I have seen physicians torture dying patients in vain attempts to prolong life. I have taken care of you most of your life. Now I must ask for your help. Don't let them abuse me. No surgery, no chemotherapy.”

The son did his duty. He told the attending physicians that his father only wanted and needed painkiller and a bed, and no other treatment. All agreed to the plan. Soon after that meeting, however, Norman discovered that his father was subjected to surgical and radiological procedures. The doctors agreed to stop, but the juggernaut kept rolling. Norman's brother was an attorney, and together they tried getting the hospital to stop treating their father. They kept getting promises, but the hospital kept on with the testing, surgery and radiation. On one trip to the hospital the brothers found their father in a hallway, alone, after another “test.” The man pleaded with his sons, “They are treating me like an animal. Please get me out of here.” The doctor in charge of the father's treatment was again contacted, and the assurances came again. As soon as they walked out the door, the treatment continued. The useless but expensive surgeries continued unabated, and every time they tried taking their father out of there, he was involved in a test or procedure, and was unmovable. When they found their father alone in a hallway again, skeletal and nearly dead, they got him out of there and into a hospice, where he died the next day. The hospital racked up \$150,000 in Medicare charges, and Norman complained to Medicare about the outright fraud the hospital engaged in regarding his father. They told him that a \$150,000 case was too small for them to pursue.[\[236\]](#) The hospital saw Dr. Paradis as a lucrative piece of meat, while he still lived.

If the head of emergency medicine could not prevent the hell his father went through before he died, what chance does the average patient have? I have known many people in the medical business over the years, including nurses and others who work directly with the dying. Within the hospitals, patients are often seen as gold mines. When people are dying, there reaches a stage when they are obviously on their way out. People who work with the dying know the stages well – the pallor, the breathing, etc. I know ex-nurse types who candidly admit the money-machine aspect of those last days. They have watched people who were obviously on their way out become the subject of intensive procedures, obviously useless if keeping them alive was the goal. The numbers are awesome. Something like 60% of all the medical service dollars that Americans consume in their lifetimes is “consumed” in the last months of life, and almost no medical industry dollars are ever spent on prevention. It is a huge cash register that feeds off death and misery. Here is one last tale, to make it clear how the system devours its own.

Betsy Lehman was a prominent health columnist for the *Boston Globe* who three times won the American Cancer Society local chapter's top award for her journalism. In 1994, she underwent chemotherapy at a prestigious cancer treatment facility, getting the best that orthodox medicine could provide. As she underwent chemotherapy, she began vomiting sheets of tissue. Her entire digestive tract was shredded, but her reaction was the “normal” one for that treatment. Even though her electrocardiogram was showing enormous stresses to her heart, the doctors continued their treatment. She died from the ordeal, and was just another lost patient for the doctors, who did not feel that anything really went wrong. Her death was a typical treatment outcome. Her autopsy showed that the cancer had been eradicated. Her doctors even said that the treatment “worked” in her case, even though she had died. Two months later a clerk discovered that she had been given four times the recommended dose.[\[237\]](#)

One friend used to be a nurse, and she admitted that during her ten-year career she had a good record; she only killed one patient. She regularly saw patients killed by mistakes and negligence by the hospital staff, but it was always covered up. Hospitals rarely perform autopsies, and can easily bury their mistakes. My friend

related one instance when a nurse replaced an IV drip solution with something that stopped the patient's heart in a few beats (I think it was a potassium solution). The hospital told the patient's family it was a heart attack. When that friend got cancer and went to the hospital, her nurse friends would sit with her at times and make sure the attending nurses and doctors did not screw up. Even then, their negligence nearly killed my friend when they let her IV go dry, and her blood started pumping out the IV tube and filling the IV sack while she was asleep. Anybody with much time in hospital environments has many stories like that to tell, but they will not admit them publicly, not if they want to continue pursuing their careers. My solution is to never darken their door. If I never get in their clutches, they cannot harm me. I have never been a hospital patient (except when I was admitted for muscle spasms when I was ten), and do not plan on ever being one, unless I am in an accident. Medical doctors have virtually never treated me.

The accomplices in the medical establishment holocaust are many, from pharmaceutical executives to FDA investigators to oncologists to medical journalists to surgeons to nurses to medical schools. They all participate in the system, and making money is the preoccupation of all of them. The drug industry is America's most profitable industry, American medical doctors are the highest paid professionals on earth, and everybody takes their cut. The biggest accomplices of all, however, are the masses who eagerly believe the propaganda that relieves them of personal responsibility for their health. We are all responsible to one degree or another for this state of affairs. Since we are all in this together, we have to get out of it together. The only answer I know is love, and with love comes truth, and that is the only way out of this mess.

My Early Experience with the Medical Racket

These medical racket writings are more than research and theory. I was exposed to another aspect of the racket in California when [Dennis Lee was in jail](#) the first time. I began working at a medical lab in Los Angeles the week before Christmas, in December 1988, which was my life's blackest month. I would finally be in a stable corporate environment, not the cliffhanging that was my daily life with Dennis. I was in for a surprise. The lab was the nation's largest privately owned medical lab, owned by a black pathologist who was about America's richest black man, worth about two hundred million dollars at the time. He took an interest in me because we were both vegetarians, as even in Los Angeles in the 1980s, [vegetarians were rare](#), especially in the business world.

The week after I began work, federal investigators came to the lab. They were engaging in an unprecedented investigation, as part of a politician's crusade. A Pap test for one of his family members had been misread. Our lab had one of the nation's largest Pap labs, reading about three thousand specimens each night.

Pap smear reading is more of an art than a science. In America, a technician called a cytologist, who is specially trained to read Pap slides, reads nearly all Pap smears. I have been out of the business for many years, but in reading up on the current state of the Pap industry, it has changed only slightly. Then, as now, a pathologist would reread 10% of the slides, checking the cytologist's work. There were five categories of results for reading the Pap smear. A result flagged as class one meant that all was well. A reading of class two meant that the patient should get another Pap smear in six months. A reading of class three was serious, and the suggested response was having a biopsy performed. A reading of class five meant that the patient had cervical cancer. The Pap specimen was read by looking for cellular abnormalities, mainly known as dysplasia. If enough sample cells showed abnormalities, the rating would rise, anywhere from category two to five.

Although Papanicolaou published his results for fifteen years before he got anybody's attention, and there are much better ways to test for cancer, the Pap test was an advance over previous methods. It is considered the best early cancer detection technique in existence today. It is not, not compared to Naessens' methods and others, but it is better than any other *mainstream* technique. It is still an art, however. Five experts can look at the same sample and derive five different diagnoses.

During the 1980s, the federal government sent out class five Pap samples to many labs, seeing how well the labs diagnosed them. About seven percent of the time, the lab gave the specimen a class one rating. That was

for class fives. Today, the statistics show that about twenty percent of the Paps read are given what is known as a "false negative." That means there were abnormalities in the specimen, but the cytologist did not note them. There can be hundreds of thousands of cells in a specimen. A cytologist does not look at every one of thousands of cells in a specimen, because only a few minutes are devoted to looking at each one. A sampling is made. Finding a few strange cells can move the sample from a class one to a class two. Yet, "strange cells" are subject to interpretation. Again, it is an art, subject to a wide range of interpretation and error.

In addition, cytologists' pay practices were not ideal, which is unfortunately standard throughout the capitalistic world. The cytologists were largely paid by the slide. In an eight-hour shift, a cytologist would typically read about eighty slides. Even today, cytologists can read up to a hundred in a shift. Being paid by the slide encourages them not to read them as thoroughly as they might otherwise. A number of our cytologists moonlighted for our competitors, as they were in great demand. Cytologists in the medical lab field were like specialists anywhere. They were all trained in the same institutions, and often played the medical lab merry-go-round, going to whichever lab gave them the best deal. We were just one player in a highly competitive environment.

Because our lab was one of the nation's largest Pap labs (the Pap lab only made up a few percent of the company's revenues, however), we were one of the first labs to undergo an unprecedented investigation by the federal government. Federal investigators came in and reread our Pap slides, giving them their own rating. They read more than a thousand slides. In the Pap business, well more than 90% of the slides are assigned a class one result. It was like that across the nation. The investigators, however, felt that about two hundred slides from their sample should have been assigned a class two. That cannot really be called an error. The difference between a class one and a class two is on the level of quibbling. Those two hundred slides corresponded exactly to the data today of a twenty percent "false negative" rate. There were a dozen specimens that the federal investigators thought should be class three, that we had called class one or two. For those dozen, it was still a matter of opinion. The entire investigation was an unprecedented act by the federal government. Our lab was one of two in Los Angeles selected for the investigation, the *first of its kind in U.S. history*.

The investigators produced their results and met with our company's management. Their investigation had virtually no legal status. It was a fishing expedition. They had nothing at all to try measuring our results against, because they had never done it before. There were no procedures for determining what their findings meant. By the statistics in the industry then and even today, they discovered that we were an "average" lab. Some data today suggests that there can be up to a fifty-percent false negative rate. It does not mean that cervical cancer is going up; it means that the procedures are getting better at detecting "abnormalities." Being the bureaucrats that they were, the federal investigators called their differences "errors." They played investigator, policeman, prosecutor and judge, in a type of court that had never been convened before. They were critical of our lab. Frankly, some of their criticisms were understandable, as it was run in a mom-and-pop style, with plenty of "homegrown" talent working there, meaning the chief programmer used to be a specimen courier, as was the personnel director. That is common in privately held companies. There are good things and bad things about that phenomenon, and one downside is that the staff is not as professionally trained as in a more standard corporate environment. That did not apply to the cytologists, however, or the pathologist who ran the lab. Some of their criticism was well founded, but we were singled out, from the entire United States, for that investigation. How much of the attention we were getting was because we were the largest privately owned lab and not part of a corporate conglomerate as all the other big labs were, and how much was because the owner was black?

My boss, the controller, challenged their right to even be making the investigation, much less trying to be critical of the company. He was probably right, but telling a bureaucrat he has no power is not a good idea. Those bureaucrats did the only thing they had power to do, and even then it was unprecedented. They revoked the Pap lab's Medicare reimbursement status. The lab could have fought that decision. It did not hurt the company much, as Medicare is not that big a part of the Pap lab revenues, since women more than sixty-five years old are not exactly the big Pap market, even though they make up a disproportionately large percent of women who die from cervical cancer. Because they were bureaucrats, they would inflict their vengeance on our impudent company that dared challenge their authority. They attacked us through the media. The same tactic has been used against Dennis in Seattle and other places. Media power can quickly destroy a company.

I had been at the lab for only a month when it was splashed across the papers and evening news. Then the federal bureaucrats did what they could; they sicced the state authorities on us. The state health authorities came in and did their own unprecedented audit, just as the feds did. Their results were virtually identical: about two hundred class-one/class-two disagreements, and about a dozen others. They never found a class five that we missed, which would have been an instance of really making an error. Two unprecedented audits, and they never found one harmful diagnostic error.

Next, the California State equivalent of the Surgeon General, who, like so many "health" authorities was an obese man, made a theatrical announcement to the Los Angeles media. We were a "Pap dungeon" with a twenty-percent error rate. Most other labs had the same rate, but we were made an example. The news stations in Los Angeles made us the leading story. We were splashed across the media for weeks. They were even telling women who had a Pap reading done in the past year to call their doctor to see if our lab did the diagnosis. If so, they should get another reading, because the "Pap dungeon" could not find their cytology backside with both hands. The media was inciting hysteria among the women of Los Angeles for no good reason. It was one of the most unconscionable things I have ever seen the media do. An attack like that can put a company out of business, quickly. In the wake of that onslaught, we closed down the Pap lab. If it had just affected the Pap lab, that would have been one thing, but the entire lab's revenues declined by about thirty percent in a month. Many companies would have been driven out of business by a falloff in business that sharp, with the entire organization unraveling. The owner was rich, however, and weathered the immediate storm, but he wanted out.

The owner had built the company from nothing to a hundred-million-dollar-per-year lab business in a generation. He was one of the most successful black entrepreneurs in American history. He treated his loyal employees very well. He sold out to a major corporation a few months later for more than a hundred million dollars and retired. The lab's employees, in the meantime, were frantic. I have seen numerous corporate slaughters, and that was a classic one. The people around me were panicking, people who had worked at the lab for more than twenty years. With all I had been through with Dennis, the mayhem there seemed to possess a pastoral calm, although I sympathized with people who watched their careers disintegrate. After the large corporation took over, the blood flowed fast and furiously. A year after I began there, I was the highest-ranking person in administration to survive the takeover.

The California equivalent of the Surgeon General was a spiritual cousin of Morris Fishbein. Again, legally he did nothing, nor could he do anything. He led an unprecedented state audit on the heels of an unprecedented federal audit, and their findings would have been duplicated at most labs they would have audited. He was merely carving a notch on his belt, as a "tough protector of the public interest," whipping up hysteria among the women of Los Angeles and putting a head on a platter. He blindsided us one day by holding a press conference on our front steps, without warning. He announced that he would investigate other labs in California in light of the dungeon he had discovered, to see if the problem was widespread and if reform was needed. About a month later, he quietly announced that they investigated other labs, and their error rate was only about one to two percent, which was what he expected to find. That was a Big Lie of the Goebbels variety. Undoubtedly the one percent "error rate" for those "investigations" was the same one percent that the audits disclosed at our lab: class three versus class one or two disagreements. The labs they audited had some of the same cytologists working for them who worked for us. Somehow, *our* error rate was ten times as high. That happened *before* I really began investigating the medical racket.

Modern American "Justice"

Today's racketeering methods are more refined than the crude gangster tactics of Morris Fishbein's day, with the racket well in hand. Outright violence, such as being hit by a car, shot or poisoned, is relatively rare today. If kangaroo court and prison get the job done, they do not need to get violent, and they know that a trail of bodies gets messy. [Fishbein](#) would not have a much of a chance of buying out a cure and monopolizing it anymore. The racket is so deeply ingrained that nobody will allow one group to appear on the scene with the magic answer. In today's world, if Fishbein tried pulling the buyout stunt he tried with Hoxsey and Rife, he might end up dead himself. I have not heard of one buyout rumor since those early days of [Hoxsey](#), [Rife](#) and

[Ivy](#). The recent [energy buyouts](#) were only to bury them, not monopolize them.

The medical racket is a rather novel monopoly. It is a monopoly of method. No biomedical company accounts for most of the industry's revenues, such as Standard Oil and refining in 1880. The [auto company oligopoly](#) and other robber baron industries also do not quite compare in structure to the medical racket. In medicine, it is a monopoly of method, whereby the AMA, ACS, FDA, NIH, medical schools, state medical boards and other organizations work closely with the pharmaceutical and other biomedical companies to form a monopoly of their brand of masculine, lucrative, "medicine." The term "medical-industrial complex" is apt, and it has an immune system to ensure that nothing becomes a substantial threat to the cash flow. People in the know have told me that the [secret teams](#) and others who protect the energy racket are not as ruthless as those protecting the medical racket. The [Fitzgerald Report](#) uncovered definite conspiratorial activities by the medical establishment in wiping out a dozen alternative cancer treatments. Those activities did not end in the 1950s.

In the 1940s, Dr. Ernst Krebs chemically isolated an optically active isomer of amygdalin, which has been derived from bitter almonds and other plants for thousands of years. He called it laetrile. It was originally proposed as a chemotherapy agent, and it appeared to have a "cyanide" effect on cancer cells. That aspect of laetrile's theoretical function is masculine and magic bullet-ish. Krebs began using laetrile in cancer treatment in the 1950s. More importantly, laetrile appears to have the properties of a vitamin, and has been called vitamin B-17. In 1970, the McNaughton Foundation filed an Investigational New Drug (IND) application with the FDA. Amygdalin has been used for millennia and was grandfathered when the FDA was founded, which meant that the FDA could never regulate it. The experiments performed by the McNaughton Foundation had quite positive results.[\[238\]](#) In the 1970s, laetrile became the most popular alternative cancer treatment in U. S. history, with tens of thousands of Americans using it. The cancer establishment ruthlessly [wiped out laetrile](#) in the late 1970s and early 1980s. Krebs was [shot at and jailed in California](#), and laetrile was driven from the United States. Most practitioners did not use laetrile as a magic bullet, but as part of a holistic regimen that included diet and lifestyle changes. Most practitioners thought of laetrile in the vitamin category, and saw cancer as a systemic condition, consistent with other alternative treatments.

Dr. Krebs' adventures highlight another aspect of the racket. Because California is the cutting edge of American society in many ways, there are more people in California willing to pursue alternative treatments, and more doctors are willing to provide them, than any place else in America. Consequently, California has the most draconian anti-alternative-cancer-treatment laws and enforcement in the U.S. The racket must be most vigilant where the herd is most restless. There is more medical gangster activity happening in California than any place else in America. For that reason among others, California also has America's most corrupt legal system, as [Dennis](#), [Gary Wean](#) and [Rodney Stich](#) discovered at great personal cost.

The medical establishment in California took out [Dr. Bruce Halstead](#). They raided his home and put him through kangaroo court. Halstead was even forbidden to discuss nutrition with his patients. Halstead watched the medical inquisitors kill his patients by denying them treatment, remarking after he watched one die, "I could not think of a single tyrannical country in which this scenario could have taken place."

They also yanked the license of [Dr. John Richardson](#) for using laetrile. His colleague, Dr. Douglas Brodie (who died in 2005 at age 80), endured many years of harassment from the California medical establishment before he escaped to Nevada and set up shop. I have relatives who are his patients, who traveled great distances to see him.

[Dr. James Privitera](#) also enjoyed a kangaroo court trial and prison for using laetrile. He worked on a road gang in prison, just like in the movies. [Dr. Emory Thurston](#), a professor at the University of Southern California, also had his office raided and was jailed for using laetrile.

Here is a [Medical Dark Ages](#) quote about how it works in California.

"...testifying for Dr. Privitera...To these 19 cancer victims, the enforcement of (California) Health and Safety Code Sect. 1701.1, the denial of them medical treatment, albeit unorthodox, albeit unapproved by a state agency, must surely take on a Kafka-esque, a nightmare quality. No demonstrated public anger, no compelling interest of the state warrants an Orwellian intrusion into the most private of zones of privacy."
- **California Supreme Court Chief Justice, Rose Bird, dissenting opinion.**

Chief Justice Bird was a holdover from the "liberal" days of Governor Jerry Brown. She was about the highest-ranking woman in the U.S. judicial system. During the [Reagan-Bush](#) years, Justice Bird came under fire for all sorts of unpopular "liberal" stands, such as opposing the death penalty. A political campaign was waged and Chief Justice Bird was removed from the bench.

Laetrile also [cost Ralph Moss his job](#). In 1988, John Fink published *Third Opinion*. A second edition came out in 1992. A third edition was published in 1997, but the book is out of print today. The book is a compendium of the world's alternative cancer treatment clinics, and lists more than 100 clinics. In *Third Opinion* were the names Naessens, Privitera, Hoxsey, Gerson, Rife and others that this essay has not mentioned, in the interest of space. Either the pioneers themselves were still at it (such as Privitera after working on a road gang in prison), or their professional or genetic descendents were, such as Gerson's daughter Charlotte.

Dr. Douglas Brodie is in *Third Opinion*. As with Naessens and others, Dr. Brodie's main diagnostic tool is a dark-field microscope, where he can see what is going on before a patient develops clinical cancer.

The goal of virtually all alternative practitioners is preventing cancer in the first place, which means quit smoking, eat healthy, stop drinking, etc. They all encourage their patients to stop the habits that can give them cancer. They never advertise their cure as a "magic bullet." They see their "cure" as part of a holistic treatment designed to bring human bodies back to their naturally healthy state, following the [Hygeiac paradigm](#). When Dr. Brodie saw that his patients were unhealthy by looking at a drop of their blood, his goal was not to be right a year later when they finally manifested tumors, but for them to change their habits before they developed tumors or other disease manifestations such as rheumatoid arthritis.

To use a truly useful alternative cancer treatment, patients often must leave the country. Here is a common dynamic: the main office is in Southern California; they go to the clinic in California and get examined; they do not treat patients in California, or even recommend treatment; they recommend that they visit their clinic in Mexico; then the patients go to Mexico for treatment. That is how they work around the system. There are still dozens of clinics in California, but they play a dangerous game, walking the legal tightrope.

The alternative doctors and clinics in California cannot legally say that they treat cancer, per se. They will say that they are boosting immune systems. They cannot even utter the words "cancer treatment." If people want to survive, they have to play the game and usually end up going to Mexico. The AMA and other medical gangsters do not let up even then. They beat the propaganda war drums, calling Mexico the very bastion of quackery, sending "investigators" down there to expose all the medieval tortures going on in Mexico, the kind of quackery that impossibly reversed [Mr. Professor's gangrene](#).

That is not always enough to keep California doctors out of trouble. There are tales of Mexican clinics mysteriously burning to the ground at night, and stories of doctors mysteriously dying. One got on an elevator alone on the ground floor, and two men got in the elevator with the doctor. When the elevator got to its destination floor, the two men walked out of the elevator and promptly disappeared, and the doctor lay there dead in the elevator, with no sign of foul play. If a thorough autopsy were done, they may have discovered an injection mark in a hard-to-find and unlikely spot. Those folks can bring sophisticated methods into play if they think they need to.

[Dr. Julian Whitaker](#) is one of America's few doctors to stand up to the medical establishment. He has been politically active and high profile. Whitaker has a clinic on the East Coast where he reverses heart disease and diabetes using natural methods and treatments such as chelation, which the medical establishment has been moving to outlaw for a long time. In the March 1995 edition of his *Health and*

Healing newsletter, Whitaker tells it like it is. He knows that gangsters run the medical racket, and candidly admits why he will not treat cancer patients at his clinic.

"I do not, as a rule, treat cancer patients. My reasons for this are very simple. I do not want to live in Mexico, and I do not want to go to jail."[\[239\]](#)

In the July 1994 *Health and Healing* Supplement, Whitaker wrote of two recent FDA Gestapo actions in America. One snuff job happened here in Washington, where the FDA, with guns drawn, raided the clinic of Jonathan Wright. They confiscated over \$100,000 in equipment, patient records, his medical library and even his postage stamps as part of their "investigation." That is the kind of "investigation" that I am all-too-familiar with. They never charged Wright with a crime. Wright was waging a successful lawsuit against the FDA for its banning of L-Tryptophan, and the raid is widely perceived as FDA vengeance on somebody who challenged them. Dr. Whitaker wrote:

"More recently, Lawrence Taylor, a California physician who practices chelation, began treating cancer patients with a nontoxic, innovative therapy comprised of three readily available - and legal - pharmaceuticals. He was also writing prescriptions for a cancer drug (714X) approved in Canada, and his patients were obtaining the drug in a perfectly legal way from that country, and had signed detailed informed consent papers for the therapy.

"At the behest of the FDA, Dr. Taylor was raided by local authorities and FDA representatives. His offices and home were searched, and he was put in jail. His charges included "treating cancer patients with illegal drugs," which is a misdemeanor.

"His bail was set at \$1 million - surely a record for a misdemeanor charge. Bail was reduced to \$100,000 on the condition that he not practice chelation therapy. However, chelation therapy was not mentioned in the affidavit or search warrant. Chelation therapy is used for patients with atherosclerotic diseases - a therapy that I dispense every day in my clinic. It is a perfectly legal and, in my opinion, superior to many surgical therapies used for blocked arteries. This is another example of the arbitrary way in which government authorities squelch innovation and creativity in the medical community.

"For trying to help patients with a promising innovative therapy, Dr. Taylor, like Dr. Wright, will be in the legal fight of his life - against his own government."[\[240\]](#)

In 1988, *Third Opinion* listed a clinic in Tijuana. The clinic operated in Baton Rouge for seven years before moving to Tijuana and was named St. Jude International. [Jimmy Keller](#) was a one-time cancer patient himself, and ran the clinic. He had facial skin cancer, originally went the orthodox route and lost some facial features. Before he lost his entire face, he discovered an alternative treatment, which saved his face and life. He opened a clinic to use it on cancer. The treatment did not attack the tumor. The patients ate strictly raw fruits and vegetables, and nothing else was permitted. The therapy itself consisted of polypeptide injections, vitamin injections, amino acid IVs, prayer and the like. That holistic treatment built up the body so it could deal with the cancer itself. The recommended three-week treatment cost less than \$4000, paltry by American medical standards. The same treatment in an American hospital would cost \$20,000 at the very least. Many miracle cures accompanied Keller's eclectic treatments.

Keller's clinic is not listed in the 1992 edition of *Third Opinion*. Why? Although Keller moved to Mexico, he did not count on how far the American medical gangsters would go to get him. An account of what happened to Mr. Keller comes from [the husband of a woman who was being treated in Keller's clinic when they came for him](#). In 1991, Keller was abducted at gunpoint by bounty hunters working for the U.S. Justice Department, at the

behest of the FDA. In a blatant violation of international law and Mexico's sovereignty, the U.S. Justice Department paid to have Keller kidnapped from Tijuana. When his kidnappers arrived in California with their prey, Keller was placed in the custody of the U.S. Justice Department. His "crime" was wire fraud: making interstate telephone calls to attract people to his clinic in Mexico. Keller was convicted to spend two years in a federal penitentiary. That is why he was not listed in the 1992 edition of *Third Opinion*. That is justice, American style.

Examining U.S. law, its enforcement, and how the United States respects international law begins treading bizarre territory. Not even Hitler could get away with kidnapping people and bringing them back from foreign soil. In 1937, a German emigrant was kidnapped by Himmler's boys in Switzerland and brought to Germany to face the Third Reich's wrath. The Swiss government protested, citing basic international law, and the Third Reich returned the person to Switzerland.^[241] America has about zero respect for international law, and has been the world's leading nation in [undermining humanitarian efforts](#). In light of the U.S. record of respect for international law and order, kidnapping Jimmy Keller to wipe out another person curing cancer is a minor instance of U.S. international gangsterism.^[242] Jimmy was released from prison and put on parole, and mere days before his parole was complete in 1998, they threw him back in prison, and he got out in 2001 and suffered a stroke that incapacitated him. Such is the fate of the true medical heroes of our time.

Keller's case was part of a trend of U.S. government kidnappings abroad, in full defiance of international law. In 1990, the Drug Enforcement Agency had Dr. Humberto Alvarez Machain kidnapped from Mexico. Dr. Machain was a Mexican citizen. In [an incredible U.S. Supreme Court ruling](#), the kidnapping was determined legal, because the extradition treaty with Mexico did not explicitly state, in the words of Chief Justice William Rehnquist, "no kidnapping allowed."^[243] The kidnapping of Keller was also the first salvo in a campaign of FDA raids and snuff jobs that swept the nation during the 1990s. Patients died from interruption of treatment, etc.^[244] The Supreme Court's ethical bankruptcy and outright criminality was displayed on the world stage as it participated in the banana republic, [coup d'état "election" of George Bush the Second](#), while the [media covered for them](#).

I have only met one person who ever pursued an alternative cancer treatment. At age thirty-eight, in 1992, she developed an ovarian cyst and underwent surgery to remove it. When she awoke from surgery, her doctor gave her the bad news. While operating, he discovered ovarian cancer and gave her a hysterectomy. He said that her only chance of survival was beginning chemotherapy immediately.

My friend is quite a woman. She escaped the Kentucky holler where she was raised, got an education and became the kind of schoolteacher that every student wants and remembers. The woman is not possessed of a dazzling intellect, something she readily admits, but she did something that not one person in a hundred (thousand?) would have done in her position.

She knew nothing about alternatives, and knew almost nothing about cancer. She vaguely remembered an acquaintance who was seemingly cured of prostate cancer by using an alternative method. Her naïveté worked to her advantage. She asked her doctor if he had ever cured anybody of ovarian cancer. After beating around the bush, he admitted that he had not. He said he had three living patients, but that one would likely die soon. He added that he had only been an oncologist for five years, and did not have a record of accomplishment built up yet. She then asked him then if his experienced colleagues could give her the names of their surviving patients. Her doctor said that he did not know anybody.

She called and talked to the Fred Hutchinson Research Center (one of the most respected cancer clinics in the world, here in Seattle, which has recently been the center of scandal, because it performed involuntary human experiments), the American Cancer Society, the National Cancer Institute, various cancer treatment centers in the United States, and cancer hotlines and support groups. Her ear was red and sore from being on the phone for about two weeks, calling all over America, spending hours on hold. She got copies of her slides and medical reports, obtained as much literature as she could find, and shopped for a doctor. She talked to her acquaintance about his prostate cancer cure. He said his doctor was Glenn Warner, and Dr. Warner cured him using immunotherapy. Orthodox medicine repeatedly told her that the survival rate for her cancer was about 10%. She was not encouraged.

She went to seven doctors, all orthodox oncologists except Dr. Warner. She asked each doctor for the names and phone numbers of surviving patients. To those orthodox oncologists, giving references to patients was beyond the pale of appropriate doctor-patient relations. Only Dr. Warner consented to give her names of his surviving patients (the others may not have had any, or none that were willing to talk about their experiences under that doctor's care). That was the main reason she chose Dr. Warner. The other reason was that he treated her the most kindly and personably of the seven doctors.

She and her husband radically changed their diets and became vegans. Today her husband is a stricter [vegan](#) than she is and runs marathons, and is in better physical condition than anyone I know.

My friend underwent Dr. Warner's gentle treatment, fully recovered from ovarian cancer and looks forward to living to a ripe old age. The year she began treatment with him, the witch hunt began. The medical authorities swooped down on Dr. Warner, although practically everything he was doing was mainstream treatment. As with other doctors who attract the medical inquisition's attention, Warner's greatest defenders were his patients, and my friend was active in campaigning to protect him. It did not matter however, and they yanked his license to practice medicine. Recently the state revoked the license of about the only other alternative cancer treatment doctor in Washington, Dr. Bolles. With the alternative doctors taken care of, the Seattle option is to go to mainstream oncologists who will never give out the name of a patient who survived their treatment.

Dr. Warner died in 2001 at a ripe old age, and my friend attended his funeral. She considers Dr. Warner about the kindest and most loving person she ever met, who also possessed integrity of the highest order. At his funeral, the church was packed to the rafters with hundreds of people, coming to celebrate his life. During the ceremony, somebody stood up asked for everybody who was a patient of Dr. Warner to raise their hand, and most did. Then those whose loved ones were treated by Dr. Warner were also asked to raise their hand, and nearly every hand in the church was raised. Probably no mainstream oncologist ever had a funeral like that.

Are They Really that Blind?

When orthodoxy "investigates" alternatives, their investigations often seem doomed from the start. At [Naessens'](#) trial, a booklet was introduced into evidence about orthodox experiments using 714X. The experiments of Gaétan Jasmin were prominent, and he testified about his results. The prosecution held up Jasmin's work as "proof" that Naessens' treatment did not work. Jasmin performed cancer research using 714X, used on rats. As my work makes clear, 714X does not attack the tumor, as typical chemotherapy does, but instead rehabilitates the immune system. It also must be administered via the lymphatic system in order to be effective; intra-lymphatic injection is the most effective route of administration. Although originally in contact with Naessens, Jasmin made unilateral decisions, unknown to Naessens, which doomed his research. Since rats are rather small creatures, their lymph nodes would be difficult to locate and inject, so Jasmin simply injected the rats under their skin or in their abdomen, completely defeating the research. If you cut your finger, would drinking hydrogen peroxide disinfect the wound? Would rubbing cough syrup on one's neck help alleviate a sore throat? Would swallowing a suppository ameliorate hemorrhoids? To be charitable, Jasmin's work could merely be called uninformed and sloppy. Jasmin testified that 714X had no "antitumoral" effects.[\[245\]](#) In other words, 714X did not attack the tumor. Jasmin may have been so [blinded by his paradigm](#) that he had no idea how 714X worked, as well as no understanding of how to properly administer it. Such shoddy and worthless research would be embarrassing enough to admit even being done, but it was used as "proof" that 714X did not work. Was that an intentional sabotage of the research? Just how blind was Jasmin, really?

The dynamics demonstrated in this essay are not unique to the medical racket's cancer arm. It extends to heart disease and the cozy relationship that the drug and biomedical companies have with the FDA, NIH, NCI, AMA, ACS, etc. It extends to the insurance companies, as they control the purse strings. Taken as a whole, of the well more than one trillion dollars spent each year on health care in America, at least 80% is probably a complete and fraudulent waste of money. It might be as high as 90%. The food processing, tobacco and chemical companies are part of the scene, helping to create the patients that keep the cash

registers singing. There is a comprehensive infrastructure that creates and is nourished by all the death and suffering.

If America had a sane system, the nation's food bill might go up as Americans spend more time and effort to have a truly healthy food supply, without all the processing to make it "better," and the chemicals, hormones and other poisons that are put into it. Dead food is inferior food. The nation's health bill would consequently drop to almost zero if we went back to live food, the food processors would go out of business, and chemicals would stop poisoning the environment and our health. At the footnote that ends this sentence, are presented sources of information to find out more.[\[246\]](#) There are avenues to pursue today to begin making a [healthy food supply globally available](#), with zero environmental impact.

A generation ago, high fiber foods became fashionable. Many breads were suddenly advertised as containing high fiber, but the breads sold by the big food processors are nearly devoid of nutritional value. Bleached flour is "enriched" by spraying it with vitamins, etc. It turned out that the fiber being put into those breads was sometimes sawdust, as wood is full of cellulose, the ultimate, indigestible "fiber." Granola was a conscious attempt to counter the non-nutritional breakfast cereals that the food processors sold. In my late teens I saw an advertisement for granola "puffs." It was a perfect, Orwellian parody of the cereal companies' attitude, but it was a real product.

There are countless instances of that type of "nutritious" food being sold to Americans, and it is legitimate to wonder if it is a conscious plan to ruin America's health, as [fluoridation](#) may be. Author Bill Bryson commented on the American diet with:

"Clearly, some time ago makers and consumers of American junk food passed jointly through some kind of sensibility barrier in the endless quest for new taste sensations. Now they are a little like those desperate junkies who have tried every known drug and are finally reduced to mainlining toilet-bowl cleanser in an effort to get still higher."[\[247\]](#)

If Bryson's observation does not make sense to an American, turn on the TV and count the junk food commercials (fast food qualifies) that air in a typical hour of commercial TV. Then take an inventory of the percentage of overweight adults (it is more than 50%, in the United States) encountered during an average day in public venues. If smoking adults are eliminated from the sample, might it be as high as 65%?

In *Racketeering in Medicine*, James Carter, M.D., writes about "secret teams" and "strike forces" that wipe out alternative medicine to keep the racket protected. There is evidence for their existence, similar to the [secret teams that protect the energy racket](#). The story of how the FDA wiped out L-tryptophan is an example of how conscious the gangsterism might be. L-tryptophan is an amino acid, a naturally occurring building block of human bodies. The body readily metabolizes L-tryptophan into serotonin, another natural body chemical that makes people feel good. For many years, people across the world had been taking L-tryptophan for a variety of maladies, including insomnia and depression, with no ill effects.

Via the mechanism that [Edward Griffin](#) described, the biomedical and pharmaceutical companies essentially own the FDA. It is a classic case of [capturing the regulator](#), transforming a public watchdog into an industrial attack dog. Consequently, the FDA's general philosophy is protecting and promoting drugs and other lucrative products sold by its rich patrons, and wiping out natural remedies and other inexpensive health solutions. Under the FDA's ministrations, natural remedies, health supplements and their practitioners are wiped out, replaced by lucrative artificial "medicines." The FDA has been trying to regulate vitamins and herbs for many years. Every time they try it, there is public outcry, senators and congressional representatives feel the heat from their constituents, and the FDA is beaten back. They are not thwarted for long, however, as health supplements can be a lucrative business, once they become classified as drugs and can only be made by drug companies, sold only with a doctor's prescription. That might seem extreme, but it accurately describes what the FDA has been doing for generations. The case of L-tryptophan is a standard case of

FDA racketeering.

Because millions of people had taken L-tryptophan and had no ill effects while receiving substantial health benefits, the drug companies were chomping at the bit to take over that market. In 1989, a Japanese company began manufacturing L-Tryptophan, using a new process and a genetically engineered organism to produce it. That is exactly the kind of [biomedical "invention" that may kill off humanity someday](#), but since the companies doing those Frankensteinian experiments own the FDA, the FDA cannot seem to see any danger in new processes that use genetically engineered organisms.

The new process used by the Japanese company introduced a toxin to the L-tryptophan that they produced, and it caused a new disorder known as Eosinophilia-Mayalgia Syndrome. In 1989, more than two thousand Americans contracted the disease, and twenty died. The case of L-tryptophan and the Japanese company is a cautionary tale of humankind's cleverness and its dangers. Using artificial methods of producing natural substances is perilous. What did the FDA do when the L-tryptophan produced by genetically engineered organisms killed twenty people? The FDA banned L-tryptophan! That is similar to banning milk because one company created genetically engineered cows that produced milk that caused disease.

At first, the disease was traced to L-Tryptophan, but that was obviously not the end of the trail. The FDA saw its chance to enact its long-held wish to ban L-tryptophan. A child could have taken the investigation further, and shown that all the L-tryptophan that killed people was traced to the same Japanese company. The FDA pounced on all the naturally produced L-tryptophan, and ignored the Japanese company. They continued letting the Japanese company's L-tryptophan get sold in making intravenous feeding solutions and infant formulas. While the FDA was "heroically" banning naturally produced L-tryptophan, it continued to allow the sales of the artificially produced L-tryptophan.

When one child subsequently died, the FDA finally (and quietly) banned the Japanese company's L-tryptophan.[\[248\]](#) Instead of taking a hard look at genetically engineered products, the FDA banned a naturally occurring one, which has consequently been a gold mine for the drug companies. With that natural antidepressant banned, the path was cleared for Prozac and the avalanche of antidepressant drugs that dominated the 1990s. The drug company cash registers are ringing mightily, thanks to the FDA. Many years later, L-tryptophan is still banned, but Americans can get it with a doctor's prescription...for six times what it used to cost, only obtainable through drug companies. How blind are they, or did I just see them wink at me?

The FDA continues its campaign against vitamins and herbs. The goal is making them only obtainable through a drug company with a doctor's prescription, making it several times more expensive than it is today. It is gangsterism, pure and simple, done to "protect" the public. The logical conclusion of that mentality is making food and water prescription drugs, maybe even air. Then the biomedical companies will have it all locked up. In addition, with patenting all of their genetically engineered "products," the dark path that trajectory is charting will eventually have the biomedical companies owning life itself. The logical conclusion to that mentality will be outlawing natural and "inferior" procreation, only allowing genetically engineered, test-tube-hatched babies. Science fiction stories have been written about those futuristic events. They are not so fictional. Some people alive today may [reincarnate in a world like that](#).

The organic food industry made the mistake of asking the USDA to regulate it, since there were many unscrupulous "organic" farmers who sold food that was not really organic, as organic. In 1998, there was a major consumer effort to stop an [agribusiness](#) takeover of the industry, and the battle is not finished.

Similar to "[vegetarian](#)," "organic" is a misnomer, as the movement is more of an effort to counter the agribusiness mentality, with its artificial fertilizers, genetically engineered life, radiating food, and so on, and get back to natural methods. Agribusiness companies control the USDA, just as the drug companies control the FDA. In response to the organic industry's request, the USDA drafted some standards, all right. Among the practices the USDA was going to certify as "organic" were: genetically engineered products, crops fertilized with [highly toxic sewage sludge](#), and radiated food. It was the agribusiness definition of organic. An internal USDA memo that *Mother Jones* obtained in 1998 showed that the USDA was influenced by the biotech companies, which was why its original standard classified genetically engineered food as organic.

The organic industry is also far more holistic than what is put on the crops. The [humane treatment of farm animals](#) is also part of the program, something the USDA has ignored.

The USDA's originally proposed standard would have eliminated organic food as it is known today. Because about 250,000 Americans protested, the USDA backed down on round one, but the issue is far from resolved. Part of the law the USDA is trying to push through is outlawing any higher standards. If they alter the organic standard so that genetically engineered produce can be called "organic," it will become illegal to create a "higher" organic standard. It is as if Lucifer himself is writing the law. Is the USDA really that blind, or do they know exactly what they are doing?

The way carcinogens are identified, and how foods are called healthy or not, is also part of the insanity. What the geniuses who designed this system do is take broccoli, for instance, and feed it to a million white rats. Then they look for statistical differences between those rats and a control population. That practice is evil simply because nearly 100 million animals die each year in those experiments. The insane part is its reductionistic aspect. The revelations of [Béchamp](#) and others are completely lost on today's scientists. The dynamics of life and disease are profoundly misunderstood. Live food gives life. Dead food gives death. It is nearly that simple, but do not tell that to those scientists in their lab coats with their millions of caged animals. Can they really be that blind?

Around 1995, I heard something on the radio that made me laugh. There was a major announcement: scientists had discovered that eating fresh fruits and vegetables prevented cancer, but they had not yet isolated the exact chemical responsible for it. If they do (they will not, because it is not one chemical, but because they are live foods), there will soon be marketed the fruit and vegetable pill, provided by our friendly drug companies. Can they really be that blind?

Human beings, as with all animals, are not designed to digest the concentrated carbohydrates that refined sugar provides. Human bodies react as if a bomb is dropped into it. All those concentrated carbohydrates entering the stomach are like a five-alarm fire sounding in the pancreas. Insulin is what the human body produces to digest carbohydrates.

Fruits have sugars in them, but human bodies are specially designed to digest fruit, as humanity's [great ape cousins demonstrate](#). The human pancreas reacts to fruit as it is supposed to, releasing insulin gradually to assimilate the fruit's sugars. When refined sugar hits the human digestive system, it is another matter entirely. Cane sugar is sucrose, and fruit sugars are usually fructose and glucose. Glucose runs the human body. The unusual sucrose is a minor issue when compared to its highly concentrated nature. No animal (except bears and skunks raiding beehives, although they raid the hives to eat the bee larvae more than the honey) is subject to the concentrated carbohydrates of refined sugar. The pancreas is subject to a jolt it has never encountered in nature. It immediately produces great amounts of insulin to deal with the threat of that sugar hitting the body. In a sugar-eating society, after years of that abuse the pancreas gives up the ghost, leading to what is known as diabetes. Also, insulin helps digest fat, and the high fat content in the "civilized" diet contributes to diabetes in the same way that sugar does, and ditto for relationship with insulin, protein and the high protein content of the American diet. In fact, as with cancer, rheumatoid arthritis and many other degenerative diseases, diabetes is an immune system problem. With diabetes, the immune system attacks the pancreas.

Similar to the situation with cancer and arterial disease, the other two degenerative disease killers in America, one will not find the medical establishment stating that a disease where people can no longer digest sugar, has anything to do with ingesting refined sugar! There are many financial interests that use sugar in their food processing, and preventing disease takes money from the medical establishment's coffers. I just looked through my Mayo Clinic CD-ROM, and not one mention was made of that relationship. Scan the Internet and try to find that relationship mentioned or even suspected in mainstream sources. I could not. I do not know of a relationship more obvious, but their "research" has not quite made the connection yet. A five-year-old can see that relationship, but billions of dollars in medical research, with highly trained "experts" cannot seem to see it. Wink, nudge. Just as "medicine" could not find any relationship between smoking and disease, or diet and heart disease, or diet and cancer, or it believed that hardening of the arteries was "normal," or that developing cancer is a normal aging process, it still cannot detect a relationship between refined sugar

and diabetes. Can they really be that blind?

Refined sugar creates more tooth decay than any other "food." The ADA gets a lot of money from sugar companies, just as the AMA got a lot of money from the tobacco companies. Refined sugar is another aspect of the "civilized" diet whereby people become obese.

Agribusiness and food processing companies sponsor nutritional training in American schools and universities. Food processors bankrolled the Harvard Department of Nutrition, and "coincidentally" the department founder and head, [Frederick Stare](#), could never seem to doubt the salubrious nutritional properties of processed food. With [Steven Milloy](#)'s now known role as a tobacco company front man, it is difficult to chalk up his stance to blindness, especially when his "sound science" challenged the EPA's findings on the damage that second-hand smoke produces. McDonalds opens outlets in schools and hospitals. It is well known that [its nutritional value is abysmally low](#), and even admitted by McDonalds. Can they all be that blind?

Morris Fishbein [actively promoted cigarettes for a generation](#). Even in Fishbein's time, cigarettes were well known to be highly carcinogenic. The same man also helped wipe out numerous cancer cures and tried buying some out so he could monopolize them. Is it really so ridiculous to ponder that he was intentionally promoting the single greatest cause of cancer while trying to cash in on providing its treatment? Was he really that blind? If Fishbein and his buddies looked no further than their greed and lust for power, did nobody else see the dynamics that are so clear to others and myself? Are all the medical gangsters really that blind, or do some know exactly what they are doing?

Artificial chemicals are proliferating at an exponential rate, while human biology slowly evolves. Modern "medicine's" answer to degenerative disease is introducing more artificial chemicals into the body, drugs that violently manipulate the body's biochemistry, while medicine is confident that new artificial practices can overcome the artificial practices that created the disease in the first place. One definition of insanity is doing the same thing over and over, expecting a different outcome each time. Can they really be that blind?

One critical aspect of that system I have never seen addressed is the barrage of artificial chemicals that are introduced to human biology these days. It is guaranteed that each new chemical confuses the human body. The body may think it is a vital enzyme and will try incorporating it, but it obviously fails to properly do so.[\[249\]](#) The body may correctly eliminate the chemical from the body, but it may not. All those chemicals create problems for the human body, even the most "benign" of them. What is the effect of bombardment of all those chemicals at once, although none of them are ingested in large amounts? To my knowledge, science has not pursued that line of investigation. The exponential proliferation of chemicals, particularly in the past half of the twentieth century, has subjected Westerners to a barrage of chemicals never before encountered. It is wishful thinking to believe that humanity has evolved to effectively adapt. The cumulative effect of those artificial chemicals and dead food may be helping to weary the body to the point of degeneration.

Because the process of becoming "modern" has taken many thousands of years, people psychologically adapt to their artifices even if their bodies do not. Consequently, few in America seem to think it remarkable that two-thirds of Americans die of degenerative diseases such as arterial disease, cancer and diabetes. They think it is "normal." Ancient practices such as fasting are viewed by Americans with consternation. Much of the ancient wisdom has been lost in the rush to "modernize." Less than 20% of the chimpanzee's (our closest biological cousin) dietary calories come from fat. The "low fat" heart disease reversal diet of [Dean Ornish](#) has fat comprise about 10% of calories at most. A few years ago, research results were announced in which American women were put on a "low fat" diet to see if it helped prevent cancer, and it apparently did not. What was the fat percent in that "low fat" diet? 25%. It may have been "low" as compared to the average American diet's 43% fat content, but how can it really be considered low? Is that blindness? Is it intentional?

Are We Really That Free?

This essay is attempting to make clear that there is a *medical-industrial complex*, and its main concerns are amassing and maintaining wealth and power. The public's health is far from its main concern. The same is true for [energy](#), my erstwhile profession of [public accounting](#), and [every profession and industry](#) I have looked into. More than two centuries ago, Adam Smith observed that every professional and trade organization is a conspiracy against the public's interest, its members attending to their mutual self-interest, not the public's. Nothing has changed from his time. Dennis Lee, the most astute observer of the human condition I ever met, once told me that our society's institutions are corrupt because people are corrupt.

Just how free are we in the United States, supposedly the world's freest nation? Mexican citizens enjoy far more freedom in choosing their cancer treatment than American citizens do. [Benjamin Rush's prophetic warning](#) has apparently come to pass. Regarding energy, the same situation exists. People have little viable alternative to what the big energy companies sell, and [wiping out the competition](#) is also how today's energy racket was created and is maintained. Similarly, Americans theoretically have freedom of information access. America's media is [anything but free](#). If people do not have easy access to important information, how can they make intelligent decisions? There are many instances of censorship in the West's free press that far surpasses anything that the Soviet Union or communist China pulled off. The Western press' awe-inspiring censorship of [Mark Twain](#) and [George Orwell](#)'s work are two examples.

How can Americans choose their cancer treatment when they are not even aware of the alternatives, and if they are ever mentioned, it is usually in the context of its practitioners being jailed and demonized? How free is America, really?

Not *all* drugs and surgical procedures are useless. They are based on male principles, and violent medicine has little place in the healing arts. During these times, with the attitudes that prevail, there may be *some* place for *some* surgical procedures and *some* drugs. I do not advocate making *any* drug or surgical procedure illegal. If people want to use them, fine, but do not *force* people to, and wipe out options for gentle medicine, to "protect" them. Killing patients with violent and expensive medicine, while the gentle, inexpensive, and arguably far more effective medicines are outlawed, is a racket. Outlawing books that tell me how to heal myself (such as [Stale Food Versus Fresh Food](#)) is racketeering activity. What the medical gangsters have done to [Rife](#), [Hoxsey](#), [Gerson](#), [Ivy](#), [Durovic](#), [Privitera](#), [Krebs](#), [Koch](#), [Crane](#), [Warner](#), [Keller](#), [Ghadiali](#), [Beard](#), [Taylor](#), [Wright](#), [Brodie](#), [Naessens](#), [Burzynski](#), [Halstead](#), [Richardson](#), [Thurston](#), [Pixley](#), [Bolles](#) and many others are great crimes, nearly invariably done in the name of "protecting the public." [Morris Fishbein](#)'s efforts to help tobacco companies produce highly dubious "research" in order to make [health claims for their cigarettes](#) was surreal. Fishbein covering up disease outbreaks, leading to more people getting the disease, was not the practice of "medicine."

Are we really that free? Regarding big issues of life and death, Americans appear to be one of the world's least free people, although their cage is seemingly invisible, and when they notice those bars once in awhile, they think they are there to keep the bad guys out, not to pen themselves in. Also, with the U.S.' global cultural, economic and military hegemony, this American-based medical paradigm is taking over the entire planet's medical system, as the medical racket goes global.

My Personal Encounters with 714X

After years of talking to whomever I thought might listen, I finally got somebody convinced to at least try Naessens' 714X treatment. The person did not have cancer, but psoriasis (it seems that 714X works for that too), and an awesome case of it. The person would not do the intra-lymphatic injections, which is the most effective route of administration, but opted for a far less effective inhaler method, and he only did it for a week, then stopped treatment and never started it again. That was no victory at all, but I obtained the 714X for him, and that was an adventure.

In Julian Whitaker's February 1995 supplement of *Health and Healing* I was excited to see that somebody was importing 714X into the United States. I kept that in mind, and when I finally convinced somebody to try

714X in 1996, I called the number in Whitaker's newsletter.

The 714X importing company was in nearby New York (I lived in New Jersey at the time), but when I called, they were out of business. Charles Pixley ran the company, but I talked to his son-in-law. I heard the long, sad story from him. Pixley had been playing the FDA's game, and contacted them to get the ball rolling to legally import 714X to the United States, so people could legally use it under the informed consent concept (which means that the patient signs an affidavit stating that they are aware of the "unapproved" nature of their treatment, but are exercising their free will to take it...an unassailable stance, but one that the American medical establishment has assailed many times). Pixley initiated an Institutional Review Board (IRB) in 1992, which is the standard first step in making the substance legal to use in America. Here is part of what *The Winds* web site published on what happened next.

"Pixley states that from the inception of the IRB in April of 1992, they were visited regularly by the FDA who "requested and received copies of all available research, toxicology studies, spectrographic chemical evaluations, rat studies, patient histories, books, tapes, and samples of the 714X." Even though they cooperated fully with the FDA, in 1995 their office was raided. Computers, books, tapes, business records and patients' personal medical records were seized.

"After several attempts, the U.S. Attorney succeeded in having a Grand Jury indict him and his corporation as co-conspirators for "conspiring to defraud the United States by importation of an unapproved new drug," a felony under Title 18 U.S.C. 321. Pixley later determined through the Freedom of Information Act that this FDA regulation had never been published in the Federal Register and, therefore, was not promulgated according to the law. This did not seem to matter. Pixley was ordered into Federal Court in April of 1996."

When I talked to Pixley's son in law, they had already convicted Pixley, and they had already spent hundreds of thousands of dollars trying to defend themselves, and were trying to raise money for an appeal. *The Winds* tells what happened next.

"As a defense Pixley planned to expose the evident policy of the FDA to suppress life-saving therapies, both to protect the profits of the medical/pharmaceutical cartels and to carry out a larger agenda of population reduction. The prosecution "filed a 'motion in limine', which was designed to prevent me from saying anything or putting up any defense whatsoever," Pixley told The WINDS. "Even though they didn't know what my defense was going to be, they had an inkling that I was going to start accusing the government of genocide" before the jury. "Their goal was to put me away no matter what." Pixley was found guilty and sentenced to nineteen years in prison. His sentence was later reduced on appeal to a year and a month, partly, he feels, because he was allowed to present arguments detailing the government's suppression of non-orthodox therapies.

"During his interview with The WINDS, Pixley did not dwell on his trial and imprisonment or even his financial devastation and lifetime status of "convicted felon." He speaks and writes mainly of the medical monopoly and its protectors at the FDA, as well as the thousands of cancer patients that are denied alternatives. "In my view," he writes, "the ones who are being punished are the American people who are denied access to life-saving therapies."

That did not happen in the 1940s with Fishbein at the helm, but in the "enlightened" 1990s. At the same time the skids were being greased for Mr. Pixley, another Eastern European who had come to the land of the free was fighting for his life in Texas. The same week that I was talking to Pixley's son-in-law, I was contacting [Dr. Stanislaw Burzynski](#)'s clinic in Texas, offering them support in his battle against the FDA. Burzynski was

a medical/scientific prodigy from Poland who came to the land of the free in 1970. He eventually developed an ingenious cancer treatment that dealt with peptides and amino acids. His treatment "reprograms" cancer cells. It plays with their "heads," as 714X does. Burzynski's treatment, as with nearly all the alternative cancer treatments, is non-toxic and harmless. Patients can take it all day long with no ill effects. It does not attack the body. In Moss' *The Cancer Industry*, he devotes his largest chapter to the attacks Burzynski has been weathering from the FDA, ACS and other cancer establishment members since the early 1980s. The FDA had been after Burzynski for many years.

The 1996-1997 trial was an attempt to put Burzynski behind bars for the rest of his life. In 1996, Burzynski's clinic in Texas had about 100 medical doctors and scientists working at it. Dr. Burzynski's fiercest supporters are the patients who have been rescued from certain death by his treatment. The videotaped testimony by his patients in Washington D.C. was heartbreaking and heartwarming.

They do not usually wipe out somebody like Burzynski for a crime of moral turpitude, but by some obscure regulation that nobody has ever heard of. In a neat Orwellian twist, Burzynski's trial had nothing to do with whether his treatment worked or not. The judge even ruled before the trial that whether or not his antineoplaston treatment worked was irrelevant to the issue being tried, and he would not allow patient testimony. The trial was about such highly important issues such as whether his treatment had crossed state lines. The common people made noise with his trial, similar to what happened at Naessens' trial. The media across the U.S. was openly wondering if Burzynski was the target of an FDA vendetta. Burzynski was acquitted, while the nation witnessed the types of witch hunting activities that the FDA engages in. It was encouraging.

Pixley's son-in-law said that they could not help me, and had me contact Naessens directly. They were opening an academy to train people to evaluate somatidian dynamics. When I ordered the 714X, they sent it to me and enclosed a bill. I have never gotten anything by mail order like that, and internationally to boot. They sent it for free, and trusted me to send them a check later.

Naessens, as with Rife, worked hard on making a microscope that can see the little bodies for a reasonable price. He sells a retrofit kit for a few thousand dollars. From scratch, for less than \$10,000 and some training, anybody can be a junior Naessens, analyzing somatidian dynamics (at their academy, they want somebody with *some* technical skills). It is a pittance compared to electron microscopes and other high tech medical technology. Naessens referred me to somebody in America who could help me get a scope together and be in business. The man was helpful. The new biology is there, and it is accessible. It is not arcane, only for the initiated. Naessens' organization sells an excellent video that not only shows the somatid forms, but shows people how to inject themselves with 714X.

Far more than 10,000 people have now taken 714X, mainly in Canada. Many lives have been saved. Unfortunately, when it gets that popular, many people are probably using it as a magic bullet and not changing their diets, etc., which Naessens also recommends. As with all the other alternatives, its long-term effectiveness is directly proportional to how well the patients adopt a healthy lifestyle once the 714X kick-starts their immune system. Naessens has never sold 714X as a cure for cancer, per se. He says 714X is designed to help the immune system recover, not to cure disease.

To my delight, when I got the 714X, enclosed was a copy of Ralph Moss' 1995 2nd edition of his *The Cancer Chronicles*. He devoted an issue of his newsletter to Naessens. In Moss' words,

"Hardly a week goes by that I am not approached by advocates of some new cancer treatment. There are 102 methods in my book *Cancer Therapy*, and future editions will hold more. One can go batty sorting out the claims.

"This spring I decided I need to go deeper into a few such methods. Just then, a longtime friend suffered a relapse of her breast cancer. IAT therapy, which for years had held her cancer at bay, was no longer working. But when she added 714X, her breast tumor vanished. It made me sit up and take notice."

Moss made three trips to Canada, investigating Naessens, and that issue of *The Cancer Chronicles* was Moss' first double issue. Moss is the most conservative and informed voice in alternative cancer therapy, but he was nearly giddy when describing Naessens' discoveries, writing, "If he is right (and I think he is) then he is a really great genius."

The battle continues in America, although there is reason for hope. In the April 30, 2001 edition of *People* magazine, the cover story was Suzanne Somers and her use of an alternative cancer therapy. At least alternatives are getting *some* coverage, although the *People* headline was "Is She Risking Her Life?" While giving rather sympathetic treatment of Somers' choice, *People* ran a side box interview of a woman, Barrie Casileth of [Sloan-Kettering](#), under the title "Let the Patient Beware." The Casileth interview concluded with a [Rush](#)-style, masculine medicine admonition, "Surgery and radiation and/or chemotherapy become crucial. Cancer is a terrible foe and it requires the most powerful treatment that we have available."

In the 1960s, the AMA organized an attack on chiropractors, and was convicted of a conspiracy against them in 1987. Just as it lost its legal battle, a spiritual descendant of Fishbein began his career. Nearly identical to Fishbein's "war on quacks," Dr. Stephen Barrett founded a "quackbuster" effort. In substance and sometimes tenor, his work is not far removed from [Steve Milloy's](#). Anybody can read the "quackbuster" work for themselves, and see how the "quackbusters" ply their trade. Similar to Fishbein, Barrett is not a practicing physician, and does not even have a medical license, losing a libel suit not long ago over being called a quack himself.

Fortunately, more than a TV personality such as Somers is making headlines over the cancer issue. In the June 4, 2001 issue of *The New Yorker*, Jerome Groopman's article, titled "The Thirty Years' War - Have we been fighting cancer the wrong way?" was the featured article, running under the headline "No Cure for Cancer." Groopman's article discusses the complete failure of the "war on cancer." While not straying from orthodox treatments and its paradigm, Groopman admits the obvious: the orthodox war on cancer is a failure. Also, note the masculine warfare imagery.

In January 2002, there was noise being made in Boston, as local cancer patients got 714X from Canada and cured their cancer. Naessens is finally making the news in the United States. Whether this time has a happy ending for American cancer patients is largely up to the patients themselves.

As this site was being finished, Ralph Moss published his impressions after attending the 2002 Meeting of the American Society of Clinical Oncology (ASCO).[\[250\]](#) It is a huge event, with 26,000 attendees. Moss noted that at least there was "some" rational discussion about alternative therapies, not the hysterical "anti-heretic" diatribes directed toward it during the 2000 ASCO meeting. However, Moss was disappointed to see that virtually none of those who spoke about alternative therapies had *any experience* with them, and none of them had much good to say about them. Many people in the audience had vast experience with alternative therapies, very positive experience, but none of them were invited to speak. Moss said the meeting left him with a "hollow feeling." In the oncology business, all alternative therapies are called "Complementary and Alternative Medicine," or CAM. CAM is commonly used as an epithet. I get a sinking feeling that if the derision declines and the orthodox herd begins discovering the merits of therapies that do not attack the tumor, the observations of [Moss](#) and [James](#) will again be borne out: *the orthodox establishment's members will claim they discovered it themselves*.

As is obvious, the state of American medicine is horrifying. Millions of people are being sacrificed in the name of [greed](#). Most of what is spent in Western medicine produces mainly suffering and death. As Robert Mendelsohn brilliantly laid it out in his *Confessions of a Medical Heretic*, the God of Western Medicine is death. If a person wants to meet their maker, and soon, then they should submit to modern medicine's ministrations. [Barry Lynes](#), who also wrote the definitive book on [Rife](#), in his heartfelt and thoughtful monograph *Helping the Cancer Victim*, summed up the obstacles in bringing sanity to the world of cancer treatment. He wrote,

"The crafting of new cancer laws will require great care and wisdom. The selection of unbiased, competent witnesses will be a difficult task, especially when orthodox medicine begins pushing its political weight around to stop the process, to silence the voices of change, to water down any proposed legislation, to continue...the killing.

"The outcries against the proposed new cancer laws will be loud, emotional and designed to distract attention from the real questions and legitimate health concerns. The behind-the-scenes actions by the Medical Monopolists will be cold, calculating and brutal. Too much money is at stake to imagine that this conflict will be anything but bloody, with good and evil having a monumental showdown before it is over."[\[251\]](#)

Amen Barry, Amen.

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) See that quote in Cremo and Thompson's *Forbidden Archeology*, p. 23.

[\[2\]](#) See Kuhn, *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*, p. 151.

[\[3\]](#) See Heisenberg, *Encounters with Einstein*, p. 121. Einstein made his remark regarding Heisenberg's quantum theories that introduced randomness to the mechanics of atoms.

[\[4\]](#) See their mystical writings in Ken Wilber's *Quantum Questions*.

[\[5\]](#) See Ken Wilber's *Quantum Questions*, pp. 101-104.

[\[6\]](#) See Woodhouse's *Paradigm Wars*, pp. 41-44.

[\[7\]](#) See Eisler's *The Chalice and the Blade*.

[\[8\]](#) For some reading relating to that idea, see Merlin Stone's *When God was a Woman*, Riane Eisler's *The Chalice and the Blade*, and for a more conservative investigation see Margaret Ehrenberg's *Women in Prehistory*. For a broad summary of that issue, see Michael Parenti's *History as Mystery*, chapters two and three. The issue of matriarchal societies in prehistory is a heated issue, with the firestorm generally centering around the pioneering work of Marija Gimbutas. While there may be no "solid" evidence for there ever being a true matriarchal society, there is good evidence that many ancient societies and religions had women holding a high place, and women's status degenerated along with a society's decline. When men and warriors held unchallenged supremacy, the societies were violent and declining, with women living in some form of bondage. When women had higher status, violence was less prevalent and society was healthier. That does not hold true for only prehistoric investigations. Elizabeth I was the first woman English sovereign, and the Elizabethan Era was the most culturally auspicious era that England ever had, with its literature hitting a high point that is still unsurpassed. Nobody is arguing that women are the source of violence in the ancient world or today's. The furor surrounding the work of Gimbutas and others like her is obviously at least partly an issue of gender bias, with the West's patriarchal academic system fighting back against a challenge to its power and privilege. The issue has been extremely politicized, but when the dust settles, if it does in my lifetime, I think it will be acknowledged that societies have been much healthier when women had higher status, and when their status was reduced, that society was in decline, and often on its way to extinction.

[\[9\]](#) See Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, pp. 3-92.

[\[10\]](#) See Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, pp. 3-92. See Stone, *When God was a Woman*, pp. 198-241.

[\[11\]](#) See a brief discussion of that fact in Jeanne Achterberg's *Woman as Healer*, pp. 18-19. See, for instance, the nearly complete absence of women in Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind* and Sherwin Nuland's *Doctors*,

The Biography of Medicine. Even though they are recent works, they typify how infrequently women appear in the standard histories of medicine.

[12] See Jeanne Achterberg's *Woman as Healer*, pp. 106-109. For more on women healers, see Elizabeth Brooke's *Women Healers*.

[13] See Jeanne Achterberg's *Woman as Healer*, p. 90. See Ellerbe, *The Dark Side of Christian History*, pp. 134-135.

[14] For instance, read about the war-based paradigm that has guided modern male doctors in Sherwin Nuland's *Doctors, The Biography of Medicine*, pp. 429-430. Nuland wrote that he and his fellow male doctors thought of themselves as "Spitfire" pilots, and the patient's body was merely the theater of their glorious battles against disease. That indoctrination was partly so the doctors would not become "emotionally involved" with their patients. Nuland rightfully calls such boyish attitudes what they were: anti-feminine. They were also anti-human.

[15] Achterberg, *Woman as Healer*, p. 136. See Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, pp. 364.

[16] See Mary Daly's *Gyn/Ecology, The Metaethics of Radical Feminism*.

[17] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 51-52.

[18] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 15-57. See Mendelsohn, *Confessions of a Medical Heretic*.

[19] Examples of arguably worse-than-worthless prevention can be found in [vaccination](#), mammograms (may cause as much cancer as they find, and are useless anyway, with orthodox therapies, if increased life expectancy means that it "works") and other high-tech and/or drug-related treatments.

[20] Whitaker, *Health and Healing*, November 1994, p.1.

[21] See Clark, Randolph Lee and Comley, Russell, Eds. *The Book of Health*, Third Edition. New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Company, 1973. On page 212: "Blood pressure reaches 120 at 17 years of age...With age, the pressure gradually rises until at 60 years it is about 140/87." Apparently, the rule of thumb used to be as bad as "100 plus your age." See Rosenfeld, Dr. Isadore. "Don't be Blasé about Your Blood Pressure." *Parade Magazine*, September 13, 1998.

[22] See Ornish, Dr. Dean. *Dr. Dean Ornish' Program for Reversing Heart Disease*. New York: Ballantine, 1990.

[23] In 2006, for the first time ever, I influenced somebody to [change his diet](#), to save his life. It was an old friend who recently had a cancerous kidney removed and had further, deeply invasive, surgery. He has adopted a holistic regimen, with a live food diet, meditation and other holistic, preventive practices. In May 2007, a friend of mine was looking into adding more live food to his diet, partly due to my influence. I told him that, as with my [vegetarian ways](#) and [free energy](#), I really did not keep up much on the "state-of-the art" of such practices. I explored those health habits many years ago, they worked for me, and I did not do much further research into those areas. It is not difficult to understand that humans, as with all animals, are designed to eat live food and that dead food is less nutritious. As my friend was asking about books on live foods, I thought I might buy him a copy of Paul Bragg's *The Miracle of Fasting*. As I searched for the book on the Internet, I came upon evidence that Bragg lied about his age and other aspects of his life's story. He was [eighty-one when he died](#), not ninety-five. Not only that, but his accounts of his ancestry, [being cured of tuberculosis as a teenager](#) and [wrestling in the Olympics](#) were image-making fabrications. His "[daughter](#)" is really his former daughter-in-law.

Bragg spent many years in Southern California, and [Jack La Lanne](#) lives a short drive from the university that I graduated from. I have friends and family members who have met both men, as well as Patricia Bragg, who is carrying on Paul's work as his "daughter." Patricia once spent the evening at a friend's house, regaling them with Bragg tales. According to La Lanne, Paul Bragg believed that diet was the most important part of the health regimen (including fasting), with exercise less important. La Lanne switched the priorities, with exercise as his regimen's most important factor. It is hard to argue with somebody who is one of earth's most fit nonagenarians.

In light of the recently adduced evidence, Bragg appears to have been a charlatan, but Jack La Lanne really *is*

living evidence of the benefits of exercise and proper nutrition. Will Jack live to be 110? Time will tell, but I believe the enlightening essence of Jack's philosophy is in an interview that I read many years ago. Jack was asked how old he thought he would live to be. Jack responded that he did not know how old he would live to be, and did not much care. He said that what was important to him was, "while I am alive, I am *living*."

Bragg recommended water fasts, and from age seventeen to twenty-four I performed water fasts. However, my longest water fast lasted only six days, and it was the weakest I ever felt. I read other works on holistic health practices in those days, including Paavo Airola's *Are You Confused?* Airola recommended juice fasting, as did others. At age twenty-four, I tried a juice fast. I did a weeklong fast, and it was easy. A few days later, I did a thirty-two-day juice fast, and it also was easy. My longest juice fast was for forty-five days, [in Boston](#), but was done partly because it was cheaper than eating. I have encountered people who greatly exceeded my personal fasting record. One friend did a ninety-day juice fast, and said he looked like a concentration camp inmate when he finished it (he may have taken it a little too far). Another friend cured his bladder cancer with a seventy-day juice fast. Steve Meyerowitz cured his allergies and asthma, after orthodox medicine had failed him, through diet and fasting. His longest fast was one hundred days, which is the longest I have heard of (see his *Juice Fasting and Detoxification*, which is a better reference book than Bragg's works). My fasting habits have waxed and waned over the years. I have often fasted while backpacking, and my life's best backpacking experience was while alone, fasting, and so deep into the trailless wilderness that if I had died out there, it would have been many years before my remains would have been discovered. I went about fifteen years without fasting longer than a week, but in 2004 rediscovered longer fasts (twenty-to-forty days), and plan to keep longer fasts as a permanent part of my health regimen. The effects of long fasts can be profound. I discovered for myself that while water fasting may be the "best" fast, it is often incompatible with modern life's demands. I could not perform my job duties if I water fasted. While juice fasting, I can perform at levels *above* what I am normally capable of – working fifteen-hour days and still feeling energetic when I go home. I also need one-to-two hours less sleep each night, along with increased mental alertness and a spiritual high that is unique to fasting. I am on day thirteen of a fast as I write this. Fasting can be a truly miraculous process, but juice fasting works best for the vast majority of people. I have skepticism about Bragg's water fasting advice and [other parts of his regimen](#).

[24] Ralph's book is a gold mine of information, but is not in an easily readable format. It takes effort to decipher his cancer treatment tables. The book is one of a kind, and I have spent many hours riveted to its pages. It was very influential to me. Ralph is a friend, and a kind and eccentric soul who has performed epic labors on humanity's behalf. The suggested donation for receiving his book is \$12.00. People can get the book through Ralph Hovnanian at 2128 Prospect Avenue, Evanston, IL 60201.

[25] The studies were the Veteran's Administration study published in 1977, the Coronary Artery Surgery Study, published in 1990, and the report of the European Coronary Surgery Study Group, published in 1983. See Charles T. McGee, M.D.'s *Heart Frauds*, pp. 24-28.

[26] See Charles T. McGee, M.D.'s *Heart Frauds*, pp. 12-13, 23.

[27] See Charles T. McGee, M.D.'s *Heart Frauds*, p. 28.

[28] See Charles T. McGee, M.D.'s *Heart Frauds*, p. 33.

[29] See Charles T. McGee, M.D.'s *Heart Frauds*, pp. 161-165.

[30] Milloy, Steven. "Relax...You Might Not Be Doomed" *Public Risk*. February 1997.

[31] There is no inherent contradiction between evolution and the notion of a creator, or the role that consciousness can play in it. The battle between creationists and evolutionists is partly a [false dichotomy](#). The Creator's handiwork can also evolve. Evolution does not happen haphazardly, but in accordance with consciousness, which is ultimately in charge of the process. The material world is the [manifestation of consciousness](#), and there is interplay between consciousness and its material manifestation, in my opinion. That is a large and controversial subject, and not one for this essay.

[32] See discussions of the various theories regarding the megafauna extinctions in Diamond's *Guns, Germs and Steel*, Goudie's *The Human Impact on the Natural Environment*, and Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*.

[33] See Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, p. 17. Diamond's *Guns, Germs and Steel*, pp. 104-113, provides a more thorough survey of the issue, but still gives the main impetus to the decline in available hunter-gatherer foods.

See discussion in Clive Ponting's *A Green History of the World*, pp. 37-67.

[34] See Diamond's *Guns, Germs and Steel*, pp. 166-168. Diamond's work is very useful as far as marshalling the evidence. As to his thesis, I do not entirely agree with it (it is too materialistic for me, among other issues), and to read a fairly thorough critique of his overall thesis, see J.M. Blaut's *Eight Eurocentric Historians*, pp. 149-172.

[35] See Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, p. 45.

[36] See Goudie, *The Human Impact on the Natural Environment*, 5th Edition, pp. 161-173.

[37] See Brooke, *Women Healers*, pp. 28-39.

[38] See Angus Armitage's *Copernicus, The Founder of Modern Astronomy*, p. 61.

[39] See Hal Hellman's *Great Feuds in Medicine*, pp. 1-18. See Sherwin Nuland's *Doctors, The Biography of Medicine*, pp. 120-144.

[40] See Edward Burman's *The Inquisition, The Hammer of Heresy*, p. 160.

[41] See Schwartz' *The Creative Moment*.

[42] See Brooke, *Women Healers*, pp. 80-93. See also Jeanne Achterberg's *Woman as Healer*, pp. 99-112

[43] See Sherwin Nuland's *Doctors, The Biography of Medicine*, p. 204.

[44] I have seen that quote in many places for many years. Nobody that I know of, however, had ever cited the direct quote from a publication. I hunted for it. I obtained three volumes of Rush's writings: *The Autobiography of Benjamin Rush*, edited by George Corner; *Letters of Benjamin Rush, Volume 1*, edited by L.H., Butterfield, and *The Selected Writings of Benjamin Rush*, edited by Dagobert D. Runes. I did not find the exact quote, but found one close enough that I am sure his famous quote can be found somewhere in his vast correspondence. Rush was a prolific writer. He was also a remarkable man. He was an early campaigner against slavery, capital punishment, alcohol and tobacco. Although his medical practice and philosophy would have disastrous effects on American medicine, his overall philosophy had much to recommend it.

In a lecture he gave regarding the progress of medicine, he enumerated the causes that retarded the progress of medicine. Some of his points are relevant even today. His 19th point: "The attempts which have been made to establish regular modes of practice in medicine, upon experience without reasoning, and upon reasoning without experience." His 21st point: "The interference of governments in prohibiting the use of certain remedies, and enforcing the use of others by law. The effect of this mistaken policy has been as hurtful to medicine, as a similar practice with respect to opinions, has been to the Christian religion." Here is the relevant quote, the 22nd point: "Conferring exclusive privileges upon bodies of physicians, and forbidding men, of equal talents and knowledge, under severe penalties, from practicing medicine within certain districts of cities and countries. Such institutions, however sanctioned by ancient charters and names, are the bastiles (prisons - ed.) of our science." His 23rd point was: "The refusal in universities to tolerate any opinions, in the private or public exercises of candidates for degrees in medicine, which are not taught nor believed by their professors, thus restraining a spirit of inquiry in that period of life which is most distinguished for ardor and invention in our science. It was from a view of the prevalence of this conduct, that Dr. Adam Smith, has called universities the 'dull repositories of exploded opinions.' I am happy in being able to exempt the University of Pennsylvania, from this charge. Candidates for degrees are here not only permitted to controvert the opinions of their teachers, but to publish their own, providing they discover learning and ingenuity in defending them." However, not all of Rush's observations are necessarily something to subscribe to, in my opinion. His 12th point was: "An undue reliance upon the powers of nature in curing diseases. I have elsewhere endeavored to expose this superstition in medicine, and shall in another place, mention some additional facts to show its extensive mischief in our science." Those points were taken from *The Selected Writings of Benjamin Rush*, edited by Dagobert D. Runes, pp. 227-234.

Here is another observation that was less than salutary: "Mercury was prescribed empirically for many years in the cures of several diseases, in which it often did great mischief; but since it has been discovered to act as a general stimulant

and evacuant, such a ratio has been established between it, and the state of diseases, as to render it a safe and nearly an universal medicine.” From *The Selected Writings of Benjamin Rush*, edited by Dagobert D. Runes, p. 249. In fairness to Rush, his general medical philosophy was to warn of blind adherence to orthodoxy. Just as Christians betrayed the spirit of the Christ, just as capitalists and communists betrayed the spirits of Smith and Marx, so did orthodox American medicine betray the spirit of Benjamin Rush. Rush was certain that medical science was in its infancy, and he would be the first today to react in horror to the universal practice of administering mercury to patients, which he initiated in the United States, as well as his heroic bloodletting. The enemy of science, reason, spirituality and enlightenment is dogma; it always has been and always will be, because its root is fear. Those who enforce adherence to dogma are those who profit by it.

[45] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 63.

[46] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 55.

[47] See a discussion of that issue in Stannard's *American Holocaust*, pp. 103-105.

[48] See Friedrich Engels' *The Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State*, Penguin Classics version, introduction by Michèle Barrett.

[49] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 92.

[50] A brief overview of homeopathic principles is in Harris L. Coulter's *Homeopathic Science and Modern Medicine*.

[51] Much of my material dealing with orthodox medicine and the challenge posed by homeopathy and other modalities comes from Harris Coulter's superb *Divided Legacy*.

[52] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 98.

[53] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 215.

[54] See Achterberg, *Woman as Healer*, p. 137.

[55] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, pp. 466-472.

[56] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 468.

[57] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 58.

[58] See Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, pp. 294-295.

[59] See Hal Hellman's *Great Feuds in Medicine*, p. 34.

[60] See photographs of Semmelweis' rapid decline in Nuland's *Doctors, The Biography of Medicine*, p. 259.

[61] See Hal Hellman's *Great Feuds in Medicine*, published in 2001, the same year I am writing this.

[62] Written by K. Codell Carter, a Semmelweis specialist, writing in 1983. See Hal Hellman's *Great Feuds in Medicine*, p. 47.

[63] See Hal Hellman's *Great Feuds in Medicine*, p. 49-50.

[64] Morton did, and Wells botched a public demonstration of his discovery in 1845, leading to his demise.

[65] See Nuland's *Doctors, The Biography of Medicine*, pp. 263-303. See a brief account in Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, pp. 366-368.

[66] See Nuland's *Doctors, The Biography of Medicine*, pp. 343-385. See a brief account in Roy Porter's *The Greatest Benefit to Mankind*, pp. 370-374.

[67] See Matthew Josephson's *The Robber Barons*.

[68] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, pp. 402-410.

[69] See John Farley's *The Spontaneous Generation Controversy*, p. 9.

[70] See John Farley's *The Spontaneous Generation Controversy*, p. 45.

[71] In the history profession, there is a concept known as present-mindedness, also called presentism. It is writing history from the perspective of the present, which is impossible to completely avoid. The greatest sin of presentism is writing about the past in a way that justifies the present, rather than helping to explain it. Presentism is practiced in the heroification of [Junípero Serra](#), [Christopher Columbus](#) and [George Washington](#) because their efforts led to the American civilization that exists today. They were all fanatical and bloody conquerors, obsessed with wealth, fame and building empires, largely at the expense of Native Americans. Their legacies are not much to cheer about, and research into their feats can create revulsion toward those "heroes." American high-school history books are prominent examples of the presentism phenomenon, portraying United States history as [one grand tale of state as hero](#). The many dark chapters of United States history are swept under the carpet or polished up and sold as glory stories, turning night into day, focusing on the few "winners," not the multitudes of losers. The point of the story as taught to American high school students is glorifying the state and its heroes, not gaining a useful understanding of the American nation's past. The past is only seen in terms of how it contributed to today, that best of all possible outcomes. Events and trends that led to other possible outcomes are treated as "errors" or otherwise disparaged.

American history as taught in high school is far from the only place that presentism is practiced. The mainstream histories of capitalism portray it as mankind's natural state. The history of capitalism's triumph is seen as merely the removal of obstacles to mankind's highest state. Competing ideologies such as communism (never really practiced in the Soviet Union or China, as Adam Smith's ideology was never really practiced either) or socialism are rejected as systems that do not honor human nature. In reality, the salient feature of "human nature" [that today's capitalism honors is greed](#), which is one of the seven deadly sins. Capitalistic ideologists have transformed greed into a virtue, turning reality upside down. In history circles, the practice of presentism is called "Whig history." In that light, both Christian theology and the theory of evolution can be seen as Whiggish interpretations. Men are the apple of God's eye in Genesis, and the human race being the current flower of evolution. "Whig history" has always been a pejorative appellation, and can be seen in many history texts describing the histories written *by others*. At times, it has seemed that in describing certain histories as Whiggish, the author was unconsciously telling the reader that his/her work is *not* Whiggish.

[72] See John Farley's *The Spontaneous Generation Controversy*, p. 2.

[73] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 28.

[74] See Morrison and Boyd's *Organic Chemistry, Third Edition*, p. 120.

[75] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 55.

[76] René Vallery-Radot, *The Life of Pasteur*, p. 58. A slightly different version is in Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 57, where Pasteur said he would lead her to "prosperity."

[77] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 57.

[78] See Geison, *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*, p. 86.

[79] See Geison, *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*, p. 88.

[80] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 59.

[81] See Christine Russell's "Louis Pasteur and Questions of Fraud" in the *Townsend Letter for Doctors*, October 1993, p. 960.

[82] See John Farley's *The Spontaneous Generation Controversy*, p. 65.

[83] See Ethel Douglas Hume's *Béchamp or Pasteur, A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*," p. 37. It is cited from Pasteur's work.

[84] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, pp. 116-123.

[85] See John Farley's *The Spontaneous Generation Controversy*, pp. 92-120.

[86] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 169.

[87] See Patrice Debré's *Pasteur*, p. 128.

[88] See Geison, *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*, p. 151.

[89] See Geison, *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*, p. 174.

[90] See Geison, *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*, p. 204.

[91] See Patrice Debré, *Louis Pasteur*, p. 434.

[92] See Patrice Debré, *Louis Pasteur*, p. 434.

[93] See Patrice Debré, *Louis Pasteur*, p. 435.

[94] See Hellman, *Great Feuds in Medicine*, p. 89.

[95] See *Microbiology, An Introduction, Second Edition*, by Tortora, Funke and Case, published in 1986. See *The Microbial World, Fifth Edition*, by Stanier, Ingraham, Wheelis and Painter, published in 1986. See *Microbiology, Fifth Edition*, by Pelczar, Chan and Krieg, published in 1986. See Bernard Dixon's *Power Unseen: How Microbes Rule the World*, published in 1994.

[96] See Dubos, *Pasteur and Modern Science*, p. 71.

[97] See Geison, *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*, p. 275.

[98] Béchamp, *Les Microzymas*, pp. 50-51, quoted in E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 47.

[99] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, pp. 12-13.

[100] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, p. 14.

[101] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, p. 48.

[102] William James, Lecture 6, in "Pragmatism's Conception of Truth," from, *Pragmatism, A New Name for Some Old Ways of Thinking*.

[103] Pasteur, (his paper had a long French name I will not burden the reader with here), quoted in E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 37.

- [104] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 40.
- [105] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 60.
- [106] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 61.
- [107] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 65.
- [108] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 77.
- [109] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 78.
- [110] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, p. 47.
- [111] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 191.
- [112] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 68-75.
- [113] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 92-93.
- [114] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 100-117.
- [115] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 113.
- [116] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 113-114.
- [117] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 110-112.
- [118] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 144-164.
- [119] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, p. 45.
- [120] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, p. 47.
- [121] See data and analysis on Pasteur's work on anthrax and rabies in E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 203-237.
- [122] See Appleton, *The Curse of Louis Pasteur*, pp. 112-114. See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 330-334. See Viera Scheibner's *Vaccination*, p. 257.
- [123] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 189-221 and 238-287.
- [124] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 183.
- [125] Although Pasteur's defenders claimed that he was sensitive to the animals he was experimenting on, an incident where Pasteur kicked the bars of a caged dog that Pasteur pronounced would die the next day, taunting it, gives another view. See Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur*, p. 283.
- [126] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, pp. 6, 94-95.
- [127] See, Roberts, *The Nature of Personal Reality*, session 631, December 18, 1972, pp. 125-128.
- [128] See Paul Kennedy's *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers*, p. 149.

- [129] See one of those photos in James Loewen's *Lies My Teacher Told Me*, p. 167.
- [130] See Kennedy, *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers*, pp. 200-202.
- [131] See Collier and Horowitz, *The Rockefellers*. See Josephson, *The Robber Barons*. See Allen, *The Rockefeller File*.
- [132] See John Robbins' *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 95-99.
- [133] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, pp. 298-305.
- [134] See Stauber and Rampton's *Toxic Sludge is Good for You!* and Stuart Ewen's *PR!*
- [135] See Harris Coulter's *Divided Legacy*, p. 419.
- [136] See copies of Simmons' ads in Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, p. 6, 17.
- [137] Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, p. 18.
- [138] Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, pp. 19-21.
- [139] Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, p. 26.
- [140] See Kenny Ausubel's *When Healing Becomes a Crime*, pp. 88-89.
- [141] See Ralph Moss' *The Cancer Industry*, pp. 46-47. See Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, pp. 60-62.
- [142] See Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, pp. 48-49.
- [143] See Collier and Horowitz, *The Rockefellers*, pp. 225-226.
- [144] See Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, pp. 390-394.
- [145] See Bushnell, *The Gifts of Civilization*, p. 99.
- [146] See *The Autobiography of Benjamin Rush*, edited by George Corner, Princeton University Press, 1948, p. 354.
- [147] See Moss, *Questioning Chemotherapy*, pp. 15-34.
- [148] I discovered Ralph Hovnanian's *Medical Dark Ages* in 1990 by reading Barry Lynes' *The Healing of Cancer* (pp. 162-163). Ralph's book was my big wake up call on how the medical racket works. In 1993, I spent days keying in those quotes that are in the [Medical Dark Ages](#) section of this site. Probably my favorite quote from *Medical Dark Ages* was the quote by Ley. As I discovered, however, the quote as presented in *Medical Dark Ages* is inaccurate. Ralph is a friend of mine, and he conscientiously called me in the spring of 2002 to tell me that his quote of Ley was inaccurate, and that if he ever published another edition of *Medical Dark Ages*, he would correct it. He said that Lynes was the first person to tell him that he quoted Ley in error. It was an honest mistake by Ralph. This situation is an example of the hazards of relying on secondary scholarship, a problem I have had to deal with continually. I have tried to mitigate those potential errors, and have sought primary sources whenever I can, and I have often gone to great lengths to try finding the primary evidence, such as that famous quote by [Benjamin Rush](#). Ralph originally combined the quote by Ley with the quote by [Griffin](#), making them both appear to be Ley's. The combined quote made for a great impact. Correctly attributing them definitely takes some of the wind out of its sails. The [Rush](#) and Ley quotes were the two from *Medical Dark Ages* that related the most directly to this essay, and last winter I hunted for the original source for the Rush quote, as I have seen it quoted across the Internet dozens of times, but nobody ever gave its source, accurately.

I had been queried about the Ley quote before, by people who found it hard to believe, and running down the original

Ley quote was on my list of things to do, before I really took my site "public," and then Ralph called me. So in May 2002 I descended into the University of Washington's microfilm archives and located that *San Francisco Chronicle* article. The Ley quote that this footnote ties to is accurate, and the Griffin quote is also accurate, but [Griffin](#) is obviously not an FDA official, although he does credibly demonstrate why his sentiment is probably correct. The Ley interview was given to Richard Lyons of the *New York Times*, given in Ley's home, soon after he was sacked as the FDA commissioner, after three years of service. Ley was a Harvard professor before being tapped to head the FDA. The article is sobering. Ley said that he was under "constant, tremendous, sometimes unmerciful pressure" from the drug industry. Ley said, "Some days I spent as many as six hours fending off representatives of the drug industry." Ley commented that the FDA staff was a poor one to effectively protect the American consumer, its ranks being full of "retreads" and others who were not motivated to do their jobs effectively, and that "there has been total lack of topside support from the current administration." Ley admitted that his former boss, the HEW head, was a Republican Party fundraiser, but it was not his boss' fault, as the Nixon administration was "a business-oriented administration." Every administration since Carter's has been even more so. Ley said that the drug company lobbyists, combined with the politicians who worked on behalf of their patrons, could bring "tremendous pressure" to bear on him and his staff, to try preventing FDA restrictions on their drugs. The interview concluded with Ley stating that the entire issue was about money, "pure and simple." The situation has become much worse since Ley's day, him being the last commissioner who tried standing up to them.

[149] Many states have those criminal laws on the books. For example, California Health and Safety Code Sect. 1701.1, makes it a crime punishable by five years in prison to administer or prescribe an unapproved cancer treatment. California is the worst state of all in persecuting alternative cancer treatments. The only treatments approved are surgery, radiation and chemotherapy. My wife's doctor endured fifteen years of persecution in California for curing cancer using an "unapproved" treatment that worked.

[150] See Hovnanian's *Medical Dark Ages*, p. 19. See Ellen Brown's *Forbidden Medicine*, p. 165.

[151] See Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, pp. 21-42.

[152] See Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, pp. 32-33.

[153] She challenges the notion of a cancer epidemic in *Toxic Terror*. 536,900 Americans died of cancer in 1994, for 23.5% of all deaths, up from 17.2% in 1970, and up from 4% in 1909.

[154] Moss, *Questioning Chemotherapy*, pp. 56, 57, 97, 98, 103, 110, 113, 117, etc. to page 150.

[155] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, p. 96.

[156] Moss, *Questioning Chemotherapy*, p. 35.

[157] See Stuart Troy, "The AMA's Charge on the Light Brigade," *Nexus*, December 1997-January 1998, pp. 35-40, 75-76.

[158] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, pp. 34-36.

[159] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, pp. 17-26 and 41-52.

[160] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 50.

[161] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, pp. 60-61.

[162] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 80.

[163] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 88.

[164] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 29.

[165] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 29.

- [166] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 96.
- [167] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 97.
- [168] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 98.
- [169] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, pp. 98-99.
- [170] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, p. 99.
- [171] Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, p. 31.
- [172] Mullins, *Murder by Injection*, pp. 31-33.
- [173] See Stauber and Rampton, *Toxic Sludge is Good for You!*, pp. 1, 25-32.
- [174] See Robert Proctor's *The Nazi War on Cancer*, pp. 126-128.
- [175] See Robert Proctor's *The Nazi War on Cancer*, p. 184.
- [176] See Lee and Solomon, *Unreliable Sources*, p. 331.
- [177] See Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent and the Staff*, pp. 144-147 and Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 204-207.
- [178] See Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent and the Staff*, p. 146.
- [179] See Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent and the Staff*, p. 146.
- [180] See Ausubel, *When Healing Becomes a Crime*, p. 109.
- [181] See Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent and the Staff*, p. 147.
- [182] See Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent and the Staff*, p. 148-150.
- [183] See Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent and the Staff*, p. 147.
- [184] See Fishbein, *Morris Fishbein, M.D., An Autobiography*, pp. 368-369.
- [185] Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, p. 208.
- [186] Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, p. 212.
- [187] See a brief description of Gerson's fate in Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 279-281. See also Lynes, *The Healing of Cancer*, pp. 32-33.
- [188] You can also see a brief summary of what happened to them in the Hoxsey documentary, *Hoxsey: How Healing Becomes a Crime*.
- [189] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, pp. 389-390.
- [190] Gardner, *Fads and Fallacies*, p. 191.
- [191] Gardner, *Fads and Fallacies*, p. 197.

[192] Gardner, *Fads and Fallacies*, p. 324.

[193] A particularly disturbing aspect of the [JFK assassination](#) milieu is that critical conclusions regarding Kennedy's wounds do not jibe with the testimony of the doctors who treated Kennedy in Dallas. The back of Kennedy's head was blown out, consistent with a frontal shot, and completely at odds with the "lone nut" theories involving Lee Harvey Oswald. Gerald Posner's *Case Closed* is establishment apologetics at its most strained. Posner is a Wall Street lawyer. The establishment lined up in praise of his *Case Closed*, and he was so "successful" at debunking the conspiracy theories surrounding the JFK assassination, so the story goes, that he then published a book debunking any government-involved conspiracy theory surrounding the Martin Luther King assassination. I wonder if his next work will be on the Bobby Kennedy assassination, completing his debunker trilogy.

[194] See an account of this incident in Fetzer, ed., *Assassination Science*.

[195] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 431.

[196] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 183.

[197] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 98.

[198] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 99.

[199] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 108.

[200] Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 117.

[201] See Sharaf, *Fury on Earth*, p. 461.

[202] The definitive work on Reich is Myron Sharaf's *Fury on Earth, A Biography of Wilhelm Reich*, from which most of this narrative is taken from. Regarding the FDA's burning of Reich's books, see pp. 459-461.

[203] See Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*, pp. 17-26. See also Brown, *AIDS, Cancer and the Medical Establishment*, pp. 126-153.

[204] Moss, *The Cancer Chronicles*, Volume 5, Numbers 5 and 6.

[205] The narrative of Naessens' adventures is in Christopher Bird's *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, originally published in 1990 as *The Life and Times of Gaston Naessens, The Galileo of the Microscope*.

[206] Naessens describes this dynamic without my anthropomorphic flourishes in a paper he wrote which is reproduced in Bird's *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, pp. 294-304.

[207] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, pp. 37-38 and 75-76.

[208] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, p. 132.

[209] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, pp. 129-131.

[210] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, pp. 39-40.

[211] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, pp. 14-15.

[212] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, pp. 16-17 and 97-105.

[213] See Ralph Moss, "The War on Cancer," *Townsend Letter for Doctors and Patients*, January 2002, pp. 30-31

- [214] See Béchamp, *The Blood and its Third Anatomical Element*, p. 240.
- [215] See Appleton, *The Curse of Louis Pasteur*, p. 47.
- [216] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 197.
- [217] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, p. 198.
- [218] E. Douglas Hume, *Béchamp or Pasteur: A Lost Chapter in the History of Biology*, pp. 220-221.
- [219] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, p. 334.
- [220] See Neil Miller's *Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective?* pp. 34-35.
- [221] See Scheibner, *Vaccination: 100 Years of Orthodox Research Shows that Vaccines Represent a Medical Assault on the Immune System*, p. xiv.
- [222] See Neil Miller's *Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective?* pp. 36-37.
- [223] See Neil Miller's *Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective?* p. 23.
- [224] See Neil Miller's *Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective?* p. 20.
- [225] See Neil Miller's *Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective?* p. 24.
- [226] See Neil Miller's *Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective?* p. 45.
- [227] See Scheibner, *Vaccination*, pp. 205-224.
- [228] See Scheibner, *Vaccination*, p. 260.
- [229] See Jane Roberts' *The Individual and the Nature of Mass Events*, p. 31.
- [230] See Levi Dowling's *The Aquarian Gospel of Jesus the Christ*, chapter 23, pp. 41-42.
- [231] See Scheibner, *Vaccination*, pp. 239-253.
- [232] See Hovnanian, *Medical Dark Ages*, p. 55, section A.2.11.
- [233] See Dostoyevsky, *The Brothers Karamazov*, book five, chapter five.
- [234] See John Fink's *Third Opinion* for listings of those alternative clinics.
- [235] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 240-241.
- [236] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, pp. 257-259.
- [237] See Robbins, *Reclaiming Our Health*, p. 242.
- [238] See Moss, *The Cancer Industry*, p. 144.
- [239] Whitaker, *Health and Healing*, March 1995, p. 2.

[240] Whitaker, *Health and Healing, Supplement*, July 1994, p. 2.

[241] See *Chomsky, Year 501*, p. 153. In 1995, Presidential Directive 39, signed by Bill Clinton, makes the U.S.' kidnapping of "terrorists" in foreign nations a government policy, stating that "Return of suspects by force may be effected without the cooperation of the host government." See Blum, *Rogue State*, p. 85

[242] See also Ellen Brown's *Forbidden Medicine*.

[243] See Blum, *Rogue State*, pp. 210-211. The ruling is [posted to the Internet](#) at this time (January 2002)

[244] See Ellen Brown's *Forbidden Medicine*, pp. 284-286.

[245] See Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*, p. 107-109

[246] Once in awhile a great soul comes to earth, on special assignment from the Creator, and I believe that John Robbins is one of them. His *Reclaiming Our Health* may be the most important book on this list. His gentle and enlightened voice is easier reading than this essay's tour of the dark side of the force. Here is a list of books to help find out what is going on, and can also provide ideas on how to heal the mess. Wolinsky and Brune, *The Serpent on the Staff*; Moss, *The Cancer Industry*; Robert Mendelsohn, *Confessions of a Medical Heretic* (an excellent and easily readable book on the medical racket); Fink, *Third Opinion*; Brown, *AIDS, Cancer and the Medical Establishment*; Mullins, *Murder by Injection*; Moss, *Questioning Chemotherapy*; Hovnanian, *Medical Dark Ages*; Lynes, *The Healing of Cancer*; Lynes, *The Cancer Cure that Worked!*; Lynes, *Helping the Cancer Victim*; Bird, *The Persecution and Trial of Gaston Naessens*; Carter, *Racketeering in Medicine*; Moss, *Cancer Therapy, The Independent Consumer's Guide to Non-Toxic Treatment and Prevention*; Thomas, *The Essiac Report*; Brown, *Forbidden Medicine*; Goldberg, *An Alternative Medicine Definitive Guide to Cancer*.

[247] See *The Sun*, January 2002, p. 48.

[248] What the FDA did to L-tryptophan is well known and well documented. For one place of many, see Carter, *Racketeering in Medicine*, pp. 171-175.

[249] For instance, the body mistakes strontium 90, one of the many radioactive isotopes introduced into the environment by modern "progress," for calcium. If a human being ingests strontium 90, the body will incorporate the strontium into the body, where it can become part of the bone or teeth. The strontium will not do the job of calcium, and will eventually radioactively disintegrate, harming the body with radiation and particles as it decays. Strontium 90 is a component of radioactive fallout, which is partly why nuclear bombs have such devastating long-term consequences.

[250] See Moss, "The War on Cancer," *Townsend Letter for Doctors and Patients*, August/September 2002, pp. 36-37.

[251] Lynes, *Helping the Cancer Victim*, p. 38.

The Next Section: [Ralph Hovnanian's Medical Dark Ages Quotations](#) (337K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Medical Dark Ages Quotes

By Wade Frazier

[Section 1](#)

[Section 2](#)

[Section 3](#)

[Section 4](#)

[Section 5](#)

[Section 6](#)

[Section 7](#)

[Extra material](#)

Section 1

I discovered Ralph Hovnanian's *Medical Dark Ages* in 1990. It was a seminal experience for me in understanding how the [medical establishment works](#). I spent many hours reading his quotation collages, and several years ago I copied seventy pages of quotes from *Medical Dark Ages* into a book that I wrote. In that version, I inserted many editorial comments regarding how the quotes related to my experiences. The rest of my web site does that talking, and I have decided to let the *Medical Dark Ages* quotes speak for themselves. Ralph's book is more than just quotes, and what follows are not all of them, but the next seventy pages will be a wild ride if you decide to take it. I have broken it into seven sections, to make it easier to plow through. In *Medical Dark Ages*, Ralph also summarized the results of published studies on alternative cancer treatments and their success rates. Ralph did it for hundreds of studies on dozens of alternative treatments. The suggested donation for receiving his book is \$12.00. You can get the book through Ralph Hovnanian at 2128 Prospect Avenue, Evanston, IL 60201.

Ralph is a friend of mine, and will always have my gratitude for the years of effort that he spent in compiling *Medical Dark Ages*. After reading this section, I hope he has yours.

"The thing that bugs me is that people think the FDA is protecting them. It isn't. What the FDA is doing and what the public *thinks* it's doing are as different as night and day." - **Dr. Herbert Ley, Commissioner of the FDA**, San Francisco Chronicle, 1/2/70. (for more on this quote see [this link](#))

(In response to above quote) "What *is* the FDA doing? As will be shown by the material that follows, the FDA is "doing" three things:

"First, it is providing a means whereby key individuals on its payroll are able to obtain both power and wealth through granting special favors to certain politically influential groups that are subject to its regulation. This activity is similar to the 'protection racket' of organized crime: for a price, one can induce FDA administrators to provide 'protection' from the FDA itself.

"Secondly, as a result of this political favoritism, the FDA has become a primary factor in that formula whereby cartel-oriented companies in the food and drug industry are able to use the police powers of government to harass or destroy their free-market competitors.

"And thirdly, the FDA occasionally does some genuine public good with whatever energies it has left over after serving the vested political and commercial interest of its first two activities." - **G. Edward Griffin, *World Without Cancer***.

"There is a principle which is a bar against all information, which is proof against all argument, and which cannot fail to keep man in everlasting ignorance. That principle is condemnation without investigation." - **Herbert Spencer**.

"Beware of prejudice; light is good in whatsoever lamp it is burning; a rose is beautiful in whatever garden it may bloom." - **Abdul Baha**

"There are a thousand hacking at the branches of evil to one who is striking at the root." - **Henry David Thoreau**.

"If any man can convince me and bring home to me that which I do not think or act aright, gladly will I change; for I search after truth, by which man never yet was harmed. But he is harmed who abideth on still in his deception and ignorance." - **Marcus Aurelius Antonius**.

"There are three things which build and maintain civilization throughout time: pure air, pure water, and pure food. And as an eternal truth I say unto you, that there are three things which bring the end of civilization, even the mightiest that have ever been and shall ever be, from the beginningless beginning to the endless end of all time: impure air, impure water, and impure food." - **Zenda Avesta, c. 3000 BC**.

"All the blood of the body is under the control of the heart and flows in a continuous circle and never stops." - **Chinese writing, 2697 BC**.

"The cure of many diseases remains unknown to the physicians of Hellos (Greece) because they do not study the whole person." - **Socrates, (470-399 BC)**.

"It is better not to apply any treatment in cases of occult cancer; for if treated (by surgery), the patients die quickly; but if not treated, they hold out for a long time." - **Hippocrates, (460-370 BC)**.

"It is part of the cure to wish to be cured." - **Seneca (4 BC to 65 AD)**.

(Advanced cancer is)" irritated by treatment; and the more so the more vigorous it is."

"Some have used caustic medicaments, some the cautery, some excision with a scalpel; but no medicament has ever given relief; the parts cauterized are excited immediately to an increase until they cause death."

"After excision, even when a scar has formed, nonetheless the disease has returned, and caused death; while ...the majority of patients, although no violent measures are applied in the attempt to remove the tumor, but only mild applications in order to sooth it, attain a ripe old age in spite of it." - **Celsus, (1st century AD)**.

"When (a tumor) is of long standing and large, you should leave it alone. For myself have never been able to cure any such, nor have I seen anyone else succeed before me." – **Abu'l Qasim, (936 - 1013 AD)**.

"It should be forbidden and severely punished to remove cancer by cutting, burning, cautery, and other fiendish tortures. It is from nature that the disease comes, and from nature comes the cure, not from physicians." - **Paracelsus, (1493-1541 AD)**.

"Smoke.. makes a kitchen also oftentimes in the inward parts of men, soiling and infecting them, with an unctuous and oily kinde of Soote as hath been found in some great Tobacco takers, that after their death were opened." - **James I, A Counter-Blaste to Tobacco, p. 32; 1604 AD**.

"Sugar...ingrendreth...cachexias...rotteth the teeth, making them look blacke... and therefore let young people especially beware..." - **James Hurt, Doctor, The Family Companion, 1633 AD**.

"The Hellish and dismal cloud of...Coal...perpetually imminent over (London) ...that her inhabitants breathe nothing but impure and thick mist...corrupting the lungs and disordering the entire habit of their bodies; so the Catarrhs,...Cough, and Consumption, range more in this one City, than in the whole Earth besides." - **John Evelyn, 1661 AD**.

"Disease is nothing else but an attempt on the part of the body to rid itself of morbid matter." -

Thomas Sydenham, (1624-1689).

"Nearly all men die of their medicines, not of their diseases." - **Moliere, (1622-1672).**

"He's the best physician that knows the worthlessness of most medicines."

"God heals and the Doctor takes the fee." - **Benjamin Franklin, (1706-1790).**

"An enormous mass of experience, both of homeopathic doctors and their patients, is invoked in favor of the efficacy of these remedies and doses. But the regular profession stands firm in its belief that such experience is worthless and the whole history is one of quackery and delusion." - **William James (1842-1910).**

"You may honestly feel grateful that homeopathy survived the attempts of the allopaths (orthodoxy) to destroy it." - **Mark Twain (1835-1910).**

"The doctor of the future will prescribe no drugs but will interest his patients in the care and nutrition of the human frame and in the cause and prevention of disease." - **Thomas Edison (1847-1931)**

"To protect herbalists from persecution by the Company of Physicians and Chirurgeons. Company of Surgeons in London, minding their own gain, and doing nothing for the profit or ease of the diseased, have sued, troubled and vexed honest persons (herbalist) ... Said persons have not taken anything for their pains and skill...Surgeons have small cunning, yet take great sums of money and do little for it." - **Act of Parliament, 1512 AD. Appendix 2, chapter 2. p.2.**

"The answer of Richard Guy, Surgeon...to certain insidious Falsehood and Reflections upon his Method of Curing Cancers without Cutting...London 1764 AD. 100 cases Successfully treated..Breast...incipient cancer...how easily in that State they are remediable by Care and Proper management;...the cancerous Humor is a Virus...the lymphatic vessels are the immediate instruments of its Circulation...carried and lodged..to those more remote ('glands')."
- **Richard Guy, Practical Observations, 1762 AD.**

"Unless we put medical freedom into the Constitution, the time will come when medicine will organize into an undercover dictatorship...To restrict the art of healing to one class of men and deny equal privileges to others will constitute the Bastille of medical science. All such laws are un-American and despotic..., and have no place in a republic...The Constitution of this Republic should make special provisions for medical freedom as well as religious freedom." - **Dr. Benjamin Rush, signer of Declaration of Independence; member, Continental Congress; B.S. Princeton U.**

"...This large and expensive stock of drugs will be unnecessary. By...doses of...medicines... multiplying...combining them properly, 20 to 30 articles, aided by the common resources of the lancet, a garden, a kitchen, fresh air, cool water, exercise, will be sufficient to cure all the diseases that are at present under the power of medicine." - **Dr. Benjamin Rush.**

"Samuel Thomson (1769-1843, herbalist) so upset New Hampshire doctors that they persuaded the state legislature to pass a law specifically naming him, not for practicing medicine 'illegally' ('the usual charge with which to charge non-allopathic practitioners') but to prevent him (from) healing people without charging them." - **Donald Law, A Guide to Alternative Medicine.**

"The entire medical profession of the United States in so far as its organization is concerned, is today at the mercy of one man and a board of trustees that is subservient to him." - **Editorial, Illinois Medical Journal, Dec. 1922, p.478.**

"The efforts of the medical profession in the US to control:...its...job it proposes to monopolize. It has been carrying on a vigorous campaign all over the country against new methods and

schools of healing because it wants the business...I have watched this medical profession for a long time and it bears watching." - **Clarence Darrow, (1857-1938)**.

"A conspiracy, not a profession...Every doctor will allow a colleague to decimate a whole countryside sooner than violate the bond of professional etiquette by giving him away."

"... I was a member of the Health Committee of London Borough Council, and I learned how the credit of vaccination is kept up statistically by diagnosing all the re-vaccinated cases (of smallpox) as 'pustular eczema, varioloid' or what not - except smallpox." - **George Bernard Shaw, (1856-1950)**.

(allow access of cancer patients to) "unconventional therapies, (i.e.) any method used for the control and cure of cancer which has not been approved by the Federal FDA." - **Cancer Therapeutic Research Bill of 1981, State of Florida, HB747 passed by legislature, vetoed by governor.**

"(The AMA is) "just another mean trust." - **Harry S. Truman.**

"...the right of the individual to elect freely the manner of his care in illness must be preserved." - **Dwight D. Eisenhower.**

"(Doctors) collectively have done more to block adequate medical care for people of this country than any other single group." - **Jimmy Carter.**

"I've heard drug experts say they believe if penicillin were discovered today, the FDA wouldn't license it." - **Ronald Reagan.**

"But the doctors in the past, as the review of the evidence showed, branded Jenner, Semmelweis, Oliver Wendell Holmes, Sr., Pasteur, Lister, Koch and Keen as charlatans... Napoleon said that war is too important to be left to the generals. We go on the assumption in the Senate that foreign relations are too important to be left to the diplomats...this question (on a novel cancer cure) is too important to leave purely to doctors..."

"It's a terrible thing that we cannot really trust the FDA or NCI (National Cancer Institute). We need, therefore, an independent scientific investigation." - **US Senator Paul Douglas, Congressional Record, 1963.**

"Yet, not only has the FDA done everything it could to discourage ('a good or better and non-toxic') treatment of human cancer, but also the NCI appears to have been negligent in not pursuing this whole line of investigation."

"Government controlled medical research, which verges on monopoly, may possibly delay medical advances

"There has been very little emphasis in NCI on relatively non-toxic approaches, some radically different."

"..serious shortcomings in the administrative practices...of the FDA..there is no appeal to the courts in cases involving medical research." - **US Senator Edward Long, "Enzyme Treatment of Cancer", Congressional Record, 1966.**

"The hearings have revealed police-state tactics...possibly perjured testimony to gain a conviction,...intimidation and gross disregard for the Constitutional Rights...(of) First, Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth Amendments, (by the FDA)

"The FDA (is) bent on using snooping gear to pry and invade..."

"Instance after instance of FDA raids on small vitamin and food supplement manufacturers. These small, defenseless businesses were guilty of producing products which FDA officials claimed were unnecessary."

"If the FDA would spend a little less time and effort on small manufacturers of vitamins...and a little more on the large manufacturers of...dangerous drugs..., the public would be better served." - **Senator Long from various Senate hearings.**

"(It) could involve the AMA and others in an interstate conspiracy of alarming proportions..."

"Public and private funds have been thrown around like confetti at a country fair, to close up and destroy clinics, hospitals, and scientific research laboratories which do not conform to the viewpoint of medical associations."

"The record in the Federal Court discloses that (the NCI) took sides and sought in every way to hinder, suppress and restrict...(a) treatment of cancer." - **Benedict Fitzgerald, Special Counsel to the Senate Interstate and Foreign Commerce Committee, "A Report to the Senate IFCC on the Need for Investigation of Cancer Research Organizations" 1953.**

"I and many other Members of Congress have received a large volume of mail from individuals...benefited from Laetrile treatments,...who believe the Government is party to a conspiracy to suppress an inexpensive, non-toxic and effective anti-cancer drug. ...public confidence in our Government has not been strengthened by the highly unusual actions of the FDA in first advising...that clinical studies with Laetrile could be initiated and then terminating this authorization..."

(There is a) "deeply held conviction of a large number of Americans that they are being forced by their Government to leave the country in order to obtain therapy with a drug that is both safe and effective for the control of cancer... (A) review should be done by cancer experts who have no conflicting interest and who are able to evaluate the evidence objectively...In light of the tremendous sums of money that have been spent with relatively little productivity..., I find it very surprising that the NCI has not sought on its own initiative to do further animal testing with this drug which apparently has shown some activity in the tests sponsored by the McNaughton Foundation." - **US Congressman L.H. Fountain (in a letter to HEW Secretary), 1971.**

"Amygdalin ('Laetrile')..has been employed medically for many centuries. Ancient herbal pharmacopeias recommended the bitter almond for the treatment for a variety of illnesses..."

"Six patients with advanced cancer were treated with amygdalin at dosages similar to those employed by Laetrile practitioners....intravenously... (and) orally...No clinical or lab evidence of toxic reaction was seen (by us)."

"One patient had severe pre-treatment pain resulting from skeletal meta-stases...at 5 weeks

after the onset of (laetrile and metabolic) therapy, she claimed complete relief..." **Charles Moertel, MD, (and 3 MD's and 2 PhD's), Dept. Oncology and Comprehensive Cancer Center., Mayo Clinic / Foundation, "A Pharmacologic and Toxicological Study of Amygdalin." Journal of the American Medical Association (JAMA), February 13,1981.**

"Amygdalin (Laetrile) is listed in the US Pharmacopeia of 1870...so the Grandfather Clause in the Food and Drug (and Cosmetics) Act prevents FDA from claiming jurisdiction. The US Court of Appeals, 4th district, #71-1243, May 23, 1972, upheld this..."

"...Amygdalin..is listed in (FDA's) GRAS (Generally Accepted As Safe) list.." - **Walter Ermer, International Health Council, inserted by Senator Edward M. Kennedy into Banning of the drug Laetrile from Interstate Commerce by FDA, Hearing, 1977.**

"Most shocking, from the point of view of scientific ethics, is...that...every one of their (SRI - Southern Research Institute) errors was in the direction of lowering the efficacy of the (Laetrile) treatment (of animals). ...There is essentially zero probability that such a system of misrepresentation is inadvertent. There is no doubt to give anyone the benefit of!" - **Dr. Bernard Kenton, City of Hope National Medical Center, in Harvard Political Review, 1977.**

"...The NCI...retrospective analysis...of Laetrile(:) ...among 67 case records that were all submitted...the NCI...could find complete responses in only two patients..."

"The NCI...prospective trial...of...Laetrile could be neither controlled and randomized nor blinded...The lack of concurrent controls was partially offset by the fact that all patients were in advanced stages of a disease known to be almost uniformly and rapidly fatal. Any objective responses in tumor size or prolongation of survival could be identified by comparison with historical controls." - **Arnold Reman, Editor, New England Journal of Medicine, "Closing the books on Laetrile" 1982.**

"The (Laetrile) efficacy tests...clinically in humans..(by) the US NCI...were obviously conducted so that a negative result could be formulated. The limited number and types of human cancer cases selected...the omission of necessary additional measures ('e.g dietary'), the far too short observation periods, and the undefined chemical properties of the (Laetrile)... all contributed to devaluation of...conclusions."

"The oral (Laetrile) had been 'toxified' by adding cyano-urea in the NCI...(NCI's) Mayo (Clinic) dismissed well responding patients to discard them from statistical evaluation...This kind of fraud which I expressed...and which was openly published...has...not resulted in any denial." - **Hans Nieper, MD, President, International Academy of Preventive Medicine; Director, German Society for Medical Tumor Treatment; author of over 200 articles, listed in Who's Who of World Science, and many other credentials.**

"...About Laetrile...we submitted two articles. The editor turned the article over to his medical advisor and received the same advice that had been given to another (another magazine): Don't touch it."

"...We were told that owners of drugstores, a vital outlet for paperbacks, had been notified that any druggist who displayed my book on his paperback racks, would not receive any more prescriptions from members of the AMA."

"...After years of paying my income tax without any problems, in 1964, after my Laetrile book came out, I was summoned by the IRS for an audit...It took three years...Again (in) 1974. The year before I had (written) a book about corruption in Congress. I was summoned for another (IRS) audit, and there went another three years.

"...The Salk polio vaccine :) When the final report of the (Salk) tests was ready for publication, there were no takers in the scientific field. The report was handed out at a press conference..." - **Glen D. Kittler, (author of 40 books, and articles in Reader's Digest, The Saturday evening Post, etc.) Laetrile: Nutritional Control for Cancer with Vitamin B-17.**

(In)" 1970, in Camp Hill, Pennsylvania....Bruce Butt...convened a meeting at which he showed...Nature's Answer to Cancer. The film was made by the International Association of Cancer Victims and Friends (IACVF)....(The) attorney...defending Mr. Butt (said): Mr. Butt is criminally charged with 'unlawfully procuring and showing the film, Nature's Answer to Cancer, which the state of Pennsylvania claims 'constitutes dissemination of false or misleading advertisement, concerning the efficacy of Laetrile , as a cure or treatment for cancer'. (And) this constitutes a misbranding of a drug, ...although ...all parties ("stipulate") that no drug ("Laetrile") was sold or offered for sale! Present at the preliminary hearing were...USDHEW, and the FTC,...and FDA... Again when the film was advertised for showing in a public theater in San Jose, the owner was threatened by the DA's office with a criminal charge, arrest, and seizure of the film." - **IACVF, Cancer News Journal, 1964.**

"The slight variations in extracting procedure cause many of the amygdalin (Vitamin B-17, Laetrile) molecules to change to a form unknown to nature(:) isomers...There are ...purveyors who label their 'iso-amygdalin' products 'amygdalin' contrary to all of the recognized specs... For commercial or political purposes, they certainly cannot justify such a fallacy...This scientific heresy and commercial fraud...(is) tremendously reducing the effectiveness of amygdalin therapy. ...To mislabel iso-amygdalin as amygdalin is scientifically, medically, and morally indefensible." - **Dr. Ernst T. Krebs, Jr. discoverer of vitamins B-15 and B-17.**

"..Dr. Krebs...is facing the possibility of a jail sentence stemming from violation of a 1977 court order not to speak publicly about Laetrile" - **Voice of Medical Freedom, April 1981.**

"Dr. Ernest J. Krebs, Jr., (and his secretary) ...began serving a six-month prison term in May (1983) in the San Francisco County Jail. (They) were found guilty of continuing to promote the merits of Laetrile in cancer therapy in violation of terms of probation they had originally secured following their 1973 conviction." - **Choice, spring 1983.**

"Five hours after presenting a ...lecture on cancer before an audience of about 400 in L.A., the windshield was shot out of my car on the road back to San Francisco. The next night the glass window in the tailgate (the back window) was shot out (300 miles removed from the first shooting)...The late Arthur T. Harris, MD, was threatened by two men with assassination if he continued to use Laetrile." - **Dr. Ernst T. Krebs, Jr.**

(FDA's ban on Laetrile is)"arbitrary, capricious, an abuse of discretion, and as a matter of law, unsupportable." - Dec 1977

(What) "disturbs me mostly...is the willful, deliberate denial (by the FDA, of) our own citizens, a fair chance to use Laetrile, when all the record (shows) it is not toxic, ... is safe, ... and is effective."

"...to say...that Laetrile should not be continued to be used by those who are suffering from terminal cancer, I would have to hang my head in shame." - Aug 1980

(The FDA is) "to refrain and desist from interfering with terminal cancer patients, in their use of Laetrile acquired through the 'Affidavit System.'" - **May 1981, Judge Luther Bohanon, US District Court, Oklahoma City; Rutherford vs US**.

"Dr. (Donald R.) Cole (formerly of Sloan-Kettering and St. Vincent's Hospital in New York) was charged with three counts: giving false hope to the terminally ill, using experimental drugs illegally, and practicing medicine in an unlawful and dishonest manner....The illegal drug charge was defined as the use of vitamins, enzymes, and Laetrile. ...Dr. Cole administered Laetrile at the request of patients in the legally prescribed manner with a signed affidavit....An oncologist from Rosewell Park (Memorial Institute) who was brought in by the hearing panel... could not substantiate a single case of incompetence or negligence. ...Dr. Cole's license was revoked." - **CCS, Cancer Control Journal, January 1978**.

"Dr. Emory Thurston, PhD, ScD, (lecturer, College of Pharmacy, USC; member APA (American Pharmaceutical Assoc.), Executive Secretary of Nutritional Research (had) ... inspectors from the Calif. Food and Drug office armed with a search warrant, (who) raided his business office. They confiscated several bottles of Laetrile...and every piece of literature that contained the word 'cancer'. (They) serve(d) a warrant for the arrest of Dr. Thurston on the charge of selling Laetrile and practicing medicine without a license. He was taken to county jail..." **International Association of Cancer Friends and Victims, Cancer News Journal, 1973**.

"The (MSKCC) Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center report on amygdalin, or Laetrile(:) It is incomplete because at least half a dozen experiments with amygdalin performed at the (MSKCC) between 1972 and 1976 have been omitted from the report. (These,) the positive experiments (showing effectivity against cancer) with amygdalin, carried out by veteran researcher Kanematsu Sugiura appear to be valid and are not successfully challenged by the report. (In contrast,) there are numerous errors in many of these (reported) experiments which allegedly prove amygdalin's ineffectiveness as a palliative or cure for cancer." - **Second Opinion, Special Report: Laetrile at Sloan Kettering, 1977, published January 1978**.

"In 1977, when the Laetrile bill was first introduced to the North Dakota Legislature, I was the only MD to testify for it...After that, my successful tenure...was ended and I was called before the State Medical Examiners Board in ND, for using vitamins and Laetrile. ...I travelled...to work...with Dr. Davis, Dr. Cole, and Dr. Manner...When I returned...I was refused re-instatement to the medical staff...We are being investigated by the (state) attorney general's

office because our methods are not 'usual and customary'."

"The doctors at M.D. Anderson (Hospital) in Houston...were recently developing a cancer prevention program for Texas, the money and direction for which were appropriated by the Texas legislature 40 years ago." - **Brian Briggs, MD, in a letter, 1981.**

"Toxicity of Laetrile in dosages currently employed for human cancer is assumed to be minimal." - **NCI Clinical Protocol for Laetrile.**

"Despite intensive effort over many years, the FDA, the AMA, the ACS (American Cancer Society), the NCI and independent researchers have been unable to find any scientific evidence that Laetrile has any effect on cancer." - **FDA (press release, Feb 17, 1977.).**

"The cyano group of vitamin B-12 (cyano-cobal-amin) is more labile and potentially more harmful than the cyano group found in Laetrile. Yet we know how safe and essential vitamin B-12 is." - **Dr. R.A. Passwater, testimony, FDA docket # 77N-0048.**

"On the very day that the NCI announced Laetrile's alleged worthlessness..., West Virginia became the 24th state to allow the use of Laetrile...In signing the bill into law, Gov. Jay Rockefeller said the study, 'made no difference at all.' - **National Health Federation, July, 1981.**

".The woman...had been relieved of her cancer by Laetrile.....In the hospital they would not inject Laetrile as it was illegal. She died. This so incensed the editors of the Santa Ana Register (Dean and Martinez) that they wrote ("Laetrile Story") a series of articles on cancer and the true story for the first time was sent by UPI to (almost) every country in the world." - **Howard H. Beard, ScD, PhD, Yale U. The Anthrone Test.**

"... The cancer statutes (are) discriminatory against the cancer patient.... No other disease is

so restricted by politics.... It is also discriminatory against the Negro because Laetrile helps sickle cell anemia.... It is discriminatory against the poor because the poor can't afford to go to Mexico or Germany (for therapies outlawed in the US)..."

"...In July 1974 About 15 agents (of Cal. Food and Drug) arrested me on the charge of selling Laetrile and other substances in the diagnosis, cure and alleviation of cancer. In Citrus Municipal Court, West Covina, on Feb 3, 1975, Judge Sam Cianchetti declared this statute unconstitutional. On Oct. 1974, I received a phone call from...police at 1 (AM, Saturday morning) and he told me that my office was broken into. I went down to my office...and 2 agents arrest(ed) me on a felony charge - conspiracy...The law states that before you are even arrested, they must give you a hearing (Cal. Health Code 1707.4) (Another) judge denied this motion for a ...hearing and he gave no reason." - **Dr. James Privitera; Roswell Park Memorial Institute; Scripps Clinic; "The Nutritional Battle."**

"...testifying for Dr. Privitera...To these 19 cancer victims, the enforcement of (California) Health and Safety Code Sect. 1701.1, the denial of them medical treatment, albeit unorthodox, albeit unapproved by a state agency, must surely take on a Kafka-esque, a nightmare quality. No demonstrated public anger, no compelling interest of the state warrants an Orwellian intrusion into the most private of zones of privacy." - **California Supreme Court Chief Justice, Rose Bird, dissenting opinion.**

"In 1964 (we) conduct(ed) an intensive investigation of Laetrile...conclud(ing) that there was no justification for making (it) illegal...Yet, 16 years after... , doctors are still being jailed for (it). Dr. James Privitera,... was recently released from 55 days...much of it doing hard labor...on a road gang...If he were solely interested in making money, as he points out, there is a great deal more to be made from traditional cancer treatments, than by use of Laetrile." - **Santa Ana, The Register, April 13, 1980.**

"Does it make sense that a (Laetrile) smuggler who is supposed (by the Medical Establishment - Ed.) to be making millions of dollars off of what he is smuggling, would spend five years of his life trying to legalize it.?" - **Frank Salaman, grad., northwestern U.**

(In)"1970, the Pennsylvania Health Dept., swooped down on a meeting...after the movie Laetrile,...was shown. The film was confiscated and the association president arrested." -

Michael Culbert, Vitamin B-17, Forbidden Weapon Against Cancer.

"Important Elements of FDA Policy: Encourage local medical licensing authorities to investigate and take appropriate action to deal with the use of Laetrile by physicians in their practice." - **FDA Division of Federal-State Relations Director, 1974.**

"Not that there are not real quacks in the field of cancer... But ...no legitimate MD...with a thriving practice and after years of study and faithful service would give all that up to become a quack and subject himself and his family to Hell..." - **John Richardson, MD, Laetrile Case Histories.**

"I had to stand three expensive trials in California courts, where in all three actions against me, the charges were dismissed. Then I had to stand and even longer and more expensive trial in Federal Court in San Diego, where I was convicted of 'conspiring to smuggle Laetrile' and was fined \$30,000. ... Cal. then revoked my license. - **John Richardson, MD.**

"The ...Times..headlined the Assistant US Attorney...grand jury investigation of myself, six months before the grand jury was even selected. ...Soon after Bantam printed 200,000 copies of our book, ...Times bought the serial rights to it. ...After sitting on the serial rights for a suitable period, the ...Times...unctuously begged Bantam to be released from their gentlemen's agreement, and the serial market had been destroyed. ...Most libraries will not accept a book that has not been reviewed by the ...Times or its affiliate..." - **John Richardson, MD, Richardson Newsletter, 1979.**

"Federal, state, and local police raided Dr. (John) Richardson's Clinic,...beat up a(n) aide, manhandled a nurse, and dragged the business manager off in handcuffs."

"20 Federal agents in 13 undercover cars...arrested and...jailed...Robert Bradford (President, Committee for Freedom of Choice in Cancer Therapy.)...on leave from Stanford University... and two Mexicans..on charges of conspiracy to smuggle (Laetrile)."

"The Food, Drug, and Cosmetic ACT,...defines any article 'intended for use in the diagnosis, ... treatment, or prevention of disease' as a 'drug'...Water...to an individual dying of thirst could ... be called a 'drug.'" - **Michael Culbert, Freedom From Cancer**.

(This MD)"utilized (Vitamin B-15 & 17) as therapeutic agents in the treatment of cancer. (These) are not recognized vitamins in human nutrition. Laetrile...is unsafe for self medication..."

The management of cancer patients with...vitamins...to the exclusion of...conventional modalities is an extreme departure from the standard practice of medicine."

(MD)"Certificate...of John A. Richardson...is revoked." - **California Board of Medical Quality Assurance, 1975. - the four paragraphs above in John Richardson, Laetrile Case Histories**.

"What water is to thirst, so normal metabolism is to cancer." - **John Richardson, MD, Richardson Newsletter, 1978**.

Section 2

"In early 1978 I sent a serious article on approaching trends of unorthodox cancer treatment to a major British doctor's publication,..., to which I had frequently contributed before. It was declined, as was the editor's privilege. This decision I accepted without comment...But when I published a similar article for a more general readership in a non-medical publication, the Deputy Editor of ... published a most offensive attack on me and my views. ...This year another major medical publication, Doctor, was pleased to accept and print my views. A huge correspondence from doctors seeking further information ensued."

"The violent disagreements and vehement proclamations of different 'experts' at cancer symposia are now well-known, as each defends his own pet programme."

"In most European countries amygdalin (Laetrile) has never been illegal...Bitter almond, ... peach (are some) sources of amygdalin.... Celsus in ancient Rome used almond to treat 'putrid flesh'. Largus, another Roman, used it for bladder tumours. Galen,,,used almonds for 'scirrhus of the liver'. ...Avicenna also used (almond) oil for tumours of uterus, spleen, stomach,

and liver."

"The psychosomatic element...in cancer causation and treatment.(;) Gendon in 1701, Burrows in 1783, Nunn in 1822, Walshe in 1846, the famous Sir James Paget, describer of Paget's disease, in 1879, Snow in 1893 and Elida Evans in 1922, are the names of just a few (Doctors). - **Dr. Dick Richards, Kent Private Clinic, England, The Topic of Cancer: When the Killing Has to Stop.**

""...HH Beard has perfected ...3 excellent (urine) cancer tests, all of proven accuracy of 95% or better..... in 1942 and onwards."

"The enzyme beta-glucoronidase is necessary to ...'trigger off'.. laetrile.....after the laetrile injection, we injected directly into the tumor...beta-glucoronidase. The result was white slough which encompassed the (tumor) growth. ...The slough resorbed and was replaced by normal (tissue)." - **Arthur T. Harris, MD, U. Edinburgh (under John Beard); PhD, Med.; DSc, Biochem.**

"Early one morning in 1946 our lab was mysteriously destroyed by fire....We then established a lab at ...our present location. Then again one morning in 1947, this lab was set on fire and completely destroyed." - **Howard H. Beard, ScD; PhD, Yale U. Porter Fellow, Physiology; MA, Columbia U; Professor and Director., Biochem Dept., author of 150 articles and three books, etc., etc. Director John Beard Lab of Clinical Biochemistry.: A New Approach to the Conquest of Cancer, Rheumatic and Heart Diseases.**

"...Medical mankind in particular, were supposed to be waiting for the advent of some new scientific discovery concerning the nature of cancer... ...The physical martyrdom was lacking; but there are, as I can testify from experience, many more ways than one of burning a scientific man at the stake." - **John Beard. D.Sc., The Enzyme Treatment of Cancer and its Scientific Basis. c. 1911 AD.**

"Dr. (Howard H.)Beard 'was ...charged with...mail fraud...rendering fake and medically worthless cancer reports...Postal Investigators satisfied themselves the reports were willfully falsified...' On Oct. 30, 1967, Dr. Beard was sentenced in US Federal Court, Ft. Worth, Texas, 'to...mail fraud...He alleged he could detect the presence of cancer in urine in 95% of all tests

made." - **FDA Papers, 1967-1968 (in ACS, Unproven Methods of Cancer Management, 1967)**.

"Arthur Harris (MD, PhD)..was soon forbidden to use Laetrile on hospitalized patients. ... In...1953, Harris reported: 'Of total number of cases (82) treated with Laetrile, 43 have been pay patients, many have paid only a part of their bills...' ...Dr. Harris...received a summons from the LA County Medical Association to appear for trial...for unethical conduct in overcharging 3 patients for Laetrile...Files showed that the (3 patients) had not paid a cent of their bills....Harris received notice that he had been expelled from the county medical society." - **Glenn D. Kittler, Laetrile: Nutritional Control for Cancer with Vitamin B-17, c. 1963**.

"Why is it that the US Supreme Court says physicians may perform abortions on the ground that the physician - patient relationship is inviolable; but that the same physician is not permitted to prescribe Laetrile for his patients...but not to destroy life but to save it? Why are we told that a patient has the "right to die with dignity", but may not take Laetrile in an attempt to live?" - **Alan Stang, American Opinion (from Princeton paper, "The Political Implications of Laetrile...")**.

"The average citizen in this country does not have...the background that will enable him to make enlightened decisions concerning the selection and use of therapeutic agents." - **Acting director, National Cancer Institute**.

"In a study of 252 people who attended a Laetrile symposium sponsored by the CCS (Cancer Control Society), we found that those attending were predominantly white, female, rural, and highly educated." - **Gerald E. Markle and James C. Petersen, Professors of Sociology, Western Michigan University; editors of Politics, Science, and Cancer; the Laetrile Phenomenon**.

"Nearly 8 out of 10 persons agree that, 'since we don't know how to cure cancer, if Laetrile is harmless, people ought to be able to buy it if they want to use it.' Reinforcing this view are public doubts about the FDA and other government health agencies." - **Lou Harris Poll of 1600 Americans, July 1977**.

"A nationwide Harris Poll showed that the public favoured the use of Laetrile by a 30% margin. ...In over 250 cases of cancer with which I have been associated, all of whom used (Laetrile, vitamin) B-17, not a single one had side effects as a result...." - **Leon Chaitow, ND, DO, Member, British Naturopathic and Osteopathic Association., An End to Cancer?**

"Such letters...from the FDA, are, filled with objectively demonstrable lies, practiced deceptions and deviousness, red herrings, directed misinformation, misdirected information, etc. ...Once FDA-NCI-AMA-ACS...concedes that Laetrile anti-tumor efficacy was indeed even once observed...a permanent crack in bureaucratic armor has taken place." - **Dr. Dean Burke, co-founder, National Cancer Institute (NCI), Cyto-chemistry section: open letter July 3, 1973.**

"I was about the most negative person in the country about interferon." - **Dr. Frank Rauscher, Director, NCI, vice president, ACS (American Cancer Society) in Time, 3-31-1980.**

I would certainly not turn off Laetrile if it had an iota of activity that we could pinpoint. Unfortunately, there's no evidence at all." **Dr. Frank Rauscher, 60 Minutes 3-31-1974.**

"We don't have any pesticides showing up in the food chain anymore." - **NCI Director and ACS vice president, Dr. Frank Rauscher.**

"...there is no basis for the use of Laetrile in man based on data derived from experiments on animals.": - **Dr. Jesse Steinfeld, Surgeon General, US Public Health Service.**

"The data provided by the McNaughton Foundation certainly indicates some activity (of Laetrile) in animal tumor systems.: - **Dr. Carl Baker, Director, NCI 1970-1972.**

(Laetrile)"may be useful in sickle cell anemia...(Laetrile) used in animals with tumors show: a decrease in lung metastases; slower tumor growth; and pain relief." - **Lloyd Old, MD, vice president, Sloan-Kettering Institute for Cancer Research, at FDA 7-2-1974.**

"When results of the (Laetrile) toxicity tests at Loyola (University, Chicago) were complete, (Dr. Harold Manner, Chairman Biology Dept., author 50 articles, 5 texts) asked NCI to publish the findings in Journal NCI. This the agency refused to do. Publication in other journals was also denied him." - in **National Health Federation, Bulletin, Nov. 1977.**

"When Dr. Manner reported on the total remission of breast cancer in lab animals (Using 'Laetrile in conjunction with vitamins and enzymes')..., ACS President, Ben Byrd, criticised (him) for making his announcement in public, and said such announcements should be made only in a proper scientific forum."

"But, as all scientists know, there is a time lag of 12 to 18 months between the time a manuscript is submitted and the time it is published in a scientific journal."

"...Delay, says Dr. Manner, is a luxury which people with right-now cancers cannot afford." - **Paul Harvey, "Cancer Remission with Laetrile", LA Times, 10-10-1977.**

"...The ...experts of the FDA have declared Laetrile to be worthless...quackery and fraud... These experts are the professional descendants of experts...confident that mental illness should be cured by drilling holes in the skull, the better to let the demons out. ...This is the Orwellian fashion in which the medical establishment throws its weight around...." - **James Kilpatrick, Washington Star, 1976.**

"For some places you want harsh regulations backed by full weight of the law - (we) have had IND's (request to test on humans and Investigational New Drug) for Laetrile, for example, and other hoax remedies...Sometimes we say it is proper to hinder research."

(The FDA has)"what some people call the worst personnel in government...Open

drunkenness...for months...intimidation...tittering in corners, throwing spitballs; I am describing physicians, (who) slouch down in a chair, not respond to questions, moan and groan with sleeping gestures, a kind of behavior I have not seen in any other institution as a grown man." - **FDA, Bureau of Drugs Director, Dr. J. Richard Crout.**

"Dr. Helen Calvin...spearheaded...Indiana to approve Laetrile, and then she used the Laetrile and metabolic program...until the FDA arbitrarily and illegally held up her Laetrile shipments...patients started dying...When four of them had died, Dr. Calvin ended her own life." - **Arlin Brown, Cancer Victory Bulletin, Oct. 1978.**

(Maurice Kowan, MD)"served three months in jail, paid a fine of \$3,000, and was forbidden to see a cancer patient...for three years. Before sentencing, it had been suggested to Dr. Kowan...to sign a statement that...Laetrile...had proved no benefit....He refused any 'deals'..." - **Betty Lee Morales, "The National Health Federation, Do We Need It?".**

"The jury had never been allowed to see any evidence that Laetrile actually worked. (Yes Virginia, they can bury medical breakthroughs in court this way also.) Dr. Kowan...was...age 70..." - **G.E. Griffin, Cancer Control Journal, 1977.**

"...In treating approximately 100 cancer cases, most ...terminal, (Dr. Kowan) was able to achieve dramatic relief from pain in virtually every single case. ...Several patients told...that the fees Dr. Kowan charged were ridiculously low.... Dr. Kowan was sentenced (including) 30 days in the workhouse..." - **David Martin, Staff member, US Senate Internal Security Committee, in Cancer News Journal, Jan 1971.**

"In a free society men and women should not be prevented by Government from seeking medical remedies which they believe will be effective. ..."

"Despite the fact that a predicted 350,000 persons in the US will die of cancer this year, the cancer bureaucracy keeps a closed mind. ...the basic issue is not the efficacy of Laetrile, but the infringement of freedom in what amounts to a life and death question."

"Freedom of choice must be brought to bear upon the US Medical practice." - **US Congressman Philip M. Crane, Congressional Record, 1975.**

"More than half of all great remedies known to medical history have come from empiricists...'irregulars'...of no or little scientific training. There is no reason to believe that conditions have essentially changed." - **Dr. Alex Carrel 1912 Nobel Prize in Medicine, "in recognition of his work on vascular suture and the transplantation of blood-vessels and organs."**

"Patients have been cured almost instantaneously of...lupus...,cancer ...,ulcers..., tuberculosis ...In a few seconds, at most a few hours, the symptoms disappear and the anatomic lesions mend. The miracle is characterized by extreme acceleration of the normal process of healing." - **Dr. Alexis Carrel,**

"...the influence of the factory upon the physiological and mental state of the workers has been completely neglected."

"The modern city consists of...dark, narrow streets full of gasoline fumes, coal dust, and toxic gasses, torn by the noise..."

"Enormous amounts of money are spent for publicity. As a result, large quantities of alimentary and pharmaceutical products, at the least useless, and often harmful, have become a necessity for civilized men." - **Alexis Carrel, Man the Unknown.**

"Dr Alexis Carrel,...(:) After his book was published in 1935, titled Man the Unknown, he was eased out of the Rockefeller Institute of Research, and he went to France...When he arrived, he was arrested on a false charge and put into prison...Two months later he died.: - **Professor Hilton Hoptema, Health Research Sheet.**

"The discovery of radium by the Curies was facilitated by observing a witch doctor treating sick people by burying them up to their necks in radium-bearing mud." - **Donald Law, A Guide to Alternative Medicine.**

"Everybody should know that the 'war on cancer' is largely a fraud, and that the NCI and the ACS are derelict in their duties to the American people who support them." - **Linus Pauling** **1954 Nobel Prize in Chemistry for**"his research into the nature of the chemical bond and its application to the elucidation of the structure of complex substances.", and **1962 Nobel Peace Prize**.

"..The truly fraudulent claims must be discarded. But novel methods of therapy should not be rejected because they are novel, or because they run counter to some generally accepted belief ("which may just be biased"), or because we do not understand the mechanism of the proposed treatment, or because it has come from an unconventional source." - **Linus Pauling**

"'Cancer dialogue '80'...(was) sponsored by the Omega Institute, and co-sponsored by the American College of Preventive Medicine, and the American Holistic Medical Association.... The New York Times reported on Oct. 13, 1980 that 9 of the 27 (speakers: NCI Directors, Drs. Arthur Upton and Frank Rauscher, Sr. V. President of ACS; Dr. Emil Frei III, Director, Sidney Farber Cancer Institute; et al)..had withdrawn about two weeks before the opening...from this discussion of traditional and 'alternative' approaches to cancer treatment...Some of the speakers said that pressure had been put on them...the Medical Tribune (Oct., 1980) 'Most of the 8 dropouts received influence-wielding phone calls from (the) chairman of the ACS's committee on unproven methods of cancer management, or other ACS officials.'" - **Linus Pauling**

"...Terminally ill cancer patients,...100...who took 10 grams of Vitamin C daily lived four times longer (from date of diagnosis as 'untreatable', than controls)...Dr. (Linus) Pauling submitted these findings in a scientific paper to Journal of the AMA, and New England Journal of Medicine, and both have refused to publish this illustrious Nobel Laureate's work." - **D. Ian Thierman, Yale U. Grad., (in International Association of Cancer Victims and Friends, Jan. 1979).**

"Dr. Anthony Verlangieri, ..Rutgers U. ..., was refused funds for...reducing athero-sclerosis with Vitamin C. ..Dr. Jorgen Schlegel (is) combatting cancer with vitamin C at Tulane Med. ...And Dr. Eli Seifter (discovered) that vitamin A (fights) cancer tumors of viral origin. Yet both distinguished scientists have been refused funds. ...Dr. Linus Pauling,...two time Nobel Prize winner..., has found it impossible to get federal funds for his research in treating cancer with...

vitamin C." - **Jack Andersen, "Tired Blood in Federal Health Research". Rocky Mountain News, 1975.**

"The American Cancer Society tried to ruin my research foundation." - **Albert Szent-Gyorgyi, discoverer of vitamins C and P, 1937 Nobel Prize , " for his discoveries in connection with the biological combustion process, with special reference to Vitamin C and the catalysis of fumaric acid."**

"(The National Cancer Program is) a bunch of (obscenity)."

"The American public is being sold a very nasty bill of goods about cancer." - **James Watson, co-discoveror of the DNA double helix, and 1962 Nobel Laureate in Medicine for that discovery and related work.**

"The American Cancer Society has done the American public a really great disservice." - **Dr. David Baltimore, 1975 Nobel Laureate in Medicine for, "their discoveries concerning the interaction between tumor viruses and the genetic material of the cell."**

"...cancer...there is no disease whose prime cause is better known...In the meantime, millions of men must die unnecessarily." - **Otto Warburg, Nobel Laureate in Medicine in 1931 "for his discovery of the nature and mode of action of the respiratory enzyme."**

"But how long prevention will be avoided depends on how long the prophets of unbelief will succeed in obstructing the application of scientific knowledge in the cancer field. In the meantime, millions must die of cancer unnecessarily." **Otto Warburg.**

"...It would be possible to make much more progress than has been made if the NCI knew its job better, knew how to make discoveries...The NCI really does not know how to make discoveries....So long as the NCI is not willing to follow up ideas that seem good to people who

have had experience making discoveries, the work of the NCI is going to be pedestrian." - **Linus Pauling.**

"...What kills science in this country now, (is) that you must tell in advance what you will find, and what you will do exactly, and what you will spend your money on. And if you knew it all, then you wouldn't need to do it. ... And so you cannot have (any) new discoveries.: - **Albert Szent-Gyorgyi.**

"Money appropriated for FDA in 1945 (was) \$3 million; in 1968, \$66 million. Number of employees in 1945, approximately 850; in 1968, 5100. Seizures of foods in 1945, 2504; in 1968, 384. Injunctives for violative foods in 1945, 26; in 1968, 3....Prosecutions for violative foods, in 1945, 278; in 1968, 70. - **US Congressman L.H. Fountain (In Beatrice T. Hunter, Mirage of Safety).**

"Anyone may logically wonder why this information has not been put into proper investigative format and presented toward various medical bodies. The answer is simple. With the powerful alliance of the media, the federal agencies and orthodox medical groups, anyone attempting to present such...would be destroyed with orchestrated cries of 'Quackery.' There is ample evidence to document this beyond question." - **US Congressman Larry McDonald, MD.**

"When it was first introduced, the claims for penicillin were also a minority view, and it (penicillin) was suppressed for 11 or 12 years. - **Congressman Larry McDonald, MD. (in Steven Fredman, MD and Robert Burger, Forbidden Cures).**

"No one seems to care. Certainly, no one in the million dollar fund-raising cancer clinics are excited over the almost miraculous ...record of...Krebiozen..."

"Maybe the raising of millions of dollars of funds for charitable projects has become 'a racket', and the longer they remain in the test-tube stage of development, the longer patronage and job payrollers remain in their soft berths."

"...this charity...They quibble too much over procedures...while we seek a cure. They complain too loudly against another who, seemingly, has perfected a work that the public expects its charity dollars to do. Maybe we should investigate the American Cancer Society's operations."

"..Dr. Andrew C. Ivy, (is) the champion of the scientific doctrine of freedom of research, which has suffered in recent years through the falsity of certain politico-physician leaders of the AMA, who faked reports, suppressed honest information, brutally slugged the opposition, both physically and through pressures, used to prevent the truth about Krebiozen reaching the American people." - **US Congressman Roland V. Libonati, Congressional Record, 1959.**

"...Whereas spontaneous cure (of cancer) remains a scientific curiosity with a rate of 0.00001%, the administration of Krebiozen has given a recovery rate of 12.5% or a 1,250,000 fold increase." - **Steven Durovic, MD, post-graduate at U. of Vienna, and Pasteur Institute,; "Cancer and Krebiozen...", Today's Japan Orient/West, May 1961.**

"...All the TV stations in the NY-Philadelphia metropolitan area refused to sell time to Timex to permit public showing of a documentary it had produced on Krebiozen. ..Where the AMA previewed the documentary..." - **American Jewish Ledger, 1964.**

"The FDA and much, but not all, of the orthodox medical profession are actively hostile against vitamins and minerals... They are out to get the health food industry...And they are trying to do this out of active hostility and prejudice." - **Senator William Proxmire (in National Health Federation Bulletin, April, 1974.**

"This dogged, same track approach (by the NCI) is even more astonishing..."

"This total failure to address the diet/cancer relationship is most disturbing to ...those... informed..." - **Senator George McGovern. 1978 Subcommittee hearings on Nutrition.**

"Even though the nutrition research budget has increased 21 fold in the last four years, it still remains less than 1% of total NCI budget, even though one half of all cancers are diet related..."

Does the peer review simply turn into a 'buddy' system for awarding grants? - **Senator Bob Dole., 1978 Subcommittee hearings on Nutrition.**

"Eminent nutritionists have traded their independence for the food industry's favors." - **US Congressman Benjamin Rosenthal.**

"There are only three proven ways - and only three- to curb cancer: (1) X-ray, (2) radium, (3) and surgery, either singly or in combination..." **ACS , Cancer Facts, 1955.**

(Why is there frequent criticism that the cancer research system is unreceptive to unorthodoxy?) "Because its true. Not cancer research, all research systems. It's a very important issue...The entire system...tends to exclude people from the fringe who have ideas that are radical departures, and we ought to pay a lot more attention to them....I try." - **Dr. Vincent DeVita, Jr., Director NCI.**

"Non-acceptable type of therapy, including Laetrile, Krebiozen,etc." - **NCI 1976 SEER Code Manual.**

"Because of the vast areas of ignorance that still exist in our understanding of the cancer problem...areas of basic research are essential...This...must be supported at an adequate level." - **Report of the President's Cancer Panel, 1975.**

"The main criterion for an award (of a research contract from the NCI) is the capacity to demonstrate the relevance of the project to the program's target. But the only sure way to prove this relevance is to have, in fact, already proved it." - **June Goodfield, FRSM The Siege of Cancer.**

"During the 1960's...HIP...study showed no gain from mammography to women under 50, ('yet') all women over 35 were invited to participate in the (Breast Cancer Detection) Demonstration Project (of the ACS &) NCI..."

"In 1973, Alan S. Rabson of the (NCI) Division of Cancer Biology and Diagnosis (said) mammography was the real risk, (the test itself causing cancer). William Pomerance (Chief, Diagnostic Branch, same NCI division, wrote:) '...At a meeting of some contractors, ...I made the statement...I would change the initial age to 45...They 'fell on me' and went so far as to decide (to) start at age 30...Their reaction is hysteria...' ...John Bailer III (of NCI) published in Jan. 1976...that for women under 50, the risk...might equal the chance (of detecting)..."

(When)"the controversy became public....An independent NCI committee (found:) Of 1850 women diagnosed (by mammography) as having cancer, the review of the (pathological) tissue showed that 66 did not have cancer at all...NCI 'reclassified' (18) cases. For the remaining 48 cases, there appears to have been no evidence of cancer; 37 of 48 women have undergone mastectomies. The National Women's Health Network...complained...Dr. Vincent DeVita (Director), NCI responded (in) 1980, that NCI chose not to inform the women...' and that 'NCI does not acknowledge that 'there were serious problems' in this program.'" - **Susan Rennie, National Women's Health Network News, March 1981.**

"...When I submitted my manuscript for clearance, I was called...in to the office of my (NCI) director. He said, 'Now, the medical official of the AEC (Atomic Energy Commission) objects against that. They said there are quite other reasons why uranium miners develop cancer; it's not radioactivity. You shall omit that from your presentation."

"My...studies on occupational cancer...in...industries was forcefully and abruptly brought to a halt in 1952 by an order of the Surgeon General...(This followed) a protest by the Public Health Service (PHS) by....(an) industry...alleg(ing) that my activities were detrimental to their interests...I was forbidden (by PHS) to contact, thereafter, state health departments and industrial concerns on all matters of occupational cancer. (I was) to discontinue all field work..." - **Dr. Wilhelm C. Heuper, Chief, Environmental Cancer Section, NCI (In Larry Agran, The Cancer Connection).**

"The problem with 'prevention' is that it does not produce revenues. No health plan reimburses a physician or a hospital for preventing a disease." - **NCI Deputy Director, Division of Cancer Cause and Prevention; and of Diet, Nutrition and Cancer Program.**

"...Search for the cause may be a hopeless pursuit because most disease states are the indirect outcome of a constellation of circumstances." - **Dr. Rene Dubos, Rockefeller Institute.**

"The evidence is truly overwhelming that disease is pluri-causal." - **E. Cheraskin, MD, DMD, Professor Emeritus and of Medicine and Chairman Dept. of Oral Medicine, U of Alabama Med School, in Diet and Disease.**

"In 1906,...Upton Sinclair's sensational novel, The Jungle, (appeared)...Meat consumption in the US fell by 25% in the year following publication of The Jungle. (In) ...1967, President Johnson signed the Wholesome Meat Act into law. Upton Sinclair, in a wheelchair, was at his side. ...130,000 cattle carcasses were held back by federal inspectors in 1969 for removal of carcinomas and cancer eye."

"On fatal poisoning, in Dade County, Florida, ...in the under 5-year (old) group, pesticides were the leading cause of death.

"...Environmentalists...rarely leave energy in reserve for monitoring enforcement...The constituencies mobilized by the original event tend to equate enactment of a program with solution of the problem...FCC Commissioner Nicholas Johnson...(to) Senate Subcommittee:'... Then the pressure starts - on those who have been handed the job of investigation and reform. Corporate interests that will be adversely affected will move to delay, to water down, to remove 'dangerous people', and then finally to participate in the final whitewash." - **Harrison Wellford, Cambridge U., England, and a bunch of other credentials (Sowing the Wind).**

"The chief, if not the sole, cause of the monstrous increase in cancer has been vaccination." - **Dr. Robert Bell; V. President International Society for Cancer Research, British Cancer Hospital.**

"Dr. David Grasetti...said, 'The spread of cancer in mice...is astounding after they are given a dose of Rifampin'...a miracle antibiotic...in 1973, (a manufacturer of Rifampin) Dow Chemical, received almost \$900,000 in contracts from the NCI. (the) research (results were) permitted to remain confidential." - **Health Writers, Health Newsletter, 1974.**

"During three different strikes by MD's (in) the mid-1970's (in Israel, Columbia, and California), death rates fell between 18% and 50%..." - **Peter Chowka, "The Failure of Specialty Medicine", Journal of the Nutritional Academy**.

"Doctors...make periodic surveys of their techniques. I don't know why. After they're done, nobody seems to pay much attention to them..."

"One of the first controlled community studies on tonsillectomy (in Rochester, NY, in 1922), showed it had no effect...; yet this past year (1970), 1/3 to 1/5 of all children hospitalized in that same area (Rochester) were admitted for tonsillectomies!" - **Leonard Tushnet, MD, The Medicine Men**.

"I have given orders to my Death units to exterminate without mercy or pity men, women and children belonging to the Polish speaking race...After all, who remembers today the extermination of the Armenians?" - **A. Hitler, Aug 22, 1939, (in James Nazer, The First Genocide of the 20th Century,...Armenian Massacres)**.

"...In Europe at the present time (1943, it is) A crime punishable by death to spread information in regard to nutrition in Norway, Belgium, Holland, and all other conquered countries." - **D.T. Quigley, MD, Fellow American College of Surgeons, in The National Malnutrition**

"It has been common...to combine such unproven ingredients as bio-flavinoids, rutin..., with such essential nutrients as Vitamin C..., thus implying that they are all nutritionally valuable for supplementation of the daily diet. The courts have sustained FDA legal action to prevent such practices, and the new FDA regulations preclude this type of combination in the future... Similarly, it has been common...to state or imply that the American diet is inadequate because of soil deficiencies, commercial processing methods, use of synthetic nutrients, and similar charges. FDA recognizes that these false statements have misled, scared, and confused the

public, and is prohibiting any such general statements in the future...The medical and nutritional professions have shown strong support of this policy,..." - **FDA (Assistant General) council's letter to 5 US Legislators, Hearings, US Congress, 1973.**

"A citizenship of wholesale delegation and abdication to public and private power systems, such as prevails now, makes such periodic checks as elections little more than rituals." - **Ralph Nader.**

"The food industry, its trade associations, and research foundations, is well financed and highly organized to pressure the FDA." - **Ralph Nader.**

"22 of 52 top (FDA) officials have worked for regulated industries, or organizations that cater to those industries...During a hearing held in 1969 by the House Inter-governmental Relations Subcommittee, it was disclosed that of 49 high ranking FDA officials who had recently resigned or retired, 37 joined or served as consultants to regulated industries." - **Michael Jacobson, Food for People, Not for Profit.**

"...FDA was allegedly using one standard of safety, efficacy, and design of clinical tests for the little investigator...,but a different (more lax) standard for government paid NCI investigators using the drugs of the big drug companies." - **Dr. Miles H. Robinson, inserted by US Senator Edward V. Long into Congressional Record, 1966, "Is the FDA Hamstringing Cancer Research?"**.

"The Establishment...undismayed by the futility of funds dumped into the bottomless barrel of its 'proven methods', it remains adamant in refusing to investigate 'unproven methods'..."

"Nobody in the science and medical departments (in the ACS) is capable of doing real science...They don't know how to prevent cancer or cure patients; instead, they close the door on innovative ideas. ACS money goes to scientists who put on the best show to get grants, or who have friends on the grant-giving panels." - **American Cancer Society Science Editor (for 25 years), ACS Science Writers' Conference originator, Pat McGrady, Sr.**

"I've heard of cancer politics, but I've never seen anything like this in my entire life. In fact, I wouldn't believe it, if I hadn't seen it with my own eyes."

"...Everybody's afraid. Fear is overriding scientific inquiry and the ability to let the audience to make up its mind."

"The whole set-up (NCI-ACS) is a farce and a fraud." - **Joseph Gold, MD, Director, Syracuse Cancer Research Institute, March 1981.**

"The surgeons. They controlled medicine, and they regarded the X-ray as a threat to surgery. At the time surgery was the only approved method of treating cancer. They meant to keep it the only approved method by ignoring or rejecting any new methods or ideas. This is why I was called a 'quack' and nearly ejected from hospitals where I had practiced for years." - **Dr. Emil Grubbé**. Dr. Emil Grubbé, ...discovered...X-ray therapy (for cancer) in 1896...X-ray was not recognized as an agent for treating cancer by the American College of Surgeons until 1937...Dr. Grubbé...still was not recognized as late as 1951." - in **Herbert Bailey, Vitamin E, Your Key to a Healthy Heart**.

"...students were obliged...to learn about an interminable number of drugs, many...valueless, ...useless, some...harmful."

"...there is less intellectual freedom in the medical course than in almost any other form of professional education in this country." - **Harvard Medical School Dean, Dr. David Edsall.**

"...Members of the US 'cancer cartel' have staked their reputations on their oft repeated claims that the non-toxic, nutritional therapy of cancer is ineffective...The time will...come when (its) efficacy...will be officially acknowledged here in the US, as it already has been in many other countries." - **Albert Schatz, PHD, discoverer of streptomycin, and many other credentials.**

"Gregor Mendel, who had never received a teaching certificate because he couldn't pass in biology, began in 1856...(his) work, which was virtually the birth of genetics, wasn't widely

appreciated until the end of the century. ...Charles Darwin...dropped out of medical school because he couldn't stand science." - **C.R. Scriver, MD, "Inborn Errors of Metabolism, A new Frontier of Nutrition." Nutrition Today, 1974.**

"In 1966 the ACS formulated a State Model Cancer Act which was instrumental in the enactment of anti-quackery laws now enforced in 9 states...In California (it is a) felony...The use of unproven methods is also a criminal offense in Colorado, Illinois, Kentucky, Maryland, Nevada, North Dakota, Ohio, and Pennsylvania." - **Jane Brody of New York Times, and Arthur Holleb, MD of ACS, You Can Fight Cancer and Win.**

"The California cancer law places the burden of proof of efficacy and safety of a cancer agent on the proponent...In Sept, 1974, the State of California enacted new legislation which makes a conviction of a 'quackery' charge a felony..., with jail terms of 5 years and fines as high as \$10,000." - **ACS, Unproven Methods of Cancer Management. - 1976.**

"On April 17, 1952 the Dickinson County, Iowa chapter of the ACS ran a full page ad in ...'The Spirit Lake Beacon', asking society to enter the new field of investigating cancer cure claims. They cited 4 such 'cures'. The chapter was expelled from the ACS. Its chair(woman), Mrs. Roy Tatman, felt compelled to declare: 'We were asked to help conquer cancer. We tried to do just that. Has the society (ACS) another motive?'" - **Arlin Brown, March of Truth on Cancer.**

"'The historical phenomenon' of the 'long interval which' elapses 'between the making of a fundamental discovery and the general understanding of its importance and full realization of its benefits'...Nowhere today is this delay more unhappily evident than in the field of cancer research. The accumulated data of Rous, Shope, Coley, Bittner, Strong, Andervont, Green, Williams, Taylor, Furth, Twombly, Cowdry, Diller, Bawden, Pirie, Stanley, Wycoff, Kunits and others indicate...the path for...something of practical benefit to the cancer patient...other than surgery and radium." - **Frederick S. Hammett, Lankenau Hospital Research Institute, Science, 1946.**

"The...commission on Professional and Hospital activities maintains a computer bank of information on...American hospitals, including comparative death rates for procedures,

accidents, infections, errors....with a vengeance the government would envy...the information is 'classified'...this computer bank contains the potential for a 'Pentagon Papers' and 'Watergate' combined." - **Robert Mendelsohn, MD, Chairman, Medical Licensing Commission, State of Illinois, and many other credentials.**

(You)"would be shocked...at the amount of unnecessary surgery that is performed (for) money...And I can prove it." - **Paul R. Hawley, MD, Director, American College of Surgeons, 1953.**

"... A class action effort by 150 Iowa chiropractors (is) seeking \$300 million on charges of conspiracy by the AMA. Exhibits for evidence,...include...a 1965 letter from (an AMA organized) Quackery Committee, warning AMA members it was unethical to associate with 'the cult of the chiropractic'..."

"Last year the AMA adopted a new code of ethics allowing MD's to work with chiropractors." - **Voice of Medical Freedom, March 1981.**

"The belief of some trustees and staff members (is) that the selection of (the new Chairman, Board of Trustees) was in part engineered from within federal prison (by the) former board chairman now serving an 18-month sentence for bank fraud."

"...Control of the (AMA) is solidly in the hands of a layman of whom most AMA members have never heard of..., (a) **former executive director of AMPAC - the American Medical Political Action Committee.**"

"...Former AMA employees say that telephones at headquarters were tapped." - **"Turmoil at the AMA", Medical World News, 1974.**

"...purely for pleasure...In this perspective, there is no such thing as a junk food." - **AMA Secretary, Council of Foods and Nutrition, Philip White, 1979.**

(It is)"inappropriate at this time to adopt the proposed national Dietary Goals (of the Select Committee on Nutrition and Human Needs, US Senate, Feb 1977)...There is the potential for harmful effects (from it)." - **AMA Exec. V. Pres. James Sammons to the Senate Committee.**

"...how frequently...(is) the patient's suffering made worse by...frank mismanagement, if not downright neglect, of the patients' nutritional health in our hospitals."

...one of the largest pockets of unrecognized malnutrition in America...(is) in the ...hospitals." - **Charles E. Butterworth, Jr. MD, Chairman, Council on Foods and Nutrition, AMA.**

(In)"1916...that grand old pioneer of advancement in dentistry, G.V. Black...presented his epoch making studies on the role of fluorine in producing mottled enamel....The studies...by...the US Public Health Service (USPHS) led to a nationwide effort to eliminate...excessive fluorine in the drinking water (by) the USPHS..."

"...our knowledge of the subject certainly does not warrant the introduction of fluorine in community water supplies generally."

"Sodium Fluoride is a highly toxic substance..., it may be definitely harmful."

"...the potentialities for harm far outweigh those for good. - **Editorial Dept., Journal of American Dental Association. L.P. Anthony, DDS, Editor, Oct. 1, 1944.**

"Don't drink fluoridated water...Fluoride is a corrosive poison which will produce harm on a long term basis." - **AMA President, Dr. Charles Heyd.**

"I am a former state health director...It is disturbing to me when the men in the Public Health Service (PHS), who, as late as 1950, were not ready to endorse the universal use of fluorine, have now (1952), almost to a man, come out for the endorsement."

"It is difficult for me to understand how high officials in the PHS could change their mind, over a

three-month period, and completely reverse the field. Where once they advocated the go-slow sign on the use of fluorides, they now apparently have gone overboard, and put out large amounts of propaganda favoring the fluoridation of water. I am certain that the dental profession merely echoes and endorses the opinions of the PHS."

"...I cannot find any public evidence...that the AMA, the ADA (Dental), or several other health agencies, now recommending the fluoridation of water, had done any original ("experimental") work of their own. These groups were simply endorsing each other's opinions."

"You will note that all of the experts grounded in the science of bio-chemistry have advocated the go-slow sign on the use of fluorides in drinking water. I believe that the dental profession and other public-minded individuals, like myself, have been misled by the PHS, because all of the facts have not been made available upon this subject."...

"I sometimes wonder if (a major aluminum company) might not have a deep interest in getting rid of the waste products from the manufacture of aluminum, because these products contain a large amount of fluoride. In this connection it is interesting to know that (a bureaucrat), who now heads up the Federal Security Administration (precursor to the US Public Health Service), and the firm of attorneys he was with...represents (that aluminum company)." - **US Congressman, Dr. A.L. Miller, Chairman, Special Committee on Chemicals in Foods, "Fluoridation of Water, Extension of Remarks., Congressional Record, 1952.**

(As of 1983)"Belgium, West Germany, and Sweden have abandoned their pilot fluoridation experiments on human populations, and are not fluoridating any public water supplies. Sweden, Denmark, and Holland have banned it completely. Many other countries, such as France, Italy, and Norway have never fluoridated their drinking water. Only about 2% of the population of Europe is living in a fluoridated area;" - **John Yiamouyiannis, PhD, bio-chemistry, BS, U of Chicago; President, Safe Water Foundation, Fluoride: The Aging Factor.**

"Within weeks after Dr. Yiamouyiannis next spoke out against fluoridation, he was put on probation, was told he would never receive a raise again, and was advised to find another job. Dr. Yiamouyiannis was ultimately forced to resign." - **John Yiamouyiannis, PhD, editor, Chemical Abstracts Service, American Chemical Society, Fluoride: The Aging Factor.**

"The fluoride ion exerts its toxic effect by inhibiting the action of many enzyme systems." - **Dr.**

L.P. Sumner, Cornell U. and Dr. H. Theorell; Uppsala U., Sweden, both Nobel Laureates, enzyme chemistry. (Sumner 1946, Chemistry, Theorell 1955, Medicine).

"Thus some some of the serious charges that are being laid at fluoride's door - genetic damage, cancer, birth defects, and allergy response - may arise from fluoride interference after all." - **Journal of American Chemical Society, and New Scientist, both January 1981.**

"It took almost six months to persuade the public library in ...to include the book, The American Fluoridation Experiment, by F.B. Exner, MD, and G.L. Walbott, MD. Then, one year later it was found in the waste disposal container stamped 'Discarded...'" - **Eden Ranch, Organic Consumer Report, 1978.**

"Thus, under careful examination of original data, cross-examination under oath of scientific proponents, and critical follow up assessments of effects, neither the efficacy nor the safety of fluoridation has been demonstrated. Nevertheless, it seems impossible to engage the scientific community or the public health authorities in any effort to examine the subject."

"The reexamination of subjects on which strong recommendations have been made challenge one's commitment to integrity. If, as scientists and public health advisors, we can't muster the courage to meet those challenges, perhaps we should all take up a more honest profession such as used car sales or TV repair where at least the results of our services are unequivocal." - **Frederick I. Scott, Editor(ial), American Laboratory, September 1980.**

"The legislation...of...fluoridation..is unreasonable and a violation of the due process clause of the Illinois Constitution..."

"This record is barren of any credible and reputable, scientific epidemiological studies and/or analysis of statistical data, which would support the Illinois Legislature's determination that fluoridation of the public water supplies is both a safe and effective means of promoting public health.

"..(Fluoridation) is unconstitutional....(and)..an unreasonable exercise of police power..." - **Judge Ronald Niemann, Circuit Court, Ill. Decree, Illinois Pure Water and Ruby Hale vs. Director of Public Health and Director of EPA, State of Illinois., Health Action, Feb, 1982.**

"...The evidence that fluoridation of the public water supply at the rate of one part per million is carcinogenic is irrefutable."

"...Say somebody shot somebody....We...are so concerned about whether this evidence was admitted properly...(and) not recognize the intrusion into our sacred individuality that is being caused every time people turn on the faucet? ...I am astounded by how much untruth has been officially promulgated (pro fluoridation)." - **Justice John Flaherty, Supreme Court of Pennsylvania, address, June 7, 1981.**

"Dr. Miller: 'The USDA made some examination...(and) recommended to the farmers that fluorine not be added to the water...of (pregnant) sows because it did something to the pigs that were unborn...Do you think it might be wise for the (US)PHS...to inquire what might happen to pregnant women and the unborn child...?'"

"Dr. Porterfield: 'No, sir; I think there is a difference....There is more money available for matters that have economic value than there is for health.'" - **Chemicals in Foods and Cosmetics, Hearings, Select Committee, US House, 1952.**

Section 3

"In the feeding of hospital patients, more attention should be given to providing tasty and attractive meals, and less to the nutritive quality of the food."

"People say that all you get out of sugar is calories, no nutrients...There is no perfect food, not even mother's milk."

"Have confidence in America's food industry, it deserves it." - **Harvard U. School of Public Health, Nutrition Dept. Head, Dr. Frederick Stare.**

"...attempts to make further reports were blocked by requests of the Journal of the AMA, made the (other) official journals, to refuse me the right to report my findings further."

"...so when the Cancer Quack conventions of the AMA annually proclaim that the sign of a

quack is his refusal to report his work in official journals, they are putting on a gigantic fraud. It was so in my case." - **William Frederick Koch, MD, Prof. Chemistry and Histology, U Michigan Medical School, nephew of Nobel Laureate in Medicine, Robert Koch, and other credentials.**

"I see in him (Dr. Max Gerson) one of the most eminent medical geniuses in the history of medicine...he was greatly impeded by adverse political conditions."

"...try to tell the people of America about Dr. Gerson's merits and ...results...I wish you the best in your difficult task." - **Dr. Albert Schweitzer.**

"Dr. Ferdinand Sauerbruch, MD, arranged a grand test for using Gerson's diet therapy (against cancer, etc.) on 450 'incurable' lupus patients. 446 recovered."

"Gerson was invited...on...a...talk show by...host Long John Nebel...Nebel was fired....the very next day and the radio network was threatened by the AMA."

"Even when a very rare Jew...escaped from a concentration camp and sneaked back to his people to warn them...they could not believe the escapee."

"On two occasions Gerson became violently ill...Lab tests showed...arsenic in his urine...Some of Gerson's best case histories mysteriously disappeared from his files. The manuscript and all of his copies for Gerson's almost completed book were stolen and never recovered....They spread the lie that Dr. Gerson died of cancer." - **Norman Fritz, space shuttle engineer, Healing, Journal of the Gerson Institute.**

"Gerson was treating nine out of ten (cancer) patients without cost."

"The AMA, of which Gerson was a member, promptly saw to it that he was no longer allowed to use the facilities of any New York hospital." - **Health Research, Is Cancer Curable?, 1954.**

"In 1946 Dr. Gerson became the first physician to demonstrate recovered cancer patients before a US (Legislative) committee. This Senate committee was holding hearings on a bill to

find means of curing and preventing cancer. Unfortunately the lobby supporting surgery, radiation, and chemotherapy lobbies caused the defeat by four votes of the Senate bill which could have supported extensive research into the Gerson therapy." - **Max Gerson, MD, A Cancer Therapy: Results of 50 cases, (not quote from Dr. Gerson, but on book jacket).**

"She reported that 'Dusty' Rhoads, head of Sloan-Kettering, told her he would use the Gerson Therapy if he had cancer, and explained the reasons he was blocked from using it at the hospital" - **Norman Fritz.**

"...An editorial of the Journal AMA, Jan 8, 1949, discussed the Gerson Therapy under the heading 'Frauds and Fables'. At that time, Dr. Gerson's lawyer wrote a letter to the JAMA, threatening a suit for libel...The editorial was withdrawn...(leaving) columns which were blank." - **Charlotte Gerson, both above from Healing, Journal of the Gerson Institute and... Therapy.**

"Sometimes there is little regard for people's lives....A hospital tested a new NCI drug ...on children. Their kidneys were lost within days. This was no big deal, because new drugs are routinely given out with literally no safeguards for people..." - **FDA drug review section's Robert Young.**

"...It's been like swatting flies with a sledgehammer....I suppose as far as end products are concerned it's been a bust, but then so is the over-all treatment of cancer." - **Dr. Charles Moertel, Director, NCI Comprehensive Cancer Center, Mayo Clinic.**

"A one year study by the Washington Post has documented 620 cases in which experimental drugs have been implicated in the deaths of cancer patients....And they amount to merely a fraction of the thousands of people who in recent years have died or suffered terribly from cancer experiments..."

"...In the vast majority of drug experiments, it is not uncommon for none or one or two of hundreds of patients to benefit from the drug."

"These human experiments have gone largely unchallenged and unquestioned by Congress, the medical profession, and the scientific community at large." - **Last five paragraphs above in Ted Gup and Jonathan Neumann, "Cancer Cures Often a Curse", Washington Post, Reprinted in Chicago Sun Times, Oct 25, 1981.**

"The new medical-industrial complex is now a fact of American life...with broad and potentially troubling implications..." - **Dr. Arnold Relman, Editor, New England Journal of Medicine.**

"Corruption has permeated virtually every area of the Medicare-Medicaid health-care industry." - **FBI Assistant Director, Francis Mullen, JR. to Congress.**

"Nearly 90% of more than 10,000 publications about phenothiazines have been financially sponsored by the drug industry. Independent research studies conducted without drug company backing have failed to indicate overall usefulness of phenothiazines." - **D. Springer, "Thorazine; Chemical for Social Control", Issues in Radical Therapy, Spring '76.**

"The dilemma of the (AMA) Board of Trustees (is that it) ...had no choice but to appease the pharmaceutical industry...or forego income from advertising (in its journals)...The (AMA) Council on Drugs...(made up of 'independent thinking scientists and practitioners...was dissolved' and replaced) by the staff of the (AMA's) Dept of Drugs ('obligated to do the bidding of their superiors,...emasculated and worthless')...Thus the AMA has abrogated its responsibility of providing factual information on drugs to the physician in the public's behalf." - **AMA Council on Drugs Chairman, Dr. John Adriani, Professor of Surgery, Tulane U. Med. School, to US Senator Gaylord Nelson's Subcommittee on Monopoly.**

"In the first five years of his television 'practice', Marcus Welby, MD, received 250,000 letters from viewers seeking medical advice." - **ACS solicitation letter."**

"Each spring there is a media blitz in conjunction with ACS's fund raising campaign. The vast

majority of advertising space and time is contributed free of charge as a 'public service'." - **"Overview Needed of Cancer Cabal", Spotlight, 1981.**

"...the US Postal Service...issued an order to stop my ...mail....I have had to report to the local ...Postal Service...and open my mail in front of a local postal inspector. If any person... orders the herbal Cancer preventative formula...the letter...is confiscated..., stamped 'Fraudulent', and returned to the sender. The FDA recommended to the US Postal Service... that this...formula was not beneficially effective towards the treatment of cancer. (The FDA) did not even know what the ingredients of the formula were."

"(Active chemicals and) alkaloids are only harmful when extracted from the crude herb or botanical(;) becom(ing) imbalanced, causing contra-indications and side effects....Jurisdiction of the FDA is restricted to those new drugs manufactured after 1938." - **F. Joseph Montagna, Alternative Medical Association.**

"In 1971, the (US) Postal Service attempted to ban (Arlin Brown's) book, March of Truth on Cancer, from the mail." - **Arlin Brown (In Spotlight, 1981).**

"...The Cancer Biopathy...was...forced out of print by an injunction that caused Reich's books to be withheld or destroyed by an agency of the US Government." - **C.M. Raphael, MD, in froward to The Cancer Biopathy, by Wilhelm Reich, MD, U. Vienna, associate of Sigmund Freud.**

"In...1954, a permanent injunction was issued by the Federal District Court...enjoining Dr. Wilhelm Reich, his wife, ...from distributing 'orgone energy' devices, on complaint of the USFDA, ...for treatment of cancer...The decree was won by default, since Dr. Reich contended that the court had no jurisdiction (in)...'Basic Natural Law' and he failed to appear or answer the complaint...The decree (was) for destruction...of...all misleading labeling which included 10 (different) books by Dr. Reich...His followers...charg(ed) interference of freedom of the press.... Dr. Reich was sentenced to two years, and Dr. (Michael) Silvert to one year...in jail. After appeals were appeals were carried to the Supreme Court and denied...Dr. Reich died in prison; Dr. Silvert died shortly after he was released. (Their) foundation was...fined \$10,000." - **ACS, Unproven Methods of Cancer Management.**

"That the percentage of efficient and beneficial treatments by respondent (Hoxsey-herbs) is reasonably comparable to the efficiency and success of surgery and radium, without the physical suffering and dire consequences (of the last two)" - **Judge William H. Atwell, US District Court for Northern Texas, Dec. 20, 1950., Decision.**

"I am of the firm opinion and belief that Hoxsey has cured these people of cancer (with herbs). Hoxsey has been done a great injustice and articles and utterances by defendant Morris Fishbein (AMA chief and Managing Editor) were false, slanderous, and libelous." - **Judge W.L. Thornton, Decision, Hoxsey vs. Fishbein.**

"Warning against the Hoxsey (herbal) Cancer Treatment...Cancer can only be cured through surgery or radiation." - **FDA poster 1955, sent to 46,000 post offices for display.**

""...an investigator for the State Medical Board appeared...with warrants for (our) arrest...(for)...practicing medicine without a license. (Our) Dr....protested that he was the only man in the clinic who treated patients, and produced his license...But...it had been cancelled the day before...I pleaded with them not to arrest my wife who (did paperwork, and) told (them) that we had a 6 month old infant at home who had to be nursed regularly...(My wife was) locked up with degenerate females...They ganged up on her, slapped her, knocked her down and kicked her." - **Harry Hoxsey, You Don't Have to Die.**

"..Our paper's ...article...(:) The research on which it is based has taken us no less than four years. Two of our chief writers have followed the treatments and checked up on patients' records for months on end. We have made journeys to America..Our firm, at our request, has spent thousands of pounds on investigations...Certain kinds of cancer have been...treated with success by a man (Harry Hoxsey) who is not a qualified medical practitioner, and who has in the past been bitterly attacked in public for the treatment he has given." - **Man's Magazine, 1953.**

(This issue)"for some strange reason disappeared from the news stands." - **Health Research, Is Cancer Curable, for two paragraphs**

"New methods of health care have been discouraged, restricted, and in some cases eliminated (by the AMA)."

"...the AMA has prevented dissemination of truthful, objective information that could provide substantial benefits to the public."

"Competition...potentially poses a threat to the income of physicians in private practice. The costs to the public in terms of less expensive or even, perhaps, more improved forms of medical service are great."

""...a conspiracy between the AMA and its constituent and component medical societies...The record evidence contains more than sufficient quantity of independently admissible evidence to establish the existence of the conspiracy."

"The means (of) restraints..include...the "Principles of Medical Ethics",...and communication with medical societies and individual physicians to promote compliance with these...

(AMA's)"Judicial Council issues interpretations (on 'Ethics', and) is empowered to institute disciplinary proceedings...against physicians...and has appellate jurisdiction..."

"...when a physician disregards 'local custom',...he has acted unethically."

"In 1976, (AMA's) AMPAC reported campaign fund transfers of more than \$1 million, making it the second largest political action committee in the US." - **Federal Trade Commission, Docket n.9064, Initial Decision, Finding, Upheld by 2nd US Court of Appeals.**

"...Dr. McQueen-Williams, Mr. Sarkisian,...filed suit in the US District Court...for \$5 million against the ACS (American Cancer Society) for allegedly libelous statements...in Cancer - A Cancer Journal for Clinicians..."

"...the FDA seized (their herbs)..Court action was based on charges that the product was shipped..as a drug without prior showing of safety..."

"Dr. McQueen-Williams said no (NDA) new drug application had been filed since they do not

believe the law covers botanical compounds." - **ACS Unproven Methods**.

(The FDA)"is seeking, under the guise of (other) charges, to prohibit the sale of a food in the marketplace simply because it is not in sympathy with its use." - **Judge's finding, in US vs. Dextra..., (In, The Dictocrats, Our unelected Rulers).**

"Every human being of adult years and sound mind has a legal right to determine what shall be done with his own body." - **US Supreme Court Justice B.N. Cardoza, decision.**

"It may be conceded that the legislature has no constitutional right to compel any person to submit to vaccination." - **Judge Woodward, New York State Appellate Court, 1903, Viemester case.**

"I would like to maximize the level of human choice in the medical field...The choice of a treatment in many ways is like the exercise of religion."

"Everyone's heard about the military-industrial complex, but they know very little about the medical-industrial complex...(in) a medical arms race..." - **California Governor Jerry Brown, June 1980.**

"Following the Koch trial, a number of physical attacks were made upon me...I was robbed and beaten in my office and on the street...Similar attentions were paid other physicians who agreed with Dr. Koch.'" - **Anonymous MD.**"

"...one death from poisoning, and one from being run down by an automobile, both victims being physicians of distinction and prominent in the advocacy of the Koch treatment. Mail has often been opened, and cartons of certain chemicals often arrive empty..."

"(Dr. Koch himself was the target of at least 13 unsuccessful attempts on his life' - Riley H.

Crabb.)" - **M. Layne, The Koch Remedy for Cancer..., Borderland Sciences Research Foundation.**

"One doctor...J.W. Kannel, saved a young girl...She had hopeless cancer of the spleen...One shot of Glyoxylide, and she became well (in 1943; still alive in 1983)...For (this), Kannel was barred from all hospitals in Fort Wayne...The FDA had (Glyoxylide inventor, Dr. William Frederick) Koch arrested and thrown into an incredibly filthy jail cell in Florida in 1942."

"In 1926...The AMA...attempt(ed) to send a doctor using Koch shots to prison...(in) Massachusetts...Justice Pierce...berated the District Attorney, calling the opposition to Koch 'a moral crime of the very worst kind'." - **Wayne Martin BS, Purdue Univ. (Author, Medical Heroes and Heretics); We Can Do Without Heart Attacks. c. 1983.**

"...They forced (Chauncey Smith) to leave Loma Linda (U.)....So he went east...and resumed his research (on germs causing cancer). (then) mysteriously, he had died..."

"It was in 1936 that I copyrighted...Cancer, Its Cause and Control.....They forced me to serve a whole year in jail,...where I was so fed and treated that I had to cure myself of cancer...But when I had everything ready to put out a third edition...they notified in no uncertain terms 'Unless you stop...we will snatch you...and do a lobotomy on you...'" - **Emerson Hartman, International Association of Cancer Friends and Victims, Cancer News Journal.**

"...Dr. Thomas J. Roberts...one of the leading holistic physicians in the metropolitan Washington DC area...had his hospital privileges suspended because he doesn't believe in the Establishment 'cut-burn-poison' (Surgery-Radiation-Chemotherapy) cancer 'treatments'." - **Carol M. Dunn and William Carmichael., Spotlight, 1979.**

"The board of directors...decided (to end) Chelation Therapy in the very hospital that I owned!...I donated (my) 109-bed..hospital and 50-bed nursing home to the church."

"...The State Medical Board of Examiners of Louisiana...ruled that a doctor practicing Chelation Therapy or using...natural minerals and vitamins was 'incompetent',...defrauding the public'."

"The US Patent Office (, for my) chelating agents...granted a patent."

"...In a period of thirty days, three lawsuits were filed against me for malpractice for a million dollars each....I lost my malpractice insurance."

"I have declared bankruptcy. My home and furniture have been auctioned off." - **H. Ray Evers, MD, Vanderbilt U.; BS Biochemistry and Biology, Auburn U. Knight, Order of Malta; in Voice of Medical Freedom, Americans for Medical Freedom.**

"Our present state law has a 100% conviction record before the board (of medical examiners). There's not a D.A. in the country that would not love that record..." - **Dan and Beverly Dotson, MD's, in Voice of Medical Freedom.**

"Several hundred (ex-) patients...of the Shute Clinic...treated successfully with Vitamin E therapy for cardiovascular conditions, formed...'The Cardiac Society'....The AMA...enlisted...the US Post Office. Letters addressed to the society were returned to the sender marked 'Fraudulent.'" - **Herbert Bailey, Vitamin E .**

(Dr. Nathan) Pritikin...maintains that patients with atherosclerosis, heart disease, ...can be 'returned to normal function' by ...diet...low in fat, cholesterol, protein, and high in complex carbohydrates..."

"Loma Linda ...reported...that of the first 111 patients..with blood cholesterol between 260 and 279..., the average patient left... with...190...Of 218 patients (on) anti-hypertension drugs, 186 left with normal blood pressure..."

(Pritikin's diet is) "bizarre...fad." - **AMA public relations official, F. Chapel.**

"Until he shows us more than anecdotal evidence, there is nothing to evaluate his work on." - **American Heart Association's Mary Winston.**

"We've seen atherosclerosis turned on and off in monkeys (by nutrition, etc.). The problem is you've got to be a monkey to get proper treatment for heart disease in the country." - **Dr. William Castellini, Director, Framingham Project.** - **Last five paragraphs in Nutrition Action, April 1980.**

"Blood from coronary thrombosis patients....(:) on about 60...patients... hemoglobin was in all cases up (high)...Fort three years...examining blood of...several hundred people a day...testing out various diets...I came to the conclusion that (a vegetable-fruit diet and) one-third natural fruit juice, two-thirds water are the most suitable liquid foods to drop hemoglobin number as quickly as possible to a normal level...The Medical Society of New York accepted...my article and published it in New York Medicine for May 20, 1949. On May 21, 1949, I was fired from my position at the hospital. My daughter who also worked there, was fired, too." - **Ernest Klein, MD, "A New Theory for Diet and Coronary Thrombosis.", Prevention; J.I. Rodale, Ed. 1954.**

(Coronary artery bypass surgery:)"5 to 40% of patients...experience a heart attack during or soon after surgery...(:) typical rate...15-25%...20-30% of vein grafts become occluded (blocked) within one year of surgery....Grafts increase the likelihood that new occlusions will develop in the arteries at points both before and after the graft (parallel bypass) insertion site. ...six months after surgery...; New total occlusion developed in only 16% of arteries not bypassed, in 29% of arteries with a patient (open bypass) graft, and in 62% of arteries with an occluded graft."

"The US has a ratio (of thoracic surgeons to population)...many times greater than any other nation."

"Questionable medical practice is not just the result of mistake, occasional incompetence, and faulty regulation, but is the outcome of vested interests." - **Marcia Millman, The Unkindest Cut.**

"Although I found that the booklet (Stale Food vs. Fresh Food) contained some helpful suggestions and its author, Mr. Robert Ford, is a knowledgeable and sincere person (i.e. no intent to defraud), I found the representations in the Respondent's booklet to be unproven and contrary to the weight of informed medical and scientific opinion. As indicated by Dr.____, (the only US Post Office medical witness) a danger of this publication is that it will deceive people who have arterio-sclerotic problems into believing that they can cure these problems by diet

alone instead of seeking medical (AMA) help. Because the ads and this booklet contain materially false representations, they violate the provisions of 39 US Code Section 3005. Therefore...a mail stop order...should be issued..." - **E.S. Bernstein, Administrative Law Judge, (1982).**

"...Many physicians who agree with...safe alternatives will not participate in them for fear... ... Doing so would be tantamount to...professional suicide."

"Nearly 25% of all childbearing women in this country (US) are now having Cesarian sections!" - **David Stewart, PhD, Executive Director, NAPSAC (International Assoc. of Parents and Professionals for Safe Alternatives to Childbirth), The Five Standards for Safe Childbearing.**

"...Nial Ettinghausen, DP...Calif., has attended over 7,000 home births over the past 40 years. His Cesarian rate is 1.1% and his perinatal mortality rate for the past five years (2,508 births) is 4.2 per 1,000 - a rate less than one-quarter of the national average. Dr. Ettinghausen lost his license to practice in January of 1981..."

"Hai Abdul, MD, ...(is) offering natural childbirth...Since 1978, the California (BMQA) Bureau of Medical Quality Assurance has sent investigators to his clinic...On Christmas Eve, 1980, the investigator visited Dr. Abdul and his wife, who were in the midst of wrapping Christmas gifts, to inform them that the BMQA planned to level charges...'in two months'....Dr. Abdul lost his hospital privileges...Said Dr. Abdul...'It is an attack against every family who wants to choose the place and manner of their births.'..."

"It has been estimated that of the physicians in support of home birth and other safe alternatives, at least 90% are in trouble today. Either their licenses have been suspended or in threat..., their hospital privileges are in jeopardy, their insurance coverage has been cancelled, or all..."

"Do medical licensing boards, insurance companies and hospital boards judge all physicians by the same standards, or are there two sets - one strict, the other lenient - depending on whether the doctor supports alternatives or not?" - **NASPAC, NASPAC News, Spring 1981.**

"Doctors who have been doing home births, in many instances have lost hospital privileges, been threatened with loss of insurance, and threatened with criminal prosecution. ...There certainly isn't criminal prosecution when something goes wrong in the hospital. ...I know horrendous stories of women...just really being abused within the hospital because they tried

to have their babies at home...Practitioners are threatened with loss of license..." - **Michelle Harrison, MD, (author, A Woman in Residence) in "Behind the Mask of Women's Medicine", East-West Journal, Oct 1982.**

"I concluded that mongolism was a genetic defect resulting in metabolic accumulations. I treated it as such by removing the accumulations."

"Even the NIH (National Institute of Health) (has) written (my) medicines are safe."

"Why...was my office robbed and vandalized while I met with the FDA in Washington...a thief who only stole and destroyed patients' records...? Why was my telephone tapped...? Why were mail checks put on parents of my patients, friends, and relatives?"

"...The Japanese National Health Institute of Mental Health came to Detroit to extend me their gratitude for the 'U' series (used)...in 60 universities and national hospitals...(where) 3,000 children had been treated...one-third...improved both mentally and physically; an additional third improved physically only."

(My patient)"so impressed the (Michigan) legislatures...that both Houses passed...(a) Resolution...signed by the Governor, to treat institutional mongoloids with (my) 'U' series (of 'vitamins, minerals, enzymes, and prescription drugs...in...small dosages'). The Michigan Department of Health turned down this Resolution..."

"(US) Senator McGovern wrote...he had seen improvements in...his constituent, my patient..."

"...South African doctors...were told by the US State Department that our FDA would no longer allow them to treat..."

"...the National Association for Retarded Children, The National Institute of Mental Health (of NIH), and the March of Dimes had declined to investigate (my treatment)." - **Henry Turkel, MD, New Hope for the Mentally Retarded.**

"The Health...Department of the State of New Mexico 'took my children away....One of the charges leveled against me was that I had been raising my children on a vegetarian diet. I try to show my children respect for animals...I was outraged when I found out they fed my children meat.'" - **Vegetarian Times.**

"Dr. (William D.) Kelly has become harassed by agents from the IRS, FDA, HEW, CIA, CDC, Texas medical and dental boards, controllers, US Postal authorities, US Chamber of Commerce, Consumer Protection Agency...local and county ..police...Dr. Kelly was told by the Texas State Board of Dental Examiners that if he would stop distributing his book to cancer patients, they would drop all charges. ...Blue Cross will pay for cancer surgery, for chemotherapy, for cobalt (radiation..." for a terminal cancer patient...of \$30,000") but...refuses to pay for unorthodox treatments. My (five) visit(s) to Dr. Kelly cost...\$150 per visit." - **Foundation for Alternative Cancer Therapies, Cancer Forum.**

"The Rev. Edward Stone, an..English Clergyman...sought new drugs according to a rule: God (is) placing the cures for diseases in close proximity to their causes ...In 1763 ...Stone..learned that the countryfolk...treated fevers with...bark of the willow, a tree common in marshy locations. Willow bark...had the same 'extra-ordinary bitterness' as quinine...Stone treated some 50 fever-stricken patients (and)...it reduced the fever and relieved pain in every case... Chemists later (were) isolating the bark's active principle and synthesizing...salicylates...acetyl-salicylic acid...aspirin....Stone's re-discovery...of salicylate-containing plants had been known in antiquity..."

"...Dr. Bruce W. Halstead, Director World Life Research Institute, recalls...Indian Snakeroot... was 'laughed out of the office' of one important drug company official. Another company, with fewer prejudices, took the trouble to investigate it - and ultimately marketed millions of dollars worth of reserpine (toxic)." - **Dr. W. Modell. Professor of Pharmacy, Cornell U., Board member, US Pharmacopoeia, and many other credentials including consultant to US Surgeon General.**

"A contributory factor to the increase in cancer might be the widespread use of antibiotics since 1940. 'The antibiotics may absolve the body of the need to bring the normal immunological mechanisms into use..."

"In Japan, the daily use of the hot full bath may destroy incipient cancers..."

"Thousands more cancer patients were not given the benefit of such (fever/immuno-/(heat)) therapy since it was first initiated by (Dr. William Bradley) Coley 90 years ago...The incredible barriers created by the FDA since 1963. (:) To rule Coley's MBV (mixed bacteria vaccine) as a 'new drug' when it had been used for 70 years in nearly 900 patients was incredible. The red tape involved in securing (IND) Investigational New Drug Licenses....Progress will now have to

come from clinical trials in...countries which do not have such paralyzing restrictions." - **Helen Coley Nauts, Executive Director, Cancer Research Institute., "Bacterial Products in the Treatment of Cancer: Past, Present, and Future", read at International Colloquim on Bacteria and Cancer, Cologne, 1982) in Bacteria and Cancer, Jeljaszewicz, et. al., eds, 1982.**

"Mrs. Joseph (Kitty) Schumacher..fought against the government's ruling which bans Krebiozen (another famous alternative method snuff job) from the State of Illinois...As a result of her efforts, she was indicted in federal court in Chicago. She criticized the judge..., government,...and the prosecuting attorney. Yet, a jury found her not guilty." - **Butcher Workman. Sept., 1968.**

"Adolph Hohensee...operated a health farm for many years, hoping to find a violation, etc. Well, they did. They found he had mislabeled a vitamin, and they took him out at 2:00 AM in his pajamas and imprisoned him..."

"..The Durovics (of Krebiozen:)...how costly (their) nine month trial was, and no government paid their legal fees as was done for the FDA." - **Kitty Schumacher, Cancer Information Crusade, in letter to MDAC author, 1982.**

"There is a strong possibility..that selenium may prevent and/or cure cancer. ...As a scientist, you have to consider the possibility that (Dr. Revici) has something to offer." - **NCI selenium committee, Dr. Marc Micozzi.**

"After a (NBC TV) Today Show report...on Revici and his unorthodox treatment using...selenium,...officials suspended his license." - **Miami Herald for 2 quotes above.**

"Dr. Emanuel Revici...directs the Institute of Applied Biology....(and) is a veteran of over fifty years of research in biochemistry and holds over 100 patents. The New York State Health Department charged Dr. Revici with fraudulent practice, gross incompetence, and gross negligence." - **National Health Federation, Health Freedom News, April 1984.**

"There is not one, but many cures for cancer available. But they are all being systematically suppressed by the ACS, the NCI, and the major oncology centers. They have too much of a vested interest in the status quo." - **Robert C. Atkins, MD, Cornell University Medical College; Bach university of Medicine; (author Dr. Atkins Diet Revolution and Dr. Atkins' Nutrition Breakthrough).**

"...The plaintiff's lawyers have already filed and won a case allegedly proving that I have abandoned my homestead....My beautiful homestead will be sold at auction by the Sheriff..." - **V.V. Vetrano, Natural Hygienest, (by fasting).**

"The suit charged Dr. (Herbert) Shelton (author of 12 books on fasting) and Dr. Vetrano with starving with starving to death a guest (suffering from side effects from 'ethical pharmaceuticals') to death. Despite ample evidence produced to show that the guest did not die from starvation..." - **T.C. Fry, College of Life Science, Healthful Living, 1983.**

(regarding above case)"...For appeal purposes were several hostile rulings by the presiding Federal Judge on questions of admissible evidence..." - **American Natural Hygiene Society, Health Science, 1982.**

"The Chicago Women's Health Center was struck by arsonists on the evening of (1983). ... Damage is estimated at \$10,000. The damages are not covered by insurance....Clinic health workers take time to explain procedures and options to each patient they see..."- **Heartland, '83**

"...Mark Baum...MD...(adopted) living healthfully...(and) started advising healthful regimens for his clients. Dr. Baum's local medical society objected to his practices and invoked powers of state to close him down." - **Healthful Living, May 1983.**

"Our attorney...then filed a running complaint with the Hearing Officer that the panel of doctors on this District Review Committee...could not possibly give Dr. (Alan H.) Nittler (MD, author, A New Breed of Doctor) a fair hearing, in that they were totally unaware of nutritional metabolic therapy...and prejudiced against him....The District Court of Appeals also denied Dr. Nittler's request for a stay...The hearing...had to totally disregard all of the evidence presented by Dr. Nittler, and his witnesses....to revoke his license, the maximum penalty allowed." - **Foundation for Alternative Cancer Therapies Journal**.

"A person is a quack if:...He claims he is being persecuted by the 'medical establishment'. (and/or) He uses letters of testimonials...from patients in support of his treatment." - **New York State Education Dept., Curriculum Development Center, Bureau of School Health Services, 1977.**

"Their (hospital's) annual application for renewal of their license to operate would not be granted unless the ortho-molecular (nutrition) program was closed." - **M. Artery, attorney for Forest Hospital, in (Nutrition for Optimal Health Association) NOMA News, 1981.**

"...Incarceration and deprivation of the rights of mental patients, as if they were criminals rather than sick people(:)...In less the one-fourth of the states is a patient's right to communicate with the outside world protected by law; in less than one-half is his right to receive visitors protected by law; in less than one-tenth is he guaranteed the right to correspond with his attorney; the use of physical restraints is restricted in less than one-fourth of the states; and less than one-fourth of the states assure that he will receive a periodic examination for consideration for discharge." - **Arthur Frank, MD, and Stuart Frank, MD, The People's Handbook of Medical Care.**

"In my legal practice, I have seen certain Federal judges controlled or influenced by large corporations..., by large law firms...on more than one occasion(, and) ...by special interests... (some) ought to be thrown right off the bench because they are breaking every code of conduct..." - **US Senator Orrin Hatch.**

"Dr. James D. Rogers, a general surgeon...after being the victim of a frivolous malpractice suit,...countersued a former patient and the attorneys involved for making 'reckless, slanderous, ...charges' against him...He acted as his own attorney (,) when he couldn't find a lawyer who would help him..." - **last two paragraphs above in HALT (Help Abolish Legal Tyranny), Americans for Legal Reform., Winter 1980.**

"I usually accept bribes from both sides so that tainted money can never influence my decision." - **Sir Francis Bacon, Lord Chancellor of England, (in Charles Ashman, The Finest Judges Money Can Buy).**

"Victimless crimes account for half of all arrests..The National Council on Crime and Delinquency declares, '(This) so preoccupies the criminal justice system that it prevents it from dealing effectively with real crime.'" - **Anne Strick, Injustice for All.**

Section 4

"Employing...nutrition and vitamin therapy...one of the nation's largest alcoholism treatment programs reports a 71% success rate. This contrasts with...(a) national...rate (of) 25% as reported by NIAAA."

"...All patients reported a loss of craving for drugs while taking large doses of Vitamin C, during detoxification. Of the first 30 carefully monitored heroin addicts, 30 successfully withdrew from their addiction with no more than minor discomfort. None of the 30 were reported to have relapsed...Similar results have been reported by other doctors...:Archie Kalokerinos..." - **Irwin Stone, Journal of Orthomolecular Psychiatry, 1977.**

"Tobacco pesticides had no tolerance and no instructions for waiting periods between use and harvest. ...In 1964...organic phosphates...parathion, have replaced the chlorinated hydrocarbons aldrin, chlordane, dieldren, and heptachlor...; however, residue of all...including arsenic... would remain...Can it be, then, that the cancer-producing quality of cigarettes is related to the pesticides used? ...I received no reply. ...embarrassed silence." - **Laura Tallian, The Pesticide Jungle.**

"While millions of dollars were being projected for research on radiation and other cancer 'cures', there was an almost complete blackout on research that might have pointed to needed alterations in our environment, our industrial organization, and our food." - **Carol Lopate, in Health Policy Advisory Center, Health PAC Bulletin.**

"...The asbestos industry...has for decades successfully suppressed and manipulated information on the carcinogenicity and other hazards of asbestos. Involved in this conspiracy network were senior industry executives, their medical staff, attorneys, insurance companies, trade associations, scientific consultants, and commercial labs." - **Samuel S. Epstein, MD, Harvard Medical School.; President, Rachel Carson Trust; The Politics of Cancer.**

"...In the preceding chapters...are hypothesis linking scattered observations. ...Relevant research on the system as a whole has not been done..."

"It is remarkable that with the continuing health care 'crisis', so few studies of the consequences of alternative modes of delivering care have been done. Such a paucity of studies is no accident; such studies would challenge structural interests of both professional monopoly (MD's) and corporate rationalization in maintaining health institutions as they now exist or in directing their 'orderly' expansion." -**Robert R. Alford, Professor, UC Santa Cruz, Health Care Politics.**

"A minimum of 30,000 Japanese (were) paralyzed and blinded, many permanently, after taking Quineform,...manufactured and marketed by...., under various trade names, still being sold throughout the world....In 1964, British...ban(ned) (it even) for the treatment of dogs and cats. In 1965...circulated an alert across the European continent...In 1970, Japan's Health and Welfare Ministry...banned (it) while they assured their Pharmaceutical Assoc. that 'withdrawal.. was not mandatory'...The 7th revised Japanese Pharmacopoeia...(insert) reads 'This drug is non-absorbable, side effects rarely seen.'...In 1969....'s confidential memo...enumerated 56 reports on (its) side effects....In 1973....released a report which stated the drug was harmless. - **IDA Honorof, "The 'SMON' Tragedy...", The Provoker, 1978.**

"Dr. (Henry K.) Wachtel...after escaping the Hitler regime resumed work in New York City, aided by Columbia U. He served (9 years) as professor of physiology, and director of the Cancer Research Council at Fordham U. But when he began to test his pituitary substance, he

was removed from both posts, (and) no other funds could be secured. Dr. Wachtel (is) outspoken in identifying...an international drug cartel....of controlling every phase of cancer research and therapy, including the allocation of grants from private foundations and government....to maintain its monopoly, strangl(ing) every independent approach to cancer." - **Nat Morris, The Cancer Blackout Amended.**

"The information that follows is taken primarily...from government hearings and reports published from various Senate and House committees."

"By...WWII, I.G. Farben had become...part of the most gigantic and powerful cartel of all history...interlocking agreements...over 2,000 of them...In the US, the cartel had established important agreements with" (very many major drug, oil, and chemical companies)

"In 1938, I. G. Farben sent a letter to (a major drug firm), one of its American subsidiaries, (that)..all advertising contracts must contain '...a legal clause whereby the contract is immediately cancelled if overnight the attitude of the paper toward Germany should be changed."

"During the Nuremberg trials, Oswald Pohl, an SS Lieutenant General,...is shown here explaining how Farben operated such concentration camps as Auschwitz and Buchenwald." (Photo by) "US Army". (picture section of book.) - **G. Edward Griffin, World Without Cancer.**

"...a surgeon told John D. (Rockefeller) that everyone should have an appendectomy before the age of 16 as a preventative. The oil wizard saw the point at once. 'Why, you've got a better thing than Standard Oil!', he exclaimed." - **In Nat Morris, The Cancer Blackout.**

"Bankers regard research as most dangerous and a thing that makes banking hazardous due to the rapid changes it brings about in industry." - **Charles Kettering, of Memorial Sloan Kettering Cancer Center, and Vice President of General Motors, (in Ralph Moss, Cancer Syndrome).**

"We have a tremendous investment in facilities for (internal combustion engines, transmissions, and axles) and I can't see throwing them away just because the electric car

doesn't emit fumes." - **Henry Ford II, in Look, May 28, 1964.**

"In 1899 an electric vehicle captured the world land speed record (at) 66 MPH..." - **Peter Barry Chowka, East West, May 1981.**

"Fundamental scientific breakthroughs seldom happen in giant company labs. They take place in bedrooms, garages, and makeshift labs.: for example, Moulton's bicycle, Carlson's Xerox, DeForest's vacuum tube, Wankel's rotary engine, Von Neumann's computer, etc. The dial telephone was invented by an undertaker, and the ball point pen by a sculptor. A French monk invented the principle of hermetically sealed refrigeration. Two concert pianists invented Kodachrome in their kitchens."

"It is possible...to produce a vehicle for \$150, a radio receiver for 9 cents, and a \$9 one-channel TV set...need(ed) in underdeveloped countries...." - **Richard Barnett and Ronald Müller, Global Reach, The Power of the Multinational Corporations.**

"...President Truman's chief of staff, Admiral W.D. Leahy, told his boss about the atom bomb: 'This is the biggest fool thing we have ever done. The bomb will never go off, and I speak as an expert in explosives.'"

"...The press as a whole refused to believe the Wright Brothers for nearly five years (after their first flight). ...Editors discarded invitations to witness numerous flights...."

"...Dr. Thomas H. Moray...used a simple antennae, (etc. per Nicola Tesla)...to generate large amounts of....electricity....During the 1930's he demonstrated (this)...even under the water....(It) weighed about 55 lbs. and was capable of obtaining 50,000 watts of power on a steady basis. (It) utilized a transistor more than 20 years before anyone (else; of) germanium. The (REA) Rural Electrification Administration...was ordered (by President FDR) to work with Dr. Moray on his invention, which took twenty years and \$200,000 of his own money to develop. An REA engineer...smashed the Moray Device with an Axe. ...Dr. Moray was shot in a gun battle that took place in his lab...In 1973 Lt. Colonel Thomas Bearden, a nuclear engineer with the Army Missile Command, wrote of the Moray experiment which he had witnessed: 'It was ...a legitimate, widely recognized demonstration that got electricity out of the thin air.'" - **Tom Valentine, Editor, Newsreal, "Suppressed Inventions" issue, June 1977.**

"...William Bolton('s) Rialto, Calif., (auto) steam engine weighed less than 50 pounds and eliminated the usual transmission and drive train...Detroit (asked) the inventor ...to sign forms releasing....his claims to the design before they would even look at it. After a Sun-Telegraph article..his factory was fire bombed to the tune of \$600,000

(Eric Cottle's)"ultra sonic fuel system...'vibrate(s) existing fuels to much smaller particles'.. (winning) congratulations from...(June 17, 1974 Newsweek, etc.). Later ...silence. Cottle... explained that Detroit was so myopic that they would probably turn down even the wheel if it were a newly offered invention."

"In his Suppressed Inventions, Mike Brown...tells of Gulley (who) could supposedly get 115 MPG out of his big 8 cylinder Buick, using his (fuel) vaporizing" (carburetor). - **John Freeman, Suppressed and Incredible Inventions.**

"An investigation was initiated by the FDA, EPA, NCI, and the Inspector General of HEW, and evidence revealed that IBT (Industrial Bio-Test Labs, Inc.) deliberately falsified data submitted on potential carcinogens, and four major pesticide manufacturers were aware...but...silent. 1,781 (tests) required auditing. ...94% of tests...for cancer caus(ation) were invalid....The Wall Street Journal reported that EPA is asking 235 chemical companies to reexamine 4,363 IBT tests that were crucial in obtaining federal clearance to market 483 different pesticides.' (Feb. 21, 1978) ...The average (%) invalid, (of 1,781) tests...studied was 75%." - **Ida Honorof, Report to the Consumer., Aug 1981.**

"...we are on a collision course with disaster. Our poor farming practices are laying the groundwork for a severe disaster in American agriculture...By destroying farmland and water resources...the erosion of American Farmland today is probably at a record high....this simply cannot go on." - **Secretary of Agriculture, Bob Bergland, Oct. 1979.**

"Using spinach, we had two rows of bugs, then (rows of) no bugs, two rows of bugs then no bugs. Not because we sprayed (pesticides), but because we got a different condition (natural fertilizer) in the soil under, (the rows of no pests)." - **Dr. William A. Albrecht, U. Missouri, to US Congressman James J. Delany, Hearings, Chemicals in Food Products.**

"Despite a tenfold increase in the use of pesticides between 1947 and 1974 (in the US), crop losses due to pests have...remained at an estimated 33%. Losses due to insects alone have

nearly doubled, ...from 7% in the 1942-1951 period to about 13% in 1974."

"During the drought years 1970-1974, the total value of agricultural exports from Sahel(Africa) was three times that of all cereal imported...The governments have pressured farmers and skewed every conceivable program to favor export production..(over) food crops (for native nutrition)...(Exports) earn foreign exchange...used to enable government bureaucrats and better-off urban workers, to live an imported life style....In its need to extract wealth from the colony,...the increasing landlessness of the many...In Bangladesh...a landlord (will) sabotage irrigation, (etc.)...because he does not wish his tenants to prosper and become less dependent. (I think that's called deciding to rule in hell.) - **Frances Moore Lappé and Joseph Collins, Food First, Beyond the Myth of Scarcity.**

"...I took a pen name for sending the leaflets (protesting pesticides)...Discovery...had...result (that): Planes had come and dropped their pesticides upon (my) apiaries."

"Hugh McDonald, an organic farmer...stated on television in LA that he did not use insecticide because of the relationship of cancer...Within days, banks demanded payment of his loans, and packing house officials...(took) control of his grove prior to picking. ...They placed guards upon his ranch and threatened to spray all his trees." - **Laura Tallian, The Pesticide Jungle.**

"Kenneth Little, San Diego County Agricultural Commissioner: (In)'some of the Japanese beetle traps (used to assess need of pest control)..people are placing (on purpose)...Japanese beetles..."

"Floyd Morrow, Councilman: 'And how did they know it was a Japanese beetle (they were putting in the trap)..."

"K. Little: '...they are pretty expert at it."

"F. Morrow: ' You mean they...to sell a lot of insecticide?"

"K. Little: 'I think it's (like) ...a false fire alarm.'" -**Laura Tallian, People's Lobby, Politics and Pesticides.**

"Four distinct groups of bacteria survive pasteurization....the strep of pasteurized milk are the most frequent cause of rheumatic fever --the most deadly disease of childhood." - **USDA**

"...Cartels...(drove) independent (milk) distributors out of business....The small (milk) producer couldn't afford the excessive cost of pasteurization machinery,...manufactured by the (cartel)."
- **American Capsule News, Jan. 19 & Feb. 9, 1957.**

(For)"Deaths of children under 15 years attributed to scarlet fever, diphtheria, whooping cough, and measles...90% of the improvement in death rate had already occurred prior to the introduction of immunization and the use of antibiotics." - **Alan Kass, BA, MD, Fellow Royal College of Surgeons, Edinburgh and many other credentials, There's Gold in them Thar Pills.**

"I see little hope for a nation that values the health of its livestock more than that of its people.... Farmers are not criticized for routinely giving their (live)stock nutritional supplements....superior to any sold for humans...Millions of families could plant home gardens if they truly wanted health. Refined food are practically unknown in Russia. The life expectancy of the 40-year-old American is near the lowest in the world." - **Adelle Davis, MS, Biology, USC Med. School., Let's Get Well.**

"...People who would not think of feeding a dog (junk)...eat such foods with abandon...There has never been a successful feeding of a synthetic diet to several successive generations of animals." - **Roger J. Williams PhD, discoverer, Vitamin B-5; pioneer, folic acid; President, American Chemical Society, etc, .etc., Nutrition Against Disease.**

"Artificial vitamins...are not balanced by...associated factors...and lead...to compensatory deficiency of other vitamins..."

"Crystalline vitamins are made...by the treatment of...natural source material with...chemical solvents: Ether..., Benzene..., Toluene...then precipitant(:) barium..., lead..., aluminum..."

"Synthetic vitamins ...(are) made from cheap materials." - **Raymond Bernard, PhD, "Natural vs. Synthetic Vitamins", Health Research.**

"The degree to which patients desire to control their own fate is continually underestimated by physicians. For the most people, diet is the easiest health measure to manipulate." - **Jan van Eys, MD, PhD, in ACS, Nutrition and Cancer, 1978.**

"...the NCI...Annual planning Project Requirements (says that) by July 1, 1975, it is estimated that 670,000 people in the US will be working on cancer." - **June Goodfield, The Siege of Cancer.**

"...Modern biomedical science clings to the Inquisition...Censorship by the reviewers for a journal...is anonymous...Most biomedical scientists cannot keep up with the volume of even specialized articles. ...In times of limited funding...A lottery could equally well...distinguish the 'worthy' from the 'unworthy' grant proposals. ...The anonymity of the closed peer review (is a) dire threat(:) ...signing reviews will dispel this threat....No true censor can tolerate public exposure." - **T.J. Sernka, PhD, "Biomedical Free Speech." Physiology, Chemistry, and Physics.**

"We are aware of many cases in industry, government laboratories, and even universities where scientists have been retaliated against when their professional standards interfered with the interests of their employers or funders. This retaliation has taken many forms, ranging from loss of employment and industry-wide blacklisting to transfers and withholding of salary increases and promotions. We are convinced that the visible problem is only the tip of the iceberg." - **American Chemical Society President, Alan C. Nixon, (in Science, 1973).**

"...Lag...occurred between an initial discovery and its effective clinical application. We analyzed 111 such lags: 8% amounted to 0.1 to 1 year; another 18% were 1 to 10 years; 17% (lagged) 11-20 years;...39% (lagged) 21-50 years; only 18% required more than 50 years for application." - **NIH; Julius Comroe, Jr. MD, and Robert Dripps,MD, The Top Ten Clinical Advances in Cardiovascular-Pulmonary Medicine and Surgery 1945-1975. Jan 1977.**

"Several nutrition experts...believe that nutritional activities in general..are not adequately supported at the (NIH Clinical) Center."

"Harvard School of Public Health officials reported in the Oct. 1973...Journal, American Dietetic Assoc., ...that half of the nation's medical schools did not mention nutrition in any course description, and only 4% ...showed an independent course on nutrition as a requirement for all medical students." - **US General Accounting Office, 1979.**

"Many research...activities have been subject to the phenomenon called problem displacement, i.e. the substitution in organizational concern, of trivia for significant problems, since the latter appear to be unsolvable. Furthermore, in some organizations, goal displacement is evident: turning away from original goals and substituting means for ends." - **NCI, Planning Biomedical Research Programs, Feb 1974.**

"It is not possible to make a certain evaluation...that cancer may be arrested if 'caught early'." - **Hardin B. Jones, "Demographic Consideration of the Cancer Problem." 1956.**

"...No studies have established the much talked about relationship between early detection and favorable survival after treatment (by surgery, radiation, etc.)...Neither the timing nor the extent of the treatment of true malignancies has appreciably altered the average course of the disease." (e.g.: Cancer treated early shows a better 5-year survival rate, by merely observing the earlier, optimistic, part of an unswerving (?) cancer course. - Ed.) - **Hardin B. Jones, (Professor Donner Lab of Medical Physics, University of California Berkeley and Davis, etc.) in Cancer Control Journal.**

"My studies (show) untreated cancer victims actually live up to four times longer than treated individuals." - **Dr. Hardin B. Jones, (in Spotlight, 1981).**

"Complete Expectation of Life in Years (Remaining) for each sex at selected ages, Massachusetts, 1789-1929:

1789: Expectation of life in years, at ...age ...60: Male: 14.8 years; Female 16.1 years

1929: Expectation of life in years, at ...age ...60: Male: 14.0 years; Female 15.4 years

- **E. Sydenstricker, Health and Environment.**

"In 1972 the (WHO) World Health Organization issued its statistical report...for 34 countries...the life expectancy for persons who had already reached 65. ...23 of the 34 nations reported showed a drop in the life expectancy of their 65-year-olds from the previously recorded 1958 figures. Except Japan, all the highly industrialized nations were in this group of 23. - **Ivan Popov, MD, Stay Young.**

"United Nations...Population and Vital statistics (said that:) 88 nations of the world have a lower death rate, (fewer deaths per 1,000 people), than we (in US) have!"

"Although in America today life expectancy at birth is near the best of any civilized country in the world...at age 40, life expectancy is near the bottom..." - **New York State Medical Journal, Sept. 15, 1955.**

"...the incidence of cancer in children under 14 has almost doubled in little more than a decade, and that of leukemia has increased almost six-fold in the 50-year period ending in 1951." - **Emanuel Cheraskin, MD, DMD, All sorts of University credentials, Diet and Disease.**

"Beginning in 1940,...questionable grades of (low) malignancy were classed as cancer. ...the proportion of 'cancer' cures...increased rapidly..."

"If persons in the untreated...group die at any time in the study interval, they are reported...In the treated group, however, deaths which occur before completion of the treatment are rejected from the data, since these patients do not then meet the criteria...of the term 'treated'. The longer it takes for completion of the treatment,...the worse the error...."

"...The likelihood of treatment (of any one patient) increases with the length of time since the origin of the disease. ...Those cases in which the neoplastic process progresses slowly...are more likely to be transferred to the 'treated' category than to remain in the 'untreated'...." - **Hardin B. Jones, PhD, ACS 11th Annual Science Writers Conference.**

"...One of the side effects of (surgery, anesthesia,) X-ray..., and chemotherapy, is the suppression...of the patient's immunological defenses...A simple cold often leads to the death from pneumonia - and ('pneumonia') is what appears on the death certificate, not cancer." - **G. Edward Griffin. "The Hoax of the Proven Cancer Cure; A Second Look at Orthodox Therapy", Cancer Control Journal, 1977/1979.**

What is being left out here are the statistical tables that list dozens of alternative cancer treatment methods and their impressive success rates, also in MDAC are some unpleasant stats in the tables regarding orthodox treatment, such as: at the NCI a study was done on 35 patients getting chemotherapy; radiation and chemotherapy caused a 2900% increase in secondary cancers, another study of 200 child patients showed a 17,100% (!) increase in secondary cancers related to orthodox therapy.

"In the only two categories of cancer where good results from chemotherapy are generally acknowledged...(i.e.) in acute lymphocytic leukemia in children and in choriocarcinoma, the validity of (chemotherapy) is ...challenged. In leukemia the real benefit (is from)...concomitant use of corticosteroids and antibiotics; and in choriocarcinoma, the (differential) diagnosis between this and benign precursor, hydatid mole, is unreliable." - **Miles H. Robinson, MD, "who has taught and done research in physiology and pharmacology at the U. of Pennsylvania and Vanderbilt medical schools"; in Congressional Record, 1966.**

"...Every alternative cancer therapy would be judged in comparison to the so-called 'treatment of choice', not only in ...survival, but in...costs of treatment, freedom from pain, necessity of hospitalization, (etc.)...Statistics...should be available from the Cancer Establishment; (but) they have no reliable statistics, (or) records (are)...unobtainable and every effort to obtain them would be evaded...Once reliable figures are obtained, the bitter controversies over therapies can be resolved once and for all." - **Nat Morris (Morris Natenberg) International Association of Cancer Friends and Victims, Cancer News Journal, 1979.**

"The best estimates are that the medical system...affects about 10% of the usual indices for measuring health." - **AMA President, Dr. Richard Palmer.**

"(Reply on what constitutes scientific proof:)"The question is much too difficult for me." - **Albert Einstein (quoted by Dr. Carl O. Simonton, famous cancer researcher, author, Getting**

Well Again.

"It has been found that...changes in age, sex, hormonal status, diet and nutritional status, genetic factors, individual variation in the metabolic handling of chemicals, or the combined effect of different chemicals, all can alter the response of an individual to a chemical carcinogen; .differences in responses as high as 100 fold or 1,000 fold can be obtained by changing only one factor at a time." - **NCI Associate Director from Carcinogenesis, Dr. Umberto Saffiotti.**

".Humans were 60 times more sensitive to thalidomide than mice, 100 times...more than rats, 200 times more than dogs, and 700 times more sensitive than hamsters." - **Dr. Jacqueline Verrett, FDA, first to alert on cyclamates, top FDA chick-embryo tester; and Jean Carpenter, Eating May be Hazardous to Your Health.**

"The literature has become too vast to comprehend...It is...difficult to grasp even for workers in closely neighboring fields. ...There is much more reliance on word of mouth for the transmission of scientific data...gossip."

"Some of the shrewdest insight into natural processes have been greeted at the outset by the exclamation 'But that's ridiculous'."

"The most solid...piece of scientific truth that I know of,...is that we are profoundly ignorant about nature. Indeed, I regard this as the major discovery of the past 100 years of biology." - **Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer President, Dr. Lewis Thomas, "Hubris in Science?", American Assoc. for the Advancement of Science, June 30, 1978.**

"First a new theory is attacked as absurd. Then it is admitted to be true but insignificant. Finally it is seen to be so important that its adversaries claim that they themselves discovered it." - **William James (1842-1910) American psychologist and philosopher.**

...one-fourth to one-half of medical and paramedical terminology consists of synonyms, some...

obsolete...The micro-organism *Candida Albicans* has...more than 170 different names. ... Terms...have multiple, sometimes opposite, definitions. 'Nyctalopia' means night blindness in English, but in French it means day blindness. Some assign the designation 'petit mal' to 3% of all forms of epilepsy; others classify 80% of all seizures (thusly)." - **Jean Kennedy, and C.E. Kossman, M.D., "Nomenclature in Medicine", Bulletin of Medical Library Science, 1973.**

""...a random examination of 18 recent reports in the English literature on therapy and survival in lung cancer showed that eight different systems of histo-patho-logical nomenclature were used. Evidently, valuable data is being wasted due to poor comparability." - **L.H. Sobin, "The WHO's Programme for the Histo-patho-logical Definition and Classification of Tumors, 1971.**

"If too much salt is used in food, the pulse hardens." - **Ch'i Po, 2600 BC.**

"It is changes that are chiefly responsible for diseases, especially the greatest changes, the violent alterations both in the seasons and in other things. (:)...regimen and temperature, and one period of life to another." - **Hippocrates.**

"Men of learning began to set experiments aside...to form theories...and to substitute these in the place of experiments."

"As theories increased, simple medicines..were forgotten, at least in the politer nations. ... Medical books, were immensely multiplied,...(towards) an abstruse science, quite out of reach of ordinary men."

"Physicians now began to be..more than human. And profit attended employ...(for) keeping the bulk of mankind at a distance...They filled their writings with abundance of technical terms, utterly unintelligible to plain men...Those who understood only how to restore the sick to health, they branded with the name of Empirics. They introduced...compound medicines consisting of so many ingredients, that it was scarce possible for common people to know which it was that wrought the cure; ..., of chemicals, such as they neither had skill, nor fortune, nor time to prepare, yea, and of dangerous ones, such as they could not use..., but by the advice of a physician." - **John Wesley, Founder of the Methodist Church, MA, Oxford; (1703-1791) Primitive Remedies.**

"Medicine is a social science and politics is a medicine on a large scale...The very words 'Public Health' show those who are of the opinion that medicine has nothing to do with politics the magnitude of their error.: - **Rudolf Virchow, (1821-1902) founder of cellular pathology.**

"I spent a part of ...1923 with...Dr. W.W. Keen...In the ..Civil War....he was a surgeon...and had seen many men die from suppuration of wounds after he had operated. ...He would hold the sutures in his teeth and sharpen his knife on the sole of his boot, after he had raised up his boot from the muddy ground. That was the accepted practice at the time."

"...He went to Scotland and studied under Lister...("Lister was persecuted by the British Medical Association. He was threatened with having his license revoked.") Yet in Lister's hospital virtually no one died as a result of operations because Lister had developed a carbolic acid wash and disinfectant. Dr. Keen came back from Scotland...He was referred to as a crazy Listerite.....He was denied an opportunity to practice in every hospital in Philadelphia."

"Finally there was one open-minded surgeon in the great Pennsylvania General Hospital. He said, 'Let us give this young fellow a chance.' So they let him operate."

"...No one died from infection under Keen. ...He (Keen) began to chronicle the results in statistical articles. He was threatened with expulsion from the Pennsylvania Medical Association.....This was in the 1890's....Finally was accepted as the greatest surgeon in the US. The old man told me - and he started to cry...'I nearly went under. I was nearly shut off.' - **US Senator Paul Douglas, Congressional Record, 1963.**

"(...The Congress had exhibited) unequaled liberality in protecting our domestic animals against every sort of disease and pest." - **US Senator Matthew Neely, 1928.**

"Federal aid was extended...to the studies on the health of farm animals, while almost no funds were available for direct work on the disease of man...This was...prior to 1885...partly because human welfare brought no direct financial return. Hogs did." - **Richard Shyrock, American Medical Research, (1947).**

"Food additives are far safer in actual use than the basic natural food themselves." - **Dr. Frederick Stare, Dept. Nutrition, School of Public Health, Harvard.**

"It is wholly unscientific to state that a well-fed body is more able to resist disease than a less well-fed body." - **FDA's Nutrition Dept head, Dr. Elmer M. Nelson. in Gene Marin and Judith Van Allen, Food Pollution: The Violation of Our Inner Ecology.**

"...Next to tobacco and alcohol, meat is the greatest single cause of mortality in the US." - **John Scharffenberg, MD, Associate Professor, Applied Nutrition, Loma Linda U. Problems With Meat.**

"As any trauma in a cancer area tends to dislocate and disseminate cancer cells....No doubt many curable cases of external cancer have been made incurable by biopsy."

"...J. Ellis Barker's book, Cancer, Surgeon, and Researcher,...shows the cancer mortality rate of (:) Physicians and Surgeons - 70, as compared to Coal Miners - 61, Agricultural Labourers - 54, Clergymen and priests - 45." - (i.e. MD's have less survival, if they have cancer) - **John Tobe, Provoker Press, Cancer: How to Prevent and Gain Remission from Cancer.**

"That's the trouble with the conventional doctors. They always say, 'How does it work?' but often there isn't any neat little answer...Something simply works...We don't really know how it works. We say we do. We know one or two things we can see and measure..."

"There are plenty of quacks in the field. Fewer than you'd expect, though still plenty (in alternative medicine)." - **John Bradshaw, MD, Doctors on Trial.**

"The profession to which we belong, once venerated...-has become corrupt and degenerate to the forfeiture of its social position..." - **Dr. Nathaniel Chapman, first president, AMA, 1848.**

"Any system of medicine that offers complete coverage and relieves the recipient of making any direct contribution for his own medical care will lower his own health...Such a system is inherently wasteful....It offers endless opportunities for 'chiseling' on the part of both dispenser and recipient, and tends to the corruption of both." - **AMA House of Delegates, June 1952. in Richard Carter, The Doctor Business.**

"The individual who violates the rules in a zealous search for an answer to the problem may overstep the bounds and thereby suffer the loss of his relationships to the organized medical profession." - **Journal AMA editorial under Morris Fishbein.**

"Today, expulsion is again mustered into service in a war of ideology. ...Modern society makes its heresies out of political economy...Ethics has always been a flexible, developing notion of medicine, with a strong flavor of economics from the start." - **Oliver Garceau, Dept. of Government, Harvard U., The Political Life of the AMA (1941).**

"I invite your attention to the latest piratical development commonly known as the 'radio trust'. It would seem that human cupidity could not reach so far, or human insolence become so gross as to attempt...to withhold from the public use the instrumentalities of communication through the air; and yet that is exactly what a group of great capitalists are attempting through the organization of a huge monopoly." - **US Senator James A. Reed, (first term 1911-) this speech cut off air.**

"The American consumer has about one billion dollars invested in radio sets,...ten times greater than the inflated capital of commercial broadcasting companies. Yet the consumer... has delegated -by default- to the broadcasting companies and the program sponsors a power that he should have retained: that of regulating the traffic through his own receiving set. ...an unending stream of..false statements on the supposed merits of a long list of advertised foods, dentifrices, medicines, cosmetics..."

"Radio frequencies are recognized as public property by the Congress of the US." - **Peter Morell, Poisons, Potions, and Profits, c. 1937.**

"Most patent medicines depend for their success upon utterly false curative claims. ...Many people automatically believe anything they see in print - doubtless a holdover from early childhood, when the textbook was regarded as the acme of truthfulness..."

"...A prize of \$50,000 was offered for a successful treatment of cancer....Before the prize offered had expired almost 4,000 cures had been submitted....Not one was judged worthy of being tested in a cancer lab." (by ACS predecessor, ASCC) - **August A, Thomen, MD, Doctors Don't Believe it - Why Should You? c. 1941.**

(An)" incident (was) reported in Journal, AMA ...after more than 20 physicians failed to find the cause, the woman finally made the diagnosis herself. An investigation of the medical literature convinced her that she was suffering from lead poisoning. Subsequent testing revealed that she was right." - **Consumers Union, Health Quackery.**

"...Your company...will send drugs to all the underdeveloped countries of the world, and since they do not have any standards, we will fool them all and can make a great big profit and never tell the doctors that there is a risk.....You will meet the standards of the country in which you are advertising, not the...proper standard...I would think that you would not sleep at night....I do not think this country will not stand for it." - **US Senator Gaylord Nelson.**

"100,000,000 Guinea Pigs sparked a rising wave of consumer indignation. But...it takes a major catastrophe to carry legal and enforcement action over the hump of lethargy and inaction....Today, nearly forty years later, the situation is worse, not better." - **John Fuller, (Emmy Award producer of The Great American Dream Machine, 1970-71), 200,000,000 Guinea Pigs, c. 1972.**

"...The governments in the first world countries (should) stop their own companies from exporting drugs that are already banned or withdrawn in their own countries..." - **Consumer Association of Penang (Malaysia).**

"...The company...(:) ...they omit 'contra indications', they omit 'side effects' indications, they enlarge the spectrum of 'indications' ...in order to make of each drug ...a best selling..." - **a famous health activist writer**.

"The pharmacist says it's the doctor's responsibility, the doctor says it's government's or its manufacturer's responsibility, now the manufacturer is saying it's the government's (or local distributor's) responsibility. Everybody is passing the buck to somebody else."

"The International Organization of Consumer Unions has recently helped establish a global health information network." - **Robert Richter, Producer, "Pesticides and Pills: For Export Only", Non Fiction on Television, WNET, Ch. 13, NY 1981.**

"The association between cigarette smoking and wrinkling was striking in both sexes... Smokers in the 40-49 year age group were as likely to be prominently wrinkled as non-smokers who were 20 years older...Encourage young women (against smoking...(It is) ironic how much of the successful cigarette ads use youth and sexiness." - **Dr. H. Daniell**.

"Dr. Herlich found that 75% of the (balding) men between 21 and 22 years of age were heavy smokers." - **Don C. Matchan, We Mind If You Smoke**.

Section 5

"Health experts working on a union backed screening program to detect bladder cancer in a Georgia chemical plant were stunned when the local (ACS) cancer society not only didn't support the program, but tried to discourage participation in it." - **Jack Anderson, "Big Charitable Funds Bully Their Smaller 'Competitors'"**.

"A recent EPA action (:) ..that agency (EPA) is not only not publishing booklets, but they are destroying 86 of the 104 publications they have on hand. Most are objectionable to the chemical industry because they emphasize the danger of pesticides and chemicals." - **Caveat Emptor, Feb, 1982**.

"On Dec. 1, 1977...NBC Nightly News presented to the nation...that the possibility for a universal preventive does exist...NBC News spent several months checking out the data before airing the presentation. What was the result...? Three years of silence (to date) from the cancer establishment."

"...The AP and the UPI did not report upon the NBC News telecast, so nothing further appeared in the newspapers across the nation."

"...20 research institutions receive 50% of all NCI funding for cancer research annually!" - **Dr. Robert Netterberg and Robert Taylor, The Cancer Conspiracy.**

"The health establishment is a blood brotherhood known by the company it keeps, and these moguls need no oath or ritual as they work hand in glove with and for each other - if medicine benefits in the process, all to the good."

"...They are wise to the ways of Wall Street - and...getting their fair share of the loot.(;)...from who will be the head of NIH, to which honorary degree will go to whom, which congressman gets the campaign funds from AMPAC (the political arm of the AMA), and whether Medicare fees can be hiked a bit for the suffering specialist. ...(or) to nominate their favorite for a Nobel Laureate..."

"Cancer has pizzazz, box office and glamour, and in actual dollars and prestige, even heart and mental can't hold a candle to it. It's a health dodge with a future and everybody who's anybody is jumping in..."

"But cancer can also be fun with its luncheons, theatre parties, and fund raising luaus. ...What will they all do if a cure comes out of it? Considering how easily the March of Dimes conglomerate shifted gears after the polio vaccine, it should pose no problem." - **Edgar Berman, MD, teacher, John Hopkins Medical School. President, MEDICO, surgeon with Dr. Albert Schweitzer, 1st plastic transplant on human, 1st successful heart transplant on animal (dog); medical consultant to V. President Hubert Humphrey, medical school fellowships in nine countries), The Solid Gold Stethoscope.**

"...Physicians who are members of medical societies flock to the defense of their fellow member charged with malpractice, and the plaintiff is relegated...to the occasional lone wolf or

heroic soul who,...has the courage to run the risk of ostracism by his fellow practitioners and the cancellation of public liability insurance policy..." - **Justice Jesse Carter, Calif. Supreme Court, 1951.**

"...Loss of medical society membership...(:) Ethical condemnation can result in professional embarrassment and disgrace, loss of referrals and other patronage, deprivation of malpractice insurance, the withholding of claims reimbursement by health insurance carriers, possible loss of hospital staff privileges, and denial of speaker and exhibitor status at professional society meetings. ..."

"The most notorious application of AMA contract practice restrictions resulted in the criminal conviction of AMA...for violating the Sherman Act by attempting to restrain the development of...(an HMO) through the use of boycotts...AMA vs. US. This conviction did not deter AMA and its affiliates from continuing to implement the same underlying contract practice restrictions against similar proposed arrangements..."

"In fact, petitioners' (AMA's) long history of illegal behavior strongly supports the need for remedy to reverse the effects of restraints of trade they have imposed. And although petitioners (AMA) are now quick to admit their past conduct was unlawful, they have not been so quick to mitigate the effects of their past violations." - **US Dept. of Justice, brief filed in US Supreme Court (in Caveat Emptor, 1982.).**

"I shudder to think what a Martian astronaut...would think of our courts and what goes on, or does not go on, in them. As to the judges, what would he think of certain of them, in theory elected by the public but in fact hand-picked by political leaders for purely political purposes irrelevant to merit?" - **Francis Plimpton, President, New York City Bar Association (in Richard Ney, The Wall Street Gang).**

"....The International Association of Cancer Victims and Friends...tells of a (recent) raid against one of their public meetings by the Nassau County New York D.A. during which several people were arrested, handcuffed, and dragged away...Their homes were searched..." - **March 1975 - Institute of Nutritional Research, Nutritional Therapy.**

"...The AMA, National Health Council, FDA, American Pharmaceutical Association, Federal

Trade Commission, Arthritis Foundation, Council of Better Business Bureaus, and the US Post Office (were together) operating under the name 'Coordinating Conference on Health Information'....Minutes of these meetings (were) ("obtained through the Freedom of Information Act"). ...The prime mover of the gathering was (the) head of the AMA's Department of Investigation...(who) also was overseeing...AMA's Committee on Quackery..."

"...The FDA...against chiropractic....not only intended to 'take the products off the market, but it would initiate criminal actions involving advertising agencies...promoters, and also the people doing the research."

(In contrast)"...although the Federation of State Medical Boards estimates that 16,000 doctors are unfit to practice medicine, an average of only 66 licenses a year are revoked, nationwide. - **"The Great Conspiracy to Stamp out Quackery", Freedom, 1978.**

"...Galen...was...forced to flee Rome to escape the frenzy of the mob....Vesalius was denounced as an imposter and heretic...William Harvey was disgraced as a physician...William Roentgen...was called a quack and then condemned..."

"In...1535, when...Jacques Cartier found his ships...in...the St. Lawrence River, scurvy began...and then a friendly Indian showed them (that) tree bark and needles from the white pine - both rich in...Vitamin C - were stirred into a drink (for) swift recovery. Upon returning to Europe, Cartier reported this incident to the medical authorities. But they were amused by such 'witch-doctor cures of ignorant savages' and did nothing to follow it up..."

"It took over 200 years and cost hundreds of thousands of lives before the medical experts began to accept...Finally, in 1747, John Lind..discovered that oranges and lemons produced relief from scurvy...and yet it took 48 more years before his recommendation was put into effect....'Limeys' would soon become rulers of the 'Seven Seas'..."

"In 1593, Sir Richard Hawkins noted and later published, in observations on his voyage into the South Seas, references that natives of the area used sour oranges and lemons as a cure for scurvy, and a similar result was noted among his crew. ...In 1804, regulations were introduced into the British Navy requiring use of lime juice....(and) into law by the British Board of Trade in 1865....It took two centuries to translate empirical observations into action..." - **Maureen Salaman, MSc, Nutrition, the Cancer Answer.**

"The Indians had no scurvy and neither did the few daring (Pilgrim) Colonists who followed the Indian custom of drinking hemlock tea. (They) were accused of being protected by the devil

from the illness. ...Those free of (scurvy) were put under surveillance and suspected of hemlock tea drinking. Amazingly, most people chose to have scurvy, rather than be ridiculed or burned at the stake as witches." - **Thelma Arthur, MD, Journal of American Pathology and Bacteriology, 1975.**

"Societies that eat unrefined foods produce large stools and build small hospitals; societies that eat fiber-depleted foods produce small stools and build large hospitals." - **Denis Burkitt, MD, in Nutrition for Optimal Health News, Fall 1981.**

"...One health study comparing poor to non-poor areas of Chicago found that the poor areas had a 60% higher infant mortality rate, a 200% higher incidence of premature births, 200% more new cases of tuberculosis, and a 100% higher death rate from cancer of the cervix. In the country as a whole, the maternal death rate for non-whites is four times that of whites. In the city slums there is three times as much heart disease, five times as much mental disease, four times as much high blood pressure, and four times as many deaths before age 35 as compared to the national averages. ...In 1969, at least 400,000 children were found to be suffering from lead poisoning - most of them in the older ghetto(s)..." - **R. Feldberg, in "Science for the People", Issues of Health Care.**

"...The (giant cereal) company had published in 1942 (that:) The rats who got nothing but water and vitamins lived for about eight weeks....But the (company's) own laboratory study showed that rats given vitamins, water and all the Puffed Wheat they wanted died in two weeks. ... Putting the grain under 1500 PSI (pounds per square inch) of pressure....may..produce...a poison...The president of the company (said:) 'I know people should throw it (puffed cereals) on brides and grooms at weddings, but if they insist on sticking it in their mouths, can I help it? Besides we made \$9 million on the stuff last year (early 1970's).'" - **Paul Stitt, Fighting the Food Giants.**

(In) Leicester....Clean Streets, clean markets and dairies, efficient garbage removal, sanitary housing and a pure water supply, took the place of vaccination scars, with the notable result that...in the much vaccinated and revaccinated British Army and Navy, the death rate (from smallpox) was three times as high (as Leicester's)."

"..The population of England and Wales is more than four times as high that of the Philippines, and the number of vaccinations per 100 persons in the (Philippines) Islands was over 26 times that in England. Yet the total of smallpox fatalities in England and Wales for ...1911-1920 was

only...14 for each year, as against a yearly average of 7,533 fatalities in the Philippines." - **Anne Riley Hale, The Medical Voodoo. (c. 1935).**

"Nearly half of the world's rain forests have been destroyed...Every year we are losing some 6 million hectares (over 2 million acres) of arable land, going out of agriculture to... desertification. ...29 million acres of agricultural lands were converted to non-agricultural uses (urban sprawl - ed.) in the US in the past ten years. ...Coastal land and breeding grounds for over two-thirds of the world's fisheries are being degraded or destroyed...Over 1,000 animal and some 25,000 plant species are today threatened with extinction." - **from the United Nations Environmental Programme.**

"The practice of laying birthing mothers flat on their backs was initiated to satisfy...Louis XIV! (who) got his kicks by peering from behind a curtain while his mistresses ...gave birth. ...His vision was obscured when the women were seated on birthing stools. ...The law of gravity had been repealed. ..Intra-abdominal pressure...during labor.(;) the greatest pressure was exerted in the sitting position. ...Squatting alters the pelvic shape (and) makes it advantageous for delivery." - **Robert Mendelsohn, MD, Male Practice: How Doctors Manipulate Woman.**

"Though it is hard to believe, it is conservatively estimated that 25 to 50 million Americans carry trichinae larvae in their muscles and internal organs. ...If the (trichinosis) worms affect the heart, respiratory systems, or the nerves, severe symptoms or even death may result.

"Amebic dysentery is endemic throughout the world, affecting 17.6% of the population. In the US, it affects 13.6%. ...No one..really knows the extent of the parasites and the diseases they cause." - **Ruth Winter, Poisons in Your Food.**

"...Keep in mind the comparative effects of different altitudes, latitudes, temperatures and races, and...note the similarity of reactions of these (14) primitive groups when (dietary) contact is made with our modern civilization(;) ...Susceptibility to dental caries (tooth decay)... data reveal an average increase in susceptibility of 35 fold (3500%)." - **Weston A. Price, MS, DDS, on Research Committee of American Dental Association, Nutrition and Physical Degeneration.**

"...Pets are found to suffer from all the ailments known to the human..."

"...Humans were the only creatures in the world that ate their food cooked. You'd never find a Gorilla frying up some bananas for dinner or a lion charcoal-broiling a zebra steak. Cats don't often run to the oven with a mouse or bird they've captured, and a dog wouldn't naturally prepare its rabbit dinner in a stew." -**Dick Gregory, comedian, and Alvenia Fulton, Dick Gregory's Natural Diet for Folks Who Eat.**

"... I had to depend on Braille for my reading and guide for my walking...I am now wearing no glasses, reading and all without strain...by taking lessons in seeing...optometrists hate the method..."

"Every guild and trade has its own...private patriotism, which makes it resent all rebellion from within and all competition or criticism from without. ...Vested Interests. The manufacture of optical glass..." - **Aldous Huxley (author 45 books: Brave New World, The Art of Seeing (c. 1942, 1975).**

"...Pesticides manufactured by...Oil Companies are....why such a high percentage of farmers are sick with cancer. The medical people..blame the sun for their cancer. Is the sun any different today than it was in the past?" - **Anonymous, Cancer: American Holocaust.**

"...around 1972 or '73, we stopped including in our calculations all skin cancers except melanoma, the only one that's fatal, and also in situ cervical cancers, because many experts don't consider these to be cancers at all. Since together they account for a large number of cases, that could be why the incidence has gone down." - **ACS vice president of Public Information, I. Rimer.**

"I never even heard from the ACS - in five years no one from there has even called me." - **Benno Schmidt, Chairman, President's Cancer Panel (including ACS president Dr. Lee Clark, for five years) in US hearings, House.**

"When 253 of the professionals on the NCI staff were asked in a 1974 survey to indicate

problems adversely affecting their job performance at the Institute (NCI), half cited 'widespread lack of confidence in the scientific acumen of the decision-making hierarchy, and a third complained of the 'shortage of qualified and technical personnel'." - **Ruth Rosenbaum, "Why America is Losing the War on Cancer", New Times (1978).**

"In the year following the 1979 NIH Consensus Conference which deemed the radical mastectomy obsolete, 11,000 woman received this treatment." - **Maryann Napoli, (Editor, Health Facts) Breast Cancer: A Critical Look at Early Detection." - National Women's Health Network Newsletter, May 1982.**

"Analysis of survival curves of women with breast cancer suggests that two or more populations exist, with about 40% suffering fatal outcome unaffected by treatment. The remaining 60% exhibit a relative mortality only modestly different from that of women of similar ages without evidence of disease. Increasing detection of an entity that is histologically defined as malignant but biologically benign (exists)." - **Maurice S. Fox, PhD, Biology Dept., MIT, Journal AMA, 1979.**

"Six of the ten leading causes of death in the US have been linked to poor nutrition. ..Various nonfatal conditions have also...(e.g. dental decay)."

"The AMA and the Nutritional Foundation sponsored a 1962 conference...after an AMA survey found that 'Medical education and medical practice have not kept abreast of the tremendous advances in nutrition knowledge.' ...The situation has not changed, according to an August 1978 Senate Committee Report..."

"(A) review (of) the 1978 National Board Exam for..nutrition questions (shows) 3 to 4 percent of the questions were on clinical nutrition..."

"...Social, ethnic, economic, and cultural factors..affect food selection."

"...We suggest that interested groups outside of the federal government initiate action..." - **US General Accounting Office, Greater Efforts Are Needed to Improve Nutrition Education in US Medical Schools, Jan 1980.**

"...Rodale Press (publisher of Prevention)...in 1965, ...brought out a ...book ...Health Finder... on..April 3, 1964, the FTC served the publisher with a show cause order in an administrative cease-and-desist proceeding...Rodale...spent nearly five years fighting for a right guaranteed every American..."

(for)"instance(s) of a federal agency,,,censor(ing) publications...a long list of books could be cited, including those of Gaylord Hauser, Dale Alexander, LeLord Kordel, Dr. Royal Lee, Dr. Herman Taller,...Paul C. Bragg,...Joseph Boardman, MD,...H. Curtis Wood, Jr, MD,..." - **Omar Garrison, The Dictocrats, Our Unelected Rulers.**

"An Athenian citizen does not neglect his state because he takes care of his own household; even those of us who are engaged in business have a very fair idea of politics. We do not regard a man who takes no interest in public affairs as harmless. We do not say that such a man 'minds his own business'. Rather we say he has no business here at all." - **Pericles, (495-429 BC).**

"..A democracy always collapses over loose fiscal policy...The average age of the world's greatest civilizations has been 200 years. These nations have progressed through this sequence: from bondage to spiritual faith; (next) to great courage;...to liberty;...to abundance;...to selfishness;...to complacency;...to apathy;...to dependence;...back again into bondage." - **Alexander Tyler, Cycle of Democracy, 1770 AD.**

"..The press has become the greatest power within the Western countries; more powerful than the legislative, the executive, the judiciary." - **Alexander Solzhenitsyn, Nobel Literature Laureate, Soviet emigré. 1982.**

"...In ancient times the people lived to be over a 100 years, and yet they remained active...But nowadays people reach only half of that age and yet become decrepit and failing...There was temperance in eating and drinking. Their hours of rising and retiring were regular and not disorderly and wild. ...Nowadays, people..adopt recklessness as usual behavior...They devote all their attention to amusement(s)..." - **The Yellow Emperor's Classic on Internal Medicine. (c. 479-300 BC).**

"In ancient India, organ transplants, involving bone, earlobe, nose and other tissues, were pretty much 'a matter of routine' some 5,000 years ago." - **John Heinerman, Understanding Herbal Medicine.**

"He who would eat much must eat little, for by eating less he will live longer, and so be able to eat more." - **Luigi Cornaro, 1538 AD.**

"Only by understanding the wisdom of natural foods and their effects on the body, shall we attain mastery of disease and pain, which shall enable us to relieve the burden of mankind." - **William Harvey, (1578-1657 AD).**

"Every one should be his own physician. We ought to assist, and not to force nature. Eat with moderation...Nothing is good for the body but what we can digest. What medicine can procure digestion? Exercise. What will recruit strength? Sleep." - **Voltaire, (1694-1778 AD).**

"The famous physician Dumoulin said when dying, 'I leave two great physicians behind me, simple food and pure water.'" - **Voltaire.**

"The best doctors are Dr. Diet, Dr. Quiet, and Dr. Merryman." - **Jonathan Swift, (1667-1745).**

"The mischievous effects from lead have been known to scientists for at least 60 years. You will observe how long a useful truth may be known to exist before it is generally received and practiced on." - **Benjamin Franklin (1706-1790), 1786.**

(Save) "opium, which the Creator himself seems to prescribe, for...pain to be soothed;...and

wine...; and I firmly believe that if the whole (remaining medicine of) materia medica, as now used could be sunk to the bottom of the sea, it would be all the better for mankind - and all the worse for the fishes." - **Oliver Wendell Holmes, Sr., MD, (1809-1894).**

"It is not as if our homeopathic brothers are asleep: far from it, they are awake - many of them at any rate - to the importance of the scientific study of disease." - **Sir William Osler, (1849-1919); "Father of Modern Medicine".**

"We labor under the fatal delusion that no disease can be cured without medicine. This has been responsible for more mischief to mankind than any other evil. ...Disease increases in proportion to the increase to the number of doctors in a place."

"Illness or disease is only Nature's warning that filth has accumulated in some portion or other of the body; and it would surely be the part of wisdom to allow Nature to remove the filth, instead of covering it up with the help of medicines." - **Mohandus K. Gandhi.**

"I think doctors care very deeply about their patients, but when they organize into the AMA, their responsibility is to the welfare of doctors, and quite often, these lobbying groups are the only ones that are heard in the state capitols and in the capitol of our country." - **Jimmy Carter, 1978.**

(My chemotherapy is) "death in a bottle." **Hubert H. Humphrey.**

"...It seems that public officials are afraid that if they make any move, or say anything antagonistic to the wishes of the medical organization, they will be pounced upon and destroyed. ..Public officials seem to be afraid of their jobs and even of their lives." - **US Senator Elmer Thomas, In Morris A. Bealle, The Drug Story. c. 1949 and 1976.**

"It is our understanding that the NIH with FDA approval, clinically test at least 100 products a year on cancer patients. We feel Krebiozen deserves a similar test. Why should either side be afraid of the truth? - **US Senator Paul Douglas and ten other senators (in Chicago's American, 1966).**

"I think every doctor should know the shocking state of affairs...We discovered they (the FDA) failed to effectively regulate the large manufacturers and powerful interests while recklessly persecuting the small manufacturers. ...(The FDA is) harassing (small) manufacturers and doctors...(and) betrays the public trust." - **Senator Edward V. Long. 1967.**

"I could not move them. They would not even agree to a modification, of the ruling (banning the Rand vaccine), which would at least allow the 100 (cancer) patients at Richmond Heights (Ohio) to complete their injections. The Justice Department was prepared to go along, but the FDA commissioner, Dr. James Goddard, was adamant, even belligerent. It's wrong of the government to snatch away this hope when there is no evidence against its use offered in court. It's damnably wrong." - **US Senator Stephen Young, (in Len Gutridge, "How the US Government is Blocking a Cancer Cure", Saga, 1968.**

"Dr. Lawrence Burton....in fighting cancer.(:) Many of his patients are now living normal lives after being told there was nothing more the conventional treatments could do for them, and that death was imminent....Why are Americans being forced to go off shore for treatment for cancer from an American doctor and for a program that was developed in America?" - **US Congressman Larry P. McDonald.**

"In 1962, the FDA tried to prohibit the sales of vitamins and minerals in all but very limited potencies and combinations, by first classifying, and then regulating them as prescription drugs. Congress blocked it at that time, unanimously adopting a resolution offered by Senators Bill Proxmire and Dick Schweiker..."

"However, FDA attempted to reverse this clear congressional intent in March, 1979, by proposing to regulate vitamins and minerals as 'Over-The-Counter' drugs.."

"As was noted in the Wall Street Journal, last March 21st, FDA approval of drug labelling, '...

requires seven to ten years, and costs each applicant an average of \$70 million." - **US Senator Orrin Hatch, Chairman, Commission on Labor and Human Resources, Oct 1981.**

"Indeed, after the testimony...I was convinced that the NCI does not adequately protect patient safety. ...Every hearing we have held on this subject this year is evidence to the world that there is critical need for better management at NCI....When the NCI did learn of this drug's life-threatening effects on humans, the NCI did not promptly inform the FDA and all of its clinical investigators."

"Your assurances to me...that the adverse reaction controversy was resolved have left significant question of credibility. Each time we meet, you tell me you have solved the problems that we are now pointing to." - **US Senator Paula Hawkins, Oversight of the National Cancer Institute, 1984, Hearings, US Senate 1981.**

"The AMA puts the lives and well being of the American citizens well below it's own special interest...It deserves to be ignored, rejected, and forgotten. No amount of historical gymnastics can hide the public record of AMA opposition to virtually every major health reform in the past 50 years....The AMA has turned into a propaganda organ purveying 'medical politics' for deceiving the Congress, the people, and the doctors of America themselves." - **Senator Edward Kennedy, in UPI National Chronicle, 1971.**

"...you can extend your life tremendously by eating the right things. By eating right you can combat almost everything: disease, fatigue, over-work..."

"Holland gets by on a total of four food additives; we have over 1,400."

"...Other countries are way ahead of ours in nutrition." - **US Congressman Fred Richmond, Chairperson, Subcommittee on Domestic Marketing, Consumer Relations and Nutrition.**

"This is a blatant attempt (by OSHA supervisors) to rid the government of a competent scientist who happened not to agree with an industry whose profits are at stake. (Government scientists) may be forced by political hatchetmen to abandon widely held views, in favor of the line currently advocated by industry." - **US Congressman, Albert Gore, Jr., in**

subcommittee, 1981.

"...Prevent postal investigators from aggressively interfering with, or closing, a commercial enterprise merely because it has been deemed not to adhere to the prevailing body of scientific opinion - whatever they have determined that to be."

"After examining some of the recent cases which the Postal Service has pursued, vigorous prosecution of, for example, a health food advocate." - **US Congressman Vin Weber, Congressional Record, 1982.**

"If the administration is really serious about free-market energy policies, then I suggest we join together to root out the billions of dollars of subsidies we now give each year to petroleum, gas, coal, and nuclear industries. But if this administration will not or cannot do this, then they should at least stop trying to kill the emerging new technologies that are arising to compete with those older sources of energy." - **US Congressman Berkley Bedell, in Sun Times, 1983** (Amen!)

"I can't be bought, but I can be rented." - **US Congressman J. Breaux. 1982.**

"The basis of sound science is solid difference of opinion. When I was Director of NCI, I found myself rescuing people who incurred the displeasure of certain groups or their superiors. I did it three or four times. And I did it because they were good scientists." - **Dr. Arthur Upton , Director, NCI. 1982.**

"I have had some very interesting work with Dr. (Andrew C.) Ivy, and have had what I think, unusually good results with Krebiozen. Due to the controversy which was stimulated by adverse quarters, it was Army policy not to allow me to continue with this particular type of research project. I feel that Krebiozen, or perhaps a similar substance, is certainly on the threshold of finding an answer to some of our malignant (cancer) problems." - **Wallace H.**

Graham, Major General, US Air Force; physician to US President, letter in 1952.

"Variety is not only the spice of life, it may be the staff of life."...

"Unfortunately, in a terrible blow to natural-products chemistry in the US, the Board of Scientific Counsellors, Division of Cancer Treatment, NCI, voted on Oct. 2, 1981 to abolish the NCI research program concerned with the development of anti-tumor agents from plants. On the other hand, the synthetic drug development program was left intact, though reduced. ... Pharmaceutical firms...have clearly signaled their relative disinterest in natural products. ...The search for natural drugs, the safest and economically and/or ecologically most desirable types, has been abandoned in the US." - **James Duke, PhD; Chief, Germplasm Resources Lab., and Economic Botany Lab, "The Spices of Life", (Unedited discussion draft, neither approved nor expected to be approved by NIH of the USDA").**

"I have never and will never approve a 'new drug' to an individual, but only to a large pharmaceutical firm with unlimited finances." - **FDA, Bureau of Drugs Director, Dr. J. Richard Crout, 1982.**

"In 1950, the NCI of the US Public Health Service established a program for study of environmental chemical factors in cancer. Within a few years, a Dr. ..., then director of the Institute of Industrial Medicine at NYU, told me that he had been retained by a group of chemical industries to call upon the Surgeon General and object to studies conducted under this program. He stated that his objection had been successful, and that all field studies by the NCI in this program would be stopped. They were."

"A few years later, I showed this same gentleman data indicating a cancer hazard for man employed in another industry that had retained him as a consultant. He advised me to keep out of this problem, and shortly thereafter, notified me that my appointment as associate professor of industrial medicine at NYU would not be renewed. It was not renewed." - **Dr. William E. Smith; Hearings subcommittee on health and science, US House of Representatives, 1957. in Pulitzer Prize winning journalist William Longwood, Poisons in Your Food. (c. 1960).**

"In 1981, the AFL-CIO and..the Teamsters, urged (Thorne) Auchter (Director of OSHA) to act immediately...three authoritative governmental studies had projected 999 cancer deaths out of 1,000 workers exposed to EDB (Ethylene Di-bromide, a pesticide) at the existing OSHA limit. ...

Instead Auchter embarked on a time-consuming rule-making process that ignored the urgency..." - **Ida Honoroff, Report to the Consumer, 1984.**

"...A charge of conflict of interest against former OSHA Director Thorne Auchter (is) being examined by the FBI. ...Auchter resigned as head of OSHA to become president of (a company). Earlier, he had dismissed a series of twelve OSHA violations against the same company." - **Health Policy Advisory Center, Health PAC Bulletin, 1984.**

"In my practice as surgeon, I am impressed by the alarming increase of cancer cases brought to my notice; an increase, which in the light of the general hygienic and sanitary improvements of our time, can point to no other cause than the indulgence in certain foodstuffs detrimental to normal life of the body." - **Dr. Charles Mayo, Mayo Clinic (in Richard Welch, New Hope for Cancer Victims).**

"...the opinion has frequently been advanced by ancient and modern writers that there is a direct relationship between diet and cancer frequency, and particularly...in regard to the excessive consumption of salt and meat. The per capita rise in the meat consumption of the principal civilized countries has often been referred to as a causative factor in the corresponding rise in the cancer death rate." - **Dr. Frederick L. Hoffman, chief statistician, Prudential Life Insurance Company (author, Cancer and Diet); The Mortality of Cancer Throughout the World. c. 1914.**

"Food is infinitely the most important problem of the present day and, if properly dealt with, must result in the disappearance of the vast bulk of disease, misery, and death. - **Sir Arbuthnot Lane, MD, famous surgeon, England.**

"The relationship of nutrition to cancer has received much attention in the past ten years...Diet and nutrition must be considered by all investigators in the cancer field, and not only by those who happen to be specifically interested in nutrition...It is now well established that a diet restricted to approximately two-thirds of ...ad libitum (maximum desired) effects a significant reduction in...tumors...; in the mouse (; and) the incidence of spontaneous breast tumors is significantly increased...by a high fat diet; (as are)...skin tumors..."

"At the present time, there is a widespread interest in the relationship of nutrition to tumors...A natural diet contains a more adequate quality, quantity, and balance of essential components than our present day synthetic diets." - **Albert Tannenbaum, MD, Director, Department of Cancer Research, Michael Reese Hospital, Chicago, 1944 and 1945. in Peter Barry Chowka, "The NCI and the Fifty Year Cover-up", East West Journal, 1978.**

"Dietary deficiencies lead to malfunctions of the body that cause cancer." - **Dr. Ernst L. Wynder, President, American Health Foundation.**

"...the self-satisfied dogmatism with which mankind at each period of its history cherishes the delusion of the finality of existing modes of knowledge." - **Alfred North Whitehead, in Netterberg/Taylor, The Cancer Conspiracy. c. 1981.**

"Now and then, in all ages and at all levels, exceptional individuals appear who rise above current concepts, who seem to be actuated by higher principles and greater humanity. Perhaps such individuals are outstanding in that they refuse to accept commonly held basic assumptions." - **Karl Menninger, MD, Founder, Menninger Clinic.**

"In 1946, Oxford University in England was offered large funds to create a new Institute of Human Nutrition. The University refused the funds on the ground that the knowledge of human nutrition was essentially complete, and that the proposed institution would soon run out of meaningful research projects." - **Rene Dubos, Professor Emeritus, Rockefeller University.**

"...These healers...my intellect has been unable to assimilate their theories....But their facts are patent and startling; and anything that interferes with the multiplication of such facts, and with our freest opportunity of observing and studying them, will, I believe, be a public calamity." - **William James, in Boston Transcript, 1894.**

"...The inertia of the human mind, and its resistance to innovation are most clearly demonstrated..by professionals with a vested interest in tradition and in the monopoly of learning. Innovation is a two-fold threat to academic mediocrities; it endangers their oracular authority, and it evokes their deeper fear that their whole laboriously constructed intellectual edifices may collapse." - **Arthur Koestler, The Sleepwalkers. both above in Brian Inglis, The Case for Unorthodox Medicine.**

"...As Thomas Kuhn pointed out in The Structure of Scientific Revolutions, new scientific theories in any field are regarded with skepticism because scientists become attached to the old perspective earlier in their careers." ...

"Whatever the rationale, the suppression of unorthodox cancer therapies and the sustained persecution of their proponents by government and colleagues runs counter to freedom of thought, much less freedom of choice." - **Marilyn Ferguson (author The Aquarian Conspiracy) "Are Promising Treatments Being Blacked Out?", Leading Edge Bulletin, 1980.**

"..Innovation is necessarily alternative...The advance is early branded as heresy ("quackery, charlatanry, fraud, hoax") to be condemned and proscribed without serious testing by all respected, responsible members of the virtuous elite."..

"In the past century over 100 methods have been offered by independent researchers as aiding in recovery from cancer. ...contrary to the nihilistic litany of cancer bureaucrats that there is 'no evidence.'" - **Robert Houston, "The War on Answers", Our Town, 1978.**

"A frequent criticism of wholistic medical practices is that they have not been scientifically validated by research studies, published in peer-review journals. Individuals making this criticism imply that they, the established conformists, are peers of the innovative, unorthodox, and truly creative individuals who are bringing about the next step in the evolution of medicine. The fact is that such innovators have no peers. They stand alone on the leading edge of science." - **Elmer M. Cranton, MD, President, American Holistic Medical Association, in Holistic Dental Assoc., The Communicator, 1981.**

(The system is)"fostering...a climate of conformity, not by the total suppression of dissent, but by the presentation of views falling outside the consensus as curious heresies, or, even more effectively, by treating them as irrelevant eccentricities, which serious and reasonable people may dismiss as of no consequence." - **R. Miliband, The State in Capitalist Society. c. 1969.**

"...The system of influence and control..is highly skewed in favor of the corporate and financial system. And this dominant influence is felt not only in universities, foundations, and institutions of higher learning, but also...from media to all other instruments of communication." - **Vincente Navarro, (Professor of Health and Social Policy, John Hopkins U., and other credentials).**

"It's not what you know, but who knows what....At the heart of the matter is society's tendency to insist on credentials before listening seriously to a claim of new discoveries or ideas. ...Only rarely...does the public acknowledge that an unknown and unanointed person may have noteworthy capacities." - **Fred Hechinger, of and in New York Times, 1981.**

"...That genius is a rare exception (:) It's not true. Talent and genius have been wasted on enormous scale throughout our history; this is all I know for sure." - **Eric Hoffer. (author, The True Believer, and Thinking and Working on the Waterfront.,...).**

"We live in a society that penalizes highly creative individuals for their non-conformist autonomy. This makes the teaching of problem solving in design both discouraging and difficult. A...student (has) massive blocks against new ways of thinking, engendered by some 16 years of mis-education..." - **Professor Victor Papanek (Dean, School of Design, Calif. Institute of Arts). on Design for the Real World, c. 1971.**

"The Catch-22 in any funding system is the inability of those not funded to complain - by definition, they are the unchosen, and hence their testimony is suspect." - **Federation of American Scientists, Public Interest Report, 1980.**

"Scientists and technologists are ordinary human beings. ...susceptible to...herd instinct, following the leader, and falling for fashions. ...Fashions rage among scientists. ...Big instruments make us force-fit our problems to the solution....As our instruments push us toward picoseconds, and one angstrom, and parts per billion, we get ultimately reductionist in a sense, while the real problems go far beyond our data and papers, to the survival of local industry, and international trade, and nuclear annihilation." - **Rustum Roy, Director Materials Research Lab., Penn State U., (in American Lab, 1982.)**

Section 6

"...The Chinese in the 9th century AD utilized a book entitled The Thousand Golden Prescriptions, which described how rice polish could be used to cure beri-beri, as well as other nutritional approaches to the prevention and treatment of disease. It was not until twelve centuries later that the cure for beri-beri was discovered in the West, and it acknowledged to be a vitamin B-1 deficiency disease." - **Jeffrey Bland, PhD, Your Health Under Siege: Using Nutrition to Fight Back.**

"...In 1540..Ambroise Paré...persuaded doctors to stop the horrid practice of pouring boiling oil on wounds and required all doctors to wash thoroughly before delivering babies or performing surgery....(in) 1844...Ignaz Semmelweis in Vienna proved...that clean, well-scrubbed doctors would not infect and kill mothers at childbirth. For his efforts Semmelweis was dismissed from his hospital...(and) despite publication, his work was totally ignored. As a result he became insane and died in an asylum, and his son committed suicide."

"As a chemist working for the US Government in 1916 on the island of Luzon (Philippines), (R. R.) Williams, over the opposition of orthodox medicine, had managed to eradicate beri-beri...by persuading the population to drink rice bran tea. In 1917, Williams was recalled to the US, and thereafter orthodox medicine discouraged anyone from drinking rice bran tea, so by 1920 there were more beri-beri deaths on Luzon than in 1915. ..In 1934, R.R. Williams (now) at Bell Telephone Labs., discovered thiamine (vitamin B-1), and that thiamine in rice bran both prevented and cured beri-beri."

"Christian Eikman in Holland...shared the Nobel prize for Medicine in 1929 for Proving in 1892

that beri-beri was not an infectious disease..." - **Wayne Martin, BS, Purdue U.; (author, Medical Heroes and Heretics, and "The Beri-beri analogy to myocardial infarction.", Medical Hypothesis.**

"(in)"1914...Dr. Joseph Goldberger had proven that (pellagra) was related to diet, and later showed that it could be prevented by simply eating liver or yeast. But it wasn't until the 1940's... that the 'modern' medical world fully accepted pellagra as a vitamin B deficiency." - **G. Edward Griffin, World Without Cancer.**

"In the 1850's, Ignaz P. Semmelweis, a Hungarian doctor, discovered that childbed fever, which then killed about 12 mothers out of every 100, was contagious...and that doctors themselves were spreading the disease by not cleaning their hands. He was ridiculed... Opponents of his idea attacked him fiercely....(and) brought on (his) mental illness....(he) died a broken man." - **Salem Kirban, Health Guide for Survival.**

"Vesalius, a...layman, was born in 1514 (AD) ...He ...found things different from Galen's ideas. He found also that a man has just as many ribs as a woman, despite the fact that God used one of Adam's ribs to create Eve. He..prepar(ed) a new book on anatomy. It was not from the Church that he suffered persecution...His fiercest opposition came from his colleagues, and he had to abandon his position as an anatomy instructor. In disgust, he burned his books and gave up the study of anatomy altogether. Later he was made court physician. It is fortunate that he was not able to burn all his books and many remained in other hands. In due time, these books proved that Vesalius was far ahead of his day." - **Carl J. Scherzer, The Church and Healing., c. 1950.**

"Cotton Mather..asked (his slave) if he had ever had the pox. The slave...answered, 'Yes and no,' ...(and) explained that his tribe in Africa had the custom of (inoculation). Mather seized the idea as his own and today is credited with...introducing inoculation to the New World." - **Hugh Drummond, MD, (in Mother Jones, Foundation for National Progress, A Sourcebook on Health and Survival.)**

"Marshall Hall...was rejected, reviled, and ridiculed, but his work concerning the reflex action of the spinal cord was finally recognized....Bodington...taught that tubercular patients needed fresh, clean air as part of their cure. His medical colleagues execrated him and called him a

charlatan, but were later forced to admit that his work was logical and correct." - **Donald Law, PhD, DBM, Psy.D., A Guide to Alternative Medicine.**

"In Boston, somewhat later (than 1842), medics ask for - and get - a law permitting bathtubbing only on possession of a prized medical prescription."

(In)"1844...Dr. William T. G. Morton, two years out of...dental college...runs into sulphuric ether. ...the birth of anesthesia. ...Physicians and surgeons labeled him a 'quack', even while they hurry to capitalize on (it). (Morton) died a pauper."

"Sister Elizabeth Kenny, an Australian nurse...showed...how to cure...infantile paralysis....(by) apply(ing) hot packs to the paralyzed limbs...(She was) ordered to leave the country." - **Morris A. Bealle, The Drug Story, 1949.**

"Dr. Carlos Finlay knew the cause of yellow fever, but because he had not carried out experiments to 'prove' it, he was laughed off the rostrum at a medical meeting. Twenty years later, Dr. Reed found that Findlay had been right all along. How many died in the interim while the establishment waited for what they would accept as 'proof'?" - **Herald of Health, 1977.**

"What if Major Walter Reed had not listened and learned from an old Scotch-Cuban physician, Carlos Finlay, that yellow fever was due to a mosquito and not from the dank marsh air? Or contaminated feces? The great medicoes in Washington and elsewhere thought Reed was crazy and had done everything in their power to discourage him and his human-volunteer experiment - which finally scientifically proved the cause of the fatal 'Yellow Jacket'."

"What of the mob howling and throwing stones outside the house of Dr. Crawford W. Long, the discoverer of ether anesthesia?"...

"What of Frederic Gibbs, the brain researcher, who demonstrated one of the first electro-encephalographs in America? At an AMA meeting in 1934, the machine was publicly called a 'fake'. By...'eminent physicians'..." - **Herbert Bailey, A Matter of Life or Death, the Incredible Story of Krebiozen.**

"...Until 1954, great and wonderful discoveries were based on what is now called (disparagingly) 'anecdotal evidence'....In 1921, 29 year-old Frederick Banting in Canada, on no one's payroll and with \$500, discovered insulin. ...A controlled study on insulin for diabetics would have been a legal form of murder....(:)...50 patients in one group...would have been given no insulin. They would have died....In 1923....Banting shared the Nobel prize in medicine for his anecdotal discovery of insulin."

"It took orthodox medicine 57 years to understand and accept Sir William Osler's teaching that a heart attack involved a blood clot in a coronary artery, followed by a myocardial infarction." - **Wayne Martin, We Can Do Without Heart Attacks.**

"Penicillin sat on a shelf for ten years while I was called a quack." - **Sir Alexander Fleming.**

"The intolerance and fanaticism of official science toward Eijkman's observations (that refined rice caused beri-beri) brought about the death of some half million people on the American continent in our own century alone between 1900 and 1910." - **Josue Castro, The Geography of Hunger.**

"From about 1850 until the late 1930's, one of the standing jokes in the medical profession, was about a few idiots who called themselves doctors, who claimed they could cure pneumonia by feeding their patients moldy bread. ...Until...they discovered penicillin...in moldy bread!" - **P.E. Binzel, MD, in Thomas Mansell, Cancer Simplified, 1977.**

"The proponents of new or unproven methods of cancer management(:)...A few hold PhD or MD degrees....They may have multiple unusual degrees....from correspondence school." - **American Cancer Society (ACS), Unproven Methods, 1971.**

"...60 advocates of unorthodox therapies whose credentials are given in the ACS book (above). (:) Of these 60, thirty-nine or almost two-thirds, hold...medical degrees from such universities as Harvard, Illinois, Northwestern, Yale, Dublin, Oxford, or Toronto. Two are osteopaths. 3... also hold...(PhD's)....scientific....reputable....8 others received PhD's in such fields as chemistry, physiology, bacteriology, parasitology, or medical physics, from...Yale, Johns

Hopkins, UC Berkeley, Columbia, and NYU. Thus over 75%...are medical doctors or doctors of philosophy in scientific areas." - **Ralph Moss, The Cancer Syndrome. c. 1980.**

"Radium will not cure cancer. It only destroys cancer tissue within a certain radius, but does not drive the disease from the blood." - **Dr. Francis Carter Wood; V. President, ASCC (American Society for Control of Cancer, which changed to ACS in 1944); Professor Emeritus, St. Luke's Hospital, NY.**

"...Doctors' investment in radium...the price of radium increased 1,000% when they began to use it on cancer victims..." - **E. Josephson, MD. both above in Emanuel M. Josephson, MD, Your Life is Their Toy. before 1949.**

"Research in the US has been seriously affected by restrictions imposed by foreign cartel members. ...It has attempted to suppress the publication of scientific research data which were at variance with its monopoly interest. ...The hostility of cartel members toward a new product which endangers their control of the market(:)...In the field of synthetic hormones, the cartel control has been ...detrimental to our national interest." - **US Assistant Attorney General, Wendell Berge, Cartels, Challenge to the Free World. - in Eleanor McBean, The Poisoned Needle.**

"Indeed, dietary regimens are among the cruel and deceptive practices used by 'quacks' in attracting healthy people as well as cancer patients to follow their approaches and dangerous philosophy." - **Dr. Vernon R. Young, Dept of Nutrition and Food Science, MIT and Dr. Paul M. Newberne, "Vitamins...." ACS, Proceedings of the National Conference on Cancer Prevention and Detection. - 1980.**

"Questions arise with respect to ACS's accumulation of assets beyond the amount required for next year's budget."...

"...For many years, the primary focus of the (ACS's) promotional and fund-raising materials has been the need for funds for research, for which (research) the percentile allocation (by ACS) has actually declined over this ten year period."...

"...The percentage of...research to total expense has ranged from a high of 36.8% in fiscal 1967, to a low of 27.1% in fiscal 1975. During the same ten year period, total assets have increased about \$110,300,000, from about \$76,500,000 to \$186,800,000; and total expenses have increased...to about \$113,900,000." - **NIB (National Information Bureau), "ACS" 1978.**

"...The ACS raised over \$180 million last year through its network of 58 Divisions and 3,000 local Chapters. The Society's major public campaign is aimed at reducing smoking and cancers related to it. Yet...the ACS has but a single (lobbyist) in Washington DC. The industry-supported Tobacco Institute, on the other hand, has a ten million dollar budget which supports dozens of Washington staff." - **Michael Jacobson, Director, Center for Science in the Public Interest, in Heartland, 1982.**

"We are guilty of pussyfooting in a number of areas like this (diet and prevention)." - **American Heart Association (AHA) Deputy Executive Vice President, John T. Connolly.**

"Question arises whether if AHA received more in contributions, the additional money would go to research. ...AHA's assertion that it was 'forced to decline many (research) applicants deserving of funding because the money was not available to them' is misleading to contributors." - **NIB Report, 1979.**

"...The NIB (is) an independent charity watchdog organization..."

"...The AHA (is) the second largest private charity in the US. (First is the ACS - Ed.) - **Peter Barry Chowka, "Laying Bare the Heart Disease Industry: the 25 Billion-Dollar-a-Year Dead End." East West Journal, 1980.**

"Last year American's gave over \$6 billion to public health charities. But where are those charities when the Congress moves to dismantle OSHA or to weaken standards over substances linked to birth defects?" - **Belita Cowan, Exec. Director, NWHN (National Women's Health Network), NWHN Newsletter, 1982.**

"'Reach for a (cigarette) instead of a sweet' - ...advertising slogan..(of) Albert Lasker, (with) Mary Lasker, health philanthropist, and originator of the Lasker Awards, an American version of the Nobel Prize. ...and Memorial Sloan Kettering trustees." - **Ralph Moss, Cancer Syndrome.**

"...Before the introduction of paramedics, less than 1% of the patients that suffered a cardiac arrest...lived through...With paramedics...23% (of same) go back to productive work in society. We think that's pretty amazing. ...However, relating that to the medical community is sometimes very difficult." - **J. Dolphin, paramedic.**

"...Only physicians are likely to be regarded as competent to judge the qualifications of potential physicians, so licensing boards in the various states...are typically composed..of physicians,...members of the AMA. The boards, or the state legislatures...give the AMA the power to influence the number of persons admitted to practice (by) lengthy training,...(and) the list of 'approved' schools and hospitals (which) is generally identical with the list issued by the Council on Medical Education and Hospitals of the AMA." - **(Nobel Laureate) Milton and Rose Friedman, Free to Choose.**

"...The physician may continue to enjoy his title and pursue his practice, although he may have violated every rule of professional honor and every principle of morality. It is surely time that this anomaly were rectified." - **AMA President, Alfred Stille, Transactions of the AMA, 1871.**

"...To mix yourselves up with an organization (e.g. homeopathy) for which every member of the regular profession has a sovereign and immitigable contempt(:) the AMA and all our colleges would unquestionably place the medical department of your university under the ban, and cease to recognize your pupils." - **AMA President Samuel Gross; Proceedings of the Michigan Institute of Homeopathy, 1867.**

"...Any such unnatural union as the mingling of an exclusive system, such as homeopathy, with scientific medicine in a school,...(will) render every school adopting such a policy unworthy of support of the profession." - **AMA, Transactions AMA, 1855. - All three above in Harris L. Coulter, PhD, The Conflict Between Homeopathy and the AMA.**

"Our reasons for being in political action are exactly the same as the AFL-CIO's. Exactly." - **AMA Vice President James Sammons, on Phil Donahue Show, TV, November 22, 1982.**

"..The House of Representatives...voted...to exempt the business practices of state-licensed professionals ("including doctors and dentists") from (FTC) Federal Trade Commission jurisdiction. ..The 208 Representatives who voted for the AMA/ADA backed position received more than twice as much (on average) from those (AMA/ADA political action committees) PACs as the 195 Members who voted for the compromise." - **Common Cause, "\$3.3 million in PAC money Pays Off in Key Legislative Victory for AMA and ADA, Common Cause Study Shows", 1982.**

"Even Hitler could not control his physicians, as seen from the report of Dr. Karl Beghart, who was called in to treat R. Heydrich, the Chief of the Security Service..., who had been shot:

"..By daily personal telephone calls from Hitler and Himmler in person, asking for information, very many suggestions were naturally made...I did not hesitate to take personal responsibility and state my own view....I refused, in reply to direct demands, to call in any other doctor, not even Morell (Hitler's personal physician) or (Ferdinand) Sauerbruch. Heydrich died in 14 days"

- **Thomas Preston, MD, Professor, The Clay Pedestal: a Re-examination of the Doctor-Patient Relationship, c. 1981.**

"....An incongruity exists between the training of the dental health team and the influence of diet and nutrition upon oral health. Little or no time has been allocated in the dental curriculum on this subject. - **Herman Corn, President, American Society of Preventive Dentistry.**

"Though few dentists let it out that dentin is continuously growing inside the tooth throughout our lives, the dental research literature leaves no doubt about this fact. ...It is the body's repair response..." - **Soaring Bear, Natural Dental Wellness.**

"Although the stated purpose of licensure is to benefit the public...Consumers...have learned that licensing may add to the cost of services, while not assuring quality....Charges...the legal sector that licensure restricts competition, and therefore unnecessarily increases costs to consumers....Like other professionals, dietiticians can justify the enactment of licensure laws because licensing affords the opportunity to protect dietiticians from interference in their field by other practitioners...This protection provides a competitive advantage, and therefore is economically beneficial for dietiticians" - **ADA President, Marilyn Haschske, JADA, 1984.**

"The chief of the Department of Agriculture's Bureau of Chemistry (FDA now), Dr. Harvey W. Wiley...wrote a book telling...how those ("Pure Food and Drug Laws") had been scuttled from within the government. Wiley...turned his precious manuscript over to a printer. That manuscript mysteriously 'disappeared'...Dr. Wiley valiantly returned to work, rewriting his book from scratch. This chore occupied him totally for ten years. ...His volume, The History of a Crime Against the Food Law was a primer on government corruption...When distribution began in 1929,...books disappeared rapidly from bookstore shelves. Yet no letters were received from readers,...and virtually no reviews. ...Copies could not be found anywhere. In desperation Dr. Wiley put the few remaining books in libraries around the country - they disappeared from libraries as quickly as they had from the stores." - **William Duffy, Sugar Blues, c. 1975.**

"..In 1963...I had the audacity...to publish a list of beneficial cancer treatments, where to obtain them, and what doctors were using them. Not long after (this was) published by my friend, an arsonist set fire to (his building's) first floor and completely gutted it. Firemen (stopped) the fire just (before) his apartment. ...After the firemen told my friend that he could return to his apartment, the police stepped in and said no he couldn't, whereupon the police ransacked the apartment and even took the man's money which they never returned to him." - **Arlin Brown, Health Victory Bulletin, 1982.**

"...My first book K - Krebiozen - Key to Cancer? (:)...An ad for the book placed in the Times ... the freest of the large circulation newspapers...The Times categorically refused a second ad... The Time's medical counselors had advised against accepting an ad..."

"...I went to the Main Branch of the New York Public Library, the largest in the world. The librarian-in-charge advised me that...the author 'went against' the AMA (and) it was decided that this book (K-Krebiozen..) was to be 'taboo'." - **Dr. Ivy.**

"Dr. Ivy (co-author of 1500 articles)...sent his article (on Krebiozen) to one medical journal after another. The journals accepted his article for publication, only to return it with apologies. ...Dr. Ivy was informed that the publi(shers) were told by the AMA Headquarters they would lose all their revenues from pharmaceutical advertising if they published Ivy's article. ...Finally, in desperation, Dr. Ivy turned to a small general publisher ("Henry Regnery, Chicago") and arranged for publication of his medical work." - **Herbert Bailey. A Matter of Life or Death: The Incredible Story of Krebiozen.**

"In cancer, the fertilization of the cell-nucleus is produced by the virus phase of the microbe - of a streptothrix in sarcoma - of commonly a staphylococcus in carcinoma(:)..the cell invaded... and the nature of the microbe..determines the particular form of tumor." - **William M. Crofton, MD, Lecturer in Special Pathology, U. College, Dublin, Ireland, The True Nature of Viruses. c. 1936.**

"Crofton's work was bitterly attacked, and he found it impossible to publish articles, although others confirmed his techniques and results."

"A quick survey of the cancer papers in many medical journals will convince any reader who can plow through them that much research is trivial or of no consequence." - **Dr. Robert Netterberg, and Prof Robert Taylor, The Cancer Conspiracy. c. 1981.**

"...George Crile, Jr. a Cleveland (Clinic) surgeon, was rebuked by the Ethics Committee of the Cleveland Academy of Medicine for expressing in a newspaper interview his opinion that radical mastectomy was archaic and no longer necessary." - **Thomas Preston, MD, Professor of Medicine, University of Washington; Director of Cardiology US Public Health Hospital, Seattle. etc., The Clay Pedestal, c. 1981.**

"..The incidence of cancer among the ...nurse-anesthetists was three times the expected rate. .. When I presented the data at the annual meeting of the Anesthesiologists....Several of the anesthesiologists present even went so far as to call the Editor of the IARS Journal....., and ask him to withhold publication of the paper. ...I was dropped without explanation from the ASA

Committee of Effects of Trace Anesthetics on Health." - **Thomas H. Corbett, MD, U, Michigan Medical School, Professorship, awards, etc.**

"When a person is found innocent of a crime...He can never be tried on the same charge again. But in these cancer cases...a given doctor can be yanked into (administrative) court again and again on any charge. It's a crime that a professional doctor is not given the same privileges as a criminal." - **Howard H. Beard, ScD, PhD, Yale U., The Anthrone Test.**

"...One of the few growth industries in contemporary Britain is...alternative medicine. ...A survey of the attitude of 100 young trainees in family practice revealed the 86 had a positive attitude toward alternative medicine. Of these, ...12 made referrals to non-medically qualified practitioners - a step that only a few years ago would have led to disciplinary action by the General Medical Council..."

"...The debate has gathered momentum since the British Holistic Medical Association was formed and since the Times published three major articles on various aspects of alternative medicine by Ruth West and Brian Inglis..."

"The president of the Royal College of Physicians of London, Professor Raymond Hoffenberg ...could understand why patients with cancer seek alternative methods of treatment, and why any physician would welcome an unequivocal demonstration that a malignant tumor could be cured by any form of alternative medicine."...

"..The Prince of Wales is immediate past-president of the British Medical Association...The British Royal Family has long had a high regard for homeo-pathic medicine, and....the Prince made a plea to doctors to remember old-fashioned, traditional methods of healing." - **John Lister, MD, "Current Controversy on Alternative Medicine", New England Journal of Medicine, 1983.**

"...Paul Crowther...herbalist in the British Isles...could recall at least six old cancer remedies which were withdrawn from service about 100 years ago because they were also powerful abortifacients (induced abortion), the then medico-legal set up made it inadvisable to be caught with them on your shelf." ...

"British herbalists have for centuries used complex infusions which include Periwinkle against cancer. The Periwinkle is also the source of the Vinca Alkaloids used in orthodox treatment.

Why are the isolated alkaloids so poisonous in marginally effective doses, whereas the herbal infusions are effective without giving any signs of toxicity?"

"Some of the most valuable information has come by private information." - **Frank Hourigan, author, Shape of the Elephant, in letter to MDAC author, 1984.**

"The (modern, orthodox) medical care system does some things very well - principally emergency and acute care. Accident victims...need...mechanistic medicine - and fast." - **R.J. Carlson, JD, in Wholistic Dimensions in Healing, A Resource Guide.**

""...In most of the affluent populations I have considered, the prevalence of coronary disease is associated with the consumption of sugar. Since sugar consumption is only one of a number of indices of wealth, the same sort of association (to coronary disease) exists with fat consumption, cigarette smoking, cars..."

"Professor Ian McDonald of Guy's hospital in London...has found that, in young men, sugar raises the level of cholesterol in the blood, and especially...tri-glycerides."

"I did not agree..to having my article censored. ...The published report of the conference gives my name as a participant, but you will not find in it the paper I read. ...Scientists as a group are no more, and no less, influenced by emotional and irrational reactions than other people are."

"...Directors of a large food-manufacturing firm (:)...At one extreme (: one) said it was not his job to protect people from themselves; he was not forcing people to eat his products, and if they chose to do so at the risk of harming themselves, it was of their own free choice." - **John Yudkin, MD, Professor of Physiology and Nutrition and Dietetics, Queen Elizabeth College, London. Sweet and Dangerous.**

"What is the explanation for the blind eye that has been turned on the flood of medical reports on the causative role of carbohydrates in overweight, ever since the publication in 1864 of William Banting's famous "Letter on Corpulence"? Could it be related, in part, to the vast financial endowments poured into the various departments of nutritional education by the manufacturers of our refined carbohydrate foodstuff?" - **Robert C. Atkins, MD, Dr. Atkins Diet**

Revolution, c. 1972.

"Freedom of the press is reserved for those who own one." - **A. J. Liebling.**

"Business spends annually \$500 million to \$1 billion (in 1970's dollars) to promote its editorial and institutional point of view." - **Mark Green, "How Business is Misusing the Media." The New York Times, 1977.**

"My estimate is that about 94,000 cancer fatalities for the future are being induced with each year of medical diagnostic X-rays (in US)." - **John Goffman, MD, PhD, co-discoveror of four isotopes and four nuclear processes, Physics Professor Emeritus, UC Berkeley, and about five lines of other credentials, awards, inventions, books, etc**

"..Radiation...the biggest lobby ...in the world. It's involved in university research. ...industries... the whole medical profession..., the whole military establishment, and the economic and military policy of the country depends on people being willing to handle radio-active materials."

"The NCI sent (,)...to review our funding(,)...people connected with the nuclear establishment... It was a pretty much foregone conclusion, that if you send people in to review the funding, who stand most to be hurt by this research, the funding will be denied." - **Dr. Rosalie Bertell, Bio-statistician - Non Fiction Television, WNET, PBS, The Cancer War by Ralph Moss, PhD and others, 1983.**

"...The connection between TV and real life violence....NCTV has found 15 reviews of the scientific literature since 1976 and every one concludes that a causal connection exists. (i.e.. TV influences behavior, as advertisers well know - Ed.)...NCTV has now found 700 scientific studies and reports from the US and 15 other nations...The overwhelming consensus of this research is that a significant and important connection exists...All age levels, social classes, ethnic backgrounds, and IQ levels are negatively affected in a variety of ways."

(Other)"Clean up TV' (groups) make no mention of trying to decrease violence, only sex." -

NCTV (National Coalition on Television Violence), NCTV News, 1981.

"...Based on (1400) energy crisis stories seen on...CBS, NBC, and ABC (,) correspondents relied on government sources more than 55% of the time. ...Outside sources - independent experts... - were consulted less than 3% of the time. (On) possible solutions to the crisis, the government was consulted a whopping 77% of the time." - **"A New Study of Network Coverage Reveals Disturbing Omissions", TV Guide, 1982.**

"Day and night the telescreens bruised your ears with statistics proving that people today had more food...lived longer, worked shorter hours, were bigger, healthier, stronger, happier, more intelligent, better educated, than the people of 50 years ago. Not a word of it could ever be proved or disproved. ..The past was erased, the erasure was forgotten, the lie became truth. .. A party member is required to have...the right instincts. ...Attitudes demanded of him are never plainly stated...He is a person naturally orthodox...In Newspeak, the expression of unorthodox opinions, above a very low level, was well nigh impossible." - **George Orwell, 1984. c.1948.**

"...Poetic injustice...having made over Japan in our own image. The Japanese, ...are now, next to us, the greatest consumers of meat in the world." - **Mother Jones, A Sourcebook On Health and Survival.**

"The role and weight to be accorded medical testimony in Administrative hearings before the Post Office Department was established....These decisions enunciate a rule that informed medical consensus and the 'universality of scientific belief' may be established through the testimony of a (one, single - Ed.) medical doctor."

"If the fraud charges are proven, fraud order...is issued, a promoter can receive no funds through the mail..., shut off. All mail sent to him is returned to the sender marked 'Fraudulent'." - **J. Edward Day, Postmaster General, US Post Office.**

"The US Postal Service has prosecuted a disproportionate number of health book authors and publishers and chiropractors. The Post Office has refused to respond to our Freedom of Information Request for a copy of its policy manual which sets out the basis by which cases

are selected for prosecution. The (Post Office) will not open their consumer complaint files to the public or to the Congress so you can see if it is going after the real criminals. ...or...if anyone complained...except the AMA." - **Clinton Miller, Executive and Legislative Advocate, National Health Federation. - Last four paragraphs above in "Statement of Clinton Ray Miller...before the Subcommittee of Postal Personnel and Modernization", US House, 1982.**

"The Postal Service may require...that any officer or employee designated by the Postal Service be given access at reasonable times, to inspect or copy any books, records, documents, or other objects that the Postal Service has reason to believe relate to any matter under investigation..."

"Any person ...who fails to comply...or..engages in conduct which assists any such person to... fail to comply...shall be liable to the US for a civil penalty in an amount not to exceed \$10,000 for each day...Separate penalties may be assessed (\$20,000/day)...The resumption through the use of any instrumentality of interstate commerce of any activity with respect to which a cease and desist order has been issued... shall...be a failure to comply..." - **A Bill, S. 1407, with amendments, US Senate, 1981. (300 Co-sponsors in House).**

"Welcome to the new Dark Ages. Get ready for 1984....The (bill)would:...Authorize...600,000 post office employees to 'demand' 'access' without search warrant to any home, business, private library...'to inspect'...(; and) Forbid the shipment..not only by mail, but by any other 'instrumentality of interstate commerce' including airlines, parcel service, trucks or your own auto."...

"The history of medicine and health care shows that nearly all progress has started with unorthodox ideas which were opposed to the 'weight of informed medical and scientific opinion'." - **Maureen Salaman. President, National Health Federation in "Statement ... before the subcommittee on Postal Personnel and Modernization", on H.R. 3973 and S. 1407., 1982.**

"It is especially imperative for Congress to exercise careful judgment in this area, because of the difficulty under existing laws, in obtaining judicial review of Postal Service abuses. ...We strongly oppose the legislation's infringement of rights guaranteed under the First, Fourth, and Fifth Amendments to the Constitution." - **John Shattuck, Director, ACLU, Washington Office.**

"...The charges concern medical practices in fields where knowledge has not yet been crystallized in the crucible of experience. For in the science of medicine, as in other sciences, experimentation is the spur of progress. It would amount to condemnation of new ideas without a trial, to give the Postmaster General power to condemn new ideas as fraudulent, solely because some cling to traditional opinions with unquestioning tenacity." - **US Supreme Court, Reilly vs. Pinkus, 339 U.S. 269 (1949). Last two paragraphs from US House subcommittee, 1982.**

"Individuals for whom no orthodox cure is available surely are entitled to select a health care approach.....This right (is) specifically within,,,the 1st, 4th, 5th, 9th, and 14th amendments to the (US) Constitution....To be insensitive to the very fundamental civil liberties....(:) the choice... of the person whose body is being ravaged (by disease), is to display slight understanding of the essence of our free society and its constitutional underpinnings." - **Judge Luther Bohanon, US District Court, Oklahoma City, Dec 5, 1977, Rutherford v. US.**

"The freedom of the individual to select his preferred system of medical care and free competition among physicians and alternative systems of medical care are prerequisites of ethical practice and optimal medical care."

"A physician should expose, without fear or favor, incompetent or corrupt, dishonest or unethical conduct on the part of members of the profession." - **AMA, Current Opinions of the Judicial Council of the AMA, 1981.**

"Where medically significant alternatives for care or treatment exist, or when the patient requests information concerning medical alternatives, the patient has the right to such information." - **AHA, A Patient's Bill of Rights, 1972.**

"Congress did not intend to empower the FDA to interfere with medical practice by limiting the ability of physicians to prescribe according to their best judgment." - **US District Court Judge Robert E. Varner, decision, June 28, 1978.**

"...The 4th Amendment (:) the governing principle...is that 'except in certain carefully defined classes of cases, a search of private property without proper consent is unreasonable unless it has been authorized by a valid search warrant...' ...The manufacture and distribution of food and drugs has not yet been specifically held to be among these exceptionally regulated industries....The inspection of any place thought by FDA agents to contain the regulated articles....(is) ...an unconstitutional authorization of unlimited exploratory searches...." - **US District Court Judge Robert M. Duncan, July 14, 1977, FDA Search and Seizure.**

"At least one member of the (Medical Grievance Committee, Board of Regents, University, State of New York) which conducted the hearing evidenced a wholly unfair and partial attitude. ..This doctor effected a cure (of cancer) when the so-called orthodox methods of treatment had failed, and now he has been punished for it. It is not fraud or deceit for one already skilled in the medical art, with the consent of the patient, to attempt new methods, when all other known methods of treatment had proved futile, and least of all when a patient's very life had been despaired of. Initiative and originality should not be thus effectively stifled..." - **Appellate Division, NY State Supreme Court, Stammer vs. Board of Regents of University of State of New York, 262 App. Div. 372, 29 N.Y.S.**

"Utopians have no lawyers among them, for they consider them as a sort of people whose profession it is to disguise matters." - **Sir Thomas More (1478-1535).**

"When this country was originally formed...the first rule that was passed by every single body in the 13 original states said (that) two people shall be banned from this colony: felons and lawyers." - **Rosemary Furman (on Phil Donahue Show, Donahue transcript #12161.).**

"...If the American bureaucracy turns its attention on you (:) ...The men who sit in judgement on you will be the men who originally complained against you. ..You may...be ordered to stop doing something which is right. Perhaps you will be saved the burden of defending yourself by being tried in absentia. ..At a trial where all the witnesses testified in your favor,...the courts will nevertheless uphold your conviction...Final arguments were made in front of Commissioners, but the decisions were written in a secret back room by an entirely separate group of men." - **Lowell B. Mason, Commissioner, Federal Trade Commission, The Language of Dissent.**

(in Suzanne Caum, Cancer Cures Crucified).

"...Whole plants differ in their effects from refined drugs (:)...Plants are dilute preparations (of) the active principles...Plants usually go into the body through the mouth and stomach, whereas purified chemicals can be put...by snorting or injecting...directly into...bloodstreams without giving...bodies a chance to process them. Other compounds in drug plants...may modify the active principles, making them safer..."

"...Society's blunders in trying to control the abuse of drugs (:)...Prohibition of opiates (and other drugs and plants) has directly spawned an ugly criminal underworld...Addicts with habits costing \$100's a day...resort to daily criminal activity...to avoid unpleasant symptoms of withdrawal. ...Heroin maintenance...supplying addicts with pure (un-contaminated) legal heroin in (a) supervised setting (no: driving, firearms, health insurance - ed.) has been proposed...,but our society (is) unwilling to abandon its prohibitionist mentality. ...Major drug traffickers...are powerful enough to stay in business. Instead, drug law enforcement falls disproportionately on small-scale dealers and users. ...In some states, people convicted for small-scale dealings of drugs...are treated more harshly than rapists, armed robbers, and even murderers." - **Andrew Weil, MD, Harvard Medical School, Professor of Addiction Studies, University of Arizona and other credentials, and Winifred Rosen (author Cruisin for a Bruisin, etc.), Newberry Award nominee; Chocolate to morphine: Understanding Mind Active Drugs.**

"...A juvenile detention home (:)...Neither the boys nor the staff of the home were told that the aim of the menu changes was to reduce sugar intake, or that the boys behavior was being studied. ...The 24 boys on the sugar-reduced diet showed a 45% lower incidence of formal disciplinary actions than the boys on the earlier diet."

"With the repeated successes of nutritional methods, one would think that ortho-molecular treatment would be revolutionizing our criminal justice system. Unfortunately, it is not. Ignoring scientific evidence and thousands of clinical reports, many in psychiatric, law enforcement, and rehabilitation communities, still dismiss dietary treatment as quackery. The ortho-molecular approach isn't 'high-tech' enough; it isn't complicated and expensive, it doesn't require powerful drugs and armies of MD's - how could it possibly be effective?" - **Barbara Reed, Chief Probation Officer, Cuyahoga Falls Municipal Probation Department (testifier at US Senate select Committee on Nutrition and Human Needs); Nutritional Guidelines for the Counselor.**

Section 7

In 1979 US government appropriation to fight smoking: \$29 million;

In 1979, amount US government spent in price subsidies, farm loans, and other direct support for the tobacco industry: over \$1 billion. - **sheet found in ACS distribution shelf.**

"Since I have been associated with the NCI Advisory Committee for the Diet, Nutrition, and Cancer Program, I feel very strongly that nutrition research has been consciously ignored...by the NCI. The Advisory Committee's final resolution, before it was abolished, was that a minimum of \$15 million should be spent on new research programs. ...No such action was ever taken, even though Congress subsequently recommended that the NCI spend a minimum of \$7.5 million...At the time our committee was terminated, there was a backlog of 119 projects needing a total of \$26 million....I think people who have training in clinical human nutrition are oftentimes not individuals who are medical doctors, but people who have a training in nutrition by another, different route."

"...The juice of the lemon (:) consider the tremendous beneficial effects that this single dietary modification has had upon the seafaring nations...Uncomplicated solutions to seeming complex problems of the past are often ignored..." - **Peggy C. Fry, PhD, Assistant Professor and Chief Nutrition Service, Children and Youth Project, University of Texas Health Science Center, (In Nutrition and Cancer Research Hearings, Subcommittee on Nutrition US Senate 1978).**

"The AMA protects the image of the food processors by its constant propaganda that the American food supply is the finest in the world, and that (those) who question this are simply practicing quackery. The food processors, in turn, protect the image of the AMA and of the drug manufacturers by arranging for the USDA and its dietetic cronies to blacklist throughout the country and in every public library, all nutrition books written for the layman, which (:) preach simple, wholesome nutrition and attack ...both the emasculation of natural foods and orthodox American medical care, which ignores subtle malnutrition and stresses drug therapy, ("as distinct from vitamin therapy") for innumerable conditions. The drug manufacturers vigorously support the AMA since only MD's can prescribe their products." - **Miles H. Robinson, MD; Professor, University of Pennsylvania and Vanderbilt Medical Schools,**

exhibit in Vitamin, Mineral, and Diet Supplements, Hearings, US House of Representatives, 1973.

"During the early years of Hitler's regime, the government's medical program was looked upon by many observers as one of the greatest props in the totalitarian state." - **Canadian House of Commons committee report, March 16, 1943.**

"..The German government health insurance plan is obligated by law to pay for a special four week treatment with nutritional therapy in post-intensive care hospitals every year for up to five years after the intensive care of every cancer patient..." - **International Association of Cancer Victims and Friends, Dade County Chapter, Holy Cancer.**

" We found that medical expenses for people who had been paying at least \$10,000 a year decreased approximately 80% over the two years spent in our (holistic) program. ..Blue (Cross and) Shield is not likely to pay for what we do." - **C. Norman Shealy, MD, PhD, President American Holistic Medical Association; Self Help for Patients.**

"Dr. Nathaniel W. Boyd...was an invited guest speaker at the recent annual national convention of the American Osteopathic Association....He has treated more than 8,000 patients..Boyd's method (:) ..injection of sclerosing agents to promote fibrous tissue growth in weakened areas that cause hernias and hemorrhoids. ...His success rate with hernias is an incredible 95%. ...In 1974 Boyd's license was suspended for six months because he had advertised...As the Medicare program edges toward bankruptcy, it refuses ...to pay \$600 for non-surgical treatment of hernias, preferring instead to pay for the surgical methods, which today cost a minimum of \$3,000." - **Liberty Lobby, Spotlight, Feb 11, 1985.**

"Between 16 and 20% of every dollar paid in malpractice insurance went to compensate the victim; the rest was paid to lawyers and medical experts. In (malpractice) cases, doctors are vulnerable only to the charge of having acted against the medical code, or the incompetent performance of prescribed treatment, or of dereliction out of greed or laziness. The problem, however, is that most of the damage inflicted by the modern doctor does not fall into any of these categories. It occurs in the ordinary practice of well trained men and women who have

learned to bow to prevailing judgement and procedure, even though they know ("or could or should know") what damage they do."

"The USDHEW calculates that 7% of all patients suffer compensable injuries while hospitalized One out of every five patients admitted to a typical research hospital acquires an iatrogenic (Caused by the treatment process) disease, one case in thirty leading to death. Half of these episodes result from complications of drug therapy; amazingly, one in ten come from diagnostic procedures." - **Ivan Illich, Medical Nemesis, c. 1975.**

"...Patients in cancer wards being fed a hospital diet of syrup-stewed fruits, custard, ice-cream, pastries, pies, and adulterated, preserved vegetables, is demonstration of the most infamous professional negligence."

"The doctor (treating cancer:) No one expects more of him than he goes through the standard rigmarole. ...If he tried an unorthodox method and, even after a period of success, it failed, he could find himself the object of litigation. As long as he sticks to orthodox methods of certain failure, he is totally safe."

"...Alternative medicine has grown from (:) 'old wives tales'...common sense...experience and observations..."

"If a researcher, working in a well recognized field, makes a small discovery, it is likely to be published in a learned journal. ...a tiny step into the still unknown. ...However, let someone take an unexpected leap forward, ... and his action will tend to engender surprise, criticism, perhaps ostracism, and ...lack of acceptance." - **Dick Richards, MD, The Topic of Cancer: When the Killing Has to Stop, c. 1982.**

"..The Senate Aging Committee termed pacemaker fraud and abuse a billion dollar scandal, alleging that 30-50% of all pacemakers prescribed were not medically necessary." - **American Association of Retired Persons, 1983 Federal and State Legislative Policy.**

"..31% of all hospitalized patients on the medical wards suffered adverse affects that were probably or definitely drug related. ...At least 1% of all admitted patients...died of an apparent drug reaction. ...2 to 8% of all drug doses given in hospitals are in error: wrong drug, wrong dose, wrong route of administration, wrong patient, or failure to give the prescribed drug. ... (Calculate) this....%...applied to all patients admitted to all hospitals in the US: ...32 million

admissions per year..." - **Milton Silverman, PhD, biochemistry and pharmacology, Stanford U and U of California Medical School; President, National Association of Science Writers and many credentials, and Philip R. Lee, MD, Stanford U, Assistant Secretary for Health, USDHEW and other credentials; Pills, Profits, and Politics.**

"...The willingness of the representatives of both international and local capital to allow malaria to spread in some areas of the world is part of the repressive underdevelopment of those areas.....Only mosquito and parasite resistance (to pesticides) appears to be a 'purely technical' problem. ...Bureaucratic ineptitude could explain only the initial period (before)... widespread publicity and criticism of the programs..."

"...Capital tries to undercut...through shortages, especially in energy and food. ...Education in the US ...(:)...the campus upheavals of the late 60's have now been replaced by underdevelopment in the form of fiscal crisis, budget cuts, accountability, and restructuring." - **Harry Cleaver, Dept of Economics, U of Texas, Austin, "Malaria, the Politics of Public Health and the International Crisis", The Review of Radical Political Economics, Spring 1977.**

"...Americans...automatically equate dissension with disloyalty. They view any criticism of our existing social, economic, and political forms, as sedition and subversion. ...(" The growing reluctance of Americans to criticize, and their increasing tendency to condemn those who, in ever dwindling numbers, will still voice dissent") is disturbing, deplorable, and truly dangerous."

"Today's dissenters mainly focus their attention and expend their energies on the most inconsequential of trivia. ...Allegedly serious intellectuals quibble endlessly over such ridiculous trivialities...In the meantime, the public is lulled into a perilous somnolence, spoon-fed pap, and palpable untruths, many of which are turned out by special-interest and pressure groups and well organized propaganda machines."

"Some of our newspapers and magazines are more concerned with the welfare of their advertisers than they are with the dissemination of news and the discussion of matters of lasting importance. ...Radio, television, motion pictures, popular books - all contribute...to...the stifling of dissent on all but the most banal levels. ...a renunciation of the most basic and precious of democratic principles." - **J. Paul Getty, ("the richest man in the world" - Fortune, Oct. 1957), How to be Rich.**

"Xerography and Polaroid film were developed by small innovator-entrepreneurs only after larger firms turned down the ideas."

"The 1969 increase in capital gains taxes from 25% to 49% dried up venture money, especially for small companies. From 1969 to 1975, the amount of new capital acquired annually by small firms sank from \$1.5 billion to \$15 million (1% of previous level)." - **"The Sad State of Innovation", Time, Oct 22, 1979.**

"Styling cars sells cars and safety does not." - **Lee Iacocca.**

"...Francis W. Davis...developed power steering for autos...during the early 1920's...Major auto manufacturers...figured their engineering staffs could come up with something similar that could get around his patent. After all, their available engineering talent and resources went far beyond those of a lone inventor. ...The manufacturers tried to invent their way around Davis but without success. 26 years later, in 1952, Chrysler introduced power steering..using Davis' early, expired patents." - **D. Dial, "The Creative Spark vs. The Status Quo; or, Why Big Companies aren't interested in New Ideas", (In Michael Brown, Suppressed Inventions and How They Work).**

"Only about 40 years ago, Professor Herman Oberth, the teacher of Dr. Werner von Braun, offered his book, By Rocket to Interplanetary Space to about 10 different publishers. Each sent it back to him."...

"In his day, Professor Goddard was called 'moon-mad Goddard'. But...the (US) House passed a bill to establish...(a) National Goddard Day."

"Franklin was the subject of laughter at the English Academy of Science when he reported his discovery of the lightning rod. They refused to print his report."...

"Finsen, discoverer of the curative powers of ultra-violet rays, was persecuted too...yet after his death, a monument was erected in his honor." - **Rho Sigma Ether - Technology: a Rational Approach to Gravity-Control, c. 1977.**

"..I did have on occasion in 1951 to have two days of observation of many flights of them (UFO's)...They were at a higher altitude than we could reach with our jet fighters of that time. ... Those few astronauts who have continued...in the UFO field...do so very cautiously. There are several of us who do believe in UFO's and who have had occasion to see a UFO on the ground or from an airplane." - **US Astronaut Gordon Cooper, UN Conference on Flying Saucers, Nov 28, 1978, (in UFO Review).**

"Our president Jimmy Carter has stated that he believes in UFO's because he has seen one. .. in 1973 (at) the Thomaston, Georgia Lions Club. About 20 other people also...watched it for ten minutes. President Carter was quoted as saying it was the darndest thing he had ever seen, and that he would never again make fun of people who say they have seen UFO's" - **Winfield S. Brown, UFO's Key to Earth's Destiny.**

"People in the long run are going to do more to promote peace than our government. ...One of these days government had better get out of their way and let them have it." - **Dwight D. Eisenhower.**

"Every gun that is made, every warship launched, every rocket fired, signifies in the final sense a theft from those who hunger and are not fed, those who are cold and are not clothed." - **Dwight Eisenhower.**

"...Senate Doc. # 259. The 65th congress(:)...The coal companies made between 100% and 7,856% on their capital stock during the war (to end all wars, WWI). ...The leather people sold your Uncle Sam hundreds of thousands of saddles for the calvary. But there wasn't any calvary overseas!"

"...The war (WWI) cost your Uncle Sam \$52 billion. \$39 billion was expended in the actual war period. This expenditure yielded \$16 billion in profits.

"No one told these American soldiers they might be shot down by bullets made by their own brothers here. No one told them that the ships on which they were going to cross might be torpedoed by submarines built with US patents."

"It is dressed into speeches about patriotism, love of country...but the profits...skyrocket..."

...We can all make more money out of peace than we can out of war..." - **US Marine Corps Major General (Retired) Smedley Butler, Distinguished Service Medal, ...4th officer to receive two Congressional Medals of Honor before WWI, War is a Racket, c. 1935.**

"Since the end of WWII, 25 million people have died in war somewhere in the world. War has been fought in as many as 12 countries at one time. ...In 1981 the world spent about \$22 for military purposes for every \$1 it spent on development aid to poor countries." - **War vs. Development, Oxfam America News, Winter 1983.**

"The idea of constructing shields of any material at all, for protection against uranium and plutonium is only a temporary expedient. The time will come when the shields will be as dangerous as the cores. - **Walter Russell PhD, American Academy of Sciences; (lauded by Nicola Tesla as 1,000 years ahead of his time) and Lao Russell, Atomic Suicide? c. 1957.**

"Peace is our Profession" - **Strategic Air Command and US air Force letterhead, motto.**

"If the Air Force is truly sincere about their commitment to peace, they would develop peace corps, peace academies, and dialogues with the peace movement."...Deployment of even 1% of the nuclear weapons would disrupt the planet for human habitation. If your 'best' weapons are unusable, they are obsolete. ...It is time for a new philosophy. Mankind could never reached the moon by an aircraft with propellers. Peace tactics are the only alternative. Peacefare..." - **Kim C. Gates, AC1, USAF, "Rebuttal to Letter of Reprimand" (followed by honorable discharge).**

"One of the signs (you) displayed (said): QUESTION AUTHORITY. Comments or slogans of this nature cannot and will not be condoned." - **C.L. Wilson, 1st Lieutenant, USAF, Commander, Hq. Sq. Section; 93 CSG/CCQ; "Letter of Reprimand", Jan 5, 1984.**

"...Over 100 million animals will die this year in our nation's hospitals, universities and government and commercial labs...most of them for no scientific or medical reason. ...scalded, suffocated, frozen, electrocuted, mutilated, or starved....Last year,...American taxpayers spent \$4 billion on government-funded animal torment. ...encourag(ed by) the powerful animal supply industry...pushing many species ("primates") to the brink of extinction." - **leaflet, People for the Ethical Treatment of Animals.**

"...Chemicals(:)...We not only don't know what's going on out there is dangerous - we don't even know what is going on out there. It's what we don't know that can really hurt us - kill us. ... It is time we started putting chemicals to the test - not people. It is time we gave people of this country some reason to believe that every time they take a breath, or eat, or drink, or touch, they are not taking their life into their hands. It is time that, down here on earth, we took a couple of small sensible steps on behalf of human health and life..." - **EPA Administrator Russell Train, speech at National Press Club, February 1976.**

"Mechanical and chemical technology can exact a high price in terms of erosion and human health. ...I have become increasingly uneasy about the state of agriculture and what it portends for the future of rural America. - **Secretary of Agriculture, Bob Bergland, in Heartland, Summer, 1981.**

"The chief fault of many American diets is that they provide too little of the essential minerals and vitamins. This fault is due in large measure to the fact that refined foods are consumed in such amounts that the intake of mineral and vitamin-rich natural foods is lower than it should be." -**Food and Life, USDA Yearbook for 1939.**

"Today, despite the tremendous amounts of pesticides being used, approximately one-third of the drops planted in the US fail to reach harvest due to pest damage. ...Ironically, these problems are caused by the very chemicals formulated to control pests. (:) increasing... resistant insects(,) loss of...beneficial insects..."

"An estimated 40,000 people were treated for pesticide poisoning in 1978. (US?). The actual number of poisonings may be even larger since many cases are not reported or are misdiagnosed. ...The symptoms of pesticide poisoning often mimic those of common illnesses

(flu -ed.)."

"Integrated Pest Management is an inter-disciplinary approach(:) ...Crop-Pest Eco-Systems.... In...single plant communities, natural ecological balances are altered, leaving crops highly susceptible...Biological Controls...(:) Preservation of natural enemies (and their) habitats... Predators...introduced from other countries. ...Disease causing micro-organisms (attacking pests) ...Phero-mones...Pest resistant plant (varieties) ...Cultural Controls...(:) crop rotation, and removal of crop residues which shelter pests after harvest. ...Proper timing of crop....life-cycle...'Trap Crops'...Urban(:) ...Pesticide treatments were reduced 99%..." - **USEPA, Integrated Pest Management, EPA 600/8-80-044, Sept. 1980.**

"A decade ago the World Health Organization estimated every year at least 500,000 people were poisoned - and 10,000 killed - by pesticides in the third world. ...Since then...Dr. P. Deemar, toxicology director of Thailand's Ministry of Agriculture, estimates that 500,000 people are poisoned by pesticides in Thailand alone. ...Citizens of the industrialized countries are also victims when we eat pesticides in the food we import." - **Food First, Institute for Food and Development Policy, Food First News, Fall 1982.**

"...The export of banned pesticides (in, made by, and) from the industrial countries (US) to the third world. ..(is) later returning to us in the food we import (from) the third world." - **David Weir and Mark Shapiro; Center for Investigative Reporting; and Food First, Circle of Poison.**

"Anyone who speaks up against food adulteration in any of the many forms, is subject to 'name calling'. The most common epithets are 'food faddist' or 'food fakir'. If...you are offending... some of our largest and most influential corporations...We can be certain that the public relations counselors will go to work...-even if that requires a bit of character assassination...." - **Dr. Edward J. Ryan, Editor, Dental Digest.**

"Our agricultural colleges continue to graduate specialists who become vocational agricultural teachers in the schools, and county agents, who go forth to extol the virtues of poison insecticides, herbicides, and commercial fertilizers." - **Joe Nichols, MD, President, Natural Food Association; Please, Doctor, Do Something!.**

"My position is that radical mastectomy is archaic. For some strange reason, in the US, surgeons continue to mutilate women by removing muscles and excessive tissue even though modern knowledge and cancer therapies have outmoded this form of crippling surgery." - **George Crile, Jr., Emeritus Consultant in Surgery, Cleveland Clinic, Ivy Cancer News, Nov. 1974.**

"Though it is a great frustration to realize that less than 10% of all cancer patients are willing to make necessary lifestyle changes (My experience can certainly vouch for that, and the number comes from hard research.), required by most alternative cancer therapies, all we can really do is inform the patient as thoroughly as possible and then let him or her make the final decision. ...(:) To undergo the Orwellian nightmare of conventional cancer treatments or ..(the) non-toxic alternative, the Utopia choice of Earth as a beautiful place...Pro-Life Freedom of Choice..." - **Hellfried Sartori, MD, MPH, MS, U. of Graz Medical School, Austria, President, Life Sciences Universal (1200 Medical Centers Worldwide) Cancer 1984.**

"That cactus went right through my eye. It left my eye flat. They took me to a doctor, and he said, 'We'll have to take the eye out.' ...I fought like a tiger. I said, 'No! Leave the eye alone. I am sure it will grow back.' The doctor said, 'You're too young to know.' ...But in a year's time that fluid came back, and that eye is just as good as the other one today." - **Bernard Jensen, DC, ND (Author, The Science and Practice of Iridology), FACT Journal.**

"Some doctors blame the patients for demanding treatment. ..(which is too) powerful and dangerous...for mild (illness)...Patients demand more considerate care, more natural healing techniques, and discussion of alternatives - and doctors rarely give in on these issues." - **Robert Mendelsohn, MD, (lecturer on "who are the Real Cancer Quacks?"; Chairman Medical Licensing Committee, State of Illinois, etc.) Confessions of a Medical Heretic.**

"We are not at all sure that the state is serving the public interest by enforcing a professional monopoly." - **Florence Stroud, RN, Member Calif. Board of Medical Quality Assurance, in American Medical News, 1983.**

"The FDA was ordered by Congress ("Agricultural Act of 1938") to stop two years of experiments designed to learn the dangers of poisoning from lead and arsenic, commonly used as insecticides until largely replaced by DDT, and the test animals were ordered killed - a procedure Consumer's Research compared to the Nazi book burnings."

"Many 'health stores' sell naturally grown products. ..but they also have much junk. There are quacks and frauds in their ranks, just as there are among chemical growers and processors who enjoy favors of the Government." - **William Longwood, Pulitzer Prize winner in Journalism, The Poisons in Your Food, c. 1960.**

"Many of the plants familiar to the 'wise woman' or the 'witch doctor' really do have the healing powers that tradition attaches to them! There is no doubt that the judicious use of such herbs, flowers, and other plants for palliative purposes in primary health care can make a major contribution towards reducing a developing country's drug bill. - **Dr. Halfdan Mahler, Director General, WHO, "The Staff of Aesculapius", World Health, Nov. 1977.**

"...The empirical application of plants to the ailing human body over thousands of years has... culminated in the development of many useful drugs It is easy to make fun of medieval recipes; it is more difficult and may be wiser to investigate them." - **Dr. Jonathan Hartwell, NCI, "Plant Remedies for Cancer" Cancer Chemotherapy Reports, May 1960.**

"In a noted 1943 Harvard study, there were no cases of toxemia, congenital anomalies, or neonatal deaths among a group of well-fed woman. In contrast two-thirds of the children born to women who were on poor prenatal diets had congenital abnormalities, dies, or (had) neurological dysfunction. and 44% of the mothers had developed toxemia..." - **Tom Brewer, MD, Tulane Medical School, The Pregnant Issue: Medicate or Educate?, 1982.**

"Animals fed on raw milk and raw meat reproduce homogeneous litters and the usual causes of death are old age and injuries....The cats fed pasteurized milk...show skeletal changes, lessened reproductive efficiency, and their kittens present progressive constitutional and respiratory problems. ...Cooked meat (fed) cats commonly (have) heart problems,...infections of the (organs), inflammation ...parasites...abortions..." - **Francis M. Pottenger, Jr, MD, author of 55 articles, Pottenger's Cats: a Study in Nutrition, c. 1983.**

"...During the summer of 1978 in Rhode Island, 300 advanced...members of TM (Transcendental Meditation) split up into small groups to meditate...The entire state of Rhode Island benefitted. Statistics revealed: the state murder rate dropped 50%, traffic deaths decreased 48%, suicides dropped 45%, total deaths decreased 11%. Statisticians, state officials, psychiatrists...attested to the ...success of the experiment. Dr Charles Hill, President, Rhode Island Medical Society, admitted we can..." - **Linda Clark, MA, editor, Linda Clark's Good Health Keeping Newsletter.**

"...In the history of medicine and science, no chronic or metabolic disease has been cured by factors foreign to the diet, (or) to biological experience."

"The agent which cures prevents, and the agent that prevents cures." - **Dr. Ernst T. Krebs, Jr. in Spotlight, 1978.**

"According to recent ACS reports, the discovery of the anti-tumor properties of beta-carotene (nutrient "from which the body makes vitamin A") is one of the most important developments in cancer research of the past ten years, i.e., since the passage of the National Cancer Act. ... The NCI and the NIH...did not participate in the initial development or funding of the beta-carotene studies!...The NCI has promoted...retinoic acid and retinoids, chemically related peripherally to vitamin A...The chemicals were known by the NCI to be dangerous to...animals even before the NCI tests with the retinoids were initiated; however, these chemicals (retinoids and acid) were inaccurately represented as being less toxic or more efficacious than (Vitamin A and beta-carotene).....We have been applying to the NIH for grant support on (beta-carotene) since 1974. However, the NCI had consistently rejected both (the) grant requests and the concept of using beta-carotene, until the collapse of the retinoic acid studies. ...We found that beta-carotene increased the effectiveness of tumor therapeutic agents, whereas retinoic acid only served to increase the toxicity of the chemotherapeutic agents. ...When novel studies were proposed, the NCI seemed determined to stamp them out. They were so restrictive as to discourage the development of even one concept that did not conform to their dogma. ...The NCI and the NIH are...creating unnecessary confusion among scientific workers who were misdirected by the distortions...I fear that some members of important sections of the NCI may have been more concerned with service to themselves and their associates than to the public or the extramural scientific community, and repeatedly have made grievous errors. ...Your (legislative) committee might determine if these errors can be rectified, and procedures altered to prevent repetitions of grievous errors by the NCI and NIH." - **Eli Seifter, MD, Professor of Surgery and Biochemistry, Albert Einstein College of Medicine, (in**

letters to US Senators Orrin Hatch and Harrison Schmitt, 1982).

"Cancer politics: To suggest people eat less meat infuriates the cattlemen's association. To suggest people eat less candy angers the confectioner's association. To suggest people eat more fresh vegetables throws the canners association into fits." - **Ross Hume Hall, PhD, principal cancer researcher, Roswell Park Memorial Institute and other credentials, "Cancer and Nutrition", En-Trophy Review.**

"The hospital that feeds you refined sugar, white bread, canned soup, bouillon cubes, and frozen vegetables should be closed by the health department as a menace to the public health." - **Dr. David Reuben, Everything You Always to Know About Nutrition, c. 1978.**

"...The introduction of trans-trans-linoleic acid in the 1920's in margarines and refined vegetable oils was a main cause of the pandemic of myocardial infarction (coronary heart disease), and ...since 1960, orthodox medicine has been fostering (promoting) a cause of this disease as the cure." - **Wayne Martin, "Margarine ("Not Butter") the Culprit?", Lancet, 1983.**

"Avoid foods that don't interest you (:) ..cauliflower, corn, broccoli, beans..."

"Hints(:) ...add milk powder...Choose from: ...Angel food cake, Popsicles,...Hard and jelly candies...Use mixes, frozen ready to eat main dishes, and take out foods whenever possible. ...fry....Microwave oven..."

"Recipes...high in nutritional value(:)...non-dairy creamer....ice cream...condensed milk...soft shortening...chocolate chips...sugar...oil...baking soda...baking powder...salt..." - **OCC (Office of Cancer Communications), NCI, Eating Hints..., NIH Publication 80-2079; January 1980.**

"...Recipes...selected (:)..ice cream...carbonated beverages...processed sharp cheese spread....sausage or hot dog...lard or shortening...sugar...soda...baking powder...all purpose flour...baking soda...salt...cooked or canned vegetables....chocolate...malted...ice cream, jello..."

coffee, coffee substitute, carbonated beverages...bread (,) enriched white...pureed, baby, or whole cooked (..canned or frozen)...sweets as desired, hard candy,...jellies, jams..." - **ACS, Nutrition, for Patients Receiving Chemotherapy and Radiation Treatment, c. 1974.**

"Allowed foods: Carbonated beverages...fruit flavored drinks...sugar candy...salt...ice cream...chocolate...cereals...refined...oils..pork...fudge...lollipops...crisp bacon..." - **Diet, Nutrition and Cancer Program, NCI, Diet and Nutrition: a Resource for Parents of Children with Cancer., NIH Publication 82-2038, May, 1982.**

"In..categories which make up about...eight % of the incidence, 5-year survival rates have actually fallen - those are cancers of the lip, penis, esophagus, vulva, and bone, and invasive cancer of the cervix (all where the prognosis is worse now than in the 1950's)." - **Newsday, Jan 10, 1977, article submitted by Senator Robert Dole, into Nutrition and Cancer Research, Hearings, Subcommittee on Nutrition, US Senate, 1978.**

"After approximately two decades and several billion dollars....Among the various types of cancer that account for 78% of the incidence..the upward trend in survival rates has not exceeded a few %....a far gloomier picture than has been generally conveyed to a hopeful public by our leading cancer research institutions...A generally passive lay press has been the means of transmission."

"Papanicolaou published for 15 years before anyone would listen to him, but now you find (the) ACS extolling the virtue of the Pap test." - **Daniel S. Greenberg, (Editor, Science and Government report; columnist New England Journal of Medicine), "Cancer: Bad News", Washington Post, January 19, 1975.**

"In many quarters, the superiority of combination therapy ("surgery and radio-therapy) is accepted as established dogma, and re-examination of treatment policies as heretical. Despite the confident air of this position, a life-sparing effect, specifically attributable to the radio-therapeutic component of combination regimens has not been proved." - **Morrow and Di Sala, "The Role of Post-Operative Irradiation...", American Journal of Roentgen-ology, Aug, 1976.**

"..This issue will explore..all forms of cancer therapies, even those frowned upon, and, in some cases, actively thwarted, by organized medicine."...

"The medical establishment would have us believe that before all treatment procedures become acceptable for general use, they are subjected to exhaustive studies which have proven both safety and effectiveness. This belief is reinforced by ('medics') criticism of the non-medical cancer treatments, the most damning is: 'They are unscientific.'..."

"...Surgical and radiation treatments...do not lend themselves to double-blinding or use of placebo." ...

"According to JAMA, over 30 different surgical procedures have been introduced over the years for the relief of angina and myocardial blood supply, yet only two were subjected to the appropriate controlled studies." - **Maryann Napoli, Editor, and Arthur Levin, Master of Public Health, Director, Center for Medical Consumers, and Health Care Information, Inc., Health Facts, "Cancer....", January 1979.**

"It is often necessary to make a decision on the basis of knowledge sufficient for action but insufficient to satisfy the intellect." - **Immanuel Kant (1724-1804).**

"(The) percent distribution of persons with...limit in major activity...due to chronic conditions, under 17 (years old, in:) 1967 (was) 1.1%, in 1976 (was) 1.9%. - **National Center for Health Statistics, Vital and Health Statistics.**

"...Pathological states are the consequence of several determinate factors acting simultaneously...The manifestations of any given agent differ profoundly from one person to another. ...Each noxious agent can express itself by a great variety of different pathological states. ...Different agents can elicit similar reactions. ...The total environment and the (interior medium) constitute a multifactorial system..." - **Rene Dubos, MD, Professor, Rockefeller Institute; Professor, Harvard Medical School (Mary) Lasker Award; Ways of Health.**

"Most diseases can be detected only after symptoms appear....Repetitious annual exams of

healthy individuals seem to be profitable only for the physician." - **Dr. Richard Spark, Harvard Medical School, in George Berkley, PhD, Cancer....**

"...One third of cancers found in Health Insurance Plan study were not felt by the clinician. .. Two-fifths of the cancers were noted by the surgeon, but not detected by the radiologist. In only one-fifth of the cases were the cancers found by both physicians." - **Philip Strax, MD, Early Detection.**

"The fact that a patient survives for five years after an operation does not imply that he is cured. ...The number of recurrences drops after five years only because the total number of survivors has dropped...In reality, the curves show that between one month and ten years, the rate of death remains constant." - **Lucien Israel, MD, NCI consultant, French Hospital Director, Conquering Cancer**, last four paragraphs in **Cameron Stauth (many credentials), The New Approach to Cancer.**

"There isn't one shred of evidence that early diagnosis does any good, except perhaps in the cancer of breast, cervix, and bladder." - **Dr. James Peters, NCI Division of Cancer Cause and Prevention Director.**

"Doctors...from the Office of Info. Tech. at Harvard U.(:)...Their appraisal of 46 surgical or anesthesia breakthroughs...suggested...only 13% were highly preferred (and)...in nearly half the cases the new therapy was no better than the therapy it replaced. ...About 12% of the innovations increased complications..."

"In 1971, the Joint Task Force of the USDA, in..An Evaluation of Research in the US on Human Nutrition...(concluded) that (in the US) a more fundamental (less "convenience food") diet...would result in 1.2 million fewer cases of heart and vascular disease each year, 64,000 fewer cancer deaths and 120,000 fewer cases of cancer each year, 49 million fewer cases of respiratory infections, 3 million fewer cases of birth defects, 8 million fewer cases of arthritis, 2 million cases of diabetes either avoided or improved, 3 million fewer cases of osteo-porosis, 16,200 fewer cases of blindness, 3 million fewer cases of allergies, and 2 and one-half million fewer mental health problems necessitating hospitalization." - **Jeffrey Bland, PhD, Biochem, and a bunch of credentials, Your Health Under Siege.**

"...Cancer patients are constantly being urged to go to their doctors as soon as the 'danger signals' appear...The implication is always that patients...with the shortest possible duration of symptoms, will have the best prognosis. The results of this study certainly do not support this."
- **G.H. Green, Associate Professor, School of Obstetrics and Gynecology, U. Auckland, New Zealand, "Duration of Symptoms and Survival Rates for Invasive Cervical Cancer." Australian and New Zealand OB/Gyn, Nov. 1970.**

"Taking a biopsy often aggravates and stimulates growth - and does not indicate how many secondary tumors have developed." - **Dr. Charles Mayo, (in Dr. Lynn Dallin, Cancer Causes and Natural Controls).**

"...The resort to a biopsy is a confession of failure, due to clinical inexperience or lack of data from other methods of diagnosis." - **Dr. Ewing, Beaumont Foundation Lecture, (in Boyd, Textbook of Pathology, (in Health Research, Is Cancer Curable? c. 1954.)).**

"There seems to be little doubt that cancer can be spread from the primary site to distant tissues through..the numerous ways that surgical manipulations (e.g. biopsy, therapy) could be responsible for this phenomenon." - **Vincent Vita, Director, NCI, and Steven Rosenberg, MD, PhD, Chief Surgeon, NCI, and S. Hellman, MD, Director of Radiation, Harvard Medical School.; Editors, Cancer: Principles and Practice of Oncology.**

"...Establishing a diagnosis....'benign' or 'malignant' is not an exact science. In spite of the aura of infallibility..pathologists are human...(;) the super specialist (with) 'tunnel vision'...Histo-techs...make grievous errors...(;) proper patient...sample...injuries to the tissues...Pathologists are not omniscient...(;) some) afflicted with such delusions. ...Trapped by semantics. ...A 'guessing game' when patients' lives are at stake." - **Roger Terry, MD, "Pathology of Cancer", Clinical Oncology: A Multi-disciplinary Approach, ACS.**

"...All too many...scientists...have forgotten that not everything that counts can be counted, and

not everything counted, counts." - **Denis Burkitt, MD, (of Burkitt's Lymphoma), in Judith Glassman, The Cancer Survivors.**

"...Half or more of the numerical data published by scientists in their journal articles is unusable because there is no evidence that the researcher accurately measured what he thought he was measuring, or no evidence that possible sources of error were eliminated or accounted for." - **Dr. Richard W. Roberts, Director, National Bureau of Standards), in Robert Mendelsohn, MD, Confessions of a Medical Heretic.**

"It is not enough to show that drug A is better than drug B on the average. One is invited to ask, 'For which people ("& why") is drug A better than drug B, and vice versa? If drug A cures 40% and drug B cures 60%, perhaps the right choice of drug for each person would result in 100% cures." - **Lancelot Hogben, MA, with five lines of medical credentials, Annual Review of Medicine, 1958.**

"...To test new materials..., it was reasoned that the primary mouse cancer used should... respond the best to the then existing anti-cancer drugs. Accordingly, ...leukemia has become the standard for testing....This has resulted in the development of several drugs that are highly effective clinically against (A.L.L.) leukemia, chorio-carcinoma..., but of only limited effectiveness against the commoner (solid) cancers. ...There are anti-cancer agents with a high degree of effectiveness against a solid tumor ("melanoma") although totally ineffective against the leukemias. ...We suggest...each material...be tested on...solid tumor regardless of its effectiveness...against the leukemias ("during initial primary screen")." - **Dr. Roy Asplund, "Isolation of Anti-Tumor Poly Saccharide Fractions from Yucca..." Growth, 1978. (in John Hinerman, The Treatment of Cancer with Herbs, c. 1980).**

"...I am told that I cannot discover anything more because I had discovered other concepts in the past and those are now regulations. ...I am the senior author of the randomized clinical trial. Now, I am told by the FDA that, if I don't do a randomized clinical trial, I can't do research. ...When I ask them where they got that dumb idea, they cite my publications." - **Dr. Emil Freirich, head Developmental Therapeutics, MD Anderson Hospital and Tumor Institute (in Pat McGrady, Jr., "The Cancer Patient's Quandry", Newsday, Sept 30, 1982.**

"If a useful (therapy) became available...it would be difficult to find an adequate number of experienced investigators to test it. The great danger might not be that a useless material was judged useful, but rather that a worthwhile one was rejected by inexperienced investigators." - **Ernest Herrman, PhD (in Postgraduate Medicine, May 1964) (in Independent Citizens Research Foundation for Study of Degenerative Diseases), Is the Answer to Cancer Just Around the Corner?, c. 1964.**

"In the early 1700's, two physicians...learned about pinkroot's efficacy from the Indians. The word soon spread to the general public, who praised this worm treatment, particularly against roundworms, for the next 200 years. Pinkroot fell into disuse in the early 1900's, simply because greedy herb dealers adulterated or even substituted shipments of true pinkroot with quantities of other plants..." - **Michael A. Weiner, PhD, nutritional ethno-medicine, U of Calif, Berkeley, Earth Medicine - Earth Food,: Plant Remedies, Drugs, and Natural Foods of the North American Indians, c. 1972.**

Extra material

There are some sections of my original medical essay that are not appropriate for my essay today, but are very good reading. I refer to and link to these sections from my medical essay. The first section has to do with Dr. Bruce Halstead. The second has to do with Jimmy Keller.

First, some *Medical Dark Ages* quotes about Halstead.

"...Adequate dosage by the most effective and least toxic route. ...('Laetrile') is about 44 times more toxic when given by mouth than by intra-muscular injection, and 21 times more toxic than intravenous injection. ...When the patient is on high doses of vitamin A, alcoholic beverages are absolutely prohibited."

"An excellent example of what not to eat is the nutritional program as recommended in the booklet published in 1974 by the American Cancer Society, Inc. under the misnomer of 'Nutrition.'" - **Bruce W. Halstead, MD, author of several books.**

"A little after 7 am...25 officers...and California FDA, raided Halstead's residence...The LA county DA's office charged Halstead (consultant to World Health Organization; commander,

US Navy; director, World Life Resources Institute) with some 24 counts including 'conspiracy, 'grand theft', unlawfully selling drugs for cancer treatment, and 'fraudulently providing a treatment to arrest cancer.'...The DA took all of his cancer patients' records and refused to give him either a list or receipt for them." - **Choice, 1984.**

"The Committee for Freedom of Choice in Medicine...has filed a complaint with the United Nations Center for Human Rights, charg(ing)...'medical genocide' and accus(ing) the AMA and ... FDA...(this) complaint was spurred by the recent raid on the home and office of Bruce Halstead, MD..." - **Medical Freedom Group takes Complaint to UN.**, **Spotlight, 1984.**

Halstead may be one of America's most brilliant physicians. His battles with the medical gangsters continue to this very day. On *The Winds* web site is a recent interview with Halstead. From their web site:

"A decades-long dispute between a highly respected physician/scientist and the State of California ended with the elderly doctor, Bruce Halstead, on criminal probation and stripped of his license to practice medicine.

"In light of this and other recent actions taken by state governmental authorities in cooperation with such U. S. institutions as the Food and Drug Administration (FDA) and the FTC (Federal Trade Commission), the government appears to be engaged in a concerted war against a domain of the healing arts known as alternative medicine. This war, ostensibly for the protection of American citizens from unscrupulous "quacks," has apparently moved into a new phase. The FDA's pursuit of medical "public enemies" is no longer restricted primarily to non-MD practitioners not trained at established medical schools--those the general public largely considers the unorthodox fringe of the medical world. These federal agencies are now engaging the force of the government's legal machinery in the prosecution of physicians practicing "conventional medicine"--those who have dared to recognize and even incorporate into their practices the efficacy of holistic natural remedies.

"Dr. Halstead is a graduate of Loma Linda University, a medical school which, to those in the field of the human physiological sciences, ranks as one of the more prestigious schools of medicine and scientific research in the world.

"The 77-year-old physician is currently on probation under the State of California, Los Angeles County, for his activities involving the prescribing of alternative medication, specifically for his

cancer patients. Dr. Halstead has been suspended from any form of medical practice. "In fact," he told The WINDS, "I can't even talk to a patient about nutrition."

"When his home and clinic in San Bernardino County were raided by the Los Angeles District Attorney, "I challenged their legal jurisdiction," Halstead informed The WINDS, "since I had never lived or worked in Los Angeles County, but that did not matter. I was a legal novice and had not yet learned that jurisdiction and venue were merely legal fantasies which have no meaning in actual fact for the alternative health physician." (Nor, apparently, does the constitutional doctrine of habeas corpus).

"Dr. Halstead was charged with twenty-eight counts of conspiracy, grand theft and violations of the Health and Safety Code, along with twenty felony and misdemeanor counts.

"The prosecutor wanted me to go to prison for eight years," he told The WINDS, "but the court ultimately reduced the sentence to 32 months. I was offered, on at least ten different occasions, the 'opportunity' of plea bargaining for a crime which I did not commit," Halstead explained. "My reply was 'not until hell freezes over.'"

"The assault upon alternative medicine "is not just against me," he said. "They're after everybody and everything" connected with the field.

"Perhaps something else Dr. Halstead revealed to The WINDS has played a part in the FDA's zeal to relegate him to the medical "scrap heap". "We have been monitoring the illicit regulatory activities of the FDA and the cancer establishment, " Halstead claims, "and are in constant contact with a network of organizations and attorneys dealing with their illegal health activities in this country which are steadily driving up our national health costs."

"Is it not interesting how money keeps introducing itself into the mix? Halstead concurs making the ominous assertion that, "Cancer is the sacred cow of the medical industry. More people make money by treating cancer than there are victims dying from the disease."

"Dr. Halstead, acclaimed as a genius even among his peers, has authored hundreds of books and research publications. Among them are benchmark works such as Poisonous and Venomous Marine Animals of the World which the U.S. Navy considers of such importance as to fund a project to put the entire three-volume tome on CD-ROM.

The WINDS obtained a copy of Dr. Halstead's Curriculum Vitae, the academician's equivalent of a resume. The following qualifications belong to a man whom the government deems dangerous to his patients, incompetent to practice medicine and academically inadequate to determine what is harmful or beneficial to human physiology:

- Eleven years teaching on the medical faculty of Loma Linda University.

- Specializes in global preventive medicine, tropical diseases and biotoxicology.
- Assistant Director on the School of Tropical and Preventive Medicine, Loma - Linda University, Loma Linda, California.
- Assisted in developing a global preventive military medical program at the U.S. - Naval Medical School, Bethesda, Maryland.
- Lectured on biotoxicology at the School of Aerospace Medicine, U.S. Air Force, San Antonio, Texas.
- Conducted Arctic expeditions for the U.S. Army, Navy, Air Force and National Institutes of Health, studying poisonous and venomous marine animals, and potential drugs from the sea.
- Contributor to Dorland's Medical Dictionary and the Encyclopedia Britannica, 15th Ed.
- Engaged in marine scientific research with the Jacques Cousteau Society, traveling extensively with the Cousteaus for eighteen years.

Additionally, Dr. Halstead has been deeply involved in the study of the use of oriental herbal therapy on immune deficiency disorders.

After a 25-year effort into medical/biological research, "I was shocked," Dr. Halstead exclaimed, "to find upon my Rip Van Winkle return to clinical medicine that dangerous toxic drugs, all FDA approved, had proliferated to a frightening extent--over 1.54 billion prescriptions written in the U.S. per year.

"I found," Halstead continues, "that many of these drugs destroy your immune system and are carcinogenic. New and awesome medical technologies were also being spawned, mind-blowing in both their diagnostic capability and staggering costs to the consumer.

"However, in evaluating this new drug and health technology, I did not find a commensurate improvement in either morbidity or mortality statistics in chronic degenerative afflictions such as cardiovascular disease and cancer. Costs had increased, but not the overall health index. We had dropped to about 23rd position among the nations of the world in health care."

"This data, presented by an eminent physician/scientist, raises the logical question as to whether this may be a reasonable explanation as to why the strike by New York doctors several years ago resulted in a decline in the city's overall death rate. "At this point in time," Halstead concludes, "I have the profound conviction that America is on a disaster course in health care both economically and therapeutically...A dangerous therapeutic mind set exists in

this country that it is better to die in an orthodox fashion than to survive in an unorthodox manner."

"In reference to his implication that the government would rather allow an individual to die than to condone the application of "unorthodox" treatment, Dr. Halstead relates the following event he presented in his court trial:

"During my final oral argument I recounted the incident when defendant Alfred Dix and his wife had their home raided by the Los Angeles District Attorney. Mr. Dix had been using and selling the herbal drink." [The doctor is here speaking of a specific compound of Japanese herbs (ADS) from which a tea is made that many clinical trials, according to Halstead, have proven very effective in the treatment of cancer].

"Mrs. Dix had been diagnosed as having terminal abdominal cancer. She had had surgery, nine different types of chemotherapy, and over ninety different treatments of radiation, all of which had failed. Her doctors told her that she had only 30 to 45 days to live. She was bedridden, had given up hope, and was preparing to die. She and her husband had even contacted a mortician to make funeral arrangements.

"Mr. Dix then came in contact with ADS [the herbal compound]. After taking ADS for about ten days, Mrs. Dix began to feel better, started doing housework, shopping, traveling, and started entertaining again. I met Mr. and Mrs. Dix one day in the lobby of a hotel in Pasadena. She was walking, mentally alert, happy and laughing, and stated emphatically that she was feeling great. No aches or pains - thanks to ADS.

"At the time of the raid at the Dix home, the D.A. confiscated all of her ADS. Her husband begged and tearfully pleaded with the D.A. to release enough of the ADS for his wife's use. The D.A. refused to release any of the tea to her.

"The next time I saw Mrs. Dix was in the courtroom. She looked pale, in a weakened condition, unable to walk, crestfallen and anguished. A few days later she died - a broken woman, a victim of the land of the free and the home of the brave.

"What has happened to our national ideal of life, liberty and pursuit of happiness? Why has the prosecution denied Mrs. Dix the right to retain a cup of harmless adaptogenic tea which she purchased for her own cancerous condition? What has happened to her civil liberties?

"I could not think of a single tyrannical country in which this scenario could have taken place."

And here is a first-person account about [Jimmy Keller](#), his treatment, and how they took care

of him.

"My wife Kathy had fully-metastasized ovarian cancer which had spread throughout her abdomen. She had large and growing tumor masses basically everywhere below the diaphragm when we brought her to Jimmy Keller's clinic in March of 1991. She was unable to walk fully erect, had hard masses in her stomach area, was very weak and suffering abdominal pains and digestive distress because of the growths.

"She had been earlier mis-diagnosed (rather reprehensibly so in my opinion) with fibroid tumors of the uterus. Her cancer was discovered in a surgery (intended to remove her uterus and ovaries) on 5 February 1991, immediately upon opening her abdomen with a huge T-shaped incision. A biopsy was taken and she was stapled-up immediately. The surgeon returned his fee within hours, and we were left with a dismal prognosis.

"A longtime acquaintance who had experienced a near-miraculous and seemingly permanent recovery from an apparent brain tumor, recommended us to the Keller clinic. We spoke to Jimmy and several others by phone and decided to attempt his treatment.

"Mr. Keller interviewed us upon our arrival at the Tijuana clinic, and detailed what we could expect. He was guardedly optimistic, explaining that the surgery would have caused the cancer to spread aggressively (it had, in spades). He said the fact Kathy had not undergone chemotherapy, and that she was young and basically healthy meant her chances were good of making dramatic progress. He said the daily treatments would make her very tired and she must sleep long hours. He said she would almost certainly experience "pulling" sensations in the areas of the tumors as the masses shrank. He told us the process of recovery would involve a stringent diet which must be maintained indefinitely, as well as the treatments, and would require many months and repeated visits to the clinic.

"The daily therapy consisted of a grab-bag of alternative approaches; Mr. Keller seemed to use every therapy he knew which had any chance of success. Kathy was given everything from pancreatic enzymes to Laetrile, in a constantly-varying daily routine.

"But it consisted of two very essential items which were never omitted: an IV drip of saline solution containing a very large dose of Vitamin C; and an intravenous serum, normally added to the same saline solution, which we were told consisted of amino acids and polypeptides.

"This last serum was the one totally unique aspect of their treatment, and it was to that which they attributed the lion's share of their success. And success it was.

"I will not detail their stories here, but we were surrounded with people whose tales of recovery were consistently heartening, and sometimes bordered on the incredible.

"A typical day at the clinic consisted of arrival at 9AM; an interview with Mr. Keller in which he

used a technique (which I had never before seen) of body-response to his questions which led him to prescribe the day's mix of therapies. Items and proportions changed daily. Laetrile some days, not others. More serum one day, less another. All based, apparently, in a method of physical feedback where he pressed downwards upon the patient's extended arm as he asked questions or named medicines. The arm's resistance to pressure seemed to vary and provided Keller his response. Keller also seemed to examine his patients' outward appearance very closely, and asked searching questions about diet, sleep, how they felt, and so forth. An assistant noted his comments on the day's therapy for each patient.

"We then sat upon chairs, arranged throughout the several rooms and hallways of the small clinic, and with about 40 to 60 other patients, were provided with the IVs, injections and tablets. I assisted with some aspects of my wife's treatment, including needle "sticks" and IV "pushes." Usually we were done by noon or so, then went "home," Kathy usually to bed-rest.

"As to cost, the various medicines involved specific charges for each; generally, as I recall, a day's treatment would cost anywhere from \$150 to \$250.

"I remained there with my wife for about a week, and attended all her visits to the clinic. We set her up in a kitchenette -equipped motel room near the border.

"We bought her all the elements of the very strictly organic and vegetable-laden diet Keller had prescribed.

"I then returned to my work in Seattle, but stayed in constant contact with Kathy by phone. As she had done from the beginning, she reported the "pulling" sensations predicted by Mr. Keller, and slept a large proportion of every day. She was not very descriptive of her progress during this time; I later learned it was because she wanted to surprise me.

"The initial surprise, though, was not a happy one, when Kathy called to report the incident of Jimmy's abduction. She had been there for about three weeks. She was slated for just a few more days' treatment, then to be sent home for about a month before another stint at the clinic. Mr. Keller had no more told her this than he was assaulted and taken by force from the clinic by three armed men. My wife physically fought one of them, and was threatened with a gun for her trouble.

"Upon her return, I was flabbergasted at what I saw. She was utterly transformed to a state of emphatic *health*. It was nothing less than amazing. Kathy walked fully upright. Except for a few small hard masses in the lower abdomen, all evidence of her tumors was gone. She was more energetic and alert than I had *ever* seen her. She had the complexion of a robust child, peaches and cream, rosy cheeks! Never before had she had such an appearance.

"Though this triumph was overshadowed by the knowledge that the clinic was closed and no more treatment would be available, Kathy's wonderful condition persisted for months. She

woke early and slept light. She practically bounced out of bed, something she'd never done before.

"Her energy was remarkable. It required about four months before she began to experience the symptoms of digestive distress again, and several more before the growths became as strongly evident as before.

"Our tale from there is much like those of many another sufferer of that cancer. Other efforts to duplicate Keller's treatment, on which we spent thousands, were unsuccessful. We were finally left with nothing but surgery (a colostomy, finally necessary to keep Kathy alive) and the usual spiral of chemotherapy.

"Kathy died, a remarkable three years after her diagnosis, on 16 March 1994, of liver failure. But for an almost-successful attempt at killing her with Taxol (which weakened her terribly and after which her doctor recommended euthanasia to our horror), Kathy would probably have lived many months longer. I am convinced Kathy would have lived a fraction of that time without Jimmy Keller's amazing treatment.

The Next Section: [Fluoridation: A Horror Story](#) (161K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Fluoridation: A Horror Story

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[Compulsory Fluoridation: An Industrial Tale](#)

[Harold Hodge, the Nuclear Connection, and Our Brains](#)

[Conclusion](#)

[Footnotes](#)

[Fluoridation: A Chemistry Prelude, Now an Addendum](#)

Introduction

Earlier drafts of this essay had a several page chemistry narrative at its beginning, which presented some germane aspects of chemistry, to make this essay more understandable. Early readers felt it was too much technical information for those in the lay audience, particularly as they begin their reading experience.

The original chemistry prelude was designed to help the reader understand the nature of fluoride, why it is used in industry how it is, why it is a waste product of certain industrial processes, and lays the groundwork for understanding why it was so important in the nuclear industry. To make it easier on readers, that prelude is now an [addendum to this essay](#). Reading the prelude is not imperative to understanding this essay, but might make some things clearer.

In short, fluorine is the most reactive element known to science ("reactive" means its affinity to bonding with other elements).^[1] In nature, fluorine is found bonded to other elements, never floating around by itself, and is rarely found in its ionic state. The industrial processes of the nineteenth century created the most toxic pollutants that humanity had seen to that time. Taking ore from the earth and removing the metal, especially in aluminum refining, created hazardous waste.

In its ionic state, fluorine is highly toxic. Fluorine bonded to metallic ore in the earth was liberated during the refining process and is difficult-to-impossible to safely dispose. The aluminum refining industry was the biggest and most influential fluoride polluter around 1930, and in America only one company was in the aluminum business: ALCOA.

Fluorine is also useful in producing artificial chemicals such as Teflon and Freon, because of its unique properties. Those unique properties also made fluorine indispensable in refining uranium to extract its most radioactive isotope, which made the nuclear age possible.

Compulsory Fluoridation: An Industrial Tale

The increasing industrialization of the late nineteenth and twentieth centuries saw an explosion in aluminum use. Aluminum is a ubiquitous substance in industrialized societies. It is everywhere, from electrical wiring to food and beverage cans to cookware to automobiles to airplanes. As the [Industrial Revolution](#) was hitting its stride a century ago, the aluminum refiners had a major problem with the fluorides attending aluminum production: they are deadly poisons. Fluorine once safely bound with aluminum, copper and iron in the earth's crust was reintroduced into the environment in its ionic state. The fluorides were not only being buried in the ground and put into the water, they were also being released into the air by industrial processes. Fluoride pollution was a major industrial problem.

John Yiamouyiannis, in his influential *Fluoride and the Aging Factor*, described how the fluorine ion disrupts enzyme activity and attacks DNA and protein. In his theories, backed up by research, the fluorine ion particularly disrupts hydrogen bonds. When chemicals are dumped together, the elements that have a higher bonding affinity will "steal" the bonds from other elements. Fluorine forms the smallest negatively charged ions of all the elements, and that small size allows them to go where larger ions cannot. Those fluorine ions can get into the nooks and crannies of larger molecules, such as enzymes and DNA, and wreak biological havoc. Those fluorine ions disrupt weaker bonds in those larger molecules, damaging or destroying the original substance, disabling its biochemical usefulness. The fluorine ion acts similarly to "free radicals" in the body, with its net electrical charge interfering with biochemical reactions. That is how the fluorine ion harms or kills people.

Another common industrial element, chlorine, behaves similarly, and the chlorine issue is another one where chlorine is undoubtedly carcinogenic, among other health hazards, but industrial propaganda and criminal activity keeps the heat off chlorine.[\[2\]](#) Chlorine is the other element compulsorily added to the water supply, to kill microorganisms.

There is no arguing that fluorides are deadly poisons. No scientist will argue the point, as it is universally accepted. Among the hazards of fluoride are dental fluorosis, skeletal fluorosis, sterility, birth defects, cancer and brain damage.

Dental fluorosis progresses with an increase in the fluorine ion concentration that teeth are subject to. Dental fluorosis progresses as follows. First, the teeth develop a mottled look. Flecks can be seen on the enamel. Tooth mottling can begin at less than one part per million (PPM), which is the concentration added to the water supply in communities that fluoridate their water. As the concentration rises to two PPM, the teeth discolor, gradually turning brown. Accompanying this process, the teeth become hard and brittle. The teeth then begin chipping and disintegrating. In Frank McClure's *Water Fluoridation, The Search and the Victory*, there is a color photo section showing the disease's progress. In advanced cases, the teeth are reduced to blackened stumps (images of this process are easily available on the Internet). With skeletal fluorosis, the skeleton disintegrates.

In 1916, G.V. Black and F.S. McKay presented the first study of tooth mottling. Tooth mottling was common in children in Colorado, Texas and other western states, and an effort was launched to determine its cause. In Colorado the condition was known as "Colorado Brown Stain," and in Texas it was "Texas Teeth." In 1931, three independent studies concluded that tooth mottling was caused by fluorine ions in the water supply, and it has been generally accepted ever since.[\[3\]](#) Usually the fluorine ions were naturally occurring.

Because humankind is the only animal to drill wells, we are often exposed to water that has a high natural fluorine ion content, generally in areas where there is little rainfall and the groundwater's dissolved mineral content is naturally high, and also in areas of volcanism. There are places where well water has a naturally high fluoride content, where the people die at an early age from fluoride poisoning and have other fluoride-related ailments. In *Fluoride and the Aging Factor*, John Yiamouyiannis devotes chapters of his book to presenting cases where that has happened. McClure's *Water Fluoridation, The Search and the Victory* and Waldbott's *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma* extensively document the hazards of environmental fluorides.

By the turn of the 20th century, industrially created airborne and waterborne fluorides were becoming a major health hazard. In 1901, one study found that fluorides "are much more toxic than the other compounds that are of significance in the industrial smoke problem."[\[4\]](#) As early as 1850, people and livestock were being poisoned by fluoride emissions from the iron and copper industries.[\[5\]](#) In 1930, the world's first major air pollution disaster happened in

Belgium's Meuse Valley, where thousands of people became violently ill, and sixty people died. The world's foremost authority on the issue, Kaj Roholm, concluded that airborne fluorides were responsible.^[6] The fertilizer industry was mainly responsible in that instance. As late as 1970, the U.S. Department of Agriculture stated that airborne fluorides "caused more worldwide damage to domestic animals than any other air pollutant."^[7]

In America, with its industrialized economy, there was only one aluminum company in the 1930s, in the [standard monopoly situation](#). The Aluminum Company of America, ALCOA, was probably the world's biggest fluoride polluter at the time.

On the heels of the discovery that fluoride caused tooth mottling, Public Health Service (PHS) scientist Trendley Dean, the first director of the National Institute of Dental Research, was sent west. As Secretary of the Treasury, Andrew Mellon had authority over the PHS, and Mellon founded and was the controlling shareholder of ALCOA. Dean's mission was to research communities where naturally occurring fluoride was high in the water supply, to see how much fluoride children's teeth could absorb before disintegrating. There was an obvious conflict of interest in Dean's research. Dean announced his results and made the statement that fluoride in the water supply decreased tooth decay in children. Below is some of the pertinent data Dean created.^[8]

City	Fluoride PPM	% of cavity-free children	% with fluorosis
Pueblo, CO	0.6	37	2.4
Junction City, CO	0.7	26	1.7
East Moline, IL	1.5	11	24.5
Monmouth, IL	1.7	55	42.1
Galesburg, IL	1.8	56	35.1
Colorado Springs	2.5	41	67.6

The only unmistakable trend is the one showing dental fluorosis increasing with fluoride concentration, which was expressly what Dean went west to determine. Black and McKay noted that mottled teeth did not seem to have a higher incidence of tooth decay, and Dean extended those findings, although that was not his job. A man was specifically assigned to investigate the damage a particular chemical did to teeth, but somehow concluded that the chemical was actually good for teeth. To paraphrase Dean's findings: "As children's teeth disintegrate, they may have fewer cavities." Dean is known today as the "father of

fluoridation.” It has now been admitted by virtually everybody involved in the fluoridation issue, even by Dean himself (given under oath on a witness stand), that his early data gave zero evidence that increasing fluoride concentration in the water supply reduced tooth decay.

Dean later became one of fluoridation’s propagandists, but was initially cautious with his suggestion. Dean’s questionable suggestion regarding the potential dental benefits of fluoride was all that ALCOA-related scientist Gerald Cox (he worked for the Mellon Institute in Pittsburgh) needed to begin proposing that the nation’s water supplies be fluoridated. In 1937 Cox announced, “It is possible that fluorine is specifically required for the formation of teeth.”[\[9\]](#) Cox was the first to suggest the compulsory fluoridation of entire communities. Ironically, the PHS spent the ten years after 1931 trying to *eliminate* fluorine ions from the water supply, given the tooth mottling findings. Cox partly based his fluoridation suggestion on the work of Gerald Armstrong, who in 1938 published findings that decayed teeth seemed to have lower fluorine content than healthy teeth. In 1963, Armstrong published a reinvestigation of his 1938 findings, and concluded that his earlier findings were wrong, and that there was no detectable difference in the fluoride content of healthy and decayed teeth.[\[10\]](#) The discovering scientists themselves admitted that the two major scientific findings of the 1930s that showed that fluoride might be good for the teeth, and were the basis of later campaigns to compulsorily fluoridate water supplies, were worthless.

Naturally occurring fluoride in the water supply is usually composed of fluorine and *calcium* atoms. What component of dissolved calcium fluoride might have a positive effect on bones and teeth? The calcium aspect was ignored, while the fluorine component was obsessively pursued. The fluoride compounds artificially added to the water supply are sodium fluoride and fluosilicic acid, which are *industrial waste byproducts*. By the 1950s, the National Institute of Dental Research (NIDR) became a corrupt organization that produced “research” that fluoride polluters used to protect themselves from liability lawsuits.[\[11\]](#)

If the data supporting fluoridation is analyzed, it quickly becomes evident that all the pro-fluoridation people have in their favor are highly uncertain statistics. The theories are conflicting, as is the data.[\[12\]](#) While fluorine is found in bones and teeth, so are other elements that nobody says are essential for health (and even toxic), and more than 80% of fluorine given to humans and animals in experiments is immediately excreted.[\[13\]](#) The same mechanisms that supposedly protect teeth also cause tooth mottling. It is quite the double-edged sword. Even giving the pro-fluoridation forces the benefit of the doubt regarding their statistics, their data on the benefit of fluoride amounts to one tooth per mouth, not an exciting benefit.[\[14\]](#) It is an alarmingly small benefit when the undeniable harm caused by fluoride is considered. Benjamin Disraeli said, “There are three kinds of lies: lies, damned lies and statistics.” Fluoridation data is a classic case of statistical gamesmanship. Even if the motivation of most pro-fluoridation researchers were not suspect, their empirical and statistical methods are. Many astute criticisms have been leveled at the methods of fluoridation researchers regarding uncontrolled variables, omission of pertinent data, mathematical errors,

and outright bogus science.[\[15\]](#)

Among the giants of the early days of fluoridation research were Trendley Dean, Frank McClure, Harold Hodge, Edward Largent, Wallace Armstrong, David Ast, and Gerald Cox. Dean worked for ALCOA owner Mellon at the PHS. Gerald Cox worked for the Mellon Institute. Largent was the most visible member of the research teams at Kettering Laboratories at the University of Cincinnati, funded by ALCOA and several other fluoride-polluting companies. Largent was a consultant for Reynolds Aluminum. McClure was one of fluoridation's greatest cheerleaders, working for the industry-influenced National Institute of Dental Research. Armstrong was a comrade-in-arms with Dean and McClure, promoting fluoridation. Hodge had a [sinister relationship](#) to the fluoridation issue, recently discovered through declassified U.S. documents, also tainting Ast.

Dean was not the first person to suggest that fluoride might be good for teeth. It was suggested as early as 1892, as it was detected in bones and teeth, although experiments in the 1920s disproved the notion.[\[16\]](#) It had not yet been established that fluoride caused "tooth mottling," but already scientists were trying to see if fluoride might be good for teeth. There were health disasters happening throughout the industrialized world due to fluoride, but a handful of ALCOA-influenced/funded scientists tried seeing how fluoride might be good for health. They and their corporate sponsors eventually prevailed, as money talks loudly in America.

Although the industrial scientists' well-paid efforts were important, it was up to a lawyer to literally ram fluoridation down the American public's throat. In 1947, ALCOA's lead counsel, Oscar Ewing, was named to head the Federal Security Agency (FSA), which later became the U.S. Health, Education and Welfare Department (today it is called the Department of Health and Human Services, or HHS). Ewing went on the ALCOA payroll in 1944 at the astounding salary of \$750,000 per year. The FSA oversaw the PHS, and the same year Ewing began at the FSA, he initiated a national fluoridation project through the PHS, helping to build a bandwagon for fluoridation in the absence of any credible scientific data. At that time, there were two cities undergoing water-supply fluoridation tests: Grand Rapids, Michigan and Newburgh, New York. The tests were to run for ten to fifteen years to collect data. Ewing began campaigning for a national fluoridation program when those tests were only two years old, and no significant data was available or even possible. None other than [Edward Bernays](#), the "father of public relations" and one of the greatest propagandists of all time, designed Ewing's public relations campaign for fluoridation. Bernays also designed the campaign by the American Tobacco Company [to addict American women to tobacco](#), and Joseph Goebbels adopted Bernays' work in his Nazi propaganda campaigns against the Jews.[\[17\]](#)

By 1950, 89 cities were fluoridated, despite no credible evidence ever submitted demonstrating that it reduced tooth decay, or doing anything other than causing disease, misery and death. By 1950, ALCOA was in a new line of business, selling sodium fluoride to cities to put into their

water supply. ALCOA was advertising the blessed purity of its sodium fluoride. Reality had been inverted, with a deadly industrial waste being forced down the American public's throat as "medicine." That reality remains inverted to this day. Eventually, the fluoridation results for Newburgh and Grand Rapids were partially published and have largely been ignored ever since. Although there was no measurable decrease in tooth decay, Newburgh boys had twice the incidence of skeletal deformities and a higher tooth-mottling rate as compared to the unfluoridated control group in nearby Kingston. Seeing how Newburgh fared, Kingston has successfully resisted having its water supply fluoridated for nearly sixty years. Other Newburgh data was noteworthy, although largely suppressed: Newburgh developed one of the highest heart disease rates in the United States, and girls came to puberty earlier than the control group. The heart disease rate in Grand Rapids doubled after the first five years of the fluoridation experiment.[\[18\]](#)

Such an [anti-scientific rush](#) gathers its own momentum, similar to a stampeding herd. The PHS and other bureaucracies would never back down from their position, no matter what. Fluoridation's proponents have even admitted that.[\[19\]](#) It has taken several centuries for the Catholic Church to admit that [the Inquisition](#) was probably not such a great institution. The Index of banned books was not discontinued until the 1960s, and the Holy Office has merely been renamed "The Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith," and it acts as a more genteel version of the heretic-burning office it once was, but its goal is the same: defending the Church's power.[\[20\]](#) The cost of admitting that one was wrong, especially on something so potentially damning as adding a poison to the water supply, is too high for most people and virtually all bureaucrats to contemplate. The rash and possibly dishonest decisions made fifty years ago will be enforced as long as there is the power to do so.

There was plenty of public uproar over fluoridation fifty years ago, but money not only talks in America, it dictates. Today, the average American has no familiarity with fluoridation's history or the fact that there still is no credible data that demonstrates that fluoridation reduces tooth decay, and overwhelming, indisputable evidence that fluoride is a deadly poison. The logic is that fluoride is good for the teeth at one part per million, but begins causing health problems at concentrations of less than two parts per million. [Harold Hodge](#), one of fluoridation's pioneers and a toxicology expert, whose epidemiological research was influential in giving fluoridation the green light, himself stated that there should be at least a 100-fold margin in the dietary use of a potentially toxic agent.[\[21\]](#) The PHS adopted a two-to-one margin, although plenty of credible evidence shows that fluoride at one part per million (what most Americans drink) causes many health ailments, including cancer.

Reading the books for and against fluoridation can be illuminating. Two books that highlight the conflict are *Water Fluoridation, The Search and the Victory*, by Frank McClure, and *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, by George Waldbott and two other scientists. McClure devotes the first quarter of his book to outlining some of fluoride's health hazards, including dental and skeletal fluorosis. If people read his book only to page 74, they might think that

fluoride would be one of the modern world's greatest health hazards. The first words on page 75 are “By 1930 the time had arrived when epidemiological research was on the verge of demonstrating with unequivocal certainty the alliance between dental caries prevention and an optimum quantity of fluoride in public drinking waters.” The rest of the book is a paean to the virtues of compulsory fluoridation. The book was published in 1970. What made McClure’s statement bizarre was that it was not until 1931 that fluoride was considered the cause of tooth mottling. Before the dangers of fluoride to teeth were discovered, there was almost “unequivocal certainty” that fluoride was good for teeth.

With his statement of “certainty” about fluoride's benefits, McClure’s book was silent regarding some truly unequivocal issues of tooth decay. One unequivocal issue is that the civilized diet is almost solely responsible for tooth decay. Fossil evidence demonstrates that tooth decay began when civilization did, the [Sumerians](#) being one early example of significant tooth decay. In ancient Egypt, the upper classes had significant tooth decay, while the lower classes, eating simpler food, had very little.[\[22\]](#) In Silesia, located in present-day Europe (Germany, Poland, and Czechoslovakia), tooth decay was found in 1.75% of the population at the end of the Stone Age, versus eighty percent (up to 95% in some populations) in recent years.[\[23\]](#)

There is dramatic evidence regarding the civilized diet's pernicious influence on teeth, and especially refined sugar. Wherever Western civilization has made its appearance over the past several centuries, tooth decay and other health problems have followed in its wake. In the 1930s, Weston Price journeyed to earth’s last remaining “primitive” civilizations. Price studied primitive civilizations and what happened to them when introduced to the “civilized” diet. On average, the “primitive” peoples exposed to civilized diets experienced a 3500% (thirty-five times) increase in tooth decay, of the fourteen cultures he studied. Their dental arches also degenerated, leading to crowded teeth.[\[24\]](#) Western dentistry and orthodontics owe nearly their entire existence to processed food.

In keeping with the time-honored, [male-dominated](#), capitalistic style of Western medicine, true prevention is not a concept. Instead of McClure advocating eliminating sugar and processed food from the diet to prevent tooth decay, a highly toxic waste byproduct of the aluminum processing and fertilizer industries, among others, becomes a miracle substance, compulsorily added to the water supply to “prevent” tooth decay. McClure and his friends not only kept the food processors in business, but they also helped create a new market for toxic waste.

That was not the only blind spot in McClure’s work. The possible economic incentive of the fluoride polluters, and those they bankrolled, was largely invisible. In light of recently declassified documents, and the now known corporate affiliations of McClure’s pantheon of fluoridation’s pioneers, McClure’s work today resembles a primer on the corruption of science.

The final chapter of *Water Fluoridation, The Search and the Victory*, deals with the opposition to fluoridation and how the pro-fluoridation forces triumphed. Particularly enlightening is

McClure's summary of a great fluoridation victory: the compulsory fluoridation of Ireland. McClure reprinted part of the judgment rendered by Justice Kenny. Kenny rejected the testimony of Waldbott and three other expert witnesses. The judge accepted wholly the testimony of Hodge, Yngve Ericsson, Armstrong and others. Armstrong would soon publicly admit the worthlessness of his early research. Ericsson was from Sweden, and was one of Europe's biggest fluoridation proponents. Ericsson received money from the corrupt U.S. PHS, and even received royalties from Sweden's toothpaste industry on fluoridation patents that he held.[\[25\]](#) Justice Kenny gave his reasons for rejecting Waldbott's and the others' testimony. He said that their views were fanatical, "passionate" and not supported by credible science. Kenny concluded that Hodge, Armstrong, Ericsson and the others from the fluoridation establishment were models of objectivity and learned reason, with the weight of science behind them. Knowing the now public but then secret bias of [Hodge](#), the payola of Ericsson, and all their affiliations to the PHS, which was dominated by ALCOA for many years, the judge's comments make for astonishing reading.

The hard science aspects surrounding the issue render water-fluoridation research highly suspect, if nothing else. The standard unit of tooth decay, known as DMF (decayed, missing, and filled), used by all fluoridation researchers, is far from bulletproof. In chapter 12 of *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, the authors poke many and gaping holes in the research that supposedly supports compulsory fluoridation. One study showed that there was up to an 89% variation in cavities reported in a mouth, depending on which dentist performed the examination.[\[26\]](#) In the case of pro-fluoridation research, as with many others in the annals of science, it appears that the error rate may have been larger than the effect being studied, making the research worthless.

There is a mountain of contradictory data to the "unequivocal," undebatable data that McClure lauded.[\[27\]](#) In looking at the data, it was interesting that just as death rates went down in the Western nations during World War II (and WW I, due to natural causes) as they were reduced to being [vegetarians](#) and growing their own food, their dental health also improved. Their general and dental health also unraveled after the war years, as they went back to their normal diets and abandoned their Victory Gardens.[\[28\]](#) It is odd that in America's trial fluoridation experiments, the data at times showed an alarming increase in tooth decay after the war years, even though they were the new beneficiaries of artificial fluoridation. Even if it is accepted that fluoridation fights tooth decay, there are many results that show that "safely" fluoridated water still causes dental fluorosis. In Massachusetts, a 1974 study showed a 63% incidence of dental fluorosis in children in a fluoridated community.[\[29\]](#) In India, a study showed that 81% of the children had dental fluorosis with water at 0.73 PPM fluoride, less than that artificially added to fluoridated water supplies.[\[30\]](#)

There are many cases of people having toxic reactions to fluoridated water and even dying, but the fluoridation establishment has covered it up by intimidation and marginalization of scientists who speak out, including getting them fired, such as in John Yiamouyiannis' case.

[31] Doctors and dentists who spoke out against fluoridation risked losing their licenses and other unpleasant fates. Smear campaigns, book-bannings, secret police tactics, official censure and a wide assortment of bedevilments awaited any doctor, dentist, or scientist who spoke out against fluoridation, not to mention an ever-shrinking funding pool for studying fluoride's harmful effects. In the 1950's, about half of all U.S. dentists did not believe in fluoridation, but dared not speak out.[32] If they did, a McCarthy-like witch hunt could be visited upon them.

There was controversy in the early days as Ewing and his pals were campaigning to get water fluoridated. Below is one of the few brave statements made by a medical doctor in standing up to the propaganda barrage, made in 1952 by a U.S. Congressman.

"Mr. Speaker, despite my best efforts, and from the evidence before my committee, I cannot find any public evidence that gave me the impression that the AMA, the Dental Association [ADA - Ed.], or several other health agencies, now recommending the fluoridation of water, had done any original work of their own. These groups were simply endorsing each other's opinions.

"You will note that all of the experts grounded in the science of bio-chemistry have advocated the go-slow sign on the use of fluorides in drinking water. I believe that the dental profession and other public-minded individuals, like myself, have been misled by the PHS, because all of the facts have not been made available upon this subject."

"...I sometimes wonder if the Aluminum Company of America and its many subsidiary companies might not have a deep interest in getting rid of the waste products from the manufacture of aluminum, because these products contain a large amount of fluoride. In this connection it is interesting to know that Oscar Ewing, who now heads up the Federal Security Administration, and the firm of attorneys he was with - Hubbard, Hill and Ewing - represents the Aluminum Company of America." [33]

In the fluoridation issue, the same conflicts of interest and corruption that pervade [organized medicine](#) are clearly seen. The [AMA](#) has never had much to do with promoting the public's well being, instead [promoting cigarettes](#) and helping to cover up health disasters. That dynamic can also be found in the American Dental Association (ADA), where its financial relationship with candy companies is similar to the relationship the AMA had for generations with the tobacco interests. In 1995, the ADA received 15% of its money from trade groups such as the Sugar Association, Coca-Cola, and M & M. The ADA actively promotes

compulsory fluoridation. The ADA was also guilty of stating that the ACLU endorsed fluoridation when it in fact did not.[\[34\]](#) Since 1993, the ADA has had to drop many organizations from its list of fluoridation supporters, including the EPA.[\[35\]](#)

In David Kennedy's *How to Save Your Teeth* he devoted chapter seven to the fluoride issue. Kennedy is a dentist and so was his father. Kennedy grew up believing the fluoridation propaganda. His eyes were opened when he read of a three-year-old child dying from a fluoride treatment in 1974. A typical dentist's treatment is to apply topical stannous (tin) fluoride gel to the child's teeth, then have the child drink water, swish it around in his/her mouth, then spit it out. That is similar to the "swish" fluoride program that was popular in fluoridation's early days.

The three-year-old boy, on his first trip to the dentist, was handed the water by the dental hygienist, who did not tell him what to do. The child swallowed the water. The fluoride gel on his teeth went into his stomach, three times the dose necessary to kill him. The child immediately began vomiting and complaining of dizziness and headaches. The dentist downplayed the child's reaction, saying that his fluoride treatment was normal. The mother was not comforted by the dentist's assurances, and was sent to a pediatric care unit in the same building. The care unit ignored the mother's frantic pleas to attend to her son. For more than two hours she waited for somebody to attend to her son as he lapsed into a coma. When the medical staff finally got around to seeing the son, they injected adrenaline into his heart and he was rushed to a hospital, where they waited for another hour. The boy again lapsed into a coma, then the doctors attempted to pump his stomach and he died of cardiac arrest. The boy's parents were eventually awarded \$750,000.[\[36\]](#)

The only mistake was the boy swallowing the water instead of spitting it out. Dental industry apologists have said that the procedure was not quite orthodox, and the boy was told to spit out the water, which is a weak defense.[\[37\]](#) Kennedy began looking into fluoridation, and found no credible data supporting fluoridation. Today he is one of fluoridation's leading opponents.

Something really happens to teeth when exposed to fluoridation. Artificial fluoridation at 1 PPM appears to induce the early stages of dental fluorosis. Fluoridation's proponents tout the effect of hardening the enamel. That hardening appears to take place. What does that hardening represent? In metallurgy and the forging of metals it is well known that when metals are made harder, that often makes them more brittle. That may be exactly what is happening to teeth that are exposed to fluoride. Yes, the enamel gets harder, but it also becomes more brittle. The hardening is only the first stage of fluorosis. The next stage is that the brittle teeth begin mottling, chipping and disintegrating. The process does not prevent cavities from forming, and makes cavities more catastrophic to the teeth than they would otherwise be.

For argument's sake I will accept that fluoridation is indeed a boon to the teeth, and cavities decrease when fluorine is introduced to the body, and there is a health benefit to ingesting fluorine, although fluoridation's proponents say that those benefits mainly apply to children. Let me be even more optimistic and say that *everybody* benefits from fluorine. Let me be the greatest believer in fluoride's benefits and state that *every tooth* benefits from fluoride. Even if I was fluoride's biggest cheerleader, I still have to admit that dental and skeletal fluorosis exists. People's teeth and skeletons disintegrate when exposed to too much fluoride, denied by nobody. The other documented health hazards I will ignore for the moment as unsubstantiated.

Numerous studies show that dental fluorosis occurs in people exposed to only one part per million fluoride in the water supply. Yet, let me call fluoride a medicine. Let me consider fluoride similar to penicillin, as far as how universally wonderful it is for us. Some people should not take penicillin because they have adverse reactions. Similarly, some people are far more sensitive to fluoride and have reactions to it at levels that most endure with no obvious harm. Millions of Americans today have that problem. That situation is typical of most drugs. How can I measure how much fluoride is in the rest of my ingestion, such as from my food, my toothpaste, and my dentist's fluoride treatments? If I were a doctor, prescribing penicillin to my patients (similar to a dentist and fluoride treatments), how would I feel if they also had penicillin in their food, water and toothpaste? Could I effectively control their overall dose of penicillin? There is not a sane doctor who would prescribe a medicine to the entire population, and in such a way that he/she could not tailor the dose for each patient. Nevertheless, that is what compulsory fluoridation does.

Using even better logic than fluoridation's proponents, people theoretically cannot overdose on vitamin C. Why not compulsorily add vitamin C to America's water supply? It could only help our health, could it not? One problem is there is no cheap source of vitamin C, whereas fluoride has the marvelous distinction of being a toxic waste byproduct of several industries. Today, the fertilizer industry has beaten out the aluminum refining industry as the source of fluoride in America's water supplies, as they provided the fluoride ion more cheaply. Today, 90% of fluoride added to America's water is in the form of fluosilicic acid, mainly provided by the phosphate fertilizer industry. In 1983, Rebecca Hammer of the Environmental Protection Agency (EPA) endorsed adding fluosilicic acid to the water supply, because it killed two birds with one stone. In Hammer's words,

"In regard to the use of fluosilicic acid as a source of fluorides for fluoridation, this Agency regards such as an ideal environmental solution to a long-standing problem. By recovering by-product fluosilicic acid from fertilizer manufacturing, water and air pollution are minimized, and water utilities have a low-cost source of fluoride available to them."

Instead of having to undertake costly measures to dispose of the hazardous waste, adding it to the water supply reduced both the costs of hazardous waste disposal and our medical bills. If only all industrial waste problems could find themselves in such a win-win situation.

Today, well more than half of American children have dental fluorosis, to some degree, and the rate is greater than 80% in some fluoridated areas. Millions of Americans have already had their teeth ruined by dental fluorosis, leading to dental work, up to and including dentures. Fluoridation promoters have continually minimized dental fluorosis as a mere cosmetic problem, but the facts are something else. When cancer patients have chemotherapy and their hair falls out, it is indicative of far more widespread tissue damage, hair falling out being the least of it. Similarly, dental fluorosis is merely the visible evidence of systemic fluoride poisoning. Ironically, research (even mainstream research, by the National Institute of Dental Research) has shown that dental fluorosis *increases* tooth decay, and does not decrease it.

[\[38\]](#)

Although reverse osmosis removes about 90% of the fluoride, and steam distillation removes well over 99%, people can still absorb it through their skin while in the shower and through other contact. I have consumed purified water for more than twenty years, avoiding not only fluorine, but also chlorine and other pollutants. Actively putting fluoride into the water supply has helped create an industry that removes it.

The long-term effect of fluoridation is increasing a dentist's business. The teeth still get their cavities, but when a dentist attempts to repair a tooth that has been fluoridated, the tooth has disintegrated to the point where a simple filling will not suffice. The tooth begins coming apart as the dentist works on it. Instead, the tooth gets a crown or other more extensive repair. Dentists have remarked on that phenomenon for many years.

Harold Hodge, the Nuclear Connection, and Our Brains

Harold Hodge's career is worth investigating. He was the leading scientist who created the data showing fluoride's harmlessness in the doses they planned to administer to the nation's water supplies. In the late 1990s, Joel Griffiths and Christopher Bryson unearthed documents regarding Hodge's involvement in acts that are crimes against humanity. To better understand the situation, this essay will need to revisit chemistry, fluorine and the atom bomb.

Du Pont invented Freon early in the 20th century. During World War II and America's secret pursuit of the atom bomb, there were many technical hurdles to overcome. A major problem was obtaining the material to do the job. In nature, uranium exists in two basic isotopes. An [isotope](#) is a version of an element. What makes one isotope different from another is its

number of neutrons. In nature, Uranium is found as Uranium 238 (U-238) and U -235. U-238 is by far the most abundant isotope, comprising more than 99% of all uranium. U-235 is less than one percent of naturally occurring uranium, but it is the isotope needed to make a bomb. The difference between U-235 and U-238 is three neutrons. Those three fewer neutrons make U-235 less stable (undergoing radioactive decay into more stable elements) than U-238. U-235's half-life (the time it takes for half of it to decay) is 700 million years, but that is short compared to U-238's 4.5 billion years. It is short enough to lump it together and create a nuclear chain reaction. That chain reaction is the required event for making nuclear weapons and nuclear energy possible.

How does one separate U-235 from U-238? The answer was simple and the key to making nuclear weapons. Du Pont was the acknowledged master of [refrigeration](#), and using fluorine to make a refrigerant was their specialty. The secret to separating the uranium isotopes was somehow turning uranium into a gas, and uranium hexafluoride was born, which is one uranium atom bonded to six fluorine atoms. It is the only known uranium compound that is a gas at near environmental temperatures (its boiling point is 134° F). It is called "Hex" in the industry. From this essay's [chemistry lesson addendum](#), it should be obvious why that compound had such a low boiling point. Hex is uranium gas, or one could call it radioactive Freon.

Here is how they separated it. The Hex of U-235 is slightly lighter than Hex of U-238 because of those three neutrons. What Manhattan Project personnel did was send Hex through a mile-long tunnel filled with screens. As the Hex made its way to the end of the tunnel, the Hex, U-235 rose in comparison to the Hex, U-238, because it was slightly lighter. A membrane then filtered it out. It was an ingenious solution. They accumulated the U-235 an atom at a time. The work of tens of thousands of people was directed at getting a lump of U-235 that I could hold in my hand. That was the active ingredient in the atom bomb [dropped on Hiroshima](#).

Du Pont produced the fluorine for the Hex. They were making vast amounts of it. During 1944 there was an accident at du Pont, and a cloud of deadly hydrogen fluoride was released into the air. When added to water, hydrogen fluoride becomes hydrofluoric acid, one of the most dangerous acids known.^[39] There were probably numerous releases.^[40] The fluoride clouds sailed away to farms downwind. Crops withered, and people and animals became violently ill. The affected farmers in Gloucester and Salem counties, famous for their high quality produce, sued the federal government after the war. They were stifled in their lawsuits against du Pont and the Manhattan Project, largely because all the data regarding the damage done was kept secret in the interest of "national security." The farmers eventually gave up and settled their suits for a few hundred dollars per farm. Recently declassified documents show Harold Hodge's active role in the government's damage control effort. In a secret Manhattan Project memo dated March 1, 1946, Hodge, who was the Manhattan Project's chief toxicologist for fluorine studies, wrote to the Manhattan Project's medical division chief, Colonel Stafford

Warren. Hodge expressed his concern regarding the toxicity of fluorine and the New Jersey incident. Hodge outlined four major areas of concern:

- "1. A question of injury of the peach crop in 1944.
- "2. A report of extraordinary fluoride content of vegetables grown in this area.
- "3. A report of abnormally high fluoride content in the blood of human individuals residing in this area.
- "4. A report raising the question of serious poisoning of horses and cattle in this area."

Shortly after the farmers sued, the federal government mobilized tremendous resources to counteract the farmers' efforts. Secret meetings were held in Washington DC, attended by everybody from the FDA to the Bureau of Standards to the Justice Department. Why were they meeting? In a recently declassified memo from Colonel Cooper Rhodes of the Manhattan Project, those government agencies were "making scientific investigations to obtain evidence which may be used to protect the interest of the Government at the trial of the suits brought by owners of peach orchards in ... New Jersey." If the farmers prevailed in court, America's entire nuclear program could have been threatened.

Hodge also wrote to his boss, "Would there be any use in making attempts to counteract the local fear of fluoride on the part of residents of Salem and Gloucester counties through lectures on F toxicology and perhaps the usefulness of F in tooth health?" "F" stood for fluoride, and was the name of the top-secret program begun during those days to study the harmful effects of fluoride. "Project F" was performed at the University of Rochester. The University of Rochester is already infamous for other "research" it was performing at the same time for the Manhattan Project: they secretly injected people with plutonium without their knowledge, in the first of many guinea pig experiments performed on U.S. citizens to test chemicals and radiation. Over a thirty-year period, the U.S. government administered everything from plutonium to LSD to unwitting "subjects." Those are only the experiments that have been made public.[\[41\]](#) God only knows what other experiments will remain hidden.

Studying the decision-making process that led to [dropping the atom bombs](#), the [CIA's hiring of Nazis](#), the [U.S. military shenanigans](#), and the activities of the alphabet soup U.S. "security" organizations regularly elicits amazement at how much information is still being kept secret, documents that are more than fifty years old. A researcher discovering a newly declassified document can discover other classified documents. The first document seen can be revealing,

but what can be more intriguing are other documents referred to by the original document. When the researcher tries finding the referred document, he/she can find it still classified.

Apologists for the secrecy, such as UFO debunker [Phil Klass](#), say that there are legitimate national security reasons for keeping 100% of the information secret that the National Security Agency has on UFOs, for instance.^[42] Ex-CIA agent [Ralph McGehee](#), whose bitter experience makes it clear that the government nearly never has a legitimate “[security](#)” reason for keeping anything classified, refutes the opinions of establishment apologists. McGehee is far from alone. In a recent interview, ex-CIA operative Mark Phillips stated that the 1947 National Security Act had nothing to do with protecting national security. Phillips stated that everybody who worked under it knew that its true purpose was to “cover crimes. It was not to cover secrets.”^[43] Secrecy and deception (lies of omission and commission) are the handmaidens of [self-serving activities](#), as a cover for dark deeds or in keeping the grip on power and wealth for a select few.

Griffiths and Bryson’s work regarding the fifty-year-old fluoridation research ran into the “national security” obstacle.^[44] Hodge was involved with promoting fluoride *before* the New Jersey accident in 1944. In 1943, Hodge chaired the committee that decided the feasibility of fluoridating the water supply of Newburgh, New York, one of two American cities first targeted for artificial fluoridation. The committee was eventually composed of other Manhattan Project people, such as Henry Barnett and John Fertig. The Manhattan Project affiliations of Hodge, Barnett, and Fertig were kept secret. The wolves were looking after the interests of the sheep. Trendley Dean himself was opposed to the Newburgh test, fearing fluoride’s toxicity. Manhattan Project personnel, led by Hodge, covered up Dean’s opposition.^[45] The man in charge of the Newburgh fluoridation project was David Ast; another fluoridation legend who attended the secret Manhattan Project meetings regarding the New Jersey accident, according to recently declassified documents.

The situation was so skewed that the Program F scientists published a 1948 paper that ran in the *Journal of the American Dental Association*, describing the health effects on humans. Griffiths and Bryson obtained the original report, now declassified, and found that the Atomic Energy Commission censored the harmful health effects that were documented. The censorship was so severe it was funny, in a sick way. Griffiths and Bryson wrote:

“This was a study of the dental and physical health of workers in a factory producing fluoride for the A-bomb program, conducted by a team of dentists from the Manhattan Project. The secret version reports that most of the men had no teeth left. The published version reports only that the men had fewer cavities. The secret version says the men had to wear rubber boots because the fluoride fumes disintegrated the nails in their shoes. The published version

does not mention this. The secret version says the fluoride may have acted similarly on the men's teeth, contributing to their toothlessness. The published version omits this statement. The published version concludes that 'the men were unusually healthy, judged from both a medical and dental point of view.'"

Animals avoided the facility where the hydrogen fluoride was used. All microorganisms were killed, so food left in the facility would never decay. The hydrogen fluoride etched the facility's windows and the workers' glasses, so they needed to be continually replaced. The workers also developed lesions and a type of "sunburn" from working there. Nearby elementary schools had their windows etched from hydrogen fluoride releases.

Hodge was dead when Griffiths and Bryson discovered the damning declassified documents, but Ast was still alive and was named in the documents as active in the nuclear establishment's damage-control efforts. Ast oversaw the Newburgh New York fluoridation experiment. Griffiths and Bryson confronted Ast with the declassified documents' revelations. Ast pulled a [Ronald Reagan](#), claiming no recollection of those activities.

There were major studies performed by the government on fluorine during those World War II days and shortly thereafter. With the exception of the recently declassified version of the report published in *JADA* in 1948, the others are still classified, despite significant efforts by Griffiths and Bryson to get them declassified using the Freedom of Information Act. One entire area of study still classified is that regarding the effects of fluorine on the central nervous system. Recently declassified memos show that on April 29, 1944, Colonel Warren approved a Central Nervous System (CNS) research proposal. Hodge wrote the proposal. The memo accompanying the proposal said:

"Clinical evidence suggests that (uranium hexafluoride) may have a rather marked central nervous system effect with mental confusion, drowsiness and lassitude as the conspicuous features. It seems most likely that the F [code for fluoride] component rather than the T [code for uranium] is the causative factor."[\[46\]](#)

The proposal remains classified, as do the research results. Another declassified document dated six months after the proposal orders the research stopped. That sent my head spinning. Right-wingers have been saying for more than fifty years that fluoridation was a plot to numb American brains so they could be easily herded. I had heard for years that fluoride administered to a bull made it docile and easy to handle. I have read repeatedly that both the

Nazis and Soviets used it in their prison camps to keep the prisoners' brains numbed, to make them docile. In his right wing classic *Murder by Injection*, Eustace Mullins made the case that Alzheimer's disease is largely caused by the ubiquity of aluminum and fluorine in the nation's food and water supply. There is increasing evidence for that opinion.[\[47\]](#) Mullins mentioned the Soviet studies from 1940 showing how fluorine in the water supply was helpful in running their Gulag system, with brain-numbed prisoners, attested to by others.[\[48\]](#)

In the appendix of *Murder by Injection* Mullins presents a frightening fluoridation story. At the end of World War II, as the United States was scrambling to snatch up as many Nazi scientists as possible and keep them from the Soviet Union's clutches, American industrialists were sent to Europe to perform many duties, including mopping up German Industries. One prominent scientist sent over was Charles Eliot Perkins. His job was to help take over the I.G. Farben chemical plants. I.G. Farben was the most infamous and largest of the German cartels. Farben ran the rubber factory at Auschwitz that was staffed by concentration camp labor. Farben also made the Zyklon-B gas used in the gas chambers.

In a letter Perkins wrote on October 2, 1954 to the Lee Foundation for Nutritional Research, Perkins made the startling statement that a German chemist, who was a prominent Nazi, told him that the German General Staff had approved a comprehensive population control plan to use on subject populations. It amounted to mind control, and an essential plan element was to "medicate" the water supplies, mainly with sodium fluoride. Perkins wrote,

"However, I want to make this very definite and very positive - the real reason behind water fluoridation is not to benefit children's teeth...The real purpose behind water fluoridation is to reduce the resistance of the masses to domination and control and loss of liberty." Perkins said that putting fluoride in the water supply eventually numbs the brain, making people easily manipulated. Perkins stated "...any person who drinks fluoridated water for a period of one year or more will never again be the same person, mentally or physically."[\[49\]](#)

One friend remarked, when he heard the history of fluoridation, that at least the Soviet Union and Nazis used it or intended to use it on prisoners. In the United States it is used on the general population.

The above revelations open a Pandora's box regarding the mental effects of fluorinated drugs and chemicals. Freons have psychoactive effects, and is the tip of the iceberg regarding fluorinated drugs and chemicals. The Germans were leaders in such research. During World War II the Germans invented the first nerve gas, Soman. It is a fluorinated chemical. In 1939, the scientists at Farben invented Sarin, the most deadly nerve gas next to VX. Sarin is an

acronym of the initials of the Farben scientists who developed it. Sarin was going to replace Zyklon B in the gas chambers, but the war ended before mass production could begin. Sarin is also a fluorinated chemical, a close cousin of Soman, and the EPA recently published a chemical profile on Sarin, after Gulf War Syndrome veterans (who think that Sarin may be responsible for their disease) pressured the government, showing that the fluorine atom was its active ingredient.[\[50\]](#)

Rohypnol, the notorious drug used in date rapes, is fluorinated Valium, making it more than twenty times as potent as normal Valium. Prozac is another fluorinated drug. In all, there are hundreds of fluorinated drugs, and many have profound mental effects, including memory loss. The primary effect of psychoactive drugs is inhibiting enzyme production, which the fluorine ion is well known to do. In light of other facts surrounding fluoridation, this begins treading frightening territory. Fluoridation promoters and others often laugh off such situations as the workings of hopelessly paranoid minds. In light of declassified memos regarding U.S. CNS experiments of fifty years ago (at nearly the same time the Nazis and Soviets were doing similar kinds of experiments), *and* the studies that are performed across the world on fluoridation and intelligence, I am not laughing. Recently two studies in China showed a drop in IQ of children exposed to fluoride in the water supply of between 5 and 19 points.[\[51\]](#)

In other unsettling revelations, documents have surfaced which revealed that when the Newburgh New York fluoridation trials were run, testing fluoride's mental effects on the subject children was planned, and tissue samples were secretly tested at the University of Rochester. The results of those tests have yet to be made public.

In Mullins' book he chalks up the fluoridation push as a mind-control ploy by the "Rockefeller Syndicate." Mullins says that the Rockefellers paid Ewing's astronomical salary at ALCOA in order to set up his tenure at the Federal Security Agency. The Rockefeller name has come up repeatedly in the area of social control in my studies. [John Taylor Gatto](#) is a two-time New York City Teacher of the Year. Gatto taught for twenty-six years in inner city New York. Gatto is an anomaly in teaching. He is widely recognized as one of the best teachers America has to offer, but he is [highly critical of our educational system](#). In 1992, he wrote *Dumbing us Down*, a monograph he published after retiring from the New York City school system. *Dumbing us Down* is a devastating critique of America's compulsory school system, and how it beats the humanity out of children and "dumbs us down."

Gatto has become an education activist since he retired from the New York City school system. In *Dumbing us Down* is the speech he gave when he accepted the 1990 Teacher of the Year award, winning the award for the second consecutive year. Gatto identified two men, Sears and Harper, as primary designers of our modern schools, which he states are "instruments of scientific management of a mass population."[\[52\]](#) Sears and Harper were from the [University of Chicago](#), an institution that John Rockefeller rebuilt at the turn of the century. Rockefeller and Andrew Carnegie also [took over American medicine a century ago](#), leading to

the knives and drugs paradigm that dominates Western medicine today.

It is easy to become lost in bureaucratic and statistical tangles, losing sight of the bigger picture. Our nation was pursuing the most destructive technology of all time, and the first practical application of it was [dropping bombs on women and children](#), then publicly lie about who it was dropped on and why.[\[53\]](#)

Dr. Phyllis Mullenix, a toxicologist at Children's Hospital in Boston, who also worked in neuropathology at Harvard Medical School, recently performed research into fluoride and the intelligence of rats. In 1982 she was asked to perform the research as part of her studies on the toxicity of therapeutic agents used in treating leukemia and other diseases. Mullenix was invited to work at the Forsyth Dental Center, arguably the world's leading dental research institute. Five years later, her research was underway.

Mullenix found a significant diminishment of rat intelligence when they were subjected to fluoride in their water supply. During Mullenix's research, she was surprised that there were virtually no published studies regarding fluorine and its effects on the human brain.

Some interesting news was the help she had. Brought in as a consultant on Mullenix's research was Harold Hodge. He was quite old in the early 1990's. During Hodge's consulting of Mullenix's work, he never mentioned the CNS studies that he proposed fifty years earlier. He almost certainly oversaw the 1940s research himself. When shown the newly declassified memos that clearly spell out Hodge's active role in CNS research on fluorine, Mullenix said she was "flabbergasted." Mullenix eventually came to see Hodge as a "monster" who actually steered her research toward studying fluoride effects on the central nervous system, probably to see what the results would really be, as the CNS experiments from the 1940s apparently were prematurely terminated. Mullenix today feels that Hodge and one of his University of Rochester pals used her "like a little puppet."[\[54\]](#) When Mullenix tried interesting the NIDR in the declassified memos, she was rudely treated like a "crackpot." The NIDR is evidently part of the U.S. government's damage control effort on fluoride's harmful effects.

When Mullenix read the declassified study on fluorine and the dental health of Manhattan Project workers and compared it to the originally published version, she said, "This makes me ashamed to be a scientist." Mullenix wonders if all other studies done on fluoridation safety were done like that one. Only the federal government knows for sure, in its secret archives.[\[55\]](#)

Mullenix is one more casualty of the fluoride wars. She had nothing to do with the fluoride issue originally, but became involved as part of her work, when steered into it by Hodge. All she "knew" about fluoride when she started was that it was supposedly good for teeth. She did not initiate her research, but was doing it because she was asked. Her research results were published in *Neurotoxicology and Teratology* (Vol.17, No. 2, pp.169-177, 1995), the leading

scientific journal in the field. Before that paper was published she presented her findings at the NIDR in Maryland, a division of the National Institute of Health (NIH). When she arrived at the NIDR, in her words, "I had no idea what I was getting into. I walked into the main corridors there and all over the walls was 'The Miracle of Fluoride'. That was my first real kick-in-the-pants as to what was actually going on." She said the display ridiculed people who were against fluoridation. "I thought, 'Oh great!' Here's the main NIH hospital talking about the 'Miracle of Fluoride' and I'm giving a seminar to the NIDR telling them that fluoride is neurotoxic!"[\[56\]](#) After her presentation she met with toothpaste representatives who asked her if she was saying that their products lowered the IQs of children, and Mullenix responded with, "Basically, yes." That marked the end of her career.

When she excitedly announced to her employers that her paper on the intelligence of rats was being published, three days later she was fired. Her employers asked her which journal was going to publish her work. By that time, she realized that they wanted to block its publication, so she did not tell them. Subsequently, funding has dried up for that kind of research, although immediately after Mullenix was fired, Colgate gave a \$250,000 grant to Forsyth (for a job well done?). The unique equipment Mullenix developed to test rat intelligence was mysteriously destroyed before she could recover it.

Dr. Mullenix was then given an unfunded research position at Children's Hospital in Boston, but with no equipment or money. Mullenix said, "The people at Children's Hospital, for heaven's sake, came right out and said they were scared because they knew how important the fluoride issue was...Even at Forsyth they told me I was endangering funds for the institution if I published that information."[\[57\]](#)

Mullenix has since applied to the NIH for a research grant to further her research, and was turned down. The NIH told her that fluoride had no central nervous system effects, period. How the NIH concluded that, when virtually the only published research shows deleterious effects, is curious indeed. The work Mullenix did, as well as other recent studies, has shown that the fluoride ion is particularly damaging to the brain's hippocampal region, which is its learning center.[\[58\]](#)

Mullenix's fate is common, and this web site documents many instances of scientists and others arriving at the "wrong" answers, and having their careers destroyed. Other scientists who had their careers ruined for coming up with the "wrong" answer regarding fluoridation include Dr. Allan S. Gray of British Columbia and Dr. John Colquhoun of Auckland, New Zealand.

In light of Hodge's secret work for the Manhattan Project, and the secret memos and secret studies that are the tip of the iceberg, every pro-fluoridation effort that uses Hodge's name is tainted. It was with interest that I read *Fluoride and Dental Caries*. It is a relatively recent book on the subject, published in 1986. The book is a compendium on fluoridation, drawing on

various experts in the field. Hodge co-wrote a chapter on fluoride toxicity, and also wrote a chapter dealing with objections to fluoridation. Reading that book was another enlightening process, when I recovered from my anger. The book gives the appearance of looking at fluoridation from many aspects, but *appearance* is the operative word. Hodge's work is suspect, to put it mildly, and I looked there first.

Hodge's co-author on the toxicology chapter was another fluoridation luminary: Frank Smith from the University of Rochester. Smith co-authored many works with Hodge and was active in producing/massaging data to protect industry and government from liability claims.^[59] It is instructive to see the blind spots in their work, and what they were obviously hiding. When Smith and Hodge stated that "No substantive evidence of ill health has ever been offered in children or adults as a result of consuming drinking water containing optimal concentrations of fluoride,"^[60] they were voicing the nuclear establishment's damage control opinion, because there is substantial evidence of harm, but they chose to ignore it. When they wrote, "Since the Danish experience (in the 1930s) crippling fluorosis in an industrial setting has never been seen in the United States or Europe,"^[61] a grain of salt needs to be taken with that statement. With just one declassified study, out of many that exist and are still secret, definite harm occurred, although by playing semantics games they were not "crippled," merely toothless, although the long-term effects are unknown, which may be in another classified study. People becoming violently ill from du Pont's fluoride cloud are invisible victims, at least to the public, when Hodge and Smith wrote their masterpiece of disinformation. The worst air pollution disaster in U.S. history happened in October 1948 in Donora, Pennsylvania, when an air inversion layer formed over the town for four days, and fluoride emissions from U.S. Steel's zinc and steel facilities killed twenty people and seriously injured hundreds more. If the inversion layer had lasted one more day, a thousand people may have died. U.S. Steel and the PHS conspired to cover-up the disaster, with records missing to this day.^[62]

Throughout *Fluoride and Dental Caries* there were instances of "looking" at objections to fluoridation, and the *appearance* of carefully considering them was undertaken. The close relationship between ALCOA, the other fluoride polluters and the early fluoridation researchers is nowhere mentioned, although it is well documented and is consistently one of the biggest issues raised by fluoridation's opponents. A table on the "anti-science" arguments against fluoridation was produced on page 130, in a chapter titled "Legal, Social and Economics Aspects of Fluoridation," that even mentioned the "Communist conspiracy" aspect of fluoridation. Nowhere was mentioned the obvious economic incentives of fluoride polluters to manage the fluoridation issue, and the well-documented instances of them funding and influencing the fluoridation research, even when it is merely the smoking gun of conflict of interest. The authors of that chapter, including the book's editor, used the words "pseudoscientist" and "quack" to describe fluoridation opponents and their "anti-science." In the chapter purporting to look at the broad spectrum of issues regarding fluoridation, the ALCOA and fluoride polluter issue was spectacularly absent.

In *Fluoride and Dental Caries*, one area caught my interest. In Hodge's chapter on fluoridation objections, he presented experimental evidence by chemists that showed the fluorine ion benign to human chemistry. The research was used to discredit John Yiamouyiannis, who uses the very same research to show how the fluorine ion wreaks havoc in the body. Hodge interpreted the original research, qualifying and minimizing the conclusions, and then he presented the experimental work of pro-fluoridation pal Armstrong. Hodge concluded that the research showed that the fluorine ion was relatively harmless by itself. It was the first time that I had seen Yiamouyiannis' science challenged, beyond his cancer statistic analyses with Dean Burk. With knowing Hodge's extreme and formerly secret bias, I cannot trust his writing, particularly regarding the fluoride ion and human harm, but it was interesting reading. When anybody is proven a systematic liar, how can anything they say be believed? How can fact and fiction be separated? The only way I know is to entirely reject their work and become my own expert.

Here are some quotes regarding the biological damage the fluorine ion does to human health, the kind not found in pro-fluoridation propaganda such as *Fluoride and Dental Caries*.

"Fluorides are general protoplasmic poisons, probably because of their capacity to modify the metabolism of cells by changing the permeability of the cell membrane and by inhibiting certain enzyme systems. The exact mechanism of such actions is obscure." - ***Journal of the American Medical Association*, Sept 18, 1943. (before the propaganda steamroller really got going in 1947)**

"The fluoride ion exerts its toxic effect by inhibiting the action of many enzyme systems." - **Hugo Theorell, M.D., Nobel Prize winner for his research in the field of enzyme chemistry.**

"We ought to go slowly. Everybody knows that fluorine and fluorides are very poisonous substances and we use them in enzyme chemistry to poison enzymes, those vital agents in the body. That is the reason things are poisoned; because enzymes are poisoned, and that is why animals and plants die." - **James B. Sumner, Director of Enzyme Chemistry, Department of Biochemistry and Nutrition, Cornell University, and a Nobel Prize winner for his work in the field of enzyme chemistry.**

"The data indicated that drinking water with as little as 1 PPM shortened the life span of mice an average of nine per cent. This was true whether death was due to cancer or non-cancerous diseases. The only notice proponents of fluoridation gave to this work was to discredit it as much as possible. ... In experiments where the drug was added directly to suspensions of cancer tissue before inoculation into eggs or mice, sodium fluoride stimulated the growth of cancer tissue in concentrations of one part in more than 20 million. Scientists at

Cambridge University (*British Medical Journal*, Oct 26, 1963) discovered that concentrations of sodium fluoride as low as one part in ten million inhibited the growth of a culture of human tissue. ... the growing weight of scientific evidence that water-borne fluorides, even at 1 PPM, have toxic possibilities must finally be recognized." - **Alfred Taylor, Ph.D., Clayton Foundation, Biochemical Institute, University of Texas, Austin Texas, 1965.**

"The terrifying conclusion of the studies was that fluorine greatly induced a cancer tumor's growth. If doctors and the public can be made aware of this catastrophe, fluoridation shall end quickly. It will someday be recognized as the most lethal and stupid "Health Program" ever conceived by the mind of man, witch doctors and blood-letters not excepted."

"In 1969 the country of Sweden intended to fluoridate their water supply due to the strong advice of Professor Yngve Ericsson, a Swedish dentist who was also the senior representative on the World Health Organization's Expert Committee on Fluoridation. However, it was then found that Professor Ericsson coincidentally was the holder of two highly-profitable patents on fluoride toothpaste!" - **Alfred Taylor, June 13, 1970 the *Gothenburg Post* (Sweden); August 5, 1970 the *News Register* (Sweden); and May 1, 1970 *Norsk Folkehelselag* (Norway).**

"In 1978, the West German Association of Water and Gas Experts rejected fluoridation for legal reasons, and because 'the so-called optimal fluoride concentration of 1mg/liter is close to the dose at which long-term damage to the human body is to be expected.'" - ***Chemical and Engineering News*, August 1, 1988.**

The tremendous blind spots regarding fluoride polluters, diet and caries, the severe biases regarding the harm done by fluorides, and Hodge's secret mission on behalf of the nuclear establishment rendered *Fluoride and Dental Caries* virtually worthless, except as an instructive exercise in propaganda. With the now-known nuclear industry's active though secret management of the fluoridation issue, books such as *Fluoride and Dental Caries* are examples of "pseudoscience" in the strongest sense.

The situation of industry and government corrupting science is far from confined to the fluoridation issue. Today, ethyl alcohol, the substance that every drunkard knows well, is added to American gasoline to increase its octane rating. It works great. It was also used eighty years ago. In the 1920s, ethyl alcohol was replaced by tetraethyl lead as an octane booster. Why? As it turns out, nobody could patent ethyl alcohol and make monopoly profits from putting it into gasoline. Therefore, General Motors, Standard Oil and du Pont conspired to make a new, patentable chemical, and tetraethyl lead was introduced into American gas tanks. Although [Ben Franklin](#) remarked on lead's well-known toxic qualities hundreds of years ago, and even ancient Romans and Greeks wrote of its toxic properties, industrially-funded scientists in the 20th century labored mightily to make lead appear safe to ingest, even though

they knew how deadly tetraethyl lead really was. It is unknown just how many people became sick and died from the effects of lead being spewed into the air during the era of tetraethyl lead, but it is not inconsiderable. In 1985, the EPA estimated 5,000 lead-related heart disease deaths per year, prior to the tetraethyl lead phase out. The lead content of American bloodstreams has fallen precipitously since tetraethyl lead was outlawed.

The most notorious of the industrial laboratories that produced the lead “research” was Kettering Laboratories.[\[63\]](#) For generations, Kettering and its industrial sponsors controlled all lead research. The “Kettering” of Kettering Laboratories was Charles Kettering, the inventor and General Motors executive. Kettering Laboratories is not the only “medical” foundation that he helped bankroll. [The Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center](#), the world’s leading cancer research institute, is named after Kettering and his buddy, General Motors CEO Alfred Sloan, another noted “philanthropist.” Kettering Laboratories was also instrumental in making aluminum appear benign. McClure had high praise for Edward Largent and Kettering Laboratories in his *Water Fluoridation: The Search and the Victory*. Largent and Kettering were involved in covering-up the harmful effects of fluoride, and Largent secretly worked for the federal government, possibly on the Manhattan Project.[\[64\]](#) Christopher Bryson unearthed original research that Kettering performed in the 1950s, which showed that inhaling airborne fluorides caused an emphysema-like condition, something that countless Americans downwind from fluoride facilities have suffered from. Kettering buried the research results because they came up with the “wrong” answer, but did not have “national security” to cover their tracks, so Bryson discovered it in his research.[\[65\]](#)

On a lighter note, here is a cartoon that sums up fluoridation, although it was a general-purpose cartoon dealing with similar corporate malfeasance. Replace the words “toxic sludge” with fluoride, and this cartoon sums up the story of fluoridation. [Tom Tomorrow](#) is the funniest political cartoonist I have ever seen, and might be the best. The below cartoon was so inspired that a book was named after it.[\[66\]](#)



Click on image to enlarge

Anne-Lise Gotzsche’s *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?* is an excellent survey of fluoridation. She was a medical journalist in London who investigated fluoridation for years. She has a sensible attitude, taking both the pro and anti-fluoridation people to task when needed. The book is an easy read and covers the main issues surrounding fluoridation, although written before the more pernicious conflicts of interest of fluoridation’s proponents were discovered. As with anybody who looks into fluoridation and is not on the payroll of a bureaucracy or corporation that promotes fluoride, Gotzsche demonstrated how shamelessly

political the fluoridation effort was. Science was trampled in the rush to fluoridate. Many scientists went so far overboard that they became evangelists instead of scientists. Some began making up the science as they went along, such as the infamous [Frederick Stare](#). Stare made up a new concept that he called “mineral nutrient fluoride,” a pro-fluoridation idea so unfounded that even the PHS shot it down.[\[67\]](#) Fluoridation pioneer Basil Bibby even recommended adding *lead* fluoride to the water supplies in 1945. Gotzsche discussed that whatever the propaganda about helping teeth, dentists’ business goes up in fluoridated areas, not down. By 1970, Newburgh, New York and Grand Rapids, Michigan, the recipients of the first trial fluoridation experiments, had twice the dentists per capita as the national average.[\[68\]](#)

Gotsche said that calling groups engaged in the huge international push to fluoridate water the “dental mafia” was “naïve,” but felt that those thinking that way could perhaps be forgiven, given the facts. Her book was published in 1975. In light of Harold Hodge’s connections, “mafia” may not be far from the mark.

Conclusion

After looking into the fluoridation issue long and hard, here are my conclusions.

- Preventing tooth decay in children is the only rationale ever put forth by fluoridation’s proponents. Tooth decay is unequivocally caused by processed food, and particularly by refined sugar. I have never seen anybody refute that who did not work for the sugar and food processing industries, and fluoridation’s supporters always seem to ignore that issue.
- Instead of proposing that we eliminate most processed food from our diet as a way to eliminate tooth decay and the vast majority of American health problems, an industrial waste was added to the water supply as a “preventive.”
- All data regarding the benefit of fluoridating the water supply is suspect. Many important variables were not accounted for, such as increasing dental hygiene in the West, other elements present in the water, the fluoride content that is already in food, the extreme variability as to what constitutes a cavity and so forth. Most of fluoridation’s proponents worked for or were affiliated with the Public Health Service, which was dominated by agents of fluoride-polluter ALCOA during the years that the seminal research and political action was carried out. Other private foundations that performed original and influential fluoride research, such as the Kettering Laboratory at the University of Cincinnati, also turn out to have been bankrolled by fluoride polluters. No doubt, many conflicts of interest are still hidden. The recent revelations of Harold Hodge’s relationship with the nuclear establishment, and their motivation to prove fluoride safe, cast grave doubts on the reliability of *all* pro-fluoridation research results published after

1942, which includes *all* studies regarding the results of artificial fluoridation. The ALCOA/Mellon-connection casts a shadow across much of the pro-fluoridation research performed before 1942. Water fluoridation induces dental fluorosis in many, if not most, people subject to it. The first stage hardens the enamel, coinciding with making it more brittle. Then the slow disintegration of the teeth ensues.

- The data regarding the harm fluorine does to teeth and human biology is unequivocal, denied by nobody in the debate. What the proponents argue is that a substance well known to cause adverse health effects at two PPM, is not only safe but good for people at one PPM. In health science history there may be no instance with such a small window of health promotion/health destruction for a "health" additive. Even one of fluoridation's greatest proponents, Harold Hodge, stated that a margin of 100-fold should be the minimum-sized window for beneficial/toxic food additives when he was not being a fluoridation propagandist. There is a great deal of suppressed evidence of the harm that 1 PPM fluoridated water causes, and even harm at concentrations of far less than 1 PPM.
- Scientists and doctors who have either witnessed the adverse health effects of artificial fluoridation or campaigned against it have been silenced. Often they are simply ignored or denied access to the mainstream media to make their cases, which is common for anybody who challenges mainstream dogma. There is also a clear pattern of active attack, such as what happened to John Yiamouyiannis, Phyllis Mullenix, William Marcus and many others. Scientific and medical inquisitions are standard behavior where wealth and power are affected.
- In light of recent studies on fluoridation and intelligence, nobody can easily dismiss the opinion of right wing activists that fluoridation is part of a mind control program. With recently declassified documents showing the United States performing extensive research on fluoride and the central nervous system, research that is still classified fifty years later, anybody who drinks fluoridated water or uses fluoridated toothpaste has every reason to be alarmed. In finishing this summary, and seeing how the nuclear establishment and large industries have managed the "science" of fluorine, we may not be able to trust *any* radiation research that the nuclear establishment has produced on its effect on humans, something that John Gofman has written extensively about. In disturbing instances, the same organizations that managed the "fluoride problem" also managed the "radiation problem."
- The good news is that there have been some significant victories. For one thing, the vast majority (95%) of humanity does not drink artificially fluoridated water. The largest populations subject to compulsory fluoridation are England and its former colonies, such as Ireland, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, and the United States. U.S. citizens consume nearly half of the world's fluoridated water. Europe's population is less than two percent fluoridated, and many places have stopped fluoridating their water supplies,

while others have successfully resisted having fluoride added to their water, including American and Canadian cities. EPA scientists spoke out against fluoridation in the late 1990s. There are many sources of fluoridation information on the Internet. I am one of many people writing about fluoridation. There are many scientists and others waging political action today to end the insanity of fluoridation, and they need all the help they can get. We all will determine whether we keep drinking poison every day. It is up to all of us.

In ending this essay, it comes down to common sense. Tooth decay is primarily caused by our diet, and changing our diet is the only effective solution. Adding a well-known poison to the water supply to “prevent” tooth decay is not only insane, but also suicidal. It also has “coincidentally” been a windfall for fluorine polluters, both corporate and governmental. Instead of having to bear the huge costs of disposing of their highly toxic fluoride waste, large corporations now can sell it to water suppliers and toothpaste manufacturers! Fluoridation may also be part of a mind control program. The history of fluoridation is a horror story. Most people subject to fluoridation have no idea of its dark history, demonstrating how effective our propaganda and indoctrination systems are. Walk into an average grocery store and try finding toothpaste that does not have fluoride in it (I have been queried repeatedly on this issue; Americans can find non-fluoridated toothpaste in health food stores...for now).

Many people discussed why Orwell’s dark prophecies were wrong, and why *1984* did not happen. The irony is that it appears as if we *are* living in [Orwell’s world today](#). The fluoride situation is just one of many that this web site presents. Evidence of Orwell’s prescience is that people do not think they live in that kind of world. The most effective propaganda and indoctrination system is one where its victims do not think they are being propagandized and indoctrinated. The United States has the [most effective and subtle propaganda systems](#) that the world has ever seen, by far.

Footnotes

[1] Professional chemists will be more precise and say that fluorine is the most “electronegative” element, meaning that it is the most aggressive electron “thief,” because the alkali metals are the most “electropositive” elements, meaning their affinity to “give away” an electron, and electronegativity and electropositivity are not easy to compare, as far as “reactivity” goes. However, francium, probably the most electropositive element, is very rare, while fluorine is ubiquitous, and fluorine is far more “coercive,” such as [when it ended the “inert” status of the “noble” gases](#). So most “electronegative” is a more technically accurate term, while I consider most “reactive” the more practical term.

[2] See John Stauber and Sheldon Rampton, *Toxic Sludge is Good for You!*, pp. 209-212, for a copy of the public relations strategy of Clorox regarding bad environmental news regarding chlorine, and the book in general for how corporations wage war against environmental activists. See also David Helvag's *The War Against the Greens* for a broad overview of corporate efforts against environmentalists, including criminal acts.

[3] See Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, pp. 61-63.

[4] Roholm, Kaj. *Fluorine Intoxication*. London: H.K. Lewis & Co., 1937. pp. 64-65. Cited in Griffiths, "Fluoride: Commie Plot or Capitalistic Ploy." *Covert Action*, Fall 1992, p. 27.

[5] Ost, H. "The Fight Against Injurious Industrial Gases," *Z Agnew Chem*, Volume 20, 1907. pp. 1689-93, and Roholm, pp. 36-41. Cited in Griffiths, footnote cited above.

[6] Roholm, Kaj. "The Fog Disaster in the Meuse Valley: A Fluorine Intoxication," *Journal of Industrial Toxicology*, Vol. 19, 1937, pp. 126-137. Cited in Griffiths, footnote cited above.

[7] Lillie, Robert J. "Air Pollutants Affecting the Performance of Domestic Animals," *US Department of Agriculture Handbook No. 380*, August 1970, p.41 cited in Griffiths, footnote cited above. See also Gotzsche, *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?*, chapter 6.

[8] Reproduced in Yiamouyiannis, *Fluoride and the Aging Factor*, p. 99.

[9] Yiamouyiannis, *Fluoride and the Aging Factor*, p. 94.

[10] See Armstrong, W. D. and Singer, L. "Fluoride Contents of Enamel of Sound and Carious Human Teeth: A Reinvestigation." *J. Dent. Res.*, 42:133-136, 1963. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, p.84, n.24.

[11] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, chapter 14, pp. 176-183.

[12] See Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, pp. 61, 80-81.

[13] See Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, pp. 47-54.

[14] Gotzsche, Anne-Lise. *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?* p. 21.

[15] Sutton, P.R.N. *Fluoridation: Errors and Omissions in Experimental Trials*. Melbourne University Press, Melbourne Australia, 1959. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, p. 205, n. 61. See also chapters 12, 17, 18, and 19 of Waldbott. See also Gotzsche, *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?*, pp. 61-65.

[16] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, p. 32.

[17] See John Stauber and Sheldon Rampton, *Toxic Sludge is Good for You!*, pp. 1, 22-32. See also Stewart Ewen's *PR!, A Social History of Spin*.

[18] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, chapter 17, pp. 217-229.

[19] Gotzsche, Anne-Lise. *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?* p. 31. Here is a relevant quote, "We have told the public that fluoridation works, so we can't go back on that." - F.A. Bull, at the 1951 Dental Health Conference in Washington, D.C.

[20] See discussion of The Inquisition's current state in chapter 7 of Baigent and Leigh, *The Dead Sea Scrolls Deception*.

[21] Hodge, Harold. "Research Needs in the Toxicology of Food Additives." *Food Cosmet. Toxicol.*, 1:25-31, 1963. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, p.109, n.25.

[22] Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney. *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*. p. 55.

[23] Dalderup, L.M. "Nutrition and Caries." *World Rev Nutr. Diet.*, 7:72-137, 1967. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*. p. 55.

[24] Price, Weston. *Nutrition and Physical Degeneration*. See chapter 22, table 2, for a summary. See also Kennedy, *How to Save Your Teeth*, pp. 2-3.

[25] See Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, pp. 283-285.

[26] Radusch, D.F. "Variability of Diagnosis of Incidence of Dental Caries." *Journal of the ADA*, 28:1959-1961, 1941. Cf. Ennis Ler.R. "Oral Roentgenology and its Possibilities." *Journal of the ADA*, 21: 1367-1421, 1934. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, p. 205, n. 59.

[27] See chapter 12 of Waldbott's *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, for a sampling of the data not conforming to the rush to fluoridate.

[28] For dental decay, interesting data can be gleaned from Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, especially chapter 12. See also Whitaker, Julian. *Reversing Heart Disease*. pp. 60-62. See also Robbins, John. *Diet for a New America*. pp. 151-154.

[29] Asenden, R. and Peebles, T.C. "Effects of Fluoride Supplementation from Birth on Human Deciduous and Permanent Teeth." *Arch. Oral. Biol.*, 19: 321-326, 1974. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney, *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, p. 202, n.17.

[30] Jolly, S. S., et al. Endemic Fluorosis in Punjab II. *Dental Aspect, Fluoride*, 6:106-112, 1973. Cited in Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney. *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, p. 202, n.18.

[31] See the conservative chapter 18 of Waldbott's *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*, or the highly charged chapters 17 to 19 in Yiamouyiannis' *Fluoride and the Aging Factor* for many examples of the kind of abuse of power this web site chronicles in many planes. Anne-Lise Gotzsche's *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?* is another good overview of how the establishment steamroller works. The people suppressing the findings of fluoride's harmfulness could go by the name "Fluoridation Mafia," similar to what Chernobyl scientist Chernousenko called the people who have been covering up radiation's harmful effects in general, and Chernobyl in particular, "The International Atomic Mafia."

[32] See Waldbott, Burgstahler and McKinney. *Fluoridation, The Great Dilemma*. pp. 324-332.

[33] U.S. Congressman, Dr. A. L. Miller, Chairman, Special Committee on Chemicals in Foods, "Fluoridation of Water, Extension of Remarks., *Congressional Record*, March 25, 1952. pp. A1899-A1901. Cited in Yiamouyiannis, *Fluoride and the Aging Factor*, pp. 140-142.

[34] Research of George Glasser. Glasser's investigation and the ACLU's response, both occurring in January of 1997 have been posted on the Internet.

[35] In 1990 William Marcus, an EPA scientist, was fired for a memo he wrote which called for a review of a cover-up of toxicology studies that showed fluoride was a "probable human carcinogen." Marcus won a [whistle-blower lawsuit](#) and was reinstated at the EPA. In 1997 the Union of Government Scientists of the United States Environmental Protection Agency voted unanimously to sponsor a California initiative to ban fluoridation, citing eleven years of review of the medical evidence which indicates a "causal link" between fluoride and "cancer, genetic damage, neurological impairment and bone pathology." Taken from their statement of July 2, 1997.

[36] *New York Times*. January 20, 1979. Cited in Kennedy, *How to Save Your Teeth*, pp. 133-135.

[37] Church, L.E. "Fluorides - Use with Caution." *Journal of Maryland Dentistry*, 1976, cited in Hodge, "Fluoride Toxicology" in Newbrun, Ernest, ed., *Fluorides and Caries Prevention*. pp. 203-204, 218, n. 9.

[38] See Duncan WK, Silberman SL, Trubman A - "Labial hypoplasia of primary canines in black Head Start children" *ASDC J Dent Child* 55(6):423-6 (1988). See Silberman SL, Duncan WK, Trubman A, Meydrech EF - "Primary canine hypoplasia in Head Start children" *J Public Health Dent* 49(1):15-8 (1989). See Li Y, Navia JM, Bian JY - "Caries experience in deciduous dentition of rural Chinese children 3-5 years old in relation to the presence or absence of enamel hypoplasia" *Caries Res* 30(1):8-15 (1996) Ellwood RP, O'Mullane D - "The association between developmental enamel defects and

caries in populations with and without fluoride in their drinking water" J Public Health Dent 56(2):76-80 (1996). Cited in "Fluoride - What's Wrong With This Picture?" Andreas Schuld, posted to the Internet in 2000.

[39] Hydrofluoric acid eats glass containers, so it is usually stored in containers without glass. I remember seeing a bottle of hydrofluoric acid in my first chemistry lab. The bottle was corroded and looked dangerous to touch. It is highly dangerous to handle, eating the flesh it touches with gusto. What makes hydrofluoric acid doubly dangerous is that as it eats flesh it also produces anesthetic effects (those nervous system effects are discussed later in this essay), which deadens the pain as it eats the flesh, so people do not notice the damage done until too late. People can die from a mere whiff of hydrogen fluoride. In my years in chemistry labs I used hydrochloric, sulfuric, nitric, phosphoric and other acids, but I never, ever saw hydrofluoric acid used, even as a demonstration. It was simply too dangerous. If a fluorine truck wrecks and spills its contents, throwing water on it is useless, because the fluorine gas will actually *burn* the water.

[40] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, pp. 69-77.

[41] Regarding this matter, see the recently published *Undue Risk* by Jonathan Moreno, which documents the undeniable human experiments that the United States performed on often unwitting and unwilling people. Although Moreno is takes it far too easy on our government's crimes, it is a good introduction. A better effort is Andrew Goliszek's chilling *In the Name of Science*, published in 2003.

[42] Klass, Philip. "The 'Top Secret UFO Papers' NSA Won't Release." *The Skeptical Inquirer*. Fall, 1989, pp. 65-68.

[43] It used to be posted on the [Guerilla News Network](#), but is not there anymore. Interviews with Phillips can be found elsewhere on the Internet, and that theme can be found.

[44] See also Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, p. 50.

[45] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, chapter 9, pp. 78-90.

[46] That document can be seen in Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, in the pictures section. It can also be found on the Internet.

[47] High aluminum concentrations have been found in the brains of Alzheimer's victims, and the appearance of Alzheimer's has coincided with the introduction of aluminum cookware. Also, "In January 1987, experiments performed at the Medical Research Endocrinology Dept., Newcastle upon Tyne, England, and the Physics Dept of the Univ. of Ruhana, Sri Lanka, showed that fluoridated water at 1 PPM, when used in cooking in aluminum cookware, concentrated the aluminum up to 600 PPM, whereas water without fluoride did not." (*Science News* (131:73)). That research was also confirmed in America when the research results in England and Sri Lanka were investigated. A test was performed on Antigo Wisconsin water. Antigo had been fluoridated for 33 years. The water was

examined by a certified Wisconsin laboratory, and showed that when used in cooking with aluminum cookware, it concentrated the aluminum by 833 times, and increased the fluoride content by 100%. That made that water's aluminum content 75 times higher than the maximum allowed by the WHO. That information is taken from a paper by Isabel Jansen, R.N. (Journal of the National Academy of Research Biochemists - Jan/Feb '90). To pursue the Alzheimer's-aluminum connection further, one place to start is the letter and references of Dr. William Grant's letter to the *Townsend Letter for Doctors and Patients*, p. 92, in the June 1999 issue.

[48] For instance, during the Un-American hearings during the McCarthy days, USAF Major George R. Jordan testified to his duties of securing vast quantities of sodium fluoride and shipping it to Siberia during World War II. The Russian fluoride recipients openly told Jordan that they were "... using the fluoride in the water supplies in their concentration camps, to make the prisoners stupid, docile, and subservient."

[49] Cited in Mullins, Eustace, *Murder by Injection*, pp. 353-354.

[50] This quote is from Section VII of the EPA Chemical Profile on Sarin of October 31, 1987, regarding the neutralization of Sarin: "Rapidly hydrolyzed by dilute aqueous sodium hydroxide or sodium carbonate forming relatively non-toxic products. Water alone removes the fluorine atom, producing a non-toxic acid (Merck 1983, p. 1204)"

[51] Studies cited in *San Diego Business Wire*, Nov. 29, 1996. Cited by Citizens for Safe Drinking Water, at AOLNewsProfiles@aol.net. Several Chinese studies have reported from places of naturally high fluoride concentration, and in coal mining areas. The news is not good. The Leading Edge Research Group has published those paper abstracts on the Internet.

[52] Gatto, John. *Dumbing us Down*. p. 26.

[53] Recently declassified documents have shed much light on other World War II-era events, such as [hiring the Nazis to staff the CIA's intelligence network in Europe](#), which took humanity to the brink of World War III, as the Nazis lied to America about Soviet military capability and intentions. There are cases of Nazi doctors [performing human experiments](#) in the death camps, and going on the U.S. payroll weeks later. Regarding the atomic bomb, it is now clear that dropping the bombs on Japan had [little or nothing to do with saving American lives](#). For a hint of what it was like to be a Japanese school child, playing near Ground Zero in Hiroshima while that lone plane flew overhead, read *Day One* by Peter Wyden. Microsoft's *Encarta* encyclopedia presents the audio clip of the announcement Truman made after we dropped the bomb on Hiroshima. He lied to the American people by calling Hiroshima a "military base." That is similar to calling Salt Lake City a military base. At Ground Zero was a hospital, two hundred yards away from an elementary school.

[54] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, p 28.

[55] Mullenix's experiences with Hodge, the NIH, and her reactions to the newly declassified

documents were originally published in Griffiths and Bryson, "Fluoride, Teeth and the Atom Bomb", July 1997. The *Christian Science Monitor* commissioned the article, but did not publish it. It is published on the Internet, as well as other articles regarding Mullenix's findings and advocacy work she was doing. For those interested in more depth on the Mullenix/Hodge issue, I can recommend no recent work more highly than Christopher Bryson's masterpiece, *The Fluoride Deception*, published in 2004. It was the book I had been waiting for since 1998.

[56] Those Mullenix quotes are from The Winds' web site, which conducted an interview of her while researching their article.

[57] Those Mullenix quotes are from The Winds' web site.

[58] Dr. Robert Isaacson of Binghamton University, New York conducted two studies using low levels of aluminum fluoride and sodium fluoride. The results were published in 1992 and 1994, predating Mullenix's publication, and the results were similar. Isaacson's study was spurred by data that showed Alzheimer's disease having a higher incidence in fluoridated areas.

[59] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, p. 62.

[60] Newbrun, Ernest, ed. *Fluorides and Caries Prevention*. p. 212.

[61] Newbrun, Ernest, ed. *Fluorides and Caries Prevention*. p. 206.

[62] See Christopher Bryson's "The Donora Fluoride Fog: A Secret History of America's Worst Air Pollution Disaster" in the fall 1998 issue of *Earth Island Journal*. He also devoted chapter 9 of *The Fluoride Deception* to that event.

[63] See the excellent investigative report on that situation regarding tetraethyl lead in Jamie Lincoln Kitman's special report to *The Nation*, titled "The Secret History of Lead," in its March 20, 2000 issue.

[64] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, pp. 105-113.

[65] See Christopher Bryson's *The Fluoride Deception*, chapter 15, pp. 184-201.

[66] See [John Stauber and Sheldon Rampton's](#) *Toxic Sludge is Good for You!* In that book is the incredible story of how a woman tried getting the authors to change the name of the book from "toxic sludge" to something such as "cigarettes." Why? It turned out that the woman was a PR flack for... toxic sludge! In American sewage treatment, the planners short-sightedly commingled human with industrial sewage. Human waste is recyclable, industrial waste is not, at least not for fertilizing one's garden. When the two are mixed, it is truly a toxic sludge, not fit for much except being buried along with the [nuclear waste](#). The sewage managers, though, have sought to turn the toxic sludge into fertilizer, to be used on gardens and farms. There are municipal sewage districts that sell their sewer

sludge today for that purpose. It is full of deadly industrial toxins, though. Truth is stranger than fiction, and the authors could hardly believe it when the PR flack tried getting them to rename their book, because it might create a bad name for...toxic sludge!

[67] Gotzsche, Anne-Lise. *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?* p. 79-80, 96, 168. Incredibly, such an irresponsible idea that fluoride is an essential nutrient is alive and well today, with the National Academy of Sciences publishing a report in 1997 titled "Dietary Reference Intakes" that lists fluoride right up there with calcium and Vitamin D. Many responsible scientists have protested it.

[68] See Gotzsche, Anne-Lise, *The Fluoride Question, Panacea or Poison?*, p. 8. In a 1972 report by the ADA, it is stated that dentists make 17% more profit in fluoridated areas as opposed to non-fluoridated areas (Douglas et al., "Impact of water fluoridation on dental practices and dental manpower", *Journal of the American Dental Association*; 84:355-67, 1972).

Fluoridation: A Chemistry Prelude, Now an Addendum

The next few pages will present a brief chemistry narrative on fluorine, and why it is such an important industrial chemical. Chemistry is one of the most empirical sciences. Much of chemistry is not theoretical, but the empirical result of what happens to substances under certain conditions. Chemicals are put together, and chemists see what happens. Those observations over the years, summarized within the profession, make up a great deal of chemistry textbooks. Chemists measure how much energy is given off or absorbed by reactions, what the byproducts are, and so forth.

Many theories have been developed to account for experimental results, and many have stood the test of time, while others have fallen by the wayside. That is the normal progress of any science, but chemistry has more empiricism and less theory than almost any other "hard" science, and is one of the more nascent. We have many theories, and they are useful, until a new discovery happens. Einstein said that every theory is eventually killed by a fact.

Chemistry is generally concerned with the ways that elements combine. An aspect of chemistry called nuclear chemistry is new to the twentieth century. Most chemistry, however, is not concerned with an atom's nucleus, but with its electrons.

In "classic" chemistry, an atom's basic components are the nucleus and the electrons orbiting it. The nucleus is composed of two primary "particles": protons and neutrons. In classical chemistry, a neutron is considered pure mass, and has no net electrical charge, which is why it is called a neutron, meaning neutral. It is now known that the neutron is further divisible, composed of other "particles." That begins venturing into nuclear chemistry, which is not this essay's concern.

As of 2002, science had discovered 114 elements. A little more than ninety are naturally occurring, and scientists have artificially created the rest. All artificial elements are unstable, and thus are called radioactive, as they give off energy and particles when they decay into simpler, more stable elements. Hydrogen has one proton in its nucleus, while oxygen has eight, gold has seventy-nine, and so on. Each element has a unique number of protons. All of the elements have neutrons in their nuclei, except the most common form of hydrogen. The neutron adds to an atom's mass, but has no net electrical charge.

Orbiting the nucleus are electrons. Electrons, according to current theory, have little mass but an electric charge equal to a proton, but the opposite (I have seen at least one theory that argues that electrons have no mass, but that is not generally accepted today). In a "normal" atom, the protons' positive charges and electrons' negative charges balance each other, and the atom's net electrical charge is zero.

Electrons orbit the nucleus in strange ways. The science of electrons and how they orbit is perhaps the weirdest mainstream science, called quantum mechanics. Electrons do not orbit the nucleus as the earth orbits the sun, in an orderly ellipse - they jump all around, appearing and disappearing. Because atoms are so tiny, and electrons move at a significant fraction of light speed, observing exactly what electrons do is currently impossible, and quantum physics is one of the oddest and most difficult studies in science. Richard Feynman said that *nobody* really understood quantum theory. Einstein took great exception to some of quantum theory's cornerstones, and many observers believe that quantum theory will be radically altered when more is known. However, quantum theory has spawned rules and equations that agree well with what science has observed so far.

Electrons orbit the nucleus in "shells." Each shell has distinct properties. The shells are the same for every element. As an atom gets larger, the shells closest to the nucleus are filled first, the more distant ones filled later. The shells have been calculated to contain 2, 8, 18, 32, 50, 72 and 98 electrons, respectively, the last shells being more theoretical than actual, as those shells could accommodate 280 electrons, but the largest element yet observed is element 116 (even though its life is measured in milliseconds, before it decays into simpler elements). There are also subshells within electron shells, which form further patterns in how shells are filled. Hydrogen, the simplest element, has one electron. That electron inhabits the first shell, so that shell is "half full." Helium has two electrons, filling the first shell. Oxygen has eight electrons, which fill the first shell and six of eight positions in the second shell. So goes the periodic table, each element having one more proton and electron than the previous one, each successive electron shell getting filled. It is also slightly more complicated. As the third shell gets filled, the first eight electrons fill the third, then the next go to the fourth shell, then the third and fourth shells are filled together. For instance, potassium has 19 electrons, the 19th residing as the first electron in the fourth shell, but the third is not yet filled (the first shell has 2, electrons, 8 in the second, and only 8 in the third, not the 18 it takes to fill it, so the

electron layout for potassium is: $2 + 8 + 8 + 1 = 19$). As the shells are filled, eight and eighteen become breaking points to begin filling subsequent shells. It is an orderly progression.

Those shells, and how full or empty they are, represent the essence of chemistry. An atom with a shell mostly filled “wants” another electron to help fill its shell. An atom with a shell mostly empty will give away those electrons in its outer shell easily. Oxygen, for instance, “wants” two more electrons to fill its shell. Sodium, element number 11, with one electron in its third shell ($2 + 8 + 1 = 11$), readily “gives away” that outermost electron. The closer an atom is to having its shells filled or empty, the more reactive it is. The periodic table of elements is designed along the electron shell layout. Elements with the same number of open positions in its shell, or excess electrons, behave similarly. Lithium, sodium, potassium and a few other elements have one “extra” electron, and belong to the “family” known as alkali metals. They are highly reactive, and react violently when put into water, forming caustic solutions. Sodium and water produces what is commonly called lye.

The elements having their electron shells perfectly filled, meaning 2, 10, 18, 36, 54 and 86 electrons, are in a family. Those elements “like” having their number of electrons, and do not want any more, nor do they want to give any away. Those elements are all gases. They are called “noble” gases. Those gases are helium, neon, argon, krypton, xenon and radon. Chemists thought for a long time that nothing would react with them, and they were called “inert.” To “react” means to either give electrons to, or take them from, other atoms. It also means sharing electrons, forming a “bond” between the atoms.

There is another prominent family of elements: those that need but one electron to fill their shells. Hydrogen is the only element that belongs in two families. Because hydrogen has one electron in a two-electron shell, it is either half empty or half full, depending on what it reacts with. Hydrogen can either take an electron or give one away. Hydrogen is therefore in the family that wants one more electron, and it also belongs to the alkali metal family, eager to give away one electron. The other elements that want one more electron are fluorine, chlorine, bromine, iodine, and astatine. The family goes by the name “halogen,” which means “salt formers.”

In this short chemistry narrative, it may become obvious that the ideal match is putting an alkali metal with a halogen, as one wants to give away an electron, and the other wants to take one. That is precisely the most reactive situation that chemists know of. If potassium were put into fluorine gas, the reaction would happen so fast it would be explosive. Halogens and alkali metals are the most reactive elemental families. Fluorine is the most reactive element known to science (although that can be disputed by chemists, who prefer saying that fluorine is the most “electronegative.” See [footnote 1](#).) The “inert” gases proved less inert than chemists originally thought. In 1962, chemists were able to combine xenon with fluorine, forming xenon tetrafluoride, made of one xenon and four fluorine atoms. Many “inert” gas compounds were subsequently made, and were usually unstable compounds. Chemists stopped calling those

gases inert, and the term “noble” came into use.

The most abundant wedding of alkali metals and halogens on earth is sodium chloride, more commonly called salt. With salt, as with the other alkali/halogen compounds, the electron is barely shared between the atoms; it is nearly seized from the metal by the halogen. Thus the chlorine atom has an extra electron, and the sodium atom has one less. The chlorine atom then takes on a net negative electrical charge, and the sodium atom a positive one. Those charged atoms easily become “ions.” An ion is a free atom or molecule with a net electric charge. If salt is put into water, it dissolves, where the electron is cleanly taken from the sodium atom by the chlorine atom, and both atoms become ions, forming an “ionic” solution. Because of the electrically charged ions, salt water is a fairly reactive solution, which is why cars parked next to the ocean rust as they do.

Most reactions between the elements are not as “perfect” as salt is. Usually the elements share electrons. Water is a standard case of that electron sharing. An oxygen atom wants two electrons, and hydrogen will give its electron away under the right conditions. Hydrogen and oxygen will form water, or H₂O. The oxygen atom does not seize the hydrogen’s electrons; instead, they are shared. If a water molecule could be seen, it would look similar to Mickey Mouse’s head, where the ears are hydrogen atoms and the oxygen atom is Mickey’s skull. Although the hydrogen atoms are not ionized, the oxygen hogs the electrons. In a water molecule, the oxygen atom takes on a negative charge, while the hydrogen atoms gain a positive charge. Because of that atomic relationship, water is known as a polarized molecule, with electrical poles. Water is an unusual compound because of that polarity.

Because of that polarity, water molecules attract each other more than similar compounds. Water has a boiling point far higher than its constituent elements oxygen or hydrogen have, and water’s boiling point is also higher than methyl and ethyl alcohol, both of which have larger and heavier molecules. That is because the alcohol molecules are not as polarized. In water, the positively charged hydrogen atoms are attracted to the negatively charged oxygen atoms of neighboring molecules, forming a weak bond. That bond is known as a hydrogen bond. Hydrogen bonding makes water the unusual and miraculous substance that it is.

Every element and compound has “states.” Every substance has its solid, liquid or gaseous “state.” Oxygen is found as O₂ in nature. Atmospheric hydrogen and nitrogen are also found in their “diatomic” state. Oxygen melts at about -360° F and boils at about -300° F. The melting and boiling points of elements and compounds relate to the substance's “weight.” In chemistry, the weights are called atomic and molecular weights. Electron shells determine an element's chemical properties, and make an atom such as lithium, with an atomic weight of 7, a metal at room temperature, while radon, with an atomic weight of 222, is a gas. Yet, similar families and elements have boiling point differences largely determined by their molecular weights. Within the elemental families and molecular families, such as alcohols, the greater the molecular weight, the higher the melting and boiling point.

A molecule of water has a molecular weight of 18, oxygen weighing 16 (8 protons and 8 neutrons), and the hydrogen 2 (two atoms of one proton each). Atmospheric oxygen, O_2 , has a molecular weight of 32. We see that oxygen boils at $-300^\circ F$, but the much lighter water boils at $212^\circ F$, at sea level. The reason for that huge difference is that water molecules have much more attraction to each other than oxygen molecules do, because of that hydrogen bonding. Ammonia is another compound with relatively high polarity because of hydrogen bonding. Ammonia is composed of one nitrogen atom (the element next to oxygen on the periodic table, which needs three electrons to complete its shell) and three hydrogen atoms. Ammonia has a molecular weight of 17, less than water. The ammonia molecule's boiling point is $-28^\circ F$, far higher than atmospheric nitrogen, with a molecular weight of 28, which boils at $-320^\circ F$.

Adding enough heat energy so the molecules vibrate enough to overcome their mutual attraction produces melting and boiling. If the molecules are highly attracted to each other, their boiling point is high. If the molecules are not attracted to each other, their boiling point is low.

Because of ammonia's low boiling point relative to the environment, and its high latent heat of vaporization, ammonia is the ideal refrigerant...well, not completely ideal. Ammonia is highly poisonous. Early [refrigerators](#) used ammonia as the refrigerant, but if the refrigeration lines sprang a leak at night, the entire family could die in their beds.

Early in the 20th century, an old money empire that supplied virtually all American gunpowder and explosives, almost since the nation was founded, arming America for all of its wars, got into the fast-rising chemicals industry. Du Pont Corporation developed alternatives to ammonia as a refrigerant. The refrigerants went by the trade name Freon, and the most popular, R-12, was made of one carbon atom bonded to two chlorine and two fluorine atoms. Carbon has its eight-electron shell half full, so carbon ideally makes four bonds to other elements. Carbon makes complicated bonds with other atoms. There is an entire branch of chemistry solely devoted to carbon. It is called organic chemistry, because carbon is the basis for life on earth.

R-12 has a boiling point of $-22^\circ F$, low for a molecular weight of 121. Diatomic chlorine has a molecular weight of 71, but a boiling point of $-30^\circ F$. The reason for Freon's low boiling point is the molecule's symmetry in shape as well as electric charge. The molecule is not polarized, the inter-molecular attraction is minimal, and therefore relatively less vibration needs to be introduced to cause the molecules to separate.

The other attraction of R-12 and the other Freons was their relative inertness, which ventures into chlorine and fluorine's great reactivity. Chlorine or fluorine gas never float around in the atmosphere. They are so highly reactive, because of that unfilled electron shell, that they react to almost anything they touch, in search of that electron to fill their shells. Once they get that

electron, they never let go, unless a chemist subjects them to tremendous energies not found in nature. Most halogens have bonded to metals in the environment, which is where they are found. Sea salt is the classic example of a halogen bonding with a metal, particularly an alkali metal, eager to give up its spare electron. In those halide salts, the compounds are highly polarized because of the highly unequal electron sharing. When such a salt is put into water, the highly polarized water reacts with the highly polarized salt, and the salt dissolves, creating salt ions in the water.

Carbon is not much of an ionizing element, as it would want to give up half its electron shell to ionize, or take on four more electrons. Carbon usually makes bonds where the electrons are shared, called a covalent bond. The electron bonds in Freon are stable: no atom wants to change the arrangement and react with something else. Because of that inert, stable nature, Freon is generally considered safe for human contact. It will not react with human flesh much, and even when inhaled produces little effect, although some of the less stable Freons can produce anesthetic and psychoactive effects, and can be corrosive.

Those tight bonds and molecular symmetry make Freon useful. Teflon is another fluorocarbon. The stability and “safety” of fluorocarbons ironically are potentially a threat to life on earth. There is theory and evidence that the heavy Freon molecule can float up to the atmosphere's ozone layer, where the sun's radiation destroys the molecule. The resulting chlorine ions (the fluorine ions do also, although they do not get as much press and are less damaging than chlorine) catalyze the ozone, which is O_3 , back to O_2 , destroying the ozone layer, which shields the earth's surface from ultraviolet solar radiation. That is what made the Freon/ozone controversy, which continues today. There are other theories regarding the [observed ozone depletion](#), but the artificial chloro-fluorocarbon issue (of which Freon is only one of many chemicals) has significant evidence in its favor. Even if it is not the entire reason for ozone layer depletion, it is difficult to argue to continue using it.

There are existing conspiracy theories that Freon was banned to make way for more expensive refrigerants, making even more money for chemical companies, which is the case today. That theory may be wrong, but is worth pondering. Many natural substances can be used as refrigerants, such as water and carbon dioxide, but chemical companies would not make much money off them, as was the case when [lead replaced alcohol to boost gasoline's octane rating](#). The issue's [capitalistic \(greed\)](#) component could be major.

Fluorine is among the Industrial Revolution's most important chemicals. Aluminum is the most abundant metal in the earth's crust, making up about 8% of it. Iron is second at 5%. Oxygen and silicon are the most abundant crust elements, comprising 47% and 28% respectively. Aluminum was not used in civilization until the late 19th century, because it was difficult to effectively extract and refine. Even today, most aluminum is not commercially obtainable because it is usually bound up in silicon compounds called silicates. Bauxite, a class of aluminum oxides, is the primary source of aluminum ore. It was not until 1886 that a method

was discovered to economically refine aluminum. The process was to dissolve bauxite in cryolite, a ten-atom molecule composed of one aluminum, three sodium, and six fluorine atoms. The mix was then charged with electricity in an electrolysis process, which separated the aluminum. That process is still the main one used today. The process needs electricity, cryolite, and bauxite. When the aluminum is removed, sodium fluoride is the main byproduct, and it is a deadly poison.

This site's [main fluoridation narrative](#) deals with fluoride waste and the real world. It is a terrifying tale of power and greed that continues today, with hundred of millions of victims, including most of the people reading this.

The Next Section: [The Business of War](#) (690K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Business of War

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[The Business of War](#)

[The "Good War"](#)

[Brown Shirts in America](#)

[A Brief History of Western Anti-Semitism and the Holy War Mentality](#)

[Wealth, Jews and the Age of Colonialism](#)

[The Modern Age and Jews](#)

[Toward the Holocaust](#)

[Debunking the "Myths"](#)

[Other "Myth Debunking" Concerning the Holocaust](#)

[A Different Kind of Holocaust Denial](#)

[The Last "Good War" Revisited](#)

[Justifying the Last Good War](#)

[Dropping the Bomb](#)

[Some More Myths](#)

[After the Bomb](#)

[The Aftermath in Europe](#)

[The Third World War and the Modern War Racket](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

This essay will probably be the last essay on this site to be finished, and I do not know when that will be - probably not for years, if ever. The first draft was written in 1999, and was about the most emotionally draining part of all my writing work.

This site needs some war material, so snippets of my earlier work are herein presented. This site's [American Empire](#) essay is the closest thing to this essay. This introduction will summarize this essay's intent, and will point interested readers in directions where they can find out more.

In short, warfare is organized murder, although heavy layers of ideology, deception and other tricks have tried raising violence and murder to noble levels. Humanity's violent ways are directly related to how humanity expanded its range across the planet, leaving its fruit-eating home in the tropical forests millions of years ago. The weaponry used to [become super-predators](#) came in handy to prey upon fellow humans. Humanity's carnivorous ways are directly related to its murderous ways.

Soldiers are nearly always young men whose testosterone overrides their brains and hearts, and societies manipulate their vulnerable condition to turn them into murderers, but murderers for the right team. Probably no war in world history was really fought for the publicly stated reasons, unless somebody was honest enough to state that it was simply murder for gain. Although "defensive" violence might seem "justified," it is always the least enlightened response to any "threat," and virtually every murderer plays mind games to transform the crime into no crime at all, but something self-righteously justified.

People seem to need justifications for violence, so all military-oriented societies have huge cultural engines that labor to create seemingly noble rationales. One rule seems to be that the more ornate the pageantry that accompanies militaristic displays (Nuremberg rallies, military parades, air shows, flag-waving holidays and attractive uniforms covered with medals), the less "justified" the violence it ultimately inflicts. Violence is always a violation of somebody's free will, and until people can develop [spiritual perspectives](#), humanity will probably always conjure rationales to justify violence. Long ago, [George Orwell](#) wrote in his *Politics and the*

English Language, “In our time, political speech and writing are largely the defense of the indefensible.”[\[1\]](#) If anything, the situation has become worse since then.

A major goal of this essay was to challenge the innumerable myths that Americans subscribe to regarding the wars it fights. So, it took aim at America’s “best” war, World War II. This essay was designed to:

1. Illuminate the entire West’s complicity with the [Jewish Holocaust](#), how few really cared much if the Jews were being wiped out, even in the United States, and no scholar has ever [made a convincing case to rebut that notion](#);
2. The [Holocaust denier camp is delusional](#), and some in its ranks have dirty agendas, which are largely about rehabilitating fascism and Hitler’s image; however, many [Jewish scholars have also abused the Jewish Holocaust](#) by arguing for its historical exclusivity, even denying [comparable and larger holocausts](#), and have turned the Jewish Holocaust into a lucrative industry.
3. There was precious little justification for [dropping atom bombs on Japan](#), as even admitted by nearly all American military leaders of the day. It was largely a successful tactic to limit Soviet influence in Eastern Asia, with a bit of racist vengeance thrown in.
4. [Wall Street warmly embraced Hitler and his regime](#), and even when the United States was at war with Germany, prominent American industrial empires, such as [Ford’s](#), [Rockefeller’s](#) and even one that [George Bush the First’s father worked for](#), heartily supported the Third Reich.
5. World War II was a battle of empires, with Germany and [Japan](#) coming to the imperial table, as Germany also had before World War I, but the other Great Powers already “owned” the world; the [Pacific Theater](#) was nothing more than an intensely racist battle for empire.
6. The United States is history’s most racist nation, and much of the evil that Hitler wrought was simply copying what the United States did when [it built its “great nation.”](#) Hitler is a scapegoat. He was not so much an aberration of the Western mind, but its epitome. The United States hired many of the most of useful Nazis in [Operation Paperclip](#) (even if they performed human experiments in the death camps), quickly rehabilitated the most ardent Nazi supporters in Germany to run Germany, and quickly rebuilt the political-economic framework that led to the Third Reich’s rise.
7. The United States war planners [had no illusions](#); World War II was a battle for global dominance, and the United States largely joined the fray so it could come out on top, which it did. The subsequent Cold War was only because there was a hitch to Western Europe and its political descendants owning the entire planet; World War II was a huge financial windfall for numerous industrialists, and those same interests largely hold the world captive today, while hiding behind the [American flag](#).

8. The Nazis were beaten by the Soviet Union, not the United States. The Eastern Front was where history's greatest battles were fought. The Normandy invasion was more of a sideshow and a U.S. attempt to limit Soviet influence in Europe.

This essay will deal with some of those issues, but not nearly in the breadth and depth that they deserve, because I do not have enough time, energy and money to do so. Quite a few works have echoed my themes. On the complicity of the United States in the Jewish holocaust, try David Wyman's *The Abandonment of the Jews*. On dropping the atom bomb and the American aftermath, see Gar Alperovitz' *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, and Robert Jay Lifton's *Hiroshima in America: Fifty Years of Denial*. On the intensely racist and take-no-prisoners approach in the Pacific Theater, see Eugene Sledge's *With the Old Breed* and John Dower's *War Without Mercy*. On the many myths, fabrications and Disney-fication of World War II, see Paul Fussell's *Wartime*, Michael Adams' *The Best War Ever*, and Howard Zinn's *The Politics of History and Declarations of Independence*. For a recent book that resembles the theme of my war essay regarding World War II, see Michael Zezima's *Saving Private Power*, which is an admittedly sarcastically titled attempt to counterbalance the flag-draped cheerleading that Steven Spielberg's [Saving Private Ryan](#) and related works have recently been doing. On the burgeoning holocaust industry and how Jewish scholars have muddied the issue, see Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide* and Norman Finkelstein's *The Holocaust Industry* (which even the redoubtable holocaust scholar Raul Hilberg supports). On the continuity of the [Native American](#) and Jewish holocausts, see David Stannard's *American Holocaust*. For the U.S. [hiring death camp Nazis](#) and quickly "rehabilitating" the most ardent Nazi-supporters in Germany, putting them right back into the positions of power that they had before World War II, see Christopher Simpson's *Blowback* and *The Splendid Blond Beast*.

The Business of War

[Smedley Butler](#), one of America's greatest war heroes, wrote a slim book titled [War is a Racket](#). Many years ago, I heard a man describe the mentality of 18-year-old men when faced with battle. He said that if a commander spoke to a gathering of one thousand 18-year-old soldiers, telling them that tomorrow they would be in a battle, and only three would survive, those soldiers would all look at each other, thinking to themselves, "Gee, I'm going to miss these guys."

One of the war racket's pillars is exploiting the immortal feeling that 18-year-old men feel. Those immortal feelings are engendered by the fact those men are nearly children, have not quite seen the world's brutal realities, and they are brimming with the power of their 18-year-

old bodies. One's physical fitness does not get any better than between eighteen to twenty years old. When that man described how the 18-year-old soldiers would take their commander's news, he also said that if that commander addressed one thousand 40-year-old men with the same speech, nobody would show up for battle the next day. By age forty, men are acquainted with their mortality and have no desire to throw their lives away while attempting to take the life of somebody they never met.

My life is a case in point. [America](#) has always been a warrior nation. I do not know about my family tree during the 1800s, but during the 20th century one of my grandfathers [fought in World War I and was crippled by his participation](#). My other grandfather was in [World War II in the South Pacific](#). My father was a Marine in the Korean War, and eventually was a boot camp drill sergeant. My uncles and brothers were all in the military. Going up my family tree, I am the first man in my family I know of that did not serve in the American military, and I nearly did.

My father spent his entire career working for the federal government, usually for the Department of Defense. My father helped instill the notion in me that I would not quite be a man unless I served in the military. He would talk about how one could tell if somebody had been in the military. According to my father, men with military backgrounds were somehow manlier, had few pretensions and had been through the humbling experience of being a soldier. At age 17, I had little idea of my own mortality, and did not really question that I would go through my rite of passage, becoming a soldier. As I look back, I have a difficult time believing that mature men would encourage that perspective, but they did. I was even told by a relative a few weeks ago (summer of 2002) that I should have served in the military,

During my senior year in high school, I applied and was quickly nominated by my Congressman for a slot at the Air Force Academy. The next step was athletics testing.^[2] Thinking about who I might be killing, or being killed myself, was the furthest thing from my mind. Part of my motivation was free college. War's realities are never emphasized in the indoctrination process, and immortal youth rarely thinks about it. I was an indoctrinated cog in the machine.

Thankfully, somebody was looking out for me, and in that instance it was my mother. She realized that her gentle child would not enjoy the military experience, and probably shuddered to think of what it would do to me. People do not come back from war "normal." The experienced traumatized all of my soldier-ancestors

My mother prevailed on my father to talk me out of further pursuit of an Air Force Academy position. One day my father sat me down and took me to task for my motivation in applying to the Air Force Academy. My answers were not convincing, even to myself, and I notified my Congressman that I would no longer pursue a position at the Air Force Academy.

My spiritual studies began in earnest that same year, and by age 19 I was a committed

pacifist, but I nearly became an Air Force pilot. It is quite possible that I would have been [dropping bombs on Iraq in 1991](#) if I had gone that route. The clever war planners know what they are doing, and part of their brainwashing strategy is evident in actions such as renaming the War Department the "Defense" Department right after World War II. They lifted a page out of [Orwell's 1984](#).

The "Good War"

Paul Fussell is a great iconoclast of the American military and warfare in general. Fussell was a World War II soldier, and was wounded in France. He recounts his experience in *Doing Battle: The Making of a Skeptic*. His *Wartime* is considered by many to be the best book ever written about World War II.

This essay cannot do justice to *Wartime*. *Wartime* does not question the need to fight wars, but explores the psychology of warfare, both on the front and at home. Fussell finishes *Wartime* with his most biting chapter, titled "The Real War Will Never Get in the Books." In *Wartime*, Fussell described the evolving psychological condition of soldiers. There are three stages. The first is that immortal perspective that all young soldiers have when joining the military. None of the soldiers think that *they* will die. It could not happen to them. As they go through training, talk to experienced soldiers and see some of war's realities, it sobers them up a little, but their attitude is still that they are too smart, too fast, too good looking or too lucky to get killed. They don their psychic armor, believing themselves impervious to bullets.

Native Americans often had such delusions. They would go through involved rituals to magically protect themselves in battle, making them impervious to bullets or invisible. European and American soldiers were charmed by the native fantasies as they unceremoniously mowed them down.

When a young soldier finally gets on the battlefield, seeing what really happens when men are committed to killing each other, it is a shock. If they survive battle for long (a few minutes is usually enough), they quickly attain the next stage of their psychological awareness. They think, "Hey, it is dangerous out here! I should be more careful." They think that if they are careful and clever, they will survive. If they survive long enough, they arrive at their final psychological state. They know that they are alive by sheer luck. Those bullets whizzing by and exploding bombs have somebody's name written on them, and it is only a matter of time until their turn comes.

During World War II, and particularly in the Vietnam War, with soldiers engaged in heated battle for months on end, with the industrialized horror that wars of previous centuries did not see, war psychologists saw a new phenomenon. It was discovered that *no* human being's

psyche could survive long in that situation. No matter how brave or heroic, if a human being survives modern battle situations for a long (with intense battle, the time they can hold their sanity together is measured in days), they will begin mentally falling apart. Even America's most heroic soldier, [Audie Murphy](#), whose exploits on the battlefield may never be equaled, suffered from "shell shock" for the rest of his life. "Real men" did not admit to such frailty, but that did not make the condition disappear. War planners devised a concept called a "tour of duty," whereby if a soldier survived a year in the theater of combat, they were relieved of duty. The human wreckage of Vietnam War veterans is a testament to the hazards of extended periods of battlefield conditions. Instead of "shell shock," the medical term is now Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD).

In *Wartime's* final chapter, Fussell discussed war's reality. He made the case that the true horror of war is never depicted in the popular media. In today's high-tech wars, where pilots drop bombs and never see the enemy, America's *soldiers* do not usually see war's reality. Fussell wrote extensively on the "Disneyfication" of war that the popular media presents. He was writing about World War II. The situation is arguably worse today, even in the world of electronic media, supposedly bringing the world to America's living room in an instant. With careful management by the Pentagon and complicity by the media, Americans were not treated to the reality of the devastation of [Panama](#) and [Iraq](#) a decade ago.

In World War II, it was not quite as Orwellian, but Fussell wrote about how soldiers felt as they came back from the battlefield, with cheery Red Cross girls handing them candy and comic books. The soldiers realized that the folks back home knew nothing about war's reality, and frankly, they did not want to recall it, and nobody at home really wanted to hear it. It made many soldiers cynical and bitter, but they resigned themselves to the fact that the battlefield reality will never be shown to the folks at home.

In a society that brainwashes young men into thinking that glory will be had by killing people in a [flag's name](#), the grim realities are never revealed. The same mentality carefully hides slaughterhouses, [factory farms](#), environmental devastation, and the immense human suffering that our system produces in Latin America, Africa, Asia and America's inner cities. The cultural machine quietly covers up the ugly realities, presenting shrink-wrapped meat in butcher shops, leaving a strip of trees to conceal a clear cut, American reporters refusing to report the "secret war" that America waged against Cambodia and Laos for years, covering up the [mass murder at Jonestown](#), and so on.

Saving Private Ryan, released in 1998, came the closest that any American movie ever had to depicting the carnage of modern warfare. I thought that maybe young American men would understand if they saw it. I was in for a surprise. A friend took his fifteen-year-old son to see *Saving Private Ryan*. I asked him what his son's reaction was. His son is a computer gaming wizard, playing war games with friends on computers.

While my friend watched the landing at Omaha Beach in *Saving Private Ryan*, his son reacted to the movie as if it was another computer game. As he watched the carnage, he told his father that those soldiers were doing it wrong, that their attack strategy was flawed, and that he could design a better attack. The lad was playing general, and had no conception that he would have been getting *his* head blown off, not some general in a strategy room, looking at a map and moving toy soldiers and boats around with a stick.

My friend also had a younger brother in the Marines. His brother's commanding officer gave the whole platoon the afternoon off to go watch *Saving Private Ryan*. I wondered why a commanding officer would do something like that, showing those soldiers a glimpse of war's reality. My friend's response surprised me again. The commanding officer sent those soldiers to watch *Saving Private Ryan* to get them "pumped up." I should have known better. When my friends were in the military, they usually talked about "seeing action" as if it would be the crowning moment of their lives. The Marines came storming out of watching *Saving Private Ryan*, nearly beating their chests, eagerly looking forward to the day that they would see "action."

[Howard Zinn](#) was a World War II soldier himself, and made many ironic observations about his military years. Zinn was highly critical of *Saving Private Ryan* (the review is available on the Internet). Sure, the carnage of war was depicted as never before, but as Zinn observed, the thrust of the movie was that those men were making a noble sacrifice, and that although war may be bloody, it is ultimately a noble undertaking. I thought about the movie again, and realized that Zinn was right. Almost all war movies are antiwar movies, but Spielberg's masterpiece depicted the affair as noble, although he showed many of its warts. *Saving Private Ryan* is a pro-war movie, and it barely lost the Academy Award for best picture. Thank you Howard, for helping me see. That theme of *Saving Private Ryan* is one reason those movie-going Marines came out pumped up.

World War II is always depicted as the last "good war," where the line between good and evil was easily seen, with those depraved Nazis and their death camps. Fussell, as he recounted his experiences in *Doing Battle*, and as he dissected the entire war experience in *Wartime*, made the case that the first casualty of war is the truth, as usual. Fussell made it clear that there were very few "heroes" in Europe in World War II. All soldiers were just like him: when they finally saw the battlefield and experienced its reality, they were all afraid of dying, and nobody wanted to be a hero. Military indoctrination is designed to overcome a man's instincts for self-preservation.

Following orders, being manly, demonizing the enemy, conscription, and only putting young, naïve, immortal-feeling men into battle, along with severe regimentation, with rewards and punishments dangled before them, are all tools to overcome a man's instinct for self-

preservation, and his disinclination to kill somebody he has never met, and who has done him no harm.

Audie Murphy took on hundreds of German soldiers and six tanks single-handedly near Holtzwihr France, while he was firing a machine gun from atop a burning vehicle filled with explosives. It stands as one of the most heroic feats from any war. [Gary Wean](#) can vouch for Murphy's respect for the common man. Yet, for every Audie Murphy, there were thousands of soldiers who quickly decided that their only goal was staying alive, and they did not stick their nose out where it would be shot off. As Fussell related in his own battlefield experiences, there were no Murphy-esque heroes in his platoon, including himself. Fussell wrote,

"Although many in my platoon were killed and wounded, not one was ever captured or ever ran away, and that was true of F Company as a whole. What did we think we were doing, and why would we never flee or give up? Some few may have been following the higher morality and offering their lives and limbs for the Allied cause and the Four Freedoms, but 90 percent of us were engaged in something much less romantic and heroic. We were maintaining our self-respect, protecting our manly image from the contempt of our fellows. By persisting without complaint, we were saving our families from disgrace. We were maintaining our honor by fulfilling an implied contract. We were not letting others down. All of us desperately wanted to be removed from danger, but we now sensed that the war would not end in a few days and that only death or wounds would be likely to grant us our respite."[\[3\]](#)

Audie Murphy's heroic feats were seldom seen in any battle. Mostly there were two armies facing each other, each terrified of the other, and while their official goal was killing each other, the primary goal of nearly every soldier was staying alive. Only the most fanatical (or heroic) soldier thought any differently. The indoctrination infrastructure and societal systems that put cannon fodder on the front lines were invisible hands pushing each soldier in the back. Few, if any, soldiers rushed into battle willingly. Once they got there, they would rather have been anywhere else. A study of American soldiers during World War II concluded that what kept the men in combat, once they got there, were two factors: not letting down their buddies and the risk of their families losing their pay and benefits if they refused to fight.[\[4\]](#)

In the United States, ever since the Revolutionary War, the sons of the elite never served in the infantry unless they wanted to, which was rarely. In the Revolutionary War, draftees could [buy their way out of serving in the military](#). In all wars, the rich nearly always found a way out, while the poor were coaxed or forced into the military. The rich man's exemptions have always

existed in the American military in one form or another, until the present day. During the Vietnam War, middle and upper class boys got college deferments, as their parents paid to keep their sons from battle. Poor boys who could not afford college or were not inclined (college was still a middle to upper class place to be), found themselves going to Vietnam. There is no valid rationale for sending an uneducated boy off to war while the college boy stayed in school. The argument of needing educated soldiers, as if college would magically transform an 18-year-old boy into a battlefield wizard, is ludicrous, but is the only rationale possible to justify the college deferment. The real rationale was that the upper classes could protect their sons that way, while the lower class boys marched off to battle.

Today it is a "voluntary" military in America. Today's voluntary U.S. military works for a few reasons. One is that American soldiers rarely risk their lives anymore. For the past generation, the United States has only fought weak enemies that cannot fight back. That has been a conscious decision by the war planners, as the Vietnam War protests demonstrated that Americans would no longer support having their boys killed in foreign wars of dubious benefit. Although young boys feel they are immortal, it is harder to get them to willingly sign up when the odds of being killed are high. They are not *that* naïve and ignorant. I probably would have rethought my 1975 application to the Air Force Academy if I had come of age in 1966.

The military recruiters still play on the "be all that you can be," "be a man" mentality. They make appeals to manly and patriotic motives, but the reality is that today's American military, particularly in the army and the infantry, are largely staffed by America's underclass, and the main reason they have joined are the economic incentives waved under their noses. With America's real wages declining since 1973, the military is a viable option for the lower classes, which is why a disproportionate number of American soldiers are black. The American black man was ironically transformed from being not good enough to enjoy the honor of combat, to becoming the preferred infantryman. The underclasses fighting in the infantry is not something unique to America, but in probably every military of every people for all of history.

Fussell was an infantry officer in World War II. Officers usually came from the well-to-do and educated classes. The infantry cannon fodder was mostly populated by America's lower classes. Fussell openly speculated that the strategy of staffing the infantry with the underclass was thinning out their ranks.[\[5\]](#) When men are forced into battlefield situations, the most fiendish behavior comes out. Fussell witnessed his men slaughtering surrendering German soldiers with glee, [laughing as they wiped them out](#). Fussell saw German soldiers being killed by the score, and when he saw them up close, many appeared about 14 years old.

Fussell was injured during a bombing attack in France. While no hero, huddling beneath a hail of bombs going off overhead, shrapnel from a bomb hit him. A sergeant lying next to him was also hit. Fussell was lucky, and was only hit in the back and leg. The sergeant and lieutenant lying next to him died immediately.[\[6\]](#) Fussell went behind the lines to a military hospital while recovering, and developed the standard crush on his nurse. Fussell recovered and returned to

his unit after the fighting in Europe was over. His unit was surprised to see him, and surprisingly, his welcome was hostile. Fussell could not understand why he warranted such a reception from his fellow soldiers. It puzzled him for many years. In the 1990s, he obtained a document that made the unfriendly treatment by his fellow soldiers understandable. The sergeant that died next to him, huddled on top of the German bunker as the bombs exploded overhead, was given a posthumous award of the Silver Star. The citation stated that the sergeant nearly pulled an Audie Murphy, heroically taking over command when the platoon's leader was wounded, led his men against heavy enemy fire, engaged the enemy single-handedly, and while mortally wounded sent his commander a message regarding the enemy's location.[\[7\]](#)

The only true parts of that citation were the sergeant's death and that his platoon leader (Fussell) was wounded. Fussell's platoon concocted a fairy tale of heroism. Fussell had been lying next to the sergeant when he died, and his platoon knew that if he discovered their fiction, it might not be pretty. The first casualty of war is the truth, and even "heroic deeds" may seldom truly be. Fussell wrote about when the fighting finally ended in Europe. The folks at home in America cheered wildly, but the feeling on the front was numbness. Eisenhower's mistress summed up the European attitude when Berlin was finally destroyed:

"No one laughed. No one smiled. It was all over. We had won, but victory was not anything like what I had thought it would be. There was a dull bitterness about it. So many deaths. So much destruction. And everybody was very, very tired."[\[8\]](#)

In Europe, there was no euphoria regarding winning the "good war." The American soldiers in Europe were not done. It appeared that the Japanese were going to suicidally fight to the last man. American soldiers in Europe were praying that Japan would surrender before they were shipped across the world to fight another war. A few months later, their prayers were granted when America [dropped two atom bombs](#) on Japanese civilians, ending the war.

When Germany fell, the concentration camps were opened. Mountains of bodies were accompanied by mountains of clothing, shoes, glasses, hair, gold fillings, tattooed skin and other items taken from the Jews and other "subhumans" in the death camps. It made for stark realizations.

History's most intense and bloody warfare was fought between Germany and the Soviet Union during World War II. The Communist Revolution in Russia quickly degenerated from an attempt to create an egalitarian society into another power play. There are many conspiracy theories and controversies regarding that era. One thing is certain: the "Communists" of the

Soviet Union did not govern very wisely. The reign of Stalin was as bloody as there has ever been. Between his Siberian labor camps, starvation policies, purges and outright executions, about twenty million Soviet citizens lost their lives.[\[9\]](#) Some think that number is too conservative. The Soviet system was evil, but was hardly the egalitarian system envisioned by Marx. It became another system where the few benefited at the expense of the majority. Most of those people died *before* the Germans showed up.

As Noam Chomsky and others have made clear, Western Europe and the U.S. did not hate the Communist regime because of how it treated its citizens, or because the Soviet Union posed a military threat.[\[10\]](#) *The real threat of the Soviet Union was its rejection of capitalism*, where a few rich capitalists got all the chips. Communism was a major threat to capitalism, especially if it inspired other nations to drop out of the capitalist system. Adam Smith did not invent capitalism; he was the first to systematically describe it. He would not have been rapturous about today's corporate capitalism. Smith and Marx agreed that the workers should control the capital. Smith would have probably spoken out strongly against the global capitalist system that exists today, which is another form of colonialism. Unfortunately, the Soviet experiment failed in significant ways, and relatively few Communists got the chips while millions were murdered.

Fascism was no better. One of the many minimized chapters in American history was an attempted Fascist coup in 1933.

Brown Shirts in America

Newspaper baron [William Randolph Hearst](#), who manipulated the Spanish-American War into being with his yellow journalism, was quite taken with Hitler. Hearst spent a month in Germany in 1934 and met with Hitler, and was apparently "charmed" by Der Führer. Hearst's newspapers began running favorable press coverage of the Third Reich in 1934, when Hearst returned from his delightful meetings with the Nazis. One of Hearst's guest columnists wrote an article justifying German rearmament. That guest columnist's name was [Hermann Goering](#). There is evidence that the Nazis were greasing Hearst's palms for his sympathetic coverage.[\[11\]](#)

Henry Ford, a notorious anti-Semite, thought the Third Reich was great. Beginning in 1933 when Hitler came to power, Germany initiated the Aryanization program. The program was a financial plundering of Jews, foreshadowing what happened during World War II. Jewish businessmen wanted out of Germany when Hitler came to power, and the Aryanization program forced Jews into selling out for bottom dollar. Ford Motor Company eagerly sidled up to the Aryanization trough if there was a buck to be made from it.[\[12\]](#) German banks,

industrialists and major U.S. trading partners jumped into the Aryanization program. U.S. investment in Germany increased by 48.5% between 1929 and 1940, while it declined sharply everywhere else in mainland Europe. Even in Britain, American investment only increased by 2.6% during the 1930s.[\[13\]](#)

One major financier of the Third Reich's rise was Union Banking Corporation, of which Prescott Bush, George Bush the First's father, was a director and shareholder. The Bush family rose to power by being Eastern Establishment sycophants, with Prescott and his father being little more than errand boys for the Harriman and [Rockefeller](#) interests. The U.S. government, under the Trading with the Enemy Act, seized Union Banking Corporation in 1942. The company's board was composed of Prescott Bush, Roland Harriman and some outright Nazis.[\[14\]](#) Prescott Bush joined Yale's notorious [Skull and Bones Society](#), due to Rockefeller and Harriman patronage, and both George Bushes and Jeb also belong to the club. Prescott's contribution to the Skull and Bones Society apparently was raiding Geronimo's grave, with Geronimo's bones now gracing the club's meeting room (called "The Tomb"), where they sit among the remains of other obstacles to the American Empire, such as Pancho Villa's and probably Omar Torrijos' (secured by George Bush the First after he invaded Panama). George Bush the First's other grandfather was a wheeler-dealer named George Herbert Walker, who was infamous for his corrupt dealings, being a front man for [Morgan](#) interests, among others. The Rockefeller Empire got in [the same Nazi hot water that Union Banking Corporation did](#), although it escaped asset seizure.

Aryanization companies were formed in Germany, and bonds of those firms were even sold on the American securities markets, although not advertised as such. The Germans kept a tight grip on repatriation of profits, so the American firms investing in Germany had to keep plowing their profits back into the German economy. One of the most lucrative investments was the Aryanization program, which was where much of the profits were reinvested. Until 1938, the Aryanization program was "voluntary" for the Jews. The Third Reich was not closely involved in the Aryanization programs at first.[\[15\]](#) The people making the early killing in the Aryanization programs were German bankers, industrialists and other elites, with their rich buddies from America and elsewhere also feasting.

The German corporations, clamoring for more cheap slave labor for their factories, encouraged the slave labor situation in the World War II death camps. The corporations made a killing with the cheap subhuman slave labor. The German corporations that eagerly used the slave labor were household names such as Daimler Benz and Siemens. Germany's industrial giants were using concentration camp labor in hundreds of factories.[\[16\]](#)

In the United States, Hitler's rise was not ominous. It was bad news for the more than four million Jews living in America, the world's largest concentration of Jews, but the United States government, the best friend that Jews had in the West, was silent in the face of what Germany did to its Jews. In 1934 a resolution was introduced in the United States Senate, asking that

august body, along with the president, to officially express "surprise and pain" at Germany's treatment of the Jews, and ask for restoration of Jewish rights. The State Department, well stocked with anti-Semites, "caused this resolution to be buried in committee."[\[17\]](#)

When Italy invaded Ethiopia in 1935, the United States said it would not sell any more arms to Italy, but allowed U.S. oil companies to continue their sales of oil to Italy, which ran its war machine. When the Fascists overthrew the elected and popular Spanish socialist government, the Roosevelt administration hastily declared itself neutral. Soon after that act, Hitler and Mussolini's governments gave Franco massive assistance in enslaving the Spanish population. That situation of America's active or passive support of Fascist governments in overthrowing egalitarian social movements, as happened in Spain, was something that America had been doing to [Latin America for generations](#). It was also a prelude to the postwar years, where the United States instigated, installed and propped up some of the 20th century's bloodiest dictatorships.[\[18\]](#)

Smedley Butler was one of the most beloved military leaders in American history. Teddy Roosevelt called him, "The finest fighting man in America." Butler was known as "the fighting Quaker." Butler was only one of four Americans ever awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor twice. He tried returning one of them because he did not feel it was earned, but was instead ordered to wear it. Rank-and-file American soldiers loved him. Butler helped run the Marines for a generation, carried a pack and was in the trenches with his troops. Butler was known for his honesty and appreciation for the common man. In Butler's case, it was genuine.

Born in 1881, his father and grandfather were U.S. Congressmen, and Butler was born into the upper class of Pennsylvania. His family was Quaker, and traced back its Pennsylvania lineage to the days of William Penn. Although he could have pursued the life of an aristocrat, Butler evidenced a martial spirit from a young age, and in 1898 enlisted in the Marines, swept up into the "Remember the Maine" fervor that began [the Spanish-American war](#). He saw action in Cuba, and his career continued to the Boxer "Rebellion" in China in 1900, where he was twice wounded with bullets. His father was influential in the military establishment, as he chaired the House Naval Affairs Committee and served in Congress for thirty-two years. Butler then saw action in Nicaragua and Haiti, with a spying interlude in Mexico. Some of his most celebrated feats were nonviolent, such as when he disarmed one revolutionary leader and unhorsed another, while he was unarmed.

Butler was a curious mixture; a Quaker pacifistic background combined with the steely-eyed visage of a crusading knight. The élan and esprit de corps of the Marines was his surrogate religion for many years. Partly due to his father's stature, and partly due to his battlefield heroism, Butler rose through the ranks rapidly. Butler was outspoken, unrefined, and had a distaste for the "intellectual" aspect of the military hierarchy. He became a brigadier general before he was forty, and became a major general about ten years younger than was typical. He got into hot water regularly with the "brass." He made many enemies, yet he was an

unparalleled leader of the rank-and-file soldier, and regularly broke regulations in order to get the job done.

He was "loaned out" from the Marines to Philadelphia in the mid-1920s as he ran the police and tried enforcing Prohibition. Although Butler drank heavily, as most Marines did, when he took up the Prohibition cause he never drank again. He had his fair store of racist sentiments, which were muted for the times, and he was no pacifist, but he honestly lived by his beliefs.

Near the end of his career, he began questioning the issue of foreign wars. He began calling war a racket, and became adamant about the imperialist aspect of the U.S.' foreign interventions. He was not a pacifist, and came from a long line of republicans. When he had an opinion, however, he made it known. In 1935, after he retired, he published a slim book titled [*War is a Racket*](#). Butler campaigned on that theme for the rest of his life.

Butler believed that all U.S. foreign interventions were self-serving acts, which lined the pockets of the rich at the expense of the nations it victimized, sending young boys to do the dirty work, wearing American uniforms. People such as Franklin Roosevelt sidled up to the trough, to "invest" in Haiti after it had been secured for American interests.[\[19\]](#) [Roosevelt drafted the Haitian constitution](#) that overturned more than a century of [Haitian strategy](#) of not allowing foreign land ownership to gain a foothold in Haiti, which would begin undermining its sovereignty. FDR was an integral part of the neocolonial strategy of pillaging Haiti. Butler provided the muscle to pull it off.

Butler's opinions did not come from reading radical literature, but from his experiences. His correspondence early in his career complained loud and long when commercial interests and Machiavellian plotting by his superiors would force him to go back on his word with those he negotiated with, as in Nicaragua, which he helped plunder, another situation that continues to this day.[\[20\]](#) Back then, brute force was yielding to a [neocolonial](#) strategy of the Taft administration known as Dollar Diplomacy, where the U.S. sought to control its subject nations through economic manipulation rather than marching in the armed forces, as with [Teddy Roosevelt's Big Stick Diplomacy](#). Butler carried out part of its early implementation. The famous Butler quote, where he admitted to being an unwitting "[gangster for Capitalism](#)" is vintage Butler.

Although Butler ran for a Senate seat in Pennsylvania as a Republican, when he began his anti-imperialist campaign, he did not care to whom he spoke. He ended up speaking at Communist rallies and at other organizations, which would have given him problems if he had done it during the Joe McCarthy witch-hunt days. He did not care about ideology. He believed in telling the truth as he saw it. Whether his audience was made of communists, veterans groups or the U.S. Congress, his line was the same, with the honest, outspoken style that made him an American icon, and made him many powerful enemies.

In 1931, Butler talked informally after a speech, and discussed how European conquerors became drunk with power and became "mad dogs." He related an apparently true story told him by Cornelius Vanderbilt Jr. Vanderbilt spent time with Italian dictator Benito Mussolini, and they were driving in an armored car through the Italian countryside, with Mussolini driving. During their drive, Mussolini hit and killed a child. Mussolini did not even stop the car, telling Vanderbilt as he grabbed his knee, "Never look back, Mr. Vanderbilt, never look back in life." [21] Mussolini passed off his hit and run incident with the observation that one life was insignificant when compared to the affairs of state.

Butler's comments caused an international outcry, and Butler was arrested and court-martialed and ordered to publicly recant. He never apologized to Mussolini, and instead retired. Today, Butler looks like a prophet. The incident was the first time that Mussolini's image was tarnished in America. Back in 1931, Fascism was the up-and-coming form of government.

Stimson court-martialed Butler because he and other high-ranking American officials openly admired Fascism's "great experiment" in Italy. By 1934, the American ambassador to Italy, Breckenridge Long, President Roosevelt, and famous State Department negotiator Norman Davis were gushing over what was happening in Italy, with Roosevelt calling Mussolini an "admirable Italian gentleman" and the State department praising the sham 1934 Italian election where the Fascists took 99% of the vote, stating that the election "demonstrate(d) incontestably the popularity of the Fascist regime." [22]

The July 1934 issue of *Fortune* magazine praised Fascism and its quick achievements, accomplishing in mere years what Christendom could not achieve in millennia. The article further stated, "The good journalist must recognize in Fascism certain ancient virtues of the race, whether or not they happen to be momentarily fashionable in his own country. Among these are Discipline, Duty, Courage, Glory, Sacrifice." [23]

A 1937 State Department report stated that "Fascism is becoming the soul of Italy." The Fascist experiment was praised because it "brought order out of chaos, discipline out of license, and solvency out of bankruptcy." The report stated that in order to "accomplish so much in a short time severe measures have been necessary." [24] The State Department in 1937 saw Fascism as compatible with the United States' interests. Just as after World War II, the United States would embrace anybody as long as they were anticommunist. [25] While the Fascists were merely raping their own people and making the country safe for American investment, the U.S. government minimized the suffering of that nation's people, and eagerly participated. With Japan, Germany and Italy, it was only when they began stepping on imperial toes that it became a matter of war.

When Butler retired amid the Mussolini furor, he became an even bigger national hero than before. Although many politicians and industrialists were avid fans of Fascism, not everybody in America was. The veterans groups lionized Butler, and he was a big hit on the talk circuit,

giving speeches to veterans groups almost daily. Butler was a paragon to the veterans groups and a populist hero, which made what happened in 1933 seem strange. A Wall Street bond salesman and former commander of the Connecticut American Legion approached Butler. Gerald MacGuire had a proposal. MacGuire said he was acting as a front man for wealthy industrialists and bankers, and J.P. Morgan, du Pont and other names came up in the conversations. The proposal was this: Butler would get elected as the American Legion's national commander. With that office, Butler would have the loyalty of 500,000 veterans. With that private "army" (du Pont would arm them through their controlling interest in Remington Arms Company) and up to \$300 million of funding made available by the bankers and industrialists, they would take over the White House.

MacGuire said that the same people with the money [also controlled the press](#), and would concoct a rationale that Roosevelt was ill and needed a strongman to help run the country. The public would easily swallow it, and Butler would be installed in a new cabinet position as Roosevelt's right hand, in a position dubbed the "Secretary of General Affairs." MacGuire had been studying the Italian and German Fascist "miracles," and the plan was closely modeled after Hitler's Brown Shirt coup. They would ease Roosevelt out of office, and Butler would be America's new Hitler.

They picked the wrong man. Although Butler had been openly critical of Mussolini, they thought that Butler could be controlled. MacGuire mentioned other candidates they would approach if Butler turned them down, such as Douglas MacArthur. MacGuire even told Butler that his superiors doubted that Butler would obediently play the game right, but nobody else in America could gain the ready allegiance of millions of veterans. Butler did not say anything publicly and played along, trying to find out more, such as who was behind it. Butler enlisted *Philadelphia Record* reporter Paul French to dig deeper into the situation. Butler introduced French to MacGuire, and French gained MacGuire's confidence. MacGuire told French the same story that Butler heard. They tried getting MacGuire to give them more names, but he was too smart for that. Butler met one rich conspirator who said that he would spend half his fortune to save the other half.

When he got all the information he could, Butler went straight to the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) in 1934, telling them all he knew. As with [many other official "investigations,"](#) the HUAC was decidedly timid in pursuing those allegations. They refused to subpoena the names Butler had given them except for MacGuire, who predictably denied everything. The other names given by Butler to the HUAC were former-presidential contenders John Davis and Al Smith (who was a [Morgan](#) attorney), and Grayson Murphy, who was a co-founder of the American Legion, a board member of organizations such as Morgan Bank, Goodyear and Bethlehem Steel, and MacGuire's boss. The committee, which went to great lengths to ferret out commies, lost their zeal when confronted with those rich and powerful names, and largely swept the affair under the carpet. However, Butler went public. Nevertheless, without official corroboration, no other investigations were launched, nor did

anybody in government appear too concerned. The establishment and [media](#) went out of its way to either ignore or slam Butler, with *Time* magazine openly ridiculing him. The rich conspirator that Butler met threatened to sue Butler for libel, but Butler's stance on Mussolini showed how easily intimidated he was. The conspirator never sued, and Butler never backed down.

While the HUAC's public posture was a quiet folding of its tents, it issued an internal report to Congress which journalist John Spivak obtained. The HUAC internal report told a starkly different story. The report to Congress stated that its investigation confirmed that Butler's story was true in every particular they could verify, and that MacGuire had perjured himself when he denied it.[\[26\]](#) The truth was there, even documented in a report to Congress, but it got swept under the rug, as with most American scandals that involve the rich and powerful. Case closed!

A Brief History of Western Anti-Semitism and the Holy War Mentality

Another minimized chapter in American history is that while Hitler was pursuing his Final Solution, anti-Semitism was reaching its high-water mark in U.S. history. Anti-Semitism in America reached its highest levels during the Jewish Holocaust of World War II, as it did throughout the West. Hitler was merely the most extreme of the bunch. One of America's most prominent historians, the self-taught Barbara Tuchman, described the mood of the West during those years when she said that with few exceptions, "The Gentile world...would fundamentally have welcomed the Final Solution."[\[27\]](#)

No nation has been as intensely racist for as long as the United States has. It is that way today as I write this, with my nation killing off [close to a million children in Iraq](#). If they were white children, it would not be happening. When America was killing off [millions of Southeast Asians](#) during the 1960s and 1970s, America invoked the "mere gook rule" to absolve U.S. soldiers of legal accountability for their mass murders of natives that they were supposedly saving.[\[28\]](#) In [America during the 1800s](#), the surest way to garner votes was to run for office as an "Indian fighter," which was often a euphemism for killing native women and children while the men were away on hunting expeditions. When Southern blacks were finally freed and the Reconstruction government left, [blacks began hanging from trees in the South](#) like Christmas tree ornaments. Lynching became so popular that late in the 19th century the murderers would proudly pose next to the dead or burning black man, with women posing too, knowing that they would never be convicted, even when posing for photos to commemorate the occasion.[\[29\]](#) The death squad regimes that the United States has recently supported in places such as [El Salvador](#), [Guatemala](#) and [Indonesia](#) slaughtered non-whites. The United States will rarely support the slaughter of white people, except in the [cancer racket](#) and other

hidden holocausts, but nearly all people of color are fair game. There was almost undoubtedly a strong racist motivation regarding the United States' [dropping of atom bombs](#) on Japan in 1945.

Here in Washington, my uncle told me about a place in the mountains called "China Cliff." Chinese coolies completed the railroad over the mountains, and when it came time to pay them, the railroad management had them pushed off a cliff into a canyon, killing hundreds of coolies. Killing them instead of paying them was far cheaper, and earned the landmark the name of "China Cliff." If that had happened to white people, there would be a monument erected there. A friend recently told me of a similar coolie landmark in Idaho, where killing them was cheaper than paying them.

The United States is a nation [built on the red man's bones](#) and the sweat and tears of the black man and other "inferior" races. Our hallowed [Declaration of Independence](#) grandly stated the self-evident truth that all men are created equal. When the even more hallowed U. S. Constitution was drafted years later, it gave force to those words of [Thomas Jefferson](#) and other Founding Fathers, but qualified the sweeping language a little. All *white*, land-owning *men* were created equal. Women, slaves (white *and* black; white slaves were dubbed with the euphemistic term, "indentured servants"), natives and white men who did not own (recently stolen native) land were specifically excluded from coming to the table and having a hand in their governance. That was a *slight* improvement over the European monarchies. Founding Father John Jay voiced the day's mentality when he said that *the people who own the country should run it*. [George Washington](#) was reputedly America's richest man when he became president, increasing his wealth by stealing native land. In 1782, Washington devised a plan to steal the native land by forcing them into signing treaties that the [U.S. would never honor](#), a strategy quickly adopted by the government, as evidenced by the fact that historians cannot find one treaty that the United States honored with Native Americans.

Jews were white people, sort of. Racism in America has become covert in recent years. There are not racist laws on the books anymore. America used to have *de jure* segregation, now it is *de facto*. Nobody can publicly spew racist sentiments unchallenged, which is an improvement, but racism is far from dead in America. There are no more colored bathrooms, but other measures show how racist America still is. For instance, when the blacks were freed after the Civil War, their income was about 20% of white income. By 1900, it was clear up to 30%. Then the noted racist [Woodrow Wilson](#) came into office and reversed the gains the blacks had made. By 1940, black income was *less* than it was in 1900, as a ratio to white income. Then the golden era of black improvement occurred. Between 1940 and 1970, black income per capita shot up to sixty percent of white income. It is not coincidental that those economic improvements happened during the Civil Rights era and unprecedented U.S. global hegemony. From Martin Luther King's assassination in 1968, until 1990, black family income actually *declined* as a ratio of white income. Not only did it decline between 1970 and 1992 relative to white income, it also declined in real dollars.[\[30\]](#) The laws are not explicitly racist

anymore, but the system still churns out the disparity. The blacks won the legal battle, in a way, but lost the economic one.

In 1940, Jews were a short step above "niggers" in America's hierarchy. There were many jobs that a Jew could not have in America, similar to the restrictions they had lived under in Europe for centuries. Similar to signs in the South that said they did not serve "Negroes," signs on America's East Coast often said "no Jews allowed." I saw one Jewish woman reminisce about her childhood, talking about going to an East Coast beach, and the sign said "No Jews or dogs allowed."[\[31\]](#) As this essay covers American anti-Semitism, bear in mind Leonard Dinnerstein's words as he concluded in his *Anti-Semitism in America*, published in 1994,

"Anti-Semitism is unlikely to vanish in the United States. It is too much a part of the Christian culture to disappear. It must also be emphasized, however, that in no Christian country has anti-Semitism been weaker than it has been in the United States."[\[32\]](#)

In August 1999, a member of the neonazi Aryan Nation group shot children at a Jewish school in Los Angeles, killed a Filipino postman, and was proud of his crimes, calling them a "wake up call for America." That shooting incident triggered many anti-Semitic acts across America, including the desecration of synagogues. Fortunately, most Americans were horrified, but that it even happened shows how far we have to go. In the West before World War II, the United States was the haven for Jews. Jews were treated better in America than anywhere else in Europe.

The Jewish people were originally one of many tribal peoples of the Fertile Crescent. In about [2000 BC](#), there was a great invasion from the steppe regions, and pastoral peoples, with their male, sky-god deities [overthrew the settled agricultural peoples](#), with their female, earth-goddess deities. During that time of tumult, many of the settled peoples of the Fertile Crescent (today's Iraq and vicinity) migrated toward the Mediterranean, and a man today known as Abraham migrated with them, eventually settling in the vicinity of today's Israel. Abraham also began something unique, in that he seemed to have a relationship to *one* god, not the teeming pantheon of gods that dominated the polytheistic religions of the era.

Those days were during that region's Bronze Age, and they were extremely violent. Abraham's tribe lived and grew in numbers in their new home, and over the generations they fragmented into distinct tribes. The peoples the Bible records are the ones that eventually migrated to Egypt, which had the ancient world's most reliable food supply. Through the vagaries of life in Egypt, they eventually became a slave class, and under their great leader

Moses they escaped Egyptian slavery, and wandered for about fifty years in the Sinai Peninsula. It was during that time that they developed a definite monotheistic code, as laid down by Moses. It was unique in the ancient world. Their oral histories tell of their God promising them a land, and under Moses' bodyguard Joshua they invaded Canaan, [the slaughter of the citizens of Jericho](#) (perhaps the world's oldest city) being the most infamous example of how the "Israelites" secured their "Promised Land." That probably happened around 1200 BC. The Jewish belief system, as practiced through Mosaic Law, created by a law-giving God, established a tribal coherence that was unique, yet it also made them a target. They saw themselves as God's chosen people, and often kept themselves rather apart from other tribes. With their strict dietary laws and rites such as circumcision, they often became outcasts, and even preferred that status at times.

The monotheism of the Israelites was also rather hostile to the notion of secular states, elevating "God's" laws over the laws of men, which created a tension in the relations of church and state that continues to this day. The Jewish people set about conquering/annihilating the inhabitants of their Promised Land, and their empire-building peaked with David, whose reign ended in about 966 BC. The Jewish state declined after that, beginning with David's son Solomon, who began turning the conquered peoples into slaves, which was repugnant to church leaders who recalled their people's days of Egyptian slavery. The church and state dichotomy went through various shades of unity and separation during those days, as the Mosaic code did not mesh well with state imperatives. The Israelites battled their neighbors and went through a long decline. The Assyrian Empire invaded and conquered the Israelites' northern lands, climaxing with the conquest of Samaria in about 721 BC, and carried away ten tribes of Israelites, with their assimilation into the Assyrian Empire being so complete that those people are lost to history.

The beginning of the Jewish Diaspora really began when the Babylonians rushed into the void created by the Assyrian Empire's defeat, and conquered Jerusalem, which the Assyrians never accomplished. In 597 BC, the first Jewish elites were [forced to migrate to Babylon](#), which began the Jewish Diaspora. The Babylonian Exile lasted until the Persian king Cyrus the Great conquered Babylon in 539 BC, and the Jews were free to go home. Most preferred to stay, however, and Babylon became a center of Jewish culture for more than a millennium. Cyrus was a student of Zoroaster's teachings, and the dualistic nature (good/evil) of Judeo-Christian thought came from Zoroaster.

In those lands of rising and falling empires, the Greeks made their ascendance after the Persians sacked Athens in 480 BC. The Greek classic period peaked in about 432 BC, just before their Peloponnesian War that began in 431, with a resulting epidemic in 430 that carried off about a third of Athens' population. Greek culture, although early Greek writers looked up to Moses and other Jewish leaders, was markedly different than Jewish culture, the Greeks becoming the West's first humanists. Greek culture was very assimilative, and it readily adopted foreign gods into its pantheon, even deifying men who lived exemplary lives. Under

the Macedonian Alexander the Great, whose reign conquered lands from Egypt to Persia and peaked in about 326 BC, as he even conquered part of India, Greek (Hellenistic) culture spread far and wide. Jewish culture began assimilating into Greek culture, especially among its far-flung Diaspora. The Jewish homeland, however, was less cosmopolitan and more orthodox in its religious practice, and great division arose within the Jewish people, with those who wanted to “modernize” on one end of the spectrum, and those who tried keeping Judaism “pure” on the other.

The antagonism between Greek and Jewish culture became heated by 150 BC, especially as the Greek culture “conquered” the Roman one, with Rome assimilating Greek culture after it conquered them. Greek eventually became the official language of the Byzantine Empire, and was the official language in some Roman provinces in Jesus’ day. By the time of Jesus, Greek culture was so dominant that the New Testament was entirely written in Greek, and the names Jesus and Mary are Greek versions of their Hebrew names Joshua and Miriam.

The Roman Empire conquered Jerusalem in 63 BC. The Jews had a prophetic tradition that a messiah would one day appear to deliver them. They believed that their messiah would be a king to lead great armies to destroy their enemies. Well, their messiah probably *did* appear. Instead of a righteous warrior king, along came a crazy Jew who had a strategy for eradicating the enemy by a method never tried before: *loving* the enemy. Even today, such an idea is crazy, virtually never even attempted in the intervening two thousand years. Although he gave incredible demonstrations of the power of love, demonstrations that are called miracles today, his message of love was so bizarre that it was largely rejected. He had followers, but the one who became the most famous corrupted his message. The “good news” was the infinite love of God, not Jesus, a distinction that Paul did not appreciate, nor did the religion that he founded in Jesus’ name: Christianity. Jesus’ message was love, the greatest message ever told. It did not completely fall on deaf ears, but his message gradually became corrupted, beginning with Paul who altered the good news *from* Jesus into the good news *about* Jesus.

Ignoring Jesus’ message about loving the enemy, the Jewish revolt in 66 AD brought the Roman fist down on the Jews. Jews had already been dispersed throughout the Roman Empire (about 70% of the world’s estimated eight million Jews of the day lived outside Palestine), but the Roman conquest of Jerusalem in 70 AD, turning it into an official part of the Roman Empire, dispersed the Jews throughout the Mediterranean periphery and into today’s France and Spain. The Jewish dispersal also dispersed the new cult known as Christianity. In great irony, the “Good Book” of the Christians was a book written by Jews about Jews. The Old Testament is a Jewish history book. Jesus, Paul and John the Baptist were all Jews. The first Christians were Jews, and they spread Christianity. Through a series of tragic events, the people who embraced the teachings of a radical Jew, as taught by his Jewish followers, developed a hatred for the very people who produced such a master and teaching. Christians took to heart the Jewish history book and the teachings of their greatest prophet, but had no use for the people themselves.

Jews were largely scattered throughout the Roman Empire, although a fair number migrated to Arab lands in Mesopotamia and elsewhere. In those early days of Christianity, the Roman Empire was officially pagan, which generally meant that any belief was fine as long as people bent their knees to the emperor. What got the early Christians thrown to the lions was not their faith, *per se*. They put their faith and God higher in their esteem than the emperor, and their radical *politics* earned them the empire's enmity. They originally lived communally and austere, sharing their possessions with each other, something quite out of step with the times. [33] They also condemned paganism as wicked, which won them few friends. Christianity was not very old before it became a ruling class religion. Early Christian figures such as Paul, Augustine, Origen, Ambrose and Jerome were either from the ruling class or catered to them. [34]

Christianity was originally a radical Jewish splinter sect, which became many splinter sects, adopted by non-Jews as well, especially the hated Greeks. The first revolt ended badly, capped off with the mass suicide at Masada in 72 AD. The Roman army crushed a second revolt in 135 AD, which killed hundreds of thousands of Jews. The revolts not only scattered the Jews, but also created a lasting rift between radical Jewish Christians and old line Jews, and set in motion dynamics that plague Christian-Jewish relations to this day.

Early Christianity was diverse. By the year 200 AD, there were about forty Christian sects. There were about *twenty* different versions of the crucifixion drama circulating in those sects: Jesus died on the cross, he survived crucifixion, he was not crucified, the Romans were behind it instead of the Jews, and so forth. Those forty sects were not one big happy family. One Roman observer said that *nobody hated Christians more than other Christians*. Each sect had its own holy writings that justified its views, and they often thought the other sects were wrong.

Until Constantine organized the Council of Nicea in 325 AD, there was not appreciable unity within Christianity. The likely reason that Constantine chose Christianity as the state religion was to unite the slowly disintegrating empire under one faith, to help hold it together. [35] Christianity had become successful enough that it was a logical candidate, and made an unprecedented rise from an obscure, marginal, radical movement, with more than forty sects, often battling with each other, to becoming the state religion. After the Nicean Council, Christianity became the Roman Empire's state religion. Many suspect that the Nicean Council is where a great deal of editing happened. There had to be one story, not many competing versions. The official story today is that the books of the New Testament were chosen based on how authentic they were, but there is plenty of evidence that political expediency and power issues had much to do with it. [36] A primary thrust of the Nicean Council was condemning a Christian sect called Arianism, which believed that God was the highest power, and Jesus, being a Son of God, was of lesser stature. The Arian belief was largely responsible for the idea of a Holy Trinity (one of many Christian beliefs that are *not* in the scriptures), and the Nicene Creed was a direct response to Arian belief, as it stated that Jesus was God. [37]

Condemning Arianism, the Christian hierarchy nevertheless attempted to unite the faith. The documentation regarding that first council is sparse, but many suspect that writings not deemed politically acceptable were edited out of the Bible at the first council. Writings may have also been inserted to further the day's political goals. By burning the pagan works (including all the Classical Greek ones), [Cathar](#) writings, ancient libraries, the Aztec and Mayan books and so on, the Church was effective at completely eradicating what it did not approve, leaving historians scratching their heads, wondering how much was lost in the Catholic bonfires. It is argued that the Church's eradication philosophy is mainly what brought on the Dark Ages.[\[38\]](#) There is little overt evidence of what happened to the New Testament, but plenty of suspicious evidence. Probably the greatest evidence is the ungainly hole in Jesus' life. Sunday school children are told that Jesus spent his teenage and early adult years working as a carpenter. The New Testament gives *zero* evidence for such a belief. From age twelve to thirty, there is *not one word* about what Jesus was doing with his life. More than half of Jesus' life is missing. It vanished.

My [mystical sources](#) have long told me that the Council of Nicea was where much of Jesus' life was "weeded out" of the New Testament. That was partly because he spent those "lost" years traveling the world on his spiritual pilgrimage. He attained his enlightenment outside of the Roman Empire, gaining valuable insights from the Buddhaic and Hindu masters of the East, with their ideas of reincarnation and other ideas that were unacceptable to the imperial religion.[\[39\]](#)

Thusly did Jesus' life and teachings make it to the big time, although what it became was probably nearly unrecognizable to Jesus. Yet, in its core, it was still about love. The adoption of Christianity by the Roman Empire was not as easy as Constantine may have hoped. His successors fought for years over the issue of Christianity, and Christianity and Paganism went at it tooth and nail at times, and Christianity prevailed. In the end, Christianity adopted many of the Pagan rites, partly to market it, further altering Christianity.

There is only one word worth remembering about Jesus' life: love. Using ancient teachings to justify judging, killing, punishing or oppressing people is not enlightened. It is not what one believes that gets them into "heaven," so much as it is [how they act](#). *All* religions are corrupted, not just Christianity. The Dalai Lama may have said it best when he said, "My religion is kindness."

Regarding holy words, it is instructive to recall that neither Jesus nor Buddha left behind any writings. Spiritual teachings have stated that when the master has left earthly life behind, the teaching is finished, and any writings left behind belong to the realm of philosophical literature, not the basis of religions. Jesus and Buddha cannot have believed much in the holiness of written words if they did not leave any behind.

Early Christians *were* persecuted and killed, which was typical in those days. The Coliseum,

along with other arenas around the empire, was the site of constant bloodbaths. The Roman equivalent of going to the movies was going to the arenas and watching staged battles, put on for the masses' entertainment, a tradition that lasted for about 1000 years in that region. The prime attraction at the arenas was gladiatorial combat. Originally an Etruscan funerary rite, gladiatorial combat evolved into the Roman Empire's primary entertainment. The gladiators were usually slaves, one of many slave classes in the Roman Empire, which meant that they were people conquered and captured by Rome's armies. They were trained for battle in the arena. While one-on-one combat was most common, group battles could become extravaganzas. Augustus Caesar once had 10,000 men fight each other in eight battles. The battles were usually to the death.

Roman historian Michael Grant noted that history's "two most quantitatively destructive institutions are Nazism and the Roman gladiators."[\[40\]](#) Any appreciative musings about Roman achievements in the area of law, architecture, economics and other "advances" of civilization need to be tempered by considering the unparalleled evil of forcing people to murder each other...for *entertainment*. The Romans themselves were not too proud of that form of entertainment, as imperial Roman coinage, which depicted all manner of Roman life and culture, never portrayed gladiatorial combat.[\[41\]](#)

The thumbs up, thumbs down gesture came from those times, when a gladiator might be spared if he fought valiantly enough. So the audience would not become bored, the events were creative. People fought lions, tigers and bulls. Fights were staged with lion against tiger, elephant against rhinoceros, bear against water buffalo. Other novel offerings were dwarves and cripples against women. The Coliseum could be filled with water for naval battles. A gladiator was nearly always doomed to an eventual death in the arena, although many killed themselves first. If a gladiator became the day's "hero," he would be showered with gifts and applause, only to go into battle the next day. Sometimes it was declared that no warrior would be allowed to survive the day, and every one would have to fight to the death.[\[42\]](#) Few survived long enough to "retire." That was the favored *entertainment* of the day. Criminals and Christians were among those condemned to die in the arena. Few Romans ever complained or questioned the nature of that entertainment.[\[43\]](#) In those times, cruelty and bloodshed was equated with fun. The more cruel a spectacle was, the more the crowd liked it.[\[44\]](#)

What is generally credited with the end of gladiatorial combat was the spread of Christianity, although it was far from an immediate effect. Emperor Constantine, who made Christianity the state religion, issued an edict forbidding gladiatorial combat in 326 AD, the year after the Nicean Council, but he never enforced the order. Constantine was hardly a "good Christian," having both his wife and son executed, his wife by boiling her. Constantine staged some of the gorier spectacles that ever graced the Coliseum. For Constantine, Christianity was a strictly political matter. In 404 AD, a Christian monk from Asia Minor apparently leapt into the arena to try separating the combatants, and the enraged crowd tore the man to pieces.

Gladiatorial combat was not finally abolished until 681 AD.[\[45\]](#)

The earliest Christians were Jews, and Rome considered Christians a Jewish sect. By 212 AD, Jews became imperial citizens, and their life was as good as the times could dictate, until Constantine made Christianity into the state religion in 325 AD. Then the Jews began a hard ride. Although the Christian hierarchy at the time did not advocate anti-Jew violence, Christian mobs regularly burned down synagogues. Babylonia, outside of Christian and Roman influence, became the center of Judaism by 300 AD. Pagans were being wiped out too, even while Christianity appropriated many of its customs. Christian intolerance replaced the laissez faire spirituality that characterized pre-Christian Rome.

Power corrupts, and as the Christian church became more powerful, pagans and Mosaic Law Jews paid heavily. Constantine's ploy was not very successful, as the Western Roman Empire crumbled in 476 AD.

Jews were dispersed across the Roman Empire and further, and when the Empire collapsed, the Catholic Church became Europe's unifying institution. It was a different kind of Roman Empire. For all its spectacular failures and the great evils it would eventually wreak on its subjects, the Catholic Church may have held European civilization together for the next five hundred years.

As the Catholic Church gained in strength as the state church, it became increasingly bigoted and racist. Although three early popes were black Africans (Miltiades, Victor 1, and Gelasius 1; saints Augustine and Benedict were also black) the Church became decidedly racist, and Vatican artists later "whited out" those African popes and saints.

When the Western Empire crumbled, the Eastern Empire, under almost wholly Greek influence, was not inviting, so Babylonia became the center of the Jewish world. Around 600 AD another radical splinter sect of Judaism took root, led by a prophet named Muhammad. He was more the messiah that the Jews originally sought: a sword-wielding destroyer of his enemies, but one who also lived by a moral code, conversed with his God, and the religion of Islam took root and swept the Arab lands and further. Although Muhammad killed his fair share of Jews, they were treated far better by the Islamic code than the Christian one in those days. Although the spread of Islam was often bloody, and conversion by the sword was sometimes a method of Islamic proselytizing, it was a decidedly color-blind faith, which was part of its appeal to people of color. The rapid expansion of the Islamic faith in the 600s and 700s brought many Jews under Islamic rule. Jews existed more peacefully under Islamic rule than Christian rule, and consequently they lived in greater numbers in the Islamic world than the Christian one. Islam conquered the Mediterranean's southern periphery, all the way into today's Spain.

In 711 AD, Islamic armies invaded the Iberian Peninsula, which eventually established Moorish

rule. Jews of the peninsula had been suffering under the cruel rule of the Visigothic kings, who practiced forced conversion and executed those who remained "secret Jews." Those dynamics reappeared several centuries later. When Islamic armies overran the Iberian Peninsula, Jews were fighting right beside them. Under the subsequent Umayyad dynasty, Jews flourished as nowhere else. In Babylonia, they were still subject to persecution from the local rulers, but under Umayyad rule on the Iberian Peninsula, the Jews lived in a golden age. Life under the Umayyad dynasty in Moorish Spain was as good as Jews would have it until the nineteenth century.

By 1000 AD, Jews were widely scattered across Europe and the Middle East (even China.), and Córdoba (Spain) became the most prosperous center of Jewish life, and Europe's most civilized place. Until around 1000 AD, relative harmony existed between Jews, Muslims and Christians. Unfortunately for the Jews, the Christian and Islamic worlds would soon make their lives more precarious. One of the earliest expulsions of Jews in Europe was from the Rhineland in 1012. Jews did not come to the British Isles until William the Conqueror invaded them in 1066.

Violent Berber Muslims made their play for power, seizing Córdoba. When the Umayyad dynasty ended in 1036, Moorish Spain splintered into fractious petty kingdoms. In 1056 the Christian Reconquest was initiated, and Toledo was retaken in 1085. During the Reconquest, [the Iberian Peninsula degenerated into a militarized land](#), with constant wars, not only between the Christians and Moors, but the Moors became mutually hostile and warred against each other. Soldiers became more important than poets, and life became harder for Jews as well. Virulent outbreaks of Islamic fundamentalism marred the times. In 1066, Islamic preachers incited the slaughter of about 5000 Jews in Granada, claiming that they had too much influence. Although Jews generally had a better life in Islamic cultures, there were slaughters of Jews across the Islamic world from time to time, mainly in North Africa. Although Jews were "People of the Book" and had theoretically protected status, they were still a minority and held to be inferior to the Islamic overlords.

The [rise of Europe](#) as a cohesive entity took shape around that time, and the first Crusade of 1096 can be seen as the first act that "Europe" took. Europe began seeing itself as one people, united by Christian faith and white skin. By that time, the Catholic Church had become a great temporal power as well as religious institution, owning about a quarter of Europe's land. Tales were told of Christian pilgrims to the Holy Land being mistreated by Islamic people. Since Jews lived in the Holy Land also, Christians in those days barely distinguished the two. During friction between the Eastern Roman Empire and Turkey, Pope Urban II initiated the first Crusade in 1096, whipping up European Christians to go battle the Turks. As the Europeans were riled up to do battle, the soldiers made a detour before "liberating" parts of the Eastern Roman Empire that the Turks had taken. Beginning in France and soon spreading to Germany, the Crusaders engaged in what is considered the first holocaust of European Jews by Christians. In a frenzy of bloodlust, the Christian soldiers engaged in mass murders

of Jews. As many as 8000 Jews perished in the massacres.[\[46\]](#)

From that time forward, Jews would no longer be safe in Europe. There had been slaughters of Jews before, many times, but that part of the world was very violent. The massacres of 1096 were the first with a decidedly religious, anti-Jewish fervor. That first Crusade was the most successful, and was a thoroughly imperial venture that climaxed in "liberating" Jerusalem from the Muslims. Christian fanaticism fueled the fire of those marching hordes. The Crusaders laid siege to the Holy City, and when they breached the walls they massacred nearly every inhabitant. The city was bathed in infidel blood. It was an Old Testament-style bloodbath. One could not walk through the city without walking on bodies, sloshing through pools of blood and navigating heaps of severed heads. As when [Joshua's Jews laid waste to Jericho](#), the Crusaders turned the slaughter into a sacred affair, the knights "sobbed for excesses of joy" as they bathed in infidel blood, cooked up Muslims and ate them, and other wonders. Those are not "[Black Legend](#)"-ish allegations, but events proudly written up by the Crusaders and their chroniclers themselves.[\[47\]](#)

In England in 1144 were recorded the first European accusations that the Jews killed babies in their rituals.[\[48\]](#) That accusation took on a life of its own, inciting mass murders of Jews in England, especially around Crusade time. The accusation of ritually murdering children is an old one, often combined with cannibalism and/or drinking their blood. Ironically, Roman pagans accused the new cult of Christianity of the very same crime.[\[49\]](#)

While Jews were being massacred in England and France regularly, the first Jewish expulsion in France occurred in 1182 after closing the Jewish academy in Paris. While European anti-Semitism began rearing its head, the Catholic Church was becoming thoroughly corrupt. Popes were leading Crusade after Crusade, Pope Innocent III calling for the fourth Crusade in 1199. There were also minor Crusades being mounted throughout Europe. The concept of Christian armies marauding through Europe was becoming ingrained, and the idea of a perpetual Crusade took root. Christianity was becoming the polar opposite of Jesus' teachings.

By the early 1200s, the Church was thoroughly corrupt and there were attempts made at reform. The Council of Evreux in 1195 mentioned the selling of indulgences by the clergy, and bishops selling holy oil and relics. The Council of Avignon in 1209 mentions a priest who dined with his parishioners regarding their penances (double or nothing?), and priests opening taverns with a priest collar as the inn sign. Priests had families, lovers and concubines, and drank heavily, hunted and gambled with abandon.[\[50\]](#)

When the Christian Crusaders showed up in Constantinople to "help" in 1096, their Byzantine "hosts" were shocked, and saw their European "allies" as uncouth and barbaric backwoods rubes, as their most pronounced characteristics were their filthiness, fanaticism and violence.

The Hellenistic culture of the Eastern Roman Empire was far more refined than European culture.

While the Church was becoming increasingly degraded, the Islamic culture pursued a different path. By about 1200, the Islamic culture may have had the world's highest standard of living (the only "competitor" for the title would have been China). The Arabic Islamic culture emphasized learning and built some of the world's greatest libraries. The Catholic Church specialized in burning libraries. The West knows about the ancient Greek philosophers and culture largely because their work was preserved in Islamic libraries. The Catholic Church spent centuries eradicating any literature considered pagan or heretical, and all the Hellenistic writings in Europe were consigned to the flames.

The Church's intolerance would express itself quite violently after 1200 AD. Not only was the Church mounting Crusade after Crusade, its priestly ranks were filled with corruption, and Jews and Islamic people were not the only people on the Church's hit list. Because of the wholesale corruption and debauchery of European Christianity, with Crusades becoming perpetual, with gambling, drunken, philandering priests and the like, the Catholic Church did not inspire much obeisance from the flock. In France, while Jews were having a rough ride, there were two movements that tried getting back to the spiritual roots that the Catholic Church had largely forsaken.

In 1175 in Lyons France, Peter Waldo (or Valdés) sought the meaning of God, and was told by a theologian to sell what he had, give it to the poor, and follow Christ. Waldo did just that. His fervent passion for the essence of Christianity gave birth to a new religious movement. His followers were originally known as the "Poor Men of Lyons," and they eventually adopted Waldo's name, becoming Waldensians. Waldo was a devout Christian; too devout. He originally tried reforming the Church, bringing it back to its humble roots. The Church would not tolerate it, and Pope Lucius III excommunicated Waldo in 1184. In that same year, Lucius III issued a bull ordering bishops to "direct inquisitions" on heresy. The roots of the Inquisition are in Roman law, where the *inquisitio*, originally a routine act of Roman judicial investigation, degenerated into torturing confessions out of suspected criminals.[\[51\]](#) The ancient Roman practice was revived to deal with heresy. Heresy was usually nothing more than refusing to be an obedient subject of the Church.

Waldo and his movement was a thorn in the Church's side, but there was a much greater threat to the Church's religious monopoly: the Cathars. Unfortunately, there are no Cathar writings extant. Nearly all that is known about them derives from reading the attacks of Catholic scholars.[\[52\]](#)

The popularity of the Cathars and Waldensians was partly due to the Catholic Church's spiritual bankruptcy. The Cathars exceeded the austere mien of the Waldensians. Their creed was dualistic, meaning that they believed in a good god in heaven and an evil god who ran

earth. It is said that they were not really Christians, but that is misleading. A number of early Christian sects were also dualistic, such as the Gnostics. The dualistic aspect of Gnostic philosophy was older than Christianity. It can be argued that the dualistic creed of the Gnostics and Cathars was Christian in that it centered on Jesus. The Gnostics considered themselves Christians, as did the Cathars. The Gnostic philosophy antagonized other Christian sects, and the Gnostic sects lost the political battle of what Christianity would become. What is called Christianity today is merely the victorious viewpoint of the most powerful Christian sects, especially the one aligned with the Roman Empire's might. Gnostic texts were carefully excluded from the New Testament, such as the gospels of Thomas, Peter, Mary, Philip, Nicodemus and the Gospel of Truth. Dualistic thought is prominent in the Bible, especially in the New Testament, with apocalyptic struggles of good against evil becoming the philosophical underpinnings of Christian institutions such as the Crusades and the Inquisition.

[53]

The Cathars were dualistic, but so is any Christian who believes that the devil is influential on earth. In theory, there is a distinction between the two. In the standard Christian view, God created all, and Satan was a fallen angel. Satan is not a creator as such, but a corrupter. The agent of darkness that the Gnostics, Manicheans and Cathars believed in was a creator in its own right. A good god ran heaven, and a dark god ran the physical world. Theologians have spent centuries arguing such matters, but if the evil is due to Satan or a dark creator is a relatively fine distinction, and in practice, the difference is on the order of splitting hairs. How one *deals with the darkness* is all-important.

Manicheanism was a bona fide world religion, comparable to Christianity or Islam. Mani founded it in the late 200s AD, and it was an amalgam of Christianity, Buddhism, Zoroastrianism and elements from other religions. Mani pursued a consciously syncretic attempt at a universal religion. The religion he founded flourished in the Middle East and Central Asia, and even spread to China. The Manicheans practiced one of the gentlest religions. Believing matter to have inherent darkness within it, yet with God's light inside also, the Manichees killed no animals, ate no animal flesh, and cultivated melons as a staple, as they would not kill the plant to gain the melon. They even apologized to their bread as they ate it. As with the Gnostics, women had a prominent place in Mani's religion, able to become the "elect," (the priest class, but they could not take office...not being entirely free from the day's misogyny).

Christian doctrine states that souls are tainted with original sin. The Manichean doctrine stated that the only taint was from being in a physical body. The soul was untainted, and the path to salvation was through "gnosis," which means "knowing." Awakening the soul and purifying the inherent light in matter, sending it back to its source, were the goals of Manichean practice. As with all religions, Manicheanism devolved when it mistook the symbolic for the literal, or when it proposed spiritual regulations, with their inevitable dos and don'ts. Yet, a religion whose central tenet was causing no harm to living beings gets high marks, and they apparently lived by it. While the Catholic Church devolved to granting salvation to those who paid enough

money, the Manichean faith largely avoided that corruption, although the faith had the "hearers" (similar to "the flock," in Christianity) financially support the "elect" (such as the priests).

Manicheans were first persecuted by the Roman Empire in about 300 AD. They were treated worse than Christians. The totalitarian nature of Christianity could not abide Manicheanism either, and as Christianity became allied with the Roman Empire, the Manicheans, like the Pagans and others, became the object of Christian destructive zeal. Long after Manicheanism had been eradicated in the Christian world, it continued flourishing in Asia, and the religion lasted for more than a thousand years before finally being wiped out.[\[54\]](#)

The world would be a gentler place if religions such as Manicheanism were not destroyed. As with other extinct religions, the Manicheans are not here to defend themselves, and until recently, the West knew of the Manichees largely by reading Christian polemics against them, which surely did not provide a sympathetic or balanced view. Mani, unlike Buddha or Jesus, put his words on paper and tried founding a religion, although modern scholars still do not know how he exactly practiced his craft. Apparently he could tailor it to his audience, be they Buddhist, Christian, or of any religion. Manichean missionaries, partly because of their syncretic views, were more successful in their recruiting efforts than their Christian counterparts. Christianity prevailed largely due to brute force and the temporal power it cultivated.

The Cathars followed in the tradition of Gnostics and Manicheans. The Cathars followed Jesus' living example the best they could, and took it to greater extremes. Cathars would not willingly kill any living thing, and the most accomplished Cathars, the *Perfecti*, fasted three times a year for forty days each and were celibate, similar to the Manichean *Electi*. The Cathar faith was an ideological descendant of Manicheanism. So were the Bogomils and Paulicians. The Cathars' most devout members would not even eat eggs, milk or cheese, "unclean" foods that were associated with procreation. The *Perfecti* lived the simple and austere life that Christians imagined Jesus lived, and their no meat and no wine policy took it further than Jesus did. Again, no Cathar writings have survived the Inquisition's bonfires. Cathar critics stated that the Cathars did not even believe in procreation, which led the great Inquisition historian Henry Lea to state that the Church's attack on the Cathars was probably justified because a few generations of Catharist abstinence would extinguish the species. The Manicheans apparently discouraged having children, although marriage was fine for the "hearers," and even keeping mistresses, as Saint Augustine did when he practiced the Manichee faith.[\[55\]](#) Procreation was discouraged but not *forbidden*, particularly as Manicheanism was a pacifistic religion. They indeed were austere ascetics, but there is more to intrigue about their faith than there is to deplore. Manicheans considered themselves Christian.

It is possible that their critics, to make them seem crazy, exaggerated their austerity. The

Western mentality for millennia has been a bizarre and fanatical denial of the flesh, as demonstrated by the [self-tortures](#) that priests and nuns inflicted on themselves. It is perhaps *too* convenient that the Cathars were accused of autogenocide as a rationale for eradicating them.

The Cathar faith apparently came from the Balkan region, probably as a side effect of the Crusades, arriving with returning soldiers.[\[56\]](#) The Cathar faith spread rapidly in France. The *Perfecti* attained an outward holiness that made all priestly piousness pale beside it.

Catharism and Waldensianism spread like wildfire throughout France. In parts of France, half the population became Cathar. The Catholic Church saw that development as a threat. Various analyses justify the Catholic Church's position toward the Cathars as "defending" itself from Cathar attacks, or defending the entire European worldview from such an affront. It appears that the "threat" was more like the threat the Washington electric companies felt when [Dennis Lee](#) appeared on the scene with a superior energy conservation technology. The main Cathar threat was that the Catholic Church's pews would become empty, and their coffers would no longer be filled. Much of the spiritual and cultural theorizing is probably a smokescreen to disguise the dictates of raw power. The Cathars were a threat to the racket.

Innocent's strategy was one that businessmen can appreciate: put cement shoes on the competition while simultaneously marketing an ersatz version of their product. In the span of a few years, Innocent authorized the establishment of two new priestly orders. He authorized the Franciscans in 1209, and in 1214 the Dominican order was founded, officially approved by Innocent's successor in 1216. Those were the first two mendicant orders founded by the Catholic Church. As with the Cathars and Waldensians, the priests of the new orders took vows of poverty. In 1204, Innocent tried getting the Cistercians to preach against the Cathars. The Cistercians were founded during the first Crusade, in 1098, and were the dominant order of the 1100s. They originally had ascetic ideals, but were not mendicants, and when 1200 rolled around their mission had changed significantly. Forty-eight knights joined the Cistercian order in 1112, led by the man who became Saint Bernard. The notion of the oxymoronic monk-like, chivalrous knights, already on the rise, became more popular. In 1119, the Knights Templars were formed in Jerusalem. The Cistercians were not the ideal monks to counter Cathar preachings. Dominic tried bringing Cathars back to the Catholic fold in 1205.

Dominic had limited success, but his order became the Catholic Church's priestly army. In 1208, Innocent called for a Crusade on France to stamp out the heresy of Waldensians and Cathars. In 1209, the Crusade's purpose was made evident when the Catholic army, led by the Abbott of Citeaux, Arnauld-Amalric, surrounded the city of Béziers. When asked how to distinguish faithful Catholics from heretics, the Abbott allegedly told his Christian soldiers to "Kill them all; God will know his own."[\[57\]](#) The army, so instructed, proceeded to kill every resident of the city. Estimates range from 7000 to 20,000 people dying in that slaughter.

The irony can be overwhelming. The Cathars were devout pacifists. They rarely put up any resistance. Many fled across Europe, making the murderous Christian task more difficult. Early Christians in the Roman Empire were also noted for their pacifistic non-resistance to Roman violence. A thousand years later, the Christians were the butchers, doing the same thing to those non-resisting Cathars. Burning the Cathars alive was a favored method of dealing with them, especially the *Perfecti*. The awesome violence that the Crusading army inflicted on the local populace was a method of terror, a timeless and effective method of pacifying the population, making examples out of the disobedient. The Albigensian Crusade waxed and waned in France for decades, and entire regions were depopulated. Perhaps a million people died in the Albigensian Crusade. The massacre at Montsegur occurred in 1247, which nearly put the last nail in the coffin of Catharism. Crusades were nearly a constant in those days, marching back and forth across Europe and into the Holy Land, in an unending orgy of bloodshed. Jews were being slaughtered, but Christian was slaughtering Christian also, something Jews and Muslims had difficulty comprehending at times. Jews were banned from France in 1254, and expelled from England in 1290.

One of Innocent's last acts was convening the Fourth Lateran Council in 1215, perhaps the single-most ambitious conference in Christian history. Innocent tried reforming the church, restating the faith, calling for a new Crusade, and making annual reception of Holy Communion and confession a requirement for all Catholics. Innocent also raised Church taxes, condemned the Waldensians and Cathars, and made a further definition of heresy and how to deal with it. One of that council's edicts was forcing Jews and Muslims to wear clothing that marked them as non-Christian, something the Nazis would do much later. Although Innocent was responsible for initiating endless bloodshed with his Crusading zeal and political machinations, he did not initiate the Inquisition, as such. A series of bulls by Pope Gregory IX in the late 1220s and early 1230s further established the concept of the Inquisition, and by 1260 the Inquisition was rolling along. Dominicans and Franciscans usually ran the Inquisitions. There was not yet a central Holy Office as such, but the Inquisition was known and feared. Mendicant friars became the scourge of heretics. The almost total annihilation of Cathars by 1250 had eliminated the direst threat to the religious monopoly, and the Inquisition became a standard feature throughout Europe, where it was needed to keep the restive flock in line.

During the second half of the 1200s, Dominican monk Thomas Aquinas wrote what many consider the greatest works in Catholic history. His work also further solidified the Inquisition's philosophical underpinning, and helped set the stage for later witch hunts.

The Catholic Church may have helped hold Europe together back then, similar to Constantine's strategy of using Christianity to hold the Roman Empire together, with the Catholic Church being Europe's only unifying institution. The Church often vied with kings and emperors for power, in an intricate dance that characterized Europe for centuries. Charlemagne formed the Holy Roman Empire during the 700s, which became an attempt to revive the union of Church and state that Rome had for a short time. For the next thousand

years, European nations and the Catholic Church had a wide spectrum of interaction, the Church often bringing the rulers to heel, but eventually losing power struggles with the Protestant Reformation.

The fate of European Jews was often the subject of European caprice. When times got bad, the Jews suffered for it. The 1200s, for all its bloodshed, possessed a pastoral calm compared to the 1300s. In the 1300s, warfare, famine and disease [swept back and forth across Europe constantly](#). The Black Death swept across Asia from China. It killed tens of millions of people, with a third of China, a third of the Muslim world and a third of Europe dying, producing the greatest carnage in Europe in 1348-1349. Europe's response to the Black Death was blaming Jews for introducing it. Tens of thousands of Jews were burned alive for "bringing" the plague to Europe, as well as lepers and other outcasts. Church policies fomented anti-Semitism, but when the mobs began murdering Jews, Church officials often tried preventing them. Church officials abetting anti-Semitism were usually not the same ones who tried saving Jews from the mobs.

Franciscans were the scourge of Jews in those days. Jews were restricted from numerous professions, but in one profession their religion and the Christian religion meshed. According to the Biblical code that guided Christians, they could not lend money and earn interest. The Jewish code allowed them to earn interest on money lent to "strangers," which came to mean non-Jews, and that was how the Jews became bankers and the source of many conspiracy theories.[\[58\]](#)

With all the anti-Jewish violence in Europe, European Jews fled to where they could, usually out of Christianity's reach. It was not always nice for them, but present-day Spain was the safest place in Europe for Jews during those early anti-Semitic massacres. Under Moorish rule, Jews often flourished. The Reconquest of the Iberian Peninsula took place over several centuries. Jews who lived under Moorish rule for centuries suddenly found themselves the new subjects of Christian rulers. As one more Moorish city-state fell to the Christian armies, Moors and Jews fled to another Moorish city-state, or tried fitting in under the new regime. With the degeneration of Moorish rule in Spain, sometimes Jews felt they had a better deal with the new Christian overlords, and sometimes they did...for awhile.

Dominican priest Vincente Ferrer preached many hysterical anti-Semitic diatribes in the late 1300s in Seville, leading to riots and mass murders of Jews in 1391. The slaughters spread out and dotted the Iberian Peninsula. One option of Jews finding themselves under Christian rule was converting to Christianity to stay alive. It amounted to conversion by the sword. Previously, the Jews often chose the sword, but in 1391 something broke in them, and many chose conversion. Those "New Christians" were called *conversos* or *marranos*, *marranos* being derived from the Spanish word for swine.

A significant motivation for the mass murders of Jews that peppered Europe was greed. When

Jews were murdered, their property was taken. Many of those inciting the massacres got rich from Jewish plunder.

After "conversion," many Jews strove to hide their Jewish heritage. For Christians, conversion still did not take Jews off the hook. The persecution became racial rather than religious. Jews were white people too, and it was not easy to distinguish them from other Europeans, especially in Spain. When the racial strategy proved unworkable, the strategy then became ferreting out New Christians who secretly practiced their Jewish faith. Throughout the 1400s, Jews in Spain were oppressed, with riots and massacres. Being a *converso* was no guarantee of safety, and some riots were specifically directed toward *conversos*. It escalated throughout the century, the Christian armies kept gaining ground, and Moors were pushed to the southern end of the Iberian Peninsula. The last remaining Moorish city-state was Granada.

In 1474, Ferdinand and Isabella ascended the throne, and *idea* of Spain grew from their rule. The peninsula was under one rule during the Roman days, but that was a thousand years previously. In 1480 Isabella began the Spanish Inquisition, and life got much worse for Jews. The Inquisition specifically targeted *conversos* who secretly practiced their Jewish faith. Many Jews *did* keep their faith in secret, which was understandable. The Inquisition's job was hunting down those "traitors." The Inquisition's fires then began burning across the Iberian Peninsula, consuming Jews by the thousand.

Jews were not Europe's only oppressed group. As the Spanish Inquisition heated up, witches were burning from one end of Western Europe to the other. The Inquisition had a hand in the witch-hunts, and could feign clean hands. The Church never officially burned a heretic. They would condemn them and "relax" them to secular authorities for their punishment. Similarly, the Church wrote the handbooks for finding and dealing with witches, and their treatment of heretics was adopted to various degrees in the witch-hunts. While the Inquisition did not play in England, burning witches did. England had expelled its Jews centuries earlier, as had France, so Jew-hunting was not a sport for them. About 85% of the witches executed were women, and many were healers of some kind. The witch-hunts were a women's Holocaust. There were instances where villages committed effective suicide by killing *all* of its women.

In 1492, Granada fell to the Christian armies, ending several centuries of Moorish rule on the Iberian Peninsula. When the Spanish armies controlled everything on the Iberian Peninsula except for Portugal, the Spanish sovereigns issued a new decree: Jews faced the choice of either conversion or expulsion. The numbers for Spain's Jews were 160,000 expelled, 50,000 converts and 20,000 deaths.[\[59\]](#) Some estimates go much higher, with 400,000 Jews leaving Spain. During the 1400s, Jews were expelled throughout Europe: Vienna, 1421; Cologne, 1424; Bavaria, 1442 and 1450; Milan 1489; Florence and Tuscany, 1494, and many other places. Although Poland had anti-Jew riots in 1348-49 (Black Death) and 1407 and 1494, by 1500 Poland was considered the safest place in Europe for Jews. Most Jews expelled from Spain went to the Ottoman Empire, where the Islamic culture welcomed them. About 10,000

went to Italy, but [Spain invaded Italy during the 1500s](#), and those Jews again ended up in the wrong place.

When Jews were expelled, ending up in a region already filled with Jewish refugees, that would often trigger expulsions in that region also. The Wandering Jew became a part of the folklore about that time. In 1517, Martin Luther initiated the Protestant Reformation with his Ninety-five Theses. In the long run, it probably helped Jews by dividing Christians. However, the early protestant theologians were not kindly disposed to Jews, Martin Luther perhaps the worst of them, with his 1543 pamphlet "On the Jews and their Lies." His diatribe is seen as a stepping-stone to the Jewish Holocaust.

Virtually all of Western Europe was hostile to Jews, and those who did not flee to Islamic lands went to Poland. During the 1500s, the Jews thrived in Poland and nowhere else in Europe, except for some in Southern Italy. In 1541 in Venice, the first European *ghetto* was formed. The Jews had lived in segregated living before in Europe and in Islamic lands, but the Venetian ghetto was a kind of Jewish prison. Some historians have questioned why the Jews accepted their fate in Venice, while others feel it was understandable, after all the demoralizing events during the previous centuries, climaxing with the mass murders and expulsions from Spain, and further expulsions and murders when the Spaniards conquered Northern Italy. There was a certain passivity and acceptance of their condition. It was partly due to their religious convictions. It was also an attitude remarked upon as they were being herded to their deaths in World War II.

Wealth, Jews and the Age of Colonialism

In 1493, the [New World's rape began](#) with [Columbus' second voyage](#). Although the Crown had specific laws forbidding Jews from sullyng the New World with their presence, it is estimated that of the 200,000 European residents in Mexico by 1570, a third were converted Jews and another third were converted Moors.^[60] That was a logical place for them to flee, but the Inquisition was not far behind, hunting for crypto-Jews and Moors. More Jews fled to the Islamic world. Poland was the last Jewish haven in Europe. [Charles V](#) was the Holy Roman Emperor and King of Spain when Cortés was [conquering the Aztecs](#), while Martin Luther was making protestant noise. Charles V was a Hapsburg and inherited a vast realm, and the Conquistadors were securing a much vaster one. Through the political and royal machinations of Europe, Charles ended up with the Netherlands as part of his realm. The Netherlands was full of merchants and tradesmen, and was prosperous.

Charles issued the edict condemning Martin Luther's work, which Luther defended at the Diet of Worms in 1521. Charles did not stop the Reformation from happening. The Reformation and Counter Reformation were very bloody affairs, with wars that lasted for generations.

Charles was Europe's most powerful ruler in 1519, when he bribed his way into becoming the Holy Roman Emperor as well as being Spain's king. In 1520, he became the King of Germany. Just as the first [magnificent treasures arrived from Mesoamerica](#), giving a hint of things to come, Charles was reaching his power's peak. Charles' hegemony was short-lived. Wars, politics and the Reformation assailed his empires, and when he stepped down in 1558, all he gave his son was Spain and the Netherlands.

The Reformation found fertile soil among the educated mercantile class of the Netherlands. Charles tried stamping it out by brining the Inquisition there in 1522. For more than forty years the Inquisition had raged in Spain, consigning thousands of Jews to the flames while keeping the rest terrified. Since they were mere Jews being burned alive, most of Europe did not get excited about it. When The Inquisition came to the Netherlands however, putting *real* Europeans to the question, that was going too far. That was when anti-Inquisition polemics really began in Europe. That was when the Inquisition's popular image was formed, that antihuman organ of terror and oppression. It had always been that, but it was not until Protestants began being burned alive that Europeans got angry. The Spanish and Dutch Inquisitions were more nationalistic than religious, not really backed by Rome.

The Reformation woke up Rome, and they revived the Inquisition in 1542, and for the first time made a central governing office to run it, called the Holy Office of the Inquisition. Before that, the inquisitors operated without a central office coordinating their activities. The Holy Office was initially relatively tame, and largely confined to Italy for a dozen years. The Inquisition became more ambitious in 1555, with Pope Paul IV recommending hunting down heretical bishops and cardinals. In 1559, the *Index of Forbidden Books* was first published, winning the Catholic Church further infamy.

In 1566, the Dutch began rioting against the oppressive sway of the Catholic Church and Spain. That began a war that did not finally end until 1648. The Spanish war against the Netherlands was a major factor in [bankrupting the Spanish Crown several times by the 1650s](#), and helped set the stage for Spain's decline. For opportunistic reasons, England began helping the Netherlands in 1585, and in 1588 prevailed over the Spanish Armada. By 1600, the Netherlands [was free of Spanish domination](#). Jews flocked to Western Europe's only haven, and in 1615 were legally allowed to stay if the province would have them.

Also, Jews migrated to nearby Hamburg, on the periphery of the Holy Roman Empire. When the Thirty Years War broke out in 1618, Jewish financiers helped the Hapsburgs. The Thirty Years War was Europe's most brutal war to that time. Europeans had demonstrated for many years in the New World and elsewhere that they were masters of earthly violence, and honor and rules made no difference. The goal was winning at all costs by any means. The Thirty Years War gave new meaning to war. The concept of total war, of killing the enemy at all costs and surviving to fight the next day, put down deep roots during a war that lasted thirty years and killed four million people, half of them civilians, most of them Germanic people.

Jews were experts on resourcefulness, surviving on practically nothing, and that resourcefulness came in handy in fighting that war, and Christians put aside their enmity toward Jews if they could provide the resources to fight and survive. Their ascendant role as financiers, managers and procurers of resources also won them enemies, and there were still Jew slaughters and other abuses, but they became an integral part of the region's economy.

The Dutch began their imperial expansion in about 1600, sailing the high seas and [making the Spanish pay whenever they could](#). The Dutch were the first great [mercantile](#) colonial power.

The Dutch Republic of the United Provinces was Europe's first republic, and the heart of European liberalism. That did not mean that they were gentle colonizers. French pirates had been attacking Spanish ships since they first began coming home with New World plunder. England got into the game in the late 1500s, and [the Dutch joined them in the early 1600s](#). That began the [European scramble for the world](#). Whether it was in Asia, the New World, Africa or the South Pacific, the English, Dutch, French, Spanish, Portuguese, Swedes, Danes, Russians and others fought over who would loot the world. Some came to the game later than others. Germany and Japan were the two biggest latecomers, and when they found few foreign lands and people that they could call their own, humanity experienced two colossal wars.

The first two centuries of Europe's New World hegemony was the most wasteful plunder of all time. [Killing off nearly all the natives of a hemisphere](#) was bad enough, but what did Europe gain from it? Europe supposedly gained wealth through its colonial exploitation. That was the reason they did it. The benefits that Europe derived from the first two centuries of the New World's plunder, a plunder paid for with the lives of perhaps 70 million natives, were: gold, silver, sugar, tobacco, dyes and furs.

Adam Smith's *The Wealth of Nations* is considered the first major economic treatise ever written, and was published in 1776, long after the initial plunder was over. Smith wrote that a [gold rush was one of humankind's stupidest events](#). Gold and silver are not wealth, and particularly back then. About the only intrinsic value that gold and silver had was ornamental. Making silver eating utensils was the only practical use of the metal until modern times, when it began being used in industry. Gold had even less practical use than silver. The only reason gold and silver were perceived as valuable was their use as money. Anything can be used as currency, because currency is only representative of wealth, not wealth itself. The only thing that made scarce metals valuable was their scarcity.

[Spain's colonial experience](#) is a perfect example of the uselessness of mining gold. There was a transfer of wealth that occurred when Spain brought back that gold and silver, bought with the lives of tens of millions of natives. Some Spaniards got their hands on the goods of other European nations, as they honored the "precious metal" as a form of payment. Spain's elites lived relatively lavishly for a short while, although [Spain as a whole declined](#), and it was arguably worse off in 1600 than it was in 1500.

There is little intrinsic value in any currency. Native Americans sometimes did similar things in their ignorance. Wampum belts were considered wealth in some societies, but making them was a waste of time. The less time and effort spent creating currency, the better off the society is. The Aztecs were a little better. They used chocolate beans for currency. They could make a drink out of the chocolate beans, so there was intrinsic value in the currency. Ears of corn would have been the ideal currency in Mexico, and it was. The Aztecs largely had a barter economy, and something as easily handled and relatively small in value as corn (per ear), became an ideal unit of exchange. People could eat the money, which is the ideal currency. In a barter economy gold is virtually worthless, and was one reason the natives could not understand the Spanish obsession with gold.

Money is only the scorekeeper, not the game. When the rigging the scoreboard becomes the game, the system is broken. All gold rushes reflected the ignorance of the societies engaging in them. They ultimately impoverished the societies that had them, as the net result was wasting the effort of one segment of the population (the miners, refiners, etc) so they could steal from the other. The only way Spaniards were able to avoid an even worse economic collapse was [enslaving natives to do the work](#). They first stole the results of millennia of native effort in creating their gold artifacts. The Spaniards melted that all down, destroying all the artistic value. Then they enslaved the natives as millions of them died in the mining operations. If the Spaniards had to dig the gold, the 16th century gold rush would not have happened. Millions of natives paid with their lives so Spain could leech off its neighbors for a brief time.

The other main product the Spaniards received from the New World was dyes. Again, what was the intrinsic value? Virtually none. Dyes are sheerly cosmetic, providing no real wealth. Enslaved natives killed small insects for their bodily juices that made the red dyes. Thousands of insects would be killed to produce an ounce of that dye. Again, it was a prodigious waste, but if there were natives to enslave and insects to kill, they could give their lives to producing Spanish baubles. The materialism of that age echoes to the present day, with the rampant consumerism that plagues America and is infecting the world. More than 90% of the export "value" from the New World was gold and silver in that first century of "discovery."

What was the other great boon from those early colonial days? Sugar. The Portuguese specialized in that more than the Spaniards, especially when their plunder of [Brazil did not find any El Doradoes](#). The Portuguese specialized in [producing sugar](#). What good is sugar? There has rarely been a substance more damaging to human health than [refined sugar](#). All one can say for refined sugar is that it tastes good, while greatly contributing to diabetes, [tooth decay](#) and obesity. Refined sugar is more of a drug than anything else, and provided less than zero benefit for Europe's health.

Who did the Portuguese recruit to raise that sugar? When they first began raising sugar in Brazil, they enslaved the natives to work on their plantations. The natives died off in about a generation, just as they did in the Caribbean, under the slave conditions the Portuguese subjected them to. As with the Spanish gold mines, silver mines and plantations, the Brazilian natives were considered expendable assets. When the natives were exterminated, the Portuguese began [importing African slaves](#). The sugar trade [brought more African slaves to the New World than anything else](#). The natives were all killed off, and tens of millions of Africans lost their lives to ensure that Europe was well stocked with a drug that ruined their health, but tasted good. Today the sugar industry devastates Northeastern Brazil, with about thirty million people enslaved to the sugar system. Growing sugar is also devastating to the soils where it is raised.^[61] The only place in the sugar empire that has tried beaking the sugar-growing habit is Cuba.

When England, France and the Netherlands came to the Empire Game in the 1600s, what were the benefits of their colonialism? The first thing they always looked for was gold. [Francis Drake](#) became England's richest private citizen by his surprise plundering of the Spanish Empire's Pacific ports, filling his ship with silver bought with countless native lives. The first Englishman who looked for gold instead of stealing it was [Martin Frobisher](#), who hauled hundreds of tons of fool's gold to England. [Walter Raleigh](#) was after gold too, a quest which cost him his life.

When the English established their first military beachhead in the New World at [Jamestown](#), the natives kept them alive with their corn and other food, which was the typical situation with all European invasions. If not for native food and help, the Europeans would have always died. The first thing the Jamestown invaders did was look for gold. As with Frobisher and Raleigh, they did not find any. Something had to economically justify the invasion, and it was discovered, for another great "benefit" to Europe: tobacco. Tobacco was the primary export from Jamestown and the region throughout the 1600s. As the Portuguese did in Brazil, the English imported captured Africans to get the work done. Tobacco brought Africans to America, to grow another [addictive substance](#) that ruined European health.

Only one product came to Europe in those early colonial days that had any genuine value: [fur](#). Fur was used as clothing to conserve body heat. Humans are naked, and have stolen the fur from animals ever since they migrated from their natural range in the tropics. In all the New World's plunder during those first two centuries, it was the only item of any intrinsic value. All the others had illusionary value, and in the case of gold, silver, sugar and tobacco, they ultimately damaged European society. For that, a hemisphere was depopulated and another continent's population (Africa) was devastated. When the French joined the game in North America, it sought the fur trade, and its early "help" [completely extinguished the Huron tribe](#).

When the United States got into the act, trappers soon followed the [Lewis and Clark](#)

expedition, completing the extermination of nearly all fur-bearing animals in the Northern Hemisphere. That fur "business" was engaged in by some of most ruthless and primitive humans of all time.[\[62\]](#) As with most interactions between indigenous and European cultures, the result of the fur trade was virtually an unmitigated disaster for the natives. The fur trade spread drunkenness, disease and viciousness throughout the western lands, and early robber baron capitalists such as John Jacob Astor became rich from the process that ultimately [swindled the natives out of their lands and lives](#).

Although the fur business was the only one that created some actual "wealth" for Europe, it was short-lived wealth, as the animals that provided the fur were driven to extinction. Beaver-skin hats were the rage, which drove the beaver to extinction in most of the United States. Bison robes were another short-lived fashion item, which was a native "industry," while the natives and bison lasted. "Wealth-producing" activity that is really a short-lived plunder is not really wealth producing, something that [Carl Sauer](#) remarked on. It is stealing wealth from future generations, and over time is a net reduction of wealth. The issue of creating or husbanding sustainable resources was completely alien to European thought. It is not being practiced to any degree of significance even today. Throughout the long centuries of the New World's rape, there were few observations that plundering resources like there was no tomorrow, would guarantee that there was no tomorrow. Ironically, one of the few to observe it was the first on the scene. Columbus, himself the architect of the hand-severing gold tribute system, said that the reckless squandering of native life by the Spaniards on Española would be detrimental in the end, [because dead slaves cannot perform any work](#). For the next four centuries, his voice was one of the few in the wilderness.

How much "benefit" did Europe receive from all that New World booty? Europeans had their teeth rot and developed diseases from the sugar, but it tasted good. They enjoyed tobacco; dying of the diseases it gave them. They had their economies harmed and in some cases destroyed by relying on the influx of gold and silver, thinking it was wealth. They wore fashionable and useful fur, while the fur-bearing animals lasted. They had natives make dyes that made fabric different colors. That was about it.

There was also another industry, although relatively minor as far as an export business: the forest "products" business. The forests were chopped down with abandon, especially in North America. The eastern United States was [deforested](#) as the white man's "civilization" progressed across the continent. The New World tropics have been gradually deforested, largely to produce export crops such as sugar, bananas, beef, coffee, and the trees also became an export crop as they were chopped down. A few rich landowners (mainly large corporations today) got the benefits, the people who did the work became virtual slaves to the system, the environments were devastated, and the white people enjoyed import crops such as sugar, bananas, coffee, cocaine, etc. The disaster continues today. Bringing the white man's ways was a disaster for the natives, but the white man benefited, somewhat.[\[63\]](#)

For those who came to the New World in those early days, they had other benefits that did not accrue directly to Europe. The Spanish soldiers got the dream of a lifetime as they raped every native woman they could. If it was not rape, they had harems of as many as eighty women for one man. They enjoyed the benefits of native slaves and concubines, while they lasted. The sexual relations between the Spanish soldiers and natives were virtually never romantic love. They were not relations of equality. The Spanish soldiers were exercising the conqueror's prerogative. They set themselves up as lords on the native backs. The English "settlers" stole the land from the natives, something that [their American descendants excelled at](#). They killed off countless [bison](#), [passenger pigeons](#) and fur-bearing animals while they lasted. They deforested many millions of acres in the name of "progress." Stealing native land, and enslaving and raping the natives were the "benefits" to the settlers. In addition, more than ten million Africans "migrated" to the New World in chains, while perhaps more [than thirty million Africans](#) did not survive the process.

Europe had so many wars that they had names such the Hundred Years' War, the Thirty Years' War, the Ten Years' War, the Seven Years' War, and the Seven Weeks' War. Other wars were named the Wars of the Roses (an English civil war which lasted 30 years, right on the heels of England's Hundred Years' War with France), King William's War, Queen Anne's War, King George's War, the War of Jenkins' Ear, the Carnatic Wars, the Crimean War, the Franco-Prussian War, The War of Austrian Succession, the War of Spanish Succession, the War of Polish Succession, the War of Bavarian Succession, the War of the Devolution, the Wars of Religion, the War of the Grand Alliance, and the Napoleonic Wars. There were five major Crusades mounted by the Catholic Church, with numerous smaller Crusades, and the [Albigensian Crusade](#). Later, Crusades became something that secular leaders could mount. Holy Roman Emperor Frederick II led a Crusade, only to have the Pope declare a Crusade on Frederick. Later, King Louis IX of France mounted two Crusades.

Most of the bloodshed occurred in wars fought between the European powers on European soil. The Thirty Years' War and the French Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars killed about nine million people in total, and nearly half were civilian casualties.[\[64\]](#) Others on that list were fought abroad, as the powers vied for the right to pillage the world, as with the French and Indian Wars, which included the wars of William, George and Anne. Then their imperial descendants fought their own wars, as with the Boer War. The European powers also had internal wars, such as the French Revolution, the English Revolution, the Russian Revolution, and the Revolutions of 1848 (numerous nations). Their colonies had wars to break free from the mother countries, as with the Mexican Revolution, the American Revolution, the [Haitian Revolution](#), the many [Latin American revolutions](#), and in the postwar years of the 20th century, there were revolutions throughout the colonized world.

The United States is Europe's most accomplished descendant. Since the Revolutionary War, the United States fought the War of 1812, constant wars against the [native population](#), pushing

the survivors across the continent. America also fought [the Mexican-American War](#), the [Civil War](#), the [Spanish-American War](#), and numerous armed interventions throughout Latin America, as [Smedley Butler](#) commented on. Since World War II, the United States has fought the Korean War, the [Vietnam War](#), the [Gulf War](#) and numerous smaller conflicts, such as bombing Laos, Cambodia, Libya, [Afghanistan](#), Sudan and [Yugoslavia](#). The United States invaded Grenada and [Panama](#), and helped overthrow the governments of [Guatemala](#), [Iran](#), [Chile](#) and dozens of other nations. The U.S. financed the [Indonesian genocide in East Timor](#), brought the slaughter of Cambodia into being, and financed slaughter in places such as [El Salvador](#) and [Nicaragua](#).

Finally, of course, there were two World Wars to top it off, followed by a forty year Cold War, and we may be heading for our third World War, one we may not survive. The current "[war on terror](#)" looks a lot like World War III's beginning. Some have called this period of global European domination the 500-year Reich. If humanity survives the coming transition, historians may look back to the white man's millennium of 1000 to 2000 AD and call it "The Thousand Year War." There were far more than 100 million war deaths in the 20th century, by far history's most violent century. The 19th century is a distant second at about 20 million deaths.[\[65\]](#) About 90% was initiated or performed by white men, nearly all of them Christians.

While some Jews enjoyed their lives in the Netherlands, and resettled in the New World and elsewhere, the great magnet of Poland drew the world's largest concentration of Jews. It did not last forever, however.

In 1648, the Thirty Years' War was ending, and Poland was feeling the strain of thirty years of war. Then the peasants were led to an uprising that targeted Jews. As usual, a power-hungry aristocrat manipulated the peasants to kill Jews, which led to tens of thousands of Jewish deaths, performed by peasants and Cossacks. That time the Jews could be "blamed" for their fate. The Jews had become prosperous middlemen and financiers, and managed a system that exploited the peasants. The peasants took it out on Jews, aggravated by elite manipulation. Many Jews fled west, and the English let some in, the first time in more than 350 years. They also fled to the Netherlands, Germany and near Strasbourg, part of present day France and part of the Holy Roman Empire then, the same empire that slaughtered the Jews around 1300 in numerous massacres, driving them to Poland in the first place.

When the Crusading armies took that detour in 1096 and massacred several thousand Jews on the way to the Holy Land, one observation was that those who committed the slaughter were not trained soldiers, but more like rabble, and they could not be controlled or kept from their actions. The slaughter was engaged in by Europe's lower classes, who found a way to vent their frustration on their hierarchical competitors.

Jews were usually slaughtered by mobs. However, the elite created the intellectual framework

that justified the murders. Thomas Aquinas wrote the influential works that further set the stage for the Inquisition. Other high-ranking Catholic officials wrote and published various treatises. The official manual for witch hunting was the *Malleus Maleficarum*, published in 1488. Pope Innocent VIII wrote the work's preface, giving it papal approval. The framework for witch-hunting was developed by elites, but common people carried out the oppression. Most of the "witches" who died in those years were poor, although as there was money in it from confiscating the accused's property, the accusation began targeting people of higher economic status. Their accusers were also poor.

The "investigations" and sentences were carried out by officialdom, but the executions of witches, heretics and *conversos* were often attended by mobs of average folks, in an often-festive atmosphere. People would come from miles around to watch the executions. In America, when they had public executions, even [public lynchings](#), and the people came from miles around, sometimes undertaking great journeys to witness the executions. Why? Usually those being executed came from the same social strata as those watching them. Witches, heretics and Jews were not dying for anything that anybody would call a crime today. Those who eagerly watched the executions bore significant responsibility for those people's deaths. The elites who invented and ran the system also bore responsibility.

If I [had joined the Air Force Academy](#) and become a pilot, I may have dropping bombs onto Iraq, wiping out one of their water treatment facilities, which America specifically targeted during the [Gulf War](#). Wiping out one of those water treatment facilities led to the deaths of thousands of children. If I had done that, how responsible would I have been for the deaths of those children? How responsible would my father have been for those deaths, influencing me into believing that being a soldier was what turned me into a man? How responsible would the person have been who fueled my plane? How about the one who loaded my bombs? How about my commanding officer? How about George Bush? How about the crew who built my plane at the defense contractor's factory in America? How about Saddam Hussein? How about [Winston Churchill](#), who was an integral part of Britain's colonial exploitation of that region many years ago, setting in motion dynamics that are still playing out? How about the media reporters and others who played a part in the [disinformation campaign](#) by the United States government, uncritically repeating the story of the Iraqi [incubator incident](#) and [George Bush lying about Iraq's intentions for Saudi Arabia](#)? The media should have known better, given the government's record of lying to the public, especially regarding matters of warfare. How about all those mothers and housewives around America who tied yellow ribbons around trees, waved flags and screamed, "Support our troops!"? How about the 90% of American citizens who approved of what we did to Iraq? How about me, filling my gas tank with cheap gasoline, partly bought with the deaths of those Iraqi children?

A lawyer's response to that list might be interesting. Human beings do not have the capacity to rationally assess "responsibility" for those participants I just mentioned. Does that mean they are not responsible? The person buying cheap gasoline is not as responsible as George Bush

was when he lied to the public about Iraq's intentions regarding Saudi Arabia, [stonewalled Iraq's attempts to negotiate a withdrawal](#), and authorized an attack that amounted to biological warfare, initiating a series of events that has taken more than a million lives in Iraq so far. The person buying that cheap gasoline still has *some* responsibility. The public cheering the post-war parades has *some* responsibility for it. In order for the system to work as it does, it needs willing participants. Just as the [cancer racket needs lemmings](#) marching into the oncology wards, if the American public did not cheer and march to war, there would be no war.

The masses bear *some* responsibility, and arguably nearly all of it. Part of my motivation for pursuing free energy with [Dennis Lee](#) was eliminating the industrialized world's dependence on Middle East oil. I foresaw what is happening in Iraq today, and far worse (which may yet come to pass), when I was a teenager. I have devoted my adult life to preventing what is happening in the Middle East today. If there is any American *not* responsible for what is going on Iraq today, I must contend for the honor; yet, nearly every time I put gasoline my car, I think about those dying Iraqi children. I think about the bloodshed in [Nigeria](#), [East Timor](#) and elsewhere so the oil companies can keep pumping that cheap oil, and we can have cheap gasoline. I know that I bear *some* responsibility what is happening in Iraq today.

The net can be cast much wider than America. All of those so-called diplomats at the United Nations, supposedly representing the people of their nations, nearly all knuckled under to United States and British pressure. If the diplomats at the United Nations had any spine, there likely would never have been a Gulf War, Iraq would have negotiated a withdrawal, and all those Iraqis would not have died. How about the people in those nations, whose representatives acted so cowardly? People can talk about elites all day long, and how they do not really represent the people of their nation. It is a Political Science 101 concept that every government, to some degree, needs the consent of the governed in order to exist. Using that perspective, one it is difficult to deny, every person on earth bears *some* responsibility for what is happening in Iraq today.

Being responsible does not mean feeling guilty, not guilt in the way the West defines it. The root of the word responsible means being able to respond. My goal with making the case for our responsibility is getting across the idea that we can all *do something about it*. Some are in better positions to act than others. It is within each of us to decide what *we will do*. Just *not cheering the violence* would be a big step for most Americans. What goes around comes around. Those who today rationalize the death and destruction in Iraq as a noble undertaking, or heap all the responsibility onto Saddam Hussein's shoulders, will one day, usually in another lifetime, have the roles reversed, suffering and dying while others look on, rationalizing their fate while benefiting from it. Then they may realize that killing, exploitation and destruction are never "justified."

This topic will end with what Noam Chomsky has said on this issue, from a "rational" perspective. Chomsky says that in the area of warfare, for instance, those in society that look

at the violence and atrocities with clinical detachment, equanimity and apathy bear a great burden of responsibility for Hitler and others like him coming into power. Hitler could not appear on the scene if it were not for the complacent acquiescence and complicity of the masses.[\[66\]](#) It is easy to blame the Hitlers and Husseins of the world, and much more difficult to stop shuffling along with the herd, helping to create the herd that is so easily manipulated.

Jews participated in Europe's rape of the world. Jewish financiers helped fund New World expeditions, they owned many of the ships used in the slave trade, and were part of the money economy that craved gold and silver. They were largely forced into those positions, but they could have migrated to the Islamic world and been treated better than Europe did, but for a number of reasons, such as increased economic opportunity, the Jews stayed in Europe, although the Middle East was more their "natural" home.

The Modern Age and Jews

There are various lines of demarcation used to separate one period of history from another, all being artificial to a degree. The waning of Church power was critical to Europe's evolution. The Thirty Years' War was a war of the Counter Reformation, waged by the Catholic Church to bring Protestants back into the fold.

The Thirty Years' War marked the end of Catholic military attempts to regain its religious hegemony in Europe. The influence of Catholic dogma eroded. Luther initiated a movement that did not go away. Killing up to a million people in France to wipe out [Catharism](#) kept the Catholic Empire together awhile longer. In the late 1300s and early 1400s, there was the spectacle of the Great Schism, as various "popes" vied for the throne. At one point three people declared themselves the one, true Pope. It did not inspire the flock to watch such power struggles among "holy" men.

Luther's revolution would not be stopped, no matter how many millions of people were slaughtered by the Catholic armies. By 1650, Northern Europe had become Protestant and would never reenter the Catholic fold. Dogma was eroding in other ways. In 1543, a devout and powerful Polish Catholic who was strongly opposed to Luther's work, [Nicolaus Copernicus](#), had a book published on his deathbed. Publishing it while he was dying turned out to be a smart move. In 1514, Copernicus was invited by the Lateran Council to help reform the calendar that had become quite inaccurate. That led him to observing the sun and moon, which led him to propose a radical theory: the earth orbited the sun.

It is impossible to say exactly what Copernicus thought, but it appears that he was not worried about the Church's reaction to his work.[\[67\]](#) He should have been. For the next sixty years, few embraced his work. In 1600, Dominican monk Giordano Bruno was burned alive in Rome

for his heresies, one of the most significant being his belief that the universe was infinitely boundless and the earth revolved around the sun. Bruno was not really a scientist as the term is defined today, but more of a mystic (although the world's greatest scientists were all [mystics](#)), but his execution would put the work of a seminal scientist at risk not long afterward.

In 1609-1610, a devout Italian Catholic was making and using a new instrument: the telescope. In January of 1610, Galileo Galilei saw the moons of Jupiter through his homemade telescope, and observed that not everything in the cosmos revolves around the earth. He announced his findings, which soon had him examined by the Inquisition. During the next generation, Galileo had conflicts with Church authorities, and in 1633 was brought to his knees, forced to recant his statements. The earth was the center of the universe because the Church said so. Galileo was not executed, but spent the rest of his life under house arrest. Yet, he resolutely held to his conviction that observation was more important than merely referring to something an ancient scholar wrote about the nature of reality. If Galileo could see with his own eyes that moons orbited Jupiter, then they did, and the Church's decrees could do nothing to change it.

The work and ordeal of Galileo is seen as the beginning of the age of science in Europe. His treatment at the hands of the Church terrified other men of reason, and Rene Descartes, a French contemporary of Galileo's, was decidedly intimidated by Galileo's treatment, backing off from Copernican philosophy when it was pronounced heretical by the Church. Science and observation eventually prevailed, but not without a cost. Joseph Schwartz makes the case in *The Creative Moment* that Galileo, and later Newton, couched their work in mathematics to make it less susceptible to the Church's attacks. Schwartz argued that those strategic decisions sent science awry, making it rely on mathematics too much, making it more occult than it needed to be. I have never run into a scientific theory that could not largely be explained without mathematics. Math is useful, but many textbooks and other presentations of scientific theories that get so deeply into mathematical minutia that the basic theories themselves get lost under the microscope. Math *has* been used to make science less accessible to the masses, and even ends up confounding scientists at times, and that is a tragedy.

Galileo, Descartes and Newton were major figures in liberating thought from religious dogma, although all were devoutly religious. The scientific revolution that was beginning, along with the failed Counter Reformation, along with the scramble for the earth by the European powers, eventually made life better for Jews. Jews were not without their own intellectual intolerance, and the probably greatest Jewish philosopher of all time, Dutch citizen Baruch Spinoza (1632-1677), was excommunicated by the Synagogue for his rationalist philosophy.

After the Polish massacres in 1650, for the next 150 years, Jewish life in Christian Europe was better than it had ever been. Although many Jews fled Poland, it still had Europe's largest Jewish population. During those years, Jews slowly migrated to the New World, to parts of

Western Europe, and they were not being slaughtered.

During the 1700s, and gaining steam after 1750, a movement began in France called the Enlightenment. The Enlightenment was a movement that stressed the power of reason and the common bonds of humanity. It was the maturation of the work of people such as Descartes and Spinoza. Its goal was replacing dogma with reason. It took the Protestant Revolution a step further, and largely abandoned religion. It was a heady time in Europe. As with all movements, its promise was much greater than its realized potential.

The Renaissance was a movement that spread throughout Europe between the 1400s and 1600s. Some the greatest art humanity has yet produced came from that period. Social advances were still limited, although the Renaissance was related to the Reformation. Artists were largely subservient to a system of royal patronage, and their artistic themes were still largely religious. While the Renaissance was flourishing and humanism developed in European thought, Machiavelli and others were writing their treatises, and witches, books and heretics burned across Europe, and the New World was being [quickly shorn of its native population](#). Nevertheless, one can see glimmers in Renaissance thought that blossomed during the Enlightenment.

In some ways, musical art reached its apex during the Enlightenment, with figures such as Mozart, Beethoven and Hadyn producing masterpieces that may not be possible today. Although the artists were still largely subservient to the royal patronage system, sardonic paintings such as Goya's were being created. Art was becoming more political. Revolutionary political writing became the backbone of the American and French revolutions.

In theory, the Enlightenment would make the lives of Jews better. Its promise was greater than the reality. Prussian Emperor Frederick the Great was supposedly a man of the Enlightenment, and he passed a law regarding Jews in 1750. The law was a mixed blessing, which distinguished between "ordinary" and "extraordinary" Jews, and enacted some oppressive economic measures, but the Enlightenment *did* improve the lives of European Jews. In 1773, the King of Sweden allowed Jews to migrate there, and in 1782, the Austrian Emperor issued an edict of tolerance for the Jews. However, where the Enlightenment really helped Jews was across the ocean, in the British colonies of North America. There were about a thousand Jews in the colonies, a number that would grow greatly. The Enlightenment began in France, and was probably partly inspired by the Native Americans' egalitarian societies, which many Frenchmen had profound respect for. One endemic problem of settling the Americas was the settlers running off and "[going native](#)." European settlers often saw the native way of life as superior to European ways, and ran off to join the Indian tribes. The converse, Indians running to join the white man's "civilization," [almost never occurred](#).^[68]

Enlightenment ideals became influential, and men such as [Thomas Jefferson](#) were children of the Enlightenment. Again, that is relative. Jefferson was a slave owner. [George Washington](#)

was a slave-owning aristocrat who married into more money, and made it big in land speculation, stealing native land. There is significant evidence that the United States modeled its constitution after the [Iroquois Confederacy](#), which had the world's only functioning democracy at that time, something that profoundly influenced [Ben Franklin](#).

The Enlightenment was influential, and one tenet was religious toleration, something nearly impossible to find during Europe's previous 1500 years. Much Enlightenment theorizing on religion was a breath of fresh air that could not have been published earlier. Unfortunately, in rejecting religion, they also ultimately rejected [spirituality](#), although many were "deists." In ways, the Enlightenment helped pave the way for the crass materialism that is seen today in [organized science](#), [economic theory](#) and other areas of Western thought.

Nevertheless, America's [Founding Fathers](#) embraced religious tolerance, although they were in many ways as racist, bigoted, violent, greedy and elitist as could be expected of European descendents. The "Great Experiment" of the United States proved quite beneficial for European Jews. Jews were sometimes prominent supporters of the American Revolution. When the Constitution was finally ratified, it specifically stated that there would be no state religion. Fundamentalist Christian beliefs aside, America has never officially been a Christian nation. In the West, a secular nation was a big improvement over Europe's past 1500 years. Still, nearly all Americans were Christians, and while they could not quite shake their heritage of religious bigotry, Jews were treated better in America than in any European country. In the West, America became the Jews' best friend.

While the U.S. Constitution was being ratified, another revolution influenced by the Enlightenment happened on European soil. The Enlightenment began in France, and the French Revolution was supposed to be a movement of the common man, seeking equality for all. The Jews had great hopes for the [French Revolution](#). In 1784, King Louis XVI abolished the head tax on the Jews of Alsace, and the Bastille was stormed in 1789. In 1791, Jews were officially emancipated in France. It was not a complete emancipation. The decree was only issued after intense political battles, and part of the decree put the government in charge of collecting debts owed to Jews in eastern France. That addendum was not inserted for the Jews' benefit. Nevertheless, Jews were officially free in Europe for the first time. Ghettos were torn down wherever the French had influence.

Along with the step taken forward, events were set in motion that would later haunt the Jews. Voltaire was the leading Enlightenment philosopher, and his later works attacked religion and attacked the Jews for their "superstitions," and accused them of only being good at usury. The Jewish faith was largely what held the Jewish people together. Not all Jews were happy with the anti-religious nature of the Enlightenment and the French Revolution, and one Enlightenment outcome, influenced by Voltaire's anti-Jewish writings, was the development of a secular form of anti-Semitism.

In 1797, the Netherlands and Venetian Republic also emancipated their Jews, under pressure from France. Life began looking good for European Jews. The French Revolution became a bloodbath, with the guillotine being invented and getting avid use. Then a new kind of dictator grabbed power, crowned himself emperor, and [Napoleon](#) initiated a series of wars that led to more European bloodbaths. The French Revolutionary and Napoleonic wars killed about five million people, more than forty percent of them civilians. Although Napoleon is a French national hero, many mystics consider Napoleon the world's first anti-Christ, Hitler the second, and the third may be about to make his appearance.

There are many conspiracy theories surrounding those days, with the founding of the Illuminati, the machinations of the Jewish Rothschild family of financiers, the Freemasons and the Founding Fathers, etc. While there *are* many secret societies, and to a degree they *do* pull the world's strings, and maybe a lot of them, they do not really have that much real power. They can pull the strings because the Great Herd is so easily manipulated. If the herd woke up, the [games of manipulation](#) would end.

While Jews were freed in parts of Western Europe, events in Poland were less auspicious. Russian imperialism was bumping up against Western Europe. Between 1772 and 1795, Russia annexed and partitioned Poland, acquiring the world's largest Jewish community. While Western Europe was being fitfully "enlightened" regarding Jews, Russia was behind the times. The czars had little love for their new Jewish subjects, and laws such as taking Jewish boys from their families at age twelve and turning them into soldiers were little short of genocidal policies.

In Germany, the Enlightenment brought with it another trend that led to the Holocaust. Much of today's Germany was once part of the Holy Roman Empire; the empire that tried reviving the Roman Empire's glory days, wedded to its state religion of Christianity. The Holy Roman Empire began in 800 AD, when Pope Leo III crowned Charlemagne the first Holy Roman Emperor. Its ideal of a union of church and state did not last that long, but the empire still existed when Napoleon's armies invaded in 1806. Napoleon was socially progressive, in a sense, by enacting social reforms such as guaranteed rights, freedom of religion, centralizing the school systems, etc. They were not voluntary for the subject states that he conquered, while installing his relatives on several thrones. Germany was not as swept up into the Enlightenment as England and France were, and when Napoleon rammed the Enlightenment down their throats, the Germans were not happy with it. With the occupation of the Germanic region, Jews there were given rights they never had before. While from the Jewish perspective it was a positive development, the humiliating reign of Napoleon created a yearning in German people for the good old days of imperial glory. They longed for the good old days, and part of the good old days was Jews knowing their place.

Thus began a trend in anti-Semitism that waxed and waned during the next century, culminating in the rise of Hitler. Jews became German scapegoats. Part of the relative

prosperity of their French and English rivals was due to the fact that Germany came late to the global empire game. The Prussian Empire was a northerly empire in the German regions, and they became Europe's most formidable army. Yet, they did not have vast imperial hinterlands to plunder as England and France did. The industrialized world is "rich" not because they are so smart, but because they enslaved the rest of the world to attain their position today. That latecomer factor with Germany had a lot to do with the world wars. The same went for Japan, imperial wannabes who came to the game late, but England, France, Russia and the United States already controlled most of the globe. Even the [Spanish, Dutch and Portuguese](#) empires still had some life in them. Japan and Germany did not have much they could call their own, from an imperial perspective, and they nurtured their ambition over generations.

In the meantime, the [Industrial Revolution](#), partly a product of the Enlightenment, was taking off. What is today call capitalism was first named by Scottish Enlightenment philosopher Adam Smith in *The Wealth of Nations*, published in 1776. In 1769, Scottish inventor [James Watt](#) patented the modern steam engine, which powered the Industrial Revolution. Capitalism and Industry created a new phenomenon in Europe. Great wealth was theoretically being created in the factories that sprouted up across Europe. It was not royalty getting rich, but a new class of people called capitalists. It was a new form of exploitation. How beneficial capitalism has been for humanity is doubtful, and the issue not yet resolved. One positive thing that capitalism and industry did was help to make the institution of chattel slavery obsolete. People did not need the muscle and sinew of black men when a machine could do the job. The rich did not need to own people any more; they could rent them. The defenders of slavery made the not-easily-rebutted argument that somebody takes better care of something they own, than something they rent.

Ironically, the American Revolution inspired the French Revolution, which in turn inspired the [Haitian Revolution in 1791](#). The Haitian Revolution was history's only successful slave rebellion, where a land of slaves freed themselves. Although America was the "land of the free," it had nearly a million African slaves when the revolution began, and what happened in Haiti was ominous for the [Founding Fathers](#), many of them slave owners, such as Jefferson, Washington and Patrick Henry. Those Virginia planters built their fortunes on the triple-evil of raising tobacco with slave labor on stolen native land. Their worst nightmare would be for their slaves to stand up in the tobacco fields, shaking their fists, shouting, "Give me liberty, or give me death!" The United States was about the last nation to officially recognize the Haitian Revolution, and did so largely due to the [Civil War](#)'s political exigencies.

By 1840, there were still only 15,000 Jews in America. They did not have full citizen rights. They could not vote at first, and in Connecticut, for instance, full citizenship was granted only to Christians. After three decades of bitter political fighting, the "Jew Bill" was finally passed in Maryland in 1826, giving Jews the right to vote, hold office and practice law, but Jews still had restrictions on their rights. Although the First Amendment of the Constitution forbade the recognition of religion, the states all passed pro-Christian, and necessarily anti-Jewish, laws.

The European heritage of America could not be completely shaken, and anti-Semitism was an integral part of the American experience.

Jews in America were not slaughtered as they were in Europe. They did not have to wear Jew clothes. The main reasons Jews got that treatment was because of American society's dynamics. There were few Jews in America at the beginning, and Americans were obsessed with [slaughtering and dispossessing Native Americans](#) for most of the nineteenth century. There was also another group more feared than Jews: African slaves. In Europe, they did not have to contend with a large population of slaves of another race, nor a race they were exterminating to give them "living space."

If the United States were not so intent on clearing the continent of its natives and keeping its slaves in chains, the Jewish American experience may have been a starkly different one. In the 1840s, the Industrial Revolution was [rolling along in Britain](#), complementing its colonial hegemony. America was also industrializing, but was slower, partly because it was [busy securing the North American continent](#).

By 1830, the movement that began with the humanists, and was furthered by the Enlightenment, flowered in the liberal movements in Europe between 1830 and 1880. Industrialization may have had something to do with the slaves being freed, but factory workers were not much better off. While the capitalists were getting rich, workers were severely exploited. It led to unionization movements and other attempts to improve the workers' lot. Those years were the era of Charles Dickens' writings. Along with the worker movement were political movements. In the 1830s and 1840s there were revolutionary activities throughout Europe, and along with the increasing freedoms won by workers and other commoners, Jews were emancipated across Europe. In 1847, one of Jewry's greatest theorists envisioned a classless system, and proposed a revolution to permanently end the exploitative rule of the European oligarchy. Karl Marx's *Communist Manifesto* was a call to arms for Europe's oppressed.

Jewish emancipation activities began with Belgium in 1830, and continued with Denmark in 1848, Prussia in 1850, Norway in 1851, Sweden in 1865, Italy in 1870, Switzerland in 1874, and Bulgaria in 1878, along with many other European nations. Not all European nations became enlightened regarding Jews, however. Spain continued four hundred years of anti-Semitic policies, and in 1914, Jews still had no rights in Spain. That also went for Russia and Romania.

In America, Jewish migration began flooding in. Between 1830 and 1865, the Jewish population in America rose from 4500 to 150,000. Other European immigrants came, as American immigration took off. Between 1830 and 1870 the American population tripled, from 13 to 39 million. Between 1870 and 1900 it nearly doubled, from 39 to 76 million. Europe's oppressed masses were flooding into America. The United States population nearly doubled

again from 1900 to 1950, from 76 to 150 million. It has nearly doubled again since 1950, to more than 270 million today. In about 1850, the slave issue in America became heated, and American xenophobia became an issue. Native Americans were [virtually extinct east of the Mississippi River](#) by 1840, and Americans focused their neuroses onto the newcomers. Jews were not the only oppressed group. Irish and German immigrants also felt the heat.

In Poland and Russia, Jews were oppressed. Under Alexander II the Jewish situation improved somewhat, but when he was assassinated in 1881, the Jewish Russian situation became grim. Jew slaughters, called pogroms, became commonplace throughout the Russian Empire. Jews were expelled from Moscow in 1882. There were more than five million Jews in the Russian Empire in 1880. They fled with the initiation of the pogroms. In 1881, Eastern European Jews were only 0.9% of annual immigration into America. By 1887, it had risen to 6.5%.[\[69\]](#) 1.7 million Jews immigrated to America between 1890 and 1914. If there is anything that I can view in American history with some pride, it is that it was a haven for Europe's oppressed people, although at awesome cost to Native Americans and their lands.

Jews were not exactly welcomed to America. Beginning during the 1840s and 1850s, as American xenophobia increased, anti-Semitism began rearing its head, and intensified during the Civil War, with both the North and South blaming Jews for the Civil War's vagaries. [General Ulysses S. Grant](#) expelled Jews from his military district in Tennessee in 1862, blaming them for the mayhem surrounding the war, something Lincoln apparently did not really mind Grant doing, but he rescinded the order for political reasons.[\[70\]](#)

Publicly vented anti-Semitism during the Civil War became heated and extreme, but subsided after the war. Nevertheless, America was well on its way to becoming a thoroughly anti-Semitic culture. By 1900, the United States was quite anti-Semitic, but far from alone. The gains Jews had been making in Western Europe began eroding. In France, the first Western European nation that emancipated its Jews, was the birthplace of a new anti-Semitic fervor that helped lead to the Holocaust.

In 1853, the French diplomat Comte Joseph de Gobineau published a book that distinguished between Aryan virtue and Jewish degeneracy. In 1847 and 1863, Frenchman Ernst Renan published books that argued for the inferiority of Jews. In 1886, Edouard Drumont published *La France juive*, an infamous anti-Semitic tract. Those writings were hugely popular and influenced millions of Europeans, and anti-Semitism was on the rise throughout Europe again. Then there was World War I, the Russian Revolution, the fiscal collapse of Germany after the war, the Great Depression and the rise of Hitler and Fascism. Those days are well known, so I will not belabor them here. What I wish to make clear is that anti-Semitism was not an aberration in Germany. Anti-Semitism was universal throughout the Christian world in those days, and it was most muted in the United States.

It is probably an integral part of the human condition at this time, but when people are under

stress they often lash out at others, and during times of war and other calamities, Jews were nearly always singled out for persecution in the Christian world. From the first Crusade to the Great Depression, Jews had a difficult time when their host nation underwent strain. That was partly due to the "cohesion" of the Jews, keeping themselves separate and distinct from the majority population.

In America, the Civil War brought on a virulent strain of anti-Semitism. It gradually escalated with the millions of Jewish immigrants that fled Europe, and after World War I it erupted into outright hatred of Jews in many places. In the early 1900s, a document emerged that was almost certainly a forgery by the Russians during the pogrom days. It was titled the *Protocols of the Elders of Zion*. That document has given life to various conspiracy theories of Jews taking over the world. It is nearly incoherent in places. Anti-Semitism is alive and well today, with many right wing groups still believing that the *Protocols* are genuine, and that Anne Frank's diary is a fake.

The [Israeli government](#) is ruthless. They are grabbing for as much power as they can, as all governments do. [Menachem Begin](#) was little more than a gangster. Every government exploits its people. Israeli government officials do not read the *Protocols* nightly before bedtime, but they probably study Machiavelli. [Self-serving](#), power-hungry people run every government. That is the nature of the beast today. When anybody looks at an ethnic or racial group, thinking that they are the problem, they are not seeing the full picture, and are easily manipulated against their own interests. Fortunately, in Israel recently they are beginning to teach their children the nation's history more truthfully, with textbooks giving more factual accounts of the Six Days War, where Israel was anything but the underdog, and their textbooks for the first time mention the word "Palestinian." That progress has been undone by the Israeli war against the Palestinians since 2000.

The American right-wingers who see Israel as a problem, standing in the way of world peace, are right. Yet, so is the United States, and far more so. The Jews are not taking over the world, the capitalists already have. They are not one and the same. A lust for power and [greed](#) are not limited to any one ethnic or religious group, although Europeans and their descendants have refined it to a science. There is one aspect of the Jewish journey worth mentioning: peculiarly Jewish pathologies are partly due to the persecution they endured for so long. Being forced to hide their identities, and fleeing back and forth across Europe, while the only "valuable" things they could take during their flight were gold and jewelry, probably created neuroses and fears common to the Jewish people. All oppressed people have their characteristic pathologies, largely due to their journeys.

[Gary Wean](#) stumbled into a dark cabal of gangsters that runs Ventura County. Their influence appears to be vast. Gary found that many of them were Jewish. He apparently stumbled onto Jewish organized crime activities, which robbed the taxpayers of billions of dollars. The biggest gangsters *run the government*. There are probably Jewish gangsters with plenty of

influence in California government and elsewhere, as in the federal government. Again, those are [self-serving](#) Jews. They seem to have a racial/ethnic allegiance, just as organized crime figures do everywhere. The Mafia has its Italian brotherhood. The Chinese have their triads. Japan has its Yakuza. There is the Mexican Mafia. There is the Irish mob. People such as [George Bush](#) help run the Northern European Mafia, perhaps the world's most powerful organized crime group. At the game's highest levels, the lust for power is colorblind, and there might even be a woman or two playing there.

In significant ways, the Jews of Israel are treating the Palestinians worse than Hitler treated the Jews in the 1930s. It is extremely saddening to watch people who should have learned a big lesson from their own history, doing the same thing to others. Children who are beaten by their parents often grow up to beat their children. People cannot seem to keep themselves from inflicting onto others what happened to them. When the Jews said, "never again," after the death camps were opened, they meant "never again" to Jews, not "never again" to anybody. If they could do it to others, they would, and with the Palestinians, they have. Noam Chomsky has written extensively about that phenomenon, a Zionist Jew himself who lived in a kibbutz.

In Europe, anti-Semitism was probably most muted in Britain. Britain made the first legal move to give the Jews a "homeland," with the Balfour Declaration in 1917. For Arabs who had been living in Palestine for thousands of years, dumping a Jewish state on top of them was not salutary. In 1917, of the 600,000 people living in Palestine, perhaps 100,000 were Jewish, and they had largely come there during the previous generation, initiated by the Russian pogroms, and the settlements were almost completely funded by the legendary Rothschild family (and naturally the subject of many conspiracy theories). Although Arab people had been more tolerant of Jews than any other people, most did not like the idea of their land becoming a Jewish state.

European Jews probably would not have much wanted to relocate to Palestine if they had not been subject to a millennium of persecution in Europe. I am half-Scandinavian, and I have no yearning to move back to Norway, although the Vikings did not have the "Promised Land" myths that Jews had. The Jewish "homeland" efforts by the Europeans were in some way related to the African "homeland" effort by America after the slaves were freed, creating new countries in Africa, [such as Liberia](#), so they could ship all the "niggers" back to Africa. There was certainly some altruism with those homeland plans, but there was also a motivation to export undesirable people.

European imperial ambition had been nibbling at the margins of the [Ottoman Empire](#) for centuries, and by 1900, British and French imperialism had conquered the Middle East. It was the logical conclusion of Britain's quest for global hegemony. A quarter of the globe was under British rule in 1914. As with other empires at the height of its power, the decline would soon come, and Britain would be unseated from its imperial perch by its offspring and rival, the

United States. The 1990s may be eventually seen as the beginning of the end of the [American Empire](#). Our economic hegemony has been deteriorating for a generation, as Britain's had for a generation before their empire disintegrated.

Most Middle East friction today is obviously related to it sitting on the world's biggest oil reserves. The current tragedy of [Iraq](#) is only the latest in a century of the white man's greedy meddling in Arab affairs, visiting disaster onto them.

While Britain was carving out a homeland for Jews in Palestine during World War I, wresting it from the Turks, anti-Semitism in Europe would soon reach all-time highs. When World War I began, many Jews saw Russia as their mortal enemy and Germany as their savior. When the German army freed Poland from Russia, Polish Jews thought they had been delivered from the enemy, and at that time, they were. Jews in Britain were reluctant to enlist to fight Germany, when it was freeing the Jews of Poland and Russia. After World War I was over, anti-Semitism subsided in some places, while it took off elsewhere. There were pogroms in Poland and the Ukraine immediately after the war, but Jews shared the general prosperity of the 1920s, and they did not significantly migrate to Palestine until the Great Depression hit and anti-Semitism began its final, tragic climb.

Arabs resisted Jewish/British efforts in Palestine, the British did not help it by diplomatic bungling, and Britain originally restricted Jewish immigration to Palestine, then opened it back up in the 1920s, but few Jews migrated there. A vocal Jewish faction was fervently anti-Zionist, and anti-Zionist fervor from the Jews themselves hampered the deal with Britain. Jews led the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia, and throughout the West people began equating Jews with Communists. To a degree that perception was true, as the classless, collective spirit of Marx was related to the kibbutz tradition of the Jews in Palestine, first begun in 1906 (Marx was partly inspired by Native American societies), but what happened in Russia was starkly different from what Marx had envisioned. It became another power grab, and a bloodbath for Jews.

An effect of the Enlightenment and the social movements of the 1800s was a new kind of Jew. Marx was one of them, as was Leon Trotsky and Rosa Luxemburg. They were non-Jewish Jews, and were a significant fraction of Jews. They saw themselves as human beings whose Jewishness was a byproduct of the social structure in their host nations. They were the Jews behind the Communist movements, and they felt that when the political-social changes happened that overthrew capitalism and the social conditions it helped create, they would all become just people. No class, no ethnicity, just people. In short, they denied their Jewishness, as it is commonly understood. They saw themselves as completely secularized, de-ethnicized, and highly politicized. It is a fascinating ideal, but it has not yet been attained on earth. What happened in the Soviet Union was a grotesque caricature of attempting that ideal, mainly because it was not voluntary. They were going to force uniformity onto humanity. Banning religion altogether was part of the program. It was forced secularization.

They took the Enlightenment to the worst possible extreme. The Bolshevik Revolution became very bloody. It became another power grab, not a realization of humanity's unity. Yet, Jews became identified with that revolution, but when it came time to take it out on Jews, "Jewish" Jews were slaughtered, and about 70,000 Jews were murdered in the civil war that raged in the Ukraine in the 1920s. Across Eastern Europe, Jewish communities were attacked because they were associated, however inaccurately, with Communism, leading to many deaths.

Meanwhile in America, the Communist Revolution scared our capitalist society. Henry Ford owned *The Dearborn Independent*, and in 1920 the paper began running a series of articles attacking Jews, an attack that ran for almost two years solid, and prominently featured *The Protocols of Zion*. Henry Ford was one of the most committed anti-Semites that America ever had. Another noted anti-Semite was Charles Lindbergh, the hero of transatlantic flight.

At the same time Ford mounted an all-out propaganda attack on Jews, Germany was dealing with the disastrous aftermath of World War I. Both World Wars were incidents where the West battled over world control. Germany came late to the Industrial Revolution, and they were not a traditional maritime nation as other Great Powers were. When Germany finally came to the imperial table, there were only crumbs left for them. Britain, France, Russia and the United States controlled most of the globe, and the other European powers had imperial domains that were relatively adequate, although the empires of Spain, Portugal and the Netherlands were but a shadow of their former glory. Germany took what it could, and lost the battle. Instead of coming to a responsible understanding of Germany's motivation, or even looking at the iniquities they themselves inflicted upon the world, the "winners" of World War I foisted on Germany onerous war reparations and took most of its empire, which contributed to a series of events that damaged the German economy.

In the early 1920s a failed artist and soldier, who hated the humiliation Germany had been subjected to at war's end, gained inspiration from Henry Ford's attacks of the Jews, and also lauded Martin Luther's diatribes against the Jews. The man would later tell the *Detroit News* that his inspiration was Henry Ford. That failed artist's name? Adolf Hitler.^[71] The anti-Jewish diatribes of one of America's greatest industrialists and the father of Protestantism directly inspired Hitler.

Anti-Jewish discrimination was widespread in America. Again, although American Jews had it better than in any other Western nation, it was not wonderful. In the 1920s, the industries that practiced discriminatory hiring practices against the Jews were: utilities, banks, insurance companies, publishing houses, engineering and architectural firms, advertising agencies, school districts, major industrial firms, hospitals, universities, and law firms.^[72] Help wanted ads of the day specifically stated that only Christians need apply. The peak year for that type of discrimination was in 1926. An examination of 27,000 job openings found that 90% discriminated against Jews. As in Europe, the careers and jobs Jews held were the ones they

were forced into, when all other avenues of gainful employment were closed to them, and America was where Western Jews *had it the best*.

In 1927, there were more than four million Jews in America, for the world's single-greatest concentration of Jews. After more than a century of Russia's brutal rule, Poland won its independence during World War I as the Russian Empire collapsed during the revolution. When Wall Street collapsed and the Great Depression began in 1929, Poland and the Soviet Union contained about three million Jews each. In 1924, the U.S. began setting immigration quotas by nationality, which greatly reduced the Jewish immigration to America. One consequence was an increase in immigration to Palestine.

The Great Depression was a global event, and Germany's recovering economy was hammered by the Depression. In the depths of the Great Depression, as national desperation vaulted people like Hitler into power, Franklin Roosevelt was desperately trying to flog the U.S. economy back to a semblance of health. 1933 was the darkest year of the Great Depression. During 1933, my father's parents [traveled back and forth across America](#), *Grapes of Wrath* style, trying to find work and food. The Dust Bowl drove them out of Kansas where they had been raised, and they lived in Arkansas, Colorado, Wyoming and Idaho before hearing about jobs in the shipyards in Bellingham, Washington. When my father was born in 1936, his mother was so malnourished that my father was born with rickets, weighed four pounds and nearly died. He was the smallest child in his class until a growth spurt at age fifteen.

Toward the Holocaust

As with the [JFK assassination](#) and other controversies, if somebody wants to have their sanity challenged, they can spend time assimilating the various points of view regarding the years 1933 to 1945, especially pertaining to European Jews and World War II. In many far right circles, Hitler was a tragic hero who lost. The [Jewish Holocaust never happened or was overblown](#), according to some "scholarship." There are those who criticize the Holocaust deniers, and those who criticize them. Another perspective is that the [German people were largely responsible for the Holocaust](#). Another perspective is that [Hitler was nearly solely responsible for it](#). Another perspective is that America and the West had a hand in letting it happen or stood by and watched, which includes David Wyman and many others, including most mainstream historians. Another perspective sees German industrialists having a big hand in it, clamoring for concentration camp labor, then America [hired some of the worst Nazis](#) after the war was over (Christopher Simpson). There are standard texts on the Jewish Holocaust (Raul Hilberg, Lucy Dawidowicz, Leni Yahil). There are large, comprehensive tales of the war. There are books about how crazy it all was (Paul Fussell, Howard Zinn, Noam Chomsky), or how the Jewish Holocaust was similar to the [Native American Holocaust](#) (David

Stannard, Ward Churchill.). There are books about Japanese atrocities (Iris Chang), or about how badly Germans suffered in the [war's aftermath](#). There are books about building the bomb and [nuking Japan](#) (Peter Wyden, Richard Rhodes, Gar Alperovitz). There are many documentaries on Jewish Holocaust survivors, perpetrators, witnesses, etc. Lifetimes can be spent digesting the various viewpoints of those times and events.

Hitler came to power in 1933, and Jews began fleeing Germany. America was not frightened by what happened in Germany, just as Europe did not get too excited when [Spain's Inquisition oppressed mere Jews](#) and Spain [killed off millions of New World natives](#) in its [lust for gold](#), what Germany was doing to its Jewish citizens soon after Hitler came to power did not excite much comment in America or anywhere else in the West. Anti-Semitism was not only rising to unparalleled levels in Germany, but throughout the West. In America, as it again dealt with a national calamity, Jews became the scapegoats. Anti-Semitism reached all-time levels in the United States during the 1930s, only to be surpassed during World War II, to peak *after* the Jewish Holocaust was over.

When Hitler came to power, the greatest physicist of all time was in America, weighing his options in an increasingly anti-Semitic world. In 1933, Albert Einstein was visiting Cal Tech in California. In 1919, there was a supposed confirmation of Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, whereby starlight was bent more than Newton's theories predicted when it passed by the sun during a total eclipse. Einstein became a huge international celebrity in the wake of the announcement of those findings, which are now known to be premature, as they did not prove what they purported to. Nevertheless, "relativity" was the word on everybody's tongue immediately after World War I, but in Germany, where the Jewish Einstein had been persuaded to live as his scientific career blossomed, anti-relativity companies sprouted up, led by Nobel Prize-winning physicist Phillip Lenard and others. Relativity was being called a Jewish plot to corrupt physics.

In 1933, while Einstein was heading back to Germany to begin planning his move to America, Nazi storm troopers ransacked Einstein's Berlin apartment and eventually seized his home, declaring Einstein to be an enemy of the state. Einstein never returned to Germany. Although Einstein was the world's most celebrated scientist, American groups were trying to prevent Einstein's migration, most particularly the Women's Patriot Corporation, that labeled Einstein "a Communist and menace to American institutions," and part of a conspiracy to take over the world. There was a rumored Nazi-sponsored \$5000 price on Einstein's head, and he hid out in England for a few weeks before coming to America to stay.[\[73\]](#)

Einstein was fortunate, being able to migrate because of his celebrity. Other prominent Jews also found ready haven in the West. Most German Jews were not so fortunate. Similar to the argument that [everybody in the world has some hand in what is happening in Iraq today](#), nobody in the West could claim they had nothing to do with the Jewish Holocaust of World War II. Most Jews would have left Germany in a heartbeat, but there was no friendly haven to flee

to. Nobody in the West wanted Jews coming into their countries. Anti-Semitism was at its all-time high in Europe on the eve of World War II. The [capitalistic system](#) had collapsed due to its systemic greed, and nobody wanted to take in Jews. In America, the Western Jewish haven, it was hard times. During the 1930s, America severely tightened its immigration laws, and Jews in particular were denied admittance.

In 1932, six months before Hitler came to power, one British publication stated,

"A crusade of anti-Semitism has been raging from the Rhine to the Vistula, from the Baltic to the Aegean Sea, during the past six months, with a vindictiveness that almost surpasses all previous manifestations of anti-Jewish hatred since the end of the war."[\[74\]](#)

That was *before* Hitler came to power, and it only escalated after that. In those years, Jews were nearly down there with blacks in America. Franklin Roosevelt became president in 1933. He was a politician from New York, and brought Jews into his New Deal agencies (furthering the "Commie" perception of Jews). That led to murmurs throughout America that Jews were running the country. The 1934 resolution submitted to Capitol Hill to express "surprise and pain" at the Jewish treatment in Germany died in committee.

The Jews were fleeing to where they would be taken in. They began pouring into Palestine, and Arabs were not happy with it. In Palestine, Arab leadership was militant and uncooperative. In 1936, there was an Arab uprising in Palestine, and the British drastically curtailed Jewish immigration there. Zionist plans were deeply divided by Jewish factionalism.

In America, Father Charles Coughlin personified the ancient animosity of Catholics toward Jews. He had a weekly national radio show heard by millions of Americans. He was the Rush Limbaugh of the 1930s.[\[75\]](#) His diatribes against Jews were breathtaking. Across America, anti-Semitism was raging. Even a place as genteel as Minnesota began having anti-Jewish campaigns. There were even Nazi rallies in America in 1939. On November 9-10, 1938, Germany had its infamous *Kristallnacht*, which made the world collectively wake up a little. That event even made Roosevelt speak of his shock, but like the politician he was, nothing was done about it in America. A little more than a week after *Kristallnacht*, Coughlin gave his most amazing speech, minimizing the barbarity of *Kristallnacht* and going into a long attack on the Jews, producing forged Nazi documents to support his bizarre contentions.

Coughlin's diatribes helped stir up immense anti-Jewish hatred in America. Coughlin inspired an organization called the Christian Front, which in 1938 had chapters in America's eastern cities, where 85% of America's Jews lived. At Christian Front rallies, there were calls to

"liquidate the Jews of America."[\[76\]](#) That was four years before anybody in America heard of Hitler's Final Solution. At one Christian Front rally, the speaker invoked [General Sheridan's observation regarding the natives](#), and said that the only good Jews were in the cemetery. When a Jew passing by retorted that he was a good Jew and still alive, he was immediately arrested for disturbing the peace.[\[77\]](#)

In Europe, German Jews were desperate, many fleeing anywhere they could. Others thought they could ride it out in Germany, and other nations were not exactly welcoming them. Jews had been mistreated in Europe for a thousand years, and it eventually got better. Those relative few chose what they thought was the frying pan, but it turned out to be the fire. A year before the outbreak of World War II, Europe closed its doors to fleeing Jews. In late 1938, France and Holland closed their doors, not admitting any more Jews. Sweden and Denmark tightened already severe restrictions on Jewish immigrants, even forcibly returning Jews to Germany who did not have the proper papers.[\[78\]](#) In the United States, the mood was often one of sheer hatred.

In 1938, a public opinion poll found 77% of respondents against the idea of letting more German-Jew refugees into America. In 1939, there was a bill introduced in Washington to allow 20,000 refugee Jewish children into America. The bill met with strong and vociferous opposition across America. Roosevelt refused to endorse the wildly unpopular bill, and it died a quiet death. The next year when war broke out, America opened its arms to English children fleeing Britain.

In May 1939, the world observed the spectacle of the [Saint Louis](#)' voyage. A boatload of more than 900 desperate Jews set sail from Hamburg, told that they could gain entrance to Cuba, although Cuba had already invalidated their permits. When arriving in Cuba, they were denied admittance, and then began a desperate series of negotiations for a haven someplace in the world. Many of them had quota numbers for the United States. The United States refused them entry, as did every other country. The boat ended up sailing for days along the Florida coast on its way back to Europe, its passengers looking longingly toward America, but the door was closed. With great effort and a payment of \$500,000 by the Jewish Defense League, Belgium, Holland, Britain and France were persuaded to take in the passengers. Most of those not taken in by Britain eventually ended up in concentration camps. That was how the West reacted to the Jewish plight on the eve of World War II.

One argument directed toward my work has been that European nations refused to admit Jews because they knew the Germans would overrun them soon, so they could not protect the Jews, even if they let them in. That argument has no agreement with any historical facts I could find. For one thing, no nation expected to be overrun by the Germans. Germany was militant, but there was the Soviet Union, Britain and France nearby, and nobody expected them to run over Europe as they did. The success of the German Blitzkrieg amazed even the German generals. At the war's beginning, the Soviet Union, which was Germany's ally for the

moment, was shocked at how rapidly Germany's forces marched across Poland, and scrambled to get in on Poland's spoils.[\[79\]](#) No historian has hinted that the people of the occupied countries resisted Jewish immigration because the Germans would overrun their nation and exterminate the Jews anyway. The Final Solution was disbelieved by most who heard about it while it was happening, even Jews. When the rare Jew would escape the death camps and make it back to his community, his neighboring Jews would often think he was crazy, and refuse to believe his wild tale.

The rapid German victories over the Dutch, French and British forces amazed all involved. An axiom of warfare is that the generals are always prepared to fight the *previous* war. The French heavily fortified the Maginot Line (the axis of conflict during the trench warfare of World War I) in 1939, as their strategists prepared for the previous war. The German Blitzkrieg easily defeated the French, and the Maginot Line was meaningless. In May of 1940, [Winston Churchill](#), the new Prime Minister, was awakened by the French Premier, who told him excitedly, "We have been defeated! We are beaten!" Churchill refused to believe that the French army could have been defeated in a week.[\[80\]](#) The modern warfare of the Germans took Western Europe by surprise.

Nobody in the Gentile world expected the Final Solution to be enacted by the Nazis. [Barbara Tuchman](#) said that if the Gentile world knew that the Nazis were about to exterminate the Jews, they would have applauded. I will be gentler, and say that if the rest of Europe knew what was about to happen, they may have done something about it. In light of [what is happening in Iraq](#) today and the West's response to it, that may be too generous an assessment. In a sense, the extent that Germany took anti-Semitism was incomprehensible to the general populace. Again, if people had known what Hitler and the Germans were capable of, they *may* have been more welcoming to Jewish refugees.

All the same, another argument directed at my work is that because nobody really knew what the Nazis were capable of, their inaction does not make them "culpable." Culpability is not the point of this essay. If somebody comes begging to my door and I send them away, and the next week I see them dead alongside the road, I can tell myself I had no idea they would end up dead. Does that mean that I had no contribution to their fate? Lawyerly types make that exact argument. Claiming ignorance of the future (which we can all do) does not lessen my responsibility, and my lesson should be to ask myself what I could have done, so the next time I do not slam the door in the face of another beggar. While [legalistic attitudes](#) prevail, we will continue to chart our path of disaster, and when the next one happens, we can say, as the German people said after the death camps were opened, "We did not know." Germans who could smell the scent of burning flesh from the nearby camp's ovens, and who watched prisoners being beaten in town by their guards, still said, "I did not know."

That nobody let in Jews before World War II is evidence that they did not expect the Final

Solution to be enacted. Whether the nations were in the shadow of Germany, as the Netherlands was, or as distant as the United States. The Jews had been fleeing back and forth across Europe for nearly two thousand years, and desperate attempts by Jews to flee Germany in the 1930s, and nobody else in Europe wanting to take them in, has rich historical precedence.

Sweden was a neutral power during both World Wars. They did not open their arms to fleeing Jews during the 1930s. On the eve of war, they even tightened the restrictions on Jews moving there. A main reason was that labor unions and others did not want aliens in their nation, competing for jobs. When war broke out, Sweden had 24,000 foreign citizens in their country, for 0.4% of its population. Sweden was one of the "generous" European nations that let Jews in, although Aryans were let in to stay three times as often on the eve of war. The Swedes approved an "extraordinary gesture" of letting 500 children refugees in, because a women's group agitated for it. The Swedes knew the status of the Final Solution as it developed, and as it was being carried out, Sweden did nothing.[\[81\]](#)

Switzerland behaved the best of the Continental nations, but that is not saying much. Anti-Semitism was rampant there too, and in 1942 they further tightened their restrictions on refugees, a decision not reversed until July 1944, when the writing was on the wall for Germany. Many thousands of Jews died because of Switzerland's policies.[\[82\]](#) In recent years, they have been haunted by the scandal of knowledge that the Swiss banks laundered the Jewish assets that the Nazis plundered, such as the gold from teeth that were extracted from the Holocaust victims in the death camps.[\[83\]](#) The Swiss prevailed upon the Nazis to put a "J" on Jewish passports so the Swiss could identify them, so they could turn them back. Germany resisted that Swiss policy, because they felt they would not be able to get rid of Jews to places such as Switzerland, but the Swiss prevailed.

For every Jewish refugee that made it into Switzerland (about 22,000 made it into Switzerland), another was turned back, usually to their deaths. The Swiss banks stonewalled attempts by survivors of the Holocaust to withdraw their money from the banks, or recovery attempts by the heirs of Jewish depositors who died in the Holocaust. The banks demanded documentary proof for people who died in Auschwitz, similar to U.S. demands of citizenship for Americans interned in the camps. Some of it was understandable, but hiding behind bureaucratic procedures has been used for millennia, and was no exception regarding the Holocaust. Some Swiss banks' behaviors were truly scandalous. The banks set up a Holocaust survivors' fund recently, as did the Swiss government, as a very belated gesture, but better late than never. American officers also looted Nazi plunder at the end of World War II.[\[84\]](#)

As with nearly all Jewish Holocaust narratives, a hero here and there dots the landscape, with rare acts of human kindness. Paul Grueninger was one of the few Swiss heroes. In 1938, the border captain altered about 3600 Jewish refugee passports to allow them to stay in

Switzerland. For those heroic acts of a true humanitarian, he was fired, prosecuted, fined and spent the rest of his life, until 1971, living in poverty, unable to get a job, and was even the subject of a smear campaign regarding letting in those Jews. He died a broken man. He was not acquitted of the charges against him until 1995, after his family had tried clearing his name for many years, after five attempts.[\[85\]](#) All too often, that is the fate of the true heroes in this world, vilified while they live, with posthumous recognition, if any. As in all nations, not all Swiss citizens agreed with what their government was doing, and Swiss citizens were more critical of Hitler's regime than their government was, and many Swiss citizens voluntarily housed the Jewish refugees who made it into Switzerland.

Along Europe's periphery, some nations were relatively heroic, their anti-Semitism not as entrenched as in Europe's heart. During the war, Denmark, Finland and Bulgaria saved a substantial portion of their Jews. Denmark saved about 100% of their 5000 to 7000 Jews, smuggling them to Sweden, who, when prevailed upon by their neighbor, finally took in the Jews. Finland saved their 2000 Jews. Bulgaria was a more mixed affair, with most of Bulgaria's Jews being spared, but the Bulgarian army also rounded up thousands of Jews, sending them to Treblinka and other death camps. About 10,000 Jews were saved by a few nations' heroic actions, while more than five million Jews went to their deaths. Reducing the Jewish death toll by 0.2% by peripheral nations is something that people can look to in finding *some* hope and consolation from the Holocaust.

Here and there across Europe, and even in Germany, some people risked their lives by hiding Jews. Those people have been lionized, yet they nearly invariably said that their actions were not heroic, but something that anybody would have done. Their modesty is understandable, but they were extremely rare. Noam Chomsky says that what has driven his tireless efforts for human rights for the past thirty-five years is so he can look himself in the mirror. Yes, he does, but the highly developed conscience of a Noam Chomsky is extremely rare. For those who hid Jews or engage in activities as Chomsky does, their answer is the same. They say they are only doing the decent thing, or trying to keep their consciences' clear. They are not superhuman, just rare.

On the Jewish Holocaust's causes, there is a vast spectrum of opinion. One of this site's themes, as the staunch pacifist that I am, is that [violence always begets violence](#). There will be no war to end all wars, except the one that extinguishes the human species. The Jewish Holocaust took place in the world's most violent culture: Europe. The Holocaust took place in the middle of a war that killed about sixty million people (and perhaps even 100 million), the bloodiest war of all time, so far. The Jewish Holocaust was only about ten percent of that total, or less. On one hand, it was merely part of the scenery of murder that raged across the white man's world. Yes, the Jews were singled out (Gypsies and Slavs were too) for a unique fate, a fate that was the culmination of a thousand years of abuse by the Christian world. Yet, what made Germany into such a hotbed of it?

In Paul Johnson's *A History of the Jews*, he discusses the constellation of reasons for the Holocaust.^[86] First, and perhaps most primary and immediate, was World War I. The German people had just experienced a period of unprecedented prosperity and modernization when World War I happened. They were flexing their muscles as a nation, feeling their power and glory. As with Japan, who nurtured their imperial ambition for generations, wanting to be successful imperial overlords as the British, French, Russians and Americans were, Germany had grand designs for coming to the imperial table. The British, French and Americans *had* to be their role models, to an extent. Yet, they had already [gobbled up the globe](#). The British Empire spanned the globe, owning a quarter of it. The French Empire was second to Britain's in size, where their imperial domains included parts of the Middle East, Southeast Asia, Africa and a share of China.

The United States, the first breakaway colony, had come to dominate the entire Western Hemisphere. It had its [Monroe Doctrine](#) and [Roosevelt Corollary](#), which staked out the entire Western Hemisphere (with the exception of Canada) as its imperial domain. It was refining a new form of colonialism that the British were experimenting with, known as [neocolonialism](#), whereby the [American flag](#) did not necessarily fly over its subject nations, but the U.S. was in charge nevertheless. European nations were not allowed a free hand in plundering Latin America; it was the United States' game and nobody else's. Even so, America expanded its empire impressively. Other nations such as the Spanish, Dutch and Portuguese had remnants of their empires dotting the globe. The white man had a claim on virtually every valuable acre of planet earth, and the Germans had little of it to befit their new stature as a great nation.

The Germans had few distant lands to plunder, and to the east of them was another empire: the Russian Empire. The Russian Empire spanned northern Asia and bordered Germany. Those realities led Germany to war against the other imperial powers. After the war, the imperial powers humiliated Germany with onerous war reparations and took most of its imperial hinterland. As Johnson observed, a primary effect of World War I, besides stunting Germany's ambition, was making German society a more violent place. Where violence in civil life was unknown in the years before World War I, one of the consequences of the war was a generation of men who became intimately familiar with the art of murder.

The psychology of warfare and soldiers shows that young men do not naturally desire to murder other people, particularly those they have never met. What turns young men into murderers is a [culture that encourages violence](#), as in its media and ideology. The appeal to patriotism is a primary brainwashing tactic, something [Hermann Goering said was common to all nations](#). In addition, dehumanizing the "enemy" is a vital component of the program. If the young men do not feel like they are killing fellow human beings, they can do it much easier. Even with all that, young men do not readily commit violent acts. In numerous accounts, whether it is the Japanese raping Nanking citizens, the Germans annihilating Jews in Eastern Europe, American soldiers killing Native American women, Japanese soldiers or Vietnamese civilians, or French revolutionaries killing each other, their first kills do not come easily. The

witnesses and participants to the acts describe an inner revulsion at first, but with each kill, their inhibitions gradually cease, and some even glory in it after awhile. They are on the highway to hell, but most people readily develop inner mechanisms that allow them to continue doing it. Many American soldiers have crossed that threshold in [macabre ways](#).

Christopher Browning's *Ordinary Men* examines the phenomenon of German Reserve Police Battalion 101 that became a Jew-killer squad in Poland. The men of Reserve Police Battalion 101 were largely drafted from Hamburg, and were simple barbers, plumbers and the like, largely men more than thirty years old. They were not Nazis, but typical Germans, relatively apolitical. They eventually became adroit Jew-killers, directly killing about 40,000 Jews and deporting another 45,000 to the death camps. The book's most chilling sentence is its last one,

"If the men of Reserve Police Battalion 101 could become killers under such circumstances, what group of men cannot?"[\[87\]](#)

As with a famous psychology experiment at Stanford, where "normal" people played the prisoner and guard game, about a third of the guards quickly became sadistic, about half became "tough but fair," and less than 20% became "good guards," who tried being kind to their charges (or in the case of Reserve Police Battalion 101, somehow shirked their killing duties). The same statistics applied to the men of Reserve Police Battalion 101.[\[88\]](#)

After World War I, violence in German society became increasingly commonplace, and political ideologies readily adopted violent strategies. That was not only in Germany, but also in other war participants, such as Russia and across Eastern Europe. The rise of Hitler was not unusual, although historians still grope for a full understanding of it. Anti-Semitism was an integral part of the day's German mentality, and the aftermath of World War I made violence an increasingly acceptable aspect of the day's ideology. Murdering Jews and other political/ideological targets became commonplace in German society immediately after the war, with the perpetrators rarely brought to trial, and given light sentences even if convicted. Hitler's philosophy helped create an atmosphere where the Jew eventually became seen as subhuman. "Vermin" was a typical appellation given to Jews back then.

When Germans were killing Jews in the early 1920s, in America similar events were happening. Recently, mass graves have been discovered from the Tulsa Race Riot of 1921. In the wake of the oil boom in Oklahoma, many blacks escaped the South and its [lynch-happy](#), Jim Crow environment. They formed one of America's most prosperous black communities. Booker T. Washington characterized the Greenwood section of Tulsa as the "Negro's Wall

Street." Racists referred to Greenwood as "Little Africa."

Blacks were forced into segregated living, as the Jews in their ghettos had been for centuries. The Tulsa police were virulently racist, allying themselves with the Ku Klux Klan. The event that touched off the "race riot" was when a black shoeshine man was falsely accused of accosting a white woman in an elevator. The *Tulsa Tribune* ran an editorial entitled "To Lynch a Negro Tonight" the next day, and a mob of 2000 white people surrounded the jail, ready for a lynching. About 75 black men heroically stood in front of them, to prevent the lynching. As often happens, as the whites assaulted the black men a shot rang out, and then it was "open season on niggers." Armed bands of whites rampaged through the black section of town, burning buildings and shooting any black on sight. The "riot" made history when a plane dropped dynamite onto the black neighborhoods, for history's first bombings by plane. Several days later, hundreds of black people lay dead, and were buried in mass graves. Six thousand blacks were rounded up and imprisoned. The official report stated that less than forty people died in the "riot." Mass graves were recently discovered and exhumed.^[89] The death toll is probably at least 300 people.

Is what happened in post-war Germany so difficult to understand, particularly as the United States is [killing thousands of Iraqi children each month](#) as I am writing this? Between Southeast Asia and Iraq alone, the United States has probably been primarily responsible for the deaths of more people than the number of Jews who died in the Nazi death camps, distant nations that did us no harm, not by any stretch of the imagination. Hitler, no matter how crazy he was, had perhaps more justification for what he did to Jews than the United States had for what it has done to Southeast Asia and Iraq. If the Nazis were the most evil regime of all time, what does that make today's United States? Hitler and his boys *were* practitioners of evil, but they have also been scapegoats. Nazi Germany was not that greatly different than today's United States, especially as the United States has a currently unelected president, from a [family that openly supported Nazi Germany](#).

The United States has the [world's largest prison population](#), which is increasingly filled with political prisoners and people who did not commit what any rational person would consider a crime. During the last fifty years, our nation has been primarily responsible for the deaths of [several million people](#) and the continued misery of hundreds of hundreds of millions, if not billions. The Nazis were minor leaguers; imperial wannabes who could not make the grade, who did not really take it out on the Jews until their military advances were blunted, and they realized that they would not roll over the world. Hitler had no monopoly on telling the [Big Lie](#). In Nazi Germany and the occupied nations, some noble souls stood up to the evil, risking their lives to hide Jews. They were extremely rare, but they existed. Some Americans are trying to end the awesome injustices that the United States inflicts on the planet today. They are also rare, but they exist. German citizens themselves were not at great risk for not playing the game properly, but a person in the Nazi-occupied Ukraine, for instance, would be summarily executed along with their families for hiding Jews. In America, a death squad does not usually

visit dissident writers, although it happens, as with the FBI's COINTELPRO program and what it did to Fred Hampton. In the imperial hinterlands however, [El Salvadoran](#) dissidents to the U. S. Empire were taken out and shot without a second thought by U.S.-trained troops, and their heads mounted on poles alongside roads as an instructive lesson for other dissidents who might dare to raise their voice.[\[90\]](#)

The Holocaust was a phenomenon that derived from a millennium of Western racism and anti-Semitism. It also derived from the incessant warrior mentality of Europe, a culture far more warlike and deadly than any other in history. It also derived from the [greed](#) that drove the [quest for empire](#) that characterized all the European nations, [which has evolved into capitalism](#).

For all the heroic actions of Denmark during World War II, they had a small Jewish population (the nearby Netherlands had a Jewish population of 140,000 in 1939) because they were less than welcoming to Jews over the centuries. Many Jews were in Eastern Europe because they had been booted out of Western Europe centuries earlier. The anti-Semitism in Scandinavia was more muted than that of mainland Europe, but far from noble.

We all have a hand in world events, although the causal relationship can be difficult to see. As a rule, people do not see the relationship between pumping cheap gasoline in America, for instance, and the [deaths of children in Iraq](#), [East Timor](#) and [Nigeria](#). Those pumping the cheap gasoline are beneficiaries of the carnage, however indirect they may think it is. In America, people do not usually see that their fast food hamburgers were produced by the [unspeakable suffering of animals](#) enslaved to an incredibly inhumane system, served by people oppressed by the [capitalistic system](#). Those Americans usually do not see the relationship between their cheap running shoes and the neocolonial system that has virtual slaves making those shoes in ghastly working environments in U.S. client states such as [Indonesia](#). Americans rarely see the relationship between their cheap bananas and the mass murder and capitalistic oppression in [Central America](#) that keeps those cheap bananas coming. Projecting the "evil" onto Saddam Hussein or Hitler (or the large corporations) is convenient, but is one more way to play the victim game.

Another painful aspect of the Jewish Holocaust is that the Third Reich did not originally want to exterminate the Jews. They wanted to get rid of them, but nobody wanted them.

Howard Zinn wrote in his *Declarations of Independence*,

"Not only did waging war against Hitler fail to save the Jews, war itself bought on the Final Solution of the genocide. This is not to remove responsibility from Hitler and the Nazis, but

there is much evidence that Germany's anti-Semitic actions, cruel as they were, would not have turned to mass murder were it not for the psychic distortions of war, acting on already distorted minds. Hitler's early aim was forced emigration, not extermination, but the frenzy of war created an atmosphere in which the policy turned to genocide. This is the view of Princeton historian Arnold Mayer, in his book *Why Did the Heavens not Darken*, and it is supported by the chronology - that not until Germany was at war was the Final Solution adopted.

"Hilberg, in his classic work on the Holocaust says, 'From 1938 to 1940, Hitler made extraordinary and unusual attempts to bring about a vast emigration scheme... the Jews were not killed before the emigration policy was literally exhausted.' The Nazis found that the Western powers were not anxious to cooperate in emigration and that no one wanted the Jews."[\[91\]](#)

The voyage of the *Saint Louis* was part of Germany's forced emigration strategy. They forced Jews onto boats and made them sail down the Danube, or forced them into frontiers where they then snuck into Western nations, but nobody wanted them. Many Jews wanted to get into Palestine, but in the interest of preserving "stability" in the region (placating the Arabs, not dumping Jews on them), Britain drastically limited migration to the region. Consequently, Britain let in some Jews, the only European nation that did to any significant degree. Its policy was more to keep the Jews out of Palestine than it was welcoming the Jews to Britain.

Raul Hilberg is probably the world's greatest Holocaust scholar. He wrote *Perpetrators, Victims, Bystanders*, which provides penetrating insights into the mentalities of the players in the Jewish Holocaust. The word "hero" does not appear in the book's title. The most noble and heroic people of those days were those who simply helped others when they could give it. Those few who hid Jews at the risk of their lives in Europe were probably the most heroic of all, and as a group the only people whose deeds were truly selfless. Hilberg observed that those "altruists and humanitarians" sometimes were embarrassed by the praise heaped on them after the war, and usually replied that they were only doing the decent thing, something that anybody would do.[\[92\]](#) Hilberg demonstrated that nearly everybody had a hand in the Jewish Holocaust to one degree or another. Whether it was lawyers and accountants doing the technical work of digesting the loot from the [Aryanization program](#), doctors actively involved in barring German Jews from the medical profession to eliminate the competition, churches that provided certificates of Aryan descent of its parishioners, or "bystanders" such as the allied nations, or the Pope quietly watching the Nazis seize and ship Jews from Rome, within shouting distance of the Vatican, *everybody* had a hand in it. Some were more actively involved than others, but there were few heroes and saints, and various levels of complicity for virtually everybody else.

World War II began on September 1, 1939, when Germany invaded Poland, and the Jewish fate became clearer. While the Final Solution was finally formulated and carried out, anti-Semitism in America *increased*. In a 1942 opinion poll, when Americans were asked to name the greatest threats to America, Jews came in third, behind the Germans and Japanese.[\[93\]](#) In polls given in the 1940s to the question, "Have you heard any criticism or talk against the Jews in the last six months?" It steadily climbed from 46% in 1940, to an all-time high of 64% in 1946.[\[94\]](#) In 1942, a poll asked American high school students which groups, of seven listed, would be their last choice as a roommate. Only two groups received more than a ten-percent response rate. Blacks were 78%, and Jews 45%. In the same month, factory workers were asked which groups they least wanted to move to their neighborhood. It was the same list the high school students saw, and was 72% blacks, 42% Jews and 28% Chinese.[\[95\]](#)

The first official news in America that the Nazis were exterminating European Jews was reported in the *New York Times* on November 25, 1942. The article stated that the State Department confirmed that the Nazis had already systematically murdered two million Jews. That story was reported on page ten. There was no outrage in America. Roosevelt made no comment on the story, and no reporter asked him about it. No politician made an issue of it. It was a non-story. Few really cared if Jews were being slaughtered, especially when there were Nazis and (especially) Japs to fight. A 1942 poll showed that 66% of Americans wanted the battle against the Japanese in the Pacific to take precedence over battling Germany.[\[96\]](#)

While the Final Solution was being carried out, the State Department purposefully tightened restrictions on Jewish immigration to America. Many American Jews did not want more Jews immigrating to America, because each new Jew further inflamed American anti-Semitism, and the United States was the *great savior* of Jews in World War II.

The infamous voyage of the [Saint Louis](#), the national protest regarding letting in 20,000 Jewish children refugees smuggled out of Germany and Austria, the Nazi rallies in America and the pervasive anti-Semitism were all part of 1939 America. Across America were Silver Shirt stores that sold anti-Jewish propaganda. The anti-Semitism was naturally the worst where Jews lived, mainly on America's East Coast. The embrace of the Fascist systems of Germany and Italy by American industrialists, the mainstream media and politicians, was also part of the terrain. Jews were seen as Communists in America, furthering anti-Semitic hatred. Many Americans saw Jews getting jobs in New Deal agencies as ominous. More than half of Americans wanted Jews segregated as blacks were. *Every nation* tightened down the screws on Jewish immigration on the eve of war.

While Jews found employment in New Deal agencies, old-line agencies such as the State Department, War Department, etc., were dominated by Eastern Oligarchy types, and were against hiring Jews. The State Department guided foreign policy, just as it does today. They controlled immigration. Ivy Leaguers staffed the State Department. They were decidedly unsympathetic to the Jewish plight. In early 1940, Breckenridge Long, the American

Ambassador to Italy who thought that Fascism was great, became the assistant Secretary of State. Long soon began directing the State Department to curtail Jewish immigration into America, and in an infamous June 1940 memo, Long informed his people how to bureaucratically thwart potential immigrants. At that time, Jews were desperately trying to flee Europe, particularly via France and Spain. Long's leadership provided the desired result, and the already paltry immigration to America was quickly cut in half. Long initiated other measures, which brought immigration to a standstill by the summer of 1941. That was months before Pearl Harbor, and America was the world's "great neutral power" at that time.

By the summer of 1941, Hitler's euthanasia policy was underway in Germany. It was not covered up very well, and Germans discovered what was happening and protested. The first crematoria incinerated the insane, retarded and otherwise flawed of Germany. As German people began protesting the euthanasia program, the Third Reich began tightening the security of such extermination projects, paving the way for death camp security afterwards.

By the winter of 1941, the German offensive was blunted in Russia, and the Hitler's grandiose designs for a purified world, under glorious German hegemony, began evaporating, and the turn to the Final Solution at Wannsee in January 1942 gave a new direction to the German goal. If Germany could not conquer the world, it would at least cleanse its corner of the world of inferior races.

The Final Solution was well underway by early 1942, and the industrialization of genocide was undertaken for the first time. The death factories of Poland were built and began churning out their unspeakable product. The November 1942 *New York Times* article was a tardy admission of what knowledgeable observers of World War II already knew. Jewish leaders began lobbying the White House in late 1942, to no effect.

In early 1943, American Jews began agitating for U.S. action regarding the slaughter of Europe's Jews. While Jews began pressing for action, the State Department was instructing its Swiss office to stop forwarding reports of the Final Solution. They were actively covering-up the Holocaust, in an early instance of Holocaust denial. Jewish activism got the U.S. government to convene a conference at Bermuda between British and American diplomats, the Jews' best friends in the West. The April 1943 Bermuda conference accomplished nothing, mainly because the attendees were told to not accomplish anything. The conference was calculated to give the *appearance* of concern. By late 1943, the Third Reich's death machine had consumed millions of Jews. There were a handful of national politicians in America who sided with the Jewish plight, the most prominent being Will Rogers Junior, a congressional representative from Oklahoma and the part-[Cherokee](#) son of Will Rogers. Rogers joined the Bergson Group, which was a small but highly active group in America, lobbying for U.S. government action. On October 6, 1943, 4000 rabbis presented a petition to the White House to plead for action on behalf of Europe's Jews. Roosevelt begged off from attending the presentation due to a schedule conflict, and had his vice-president accept the petition.

Roosevelt's calendar for that day shows that he had time to accept the petition, but chose not to.

There were some highly placed Jews in U.S. government. The relatively few Jews saved by America in World War II can partly thank the Jewish Henry Morgenthau Junior, the Secretary of the Treasury, for directing the Treasury Department to investigate why Jews were not getting into America, when the death factories were at full production.

An infamous incident regarding America, Britain and the Jews occurred over an offer the Nazis made to sell 70,000 Romanian Jews for about \$9 million. The State Department blocked the deal. The Treasury Department became involved and approved the deal. During the Treasury Department investigation that Morgenthau initiated, documents surfaced which detailed further State Department complicity in the Jewish Holocaust. Not only did the State Department memo surface that ordered its Swiss office to not forward Holocaust reports, but two other documents were discovered, one created by the State Department, the other by the British Foreign Office.

The State Department and the British Foreign Office were of like mind on the Romanian deal, which they worked in unison to sabotage. The British document stated that they opposed the Romanian Jew purchase due to the "difficulty of disposing of any considerable number of refugees should they be rescued." The State Department document stated the "danger" that the Nazis might "turn over" a large number of Jewish refugees. Those two diplomatic bodies were genuinely afraid that the Nazis might give them those 70,000 Jews instead of gassing them. Morgenthau wrote that those two august bodies' behavior amounted to "diplomatic double-talk, cold and correct and adding up to a sentence of death" for European Jews.[\[97\]](#) While that scandal was hatching, Long testified in a session on Capitol Hill, where he lied about how many immigrants (he greatly exaggerated it), and Jews in particular, had been let into the United States during the critical years.

Morgenthau's Treasury Department issued a report on the scandal, titled "Report to the Secretary on the Acquiescence of This Government in the Murder of the Jews." Morgenthau met with Roosevelt on January 16, 1944, and laid out the facts. Ever the politician, Roosevelt foresaw a stinking mess coming up soon in the Congress and Senate, and other activism that was about to make the Jews' fate a public event. Six days after the meeting, Roosevelt issued executive order 9417, creating the War Refugee Board (WRB). It prevented the looming scandal, yet the wording of his statement carefully excluded the word "Jew," and the agency had virtually no funding and almost no cooperation from any other governmental agency. John Pehle of the Treasury Department was named to head the agency, and with little funding and almost no cooperation from any other agency, the WRB did its best to help Jews escape the death machine in Europe, and may have saved some. The WRB was virtually alone among all U.S. governmental agencies in helping Europe's Jews.

There are other acts by the U.S. government worth reporting. Part of the charade of America caring about Jewish suffering was establishing a refugee camp on American soil. It was established in the countryside in New York. It took in less than 1000 Jews, and its stated intention was to ship them back to Europe when the war was over. It was more of a [public relations](#) stunt than any help to the Jews.

Jewish leaders continually lobbied the White House during the war's last year, and one request repeatedly made was for the Allied forces to bomb the crematoria at Auschwitz. The military gave interesting excuses for why they could not bomb Auschwitz. They said they could not fly a mission from England, as it was too far for fighter support. Ironically, while the ovens at Auschwitz were running night and day, the United States flew numerous bombing missions in the region, based out of Italy. The United States even targeted the Farben facility next to Auschwitz, while giving the excuse that they could not bomb Auschwitz. There is a photograph taken from a bomber that dropped bombs on the Farben facility. In the photograph, the Auschwitz facilities are directly below the plane as the bombs were dropping, aiming at the Farben facilities.[\[98\]](#) Some American bombs even landed on Auschwitz *accidentally*, killing nearly a hundred inmates and guards. The United States helped about 150,000 Jews lose their lives at Auschwitz while they refused to bomb the crematoria.

As the death camps were opened at war's end, it could no longer be denied what the Nazis had done. It stands as one of history's most evil mass murders. The Jewish Holocaust was the culmination of a thousand years of anti-Semitism in Europe, several hundred years of incessant European warfare, European greed and other factors. The entire West had a hand in what happened. Blaming Hitler and the Germans is convenient and makes them scapegoats, but they were merely the most accomplished practitioners of anti-Semitism. They took the game to a new level.

Perhaps the best documentary on the rise and fall of Hitler is the 1961 British production *Mein Kampf*. It can be rented from video stores even today. It is an understated account of those times, using German footage for nearly all of it. The introduction of *Mein Kampf* states,

"This account of Hitler's Hell on earth is dedicated in guilt to his victims. As human beings we are responsible - for he was one of us and we permitted it to happen.

"May we be wise enough and strong enough to prevent this from ever happening again!"

When Hitler's *Mein Kampf* was published in the United States in the 1930s, it was sanitized, with his most vicious anti-Semitic passages edited out. People such as FDR read the unedited

version, but did not publicize it.

At battle's end in Europe, the death camps were opened and the surviving inmates staggered out. Not only did the death camps, Einsatzgruppen and other actions consume more than five million Jews, about a third of the world's Jews, but a million or more Gypsies also died in the conflagration as well as other assorted unfortunates, such as Jehovah's Witnesses. Four million Soviet soldiers [died in the Nazi prison camps](#) in Eastern Europe, their deaths part of the Nazi's overall plan of death and destruction of "inferior" people. After the world was cleansed of Jews and Gypsies, next on Hitler's list was ridding Eastern Europe of the Slavs, clearing the land for settlement by Germans. World War II was an insane orgy of violence that left about sixty million people dead (or as many as 100 million), and as with all wars of the 20th century, at least half of the deaths were civilian.[\[99\]](#) Millions more were displaced, and many millions more lives were shattered. More than thirty million civilians died in World War II. They were the most devastating few years in world history, as white people fought over global control, with Japan joining the fray, killing at least ten and perhaps fifteen million (with estimates as high as twenty million) Chinese citizens during their brief but brutal rule. That was on top of the more than twenty million who died a generation earlier in World War I, half of them civilians, and another fifteen million or so who died in the Soviet Union's purges and general Soviet repression. That is at least 100 million deaths in events that spanned a generation. The devastation that Europe wreaked on the planet finally came home to terrifying effect, in the final consequence of all militarism.

When the death camps were opened, the world was shocked, but not that much. A few months later the United States [dropped atom bombs](#) on Japanese cities, killing hundreds of thousands of civilians. The firebombing of Dresden and Tokyo by the United States and its allies in early 1945 was merely a sign of the times. One Nazi strategy during the Jewish Holocaust was reducing the Jews to what appeared a subhuman state, to further justify their extermination. The people who designed the programs, such as Himmler, were diabolically sane. Forcing the Jews into ghettos where they starved to death in squalor was part of a plan to reduce them to their lowest state. The dignity with which many Jews faced their extermination was inspiring.

Genocide researchers such as David Stannard, Ward Churchill and Robert Jay Lifton have commented regarding the high emotional toll that such research takes. The denied darkness is a big reason why the West is so sick. Turning [Columbus](#), [Washington](#), [Custer](#), [Serra](#), [Bush](#) and the rest of that mass murdering rogues gallery into heroes indicates a people that cannot face their darkness, and are consequently doomed to keep recreating the same disasters over and over.

Those who survived the death camps had deep physical, emotional, and mental trauma. The numerous survivor accounts attest to the immense psychological burden they endured. Not every concentration camp was an outright extermination camp, and children grew up in some

of them. Of all the Jewish Holocaust accounts I have read and watched over the years, one in particular has haunted me. It is not a heart-wrenching tale of horror and survival, but regarding the psychological responses that attended the camp experience. Werner Weinberg was interned at Bergen-Belsen for fifteen months in 1944-1945. Weinberg wrote that life there did not become the hell it became infamous for until the war's last few months, when the supply lines were cut and the Nazis fled the Eastern Front before the Soviet armies. The huge influx of prisoners from the East, coinciding with cutting the supply lines, turned Bergen-Belsen into a living hell. Yet, it still was not an extermination camp, as such. Weinberg wrote that there was a code of ethics of sorts, such as the prisoners frowning on cannibalism.

One day when Weinberg was on a work detail that transported a cart across the camp, acting as the horses that normally drew the cart. Dying inmates lay everywhere in those final days. The Nazis called them *musselmen*. *Musselmen* lost so much weight that they became human skeletons and lost all semblance of sentience, lying in the mud, waiting to die. Dying *musselmen* were obstacles for the cart, and the crew had to stop the cart and move the *musselmen* (alive or dead) out of the way. One of Weinberg's crew had recently been transferred from Auschwitz, and was disgusted with the spectacle of *musselmen* littering the camp, blocking the progress of their cart. The inmate from Auschwitz boasted, "No *musselmen* in Auschwitz! They were the first to go up the chimney!" Weinberg was speechless. He was impressed by the new inmate's observation, and felt shame that Bergen-Belsen could not match the cleanly efficiency of Auschwitz.[\[100\]](#)

Anti-Semitism in America *increased* after the camps were opened, as measured by the poll that showed American anti-Semitism peaking in 1946.[\[101\]](#) Even in September of 1945, after the world knew of the death camps, 22% of American soldiers thought that the Nazi treatment of Jews was justified, and another 10% were not sure.[\[102\]](#) Arno Mayer, an officer in the war, was handed a note that stated, "When we finish with the Germans and the Japs, we'll come back and kill the Jews and the blacks."[\[103\]](#) More Japanese than Germans were executed following the war crimes trials.

In Europe, anti-Semitism did not abate with opening the camps. The wretches that walked out of the camps often elicited disgust more than pity. General Patton stated that the camp survivors in his care were a "subhuman species without any of the cultural or social refinements of our time." He said that no ordinary people "could have sunk to the level of degradation these have reached in the short space of four years."[\[104\]](#) Jews newly freed from the camps begged to not be sent to where they lived before the Jewish Holocaust. As American soldiers herded Jews onto trains bound for Poland, men would fall to their knees, yelling, "Kill me now! You might just as well kill me now, I am dead anyway if I go back to Poland." They were right in many cases. The last half of 1945 saw many anti-Jew riots in Poland, and there were 350 anti-Semitic murders in Poland during those months after the war.[\[105\]](#)

Those post-war attitudes had a major bearing on the establishment of Israel. The Jews had their Promised Land tradition, going back millennia. Before the Holocaust, there was a marked difference of opinion in the Jewish population about having a Jewish state, a concept known as Zionism. After the Holocaust, the need for a Jewish state was obvious to all surviving Jews, and Israel was founded. Unfortunately, their Promised Land became more of a refuge from a world that hated them. If not for the Christian/European hatred of Jews, today's [state of affairs in Israel](#) would probably not exist. The Jews established a state right on top of Arabs that had lived there, in relative harmony with Jews, for thousands of years. The Jews did not enjoy peace and plenty throughout the Islamic world. Jewish/Islamic relations deteriorated over the centuries, and the situation in Northern Africa was quite bad, with massacres from time to time. There were anti-Jewish riots in the 1940s in Islamic nations, which killed about a thousand Jews. Yet, the Palestinians who had lived in Palestine for two thousand years suddenly were expelled by the creation of a Jewish state right on top of them. The establishment of Israel was a crime, no matter if the United Nations was behind it. To Jewish credit, many have debated the establishment of a Jewish state. The issue of state versus human rights has been at the center of Jewish life since Moses.

Today, Israel has a nuclear arsenal with hundreds of nuclear warheads, with about a hundred missiles aimed at Arab cities. Israel's craziness and paranoia can be partly attributed to centuries of persecution, with the Jewish Holocaust topping it off. Many Arabs saw the establishment of the Jewish state as more of an outpost of Western imperialism than a refuge from Western anti-Semitism. Einstein had the right idea when he remarked that a Jewish state should be established in an atmosphere of peace and friendship with the Arabs. That did not happen. Neither party was amenable to negotiation, and the British helped bungle things, partly by inventing the position of Grand Mufti for Jerusalem, then appointing a militant Arab to the post.^[106] The insanity of World War II affected both Jews and Arabs. [Menachem Begin](#) was a bona fide terrorist, with his Irgun terrorist group blowing up a hotel, killing many people. Stern Gang, another Jewish terrorist group, even sought collaboration with the Nazis, offering to fight alongside the Nazis, proposing that the Jews having a racist empire in the Middle East, while Germany had one in Europe.^[107] Yitzhak Shamir, the future Prime Minister of Israel, ran Stern Gang after Avraham Stern was killed, and Shamir never renounced Stern Gang's support of Hitler. The peaceful Jews of Europe had largely been herded into the death camps, their loss incalculable. Their peaceful and accommodating collective voice may have made the situation in Israel today a very different one.

Although opening the death camps was somewhat shocking to American sensibilities, the steep fall in anti-Semitism in America between 1946 and 1950 had more to do with other factors than a twinge of conscience over America's hand in the Jewish Holocaust. Racism and bigotry in America was deeply ingrained. The death camps showed how low humanity could stoop in its hatred. War crimes trials began in late 1945. America assumed a self-righteous posture regarding the Nuremberg trials, calling what the Nazis did an unparalleled crime. The United States was in a curious position. The war crimes trials were definitely a winners' court.

The United States had completed the "[ethnic cleansing](#)" of its land of natives only a few generations earlier. During World War II, black Americans in the military were often treated abominably. Having its face rubbed in racism and bigotry, seeing the extremes that Hitler and his chums could take the game, led to American introspection, and returning American soldiers' major goal for their nation was wiping out racial and religious bigotry. Native Americans during those days [were subject to varying conditions](#), with the 1934 Wheeler-Howard Act giving them their first light at the end of the tunnel, to only be undermined after the war was over, to intensify in the 1950s. It was not until the 1970s that Native American activism, on the tail of the civil rights days of the 60s, began significantly improving their plight. [\[108\]](#)

The arrival of the white man in the Western Hemisphere spelled the annihilation of native tribes, and even after they were reduced to tiny remnants of their original population, "humanitarians" such as U.S. Senator [Henry Dawes](#) proposed laws that ended up further decimating the natives. The U.S. government practiced involuntary and secret sterilization of native women, forced native children to live in white-run boarding schools to "take the Indian out of them," and other genocidal practices.[\[109\]](#) Even today, the life expectancies of reservation Indians are at Third World rates. In 1980, the life expectancy of a reservation man was 44.6 years, and a few years higher for reservation women.[\[110\]](#) That is an extraordinary number, among the lowest on earth. A nearly thirty-year disparity between two population groups, reservation natives and the general U.S. population, is something not found outside of death camp scenarios.

It is not widely known, but the African slave trade deposited relatively few Africans to North America, less than five percent of the total that came from Africa. That was because the United States was nearly alone in being able to successfully breed slaves. The main determinant was that life expectancy in the United States was among the highest in the world, significantly higher than Europe's. Slaves tended to have life expectancies that paralleled those of the free population, provided they were not considered "expendable," as the [Taino](#) were to the Spaniards. A longer life expectancy among American slaves meant that slave women could have longer and more productive breeding careers (and their masters were more than happy to inseminate them for as long as they could bear children), and therefore America could breed its own slaves, not being as dependent on slave imports as its southern neighbors were. There were other reasons peculiar to the United States' growing slave population, but a longer life expectancy was critical. When the slave trade was outlawed by the civilized nations, one salient reason the United States did not object was that it could keep breeding slaves indefinitely, and they made a legal distinction between Africans who were enslaved in their lifetimes, and Americans who were born into slavery. In 1980, with a nearly thirty-year life expectancy disparity between reservation Indians and the white U.S. population, black life expectancy was "only" 5.6 years behind white life expectancy.[\[111\]](#)

The United States had a challenging time being self-righteous regarding the Nazi activities,

especially when it eagerly [hired death camp Nazis](#) in programs such as Operation Paperclip. Comparisons of the Nazi death camps to the [California Mission system](#) began [as early as 1946](#), when the Nuremberg trials were still being held. World War II's aftermath can be seen as a major event in improving race and ethnic relations in the United States. The struggle was long and hard, but Jews, Native Americans, blacks and other historically disenfranchised groups began making gains after World War II. The Truman administration created numerous commissions that discovered widespread racism and bigotry in America, and made recommendations to end it. The armed forces were officially desegregated in 1948. Jackie Robinson made his debut with the Dodgers in 1947, winning the very first Rookie of the Year Award, an award that was generously handed out to black players for the next decade. Frank Sinatra starred in *The House I Live in* in 1945, which pled for racial and religious tolerance, followed by other movies soon after, which made the same plea, particularly regarding anti-Semitism. Those were precursors to the modern Civil Rights era that largely began in 1954 when the Supreme court struck down legal segregation with the *Brown vs. Board of Education* ruling, and in 1955, when Rosa Parks refused to sit on the back of the bus in Montgomery, Alabama.

The progress was a mixed bag. Much of the progress of the late 1940s was set back by the McCarthy years in the early 1950s, and the assassination of Martin Luther King, Jr. coincided with the end of black economic progress in America. As a ratio to white income, black income increased dramatically from 1940 to 1969, nearly doubling. It has remained stagnant, stuck at around 60%, lower than even the Hispanic income.[\[112\]](#) Down there with the blacks and Hispanics are the natives, probably at the bottom of the barrel.[\[113\]](#) The Sioux reservation on Pine Ridge, site of the [Wounded Knee massacre](#), is in the poorest county in America today.

Native Americans were still subject to Cowboys-and-Indians stereotyping in the movie industry. One remarkable comparison of the recent progress is the two receptions given by the Academy Award audience, a generation apart, when a Native American woman took the stage. When Marlon Brando refused his Oscar for his portrayal of Don Corleone in *The Godfather*, and had a Native American woman read a short speech from Brando, and gave his reason for rejecting the Oscar being the movie industry's horrid depiction of Native Americans, the crowd booed the woman off the stage. Contrast that reaction and its reason to the reception granted a Native American woman who took the stage with Kevin Costner when he accepted the Oscar for best picture for *Dances with Wolves*, less than twenty years after *The Godfather* won best picture. The woman was given a standing ovation.[\[114\]](#)

In World War II's aftermath, the newly formed United Nations actively tried preventing genocidal holocausts from happening again, and the newly coined term "genocide" was the subject of the Genocide Convention. The resolution that emerged from the convention was unanimously adopted by the member states, and soon ratified by all the world's nations, almost. The only significant exception to ratifying the Genocide Convention's resolution, a resolution that was ratified to the extent that it became binding international law in 1951, was

the United States. To this day, the United States has not properly ratified what all the civilized nations of the world rapidly ratified over fifty years ago.[\[115\]](#) Why? Because to do so would make a crime what the United States is still doing to native tribes, what it is doing to Iraq today, what it did to [Southeast Asia](#) and Korea, what it supported in [Central America](#), [East Timor](#), and so on.

The United States is the world's leading practitioner of genocide, and signing on with the rest of the world in denouncing genocide is contrary to the pursuit of our "national interests."[\[116\]](#) In my lifetime, particularly in recent years, the United States has been virtually the only "civilized" nation in the world, and [often the only one](#), to fail to ratify international treaties to preserve the environment (such as the Rio Summit or Basel Convention), outlawing children from becoming soldiers, and so on. No European nation has a death penalty, and the United States is only one of six nations that execute people for crimes committed while they were children. Our august co-executioners are some of the world's most brutal and anti-humanitarian nations: Saudi Arabia, Iran, Yemen, Pakistan and Nigeria. The United States executes more children than all those nations put together, and also has the [world's largest prison population](#) and highest incarceration rate.

Debunking the "Myths"

There is plenty of myth-debunking happening regarding World War II, but many "myth-debunkers" often seemed to be grinding axes, and can be establishment apologists pretending to be myth-debunkers, acting as if they were bringing historical "balance" or "clarity" to the situation, but merely bringing another kind of bias to the table.[\[117\]](#)

David Wyman wrote *The Abandonment of the Jews*, and is considered the pioneer of historical investigation regarding America's reaction to the plight of Jews in the 1930s and through the end of World War II. The thesis of Wyman and numerous others is that the Western nations did almost nothing while the Jewish Holocaust took shape and was carried out. Wyman's work sparked significant scholarly discussion.[\[118\]](#) One response was *The Myth of Rescue* by William Rubinstein.

In the first chapter, Rubinstein surveyed the phenomenon of recent scholarship on the issue of "rescue." He surveyed the vast literature on the subject that has been produced, and told the reader he will demonstrate that all the scholarship that makes the case that the Western world could have done *anything* to minimize the Holocaust is wrong. Rubinstein began his assault on the myths by attacking the first one, the "Myth of Closed Doors, 1933-9." In that chapter, Rubinstein made the case that anti-Semitism was not nearly as pronounced in American society, and European society in general, as Wyman and others would have us believe.

Rubinstein devoted great attention to the notion. He presented tables to show that contrary to the assertion of Wyman and friends, most of Germany's Jews escaped to Western nations before the war broke out, so the closed-door idea is a myth. He presented several tables of numbers to make his case. He presented tables on how many Jews fled Germany, when and where they went, and presented results of public opinion polls on the issue of Jewish immigration and their attitude toward the Nazi regime. With Rubinstein's book as the sole source of information, his thesis might have been convincing. As with [Julian Simon's work](#), reading statistical data needs to be performed carefully, because creative ability can make numbers say almost whatever people want them to, and there are various ways to interpret them. What numbers an author presents and omits can disclose a great deal regarding his/her motivation.

Rubinstein set himself a strenuous task in attempting to puncture the "myths," and the most credible way is to simply present the data, or summarize it for the reader, so that an "objective" assessment of the "myth" could be made. Many times, Rubinstein criticized the "ahistorical" arguments that he challenged. Rubinstein noted that Americans during the Great Depression were averse to letting in immigrants, and "paradoxically" they detested what was happening in Nazi Germany.[\[119\]](#) He presented survey results that showed that on the eve of World War II, most Americans were opposed to an active campaign against Jews in the United States.[\[120\]](#) Rubinstein's equation of American anti-Semitism and revulsion of what the Nazis were doing in Germany was misleading.

Rubinstein was born and raised in America. No nation has ever been as intensely racist for as long as the United States has. Even today, racism and bigotry is alive and well. The wolf has simply donned sheep's clothing. That phenomenon is an old one. For instance, the surest way to get votes in America during the nineteenth century was [running for office as an Indian fighter](#), with Indian killers such as [Andrew Jackson](#), [William Henry Harrison](#) and [Zachary Taylor](#) parlaying their bloody deeds into the presidency, while Custer probably [tried the same thing, and failed](#).

Many people celebrated those gruesome deeds, even universally at times, as in Denver when the conquering heroes came back from [Sand Creek](#). They proudly showed off the severed genitalia of murdered women, wearing it on their hats, while the *Rocky Mountain News* celebrated the events, writing that "Cheyenne scalps are getting as thick as toads in Egypt... Everybody has got one and is anxious to get another to send east."[\[121\]](#) Yet, that did not mean that everybody in America thought it was great. The more "civilized" folks back east, with the local natives long ago annihilated, developed the rudiments of a conscience, and many were shocked at the Sand Creek Massacre. That did not mean that they liked Indians, it just meant that when their fellow citizens indiscriminately killed them, specifically targeting women and children, their sensibilities were offended. Regarding [Iraq](#) today, most Americans prefer to not know about the vast numbers of Iraqi people (largely children) that our policies

are killing. They avert their eyes, and our [mainstream media](#) presents very few images of that carnage. That America has killed off more than a million Iraqis since 1991 is not pretty, but most Americans, if faced with pictures of starving Iraqi infants and pertinent scenes of our "diplomats" helping to create those situations, would not cheer.

We are still an intensely racist nation, but if somebody goes on the American airwaves and calls black people "niggers," they have taken things too far, and will be publicly upbraided. People can be racist and bigoted, but they cannot say it too loudly, or like Rush Limbaugh does, couch it in "humor." Several publicly visible careers have come to a screeching halt in America in the past generation when somebody made a comment that could have been construed as racist (Al Campanis of the Dodgers is one example, Jimmy the Greek another). That such a display would be subject to merciless derision does not conflict with the fact that those witnessing it are racist. It just means that some had the poor taste to say it openly, which is not acceptable in our genteel society, and the anger with which they are attacked is often an aspect of denial coming forward. Ex-KKK Grand Wizard David Duke can even make a respectable showing in a gubernatorial election; he just cannot say the word "nigger" in public.

For instance, if George Bush or Bill Clinton called the Iraqi people "sand niggers" during a press conference, they would have never heard the end of it, and something like that could even create an atmosphere of impeachment. Yet, those two men presided over the deaths of more than a million Iraqi citizens, about half of them children. In America, killing a million people is no crime, something that has barely registered on America's conscience yet, just like our devastation of [Southeast Asia](#) and [Central America](#). Yet, calling those people a racist appellation would bring the American people's wrath. The major crime against humanity passes without mention, or even justified by people such as [Madeleine Albright](#). Call those murdered people a nasty name however, and people invite the wrath of those responsible for the murders.

Rubinstein made much of the fact that Charles Lindbergh ended his political career with a 1941 speech that outlined the threat that Jews posed to America. America acted self-righteously in lambasting Lindbergh for speaking out. His crime was voicing his opinions. How could it be otherwise, when Jews of the day were subject to [discriminatory hiring practices](#) that excluded them from many professions? How could it be otherwise, when they were denied admittance to many hotels, beaches and other public places? How could it be otherwise, when more than half of America believed that Jews should be segregated? Lindbergh was saintly compared to [Henry Ford](#), whom Rubinstein did not mention. There was no widespread boycott of Ford cars due to his attacks on Jews.

Similarly, most Americans did not approve of newsreel footage and reports of Nazi barbarities in the 1930s. It did not mean that most Americans did not have anti-Semitic sentiments. It was just that openly burning books and beating Jews on the street was going too far.

Particularly disheartening was that in 1930s America, about six percent of Americans openly approved of what the Nazis were doing. Rubinstein, however, makes the case that only six percent openly approving of what the Nazis were doing, while 94% disapproved, shows that American was not all that anti-Semitic. That is a questionable analogy, and impressive data regarding American anti-Semitism was completely ignored in *The Myth of Rescue*.

The chapter was titled "The Myth of Closed Doors," because he made the case that the doors were open. He presented statistics that supported his position that anti-Semitism was not pronounced in America. Disapproval of the Nazi book burnings and other barbaric acts provided little evidence for how muted anti-Semitism may have been in America. What it gave evidence of was how many people would approve of open and vicious anti-Semitism, and depressingly, six percent of Americans openly approved of what the Nazis were doing to the Jews.

That would be as if Americans watched the documentary [The Panama Deception](#) and approved of what America did to Panama. It is highly unlikely that even one percent of Americans could watch that documentary and wave the flag over the American invasion of Panama. If it was Italians invading Panama in that documentary, for instance, probably not one American in ten thousand would cheer what happened, and call the Italians unparalleled barbarians. Six percent of Americans openly approved of what the Nazis were doing in the 1930s, and is shockingly high (six percent "strongly" approved for America to begin a similar program, while another six percent "mildly" approved of such plans). Anti-Semitism had to be quite high for people to openly approve such barbarity.

Rubinstein wrote that the data plainly showed that barriers to Jews fleeing Germany after *Kristallnacht* came down in the "democracies" once it became very apparent what the Nazis were doing to the Jews.[\[122\]](#) He tellingly left out facts that would have painted a fuller picture.

The issue is: "Did the 'democracies' let in Jews in numbers great enough to help minimize the Holocaust?" More importantly, what were the intentions of the "democracies" on the eve of war? Did they do all they could, but it was not enough? Also, did they do very little, and if so, how much was due to anti-Semitism and other biases? Those are the important questions that Wyman and others bring up, and are the crux of the matter. Rubinstein continually tried to demonstrate that whatever good intentions the "democracies" may have had, all attempts to act on them would have been uniformly futile.

Rubinstein showed that most German Jews fled Germany before World War II started, more than 80% of Jews under forty years old.[\[123\]](#) That is true. What Rubinstein failed to mention was that those fleeing Jews often did not get where they wanted to, but accepted wherever would take them. For instance, France accepted German-Jew refugees rather readily, until 1938, when it began tightening the screws, as everybody else did, which was contrary to Rubinstein's assertion. Rubinstein mentioned that fact, but then tried mitigating it by showing

that there were between 40,000 and 60,000 Jews in France when war broke out.[\[124\]](#) What Rubinstein failed to mention was that many if not most were trying to go elsewhere, particularly America. That situation existed for all the peripheral nations that took in Jews on the eve of war. America, however, was erecting what Wyman called "paper walls." The world's largest Jewish population was in the United States, and Jews were treated better in the United States than anywhere else in the West. After *Kristallnacht*, the situation of Jews in Germany became increasingly desperate, and the "democracies" moved to limit immigration, not open their doors further. For all the statistical analysis Rubinstein engaged in, he could not obscure that fact, and ignored or minimized events that clearly spelled it out.

Probably the signal event that demonstrated America's attitude toward German Jews fleeing Germany was the fate of the Wagner-Rogers bill, introduced in early 1939. It would have allowed a special allotment of Jewish children into the United States, children who had fled the Third Reich. Those children had been separated from their parents and smuggled out of Germany and Austria. Opposition to the bill was widespread and vociferous in America, even though America's newspapers nearly all took the editorial stance of supporting the bill.[\[125\]](#) President Roosevelt's cousin even stated that 20,000 charming children would all too soon grow to be "20,000 ugly adults." Roosevelt bowed before the public outpouring of sentiment, and let the bill die quietly, taking no action.[\[126\]](#) That was the salient and pertinent opinion poll of the day, and Rubinstein did not mention it. Faced with an unavoidable decision to take in Jewish refugee children, America slammed the door. The next year, legislation to take in English children refugees passed with enthusiasm.

The other event, on the eve of war, after *Kristallnacht*, was barely mentioned by Rubinstein, and he used it to criticize critics of the West's role in the Jewish Holocaust. The horrific voyage of the *Saint Louis* is a monument to the West's attitude toward the Jewish plight on the eve of war. It was an acid test of the West's attitude, but Rubinstein kept throwing numbers at the reader, diverting their attention from the entrenched anti-Semitism that pervaded the West at that time.

The *Saint Louis*' voyage is also an example of the hazards of relying on secondary historical accounts. In Yahil's *The Holocaust*, she wrote that not all the passengers aboard the *Saint Louis* were taken in and some sailed back to Hamburg.[\[127\]](#) For years, I believed that was the case. While researching this essay, I saw other scholars say that *all* the passengers were taken in by the nations of Britain, Holland, Belgium and France. In order to resolve the discrepancy, I had to dig up an authoritative work on the *Saint Louis*' voyage, and obtained *Voyage of the Damned* by Gordon Thomas and Max Morgan-Witts, and I found that those nations indeed took in all passengers. Yahil's account was wrong, and for years, I was misled. That is the hazard of relying on secondary history. In my work, I usually do not make historical assertions, especially when relying on secondary history, unless I see a number of sources agree on the events. The fact that all the passengers were taken in instead of some sailing to Hamburg is significant. It does say something about the Allies. Yet, reading the

voyage's account is sobering. In the United States, news accounts and editorials in American newspapers ran while the ship was stranded in Havana harbor. The Cubans were derided by numerous American papers for not letting them in, and the *Christian Science Monitor* castigated the passengers of the *Saint Louis* for being so selective about their destination, invoking the image of pioneers carving their homes out of the wilderness, and reminding the Jews to consider that option.[\[128\]](#)

The *Christian Science Monitor* conveniently ignored that Jews had been doing *exactly that* in Palestine, and that there was not another option like that in the world, and by that time Palestine had been closed off as a destination by British restrictions. In 1939, on the eve of war, Jews fleeing Germany comprised more than half of all immigration to Palestine, the highest proportion of any pre-War year, but the number of Jews immigrating to Palestine from Germany in 1939, 8500, was less than immigrated each year from 1934-1936. The British clamped down on immigration after anti-Jewish riots by Palestinian Arabs in 1936. Britain's relative openness to Jewish immigration was partly due to the fact that they did not want them immigrating to Palestine, another point glossed over by Rubinstein. However, Rubinstein does score some points when he pointed out that many German Jews did not go to Palestine when they may have been able to. There is truth to that, which partly had to do with the anti-Zionist element in Jewish circles. Not everybody wanted to go to the Promised Land. When the *Saint Louis* sailed, however, Palestine apparently was not an option.

Another unmentioned event did serious damage to Rubinstein's thesis, which was the voyage of the *SS Struma*. In December 1941, the ship was filled with 769 Romanian Jews at port in Istanbul. The ship was not seaworthy, but those Jews were desperately fleeing to wherever they could. Turkey was another "neutral" power during World War II. The ship lay in Istanbul's harbor for more than two months, and the British denied them permission to continue to Palestine. On February 24, 1942, the Turkish government ordered the ship to leave and the *Struma* was towed out into the Black Sea, where a Russian submarine sunk it by torpedo, apparently by accident. Two people survived that sinking. Raul Hilberg wrote of the incident, "The Balkan area had a large Jewish population, and henceforth the Turkish government needed no confirmation of Britain's policy to frustrate the immigration of these Jews to Palestine."[\[129\]](#)

The detailed account of the *Saint Louis'* voyage is a searing reflection on the United States and the West. One of the *Saint Louis* passengers, Aaron Pozner, was a stowaway who had been incredibly kicked out of Dachau with a small group of men who were told that they could leave Dachau if they left Germany in two weeks. Pozner made his way to Hamburg and hid in a stack of curing animal hides on the waterfront, enduring that awesome stench. Pozner saw prisoners regularly executed in Dachau by fiendish methods. One guard specialized in castration by bayonet. Hiding in curing hides was a minor inconvenience compared to the rigors of Dachau. Other *Saint Louis* passengers were beaten by gangs of SS soldiers on their way to the boat.

Yahil's account was not as wrong as it first appeared. When the *Saint Louis* had the door slammed in its face in Havana, its sister ship the *Orinoco* was sailing from Hamburg with 200 Jewish refugees, following the *Saint Louis'* example. Seeing what happened to the *Saint Louis*, the *Orinoco* *did* return to Hamburg. The only intervention the West apparently took regarding the *Orinoco's* voyage was taken by the U.S. ambassador to Britain, Joe Kennedy, who informally warned Hitler to refrain from seizing those passengers when they disembarked in Hamburg and throwing them into concentration camps. The Germans apparently took Kennedy's threat seriously, because those hapless *Orinoco* passengers went home unmolested...although they likely ended up in concentration camps before it was all over.^[130] Britain and France flatly rejected taking in the passengers of the *Orinoco*.

The *Saint Louis'* plight was so dire, with the situation of finding no safe harbor, that those aboard made several suicide attempts, by poisoning, slashing their wrists, jumping overboard and hanging themselves. A few attempts were successful, and there was genuine fear that the passengers would stage a Masada-like mass suicide, so there was a constant suicide watch on deck. While that was going on, there were desperate negotiations taking place to get some nation to take them in. In the Western Hemisphere, there were a few offers of dubious nature, by the Dominican Republic, Honduras and the Panama Canal Zone. There was a great deal of lobbying in the United States by Jewish groups, but America slammed the door hard, although many passengers had U.S. quota numbers. When the *Saint Louis* set sail for Europe, it sailed up the Florida coast, in sight of Miami. A U.S. Coast Guard ship escorted the *Saint Louis* as it sailed along the American coast. Why did it escort the *Saint Louis*? The fear was that Jews would jump ship and try swimming to America's shores. The Coast Guard was under orders to look for Jews jumping overboard, capturing them and redepositing them back aboard the *Saint Louis*.

When those four European nations were finally persuaded to take in the refugees, only after being paid about \$500,000 by Jewish groups, they nearly battled each other in getting the passengers with the lowest quota numbers for the United States, so they could quickly get rid of them. Holland interned the Jews with other Jews who were trying to flee Europe, made clear that their asylum was only temporary, and they refused any passenger who did not have a U.S. quota number. The internment camp in Holland was surrounded by barbed wire and was watched by guard dogs. The passengers who disembarked in Belgium were viewed with great distrust, and essentially treated like prisoners. France welcomed the Jews relatively graciously, yet were in almost open contest with Britain to take in Jews with the lowest U.S. quota numbers. When the final stop was made in England, about sixty of the men were immediately interned in a camp of about 5000 Jews, all hoping to go somewhere, anywhere, that would take them.

The *Saint Louis* Jews who went to Belgium, Holland and France mostly ended up in death camps before it was all over. If America had taken them in, they would have survived. The voyage of the *Saint Louis* alone renders highly dubious Rubinstein's "myth of closed doors"

argument. The ill-fated Wagner-Rogers bill, that Rubinstein did not mention, deals his arguments a fatal blow.

To gain a fleshed out understanding of the situation, watch the documentary *America and the Holocaust; Deceit and Indifference*. It features the real story of Kurt Klein and his parents. As with many German Jews, the Klein family first got their children out of the country, then planned to follow them when they could. After *Kristallnacht* in November of 1938, the Klein parents were in the long line of Jews trying to escape to America. In December of 1938, the Kleins were part of a horde of Jews besieging the American consulate in Stuttgart. They were in line to get out of Germany and into America, but were informed that there were over 22,000 cases ahead of them. The waiting list was more than two years long.

In August 1940, after nearly two years of waiting, the Stuttgart consulate revoked the Klein's tentative approval for immigration. Soon after the American consulate in Stuttgart slammed the doors in their faces, they were deported by Germany to Vichy France, and took up the immigration issue anew with the American consulate in Marseilles. Vichy France was not occupied by the Nazis, but collaborated with them. The Kleins were *kicked out* of Germany, not put into concentration camps. The Kleins lived in an abysmal refugee detention camp, given starvation rations, and desperately sought a way to America. By that time, the American [State Department was acting very consciously to limit Jewish immigration to America](#). That was when the "paper walls" escalated and eventually cut off almost all Jewish refugees from coming to America. That situation was a primary issue that Wyman investigated.

In July of 1941, nearly *two years* into World War II, the American consulate again informed the Kleins that all their previous efforts to immigrate were for naught, and that they would have to start over. The Kleins were also forced to live apart in the refugee camp. In December of 1941, a few days before the Japanese bombed Pearl Harbor, the Kleins had their last glimpse of freedom. Their children had been able to book them passage to America. All was in readiness, except for approval from the American consulate. The consulate informed the Kleins that the quota for German immigrants had been exceeded, and that they would have to wait for the quota to open up to admit them. By that time, the Final Solution was underway in Eastern Europe, with the Einsatzgruppen performing their mass executions in the newly conquered territory, as Germany invaded Eastern Europe during the double-cross of Stalin.

After the final failed attempt in December 1941, after *three years* of desperate attempts to gain entry to the United States, the Klein children stopped hearing from their parents. Their mail to their parents was eventually returned to them undeliverable, and after the war it became known that the Klein parents were sent to Auschwitz in August of 1942.

That can disparagingly be called an "anecdote," although a heart-wrenching one. About 100,000 Jews in peripheral nations to Germany were in the same situation as the Kleins were. How many Jews saw the impossibly long waiting line into America, and did not even try? In

his debunking of the "myth of closed doors," Rubinstein puts in several anecdotes, but of a very different nature. His anecdotes are all about how nobody thought the Jewish Holocaust would happen, which was why many German Jews did not emigrate when they had the chance. His anecdotes were about how much everybody hated Nazi Germany. Again, hating Nazis did not mean that they loved Jews.

The 1936 Olympics were staged in Berlin, and there was little outrage over it. America participated in it, Jesse Owens became a legend, and the Olympics were a huge propaganda coup for Germany, as the American press generally wrote glowing accounts about Nazi Germany. The Jewish issue was nearly invisible in the American press during the Olympic coverage. Although Jewish and other groups tried to organize a boycott of the Berlin Olympics, one never happened, and prominent Olympic officials such as Avery Brundage even spoke out against the Jewish-led attempts to form a boycott. America did not enter the war until the Japanese were egged into [bombing Pearl Harbor](#), and Germany *declared war on America*, when the European war was more than two years old.

The single most respected work of scholarship on American anti-Semitism is Leonard Dinnerstein's *Anti-Semitism in America*, published in 1994, three years before *The Myth of Rescue* appeared. *Anti-Semitism in America* is considered the first comprehensive treatment of American anti-Semitism's history. Rubinstein's treatment of Dinnerstein's work reminded me of the JFK assassination debunking by [Gerald Posner](#), where the *appearance* of dealing with the all the pertinent evidence was feigned. Posner would dismiss entire bodies of work with footnotes, while plowing to his foregone conclusion that Oswald was a lone nut who was murdered by another lone nut. The only mention of *Anti-Semitism in America* in Rubinstein's book was in a footnote, where he dismissed Dinnerstein's work as being unbalanced and failing to note how much Americans were opposed to the Nazis. Rubinstein tried linking shock and disgust with what the Nazis were doing with love for the Jews (literally, "philo-Semitism").
[\[131\]](#)

Another book cripples Rubinstein's "open doors" thesis. Mitchell Bard's harrowing *Forgotten Victims* is the story of *Americans* who ended up in the death camps. As with stories like it, denial has been the prominent American reaction to the plight of American citizens, many not even Jewish, who ended up in the death camps, including American soldiers. Bard's work is the first to try summarizing the experience of Americans in the Final Solution. Bard remarked on the paucity of documentation on the subject, as he sifted through archives, hunting down and interviewing survivors.

As can be seen in many other war accounts, Bard shows how the Red Cross had a hand in the Jewish Holocaust, as it accepted at face value the Nazi explanations for why Jewish prisoners were segregated from the general prison populations, and never really spoke out about the holocaust that was obvious to its people in the field, visiting the concentration camps. The official explanation was that they were afraid to jeopardize access to the camps if they spoke

out. The head of the Red Cross even used the term "the Jewish Problem," the phrase the Nazis used.[\[132\]](#)

The Red Cross' timid silence and acquiescence is another dark chapter of the Jewish Holocaust. The aspect of Bard's book which further eradicates Rubinstein's "open doors" thesis is recording how the United States prevented *fleeing Americans* from coming back from Europe. In 1939, about 80,000 Americans were living abroad, tens of thousands in Europe. On November 25, 1939, only a few months into World War II, the assistant Secretary of State, George Messersmith, wrote that Americans living abroad who were not planning on returning could not expect any help from the U.S. government if they became ensnared in war zones. Messersmith wrote,

"Their real status does not differ very much from that of the many thousands of unfortunate persons deserving of our sympathy, and having no claim to American citizenship, who would desire to come to this country in order to escape from danger zones or for other reasons and who seek immigration visas and passport visas to that end...This government considers that by reason of having already met this particular responsibility, no situation should arise, even if conditions should become more aggravated in certain places, that would warrant it in providing further special facilities to enable Americans to return to this country."[\[133\]](#)

Bard wrote that Messersmith's attitude "would condemn hundreds of Americans to death." The Germans regarded any Jew, regardless of their nationality, as fair game. When the Germans began requiring American Jews to register in occupied France, William Leahy, the ambassador to France at the time, protested, and the Germans stated that it was required to "ensure the recovery of the country." America apparently did nothing. Americans caught in German-occupied Europe were often given special consideration, while America was officially neutral. In January of 1941, American Jews in Hungary became subject to new anti-Jewish laws. The American government was again virtually inert.

When America closed German consulates in America in the summer of 1941, the Germans retaliated by closing American consulates in occupied territory. American business was conducted through the Swiss Legation after that. When Jewish property was seized in Hungary, the State department specifically did not support the claims of Jews living in America if they had not yet earned American citizenship.[\[134\]](#)

When Americans began getting rounded up in Romania, and Cordell Hull, the Secretary of State, was informed of the Final Solution being carried out in Romania, with Americans being deported to Eastern Europe, where their fate was uncertain (we know today that it was pretty

certain), Hull responded like the bureaucrat he was, and allowed some small deviation from policy to provide passports to American-Jews who were in threat of being rounded up with the other Jews. Nothing was suggested for helping the non-American Jews.[\[135\]](#)

In the day's correspondence, the State Department's attitude was clear. Cavendish Cannon, of the State Department's Division of European Affairs, objected to the plan to rescue Jews from Romania because it would encourage other persecuted people to seek refuge in the United States. Many in the State Department, who thought that rescuing Jews would pose a danger or "take the burden or the curse off Hitler", held Cannon's attitude.[\[136\]](#)

Breckenridge Long, a prominent villain in the Jewish plight and America's response to it, proposed to not only restrict immigration to America by refugees, but also for *American citizens*, citing that they could really be spies and subversives, keeping in line with the "Fifth Column" fears of the day, which were exaggerated. Long even wrote that not all Americans wanting to come home would be allowed in, stating that, "only those we want should be accepted."[\[137\]](#) If Long felt that way about *American citizens* who wanted to come back to America, what chance did Jews of European citizenship have? That situation prodded David Wyman into writing *The Abandonment of the Jews*.

In January 1943, the U.S. government discovered that American Jews in France were being treated just like other Jews in France, and our government gave a tepid response that the Germans had better watch out, or Germans in American hands might suffer. In September 1944, 30,000 Americans were still in Europe. American Jews in the internment camps were treated worse than the others, and Americans began ending up in concentration camps.

Bard relates the tale of Barry Spanjaard. Spanjaard was only ten years old in 1940. He was born in America, but his parents were Dutch. The American consul told Barry to return to America and leave his parents behind in Europe. Given that choice, Barry stayed with his parents. Spanjaard had his birth certificate, but not a U.S. passport. Because he did not have a passport, the Germans deported him and his parents to Bergen-Belsen, where they spent the next year. In January of 1945, the Germans let Barry and his parents go free. Barry carried out his father, who weighed sixty-five pounds by that time. They headed for Switzerland, but his father died a few days later. Years later, Barry learned that the Germans had tried to trade him to America for a German, and our government refused. Barry later fought in the Korean War, and when he found out about how his government refused to trade for him, he said that he would have never gone in the American military to fight "for this country" if he knew that then. Barry witnessed his father being beaten and other horrors. As an American, he had a somewhat privileged status at Bergen-Belsen: he was not forced to beat his inmates, as other boys were.[\[138\]](#)

Bard believes that hundreds, if not thousands, of Americans would have had their lives spared if our government had done anything substantial about it, instead of erecting "paper walls" for

American citizens. In one instance, the American government demanded that an intern at Auschwitz produce proof of citizenship before they would help. Those stonewalling behaviors condemned many Americans to death in the camps.[\[139\]](#)

Ancillary to the point of demonstrating how untenable Rubinstein's "open doors" thesis is, below is some more of Bard's devastating book. American citizens ended up in the Warsaw ghetto, and Bard recounts the story of Mary Berg, an American teenager who lived in the Warsaw Ghetto for more than two years. Berg wrote a diary that is a much different account than Anne Frank's. Frank hid in a house in Holland. Berg walked the streets of the Warsaw Ghetto daily, witnessing the death and suffering that surrounded her.

Jewish-American soldiers wore dog tags with an "H" on it, identifying their religion as Hebrew. The "H" was officially so their spiritual rites could be ministered properly. The problem was, however, that a Jewish-American soldier could go his entire tour of duty and never see a rabbi. The "H" became a bull's-eye for Jewish-American soldiers who had been captured by the Germans. Their buddies often tried hiding them by swapping dog tags, giving them their Bibles, and the like.

American soldiers ended up at Buchenwald and Mauthausen. Perhaps three hundred American soldiers went to Buchenwald. Most lived to tell about it, but many also died. Most were not Jewish. Many ended up at Mauthausen, which was perhaps worse than Auschwitz. Mauthausen was where the Nazis engaged in the infamous practice of forcing the prisoners to haul stones. Prisoners were forced to carry huge stones up the 148 steps of the quarry, then rush back down to haul another one back up, over and over, until they died. American soldiers were forced into that duty. The Nazis would execute their collapsed rock-haulers on the spot, including American soldiers. Bard gives an example of one day, September 5, 1944, when Dutch, English and American POWs arrived at Mauthausen. They spent the first day getting baths and being assigned barracks. The next day they carried stones all day long, and then were all shot, the same day.[\[140\]](#) American soldiers would die by beating and torture during interrogation, their bodies being fed to the crematorium.

OSS (Office of Strategic Services, the forerunner of the [CIA](#)) Lieutenant Jack Taylor ran numerous special American missions behind enemy lines, but was finally captured and ended up at Mauthausen. Taylor was slated for execution, but was assigned to a work detail to build a crematorium. Taylor endured unimaginable horror, with fellow prisoners resorting to cannibalism. Because he was an American, other prisoners used him as a repository so he could tell the stories of what happened, as he had a better chance of surviving than they did. He was told of human experiments and executions by every means imaginable, such as being shot, gassed, hanged, beaten with sticks, hammers, pickaxes and shovels; being torn apart by dogs, forced off of cliffs, injected with chemicals in human experiments, drowned, crushed in cement mixers, buried alive, eyes gouged out, red hot pokers shoved down their throats, etc. Taylor saw enough himself that nothing they could say amazed him.

Human experiments were routinely carried out, and prisoners with unusual features were killed and their unusual features preserved, such as tattoos, strange lesions and deformities. A doctor told Taylor that "A hunchback and a dwarf, who had come to the notice of one of the SS doctors, were executed and their skeletons cleaned and mounted for specimens."[\[141\]](#)

Taylor survived Mauthausen and was freed when the camp was liberated. He is a prominent witness, and Mauthausen was not even an extermination camp. Testimony like Taylor's is difficult for [Holocaust deniers](#) to tear apart as Jewish propaganda, especially American-flag-waving Holocaust deniers.

Bard spends more of his book on a group of American prisoners who had it probably worse than any other group of American POWs in Europe. In late 1944, the Germans made their last desperate offensive, known as the Battle of the Bulge. They took the American troops by surprise and captured thousands of American troops. They slaughtered many American prisoners at what became known as the Malmédy Massacre, where the SS again demonstrated their heroic penchant for executing unarmed prisoners. The Nazis tried separating the Jewish-American soldiers from the four thousand soldiers they captured. Again, their buddies tried hiding them, but with threats the Nazis were able to get 130 Jewish-American soldiers to identify themselves. They took those 130 soldiers, added 220 other soldiers from the ranks, and sent them off by train to Berga, a camp that would have the highest mortality rate of any POW camp during the war. Berga was a slave labor camp, where the soldiers were forced into mining activities. They were starved and worked to death for fifty days, then the Allied armies drew close and the survivors were sent on a death march, just as Jews were being marched around the countryside in those last days. When their guards finally abandoned them, U.S. soldiers, who could not believe at first that those human skeletons were American soldiers, discovered them. More than 70 of those 350 soldiers died in the span of two months. They had been reduced to the same "subhuman" condition that Patton said the Jews in the concentration camps had been reduced to.[\[142\]](#) While in their ghastly prison conditions, the esprit de corps deteriorated a little, and stealing from each other was what most soldiers did, as their survival partly depended on it. They always wore all their clothes, because they would disappear if they took them off. One soldier awoke to find a buddy trying to take his boots off his feet while he slept.

America's response to Berga was typical: denial. The army went so far as to send one survivor to a psychiatrist, saying that he had to be making up his story of Berga. When a soldier who survived Buchenwald applied for assistance at a VA hospital, the doctor who interviewed him wrote in his record, "Claims he was in Buchenwald." Another Buchenwald survivor was told by the Air Force Records Center that there was no record of him being a POW. When he wrote to federal agencies, their reply was invariably: "There were no Allied airmen at Buchenwald." The government made returning POWs sign secrecy agreements, further paving the way to burying their story. To this day, the U.S. government is trying to cover up what happened. Until recently, the survivors of the other four thousand Battle of the

Bulge POWs who remained after the 350 prisoners were separated and sent to Berga, knew nothing about where those 350 soldiers went, or their fate. The survivors often have their experiences received with disbelief when they bring them up, so they keep silent.

The two fiends who ran the camp at Berga were prosecuted in the war crimes trials, but the American soldiers' testimonies were generally not entered into evidence, and those two had their convictions commuted, to the bitterness of many surviving soldiers. As with most who survive such ordeals, the men were not eager to relive the experience by talking about it, and most people did not want to hear it. Many of those men to this day have trouble coming to grips with their Berga experience, and many are still crippled in one way or another.

In his first chapter of debunking the "myth," Rubinstein's thesis collapsed. He was obviously an apologist posing as a myth debunker. Rubinstein's efforts in his other chapters fared similarly under scrutiny. This essay will present one more example.

Rubinstein devotes a chapter to exploding the "myth" that the allies could have bombed Auschwitz. If something that was seemingly well intended could have been done, Rubinstein went to lengths to show how it would not have helped. At every turn, he absolved American and Allied inaction. Rubinstein's strategy was showing that any plans would have been ineffective, or they had been enacted, they would have been too late, etc. In Rubinstein's view, the Americans and the Allies were full of good intentions, but were helpless in the face of Nazi evil. He castigated others repeatedly for their hindsight, proposing things today that nobody proposed back then, but when he dealt with things that *were* proposed back then, Rubinstein used hindsight himself to show how even if the Allies had tried to bomb Auschwitz, it probably would have saved few Jews, from what we know today.

When Rubinstein noted that nothing was proposed or a proposal rejected, such as the ransom of 70,000 Romanian Jews by the Nazis, Rubinstein ignored the anti-Semitism that likely fueled the rejection, and instead showed that even if attempted, it would have been futile.

When something was proposed and ignored, such as bombing the crematorium at Auschwitz, Rubinstein then showed how the inaction was somehow justified because it would not have mattered if they tried anyway, because of logistical problems or that it was too late. Rubinstein seemed to have completely ignored the entire purpose of the work of Wyman and others (even though he stated that his work was a response to Wyman's), which is basically, "What can we learn from those events to prevent it from happening in the future?" On that score, Rubinstein provided no answers and heaps all the blame for the Holocaust on Hitler's and his cronies' shoulders. Rubinstein emphasized *one* "feasible" solution not tried: assassinating Hitler.

For another example of Rubinstein's tactics, he made a bold statement on page 84:

"Not one plan or proposal, made anywhere in the democracies by either Jews or non-Jewish champions of the Jews once the mass murder of the Jews in Europe had begun, could have rescued one single Jew who perished in the Nazi Holocaust."

The parents of Kurt Klein were just two of many thousands of Jews who tried getting out of Europe but were stymied by the "paper walls." The Kleins died in Auschwitz. Rubinstein can probably argue that those *Saint Louis* passengers who died in the death camps, in spite of the desperate actions by Jewish organizations and others to get those people into America, were stranded in Europe *before* the Final Solution was carried out.

One issue that Rubinstein failed to deal with, and others have mentioned this "lapse" in his logic, was that many plans would have been proposed if the proponents felt that they had a prayer at being implemented in the day's political climate. For instance, most American Jews would have wanted Kurt Klein's parents to be able to come to America, and there in fact were attempts to raise immigration quotas, but when the most innocent of victims, Jewish children, were given the cold shoulder by America when the [Wagner-Rogers bill died](#), how realistic was it to campaign to let in more Jewish *adults*? Jews in America at times did not want more Jews being let into the United States, because every Jewish refugee admitted further fanned American anti-Semitism.[\[143\]](#) The Jewish groups themselves have been roundly criticized by many for doing very little to avert the fate of those in the Jewish Holocaust. Kurt Klein, as a teenager, even naïvely went to Washington D.C. himself and pled with the government to do something about his parents' plight. His response to Rubinstein's assessment might be intriguing.

Regarding Auschwitz particularly, Rubinstein devoted a chapter to debunking the notion that bombing Auschwitz would have been helpful or even really possible. Early in his Auschwitz chapter, Rubinstein flatly states,

"As we have seen from the detailed discussions of the plans for 'rescue' actually put forward during the war, the bombing of Auschwitz was never, at any time, included among the proposals made by Jewish or non-Jewish groups concerned with the plight of Europe's Jews."[\[144\]](#)

In the pages after that unequivocal statement, Rubinstein discusses the *proposals for the bombing of Auschwitz* that were made by "Jewish and non-Jewish groups," noting the

individuals who originally presented pleas to bomb the railroads leading to Auschwitz, then the proposals put forth by groups to bomb Auschwitz itself, again by various concerned groups, both Jewish and non-Jewish. He even mentions how the War Refugee Board initially rejected the idea of bombing Auschwitz in August 1944, to eventually make the suggestion tentatively in October and emphatically in November.[\[145\]](#) That hardly jibes with Rubinstein's statement that nobody ever proposed to bomb Auschwitz.

Then Rubinstein made the case that when the proposal to bomb Auschwitz was made, it was too late to do any good. In particular, Rubinstein assailed Wyman's notion that the Allies could have successfully bombed Auschwitz, and he cited expert critiques of Wyman's work, and concluded that bombing Auschwitz was not feasible.

Rubinstein, while doing zero original work on the subject, nearly hung his hat on the analyses of James Kitchens and Richard Levy, noting that their analyses devastate Wyman's analysis.[\[146\]](#) The last word today on the issue is the analysis done by Stuart G. Erdheim, who argues more convincingly than Levy and Kitchens that yes, Auschwitz could have readily been bombed if the Allies had made it a priority.[\[147\]](#) Erdheim essentially takes apart the arguments of Kitchens and Levy. According to Robert Herzstein, he asked Levy the Auschwitz bombing question after Levy had given a speech at the Holocaust Museum. Levy's immediate response was that the allies could have "plastered" Auschwitz.[\[148\]](#) I do not advocate any violent solutions, but bombing the crematoria at Auschwitz would have killed very few people if done during the daytime when the Jews were working outside the camps. The issue here is whether Rubinstein disposed of another myth. He tried to, but had dubious success. His entire book is like that, and is the most prominent response to Wyman's work.

Why write history? What is history good for? To understand what happened, in order to apply the lessons to today, and perhaps avoiding the same mistakes from being repeated? [That is my view](#). Rubinstein regularly mentioned the "ahistorical" nature of the work he critiqued. Rubinstein concludes his book with the sentiment that the "democracies" did all they could to prevent or minimize the Jewish Holocaust, which was nearly nothing at all, because nothing was possible. He finishes with,

"Conversely, it cannot be emphasized too strongly that responsibility for the Holocaust lies solely and wholly with Adolf Hitler, the SS and their accomplices, and with no one else. In searching for a rational explanation of modern history's greatest crime, it is important that we do not assign guilt to those who were innocent."[\[149\]](#)

With that finale, Rubinstein takes the lawyer's position, making a select few culpable, and exonerating everybody else. It is an example of the "head-on-a-platter" theory. In that perspective, there are only a few bad guys in the world, making victims of the rest of us. The system or general populace is never responsible for bad things happening - it is only a few bad apples, the standard establishment apologist rationale. There is nothing to reform, because everything works fine. If something such a holocaust or Watergate happens, it is because a few bad people brought it into being.[\[150\]](#) In a sense, it is almost the conspiracy theorist's worldview. The institutional analysis of people such as [Edward Herman](#), [Noam Chomsky](#) and [Howard Zinn](#) are anathema to establishment apologists. The Chomsky-types spread wide the responsibility for mass events such as the Jewish Holocaust. They understand that making a few people the only guilty parties avoids the main issue, which is that each one of us become a little introspective, asking ourselves what we can do to help make sure such events never happen. Rubinstein's has a lawyer's view of the world, assessing guilt to the open perpetrators, sometimes, while exonerating the larger dynamics that helped it happen.

Rubinstein ignored the thousand years of anti-Semitism in the West as a contributing factor, and its steep climb during the 1930s and 1940s. Rubinstein also ignored the geopolitical factors that stunted Germany's imperial ambition, including the humiliation and deliberate lack of understanding shown by the other Western nations for why World War I happened. Invisible to Rubinstein is the thousand years of nearly continual warfare that characterized the West, and how such a culture of violence helped spawn such ideas as the Final Solution, a plan that was not hatched until the insanity of war gripped Germany and they began losing. Rubinstein may argue that such an analysis is beyond the scope of his work, but his work is little or no help in understanding why holocausts happen or how to prevent future ones.

Hindsight can be misused, and all the Monday-morning quarterbacking that people have used regarding the Jewish Holocaust and many other events can be a dubious undertaking. Yet, should not the point should be this: "What could we have done?" Even if such acts may partly be wishful thinking in hindsight, can it be a valuable process of understanding what happened, and preventing it from happening again? It is in that spirit that I wholly approve of the work of Wyman and others like him. The [presentism](#) arguments have a certain merit, especially when trying to make FDR more culpable for the Jewish Holocaust than he really was. For his time, FDR was a Jew-lover, placing many Jews in his administration, which engendered a lot of animosity and fear in America, where many called his New Deal the "Jew Deal." FDR was a politician for sure, and he bowed to the winds of public opinion often. Blaming FDR for America's inaction during the Jewish Holocaust is related to blaming Hitler for the Jewish Holocaust. That mentality is "blame the leaders, exonerate the herd." No U.S. president has ever been a visionary leader. That is not how American politics works.

Perhaps the closest thing that America has had to a visionary president was JFK, but that is also a mixed bag. He made visionary statements that inspired millions of Americans, such as his [landing-on-the-moon-by-1970](#) speech, his "What can you do for your country?" speech, his

[Peace Corps](#) and New Frontier ideas, etc. Kennedy did not dream it all up himself. He had speechwriters and advisers who helped polish that image. He was a politician also, and reading the record on his administration is not always pleasant. He was not exactly at the forefront of the Civil Rights issue, but played the politician, bowing to the winds of change, trying to seem like a leader when it was advantageous. He was close buddies with Joe McCarthy, for instance, and agreed with the witch-hunt mentality that prevailed during the McCarthy days. Kennedy presided over the beginning of the Vietnam War.

[JFK was probably killed](#) because he ticked off some pretty powerful people, and had to go. Noam Chomsky will disagree with me here, but it looks like JFK's decidedly tame outlook ticked off the hawks in the military and other high places. He would not call in air support for the Bay of Pigs invasion, refused to invade Cuba over the Missile Crisis, over the protestations of his advisers, and was making noises about pulling out of Vietnam. Busting the Mafia made him hated in those circles, and they had a hand in his death.

Jack Ruby was far from the small time nightclub owner that people such as Gerald Posner made him out to be. Gary Wean saw Ruby in the company of [Mick Cohen](#) more than once, and Wean once had a conversation with Ruby where he frankly told Gary, even knowing that Gary was a cop, that the mob was moving its operations to Havana, where all the action was. Castro's revolution ended that, which was one reason that JFK was killed, according to my research. Kennedy was not exactly a Christ-like figure, but he was not nearly as bellicose as the hawks would have liked. The Eisenhower years were characterized by Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, whose notion of diplomacy with the Soviets was to continually threaten nuclear war. Dulles' "diplomacy" coined the term "[brinksmanship](#)." Kennedy was far too gentle for that kind of stance, and it probably led to his death.

Winnowing the innocent from the guilty is a nearly pointless exercise in the end. The question that always faces us is this: "What will I do?" We face it each and every day, and our collective answer to that question determines [what kind of world we live in](#). It is lunacy to argue that the day's anti-Semitism, which pervaded the West, had nothing to do with the Jewish Holocaust, except in Hitler's fevered mind. It is lunacy to argue that the West's constant war-like mentality had nothing to do with what happened during World War II. It is blind to not consider the political-economic realities that led a Hitler to come to power, realities that every single citizen of the West had a hand in, to one degree or another. This site's [spiritual essay](#) makes the case for that being literally true.

It is annoying when people "debunk" myths, acting as if they are objective, when they are really performing apologetics. There is probably no true objectivity anywhere. There are personal truths, national truths, and even universal truths, but each one is at least partly dependent on who is perceiving the truth, making it their own truth. I am not objective. I am not even disinterested, which is the ideal historian's perspective, in many circles. Mitchell Bard, for instance, is far harder on Rubinstein's work than this essay has been. A review by

Robert Herzstein was scathing.[\[151\]](#) The point of scholarship such as Wyman's is that few people really *cared* about what happened to the Jews, which was the primary reason for the inaction. That is the central point and the one to argue with, which Rubinstein does not really address.

In support of Rubinstein's thesis, once the stage had been set, through:

1. Long centuries of anti-Semitism that had caused Eastern Europe to be so highly populated with Jews;
2. The incessant warring of the European nations for a millennium;
3. The stunting of Germany's imperial ambition by the other imperial powers that led to World War I, and them deciding to punish Germany instead of trying to get of the root of the problem, which is imperial ambition itself;
4. The subsequent economic hardships of war reparations, hyperinflation and the Great Depression that allowed Hitler to come to power; and
5. For the Jews of Western Europe in particular, the stage was further set through the other Western nations barring/limiting the immigration of fleeing Jews;

then when Germany invaded Poland and eventually Eastern Europe, those Jews in those regions *were* largely doomed, although many in the local populations were willing accomplices, eagerly moving into empty Jewish homes, hunting Jews, etc. If the Allies had committed themselves to trying to mitigate the Jewish Holocaust, and there is no evidence that they did to any significant degree, it is questionable how successful they would have been. Yet, that is also a judgment in hindsight. Regarding bombing Auschwitz and other potential attempts to mitigate the Jewish Holocaust, such as buying those Romanian refugees, there is no evidence that they were taken seriously. With the Romanian Jew purchase, the American and British bureaucrats were genuinely *afraid* that the Nazis would actually sell them, putting tens of thousands of refugees in their hands. In the end, the Allies simply *did not care* what was happening to the Jews, as they also did not care if millions of Soviet soldiers were dying in Nazi POW camps as part of a conscious Nazi strategy. In light of the firebombings of Dresden and Tokyo in early 1945, the atomic bombing [Nagasaki](#) *after* Hiroshima, then having a "[grand finale](#)" bombing *after* that, as the Japanese were trying to surrender, gives the lie to the notion that the war planners had much concern for civilian lives. In the insanity and horror of the times, the Jewish fate was simply part of the landscape. As Hilberg observed, the Allies were only really concerned with the success or failure of the combatants, and victims such as Jews, Poles and Soviet POWs were barely considered among the Allied press and governments.[\[152\]](#)

Yes, those European Jews were doomed once the fireworks began, but to ignore all the

factors that led to that situation was the fatal flaw in Rubinstein's work, as he heaped all the blame for the Jewish Holocaust on a few shoulders, Hitler's most prominently. Hitler certainly deserves a lion's share of responsibility for what happened. He was the primary architect. Yes, the Jewish (and Gypsy) Holocaust was one of history's greatest crimes. Yet, it has plenty of competition for greatest crime, and Hitler had many, many accomplices, including Western Civilization, all of it. It would be nice to point out the great efforts that the Allies engaged in to limit the Jewish Holocaust, but there is virtually no effort to point to. Most effort was token, taken after the Allied governments were badgered into doing *something*, even after they knew full well what was happening.

The point of this historical narrative on anti-Semitism is to emphasize the broad historical trends that led to a maniac like Hitler deciding to eradicate the Jews, and the Christian world playing along, with varying levels of complicity. The Jews also have *some* responsibility for their fate. Their insular ways among a fanatical and intolerant Christian culture made them logical scapegoats when something went wrong, as with the Black Death. Many thousands of Jews were burned alive for "bringing" the Black Death to Europe. The Jewish Holocaust is the most extreme example of scapegoating the world has ever seen.

Hilberg's *Perpetrators, Victims, Bystanders* provides keen insights into how everybody had a hand in the Holocaust, to one degree or another. The rare "altruists" in the Holocaust, who risked much for no temporal gain to help the Jews, are the only people who could even *try* to avoid some responsibility. Yet few, if any, of them will point the finger at anyone, and all likely asked themselves everyday what more they could have done. The European nations that had relatively small populations of Jews were in that situation because they had historic hostility to the Jews. Places such as Poland and the Netherlands had large Jewish populations precisely because they welcomed Jews when nobody else in Europe did. Denmark can hold its head high for saving its Jews in World War II, as can Finland, but centuries of Lutheran-inspired persecution of the Jews is primarily why those nations had such small Jewish populations in 1939. The militarism of those nations over the centuries also contributed to the mentality that made events like the Final Solution possible. They all had a hand in the Jewish Holocaust, to one degree or another. Making Hitler the fiend who was responsible for it all might seem comforting, but it deflects responsibility, and helps people avoid the introspection that asks, "What could I have done? What can I do today?"

The point I am trying to make is not feeling guilty and worthless about it, but asking ourselves how we contribute to our world in every waking moment, and how we effect the world for good or ill with our every action. Should not the study of history be about learning from the past, so we are inspired by the noble actions of our ancestors, educated by the less than noble, so we can avoid the pitfalls that our ancestors stumbled into, and aspire to attain or exceed their loftiest moments? Histories that make fake heroes, scapegoats and invisible victims do not seem useful, and even worse, can give us a false sense of how the world has worked.

Understanding the actions of our ancestors and the tapestry of dynamics behind them is very different from *justifying* them, or *condemning* them.

Other "Myth Debunking" Concerning the Holocaust

There is a booklet titled *The Facts - and the Myths - about the Holocaust*. It was banned in Germany, and is published by Andrew Carter. I got my copy through *The Spotlight*, a far right publication that is called neonazi. I subscribed to *The Spotlight* for years, and it is obsessed with Israel. Carter's pamphlet summarizes the main lines of argument that the Jewish Holocaust deniers have taken. Holocaust denier scholarship is some curious scholarship indeed.

A classic piece of Holocaust denier literature is Richard Harwood's (not his real name) *Did Six Million Really Die?* It is easily found on the Internet today. Harwood began his work with an unfortunate fact: wartime propaganda by the Allies against the Germans in World War I, with tales of Germans gleefully killing babies, smells like the story of the Jewish Holocaust. The truth is always the first casualty of any war, and all governments lie to their subjects in time of war. People need to be fed lies to justify murdering others. Beginning with that fact, Harwood made his case. He equated nationalism with Nazism, which in a sense it was, which says something about nationalism (Pol Pot was a nationalist more than a communist). Harwood discussed how Britain and America are threatened by "alien races in their midst." White people in America, like me, are among the "alien races" in America. To argue that white America is threatened with "alien races" in its midst is virulently racist. That is the kind of false argument that the Aryan Nation and other far right groups engage in. Harwood also mentioned the Jewish attempts over the millennia to keep their race pure, which is also true. Jews have been racist in that respect. Score another point for Harwood. The problem is, however, that a spoonful of truth helps the BS go down, as with all disinformation. Harwood began making his case that six million Jews did not die in the Jewish Holocaust, that it was a fiction that the Jews have used to further their aims, such as establishing Israel and wresting huge reparations from Germany.

Harwood then discussed the Nazi policy of getting Jews to emigrate from the Reich. That is also true. Harwood discussed issues that other historians have made, and it is hard to argue with his point of pre-war Nazi policy toward the Jews, such as the plan to ship the Jews to Madagascar. Harwood then discussed America's internment of Japanese-Americans during World War II, and how the Nazis were still trying to expel Jews well into the war, which was also true. Harwood's used facts to make his case, but they were selectively presented. European anti-Semitism received only passing mention in Harwood's presentation, which was the fatal flaw in his arguments. Harwood was grinding an ax. In his next section, titled, "Population and Emigration," Harwood's arguments took a steep slide into the bizarre.

Being a CPA and corporate controller, I am a specialist in the creation and presentation of

statistical data, and have done it for a living for many years. Data alone fails to impress, as it often needs to be dug into, to see how it was generated, how it is presented, what is being left out, what it does not measure, etc. Analyzing the statistical games that [William Rubinstein](#), [Julian Simon](#), [Elizabeth Whelan](#), [Steven Milloy](#) and other establishment apologists have played has been educational. Much is deeply flawed, if not dishonest. Yet, the presentations can be subtle in their deception, and some statistical sleights of hand better done than others.

Harwood's calculation of the Jewish population subject to Nazi control is about the shoddiest statistical manipulation I have ever seen, reminiscent of watching somebody play the shell game with his "customers." Harwood took one number from one source, subtracted numbers from other sources, and developed a highly creative arithmetic, arriving at a number of only three million Jews under Nazi control during the Final Solution, and made the case that there were not even six million Jews that *could* have been annihilated by the Nazis. There are numerous sources of information on the Jewish populations in Europe during the Jewish Holocaust and how many died. Accurate numbers are difficult to perfectly adduce given the circumstances, but Harwood made millions of Jews vanish with his arithmetic gamesmanship. Responsible scholarship puts the number of Jews subject to the Final Solution at around ten million. Nazi documents show that they had planned to deport nearly six million Jews in late 1940.[\[153\]](#) Comparing Harwood's methodology with the responsible scholarship on the issue can be informative.[\[154\]](#)

Harwood continued his analyses, and again used facts to make his case, such as the fact that no signed orders for the Final Solution can be gathered from the historical record. It is another creative rendition of the facts. Yes, there is no written order from Hitler that has survived, ordering the liquidation of Jews. Does that mean there was no "Final Solution," or that they were playing the plausible deniability game, which all politicians know how to play, especially for something as damning as exterminating an entire ethnic group? Harwood's arguments become increasingly weak, and his numbers games move his work into the category that Ward Churchill calls "tripe."[\[155\]](#) With all the other Holocaust denial (or as they prefer calling themselves, "Revisionists") literature I have seen, the trends are the same.

What most Holocaust deniers do is take events out of context, greatly exaggerate them or minimize them, depending on their rhetorical need, or misrepresent the evidence to make their claims. This essay will not take the reader down the long sordid trail of their "evidence" and how they play their game, but will summarize their main lines of attack, and give some examples of their craft.

One common charge by the Holocaust deniers is that the accounts of concentration camp survivors are uniformly unreliable, an angle that is particularly insulting to the survivors. The "skeptical" movement uses a nearly identical tactic to deny that [UFO contactees](#) had legitimate experiences and other "paranormal" activity. [Mr. Skeptic](#), who I debated for months on the Internet, was expert on that angle. In his theorizing, everybody associated with Dennis had

faulty memory, or was deluded about what was really happening. With that line of reasoning, he was able to boldly state that Dennis' perception of persecution was a "delusion." All we *know* are our human experiences. What goes on between our ears is all we truly know. Many thousands of people have testified to the death camp conditions, from guards who worked there, to residents who lived near the camps, to camp survivors, to camp visitors, etc. There also a mountain of physical and documentary evidence to support the testimonies. Some camp testimony is fabricated and some is inflated, but that does not mean the entire phenomenon is a mass delusion.[\[156\]](#) It is amazing that somebody would concoct a body of reasoning to dismiss it all in one way or another, yet that is a primary line of reasoning used by Holocaust deniers.[\[157\]](#)

Another fact the Holocaust deniers use is citing that Zyklon B was used to delouse inmate clothes. That was true, but they then try making the case that delousing was all it was used for.

Andrew Carter's *The Facts - and the Myths - about the Holocaust*, summarizes the lines of evidence and argumentation that the Holocaust deniers use. Carter also played the numbers game on the Jewish population and death toll, called Anne Frank's diary a fake, mentioned Red Cross relief at the camps, called Auschwitz a resort and rest home for sick Jews, stated there is no proof of gassings, cited unreliable survivor memories, how nice the Theresienstadt ghetto was, and other "facts."

Theresienstadt was the Nazis' "showcase" ghetto. It was the best camp in the Nazi regime, where "privileged" Jews were sent. Not all camps were the same. Some were work camps, some outright extermination camps, and Theresienstadt was the great exception. Yet, Carter tried making that case that if the Jews had it "good" at Theresienstadt, then there was no Final Solution. What the Theresienstadt case proves is that the Final Solution was complex in its envisioning and execution, and no mass event is monolithic. That impression is richly received by digging into the Holocaust literature. Carter, however, used the anomaly of Theresienstadt to try making the case that there was no Final Solution of extermination.

One pertinent aspect of Holocaust denial scholarship casts a harsh light on the far right. By definition, the Final Solution was a conspiracy. It is about the biggest conspiracy of all time. The Nazis killed several million people in secret, but not all that secret. Plenty of word got out about it, but few believed it and few really cared that much. One reason it was not believed at first was because the British lied so badly about the Germans in World War I, manufacturing atrocities out of the thin air. The stories were treated by many as the tale of the boy who cried wolf too many times, which was one more way that the British contributed to the Jewish Holocaust.

Nevertheless, when the word got out, it was acted on by very few people, and met a general wall of apathy, as there was a war to fight. The Jews were not alone in their secret suffering.

The millions of Russian POWs who died in German captivity also generally died out of sight of the Western media. After all, they were the hated communists. The Gypsies died unmourned, as did the Slavs of Eastern Europe. The Germans kept it quiet, and the Western press did not dig too far, aided by Western diplomats actively keeping it quiet. Even so, the Nazi Holocaust is one of the better-documented conspiracies of all time. Not only were numerous documents captured to plot the trajectory and execution of the Final Solution, but thousands of survivors testified about the concentration and death camps, including American soldiers. Also, many who were involved in one way or another in the Final Solution testified, and far more than just the Nazis who were tried in war crimes trials. Spectacular physical evidence of the Nazi Holocaust survived, such as the camps themselves, piles of clothing, hair and teeth taken from the victims. The Nazi Holocaust is perhaps the most undeniable conspiracy there is.

Right wing activists are the ones who most often specialize in conspiracy theories, sometimes concocting them with the flimsiest evidence. On one hand, they theorize about vast [international banking conspiracies](#), even though there exists virtually no documentary evidence or witnesses. The international banking conspiracy *does exist* to a degree, but there is hardly any overt evidence of it. The problem with [conspiracy theories](#) is that they *are* conspiracy theories. Conspiracies, by their very nature, do not leave paper trails, and they are generally uncovered by circumstantial evidence, which is a shaky way to determine anything. Weighing conspiratorial evidence is one of the most difficult investigations to perform, because there is little open evidence and numerous ways to interpret it. Many conspiracy theories may not be true, but many are quite plausible. Conspiracy theorists are often laughed at and derided. Their theories are often assailed and debunked, many times for good reason, but also many times for poor reasons. In my experience, those who debunk conspiracy theories are usually defending the establishment.

Conspiracy theorists usually hail from the right end of the political spectrum, and their scholarship is often poor. Some of it is acceptable, but more poor scholarship comes from the right wing than anywhere else, partly because right wing politics are too frequently the politics of the paranoid and deluded, which also manifests in racism and bigotry all too often, with a penchant for violence. Right wing scholars often propose conspiracy theories constructed from little solid evidence, and have their theories analyzed and debunked by many. The very same crowd that proposes conspiracy theories on the most tenuous evidence, debunk the Nazi Holocaust conspiracy, which has a vast amount of evidence for it. That is because Holocaust deniers apparently have an agenda, which is:

- Anti-Semitism;
- Rehabilitating Fascism and Hitler, and justify racist attitudes; If Hitler was not such a bad guy, then Fascism is not either;
- Paranoia about Jews, Israel and how the world is out to get them.

Yes, there probably are international conspiracies, and some of them center on Israel, but Zionists do not rule the world. Jews do not solely run the [banking conspiracies](#). Some Jews are probably part of it, but as far as I have seen, the high end of the game is not based on Jewish heritage but other factors, such as greed, which is far from a Jewish monopoly. There is Jewish organized crime, it is highly sophisticated, and I think [Gary Wean](#) stumbled into some of it, partly because California was a place that Jews migrated to in great numbers early in the 20th century, as they sought one more refuge from anti-Semitism. Today's Arab hatred of Israel and the United States is understandable. The *Protocols of Zion* are almost certainly fake, made in France in conjunction with the Russian secret police. Anne Frank's diary is almost certainly genuine, especially in light of the recent discovery that Anne's father removed some pages from her diary that frankly spoke about her parents' marriage. There are many accounts like Anne Frank's. To believe that her diary is part of the Jewish conspiracy is pretty far out.

A fair amount of right wing theorizing and scholarship is probably dishonest, while many have honestly fallen for it. I have borne some of the brunt of some [pretty huge conspiracies](#), and know that wide-ranging conspiracies *do exist*, but the international Jewish conspiracy is one that the crazed Adolf Hitler fell for, and it led to the deaths of about six million Jews. Using the same standard that Holocaust deniers have applied to the Final Solution, no conspiracy theory holds up.

However, the Holocaust denier ideologies are no worse than what pervades the mainstream media. Collectively, much bigger lies than denying the Jewish Holocaust happened are believed by the mainstream, such as there was no [American Holocaust](#) (Native American and internationally, such as [Central America](#), [Indonesia](#), [East Timor](#), [Southeast Asia](#), etc.), that [fluoride is good for teeth](#), that [attack the tumor works](#), that America exports freedom and democracy, that our system "works," and that America "[restored democracy](#)" in Panama and tried to "[save](#)" [Vietnam](#).

Holocaust scholars themselves have given the denier's grist for their mill at times, as there is plenty of dishonest and biased scholarship in the Holocaust scholar ranks, which brings this essay to its next topic.

A Different Kind of Holocaust Denial

Two primary works that "debunk" the work of the Holocaust deniers are *Denying the Holocaust* by Deborah Lipstadt and *Holocaust Denial* by Kenneth Stern. Lipstadt and Stern wrote works

to specifically take on the Holocaust deniers. In *Denying the Holocaust*, Lipstadt does a creditable job of deflating the arguments that Holocaust deniers use. She capably tackled the Holocaust denier arguments that there were no gas chambers, that there was no "Final Solution" of extermination, that Anne Frank's diary is a forgery, and she exposes the fascist/ racist agenda of Holocaust deniers. She probably should have stopped there, as she descended into making the case that the Jewish Holocaust was history's unique crime.[\[158\]](#) She has good company. Elie Wiesel is considered the first to make the "exclusivist" argument for the Jewish Holocaust.

The [Black Legend](#) of the Spanish legacy in the New World was black indeed. Its European rivals also used the Black Legend for propaganda purposes. Spain's rivals in the global colonial sweepstakes were every bit as genocidal in attitude as the Spaniards, and were even sometimes worse, such as the [English](#), who considered the natives subhuman, taking it a bit further than the Spanish did. The Spanish considered the natives inferior human beings, and thus justified their great crimes. The fact that Spain's rivals used its crimes against humanity for propaganda purposes did not make Spain's crimes any less. Spain was the first on the scene and plundered "virgin" grounds before its rivals joined the fray. The [Inquisition also became a political football](#) during the Protestant Reformation.

Because people exploit events for political ends does not make them less true. One area where the Holocaust deniers have made a strong case is in the area of Jewish exploitation of the Holocaust for political ends. Norman Finkelstein's recent book is a step in the direction of serious scholarship tackling the subject.[\[159\]](#) The fact that many Holocaust scholars have abused the notion of the Holocaust's exclusivity does not make the Holocaust any less horrible or evil. Lipstadt is far from alone among Holocaust scholars in making the case for the unparalleled evil of the Jewish Holocaust. What that crowd has done, and it even takes in some of the most respected Holocaust historians such as Lucy Dawidowicz, is minimize the suffering of other groups subject to genocidal policies.

For instance, the Jewish Diaspora endured nearly 2000 years of forced migrations at the hands of Christendom and the West. The Jews have not had a pleasant journey. While Holocaust scholars (almost all Jewish) go into great depth about the genocidal policies of the Nazis toward the Jews, quite often they minimize or ignore the suffering of Gypsies and Slavs at the hands of the same butchers. While the Jews were kicked out of everyplace in Europe at one time or another, the Gypsies were truly nomadic, whose philosophy was never staying in one place for long. The Gypsies probably originally came from India, displaced due to the Islamic invasions of India many centuries ago, and Gypsies were possibly low castes that fled the region, being at the bottom of the barrel when the Muslims invaded.

Gypsies have lived in Europe for several hundred years.[\[160\]](#) The "Jewish Question" was not the only ones the Nazis considered. There was also the "Gypsy Question." The solution crafted for the Gypsies was the same one the Nazis came up with for the Jews: extermination.

Probably at least a half million Gypsies died in the death camps, with another half million or more being killed by the Einsatzgruppen wherever they were found in the Nazi-controlled regions. Because Gypsies were nomadic, getting accurate numbers of pre-war populations and the death toll is more problematic than the Jewish death toll, but figures of a million or more are regularly estimated for the Gypsy Holocaust.[\[161\]](#) Even today, the estimates of the world's Gypsy population are guesses subject to wide variation.[\[162\]](#) While Lipstadt made her exclusivist arguments, the word "Gypsy" never even came up. Two-thirds of Europe's Jews perished in the Holocaust, and about half the European Gypsy population died at the same time. Hitler's genocidal policies killed far more Slavs than Jews and Gypsies combined. Perhaps more than fifteen million Slavs died due to a conscious extermination program by the Nazis to clear Eastern Europe to give the Germans "living space."[\[163\]](#) The Nazis targeted and murdered perhaps more than twenty-five million people, and up to six million of them were Jews. That does not minimize what the Jews endured, but for Jewish Holocaust scholars to constantly minimize or ignore the suffering of Gypsies and Slavs, among other targeted groups, such as Russian POWs, is grim.

Mainly because of Jewish influence in the United States, there is now a Holocaust museum in America, in Washington D.C. Gypsies are almost entirely absent from the museum's exhibits. In a telling event, Gypsies were specifically excluded from a candle ceremony to remember those who died at Auschwitz. In the British press (and not in the [American press](#), as usual) were photos of the candle ceremony and pictures of Gypsies "staring mournfully through a wire fence, with a caption reading, 'Cold-shouldered: Gypsies, whose ancestors were among Auschwitz victims, are forced to watch the ceremony from outside the compound.'"[\[164\]](#) Jews who have created deplorable scenes such as that are trying to corner the market on victimhood, playing up their suffering to the maximum, and denying the suffering of those who died right alongside them. Holocaust denial is Holocaust denial, and Jewish scholars have tarred themselves with the same brush they have painted the deniers of the Jewish Holocaust with, for tragic irony.[\[165\]](#) There is no Holocaust Museum for Native Americans. During the late 1990s, U.S. Secretary of State Madeleine Albright, a Jew (who recently discovered her hidden heritage), [justified the deaths of hundreds of thousands of Iraqi children](#), killed mainly by the U.S.-instigated economic embargo of Iraq, calling it a price we were willing to pay.

Many Jews tried cornering the market on the word "holocaust," as if they are the only ones in history to have suffered it. Jews are white people, and the situation around the holocausts of colored people is the single greatest body of Holocaust denial in the West. The [genocide of Native Americans](#) is the single greatest holocaust in history, a holocaust that has been so thoroughly denied for hundreds of years that it has only recently come into American awareness, a holocaust denial that continues with what America did to [Southeast Asia](#), and what America is doing to [Iraq](#) today. *There* is a holocaust denial far, far more egregious than anything that the lunatic Jewish Holocaust denier crowd has ever tried foisting on the public, mainly because "responsible" scholarship has actively abetted it, and the holocaust is still

happening.

William Blum begins his monumental *Killing Hope* with:

"In 1993, I came across the review of a book about people who deny that the Nazi Holocaust actually occurred. I wrote to the author, a university professor, telling her that her book made me wonder whether she knew that an American holocaust had taken place, and that the denial of it put the denial of the Nazi one to shame. So great and deep is the denial of the American holocaust, I said, that the deniers are not even aware that the claimers or their claim exist. Yet, a few million people have died in the American holocaust and many more millions have been condemned to lives of misery and torture as a result of U.S. interventions extending from China and Greece in the 1940s to Afghanistan and Iraq in the 1990s. I enclosed a listing of these interventions, which is of course the subject of the present book.

"In my letter I also offered to exchange a copy of the earlier edition of my book for a copy of hers, but she wrote back informing me that she was not in a position to do so. And that was all she said. She didn't ask to see my book. She made no comment whatsoever about the remainder of my letter - the part dealing with denying the American holocaust - not even to acknowledge that I had raised the matter. The irony of a scholar on the subject of denying the Nazi Holocaust engaging in such denial about the American holocaust was classic indeed. I was puzzled why the good professor had bothered to respond at all."[\[166\]](#)

When I read Blum's words in 1996, I suspected that he was writing about Lipstadt, and I wrote him, asking him if it was. He replied that indeed it was Lipstadt, and gave me permission to make that fact public, so I am.

What happened to [East Timor](#) during the 1970s may have had a proportionally greater genocide happen to its people than the Jewish Holocaust, in this past "enlightened" generation, a genocide that was actively sponsored and abetted by the United States and nearly every Western nation. The complicity in genocide by Lipstadt and others has helped ensure that the American Holocaust continues, as America kills off Iraqis today.

A better work on Jewish Holocaust deniers is Kenneth Stern's *Holocaust Denial*, which discusses the "hesitation" in the Jewish community to acknowledge other genocides because they believed that to do so would diminish what happened to the Jews.[\[167\]](#) To his credit, he mentioned Gypsies a couple of times in his book, and discussed how all holocausts need to be discussed and their nature understood. Stern wrote, "By focusing only on one's own tragedies, strategies, lessons, and power are lost." Yet, he also gave a questionable treatment to the

situation of Noam Chomsky and Robert Faurisson. Chomsky is a Jew who lived in an Israeli kibbutz for a short time. Faurisson is a Holocaust denier from France. Although [freedom of speech in America is problematic](#) and not nearly as free as our [mainstream media](#) presents to the public, it is less free in supposedly genteel nations such as Canada, France and Sweden, where Holocaust deniers have been put on trial and jailed for their writings.

When Faurisson was put on trial in France, hundreds of academics signed a petition to defend Faurisson's right to deny the Jewish Holocaust in his writings, even if they detested his views. It was an issue of freedom of speech. As Chomsky stated regarding the Faurisson affair, freedom of speech is not something that we grant only to views that we agree with. If we believe in freedom of speech, we grant it *especially* to those with views that we "despise." Otherwise, we do not believe in freedom of speech. Chomsky and hundreds of other academics were defending Faurisson's freedom of expression, even though they despised what he had to say. Chomsky received endless attacks for his stance. Chomsky wrote a brief essay on the nature of freedom of speech that Faurisson's publisher inserted as the introduction to Faurisson's book.

In Lipstadt's *Denying the Holocaust*, she called Chomsky's defense of Faurisson's right to free speech his "antics." In Stern's book, he published a decidedly one-sided account of the affair, and even relied on a secondary source to smear Chomsky to make him seem a [Holocaust denier of the Cambodian Holocaust](#), something that I have never seen in any of Chomsky's work.^[168] However, Stern also made the exclusivist argument in his book, pointing out that other genocides had economic or other incentives behind them, while carrying out the Jewish Holocaust hampered the Nazi war effort.^[169] Every holocaust is unique in its own way. What was uniquely worse, the Nazi genocide, which was ideologically motivated from a cultural hatred for Jews and other "subhumans," a genocide that exterminated two-thirds of European Jews and half the European Gypsies, or the [genocide of the Taino of the Greater Antilles](#), which was a mere *side effect* of the first gold rush in the New World, and the world's only *complete genocide* of millions of people? The complete genocide of the Taino has been so deeply denied in America that the genocide's initial architect has a national holiday in his name. How would Jews feel if there was a Hitler Day in Germany, which celebrated the invasion of Poland?

The words "never again," should apply to all peoples, for all time.

The Last "Good War" Revisited

World War II is described in the United States as its last "good war." The reason for the "good war" description is that America's wars since then have been more problematic, with the

delineation of good and evil clear in World War II, and rather muddled since then, contrary to the recent rhetoric of [George Bush the Second](#). In World War II, America was the white knight on a steed, saving the world from the evil of Hitler and his henchmen.

Our leaders were not too disturbed by the [rise of Hitler](#), nor was the [public enamored with Jews](#). FDR was not too high on Hitler, and is considered the West's only leader who smelled Hitler's fumes early on, and was opposed to his rule. That is true, but relative. Stalin was little better than Hitler, and in some ways worse, and FDR took part in remaking Stalin into "Uncle Joe" while there were Nazis to defeat. Stalin was *Time*'s "Man of the Year" in 1943. George Orwell [could not find a publisher for his *Animal Farm*](#) because it was a satire on Britain's ally of the moment.

The hypocrisy related to the U.S. position toward the Soviet Union is enough to make the "good war" sentiments collapse. Long before Hitler became a threat to the world, Stalin's hands were bloody with the deaths of millions of Soviet peasants, where the official policy was starving them to death. The Western governments were wary of those communists and everything they stood for, until they became handy allies to defeat the Nazis after Hitler double-crossed Stalin and invaded the Soviet Union, after they divvied up Poland and Eastern Europe. Then one of history's greatest butchers became "Uncle Joe," with the American press sanitizing his image. It was a remarkable makeover, from butcher to buddy.[\[170\]](#) Churchill and Roosevelt actively covered up the 1940 Katyn Massacre, which Stalin ordered.

The shifting alliances of those times, among all imperial parties, clearly demonstrates that issues of right and wrong had little meaning to anybody, but winning was everything. Almost anybody would side with anybody, if it meant winning. The Soviet Union was in the middle of many of those diplomatic machinations, from alliances with Germany, Italy, Japan and the Allies, to declarations of war. The Soviets hoped the Germans and British would wipe each other out in the Battle of Britain, just as the British and Americans hoped the Soviets and Germans would wipe each other out during the invasion of the Soviet Union. The Germans and Soviets hoped the Japanese invasion of Eastern Asia and the Pacific would preoccupy America. The Soviet Union eventually declared war on its erstwhile ally Japan, and the United States atom bombed Japan to end the war quickly to prevent the Soviets from controlling too much of Eastern Asia. The U.S. used Japanese troops immediately after the war to try putting down the Chinese Communist Revolution, and Japanese troops were also immediately put to work to try recolonizing Vietnam, even though Ho Chi Minh was an U.S. ally against Japan during World War II, and was the overwhelming favorite of the populace to lead Vietnam to independence. Butcher as buddy, buddy as butcher, allies thrown to the wolves, nations playing off one against the other, etc. The last "good war." After Michael Adams finished briefly summarizing the imperial dynamics between the major players of World War II, in the years that led to the war, he wrote, "Looking back, we might say that the history of the period does not reflect particularly well on any of the major players."[\[171\]](#) For the vast majority of humanity, living under the boots of those major players, it was an obvious sentiment.

America stayed "neutral" throughout the war's first two years, except for providing aid to Britain, closing off the Panama Canal to Japan and other sanctions against them, with Standard Oil, Ford, General Motors, du Pont and others helping build the German war machine.

There is substantial evidence that FDR and the military brass had pre-knowledge of the Japanese bombing of Pearl Harbor, and the troops in Hawaii were not warned, as a bloody attack would be needed to spur the isolationist American people into another foreign war, similar to how Americans were [manipulated into entering World War I](#). The Pearl Harbor attack was certainly no surprise, as in early 1941 Secretary of War Henry Stimson received a memo from Rear Admiral Richmond Kelly Turner that warned of an attack on Pearl Harbor. That memo was merely part of a chorus of warnings and studies from the military brass in those days.[\[172\]](#) Those boys at Pearl Harbor may have been expendable.

War is evil business, and always has been. Violence is *always* a violation of another's free will. Warfare extracts a great psychological, emotional and spiritual price from all of its participants. There is no glory in it, and a comprehensive and sophisticated system [manipulates young men into becoming soldiers](#).

Intense indoctrination accompanies the evolution of all imperial soldiers, whether they are American, Japanese, Chinese, Russian, European, etc. During World War II are many instances of the psychological resistance of young men to the horrific barbarities that they inflicted upon the "enemy," whether it was Jewish children, Chinese women, Japanese civilians, Gypsies, Slavs, and so on.

Before World War II began, the Japanese were bludgeoning Eastern Asia and periphery. As with Jews and Spaniards around 1492, if one took a Japanese and Chinese citizen, stripped and physically examined them, one could not be discerned from the other. Japanese are physically nearly indistinguishable from Chinese, and their culture originated in Chinese culture. Japan, like China, had a long-standing imperial culture, although both were rather insular for centuries. China resisted Europe's imperialism for centuries before succumbing to British ambition in the Opium Wars and subsequent events. Japan did not succumb to the West until two atomic bombs were dropped on them. Japanese indoctrination viewed China as a great adversary, not unlike European indoctrination of their people to hate their neighbors, where Frenchmen killed Englishmen, etc. for centuries.

Japan invaded China several years before World War II, with their invasion of Manchuria happening in 1931. In 1937, the Japanese invaded China and took the capital city of Nanking. Their initial occupation of Nanking is now known as the Rape of Nanking. Ever since Japan received their wake up call in 1853, by a massive show of U.S. force led by Commander Matthew Perry's "diplomacy," they nurtured their imperial ambition, wanting to become imperial

powers like the U.S., Britain, France and Russia. They stated that they only wanted to control Southeast Asia as the United States controlled Latin America, a reasonable request in Japanese eyes. The U.S. and the other European powers [had already divvied up Eastern Asia](#), and were not about to let a local imperial presence take over. After all, China was theirs; the [Philippines](#) were ours.

The Japanese developed a strident imperial nationalism, building on their "Bushido" ethic, which made possible the Kamikazes and other fanatical soldiers. Some Japanese theologians believed that their emperor outranked the Creator. When the Japanese took Nanking, they slaughtered the Chinese men and raped the Chinese women. The Japanese had a tradition of swordplay, and decapitating Chinese men was the pastime of Japanese soldiers during the Rape of Nanking. Japanese newspapers recorded the "contest" of two Japanese officers, Mukai Toshiaki and Noda Takeshi. They vied to see who could kill one hundred men first with their swords. The contest was extended when both exceeded their mark, with Mukai at 106 and Noda at 105. The "finish line" was extended to 150. Their "heroic" acts were often enacted on kneeling Chinese men, waiting for the blade to do its work. Decapitating a Chinese man became quite the art form among Japanese soldiers. The goal was taking the head off cleanly with one artful stroke, with the resultant spout of blood shooting in a majestic arc from the severed carotid artery supplying the head. Japanese soldiers used Chinese men for bayonet practice, with Chinese men being tied up on wooden crosses, like scarecrows, to be run through repeatedly by Japanese soldiers in training.[\[173\]](#) Satanic violence was not a European monopoly.

How could Japanese soldiers enact such evils against people who were virtually indistinguishable from themselves? In the same way the Englishman was indoctrinated against a Frenchman, the same way a Nazi was indoctrinated against a Jew, the same way an American was indoctrinated against Japanese, German, Vietnamese and Native American citizens, etc. We all have two arms, two legs, were born from our mothers, went to school, raised our crops, etc. Even with all their intense indoctrination, the "virginal" Japanese soldiers, when faced with slaughtering kneeling Chinese, men, women and children, had to be cajoled and forced into their first kills. They had to be reminded that they were "only" killing the "subhuman" Chinese, as if they were "only" killing dogs. One Japanese soldier spoke of how his mass-murdering comrades looked like predatory animals, when looking into their eyes. After getting into the swing of things, his buddies no longer looked so feral.[\[174\]](#)

The atrocities of the Japanese against China in the 1930s and 1940s is one of the history's greatest mass murders, with more than ten million Chinese citizens dying at the hands of their Japanese overlords.

One of my grandfathers [served in the Pacific Theater](#), and as with most soldiers who survive such calamities, he was not an eager fireside raconteur of his glory days. He preferred to forget them, although he kept in touch with his war buddies until they all died off, and I visited

two of them in my youth. His sober recollections of his comrades' skull collecting and other practices are not out of step with those days.

The curator of the Smithsonian's Division of Anthropology announced that the Japanese skull was 2000 years less developed than the Americans' were, and because Japanese eyes were "slanted," they could not shoot straight. During the fighting in the Pacific, one correspondent reported in the pages of *Atlantic Monthly*:

"We shot prisoners in cold blood, wiped out hospitals, strafed lifeboats, killed or mistreated enemy civilians, finished off the enemy wounded, tossed the dying into a hole with the dead, and in the Pacific boiled the flesh off enemy skulls to make ornaments for sweethearts, or carved their bones into letter openers."[\[175\]](#)

In *Life* magazine in 1944, an attractive blond American woman posed with a Japanese skull that her fiancé sent her.[\[176\]](#) When American homesteaders washed across the plains of North America, occupying newly stolen land, there was often more money to be made in plowing their homesteads to find Indian bones than in raising crops. Indian skulls brought up to \$1.25 in Dodge City, and arm and leg bones, "properly cleaned and polished, made knife handles, 'beautiful to behold.'"[\[177\]](#)

Two of the world's most prominent war scholars, Paul Fussell and John Keegan, consider the memoirs of Eugene B. Sledge one of the greatest first-person accounts of warfare ever written.[\[178\]](#) This war essay would not be complete if it did not recount some of war's stark realities, realities that the American press carefully hid from the American public. Sledge's tale will serve that purpose well. Readers who do not want to read about such matters can skip this section and resume reading by [taking this link](#).

Unpretentiousness is one of Sledge's greatest virtues as he tells the story of being a U.S. Marine at two of the fiercest battles ever fought. He was an average American boy, growing up during the Great Depression. He enlisted in the Marines in 1942 as "cannon fodder," forsaking the deferment and officer-rank safety that was offered him as a member of the Marion Military Institute.

Early in his account, Sledge commented on a primary aspect of the Pacific war between the Japanese and American soldiers. There was an unrelenting hatred between the two. Sledge cited the fate of the Goettge patrol during the Battle of Guadalcanal, as he watched one of the survivors walk past. During the first week of the battle, a captured Japanese soldier claimed

that his starving comrades near a distant river would surrender if the Marines would "liberate" them. Twenty-five men, none of them fighters, but a linguist, a surgeon and intelligence specialists went to "rescue" those stranded Japanese. The Japanese had, like Europeans of long ago, discarded the idea of fighting honorably. The Japanese ambushed the Goettge patrol as it landed, and only three Marines escaped. That was part of the Marine lore, and fueled their anti-Japanese hatred.[\[179\]](#)

Sledge's account depicts the typical lives of U.S. infantrymen, and his first taste of battle was when he stormed ashore at Peleliu. He prayed a lot. His chapter recounting his first days of battle is appropriately titled, "Assault into Hell." The hail of fire from both sides was devastating. Sledge described the absolute helplessness he felt while being subject to such a barrage, watching Marines being blown to bits. During the initial landing, Sledge watched as one of his friends, a non-commissioned officer (NCO), was hustled to the rear with a bloodied arm in a field dressing. Sledge yelled, "Hit bad?" The NCO grinned and said, "Don't feel sorry for me. I got the million dollar wound. It's all over for me."[\[180\]](#) The NCO got the wound coveted by most American soldiers: a wound bad enough to spell the end of their days as a soldier, but not bad enough to permanently cripple them. They could "retire" with honor, and live to tell about it.

During the landing, Sledge saw a Japanese corpsman's corpse, killed while trying to give aid, by an American shell. The innards of the Japanese dead shocked Sledge, and his buddies arrived and began fieldstripping the corpses. Sledge watched mutely as his buddies worked over the corpses. One Marine "deftly plucked a pair of hornrimmed glasses as casually as a guest plucking hors d'oeuvre from a tray at a cocktail party."[\[181\]](#) Sledge wondered if the day would ever come when he would become so nonchalant about stripping enemy corpses. Sledge noticed that when he tried smiling, his face felt "stretched tight as a drumhead." Genuine smiling was impossible. He noticed that the faces of those around him were similar. The carnage of that first day of battle was one of the worst that any U.S. Marine ever experienced. Sledge watched men being turned into hamburger all around him. On that first night, as Sledge was becoming familiar with the numbness and terror that would be his companion in the coming months, he heard a voice shout, "You will survive the war!" Sledge looked around and asked his buddies if they heard that statement, and they looked quizzically at him. Sledge believes that God spoke to him that night, and he resolved to make something of his life after the war.[\[182\]](#)

Early in the Peleliu campaign, Sledge came to perhaps the salient realization of all his days as a soldier. After digging in for the night while they were moving across Peleliu, in the dark of night an uncomfortable notion appeared in Sledge's mind: he was expendable.[\[183\]](#)

One night soon after, while they inhabited their foxholes, one Marine went mad, and began yelling that the Japs had him. After efforts were made to quiet him, the Marines had to kill one of their own to keep him silent. Sledge watched one of his own kill a buddy in the dark,

executing him with a shot to the temple, as they mistook him for a Japanese infiltrator. Sledge was nearly killed by "friendly fire" during his first day of battle. Sledge repeatedly stressed the vast gulf between himself and those mere miles behind the front, even mere yards behind at times. Those on the front lines and those just behind it lived in different worlds, the support troops unable to fathom the world that the front lines inhabited. The same night, a Japanese infiltrator snuck into the lines. When he ended up in a foxhole with a Marine, they both lost their weapons, and the Marine won when he put his finger through the Japanese soldier's eye socket, killing him during their unearthly screaming.[\[184\]](#)

A few days after securing the beachhead of Peleliu, Sledge was fieldstripping corpses himself when a Marine decided to obtain the gold fillings in the mouth of a fallen Japanese soldier. He put his kabar knife to the golden tooth of the Japanese soldier and drove the point home. It missed, partly because the owner of that coveted tooth was still alive. The blade struck deeply in the Japanese soldier's mouth, and the Marine cussed out the Japanese soldier while he sliced the man's mouth from ear to ear. He put his boot to the man's mouth and tried again, as blood poured out of the soldier's mouth. Sledge had already seen a Japanese soldier's reaction as he killed him, but as that Japanese soldier began gurgling, Sledge shouted, "Put the man out of his misery." Then another Marine ran up and planted a bullet in the Japanese soldier's brain. Sledge saw his pals quickly slip into almost unimaginable barbarity.[\[185\]](#)

While taking a break in the fighting, Sledge rested next to a Japanese machine gun squad that had been killed. The gunner looked poised to fire his weapon...except the top of his head had been blown off by American fire. While they sat there resting, one of his buddies had a handful of coral pebbles in his hand, and was pitching them toward the opened skull of the Japanese machine gunner. Every "hit" was accompanied by a small splash as the pebble found its mark in the gunner's open skull. The soldier was not being malicious, but just playing as a child might, doing something to pass the time.

Sledge was then saved from his own descent into barbarity, as he began taking gold teeth from Japanese mouths. A medic saved him, appearing on the scene when Sledge was about to make his extractions. He discouraged Sledge by disingenuously telling him that he could get disease from the Japanese mouths.[\[186\]](#)

The Battle of Peleliu, of dubious strategic importance for the U.S. Pacific effort, was until that time one of most vicious battles that U.S. forces had ever engaged in. At the end of the battles, one of Sledge's buddies showed Sledge his prized souvenir, a Japanese hand he liberated from a soldier's corpse. He had been carefully trying to dry it out so it would not stink. After a razzing by Sledge and his fellow Marines, and defiantly defending his right to the souvenir ("How many Marines you think that hand pulled the trigger on?"), the Marine reluctantly threw his prize away.[\[187\]](#)

The Japanese did worse things to American bodies. One day Sledge passed three dead

Marines lying on stretchers that the Japanese had come upon. Sledge's buddy groaned, "Jesus!" and Sledge looked on in disbelief. The Japanese had decapitated one Marine and placed his head on his body, next to his severed hands, and his penis had been cut off and placed in his mouth. The Marine next to him was treated similarly, and the third had been butchered like a steer. After they returned to their gun pit, his buddy said, "Did you see what them poor guys had in their mouths? Christ, I hate them slant-eyed bastards!" Sledge stated that from that point onward, he never had any pity for the Japanese soldiers, no matter what happened to them[188]

The horror of Peleliu made hardened veterans recoil. In one incident, a camouflaged Japanese artillery gun hid until the Marines were right on top of it, then it let loose at point blank range. One veteran who Sledge previously saw laughing and cursing at the Japanese while under heavy fire was stricken, the most devastated that Sledge saw him before or since. The tough soldier told Sledge how he and another soldier tried carrying a buddy they all knew to a stretcher in the aftermath of the gun's firing, but as they carried him, the man's body fell apart.[189]

Sledge began losing his sanity at that time, the battle taking its inexorable toll. He received a pep talk from his lieutenant, and was somehow able to stay sane for the next two weeks. The only escape was death or wounding, and despair settled over the soldiers. The only cheerful soldiers were those leaving with the [million-dollar wound](#). The Marines never left a wounded soldier in the field, because the Japanese would invariably torture him to death.

Sometimes, nearly as despised as the Japanese were the souvenir hunters from the rear echelon, who were not veterans of the grisly front lines, but opportunists who followed the advancing line, searching for souvenirs among the dead Japanese. One Marine major commandeered any souvenir hunters he found in his area, putting them into his line if they came into his area. One day during a lull in the fighting, two souvenir hunters from the rear walked past Sledge, walking into enemy territory. Just as Sledge was about to warn them where they were, one turned back and asked Sledge where the front line was, Sledge "serenely" answered, "You just passed through it." Those men quickly fled to the rear.

Right about that time, Sledge endured the greatest grief he experienced during the entire war, when his beloved captain was killed. All the soldiers looked up the captain, and news of his death hit all the men hard. It was as if they had lost a parent.

The tableau of Peleliu was like no other on earth. War had seen fields strewn with dismembered corpses, but Peleliu was in a class by itself, with coral ridges, rubble-filled canyons, corpses strewn everywhere, with crabs and flies gorging on the dead to the degree that they could barely move. Low clouds scudded by during the dismal daytime and the hellish landscape was lit at night by flares. Sledge thought it looked like another planet.[190] The smell of excrement was mingled with the stench of death, as the coral was not amenable to

digging a latrine hole. In addition, many soldiers had dysentery. The island became a huge cesspool of death and decay. Sledge wondered if he would ever remove the stench from his lungs. DDT was used for the first time ever at Peleliu, in an attempt to reduce the fly population. It did not work, as far as Sledge could see.

Sledge and his buddy took over a mortar pit when replacing another mortar crew. The Marine he replaced did not appear happy that he was being relieved. He warned Sledge what had happened the night before. Two Japanese soldiers snuck into the pit and began stabbing the mortarmen before nearby ammo carriers came to the rescue and killed them. One Marine had already died from the ordeal. The Marine left with a warning for Sledge and his buddy to watch out at night for Japanese soldiers sneaking into their pit. Sledge was long since used to the sight of blood, but as he began settling in, the bloodstains in the pit got to him. He tried covering up the Marine blood with scraps of cardboard. He reported that the flies stayed glued to the blood-smeared rock, and Sledge realized how empty was a politician's rhetoric about young men giving their lives for their countries, as "only the flies benefited."[\[191\]](#)

Each day was a new horizon in loathing, with each new macabre scene competing to outdo the others. Even the most hardened veteran found something to make him "recoil in horror and disbelief."[\[192\]](#)

The Marines lost more than half of its landing force on Peleliu, with more than 5000 casualties and more than a thousand dead. More than ten thousand Japanese soldiers died during the siege, and only *seven* Japanese soldiers were taken prisoner. It was a fight to the finish. The hatred that the Japanese and American soldiers held for each other made it so there were few prisoners taken by either side.

As Sledge got aboard ship after Peleliu had been subdued, he asked one of the old salt Marines what he thought of Peleliu. That old Marine had been in the trenches in World War I, and was looked up to by all the young Marines as the Marine's Marine, the epitome of the corps. Sledge had nothing to compare Peleliu with, so he asked the old salt what he thought. Sledge expected the Marine to respond with, "You think that was bad, you oughta been in the Old Corps." Instead, Sledge was surprised when the old timer blurted out, "Boy, that was terrible! I ain't never seen nothin' like it. I'm ready to go back to the States. I've had enough after that."[\[193\]](#)

Sledge's belief in basic human goodness died at Peleliu, and his faith in politicians who send young men off to war.[\[194\]](#) While recovering from Peleliu, Sledge experienced something that many American soldiers commented on, including my father. When they reached Pavuvu, their staging ground for Peleliu, a woman from the Red Cross, who was handing out grapefruit juice, greeted them. A number of Sledge's buddies sullenly tolerated her presence. Sledge and some other Marines took her up on her offer of grapefruit juice, but Sledge was bewildered, and he deeply resented her presence. It was no place for women or politicians to

be.[\[195\]](#)

Sledge is proud to have been a Marine. He did not speak out against the necessity of war. He just told is like it was, from a grunt's-eye perspective. Sledge was interviewed for candidacy for an officer position, but he was too frank with the interviewer. He did not "snow" him. In responding to the question "How do you feel about it now that you've been in combat?," Sledge candidly remarked that he has seen enough on Peleliu to satisfy his curiosity about fighting. Sledge said, "I'm ready to go home."[\[196\]](#) He would not, quite yet.

While preparing for the siege of Okinawa, Sledge heard with sympathy the reports coming back from the terrible fighting on Iwo Jima, another fierce battle with tremendous casualties. Sledge got hepatitis while at Pavuvu. In peacetime, hepatitis is a big deal, warranting hospitalization, but in wartime, Sledge was given some pills and was only able to get out of several days of work details, such as picking up trash. They all got a round of painful inoculations before departing for Okinawa, making them grouchy.

For all the sufferings of Peleliu, Okinawa made Peleliu seem like a picnic. Okinawa was part of the Japanese archipelago, and the Japanese would fight as never before to defend it. More than 100,000 of Japan's finest soldiers were defending it.

While preparing for Okinawa, Sledge's crew got a new officer named Mac, from New England. Mac was the only officer Sledge ever heard who talked up taking on the Japanese. Mac told in detail about how he would whip the Japanese single-handedly when one of his men was wounded. The combat veterans rolled their eyes when he started in with his speeches. Sledge was embarrassed for him, and the other veterans looked forward to when the big-talking "Yankee" saw combat for the first time. Sledge trained on Guadalcanal for Okinawa, and he remarked on how generous the Seabees were with their food for the Marines, food that was much better than their Marine rations.

The Marines expected fierce resistance to the landing on Okinawa, of more than 80% Marine casualties on the first landing, but were amazed that there was practically no resistance. The first day they marched across the island unopposed. They knew it was too easy. They marched to the fighting soon enough, and Sledge was in heavy battle for fifty nearly solid days in some of the most horrific fighting the world has ever seen. Being a veteran, as he approached battle, Sledge no longer felt panic as he had in Peleliu, but knew that he could control his fear, and the only thing to do under Japanese shelling was lay low and curse them.
[\[197\]](#)

Sledge was blessed with a little humor at the battle's beginning, when they first came under fire. That braggart officer Mac made an amusing display. A couple of their men had been killed, and they finished digging in and were settling in when they noticed that Mac was still feverishly digging his hole. One of the soldiers then reminded Mac that he said he would

charge the Japanese single-handedly with his kabar knife when one of his men was hit. Mac barely looked up as he continued digging frantically. Sledge offered him his kabar knife so he could charge the Japanese. One soldier remarked that if Mac dug much deeper, he would dig all the way through the earth, back to the U.S., and they could all go home. Mac's cavern was ruined in minutes, to his men's satisfaction, and Mac never bragged about what he was going to do again.

Sledge was ashamed that Mac was a Marine officer. While marching across Okinawa, Mac alarmed the troops by shooting at something, and a detachment of Marines approached, thinking that there was a Japanese ambush. Corpses were strewn across the land. When they came upon the source of the gunshots, it turned out that Mac was shooting the skull of a dead animal, seeing if he could shoot any teeth out of the animal's jaw. Another time, Mac located a Japanese soldier's corpse, and carefully shot off the end of its penis. When it came time to urinate, most Marines found a nearby bush. Not Mac. He would find a Japanese corpse, and send his stream into its mouth. Sledge watched such behavior with shame for the Marine Corps, as did his buddies. He was an officer, however, so they did not slap him upside the head (or as my father once told me, Mac would become a quick casualty of some "accidental" friendly fire). Just before the real battle was engaged at Okinawa, Mac almost took out his mortar section himself by trying to empty a grenade of its charge then tossing it into a group of Marines, getting a sadistic delight as the Marines dove for cover. Mac failed to completely empty the grenade and almost took his men out of action before it began. If his "joke" had given Sledge his million-dollar wound, Sledge would have gladly taken it, in retrospect.

The Japanese spent six thousand lives in an early failed effort to cut off a detachment of Marines from the main force. During the fighting, news had come that the Germans had surrendered, but nobody on Okinawa cared much. Sledge wrote, "Nazi Germany might have well been on the moon." The casualties were mounting, with more than 1400 casualties in Sledge's Marine division so far. Then the fighting *really* got fierce. The warm up for the fierce fighting was Sledge getting to haul ammo through the mud, which he said surpassed all the drudgery he had ever done before.

Sledge found that each time he faced going into battle, it became harder to face, where death or maiming became a more certain fate with each passing hour. When he wrote his book many years later, Sledge still had nightmares about going up the lines on Okinawa, trudging through the mud.[\[198\]](#)

Although the Marines were the elite infantrymen of the U.S. Military, seeing the worst action, they did not all live up to those high standards of the Marine ideal, and Sledge wrote of his disgust from time to time with his comrades. He watched an officer called Shadow chew out a man for a heroic act of moving ammo under heavy fire to where it was needed. The men watched in disbelief as Shadow launched into his tirade against the man, who Sledge thought

deserved a medal for his act.

Sledge got a letter from home in a lull in the fighting. His parents wrote that his dog had been hit by a car and killed. That dog was Sledge's childhood companion, and as he read his letter in his foxhole, with death and destruction all around him, big tears rolled down his cheeks as he thought of his beloved dog.

He soon was thrown back into battle, and had a continuous headache from the barrage of artillery going back and forth, which sent him into a stupor.[\[199\]](#) Then Sledge got into the *really* heavy fighting. He was in the battle around what they called Sugar Loaf Hill. With all that Sledge had been through, his most horrifying experiences were still ahead of him. The Japanese dead laid everywhere in the mud. When they would dig in, they would try burying the dead Japanese soldiers in the mud to try cutting down the stench and flies. Then Sledge saw the sight that shocked the veterans in the ranks: dead Marines lay everywhere, slowly rotting away. The Marines had a tradition of going to great risk to recover their fallen. The reason those Marine bodies had not been recovered quickly became apparent. The fighting was so intense that recovering the bodies was impossible.

The next ten days were Sledge's personal visit to hell. The fighting on Peleliu was more vicious, but the fighting on Okinawa was more horrifying. After digging into the mud at Wana Draw in a constant deluge of rain and artillery fire, Sledge looked around. The craters made by shells surrounded him. Each of them was filled with water, and many held a Marine corpse, covered with swarms of flies. Maggots and discarded equipment lay everywhere, with an awesome stench that never went away. Amoebic dysentery broke out amongst the troops, and Sledge sat in his hole with his mortar, thinking that death was preferable to what he was experiencing. It was if he had been "flung into hell's own cesspool."[\[200\]](#)

To top it off, their commanding officer came down with malaria so badly that he had to be evacuated, and the hated Shadow became their commanding officer (CO). There came a moment during a lull where Sledge and a buddy were looking at picture of a dancing girl the buddy had an adulterous affair with Stateside. The scene was surreal, of two men in the bowels of hell, looking at a picture of a scantily clad, voluptuous woman. The scene struck Sledge hard, and he realized that he was beginning to lose his sanity. At that moment he made a fervent pledge to himself that no matter what happened, he would not lose his mind. His resolve got him through the days. At times during the nights, he felt that he was slipping, but he recovered in the daylight. In retrospect, Sledge realized how heroic yet hopeless was the battle for those Japanese soldiers. They would form skirmish lines and advance at the Marines from hundreds of yards away, to be blown to bits long before they got close enough to return fire. It was a "turkey shoot" for the Marines. They were nearly having fun for awhile.

Sledge related one episode where ten Japanese soldiers came at them in formation, and the Marines let loose with their machine guns and mowed down eight of them in seconds. The two

remaining soldiers realized how hopeless their plight was and turned around to go back the way they came. Most of the Marines stopped firing, but not all, and just before reaching safety, one soldier pitched forward. The lone soldier left kept running, and just as a "cease fire" order came from the CO, Sledge's buddy with the dancing girl Stateside squeezed off shots from his machine gun. Sledge was standing behind him, looking down his barrel. He saw the tracers deflect through the lone soldier's back, and he dropped. The soldier began crawling out of the hole where he fell, and the Marines began firing at him again. One Marine surprisingly told his buddies to stop shooting, saying he had no chance of survival anyway. His buddies yelled at him for defending that dying soldier, and kept firing away, finally killing him. Sledge remarked that the families of those dead Japanese soldiers would receive a letter, telling of their family's noble sacrifice, when the reality was that the soldier threw his life away on a muddy hill for no good reason at all.[\[201\]](#)

The mud and stench and maggots made for an awesome experience if a soldier slipped out of his position and slid down the steep hill he had dug into. Sledge saw it happen more than once, where a soldier lost his footing and slid down the hill, to be covered in maggots and mud when he reached the bottom, to the soldier's horror.[\[202\]](#)

Sledge called the front the "meat grinder," a huge sausage machine that continually chewed up young men and spit out its product. The attrition in the Marine ranks was awesome, with "replacement" troops coming to the front at all hours, and wounded and dead being taken to the rear. It was like an assembly line, but it was a *disassembly* line. Many soldiers die in the first moments of battle, before they learn some quick survival skills, and replacements came to the lines and went back dead or bleeding so quickly that the veterans rarely even knew their names.[\[203\]](#) On the Okinawa campaign, Sledge's battalion landed with 235 soldiers. They had 250 replacements added to their ranks, and at battle's end, only fifty men were left, only twenty-six of them were part of the original landing, for an attrition rate of about 90%.

Another psychological phenomenon accompanied the experience of that war, and the soldiers who had gone back to the states. When a Marine returned home, his letters back to his buddies reflected relief at being home, and enjoying "wine, women and song." Later letters, however, increasingly became bitter and disillusioned. Some soldiers wanted to return to the front to be with their buddies, as it was the only place they felt as if they fit in. Some did. The civilians, although often respectful of the soldier's experiences and sacrifice, also could not comprehend what the soldiers had been through. Many soldiers felt that the civilians had no idea what it was "all about," because they have had it "so easy." People like Sledge found it hard to believe that those Marines who had escaped the meat grinder wanted to return to it, until they returned to the states themselves and heard people griping about the United States because it was not perfect, or had to put up with the minor inconveniences such as standing in line to wait for a bus. The Marines saw them as whiners.

During his stay in hell, Sledge's imagination took odd flights as he watched the scene around

him. One constant companion during his ordeal on that muddy ridge was a rotting Marine in a nearby crater, an obvious replacement soldier who died by a shell, his decaying face staring up at Sledge, seeming to mock him. Sledge had to look at that decaying Marine for days. In the incessant rain, with the raindrops falling around that Marine, Sledge recalled his childhood, as he watched rain falling around a frog sitting in a puddle, the raindrops seeming like dancing elves. The Marine in the crater was similar, although those raindrops were like dancing ghouls, as Sledge's imagination wandered.[\[204\]](#)

Eventually the Marines took the "Shuri Castle," and then Sledge moved to a ridge and he and his buddies began digging in. The mud was clay-like, and each spadeful had to be forcibly knocked off, as it stuck like glue. Sledge and his buddies were under orders to dig the holes five yards apart on top of the ridge. When Sledge had dug about six inches into the mud, a stronger than usual stench of rotting flesh hit his nostrils. He was under orders and had to keep digging. A spadeful unearthed squirming maggots, and told his NCO what he was digging into, and the NCO replied, "You heard him, he said put the holes five yards apart."

Sledge kept digging, and soon unearthed buttons and parts of a Japanese army jacket. Then he hit the breastbone of the rotting Japanese soldier. Sledge was horror stricken as his shovel glanced off the ribs and hit the corpse's abdomen and made a squishing sound. Sledge was overwhelmed by the horror and stench, and yelled, "I can't dig in here! There's a dead Nip here!" The NCO came over, looked at Sledge's problem, and told him to keep digging. Just then an officer came by and asked Sledge what the problem was. Sledge showed him, and the officer told the NCO to let Sledge dig his hole a little out of alignment with the others. Sledge thankfully dug his foxhole, not straight through the Japanese corpse, but the hole he dug reeked of death. Sledge was amazed that he endured that ordeal without vomiting. Sledge's buddy in his foxhole stepped out, slipped and lost his footing. Sledge watched him slide on his belly all the way down the slope. Sledge went down the hill to help him, and his buddy, about the toughest soldier he ever met, looked with horror at that the maggots and mud that covered him, and Sledge helped clean him up.[\[205\]](#)

The battle at Shuri was finally over, and then it was right back into the meat grinder at Kunishi Ridge. Sledge's account is not one unending horror story. There are funny moments, strange encounters with belligerent Japanese POWs, buddies getting killed at odd moments, and Marines cracking up and losing their minds, regularly. One buddy, a veteran of Peleliu, went berserk and began charging at the Japanese. He was only barely restrained from his suicidal rampage toward the Japanese line.

The Battle of Okinawa was finally over, and the officers began reasserting their elite privilege over the enlisted men, and Sledge was kicked out of a nice place that he happened upon where he was eating a meal, because the area was reserved for officers. Just as Sledge grudgingly began moving from the area, a shot rang out. A Marine veteran who Sledge knew well keeled over dead, shot by his buddy, where they played a "dare you" game with a loaded

weapon they thought was empty. The man who just killed his best friend wore a shocked expression on his face continually for the next few weeks, until he was shipped off for a court martial and probable prison term. That was probably a minor inconvenience, compared to living with killing his best friend so stupidly.

The Americans finally conquered Okinawa, but there was no end in sight for cannon fodder like Sledge. Laying siege to the main islands of Japan was next, and no soldier wanted to think what that would be like. On Okinawa, the First Marine Division lost more than seven thousand men to death and wounding, more than six thousand on Peleliu, for a casualty rate of 150 percent of its strength. More than seven thousand Americans died on Okinawa, with another twenty-six thousand succumbing to psychological disorders. More than one hundred thousand Japanese soldiers were killed on Okinawa, and ten thousand taken prisoner, with another twenty thousand buried alive by either the Americans or the Japanese themselves. More than forty thousand civilians died on Okinawa in the crossfire of battle.

Just as Sledge and company began pondering the next battle, an [atom bomb was dropped on Hiroshima](#), another on [Nagasaki](#), with the Japanese surrender on August 15, 1945. It was the best news that Sledge could hear, as he felt that the Japanese would never surrender. Incredibly, Sledge was never wounded in all the fighting. The voice he heard his first night of battle was right. Sledge was an anomaly in the Marine infantry, being college educated from an upper class family. My father was an anomaly also, forsaking college to enlist in the Marines. The Marine infantry was the ultimate cannon fodder, especially in the fighting of the Pacific Theater.

Justifying the Last Good War

[Howard Zinn](#) volunteered for World War II in 1943 at the age of twenty-one, and went to bomber school. So eager to crush the Nazi evil, Zinn traded places with another man scheduled to go to Europe before he did. Zinn flew mission after mission against the Nazis. Zinn hated war, but believed that it was justified in fighting Nazi Germany. Zinn described his experiences in a chapter titled, "Just and Unjust War" in his *Declarations of Independence*. Zinn made the case that if there was ever a "just war," World War II was it.

Zinn's first exposure to war was a series of books he read at age ten, about "the boy allies," which was a series of sanitized, idealized books about heroic boys defeating the Germans. By age eighteen, those early views were largely gone, and completely shattered when Zinn read *Johnny Got His Gun*, a searing anti-war novel. Zinn hated the idea of war after reading it. Then Zinn read *The Road to War*, which described the lies and deceptions that led the American public into entering World War I.

The German sinking of the *Lusitania* is the event that finally propelled America into World War I. The [American media](#) presented the sinking of the *Lusitania* as a barbaric act against a harmless passenger vessel. It later turned out that the *Lusitania*, just as the Germans claimed, was secretly carrying munitions to Britain to be used against Germany. Such "brutal barbarity" becomes far more problematic in that light. The day the *Lusitania* sailed, Germany ran ads in American newspapers, warning Americans to not board British ships. Germany later agreed to reparations for sinking the *Lusitania*, and agreed to not sink passenger ships without warning. *All* warfare is barbaric, but the *Lusitania's* sinking, if Americans were given the facts, would not have been seen in quite the same light. Americans were [being shamelessly manipulated into going to war](#), with Americans speaking out imprisoned under the Espionage Act, which made it a crime to speak out against the war, that "war to end all wars."

Zinn was partly motivated by the class politics that directed war. The ancient Greek biographer Plutarch wrote, "The poor go to war, to fight and die for the delights, riches, and superfluities of others." It has never changed in the millennia since then. Zinn, however, was convinced that the evil of Fascism had to be stopped, and he was convinced that if there was a justified war, it was World War II. One of his war buddies constantly spoke about how the war was really a battle for empire between the imperial nations. Zinn's buddy was a member of the Socialist Workers Party. Zinn asked his buddy if he was so opposed to the war, why was he flying bombing missions as Zinn was. His buddy replied, "I'm here to speak to people like you." Zinn's buddy was killed two weeks later.

When Zinn packed up his bags after the war, he wrote "Never Again," on a folder with his war mementos. Years later, Zinn began questioning the motives, conduct and results of the heroic war against Fascism. What *did* the United States really fight for? The rights of nations to independence and self-determination?" The evidence did not support that notion. The United States had engaged in a brutal campaign against [Native Americans for a century](#), until they were nearly wiped off the map, as it expanded its national borders. Soon after the national borders extended from coast to coast, it seized [Hawaii from the Hawaiians](#), the [Philippines from Spain](#), and then engaged in a brutal, exterminatory war against the Philippine people to keep them under American control. During those same years, America continually sent its troops to Latin America to keep those nations subjugated, the kinds of activities that [Smedley Butler](#) engaged in. The United States was actively involved during those same years in carving up China into colonial spheres of influence, shared between Britain, France, Russia and Japan, brutally putting the Chinese down in events such as the Boxer "Rebellion."^[206] The notion that the United States was fighting for the freedom of foreign nations was difficult to take seriously in light of its record.

What about Fascism, that evil system? The rise of Hitler and Mussolini were [alternately cheered and sanitized](#) by the American media and politicians, with Smedley Butler being court martialed in 1931 for telling an apparently true story about [Mussolini's callous disregard for a](#)

[child's life](#). When Italy invaded Ethiopia, where industrialized warfare met African natives throwing spears at the invaders, the United States suspended munitions sales to Italy while allowing the oil companies to continue selling oil to them, fueling their war machine. During the Spanish Civil War, when Germany and Italy both helped arm the Fascists who violently overthrew the elected socialist government of Spain, Roosevelt hastily signed the Neutrality Act that shut off aid to the legitimate Spanish government. Hitler had conquered most of Europe by late 1941, and the United States did nothing. Not until Japan bombed Pearl Harbor and *Germany declared war on the United States*, did America declare war on Germany. Our government was obviously not too exercised about Fascism.

It obviously was [not a war to save the Jews](#). What about Japan? They were imperial wannabes, who wanted to control their end of Asia as America controlled Latin America. Only when Japan's expansion threatened American interests in the region, particularly the tin, rubber and oil of Southeast Asia, did America begin the steps that goaded Japan into war with America, such as closing the [Panama Canal](#) to Japan, embargoing oil and scrap iron in the summer of 1941, and freezing Japanese assets in America.

What was Japan's great, infamous act? Attacking an imperial outpost of America's, on land that [America had stolen less than fifty years earlier](#), an attack that [Roosevelt may have had foreknowledge of](#). Japan also invaded the [Philippines](#), other land that America had stolen less than fifty years previously and brutally killed about two hundred thousand of its citizens to keep our claim on their land, enslaving a nation as part of America's [Manifest Destiny](#).

America's rage at Japan seemed far less than righteous and justifiably aggrieved. While Japan was invading China and committing horrific atrocities against the Chinese people, the United States did not speak out against their barbarities. During the Rape of Nanking, Japan intentionally bombed the U.S. warship the *Panay*, sinking it and killing two people. Although the *Panay* was sunk during one of the greater acts of barbarity in modern times, what outraged Americans was that an American ship had been fired on, not that it was done in the midst of murdering hundreds of thousands of helpless Chinese citizens. Roosevelt even had footage of the attack of the *Panay* edited, so the obvious nature of the Japanese attack - intentionally attacking a U.S. gunboat - would be obscured, to support Japan's false claims that the sinking had been unintentional.[\[207\]](#)

In 1942, a Roosevelt representative assured France that the U.S. would help France keep its [colonial domain in Southeast Asia](#), a promise it honored after the war, and [then took over on its own](#), [killing millions of Southeast Asians](#), all the while saying that they were "[saving them](#)" [from Communism](#). That is the standard imperial rationale, voiced while killing millions, keeping them enslaved while telling the world it does it for its bludgeoned victims' own good. There is no self-determination argument regarding the U.S. involvement in World War II that seems to hold up, except perhaps for saving Germany's neighbors from paying German taxes.

America's overthrow of democratic movements in Italy and Greece immediately after the war gives the lie to the notion that America was fighting for Europe's freedom.[\[208\]](#)

Was World War II fought by the United States to eliminate racism? The United States is history's most racist nation. During World War II, black soldiers were segregated, treated to the military's worst living conditions, and denied jobs in the United States. A spokesman for a western aviation plant said, in response to the completely unenforced orders of the newly established Fair Employment Practices Commission, "The Negro will be considered only as janitors and in other similar capacities...Regardless of their training as air craft workers, we will not employ them."[\[209\]](#) Jim Crow still existed in the South. A student at a black college told his teacher,

"The Army jim-crows us. The Navy lets us only serve as messmen. The Red Cross refuses our blood. Employers and labor unions shut us out. Lynchings continue. We are disenfranchised, jim-crowed, spat upon. What more could Hitler do than that?"

The student's statement was repeated at an NAACP meeting to thousands of black people. The speaker was expecting the crowd to disapprove of the student's words. Instead, the speaker recalled, "To my surprise and dismay the audience burst into such applause that it took me some thirty or forty seconds to quiet it."[\[210\]](#)

The internment of more than 100,000 Japanese-Americans during World War II was deeply fueled by racist sentiments. Most of those interns were American citizens. Documents have since surfaced that the United States felt those Japanese Americans were definitely *not* a military threat to America, an opinion that John McCloy edited out of the brief given to the Supreme Court to justify Japanese-American internment.[\[211\]](#) When Japanese men escaped the American concentration camps by joining the military, they were the most decorated American regiment in the European Theater. At the same time, the remnants of the Native Americans were living in [abysmal reservation conditions](#), conditions that persist to this day.

Was America fighting for the freedom of its citizens? As in World War I, America imprisoned hundreds of people for speaking out against the war, most of them socialists, such as Zinn's bombardier buddy. Six thousand Americans were in America's federal prisons, one-sixth of the federal prison population, because they were conscientious objectors and refused to kill people during World War II. The U.S. government froze wages during World War II, while the arms suppliers attained profits only dreamed of in peacetime. McCloy was an investor in a shipbuilding company that made \$44 million on an investment of \$100,000. The workers were not so snowed, and there were more worker strikes during World War II than in any other

period in U.S. history.

Was the war fought to save civilian life in the warring nations? There is little evidence that supports that notion. In fact, Churchill specifically approved of bombing German civilians as a way of "undermining the morale of the German people." Some generals even objected to bombing civilian targets, but were overruled by their civilians governments, and the saturation bombing of German cities began, culminating with the firebombing of Dresden (napalm had only been invented a few months earlier, and was quickly used to firebomb cities), a city filled with refugees that posed no military threat, with Germany on the verge of surrender. Churchill, just as he [approved of chemical weapons being used against the Iraqi people](#), had anthrax bombs made (the war was over before he could deploy them), and called for the complete extermination of the Japanese people, identical to what Hitler said about the Jews. American planes strafed civilians trying to escape the Dresden inferno by escaping across the Elbe River. About 100,000 people, nearly all civilians, died that night. A month later, America did the same thing to Tokyo, a city that was helpless to the American bombardment. American fighter pilots could see the flames of Tokyo from 150 miles away. The planes literally chased fleeing people, dropping napalm on them. More people may have died that night in Tokyo than have ever died in any night in history.[\[212\]](#) The bombings of [Hiroshima and Nagasaki](#) were entirely directed toward civilian populations. There were even American POWs being held in those cities, and the United States knew it, but it did not dissuade them from bombing those cities, killing those "expendable" American soldiers.

After the war, Zinn slowly became aware of nagging issues regarding that last "good war." He read accounts of bombing missions that he flew, to thwart the Nazi evil. One mission he flew was on the city of Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Those Czech citizens were among the first people to suffer from Nazi expansionism, and Zinn happily bombed them in a mission that killed several hundred civilians. He never thought of the irony of his actions while bombing those Czech civilians, the very people he was supposedly saving.[\[213\]](#)

Another bombing run Zinn participated in was the bombing near Royan, France a few weeks before the war ended in Europe. There was no military threat posed by the region. Several thousand German troops were stationed there, trapped and waiting for the war to end. The U. S. poured nearly a half million gallons of napalm on Royan, devastating German soldiers *and* French civilians.

Was it, like World War I, a war to end all wars? There have been more than 150 wars in the world since then, claiming more than twenty million casualties. The United States, the "hero" of World War II, has [killed far more people worldwide](#) since World War II than any other nation.[\[214\]](#) Nobody else comes close. Since World War II ended, the United States has been alone in the world in its unchallenged ability to send troops wherever it wants, to bludgeon whomever it wants, for the flimsiest of pretenses. The people of Vietnam, Korea, Iraq, East Timor, Indonesia, Guatemala, El Salvador, Laos, Cambodia, Nicaragua, Chile, Iran, Panama, etc.,

etc., have got to wonder what would have been worse, Germany or the United States winning World War II.

After the war was over, millions of people starved to death while the war's winners allowed it, sometimes actively, in the interest of politics. Africa was sacrificed with more intensified plantation and mining activity to help rebuild Europe. Some military leaders began denouncing *all* war. British Air Marshall Sir Robert Saundby stated after the bombing of Dresden:

"It was one of those terrible things that sometimes happen in wartime, brought about by an unfortunate combination of circumstances...It is not so much this or the other means of making war that is immoral or inhumane. What is immoral is war itself. Once full-scale war has broken out it can never be humanized or civilized... so long as we resort to war to settle differences between nations, so long will we have to endure the horrors, the barbarities and excesses that war brings with it. That, to me, is the lesson of Dresden."[\[215\]](#)

An American soldier who fought in the last "good war," Tommy Bridges, had this to say,

"It was a useless war, as every war is...How goddamn foolish it is, the war. They's no war in the world that's worth fighting for, I don't care where it is. They can't tell me any different. Money, money is the thing that causes it all. I wouldn't be a bit surprised that the people that start wars and promote 'em are the men that make the money, make the ammunition, make the clothing and so forth. Just think of the poor kids that are starvin' to death in Asia and so forth that could be fed with how much you make one big shell out of."[\[216\]](#)

One slogan [Sledge](#)'s buddies regularly uttered was, "If the country is good enough to live in, it's good enough to fight for." How was what happened in the Pacific Theater "fighting for" America? How was it protecting the United States? The only two American places the Japanese attacked (if a gas station in California, shelled by a Japanese submarine, does not count) were the Philippines and Hawaii (Japan acquired other minor American imperial holdings in those days, such as Wake Island and Guam, and Guam was also stolen from Spain in 1898). Both were American *colonies*, de facto imperial outposts recently seized. The troops that America stationed to keep the Philippine people in bondage were the same soldiers that ended up on the Bataan Death March. Where are the heroes in *that* tale? Perhaps the Philippine people who resisted the imperial overlords, whether they were Spanish, American or

Japanese. To the Philippine people it made little difference. Was the Japanese attack on Hong Kong an attack on Great Britain, half a world away? No battles took place on United States soil. Just what were our boys defending, besides imperial privilege?

Many black Americans were decidedly unimpressed with America's rationale for World War II. Zora Neale Hurston wrote,

"All around me, bitter tears are being shed over the fate of Holland, Belgium, France and England. I must confess to being a little dry around the eyes. I hear people shaking with shudders at the thought of Germany collecting taxes in Holland. I have not heard a word against Holland collecting one-twelfth of poor people's wages in Asia. Hitler's crime is that he is actually doing a thing like that to its own kind...

"As I see it, the doctrines of democracy deal with the aspirations of men's souls, but the applications deal with things. One hand in somebody else's pocket and one on your gun, and you are highly civilized...desire enough for your own use only, and you are a heathen. Civilized people have things to show their neighbors."[\[217\]](#)

That passage was from Hurston's *Dust Tracks on a Road*. Just before it was published, the Japanese bombed Pearl Harbor and Hurston's publisher removed those words from her book, which did not reappear until a 1984 edition of her book.

Dropping the Bomb

The two defining events of World War II were the Nazi death camps and dropping atom bombs on Japan. The bombings of Hiroshima and Nagasaki claimed more than 200,000 lives immediately, another 130,000 in the five years after the bombing, from radiation and other trauma, and today another 300,000 people still suffer from its effects. Those bombs affected millions of lives, few in salubrious fashion. While the German government has turned the Dachau camp into a museum (I visited it in 1974) and paid out billions of dollars in reparations to Israel, America has never, ever apologized for dropping atom bombs on Japan. Harry Truman proudly justified the atom bombs dropped on Japan long after he had left office. In 1958, regarding the bombing of Hiroshima, Truman wrote that he had "no qualms about it whatsoever." Truman's words were widely circulated throughout Japan, which led the Hiroshima City Council to state that if Truman actually wrote those words, it was a "gross defilement" of the victims of Hiroshima. The City Council finished with,

"We, the City Council, do hereby protest against it in deep indignation shared by our citizens and declare that in the name of humanity and peace we appeal to the wisdom of the United States and her citizens and to their inner voice for peace that said statement be retracted and that they fulfill their obligations for the cause of world peace."

Truman did not respond in silence. Instead, he called a press conference where he again justified the bombing, adding that it would not have been necessary "had we not been shot in the back by Japan at Pearl Harbor in December, 1941."[\[218\]](#)

Truman openly voiced the vengeance-for-Pearl-Harbor sentiments that fueled the ire of Americans during World War II. The war skeptic Paul Fussell wrote,

"Revenge is not a rational motive, but it was the main motive in the American destruction of the Japanese empire. A compiler of *An Oral History of the War Years* in America observes,

"I distrust people who speak of the (atom) bombings today as an atrocity they strongly opposed in 1945...I don't believe them. At the time virtually everyone was delighted that we dropped the bombs, not only because they shortened the war and saved thousands of American lives but also (quite irrationally, notice) because the "Japs" deserved it for the terrible things they had done to our boys at Pearl Harbor, Bataan, Guadalcanal, and all the way through the Pacific."[\[219\]](#)

After the atom bombs were dropped on Japan, the American mood was jubilant, with 23% of Americans wishing that there were more atom bombs to drop on them.[\[220\]](#) In 1995, Bill Clinton stated that the U.S. did not need to apologize to Japan because Truman made the right decision, "based on the facts before him," continuing the attitude of American presidents, with the sole exception of Dwight Eisenhower (sentiments only voiced *before* and *after* he left office), since 1945.[\[221\]](#) Gar Alperovitz may be the most prominent historian on the decision to use the atom bombs on Japan. His *The Decision to Use the Atom Bomb* is a history of the decision-making process that led to dropping the atom bombs on Japan. Using recently declassified documents, Alperovitz analyzed the decision-making process that Truman and his advisors used in deciding to atom bomb Japan.

The reasons given by America for dropping those bombs were: saving the lives of American soldiers and saving the lives of Japanese citizens that would have been spent in a prolonged siege. The rationale given was that the Japanese would not have surrendered without dropping the atom bombs on them, and the decision-making was done with the utmost care, and calculated to make them surrender. Other than making the Japanese surrender quickly, none of the stated rationales hold up, in light of the evidence.

The Manhattan Project was the biggest science project of all time, at the time (exceeded only by the [race to the moon](#)), using about 600,000 Americans in various aspects of it, and it was a top-secret project. Virtually no Americans knew anything about the Manhattan Project until those bombs were dropped on Japan. Richard Rhodes' *The Making of the Atomic Bomb* is the defining history of the Manhattan Project. After the first two bombs were dropped on Japan, another would be ready to drop about a week after the Nagasaki bombing, but Truman called it off, citing that he hated killing another 100,000 people, especially killing "all those kids."[\[222\]](#)

Today, the evidence is clear that geopolitical considerations guided the decision to drop the atom bombs, not saving American lives, or Japanese lives, particularly. For some time, it appeared as if help from the Soviet Union would be needed to subdue Japan. American policy took several flip-flops toward the Soviet involvement in the war against Japan, and by the summer of 1945, the United States was actively stalling Soviet involvement in the war against Japan. The Allies were already seeing how the post-war situation in Europe was unfolding, and the United States wanted to limit Soviet post-war influence in Eastern Asia, particularly China.[\[223\]](#) The United States began using its influence to delay the Soviet Union from coming into the war against Japan, so they could end the war decisively, in their favor, by using the atomic bomb. Just three days before bombing Hiroshima, an aide recorded in his diary that Truman and his advisors knew the Japanese were seeking surrender, and Truman was "afraid they will sue for peace through Russia instead of some country like Sweden."[\[224\]](#)

Kai Bird, while discussing the critics of Alperovitz wrote,

"Must I be trained in 'cognitive psychology' to interpret this item from John J. McCloy's July 1945 diary, written after he learned of the successful test of the bomb in New Mexico? 'I hope it does not augur the commencement of the destruction of modern civilization. In this atmosphere of destruction and the callousness of men and their leaders, the whole thing seems ominous.' Are these the thoughts of a man comfortable with the use of such a weapon on a whole city? And what about McCloy's July 23, 1945 diary reference to 'the nearness of Japanese collapse...' And what are we to make of Truman's diary statement referring to the 'cable from Jap Emperor asking for peace'? Such quotes are numerous and no amount of psycho-babble can explain them all away."[\[225\]](#)

To gain a better understanding of those days, looking into the Japanese mentality might help. By World War II, Japan was the only significant place on earth not ruled by white men. That was because Japan knew the Empire Game, and would not allow itself to get into position to be conquered. They had a warrior society that was quite insular, and their isolation protected them from the imperial powers that were conquering the globe. That insularity also put them behind technologically. Until the 1850s, Japanese military technology had not advanced beyond the musket and sword. Japan's isolation lasted until 1853, when U.S. Commander Matthew Perry stormed into Tokyo harbor in a great show of military force. The "diplomatic invasion" of Japan by Perry was humiliating for the Japanese people. Perry's mission was a wake-up call for Japan, as America forced Japan into the international arena. Instead of merely opening their land to foreign trade, Japan longed to become like the white empires, even while it hated them.

The American intrusion spelled the end of feudal Japanese society, and in 1868 a revolution happened that ended Shogun rule, elevated Shintoism to the state religion, with the installation of the Emperor as the divine, sovereign being. Militarily however, in World War II, Japan sought only to carve out an imperial domain on its end of Asia, and kick out the white men.

Japan became obsessed with catching up with the white man's world, and set itself a difficult task. In 1800, Europe, which occupied less than seven percent of the world's land, controlled thirty-five percent of it, sixty-seven percent in 1878, and eighty-four percent in 1914.[\[226\]](#) Japan was playing catch-up, and in the early 1900s it began gaining ground, although by 1938 it was still far behind the U.S., Britain and Germany, only about a third as industrialized as those nations.[\[227\]](#)

Industrialization was accomplished by [raping the world](#) and stealing the natural resources and exploiting the labor of the world's less violent nations, a pattern that continues to this day. Preventing those nations from industrializing and "needing" those resources stolen from them has been an integral part of [colonialism](#) and [neocolonialism](#). The United States and Soviet Union stole large swaths of continents, making them contiguous parts of their empires, so were able to plunder "internally," although both also raped neighbors that were not de jure parts of the empire, such as the United States in Latin America and Russia in Asia and North America, and the Great Game it played with Great Britain in Afghanistan. Island nations such as Japan and Great Britain, however, had to resort to plundering abroad, which was the essence of colonialism. For instance, pre-Hitler Germany had to import thirty-three of the thirty-five raw materials it needed for industrial production.[\[228\]](#) Along with their brutal conquest and exploitation of the world's people, Europe adopted [involved and often racist ideologies](#) to justify it, as if they were "civilizing" the world as they murdered and exploited the world's dark-skinned people.

On the eve of the Great Depression, the United States' industrial output was larger than Britain's, Germany's, France's, Russia's and Japan's output combined. The industrial capacity of the rival imperial nations would be largely destroyed in World War II, leaving the United States alone on the world stage.

Japanese society quickly evolved from feudalism to a fanatical nationalism. By 1885, Japan was fighting with China over Korea. In 1894, Japan defeated China in a short-lived war. Japan came to the table with the other imperial powers in the partitioning of China. In 1904-1905, Japan surprisingly won a war against Russia. Japan was on the Allied side in World War I, eagerly supplying arms and other goods to a white man's world at war. The aftermath of World War I, however, saw a collapse in demand for Japanese goods, and the Great Depression was hard on Japan, as it was to all industrialized nations. Unlike Germany, which received a great deal of foreign investment during the Great Depression, foreign investment bypassed Japan for the more profitable fields of China, leading to further Japanese enmity toward the West. Japan is an island nation, and it experienced a great population increase, more than doubling from 1868 to 1930, to sixty-five million people. As with other nations in its situation, increasing food imports largely fueled the population increase, and the Great Depression led to Japanese deprivation, bordering on mass starvation. Destitute Japanese fathers sold their daughters into prostitution. Japanese politicians began seeing China in much the same terms as the United States had seen the [western half of the North American continent during the previous century](#): land there for the taking, in the name of Manifest Destiny. That other peoples or nations occupied the lands mattered not. Hitler's *Lebensraum* ideology was also lifted from the American handbook, Hitler seeing Eastern Europe in much the same way that America's Founding Fathers saw North America: land there for the taking, to be cleared of "subhuman" races.

The aftermath of World War I saw a militant fanaticism grip Japan. The indoctrination of Japanese boys was intense and brutal. They were trained especially to hate the Chinese. Their study was intense. A Japanese officer had more than twice as much classwork as a British officer, and more than ten times as much private study.[\[229\]](#) Beating Japanese military students, and other tortures, was a standard part of the indoctrination process, protested by none. Ritual suicide was a dark aspect of Japanese culture, later manifesting in the Kamikaze pilots who ran their planes into American warships, a fanaticism later seen when Islamic fanatics piloted suicidal truck bombs into American barracks, and the recent [World Trade Center attacks](#). The Japanese soldiers felt they could roll over China in a few months, but when taking Shanghai alone took months, the Japanese self-image took a beating, which played a part in the brutal Rape of Nanking. Was the anti-Chinese perspective of Japan more evil than [General Sheridan](#)'s observation that the only good Indians he saw were dead? Is murder an integral part of the human condition, inevitable when populations increase?

Even after the atomic bombs were dropped, there was a fanatical faction in the Japanese military that did not want to surrender, and they seized the recording of Emperor Hirohito,

determined to die instead of surrender. They felt that the United States had ten more atom bombs ready to drop on Japan, and they could withstand it. The man who crafted the Kamikaze strategy came a meeting on August 13th, four days after the Nagasaki bomb dropped, and the day before Hirohito recorded his surrender address to Japan, with a plan to "sacrifice twenty million Japanese lives in a special (Kamikaze) attack." To this day, there may be proportionally more right-wing fanatics in Japan than in the United States, and they can be more fanatical than Americans in significant ways. Vengeance perpetrated against those who voice views at odds with the right-wing image of Japan is common.[\[230\]](#) Japan's fanatical military leaders did not prevail however, and saner members of the government did.[\[231\]](#) Hirohito made an unprecedented move when he asked the cabinet to surrender. The "god" of Japan had never before lowered himself to deal in Japan's temporal affairs. When his surrender speech was broadcast to Japan's citizens, it was the first time his voice was publicly heard in Japan. To the Japanese, it was as if their god spoke to them.

One reason for the fanaticism, however, was to protect the Emperor from war crimes prosecution, an issue that the doves in the Japanese government were united with the hawks on. The Japanese people saw the Emperor as deific. By August of 1945, Japan was a defeated nation. They were completely surrounded by enemy troops. Its navy was gone, its airforce was gone; it was not even shooting at American airplanes that flew over Japan, dropping bombs on them. They were defeated. The Japanese had been exploring surrendering for more than a year when the atom bomb was dropped on Hiroshima. After the U.S. victory at Saipan in July of 1944, the Japanese saw the writing on the wall. Allied forces were rolling across Europe at that time, and all observers knew it was only a matter of time before Japan and Germany were defeated. The Japanese began exploring surrender options in July 1944, and America knew it. The United States had cracked the Japanese code before Pearl Harbor, and knew the contents of all Japanese cables during the war.

The Japanese government naturally wanted "good" peace terms in the early stages, and was anxious to negotiate a peace. Our government was aware of the contents of those Japanese cables, but did not publicly admit that they knew what was in the Japanese cables until 1960, and only in recent years has our government, in response to Freedom of Information lawsuits, begun revealing what it knew during World War II about Japanese intentions.

By May of 1945, when [Eugene Sledge](#) was living in hell on Okinawa, the bulk of the Japanese military was eager to surrender, even under hard terms, provided they were somewhat honorable. The only condition the Japanese were asking for was sparing the imperial family from retribution. The emperor was involved heavily in the war and Japan's monstrous war crimes. It is a vile tale, no doubt, yet letting one man off the hook was all the Japanese people were asking for. Their sentiments are easily understandable. Hirohito was a religious figure. Imagine how the British people would have reacted if the Germans wanted to publicly execute the King of England as a term of surrender. The British people might have fought to the last man to prevent that from happening, and the Japanese were far more fanatical than the British

regarding their royalty.

Today's evidence shows that the United States government acted about as Machiavellian as any government ever has. While American boys were fighting and dying on the islands surrounding Japan, the American government was playing chess with world, especially Eastern Asia. The United States government, including Roosevelt and Truman, knew the trajectory of Japanese surrender sentiments as they unfolded. The Japanese only wanted to preserve their emperor, and would fight to the last man to do that, which all U.S. diplomats knew it quite well. The United States, throughout the period of Japanese exploration of surrendering, continually stressed that surrender had to be "unconditional." The only condition that the Japanese wanted by May of 1945 was to retain their Emperor, and our government knew it.[\[232\]](#) The underlying reasons for stalling Japanese attempts to surrender appear to be several:

1. The [revenge for Pearl Harbor](#) theme;
2. The United States government was playing chess with the Soviet Union, and its eye was firmly on what the post-war world would look like, with the defeat of Japan an inevitability that the policymakers were already looking far beyond; the United States government wanted to limit the Soviet Union's influence in Eastern Asia after the war, especially in China;
3. The atom bomb was the "ace in the hole" that the United States was eagerly waiting to play; it would be a demonstration of power to the Soviet Union that they could not ignore; the desire to demonstrate the bomb before the world was calculated to have maximum impact on the Soviet Union.
4. Using such a horrific weapon on the Japanese was logical, given the hatred that Americans held for the Japanese, a hatred that far exceeded American animosity toward the Germans, for instance; undoubtedly, racist sentiments had much to do to with it, in the most racist nation of all time.

James F. Byrnes was a critical player in the decision to drop the atom bombs on Japan. Truman appointed Byrnes as the Secretary of State in the summer of 1945, Truman trusted Byrnes, and next to Truman, Byrnes was the key player in American foreign policy in the last days of the war.

Alperovitz wrote,

"...the then available evidence 'strongly suggested' that the view James F. Byrnes had reportedly urged to three atomic scientists (also in May 1945) was an accurate statement of policy: 'Mr. Byrnes did not argue that it was necessary to use the bomb against the cities of Japan in order to win the war....Mr. Byrnes'....view (was) that our possessing and demonstrating the bomb would make Russia more manageable in Europe.'"[233]

The evidence today strongly supports that notion, and was voiced by other people besides Byrnes. Brigadier General Leslie Groves ran the Manhattan Project, and he expressed [the same sentiments to Manhattan Project scientists](#). [234]

Here is an example of how those making it viewed the atomic bomb. By the spring of 1943, the Allies were gaining on all fronts, and the end of the war was becoming inevitable. The early and easy victories of the Germans and Japanese had turned into a grinding battle of attrition, and the Allies had far more industrial resources and men to throw at it. The Allies never really pulled off any easy victories over the Japanese and Germans; they simply could absorb the attritional losses better. By late 1943, the war's eventual outcome was apparent. The Germans overextended themselves with the invasion of the Soviet Union, a miscalculation that climaxed in the winter of 1942-1943 with the Nazi disaster at Stalingrad. The Allies also began winning in North Africa in late 1942. By the summer of 1943 the Allies invaded Italy. The Americans won the battle of Guadalcanal and the [Solomon Islands](#) by early 1943, the pivotal battle of the Pacific. The decisive battles of the Coral Sea and Midway happened in the spring of 1943.

In April of 1943, the Manhattan Project began building a factory to produce wire mesh with nickel plating, made by a process called the Norris-Adler process, after its inventors, which resisted corrosion better than copper, which was failing. The nickel mesh wire would do the job in the diffusion process used to [separate Uranium-235 \(U-235\) from the Uranium-238](#). In October 1943, a barrier more promising than the "Norris-Adler" screens was invented. The "Norris-Adler" screens were adequate to get enough U-235 to make the atom bombs, and changing barriers would delay the making of an atom bomb for months. Harold Urey, the 1934 Nobel Prize winner in chemistry for his discovery and isolation of deuterium (the first elemental isotope ever isolated), which was an important part of making nuclear weapons, came into a heated conflict with Groves regarding the conversion to the new barriers. Urey argued that changing barriers in midstream would delay making the atom bomb by months. By January of 1944, Groves authorized the switch to the new process. Rhodes writes,

"By changing barriers rather than abandoning gaseous diffusion he confirmed what many Manhattan Project scientists had not yet realized: that the commitment of the United States to

nuclear weapons development had enlarged from the seemingly urgent but narrow goal of beating the Germans to the bomb. Building a gaseous-diffusion plant that would interfere with conventional war production, would eventually cost half a billion dollars but would almost certainly not contribute significantly to shortening the war meant that nuclear weapons were thenceforth to be counted a permanent addition to the U.S. arsenal. Urey saw the point and withdrew [he resigned his position - Ed.]; 'from that time forward,' write his colleague biographers, 'his energies were directed to the control of atomic energy, not its applications.'"[235]

In light of that event, shortening the war was obviously not the top priority of the Manhattan Project, but part of a longer-term strategy, which Groves said was "to subdue the Soviets." The Cold War was already being waged in earnest, and World War II was far from finished.

After the bombs were dropped, the people in the decision-making process began a propaganda campaign to cast their decision-making in a more benign light, beginning with [Truman's announcement of the bombing](#). They began justifying the atomic bombing of Japan as saving American lives. Truman held to that position until he died. Truman is popularly known in America as one of the most honest politicians that America has ever had. Unfortunately, that might be true. The record today shows that Truman's announced "million" casualties was never at any time the number that was thrown around when the decision to atom bomb Japan was made. Alperovitz and other historians have combed the record as thoroughly as possible, and the highest estimate ever made during the planning process was that 46,000 American deaths might result from a full-scale invasion of Japan, and the only estimate Truman ever saw arrived at a number of around 8000 American deaths.[236] The "million casualty" statement, made many times in later years by Truman and others appears to be an outright fabrication, justifying in retrospect what was done. The "expendable" cannon fodder in the Pacific was obviously relieved to hear that the war was over, but it does not appear that saving their lives was too high on the decision-makers' list of priorities. Paul Fussell has been one of the most vigorous defenders of dropping the bomb, mainly because he would have been shipped from Europe for the invasion of Japan, something that no American in the European Theater relished. The "anybody but me" view of the cannon fodder is understandable, but does not make bombing Hiroshima "righteous."

Truman was a standard American politician. He lied tellingly and repeatedly about the atomic bombing of Japan and the decision-making process that led up to it. While announcing the bombing, he told America that [Hiroshima was a military base](#), but the reality was that first people incinerated by the Hiroshima bomb were patients in hospital beds and children playing on a playground.[237] The real reason Hiroshima was bombed was because it would make a showcase for the bomb's devastating power. Hiroshima was one of the few Japanese cities not yet reduced to rubble, precisely because it was of little military significance. The planners

wanted to bomb a city that was relatively intact, which is why they chose Hiroshima and Nagasaki. Declassified files have shown that the initial criteria for selecting the atomic bomb targets were:

"(1) they be important targets in a large urban area of more than three miles diameter, (2) they be capable of being damaged effectively by a blast, and (3) they are likely to be unattacked by next August."[\[238\]](#)

The Target Committee also noted,

"that psychological factors in the target selection were of great importance. Two aspects of this are (1) obtaining the greatest psychological effect against Japan and (2) making the initial use sufficiently spectacular for the importance of the weapon to be internationally recognized when publicity on it is released."[\[239\]](#)

Hiroshima was initially on the list partly because of "the advantage of being such a size and with possible focusing from nearby mountains that a large fraction of the city may be destroyed."

As Alperovitz summarized the memorandums and thinking that went into the bombing decision he wrote, "This meant targeting large numbers of civilians."[\[240\]](#) Such a decision was a direct violation of the Geneva Convention. According to the standards used at Nuremberg, Truman and his advisors (and others such as Churchill) should have been at the business end of a hangman's noose for bombing Hiroshima, and especially Nagasaki, which appears to have been the biggest human experiment ever carried out.

Similar to the issue of bombing Auschwitz to save Jewish lives, the issue has come up about dropping the atomic bomb and why a city was targeted. Could a bomb have been dropped on an uninhabited island, with Japanese officials watching what the Americans could do to Japanese cities, and having that awesome display of power bend the Japanese into submission? The standard answer by establishment apologists is that such a tactic was considered but rejected as being impractical or uncertain. The facts are that even though a survey showed that Manhattan Project scientists were overwhelmingly in favor of

demonstrating the power of the atomic bomb to the Japanese before it was dropped on the Japanese people, giving them a chance to surrender, and even people such as George C. Marshall cautioned against using the bomb on civilians without first demonstrating it on a military target, that strategy was never seriously considered by any of the decision-makers, and the representatives of the Manhattan Project scientists never made a peep of protest when informed of how the bombs would be used.[\[241\]](#)

In addition, extreme secrecy was used regarding dropping the bomb. The decision-makers were against any warning to Japan about what was going to happen. Although in the later propaganda years, Hollywood would depict America as dropping leaflets to warn the Japanese of the Hiroshima bombing, that notion is a complete fabrication.[\[242\]](#)

Alperovitz stressed that Truman and his advisors did not choose to drop the atom bombs out of,

"...evil intent. Their motives, broadly speaking, were good; their intentions well-meaning. Mainly they were people who had experienced two world wars in one generation who did not want to see a third one occur - and who believed the new weapon gave them the power to shape events to achieve a truly enduring peace."[\[243\]](#)

Henry Stimson, the Secretary of War at the time of the bombing, wrote that those who decided to bomb Hiroshima were "very fine men," but they "should have known better."[\[244\]](#)

Alperovitz wrote,

"Around the world Americans are famous for a certain naive self-righteousness, even arrogance. We like to see ourselves as possessed of special, unique virtue. Ours is a great nation. So long as we accept a distorted, overly idealized image of ourselves and our society, however - so long as we see all "good" here and all "evil" elsewhere - I believe we must inevitably err in our relationship with others. Many of the excesses of the Cold War - and the overreaching that produced the Vietnam War - can be traced in part to such attitudes."[\[245\]](#)

In essence, Alperovitz enunciated the attitude of Nazi Germany as it marched off to war, as

Japan did, as Britain, Portugal, France, Holland and Spain did when [they conquered the world](#), etc. The self-image that Americans have is the same one that all imperial societies have. It amounts to, "We are the good guys." Because we accept that "self-evident truth," as seen through our eyes, we blithely justify Hiroshima and Nagasaki. We [cheer acts such as the Gulf War](#). We stand by as our national apparatus bludgeons [Guatemala, El Salvador, Panama, Vietnam, Chile, Iran](#), Nicaragua and so on. We inflict great evil on others, while telling ourselves that we are the good guys. Hitler thought the same way, as does every butcher and mass murderer. The [means become the ends](#). They always have, and always will.

Alperovitz' monumental scholarship has been predictably attacked by American establishment defenders. When his seminal *Atomic Diplomacy* was published in 1965, it was stunning in its thesis: "the atomic bomb was not needed to end the war or to save lives." America's intelligentsia was highly critical of his work. Alperovitz was the first one to make public the issue of [James Byrnes](#) and others stating that the reason for the Hiroshima bombing was "to make Russia more manageable." The main problem in getting to the bottom of it was the veil of secrecy that the U.S. government threw over the entire affair, with many critical documents only being declassified recently, with the most critical documents likely still classified or destroyed, in standard American fashion. It was not until 1960 that the informal names of the bombs, Fat Man and Little Boy, were declassified. The mainstream media has generally been the establishment's mouthpiece on these issues, uncritically repeating whatever the government tells them.[\[246\]](#) The most involved account to ever appear on network television was in 1965, in the documentary titled *The Decision to Drop the Bomb*. It was far from even-handed, and ended up recapitulating Stimson's lies, but it is the most frank account ever appearing on network television. American is still a nation in denial regarding Hiroshima, more than fifty years since it happened.

Alperovitz was the first to claim that Truman delayed the Potsdam Conference until America could test an atomic bomb. At the time, he was attacked for such observations, but today they are widely accepted in scholarly circles, even if our politicians and mainstream media continue to deny it. In 1978, the discovery of Truman's "Potsdam Diary" confirmed key Alperovitz claims. Truman wrote about the diplomatic value of the bomb, "I have an ace in the hole." He wrote before the bombing, "telegram from Jap Emperor asking for peace." Truman was well aware that the threat of Russia entering the war against Japan would lead to their immediate surrender, which was why they tried delaying Russia's entrance into the Asian war. The picture became clearer, and Alperovitz' "radical" scholarship was vindicated.[\[247\]](#) Along with Alperovitz, British physicist Patrick Blackett was vindicated. He was the 1948 Nobel laureate for his work in nuclear physics, knighted for his work. He wrote the first book to challenge the Disneyfied version that Secretary of War Henry Stimson and others concocted long ago. Blackett's book was titled, *Fear, War and the Bomb*, published in the 1940s. Blackett called the Hiroshima bombing the first shot of the Cold War.

Nearly all attacks on Alperovitz' work are the standard [name-calling, emotionally stunted,](#)

[irrational tracts](#). One Alperovitz critic asked if there was any significant difference between conventional bombing and the atomic attack on Hiroshima. One charge laid at Alperovitz' feet is that he is a grown-up Vietnam-era hippie type, revising history with his leftist [presentism](#). Alperovitz' received his Ph.D. in 1964, and *Atomic Diplomacy*, his first contribution to the field, was published in 1965, long before the hippies (called bums and beatniks in earlier generations) began showing up in America, long before Americans (besides Chomsky and his friends) questioned Vietnam. Another falsehood is the notion that questioning the atomic bombings is something that has come up recently, due to research such as Alperovitz'. Many prominent members of the U.S. government were critical of bombing Hiroshima and Nagasaki *when they happened*. There is virtual unanimity that the bombing of Nagasaki was a great crime, not justified by any stretch of the imagination.

Nagasaki was probably a human experiment. A different kind of bomb was used at Nagasaki, a plutonium bomb, which worked completely differently than the uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima, never detonated before it was dropped on Nagasaki. The Trinity test was with a plutonium bomb, but the Nagasaki one was being dropped from a plane. They almost did not drop the Nagasaki bomb because cloud cover obscured the target, but they did not want to "waste" the bomb by dropping it into the ocean or taking it back home, so they dropped it miles from the target. It was an experiment, used on human beings, for almost no reason other than seeing if it would work. Nagasaki happened three days after Hiroshima, not giving the Japanese time to digest it. There was no pressing need to rush things in the wake of Hiroshima, other than keeping the Soviets from gaining too much influence in Eastern Asia.

Here is a sampling of opinion by men who are obviously not revisionist scholars, and what they thought of dropping the atomic bombs.

"...the Japanese were ready to surrender and it wasn't necessary to hit them with that awful thing." - **Dwight Eisenhower**.[\[248\]](#) Eisenhower was the leader of the Allied forces in Europe during World War II and President of the United States in the 1950s.

"It is my opinion that the use of this barbarous weapon at Hiroshima and Nagasaki was of no material assistance in our war against Japan. The Japanese were already defeated and ready to surrender because of the effective sea blockade and the successful bombing with conventional weapons.

"The lethal possibilities of atomic warfare in the future are frightening. My own feeling was that in being the first to use it, we had adopted an ethical standard common to the barbarians of the Dark Ages. I was not taught to make war in that fashion, and wars cannot be won by

destroying women and children." - **William Leahy**.[\[249\]](#) Leahy was the Chief of Staff to Presidents Franklin Roosevelt and Harry Truman.

On May 28, 1945, Herbert Hoover visited President Truman and suggested a way to end the Pacific war quickly:

"I am convinced that if you, as President, will make a shortwave broadcast to the people of Japan - tell them they can have their Emperor if they surrender, that it will not mean unconditional surrender except for the militarists - you'll get a peace in Japan - you'll have both wars over."[\[250\]](#)

On August 8, 1945, two days after Hiroshima was bombed, Hoover wrote to *Army and Navy Journal* publisher Colonel John Callan O'Laughlin, "The use of the atomic bomb, with its indiscriminate killing of women and children, revolts my soul."[\[251\]](#)

Herbert Hoover was the U.S. President from 1929 to 1933.

Douglas MacArthur's biographer William Manchester has described MacArthur's reaction to the issuance by the Allies of the Potsdam Proclamation to Japan:

"...the Potsdam declaration in July, demand(ed) that Japan surrender unconditionally or face 'prompt and utter destruction.' MacArthur was appalled. He knew that the Japanese would never renounce their emperor, and that without him an orderly transition to peace would be impossible anyhow, because his people would never submit to Allied occupation unless he ordered it. Ironically, when the surrender did come, it was conditional, and the condition was a continuation of the imperial reign. Had the General's advice been followed, the resort to atomic weapons at Hiroshima and Nagasaki might have been unnecessary."[\[252\]](#)

Norman Cousins consulted for General MacArthur during the American occupation of Japan.

Cousins wrote, "MacArthur's views about the decision to drop the atomic bomb on Hiroshima and Nagasaki were starkly different from what the general public supposed." He continued, "When I asked General MacArthur about the decision to drop the bomb, I was surprised to learn he had not even been consulted. What, I asked, would his advice have been? He replied that he saw no military justification for the dropping of the bomb. The war might have ended weeks earlier, he said, if the United States had agreed, as it later did anyway, to the retention of the institution of the emperor."[\[253\]](#)

Douglas MacArthur was Dwight Eisenhower's counterpart in the Pacific, in charge of the Allied troops fighting Japan during World War II.

Those men are not a bunch of hippies who grew up during the Vietnam War. There were many, many others with positions similar to those men who were appalled by dropping the bombs on Japan. Here is one example of what might have been, but was ignored in the rush to use the bomb.

"On June 28, 1945, a memorandum written by Under Secretary of the Navy, **Ralph Bard** the previous day was given to Secretary of War Henry Stimson. The memorandum stated in part,

"Following the three-power [July 1945 Potsdam - Ed.] conference emissaries from this country could contact representatives from Japan somewhere on the China Coast and make representations with regard to Russia's position and at the same time give them some information regarding the proposed use of atomic power, together with whatever assurances the President might care to make with regard to the Emperor of Japan and the treatment of the Japanese nation following unconditional surrender. It seems quite possible to me that this presents the opportunity which the Japanese are looking for.

"I don't see that we have anything in particular to lose in following such a program.' He concluded the memorandum by noting, 'The only way to find out is to try it out.'"[\[254\]](#)

Albert Einstein would later say,

"I made one great mistake in my life - when I signed the letter to President Roosevelt

recommending that atom bombs be made, but there was some justification - the danger that the Germans would make them."[\[255\]](#)

George Kennan, one of the [most fervent Cold Warriors](#), wrote the following, in "A Christian's View of the Arms Race,"

"(T)he readiness to use nuclear weapons against other human beings - against people whom we do not know, whom we have never seen, and for whose guilt or innocence is not for us to establish - and, in doing so, to place in jeopardy the natural structure upon which all civilization rests, as though the safety and perceived interest of our own generation are more important than everything that has ever taken place or could take place in civilization: this is nothing less than a presumption, a blasphemy, and indignity - an indignity of monstrous dimensions - offered to God."[\[256\]](#)

The U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey in 1946, commissioned by Truman himself, concluded that the Japanese would have surrendered by the end of 1945, even if they were not invaded, even if the Soviet Union had not declared war, and even if the atomic bombs were never dropped.

These are not very controversial issues, but the United States has never apologized for its monstrous behavior, not just to Japan, but to the world. Being the world's most powerful nation means never having to say you are sorry, no matter how atrocious your behavior. As with the [Gulf War](#), as with [annihilating America's natives](#), as with [Vietnam](#), as with [Yugoslavia](#), this nation has never performed the introspection of asking itself why we did it, what was glorious about it, what those people did to deserve our genocidal violence, etc. As long as we never perform that introspection and no greater power stunts our violence, we will continue to do it.

As with the [Jewish Holocaust](#), there are dots of light in the black firmament that hovers over the Hiroshima and Nagasaki bombings. In 1954, Norman Cousins successfully agitated for "Hiroshima Maidens" to come to the United States for surgery to try healing their disfigurement from the atom bombing. They were warmly received by many, yet the U.S. government was extremely nervous about those maidens being in America, fearing that there would be anti-nuclear criticism following in the wake of Americans witnessing what the bomb did to Japanese citizens. The arrival of the Hiroshima Maidens was the first time that the American public openly saw the results of the atom bombs. Until that time, the footage of the aftermath of Hiroshima and Nagasaki was a state secret. The Hiroshima Maidens played a part in the

healing that has taken place between America and Japan. The Maidens accepted their state, consistent with their religion and worldview, and did not blame America. Also, there were more than a thousand nuclear-disfigured American citizens living in America at the time, generally Nisei who were trapped in Japan when the war broke out, bombed by their own government, as with those dozens of American POWs held at Hiroshima and Nagasaki, whom our government knew full well were down there when the atom bombs were dropped.[\[257\]](#)

[At present](#), my home state of Washington will be dealing with the issue of nuclear weapons for the next two hundred thousand years or so, with the immense wisdom that led to the Hanford facility, a facility that is leaking plutonium today into the Columbia River. Since [civilization](#) is about seven thousand years old, it took some incredible foresight to plan for 200,000 years into the future so we could subdue Japan.

The issue here is not condemning Truman, Hitler or anyone; it is deflating the moral superiority that Americans have adopted regarding that war, and all wars since, thinking that they are the force of light and righteousness, defeating the forces of evil as they bomb helpless Vietnamese farmers, Iraqi conscripts, Yugoslavian peasants, Panamanian tenement dwellers, pharmaceutical factories, Afghanistan "rebels" that America armed and incited, etc. The greatest evils are committed by the self-righteous. During World War II, the killing had escalated to such levels that incinerating a city or two was not out of step with the times. Nuking Hiroshima was a sign of the times, times that my parents grew up in.

Some More Myths

In Michael C.C. Adams' *The Best War Ever*, he noted that contrary to the popular image, most returning soldiers from World War II did not get parades, were often "treated like scum," and one anonymous soldier said, "If you ever got the boys all together they will probably kill all the civilians."[\[258\]](#)

No American or Japanese newspaper carried any stories of atrocities carried out by their own soldiers, although there were plenty. White American servicemen beating and killing black servicemen was covered up. The media, similar to today in many ways, were [government cheerleaders, not journalists](#). The scene of MacArthur wading ashore on his return to the Philippines was staged and filmed several times until they got a take they liked. The famous picture of Marines raising the flag at Iwo Jima was of the second flag being raised, the first not being large enough to satisfy the Marines. Patton, Eisenhower and other icons staged their famous photos, such as at Normandy and Sicily. The American film industry was in overdrive, churning out endless movies about the noble Allies and the evil enemy. When disfigured soldiers from the plastic surgery hospital in Pasadena were allowed to go downtown, the

newspapers received letters that asked why the soldiers were let out, and asked why they could not be "kept on their own grounds and off the streets?"[\[259\]](#)

The average American soldier did not say a sentence that did not have a four-letter word in it, and their favorite noun, verb and adjective began with the letter "f." The phony war movies starring John Wayne and other jingo-actors unfortunately influenced a generation of boys who went to Korea and Vietnam, thinking that they were somehow saving the world from evil as they bombed Korean and Vietnamese farmers and their families. The Reagan-Bush boys attempted to regain the mythos of World War II. Reagan was an actor who was in those World War II movies as Wayne was, and Saddam Hussein was turned into the next Hitler by Bush's lying rhetoric. Reagan was living in a fantasy world so delusional that he told war stories as if he had lived them, but they were really scenes from movies he was in or saw. Reagan never left America's shores as a soldier and never saw combat, but he told war stories.[\[260\]](#)

For a man who gave shoot-to-kill orders to the National Guard, to be executed against protesting students while he was the governor of California, for a man who liked telling jokes about black people, for a man who presided over the genocide in [Central America](#), for a man who hated the Soviet Union and did his best to conquer it, as well as an eager collaborator of Joe McCarthy's witch hunts,[\[261\]](#) a man with his delusional wartime fantasies, for a man who was a failed artist (he played the straight man to a chimpanzee) who resurrected his fortunes when he pursued politics, for a man who ran for office on the platform of making his nation great once more, citing a golden age that never was, Reagan had many parallels to Hitler. The accounts we can now read about both men, where they were nearly incoherent in private conversation, yet those around them, including the press, portrayed both men as [dazzling conversationalists](#), gives one pause. For the death toll they racked up, they were different, but in other ways, they were blood brothers. Hitler was a real soldier; Reagan was a fake soldier. Hitler euthanized the mentally ill; Reagan threw them onto the streets to fend for themselves. I met Reagan's handiwork on the streets of skid row Los Angeles everyday. Compare the Nuremberg rallies to the Democratic and Republican conventions in American politics. Reagan presided over the [biggest imprisonment effort](#) the world has seen since...Hitler's concentration camps and Stalin's gulags. As a child, I had to say the [pledge of allegiance](#) every day to begin school. How different was my indoctrination than what a German child underwent? As I was saying my pledge to the flag, with my hand over my heart, my nation was [killing millions of "subhuman gooks" in Southeast Asia](#) for the crime of wanting to be free. We were able to pull off invasions that Hitler could only dream of, sending troops across a vast ocean to annihilate the "enemy."

World War II built the military-industrial complex that Eisenhower warned about. Joe Marcus was the head of the Civilian Requirements Division in World War II. Marcus later reflected, "the single most important legacy of the war is...the military-industrial complex. In the past, there were business representatives in Washington, but now they *are* Washington."[\[262\]](#)

During World War II, an empty-headed nationalism took over American brains. Critical thinking was out, and being a member of the team (herd) was what counted. Nearly two-thirds of American soldiers in World War II were drafted. The baby boom began during the war, as millions of men got married and immediately had a child to avoid being drafted. As with Vietnam, the college deferment was available, which got the middle and upper class men out of combat, loopholes that [have been available for the rich](#) in every single American war. Being a conscientious objector was a felony offense.[\[263\]](#) Gandhi and Jesus would have been felons in America. "Thou shalt not kill" did not apply when there were enemy to kill, whether they were Japs, Injuns, Krauts, Rag Heads or Gooks.

The military hierarchy in the regular Germany army was far more democratic than America's, encouraging camaraderie between officers and enlisted soldiers, radically different from the caste system that pervaded the American and British ranks. The German, British and Japanese soldiers were considered far more capable than American soldiers. The German arms were generally of much better quality than American arms, such as the Panzer versus the Sherman tanks, where the military planners calculated that it took five Sherman tanks to take out one Panzer. Proportionally, minorities like Mexican-Americans and Native Americans served in far higher numbers than the white population. The discrimination against them was evident, but was the most extreme with African-American soldiers, who served in segregated regiments. Blacks generally did not serve in combat, mainly because carrying a weapon was a traditional way to claim full citizenship rights. The Blacks rode on the back of the bus, cleaning out the stables, for World War II. One striking American worker during the war said, "I'd rather see Hitler and Hirohito win the war than work beside a nigger on the assembly line." That worker was expressing common sentiments in America, which was the majority opinion in the South and West.[\[264\]](#) During the "zoot suit" riots in 1943, American servicemen roamed Los Angeles, beating up any Mexican-Americans they found. The Japanese-Americans were already locked up, so they were not assaulted.

One more minimized aspect of the war was homosexuality in the foxholes. In itself, it was understandable and nothing was wrong with it, but the military had long associated manliness with heterosexuality, and witch hunts for homosexuals regularly swept the American military ranks. There is nothing "wrong" with homosexuality. Many soldiers engaged in it not because they were homosexuals by nature, just as few prison inmates are homosexuals by choice. If people are desperate for food and sex, they will get it however they can. There was also widespread discrimination against women in the American military. It was a rather backward attitude compared to Europe, where British female officers commanded men. The American infantry, as in all armies, was manned by America's lower classes. Most combat soldiers coveted the [million-dollar wound](#). Divorces in America hit their all time high during World War II.

The British, for instance, did not look at black American soldiers as "niggers," but just as American soldiers. British women who dated black American soldiers, however, were subject

to being beaten up by American soldiers, and American soldiers killed people over white women dating blacks, several times, in Britain.[\[265\]](#) The Americans harbored racist hatred for the Arabs and Japanese particularly, but they could even be boorish toward their French and English allies for their "primitive" ways, such as not having refrigerators in their homes.

Seventy-five percent of American soldiers admitted to having sex while overseas, and World War II veterans have told me stories, such as in the Philippines, where having sex with the local women (who were reduced to prostitution) was a long-standing pastime for imperial troops. Those kinds of war stories are not told at family picnics. The American men were considered the most sexist and racist of the Allies. Any woman associating with American soldiers was immediately suspected of being a prostitute. More American soldiers were casualties of venereal disease in Northern Europe than of the V-2 rocket, and during the Italian campaign, venereal disease caused more casualties than battle.[\[266\]](#) A similar trend also happened at home, with the venereal disease rate of girls aged fifteen to eighteen doubling between 1941 and 1944, in New York City.

More than a quarter of all American casualties were psychological problems, usually called shell shock. My ancestors came back from war "changed" men. The common epithet for men getting shell shock was "coward," and Patton hit men who suffered from it. Even the most heroic got shell shock. [Audie Murphy](#), perhaps the greatest war hero America ever produced, suffered from shell shock for the rest of his life. One reason shell shock was so much higher with Americans than other nations (Germany's was less than 2%) was that America had a huge bureaucratic military structure that had only about 20% of its soldiers slated for combat, with the rest performing support duties. Consequently, those 20% had no relief, as the whole effort depended on them. They were the true cannon fodder, and they were doomed men in the heat of the Asian and European theaters, with casualty rates so high that a soldier was almost guaranteed to get maimed or die, which led to playing Russian Roulette and other suicidal behaviors. "Take no prisoners" was the motto of even Audie Murphy. Machine gunning a parachuting soldier who had bailed out, torturing prisoners to death to gain information, killing surrendering soldiers, etc., were behaviors that every army in World War II displayed.

At home, history books were revised to minimize or delete the parts that dealt with slavery or the dispossession of the natives, because it promoted "disunity." Unsupervised youth began getting drunk, vandalizing property and joining gangs. One way for women to show their patriotism was by having sex with soldiers. It is estimated that 85% of the women who lived near army camps and had frequent sex with soldiers in America did not charge.[\[267\]](#) They were called Victory Girls, and many if not most were teenagers. Once the war was over, Rosie the Riveter was supposed to go back home and get pregnant. When Valium hit the market in the 1950s, the biggest customer class was American housewives, getting the newspaper, slippers and pipe ready for her man for his return from the factory. *Leave it to Beaver* and *Ozzie and Harriet* only existed in Hollywood's imagination. *All in the Family* was more realistic.

Hitler's entire program was based on a racist nationalism, just as in the United States (the original [U.S. Constitution](#) exempted slaves and natives from having those "inalienable rights"). Hitler was not as much of an aberration as Westerners like pretending. He was in significant ways the Western mentality's logical conclusion. Hitler may have done the world a favor, in the end, taking commonly-held attitudes to their logical extreme.

World War II was not a Golden Age. General Gene LaRocque told Studs Terkel,

"...I had been in thirteen battle engagements, had sunk a submarine, and was the first man ashore in the landing at Roi. In that four years, I thought, What a hell of a waste of a man's life. I lost a lot of friends. I had the task of telling my roommate's parents about our last days together. You lose limbs, sight, part of your life - for what? Old men send young men to war. Flags, banners, and patriotic sayings...

"You could argue that World War Two had to be fought. Hitler had to be stopped. Unfortunately, we translate it unchanged to the situation today...

"I hate it when they say, 'He gave his life for his country.' Nobody gives their life for anything. We steal the lives of those kids. We take it away from them. They don't die for the honor and glory of their country. We kill them."[\[268\]](#)

After the Bomb

After two atomic bombs were dropped on Japan in the span of a few days, Japan surrendered. It was no surprise that the Japanese surrendered after two cities were incinerated. The United States government fully expected it. In one of the many ironies of Japan's surrender, although the Americans stonewalled the Japanese surrender with their "unconditional" mantra, after the Japanese surrendered the Allies did exactly what the Japanese wanted: spare Hirohito from prosecution and humiliation. Hirohito remained an untainted emperor until his death in 1989. It appears that retaining Hirohito was a useful strategy for the United States, as a way of controlling post-war Japan, keeping them from going communist or some other unfavorable (from the U.S.' perspective) path. The last several months of fighting, particularly the kind of fighting that [Sledge](#) participated in, never needed to happen, as if any of it ever "needed" to happen. That must be a devastating realization, if ever achieved, for those who survived the Pacific Theater battles in 1945, and the families that lost sons in those battles, both American and Japanese.

Bombing Nagasaki was not the last act of the war. The Japanese were not engaging in attacks at that time. They were a defeated people, reduced to huddling under the American bombardment. Hiroshima was bombed on August 6, 1945, and Nagasaki on August 9th. On August 14th, as Hirohito was making his surrender speech, Hap Arnold, who ran the Army Air Force (the Air Force as such did not yet exist) staged what is called the Grand Finale. It was something like our Fourth of July fireworks, celebrating what a great nation we are. The Grand Finale was this: Arnold wanted to get more than 1000 planes in the air at one time, for one last glorious bombing of Japan. On August 14th, Arnold accomplished his enormous task. He got 1014 planes aloft for one last bombing run on the main Japanese island of Honshu. Those planes dropped twelve million pounds of bombs on Japan that day, half as much explosive power as was dropped on Hiroshima.

Noam Chomsky, who was sixteen when the bombs were dropped, was "shocked" by the atomic bombing. He did not talk about it with his friends, because nobody seemed to care. Chomsky said about the Grand Finale, "That one didn't kill as many people as the atom bombs, but in a way it's more depraved."[\[269\]](#) The planes dropped leaflets with those bombs during the Grand Finale, informing the Japanese civilians below that Japan had surrendered. America delivered the news with the bombs. Japan had been reduced nearly entirely to rubble by that time. In the spring of 1945, Arnold informed Major General [Curtis LeMay](#), who eventually ran the Strategic Air Command in the United States, that by October 1945, there would be nothing left in Japan worth bombing: the entire nation would be in ruins.[\[270\]](#) Arnold wrote the same in his diary in June 1945. When I have mentioned the Grand Finale to my fellow Americans, they either say in bewilderment, "no!" or they stare at me with an amazed look on their face. The Grand Finale is described rather cheerily in the official Air Force history.

Japan then surrendered, still getting to keep their Emperor, and the Cold War heated up immediately. The first thing our government did at the end of fighting in Europe was hire the *Nazis*. Christopher Simpson's *Blowback* is the defining history of those events, which have serious repercussions to this day.

The [Cold War may have begun with the Russian Revolution in 1917](#). The United States sent several thousand troops to Russia to counter the Bolshevik Revolution. Communism was a threat to capitalism. The ideal of communism was share and share alike. The problem with communism, as with capitalism, is that it was not free. Capitalism is anything but free. Its coercive mechanisms are different and subtler, but it is not "free." Free markets are a myth. The [free press](#) is a myth. Workers are free to rent themselves to the capitalists, who own everything, if they want to eat and have a roof over their head. For all the spectacular failures of the Bolshevik communist system and its evils, it was still a great threat to capitalists, if the colonized people adopted it and were no longer subject to imperial exploitation. The war against Soviet communism lasted from 1918 to 1989, when the Soviet Empire collapsed.

One reason that American industrialists and politicians [embraced the fascism of Hitler and Mussolini](#) was it meant that communism would not get a foothold. Fascism was still a capitalist system, with German industrialists prominent, with heavy American investment.

After the disaster at Stalingrad in 1942-1943, many Nazis saw how the war was going to end. General Reinhard Gehlen had been planning his surrender to the Americans since the autumn of 1944, and perhaps earlier. Gehlen copied and buried the Nazi intelligence files on the Soviet Union. On May 22, 1945, Gehlen surrendered to an American Counterintelligence Corps team. Gehlen's surrender demonstrates how fractious governments are, with various groups vying for power. According to the Yalta agreements, Gehlen and his men were supposed to be turned over to the Soviets, while the Soviets were finding and returning American POWs during its advance on Berlin. In addition, many in the American military and governmental hierarchy were extremely hostile to the idea of making any deals with *any* Nazis. Gehlen, however, found himself in the middle of a power struggle in the emerging U.S. intelligence field. The CIA was not formed until 1947. At the end of World War II, there were two rival intelligence organizations, the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) and U.S. military intelligence. The OSS and military intelligence would engage in a power struggle that culminated in founding the CIA.

The United States has a tradition of civilian control of the military, and the CIA was a civilian organization, although military intelligence wanted it to be a military organization. The CIA being a civilian organization has been a double-edged sword for America and the world. On one hand, an unbridled military can lead to dictatorships rather easily. On the other hand, the military hierarchy was nearly united in its opinion to [not drop atom bombs on Japan](#). For all its great failings and dubious justification, the American military had a code of honor, of which one aspect was only killing enemy soldiers (sometimes even adhered to!), and another was that there is no honor in defeating a weak enemy. If the military had been in charge of the war effort, the atomic bombs likely would not have been dropped on Japan. The civilian leadership wanted to drop the bombs, and their opinion directed the military action. Having civilians in charge of the military can be bloodier than having soldiers running the government.

Because the CIA is a civilian organization, people such as [Ralph McGehee](#) have been able to publish memoirs of their CIA days, albeit only after [terrific struggle](#). Ralph, however, is one of a handful of CIA-critical employees who have ever published their memoirs. If they worked for the military NSA (National Security Agency), they would have never been able to publish their memoirs. I know of nobody who worked for the NSA and published memoirs that were critical of the NSA, as McGehee, Phil Agee, Victor Marchetti and John Stockwell have regarding the CIA.

Bill Donovan (known as "Wild Bill") and Allen Dulles ran the OSS, and both would later run the CIA, Donovan being its first director. Dulles ran the Secret Intelligence Branch (SIB) of the OSS. Members of Dulles' SIB that became CIA directors included Richard Helms and William

Casey. Donovan was a Wall Street lawyer, and his recruits were from Wall Street, Ivy League schools and large corporations. Fittingly, the CIA was a capitalistic organization, suited to wage war against communism. It was an Eastern Establishment organization from the outset, and the half-joke of calling the CIA the "standing Army of the *Fortune* 500" can be traced to those men who founded and ran the OSS and subsequently the CIA. Wall Street lawyer [William Nelson Cromwell](#), the man who largely [manipulated Panama into being](#), making big money for himself and his robber baron pals, chose Allen Dulles' brother John Foster to run his empire, and John Foster became Eisenhower's Secretary of State, when Allen also ran the CIA, during the McCarthy witch hunt days. During their tenure, the Dulles brothers directed the overthrow of the [Guatemalan government](#) on behalf of the corporation that brings Americans Chiquita bananas (the Dulles brothers had a [financial stake](#) in the affair), and they helped [overthrow the Iranian government](#) on behalf of the oil interests.

With the strong capitalist bent of the OSS hierarchy and American government, the communist Soviet Union was seen as the true threat to American hegemony, something evident in the comments of [Leslie Groves](#) and [James Byrnes](#). The OSS was ripe for what Gehlen had to offer: Nazi intelligence files on the Soviet Union. The Nazi intelligence-gathering program on the Soviet Union was one of history's most evil undertakings. The bulk of the intelligence was received from Soviet POWs. The Nazis intentionally murdered somewhere between three and four million Soviet POWs.[\[271\]](#) They offered the Soviet prisoners the chance to betray their people and collaborate with the Nazis. The choice was collaborate or die. The majority of Soviet prisoners chose death rather than betray their people, and they were summarily executed, starved to death, etc. They were even shipped to the death camps to go straight into the gas chambers and ovens. Those who cooperated provided the bulk of Nazi intelligence on the Soviet Union. Gehlen's greatest accomplishment during the war was designing the strategy of interrogating those POWs. After a POW told what he knew, he was often shot immediately afterward or suffered the same fate of the uncooperative prisoners. POWs that were more useful became cooks, chauffeurs and even troops that fought for the Nazis. They also, as with others in Eastern Europe, became the muscle in the extermination squads that roamed Eastern Europe, taking their part in murdering more than twenty-five million people.[\[272\]](#) The carnage of Eastern Europe under Nazi occupation has no comparable event. For sheer single-mindedness, scale and intensity, it was a slaughter unmatched in history, with the death camps only part of the scenery.

From that charnel house came Gehlen's coveted intelligence files. The OSS was soon vying with military intelligence over control of Gehlen's records. A power struggle ensued that the OSS eventually won, culminating with the CIA's formation. Gehlen and his men were hired into the American intelligence network. There were cases of Nazis working in the death camps on human experiments and going on the American payroll weeks later. When the Klaus Barbie Affair became big news in 1983, with the revelation that the United States actively protected the "Butcher of Lyons" from war crimes prosecution, it was only the tip of the iceberg. Operation Paperclip specialized in bringing Nazis secretly to America.

The space programs of the United States *and* the Soviet Union were largely built from the German scientists who were spirited out of Western Europe at the end of World War II. There was a fierce competition between the U.S. and the Soviets to get the best German scientists from the spoils of Germany, as they converged on the V-2 rocket works at Nordhausen. America got Wernher von Braun, Arthur Rudolph and Walter Dornberger from the [German V-2 program](#), men who worked with concentration camp labor, working them to death.

The dapper and aristocratic Von Braun was an SS man, hobnobbing with Heinrich Himmler, educating him about rocketry as Himmler promoted him to a major in the SS, with von Braun wearing his slick SS uniform.[\[273\]](#) Von Braun was an accomplished liar long before he became famous, and was an accomplished showman.[\[274\]](#) More than 20,000 concentration camp inmates died at the V-2 rocket works, being worked to death. They were not just Jews dying at the Dora and Nordhausen concentration camps, but expendable technically-oriented people, and a substantial number of them were Allied prisoners of war. More than 700 French political prisoners died there. Sadistic SS personnel ran the Dora camp, and even by concentration camp standards Dora was exceedingly bloodthirsty, with daily executions by hanging, machine gunning and torture. There were even turf wars over who could beat the inmates. The civilians who worked at the rocket works would beat the prisoners for fun, and after the doctor at Dora complained about it, the SS formally notified Arthur Rudolf that his people were not to beat the prisoners; only SS personnel could.[\[275\]](#)

Count Von Braun regularly visited the subterranean facility at Dora. According to one of the surviving inmates, there was an ever-growing pile of bodies that lay next to the infirmary, where the executed and tortured were thrown. Von Braun walked so close to the pile of bodies as he performed his duties that he could have practically reached out and touched it.[\[276\]](#) Even the inmates would stare at the pile in horror. Von Braun would stroll past it, seemingly unaffected. Desperately in need of prisoners with technical skills, von Braun personally handpicked inmates from the nearby Buchenwald camp to become slaves at the rocket works.[\[277\]](#)

Hitler was skeptical for years about the military potential of rockets, especially when most tests ended in failure, and spectacularly so. When they finally got a rocket to fly as it should, von Braun took that footage, combined cartoon footage with it, and produced a movie extravaganza that bowled Hitler over in 1943. According to the author of *The Nazi Rocketeers*, "Fritz Lang could not have done it better."[\[278\]](#) Hitler then gave massive support for the rocket program, to develop a weapon of "annihilation." At Dornberger's request, Hitler then bestowed a professorship on von Braun, and Hitler compared him to Alexander the Great and Napoleon.

Werner von Braun and friends were no different than all the other Nazis who tried escaping post-war retribution. For von Braun, Gehlen and gang, they sold themselves to the Americans as being useful, and instead of swinging from a noose at Nuremberg, they became American

heroes, living *very comfortably* in the United States. Those rocket scientists became key figures in the [U.S. space program](#), as did the German scientists who came under Soviet control.

The space program was the least of it. The Gehlen organization was hired nearly wholesale by America, and the Gehlen group became almost the sole source of American information about the Soviet Union for years, and that situation nearly led to World War III, as the Nazis continually lied about Soviet military capacity and intentions, and our government eagerly believed what it was told, because it wanted to believe it. It is one of the darkest chapters in American foreign policy: hiring Nazis to tell us what Soviet intentions were. The Gehlen organization greatly contributed to the arms race and Cold War, exaggerating Soviet capability and intent. The Soviet Union was not planning on invading Western Europe. They were trying to recover from a generation of bloodshed that cost forty million lives or so.[\[279\]](#) Hiring the Nazis undoubtedly helped lead to the CIA's evil policies and other U.S. security organizations, with Nazi-inspired [programs such as M-K-Ultra](#). Also, the Allies (America particularly) quickly re-armed Japanese soldiers captured in Asia, and set them to work as colonial thugs to try bringing Vietnam and China back into European/American control.[\[280\]](#)

The Aftermath in Europe

As the dust was clearing in Europe, millions of German soldiers came under Allied control. Germany had been on the losing end of two World Wars in less than a thirty-year span, and the Allies were going to make sure that they could not wage war again. France, Britain, the Soviet Union and the United States carved Germany up into spheres of influence, including the capital city of Berlin. [Henry Morgenthau](#), a Jew who ran the U.S. Treasury, developed what became known as the Morgenthau Plan, which was plainly stated in his 1945 book *Germany is our Problem*. Morgenthau proposed to de-industrialize Germany and turn it into a land of pastoral farmers. Morgenthau's plan was made a public issue in October of 1944, and the Republicans publicized Morgenthau's plan to try gaining political points on the eve of the presidential election. The Nazis used the disclosure for propaganda to its people, which probably contributed to them fighting to the bitter end in Berlin. In November of 1944, [Bill Donovan](#) wrote,

"The horrible prospects of exile to Siberia, eternal slavery, de-industrialization, breakup of Germany and even sterilization, have been carefully portrayed to the Germans by their Nazi leaders. It is considered that the German spirit of resistance has been bolstered greatly by fear of the consequence of unconditional surrender."[\[281\]](#)

Their fears were not so farfetched. All Allies extracted a measure of vengeance on the Germans, similar to the aftermath of World War I, except far more extreme. The Soviet Union nearly eliminated Germany's industrial capacity in its sphere of influence, dismantling Germany's factories and shipping them to Russia to be rebuilt. France performed similarly. France and Britain turned their German POWs into slave laborers, Britain keeping theirs until 1948. The Soviet Union brutally expelled several million Germans who lived in Eastern Europe. German POWs in Soviet hands died in vast numbers. As the Soviet Army fought its way to Berlin, the Soviet soldiers raped every German woman they could get their hands on, while often forcing their husbands to watch, and other delights.[\[282\]](#)

Roosevelt held an opinion wholly at variance with the scholarship of [William Rubinstein](#) and others. In the summer of 1944, Roosevelt wrote,

"Too many people here and in England hold the view that the German people as a whole are not responsible for what has taken place - that only a few Nazi leaders are responsible. That unfortunately is not based on fact. The German people as a whole must have it driven home to them that the whole nation has been engaged in a lawless conspiracy against the decencies of modern civilization."[\[283\]](#)

Roosevelt died before the war's end, Morgenthau's influence waned under Truman, and in April 1945, the Joint Chiefs of Staff issued JCS 1067, which was supposed to guide the denazification of Germany after the war ended. It attempted to lay an American capitalistic framework on the post-war German economy, but one that was demilitarized. How JCS 1067 was implemented, however, demonstrated how similar Nazis and Americans were. The denazification of German industry was well underway before the Americans began imposing their rule on Germany. Unfortunately for American plans, those denazifying Germany were anti-fascists. The anti-Nazis were generally left wing, labor-based groups, the same kind that formed labor unions in America and were derisively labeled "communist." In the end, United States rule suppressed that democratic movement and installed in prominent positions many of the same people who abetted Hitler's rise to power. Allen Dulles was buddies with many of the pro-Nazi industrialists, and whitewashed their bloodstained records and helped reinstall them high in German industry and banking, such as Karl Blessing.[\[284\]](#) Dulles also hired the Nazis to [staff the CIA's intelligence network in Eastern Europe](#), while protecting people such as Karl Wolff, the highest-ranking SS officer to survive the war, and who was a principal sponsor of the Treblinka extermination camp. Dulles had no problem with Nazis, as long as they were

"his" Nazis.

James Bacque, a Canadian, published *Other Losses* in 1989. Bacque made the case that after the European war ended, about one million German soldiers died in the Allied prison camps. Bacque claimed that Allied leaders largely induced the deaths of those German soldiers, intentionally. Bacque took particular aim at Dwight Eisenhower, who came to hate the Germans as he witnessed the destruction of Europe and the opening of the death camps. Bacque's most ardent critic has been Stephen Ambrose, Eisenhower's biographer and the director of the Eisenhower Center at the University of New Orleans. Ambrose, although he initially hailed Bacque's work, later denounced it and edited a book to rebut Bacque's thesis in *Eisenhower and the German POWs, Facts against Falsehood* in 1992. Bacque's research and arithmetic is questionable, although Ambrose is the epitome of an establishment historian. Bacque responded with *Crimes and Mercies* in 1997, digging into the newly available Soviet archives to further bolster his case. Bacque also made the case that up to ten million Germans died under Allied occupation between 1945 and 1950, largely from starvation.

Regarding the Bacque and Ambrose imbroglio, Michael Adams wrote,

"The truth is probably somewhere in the middle...One wrote, 'I witnessed the atrocities that Stephen E. Ambrose tried to deny or gloss over'...As another American guard admitted, 'we sometimes slipped over the boundary of civilized behavior and resembled what we were fighting against.'" [\[285\]](#)

Zora Neale Hurston wrote after World War II,

"I am amazed at the complacency of the Negro press and public. Truman is a monster. I can think of him as nothing else but the Butcher of Asia. Of his grin of triumph on giving the order to drop the Atom bombs on Japan. Of maintaining troops in China who are shooting the starving Chinese for stealing a handful of food." [\[286\]](#)

When establishment historians defend American soldiers and others, as if we are saints in our foreign policy, our noble boys going abroad to "defend freedom" and "fight for our country," [I am reminded of the experiences told me by Vietnam veterans](#), both first hand and [second](#)

[hand](#). The viciousness that [Eugene Sledge](#) recounted in his memoirs is typical in World War II accounts. Paul Fussell wrote how his men shot a group of twenty German soldiers, huddling in a crater, "most in tears of terror or despair" as the Americans came upon them. For no reason at all, the Americans opened fire on the surrendering and quite helpless Germans. Fussell called it the Great Turkey Shoot, writing,

"Laughing and howling, hoo-ha-ing and cowboy and good-old-boy yelling, our men exultantly shot into the crater until every single man down there was dead. A few tried to scale the sides, but there was no escape. If a body twitched or moved at all, it was shot again. The result was deep satisfaction, and the event was transformed into amusing narrative, told and retold over campfires all that winter. If it made you sick, you were not supposed to indicate. I was beginning to understand what a marine sergeant told Philip Caputo during the Vietnam War: 'Before you leave here, Sir, you're going to find out that one of the most brutal things in the world is your [average nineteen-year-old American boy](#).'"[287]

Noam Chomsky admitted that the facts surrounding Bacque's thesis are debatable, but,

"On the other hand, there are things about which there's no controversy. Ed Herman and I wrote about them back in the late 1970s. Basically, the Americans ran what were called "re-education camps" for German POWs (the name was ultimately changed to something equally Orwellian). These camps were hailed as a tremendous example of our humanitarianism, because we were teaching the prisoners democratic ways (in other words, we were indoctrinating them into accepting our beliefs).

"The prisoners were treated very brutally, starved, etc. Since these camps were in gross violation of international conventions, they were kept secret. We were afraid that the Germans might retaliate and treat American prisoners the same way.

"Furthermore, the camps continued after the war; I forget for how long, but I think the US kept German POWs until mid-1946. They were used for forced labor, beaten and killed. It was even worse in England. They kept their German POWs until mid-1948. It was all totally illegal.

"Finally, there was public reaction in Britain. The person who started it off was Peggy Duff, a marvelous woman who died a couple of years ago. She was later one of the leading figures in the CND (the Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament) and the international peace movement during the 1960s and 1970s, but she started off her career with a protest against the treatment

of German POWs.

"Incidentally, why only German POWs? What about the Italians? Germany's a very efficient country, so they've published volumes of documents on what happened to their POWs. But Italy's sort of laid back, so there was no research on their POWs. We don't know anything about them, although they were surely treated much worse.

"When I was a kid, there was a POW camp right next to my high school. There were conflicts among the students over the issue of taunting the prisoners. The students couldn't physically attack the prisoners, because they were behind a barrier, but they threw things at them and taunted them. There were a group of us who thought this was horrifying and objected to it, but there weren't many."[\[288\]](#)

Chomsky has stated that the first chapter in an honest history of the aftermath of World War II would be about how food was used as a political weapon. It is true that many Americans were in favor of feeding and helping out the people of Europe (much less so for those hated, non-white Japs), and the generous spirit of the average American is to be commended in that instance, yet their politicians all-too-often used the Marshall Plan and other help for political leverage.

The aftermath of World War II was in some ways a turning point for humanity: the next World War would extinguish humanity. Another total war would mean the total extermination of the human race. The United States had the early lead in atomic weapon development, but the Soviet Union, Britain, Canada and France were not far behind. The next war would annihilate the species, taking the planet with it. That sobering realization hit all parties. Probably the only thing that kept another World War from happening was that the concept of MAD, Mutually Assured Destruction, was understood.

Nevertheless, the people who run America's military establishment had the idea they could win a nuclear war. John Foster Dulles, Eisenhower's Secretary of State, had a concept of diplomacy that gave rise to *Dr. Strangelove* and other works of art. Dulles threatened the Soviet Union with nuclear attack as his style of diplomacy. Dulles' style became known as "brinksmanship."

In 1949, the Soviet Union exploded its first nuclear weapon, and the two powers began an arms race that saw them build enough nuclear weapons to incinerate earth's entire surface many times over. Also In 1949, the United States had a plan to attack the Soviet Union with atomic weapons. The plan was to deliver about seventy nuclear weapons onto the Soviet Union over a thirty-day period, which would destroy about 40% of the Soviet Union's industrial capacity. The Joint Chiefs of Staff realized, however, that dropping seventy nuclear bombs

onto the Soviet Union would not be enough to assure victory. They realized that they would also need ground troops, and the members of the infamous Bloodstone program (staffed with Nazis and Nazi-collaborators that the United States hired after World War II was over) would engage in completing the American victory over the Soviet Union. The Bloodstone mercenaries were to be flown to the glowing ruins of the Soviet Union to complete the job. A major aspect of the plan was to foment an uprising of the Soviet people against the Stalin regime. Christopher Simpson wrote,

"The thirty day atomic assault, the Pentagon concluded with considerable understatement, 'might stimulate resentment against the United States' among the people of the USSR, thus increasing their will to fight."[\[289\]](#)

In November of 1997, Bill Clinton issued a Presidential Decision Directive that authorized the U. S. military's use of nuclear weapons on nations that may have weapons of "mass destruction."[\[290\]](#)

The Third World War and the Modern War Racket

Cooler heads prevailed regarding those [Stangelovian plans of 1949](#). It soon became evident that such events would bring the annihilation of the human species, and the few survivors might wish they were dead. It became evident that the imperial nations could no longer wage open war against each other. So, logically, America reverted to neocolonial warfare against the world's colored people, hence Korea, [Vietnam](#), [Iraq](#), [Panama](#), etc. [Since World War II](#), American has always picked on nations that could not fight back, and no atomic weapons they could retaliate with. American war planners considered dropping atomic bombs on Vietnam, and [Cal Thomas](#) and friends openly argued for dropping atomic bombs on Iraq during the Gulf War Turkey Shoot. In the name of making sure that Iraq never acquires the kinds of weapons that we have, America has killed [more than one million Iraqi citizens since 1991](#), about half of them children.

Astute commentators from across America's political spectrum call the U.S. war against the world's poor the [Third World War](#). When the lies and rhetoric are stripped away, it is obviously a continuation, with slight variation, of the age-old imperial game, with the U.S. elbowing the other imperial players out of the way. With the collapse of its empire after World War II, Great Britain has been a relatively impoverished nation, and has been trying to ride the U.S.' coattails

since the Cold War ended, helping out with [bludgeoning Iraq](#) and carrying the U.S.' bags during its "[war on terror](#)."

Cold War rhetoric and disinformation largely obscured the colonial aspect of the postwar years, at least from the American people. During the Cold War, the more fortunate Third World nations, generally those who had something the West coveted and had relative cultural sophistication, were able to play the capitalist and communist powers off against each other, to a degree. However, when the Berlin Wall fell, marking the end of the Soviet Empire, America quickly showed the world what the global dynamics really were; [America invaded Panama](#) a couple of weeks after the Berlin Wall fell, concocting rationales so transparently ridiculous they should have been considered jokes, except that the American invasion killed thousands of Panamanian civilians. With the Soviet Union out of the picture, the U.S. quickly found an excuse to establish a military presence in the oil-rich Middle East, something it largely could not do before. The United States may well have [baited Iraq into invading Kuwait](#). If not, Iraq's invasion of Kuwait was a convenient excuse for America to flex its muscles in the Middle East, and its ongoing genocide in Iraq and military presence in Saudi Arabia were possibly the [two largest factors](#) behind the [World Trade Center](#) attacks of 2001. Saudi Arabia contains the holiest sites of Islam, and Osama bin Laden was particularly dismayed when Arabia's rulers allowed a U.S. military presence there. As I am writing this, the United States is once again preparing to [invade the Middle East](#), allegedly to remove Saddam Hussein from power, and Saudi Arabia has made it clear that it will not allow the United States to use its nation as a staging ground, as it did in 1990-1991. [\[291\]](#)

The United States has been throwing around its weight since the Cold War ended with predictable impunity (the U.S. is called a "hyper-power" in France), and just as predictable were the [World Trade Center and Pentagon attacks of 2001](#): the global Godzilla finally got punched in the nose. Just as the "[war on drugs](#)," "[war on cancer](#)," "war on communism" and other phony wars, the "War on Terror" is the new rubric under which the world's people have been subjected. In [Colombia](#), many thousands of peasants were slaughtered as part of the war on communism, those peasants being called Soviet pawns. When the Soviet Union collapsed, the same groups of people (Colombian government military and paramilitary) killed the same peasants, but then the killings were part of the "war on drugs." During the summer of 2002, Bill Clinton called the government military effort in Colombia part of the war on terror. How can anybody take the rhetoric seriously, with the same peasants being communists one day, drug growers and dealers the next, and now terrorists? When one phony term wears out, our "leaders" just make up another.

Numerous foreign relations scandals hatched during the past generation, the most notorious being the Iran-Contra Scandal. Although the U.S. government did its best to cover-up what happened, enough came into the open to see how the game was played. The U.S. was selling arms to Iran and the Contras, and airplanes were flying to the Nicaraguan Contras with arms,

and flying back with drugs, drug sales being a [longtime favorite method to finance covert action](#).^[292] The Iran-Contra Scandal was directly related to the [Savings and Loan Scandal](#), as the CIA used savings and loan institutions to launder drug money. The Iran-Contra Scandal was an embarrassment, with government officials dragged onto the witness stand, with document-shredding parties coming into the open and other activities. Accordingly, U.S. covert action has been getting more privatized ever since, especially since the Cold War ended.^[293] The U.S. began [privatizing covert action](#) after the 1953 overthrow of the Iranian government. If private individuals and organizations do the dirty work, instead of operating out of the White House as Oliver North did, the likelihood of government officials being subpoenaed and airing out the government's dirty laundry is minimized. The privatization effort is a new tactic to avoid public accountability and create more plausible denial, which naturally further shreds the U.S. Constitution, with U.S. wars being planned and carried out by mercenaries and those who employ them.

The racketeering aspect of warfare has been long with us. [Smedley Butler](#) wrote [War is a Racket](#) before World War II and the rise of today's military-industrial complex. Dwight Eisenhower stated,

"People in the long run are going to do more to promote peace than our government...One of these days government had better get out of their way and let them have it."

and

"...Every gun that is made, every warship launched, every rocket fired, signifies in the final sense a theft from those who hunger and are not fed, those who are cold and are not clothed."

Being a U.S. arms manufacturer is one of the world's most lucrative deals, and [they can be quite ruthless](#). After World War II, the lucrative aspect of the military-industrial complex, which Eisenhower warned against when he left office as president, became big business.

America's national debt is mainly due to the war industry, a national debt that is measured in trillions of dollars. It is well known that trying to keep up with America in the arms race, a race that the U.S. always instigated, not the Soviets, largely bankrupted the Soviet Empire. It was

even admitted by Reagan and his [policy-makers](#). Trillions of dollars went into arming both sides to the teeth, and the only winners were the arms manufacturers and the imperial exploiters. Today, the United States is the leading international arms dealer, and has been so for many years. America's "foreign aid" is generally in arms sales. Far more money is spent on arms internationally (about twenty times as much.) than is spent on [helping the poor and hungry](#). Other side effects are the widespread environmental devastation that the war industry inflicts on the world, even when they are not fighting wars.[\[294\]](#) The war industry is probably the most costly and unnecessary undertaking on earth today, especially if [World War III](#) exterminates the human species.

The "defense" industry in the United States has raked in trillions of dollars during the past fifty years (one authoritative estimate puts it at nearly twenty trillion dollars[\[295\]](#)). When the Cold War ended, there literally were no more enemies worth worrying about. Once the "Soviet Menace" evaporated, the defense establishment searched high and low to find enemies to keep justifying the pork barrel. Muammar Qaddafi, Manuel Noriega, Saddam Hussein, drug dealers, Castro, etc., had to be magically transformed into malevolent demons that threatened America's very existence. America has the biggest killing machine the world has ever seen, and no military rivals. The [Gulf War](#) and pounding [Yugoslavia](#) were excuses to test weapons and increase America's hegemony. The war racket is related to the government racket. [Ronald Reagan](#) told tall tales about welfare mothers driving Cadillacs, while he threw mentally ill people onto the streets. There is a small book that summarizes all the ways that the American public is bilked to buy Cadillacs *for the rich*, not the welfare mothers.[\[296\]](#)

The [Savings and Loan Scandal](#) lined the pockets of the rich to the tune of hundreds of billions of dollars at the taxpayer's expense. It was a scandal that my CPA profession actively abetted, taking in its huge audit fees for signing off on fictitious financial statements. The authors of *Take the Rich off Welfare* summarize the many ways that the rich get handouts from the American government, such as: social security tax inequities, accelerated depreciation, capital gains deductions, homeowner's tax breaks, agribusiness subsidies, aviation subsidies, insurance loopholes, tax free bonds, timber subsidies, oil and gas tax breaks, nuclear subsidies, etc. They are laws that primarily benefit the wealthy. The rationale is that they are subsidies that benefit the economic producers, giving them incentives or help to make the economy more productive. The [media](#), being owned by those corporate welfare recipients, rarely highlights the real welfare. When I was a [tax accountant](#), I saw the scam in action. Politicians write laws that benefit their constituencies, which are the rich people who bankroll their campaigns and basically own them. The accounting in *Take the Rich off Welfare* is conservative, as the authors add up all the boondoggles that rip off the American taxpayer to benefit the rich. The biggest single category of rip off is what the authors call "military waste and fraud." The waste and fraud are for weapons systems that nobody in the military wants, but billions are still spent for them, and other outrages. The authors summarized some of the defense contractors' pricing schemes:

1. A nut that can be bought at a hardware store for a few cents that McDonnell Douglas charged \$2,043 for;
2. A pair of pliers that Boeing tried charging \$2,548 for, but the Air Force *slashed* the price to \$748;
3. The famous toilet seat that Lockheed charged "only" \$640 for;
4. A \$240 flashlight from Grimes Manufacturing;
5. The authors' favorite was a plastic cap that goes over the end of a stool leg, that Boeing charged \$1,118 each for. [\[297\]](#)

That barely scratches the surface of the waste and fraud that is a daily part of America's military-industrial establishment. Billions of dollars in military equipment simply "disappears" every year. There are many weapons systems that cannot be justified by the most fervent imagination, especially with the Soviet Empire gone, but America keeps upgrading nuclear missiles, transport planes, jet fighters, submarines and the like to the tune of tens of billions of dollars. Some items, such as the Seawolf submarine, the Navy itself says that it does not need or want it, but they are getting one for a few billion dollars. There is the Black Budget, the totally unaccountable budget of about \$30 billion a year to fund the NSA and other spook agencies. If Americans found out [what really happened in the spook world](#), it would curl their hair. I have had friends who worked in that world, and it can be sickening and nearly beyond belief at times.

The authors of *Take the Rich off Welfare* conservatively calculate how much of the military expenditures are a complete waste of money, and arrive at \$172 billion a year. When they add up merely the major categories of welfare for the rich, their *conservative* calculation is that it costs America at least \$448 billion a year, money that lines the pockets of the rich for no perceived public benefit. That is partly how the rich get richer. The authors then calculate how much public money goes to serving the needs of the poor in America. The number is about \$130 billion. [\[298\]](#) In the end, the American government is a mechanism that makes the rich richer, taxes the middle class, and throws some crumbs to the poor who do the work.

I have professional friends who have [tried justifying](#) why poor Mexicans pick America's food and make its clothes, why poor Indonesians and Filipinos [staff luxury cruise ships](#) and make [America's tennis shoes](#), why black Americans work in the most wretched factories in the worst jobs, and the like, as if it was the natural order of things, with them at the top of the heap due to their unique virtue. Then they say that we are trying to help Indonesia by putting our shoe factories there, to get them "capital." They read the *Wall Street Journal* too much.

The war racket makes huge sums of money for certain people, while others die horrible deaths or live in unspeakable misery. There are persuasive arguments that the same interests arm both sides in the wars, not really caring much who wins, just as long as everybody "plays."^[299] The Soviet and [German war machines](#) in World War II were partly built, some say largely built, by American industrialists. Chomsky's *Year 501, the Conquest Continues*, looks at this 500-year period of European dominance of the world from another, non-conspiratorial, perspective. C. Wright Mills' *The Power Elite* looked at the post-war evolution of the power structure that runs America today, and Mills endured great grief for daring to publish his book.

There is another facet of the war racket, and perhaps the most important of all. Those behind the scenes, pulling the strings, [truly enjoy all the death and suffering that war creates](#). That may be their biggest payoff, watching all the death and suffering they manipulate into being, and it nourishes them, literally. Healing our hearts is the great task before us, and time is short.

Peace

Footnotes

^[1] See Orwell, *The Orwell Reader*, 1984 edition, p. 363.

^[2] I trained for the testing. My weak point in the testing regimen was pull-ups, so I did them daily and got up to twelve at a time, which would have been plenty to pass their standard. One test was throwing and another was jumping. I was a high jumper and long jumper in high school, and a javelin thrower and high jumper in college. The athletics testing would have been no barrier.

^[3] Fussell, *Doing Battle*, pp. 124-125.

^[4] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 87.

^[5] Fussell, *Doing Battle*, pp. 171-173.

^[6] Fussell, *Doing Battle*, pp. 143-144.

^[7] Fussell, *Doing Battle*, pp. 157-161.

^[8] Fussell, *Doing Battle*, p. 154.

^[9] See Robert Conquest's *The Great Terror*, pp. 484-489.

[10] See, for instance, Chomsky's *Year 501*, pp. 68-76.

[11] The National Insecurity Council, *It's a Conspiracy!*, pp. 66-67.

[12] See Simpson, *The Splendid Blond Beast*, pp. 60-63.

[13] See Simpson, *The Splendid Blond Beast*, p. 64.

[14] These are not controversial facts, being part of the U.S. government record. For some narratives regarding those early Bush days, see Russell Bowen's *Immaculate Deception*, pp. 1-12. See also Val Valerian's *Matrix III*, which contains *The Secret History of George Bush*, beginning on p. 563.

[15] See Simpson's *The Splendid Blond Beast*.

[16] See Simpson's *The Splendid Blond Beast*, pp. 290-310.

[17] According to Arnold Offner, see Zinn, *A People's History of the United States*, p. 400.

[18] See Blum's *Killing Hope*.

[19] See Schmidt, *Maverick Marine*, pp. 90-91.

[20] See Schmidt, *Maverick Marine*, pp. 38-57. For more excerpts from Butler's correspondence in those days, see General Smedley Darlington Butler, *The Letters of a Leatherneck, 1889-1931*, edited by Anne Cipriano Venzon.

[21] See Schmidt, *Maverick Marine*, pp. 208-211.

[22] See Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*, p. 40.

[23] See The National Insecurity Council, *It's a Conspiracy!*, p. 180.

[24] See Chomsky, *Deterring Democracy*, p. 41.

[25] See Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 156-175.

[26] See Jules Archer's *The Plot to Seize the White House*. See The National Insecurity Council, *It's a Conspiracy!*, pp. 179-184. See Vankin and Whelan, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of all Time*, pp. 233-238.

[27] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 145.

[28] See Herman, *Beyond Hypocrisy*, pp. 54-56.

[29] See Loewen, *Lies my Teacher Told Me*, p. 167 for a picture of a lynch mob proudly posing next to a burning black man. In the foreground of the crowd is a woman who appeared dressed for a night on the town. The reason for such bold and murderous lawlessness was that the killers knew that no white jury would ever convict them of murder, even with a picture of them proudly posing beside their prey. The recent book [*Without Sanctuary: Lynching Photography in America*](#), shows how common, even festive, American lynchings were, not so long ago. Loewen had a history book of his rejected partly because of that photo by the Mississippi State Textbook Board. During the 1864 Democratic campaign, in their songbook was a song sung to the tune of Yankee Doodle Dandy. The song was one of the favorites of that campaign year, a year when a war was going on to supposedly free the slaves. The song was titled "Nigger Doodle Dandy." Here is one verse: "Blubber lips are killing sweet, and kinky heads are splendid; and oh, it makes such bully feet to have the heels extended." Then the Chorus: "Nigger Doodle's all the go, Ebony shins and bandy, "loyal" people must all bow to Nigger Doodle Dandy." See Loewen, *Lies my Teacher Told Me*, p. 155. Loewen would ask his history classes to sing along with him, singing the words of those noble democrats. The people would be so shocked by the words that they sat in stupefied silence.

[30] See Simon, *The State of Humanity*, p. 183. See *The American Almanac*, 1996-1997, table 710.

[31] There is an excellent documentary about America and the Holocaust titled *America and the Holocaust: Deceit and Indifference*, which is part of the *American Experience* series. That woman's reminiscence and other facts I recite in this section come from that documentary. I also have used Leonard Dinnerstein's *Anti-Semitism in America*, Leni Yahil's *The Holocaust: The Fate of European Jewry*, Johnson's *A History of the Jews*, Chaliand and Rageau's *The Penguin Atlas of Diasporas*, Raul Hilberg's *Perpetrators, Victims, Bystanders*, David Wyman's *The Abandonment of the Jews*, Dawidowicz and Altshuler's *Hitler's War Against the Jews*, and other sources I will cite as I use them.

[32] Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 245.

[33] See Gibbons, *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, vol. 1, pp. 347-453. See Grant, *The Fall of the Roman Empire*, pp. 155-171 and 185-202. See Fogel, *Junípero Serra, the Vatican and Enslavement Theology*, pp. 4-9.

[34] See an iconoclastic survey of those early Christian days in Michael Parenti's *History as Mystery*, pp. 35-127.

[35] See Grant, *The Fall of the Roman Empire*, pp. 155-171.

[36] See, for instance, Ehrman, *The Orthodox Corruption of Scripture*. See Moore, *The Christian*

Conspiracy. See Fox, *The Unauthorized Version*. See Notovitch, *The Unknown Life of Jesus Christ*. See Kersten, *Jesus Lived in India*. See Pagels, *The Gnostic Gospels*.

[37] See Moore, *The Christian Conspiracy*, pp. 233-236.

[38] See Michael Parenti's *History as Mystery*, for his compelling arguments on that issue.

[39] See Notovitch, *The Unknown Life of Jesus Christ*. See also Kersten, *Jesus lived in India*.

[40] See Grant, *Gladiators*, p. 8.

[41] See Grant, *Gladiators*, p. 38.

[42] See Meltzer, *Slavery, A World History*, pp. 161-174.

[43] See a discussion of the pitifully few contemporary Roman writers who challenged that institution in Grant, *Gladiators*, pp. 116-122.

[44] See Grant, *Gladiators*, p. 113.

[45] See Grant, *Gladiators*, p. 123.

[46] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 175-176. See Riley-Smith, *The Crusades, A Short History*, pp. 16-20. See Armstrong, *Holy War, The Crusades and Their Impact on Today's World*, pp. 71-75. See Johnson, *A History of the Jews*, p. 217.

[47] See Chomsky's discussion of the "Sacralization of War" in his *Rogue States*, pp. 156-159.

[48] Johnson, *A History of the Jews*, pp. 209-210.

[49] Gibbons, *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, vol. 1, pp. 407-408.

[50] Burman, *The Inquisition, The Hammer of Heresy*, p. 16.

[51] See Peters, *Inquisition*, pp. 11-39.

[52] Some of my sources for the Cathars and the Crusade that Pope Innocent III directed against them are Oldenbourg, *Massacre at Montsegur: A History of the Albigensian Crusade*; Lea, *A History of the Inquisition of the Middle Ages*, vol. 1; Burman, *The Inquisition, The Hammer of Heresy*; Armstrong, *Holy War, The Crusades and Their Impact on Today's World*; Riley-Smith, *The Crusades, A Short*

History.

[53] See, for instance, Pagels, *The Origin of Satan*.

[54] Among my sources for the Manichees were: Rudolf, *Gnosis*; Moore, *The Christian Conspiracy*, Lane, *Pagans and Christians*, Richard Seddon, *Mani: His Life and Work - Transforming Evil*.

[55] See Seddon, *Mani: His Life and Work - Transforming Evil*, p. 42.

[56] See Burman, *The Inquisition, The Hammer of Heresy*, pp. 18-21.

[57] Armstrong, *Holy War*, pp. 396-397.

[58] See Johnson, *A History of the Jews*, pp. 172-174.

[59] Chaliand and Rageau's *The Penguin Atlas of Diasporas*, p. 30.

[60] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 107, footnote. The studies Churchill refers are the most respected estimates in today's scholarship.

[61] For a brief summary of the disaster of the sugar economy on the native lands and populations (and the imported slaves), see Eduardo Galeano's "King Sugar," in *Confronting Columbus*, pp. 76-82.

[62] See a rather informal but accurate discussion of those fur trade types in Terrell's *Land Grab*, pp. 117-178. For a broader summary of the fur trade's progress across North America, in its English, French, Russian and American aspects, see Wolf, *Europe and the People Without History*, chapter six, pp. 158-194.

[63] For a brief summary of what the white man's ways have done to the economy of South America, see Luis Guillermo Lumbreras' "Misguided Development" in *Confronting Columbus*, pp. 76-82.

[64] See Renner, Michael. "Ending Violent Conflict", *The State of the World*, 1999, p. 154.

[65] See Renner, Michael. "Ending Violent Conflict", *The State of the World*, 1999, p. 153.

[66] Chomsky can be seen talking to William F. Buckley on TV about that issue in the documentary *Manufacturing Consent: Noam Chomsky and the Media*. Chomsky was talking about the Vietnam War and the complicity of Americans who watch the tube, nod, and grab another beer, as contributing to such activity continuing.

[67] See Armitage, *Copernicus, The Founder of Modern Astronomy*, pp. 56-67.

[68] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 103-105.

[69] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 43.

[70] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 32.

[71] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 83.

[72] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 89.

[73] See Brian, *Einstein, A Life*, pp. 236-255.

[74] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 107.

[75] See the comparison in Charles Kelly's *The Great Limbaugh Con*.

[76] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 121.

[77] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 121.

[78] Yahil, *The Holocaust*, p. 118.

[79] Shirer, *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich, 30th Anniversary Edition*, pp. 829-830.

[80] Shirer, *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich, 30th Anniversary Edition*, pp. 948-949.

[81] Yahil, *The Holocaust*, pp. 602-603.

[82] Yahil, *The Holocaust*, pp. 596-600.

[83] For a good summary of that situation, see Adam LeBor's *Hitler's Secret Bankers, the Myth of Swiss Neutrality during the Holocaust*.

[84] See a broadside against Jewish manipulation of that Swiss banking situation, calling it a shakedown of the banks, in Norman Finkelstein's *The Holocaust Industry*.

[85] See LeBor, *Hitler's Secret Bankers, the Myth of Swiss Neutrality during the Holocaust*, pp. 136-

139.

[86] See Paul Johnson's *A History of the Jews*, pp. 470-517.

[87] See Browning's *Ordinary Men*, p. 189.

[88] See Browning's *Ordinary Men*, pp. 167-168.

[89] My source for this account is an article by Monica Moorehead, posted at the International Action Center's webs site, and her information was taken largely from "Death in a Promised Land - The Tulsa Race Riot of 1921" by Scott Ellsworth. (Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1982)

[90] See Chomsky's *Detering Democracy*, Blum's *Killing Hope* and Churchill and Vander Wall's *The COINTELPRO Papers*, for a good start.

[91] Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, pp. 84-85.

[92] Hilberg, *Perpetrators, Victims, Bystanders*, pp. 213-214.

[93] Cited in the documentary *America and the Holocaust*.

[94] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 151. Generally, American anti-Semitism is considered to have peaked in 1944.

[95] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, pp. 131-132.

[96] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 7.

[97] See Simpson, *The Splendid Blond Beast*, pp. 146-147. See historian David Wyman, who wrote *The Abandonment of the Jews*, which was the source for Simpson's work on that issue, talk about that incident and others in the documentary *America and the Holocaust*. See Wyman's *The Abandonment of the Jews*, pp. 79-103. See also Yahil, *The Holocaust*, pp. 608-609. See also Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, pp. 143-146.

[98] That photograph can be seen in the documentary *America and the Holocaust*.

[99] See Weinberg, *A World at Arms*, p. 894. See Michael Renner, "Ending Violent Conflict," *State of the World*, 1999, pp. 151-168.

[100] Werner Weinberg, "The Shame of Bergen-Belsen," first published in the *Journal of Reform*

Journalism and later in *Self-Portrait of a Holocaust Survivor*. The version I read is in the *Connecting Link*, issue 26, 1994, pp. 105-106, by Weinberg's daughter, Susanne Konicov, the *Connecting Link's* editor and publisher.

[101] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 132. It is generally considered that anti-Semitism peaked in America in 1944.

[102] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 147.

[103] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 147.

[104] See Johnson, *A History of the Jews*, p. 513.

[105] See Johnson, *A History of the Jews*, p. 513.

[106] See Johnson, *A History of the Jews*, pp. 423-448.

[107] See Zezima's *Saving Private Power*, pp. 70-72.

[108] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, pp. 150-174.

[109] For discussions of those and other practices, with a number of them surviving to the present day, read Ward Churchill's *Since Predator Came*, *Struggle for the Land*, and *A Little Matter of Genocide*. If you want to read about such current American practices from a white man, read Rex Weyler's *Blood of the Land*.

[110] See Churchill, *Since Predator Came*, p. 34.

[111] See *The American Almanac*, 1996-1997, table 118.

[112] See Simon, *The State of Humanity*, p. 183. See also the *American Almanac's* various tables. For a dramatic and unanswerable depiction of that income stagnation among blacks, see table 717. In 1970, black family income was 61% of white income. In 1994, it had *declined* to 60%. Not only that, 1994 was a "good year" for blacks as it reversed the trend that saw 1993 family income actually *lower* than 1970 family income, in constant dollars.

[113] In 1989, in constant dollars, native, black and Hispanic family incomes were all comparable, at about 60% of the white income, with the Hispanic population having a slight edge. A problem with "Hispanic" however, is that it is not a racial distinction as black and native are, and many in the Hispanic category are white people, such as the ruling classes of Latin America. If the "Hispanic" population was broken down into categories such as "primarily European descent" and "primarily

native descent," there would be two very distinct populations. Members of the white ruling class of Latin America are not to be found in the "Hispanics" who pick America's produce. I do not know if such data has even been collected, but it would evidence two distinct strata, with the "native Hispanics" having a lower income level than the "average" Hispanic. My wife is Hispanic, but is about the furthest thing that one can imagine from a bean picker. Her family hails from Spain, and has lived in New Mexico for centuries with land "granted" to them from the Spanish Crown. They are ruling class Hispanics who own vast ranches, not those who pick our beans. The native tribes show great variation in income levels. The "civilized" Cherokee and Iroquois tribes do very "well," at around 60% of white income. Other tribes that have resisted assimilation and are more confined to their reservations, such as the Sioux and Navajo, have income levels as low as 30% of white income. They are also the natives with such low life expectancies. See *The American Almanac*, 1996-1997, table 52.

[114] Still, America's literati were not always happy with Costner's far more honest depiction of native life before the white man, and they engaged in attacks on the movie. See Churchill's *Indians are Us?*, pp. 115-137.

[115] See Ward Churchill's *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 363-398.

[116] As Chomsky, [Herman](#) and others make quite plain, "national interest" is a code word for "corporate interest." America does not send troops to defend and promote democracy, but to defend its grip on cheap labor and resources, to keep the chips flowing the corporate way, and their customers'. Yet, the customer benefit is in some ways an unintended byproduct. The Holy Grail of corporations is profits, not a well-served public, which is the whole point of my [racketeering for fun and profit](#) thrust.

[117] I have discovered a "myth-debunking" stance, which seems more like establishment apologetics, in several areas during my research for this site, including the Inquisition, the career of George Custer, health and medicine.

[118] See, for instance, Verne Newton's *FDR and the Holocaust*. Just as all the responsibility for the Jewish Holocaust should not be heaped on Hitler's shoulders, FDR should not be held mainly accountable for the United States' reaction while the Jewish Holocaust was coming and being carried out. In both instances, proponents of the "culpability" theory subscribe to the "Great Man" view of history.

[119] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 33.

[120] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, tables 5, 6 and 7 on page 49.

[121] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 133.

[122] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 20.

[123] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 18, table 1.

[124] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 39.

[125] See Lipstadt, *Beyond Belief*, pp. 112-114.

[126] See Dinnerstein, *Anti-Semitism in America*, p. 143. See also the excellent documentary *America and the Holocaust, Deceit and Indifference*, made for PBS by the *American Experience* series.

[127] Yahil, *The Holocaust*, p. 119.

[128] See Lipstadt, *Beyond Belief*, p. 117.

[129] Hilberg, *Perpetrators, Victims, Bystanders*, p. 257.

[130] See Thomas and Morgan-Witts, *Voyage of the Damned*, p. 183.

[131] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 228.

[132] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, pp. 4, 134-141.

[133] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, pp. 7-8.

[134] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, p. 9.

[135] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, p. 10.

[136] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, p. 10.

[137] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, p. 13.

[138] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, pp. 19-20.

[139] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, p. 25.

[140] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, pp. 57-58.

[141] See Bard, *Forgotten Victims*, p. 67.

[142] *Forgotten Victims* has photographs of those surviving American soldiers, who look just like the Jews who were liberated from the death camps.

[143] Regarding that situation and others like it, see Dinnerstein's *Anti-Semitism in America*, chapters 6 and 7.

[144] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 158.

[145] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, pp. 158-164.

[146] James H. Kitchens III, "The Bombing of Auschwitz Reexamined," Originally in *The Journal of Military History* (April 1994), pp. 233-66. Reproduced in Newton's *FDR and the Holocaust*, pp. 183-217. Levy's argument is reproduced in *FDR and the Holocaust*, pp. 219-272.

[147] Stuart G. Erdheim, "Could the Allies Have Bombed Auschwitz-Birkenau?" *Holocaust and Genocide Studies*, (Fall 1997), pp. 129-170.

[148] See Herzstein, "Is It Time to Stop Asking Why the West Failed to Save More Jews?" *Holocaust and Genocide Studies*, Fall 1998, p. 335.

[149] See Rubinstein, *The Myth of Rescue*, p. 216.

[150] For instance, Howard Zinn makes a compelling case for the head-on-a-platter aspect of the Watergate scandal, where Nixon and his cronies were publicly crucified, while the system that created the Nixons were left intact and not questioned. See Zinn, *A People's History of the United States*, pp. 529-569.

[151] See Herzstein, "Is It Time to Stop Asking Why the West Failed to Save More Jews?" *Holocaust and Genocide Studies*, Fall 1998, pp. 326-338.

[152] Hilberg, *Perpetrators, Victims, Bystanders*, p. 249.

[153] See Aly, *Final Solution*, pp. 195-197.

[154] For instance, see the map and numbers presented in Altshuler and Dawidowicz's *Hitler's War Against the Jews*, immediately after the book's introduction, for typical estimates of the fate of European Jews, which are faithful to the historical evidence. See the table on p. 197 of Götz Aly's *Final Solution*, for a detail of Jews that came under Nazi control leading up to the Final Solution, which tabulated more than eleven million Jews subject to the Final Solution, as compared to Harwood's three million.

[155] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 19.

[156] See, for instance, Norman Finkelstein's *The Holocaust Industry*, pp. 81-83.

[157] On Holocaust Denial, among my sources are Andrew Carter's *The Facts - and the Myths - about the Holocaust*, Richard Harwood's *Did Six Million Really Die?*, Kenneth Stern's *Holocaust Denial*, and Deborah Lipstadt's *Denying the Holocaust*. Also, there is plenty of material on the Internet devoted to the issues both pro and con, such as transcripts from the Canadian trials of Ernest Zündel, a Holocaust denier.

[158] See Lipstadt, *Denying the Holocaust*, pp. 209-222.

[159] See Finkelstein's *The Holocaust Industry*, which Raul Hilberg says is "going in the right direction."

[160] Gypsies prefer to call themselves the Romani and Sinti people. I use "Gypsy" in this narrative for the sake of convention. Like it or not, people have become known as "white, Indian, Gypsy, Jew" and other names, names that they may not always like hearing. I have tried using names for those groups that are not offensive but are also generally recognized.

[161] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 36-53.

[162] For instance, see Gérard Chaliand and Jean-Pierre Rageau's *The Penguin Atlas of the Diasporas*, p. 109, for a summary of the world estimate of the Gypsy population, which ranges between eight and fifteen million people.

[163] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 48-49.

[164] See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 42.

[165] Ward Churchill makes the very compelling case for that opinion in his *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 19-62.

[166] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, p. 1.

[167] See Stern, *Holocaust Denial*, p. 94.

[168] See Stern *Holocaust Denial*, pp. 53-54 and notes 125 and 126, on pp. 172-172. What Chomsky has *always* done regarding the Cambodian genocide is to [demonstrate the hypocrisy regarding how the American media handled it](#). Chomsky compared it to the mass slaughters in Indonesia and East Timor, for instance. The Cambodian genocide was partly an American media fabrication, and the first major killings in Cambodia the United States performed (at least a half million killed), a fact

unmentioned in the drumbeat of "genocide" that dominated the American press. When it later turned out that Pol Pot's "nationalistic" project was indeed genocidal, the U.S. press was accidentally correct. See Chomsky and Herman, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism*, pp. 19-22. See Chomsky and Herman, *After the Cataclysm*, pp. 135-294. See Chomsky, *The Chomsky Reader*, pp. 289-297. See Herman and Chomsky, *Manufacturing Consent*, pp. 260-296. Regarding the Faurisson affair, see the documentary *Manufacturing Consent*. See also Rai, *Chomsky's Politics*, pp. 131-132, 201-202.

[169] See Stern, *Holocaust Denial*, p. 55.

[170] To be fair, some in the American press covered for Stalin at the height of his genocidal purges, such as Walter Duranty of the *New York Times*. See Taylor, *Stalin's Apologist*.

[171] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 42.

[172] See Zezima's Saving Private Power, pp. 79-86. See Vankin and Whalen, *50 Greatest Conspiracies of All Time*, pp. 259-262. See The National Insecurity Council, *It's a Conspiracy!*, pp. 9-13.

[173] See photos of these activities in Iris Chang's *The Rape of Nanking*, in the glossy photo section.

[174] For numerous accounts of those types of activities, see Iris Chang's *The Rape of Nanking*.

[175] Quoted in Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 252.

[176] See Stannard, *American Holocaust*, pp. 252-253, where the Vietnamese people are likened to termites in the prose of the famous General William Westmoreland.

[177] See Miller, *Custer's Fall*, p. 32.

[178] See Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. xi.

[179] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 34.

[180] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 63.

[181] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 64.

[182] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 91.

[183] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 100.

[184] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 109.

[185] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 120.

[186] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, pp. 123-124.

[187] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, pp. 152-153.

[188] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 148.

[189] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 125.

[190] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 147.

[191] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 146.

[192] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 147.

[193] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 156.

[194] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 156.

[195] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 164.

[196] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 170.

[197] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 206.

[198] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 235.

[199] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 244.

[200] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 253.

[201] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, pp. 258-259.

[202] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 260.

[203] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 267.

[204] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, pp. 269-271.

[205] Sledge, *With the Old Breed at Peleliu and Okinawa*, p. 278.

[206] Imperial rhetoric can always be counted on to frame events such as the Boxer uprising as a “rebellion,” “mutiny,” and the like, as with [Pontiac's "Rebellion"](#), the Sepoy “Mutiny,” etc., as if loyal subjects irrationally rebelled against their natural masters.

[207] See Chang, *The Rape of Nanking*, pp. 106-107, 144-149.

[208] See Blum, *Killing Hope*, chapters 2 and 3.

[209] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, p. 88.

[210] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, p. 88.

[211] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, pp. 89-90.

[212] See Chomsky, *Class Warfare*, pp. 60-61. See Zinn *Declarations of Independence*, pp. 94-95.

[213] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, pp. 96-97.

[214] See Blum's *Killing Hope* and *Rogue State*, for instance.

[215] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, p. 98.

[216] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, p. 104.

[217] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, p. 100.

[218] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 562-565.

[219] See Fussell, *Wartime*, pp. 284-285.

[220] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 73.

[221] See Lifton and Mitchell, *Hiroshima and America*, pp. 211-222.

[222] See Rhodes, *The Making of the Atomic Bomb*, p. 743.

[223] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 266-275.

[224] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 415.

[225] Posted to Internet on October 1, 1996. Kai Bird is the author of *The Chairman: John J. McCloy, The Making of the American Establishment*, co-edited by Lawrence Lifschultz, the first comprehensive biography of McCloy. Bird is a contributing editor to *The Nation*, one of the leading left wing periodicals. Also, Bird is the co-author of *Hiroshima's Shadow: Writings on the Denial of History and the Smithsonian Controversy*, also co-edited by Lifschultz.

[226] See Kennedy, *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers*, p. 150.

[227] See Kennedy, *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers*, p. 200.

[228] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 30.

[229] See Chang, *The Rape of Nanking*, p. 32.

[230] See Chang, *The Rape of Nanking*, pp. 199-214, especially pp. 213-214.

[231] See Rhodes, *The Making of the Atomic Bomb*, p. 744. See Wyden, *Day One*, pp. 296-307.

[232] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 17-46.

[233] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 5-6.

[234] See Schwartz, *The Creative Moment*, p. 78.

[235] See Rhodes, *The Making of the Atomic Bomb*, p. 496.

[236] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 458-471, especially p. 467.

[237] See Wyden, *Day One*. See the map on the book cover, of the hardback version, and read the descriptions of what it was like for the few survivors near ground zero. For Truman's many lies over the years regarding the American lives that would have been saved, see Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 515-530.

[238] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 524.

[239] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 524.

[240] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 528.

[241] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 9, 54, 163-166, 186-190, 440-463.

[242] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 601.

[243] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 637.

[244] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 637.

[245] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 638.

[246] See Lifton and Mitchell, *Hiroshima in America, Fifty Years of Denial*, pp. 265-270.

[247] See Lifton and Mitchell, *Hiroshima in America, Fifty Years of Denial*, pp. 270-273.

[248] "Ike on Ike," *Newsweek*, 11/11/63, pg. 107.

[249] Leahy, *I Was There*, p. 441.

[250] Hoover quoted in Richard Norton Smith, *An Uncommon Man: The Triumph of Herbert Hoover*, pg. 347.

[251] Hoover quoted in Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pg. 635.

[252] William Manchester, *American Caesar: Douglas MacArthur 1880-1964*, pg. 512.

[253] Norman Cousins, *The Pathology of Power*, p. 65, 70-71.

[254] *Memorandum on the Use of S-1 Bomb*, Manhattan Engineer District Records, Harrison-Bundy files, folder # 77, National Archives (also contained in: Martin Sherwin, *A World Destroyed*, 1987 edition, pg. 307-308).

[255] Albert Einstein, in a conversation with Linus Pauling, in Ronald Clark, *Einstein: The Life and*

Times, p. 672. Many thanks for Doug Long's web site, where I found these quotes summarized.

[256] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 638.

[257] See Lifton and Mitchell, *Hiroshima in America*, pp. 253-258.

[258] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 7.

[259] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, pp. 11-12.

[260] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, pp. 11-12.

[261] Reagan began his political career as a fervent supporter of the McCarthy witch hunt trails, even “ratting” on people in Hollywood for McCarthy’s tribunal. Reagan testified at it. Reagan met his wife Nancy when she discovered that her name was in the Hollywood back list and she went to him for help, and he got her off it. His activities also wrecked many Hollywood careers.

[262] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 75.

[263] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, pp. 75-80.

[264] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 120.

[265] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 93.

[266] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 94.

[267] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 128.

[268] See Studs Terkel’s *“The Good War,”* pp. 190-193.

[269] See Chomsky, *Class Warfare*, pp. 59-61. See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, p. 419. See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, pp. 95-96.

[270] See Alperovitz, *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb*, pp. 337-338.

[271] See Weinberg, *A World at Arms*, pp. 300-301. See Churchill, *A Little Matter of Genocide*, p. 48. See Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 14, 18, 19, 44. The main source of my information about the early CIA days is mainly Simpson's *Blowback*, but for my general knowledge of the CIA I also used other sources of information such as Blum's *Killing Hope*, McGehee's *Deadly Deceits*, Stich's *Defrauding*

America, CIA operatives I have known, the work of Noam Chomsky and other sources, some thoroughly establishment, such as Loch Johnson's *America's Secret Power*.

[272] See the summary of that grisly toll in Churchill *A Little Matter of Genocide*, pp. 43-49.

[273] See Dennis Piskiewicz, *The Nazi Rocketeers: Dreams of Space and Crimes of War*, pp. 94-97.

[274] See Dennis Piskiewicz, *The Nazi Rocketeers: Dreams of Space and Crimes of War*, pp. 24-26.

[275] See Dennis Piskiewicz, *The Nazi Rocketeers: Dreams of Space and Crimes of War*, p. 159.

[276] See Yahil, *The Holocaust*, p. 535.

[277] See Dennis Piskiewicz, *The Nazi Rocketeers: Dreams of Space and Crimes of War*, p. 167.

[278] See Dennis Piskiewicz, *The Nazi Rocketeers: Dreams of Space and Crimes of War*, p. 101.

[279] See Simpson's *Blowback* for the most thorough account of those days.

[280] See Franklin's *Vietnam and other Fantasies*, p. 50, and William Blum's *Killing Hope*, p. 21.

[281] See Bacque, *Crimes and Mercies*, p. 28.

[282] The accounts of that Soviet behavior are many. For one first-person account, see the account of Klaus Fuhrmann, a Berliner, who describes the Soviet entrance to Berlin and how they raped his wife in their bedroom, while the husband stood there with a pistol pushed against his chest, in John Carey's *Eyewitness to History*, pp. 625-630.

[283] See Simpson, *The Splendid Blond Beast*, pp. 175-176.

[284] See Christopher Simpson's *The Splendid Blond Beast*, especially pp. 217-231.

[285] See Adams, *The Best War Ever*, p. 138.

[286] See Zinn, *Declarations of Independence*, p. 100.

[287] See Fussell, *Doing Battle*, p. 124. As an anecdote regarding such brutality, one interrogation tactic of our boys in Vietnam was taking a bunch of prisoners up in a helicopter, and when one would not talk, they would throw him out of it, seeing if it might loosen the lips of the prisoners who witnessed that act. That "helicopter therapy" was the least of it. One close relative of mine knew a man who

specialized in that brand of interrogation. Throwing them out of the helicopter to their deaths was easy and unimaginative. My relative's buddy specialized in the high art of interrogation. He manned one of those machine guns that were mounted on those helicopters. They would throw out a hapless prisoner, but he would not fall to his death. My relative's buddy would shoot the prisoner with his machine-gun, while the prisoner was in mid-air. It was macabre skeet shooting. He could keep the prisoner aloft with the force of the bullets hitting his body. The bullets' force overcame gravity, keeping the body in the air. He could keep a body in the air for quite some time. With each shot the body would move further away from the helicopter, and spin with the force of the bullets hitting it. In a successful episode, the body would stay in the air until the bullets began disintegrating the body.

[288] See Chomsky, *Secrets, Lies and Democracy*, pp. 97-98.

[289] See Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 140, and pp. 138-155 regarding those American plans.

[290] See McGowan, *Derailing Democracy*, p. 165

[291] See Donna Abu-Nasr's "Saudis: Don't Attack Iraq from Here," *Associated Press*, August 7, 2002.

[292] See Gary Webb's *Dark Alliance*, for instance.

[293] See Ken Silverstein's *Private Warriors*.

[294] See William Thomas' *Scorched Earth, The Military's Assault on the Environment*.

[295] See Ken Silverstein's *Private Warriors*, p. viii.

[296] See *Take the Rich off Welfare*, by Mark Zepezauer and Arthur Naiman.

[297] Zepezauer and Naiman, *Take the Rich off Welfare*, pp. 16-17.

[298] See Zepezauer and Naiman, *Take the Rich off Welfare*, pp. 157-162.

[299] For instance, see Epperson, *The Unseen Hand, An Introduction to the Conspiratorial View of History*.

The Next Section: [Other Rackets](#) (110K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/war.htm>)

ahealedplanet.net/home.htm)

Other Rackets

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[The Life Insurance Racket](#)

[Banking](#)

[A Neocolonialist Speaks Out](#)

[The Darker Side of the Banking Game](#)

[Law](#)

[Housing and Construction](#)

[Agribusiness](#)

[Transportation](#)

[Waste Management](#)

[The Capitalism Racket](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

America's three most wasteful and useless industries are probably [energy](#), [medicine](#) and [war](#); all three barely deserve to exist, if at all, although they comprise about a third of the American economy in retail dollars, and perhaps more than half of the economy, when costs are considered that the market does not measure, such as environmental devastation, [interest on the national debt](#) (as well as the debt itself), infrastructure costs and so forth. Also, the impossible-to-calculate cost in human suffering is at awesome levels in all three industries. The situations painted in this site's relevant essays argue in

support of [the thesis](#) that the larger, more powerful and more monopolistic any industry or profession becomes, the more it degenerates into a racket, eventually becoming a dinosaur that only stays alive because it has hogged all the nearby fodder and kills anything that comes near. Also, because the United States is largely [a nation of brainwashed people](#), the idea that people *need* those industries has been deeply ingrained.

Although those three industries may be the starkest examples of racketeering in business, they are by no means the only industries that are worthless, or garner a far greater share of America's economic pie than is fair. In [medicine](#), professionals and industries have combined to create a medical-industrial complex. Other industries and professions also complement the big three rackets, and help form American society's power structure. This essay will present other industries and professions that are corrupted, greatly inflated or simply worthless. Some could simply fade away to the oblivion they deserve, while others deserve a far smaller stature than they currently enjoy.

Areas of American life that are filled with death, dying, suffering and misery are also where the big money is made. [American doctors](#) and [lawyers](#) are the earth's two most highly paid professional groups, and there is about zero societal benefit derived from their efforts. The war industry has always been [incredibly lucrative](#) for weapons suppliers, and usually for the "winners," who were not the soldiers. [Tobacco companies](#) have been immensely profitable. In terms of profits as a percent of sales, the [pharmaceutical business](#) is America's most lucrative. The industries that have relentlessly raped the land, mining and forestry in particular, have always done great while the mines and forests lasted, leaving behind devastated landscapes when the dust settled.

The recent trend to privatize the prison system in America is ominous, particularly when corporations are putting factories in the prisons, paying the inmates wages below the minimum wage, as they work for such companies as Microsoft (controlled by the world's richest man), in what is effectively a new era of slave labor, where the labor force is in the strongest sense, captive.^[1] There is being created an economic incentive to put people in prison, only different by degree from the [concentration camp labor situation](#) of Nazi Germany during World War II. The journalist-turned-professor Nathan McCall spent years in prison when he was younger, and a memorable, ironic moment was when he worked on the prison farm. There was a black man in the South, down on all fours, picking vegetables, while nearby was the ever-present "white, shotgun-toting prison guard." McCall thought about the lives of his ancestors, wondering if it looked the same during slavery.^[2]

With the world's largest prison population, bringing capitalism to the American prison industry is creating an incentive to lock up more people, because the more prisoners there are, the more money is made. There is increasingly no pretense of "protecting" the public (or even rehabilitation), as most inmates are in there for drug "crimes." All law enforcement agencies across America, including the judges, [have their hands in the drug trade to some degree](#) (I know it went on in [Ventura County](#)), as it is highly lucrative, which makes the entire imprisoning apparatus appear hypocritical, as judges and sheriffs lock up their customers, although judges and law enforcement operate more on the wholesale level, as they lock up the retail customers, making money going and coming.

The industries and professions this essay examines have varying levels of racketeering in them; some

are *relatively* benign, while others are more malignant.

The Life Insurance Racket

The case can be made to nearly entirely eliminate the life insurance industry. Life insurance, as with all insurance, is supposed to be a way to “spread the risk” of living on earth.

It is a good and compassionate idea to design a system that can provide for each other as the disasters of life befall us. Death can come at any time, although in our civilized world, deaths before “old age” are increasingly rare. During our lives, people can come to depend on us at times, particularly our children. In tribal life and the extended families before our modern age, the child was not in a “nuclear” family, so the issue of premature parental death was not as big as today.

A system to spread risk should be simple. In life insurance, for instance, death rates by age group and other trends are easy to come by, requiring no great skill. Spreading the risk of an untimely death is easy. There can be arguments on how to do it equitably, and a national tax that all income-earners would pay into, with benefits mildly graduated along income levels and financial dependents, the dependents’ ages and the age of the earner, is a possibility. Arguments can be made about adjustments for smokers, construction workers, number of dependents, et cetera, but those are minor strategic arguments, not fundamental ones. Somebody sixty-five years old generally will not have anybody depending on his/her earnings for the subsequent twenty years, as a twenty-five-year-old father would. Who would not want their dependents somehow provided for if they die before their time? Administering the income and payments would be elementary. In life insurance, there is little need for claims adjusters and the adversarial nature that all-too-often typifies other types of insurance, pitting claimant against insurer. Death is not a debatable condition. Similar logic could be applied to all areas of insurance, such as casualty, medical, et cetera. That is not how it operates in our capitalistic world, however.

The first life insurance policy on record was written in London on June 18, 1536, a one-year policy on the life of William Gybbons. Gybbons died on May 29, 1537, run over by a hit-and-run bullock cart. In a telling beginning to the industry and a comment on insurance in general, the company refused to pay the widow and children of Gybbons, insisting that a year consisted of twelve months of four weeks each, making Gybbons’ unfortunate death a few days outside of the policy period. The widow took the insurers to court and won, as the insurers’ logic was rejected.[\[3\]](#)

In the early 1800s in America, during the industry’s early days, “term insurance” was the only kind there was. The policy was as simple as it sounds. It insured against a person’s death for a specified time. Because America was far from any socialistic (i.e., taking care of each other) leanings then, insuring one’s life was a strictly commercial affair. The problem was that with term insurance, the risk of death was greater as the policyholder aged, so premiums increased over time. The people who tended to get the insurance were relatively unhealthy or had others risks of untimely death. [Wives of surgeons were uninsurable in those days](#), for instance. The risk was not being spread around, and insurance companies got bankrupted; the industry’s survival was in question.

In response to that problem, a two-fold ploy was invented, and is today called “whole life.” Whole life’s premiums did not escalate with age, and there was a “savings” portion put into the policy benefit, meaning that insurance companies became bankers. The simple idea of insuring one’s life then became complicated. There are arguments that the change was necessary if the industry was going to survive, but instead of creating a safety net for the masses, life insurance became a tremendous scam. By 1900, the industry was as corrupt as all the other robber baron industries, which prompted a New York State investigation in 1905 called the Armstrong Joint Legislative Inquiry, which unearthed many grim activities. America’s “faith” in the industry evaporated, and it took a combination of some minor reforms and a lot of public relations to make life insurance “respectable” many years later. Yet, its “respectability” is not really earned.

In the 1994 *Consumer Reports Life Insurance Handbook*, the state of the life insurance industry was summarized (I have not looked into this situation for several years, but doubt that much has changed). The book called for reforming the industry, citing virtually no price competition between the companies, no effective regulation from state insurance commissioners (who more often act as advocates of the life insurance companies than the life insurance customer - the [regulator was captured](#)), and a dearth of honest sales tactics, where lying and scam policies, particularly directed at the elderly, were rampant.

Anybody who puts their money into a savings account at a bank knows their rate of interest. With whole life, the customer does not know. The insurance companies merged the life insurance and savings portions of their policies, and the policyholders never knew what their “return on investment” was. With whole life policies, the rate of return can be negative, and has been, but the policyholder never knows. The life insurance industry was able to get away with it, with many greased palms in government along the way. Less than half of the money taken in by life insurance companies goes to pay benefits, the rest pays for high rises across America with life insurance company names on the top, huge executive salaries, corporate junkets, amazingly high salesman’s commissions, and often incredible profits.[\[4\]](#) Consumers get a better payout from the state-run lotteries. Even the “non-profit” status of mutual companies is largely illusory, as life insurance companies control more than one and a half trillion dollars in assets, and throw around a great deal of economic and political muscle, defeating all meaningful attempts to regulate their avaricious empire-building, gained by bilking the consumer.

The scam would be less onerous if the consumer had a choice, but people generally could not buy term insurance in America until the past generation. The policies existed, but no salesman would sell one. The Consumer’s Union of United States, Inc., the publisher of *Consumer Reports*, has advocated buying term insurance for almost all people for more than fifty years. Yet, it was nearly impossible to buy term life insurance in America. The reason was that term was *not profitable enough*. In the words of *Consumer Reports*,

“Although most companies offer term policies, selling term rarely brings in big profits, and companies encourage their agents to sell the more expensive alternatives. Encouragement takes the form of generous compensation for cash value policies. Naturally, agents - like most people - usually sell the

products that earn them the biggest commission.”[\[5\]](#)

Consumer Reports discussed the deceptions that life insurance salesmen use to dissuade consumers from buying the vastly cheaper term policy, as did Norman Dacey in his classic work, *What's Wrong with Your Life Insurance*.

The life insurance industry has relied on secrecy and lies to sell its product, such as the canard of “permanent need” and not telling customers where their premium dollar really went. If a public charity had such a low percent going to beneficiaries, it would be a tremendous scandal. More than ninety percent of money taken in going to beneficiaries is a normal percent these days for charities, after a number of scandals in the “charity” business. There is arguably \$200 billion a year going into zero benefit for the life insurance consumer in America today.[\[6\]](#) There is no rationale for life insurance payments being less than 95% of income for a national life insurance plan, except the need to build corporate empires. Today, the Social Security Administration provides a life insurance benefit for millions of people, with its administrative fee being less than 1% of income. The life insurance industry largely does not deserve to exist, except the rationale of capitalism and making people rich off the idea. The industry is basically \$200 billion a year of pocket lining. If the ultra rich want to insure their lives for big dollars, although there is virtually no rational need to do that, there may be a small legitimate market for commercial life insurance. If insurance companies want to be legitimate investment advisors, let them compete with other financial advisors, and not hide investment “management” fees behind life insurance premiums. The latest scam of the industry is “universal” life insurance, which Dacey exposes as the old scam (an even better scam, perhaps) in new clothing, in chapter 15 of his book.

Governments can be prodigiously wasteful, but [profiting off of selling addicting substances to people](#) and profiting off of [misery](#) and [death](#) (or the fear of it) may be the darkest aspect of our capitalistic system. Those areas are precisely where the big money is made in America.

There is some good news to report. Life insurance is also the only industry I know of where somebody succeeded in fighting its corruption and impacting their racket: enter A. L. Williams. He is something of an American legend today, and the only instance I know of where one man took on a huge, corrupt industry, and won. Williams started around 1980, only selling term insurance. His father died when he was young, and the life insurance proceeds did support the family long, and Williams eventually took on the industry, selling term insurance with part-time agents selling from their homes. Term insurance was the only kind of insurance they sold. Williams was selling affordable life insurance to the consumer, targeting the average American wage earner, and not using the proceeds to build high-rises and fund lavish corporate perks. The life insurance industry banded together and fought his company in a number of states. The racket was threatened.

By the mid-1980s, Williams’ company was skyrocketing, and by the 1990s sold by far the most life insurance protection of any company. Primerica was slandered throughout the industry. I saw the industry’s propaganda campaign against Primerica first-hand, when I have shopped for life insurance. As with every company, particularly one so successful, some Williams agents did some questionable

things, there was some empire-building going on in the company, and Williams himself left the company under a cloud of allegations. I wonder how much of that controversy was covertly brought into being by the life insurance industry's clandestine efforts.[\[7\]](#) With A. L. Williams, the average American parent of young children got life insurance that was really affordable for the first time, and that term life insurance did the only thing that "life" insurance is supposed to do: insure the interest of financial dependents in the event of a breadwinner's death. Before A. L. Williams came along, people simply could not insure their lives in America, but had to buy the insurance companies' other "financial services" that were wrapped into the package.

It can be argued that 150 years ago, when the life insurance industry was young, our government had no socialist leanings, so the industry was justified. Those days are long gone, and insuring untimely deaths would be one of the simplest things the government could do, and few in America would not support such a measure (except of course, the insurance industry). The life insurance establishment is so rich (from taking in more premium than was needed) that it is a huge economic and political powerhouse. It will not go away quietly. I favor dismantling the industry, fairly. I have a similar idea for [energy](#), [cancer treatment](#), and the other rackets. I favor letting them walk away from the table with enough chips to live well on, but calling the game over. Then the future money saved could be put to something productive, such as retraining life insurance salesmen and [oncologists](#) into productive members of society.

American saw the clout of a related insurance industry a decade ago when health care reform was attempted by the Clinton administration. The only real opponent to it was the [medical establishment](#), with the health insurance companies leading the attack. Wealth and power talks, very loudly, and they shot it down, along with intense lobbying and a propaganda barrage that is confusing Americans even today.

An odd thing about the issue is this: let us say that the life insurance industry was dealt a crushing blow by an epidemic disease or a meteor hitting New York City. Just as in the [Savings and Loan disaster](#), the government would make the taxpayer pick up the tab anyway. The taxpayers are in effect insuring the life insurance industry anyway.

Banking

I studied money and banking in college, audited several banks during my career and also worked for them. Banking can be quite abstract, and it can be difficult to see the bigger picture. I witnessed the beginning of the [Savings and Loan Scandal](#), from the inside, with my boss frankly admitting that my profession abetted it due to its structure, where auditors were not truly independent. The point has recently been driven home even harder with the [Enron](#) and other corporate scandals, although there is still is no move to reform it.

During [my days with Dennis Lee](#), before he was arrested the first time, I heard and read many right-wing theories about how the international banking system worked, how they were behind the Lincoln

assassination and so forth. A summary of that brand of theorizing is in Epperson's *The Unseen Hand*, and Mullins' *The Secrets of the Federal Reserve*. Those works are considered conspiratorial scholarship, and Edward Flaherty has a web site on the Internet devoted to debunking the "myths" that Mullins promotes. From the structural (left wing) perspective is William Greider's *Secrets of the Temple, How the Federal Reserve Runs the Country*. I had a difficult time believing the overarching conspiracy theory regarding the way the international banking system worked. Yet, I saw too many strange things to blithely dismiss the conspiratorial perspective; my attitude was kind of "wait and see." Even so, many aspects of the banking system were startling, from a structural perspective.

From the radical perspective comes the work of [Noam Chomsky](#), [Edward Herman](#) and other towering academics. Herman teaches economics at Wharton, one of the world's most prestigious business schools. Herman has produced many devastating analyses of how the capitalist system exploits the world's poor. His *Triumph of the Market* is an excellent introduction. Herman's work stacks up against any economist's. Herman, Chomsky and others point out how the international banking scene operates.

Two banking institutions that have played primary roles in enslaving billions of people are the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund (IMF). They are both neocolonial institutions that really work under the auspices of the United States banking system, although they are supposedly UN institutions. Their policies have [led to a great deal of starvation worldwide](#). No longer does the [British flag fly over India](#) and a quarter of the globe. The mechanisms are different, although their ultimate effects are nearly the same.

Here is how it works in the [neocolonial](#) world. The IMF makes a loan to a foreign government, for development, so they say. The loan is to a U.S. client state, which means that it is a dictatorship. The dictator and his cronies pocket most of the loan, where it ends up in their Swiss bank accounts (or the loan goes to building roads for oil company use, although the nation's citizens own few cars). Legally however, the nation is on the hook for the loan, not the dictator. The loan did not provide anything productive for the subject nation's economy, but just lined a dictator's pockets (or helped American corporations more effectively exploit the nation). The nation now has to pay the loan back. How do they do that? They end up raising crops for export to earn "foreign exchange" so they can pay the debt back, or chop down their forests, open their nation to strip mining, let the oil companies rape them or allow U.S. corporations to move there, taking advantage of the cheap labor there while putting Americans out of work. The IMF devises "Structural Adjustment Programs," (SAPs) that spell out those policies.

Land that was used to grow food for the local population is instead used to grow food or other crops (such as jute) for export. The local population starves so they can pay off the IMF loan, which went into their dictator's pockets. That is not a rare occurrence, but a typical neocolonial mechanism used to [rape the "Third World"](#). The relief organization [Oxfam](#) has published numerous papers on that issue. The last time I looked several years ago, of the forty poorest nations on earth, thirty-six exported food to the United States. That is how America gets cheap bananas, while the people picking the bananas, such as in Costa Rica and [Guatemala](#), cannot afford to feed their children. Billions of people have been exploited in just that fashion. That is why it is called [neocolonialism](#). The American flag does not fly over Costa Rica and Guatemala, but America gets their food. If the banana

pickers rise up against those exploitative conditions, the United States bankrolls death squads to keep the people in line, as in [El Salvador, Guatemala, Nicaragua, Indonesia](#) and so on. If it gets too out of control, then America sends in the Marines, to "[restore democracy](#)." Wink, nudge. Suharto and friends raped the Indonesian economy in neocolonial fashion to the tune of sixty billion dollars, eventually collapsing an economy that was already enslaved to Western interests. The IMF "rode to the rescue" in 1998, and its SAP was so draconian that the populace rose up and toppled Suharto.

That neocolonial process has been happening for a century, with [Wall Street's creation of Panama](#) being a pertinent early example. [Smedley Butler](#) was muscle for Wall Street, although he did not figure it out until after he retired. The Taft Administration's Dollar Diplomacy, following on the heels of Teddy Roosevelt's Big Stick Diplomacy, showed how the mercantile system complemented the purely military one. The current IMF programs are merely more sophisticated methods of slavery, which defraud people out of their land and lives. Once in awhile, something would leak from those institutions that [showed what was really happening](#).^[8] In reality, the United States is the world's stingiest industrialized nation, as even Jimmy Carter has openly admitted.^[9]

Other aspects of the neocolonial banking racket are the "free market" and international exchange rates. The "free market" is a situation where the rich and powerful are "free" to exploit the weak. The industrialized world's big banks, led by the United States, manipulate exchange rates to where Third World currencies are nearly worthless, so the peasants have the game rigged against them even more. They have to work harder to pay more to Western banks, because their currencies are artificially deflated against the industrialized nations' currencies. That is the "free market" at work. The SAP austerity programs kick in, and the nations are forced to abandon "frills" such as minimum nutritional standards, primary medicine and education for their populations. The World Bank has even been behind privatizing public water supplies, a practice that recently led to a cholera outbreak in South Africa) of course in the poor black towns. The water supplies of New Jersey are even being privatized as I write this in the summer of 2002.^[10]

It is a new form of slavery, but done through the banking system. The neocolonial New World Order has enslaved billions of people, and the 1999 WTO protests in Seattle were part of an effort to end the practice (I marched in the "Jubilee 2000" procession the night before, which is about forgiving the Third World Debt - I missed the tear gas the next day, to my relief). International treaties such as NAFTA and GATT are designed to break down all international barriers to the power of capital. It is designed to make the world into one big plantation.

That is not right wing paranoia. It is happening as I write this, so well documented that it cannot be denied, but the capitalist press has been busy brainwashing the American public, with the *Wall Street Journal* banging the drum. Recently, there was the debt "crisis" in Indonesia, Korea, Brazil and several Asian nations. South Korea's citizens protested the help that the IMF was about to give, and they knew how the deal would go down. In addition, the international currency markets have been turned into almost purely speculative affairs, a kind of global casino, something that even the *London Financial Times* has remarked on. The poor are the people paying for those policies, as usual.

I have friends from my business school days who think that those policies actually help those factory workers in Indonesia [who are making our Nike shoes](#). Establishment hacks do not dare debate

somebody like Herman in a fair and nationally televised debate, because they would be handed their heads.

Perhaps the darkest aspect of all the human suffering being caused by such monetary policies, with the United States leading the way, is that it is estimated that for forty billion dollars per year, every person on the planet would be guaranteed all the food, shelter and education that they need. Forty billion dollars is less than a quarter of the money that is squandered each year in the [Pentagon budget](#), just the part that is waste. It is surreal.

That part of the banking game is undeniable, not part of a bizarre conspiracy theory. That is how global capitalism works. Flaherty, an economist who loves debunking Federal Reserve conspiracy theories and apparently admires [Julian Simon](#), will not touch the IMF's shenanigans with a ten-foot pole. Simon, an *economist*, did not even mention the IMF in his "good news" manifesto, *The State of Humanity*. If *The State of Humanity* was a credible piece of scholarship, and Simon truly cared about the state of humanity, the IMF and Third World debt situation would have been one of the book's central concerns. Instead, Simon worshipped the non-existent "free market." The IMF situation is not "good news," however, except for corporate profits, Western consumers and the plutocratic elite of the subject nations, who have sold "their" people into neocolonial slavery.

A Neocolonialist Speaks Out

Reading [Ralph McGehee's](#) *Deadly Deceits* helped me figure out the American foreign policy game, similar to [Smedley Butler's](#) confession. McGehee and Butler had to live with their consciences and could not keep silent in their retirement years. I had heard about servants for the Rothschilds and Rockefellers writing memoirs about what really happens on the inside, only to have the books suppressed, including buying out the publishing companies that tried publishing the books. I have not heard of anybody publishing anything from deep inside the beast, but in 2004, a member of "middle management" of the global corporate empire spoke out, and John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man* is the [War is a Racket](#) of our time.

McGehee was an imperial foot soldier, not beginning to figure out the game until he came up with the "[wrong answer](#)" in America's war against communism. Perkins was on the "privatized" side of the empire, in what can be called middle management, and was frankly told about the nature of his job early on. His cronies literally called themselves "economic hit men," or EHM for short.^[11] He was taught the game from the inside. All the World Bank, IMF and USAID "assistance" was not designed to help the nations receiving the loans, but was designed to enslave those nations to the neocolonial order (or "corporatocracy" as Perkins called it), to give American corporate interests access to rape and plunder those nations, particularly to steal their natural resources and exploit their labor. The elites of those subject nations would be bribed to play along, but the primary goal was exploiting the peoples and resources of the subject nations.

Perkins' meteoric career took him to many neocolonial hot spots, such as Iran, Colombia, Saudi

Arabia, Indonesia, Panama and Ecuador. Perkins became friends with the populist leaders of Panama and Ecuador, Omar Torrijos and Jaime Roldós, who both refused to kneel to the empire and tried helping their nation's poor instead. He worried that the CIA and friends would assassinate them, and as soon as Ronald Reagan became president, Torrijos and Roldós died in "accidents" in 1981, where their aircrafts exploded in mid-air, in what were obviously CIA-style assassinations. Those assassinations served notice to the world that the relatively gentle days of Carter's reign were over. Those national leaders were killed by what Perkins called the "jackals." When bribes of IMF, World Bank, USAID and illicit funds are not sufficient, then it becomes time to set the jackals loose. If the jackals fail, the U.S. military is sent in, as with Iraq.

As with Perkins, the jackals rarely worked directly for the U.S. government, but were "privatized" covert action operatives.[\[12\]](#) Perkins was taught that privatizing covert action had been a trend ever since Kermit Roosevelt, the grandson of president Teddy, [overthrew the Iranian government](#) while working for the CIA on behalf of Western oil companies in 1953.[\[13\]](#) Being on the government payroll was problematic, as the Iran-Contra scandal showed. Privatized covert action operatives were much harder to expose and easier to deny, and their activities did not leave the paper trail that government operatives could leave. Privatized covert action was much tidier and could be more effective. Perkins likened the jackals to mafia enforcers, but the jackals serve global corporate empires, not local gangster turf.[\[14\]](#) I have a relative who was a privatized jackal who worked for a household-name "diplomat." His secret career destroyed his life, and I will not be able to publish his tale for a long time, for jackal-related reasons.

Perkins' first job was working for the Peace Corps in the Amazon, to see if he was fit for the rigors of EHM life in Third World countries (although he signed up for idealistic motives, as with most Peace Corps volunteers). The Peace Corps is also a [tool of the empire](#), and even some missionary groups are imperial tools, trying persuasion before the jackals are sent in.[\[15\]](#)

As with McGehee, those working for Perkins were not explicitly told about the true nature of their work, and it was the rare person who even *wanted to know*. Perkins kept his underlings in the dark about what they truly worked for, and often felt jealous of their naïveté.[\[16\]](#)

Perkins' path and mine crossed over the Seabrook nuclear power plant, as [I tried to help make it obsolete](#) while he promoted it, knowing that nuclear power was anything but safe and cheap.[\[17\]](#) Perkins' self-loathing over his life's path led him to publish his book, even though he was bribed handsomely to never publish his memoirs as an EHM.[\[18\]](#) He even got to start an alternative energy company that was bought out by an oil company for top dollar. Perkins always avoided the hero/martyr path, so never allowed the game to reach the stage of being [made an offer he could not refuse](#).

Depressingly, as with [other whistleblowers](#), his allies discouraged him from publishing his book. They did not want him to "commit the truth" and rock the boat. Perkins did not heed their advice and the world owes him a debt for his courageous act of conscience. As usual, he is obviously far less than [one-in-a-thousand](#) among the ranks of economic hit men, being about the only one to date to name the real game, particularly in book form.

The Darker Side of the Banking Game

Those [IMF-type](#) aspects of the banking racket are impossible to fairly deny, particularly in light of [Perkins' confession](#), and are part of the war against the poor.^[19] Conspiracy theories surrounding the Federal Reserve, the Rothschilds, [Rockefellers](#) and other elites I had read plenty about, but I did not know how true they might be. I did not see the overt evidence of it, it did not seem to affect me much, but during [my days with Dennis](#) I saw some things that made me wonder. The meeting that Dennis had with bankers and "European interests" that [wanted to pay him a billion dollars or so](#) to stop pursuing free energy, dives straight into the international conspiracy theories. The offer appeared to include the international bankers, and made the conspiracy theories seem more tenable. In the past several years however, I saw and heard more things that *really* made me wonder.

In 1999, I went on a business trip to Chicago. It was in the rich part of Chicago, a couple miles from Michael Jordan's house. I set up banking arrangements with a local bank and spoke with a banker who represented a trust with more than a *trillion* dollars in assets. They served the old money crowd, keeping their zillions invested properly. It was not the first time that I had dealt with a trillion-dollar trust.

Back in 1996-1997, when Dennis was trying to raise billions of dollars to fund [Yull Brown's technology for neutralizing nuclear waste](#), I had my eyes opened and peeked into a world that I did not know existed. When I started getting into it, I asked my CFO and big time CPA friends what they knew about it, and none had ever heard of it before. I became introduced to the world of offshore trusts, bank trades and other ideas. It was a strange world, and I ended up dealing with people in the game.

Some was surprising and huge, and some was surprising and trivial. For instance, we shopped for banks to hold the billions of dollars we were going to be depositing. It was not a pipedream; we had players who could have delivered that kind of money. When looking at the most financially stable banks in the world, I was surprised to see that only one American bank made the top twenty-five. It was Morgan-Guaranty, a bank not heard much about in America. Half of the top twenty-five banks were German. That left me scratching my head. I thought they lost the war. The offshore trust racket is a way that the rich avoid paying taxes. It is an international shell game, and the big loser is the taxpaying public.

The world of bank trades was strange. When the average investor buys a certificate of deposit (CD) from a bank, earning seven percent, for instance, they are buying a "retail" bank instrument. The CD game that the banks play is similar to the game that sees a compact disc, which was made for less than a dollar, sell for \$15 in a department store. Between the producer and the consumer was a host of middlemen who got their cut along the way. In the capitalistic world, it can be stunning to discover that the price of the product is nearly all to pay for distribution. Time and again, I have seen producers receive ten cents or less of the retail dollar of a product. Even inside the producer's organization, I would see more than ninety percent of the cost of producing a product was the overhead, and ten percent were the direct costs of production. For instance, I worked in a [medical lab](#), and the direct

cost of producing a particular medical test was one dollar. We had overhead and markup that made our price to the doctor more than twenty dollars. The doctor would mark up the test to pay for overhead, such as insurance company administration and get his/her cut, and the patient's bill might read as high as fifty dollars or more for that test.

That situation is "normal" in many industries. Who is making the money, and what are they doing to earn it? To a degree, such a situation seems understandable, although it can be a neat racket. I sometimes saw organizations receive hefty cuts from that retail dollar for doing not much, if anything, but their powerful positions meant that money flowed their way. The greatest racketeering has often been of a seemingly minor, unobtrusive nature. I believe I was seeing an old dynamic, probably as old as history. When [Great Britain conquered the world](#), the capital class there made tremendous fortunes. Owners of [Britain's East and West India](#) companies made vast fortunes while sitting in their English estates, while Britain's lower classes lived grim lives abroad, laboring for the companies, with the colonial subjects' lives even worse, as the loot flowed into the coffers of the rich. Those dynamics turned [Bengal from one of the world's richest regions into one of the poorest](#), a dynamic [that continues to this day](#). Monopolies, from Standard Oil to Microsoft, raked in the big money. People have vilified John Rockefeller and Bill Gates, but had no viable option other than buying their products.

A similar situation appears to exist in banking. When the customer buys a CD at seven-percent interest, the original issuing bank for that CD paid out perhaps forty-percent interest. The CD was passed from bank to bank, each bank taking its middleman cut, and stripped down that forty-percent initial rate to seven percent. Not many Americans know how that game works. It was new to me. Unlike pressing a compact disc and moving it around the world, ending up in the music store at the local mall, what "added value" happens when those banking CDs are passed around? I dealt with people who brokered such CD "wholesale" deals, and made them. They spent time educating me in how it worked. A number of them made no bones about how the elite ran the game, and the Federal Reserve conspiracies that Flaherty enthusiastically debunks were wholly accepted by many in that crowd. One told me that the Rothschild syndicate owned the Federal Reserve "lock, stock and barrel."

During those days, we dealt with folks who were prepared to commit billions of dollars to us, but Yull Brown blew those deals apart. People have said that Dennis unfairly treated Yull Brown. I was there and saw what happened. Dennis and his organization treated Brown like a king, and paid him like one.

One strange thing happened during my dealings with the big money crowd. They cautioned us against putting *any* money in the United States banking system. They coached me on how to set up foreign banking arrangements, and let us know in no uncertain terms that using the U.S. banking system was inviting disaster. Why? Here is where it gets surreal. They said that if we began doing anything that threatened the status quo, the U.S. banking system would essentially seize our funds and put us out of business. That might seem bizarre; after all, our checks clear our banks after we write them. I did not know what to make of such sentiments, until I dealt with another person who represented a trillion-dollar trust. Such sums of money boggle my mind. The two I dealt with were not household names. That trust that I met during my Dennis days did not cater to the old money crowd, but was a radical group. It examined the proof of their assets, and it seemed legitimate, and some big

players knew who they were and did not scoff. They were either a front organization for the CIA, etc., or they were legitimate. The trust's assets were more than one trillion dollars. I spoke with the trust administrator numerous times. He admitted that the trust's equity was "only" about twenty billion dollars.

A dozen years ago, as the Soviet Empire was crumbling, the trust gave a billion dollars to a regime to keep it from collapsing. From what I could tell, it appeared that they did it largely as a humanitarian gesture, to keep the situation from degenerating into violent anarchy. They were not part of any government, but a private organization that fed starving soldiers guarding nuclear missile silos. They apparently ticked off those who think they run the world.

Their cash was nearly all held in the U.S. banking system. Soon after they made the "gift" to the communist nation, the U.S. banking system uniformly froze all their funds. They froze about twenty billion dollars in cash. Several years later, it was still frozen. The banks claimed "liquidity" problems regarding the trust's moving around of its funds, but it was a transparent lie. A United States Supreme Court justice even ordered the banking system (several major banks were involved) to stop freezing their funds. Essentially, the U.S. banking system gave the Supreme Court the finger. It was mind-blowing, but it demonstrated who really ran the show, with the Supreme Court being inconsequential nuisances in comparison to the banks' raw power. Flaherty's debunking became increasingly unbelievable in light of what happened to that trust. I will not laugh at any international banking conspiracy theories in light of what I saw.

Law

One of my first jobs was cleaning attorney offices. Friends and family members are lawyers. My first significant encounters with America's legal system were during my days with Dennis. In [Seattle](#) and [Ventura](#), with other hints in [Boston](#), I saw lawyers, judges, policemen and investigators committing great crimes. [Lies](#), deception, intimidation and felonious crimes seemed to be the specialty of those who worked in the legal system.

I now realize that my initial impressions were somewhat extreme. I saw people following orders from those who ran the energy racket. On one hand, officials who committed those acts were merely following orders or chased the carrot dangled before them. Most did not realize they were engaging in activities that might exterminate the human race, but most probably did not care, either, as long as they were amply rewarded for their efforts. Over the subsequent years since I gained a different perspective of our legal system, but it is little brighter than what I perceived earlier.

This site deals with the idea of the evolution of souls through the physical plane experience, and world history largely deals with the activities of [baby and young souls](#). In relation to the legal system, legitimate and illegitimate application of the law can be a useful way to perceive the dynamics. The Ten Commandments were righteous, yet they were mainly about forbidden practices. For their day they worked, although few ever lived by them, Moses breaking his first tablets in disgust. The Fifth Commandment forbids murder. The commandment is clear and unequivocal, but many clever people

have created an exception to that Commandment whenever the need arose, such as matters of war, to "defend" one's self, executing "criminals" and so on. Those clever sophists were among the earliest lawyers.

In the Bible, [Joshua](#) committed genocidal slaughters, depopulating entire regions for his God, the same God that forbade murder. David was a god-chosen warrior-king, with beheading Goliath an early feat. The law was ignored or argued around from nearly the day it was given. Even when Jesus came along and said to love the enemy, Christians have largely ignored that also, always rationalizing their slaughters. [Europeans](#) (and their political descendents such as America) are the most murderous people of all time, by far, and they are nearly all Christians.

Laws can be legitimate aspects of creating civilizations. In early civilizations the laws are simple, such as the Ten Commandments. They generally "work" when followed. People can believe in the law and its application. If everybody follows the law, all will be well, or so they believe. To some degree it is true. Laws that the general population does not believe in do not work well. In those more "primitive" civilizations the laws are simple, and their rules often applied relatively fairly, although they may be harsh, such as the murderous code in the book of Leviticus, which directly contradicts the Fifth Commandment. When the law is followed because it is the law and not because it is just, it ventures into legalism. The spirit of the law is ignored while the letter is followed. Further degeneration is when the law is used as a weapon for personal gain, not for justice or helping hold civilization together. The law becomes seen as a tool in winning. Serving justice, the spirit of the law and the ideal are lost, and the only goal is winning.

That is about where the United States' legal system is today, and the West's in general. The American legal system is all about winning, not justice, which is generally the final stage of a legal system's degeneration. The law also becomes extraordinarily complicated, and professional specialists make and interpret laws that no regular citizen can figure out. When that happens, the legal system is no longer under the citizenry's control. Legalism overthrows justice and serves those who control the legal system.

Ancient Rome just before its collapse was like that.[\[20\]](#) The tax system was extremely unfair, and tax collectors and lawyers were thoroughly corrupt, just as in today's United States. The legal system was an extraordinarily complicated maze of laws that no citizen could navigate without a lawyer's help, and the lawyers often betrayed their own clients. The only winners were the lawyers. Today, seventy percent of the world's lawyers live in the United States, and the last time I checked ,somewhere around ten percent of them are millionaires. That is a symptom of a society in decay and on its way out.

The state of America's legal system, with its extraordinary complexity and thorough corruption, where an honest lawyer (one who seeks justice, not winning) is nearly impossible to find, is simply a sign of the times. That so many point to a scrap of parchment, the U.S. Constitution, and hold it to be holy (or even worse, [the flag](#)), is another sign of the times. George Washington crafted a legalistic strategy to [defraud Native Americans out of their land](#), which was immediately embraced by the government, to demonstrate the [Founding Fathers'](#) reverence for the law.

There is *no* system worth worshipping; worshipping any system is a form of idolatry. The U.S. Constitution was [influenced by Native American tribes](#), and was designed to limit the power of government, and has failed miserably. A piece of paper cannot prevent corruption. If everybody found a way around the unequivocal Fifth Commandment, finding a way around the Constitution has been easy. Our government increasingly does not even have the pretense of serving the public interest and the public knows it, which is why Americans [vote less than any "free" people on the planet](#), because they know it does not matter. The same rich people own all the candidates, and the laws are written and enforced to look after powerful interests. That is also why the underclass populates [America's prisons](#).

In a healthy society there are few laws, everybody knows them well, and no lawyers interpret them. There are also no prisons or punitive institutions. There were no prisons in the New World in 1491. That is the polar opposite of the United States. Neale Donald Walsch's *Conversations with God* states that in highly evolved societies they only have three laws. They are:

1. We are all one;
2. There is enough for everybody;
3. Nobody has to do anything.[\[21\]](#)

The only earthly societies ever approaching that ideal have been "primitive" societies. Communism (at least the Soviet and Chinese versions of it) tried living by the ideals of one and two, but did not live by rule number three. The Declaration of Independence expressed law one (except for calling Native Americans savages), but the Constitution did not originally approach that ideal, with slaves, natives and women specifically excluded from the "we are all one" ideal. Nearly all American laws are coercive, which also ignores rule three. Capitalism, on the other hand, sort of honors rule three. Nobody has to do anything, but if they want food in their belly and a roof over their head they need to labor for the capitalists who own everything. Capitalism is diametrically opposed to rule two, [elevating greed to a virtue](#). Capitalism does not even pretend to honor rule one. Nationalism is also diametrically opposed to rule one. It is us versus them in nationalism, each nation believing they are a great people, and that "great people" self-image is then used to justify warring against their neighbors, egotistically elevating themselves in their eyes at the expense of others. Nationalism often exploits the masses for elite benefit. Racism and most religions also ignore rule one. People are OK only if they belong to the right religion or race. Most Christian sects ignore rule three, with the more literalist sects requiring that people accept Jesus as their personal savior in order to be "saved." As Walsch's god observed, America is a primitive society, and one mark of a primitive society is how it regards regression as progress.

My friends and family members who became lawyers were starry-eyed in the beginning, much as I was [when I attended business school](#). Their eyes were opened much faster than mine were. They either got out of law or became bitterly cynical a few years after receiving their law degree, and sought niches of the profession that were less revolting than others. None of them have any starry-eyed

idealism about our legal system anymore. As far as providing any benefit to society, our legal system could disappear tomorrow and everybody would probably be better off. "Anarchy" is probably preferable to the juggernaut that is taking the world to the brink of destruction.

Several times I have seen American judges make rulings that made a lawyer's jaw drop open, with the lawyer saying in dismay, "They can't do that!" Dennis has seen it more times than he cares to remember. When the people who run this nation use the legal system to wipe somebody out, the law is not worth the paper it is printed on. The police [commit felonies](#) while fabricating charges that the prosecution [fraudulently pursues](#), and the judge rubber stamps it all and makes sure that anything *but* justice is served as they kangaroo their hapless victim into a long prison stint, and perhaps also arranging for the inmate's murder in prison. All those officials had their palms well greased to participate in the snuff job, with promotions, money under the table, and other benefits. If I had not lived through it, I may not have believed it. It works that way in both the [medical](#) and energy rackets. Dennis has called it the "just us" system. More than once I have seen lawyers who challenged our legal system become quickly disbarred on fabricated charges or [threatened with it](#) to keep them in line.

Every profession and industry has prostituted itself to one degree or another, but the legal profession probably sells itself to the highest bidder more often than any other. Most of America's politicians are lawyers, as well as its judges. I am not sure exactly what lawyers make in America, but it is probably somewhere around thirty-to-forty billion dollars a year, for another complete waste of money. It is worse than a total waste, as they are helping prop up our ethically bankrupt system.

Housing and Construction

During my days with Dennis, we dealt with many inventors. Some inventions were truly extraordinary. To my eventual dismay, and a realization I resisted for many years, the biggest obstacles are not really the "bad guys" protecting their turf from innovation, as in the medical racket and [cancer treatment](#). Most inventors we met were greedy. Their greed and dishonesty sabotaged more deals than being squashed by the "bad guys." Also, Dennis' allies hurt him more often than the "bad guys," also having greed as their primary motivation, when it came time to show their true colors. The same happened with most employees, when times got tough.

One group we dealt with was Australian, and they developed a plastic house. It was made of a revolutionary plastic, and was made into modular pieces. A three-man team could build a house from it in two days without even using a hammer, and it would last nearly two thousand years. The houses looked good, and were cheaper than houses of today. As usual, they ran into many obstacles, such as the construction industry trying to wipe them out, their partners making things difficult, etc. If homes were made from that plastic, the world would be housed in a few years at significant cost, but then nobody would need to build a house for two thousand years. In the United States today, about two hundred billion dollars a year is spent on residential housing, with about another hundred billion a year spent on non-residential construction.

It is not *any* stretch of the imagination to see a worldwide construction project where everybody gets a home that will last two thousand years. That is only one way to do it. There [are others](#). In those scenarios, everybody has a dwelling that is paid for, free and clear, and it will last thousands of years. Amortized over two thousand years, the cost of housing virtually vanishes. Also, it would end one of the darker aspects of our "civilization" - most Americans and most people on earth are only a few paychecks away from being thrown out onto the streets. It is a barbaric and inhumane system, but is a great racket for [banks](#), the construction industry and other predators. That global housing situation is a major reason why people live lives of quiet desperation, knowing they are always near the edge, and have to keep punching that clock or be homeless. The housing situation helps keep humanity enslaved. Houses can be made out of completely recyclable materials, have high quality, can be made to exist in harmony with the environment, to where humanity could live indefinitely on the earth, with dwellings that cost virtually nothing.

Agribusiness

When the [USDA tried regulating the organic food industry](#) in a way that would have nearly eliminated it, the voice of agribusiness was heard. Fortunately, 250,000 American voices, including mine, were heard, so we won that round. The bedrock of the world economy is food, and has been so for as long as human beings have walked the earth. [Agriculture probably began](#) when hunter-gatherers [drove all the easily hunted big animals to extinction](#). Ever since, the "agricultural surplus" has been the basis for all the world's civilizations. As forests are the primary creator of soils, razing forests to grow crops has always eventually destroyed the soils. Deforestation, irrigation and plow agriculture led to soil salination, mineral depletion, soil loss and desertification. The [long, slow decline of Sumeria](#) demonstrated the long-term effects of agriculture; the Fertile Crescent is largely desert today. Modern industrial farming, combined with [neocolonialism](#), has wreaked environmental devastation on a much vaster scale and far more swiftly.

As civilizations rose and fell, with copper, [bronze](#) and [iron](#) ages increasing humanity's ability to manipulate the environment, agriculture became more sophisticated. Because North America probably had [the world's healthiest soils in 1491](#), as the natives lived lightly on the land, the invading Europeans inflicted environmental devastation that had no precedent, but the land had enough biological wealth to survive the onslaught...so far (although events such as the Dust Bowl happened). The rise of capitalism combined with the [rise of the United States](#) led to agricultural empires. There were no robber baron farmers during the Gilded Age, not of the stature of Rockefeller and other industrialists, although there were ranching empires.

For years, I was skeptical that the food industry would turn into a monopolistic/oligopolistic industry, as energy, medicine and other large industries had, because there were so many small farms and growing food is the world's most widespread industry. However, large segments of agriculture have been taken over by corporate conglomerates. Many world food markets are controlled by a handful of companies. For instance, two companies - Cargill and Archer Daniel Midland - control about 80% of the world's grain market.

Monsanto and other companies are creating genetically engineered seeds that create sterile crops, forcing farmers to buy more seeds the next year. They are also making seeds dependent on artificial fertilizers and pesticides. It is even scarier than that. Monsanto came out with Bovine Growth Hormone (BGH), which sucks even more milk and life out of those [factory cows](#). To millions of Americans, such practices are not only scary, but evil. With the introduction of BGH, organic dairy farmers began advertising that there was no BGH in their milk. Because agribusiness companies largely own the USDA, in a classic instance of [regulator capture](#), nobody could count on the USDA to find that BGH was harmful. In an Orwellian summersault, Monsanto sued the organic dairies, trying to *make it illegal for them to state their milk did not have BGH in it*. It is similar to the agribusiness attempts to define “organic” to allow [genetic engineering, irradiation and sewer sludge](#), then outlaw any higher standard. Fortunately, the American legal system is not yet [that far gone](#), and Monsanto did not get its way in court.

Far more frightening than Monsanto’s BGH antics is what is happening in the realm of genetic engineering. As industries vent their pollutants into the environment, with industrial assets such as [Elizabeth Whelan](#) providing helpful disinformation, at least PCBs will one day break down into harmless compounds. With genetically engineered (GE) organisms, however, it may not be possible to stick that genie back into the bottle. There are already cases where GE organisms are inadvertently killing butterflies and other insects. Europe has risen up against the “Frankenfoods” America is producing, and accordingly, American agribusiness, through [neocolonial institutions](#) such as the WTO, are inflicting punishment onto Europe for daring oppose the introduction of GE products. An internal memo leaked from an agribusiness company that presented their strategy. The plan was to flood the world with GE organisms, and as the contamination becomes universal, anti-GE advocates will throw up their hands and surrender. A leaked Monsanto memo showed its global strategy for rigging GE regulation throughout the world. While most Americans sleep through the process, there is a [fierce battle happening across the world](#), as nations resist the introduction of GE foods.

There are horrifying aspects of the current GE craze in agribusiness, but the scariest GE aspect is biological warfare experimentation in the U.S. military establishment, generally with zero oversight from any governing bodies. The U.S. military has long used genetic engineering in its biological warfare research. The “Captain Trips” of Stephen King’s *The Stand* is closer to becoming reality each day. Calling it genetic “engineering” is a misnomer, as scientists barely understand what they are doing, injecting DNA from a fish into a tomato, and seeing what happens. They are playing with forces they do not respect or understand. Toying with life’s building blocks that way, especially when their [understanding of life](#) is so degenerate, may unleash a Captain-Trips-like disease that kills off most of humanity, and *inadvertently*. There is plenty of suppressed and ignored evidence that today’s [orthodox understanding](#) of disease is [flawed](#), and that catastrophic epidemics may be more the result of misery and despair than biological mechanisms. With all the misery being inflicted onto humanity today, with the [United States leading the way](#), a major global epidemic, perhaps something like airborne AIDS, could well sweep humanity, and soon.

The “Green Revolution,” which dramatically increased crop yields for a generation, has been hitting the wall of diminishing returns for years, and at great cost; artificial fertilizers, pesticides and other practices are poisoning the environment at unprecedented levels, and water tables are plunging

across the world from irrigation over-pumping.[\[22\]](#) Asia, with the world's largest population, is rapidly running out of arable land, partly due to its rapid industrialization, as it plays catch-up with the West. Already, China and India are quickly becoming dependent on grain imports from the U.S., Canada, Australia and Argentina. Japan [became grain dependent long ago.](#)[\[23\]](#) The current [global warming](#) trend threatens to create crop failures even more devastating than has been seen in Africa and Asia during the past generation. Exploding human populations, combined with fast-disappearing croplands and forests, combined with global warming and air pollution disasters that have been happening in Asia and Indonesia the past few years, may well conflate into a famine of a magnitude the world has not seen before. If China and India begin starving, it will not happen quietly, and could trigger a global war.

The food industry began rapidly consolidating during the merger and globalization mania of the 1990s, and *global* food monopolies are on their way to becoming a reality. I doubted it was possible fifteen years ago, but have since revised my thinking. Combine that trend with the disinformation about nutrition that industrial hired guns such as [Steve Milloy](#) and [Elizabeth Whelan](#) have been disseminating, and the coming storm clouds are ominous. The food racket is nearly here.

Transportation

The transportation industry is closely related to the [energy racket](#), with car companies working closely with oil companies [to wipe out energy conservation in transportation](#). The transportation racket is about the first one I became aware of, when [my mentor invented the world's best engine](#), and was told to [make his funeral plans](#) if he was serious about developing it. Transportation in America is a virtual monopoly, with nearly every aspect of it controlled by oligopolies that operate in collusion with each other and the energy racket. America's primary mode of transportation is the automobile, and there are essentially three automobile manufacturers in America. The story of the Preston Tucker snuff job, fifty years ago, is a standard case of how the automobile industry protects its turf. The man who told Dennis [how his car company was wiped](#) out is one of many stories like him.

The airline industry now has only two vendors for planes: Boeing and Airbus. Virtually all United States air traffic is controlled by a handful of airlines, and they raise and lower prices in concert. I recently worked in the travel industry, and industry veterans openly admitted that major airlines colluded with each other, which was obvious as they regularly saw them raise and lower prices in unison. The automobile and airplane industries are virtual monopolies, in classic, capitalistic fashion. Monopolies are *a/ways* rackets.

The bona fide conspiracy between General Motors, Rockefeller oil companies and Firestone Tire to dismantle mass transit systems in America, especially in Los Angeles, is well known, performed under the rubric of National City Lines during the 1930s. There were many activities engaged in where oil and automobile interests had an interlock of interests, with the public paying dearly, such as [putting lead into gasoline](#).

I have heard first-hand tales about how [General Motors stole innovations from inventors](#), and have encountered many other instances of theft, such as the mechanism for intermittent windshield wipers, [power steering](#), etc., while suppressing other innovations, [such as high efficiency carburetors](#). Automobile companies steal what they can, [wipe out competitive upstarts](#) with kangaroo court and other strategies, [foist poisons onto the public](#) and are the world's most effective practitioners of "planned obsolescence," where technology is designed to quickly become obsolete, in order to sell the next version of it, keeping the consumer running in a kind of squirrel wheel. The automobile industry epitomized U.S. capitalistic gangsterism.

This transportation racket section will conclude with a personal anecdote. Walk into any auto parts store and see the shelves where windshield wipers are sold, with the packaging boasting that the wipers are made of "natural rubber." Some wiper blades will be treated with graphite, for a smoother wipe and longer life, which cost more than twice what other blades cost. That entire wiper section is completely unnecessary. Those "natural rubber" blades need to be replaced each year because the blades' edges wear out. The "natural rubber" blade is about the flimsiest one that can be put on a car. There are many kinds of rubber, and automobile tires are made from Nordel rubber. Nordel is a specially treated rubber, so tires last 60,000 miles and more while running over roads, not smooth windshields. In 1990, I saw a mail order ad for wiper blades made from Nordel rubber, which were guaranteed to last for the car's life. They sold for less than \$20 for a pair, about twice what normal blades cost. I bought two pairs for my cars. Unfortunately, they put their "indestructible" blades in cheap plastic frames, and one pair broke during the first Ohio snowstorm it was in, as the frames had to contend with the strain of snow and ice on the windshield. That was an example of the poor design decisions that [plague all inventing](#). The other pair's frames, however, did not break in snowstorms. Those blades worked fine for the next eight years, until my car was destroyed by another car crashing into it. If my car had not been destroyed, I am sure those blades would be serving me today, more than eleven years later.

Today, nobody sells Nordel blade windshield wipers, except for extremely high-end wipers for RVs and such, costing more than one hundred dollars per pair. Why? Putting Nordel rubber in windshield wipers on cars in the factory would cost only a few cents more per car, and those blades would last for the car's life. Instead, there is an entire industry devoted to replacing windshield wipers every year. The windshield wiper blade industry is a scam. That is only one minor component of cars, but that situation typifies the kinds of "planned obsolescence" and other activities that are outright racketeering.

Waste Management

Waste management is a huge racket, and part of a diabolical design. One favorite racketeering strategy is to make a huge amount of money in creating a problem, and then make a huge amount of money in "solving" it. The "solution," however, is never the best one, and the public is milked for generations to "solve" the problem. The nuclear energy industry is a classic example of that strategy. Free energy [has probably been suppressed](#) for nearly a century, going back to [Tesla](#) and even earlier. The nuclear industry created immense environmental devastation and [human harm](#) in

producing and refining the uranium used. Vast sums of money have been made in that business. The [war racket](#) also came to that trough, with the insane (or diabolically sane) buildup of nuclear weapon stockpiles. Cleaning the mess up is another huge racket. [I spoke at Department of Energy \(DOE\) hearings](#) regarding the nuclear waste problem. The nuclear waste problem is one of the more dangerous that faces humanity at this time, and the management of it has turned into a racket, with viable solutions ignored, as even admitted to us by the DOE.

With more mundane waste, such as municipal garbage and landfills, it is well known that organized crime virtually runs the industry in America, especially in Chicago, New York and other eastern American cities. During my days with Dennis, I watched ingenious answers to municipal and industrial waste problems be squashed by those who run the waste management racket.

When the CIA is examined, with [Wall Street dominating it](#), and it [hiring the Nazis](#) and the Mafia, the realization quickly arrives that there is little difference between a Nazi, a gangster, and a CIA civil servant. They all work for the same team. As [Smedley Butler remarked](#), members of the Italian Mafia are minor leaguers. The Mafia does stuff such as take over labor unions and municipal waste management, and serve as [drug middlemen](#). That is the small stuff. The big rackets are taking over the federal government and managing nuclear waste, sending out armies to enslave entire nations and [running the prisons](#). That is the big time racketeering. The Mafia are small timers, which is why they end up in prison. The big time criminals, such as most of our [U.S. Presidents](#) and [corporate executives](#), never go the prison, although the blood on their hands is vastly greater than Al Capone could have ever aspired to. The big gangsterism is done while [waving the flag](#), sitting atop skyscrapers, lounging on palatial estates and pursuing the sacred profit. Most of waste management is a waste, with cheap and effective solutions wiped out, and answers such as not creating the waste in the first place, or [completely recycling it](#), forbidden.

The Capitalism Racket

This essay could present the racketeering aspects of many other industries and professions, but the point has probably been made: they are *all* self-serving above all else, because [people are mostly self-serving](#). When American executives candidly admit the only purpose their industries have in existing is not serving the public, [but making a profit](#), it is admitting that serving others is a charade, as the real purpose, the *overriding* purpose, is serving one's self.

This site's [series of racketeering essays](#) has examined industries and professions whose revenues total far more than half of America's economy; none of them deserve to be the size they are, and industries such as [energy](#) and [war](#) do not deserve to exist at all. To state that half of America's economy is worthless might be conservative. It might be more than two-thirds.

In the medical racket, monopolistic practices are not undertaken by one company, but there is a [monopoly of method](#). The [life insurance racket](#) was also that way, as [are the oil companies](#). There

can be a number of players, usually a few big ones, but they all sell the same shoddy product for about the same price. The "innovations" are never significant, with far more flash than substance, and the cash registers keep ringing. It is not a law of nature that a few big players come to dominate all those industries. It is how earthly power works, always grabbing for more. [Greed is always insatiable](#), because it is rooted in an irrational fear. That is why all industries tend towards monopoly: it eliminates the competition so huge profits can be made from milking the captive consumer. There are no free markets. Wall Street's mega-merger mania is part of the phenomenon.

Capitalists hate the idea of competition, and their primary goal is eliminating it (John Rockefeller even called competition a "sin"), as [Adam Smith observed](#). It is the essence of capitalism. Capitalists eliminate the competition any way they can. If their competitive adversary is too big, they either collude with them or buy them out. If their adversary is somebody [small like Dennis](#), they squash them using the system they control, which includes the [press](#) and [legal system](#). It does not always have to be a "conspiracy," as such. The [Western press is corporately owned](#), virtually without exception. Therefore, corporations can do no wrong, and the general worldview the media presents is how great capitalism is, *because the capitalists own them*. The same people own the government and [legal system](#), just as [John Jay said](#), so the [media](#) and legal system can deliver [a devastating one-two punch](#) to Dennis and other hero/martyrs, with only a few people really being in on it.

Capitalism, organized religion, nationalism and all the "isms" have degenerated into rackets. Adam Smith had interesting ways to look at capitalism, something that existed before he gave it a name and provided a theoretical framework. Smith would not have approved of today's corporate capitalism. Smith called the profit motive the "vile maxim of the masters." Corporate capitalism, as with [colonialism](#), is another way to [exploit the masses](#), while calling it "[progress](#)." Smith and Marx agreed that the workers should control the capital. The corruption of the ideal that Smith saw is similar to the way that [Jesus' message was corrupted](#), Buddha's, Mohammed's, etc.

A Jesus, Einstein or Adam Smith will look at the world in a new way. Their vision is extraordinary, and usually far ahead of its time. It soon becomes co-opted by the greedy and power-hungry, who twist it in sometimes subtle ways to serve their ends. The fraudulent aspect is how the corrupted message becomes a dogma drilled into people's heads, and a twisted version of the original vision is used to control people, keeping them part of an exploitable herd. Every "ism" is like that, without exception.

Smith saw economic dynamics as separated into rents, wages, interest and profits. Standing alone, that can be a useful way of looking at it, but in other ways it makes [presumptions](#) that other societies did not necessarily share. Rent is considered the economic exchange for land use. The presumption underlying that idea is that somebody owns the land. As pure theory, the idea has merit in that land has a real cost associated with using it. Yet, Native Americans, for instance, could not comprehend the concept of [owning the land](#), even when it had been imposed on them for centuries as a way to dispossess them. To many Native Americans, owning land was like owning the sky. Owning *anything* is an egotistical and materialistic concept. All we truly own are our bodies while we are here.

Smith's concept of wages was imputing a cost for performing labor. By itself, the idea has merit, but it became corrupted just as the rent concept has. While Smith was writing, slavery was alive and well, so the idea of owning people was popular. With the Industrial Revolution, which Smith specifically

wrote about, the idea of renting people instead of owning them gained in popularity. Again however, the idea as enacted today is that of a fixed wage, as there is a fixed rent. Those are *presumptions*, not laws of nature. The way Smith separated capital from land and labor was an artificial designation. In capitalism, there is a fundamental antagonism between capital and rent and wages. Capital is nothing more than the fruit of land and labor that somebody skimmed off, calling it their own. The capitalist commands the land and labor, usually violently, setting fixed rates for their use, and the capitalist gets what is left over. In practice, capital represents little more than theft, cleverly done. Capitalism is anything but democratic. Communism was a flawed attempt at economic democracy. Its great flaw was that it was not voluntary.

It was weird to finally read some Marx during my awakening and see that he was saying things I had already figured out on my own, from *within the capitalist system*. [Butler](#) did not denounce America's capitalist imperialism because he was a Marxist. He came to his conclusions from having open eyes and the honesty to admit what he saw. The same goes for [Ralph McGehee](#). McGehee was a true believer in his anti-communist mission. He realized the dishonesty of it from the inside, and realized it *because* he believed in his indoctrination, so much so that his Boy Scout honesty drove him to pursuing his ideal, to finally discovering the Big Lie he had been fed. He also realized that nobody else wanted to hear it, because it might lead them to question what they were doing, and few are brave enough to do that. To paraphrase a Catholic pope, "If you brainwash them when they are young, they will never overcome it."

What Native Americans called Mother Earth [became the white man's "capital."](#) One man's living space or labor is stolen or exploited and called capital by the thief. Smith's theorizing is an abstraction, a systematic and artificial way of viewing the world. By itself, there is nothing wrong with that, or Marx's theorizing. They are not reality, but *theories*. When they become dogmatic catechisms drilled into young heads like mine, then they become methods of control. *There is no ideological system worth believing in.* Any system is simply a tool. Do we not discard wrenches if they break and are no longer useful? The systems usually benefit those who devised them; which includes nationalism, religion and communism.

Corporations are artificial entities that capitalists have worked hard at giving superhuman rights.[\[24\]](#) It has created extremes that earth has never seen before, where Bill Gates' net worth is greater than the combined net worth of more than 100 million of his fellow countrymen, a fortune he amassed in the span of twenty years. That is not a law of nature, but the outcome of a system founded upon [greed](#). It is not Bill Gates' fault; he is just a lucky player in a lottery that most Americans want to play. Corporate capitalism's great crimes are about not sharing the wealth, and [destroying](#) the world's [real wealth](#) at an unprecedented pace. Global corporate capitalism is [international piracy](#) wearing pinstriped suits. It used to wear top hats. Now it has gone "casual."

Activists are proposing common sense solutions to limit corporate power, and it has the capitalists shaking in their wingtips. One proposal is that if a corporation does something truly reprehensible (as most of the *Fortune* 500 has), the government has the power to revoke its charter, dissolving the corporation, distributing its assets to the injured and society at large, and the world has one less rapacious corporation. That may get the attention of shareholders and the nature of their societal responsibilities. [Profits are not sacred](#), but are another artificial aspect of corporations. The

sacredness of profits sanctifies being [self-serving](#). Other activist proposals are: banning political advertising on television, [which is largely mud wrestling anymore](#), which would be welcome to everybody in America, except those who own the politicians; stripping corporations of those superhuman rights; trust busting the [media](#), breaking up its corporate ownership; and others.[25] The burgeoning [Enron](#) and related scandals will make those “outlandish” solutions seem far more realistic, although [America’s corporate-owned politicians](#) cannot be counted on to lead the effort, or even help it much. They may be virtually forced to ratify the inevitable, but they are far greater obstacles to needed change than leaders of it. They sold their souls a long time ago, and many of them do not even realize it.

This site’s racketeering essays have made the case that most the United States economy is a tremendous waste of time by most of the people involved. Tomorrow, 95% of the doctors, lawyers, politicians, accountants, soldiers, journalists and corporate executives could be relocated to the moon, and American society would be better off. Industries such as [energy](#), [transportation](#), [agribusiness](#) and the [military](#) are destroying this planet, for a very short-lived “benefit,” if any. Not only are those professions and industries largely worthless, they have held back humanity from true progress as they protected their turf. All that racketeering is the primary reason why the American standard of living has been declining for a generation.

The primary purpose of this site, however, is showing that we [can have a completely healed humanity and planet](#), and soon, if we *care*. Our fate rests in *our* hands.

Footnotes

[1] Pens, Dan. “Microsoft ‘Outcells’ Competition”. *Z Magazine*. May 1996 pp. 47-49. See also *The Celling of America*, edited by Dan Pens and Paul Wright.

[2] McCall. *Makes Me Wanna Holler*. P. 175.

[3] Dacey, Norman F. *What’s Wrong with Your Life Insurance*. p. 14.

[4] See Dacey’s *What’s Wrong with Your Life Insurance*, especially page 101 where he summarizes the income and benefit payments of the life insurance industry from 1970 to 1986. Payments were 43% of income for those years.

[5] Gilbert, Jersey and Schultz, Ellen, eds. *Consumer Reports Life Insurance Handbook*. p. 50.

[6] The life insurance industry income for 1992 was \$426 billion dollars, the latest number I found when I looked years ago. This data is out of date, but nothing significant has happened to change the dynamics that I know of.

[7] A brief summary of the situation is in Gilbert, Jersey and Schultz, Ellen, eds. *Consumer Reports Life*

Insurance Handbook, p. 58 and Dacey, Norman F. *What's Wrong with Your Life Insurance*. pp. 400-401.

[8] Joseph Stiglitz was the World Bank's chief economist. Before the World Trade Center attacks, he came forward with information confirming the exact scenario I am painting here. Stiglitz was involved with the neocolonial raping of post-Cold-War Russia, selling off state assets at fire sale prices to corporations. See Gregory Palast's "Four Steps to IMF Damnation," published on August 23, 2001, by [ZNet](#).

[9] See Brad Knickerbocker's "Where America Stands Among World Empires," *Christian Science Monitor*, December 29, 1999. Jimmy Carter said regarding U.S. foreign aid to poor nations, "We are the stingiest nation of all." The world's richest nations (the West and Japan) formed the Organization of Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD). Official Development Assistance (ODA) is given to poor nations by the rich ones. The United Nations set a target of 0.7% of Gross Domestic Product (GDP) of ODA for the OECD nations. U.S. aid has continually shrunk since the Cold War ended, and in 1999, of the 22 nations in OECD, the United States ranked dead last in percent of GDP for its ODA, at 0.1%. Few nations met the 0.7% goal, and the median was about 0.3%. The United States was a third of the median. It is even worse than that, because most of the "aid" that the United States gives is tied to U.S. business deals, where the "aid" is more to gain market penetration for U.S.-based corporations or other corporate benefit. In reality, almost no American "aid" benefits the world's poor, and in fact it usually makes their plight worse, with military aid propping up some of the most brutal regimes on earth.

[10] See Barbara Garson's Johannesburg and New Jersey Water, August 26, 2002, by [ZNet](#).

[11] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, pp. xi, 14.

[12] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, pp. 199-200.

[13] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, p. 18. See also Stephen Kinzer's *All the Shah's Men*.

[14] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, p. 139.

[15] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, p. 142.

[16] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, p. 138.

[17] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, pp. 154, 162.

[18] See John Perkins' *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man*, pp. 148, 167-172..

[19] "War against the poor" is the title of the book by Jack Nelson-Pallmeyer, which shows how such neocolonial, "low intensity" tactics are inflicted on the world's poor. His book focused on Central America in the 1980s. At home in America, Michael Hudson's *Merchants of Misery* shows how similar strategies are directed toward America's poor.

[20] Michael Grant's *The Fall of the Roman Empire* mentions some of those dynamics.

[21] Walsch, *Conversations with God*, book 3, p. 311, 362.

[22] Today, there are huge "dead zones" in the Baltic and Black Seas and the Gulf of Mexico, due to agricultural pollution (mostly from nitrogen farming practices, to increase crop yields) and other man-made problems.

[23] See Lester Brown's "Facing the Prospect of Food Scarcity," in *State of the World 1997*, pp. 23-39, and Gary Gardner's "Preserving Global Cropland," pp. 42-59.

[24] See Korten's *When Corporations Rule the World*, pp. 53-101

[25] See, for instance, David Korten's "A Common Sense Citizen's Agenda" in Danaher, *Corporations are Gonna Get Your Mama*, pp. 163-170.

The Next Section: [Julian Simon, Whaling and the "Good News"](#) (67K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Julian Simon, Whaling and the "Good News"

By Wade Frazier

[Julian Simon and *The State of Humanity*](#)

[Preindustrial Whaling and the Good News](#)

[Modern Whaling](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Julian Simon and *The State of Humanity*

Julian Simon was a conservative economist whose life purpose appeared to be trumpeting the world's "good news," and how humanity was increasingly better off. His magnum opus, *The State of Humanity*, appears to be a conscious pun on the Worldwatch Institute's annually published *The State of the World*. Whereas *The State of the World*, is usually, though not always, alarming reading regarding global trends, *The State of Humanity* seems to be a conscious counterweight to that mentality.

Julian Simon was a prominent media figure in the late 1990s, with his message of "good news" and everything getting better. *The State of Humanity* consists of 58 chapters from various experts regarding issues such as economics, agriculture, natural resources, pollution, and slavery, crime and other social issues.

As I looked at the book's table of contents, I recognized some of the experts' names. At least some of them are establishment ideologues. Under a heading of "Can All This Good News be True?" Simon stated, "But what about the other side's data? There are no other data."[\[1\]](#) I read books by the experts who wrote the "good news," and researched several areas much deeper. The more I read and researched, the angrier I became.

Elizabeth Whelan wrote the book's only chapter on general chemical pollution. Today, the United States produces hundreds of millions of tons of hazardous waste each year (hundreds of times more than it produced in the 1940s), which is far more than half of the world's hazardous waste production. I had

seen Whelan's name before. I read five of her books, while looking at other sources of information about her. Her co-author for some books was Frederick Stare, who founded the Harvard Department of Nutrition. Stare was a prominent nutritional expert for many years in America, with a regular newspaper column in over 100 American newspapers. Here is some of the advice he regularly provided in his columns and other publications.

"In the feeding of hospital patients, more attention should be given to providing tasty and attractive meals, and less on the nutritive quality of the food."

"People say that all you get out of sugar is calories, no nutrients.... There is no perfect food, not even mother's milk."

"Have confidence in America's food industry. It deserves it."[\[2\]](#)

"There is no convincing evidence that in the average American diet decreasing the intake of sweets will lessen tooth decay."

"Sugar is a quick energy food and pleasant to take. Sugar does not contain any appreciable amounts of vitamins and minerals, furnishing calories only. Even people on a severe reduction diet can afford to put a teaspoonful of sugar in their coffee or tea three or four times a day."

"Those who speak with disdain of the empty calories of sugar or fat in processed foods as though they were a blight are also doing a fair share of exaggeration. The empty calories of sugar and fat have always been important to any normal, well-balanced, nutritious diet and add taste, zest and pleasure to a meal."[\[3\]](#)

Here is my favorite Stare quote:

"...those who proclaim that 'natural vitamins' are better than 'synthetic vitamins' are just plain stupid."[\[4\]](#)

Stare's advice became infamous in numerous circles for its disinformational and anti-nutritional agenda. Those quotes I found in my library at home. There is always a risk of being quoted out of context, so I read two books that Stare and Whelan co-authored, *Panic in the Pantry* and *Balanced Nutrition: Beyond the Cholesterol Scare*. Stare was not taken out of context. His quotes deserved exclamation points behind them. Whelan was a student of Stare's at Harvard, and is his professional descendant. I read three other books Whelan authored by herself: *Preventing Cancer*, *A Smoking Gun: How the Tobacco*

Industry gets away with Murder, and Toxic Terror.

In all five books, the authors question the motivation of health activists who did not toe the agribusiness/USDA/chemical company/food processor party line. Anybody who disagreed with the voices of authority on issues of nutrition and health were attacked, sometimes very mean-spiritedly, and their integrity and motivation was called into question, suggesting that their activism was motivated by cashing in on their nutritional answer. In *A Smoking Gun*, Whelan suggested that Ralph Nader was in the pay of the tobacco companies, taking it easy on them while attacking other enemies of public health.

Stare's Department of Nutrition at Harvard has long been bankrolled by the food processing companies, and his department kept producing "research" that showed how nutritious processed food was. Stare became a favorite hired gun of the food processing companies. In 1970, there was a scandal around the nutritional quality, or lack thereof, of breakfast cereal. A Consumer Subcommittee of the Senate Commerce Committee convened to examine the issue. Stare testified as an expert witness. He admittedly attended the hearings at "the request of Kellogg Company and the National Biscuit Company." During the hearing, it came out that four percent of his Department of Nutrition budget was provided by the cereal industry. That led one newspaper to drop his national column, apologizing into its readers "for presenting the views of one who was not as unattached as we thought or wanted him to be."[\[5\]](#)

Whelan is Stare's professional descendant in more ways than one. Many years ago she founded, and ever since has been the president of, the American Council on Science and Health (ACSH). Her position at ACSH earns her more than \$200,000 per year. In 1985, she published her magnum opus, *Toxic Terror*. In *Toxic Terror*, she again questioned the motivation of anybody who fought the proliferation of corporate chemicals. She also wrote proudly of her motivation for writing *Toxic Terror*, as a "concerned American citizen, taxpayer, wife and mother."[\[6\]](#) In *Toxic Terror*, Whelan defended DDT, Nuclear Energy, PCBs, PBBs, formaldehyde, dioxin, and pesticides. Her defenses of chemical poisons and nuclear energy did not impress me, and I spent many days researching her work in *Toxic Terror*.

In 1989, a few years after *Toxic Terror* was published, Whelan attacked the Natural Resources Defense Council ([NRDC](#)) for publicizing scientific research showing that Alar was potentially harmful, especially to children. Alar was a chemical used to keep ripening apples on the tree until harvest time. Scientific research was showing that Alar was carcinogenic, and the EPA was already moving to ban it when the NRDC began a campaign to make it a public issue. The Alar issue became a parable of corporate chemicals and the ferment around their use, and Whelan and her ACSH led the attack on the NRDC and others against Alar.[\[7\]](#)

The next year, Howard Kurtz of the *Washington Post*, writing for the *Columbia Journalism Review*, gave Whelan's "selfless attacks" on all those "self-serving" environmental and health activists a near-fatal blow by an article published in March 1990. In the article, Kurtz contrasted Whelan and ACSH's stands on various foods and chemicals with those who funded her organization. Kurtz wrote that the maker of Alar, Uniroyal Chemical Company, donated at least \$25,000 to ACSH. Kurtz pointed out numerous other questionable stands that Whelan and ACSH took. Whelan defended the nutritional properties of fast food while getting money from Burger King. Whelan openly questioned the link between high dietary fat and disease while taking money from Oscar Meyer, Frito Lay, Hershey Food Fund and Land O'Lakes. Whelan defended saccharine and received money from Coca-Cola, Pepsi, NutraSweet and the National Soft Drink Association. Whelan defended pesticides while receiving "donations" from pesticide makers. Kurtz presented other instances of Whelan's conflict of interest, such as defending hormones in cows

while receiving money from the National Dairy Council and the American Meat Institute. He concluded his article with, "Perhaps it would be best to say that she enthusiastically embraces the chemicals-are-safe philosophy of those who happen to support her financially. People ought to know that so they can digest her views with whatever grains of salt they deem necessary."

How did Whelan react to such a scandalous disclosure? In 1990, the ACSH stopped publishing its funding sources.^[8] That in itself was somewhat strange, as in Kurtz' article, Whelan was quoted as saying, "I'm very proud of my corporations. I put their names all over my literature." Not anymore. Hit the ACSH web site today and try finding the names of its corporate sponsors. Whelan's and Stare's repeated attacks were shocking enough, but their hypocrisy was astounding.

Whelan's attacks on Ralph Nader's funding and the motivation of others appear a tad disingenuous, something that Kurtz reported on. Yes, some of the money that funded the Nader-inspired Center for Science in the Public Interest came from tobacco heirs; people who inherited tobacco fortunes handed down for generations, and were donating some of it to "liberal" causes. That is very different from Whelan getting money directly from corporations (or "foundations" that they fund) whose products she defends.

Whelan, to her credit, hit the nail on the head in defending herself. She said,

"Everyone is funded by someone...if you consider the possibility that we do believe in what we are doing - it is wrong to terrify people about trace levels of chemicals that cause cancer in mice - where would you get the money? Where would such money come from that would not be tainted?"

How about from the public that you say you are protecting, not the corporations who produce those chemicals? The funding issue is corrupting, and every organization faces it, whether it is idealistic or not. Instead of challenging a system that makes prostitutes out of folks such as Whelan, Whelan is at the head of the line with her hand out.

On the ACSH web site today, they state the position that is also discussed in Kurtz' article, which is that ACSH is "independent." Whelan presents herself as the heroine, standing up to her corporate donors when they try telling her what to write. It seems that many of her corporate donors have made the mistake of assuming that Whelan and ACSH are there to follow their orders. When they try giving Whelan her marching orders, she tells them quite righteously that they are not that kind of organization. Whelan's attitude is something that Noam Chomsky and others remark on about the mainstream media. When responding to the devastating charges of [Manufacturing Consent](#), media personnel have protested that they never get a call from the Pentagon or the corporate boardroom, telling them what to write. Their defense betrays simplistic thinking. As Chomsky and others point out, the system works far more subtly than that. The way that the media, and *any* institution works, is that those who absorb the indoctrination become cogs in the machine. Those who do not absorb the indoctrination, failing to believe the "right" way, do not rise through the ranks. Institutions are not consciously self-destructive. People who challenge the basic tenets of the institution are weeded out in one way or another.

Journalists and investigators who challenge large corporations or other powerful organizations will find

themselves under attack. Sometimes, they die suddenly and mysteriously, as [Danny Casolaro](#) and [Paul Wilcher](#) did. More commonly, their careers are scuttled, as what happened to [Peter Arnett](#), [April Oliver](#), [Jack Smith](#), [Gary Webb](#), [Ray Bonner](#) and [others](#).

In the mainstream media, when journalists step out of line and challenge the powerful, their careers are quickly over. Conversely, if they behave themselves, reporting as the powerful want them to, they can count on a successful career. They may not be too consciously aware of the fate of their power-challenging brethren, or have rationalized it as some ethical breach that they made. If they are typical members of the herd, they internalize the values they have been taught ([such as mainstream oncologists believing in chemotherapy, for instance](#)), and feel they are acting freely as they report their stories (or oncologists thinking that they are saving lives). They respond indignantly to the nearly unanswerable scholarship of Herman and Chomsky in *Manufacturing Consent* with "Nobody tells me what to write!" Not only are there rewards for playing the game properly, there are dire penalties for those who do not. As [Dennis Lee](#) once told me, put a man in a big enough cage, and he thinks he is free.

Whelan's corporate donors do not fund her because they believe in their noble mission. They pay her because of the great propaganda that she provides. Whelan apparently thinks that her organization is a charity. She is her sponsors' "independent" attack dog. If Whelan ever stepped on her sponsors' toes, the money would stop flowing, and she and everybody else knows it. How "independent" is that?

One of her pro-corporate comrades in arms even claimed that she never met a chemical she did not like. [\[9\]](#) Whelan's anti-tobacco stand is probably a smokescreen, attacking the world's most obvious health hazard so she could appear to be a true health activist, while defending the far more insidious threats to our health, and being nicely paid to do it.

Whelan's organization deserves to become widely known as the corporate mouthpiece it is. At the time I was writing the first draft of this essay, Whelan made the front page by attacking a doctor's book that states that women can prevent breast cancer with dietary measures.[\[10\]](#) Whelan even went further than *Toxic Terror* in *The State of Humanity* by also defending [Bovine Growth Hormone](#), [food irradiation](#), aspartame and [fluoride](#).

Other contributors to *The State of Humanity* had similar conflicts of interest.[\[11\]](#) In the data that Simon's authors presented, they played the numbers game to the extreme. The book is nearly a proof of Benjamin Disraeli's quote, "There are three kinds of lies: lies, damned lies and statistics."

For one example of the many statistical games played in *The State of Humanity*, chapter 26, "The Recent US Economy" by Alan Reynolds will serve. Although productivity in America has been barreling right along, meaning that the average American worker produces more per hour of time producing it[\[12\]](#), the real wage per hour has declined for a generation. It went from a peak in 1973 of \$13.40 (in 1997 dollars) to \$12.09 in 1992 (the last year covered in Reynolds' chapter), as American jobs have been shipped abroad to nations [that enslave their populations](#) (mainly U.S. client states), for a decline of nearly 10%. [\[13\]](#) Real wages per hour has been the standard measure of worker income for many years. It is the most equitable measure of worker income, and one of the best standard-of-living measures, something acknowledged by nearly everybody involved. Although Reynolds discussed productivity increases in output *per hour*, even writing about how "impressive" it was, he does not mention the trend in wages *per hour*. Placing those trends side-by-side would collapse his arguments.

Reynolds cleverly misdirected his readers by presenting other statistics. He abandoned real wages per hour to pursue another statistic more to his liking. He presented a measure known as family income. Why does he do that? There are obvious reasons. If a breadwinner's (assume a man here, which is the most common case) wages have declined, but he is able to make up that decline by working overtime and having his wife forced into the labor marketplace (and increasing child labor), then family income can increase. The family works more hours to maintain its standard of living, and a large piece of that increasing "family income" pays for day care, while the mother works outside the home and the father works overtime. That situation is accelerating the American family's disintegration, and creates lifelong pathologies in children raised in that environment, and somehow Reynolds transformed that into "good news." On the issue of wealth, it is well known that nearly the entire increase in national wealth during the 1980s went to the rich.[\[14\]](#) Reynolds preferred to ignore the increase in wealth disparity in America, and instead focused on statistics showing that total national wealth increased. Reynold's chapter was an impressive example of a statistical manipulator at work, transforming dire statistics for average Americans into "good news."

Another expert who wrote two chapters in *The State of Humanity* was Bernard Cohen, who may be the world's biggest cheerleader for nuclear power. His chapters discuss how safe and economical nuclear power is. Cohen made himself famous by offering to eat plutonium to demonstrate how relatively harmless it is. I devoted weeks to researching Cohen's work, and had a head start there, riding in the saddle with Dennis Lee and having to become better informed about nuclear waste to speak at [DOE hearings](#). Will declassified documents in the year 2050 show that Cohen's mission was similar to [Harold Hodge's](#)?

As I read other chapters in *The State of Humanity*, and researched their subjects deeper, the picture became clearer. Simon was scouring the academic waters for the most extreme pro-corporate positions he could find. Presenting Whelan as his sole expert on chemical pollution made the ideological nature of *The State of Humanity* quite plain. For Simon to state that his stable of authors presents the only data existing regarding the issues he presents is stupefying. If Simon's work is not a conscious fraud, it is a stunning example of how deluded an ideologue can get.

Another prominent corporate mouthpiece, who appears to be aspiring to succeed Simon (Simon died in 1998) as a "good news" voice of corporate America is Steve Milloy. [Milloy](#) publishes a vitriolic "Junk Science" Home Page on the Internet. Milloy is similar to Whelan, with a corporate-funded Astroturf organization. Through litigation, it has come to light that Philip Morris funded Milloy's work, even creating his "sound science" organization in order to try derailing the science that shows how harmful second-hand cigarette smoke is. Tobacco interests, polluters and those selling unhealthy products have paid Milloy handsomely for providing his disinformation. The Cato Institute, which avidly promoted Simon's work (Simon was an "adjunct scholar" to Cato), is now promoting Milloy as its new "good news" advocate.[\[15\]](#) Fittingly, a tobacco company shall succeed Simon at Cato.

Instead of presenting a chapter analyzing *The State of Humanity*, this essay will present one of the many detours taken while researching his book. Simon was a capitalistic cheerleader. On page 25 of *The State of Humanity*, Simon rhapsodized about the first oil well, drilled by Drake in 1859 in Pennsylvania, which led to solving the "whale oil crisis." It was a "three cheers for the oil industry" piece. Other work by Simon, whose attitude is reflected in the book's title, demonstrated that he was staunchly anthropocentric, relegating all other species to a service role to humanity, their right to exist only seen in terms of how they

benefit us. When I saw his acclamation for the oil industry and how it dropped the "bottom out of the whale oil market," I read a few books on whaling.

Simon was one of the establishment's intellectual warriors. Whether those warriors are "experts" on [Nightline](#), pro-establishment op ed columnists in the newspapers, university professors and scientists who also consult for corporations, producing scientific arguments and data that "coincidentally" serves the interests of their benefactors, or they run "[Astroturf](#)" fake grassroots organizations that advocate corporate positions from an "independent" activist perspective, or they are "[skeptics](#)" who attack anything not following the scientific establishment's party line, they have usually prostituted themselves. Purveying elite propaganda has its benefits, and it pays well. Among their duties are producing disinformation that helps keep the masses dazed and confused, by presenting views and data that serve the dominant class' interests.

Preindustrial Whaling and the Good News

Simon's "good news" spurred me to obtain a few books on whaling, and although mainly written by pro-whalers, the stories were grim, although the authors did not mean them that way. Simon's focus was on how heroic the petroleum entrepreneurs were, but he ignored [John Rockefeller](#) and the price the *whales* were paying for whale oil.

Aboriginal people have hunted whales since prehistoric times, and the European-dominated commercial phase of whaling began nearly a thousand years ago. The Mediterranean cultures, the Roman Empire most prominently, hunted whales to extinction in the Mediterranean by 500 AD. Hundreds of years later, the Basques began whaling commercially in the Bay of Biscay, between France and Spain. In a few centuries they had "whaled out" the bay. It is also surmised that whales became scarce in the Bay of Biscay because whales began avoiding it. By the 1500s, new whaling grounds were sought, and because Europeans were [learning how to sail the seas and conquer the world](#), new grounds were discovered in Iceland, Newfoundland, and north of Norway, at Spitsbergen. The Spitsbergen whaling grounds were discovered in 1596, and were soon swarming with the usual suspects of European domination: the Dutch, English, French, German and Danish. The experienced Basques originally manned the harpoons in all fleets, however.

All the "great whales" except one, the sperm whale, are called "baleen" whales. Baleen is a sieve in whales' mouths that strains their food from the oceans, usually composed of small shrimp, fish and microscopic life. That food, called krill, plankton and other names, is plentiful in the oceans near the poles, which are primary feeding grounds for baleen whales. At Spitsbergen, the favored catch was called the right whale. It and similar species variations in northern waters went by names such as Greenland and bowhead whales. The term "right" came from seamen picking the "right" whale out of a herd to kill. Right whales were coveted for their ease of killing, the fact that they floated when dead, their high oil yield and their baleen bones (called whalebone), used for women's fashion, fishing rods, chair seats, etc. Whales became one more short-lived [energy resource](#) for humans.

The whalers at Spitsbergen made it big, and whaling became a major industry. By about 1637, the Dutch had more than three hundred ships at Spitsbergen and 18,000 men, all cashing in on the "whale rush."

The [incessant European wars](#) interrupted the frenzy at times, but in 1719 the Dutch began sailing past Greenland to the Davis Straits, as the European side of the Atlantic was “whaled out.”[\[16\]](#) Before long, the English colony of Massachusetts joined the whaling boom.

In the early days of Europe's invasion of North America, whales were plentiful. One could stand on the seashore and watch whales swim past in endless procession. The natives sometimes fished for whales, and used drugged harpoons to kill them. It is said they taught the Europeans how to whale in the native style, and as the Europeans were annihilating the natives they began an epoch of whaling that became a big part of the New England economy...for a while. As with [bison skinners](#), [passenger pigeon](#) hunters, [Midwest loggers](#) and [Indian fighters](#), whaling lasted while the whales did.

At first, the industry consisted of scavenging whales that washed ashore. Then, as they saw money in it, they sent small boats from shore to kill the whales swimming by, and the industry was off and running. In a celebrated case in 1672, a right whale swam into Nantucket harbor, lazily swimming around and spouting off for a few days. It did not take long for a few enterprising residents to make a harpoon, set out in a small boat and kill the whale. Nantucket's future was thereby sealed: it became America's first whaling center.

The New England shore was quickly “whaled out.” Yankee ingenuity and cupidity would not be thwarted that easily. Bigger boats were built to go farther to kill the increasingly scarce whales. The European and American fleets converged on the Davis Straits near Greenland. In 1737, there were about sixty American whaling ships in the Davis Straits, competing with the Europeans. It was not long before the Davis Straits was “whaled out,” and new grounds were sought. Many thousands of whales were being killed for their oil and fashionable bone.

As each area was whaled out, new places were sought and the “whale rush” continued. Baffin Bay, the Grand Banks, the Saint Lawrence Gulf and vicinities were all opened to whaling operations during those easy whaling days of pre-Revolutionary America. As the North Atlantic was being whaled out, new grounds were sought to keep the industry going, and soon fleets were sailing to Africa, the Caribbean and South America in search of whales.

In pre-Revolutionary America, a new chapter in whaling unfolded. In the early 1700's, the high quality (and quantity) of oil that could be obtained from sperm whales was noted, and that, combined with the increasing scarcity of the easy-to-kill right whales, created the sperm whale boom. There was a major problem with sperm whales however: they were the only predatory great whales. The right whales were docile creatures, as are most baleen whales, and barely struggled when killed. The sperm whale, on the other hand, was a predator and knew how to fight back. The quest for sperm whales made whaling dangerous. Sperm whales regularly crushed (sometimes in their mouths) the small whaling skiffs that went after them, and they rammed and sank a number of big whaling ships. Sperm whale oil, and the valuable ambergris in their intestines, made it worth it. America's underclass, newly freed slaves and others at the lowest rungs of society, manned the whaling parties, as the poor always do this world's dangerous work. That era of whaling inspired *Moby Dick*.

During the [American Revolution](#), the British easily captured almost all of America's whaling fleet, and the crews were impressed into British service...as whalers. Those captured Americans kept whaling during the Revolutionary War, but for King George, and the whales' decimation continued. After the Revolutionary War, New Bedford, Massachusetts became the new capital of whaling. The British

destroyed America's whaling fleet in the War of 1812, but it barely slowed the industry. Whaling boats were made bigger and bigger to go farther and farther to catch the increasingly elusive whale. The typical whaling pattern was to find virgin seas where whales were, then the world's whaling fleets would descend upon the area, whaling until the whales were gone. It became a global whale rush. Virginal whaling grounds found and the year of their opening were: Brazil Banks, 1774; Madagascar, 1789; Chile, 1790; offshore Chile in mid-pacific, 1818; Japan, 1820; Zanzibar, 1828; Kodiak, 1835; Kamchatka, 1843; Okhotsk Sea, 1847, Bering Sea and Arctic Ocean, 1848.[\[17\]](#) The world was being scoured of whales. In the Arctic, the whalers supplemented their catch by killing as many polar bears, walruses and seals as they could.[\[18\]](#)

American whaling's peak volume year was 1847, and then the decline began. Whaling expeditions went from being done from the Massachusetts shoreline in rowboats, to global expeditions. In 1846, there were 736 American whaling ships on the water, three quarters of the world's fleet, and the average time at sea for a whaling expedition was approaching three years. *Moby Dick* was published in 1851. In a telling insight into the whaling crews' mentality and general attitude of the times, in 1849 the Pacific whaling fleet was "crippled" when [gold was discovered in California](#), because the crews deserted ship in San Francisco and swarmed into the gold fields.[\[19\]](#)

The sailors were often involuntary. In port towns, unscrupulous innkeepers would allow a man to run up a tab, then one day the man was made quite drunk. When he sobered up, he found himself at sea on a whaling ship. The innkeeper got a nice commission from the whaling ship, and the hapless boarder became a prisoner-whaler. Other ruses got men aboard, as whaling was one of the most disreputable professions around, and it was dangerous, hard, low-paying work.[\[20\]](#)

In 1846, the same year America [began its theft of several western states from Mexico](#), the whalers showed up on California's coast. The gray whale migrated up and down North America's West Coast, and whalers killed them enthusiastically. Whaling in the shallow lagoons and bays of Baja California was dangerous work because the gray whale often fought back, earning it the name "devil-fish." One technique to safely kill a gray whale was harpooning a whale calf and tethering it offshore, shooting the mother as it tried aiding its calf. Within a generation, gray whales were more than 90% exterminated, and they were thought to be extinct by 1900.[\[21\]](#) The gray whale tale is one of the few stories with a happy ending, so far. During the 20th century, they recovered to their pre-holocaust numbers.

During those glory days that Simon wrote about, when [Drake drilled his oil well in 1859](#), and how there were hundreds of small refiners in America by the 1860s, whaling was already declining. The [Civil War](#) dealt the industry a heavy blow, as more than 100 whaling ships were lost, mostly by high seas piracy by the rebels of the South. *The Shenendoah* dealt the Pacific whaling fleet another crippling blow when it burned and sank most of the Arctic fleet. With declining supply due to the decimated whale population, and fewer ships on the water, and the increasing demand for oil as [America rapidly industrialized](#), yes, the "market" was ripe for petroleum. Oil became the next gold rush, except that gold was black.

Modern Whaling

In 1865, Svend Foyn perfected a method of whaling that had frustrated American and European inventors for generations: an easier way of harpooning and killing whales. A Norwegian, Foyn perfected a gun-propelled, explosive harpoon. His method ushered in the era of "modern" whaling.^[22] Foyn's method quickly took over the industry, and whaling became industrialized. The previous centuries of sailboats and strong harpoon arms paled next to steam-driven ships with explosive harpoons shot from cannons. Whales were then driven rapidly to extinction. With the rise of the petroleum industry and the increasing scarcity of whales, the New England whaling industry collapsed as whaling entrepreneurs rapidly fled the business. Europe did not have the U.S.' vast oil deposits.

While the American whaling industry was collapsing, European whaling entered a new era. Until Foyn's innovation, whalers could not profitably kill a class of whale known as rorquals. Rorquals were much faster swimmers than the easy-to-kill right whale, and they sank when killed. Rorquals were not hunted commercially until the innovations of explosive, gun-propelled harpoons, heavy harpoon lines to keep the whales from sinking, and faster, steam driven boats. Rorqual whales include: blue, fin, sei and humpback whales. The modern age of whaling was born.

The right whale and related species had already been hunted to the brink of extinction. In the Northeast Atlantic, the right whale was considered extinct around 1900. Even today, there are a few thousand surviving globally, at best, after a century of recovery. The typical extermination rate of the great whale species was more than 95%, similar to the decimation rates that native peoples endured due to the world's conquest by Europe.

With the industrialization of whaling the slaughter took place in earnest, although the United States was by that time largely out of the business, as old-style whaling was as dead as the herds of easily killed whales that sustained it. Norway, Japan, Britain and Russia got heavily into the business at one time or another. The Norwegians dominated for fifty years, to eventually leave the business. At the end, only Japan and the Soviet Union were doing much commercial whaling.

The northern oceans were quickly shorn of rorquals. By the early years of the 20th century, only one place had not been pillaged by the whalers: the remote and harsh waters surrounding Antarctica. Centuries of whaling the northern waters made those whales nearly extinct, but the southern waters were ripe for exploitation. The great blue whale lived there by the hundreds of thousands, eating the rich krill. The blue whale is the largest animal earth has ever seen, attaining a length of more than one hundred feet and weighing up to 400,000 pounds. Dinosaurs did not get that big. The Antarctic blue whale became the mother lode of whaling. The modern whaling industry measured all whales by the Blue Whale Unit.

Plundering the Antarctic while scouring the whales' migratory routes along South America, Australia and elsewhere was lucrative while it lasted. *The History of Modern Whaling*, largely written in the 1960s by Norwegians, is a pro-whaling book. The authors' excitement for whaling is evident, but even they have many somber recollections regarding the twentieth century history of whaling, ending with the collapse of commercial whaling during the 1960's, because there were no more whales left to kill. The great blue whale population had been reduced to fewer than 1000 creatures when whaling finally ceased.

The History of Modern Whaling recounts the International Whaling Commission's gyrations during the 1960s (when the whale populations were nearly extinct) and the political maneuvering by the Japanese and Soviets to kill that last whale. The Japanese and Soviets kept lamenting the economic impact of

reducing the whaling quotas. The Japanese capitalized on an apparent species distinction between blue whales and a "new" species they had "discovered," the pygmy blue whale. The pygmy blue whale became a separate species in Japan's eyes, thereby circumventing the quotas.[\[23\]](#) The pygmy blue whale is considered a separate species today, about half of the surviving blue whales. The great blue whale population is a few thousand today, about two percent of its population before the short-lived modern whaling era. As Simon celebrated, humankind is clever and can "substitute" one thing for another when it becomes scarce. As the blue whales were being exterminated (skimming the cream), industrialized whaling also decimated the fin, sei, and humpback whale populations, and the industry eventually stooped to hunt the "tiny" minke whale.

In *The History of Modern Whaling* the authors repeatedly summarized the industry's state, off the African shore for instance, and told how the area was swept free of whales, the industry collapsing there. The whaling nations would point fingers at each other, and the area would be left alone for a decade or two. Then hunting would resume, and within a year the area would be wiped clean again. Not only were the numbers collapsing, but also the whaling phenomenon was similar to the logging situation here in the Pacific Northwest: the first killers on the scene chopped down or harpooned the really big ones. The size of whales caught continued declining, as younger and younger whales were killed.

The sperm whale is the only great whale not nearly eradicated by the whaling industry. Whalers killed a million sperm whales, but two million are estimated alive today. The author of *The Yankee Whaler* noted that sperm whale teeth kept by old sea captains were relics of the good old days, when one whale could yield well over a hundred barrels of oil. The record sperm whale tooth weighed over four pounds. The author noted that the teeth never got over two pounds anymore, and that book was written in the 1920s. The author estimated that not only were the big whales killed long ago, but the sperm whale herds were 90% decimated in his time, judging by how long it took to fill the ship's hold with whale oil.[\[24\]](#)

In another case of economic efficiency, the whale killers became more economical. The Japanese used most of the whale. Japanese people had a yen for whale meat, and meat that had spoiled was used for pet food.[\[25\]](#) In the good old days, particularly with sperm whales, the head was chopped off and the rest of the carcass dumped back into the ocean. That is similar to when the "pioneers" of America's Great Plains [killed bison](#), only removing their tongues if they took anything at all, since millions of those kills were "for sport," often shot from the passing train's windows.

That situation is similar to the practice of "finning" sharks (for shark-fin soup), which is still happening as sharks are hauled out of the ocean, their fins cut off, and then thrown back to die. American fishermen are major offenders. Those practices are driving species to extinction, as fish populations are collapsing globally due to over-fishing, finning, etc. Sharks are becoming threatened with extinction. The situation is becoming so dire that *Time* magazine made it its cover story.[\[26\]](#) Good news cheerleaders can call *Time* magazine a "prophet of doom," but the mainstream media has covered up far more industrial problems than it has exposed them. When *Time* magazine finally wakes up and begins covering it, the environmentalists have been calling attention to it for years.

There are many distressing footnotes to the whaling situation. One is the collapse of the Soviet Empire and many things becoming known which were kept hidden by the Communist rulers. It has been admitted that the Soviet whale catch data from 1947 to 1972 was significantly falsified. In 1996, Dr. Alexey Yablokov, Environmental Advisor to Boris Yeltsin, submitted data to the International Whaling Commission showing that the actual Soviet Antarctic whaling catch was 74% above that reported. The

man who cleaned up Chernobyl and spoke out about it, Dr. Vladmir Chernousenko, has been charged with revealing state secrets, as has Yablokov.[\[27\]](#)

In what is probably the greatest tragedy of all, whales are likely a sentient species. "Sentient" means they have attained the level of whatever humans have that makes us able to learn math, create language, and philosophize. What sets human beings apart from all other species, biologically, and is credited with our "[ascent](#)," is the human brain (and to a lesser extent, our thumbs). We have the largest, most sophisticated and complex brains on earth...almost. Elephants, whales and some dolphins have bigger brains, and the bottle-nosed dolphin's brain is *relatively* larger than ours. We do not have the planet's biggest brains. In light of that fact, experts have stated that having a bigger brain than us may not mean much, and that it does not necessarily make them smarter or "better." That reflects the anthropocentric attitude that the West has held for millennia. At least the West is becoming aware of the cetaceans' potential sentience, although for many years America killed an *average* of 200,000 dolphins a year in its tuna nets. There really is "good news" there: the dolphin kill is now only a few thousand per year to supply America with its tuna, due to dolphin advocacy by a relatively courageous few, those "hysterical" and "self-serving" environmentalists that Elizabeth Whelan and others deride.

Scientists today study dolphins and whales, to a degree, and announce that they sure seem smart, smarter than dogs even. Of course, the American military is investigating how cetacean intelligence can be exploited, turning the few surviving whales into aquatic soldiers, helping keep the world "free." Few scientists have hinted that cetaceans might be smarter than human beings. After all, to borrow a favorite American saying, "If they were so smart, they would be rich!"

Spiritual literature has discussed the sentience of whales and dolphins for many years, stating that they are essentially water people. In an order of magnitude or two beyond the European inability to understand the mind and culture of Native Americans, understanding the way cetaceans think is apparently far, far beyond the capability of our scientists. Cetaceans have evolved in another realm from humans, with no obvious way to manipulate their environment, living in water, etc. We know so little about intelligence itself that statements about them not being as "intelligent" as we are demonstrates the standard Western arrogance. The spiritual literature says that whales think holographically, something linear-thinkers cannot fathom. That would be similar to describing a three dimensional world to a two dimensional person, as in the famous story of the [flatlander A. Square](#), a two-dimensional being, meeting a three-dimensional being from "Spaceland." Mr. Square could not fathom its three-dimensional existence, in a tale written more than a hundred years ago.[\[28\]](#)

Nobody needs to settle for abstract mystical concepts about their sentience and ensoulment. There are many first-person accounts of cetacean intelligence and ensoulment. An argument about ensoulment and cetaceans is pointless with most scientists, because they do not believe that *human beings* are ensouled. In the "scientific" worldview purveyed by [Carl Sagan](#) and friends, humans are bags of chemicals, reacting in unusual and mysterious ways. The mystery of life is a mystery of chemistry to many scientists, and is the scientific establishment's prevailing view today.

Timothy Wylie's amazing account in *Dolphins, Extraterrestrials and Angels* tells a different story. He went to Florida and spent days swimming with a school of dolphins. He did not merely hang out, he had some specific questions, such as: "How do dolphins deal with violence and depredation? How does a complex and sophisticated society sustain a sense of community without apparent instrumentation, artifacts or extra-somatic memory systems (books and the like)? And since UFOs consistently have been

reported entering our oceans, have the dolphins had any contact with them?"[29]

During his stay, all his questions were answered, although he never voiced them aloud. Some questions were answered in spectacular fashion. Wyllie was treated to a private UFO show. Others were answered so remarkably and on the dolphins' terms that Wyllie realized they thought very differently from humans. His testimony is reminiscent of [UFO contactee reports](#), where their questions were answered in a way that made them question the nature of their own minds. They realized that their questions did not necessarily mean much to somebody who thought quite differently. The extraterrestrials' answers make us question how we form our questions, and how we order our minds. Wyllie wrapped up his visit with a spectacular encounter with the dolphins. They deceived him as they encouraged him to shed his mind's preconceptions, and his friends were able to witness the dolphins' gentle friendship, giving "third party" verification of what Wyllie did not even know was happening at the time.

[Michael Roads](#) had an awesome encounter with dolphins at the famed Monkey Mia beach at Shark Bay in Australia, in his book *Journey into Nature*. Again, in his encounter, the dolphins answered his questions in a decidedly non-human and experiential way, and they reinforced their difference from humans in how they approached life, and made clear the equal divinity of humans and dolphins.

People can such testimony *a priori* because it is "anecdotal," "unscientific" and they were not there to see it themselves, and it was "probably fraudulent or imaginary anyway," whatever "imaginary" means. No professional skeptic had actually *tried to have* an experience like Roads' or Wyllie's for themselves. They are more interested in invalidating the experiences of others.

The state of mind allowing such a contact with dolphins also required a particular flexibility of consciousness; the kind that professional skeptics probably cannot muster. Nothing is keeping *you* from seeking out experiences similar to what Wyllie and Roads had.

The cetaceans have apparently forgiven us for our genocide. It is interesting that many humans are beginning to wonder if cetaceans are ensouled, and that is a new and exciting idea, justifiably so. My spiritual literature says that cetaceans are beginning to wonder the same thing *about us*. All they had experienced for centuries was the genocide of their kind, and they did not think that a sentient species could create such mindless destruction.

One need not wax mystical to gain an appreciation of the situation. It is not much of a stretch at all, in light of current scientific understanding, to consider that cetaceans may be sentient, with awareness much like ours, without opposable thumbs. Imagine if an alien race invaded earth and killed 98% of us because some bones in our heads made a nice fashion statement, and our flesh was tasty and useful for one of their new industries. That is close to what the whales have experienced.

Footnotes

[1] Simon, *The State of Humanity*, p. 23.

[2] Those three Stare quotes are from Ralph Hovnanian's *Medical Dark Ages*, p. 87, from three different sources.

[3] Those three Stare quotes are taken from Beatrice Hunter's *Consumer Beware*, pp. 22-23, from various Stare writings.

[4] Beatrice Hunter's *Consumer Beware*, p. 39.

[5] See Beatrice Hunter's *Consumer Beware*, pp. 20-23.

[6] Whelan, *Toxic Terror*, p. 12.

[7] A good and brief summary of the situation is in Ehrlich and Ehrlich, *Betrayal of Science and Reason*, pp. 156-163.

[8] American Council on Science and Health, 1990, *Twelfth Annual Financial Report*. See Ehrlich and Ehrlich, *Betrayal of Science and Reason*, p. 301, n. 31.

[9] That quote is reportedly from Gregg Easterbrook, author of the anti-environmentalist manifesto, *A Moment on the Earth*. See Ehrlich and Ehrlich, *Betrayal of Science and Reason*, p. 301, n. 30.

[10] "Group attacks book on cancer-prevention diet", *The Seattle Times*, Nov. 17, 1998, p. A1.

[11] For instance, Fred Singer is a leading scientist who downplays the notion of [global warming](#), and has consulted for several oil companies, making big money. Singer authored chapter 48 of *The State of Humanity*, titled "Stratospheric Ozone: Science and Policy." Singer was against banning chloro-fluorocarbons (CFCs), and stated that the chemical companies were forced to stop CFC production unfairly. Patrick Michaels is another prominent scientist who downplays global warming, who also makes big money consulting for coal companies and other energy interests, and works for the anti-environmental Cato Institute. (they sold me *The State of Humanity*. I bought many Cato books, studying their brand of scholarship). Michaels authored chapter 49 of *The State of Humanity*, titled "The Greenhouse Effect and Global Change: Review and Reappraisal." See also Ehrlich and Ehrlich, *Betrayal of Science and Reason*.

[12] See *The American Almanac, 1996-1997 edition*, tables 655 and 656. From the tables, it appears that productivity per hour in the American workforce averaged at least a 20% increase between 1973 and 1992, while wages per hour fell about 10%.

[13] See Holly Sklar's "Let Them Eat Cake" *Z Magazine*, November 1998, pp. 29-32. From 1992 to 1997, a period of economic boom times, particularly for Wall Street, the American wage temporarily halted its decline, "soaring" from \$12.09 to 12.26, for an annual increase of 0.28% per year. Is that "good news?"

[14] As a category, only the top five percent of American families had an increase in wealth between 1983 and 1995. See Holly Sklar's "Let Them Eat Cake" *Z Magazine*, November 1998, pp. 29-32. The top 1% has the same amount wealth as the bottom 95%, and the world's richest man, Bill Gates, has more wealth than the 100 million poorest Americans do. A 100 million-to-one ratio is beyond the realm of the surreal, a situation passing in silence among the "good news" crowd.

[15] See Cato Institute's *1999 Publications Catalogue*, p. 4. In Cato's 2002 catalog, even after Milloy has been publicly exposed, he is still their flagship "scientist," beginning its catalog with three of his books.

- [16] Ashley. *The Yankee Whaler*. p. 24.
- [17] Ashley. *The Yankee Whaler*. p. 41.
- [18] Burton. *The Life and Death of Whales*. p. 140.
- [19] Ashley. *The Yankee Whaler*. p. 42.
- [20] Burton. *The Life and Death of Whales*. p. 133.
- [21] Burton. *The Life and Death of Whales*. pp. 149-151.
- [22] Tønnessen and Johnson. *The History of Modern Whaling*. pp. 3-36.
- [23] Tønnessen and Johnson. *The History of Modern Whaling*. p. 614.
- [24] Ashley. *The Yankee Whaler*. p. 73.
- [25] Tønnessen and Johnson. *The History of Modern Whaling*. pp. 720-721.
- [26] *Time*. August 11, 1997.
- [27] In Cetacean Society International, *Whales Alive!* October 4, 1997.
- [28] A reproduction of that classic two-dimensional/three-dimensional dialogue I found in Pursglove, David, ed. *Zen and the Art of Close Encounters*, pp. 59-66.
- [29] Wyllie. *Dolphins, Extraterrestrials and Angels*. p. 18.

The Next Section: [The Savings and Loan Scandal and Public Accounting](#) (98K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The Savings and Loan Scandal and Public Accounting

By Wade Frazier

[A Brief Economic History](#)

[The Biggest Gold Rush of All Time](#)

[The Need for Public Accounting](#)

[The Savings and Loan Industry and What Doomed it](#)

[The Savings and Loan Gold Rush and Public Accounting](#)

[An Enron Postscript and the Next Possible Scandal](#)

[Footnotes](#)

A Brief Economic History

Economic history is an important field of study. In anthropology, whether studying today's hunter-gatherers or performing archeological digs, analyzing evidence that is tens of thousands of years old, the issue of economics can scarcely be separated from the political aspects, and often the spiritual aspects, of the studied societies. In pastoral societies of Asia's steppe regions, wealth was often measured by how many horses somebody had, and he with the most horses was the chief. In the so-called [primitive economies](#), food was the greatest wealth, which was directly related to the land. Food was obtained by labor, so when civilizations arose, land, labor, and food were inextricably linked to the political dynamics, and usually the spiritual/religious dynamics. One theory of political science is that when population densities increase, increasingly stratified political/social structures evolve. As political empires grew, so would their wealth-concentrating capacities. The so-called evolution of hunter-gatherers to domestic farmers and herders and to "civilization" has been called the evolution from egalitarianism to kleptocracy. In the more "primitive" civilizations, everybody was more or less treated equally, while in the more "advanced" societies, the leaders and elite classes were largely power-hungry thieves.[\[1\]](#)

Although such a dynamic is practically considered a "law" of political science, today's political science

evolved in the West, with all the bias that entails. Although that “law” appears to be generally true for places such as the [New World before Columbus stumbled into it](#), there also appear to be significant exceptions, going both ways: of stratified societies that were largely hunter-gatherer, and huge, heavily populated regions that were not steeply stratified.[2] In the “soft” sciences such as anthropology and political science, just as in the hard sciences, the danger is to believe that one’s theories have universal and timeless application, and are “laws.” As Einstein said, *every theory is eventually killed by a fact*.

The earliest industries, such as the forging of copper and iron, grew from artistic endeavors, and the metal that became the subject of more human passion than any other, gold, may have been the first metal that was worked, although it is more generally thought that [copper was worked first](#).[3] The so-called cradle of civilization, the [Fertile Crescent](#) (mainly modern-day Iraq), is apparently where societies first changed from egalitarian to kleptocratic, and where relatively peaceful agricultural societies, with [goddess-based, earth-based religions](#), were overthrown by pastoral tribes who had violent, male sky-god religions, and the “dominator” society that dominates today’s world was born.[4] Gold was associated with the sun, and was considered a sacred substance in many cultures, and was used in artwork. Gold was too soft to make tools or weapons, but it became the artistic and sacred metal.

According to modern archeology’s findings of (always subject to radical revision as more evidence comes to hand, and contrary evidence fights its way past orthodox suppression, and [paradigms shift](#)), slightly behind the rise of [Sumeria](#) in the Fertile Crescent was Egypt, another river-valley civilization. Whereas the Fertile Crescent had little gold, Egypt had the first great gold mines, out in the desert. Worked by slaves, their bones littering the mines, Egypt set the pattern of Western gold mining labor standards. The slaves were deemed expendable, and properly feeding and housing them was more costly than obtaining new slaves, so the logic of the day demanded that the slaves be worked to death in the mines, if they even survived the journey to them.[5] Gold was reserved for royalty, as it was central to Egypt’s sun god religion. Gold abounded in the royal quarters, their thrones and tombs. Gold was officially a royal monopoly, although there was a black market for it. The gold made its way in small measure to the commoners, and the other burgeoning civilizations lusted for it. Pharaohs gave gifts of the highly coveted gold to neighboring rulers, and from the beginning, even the Pharaoh’s gold was debased with copper. The gold buried with the Pharaohs was eventually dug up by grave robbers, making its way into the economy as jewelry and a symbol of wealth.

In the Old Testament, even the Jewish god lusted for gold. When Joshua laid siege to Jericho, with his god’s miraculous aid in crumbling the walls with the sound of trumpets, Joshua’s men killed every man, woman and child in Jericho, as well as all their livestock as “an offering to the Lord” (he spared the prostitute who betrayed her people and harbored Joshua’s spies).[6] Then all the gold, silver, bronze and iron was salvaged and put into the “lord’s treasury.”[7] That was one way of securing the Promised Land and filling up the coffers. King Solomon had his mines, and Jerusalem’s temple was gilt with gold.

Egypt eventually declined, largely from internal corruption and encroachments from its neighbors. From Assyria to Babylonia, from Hittites to Minoans to Phoenicians and Carthaginians, from Persia to Greece, empires continually rose and fell in that region. Gold was a central concern of all of them, and was the universal measure of wealth. As an empire rose, it plundered all the gold it could from its

neighbors. The same piece of gold could pass through many incarnations over the millennia, perhaps starting as a work of art after being gleaned from the earth. Then it was buried with its owner, then the grave was robbed and it was sold for food. Then it was melted down into bullion, then made into a coin, then melted down into a new coin of a new empire, then becoming part of a temple's artwork, then stripped during the sack of a city and eventually made into an ornament, then getting buried again, to be discovered by nineteenth-century grave robbers, and it sits in a museum today. Mining took place across that part of the world, usually in or near mountains. From Central Europe to the Caucasus Mountains, from Ireland to Africa and Persia, gold was being mined, usually by slaves.

The enigmatic Etruscans were awash with gold, and their civilization led to the Roman Empire, which eventually became the known world's center. The Roman Empire is often seen as the pinnacle of ancient civilization, but the Roman experience can make one wonder whether "civilization" is desirable. Using much of what the Etruscans taught them, the Roman Empire built great buildings, roads and aqueducts that people still marvel over. The Roman Empire was also one of the most murderous, greedy and cruel regimes the world has known. Political murder, debauchery and greed were standard features of Roman life. If one became part of the middle class or better, life could be pretty good. Yet, the Roman Empire was built on the blood and bones of those who did the work. Hundreds of thousands of Rome's inhabitants received free food. To entertain the masses, people were forced to murder one another at the various arenas, the grandest being the Coliseum, where the Emperor would lead the festivities. Historian Michael Grant wrote that history's "two most quantitatively destructive institutions are Nazism and the Roman gladiators."[\[8\]](#) Those who died in the arenas were usually slaves, which meant people from lands that Rome conquered.

The slaves often preferred taking their chances in the arenas rather than work in the imperial mines. As with other empires, a primary thrust of the Roman Empire's expansion was securing all lands where gold was found, either plundering the royal treasuries of conquered lands, creating new mines, or taking over existing ones. Rome's most productive mines were in Spain, where a great fountain of gold poured forth, and great piles of corpses were created. Rome eventually succumbed to its internal corruption, and Europe reverted to a primarily agrarian culture for the next thousand years.

Civilized people did not comprehend the difference between real wealth and its symbol. Gold was the ultimate currency, because it was scarce and durable. There is no intrinsic wealth in gold. Ancient peoples could not eat it, or make a tool or weapon from it. In the world's first major economic treatise, Adam Smith's *Wealth of Nations*, he noted how misplaced the search for gold was:

"The most abundant mines either of the precious metals or of the precious stones could add little to the wealth of the world. A produce of which the value is principally derived from its scarcity, is necessarily degraded by its abundance."[\[9\]](#)

Smith wrote about gold rushes:

"Of all those expensive and uncertain projects [he was writing about the Spanish gold rushes begun by Columbus - ed.], however, which bring bankruptcy upon the greater part of the people who engage in them, there is none perhaps more perfectly ruinous than the search after new silver and gold mines. It is perhaps the most disadvantageous lottery in the world, or the one in which the gain of those who draw the prizes bears the least proportion to the loss of those who draw the blanks: for though the prizes are few and the blanks many, the common price of the ticket is the whole fortune of a very rich man. Projects of mining, instead of replacing the capital employed in them, together with the ordinary profits of stock commonly absorb both capital and profit. They are the projects, therefore, to which of all others a prudent law-giver, who desired to increase the capital of his nation, would least choose to give any extraordinary encouragement, or to turn towards them a greater share of that capital than what would go to them of its own accord."[\[10\]](#)

Seeking gold mines and engaging in gold rushes has almost always been fueled by greed and desperation. If one had expendable slaves, gold mining made sense. Ancient Egypt had slaves, and ancient Rome greatly advanced the craft, creating technological improvements (and borrowing some from Greece) in order to enhance mining efficiency. It was efficient in that they mined more gold, and efficient from the standpoint of getting more production from the slaves before they died.

What those ancient civilizations failed to comprehend was that true wealth was food, shelter, clothing and an environment that could sustain it. The Mediterranean region used to be forested. The Palestine of the Bible was forested. The Fertile Crescent was forested. Northern Africa was forested. Civilization destroyed the forests, and the land's ability to sustain life. The Mediterranean's desert-like environs are not a natural condition, but the [result of humankind's depredations](#). While Egyptians and Romans sent millions of people to death in the mines and arenas, they also made the world poorer. Carl Sauer [remarked long ago](#) on how our economic theories fail to account for what real wealth is, and how our "progress" has destroyed the world's real wealth. Destroying ecosystems in the name of greed or short-lived agricultural prosperity is suicidal, but a relative few are able to lead lives of extravagance for a short time, while countless others suffer greatly, including non-human species. That is civilization in action. All civilizations have collapsed, if they were not destroyed through conquest, because they were hostile to life. Humanity is on the brink of a global environmental collapse, as the price of our current global civilization. The ancients confused the symbolic with the literal, thinking that a contrived *symbol* of wealth and prosperity was wealth and prosperity itself. Their ignorance, rapaciousness and foolishness doomed their civilizations.

With the Western Roman Empire's collapse, Europe did little gold mining for the next thousand years. As Europe began acting as a cohesive entity and evolved once again beyond a primarily agrarian state, it wanted the fantastic riches that were in the Islamic and Eastern Roman world, and the rich lands beyond, such as in India and China. It took some of the Islamic and Eastern Roman wealth by force during the [Crusades](#). During the late Middle Ages and Renaissance, the specialization of labor became more prevalent as Europe again evolved beyond an agrarian society. Guilds and other institutions came into being. Various professions developed. Alchemists tried creating gold from lead and other tricks. Although they failed at transmutation, their labors led to chemistry and today's science. During the 1200s, European prosperity reached its highest levels since the Roman Empire,

yet there was little mining activity, and the Byzantine and Muslim world had most of the gold. Silver coins were becoming increasingly debased, and gold coins began being minted again in Europe.[\[11\]](#)

Banking began when civilization did. In the Sumerian city of Ur, where religion, economics, and politics were virtually united, the temples became the repository of gold and the first banks. Goldsmiths became the first bankers, a situation evolving naturally from gold serving double duty as the ultimate artistic medium and currency. As Europe emerged from the Dark Ages, from the milieu of pawn brokers and moneychangers came the merchant banker, who charged interest to various parties, often financing commercial ventures. The economic culture of that time has been called protocapitalism, or capitalism's forerunner.

When Columbus tried finding another way to the [Asian spice trade](#), he [stumbled into the New World](#), and unwittingly initiated history's biggest gold rush.

The Biggest Gold Rush of All Time

After a generation of plundering the New World, the Spanish were scouring the Caribbean to replace the fast-dying natives in [Española's mines](#), and the Caribs of the Lesser Antilles fought back, even defeating the genocidal invaders. The Spanish then avoided them in search of easier prey. As the Greater Antilles' and Bahamas' natives became extinct, the Spaniards [struck out along the Caribbean periphery](#). In present day Panama, [Vasco Núñez de Balboa led his men in search of gold](#), and "discovered" the Pacific Ocean, which he claimed for Spain, the single largest "claiming" in history. Eventually the Spanish depredations and their frenzied search for gold took them to Mesoamerica and the Aztec Empire, whose capital, Tenochtitlán, was a glittering city in the middle of the vast lake that dominated the Valley of Mexico. The Spanish had clearly demonstrated their sense of honor at the [Xaraguá massacre](#) and other events, and their strategy against the welcoming Aztec Empire was to kidnap Montezuma. [Hernan Cortés](#), who [stole the expedition](#) from the governor of Cuba, had everything in hand, with Montezuma as hostage and his men cleaning out the royal palaces of its treasures, until the Cuban governor sent an army to end Cortés' usurpation. Cortés bribed the Cuban governor's army with stolen Aztec gold, easily won that confrontation, and the Cuban governor was ruined.

While Cortés was [busy with the Cuban army](#), the man left in charge at Tenochtitlán perpetrated a mass slaughter of thousands of Aztec citizens at a festival. Then the Aztec welcome wore out, and the local citizens laid siege to the imperial palace. The Spaniards tried sneaking out of town at night, after they likely murdered Montezuma and almost all the Aztec nobility, but they were caught making their escape. They beat a hasty retreat across a causeway that linked Tenochtitlán to the lakeshore, doing battle with the residents of Tenochtitlán. Retreating Spaniards tried leaving with as much stolen gold as possible, filling their armor with it, but many had to swim, and hundreds of Spanish soldiers ended up at the bottom of the lake, weighted down with their stolen gold. Spanish chroniclers have called that event "the night of sorrows." After regrouping in the care of his native allies, Cortés and his men mounted a naval siege that completely destroyed the world's most spectacular city, while killing nearly its entire population.

Sacking the Aztec Empire was the seminal event in the Spanish gold rush. Loot began flooding into Europe, mainly gold. It was then that able-bodied Spaniards began coming to the New World in endless boatloads, looking for fame, riches, and women to rape. The native genocide increased, and during Cortés' conquest of the Aztec Empire the Spaniards introduced the mainland's first smallpox epidemic, which killed off many millions of people. While the treasures they plundered were prodigious, including the world's most [ingenious goldsmithing](#), which was quickly melted down into bullion to make coins, it was a minor haul compared to the mining activities the Spanish would soon undertake.

In 1532, a decade after Cortés found success, the marauding Spaniards discovered an empire richer in gold than even the Aztecs: the Incas. The Incan Empire, along the gold-bearing Andes mountain range, was rich in gold, perhaps the richest on earth.

The Egyptian, Roman and Spanish mining practices were not universal. Professionals, not slaves, performed gold mining in India. Mining for the Incan Empire [was not even considered hard work](#).

In the wake of [sacking the Incan Empire](#), every European mercenary *really* got excited. Along the river valleys flowing from the Andes into the Pacific, the conquerors forced the natives into mining gold and silver, especially at the mine at Potosí, in modern-day Bolivia. The life expectancy of a native in the Potosí mine was about four months. Millions of native lives were consumed in the mining activity. In some regions, [native bones lined the roads](#), as they died while being driven to the mines. The vultures would circle each time a new mine was opened.

One of Pizarro's men, [Hernando de Soto](#), became rich as a king from Incan plunder, but was still not satisfied, and in 1539 he led an expedition into what is today the southeastern United States. Although his predatory expedition destroyed entire civilizations, he found no more gold. At the same time, Francisco Vázquez de Coronado was marauding through what today is the southwestern United States, seeking the legendary city of gold that fired the Spanish imagination. After fifty years of genocidal gold lust, his expedition was Spain's first one that tried treating natives well as they searched for gold. Even so, his men wantonly killed the natives, burning them alive to set an example, etc. His was the "well behaved" expedition.

The Spanish crown's main preoccupation was the [flow of loot into its coffers](#), not the natives' welfare. The 1500s saw the greatest demographic catastrophe the world has known, as the Spanish feverishly sought gold. The population of the New World in 1492 may have been [more than 100 million people](#). The prevailing scholarly estimate today is more than 50 million people (my *Encarta* encyclopedia estimates 90 million). By 1600, they had probably been about 90% exterminated. To wipe out 90% of a hemisphere's population in a century is unparalleled in history.

The gold rush's great irony was that it [brought no wealth to Spain](#). Gold and silver are not wealth, but symbols of it, and the Spanish could not figure it out, being mesmerized by wealth's symbols. Spain's men spent their lives pursuing gold, and consequently Spanish industries and professions declined, also partly because Jews and Moors were forcibly ejected from Spain during the Spanish Inquisition days, and the Jews significantly composed the educated and merchant classes and the Moors were

able agriculturalists.[\[12\]](#) Spain overextended itself militarily by fielding armies to fight in Italy, battling against the Ottoman Empire, trying to put down the Dutch rebellion, fighting pirates and otherwise protecting its imperial domains. By the time their Armada was destroyed in fighting with the English in 1588, the Spanish crown was already in financial difficulty, and would go [bankrupt several times by 1650](#) (the crown's first bankruptcy was in 1557, a mere generation after the huge Incan haul began hitting Spain's shores). Spain was [arguably worse off in 1600](#) than it was in 1500. After the defeat of the Spanish Armada, Spain was quickly on its way to becoming imperial has-beens, with its [imperial domains eventually being seized by its rivals](#). The Spanish gold rush of the 1500s not only killed off tens of millions of people, but also destroyed Spain as an imperial power. There are few historical events more ironic than that, and few bloodier.[\[13\]](#) The New World's gold rush did not end by 1600. Gold rushes propelled major aspects of the European/American invasion and "settling" of [what is today the western United States](#).

The point of the preceding narrative is that when wealth became seen as a symbol and not the real thing, people easily became mesmerized and confused by the abstraction, and threw away and destroyed wealth while pursuing its symbol. The rise of modern banking has further abstracted the concept of wealth. Money is now electronic impulses that travel the globe in an instant. With that further abstraction, what real wealth *is* has been almost completely forgotten by our "modern" societies.

About a century ago, as robber barons such as [John Rockefeller](#) and Andrew Carnegie were taking over colleges, [medical schools](#) and other American institutions, reshaping and corrupting them to further their ambitions, the banking robber baron, J.P. Morgan, was reshaping the American banking system. The Federal Reserve System was born in those days. There are plenty of conspiracy theories regarding those events, and [some of them may well be true](#). Today's international banking system can turn billionaires into paupers overnight, and vice versa. I have seen it happen. There are arguments about banking leaving the gold standard. The reasoning is that if money was based on gold, then the governments and banks could not issue money at will, but it had to be backed by something tangible. As history has shown, if money is based on gold, it leads to gold rushes, which in the big picture are merely counterfeiting operations, which in essence is stealing from one's neighbor. The problem is not whether money is backed by gold or not. The problem is [greed](#), and mistaking the symbolic for the literal.

The Need for Public Accounting

As the West's ideological systems have become more abstract, frenzies of greed turned into the 1920s' stock market speculative fever and similar events. The Great Depression followed the stock frenzy, which led to [World War II](#). I worked for a dot.com during the peak of the stock market hysteria in 1999, and it was evident where the hoopla would lead. In the wake of 1930s bank failures and the 1929 stock market collapse, laws were passed to prevent those events from happening again. In the 1930s, the Securities and Exchange Commission came into being. While public accountants existed before the 1930s, the securities acts of the 1930s created the reason for today's public accounting profession

to exist. When I [began my career](#) in 1982, the majority of revenues that public accounting firms earned, especially in the Big Eight (the world's eight largest public accounting firms), were from performing audits that the securities laws demanded. All corporations that sold stock to the public were required to have an annual audit. Public accounting firms performed those audits. Their job was applying generally accepted accounting principles (GAAP) to corporate financial statements, to ensure they counted their profits properly. Since [making a profit is the Holy Grail of capitalism](#), corporations have many temptations to overstate their profits, and audits were designed to keep them honest.

Related to securities laws, banking laws were also passed, and the federal government began insuring bank deposits. With the government insuring bank liabilities, banking became "regulated," and adhered to various laws to ensure its ability to pay its depositors. Certified Public Accountants (CPAs) audited banks, just as they did any other corporation. Because banking was a regulated industry, there were also auditors from federal and state levels. On paper, it sounded good, but there was a major conflict of interest that exists even today. Corporations could hire their CPA auditors, and fire those that displeased them.

In economics parlance and governmental regulation, the concept of "regulator capture" is well known. In essence, the industry being regulated corrupts the organizations that regulate them. That capture works both ways. The industry wants to capture its regulators, and the regulators themselves desire capture, [as corruption pays well](#). In government agencies, there are many laws and rules to prevent regulator capture, but greedy and corrupt regulators and industries ingeniously circumvent the safeguards. Instead of being public servants, regulators become corporate servants, looking out for their patrons' interests, not the public's. It has happened in every regulated industry, to one degree or another, from the [FDA](#) to the [USDA](#), from the [insurance industry](#) to [banking](#). Regarding public accounting and corporate audits, how hard is it to capture the regulator that corporations literally hire? It is the world's easiest capture, yet that relationship has been obscured by plenty of secrecy and propaganda. The largest financial scandal in U.S. history was the Savings and Loan Scandal of the 1980s, and I was there, watching it happen.

The Savings and Loan Industry and What Doomed it

The American Dream is a central part of America's self-image. The single most important aspect of that "dream" is owning one's home. Americans' homes are their castles. A home usually costs a few years' wages for an American homeowner. Few people can get that kind of money from their piggy banks, and nearly all American homeowners needed a loan to buy their homes. A specialized bank was created to make the American Dream happen. They were called Savings and Loan banks (S&Ls). Banks make money by offering interest on money deposited at their institution and loaning it out at a higher rate. There are inherent risks in such an institution, and banking laws were designed to minimize them. A typical S&L would offer 3% interest on money deposited with it, and make mortgage loans to homebuyers at 6%. The 3% spread between the rate paid out and taken in funded the bank personnel's salaries, and paid building rent and owner profits.

Interest paid by homeowners to S&Ls was less than other lending institutions earned, for a few

reasons. The house was collateral for the loan, for instance. The risk of loan default was minimized by the ability to repossess the house. That process is known as mortgage foreclosure, the dread fear of most homeowners. Another reason for the low rate was the government passing laws to make homeownership a favored economic situation, with tax deductions for mortgage interest and property taxes, and eliminating the risk to S&L depositors with deposit insurance. S&Ls could pay lower interest rates to their depositors, and thereby offer lower interest rates to homebuyers. In return for deposit insurance, which insured the bank's liabilities, the government theoretically had great say in how banks operated. For instance, the government set the interest rate ceilings that commercial and savings banks could offer depositors, and what kinds of loans they could make. Savings banks were largely restricted to making home loans. They traditionally also made some loans for commercial property. Before Ronald Reagan took office, S&Ls had to keep at least 80% of their assets in home loans, by law.

During the 1960s and 1970s, a number of trends coincided to largely doom the S&L industry. One inherent risk in banking is called inflationary risk. The S&L industry was particularly susceptible. S&Ls would offer a rate of interest to their customers, and the commitment to leave funds in the bank was usually a short-term proposition. To get higher interest rates, multiple-year instruments could be obtained, but most depositors could take out their money whenever they wanted to. On the lending side however, the S&Ls lent out money for twenty-to-thirty-year terms, at a fixed interest rate. They make money by lending it out at a higher rate than they pay their depositors, who can take their money out at any time. If an economy experiences inflation, general interest rates will also climb. I was taught in college that the "real" interest rate historically has been about 2%, which means that the interest rate a lender would charge would be the inflation rate plus two percent. As a simple example, if 10% inflation happens, banking institutions will begin charging 12% for short-term loans. The depositors will also seek higher interest rates, and institutions will begin offering them.

There are a variety of interest-earning investments. There are instruments known as treasury bills, issued by the United States government. There are corporate bonds, and during the inflation of the OPEC days, the money market fund was invented. Corporate bonds and money market funds did not have deposit insurance to back them, so they were riskier investments than a bank deposit, but because of the inflationary 1970s, treasury bills reached 15% rates in 1981, and the prime interest rate (the rate that commercial banks charged their best customers) exceeded 20%. With treasury bills and money market funds offering 15% and higher rates, how long would somebody keep their money earning 3% in an S&L? Not long. If an S&L's assets were earning 6%, locked in for a 20-year period, and inflation kicked up interest rates, and other instruments offered 15% and higher, the S&L's depositors would likely find greener pastures to invest their money. They would not do it twenty years from then, but immediately. That is exactly the situation that the S&L industry found itself in during the late 1970s. The interest rate that the S&Ls could offer was set by law. Also, any institution that had its assets (home mortgages) invested at a 6% yield, and paid out 15% on its liabilities (deposits), was on the fast track to going out of business. Inflation would kill the S&L industry.

In the 1960s, the United States violated a rule of economics. In Economics 101 classes, students learn about the guns or butter economy. Basically, if a nation is fighting a war, it has to divert resources that are normally used for domestic consumption into feeding the war machine. A nation cannot practically do both, even the world's richest. The first half of the 1960s was a period of unprecedented prosperity and optimism for the United States. With a president who looked like a movie star and lived like one,

while presenting ideals such as the Peace Corps and going to the moon, and giving West Berlin a pep talk, with an economy that was history's most stable and prosperous, American prestige was at an all-time high. Then the United States tried to [recolonize Southeast Asia](#) while its [movie star president was murdered](#). America [killed off millions of people in Southeast Asia](#) while throwing away the lives of tens of thousands of American soldiers. Instead of the guns *or* butter economy, the American government tried to manage the guns *and* butter economy. That was the beginning of the end of American prosperity. Inflation began creeping up, from 1% in the early 1960s to 5% by 1970. The guns *and* butter economy led to inflation. Not only was bludgeoning Southeast Asia the world's greatest act of evil perpetrated during the last half of the 20th century, it harmed the United States economy, as well as jump-starting the Japanese economy, which became an economic rival in the 1980s. The peak year for real wages in America was 1973. Wages declined to about ten percent less, and the average American works nearly an hour more per day since then. America's standard of living declined since the Vietnam War days.

The relationship between Europe and the Middle East goes back thousands of years. Most of Western Europe and the much of the Middle East were part of the Roman Empire 2000 years ago. When the Roman Empire [adopted Christianity as the state religion in 325 AD](#), it set in motion dynamics that contributed to the rise of Islam during the 600s. The Iberian Peninsula and other lands came under Islamic rule, and the [Crusades and Iberian Reconquest](#) that began in the 1000s initiated conflicts between the Islamic and Christian world that last to this day, and [Jews have often borne the brunt of it](#). Turks eventually displaced Arabs as Islam's most powerful group, and the Ottoman Empire lasted for centuries. The Islamic culture began stagnating as the Middle Ages waned, and Europe's conquest of the world impacted Islamic culture. It became insular, in contrast to its former expansionism. By 1800, [the Ottoman Empire was a shadow of its former grandeur](#), and was largely kept alive by the Great Powers such as Britain, France, Austria, Russia and Prussia, as they jockeyed with one another for influence. Russia and Britain played the Great Game, and conflicts such as the Crimean War characterized the Great Powers' gamesmanship, as they kept nibbling at the Ottoman Empire. For all the historic animosity between the Christian and Islamic world, the Middle East was about the planet's last place that Europe conquered. By 1900, the Ottoman Empire's elites (e.g. Young Turks) were heavily influenced by European culture and ideals, but Europe regarded it as a backward area that was mainly a source of cheap labor and a market for European manufactures. The *Eastern Question* was Europe's debate regarding what was to be done with the decaying Ottoman Empire, and the Great Powers clashed with each other over the issue. Then the industrializing West found [oil to be an essential resource](#), and the jockeying became intense in the 20th century.

No empire lasts forever, and neither do any power plays. Although [oil politics played a major role](#) in drawing the national boundaries of today's Middle East, the region's people gradually gained some measure of control over the oil wealth that the Great Powers were plundering. As nationalistic fervor was ascendant in the new nations, governments were overthrown, as when the United States [overthrew Iran's government in 1953](#), in order to keep control over the oil. The United States helped overthrow the Indonesian government in 1965, putting a [genocidist](#) in charge of another oil-rich nation.

Oil exporting nations, largely from the Middle East, formed the Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC), and reacted to the Arab-Israeli war in 1973 by halting oil shipments to nations that supported Israel, [the United States in particular](#). Oil prices jumped, and thus began the cycle of

inflation that swept the world economy beginning in 1973, and severely damaged numerous national economies. In 1979, Iran finally overthrew the U.S.-installed Shah, and the next year saw Iraq and Iran begin a disastrous war that lasted several years, which further spiked oil prices.

When studying the Middle East's ferment, for instance, the false dichotomy is a commonly encountered [logical fallacy](#). While one cannot cheer for the power struggles that Iran, Iraq and Turkey have engaged in, especially how the [Kurds](#) have fared at their hands (or the Armenian genocide), that does not confer any integrity to the West's motivation for its Middle Eastern involvement. The primary motivation for all imperial societies has been controlling the resources of its subject lands. Whether the empire was Roman, British or American, controlling and plundering the resources of the subject lands have always been the primary motivations. Today, the United States perpetrates genocide in [Iraq](#) as part of an effort to control the region's oil. The current [War on Terror](#) is also oil-motivated. Securing access to cheap and plentiful oil has been about the *only* motivation for the West's involvement in the Middle East for the past century. Ironically, [we likely do not even need oil](#). That need is an artificial one, foisted on the world by the oil industry, as it has [eliminated any and all alternatives](#) to oil and other monopolizable energy sources, as I discovered first-hand.

During the 1970s, Iraq became the radical Arab nation, nationalizing its oil industry and charting a course of development largely independent of United States involvement, using its oil revenues to benefit the population at large, attaining the highest standard of living of Middle East nations. The dynamics that benefited Iraq, however, wrecked other national economies. The inflation that the oil price increases initiated throughout the world doomed the S&L industry. With its assets invested in 6%, 20-year mortgages, and inflation causing 15% treasury bills to be offered, the S&L industry was doomed.

The Savings and Loan Gold Rush and Public Accounting

While global economic dynamics doomed the S&L industry, the scandal that happened was not much different from a pack of wolves descending on a weak member of a caribou herd, and the American taxpayer was ultimately feasted upon. Investigative journalists are an endangered species in the United States. That is partly because any journalist who performs investigation that exposes the misdeeds of the powerful is often [silenced in one way or another](#). Sometimes independent investigators are [murdered, and it is made to look like a suicide](#). Journalists can be fired and blackballed from the profession. Other times, publishing companies will refuse to publish their books, or even [destroy their publishing company to prevent a book's publication](#). However, with the deck stacked against investigative journalism exposing what happened during the S&L scandal, two books stand above them all: Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo's *Inside Job* and Pete Brewton's *The Mafia, CIA and George Bush*.

The story presented by those investigative reporters is not unusual. It is a story of greed, corruption, crime, murder...typical American politics and economics. In 1980, Congress began eliminating the interest rate ceilings on S&Ls and commercial banks, and simultaneously raised deposit insurance

from \$40,000 to \$100,000 per account for S&Ls. That got the attention of Mario Renda and other organized crime figures. Senator Jake Garn of Utah, who received huge contributions from the S&L industry, co-authored the Garn-St. Germain Act, which Ronald Reagan signed in October 1982. It set the stage for the S&L scandal. Fernand St. Germain's financial irregularities connected to the scandal helped end his political career. Key elements of that bill were allowing the S&Ls to offer money market funds and allow up to 40% of their assets to be invested in non-residential lending. Renda and other Mafia figures eagerly watched the Garn-St. Germain Act make its way through the legislature, rubbing their hands together. Deregulation was the buzzword of the Reagan administration, and "getting government off the public's back." Ironically, the American public has never paid more dearly than it did during Reagan's deregulation. Other regulation loosening occurred, with California letting S&Ls invest in whatever they wanted to. The S&L scandal was the worst in Texas, California, Colorado and Florida, and it is no accident that [George Bush the Second](#) and Jeb Bush have been governors of Texas and Florida, while Neil operated in Colorado and [Reagan](#) was the California governor.

[George Bush the First](#) used to run the CIA, and when Pete Brewton began investigating the unfolding scandal in the 1980s, the list of people he ran into was a Who's Who of the 1980s scandals. Oliver North, Charles Keating, John Hull, Michael Milken, Larry Mizel, George Bush and others kept popping up, as well as bona fide gangsters such as Carlos Marcello and Santos Trafficante. Brewton's investigation had eerie parallels to [Danny Casolaro's investigations](#). There were even [JFK assassination](#) connections to Brewton's investigation. In essence, what happened in the S&L scandal was that a gang of criminals, including the CIA, the Mafia, Washington politicians and others all participated in raping the nation's S&L industry, eagerly sidling up to the trough while it lasted. Our politicians took away the controls over the S&L industry, while *increasing* the bag the taxpayer would hold if it all came crashing down. As the authors of *Inside Job* randomly selected S&Ls to investigate, the same people would keep appearing, working at one S&L, looting it until it went under, then going to work for another and repeating the same process.

The same people that figured so highly in the Iran-Contra Scandal, where drugs were brought into the United States and arms shipped to our mercenaries in Central America, were also [laundering drug money](#) through the S&Ls that were being looted, in George Bush's back yard, by his buddies. Although the official investigation concluded that probably no more than 15% of the losses incurred in the scandal were due to outright fraud, official investigations [always downplay or ignore fraud and corruption](#).^[14] While there is no doubt that numerous factors played their role in the scandal, fraud and corruption may have accounted for more than half of the losses. A 1988 U.S. Comptroller of the Currency report stated that less than ten percent of savings and loan failures were strictly due to economics, and the Government Accounting Office issued a report in 1989 that identified insider abuse and fraud at 64% of the banks that failed in 1987.^[15]

It was definitely a bi-partisan scandal, with both George Bush and Lloyd Bentsen keeping the scandal quiet until after the 1988 election, as they both were deeply involved in the scandal, as was their crony Walter Mischer and others. Neil Bush helped loot Silverado Savings^[16], which cost the taxpayers more than \$1 billion, and the same people who orchestrated much of the S&L scandal [run the White House today](#). The criminal behavior engaged in by George Bush and friends was staggering, and they mainly got off scot-free, using front men and plausible deniability (much of the denial was not that plausible) to dodge the worst of the charges. Corrupt and greedy politicians and regulators also played

their part. The focus of this essay, however, is presenting the role that my profession played in it, and how the next scandal that comes along will likely be handled the same way, because the same conflict of interest and invitation to corruption still exists. There was no basic reform in the wake of that disaster. This essay will cover the basics of how the money was stolen from the S&Ls and how my profession abetted it.

Residential real estate, which was the primary reason the S&L industry existed, can be a risky business, but is far less risky than commercial real estate. In building tract homes, sometimes there are buyers before the ground is even broken. The first house my family owned was purchased that way, and I saw it being built in 1964. Even if a buyer is not found before building commences, home building is usually a response to demand, and developers have to shoulder some of the risk. A bank will not provide a construction loan unless the developer is putting up some money, similar to a bank not giving a mortgage loan to a homeowner without a down payment. If the homeowner has not made an investment in the deal, his/her incentive to take care of the house is questionable. Requiring a down payment is simply a sound business practice.

Commercial real estate, on the other hand, has more inherent risk, partly because the investment is larger. Building a \$100 million office complex or mall is a much different proposition than building ten homes for a million dollars. If a bank is going to put up \$80 million to build a mall, they are usually careful about investigating the lending opportunity. In practice, ground will never be broken on a mall unless “anchor tenants” (Sears and other large stores) are already signed up to lease the facility. The same goes for office buildings. The income from commercial property is rent. If there are no tenants, there will be no rent, and the loan will not be repaid, leaving the bank holding the bag. When building a mall or office building, the bank does not just cut a check; the money is loaned gradually, based on the progress of construction. If the project is half complete, then the bank will have lent about half of its loan to the developer.

Many transactions during the S&L scandal were plainly fraudulent. One strategy was taking a piece of swampland in Florida or desert in Texas, and two parties would sell the property back and forth to each other, raising the price each time. They might take a piece of wasteland worth nearly nothing, and the bank would lend out millions of dollars to finance the sham purchases, with the two parties slinking away with millions of dollars and the bank owning the worthless property. It also happened with buildings. For instance, some people used a California S&L to sell a condominium project back and forth, acquiring it for less than \$4 million and eventually inflating its price through the sham transactions to \$40 million. The mortgage broker who put the deals together was soon murdered in gruesome fashion.[\[17\]](#) That was one of the more extreme instances of how the gangsters operated, but those dynamics also played out in the “legitimate” deals that happened.

A bank had to justify loaning \$40 million on property that was purchased for less than \$4 million a few months earlier, and the document all banks used was an appraisal. There is an appraiser profession, and their job is valuing properties. If a bank ponders making a loan, it hires an appraiser to assess the property’s market value, which may or may not justify the loan. The highest credential that an appraiser has is known as the MAI, which means Member of the Appraisal Institute, in Chicago. If the bank’s board of directors were the ones doing the looting, however, they readily hired a pliant appraiser to cook up whatever appraisal value they wanted. Behind every fraudulent loan was a fraudulent appraisal. It is nearly impossible for appraisers to render independent appraisals if the people hiring

them do not want one. When I was in public accounting, auditors joked that MAI stood for “Made As Instructed.” The appraisals were largely worthless because they were not independently rendered. It is so obvious that it should be beneath mention, but that situation still exists. There were obviously situations where an accurate appraisal was desired, and one was rendered. All too often, however, the appraisal was used as a tool to make a fraudulent or questionable loan.

Here is what I saw when [I was on one of the biggest audits of the whole S&L scandal](#). It was 1984, four years before the government told the American people that we had a big problem, and by 1988 the damage had already largely been done. The scandal could have been prevented or minimized in 1984 if my profession had been honest. In 1986, the S&L problem could have been handled for only about \$20 billion. Along with raising the deposit insurance and removing the limits on what could be invested in, S&Ls began dealing in brokered deposits, where it was not a real depositor putting money in the bank, but a middleman seeking the highest interest rates. Because S&Ls had deposit insurance, it was as risk-free an investment as one could make, especially attractive when S&Ls began offering money market funds. The negative interest rate spread described earlier would destroy the S&L industry.

Here is the “plan” cooked up to save the S&L industry. The S&Ls would take in billions of dollars of brokered and direct deposits, and instead of lending them on residential real estate they would use the money to fund high-risk ventures, usually commercial real estate deals. They would charge 22% interest on the high-risk deals, and regain the positive interest rate (22% coming in to 15% going out) spread that inflation drove into a negative position (6% coming in to 15% going out). On paper, it might have had a prayer, but “high-risk” means that there is a high risk of failure. A competent real estate developer could borrow at less than 22% interest (or even 25%, which I saw). With all the brokered money coming in, where the S&L paid 15% interest for the money, they had to loan out the money, and fast, to earn enough to pay the depositors. S&L loan officers began beating the bushes across the nation, looking for developers to loan the money to at 22% interest. Loan officers went on the road, leaving their home states, looking for places to loan the money. Consequently, they became the lenders of last resort. A developer in Colorado, for instance, with delusions of grandeur, envisioning a glittering office building, could not get a local bank to fund his pipedream, but a loan officer from California would happen by, flush with brokered deposits, and that developer found a fool to bankroll him.

The bank was so eager to loan the money that the loan officer reduced or waived the developer’s “down payment,” reducing the developer’s out-of-pocket risk and incentive to wisely spend the loan money. Also, other standard practices, such as finding tenants before ground was broken, were also minimized or abandoned, and the “build it, and they will come” mentality prevailed. “See through” (tenantless) buildings were built across America’s West during the S&L scandal. As I look back, it is hard to believe that people could be so stupid. Some of that seeming stupidity was actually diabolical sanity, as the players knew exactly what they were doing, and making off with billions of dollars, looted from the S&Ls, was the game that many played, with prominent politicians and “pillars of the community” gorging at the trough. Also, part of the seeming stupidity was again the abstract nature of the situation. It was another gold rush where a few got rich and the rest of society paid heavily, the vast majority being blind to what was happening.

Here is a typical situation at the S&L I helped audit. We did not see much outright fraud, although I recall seeing a million dollar loan where the developer pocketed the construction loan and fled to South

America. The standard situation with “troubled properties” began with a developer wanting to build a strip mall, office building, motel, etc. He wanted a \$3 million loan to build a strip mall, let us say. He thought he could sell it to an investor for \$4 million after it was built, who would buy it as an income property. The developer only had to put up \$50,000 of his own money as the “down payment.” He probably paid himself \$200,000 in salary while building the building, more than recovering his initial investment. He built a strip mall as a speculative deal. He did not have any tenants signed up before he began building it, and the local market was unlikely to provide enough tenants to rent it out. He also did not have an investor lined up to buy it when it was finished either, but the bank figured it would deal with the situation later. In order to justify the \$3 million loan, a pliant appraiser was hired to concoct the appraisal. Realistically, there was great risk in the deal, with no tenants lined up, no investors lined up, and a weak tenant market. The loan officer from out-of-state had little idea of the local market conditions, and let the principles of prudent real estate development slide, as he received a big commission when placing the loan. The loan officer got a big payday, the developer got a big loan, the appraiser was paid well, and everybody was happy.

Then the developer built the strip mall. Because it was out of state, the bank rather imprudently funded the construction loan; instead of the careful inspection of the progress of construction, the developer got paid in advance of really needing the money, used substandard materials and workmanship (so he could pocket even *more* of the loan proceeds), and when the strip mall was finished, it was poorly built and there were no potential tenants waiting to occupy it. The developer had risked only \$50,000 of his own money, and more than recouped it from what he paid himself from the loan. The situation became a “walk away.” As with a mortgage on a home, the developer had ownership of the project and the bank held a lien. When the developer walked away from the property, reneging on his loan obligation, telling the bank to come after him for the \$3 million if it dared, the bank had little option but to foreclose on the strip mall. When the bank foreclosed, it became the owner of the property and not just the lender. In banking parlance, that piece of property became “real estate owned” (REO).

Realistically, that empty building would only sell for two million dollars on the market. According to generally accepted accounting principles (GAAP), if the bank sold the building for \$2 million, it would have to realize a \$1 million loss, the difference between what it invested in the project and sold it for. In practice, the loss was even bigger because of additional costs involved in foreclosure, etc. Here is a chart to show what should have happened if they had sold the property.

Original construction loan	\$3,000,000
Sales proceeds from foreclosed property	\$2,000,000
Loss to be recognized	\$1,000,000

Even if the bank could not find a bona fide buyer, it was supposed to write down the property to fair

market value on the books, taking the loss on its financial statements. The S&L industry, however, was in dire straits. Reporting a loss on the deal would not look good, and might get bank regulators, auditors and others asking questions. Here is what the bank did to hide its loss. Another developer showed up, with similar delusions of grandeur and an equally pitiful pipedream, except his was twice as large. He wanted a \$6 million construction loan. The bank hired an appraiser to concoct the appraisal for the original empty strip mall that valued it at \$5 million, even *higher* than the original pie-in-the-sky price tag that the original developer dreamed up. The MAI appraiser would appraise it for whatever number the bank wanted. The bank would tell the second developer that it would loan him the \$6 million if he would buy the empty strip mall for \$5 million. The bank would loan the developer the money to make the down payment on the empty strip mall, and the first two years of loan payments. The developer never got his hands on *that* money, but the bank held it in escrow, taking the money out of the account to make the down payment and loan payments.

When the bank made the \$6 million construction loan to the second developer, and played internal accounting games to concoct the “sale” of the first strip mall, instead of recording the \$1 million loss, it recorded a \$2 million *gain*, had a new performing loan on the first strip mall, and the loan was guaranteed to have loan payments made on it for two years. Here is a chart to show how the bank hid the loss.

Original loan	\$3,000,000
Second MAI “appraisal” and sale price to second developer	\$5,000,000
Gain on phony sale to second developer	\$2,000,000

So, with some fancy games and pliant appraisers, the bank recorded a \$2 million gain on its deal making. The reality, however, was that \$9 million had gone out the door, the bank was paying 15% interest to depositors, and no money was coming in, not even interest payments. An honest auditor would have made them record a \$1 million loss when they repossessed the empty strip mall, instead of the phony \$2 million gain they recorded on the “resale.” Of course, the second, even bigger, strip mall became another shoddy walk away. The second developer did not have to put down any money, and there were even instances of developers walking away from the loan officer with money *being given to the developer*, to enter surreal realms of finance. When the second strip mall became another empty building, the bank would keep up the phony appraisals and accounting tricks to keep the new losses hidden. With that game going on, the bank would eventually run out of money.

Precisely that disaster happened to the bank I was auditing, and the worst situation I saw was where the bank had loaned \$10 million to build a hotel that was worth \$3 million. It was recording record profits when it ran out of money and the roof caved in. The public accounting profession always stresses that its accounting procedures are not designed to detect fraud. That is partly

understandable, but when the management is committing the fraud, and they are writing the auditors' paychecks, how many auditors will blow the whistle? In the situation presented here, there was nothing that would overtly be called fraud. The S&L I audited had a large REO department. The troubled properties were not hidden, with the transactions plainly seen. No auditor relied on the appraisals, as they knew they were often not worth the paper they were printed on. During that audit, I was sent from facility to facility, trying to locate the appraisals for troubled properties. Many times, the bank *could not even locate* the appraisals. It was obvious to any auditor that a series of phony transactions had been set up to hide the losses. The predecessor auditors of that S&L were fully aware of that situation. Similar to the appraisers, they were not independent, as the bank hired them, and could hire somebody else if the auditors refused to see things the bank's way.

In the case of Neil Bush's Silverado Savings (Bush was more of a rich boy figurehead than a mastermind, but he was far from innocent), their auditors, Ernst and Whinney, became increasingly reluctant to allow Silverado to keep hiding its losses from its failed construction projects, and Silverado's management endlessly harassed them. Ernst and Whinney stood up to Silverado in a way that few auditors ever did during the S&L scandal, and Silverado merely fired them and hired another, more pliant, auditing firm.^[18] As my [partner said that memorable day](#), if we were in our predecessor auditor's shoes, we might have signed off on the same phony financial statements. For a million dollar audit fee, independence quickly evaporates.

During those years, when the entire industry was hiding its losses, with transactions very similar to the situation presented here, billions of dollars were flying out the door to landowners and developers, paying hugely inflated prices for properties. They were the winners in the S&L scandal, and much of the money was obtained by fraud, but there was a paper trail, and phony appraisals and other stratagems could be seen. Also, depositors receiving 15% interest with government-insured money market funds were the other winners. In 1988, a week after George Bush was elected, they finally told the American public the bad news. Even the S&L "cleanup" was more fraud, as S&Ls were being bought up for almost nothing, where some of the buyers, as with those developers, ended up with money in their pocket as result of buying an S&L.^[19] The most extreme instance I heard of was a man putting up nearly none of his own money (around \$1000) to buy "failed" S&Ls, and received more than \$1 billion in federal subsidies in return. In 1990-91, [I worked at an S&L](#), helping to clean up its accounting department, and I worked on the accounting for deals to buy those S&Ls from the government. The S&L "clean-up" was another huge gold rush for the right people. The American taxpayer will pay more than one trillion dollars over a thirty-year period to pay for the disaster, which is probably around \$400 billion in current dollars, if not more.

In the scandal's wake, the big public accounting firms were hurt, but their pain was a fleabite compared to what their negligence cost the American taxpayer. Corporations can still hire and fire auditors. One cannot use competitive principles to enforce regulation. It does not work, and the same situation exists today. No auditor is capable of rendering an independent opinion if their client pays their fee and can readily hire another auditor. Today's audits only keep honest corporations honest, and are virtually worthless in protecting the public's interest. Also, I did not hear of thousands of appraisers being drummed out the profession in the scandal's wake. All we had were "window dressing" reforms. With standard hypocrisy, the thieves chanted the "free market" dogma as they raided the public coffers, and when it came time to face the music, the taxpayer has to pay for all the wonders of the "free market." There are no free markets; it is a capitalistic myth, and a useful one when it comes to stealing

hundreds of billions of dollars from the taxpayer.

In regulated industries, regulator capture and the “revolving door” are two main conflicts of interest that regulators face. The revolving door is when a regulator leaves his government job and goes to work for the very companies he regulated (after a job well done?). The revolving door goes both ways, going from industry to government also, which is less open to corruption. The “revolving door” leads to corruption. In public accounting, the auditors never even go through the door once. They are *never* on the government’s side of the door. Being hired by our clients was common and expected. There was no stigma or even ethical dilemma about it, to demonstrate how far from being a true regulator we were. I never even saw anybody *question* that situation.

As long as professionals such as appraisers and auditors cannot operate in truly independent fashion, more disasters similar to the S&L scandal loom on the horizon. The situation has purposeful design by the corporate order. Their regulators are relatively powerless, with little obstruction to corporations doing whatever they wish, including reporting illusory or distorted profits when they need to. I have been a corporate controller for about ten years of my career, and I know the game. Will we continue to accept this situation, waiting for the next financial disaster to befall the public?

An Enron Postscript and the Next Possible Scandal

The original draft of this essay was written and published during the spring of 2001, and I had no idea that the [next financial disaster](#) was looming so closely. The dot.com collapse of 2000-2001 was not an accounting scandal, per se. While I saw controversy in revenue accounting during my dot.com days (not unusual for a new industry, and there were legitimate issues), the industry’s collapse had little to do with accountants fudging the numbers, but simple “blue sky” market hysteria; the biggest one since 1929.

During early 1999, there were cases where the more money a dot.com lost, the higher its stock price went, due to an economic theory that decreasing losses meant that niche of the Internet industry was “maturing,” so its ultimate profit potential was smaller than one losing more money. When my CFO and I heard that bit of analyst mumbo-jumbo, and the market value of Priceline.com’s stock was nearly equal to the combined market value of all the major U.S. airlines put together, we knew the dot.com frenzy had reached surreal levels. With every crazed boom comes a bust, so the dot.com collapse was no surprise, and the ludicrous nature of many Internet business plans were rightfully laughed at, but far too late for the investors who took their baths. While there was little real accounting fraud, there was analyst fraud, where analysts turned into promoters and lost their objectivity, and there were many instances where the analyst had a financial stake in the stock he/she gave a glowing thumbs-up to.

The Enron and related scandals (WorldCom, Adelphia, etc.) were definitely accounting scandals, and for the same reason the [S&L Scandal](#) happened. The Enron Scandal is particularly ironic for me. The Enron Scandal is an accounting scandal, an [energy](#) scandal, a “[free market](#)” scandal and a Bush scandal. It is not only a sequel to the S&L Scandal, but I was in the [California governor’s lobby](#) a month before 9/11 with Brian O’Leary and other alternative energy pioneers as we tried to get the governor’s attention regarding the possibilities of alternative and free energy. Also, both scandals have some of the same players, the Bush family most prominently. [Criminals](#) and [graverobbers](#) are running the U.S. government and plundering the public, and not many Americans seem to know or care enough to do something about it. Enron was the ringleader in bilking the California energy customer for many billions of dollars (California paid \$27 billion for electricity in 2000, nearly four times what it paid in 1999) during 2000-2001, using “deregulation” as the smokescreen to engage in scams and frauds that would make a gangster blush. With [my experiences in California](#), I had mixed feelings about what happened there; part of me thought it could not have happened to a more deserving state.

I am writing this in May 2006, a few days after the Chairman and CEO of Enron, Kenneth Lay and Jeffrey Skilling, were convicted of fraud in relation to the Enron meltdown. George W. Bush called Lay “Kenny Boy,” as Lay is the greatest individual contributor to Bush’s election campaign coffers, and Bush flew to campaign appearances on the Enron airplane in 2000. An amazing aspect of the Enron prosecutions is that the big crime has been ignored. Being the ringleader in stealing tens of billions of dollars from California electric customers was the big crime, but has been largely ignored by America’s regulatory apparatus. In the documentary *The Smartest Guys in the Room*, you can hear tapes of Enron traders literally shutting down electric generation plants to cause fake shortages so they could make a killing when electric prices spiked to surreal levels. It was organized crime on a virtually unprecedented scale, and it has been ignored. Getting Lay and Skilling for numbers fudging is like getting Al Capone for income tax evasion, except, to take the Enron/Capone analogy further, that the media would have focused on Capone’s income tax trial and underplayed his gangster activities. Such blindness may be so the next time the government evangelizes about deregulation and the magic of free markets, people may not remember that recent example of the unbridled “free market” at work. I have seen firsthand the damage control that is happening.[\[20\]](#) The Enron Scandal’s only saving grace is that the taxpayer is not footing the bill as they did during the S&L Scandal.

This latest scandal wiped out one of the world’s largest accounting firms. It could have been any of them, [as my partner observed](#) during the early days the S&L Scandal. However, the elephant is still standing in the living room, with everybody pretending it is not there. As with the S&L Scandal, there will be no elementary reform or an admission of the obvious: auditors can *never* render independent opinions if their client pays their fee, and can fire them if they do not like the rendered opinion. The only commentator I have yet seen publicly admit the obvious is once again from the radical left, [Edward Herman](#) this time. How willful is this blindness gripping the American government and corporate scene?

Just as the convictions of the Enron executives were being handed down, the next accounting scandal may be looming. The exact same macroeconomic dynamics that [doomed the S&L industry](#) are being repeated today. Oil has shot to over \$70 per barrel with no end in sight, and America has been gripped by real estate hysteria the past few years. America’s financial institutions have been inventing the high-risk loans that have fueled the latest real estate craze, particularly in California. No down payment, no

principal payments for several years, variable interest rates, forty-year and even fifty-year mortgage terms and other innovations have put many millions of American homeowners in vulnerable situations. Once again, the prudent principles of the real estate/banking business are being abandoned. As energy prices skyrocket, inflation and interest rates will not be far behind. It is already beginning to turn around in the spring of 2006, with housing inventories growing rapidly.

The view from my office window in Bellevue, Washington is surreal. If I seem to be overusing the term “surreal” in this essay, it is for good reason, as the word is being used to depict situations that should leave the observers’ jaws hanging on their chests, but each time the masses blithely sail along until it all comes crashing down. There are about a dozen large commercial construction projects roaring along, where several months ago there was only one. There is still a hole in the ground down the street from my office, leftover from the dot-com crash, and yet ten more holes are furiously being dug. When this latest bubble pops, millions of American homeowners will be sitting in negative equity positions (where they owe more to the bank than the home is worth). America’s financial institutions had laws passed that make declaring bankruptcy more difficult, and this coming crash will test those new laws. In the wake of the Enron/WorldCom scandals, the Sarbanes-Oxley Act was passed in 2002 to prevent those scandals from recurring. I enforce those laws as part of my present job. The test of that law may be just around the corner.

When millions of homes go into negative equity positions and banks begin repossessing the “walk away” homes, they had better begin drowning in red ink as they write down their REO to market values. If those banks’ financial statements do not immediately reflect huge write-downs as they repossess those homes, then the next accounting scandal will be on its way. A new factor has been added since the S&L meltdown: the S&L industry no longer exists. Today, mortgage loans are held by a wide array of financial institutions. No specialized institutions such as S&Ls are heavily invested in mortgage loans, so the pain will be spread across a wide spectrum of mortgage holders. On one hand, that may mean that no gang of institutions will bully the accounting profession into avoiding the write-down to market. On the other hand, the problem may be so dispersed that the write-downs will not happen in consistent fashion, and deep in the bowels of huge financial institutions will be many small REO properties (single-family residences) that are worth less than the loan. Also, because the chain between borrower and mortgage holder is so long and complex, those holding the bag may not even realize how bad it is until far too late.

With that conflict of interest continuing to exist in the auditing profession, and as long as profits are the Holy Grail of capitalism, my optimism is very guarded. Do we ever learn? We shall see.

Footnotes

[1] See, for instance, Jared Diamond’s *Guns, Germs and Steel*, pp. 265-292.

[2] See, for instance, Stannard, *American Holocaust*, p. 27, 48.

[3] See Jenifer Marx’s *The Magic of Gold*, pp. 5-10.

[4] On this subject see Riane Eisler's *The Chalice and the Blade*, Merlin Stone's *When God was a Woman*, and Margaret Ehrenberg's *Women in Prehistory*.

[5] See Jenifer Marx's *The Magic of Gold*, pp. 44-49.

[6] Joshua 6:17

[7] Joshua 6:19

[8] See Grant, *Gladiators*, p. 8.

[9] Smith, *The Wealth of Nations*, book I, chapter XI, part II., p. 193 in the 1976 University of Chicago Press version.

[10] Smith, *The Wealth of Nations*, book II, chapter VII, part I., p. 73 in the 1976 University of Chicago Press version.

[11] See Robert Lopez in the Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies', *The Dawn of Modern Banking*, pp. 1-23.

[12] See Rondo Cameron's *A Concise Economic History of the World*, pp. 135-141 on Spain's shortsighted economic policies during its imperial ascent and quick decline, and particularly what the cost was of expelling the Jews from Spain in the 1400s and the Moors in the 1500s and 1600s.

[13] Among the sources for this narrative regarding the Spanish gold rush of the 1500s are: Carl Sauer's *The Early Spanish Main and Sixteenth Century North America*; Hernan Cortés' *Letters from Mexico*, translated by Anthony Pagden; Bernal Díaz del Castillo's *The Discovery and Conquest of Mexico*, translated by A.P. Maudslay; Hugh Thomas' *Conquest: Montezuma, Cortés, and the Fall of Old Mexico*; David Ewing Duncan's *Hernando De Soto: A Savage Quest in the Americas*; John Hemming's *The Conquest of the Incas*; Pedro de Cieza de León's *The Incas*, translated by Harriet de Onis; *Life and Labor in Ancient Mexico: The Brief and Summary Relation of the Lords of New Spain*, by Alonzo de Zorita, translated by Benjamin Keen; David Stannard's *American Holocaust*; Lyle McAlister's *Spain & Portugal in the New World, 1492-1700*. See also the [sources](#) for my Columbus essay.

[14] See the National Commission on Financial Reform, Recovery and Enforcement's, *Origins and Causes of the S&L Debacle: A Blueprint for Reform*, p. 8. One of the commissioners, Elliott Levitas, felt that the "misconduct" losses were greater than 15%. See p. 86.

[15] See Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo's *Inside Job*, p. 305

[16] See Steven Wilmsen's *Silverado: Neil Bush and the Savings and Loan Scandal*.

[17] See Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo's *Inside Job*, p. 22.

[18] See Steven Wilmsen's *Silverado: Neil Bush and the Savings and Loan Scandal*, pp. 166-172.

[19] See Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo's *Inside Job*, pp. 310-327.

[20] When Pete Brewton wrote his book, the [publishing industry suppressed it](#), for another example of how "free market" censorship happens. Brewton had to find another publisher after Simon and Schuster screwed him, but Brewton was shrewd enough to have a "drop dead" clause in his contract, so he got to keep his advance from Simon and Schuster after they refused to publish his book. A friend of mine co-wrote a book by an Enron executive, which was commissioned by a major publishing company. After they delivered the finished manuscript, the publisher refused to publish it, and even tried getting back the advance for writing it. I got my friend in touch with Brewton, and he advised them. A legal battle ensued, my friend and the Enron executive received a settlement from the publishing company, and they eventually published their book through other channels. With both major publishing companies, it is not necessarily "conspiratorial" on the part of the publishing company, but they may have feared lawsuits from the people the books expose, and when the crooks being exposed run the White House (my friend's book only mentions Bush tangentially, but the Enron Scandal deeply implicates Bush and friends), such timidity is understandable. Whatever the means, the effect is censorship (in the land of the "free press"), and is often more effective than what the Stalinist Soviet Union was capable of.

The Next and Final Section: [Trucking, and One Way to Immediately Improve the Lives of Millions](#) (93K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Trucking, and One Way to Immediately Improve the Lives of Millions

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[A Simple Vision](#)

[How It Could Appear in Practice](#)

[The Benefits](#)

[Costs, Considerations, Obstacles, and Possibilities](#)

[Footnotes](#)

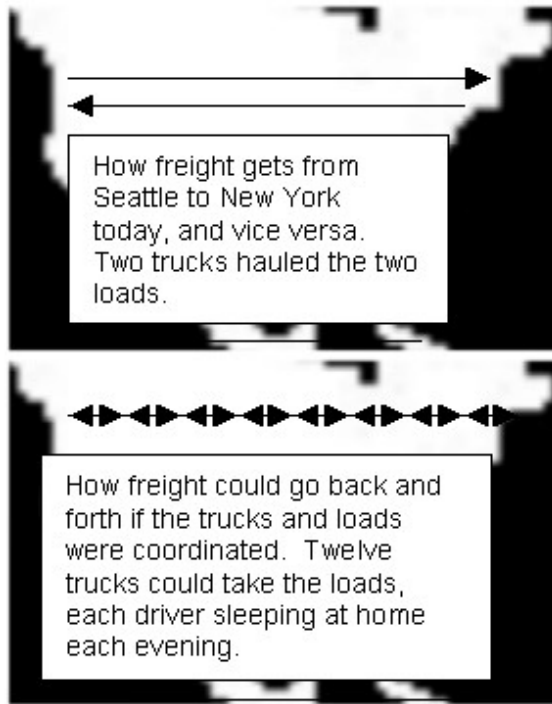
Introduction

In the United States today, there are more than three million tractor-trailer truck drivers (the big 18 wheelers), and more than 2.3 million large trucks on the road. Seventy percent of U.S commodities use trucks as their sole source of transportation. Trucks haul more than five billion tons of freight each year, deliver about 80% of U. S. freight, and the industry generates about \$500 billion per year in revenues. More than one million long haul drivers own their own trucks, and about ten percent of truck drivers are women. About \$300 billion in industry revenues come from long haul trucking, about twice the amount of “local” trucking. More than one million Americans, mainly men, live in their trucks. They sleep at “home” only a few days per month. Their real homes are their beds in the back of those cabs. They are modern-day nomads, and theirs is a miserable existence. The number of drivers is predicted to grow rapidly, as truck driving is a “growth” profession. Less than a third work for unions. Most of that “intercity” freight moves as “van” freight.

For five years during the 1990s, I was a controller for a flatbed company. After five years, I was struck by a vision to radically redesign how my company operated, and to change how trucking operates in the United States, and nobody has to live in their truck anymore. First, here is what happens today, and how it could work in the near future.

A Simple Vision

A load of freight moves from Seattle to New York. Today, a driver drives it to New York, or a two-person team will take it, to arrive quicker. In New York, a driver or team takes a load to Seattle at the same time. The trucks pass each other someplace on the Great Plains. If the trucks and loads were properly coordinated, twelve trucks could haul those loads from coast to coast, the drivers sleeping in their beds at home each evening. That is the idea in a nutshell, and it could work for the entire U.S. freight system. Below is a diagram to make it clearer.



Here is some elaboration. The Seattle driver gets up each day, goes to his yard, hooks up with his load and drives to Spokane. In Spokane, he drops his load, picks up a load bound for Seattle, and drives back to Seattle. He drops his load in the Seattle yard and goes home. That is his workday. A driver in Spokane does the same thing, except his route goes eastward. A load moving from Seattle to New York would be dropped and picked up by each succeeding truck, perhaps being hauled by twelve trucks by the time it gets to New York. A load from New York moves to Seattle the same way. That is the basic idea.

That concept would initially work best for van freight, which is by far the most common freight in the United States, and this essay will largely deal with van freight. Today, drivers prefer driving the same truck each day, which is understandable. In the system envisioned here, each driver could. Customers are not at the drop yard, but scattered across the Seattle area. Other drivers pick up loads in the drop yard, deliver it to customers, and bring loads from other customers to the yard. They are “local” drivers. As is evident, the difference between a local and long haul driver is minor. Drivers could drive long haul for a few days, then drive local if they became bored. With van freight, that would be an easy system to implement. With flatbed, tanker and refrigerated freight, there would be other complications, but they could be readily overcome with a little creativity. No driver would have to sleep in his/her truck, unless he/she really wanted to. That is the basic idea.

There are no objections to this idea that do not invoke ideology or incompetence as defenses. In the end, the only valid objection to this idea is people's [level of caring](#). If the lives of those people mattered to society at large, they could have them back, and not only would it cost relatively little to make it happen, the benefits to society could be vast. The basic idea could also be applied globally.

This vision came to me in a flash, at the end of a five-year process. Although it is not imperative to understand the journey I took to provide me to this vision, the footnote at the end of this sentence tells the story.^[1]

How It Could Appear in Practice

With technologies involved that are discussed at that above footnote, here is a more complete vision of a driver's day. The Seattle driver (Driver 1) lives close to the yard and can walk to work, or takes a bus with other drivers, or drives a half hour to the yard. That is up to the driver. Communities might spring up around

those yards across America, where those drivers can walk to work. Driver 1's onboard computer boots up as the truck is started, and the truck's location from last night is confirmed as his satellite dish verifies his location with the Global Positioning Satellite (GPS). Because the truck is in the yard, its radio has good reception with the national computer network, so the information that morning is transmitted by radio and not satellite. When radio signals are weak in the mountains and windswept plains, the satellite can relay information.

There is a national computer network with several mirror sites that contain the North American freight database. It is a real-time database. Each "node" of the North American system has its local mirror, where freight coming to, from, or through its region has its related information consolidated. As Canada has also joined the system, Driver 1 gets into his truck and might drive to Spokane, Portland or Vancouver, British Columbia that morning. Driver 1's profile is compared to the loads sitting in the yard (or about to be dropped there; a load that is only minutes away from hitting the yard can be among the loads that Driver 1 may take that morning), and the best load is chosen, taking into consideration the customer's needs. A load going to Butte, Montana, is sitting in the yard, at trailer space 25Y. Driver 1 drives to space 25Y and positions his truck to hook up with the van trailer.

The van trailer has barcodes on it, in several places, which uniquely identify that trailer. A load record was created when the load was picked up at the factory the afternoon before. The load record contains a complete description of the freight on board, including its weight, number of pieces (each with its own bar code, if it needs it). As the truck gets into position, a laser on the truck scans the trailer to ensure it is the correct trailer, and then the driver is instructed to hook up by the onboard computer. Driver 1 has an earlier model truck, as it is the early days of the North American Freight System (NAFS), and must back the truck up himself to position it. The newer trucks require the driver to sit in the driver's seat as a failsafe, but the truck backs into position on its own. When the truck backs into proper position, the computer notes the proper alignment (a laser on the coupling confirms proper alignment between tractor and trailer) and the female coupler on the tractor rises to engage the trailer's "king pin." The night before, the trailer was "jacked" into position by the same air pressure that also powers its brakes, when another truck dropped it. When the tractor's coupler engaged the "king pin," the trailer released the air pressure and the "jack" retracted, as well as the air system automatically connecting and engaging to power the trailer's brakes. For safety reasons, Driver 1 was still required to dismount from the cab and press a button on the trailer to verify that the hooking operation was properly completed, an operation that took less than one minute. The newer models under development even eliminated the need for the driver to get out of his cab.

Driver 1 is now off to Spokane. As he leaves the yard, the gateway laser scans the barcode on his truck and trailer, confirming that the proper truck and load are on their way, which can be seen as redundant, but that kind of redundancy is cheap in this high tech age, and can catch errors. Since Spokane was a possible destination for Driver 1, it would take about ten hours to make the round-trip to Spokane, and that driver was on the four-ten-hour-day schedule. Not all drivers wanted that schedule (it paid a little better), but those who did drove the Seattle-Spokane route regularly. As Driver 1 drove to Spokane, every five minutes his satellite dish and GPS assessed his earthly position and his radio relayed the information to the NAFS computer system. The information instantly updated the NAFS main mirror sites, as well as the node mirrors in Seattle, Spokane, Butte, Vancouver and Portland. The estimated time of arrival (ETA) of that driver in Spokane was continually updated, and when the truck had not moved for a few minutes, near Snoqualmie Pass, the NAFS computer sent an inquiry to the truck, asking what the delay was. The query was translated to audible words in the truck driver's headset, asking him what the delay was and how long he thought he might be delayed. The driver told the computer that the delay might be twenty minutes, because a car hit a bear and the road crews were still cleaning it up. The NAFS computer system instantly updated all databases with that information, and all trucks approaching Snoqualmie Pass from the west would receive warning of the accident (that could also be updated by the road crews themselves, as they are patched into the NAFS, as well as police, etc.).

As Driver 1 approached Spokane, Driver 2 from Butte was nearing Spokane. Driver 2 was a woman. The Spokane node's computer system analyzed the ETAs, delivery needs, drivers' profiles and directed that Driver 2 drop her load bound for Seattle in the Spokane yard and pick up Driver 2's load coming from Seattle. The ETAs of Drivers 1 and 2 were only a few minutes apart, and each driver usually ate a box lunch from home at the Spokane facility anyway, so they did not really need to drop and hook their loads in the three minutes that most trucks did. While eating lunch, Driver 2 met Driver 3, a buddy who was also heading back home to Butte. Driver 3's load could be directly delivered to the receiver on the outskirts of Butte, and Driver 3 got a call from his wife, who wanted him home a little earlier than usual that evening. He decided he wanted a load

that dropped right at the Butte node's yard, and Drivers 2 and 3 submitted their load switch through their trucks' computers, which the NAFS system analyzed and deemed appropriate for the customer's needs, and so was allowed. Last month they tried a similar switch, coordinating it as they drove, and the NAFS computer queried the customer on whether it was OK that the load be delivered a little later than planned. The customer stated that delay of that shipment was not acceptable, so the drivers did not make the switch that day in the previous month.

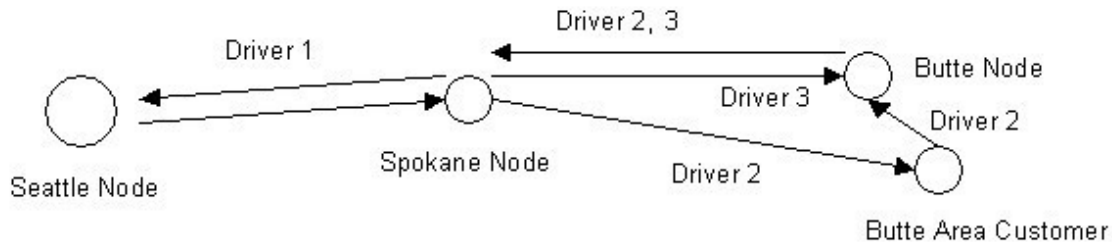
On the current day, with Drivers 2 and 3 switching loads, Driver 2 took the load directly to the customer's facility instead of dropping it at the Butte node. She did what the "local" drivers usually did, but the distinction between local and long haul driving was quickly disappearing. Before Driver 2 delivered her load to the customer, the Butte node's system directed her to pick up a load from a nearby customer and haul that load to the Butte node. Driver 3 got home a little early, as his wife requested, and Driver 2 made that delivery and pick-up, dropped it in the Butte node's yard and walked home to her husband and family. Driver 1 picked up a load bound for Seattle from New York in that Spokane yard. He did not deliver it to the Seattle customer, but dropped it in the Seattle yard and walked home to his wife and family. Below is a diagram to depict that day's work for those three drivers.

Example of a Workday of Three Drivers

Driver 1, to Spokane and back to Seattle Node

Driver 2, to Spokane, to Butte Area customer for drop, pick up another nearby load, and back to Butte Node for final drop

Driver 3, to Spokane and back to Butte Node



All across North America, the same scenario was happening, with drivers and loads synchronized in a marvelous harmony, a trailer being dropped in a node yard by one tractor, and another one picks it up a minute later. People might be surprised to learn that most of the technology and facilities to make such a scenario happen already exist and are in use today in the trucking industry. What does not yet exist has not been created because there has been no perceived need.

The Benefits

Principles I was bringing to integrating information flows and creating real-time management data in my trucking career were simply applied to create a vision to get all drivers home every night, if they wanted to. As explained in the [next section](#), most of the infrastructure to make the above vision a reality already exists. All cities already have truck stops and other trucking yards on their outskirts. Satellite dishes and onboard personal computers are becoming ubiquitous trucking accessories.

Today, more than one million Americans live in their trucks, and truck driving is projected to grow rapidly as a profession, the number will hit two million before long. It is not only they who will get their lives back. Drivers' children will get their parents back, and the driver's spouse will get his/her partner back. The hardships of being a sailor's wife or trucker's spouse are well known. For truck drivers at least, those hardships would become a thing of the past. Society also pays for the current situation in ways that may not be

obvious. What kinds of pathologies do children carry around because one parent is rarely around, or come from broken families as marriages disintegrate under those hardships? Millions of lives will immensely improve if the above vision became reality. Here are the immediate and easily quantifiable benefits.

1. Every driver will sleep at home every night. Some drivers desire the romance of running the roads. In the envisioned system, they could also do that. That romance runs dry before long, however, when they see that same stretch of road for the 50th time. Before long, nearly all have traveled as much as they want to, and would rather sleep at home and have a life. If they want to travel across the nation as part of their vacation (one of those trucker perks), this system could also accommodate it.
2. Out-of-route miles would probably decrease. Out-of-route miles are the miles driven in excess of the most direct route to deliver a shipment. My company had more than 10% out-of-route miles. Those miles are usually created to run a driver to his home, to spend a day or two, before hitting the road again. After fuel consumption, that was our largest controllable variable cost.
3. Deadhead miles would decrease. Deadhead miles are the miles a truck runs while not hauling a load. The distance from delivering one load and picking up another is what causes it. My company had more than a 10% deadhead rate. After fuel consumption and out-of-route miles, that was the third largest controllable cost. If there were a national freight system, what is known as "freight density" would increase greatly. Freight density is the geographic distribution of loads. Think of a map with dots on it, each dot representing where a load will be picked up or delivered. The more freight density, the more dots, and a delivery point would never be far from the next pickup point if there were enough freight density. That is one reason there needs to be some kind of national system, to have high enough freight density. If there were a national freight system with the kind of coordination this vision discusses, deadhead miles would greatly decline. [2]
4. Customer service would increase, with much more real-time control over the pickup and delivery of loads, and loads could move quicker under this system.
5. Fuel consumption would decrease, as drivers would not idle their trucks so they could sleep in them, for either heating or cooling. An idling truck burns about a gallon an hour.
6. With truck driving becoming a tolerable profession, the drivers' ranks would be cleaned up to eliminate poor drivers as well as criminals. Although my [ultimate vision](#) for the future sees that *nobody* is homeless, starves or suffers greatly, not everybody should be behind the wheel of a truck, as there is significant responsibility and danger in truck driving. Trucking companies were so desperate for qualified drivers in the 1990s that driver qualifications were often little more than a warm body and beating heart. That practice would end.
7. Other costs, such as maintenance, would decrease, as the management would be tighter, more intelligent and more real-time. The trucks would cost less, as the vast majority would have no sleeper attached to the cab, also meaning that larger loads and trailers could be hauled.
8. The administrative staff of running America's freight system would be drastically reduced, perhaps by as much as 80-90%. Those who would remain would have higher-level management skills than previously used in the industry.

Those are the immediate benefits. Some are difficult to put a price tag on, such as the cost of broken families and people killed by fatigued drivers. There are costs and considerations to make such a vision happen, and the next section will deal with most of them. If the lives of those millions mattered to American society, the obstacles are trifling and readily overcome. Virtually everybody could win. The only "losers" are criminals and drivers who should not be behind the wheel, and the upper hierarchy of trucking companies, including the owners, who will have to learn new tricks, and perhaps have to find new careers and investment opportunities. Also, most paper shuffling would disappear.

Costs, Considerations, Obstacles and Possibilities

On America's highways today, a sea of trucks can be seen hauling freight to and fro. Most is called van freight, where the cargo is sealed in a van. Larger companies have thousands of trucks. If companies came together to effectively form one trucking company, and the proper [information philosophies](#) were adopted, the above scenario would be easy to implement. A "drop and hook" could take less than a minute, and

drivers would be able to operate within a few hundred mile radius of their homes, with distribution centers in every city. The coordination of trucks and loads would allow a load going from coast-to-coast to be hauled by one truck, or dropped and picked up by twelve trucks in hardly more time (or could even be less), with the coordination of activities so sophisticated that the fleet and loads work in harmony.

There are costs involved with making that vision a reality, however. Here are the most significant ones.

1. Not all trucks have satellite dishes and onboard computers. Trucks participating in this program would need them.
2. The computer system to run the node-based system would need to be purchased and developed. The system envisioned here is only transmitting character-based information, not the multimedia data that is coming into vogue with broadband Internet access and the like. Running a character-based system would be a small job for today's computing power.
3. The quick drop-and-hook technology would have to be developed. It would not be much of a technical feat. The current slow, messy, greasy way that tractors and trailers hook up would have to be abandoned for a clean, quick, automated method. Current tractors and trailers could be retrofitted, and new ones would already have the appropriate gear. For new equipment, the elimination of the sleeper part of the cab would probably more than pay for the new drop-and-hook technology.
4. Putting barcodes onto tractors and trailers is easy. The laser equipment, placed onto the trucks, yards and hand-held scanners, would be more costly, but still cheap, especially when millions are placed.
5. Today, most of the needed land and facilities are located at existing truck stops. If this vision developed, fueling companies would be bought out, and their land used for node yards, as well as other carrier yards. The cost could be minimal.
6. Much of today's trucking management probably does not have, and probably never will have, the ability to develop and manage this envisioned system. They may be the most resistant to change, because they would no longer be calling the shots as they are today. They will have to discard old ways and attitudes in order to participate in the new system. There will be cost there, although its magnitude is partly dependent on their willingness to learn new ways of managing. Most likely, many people from outside the industry will have to be recruited to make it happen.
7. The same will be true for some drivers. Most drivers will substantially benefit from this system, while the criminals and drivers who play cat-and-mouse with management will probably not fit in. The truck stop and roadside culture will disappear, and those who depend on it will not like it much at first, but most who know that world will be glad when it vanishes. Similarly, today's union leaders have adopted an "us against them" attitude, while plenty of corruption and "selling out" has pervaded its ranks. Drivers are invited to look beyond a potential driver union as just another self-interest group. There is an opportunity far beyond just drivers getting their lives back, and it can go a long way toward [healing humanity and this planet](#). Union leaders and many truck drivers will have to reorient their thinking, and many will be incapable of doing it, but they can become a vanishing minority when the vision is comprehended and begins coming to pass. If an effort is made to ease the transition for all involved, however, nobody will unduly suffer, which is a major theme of this web site.
8. Today, long haul drivers work far more than a 40-hour week, for one of the only jobs in America that does. In this system, people will not work their lives away driving a truck. If everybody willingly pitched in, drivers might not get a 40-hour week immediately, but it would begin trending that way. As discussed below, there are some easy ways to pay for it all, and nobody needs to work themselves too hard.

As far as I know, those are the main costs involved with making the transition. Technically, it would not be a big deal. The most dangerous problem would be the wrong people making it happen. For all those drivers who think that trucking managers and executives are not too bright, I cannot deny it too strenuously. I thought I had seen abysmal management when I worked in trucking, but I recently consulted for one of the world's largest transportation organizations. Considering its scale and the number of professionals devoted to running it, it was run far worse than the trucking company. It can be argued that humanity, in its present state, is not capable of pulling off this vision. However, the ability of people to learn appears to be directly proportional to their desire to learn.

My [new president](#), who ended up delivering the final blow to the \$250 million trucking conglomerate I worked

for, looked at my driver bonus table one day. The bonus levels were presented graphically. The diagram had two axes, one for increasing MPG and one for increasing dispatched miles, three levels of each, for nine different bonus levels (imagine a tic-tac-toe diagram). My president said that he could not understand that diagram, and if he could not understand the graph, then the drivers could not either. My assistant controller and I talked to many drivers over the years before that new president showed up, and nobody needed to have that diagram explained. They understood perfectly well what it meant, as *it represented bonuses they could earn*. It was in their interest to understand that diagram, and they all did.

Technically, the most difficult part is developing the software for the national freight system. I have designed software myself, and know it would not be difficult, if people who knew what was happening designed the software. From my experience on the user and designer sides, it is evident that today's business software companies are plagued with poor design because few know the business, accounting, and data processing principles and see the bigger picture. Few true "architects" exist in the software industry. Most are "carpenters" who know how to pound nails, but have no idea how to build a skyscraper. Today, armies of carpenters design and build software, with few competent and visionary architects to be found. That is not only a problem in developing this envisioned system, but also for software in general. The [computer revolution](#) [has barely begun](#).

Today, there is a great deal of wasted technology, in trucking and elsewhere. Trucking companies will get satellite dishes and other high tech equipment, but not really know how to use them, or else they will use them at about 25% of their potential.

Many well-meaning people have advised me to "dumb down" my work into something that a fifth grader can fully comprehend, with two paragraph summaries of the various topics this site deals with. Attempts have been made to accommodate that concern, such as in this site's [introductory essay](#). A person can get this site's thrust in a few minutes of reading that essay. However, the slogan mentality is primitive, and sloganistic minds are easily swayed when somebody invents a sexier slogan or shouts theirs louder. This site does not seek that audience. Slogans that drivers can put on buttons, such as "No More Nomads," or "Sleep at Home Every Night," can help, but to make this vision a reality, people will have their minds and hearts challenged.

There will be ideological objections to this vision, since it can be seen as incongruent with the capitalistic ideal. What ideal is that? The [lack of competition](#) between trucking companies? The shareholders taking a bath? No more profit motive? How inefficient government is?

One need not subscribe to [Michael's](#) notion of the "[Young Soul](#)" awareness theme, where winning is everything, to understand that competition and winning are major themes in American culture. That has not been a constant of human history. Nature is [far more cooperative than competitive](#) (does your liver compete against your spleen?), and [Darwin's "survival of the fittest" notion](#) is a projection of the young soul awareness onto the world that young souls see. The ideal of competition is a primitive notion. In practice, competition is fear-based, especially in economics. Our competitors can take away our jobs, and we can lose the roof over our heads and access to food. In a "winner" society, everybody can quickly become a loser. It has been telling to watch the world's richest man, Bill Gates, continually look over his shoulder at his competitors, afraid they will ruin his business, as Microsoft has engaged in many underhanded practices to wipe out the competition. If the world's richest man could not sleep for worrying about his competitors, who can?

This current system threatens the human race with self-extermination. How many winners will there be if that happens?

This trucking vision was not born from thinking of ways to beat the competition. One way to make this vision happen is for drivers to become owners, in much the same way that the employees bought out United Airlines. Companies could also come together in a spirit of cooperation.

The drivers could band together and buy out their carriers (many are on the ropes) and gain enough freight density to make this idea feasible on a national basis. Instead of committing hundreds of billions of dollars per year to making weaponry, the U.S government could help make this happen with a tiny fraction of that sum, and it could become a showcase for what is possible when people come together. Once van freight gets onto this system, with a little creativity all freight can get on it, and no driver needs to sleep in his/her truck, unless they want to. Each node can have a small facility for those sleeping over (a rare occurrence, with cots for

the overflow of the rare snowstorm “stranding”), there can be some sleeper trucks for when drivers want to drive across the nation on vacation with their families, and many other cheap ways to accommodate some of the “perks” of traditional trucking life.

Many of the best drivers have carved out their little piece of trucking hell and have made the best of it. They can get home every weekend while running big miles (and driving on stimulants, forging their logs and speeding to do so) and make more than \$50,000 per year. They may not initially like this solution, as it may seemingly threaten the life they have carved out for themselves. One of the greatest crimes of our society is [wasting genius and talent](#). In this vision, the best can still ascend, but the floor is much higher for the least able and motivated. When I have mentioned this vision to long haul truck drivers (I first published this idea in 1999, so nobody can try to patent it...this is free to the world), one instant response has been, “If we did that, we would not make as much money.” My response is, “Not if you organize.” When I have mentioned this idea to trucking executives, the response has been, “that extra pay for long haul drivers is combat pay.” My response is, “What if there was no need for a war?”

It is up to drivers more than anybody else whether this vision comes to pass. They are the people doing the work. [The means become the ends](#), and coercive tactics will ultimately fail to make this vision happen.

Of course, such a system will not be a secret one. The information in the national freight system will be as public as possible. Some customers do not want the nature of their freight known (those who still believe in competition), and the system could accommodate it. Drivers, however, will have access to all pay and operational data (perhaps with names kept confidential, at least until the paranoia is past), and they will all realize that it is in everybody’s best interests to cooperate. Those who are recalcitrant and want to play cat-and-mouse with their trucks and “management” should not be a part of this system (they would be the system’s cancer cells). Everybody can be on the same team, and everybody can win.

As [Donald Walsch’s god](#) told him, in societies of highly evolved beings, “dirty work” such as truck driving or farming or sanitation work is the most honored work. Only in primitive societies as ours are such jobs denigrated, relegated to the lowest paying and worst working conditions. It speaks volumes about the human race’s history. It is time to change, if for no other reason than that we are ushering in our self-extinction if we do not change.

Many technologies that can make the world a better place have been systematically suppressed in the name of power and profit. I am living evidence of it happening in the [energy](#) business, and this site clearly outlines similar dynamics in [medicine](#) and [other professions and industries](#). When technology suppression stops being business-as-usual, we will see the end of trucks, roads, pollution, environmental destruction, poverty and disease. What is keeping that world from coming into being is us. The easiest way to corrupt this trucking vision is by turning it into the new dogma. There will come a time, perhaps soon, when burning oil to get power will widely be seen as insanity. Also, paving over the earth to transport goods that people do not really need will be seen as crazy, especially when anti-gravity and free energy technology is available. If there is a lesson that I hope this vision can help us all learn, it is that we can work smart instead of hard, by cooperating we can achieve far more than we can by competing, and *everybody* deserves to have a fulfilling life, free of drudgery. We have far better things to do with our lives. If we care for each other, we *can* have it all.

Footnotes

[1] This footnote is more of a historical document than anything else, for those who want to see the path this trucking vision took to flashing into my head. It is not imperative to read this section to comprehend the vision this essay imparts.

During the summer of 1991, I was recovering from [the ordeal in Ventura](#). I had written a 100-page diary-letter as part of my self-therapy for healing my Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. I had spent nearly a year in Ohio at that time, and again had to move across the nation during a recession. It was not easy finding a permanent position in Ohio. Even though it was the Rust Belt, more than half of the controller positions in the Dayton area were in manufacturing. I had not worked in a factory environment before, and did not have a prayer, not when a job ad would receive two hundred responses. During that year in Ohio I sent out several dozen résumés, and had the courtesy of receiving rejection letters twice.

Although I was not actively chasing my [free energy dreams](#) anymore, I always refused to work in certain industries.

Dayton is the home of Wright Patterson Air Force Base, but I never considered working for them or the many defense contractors in the Dayton area. Similarly, in Seattle, during the several times I have looked for work there, I always refused to consider working for the timber, mining or aerospace ("defense") companies. I did not tell recruiters that I did not believe in those industries, but would say I did not see a great future for them. Idealists and corporate America do not mesh well, [as I quickly discovered](#).

After nearly a year of looking for permanent work, I finally landed a job in Columbus, Ohio in the summer of 1991 as a trucking company controller, and worked there for more than five years. During my tenure, we grew from slightly more than \$30 million in annual revenues to about \$45 million. [At a medical lab](#) in Los Angeles that I worked for the previous year, I was the main number cruncher for a \$100 million organization, but I did not quite have the opportunity that the trucking company offered. They fired two controllers during the year before I began there. The company never had a competent controller before. As with most of my career, I immediately began working sixty-hour weeks. I worked nearly every weekend of my first year there. From a controller's perspective, the place was in a shambles. My first three years there were my career's most satisfying. I liked whom I worked for and with, and I was able to help them.

When I moved to Los Angeles after my first [Seattle fiasco](#), I tried getting into the computer consulting division of a "Big Eight" CPA firm. If I had one more programming class, I would have gone that route and not the controller/accountant route. I always had an interest in computer systems, particularly how information systems work, and have always been a "big picture" kind of guy. I immediately dug my hands into every area of the trucking company that I could. There were some areas, however, that were off limits to me, which delayed the insight that I arrived at five years later. Most of the company was oriented around our computer system. We were linked to a main computer at a sister company.

A company with a virtual monopoly vended the software. They vended for hundreds of trucking companies, and even some of the largest (often the biggest companies develop most of their own software). Immediately, I began designing software modifications, working closely with the chief programmer, who also ran the data processing department. During my five-year tenure, I submitted hundreds of programming requests. I designed some systems from scratch, inventing systems where none existed. Understanding the company's big picture was essential to developing the best systems, because a change could impact several areas. The company had departments such as safety, operations, owner-operator settlements, payroll, billing, receivables, fuel tax, personnel, maintenance and the department that I built from scratch, accounting.

As with [Dennis' company](#), working there was like juggling ten knives at once. From the moment I arrived (usually at about 9:00 AM) until 5:00, was a continual whirlwind of activity. From five until eight or nine, I performed the detailed work that accountants do, in uninterrupted peace. The management at the company was rather weak, and the organization was essentially run by a handful of us, with most employees unable to make any decisions. I worked at upgrading that environment. Because I was getting my hands into numerous areas of the company, I could see things others could not. Each year, during the course of my duties I did something that saved the company more than my annual salary. Also, what I saw was not seen by our sister companies. We were one company of several that totaled about \$250 million per year in revenues. Through my CFO I told my sister companies what I discovered and how it could save them money. Sometimes I told my counterparts directly. Sometimes I was heeded, and at other times ignored, because nobody at my sister companies saw the broad picture I did. It could be frustrating.

When I arrived, the company was losing money. A handful of us were instrumental in making the company almost immediately profitable. My impact was felt and appreciated. It was fun. My president was at retirement age. I learned from him and liked the man. He was from the old school, however, and never really appreciated how critical our information systems were. He often boasted that he did not need computers to run the business. Trucking, as with the airline, telephone and electric industry, was known as a "regulated" industry. That meant the government set prices and managed the competition, which meant there was not any. In communications, it was a de facto monopoly, as with Ma Bell. In the electric industry, which is only now being deregulated (with companies like [Enron](#) taking advantage and raping the public), it was a local monopoly in every market. In trucking, there were quite a few companies, but no competition. Each company had its own routes, with government-set prices. It was similar to the airline industry, but not as glamorous.

Industry regulation set prices based on cost plus a "reasonable" profit. With no competition, regulated industries were virtually guaranteed a profit, which was based on their costs. The incentive for those regulated industries was having their costs as high as possible, because the greater their costs, the larger the profit the government would build into the pricing structure. In theory, the government regulated those industries by also regulating their practices, such as their cost structures. In regulated industries, a phenomenon happens known as "[capturing the regulator](#)." It extends to pharmaceuticals through the [FDA](#), [agribusiness](#) through the [USDA](#), banking [through the FDIC and other bodies](#), [insurance](#) through the state regulatory bodies, [CPA firms and the SEC](#), etc. Because money and power corrupts, the regulators end up protecting the interests of those they regulate, not the public's. It is well known in every regulated industry. Government is always fighting capture, but the regulators themselves *desire capture*, as corruption

pays well.

The [airline industry](#) is higher profile than trucking. Pilots were the elite of the transportation industry, while truck drivers had gritty jobs. When deregulation happened in the early 1980s, competition became fierce between the airlines, for a while. Numerous small airlines came into existence and began competing with large airlines. Airfares began a steep price decline. Deregulation is what made flying affordable to most Americans. In a regulated industry, everybody does well. Suppliers do not manage their costs, employees make good money for what can be easy work, managers nearly sleep on the job, and it is a gravy train all around. Government work is often similar.

When deregulation happens, however, new competitors get into the business, and companies that formerly had an almost fond regard for each other, as they were forbidden to compete, now found themselves facing each other in a "free market." A new deregulatory environment or new industry, as with microcomputer software, is the closest thing to a free market, from the producer side. It never lasts long, as the case of Microsoft demonstrates. [Standard Oil](#) in the 1860s and 1870s is another example. There were initially hundreds of small oil refiners. By 1879, John Rockefeller bought out or wiped out his competitors and controlled 95% of American refining, which was the oil industry's critical link. By controlling refining, Rockefeller controlled the entire industry, as all oil passed through his hands. Microsoft's attempt to wipe out Netscape and become the leading Internet portal is similar. Even the breakup of Standard Oil did little to change things, as a few big players colluded with each other, which is standard oligopolistic practice. Recently, two of those Standard Oil companies merged back together, creating the world's largest oil company (Exxon and Mobil). [Capitalists hate competition](#). They always have and always will, because competition makes for an uncertain future and is hell on profit margins. Only in monopoly or oligopoly situations can companies rake in big profits, as Microsoft does today in its monopoly position.

In the wake of deregulating transportation, the airline industry was a free-for-all for a few years. Then the airlines bought out their smaller competitors, wiped others out through predatory pricing strategies, and the industry is consolidating. I recently worked in the travel industry, and old salts told me that the few large airlines often raised and lowered their prices in unison, evidencing collusion. The collusion does not have to be a conspiracy held in smoke-filled rooms, although it can be. The few players can come to a mutual understanding of how the game is played, and each knows their role as they all rake it in. When the owners of professional American baseball teams were convicted of a conspiracy in the early 1990s, when no free agents could seem to get an offer from another team, nobody has since come forward and admitted the conspiracy. Perhaps they did not all meet at a secret meeting to hammer out the conspiracy, but could all smell which way the wind was blowing, and played their part.

The few large airlines, which control nearly the entire American flight market, might wink and nudge each other while raising and lowering their prices in unison, periodically staging a "price war." The airline industry's suppliers have acted similarly. Through mergers and other aspects of today's capitalism, there is only one commercial airplane manufacturer in the United States: Boeing. They have only one competitor: Airbus. Suppliers of regulated industries also have little incentive to manage their costs, as they are merely passed along in the retail price of the product or service. Boeing is a tremendous bureaucratic organization, structured much like a government agency. Companies like Boeing are why *Dilbert* exists. Boeing is also the second largest contractor in the last big regulated industry, [the military](#).

Companies in regulated industries have little incentive to modernize their practices or technology. Hence, regulated industries are rife with ancient management structures and styles, often have old technology, and are highly inefficient. When deregulation happens, the race goes to the quick, for a while. Trucking was a much more fragmented than air travel, with hundreds of large trucking companies, and much lower barriers of entry (the biggest barrier is usually the money it takes to start a company). In the decade after deregulation, the competition in trucking was fierce. There were not only hundreds of new companies, but also the formerly gentlemanly manner in which the big players dealt with each other became a battle to the death. Ten years after trucking was deregulated, one third of the hundred largest trucking companies were out of business, casualties of the fierce competition. Those companies that could not adopt competitive practices, such as modernizing, bit the dust.

The ranks of trucking companies, however, were filled with managers whose careers were built during the regulated days. Consequently, most had no idea how to modernize. My president's anti-computer sentiment was not unusual. Some business practices I saw were thirty years behind the times. Many executives and managers were formerly truck drivers themselves. They were injured on the job, brought into the office, and worked their way into management. The trucking industry is also one of the last bastions of male bigotry, as trucking is largely a man's job. The macho mentality often dominates the thinking of truck drivers and management, with morning greetings often accompanied by swear words.

Having "[home grown](#)" managers in one sense was positive, but in another was not, because they had little or no professional training. Getting a college degree is not all it is cracked up to be. All the same, those who have been through the college experience during the past generation are usually not afraid of computers, and know they cannot run

a large company without them. Like a truck, a computer is a tool. Used properly, it is awesomely powerful.

I was amazed at how poorly designed the software that the industry leader vended was. Software bugs or poor design are why computers make "mistakes." Computer nightmares usually pertain to software design, although poor hardware design can contribute. There can also be compatibility issues.

The bedrock principle of all data processing is "garbage in, garbage out." If inaccurate or meaningless data is input, so will be the output. If the system is not designed to get the best possible data input, the rest is meaningless, a phenomenon I have seen many times in my career. It is one more instance of [forgetting the basics](#). It is similar to building a huge, ornate house on a foundation of sand.

Trucking needed better information systems than almost any other industry, because it operated in a real-time environment, spread across the nation. Ours was a typical mid-sized trucking company, with hundreds of trucks crisscrossing America, and the goal was getting the best load under the nearest available truck going to the right destination at the right time. Making that system work effectively required an awesome amount of communication between driver, shipper, receiver, and the company that coordinated it all. Not only did we need real-time communication, we needed a sophisticated system to figure out what load should be taken by whom and when to where. Without a sophisticated communication and information system, the trucking company's effectiveness and efficiency would be abysmal. Most companies were in the same boat however, so they were "competitive." Even when we began getting better information systems in place, we regularly saw a customer's load fail to be hauled for lack of a truck, while a few miles away a truck sat at a truck stop overnight, empty, because we could not find a load. That blundering was costly.

The largest controllable variable cost in a trucking company with employee drivers (not independent contractors; my company had both) is the cost of fuel. The largest factor is not the fuel price. By far, the largest variable is the driver and how economically he/she burns the truck's fuel. For instance, with our company fleet, a truck's MPG could be as high as seven, or as low as four and a half. That is a tremendous variation. At a fuel cost of \$1.20 per gallon and at 120,000 miles driven in a year, the variation between the fuel cost of a driver getting 4.5 and 7.0 miles a gallon is more than \$11,000 dollars. For a truck that might contribute \$30,000 to cover indirect costs in a year, \$11,000 dwarfs all other variables. I never saw a company that had a timely and accurate way to measure its trucks' MPG, except for the system I designed.

When I began, we only had owner-operators, but during my first year we inherited a company fleet from a sister company that we closed down. I had to develop systems to manage a company fleet, where for the first time we had to worry about the costs of fuel, maintenance, driver wages and a multitude of other factors that go into running a truck profitably. With owner-operators, we merely took a cut of the retail dollar to process the paperwork, while the owner-operator not only managed his truck, but also often secured his load through our agency network. I developed a system whereby the card used to buy fuel was interfaced with our computer system to calculate MPGs. The interface already existed, but none of my sister companies were using it to calculate a timely MPG for their trucks.

Truck stops enticed drivers by giving them free showers, meals and other goodies if they bought a minimum of fifty or a hundred gallons. A truck held between 200 and 300 gallons in its tank, but many drivers would put in that fifty or hundred gallons every day or two, and get the free goodies. That was a normal part of the business, but a truck's MPG could not be calculated unless one knew how many gallons they *consumed* in a period, not how much they put in their tank. I devised a method where the driver gave the fuel desk some information. The driver would give the fuel desk his truck mileage, as given by his hubmeter or odometer, his unit number, and a "p" or an "f", meaning if he filled his tanks to the top ("f"), or only partially ("p"). We could perform an MPG calculation between each "f" because when a driver fills his tanks, we could calculate how many gallons went through his engine since the last time he filled them (unless he had a leak, sold his fuel or had it stolen). We required our drivers to fill their tanks to the top once a week.

The fuel desk also transmitted data captured automatically from the fuel pump, such as price per gallon, gallons pumped, the location of the fuel station, etc. With that data coming online, we had timely data to calculate fuel consumption on a nearly real time basis. None of my sister companies, who had much larger company fleets (several hundred trucks), had anything like it. They simply could not tell what a truck's MPG was, accurately or in a timely manner, or see any trends. It was the largest variable cost the company had, and they had no way to even begin managing it. It was common throughout the industry.

I developed a system that took advantage of information flows that already existed, added some other data to it, and had a gold mine of information. That system also created the need for sophisticated analysis. One problem was drivers giving the incorrect unit number, the hubmeter reading being keyed in incorrectly, or the driver giving an "f" when it was really a "p." Those problems necessitated an analyst examining the data and correcting it.

I developed a report by truck that showed a truck's MPG, who the driver was, where they fueled and when, and I could look at it and see the MPG going up when a driver was deadheading (driving with an empty trailer), see it go down when he took a trip over the mountains of the West, or even when he was driving into a headwind. I could also see it go down when a driver used his engine to heat or cool his cab. It was information that no other company I saw had.

The data was valuable, but was only the first step in managing the problem. While I rode herd on the process, working with fleet operations, we would ask a driver what the problem might be for his low MPG, or how he got it so high. We uncovered problems such as a driver not really knowing how to shift his truck properly, or a truck that needed its fuel injectors overhauled. Once I had the system running, it only took about an hour per week of debugging and analysis to know who to ask which questions, and we could begin managing our fuel consumption. For the huge companies, what I developed may not have been news, but for most other companies I was venturing into a world that nobody had seen before. Those above me often could not appreciate what I was doing, and how for an hour a week of an analyst's time they could have timely and accurate information on the fleet's fuel consumption. We made the drivers responsible for their MPG. They drove the trucks and knew best what was happening. I developed a bonus program for rewarding drivers with high MPG and high productivity. The drivers then became very interested in their MPG.

Mine was not the industry's first MPG bonus, but it was run off the most accurate and timely data. Some of our better drivers, to keep their MPG and bonus high, would hang out inside the truck stop instead of burning up a gallon an hour to keep their engine running to heat or cool the cab. My program was having an impact. We eventually had nearly 200 company trucks on the road. Yet, it was always a battle to keep somebody focused on managing the fleet fuel consumption. We never devoted much effort to it because it never became a management priority. We spent millions of dollars per year on fuel, and all I asked was a couple hours a week by one person, and they could keep an eye on fuel consumption and manage the problem trucks and drivers. The cost/benefit of my program would have easily been ten times the return for the effort put into it. It could have been much higher, but it never became a priority because the idea of managing fuel consumption was alien to the industry. Drivers managed it by default. I proved that it was not difficult to get timely and reliable information to begin a management process, but I was a voice in the wilderness. How much fuel is wasted across America because trucking companies are not actively managing fuel consumption? It is many millions of gallons per year, easily.

There were several areas where I made innovations such as that. In calculating miles driven for fuel and mileage tax purposes, again the software company vended a "system" that my assistant controller called dog excrement. A programmer from India spent an entire hour or two designing the system. The fuel tax area was off limits to me for years, and I eventually inherited it and discovered how bad it was. We were losing more than \$30,000 per year in uncollected taxes from owner-operators and state audits. I invented a system that eliminated data entry error, had the computer do sophisticated calculations, again spitting out exceptions that took some analysis. Our annual loss fell to about zero. As in the fuel consumption area, I could have further refined the fuel tax system to eliminate more errors and reduce the time spent debugging the data, but with the other fires I was fighting, I did not have the time. When I inherited the system, our mileage error rate was ten percent, as deduced by the state auditors who took a chunk of our hide each audit. My system had less than a one-percent mileage error, and required only a third as much human effort, to create the data and manage it, as before.

Again, however, there was a problem. The old system used people as drones, having them do rote procedures that the computer could have done faster and more accurately, and I replaced the drudgery with a process that required much less, but I also created an analysis step, and the software was more sophisticated. I created a system that needed intelligent management, but it richly paid off. The driver put forth no more effort than before, and the system was more fair and accurate. Ex-drivers generally could not manage a system such as that. We needed some sophisticated management. That was my trademark in system design. I would replace five drones with drone-like one job, entering data into a sophisticated system that minimized data entry errors, and needed one analyst to manage it.

By itself, it was a great improvement. There was a downside, however. My ideal was eliminating rote jobs and replacing them with fewer jobs, but jobs in which the employees could exercise their brains. It was unusual for the person doing the rote job to be capable of performing the thinking job. My systems needed higher-level skills to manage. A big problem was upper management not understanding that. Yet, while I was there I could keep the systems online, I was training my assistant controller to take my job someday, and he understood what was happening. I was trying to upgrade our management practices, but had to continually deal with managers who could not go there, because they were drivers who hurt their backs and had become managers.

In addition, the great crime [of today's capitalism](#) is that it does not share the wealth. My innovations made jobs that took less effort to perform. By definition, that is an increase in wealth. All too often however, corporate America axes bodies in the wake of such innovations, and makes higher profits, giving out huge perks to the executives. America has by far the greatest disparity between executive compensation and worker wages of any industrialized nation, and it became dramatically worse after [Reagan](#) took office. If corporate America invested more of that increase in wealth into

its people, or spread it around society, such as eliminating the indefensible scandal of homelessness in America, the richest nation of all time (Cuba has no homeless people), we would have a chance at becoming a truly "great" society. Innovations such as mine too often become a gold mine for the rich, or a way to crack the whip better on the employees.

The software company did not have a data integration concept. They had modules such as operations, settlements, payroll, maintenance, etc. They brought some data into one module from another, but far too often we ended up entering data, such as a hubmeter reading, into several different databases, when there should have been one that all fed and used. The data would churn through a module and be dumped out in a big report that nobody looked at. I often saw that data from one module was not sent to another. The information could not interrelate and produce more comprehensive and meaningful data. By integrating the data that way, it also meant that higher-level thinking was involved in analyzing it. That thought process had not been used at my company, and had not at every trucking company I had seen. That industry-wide software that everybody worked with also evidenced it.

After I had been there nearly four years, we performed a system conversion to the new software version (after preparing for nearly a year), and much to my chagrin, I discovered the modules that the company vended from ten years earlier had not been modified at all, and our software was vastly better than what the industry leader had. We could not avoid the conversion, because the new software was written in a newer language, so we made the plunge. We had to take big steps backwards to convert to their "new" software, and spent frantic months recreating the modifications we had made. I was burned out by nearly five years of sixty-hour weeks, capped off with that nasty conversion. It was then that I had my breakthrough of insight. I eventually became involved with nearly every aspect of the company, but the safety department was still off limits, although we had a parade of ex-drivers and ex-policemen waltz through the position of safety director. They were non-managers. In my final year there, I was finally able to sink my teeth into the safety area. What I saw shocked me, but also led to my breakthrough.

There are inherent conflicts between corporate interest and the public interest. Corporate America constantly sacrifices people, resources and the environment in pursuing the [holy profit](#). There was a major conflict of interest in trucking. When trucking was deregulated, the same thing happened as with the airlines, except it was not as high profile. Rates declined in the fierce competition. In trucking as in air travel, the consumer was the big winner. "Cost control" does not have to be a dirty business. The regulated industries were extremely wasteful. As with the [other rackets](#), the most powerful pigs get access to the trough. The people who paid the most for the cost control were the people doing the work: the drivers and clerks. As rates declined about thirty percent in the decade after deregulation, so did drivers' wages. It went from a good-paying industry to a low paying one.

Truck drivers today are in a bad situation. Virtually every driver would prefer having a job where he/she sleeps at home every night. Consequently, "local driving" jobs are coveted, and if a driver gets one that pays well, he/she will hang onto it forever. Most local driving jobs pay poorly when compared to "over-the-road" trucking. Five years ago, a local driving job paid \$10 per hour at most. Long-haul jobs paid slightly more than \$30,000 a year. Those are the averages, and today are somewhat higher. Unionized truck drivers make much more, but again, people usually have to "know somebody" to get them. I have seen non-union over-the-road drivers make more than \$50,000 per year, but they are unusual. The average driver is in a bind. They can get a local job and fail to support their family, or go over-the-road and make \$10,000 more per year. They give up their lives, however, and road expenses eat up a large portion of that pay increase, similar to what daycare does to a mother who works outside the home.

Many drivers go back and forth, driving long haul, but their marriages and private lives begin falling apart. They are home only a few days a month, and they then take a local job. They cannot make ends meet on local job pay, so they go back to long haul. They are stuck in a no-win situation, one I have seen many times. Over-the-road drivers are paid by the mile. The more miles they run, the more money they make. That encourages two dynamics: drivers driving fast and recklessly, and driving more hours than they should. Both endanger the driver and public. Trucking companies have introduced controls such as programming trucks so they cannot drive more than 65 MPH or so. Truck drivers constantly play a cat-and-mouse game with law enforcement, with anti-radar technology, citizens band (CB) radio to warn each other of "smokies," etc.

Also, companies are often paid by the weight of freight hauled, so there is an incentive to overload the trucks, both from the customer's and trucking company's perspective. Trucks are often overloaded, which makes them more difficult to maneuver, making them dangerous. Highway scales try to enforce the weight limits, but avoiding scales is an art form, and drivers have told me funny stories about how they avoided scales, even wiring their trucks so they could turn out the running lights as they snuck past scales by taking side roads at night.

There are laws regarding the hours a driver can work, and they are designed to limit driver fatigue, which is a big cause of truck-caused accidents (although officially it is small). When I was in the business, and it has changed little since then, most drivers drove more than the legal limit in hours. A driver must complete logs that show what hours he/she

works, sleeps, drives, and where they were and when. A fueling stop is supposed to be logged, as are pick-ups, deliveries and other events. Most drivers forged their logs. They would fake log entries to appear as if they kept within the legal parameters, although they might really work many more hours in a week than they were legally allowed. They often kept two or three sets of logs, one for each situation (one to record "reality," one to hand to police and other officials, and one to submit to the company). Those drivers take caffeine and illegal drugs to stay awake, and are often the drivers who kill people. The system encourages it in many ways.

Companies are supposed to audit drivers' logs to ensure proper completion and check for falsification. Falsification is detected by comparing the logs to available information. When a driver stops for fuel, the receipt states the time of day, as do toll bridge receipts. Employee drivers would turn toll receipts in for reimbursement. The company was supposed to compare the document to the log, to see if the driver was properly recording the event. Drivers would invent ways of beating the system. Some of our best drivers (at least from a productivity standpoint) would whiteout the time/date stamp on a receipt. When I discovered that, we stopped accepting such receipts for reimbursement, which halted that practice.

There were numerous pieces of data available to audit the logs. One was the bill of lading, which documented the changes in load custody from pick-up to delivery. In our office, mountains of paperwork floated from the settlement and payroll departments to billing, fuel tax and safety. What happened in safety was a mystery to me for years, because I was not allowed to go snooping there. When I finally did, I was shocked. For starters, I found that the piles of paper that went into the safety department were gleaned for certain information, and every day's log for every driver was entered into our system, with error codes if an error was found. It was easy to develop a program that reported how many logs a clerk entered into the system, and what errors they found. In my five years there, no safety supervisor ever asked for that. I immediately had our programmers develop a report that the safety supervisors could run, and it was illuminating. Some employees were quite productive, while others were not. It validated some suspicions, while also providing surprises.

The real shocker, however, was what I discovered about log auditing and falsifications. Except for falsification, looking at the log alone could discover every potential log error. The pile of paper that accompanied the logs was for one reason only: detecting falsifications. When I ran the program I looked at error types, and falsification was absent. For the three months that I reviewed the data, not *once* was a log falsified. There was something wrong. Either the drivers never falsified their logs, which I knew was not true (our fuel tax department caught them), or our process was ineffective. A driver who regularly falsified his logs figured out the system, and never submitted his logs with documents that could falsify them, and our process rarely and poorly attempted overcoming that. If a log clerk received logs without the other documents, he/she audited the log without them.

Once I realized what was happening, one day the lightning bolt hit me. All those areas where I had revised and refined our systems, all those principles that I had used before in designing information systems that not only made life easier for those used as drones, but gave us more accurate and timely data than before, all came together in a flash.

At our company, a delivery receipt (similar to a bill of lading, but just for the delivery) would first go to settlements, where it acted as proof of delivery, so we could pay the driver (drivers were paid upon delivering the load). It would then travel to billing, where the date of delivery was entered, where we also logged in the proof of delivery, which some customers required. Then the proof of delivery would travel to the safety department with the logs when they came in, for falsification purposes. Then it would go to the receivables department where it would be filed. That was partly because trucking companies were often organized departmentally that way, and reinforced by the trucking company software. A driver's log would go to settlements and payroll first, then to safety, then to fuel tax where the log points (fuel stop, delivery point, etc.) would be entered. I devised a system that had a mileage program calculate the miles between the log points, which compared them to the driver's trip records. Mountains of documents made that circuitous route through the company.

In that flash, I had an insight that stunned me. The ideal is that a document should be handled only once, and the pertinent information entered from it. Then it goes directly to file. That was not a unique realization in itself, and was not really mine, but is a corporate ideal these days. The vision incorporated that idea into something far grander. In what I saw, the computer system then took the pertinent data and sent it to where it was needed. The various departments did not handle any paper, but instead dealt with the data coming from those documents and other data sources, such as the truck stop fuel desk. The data was integrated and manipulated to give us what we needed. We needed a new department known as Central Paperwork, where the data came in, was entered, and the documents filed. The raw data needed for settlements, payroll, billing, receivables, fuel tax and safety would all be entered in the same place. If done properly, the other departments never needed to see the documents. Also, there were numerous front-end edits that would have ensured the integrity of what we entered, where various algorithms and pieces of related data would be used to validate the data entry, making it virtually impossible to make a data entry error.

In log audits, for instance, the last place I looked into, I envisioned a system much like the one I designed for fuel taxes. Disparate information came from several sources, and the sophisticated programs performed the comparing and validating, spitting out possible errors or falsifications, which were resolved by an analyst. It would take a human decision to call something falsified. We finally would have a system that caught log falsifications. My vision went far, far beyond a major reorganization and streamlining of the document and information flow. Again, the structure of the information systems was linear, with various processes taking place, seemingly unrelated, but in reality all part of a big picture that nobody was seeing because the data was not properly integrated. I designed other systems, such as one in our maintenance department that would give us levels of information we had never seen before, and few companies had ever had before (if any, although I imagine some big ones did). I designed a system that would give us maintenance-per-mile cost by driver, by truck, by component (even by brand of component), where we could begin seeing trends that were previously invisible.

The grand vision was how we could finally begin managing our trucks on a nearly real-time basis. The system I envisioned would bring data such as out-of-route miles and rates, MPG, maintenance costs, delivery experience, claims (damaged cargo) data, deadhead miles and rates, driver needs (such as when he was last home), etc., into one screen, where the big picture could be seen, with nearly real-time, reliable data. Then we could begin really managing our trucks. About the only time we could really manage the truck was when we had the driver on the phone (satellite dishes make that contact much better). If that data was in front of us when talking to the driver, the management possibilities were immense. I saw a way to create more meaningful data, more quickly, using far fewer resources than we had ever devoted to running the company's administration. It was a radical vision, and we were already most of the way toward producing such a system. The raw data was largely there already. It just needed reorganization, and needed the chief programmer and myself to spend a couple months doing design and programming of critical parts. In the end, we would have had timely and reliable information at our fingertips, and I would have eliminated numerous drudgery jobs and replaced them with a few analyst jobs.

There were downsides and challenges. None of my earlier innovations led to any layoffs, but that one might (it could have chopped our administrative staff in half), which was not my goal. My earlier innovations meant that we could do more work without adding more people, and I created jobs that needed problem-solving ability. The other was the double-edged sword that happens in capitalism. We would have had much more knowledge and control over what our trucks were doing. On one hand, it could have been wonderful, not only for us, but for the drivers, as we could have seen problems developing, such as declining MPG, and could have resolved them early. Such remedies included injector overhauls, and it also would catch drivers who sold their fuel.

Unfortunately, somewhat less than one percent of the driver population is criminal, and they would sell fuel, sell the tires off a trailer, sell off the load, etc., but they would do it for a week before anybody caught on. Yet, it also could have been abused to turn the drivers into virtual slaves, us watching their every move, turning down the screws. In unscrupulous hands, it could have turned out that way.

The only valid concern I ever heard about that vision for streamlining my company was from my assistant controller, who astutely observed that if we got a handle on hours of service and could find forged logs, the cheating drivers would all quit and work for somebody who let them drive eighty hours per week. It was a valid concern, and one I had already accounted for. We *had* to know what was happening. .

Not only was there a duty to the public, I was a corporate officer and I could go to jail for letting a driver kill somebody, when I had information that could tell me he was driving eighty hours per week. The duty to public safety and my own hide were more important than some drivers leaving. Our drivers had accidents that killed people several times while I worked there, and as I looked at photographs of people who our trucks had killed, I felt that whatever our company could do to make sure that never happened again was worth it. The safety measures we enacted not only saved lives, but also were far cheaper for the company. The cost of killing somebody might be borne by our insurance company in the short term, but in the long term we paid for it in rising premiums and other costs, such as perhaps going to jail, which some unscrupulous trucking executives are doing today, as they conspired to circumvent the hours-of-service laws.

Probably the biggest obstacle of all was the people I worked for. I presented my ideas to my new president, a salesman who repeated his predecessor's mantra: he did not need computers to run the company. I presented the ideas to those above me, even to the parent company's CEO, and all I received were blank stares. They had little idea of what I was talking about. They did not really understand the business. I soon stepped down as controller, my protégé took my place as planned, but he quit soon after, in the horrid environment that existed. The new president chased away most of the company's talent within a year. All the systems I put in place were taken over by people who had no idea about how they worked, or what the goal was. I heard that they all ended up in shambles. That was depressing.

That new president hired a compliant controller and they let the accounting systems disintegrate. Consequently, and probably not entirely accidentally, they hid more than a million dollars of losses (from their incredibly poor

management practices) in the accounting system's wreckage, and in late 2000 there was a public scandal over what they had done, and a few months later the entire \$250 million organization closed its doors, that scandal being the final blow. All the sister companies also ran inefficiently, for the reasons I have highlighted, and a spike in oil prices killed off that dinosaur that tried surviving in the last warm valleys. It was preventable. Thousands of people lost their jobs in that meltdown, largely due to the incompetence of upper management. It was awful to watch it happen from a distance, and see careers capsize of those I once worked with.

There were many other aspects of my vision that this essay has not covered. The systems could have been continually refined until we were running on all cylinders, and what is presented here was a fragment of the vision that came to me.

[2] On a national basis, with the United States being a net importer and having regional industrial and agricultural centers, there would be more net freight moving more one way than another at times, but having half-trailers (called "pups" in the industry) would mitigate that kind of deadheading, as in a driver could haul a full pup and an empty one, or taking trailers back by rail to where the greater freight density is, something less feasible with our current system.

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

The More Things Change, the More They Stay the Same



The upper photograph was taken in 1915. It depicts the lynching of William Stanley in Temple, Texas. The photo was made into a postcard, which was a popular use of lynching photos in those days. On the back of the postcard was this caption: "This is the barbecue we had last night. My picture is to the left with a cross over it. Your son, Joe." (see the book *Without Sanctuary*, plates 25 and 26)

The lower photograph was taken in 2005, in Iraq, and it depicts an incinerated Iraqi, surrounded by U.S. Marines posing for the folks back home. The photo was posted to a website used by U.S.



The top photograph is of Sabrina Harmon posing next to the corpse of Manadel al-Jamadi, an Iraqi who was tortured to death by U.S. Navy SEALs at the Abu Ghraib prison. Charles Graner is posing next to al-Jamadi's corpse in the lower photograph.



This photograph is of an Iraqi girl who lived in southern Iraq, who was one of the first victims of the U.S. invasion to "liberate" Iraq. We liberated her foot.

.....
military personnel, who post pornographic photos of their wives and significant others for the enjoyment of their fellow soldiers. The caption for that photograph was "cooked Iraqi."

A Note to My Critics

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[False Dichotomies, Straw Men and Name Calling](#)

[Conspiracy Theories, the “Company I Keep,” Presentism and Dennis Lee](#)

[Threadbare Rhetorical Devices](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

I have often solicited it, and many have provided valuable criticism of my work over the years, both constructive and otherwise. However, most of the unsolicited criticism I received contained serious errors of logic and other flaws. If critics of my work wish to have their criticisms taken seriously, they need to read this introductory essay before they write their critiques.

I no longer have public email address from this site, largely because of “critics” from the public. After the [World Trade Center attacks](#) of September 2001, the [criticisms of my work greatly increased](#) in their frequency, irrationality and viciousness. Some were breathtaking, with the most irrational and uninformed coming from a self-proclaimed government “fraud expert” who called me a criminal while he tried to officiously intimidate me (I have [encountered his professional brethren before](#)). They were nearly all variations on killing the messenger, with open threats sometimes accompanying their diatribes. Those assailants succeeded in limiting my public dialogue, but they did not succeed in preventing this site’s completion. This site was largely finished in 2002 during a several month period when I had no public contact, and did not receive emotionally unbalancing attacks.

Cyberspace is a great equalizer, but having a public email address is like an author publishing a book and having his home address and phone number on its cover. With email, many feel free to make the equivalent of obscene phone calls, and threaten to come visit my home and kill my pets; such is the state of today’s America. In early 2007, I initiated another attempt to [engage the public](#). We will see how it works out.

False Dichotomies, Straw Men and Name Calling

Perhaps the most common fallacy of logic directed toward this site’s writings is a *false dichotomy*, also known

as *false alternatives*. It is the logical flaw that states that if something is not one thing, then it is another, when it is neither. I went to [business school](#) in college and fervently digested my indoctrination. I kept my eyes open after graduation, and eventually became acutely aware of how my indoctrination conflicted with post-graduate reality. I realized that [I had been sold a set of lies](#), not only about [capitalism](#), but also about most aspects of my world. I was a [capitalist who finally saw through the game](#). To some critics, that makes me a "Marxist." I have barely and only recently read any of Karl Marx's work. In addition, calling me a "Marxist" is an example of *argumentum ad hominem*, or name-calling. I am either a capitalist or a Marxist. That is a false dichotomy. There is no room for a capitalist who became disillusioned with capitalism. That same false dichotomy was handed to Americans for generations, with the continual Red Scare and the fantasy of being invaded by communist armies and conquered by the [international communist conspiracy](#). That might be the most untenable conspiracy theory ever concocted, but was an officially sanctioned one (a la McCarthy, et al.). In addition, Stalinism had little to do with Marx's work.^[1]

I have written about the brutal police-state tactics used on non-violent protestors at the WTO meeting in Seattle in 1999, the 2000 Republican and Democratic conventions and the 2000 World Bank and IMF meetings. One critic responded that I should be glad that I do not live in China, because they use real bullets on the protestors there, not rubber ones. That is about the most ethically bankrupt argument anybody can advance: the crimes our state commits are smaller than crimes that other states commit. That argument can be trotted out to justify any crime, and can be summed up with,

"Be glad I only raped you, he would have killed you!"

Such a rationale uses the crimes of others to justify ours. People can always dredge up the specter of Hitler and Stalin to justify our state's crimes, because ours were not as bad as Hitler's, Stalin's, or China's. What makes that fallacy of logic worse is that it is happening in my nation, not somebody else's. I can *do something* about the state-committed crimes in *my nation*. I can do far less about the Chinese government's crimes. Both the U.S. and Soviet governments used that type of false argumentation throughout the Cold War to silence their internal critics. Establishment defenders would point the finger at the other superpower, saying, "At least we are not like them. Do you want to live under their rule?" If I can point the finger at somebody else who is worse than me (in actuality or imagined), that seemingly relieves me of the initially painful revelations that introspection would bring, so *I* can improve *my* behavior. It is one of the oldest tricks in the book, the same fallacy that Jesus remarked on when he said that people look for splinters in their neighbor's eyes while ignoring the logs in their own.

In the wake of the [World Trade Center attacks](#) and the great irrationality that gripped America, a false dichotomy endlessly played out, even led by the White House: any attempt to understand the motivation for the World Trade Center attacks as anything other than George Bush the Second's "good versus evil" scenario was nearly grounds for treason. In that false dichotomy, if people did not accept that America was attacked because its assailants simply hate goodness and virtue, then they were traitors to the United States. There is thereby no room to try understanding what happened, what motivated those suicidal terrorists, comprehend how America's actions contributed to the situation, and so forth. It was [black/white thinking at its most dangerous](#).

Another fallacy of reasoning is related to the false dichotomy, and has been used to misrepresent my work. I questioned Mr. Skeptic's judgment in classifying an activist group trying to prevent [Mumia Abu Jamal's](#) execution as a "hate group." It is an Orwellism to call people trying to prevent (state-sanctioned) murder a "hate group." Orwellisms turn the meanings of words upside down. The group that Mr. Skeptic called a "hate group" was aggressive in their stance, but so were the WTO ([World Trade Organization](#)) protestors in Seattle, getting pepper spray in their eyes, plastic bullets in their faces, being kicked and receiving other violent treatment for laying in the streets. That does not mean that the protestors were violent or hateful. In

most cases, it meant exactly the opposite. Was Gandhi "hateful," with his civil disobedience? Was Martin Luther King, Jr.?

Even if Mumia Abu Jamal was indeed guilty of the cold-blooded murder of a policeman, America is about the only "civilized" nation with a death penalty. The rest of the "civilized" world does not agree with executing Abu Jamal, even if he were fully guilty. America is also nearly the only nation on earth that executes people for crimes they committed as children.^[2] In addition, there are major doubts about Abu Jamal's guilt, because kangaroo court has been a regular and well-documented feature of Philadelphia's judicial system, and those irregularities are glaringly evident in how Abu Jamal's trial was handled. For just one fact among many that makes the "cold-blooded murder" conclusion untenable, the dead policeman was in the process of administering a beating to Abu Jamal's brother when he was killed. The policeman may have thought that he was beating Abu Jamal, as the police had openly threatened him, and the mayor (and ex-police chief) had publicly called for silencing him and his uncomfortable questions and observations. During the summer of 2001, the courts denied the testimony of Arnold Beverly, who admitted that he shot the policeman that Abu Jamal was convicted of killing. Immediately after denying that confession of murder, the courts soon ruled that Abu Jamal should not be on death row. That ruling probably has everything to do with the protest efforts over many years, including Mr. Skeptic's "hate group." To millions of people, the proposed execution of Abu Jamal had far more to do with silencing a critic of the powerful than it did any sense of justice.

To some critics, questioning Mr. Skeptic's judgment became a defense of the organizations that Abu Jamal was active with, including the Black Panthers and M.O.V.E. Questioning the judgment of calling a protest group a "hate group" has nothing to do with supporting the groups *affiliated* with a person the "hate group" is trying to save. If somebody protested the kangaroo court conviction and execution of the Rosenbergs in the 1950s, does that make them a Bolshevik Communist? Such mischaracterization is also known as the *straw man* logical fallacy, which is where somebody misrepresents another's position, and then attacks the "straw man" they created. The attack on the *straw man* is supposed to substitute for attacking the real thing, trying to fool observers.

That tactic has been used repeatedly against my work and others'. [Chomsky](#) and [Edward Herman](#) wrote two books together more than twenty years ago, titled *The Political Economy of Human Rights* (originally titled *Counter-Revolutionary Violence*). The Warner Communications conglomerate suppressed the work's publication.^[3] Its academic book subsidiary, Warner Modular Publications, Inc., was printing ten thousand copies of the book when the president of Warner Modular's parent company (Warner Publishing) saw their ad for the book. Warner Publishing's president, William Sarnoff, whose uncle used to run RCA, then initiated the suppression. Sarnoff had the books destroyed, and even destroyed the catalog that listed the book. He summoned the Warner Modular president to his office, then verbally attacked him in such a way that the Warner Modular president and his staff resigned. Warner Modular was soon sold and then went out of business. Sarnoff destroyed his own company to prevent a book's publication. Did the Nazi book burners ever go that far?

[South End Press](#), located in Boston, eventually published the work. The *Boston Globe* has had a long-standing policy of never publishing a review of any book published by South End Press, one of the world's leading progressive publishing houses. The American establishment does its best to make sure that Herman and Chomsky's work never makes its way into mainstream awareness, as it does for any critic of America's political-economic system. In *The Political Economy of Human Rights: Volume II*, the authors deal with the treatment of America's devastation of Southeast Asia. The book's largest section deals with the American establishment's treatment of the disaster that befell Cambodia.^[4] The book's focus was not the nature of Cambodian atrocities against their own people, but how the American press and academics dealt with them, including how America contributed to it. They could not be more explicit in what their work attempted. In their words,

"As in the other cases discussed, our primary concern here is not to establish the facts with regard to

postwar Indochina, but rather to investigate their refraction through the prism of Western ideology, a very different task."[\[5\]](#)

Poetically, the book's suppression is a case study that illustrates the book's thesis. In their work, the authors tellingly expose the establishment's blatant double standards of reporting, where ideology (e.g., we are the good guys, and our enemies and victims are the bad guys) takes precedence over reporting the facts, and extremely so.

The American media establishment's propaganda stated that if the North Vietnamese "won" the war, Vietnam would be the site of a communist-instigated bloodbath, but one never happened. A peripheral nation to the Vietnam War, Cambodia was treated to a devastating bombing by America over several years, killing nearly 10% of the Cambodian population, with another 10% predicted to die in the bombing's aftermath. What America did to Cambodia was one of the 20th century's greatest acts of genocide. Although the American media did not predict what happened in Cambodia, the Khmer Rouge eventually became the violent nationalistic overlords that the media predicted would rule Vietnam.[\[6\]](#)

The purpose of *The Political Economy of Human Rights: Volume II* was to analyze how the American propaganda machine dealt with the facts regarding Southeast Asia, *not to debate the facts*. The American media focused the *false dichotomy*, *straw man* and *ad hominem* logical fallacies toward its critics during those years. Anybody critical of the media's handling of the events surrounding Cambodia became supporters of the Khmer Rouge; calling attention to media hypocrisy was dishonestly transformed into supporting the actions of the propaganda targets. While it was concocting a propaganda story, *Time* magazine tried baiting Chomsky into voicing his support for the Khmer Rouge regime.[\[7\]](#) Instead of a nod of approval for the Khmer Rouge, Chomsky gave *Time* a list of American media fabrications regarding the situation.[\[8\]](#) Unable to lure a statement of support for the Khmer Rouge from Chomsky or anybody else, *Time* resorted to reporting that anonymous "political theorists" defend the "[Cambodian tragedy](#)."

Chomsky and Herman took great pains to differentiate criticism of America's propaganda system from supporting the actions of people such as the Khmer Rouge. On page 256 of their book, they *could not* have been more explicit:

"It is a common error, as we have pointed out several times, to interpret opposition to U.S. intervention and aggression as support for the programs of its victims, a useful device for state propagandists but one that often has no basis in fact."

The authors are being charitable in describing such an interpretation as an "error." They thoroughly dealt with how the media tries making that bogus connection with its critics, and *Time* even unsuccessfully tried baiting Chomsky into that trap. Chomsky and Herman could not have been more explicit in their position, yet ever since the publication of *The Political Economy of Human Rights*, many of Chomsky's detractors have made the claim that he was defending or denying the crimes of the Khmer Rouge in that work. To this day, people ask Chomsky "tough questions" about his active support for the Khmer Rouge. To Chomsky, it must feel like being asked the Russian classic, "Have you stopped beating your wife?"

Even worse, the so-called "left" has contributed to that misrepresentation of Chomsky's work (while somehow Herman largely escaped criticism).[\[9\]](#) I received an email from one of my critics that he ignored Chomsky's work (whose work I use significantly in my own) ever since he read Chomsky "defending the Khmer Rouge" atrocities.

That critic either:

1. Did not read Chomsky's work;
2. Did not comprehend it;
3. Or he is being dishonest.

The answer is probably option 1, which also makes option 3 true. He likely read one of the many attacks on Chomsky that fraudulently misrepresent his work, using the *straw man* fallacy.

Conspiracy Theories, the “Company I Keep,” Presentism and Dennis Lee

[Dennis Lee's critic Mr. Skeptic](#) practiced the logical fallacy termed *appeal to inappropriate authority* when he [cited a newspaper article about Dennis' "criminal" record](#), when Dennis himself reproduced the official documents on his "crimes," which demonstrate that the newspaper articles were lying, and Mr. Skeptic knew it. In Mr. Skeptic's case, it was a case of dishonesty as well as poor logic. Another of Dennis' critics followed Mr. Skeptic's lead (and publicly thanked Mr. Skeptic for his help) when he reproduced newspaper clippings on Dennis' "criminal" record, and he eventually retracted his libel after I repeatedly informed him of it.

On various occasions, I have received this observation: my work is a conspiracy theory. One critic called my [essay on the cancer racket](#) an unbelievable conspiracy theory, because the conspiring doctors would not send themselves to their deaths by using orthodox treatments that do not work. I doubt that he read one word of my essay before launching his "conspiracy theory" criticism. Reading that essay will eliminate the notion that it is a conspiracy theory. It is nearly the opposite. There are almost surely wide-ranging conspiracies in the [medical racket](#), as there are in the [energy racket](#). While I will not deny that conspiratorial activities happen during the pursuit and maintenance of wealth and power, the primary thrust of all my work is that we *all* have a hand in what happens in our world, and what the left calls "structural analysis" (or "institutional analysis") explains more of the dynamic than conspiracies do. I have been called a "[conspiracy theorist](#)" for mentioning the [billion-dollar bribe](#) we were offered to stop pursuing free energy. The state of affairs in the energy and medical industries are a few percent conspiratorial, at best, and more than 95% "unconscious," largely because people refuse to accept responsibility for what is happening. That was the [main lesson of my journey](#). We *all* bear responsibility for what happens in our world, which also means that we can *do* something about it, which should be good news, I would think.

For those who prefer playing the victim game, however, such news is the worst imaginable, which is why those who play the victim game have been my harshest critics. A paradox accompanied that realization. My harshest and most irrational critics are almost exclusively educated white men, who are history's biggest "winners." Few would readily identify educated white men as victims, but victims and victimizers operate from the same dynamic: both feel powerless inside. When people attain self-mastery and self-love, they do not feel the need to exploit others to attain life's goals, live the "good life," etc. Those who feel that they *are* victims react by seeking situations to become victims, or seek situations where they can victimize others. They want to be winners, which they interpret to mean that there must be losers.

Whatever anybody does to another, they ultimately do to themselves. Jesus spoke about reaping what we sow, and Eastern religions have their concepts of reincarnation and karma. That concept bridges the paradox of why victims and victimizers play the same game. In the end, victimizers are their own greatest victims. It just takes awhile for what goes around to come around. As people endlessly victimize one another, thinking that that is what it takes to be winners, humanity may reap the bitter harvest where *everybody* loses, as we destroy our planet. We can all be winners. There do not have to be any losers. With love, [we can have it all](#).

This web site's largest essay is its [American Empire](#) essay. It grew from my writings about Iraq, and does

more than tell the story of America's latest exercise in genocide, but what it has been like to be an American during those events. Iraq is *our* genocide, one that America is nearly entirely responsible for. Iraq is not the site of America's first oil-control genocide, and it may not be the last.

One site that published my original Iraq essays was Radio Islam, a decidedly anti-Jewish site that has published the work of many scholars such as Noam Chomsky and Edward Said.[\[10\]](#) Nobody can honestly say that [my work is anti-Jewish](#). Nevertheless, on more than one occasion, because Radio Islam has published some of my work (which barely mentions Israel or Jews), I have been called an anti-Semite. The critics who assailed my integrity because Radio Islam published some of my work *never* addressed my actual writings. They *never* made one substantive response to my work, but called me an anti-Semite.

Well-meaning people have repeatedly informed me that my work will be continually assailed because Radio Islam has published some of it. If past experience is any guide to the future, the critics who do so will *never* address my writings in anything resembling a reasoned critique. Some criticisms will be patently dishonest, while the rest will be filled with the logical fallacies that are presented here. If critics want to assail my work, that is their right, but a critique of my work has little to do with who published it, and this site is my primary publishing conduit. If I cited Radio Islam as a publishing source to try making my work seem more credible, or if I endorsed Radio Islam's site, my critics' comments may hold water. Anyone who wants to can link to my site or reproduce the writings on it.

[My Jewish writings](#) firmly rebut most of the anti-Jewish writings on Radio Islam's site, and it is to Ahmed's credit that he publishes the work of somebody whose work counters his own. Ahmed may remove my work from his site one day (he will not correspond with me anymore), and it would give some of my critics less ammunition, but those critics have never addressed my work.

My critics have told me that allowing Radio Islam to publish my work has allowed them to judge me by the company I keep. For an example of truly keeping somebody's company, I have kept company with [Dennis Lee](#). Dennis is a literalist Christian. I am not a Christian, much less a Bible-banging one. Does "keeping company" with Dennis taint me? Does Dennis' keeping company with me taint *him* in the eyes of his fellow Christians? If I stopped associating with right-wingers, homophobes and fundamentalist Christians, my circle of friends and associates would be far smaller than it is. America is filled with those kinds of people. What would I accomplish by refusing to associate with them? I truly have "kept company" with Dennis, and one of the greatest honors of my life is having been involved with him. I have never met Ahmed. If the KKK publishes my work, or links to it, am I "keeping company" with them? If I am, does that mean that I endorse their views?

Throughout the years, people whose interest in my work was kindled by my relationship to Dennis Lee have often called me "Dennis' most loyal supporter" and similar phrases. [Mr. Professor](#) was a more loyal supporter of Dennis than I was. My loyalty has always been to making free energy happen, and although my respect for Dennis is beyond words, the "most loyal supporter" label tagged to me is often done by people who then portray Dennis' organization as a cult or with criminal intent, so calling me Dennis' "most loyal supporter" casts me as a cult member who hero-worships Dennis (something I have never done), or a criminal accomplice, or some other tactic to try dismissing my work. This site is obviously not about Dennis all that much, or even free energy.

Another charge leveled against my work is that it indulges in [presentism](#). Presentism is judging the past by the standards of the present, but what my work demonstrates is how the history I was taught [is a pack of lies](#), although more the lies of omission than commission, as with all good propaganda. That is a distinctly different issue from presentism. In a sense, the presentism argument has been a method of attacking people who bring up the truth of the [Columbus Myth](#) and other [lies Americans have been taught as "history."](#)

Presentism would be judging Columbus a filthy man, when all fifteenth century Spaniards reveled in their filthiness. To say that fifteenth century Spaniards were a filthy people is not practicing presentism, for they were. They were much filthier than the Moors or Native Americans of the day, for instance, who [bathed regularly](#).

To say that Columbus engaged in mass murder is not engaging in presentism, because he did. Mass murder was a regular practice of the Spaniards of the day, so although Columbus was a mass murderer, he was not a "bad man," relative to his fellow Spaniards. Similarly, Columbus was dishonest, [stealing](#) the reward for first sighting land on the first voyage. Thievery is thievery, five hundred years ago or today. Similarly, [kidnapping the natives](#), which Columbus did on the very day he "discovered" the New World, may have been a standard practice of the [Portuguese slave runners](#) (Columbus was a slave runner), but those he kidnapped [almost all died](#) within a few months of capture. Kidnapping them definitely violated them.

If somebody states that Columbus was a relatively [typical Spaniard](#) of the day, that is fine, and I say the same. However, kidnapping, the mass murder of innocent people, theft and the like were as horrible then as now, even if Columbus invoked God as he did it, especially for those who suffered at his hands. The Conquistadors' practice of [feeding live native infants to their dogs](#) shocked even the priests of the day. When would the practice of feeding live infants to dogs be in keeping with the mores of the day?

Columbus initiated the first and only [complete genocide](#) of *millions* of people. He led the effort, and one of his early programs was chopping off native hands that did not give him enough gold. He was brutal, self-pitying, greedy, dishonest, cruel and a hypocrite. He also had some virtues, such as persistence, courage, and even some sense of honor, though it was sporadically evident. Even [Hernando de Soto](#), Stalin and Hitler had a sense of honor, however infrequently it was evident. Yet somehow, Columbus was transformed into a national hero, with an American national holiday in his name. A greedy mass murderer was turned into a national hero, and the American history profession participated in whitewashing his image. If we have a [Columbus Day](#), then the Germans could have a Hitler Day and we would have no room to criticize them. Columbus was no [monster](#), not for his day and place, but there is little evidence that justifies making him a hero, and far more that justifies monster status.

Ironically, the heroification of Columbus was a major act of presentism by [American historians](#) and others. Columbus was posthumously transformed into a hero when it came time to justify and [glorify what Europeans did to the New World](#), and it reached new levels in the United States. One meaning of presentism is that history can be important to the present, to help us understand today better. In that regard I am a presentist, guilty as charged.

Critics have blamed me for making white people into monsters. White people are history's most murderous people due to several factors, and being Christians may be one of the most important, as the Judeo-Christian ethic [actively justified the violence](#) that Europeans inflicted on the world. The primary reason Europe prevailed (and still does today - the U.S. population is mainly composed of the descendants of invading Europeans) was their mastery of violence. To the Native Americans in Columbus' day, for instance, the invaders were *all* white, European, Christian, and (not coincidentally) men.

The American history profession, as with probably every profession, [has prostituted itself](#) to the prevailing winds of wealth and power, and has served up all manner of criminals and murderers as heroes and saints. I am a white man. I was taught white history. My adult investigations have shown me that most of what I was taught about my noble forefathers was fanciful at best, which crippled my sense of reality, and I am still recovering from it. A Chinese woman could probably study the history she was taught, and discover that she was also taught lies. However, my work is about what *I* was taught, not what *she* was taught. Some critics have *assumed* that my work is supposed to be a multicultural synthesis of what the world is today, or was. I cannot speak for the people of India today, or the extinct Taino, or arrive at a sophisticated cultural assessment of today's world. I fully admit that limitation. My work is in large part *my* story. I can *do something* about the lies being told *in the society I live in*. The Chinese people will need to correct their own self-serving myths.

Threadbare Rhetorical Devices

George Orwell wrote in his *Politics and the English Language*, “In our time, political speech and writing are largely the defense of the indefensible.”[\[11\]](#) If anything, it has become worse since his time. [Orwell’s 1984 was also eerily prescient](#). Orwell simply saw where trends in his time were headed. In his censored preface to [Animal Farm](#), Orwell wrote,

“...it is the liberals who fear liberty and the intellectuals who want to do dirt on the intellect...”

The “defense of the indefensible” has always had the same goal: denying responsibility for what happens in the world, fingering “bad guys,” and justifying violence and exploitation by the powerful, who the defenders of the indefensible either work for, or they benefit from the indefensible actions. Establishment rhetoric is obsessed with finger pointing and [rationalizing the victim game](#), and regularly violates the most elementary rules of logic. The following section is a brief guide on the kinds of logically flawed argumentation that parades across the pages and airwaves of America’s media, and in academic and corporate realms, with pundits holding forth in ways that would have made Orwell cringe.

Those irrational arguments are not difficult to see through, once an eye for them is developed. If people become aware of how false it is, it can no longer influence their thinking, and can also be pointed it out to others, although often at great personal risk. Few want to hear about that tattoo on the emperor’s backside, especially when it sits in plain view.

Chomsky says it is a simple ethical principle: we are most responsible for the predictable consequences of *our* actions.[\[12\]](#) That principle is abandoned while defending the indefensible. One need not [wax mystical](#) to understand the often-subtle ways that *we all* [create the world we live in](#).

America’s [War on Terror](#) during 2001 and afterward, a [war that Rumsfeld says may take generations](#), is not new. It was Ronald Reagan’s theme when he took office. The irony of Reagan’s “War on Terror” was that the United States government was easily the world’s greatest terrorist organization during [Reagan’s reign](#), but establishment pundits [simply defined state terror out of existence](#). Reality is inverted largely by framing it with useful assumptions. If state terrorism is defined out of existence, then states can never commit terrorist acts, as a tautology. That *assumption*, if hewed to, will guarantee that state terrorism [is never even acknowledged](#), much less analyzed. That is how [blinding paradigms](#) are created.

[Edward Herman](#)’s *The Real Terror Network* was published in 1982, early in Reagan’s reign of terror. Herman followed it up about a decade later with *The Terrorism Industry*. Herman is one of the world’s most astute voices regarding terrorism, although his face was never seen in the mainstream media during the aftermath of the World Trade Center (WTC) attacks. In [The Real Terror Network](#), Herman presented the assumptions that underlay the double standard of never calling state terrorism what it is, while the old ladies of [Women in Black](#), who have never hurt anybody and are some of the West’s most courageous people, were dubbed “terrorists” by the FBI in 2001, even after they were nominated for a Nobel Peace Prize. Below are principles that must be followed so establishment apologists can write about terrorism with a straight face:

The principle of averting the eyes from National Security State (NSS) terror; Herman’s book was written before the [reign of terror in El Salvador](#) peaked, but the performance of [Elliott Abrams](#) on the issue was an example of how that principle worked; this is also an example of [decreasing the negative cognitions](#);

The principle of reliance on government as the source of the relevant and the true; that principle also

became part of the [third news filter](#) in Herman and Chomsky's *Manufacturing Consent*;

Stripping away of context; facts are stripped from their sources so the big picture is obscured; the media consumer thus becomes like the blind men and the elephant; one day the consumer reads about a tail, about a tusk the next day, and a trunk the next, but is never told that they all seem part of an elephant; that principle is similar to the reductionism often seen in [Western science](#), where everything is boiled down to its lowest-common-denominator, so the big picture is invisible;

The principle of balance; it is the pretense that state terror is equivalent to "left" violence, or that the government is trying to be a mediating influence between leftist and rightist terrorists; the Uruguayan military continuing to commit massive violence long after its leftists had been exterminated was an uncomfortable fact not considered by those who saw government actions as "balancing" between the extremes;

The principle that the NSS is led by moderates standing between the poles of extremists; it is related to the prior principle of balance, and in order for the fiction to survive even minimal scrutiny, the "right" violence had to appear independent of the government, something that State Department front man [Elliott Abrams](#) was adept at managing;

With the NSS let us look at the bright side; with that principle, the state's awesome crimes are swept under the carpet, and photo ops and other staged events are emphasized, or journalists who interview U.S.-controlled butcher dictators stress their humanity; those same principles are how [Columbus](#) was transformed into a national hero, how [Washington](#) became "the father of the country;" that is also an example of [increasing the positive cognitions](#);

With the NSS the relevant world is that seen by the elites; that is a common tactic where the peasants who die by the hundred thousand at the dictator's hands are never asked how their lives are going, but instead the only voices heard from [Indonesia](#), for instance, are those of the generals ordering the genocides, their sycophants, or the genocide's beneficiaries;

The United States is a disinterested party; as Herman wrote, that principle is "applied only when convenient;" in numerous U.S.-orchestrated, financed and armed coups and slaughters, the U.S. media completely hid the U.S.' hand, as if what happened in [Chile](#), for instance, was simply a domestic situation, free from outside intervention; however, the facts coming into the light during the past generation clearly demonstrate that Pinochet was virtually a U.S. puppet, and the overthrow and murder of Allende was orchestrated from the White House;

The U.S. natural right to intervene; that principle is starkly evident today, as there is barely any discernable dissent in America's mainstream media over the [open discussion taking place regarding overthrowing Saddam Hussein](#), as if it is not only America's right, but a duty;

Communist Terror as the Pot of Gold at the End of the Rainbow; with the collapse of the Soviet Union, this principle is dated, but its essence became the [worthy-unworthy victim](#) concept in *Manufacturing Consent*, where victims of communist terrorism received more than one hundred times the media coverage of victims of U.S. terrorism.^[13] Herman has recently written about how that principle has played out in the [aftermath of conquering Afghanistan](#).

Those factors helped make state terror invisible in the American media (at least Western state terror, especially U.S.-inflicted), and highly inflated the terror by the powerless, even fabricating it. I have never seen anybody make a credible rebuttal of Herman's work, and I have looked. However, perusing book reviews from the public at Amazon.com and reading all the one-star reviews that the work of Chomsky, Herman, Parenti and other dissident scholars garner provides good examples of the kinds of rhetorical devices that are discussed below.

See the world as made of heroes and bad guys. That is the comic book view of the world, one that George Bush the Second made explicit when he said the War on Terror was a case of “good against evil,” and then he told the world that everybody was either “with us or against us,” making it clear that “evil” meant anybody who failed to support the [War on Terror](#). [That the “bad guys” were “good guys” when they did our bidding](#) makes that argument ludicrous.

Focus on the unintended beneficiaries of our crimes, even vastly exaggerating their benefit, as if helping them was our sole motivation, while ignoring or demonizing those who suffered from our actions. That tactic was especially evident during the 2001 attack on Afghanistan. While the U.S. unilaterally attacked Afghanistan, putting millions of people in immediate risk, the U.S. media downplayed the [humanitarian disaster that loomed](#). The civilian death toll from the U.S. bombardment was barely even reported in the U.S. media, a [death toll that exceeded the WTC attacks](#), and the media instead had photo ops of Afghanis welcoming the Taliban’s opposition, the Northern Alliance (NA), who were the same warlords and their bloodthirsty rabble whose reign in the 1990s helped bring the Taliban to power. Suddenly, the bombing of Afghanistan was freeing its oppressed women. Afghani women are barely any better off than they were under Taliban rule. The Revolutionary Association of the Women of Afghanistan (RAWA) issued a statement as the U.S. bombs and warlords defeated the Taliban. In part it stated:

“The retreat of the terrorist Taliban from Kabul is a positive development, but entering of the rapist and looter NA in the city is nothing but dreadful and shocking news for about 2 million residents of Kabul whose wounds of the years 1992-96 have not healed yet.

“Thousands of people who fled Kabul during the past two months were saying that they feared coming to power of the NA in Kabul much more than being scared by the US bombing.”[\[14\]](#)

RAWA issued a statement on International Women’s Day, March 8, 2002, which discussed the post-Taliban situation in Afghanistan and the women’s lot. It stated in part,

“The existence of one or two showpiece women in the transitional administration (one belonging to a party infamous for being a lackey of the Iranian regime and the other a former high-ranking member of a party which epitomizes treachery to the motherland) is more an insult to Afghan women than a symbol of the restoration of their status and legal rights. The women of Afghanistan have not been liberated. This fact has been most succinctly summed up by the *New York Times* in its issue of November 19, 2001, when writing about an Afghan widow with eight children to feed: “Now, at least she is free to beg”!

RAWA gave America a little too much credit however, by stating:

“It is the conscience of the people of the United States that is scourged first and foremost by the slaughter of innocent Afghans in consequence of US bombardment in Afghanistan. Proof of this is amply shown in demonstrations against the war in Afghanistan in most American cities.”

I was in a peace march of a couple thousand people in Seattle, immediately after the WTC attacks. The local media barely covered us. American protestors of America's bombing of Afghanistan were far less than one percent of the U.S. population. Yes, we made some noise, but it was a whisper compared to the media's propaganda barrage. [Acts of flag-waving](#) during the bombardment outnumbered protests by at least 100-to-1. Fortunately, the Seattle marchers were not subjected to what peace marchers experienced on America's East Coast and heartland. I have only [marched behind priests and nuns](#), marching alongside post-menopausal women, as they *usually* do not get their heads busted by cops and counter-protestors.

Similarly, when [Iraq was bombed back into the Stone Age](#), the media played up the freedom Kuwaitis would soon enjoy. In reality, the [Kuwaiti government came back into power wielding a steel fist](#), and the Kuwaiti people did not exactly experience a golden age after the Gulf War, and the media was silent about political freedom in neighboring Saudi Arabia, [which has one of earth's most oppressive regimes](#). Whatever freedoms the Kuwaiti people may have enjoyed after the Gulf War, the war was obviously not about giving them their freedom. That rhetorical device is always used to cover up the intervening party's motivation. The United States has *never* intervened to help the peoples of the lands it invades and bombs. There is no such thing as [humanitarian intervention](#), and there [never has been](#). It can be a useful fiction, however.

Point to flaws in our victims to justify their treatment at our hands. This is one of the oldest tricks in the book, and highly unethical. Julius Caesar remarked on the barbarity of the Celtic people after his first failed invasion of the British Isles. The observation was partly intended to justify conquering them, to bring them "civilization." When [Spaniards overran the New World](#), in [history's greatest genocide](#), they constantly played up cannibalism and human sacrifice, even though the cannibalism reportage was a myth [from the every beginning](#), and human sacrifice was [greatly exaggerated by the Spaniards in South America](#), and elsewhere. American propagandists demonized "communists" for many years, as a way to justify killing them en masse, something that [Ralph McGehee](#) and many others eventually discovered was a fabrication. However "bad" somebody might be does not confer any integrity to those who bludgeon them to steal their land and lives. During the [long dispossession of North America's natives](#), the European invaders nearly always concocted rhetoric to make the natives seem subhuman, to justify their extermination and dispossession.

Accepting of one's responsibility for their participation in dark deeds becomes "self-hating" behavior, or an "attack" on one's group. That is another [false dichotomy](#), and has been directed countless times toward Americans who try to halt U.S. international aggression, partly because it is happening in their name. In the rhetoric of establishment apologists, we either have no responsibility at all for our behaviors, or we are self-hating. Chomsky becomes a "self-hating" Jew when he takes the [Israeli state](#) to task, especially when he also shows U.S. complicity in Israel's great crimes against the Palestinian people. The U.S.' mass response to [dropping nuclear bombs on Japan](#) is another example of that phenomenon at work. Being in denial or being "self-hating" is a transparently unethical false dichotomy. People who refuse to accept their contribution to, and responsibility for, various problems *cannot* arrive at constructive solutions to them. *Nobody* can solve another's problems. Until we own it, we cannot change it for the better.

Deny, deny, deny the obvious, and when it becomes so overwhelmingly obvious that it can no longer be denied, either claim to have discovered it, or claim it is so obvious as to be trivial, so trivial as to be beneath discussion. That one has played numerous times in long-running discussions that people have had with me, and it plays out in several variations in public controversies. It is related to [Orwell's doublethink](#). The original adversaries of the idea claiming that they discovered it themselves may seem too fantastic to believe, but it is a well-known phenomenon, remarked upon by [William James long ago](#), when talking about how orthodoxy initially reacts to theories it eventually embraces. When I first read James' quote in 1990, I thought he took his rhetoric a little too far in making his point, but I began seeing [exactly that phenomenon happen](#), and it may happen again soon in [orthodox medicine](#). Edward Herman calls it chutzpah, an American specialty.^[15] People have challenged me on the [thesis of Herman and Chomsky](#) about how the media works, or how [orthodox medicine works](#), or how the [energy racket](#) works, and for years they would call

me wrong. Finally, as it began to sink in, they gradually understood what I was saying, even finally seeing for themselves examples of it in action, dynamics that were previously invisible to them. Then one day, without even an acknowledgment that their new understanding had anything to do with me, they then begin preaching *to me* about how the energy racket works, as if I had no idea. On denying the obvious for a long time, then trivializing and dismissing it the very first time they acknowledge it, is a cousin to [Elisabeth Kübler Ross' work on death and dying](#), where people facing the inevitable move from denial to acceptance, after a long, fitful process. Transcendence *can* follow acceptance, as part of the enlightenment process. What people have done in the trivializing process is play the denial game as long as humanly possible, and then when it is no longer possible to deny, then trivialize it, acting as if they had already achieved transcendence. That not only uses flawed logic; it can be a dishonest practice, engaged in consciously.

Wage *ad hominem* and straw man attacks, and purvey obfuscating irrelevancies that pose as critique.

That nearly sums up the tactics of those who give one-star reviews of Herman and Chomsky's work at Amazon.com. One review I saw of Parenti's [To Kill a Nation](#) will serve to illustrate part of that dynamic. The purpose of Parenti's book was to *show* [what the U.S. did to Yugoslavia](#), and *why*. His book was not about which Yugoslavians acted honorably or not, but what the United States did there (although he also showed that the [U.S. supported the fascists](#) there, as usual). Parenti takes the high ethical ground of taking the motivation of *his nation* to task. One review by a right wing scholar completely ignored the main thrust of Parenti's work, to instead write about how Parenti's understanding of Yugoslavia was not as good as other scholars regarding Yugoslavia. The right wing scholar tried framing the issue as who was the bad guy in Yugoslavia, demonstrating that he unthinkingly accepted the [U.S.' right to intervention](#), which the purpose of Parenti's book was to challenge. Parenti wrote an apple book, and the right wing scholar took him to task because it was not an orange book. Such efforts are pseudo-critiques, and also use the [straw man fallacy](#), if even honestly done. The right wing scholar also used big words and cited irrelevant authors, which supposedly showed how sophisticated and well read he was. Such pseudo-critiques never engage in substantive analyses or direct challenges to the author's work, but instead attack the author's style, accuse the author of getting his/her facts wrong (but never point out where he/she has), often use big words and refer to other authors, saying the work they are critiquing is derivative or a poor attempt at copying the named author, but present no examples of that "fact," and so on.

Those kinds of rhetorical devices are increasingly threadbare, although they never seem to go away.^[16] One is shown for what it is, and another takes its place. It has everything to do with integrity and being responsible for one's actions. When people begin accepting their responsibility for how the world is (acting like creators instead of victims), and begin trying to change it, those kinds of arguments will disappear, or at least not be how America's media, major institutions and establishment defenders ply their trade. In early 2006, I finally realized that the apparent lack of rationality and ethics I was seeing [might be something else](#).

Footnotes

[1] Similarly, the Gore/Bush "choice" in the 2000 presidential election is another example of a false dichotomy, where voters for [Ralph Nader](#) were told that a vote for Nader was a vote for Bush. One could not vote for what Nader stood for and be against *both* [Bush and Gore's positions](#), in that logical fallacy. The Gore crowd relentlessly attacked the Nader voters because they said that even if Gore was less than ideal, Bush was worse. It was the lesser evil argument. When people choose the lesser evil, they still get evil. The "lesser evil" argument is known also as *realpolitik*, where power takes precedence over ideals, because it is supposedly "realistic." Machiavelli was one of the fathers of political "realism."

[2] America was the only nation in the United Nations that abstained from voting on holding the [Convention on the Rights of the Child](#) (the vote was 150-0-1). America also has the world's only standing government that refused to ratify the treaty that the convention created. One of the convention's resolutions was to ban the death penalty for children.

[3] See Chomsky and Herman, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism*, *The Political Economy of*

Human Rights, Volume I. pp. xiv-xvii. See also Bagdikian, *The Media Monopoly*, pp. 33-34.

[4] See Chomsky and Herman, *After the Cataclysm, The Political Economy of Human Rights, Volume II*. pp. 135-294.

[5] See Chomsky and Herman, *After the Cataclysm, The Political Economy of Human Rights, Volume II*. pp. 139-140.

[6] Pol Pot's effort was more nationalistic than communistic. Targeting people with glasses (which meant they were literate) and the elderly was an attempt to eliminate anybody who knew Cambodia's history, so Pol Pot could start with a "clean slate" and make himself the father of his country, like [George Washington](#). See Thom Hartmann's *The Last Hours of Ancient Sunlight*, pp. 151-152.

[7] It was published in its July 31, 1978 issue, under the title, "Cambodia: An experiment in Genocide." See an analysis of it in Chomsky and Herman, *After the Cataclysm, The Political Economy of Human Rights, Volume II*. pp. 163-166.

[8] See Chomsky and Herman, *After the Cataclysm, The Political Economy of Human Rights, Volume II*, footnote 85, p. 164.

[9] See Milan Rai, *Chomsky's Politics*, pp. 19-32.

[10] In December of 1998, America began bombing Iraq again, a bombing that continues to this day. The evening the December bombings began, I was literally sick over what we were doing to Iraq. Instead of writing another letter to the editor, that night I wrote an essay titled "In the Service of Empire." The next day I sent it to dozens of web sites, putting "Iraq" into an Internet search engine and firing off my essay to all the sites it hit. Both the political right and left published it. Hank Roth (a.k.a. The Golem) published part of it with other leftist essays the next day, and my work appeared around the Internet. One especially enthusiastic person was Ahmed Rami, who runs the Radio Islam web site. He posted it to his web site and offered to host on his site whatever I wanted to write. His offer spurred me into writing my web site. Ralph McGehee published my [synopsis of his Deadly Deceits](#) across the Internet; the [Leading Edge International Research Journal](#) published the first draft of my fluoridation essay, and had it on their web site. One of my readers reproduced my entire 600-page web site from 1996; Hank Roth published some of my letters to the editor, and my work was appearing across the Internet. Although I will allow anybody to publish my work (as long as they do not reproduce excerpts that misrepresent it), I decided that it would be best if I had one roof under which to house my work. This web site is that roof. I have to thank Ahmed for spurring me into creating this web site.

If the Ku Klux Klan or General Motors wanted to publish my work on the Internet, I would let them. That would not mean that I was endorsing their views, but it might mean that they were endorsing *mine*. The light can glimmer into the darkest caves. I would actually *like* to see my work grace neonazi web sites or corporate America's, as it may be able to reach people and soften their views. We are all in this together. The Radio Islam site is not filled with what I would call superb scholarship. In fact, it reproduces some of the most notorious anti-Semitic writings in history. It also reproduces the work of Chomsky and other scholars who are critical of Israel. I have used the Radio Islam site as a source of information. The only place I could find Henry Ford's *International Jew* writings (Hitler praised Ford's anti-Semitic crusade in *Mein Kampf*, and later called Ford one of his most important influences) was on Radio Islam's site. The problem with Radio Islam's site, though, is that writings such as *The Protocols of Zion* and *The International Jew* have credibility with Ahmed. His work is decidedly anti-Semitic. Ahmed lives in Sweden and spent time in jail for publishing his work. Even Sweden does not have that much freedom of speech. I did not know the nature of Ahmed's site when I emailed him my work on Iraq, but I certainly do not regret that I did so. I will not be contacting too many right wing sites when my site is finished, partly because it will be a waste of my time, as I doubt they will like what I have to say. Yet, if they want to publish my work, I will happily let them. The left wing will not like everything that I have to write about either. I doubt that *any* reader will totally agree with my work, as much of it is "out there," and I do not avoid controversial topics.

[11] See Orwell, *The Orwell Reader*, 1984 edition, p. 363.

[12] See the documentary *Manufacturing Consent*.

[13] See Edward Herman's *The Real Terror Network*, pp. 151-199.

[14] Statement of RAWA, November 15, 2001.

[15] See Herman's *Beyond Hypocrisy*, which is a hilarious/horrifying look at American establishment hypocrisy, so extreme that it goes beyond hypocrisy, and Herman had to find a new word to describe it, and he hit on chutzpah, and has given the Chutzpah Award to the most egregious cases of media hypocrisy. In his Doublespeak Dictionary in *Beyond Hypocrisy*, Herman defines the "chutzpah factor" thusly:

"Self-righteousness, arrogance, and a sense of superiority so great that gross double standards seem entirely reasonable and no self-interested action is beyond rationalization. This factor is positively correlated with size, power, and per capita income."

[16] A good book on the inability of Rush Limbaugh to make coherent and logically consistent arguments is Ray Perkins, Jr. *Logic and Mr. Limbaugh*.

Next Section: [Watching UFOs with James Gilliland](#) (21K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Making a Run at Alternative and Free Energy

By Wade Frazier

[Introduction](#)

[A New Kind of Technology](#)

[The Early Adventures of Dennis Lee](#)

[Dennis Makes a Run at It](#)

[The Pursuit of Free Energy](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

This essay is ancillary to this site's [main energy essay](#), and will chronicle what may be the most sustained effort ever made to bring alternative energy to the American marketplace. I also participated in it, and make a number of personal observations in the following narrative. Also, the man who led the effort has been slandered, libeled or ignored ever since, and the record needs to set the straight, for not only posterity's sake, but if humanity is to avoid its self-extinction, people need to understand how today's world works. The final chapter of Dennis Lee's adventures has yet to be written, because he is still at it, even after spending a couple of years behind bars for his trouble. Whatever the heroism or failings of Dennis may be, we are *all* responsible for how today's world works.

A New Kind of Technology

Since [electricity is four times as expensive as natural gas](#), few sane Americans would heat their homes with electricity, but it happens. My home today is heated with electric heaters, mainly because of all the hydroelectric projects in Washington State. I pay about \$100 per month for my household energy. When I lived in New Jersey, my apartment had electric heat, and I paid about \$200 per month for my household energy. Gas furnaces cost thousands of dollars, while electric heaters cost a small fraction of that. Electric lines run in places where gas lines are too difficult to install. Gas has its dangers, such as explosions and asphyxiation (reduced because artificial scent is added to natural gas, so leaks are easily detected in the home). Electricity has its hazards, such as electrocution and radiation from high voltage lines. Millions of homes have heat pumps. If a heat pump can average a COP of two, then it would be twice as efficient as using that electricity to run space heaters.

Why are *any* heat pumps sold in the United States, if electricity is four times as expensive as natural gas? If a heat pump averages a [COP](#) of two, then electricity is still twice as expensive as burning natural gas for heat. There are regional variations in electric and gas prices, which can make the relationship closer, however. In addition, there are variables in the economics of producing electricity. For instance, the electricity production infrastructure is geared toward meeting peak demand. Only 1% of the time does the nation's electric production system operate beyond 75% capacity, and it operates at about 25% capacity more than 10% of the time. Electric demand in the United States increases about 15% between winter and summer, and the hot, daytime, business hours are the peak times, when air conditioners are running. At night and in the winter, demand can slacken dramatically. There are technical and practical issues with turning on and off electric company steam turbines. Electric company turbines run all the time, but idle during off-peak hours. Electric companies have long encouraged businesses to use electricity at off peak hours, and do so with preferential pricing. For instance, today the Niagara Mohawk electric company charges more than 17 cents per kilowatt-hour (kWh) at peak times, and less than four cents per kWh on off peak. Also, if a home or business uses electricity for heating, electric companies can give preferential pricing. What if heat pumps could get COPs of eight? Then heat pumps could operate at half the operating cost of natural gas furnaces. Here is where Dennis Lee's heat pump comes into the picture.

A diagram of a standard air-to-air heat pump is presented below.



Click on image to enlarge

In 1974, during [America's first energy crisis](#), a Colorado cowboy bought a heat pump. Heat pumps are often used to both heat and cool homes. In the winter they pump heat into the home, and in the summer they pump heat out of the home for air conditioning. To work as an air conditioner in the summer, heat pumps needed be placed in the shade, often next to the house. Being in the shade helps for the summer, but hinders winter performance. The cowboy did not know how the heat pump worked, and called an engineer friend of his to come over and explain it. He showed that it was like a [refrigerator](#). The cowboy understood, and asked,

“What if I do not have a need for air conditioning, and only want to use it to heat my home? Then I would not want a heat pump sitting in the shade, but sitting in the sun. If I put that heat pump on the roof of my house, I bet it would operate more efficiently.”

They did just that. They also cut apart the evaporator array and laid it out flat, to get the full effect of the sun's rays. They hooked up some gauges, and before that heat pump virtually exploded, they obtained some amazing data. For producing heat, much higher efficiencies could be produced by sitting the heat pump in the sun. The cowboy told his buddy, “We'll be rich, putting heat pumps on people's roofs.” The engineer told him the heat pump could stay on the ground; only the evaporator needed to be on the roof. Their company was born that day on the cowboy's roof. It was named LamCo, a name based on the cowboy wife's initials.

The solar industry in America was already growing in response to the energy crisis, and an instance of serendipity happened. They only needed the evaporator on the roof, and they made the evaporator look like the day's solar panels - large, flat, black - and not the standard tube-and-fin heat pump evaporator. Below are evaporator arrays on LamCo-style units in the field.



Click on image to enlarge

Note the large, flat surface area. The LamCo-style evaporator, in an eight-panel array, provided about 400 square feet of surface area contact with the environment. The standard heat pump provided only a few square feet at best. LamCo stumbled onto a thermodynamic advantage.

The [Carnot ideal](#) has never been attained for good reason. With heat engines, entropy saps their efficiency. Hot always goes to cold. As the temperature of any substance rises, so does the motion of its molecules, and the hotter anything gets, the more disordered its molecules become. Boiling water is simply adding enough energy so that the motion of the molecules overcomes their attraction to each other, and water is liberated as steam. That greater disorder is known as entropy, and all heat engines face the entropy issue. The disorder of the molecules increases as they get hotter, and less as they become cooler. When steam condenses into liquid as it cools down, as in a steam turbine's condenser, the entropy is taken from the closed system, allowing the water to be used in the cycle again. The shape of the turbine blades, the efficiency of the tubing that links the components (straight and wide is better than curvy and narrow, so the molecules do less banging into each other and tubing walls, and more banging into the turbine blades), the heat losses between boiler and turbine, the friction in the turbine bearings and the like decrease the system's overall efficiency, so the Carnot ideal is never attained. The best steam turbines today only [reach about half the Carnot ideal](#). The standard heat pump, however, only reaches a paltry 10% of the Carnot ideal. With heat pumps, the components that affect the efficiency are the pump, evaporator, condenser and components that link them. Poorly designed or implemented tubing can affect efficiency, but the big variables are the two heat exchangers: the evaporator and condenser. With heat pumps, the Carnot ideal is approached as heat exchangers reach ideal efficiency, which in practice means as they tend to infinite surface areas, thinnest walls for most efficient conduction, most conductive materials, and the like.

LamCo discovered the virtues of large heat pump evaporators. Imagine the heat that an ice cube can take out of a glass of ice tea as it melts. Then imagine how much heat 100 ice cubes can take out of a punch bowl. While the relationship is not quite that linear with the flat plate

evaporator of the LamCo-style heat pump, the ability to take heat from the air is obviously greater than an evaporator with 1% of its surface area, even if a fan increases the heat exchange (and uses energy to do it). While a typical air-to-air heat pump held a few pounds of refrigerant and delivered about 50,000 BTUs (British Thermal Unit) per hour to a home, the LamCo-style heat pump regularly delivered 100,000 BTUs, and held sixty pounds of refrigerant. More important than how many BTUs were delivered into the home was how efficiently they were delivered. The efficiency of the heat exchangers would increase the COPs, and come closer to that Carnot ideal. While air-to-air heat pumps recorded COPs of around two, the LamCo system registered COPs of seven and higher. The highest COP I have heard of with the LamCo system was a twelve. Other variables entered the LamCo equation. The panels would take advantage of direct solar radiation, and wind blowing on the panels would increase the heat exchange and COP.

In LamCo's early days, they tried getting interest in their equipment, but when they talked to engineers, they said their heat pump got COPs of seven, and they were laughed out of engineering offices. Such COPs were "impossible," so the engineers said. They were the professional descendents those engineers who said that [Edison's light bulb was impossible](#), while it lit up the night in Menlo Park. In order to maintain their "credibility," LamCo published data on their equipment [showing it getting only COPs of around three](#). Then they would not be laughed at anymore.

The Early Adventures of Dennis Lee

While LamCo was struggling to establish itself in 1974, another pioneer was having his own travails. Dennis Lee's life story is hard to believe, and if I had not [lived a few chapters of his adventures with him](#), I might think him the greatest storyteller I had seen, making up grand and fanciful tales.

Dennis was born in 1946 and was raised in a family of migrant farm workers, when white people still did that in America. His early years consisted of following the planting and harvest seasons around the United States. At age 13, he was the eldest child, and his family informed him that they could no longer afford to feed him. So, he left home and survived to reach age 18. He then enlisted in the military, and eventually saw combat in Southeast Asia, the bloody kind that most men never completely recover from. He was a medic in the army, and believed in the American dream. People from his background often had Horatio Alger tales as their comforting mythology, dreaming of improving their station in life one day. There is *some* truth in the myth, but myth and reality do not mesh well for that myth's true believers, as there is a distinct class system in America (with more than a little racism in the mix), although less obvious than England's. Dennis took the American mythology seriously, and was such a flag-waving patriot that during his military days he got into fistfights with fellow American soldiers

who said bad things about the United States. Even though he lived the violent life of a soldier, he deeply cared about humanity and wanted to help people.

Because Dennis was a medic, he wanted to become a doctor one day. His first post-military job, however, was loading ships with bombs heading to [Vietnam](#).^[1] He was young with money in his pocket. Coming from his background, life was good.

When I had my first “existential crisis” at age nineteen, my [desperate prayer was answered](#), and a voice in my head suggested that I might like studying business. Dennis’ first encounter with an alien voice in his head was far more dramatic. He had a new Mustang convertible, and was making his way up the ladder to middle class respectability. He decided to borrow money from a bank to establish credit, not because he needed the money. As he walked out of the bank with the money, he walked a man with three children following him. They were emaciated, and the man looked and acted like a beggar. The man asked the bank vice president (VP) for help. His wife had died. They had followed the harvest to Washington, but the harvest was poor that year. They had been sleeping in their car for days, and were starving.

That was a scene not often witnessed in a bank lobby. Dennis had hardly been in a bank before, and the embarrassed bank VP acted like bank VPs everywhere, telling the man that the bank was not a charitable organization, and that down the street was a charity, where he should seek help. The banker was rather cold about it. It would have been unusual for that VP to do anything else, but the scene hit Dennis hard. While watching that tableau, he realized that the [America](#) he had been raised to believe in did not exist. He walked over to the starving man, shook his hand, and said, “I would like to introduce you to Mr. Vice President. His bank has decided to loan you all this money.” Dennis put that wad of loan money into the man's hands. The man's eyes were bulging, as were the banker's. Dennis said, “Furthermore, this is really your lucky day, because I've decided to trade cars with you.” Dennis gave him the keys to his new Mustang and walked out of the bank with him. As Dennis walked out the door, he turned back to the banker and said, “You'll never get that money back as long as either one of us lives.”^[2]

Dennis rode the bus home, crying all the way. His illusions had been shattered, and he decided to put himself out of his misery. He was not in total denial before that day. His experiences growing up, and those he had in Vietnam, had created [cognitive dissonance](#). The facts of life he witnessed contradicted the myth he had been sold, and he came to his stark realization in that bank. Being an ex-soldier, his solution seemed simple. He got his shotgun and put its barrel in his mouth, about to end his misery. At that moment, for the first time in his life, a voice spoke inside his head. The voice asked him what he thought he was doing. Dennis replied that he was going to exit this uncaring world. The voice eventually said, “Hey dummy, if you have a vision for America, don't die because it isn't; live to make it be!” Dennis feels that every moment of his life since then has been gravy, as he could have easily killed

himself.

After that day, Dennis began adventures of a different sort. A famous doctor took Dennis under his wing, and convinced him not to become one. In “[medicine](#),” as with most aspects of American life, myth and reality are vastly different. For Washingtonian youth, Alaska has long been a way to earn good money, especially during the summer. Dennis availed himself of the opportunity, and worked on an Alaskan radar base, in its infirmary. It paid well, especially on a base of thousands of men, living in isolation. Those men spent much of their pay on life’s pleasures, and the local crime syndicate provided the illicit ones, such as drugs and women. Dennis had plenty of naïveté to lose, and thought it merely his good fortune when the only woman in the region became his girlfriend. He eventually discovered that she was part of the local mob’s “recruiting pitch.” They were trying to run their illegal drugs through the infirmary. His girlfriend eventually admitted to their plan. Dennis decided to keep stringing them along, as he told the FBI everything. The FBI eventually pulled off the sting, and Dennis had a price on his head. After one mob murder attempt, Dennis left Alaska with twelve policemen as his bodyguard. At the airport where he departed Alaska, he went into the bathroom just before takeoff, followed by one of his bodyguards. The bodyguard pulled out a knife and tried killing Dennis in the bathroom. Dennis’ soldier instincts saved him, as he fought off the attack and yelled for help. That assailant spent a long time in prison after his botched hit. Dennis still has the scar from it on his arm.

Dennis fled Alaska, and the doctor who talked him out of becoming one helped him. The doctor’s family lived in New Jersey, and Dennis moved there and went to college. In retrospect, fleeing organized crime by moving to New Jersey may not have been the best move, but that is where he landed. Dennis became a highly enthusiastic student, pulling straight A’s and becoming the student body president. When it was discovered that he never graduated from high school (although he attended all 12 years of school), it was a minor scandal. Because Dennis was such an academic star, the college president made an exception in his case. In college, Dennis studied social psychology, and was an Honors College student. He had the freedom to pick a topic of study, and he studied Utopian literature. He also surveyed people door to door, asking about their perception of America’s potential and reality, and discovered that most people felt helpless and unable to change the way America functioned. They distrusted the government, seeing it as oppressor instead of servant. Dennis also attended a conference where B.F. Skinner spoke. Skinner was recently voted the most influential figure in psychology’s history. Dennis heard Skinner and took in the conference’s milieu, to his mounting horror. The theme of Skinner’s talk was about manipulating the public, using conditioning methods. It was a more sophisticated version of Pavlov’s work. At Dennis’ college, he had internship opportunities with politicians, where he could hone the fine art of manipulating the public mind. Today, it is called public relations ([PR](#)).

Dennis stumbled into the world of mass mind control. Pioneered by PR legends such as

Edward Bernays and Walter Lippmann, the term *propaganda* had positive connotations when Bernays wrote a book of that title. Bernays, a nephew of Freud, felt that average people were too stupid to know what was good for them, so their minds had to be manipulated. Bernays helped “engineer” the “consent” of the masses regarding what the powerful did in the public’s name. There was a black side to that engineering of public consent. Bernays designed the American Tobacco Company’s 1929 campaign to [addict American women to cigarettes](#). Bernays’ ruse was to get flappers to adopt smoking as a badge of freedom, the deadliest badge ever devised. Hitler’s propaganda chief, Joseph Goebbels, studied Bernays’ work in designing his propaganda attacks on Jews. Bernays also designed the campaign to [fluoridate America’s water supplies](#). Since the Nazis and Soviet Union both used and planned to use fluoridated water as part of a mind control strategy on subject populations and prisoners, because the [fluorine ion was proven to attack the brain and lower one’s IQ](#), it is legitimate to wonder if that effect is partly why most Americans drink fluoridated water today. The difference was that the Soviet Union and Nazis targeted subject populations and prisoners, where the target in America is the general population. Two-time New York City teacher-of-the-year [John Taylor Gatto](#) is emphatic that America’s public school system intentionally dumbs us down.[3] Bernays was a committed elitist, happily reminiscing in his later years about when his chauffeur was a virtual slave.[4]

Dennis got a glimpse into the profession of manipulating the public mind, and was nauseated. On the brink of graduation, he lost interest and never graduated. He was having a difficult time pursuing the ideal for America that he imagined. Upon leaving college, Dennis got married and went into the home improvement business, and soon his idealism saw him found a company named “Old World Builders,” with his eye set on building a Utopian community one day. It was the early 1970s, and he received a baptism by fire in New Jersey’s business world. Dennis’ first wife gave birth to a premature child who stayed nearly her entire brief life in the hospital. Dennis learned many lessons of [America’s capitalistic shark tank](#) the hard way in those early days, but he learned from them, and was just getting his head above water when the Oil Crisis of 1973-1974 hit. Gas lines, soaring lumber prices and other hardships put many companies out of business in those days, especially in construction. When his lumber supplier panicked and repossessed the building material it sold him, showing up at the construction site and taking it back (not a legal repossession, but possession is nine-tenths of the law, at least in New Jersey), Dennis’ company was destroyed.

Dennis was not singled out; that lumber supplier put most of its small contractor customers out of business the same way. I lived in a deteriorating Ohio town during the 1990s, and the residents said that the 1973-1974 Oil Crisis ended construction growth in that town, and it never recovered, with the “Rust Belt” recession of 1981-1982 delivering the final blow. As Dennis’ company crumbled, a customer stopped payment on a large check to him. Dennis’ company’s checks then began bouncing all over town, and it was curtains for his Old World Builders dream. His child was dying in the hospital when it all came crashing down, and in his youthful desperation, Dennis went to Las Vegas to gamble up the money he needed to save

his company. Naturally, he went back to New Jersey broke, with his child dead, and he faced the music. Dennis was young and still quite innocent to the world's ways. He received what was probably *intentionally* bad legal advice, and knuckled under to the prosecutor trying to keep his kill ratio high.[5] Bouncing those checks in that situation was no crime, but he pled guilty to fraud for bouncing those checks, a decision that still haunts him, nearly thirty years later.

Dennis eventually paid back everybody who was hurt in the company's collapse (a rare act), and had an intimate communion with that voice in his head, and spent days in a room doing what can be called automatic writing. He invented a new kind of card. It was not a credit card, but a savings card. People would use it when buying anything, and the merchant would give money back to the customer. Today, Dennis' idea has reincarnated in a watered down form known as the Discover Card. Dennis will not claim credit for his idea, but that it came *through* him. When he finished his bout with automatic writing, the beauty of what he had created astounded himself and anybody who pondered it. It was a simple yet sophisticated way of uniting consumers and giving them a voice in the marketplace. Although corporate propaganda portrays the consumer as sovereign, in reality, they are largely captive.

As with Mr. Mentor's inventions, what I eventually invented myself, and other works like it, it *does* feel like it is coming *through* you, not *from* you, and yet, although it does not come through the intellect, it still has our individual stamp on it. For instance, Richard Bach declined authorship of *Jonathan Livingston Seagull* for many years, and then Seth set him straight.[6] Dennis had the brilliant idea come through him, but now came the hard part: making his vision a reality. Dennis created a new company to launch his card concept. He named his company United Community Services (UCS), a name that he resurrected in his ventures today. Then Dennis got his real baptism in the business world. He did it in New Jersey again. Since New Jersey is Mafia Central, and the Mafia was constantly muscling in on small businesses there, Dennis' grand dream was a natural for the Mafia to try muscling in on. They tried it a number of times, which led to another Mafia hit attempt on Dennis, which he again survived, and the way he survived it gained the Mafia's "respect," and they never tried it again (he could have the hit men arrested when their attempt failed, but chose not to).

Dennis experienced high adventure in those days. He suffered from rheumatoid arthritis, met his current wife and soul partner, became a Christian and experienced many miraculous and horrific events. The police constantly hassled him because of the Old World Builders days, and arrested him a dozen times. One cop in particular was especially zealous, and did most of the arresting. Customers were having Dennis arrested as a tactic for avoiding debts they owed him. I once asked Dennis if the police ever thought to cease arresting him, because the charges were always frivolous. He replied that I did not understand the sick minds that policemen could have. With each arrest, the charges became more fanciful and unsupportable, but the cop who did most of the arresting became convinced that he had a major criminal in his clutches, and that one day he would catch Dennis doing something truly

heinous. During one arrest, Dennis had a pill of arthritis medicine in his shirt pocket. The cop thought that he finally caught Dennis in a crime. He held the pill aloft in triumph, saying that he had Dennis now. He found drugs on him! Although the lab analysis showed that it was arthritis medicine, the “arrested on suspicion of drug possession” haunts Dennis to this day, even used by [Mr. Deputy](#) in concocting his fraudulent million-dollar bail request.

Dennis spent years getting his UCS baptism, with partners trying to steal the business, the Mafia trying to muscle in, zealous policemen, corrupt business practices (not far removed from Mafia tactics), consumer apathy, crippling arthritis, starvation (literally), losing teeth and other traumas, and his company was on the ropes. During those days, Dennis became a Christian, and a somewhat fanatical one, a fanaticism that he freely admits. The fierceness with which he embraced Christianity has everything to do with his journey and background, I believe, and is understandable. When Dennis is not assailing feminists (Adam’s rib), homosexuals (Leviticus) and others that the Old Testament demotes, he has the love part of Christianity down fairly well, about as well as I have seen, which is about all that really matters.

Dennis decided to give his failing business to the Christian community, and eventually had an audience with one of America’s leading television evangelists. He saw the beauty of Dennis’ vision, and invested more than \$100,000 in Dennis’ dead company to resurrect it. Then the evangelist’s lawyers decided the business’ design looked like a pyramid scheme, and they would not budge from their position. It was not a pyramid, but the evangelist would not associate with something that might appear like one. The so-called pyramid aspect of it was partly what made it work, but the evangelist pulled out of the contract. To this day, he says that Dennis hurt him, but he only hurt himself.

When the evangelist pulled out, UCS was dead. Dennis tried keeping it alive in the evangelist community, but it died nevertheless. At one point, Dennis surrounded himself with Christians at his business. That was one of his life’s more dismaying experiences. Dennis had no idea how fanatical, narrow-minded and intolerant his new Christian brethren could be. There were almost holy wars at Dennis’ company, as each Christian warred with other Christians over their doctrines. Dennis also had visions and realizations, thinking that one day his god would make his plan evident.

One day, as they waited for a sign, to show them a direction to take, one member of their little group had crates of low-flow showerheads that he wanted to sell to resorts on the New Jersey shore. Dennis thought of a way to sell them on a trial purchase plan. They would install them for free, and at the end of the season, the resort owners could look at their energy savings and decide whether they wanted to buy them. If not, Dennis’ company would put their old showerheads back on. It was risk-free to the customer. Dennis dreamed up a corny acronym for the new venture. He called it Project C.O.N.S.E.R.V.E. (**C**osts of **O**wning the **N**ewest **S**ystems in **E**nergy **R**eduction are **V**irtually **E**liminated). They also decided to take advantage of Jimmy Carter’s “moral equivalent of war” on energy consumption and the attendant tax

credits. They sold insulation, burner modifications and other energy-saving equipment. Dennis invented what he believes was the United States' first shared savings plan during the "war on energy." He offered the customer three options:

1. Share the savings and costs with the company.
2. The company pays all the costs and gets all the savings.
3. Buy the package cheaply and keep all the savings.[\[7\]](#)

That kind of strategy became the hallmark of Dennis' programs. They were risk-free to the customer, and usually took years to pay for themselves. The third option was for customers to shoulder the risk of performance and get the savings for themselves. Dennis soon discovered that there was big money to be made in urea-formaldehyde insulation. Dennis has always thought big, and soon had big insulation plans. At that time, he made his first visit to Israel. He experienced a number of paranormal events that girded his faith and provided direction. Dennis tried to change his name to a biblical Josiah David, but the authorities did not allow it because of his Old World Builders conviction. His wife changed her name however, and their children bear that surname. Dennis and his wife slept on their office floor during those days. They hid from janitors; a hot plate was their stove, and their privation great. They often suffered from malnutrition. Dennis lost most of his teeth during his journey.

Dennis approached one of the UCS investors who got hurt when it went out of business. Dennis only needed him to act as front man, with complete ownership, and just let Dennis run it. As would happen countless times during Dennis' adventures, the man let his position go to his head. Although the man's professional experience consisted of being a restaurant cook, he increasingly overrode Dennis. Strutting around with his newfound authority harmed the company, even though it was doing extremely well. One day the cook/investor showed up uninvited and blew apart a business deal that Dennis was putting together. At that point, Dennis had enough and told the investor that he was now on his own, if he thought he was so great at running the show. The cook/owner destroyed the company in one afternoon.

Dennis left the area to go into business with a minister in the foam insulation business. The minister got cold feet after hearing about Dennis' travails, and Dennis soon took on other partners and founded The Foam Company. Dennis soon discovered that the cook/owner was pressing fraud and forgery charges against him, and Dennis was jailed once more. The investor accused Dennis of forging checks without his permission. It turned out that the investor himself had cashed some of those "forged" checks, and the case was thrown out of

court, but it was one more mark against Dennis, publicity-wise. A local newspaper named Dennis the “con man of the year” in those days. When Dennis got back to The Foam Company, there was a new face; an investor who stayed in the background until then, but announced that he was now running the company. He smelled like a mobster, and Dennis had encountered many by that time. Since The Foam Company was being controlled by a mobster, Dennis sought a way out fast, and soon gave his interest in The Foam Company to the mobster and left, to try hiring on with another insulation company. He found a man who wanted to sell his insulation business, and Dennis would buy him out from the operation’s profits.

Without Dennis there to run it, The Foam Company soon collapsed around the mobster’s ears, and he blamed Dennis for it. Just then, Dennis’ wife gave birth to their first daughter, and Dennis became ill. It began as the flu, but soon turned into Guillaine Barre Syndrome, which is a form of paralysis. Those events happened in the late 1970s. The Foam Company mobster talked about breaking Dennis’ legs, but when Dennis became paralyzed with Guillaine Barre, the gangster forgot about him. Being a veteran, Dennis was admitted to a VA (Veterans Administration) hospital. Guillaine Barre Syndrome (possibly a [vaccination reaction](#), and called different names over the years) can be fatal. Dennis became paralyzed from the neck down. The VA hospital began giving him massive doses of steroids. It was an experimental treatment. He was given 100 times the dose that athletes illegally took. He began recovering after a few months, got to the point where he could stand, and they sent Dennis home for Christmas. They forgot to send steroids with him. The next day, Christmas Day, Dennis went into steroid withdrawal. By the time the ambulance arrived, he was in convulsions. The hospital staff later told him that going from 1000 milligrams a day to nothing at all should have killed him. His case was unique, and the VA doctors did not know what recovery he would have, if any. Dennis could barely speak because his condition was so severe.

VA hospitals are notorious for their negligence and abysmal conditions, especially on the East Coast, and that VA hospital was no exception. One time, Dennis got an insane roommate who tried killing him, as he lay there paralyzed. The roommate was caught in the act, just in time, and Dennis never saw him again. Dennis finally began recovering, and could move his arms. He did not recover to the point of standing up when disaster struck again. The VA doctors went home for the weekend, and the nurses took over. He was down to a 500-milligram dose, but the doctor forgot to prescribe his steroids. Dennis talked to the nurse, and said he was supposed to get his steroid dose. The nurse said she did not see any prescription, but she would go check and come back. That was the last Dennis saw of her, and he went into convulsions that night, with his mantra being, “I will not die, I will not die.” He survived the night, to be discovered the next afternoon by the head doctor, who wanted to show him to his medical students, Dennis already being a medical marvel from the first steroid withdrawal incident. When they saw Dennis in a catatonic seizure, they realized they had done it to him again. Dennis could have sued the government for big money, but he sympathized with the staff, knowing they worked in an under-funded, horrible environment, dealing with the wreckage of America’s militarism. However, he was also beginning to think they were trying to

kill him.

Dennis went from 180 muscular pounds to 90 in that VA hospital. He began recovering once more, and one night his nurse came into his room. She was new and brought no steroids. Dennis asked where they were, and she said there was no order for them. That third time, Dennis took charge in the only way he could. He was nearly a vegetable, but he looked the nurse in the eye and willed her to his bedside. He whispered to her that if she did not bring him a phone, he would kill her one day, because he would somehow survive the night. The nurse's eyes got as big as saucers, and she brought in the phone. Dennis called his wife and told her to get him out of the VA hospital, because they would kill him if he stayed there any longer. By the time she arrived, the staff was in an uproar, and Dennis' wife demanded that she be allowed to take him home and be given enough steroids to wean him off them. The doctors protested that he would surely die. Dennis laughed at them, telling them that staying there would mean certain death. They finally relented, and Dennis, his wife and their infant daughter went home...but they had no home. They took a flophouse room and Dennis' wife's family made some contributions to help them through their plight. They survived on charity. At one point, Dennis was able to use the rehabilitation facilities at Princeton's hospital, partly because he was a medical oddity. His condition was highly unusual, and the nearly fatal medical mishaps made him a medical believe-it-or-not story.

The man who Dennis tried buying his business from, before Guillaine Barre struck, was still interested in selling. Dennis could not yet walk, but he had to get active and feed his family. The man "suckered" Dennis into a deal where Dennis paid twice what the man originally asked for, and the man also looted the company's assets, leaving almost an empty shell for Dennis to buy. With Dennis' position, he had no other options. Dennis, as usual, made the company grow quickly to large size. He also resurrected [C.O.N.S.E.R.V.E.](#) The seller had previously gloated to people about how he "took" Dennis by selling the worthless company so dearly to him. Now that the company was quickly reaching the Big Time, the seller told those same people that Dennis had swindled him out of his company. Because some foam insulation companies had poor quality control, foam insulation began creating health concerns. If properly installed, there was not a problem, but poorly made foam could give off too much formaldehyde gas. I would not want a home with formaldehyde insulation, but poor quality control doomed that industry, as well as attacks from the fiberglass insulation industry, in an effort to wipe out the competition. Dennis was getting too successful, and the local fiberglass insulation interests appeared to have been behind banning foam insulation in the county where Dennis operated. Dennis had perfected a method of mixing the foam with computer-controls, and could insulate large numbers of homes in a short time with a "battle wagon" concept, and the business was flying.

At a mall show, where the authorities tried putting his foam insulation company out of business, Dennis showed off many energy-saving technologies. He did not sell wood or coal burning systems because of the pollution, and he did not sell solar systems because he considered them a scam (and most of them in those days were). As a favor to a friend, he

allowed somebody to display a solar system at his mall show, but put it in a dark corner, being more interested in selling his foam insulation and other energy-saving technologies. One man kept asking Dennis about the solar system in the back. Dennis kept trying to discourage him, telling him that his money would be far better spent on insulation. The man kept bugging Dennis about the solar system, and kept telling Dennis that he knew it would work. The man was technically knowledgeable. Finally, as the man bugged Dennis once more, saying he knew it would work, Dennis said, "Sure it will work, but are you prepared to spend \$12,000 on it?" The man replied that he would. That got Dennis' attention. The solar system in the corner was a LamCo demonstration unit. The mall show was hugely successful, and Dennis was cultivating some big plans.

Dennis went to his office building soon after that mall show, and was met by the sheriff. The seller of the business made his legal play, and stole the company out from under Dennis. The nearly worthless company Dennis had bought was doing outrageously well, and the gleam of greed was in the seller's eyes.

The seller's lawyer had drawn up the contract, and a legal loophole was created to essentially steal back the company's stock. Then the seller got a court order, unbeknownst to Dennis. The sheriff escorted Dennis into the building, where the seller sat at Dennis' desk with his feet up on it, and he informed Dennis that it was now his company, and Dennis could leave the premises and never return. Dennis did, and as the seller sat there with his feet up on Dennis' desk, so proud of how clever he was, his ill-gotten empire was already crumbling. Dennis decided to walk away, realizing that the man would only kill the business, and knowing that even if he fought to get it back, the man would destroy the company in the meantime.

Dennis then saw something he had seen before. When people commit crimes such as stealing somebody's livelihood, the darkness in their hearts can turn them truly insane. Even though Dennis walked away, that was not good enough for the thief. He felt it his duty to attack Dennis, believing that somehow heaping on the abuse would, retrospectively, [justify his crime](#). The Europeans did that to justify raping the New World. It is an ancient dynamic. The seller began trying to discredit Dennis with the employees and dealers at his company, showing them newspaper clippings and telling them the lurid details of Dennis' "fraud conviction." Whatever he thought it would accomplish, it did not work. The people at the company had bought into Dennis' obvious talents, not the seller who came from nowhere and could not run anything larger than a street-corner sandwich shop. Most employees and dealers soon quit the company.

Dennis closed his eyes and turned away, and that company went bankrupt before long. Unfortunately, the mentality that business seller displayed is alive and well in America, especially in the small time American entrepreneurial waters, as [filled with capitalistic piranha as it is](#). Dennis was not seeing unusually dishonest or greedy people, nor was his judgment poor. He was getting a healthy dose of what [America](#) is really like.

There are two kinds of greed. There is the ingenious greed of [John D. Rockefeller](#), where he took over the entire oil industry within a generation after it was born. He was a genius, but he used his talent for dark ends that humanity is still paying for. Far more common is *mindless* greed. It is the greed that kills the golden goose, looking for those golden eggs. Mindless greed kills the game for everybody. At least John Rockefeller amassed an empire, which was his goal. People in the thrall of mindless greed destroy everything around them.

In the end, ingenious greed is still not too smart, because it will eventually destroy earth if allowed to guide all actions, as it does in [today's capitalism](#). Mindless greed however, is, well... mindless. Greed always leads to disaster in the end, but mindless greed gets there quicker. When John Rockefeller wiped out a competitor and saw talent among his victims, he would hire them. He soon amassed one of the most capable, and ruthless, groups of men ever assembled. That was part of Rockefeller's genius. Those in the grip of mindless greed are blind to the fact that the key reason that Dennis' ventures are successful is Dennis. As they steal his company, Dennis is the first "useless" thing they throw overboard (along with his "crazy" marketing plans). On more than one occasion, the thieves made their move, and Dennis realized the venture would collapse without him running it, and he offered to keep working for the thieves, even after they stole the company, because he did not want his customers/employees/humanity to get hurt. The thieves kept hacking away at him, trying to bury him even deeper...and the roof *always* caved in on their heads, as they sat there with their feet up on Dennis' desk, marveling at how clever they were.

Dennis could barely walk, his wife was pregnant with their second daughter, and Dennis was once again on the streets. Few people would give a cripple a job, and Dennis applied for food stamps. He finally got a job selling a medical alert pendant, and between that and food stamps the family survived. Dennis started thinking big again, and tried getting his boss to go after hospitals, selling the pendants hundreds at a time. Just then, he got a call. It was that man from the mall show who was enthralled by the [LamCo demonstration unit](#). He knew what had happened with Dennis' company being stolen, but he had to get his hands on one of those LamCo systems. Dennis dug up the name of the guy who displayed that LamCo system, and called him. Dennis asked if he would be interested in selling one of those solar systems, and if Dennis could get a commission of some kind if he sold it. The man promised Dennis a finder's fee of \$1000 if the man bought the \$12,000 system.

The LamCo dealer picked Dennis up, and they went to the man's house. The man lived in an impressive home in a nice neighborhood, and he turned out to be a scientist. Dennis knew nothing of the system at that point, and the scientist and the LamCo dealer talked until 3 AM about many technical issues. Dennis finally interrupted and said, "Have you heard enough to pay \$12,000 for the system?" The scientist handed Dennis a check for \$3000 as a down payment. The next day Dennis met the LamCo dealer's boss, bought the rights to his county for \$25,000 (to be worked off in sales) and went into training to understand the LamCo

system. It was obviously no run-of-the-mill solar system. He soon manned the LamCo booth at a mall show, for half of the leads it provided. He was excited about the system, and bragged to people at the mall that his solar system was making hot water in the mall, at night, while the other solar systems just sat there looking good.

Dennis walked away from that mall with 21 qualified leads, for a \$12,000 piece of equipment that sold to a homeowner. That kind of number, for qualified leads, for something that expensive, to go on a home (one of the most secure sales from a lender's point of view, because homes are immobile), for a weekend of work, was a salesman's dream.

Dennis drove to his first appointment in the broken down ambulance he used for his medic alert pendant selling. He was nervous, and still did not know much about how the system worked. He drove up in the banged-up ambulance, used his walker to approach the house, and was met by his prospective customer, who helped him into his home. The man began bombarding Dennis with technical questions. Dennis did not even understand the questions; much less know the answers. Dennis asked the man what he did for a living. He was a scientist who worked in the Freon division at DuPont, and a refrigeration expert. Dennis gave him the keys to the ambulance and asked him to take a box out and bring it in. Dennis proceeded to have one of his life's most educational nights. The DuPont scientist was ecstatic about the LamCo system, and spent the night poring over the technical data in the LamCo literature. He educated Dennis on everything he could about the system, from the simple to the sophisticated. They got lost in the lesson. Dennis was startled to hear birds chirping, and looked outside to see the sun coming up. They had spent all night going over the LamCo system. The scientist said there was something wrong with the data, and that the [COPs](#) the system could attain should be higher than the literature said. The scientist predicted the system could do a COP of 6 in Philadelphia, when the LamCo literature said it would do a COP of 3. Dennis eventually got the president of LamCo, that Colorado cowboy, to admit they had cut their COPs in half in their literature so the engineers who "knew" it was impossible would stop laughing at them. The letter below from a household-name American corporation surfaced about that time, where the engineer who measured a COP of more than 7 remarked that the LamCo literature predicted a COP of 3.37 under those conditions. LamCo was indeed cutting its claim in half.



Click on image to enlarge

I have cut out the engineer's name, and his company's. Consistent with this presentation of Dennis Lee's story, names are usually left out. They are not important, and I am trying to honor privacy concerns as much as possible. Anybody who researches this issue can easily discover all the blanked-out names. A long-time friend of mine has a father who was an executive at that corporation that tested the system. On his own, partly because it seemed incredible, my friend's father checked into that engineer who signed the letter, and it checked out.

Dennis was running into the opposite problem that most salesmen run into. Usually, salesmen have to stretch the truth to sell their wares. It is called puffery, which is as American as apple pie, and a practice that probably dates back to history's first sale. Dennis told LamCo that he wanted to be able to at least tell customers what it would do, not half of what it would do.

Dennis was excited about the system before his all-nighter with the DuPont scientist. He was practically in orbit after that night. The other twenty leads did not know what hit them. Dennis immediately began thinking big, as usual, and dropped the \$12,000 sales price to \$8500. The cost of the system to him to buy and install it was \$8000, and he figured he could increase sales by decreasing his margin. Those twenty other leads had already heard the \$12,000 price tag, and all immediately went for it at \$8500, plus Dennis was so on fire that he could have easily sold them for \$12,000. Dennis was thinking *very big*, though.

Dennis met his East Coast distributor, and hoped that twenty-two sales in one month was good enough. He had given most of his commission away in discounting the systems, and asked them to forgive his lack of performance. Dennis thought the systems were easy to sell, and wanted a chance to *really* start selling them. The man who had just stolen Dennis' company stalked him, and tried outbidding Dennis for the county's LamCo dealership. Dennis was worried, and the East Coast distributor took Dennis out to lunch. Dennis beseeched the man to give him another month to try selling more systems. Dennis hurriedly ran ads for salespeople, and called his customers and offered them \$500 finder's fees for any friend who came to Dennis' presentation at the ritzy DuPont hotel in Wilmington, Delaware. Dennis used his deposit money to rent out the ballroom and buy a five-course meal for those who showed

up. Dennis arranged the room, and Mr. East Coast Distributor brought the LamCo demo unit to the facility, and as they wheeled it up through the ballroom, the man marveled over the place, sneaking a glass of champagne from a table, not suspecting that the room was reserved for Dennis' potential customers.

Dennis unveiled his Systems for Savings (SFS) program that night. Dennis was selling the LamCo system for \$10,000 apiece. It qualified for Carter's Renewable Energy Source Tax Credit, so the federal government was subsidizing \$4000 of the purchase price. The remaining \$6000 balance could be paid for from proven energy savings. At that time, in that region, the electricity and gas/oil curve had the system paying for itself if it only got a COP of two. Dennis found another rocket ship. He sold 280 systems that night, and sold 300 systems in two months. Dennis thought it was good enough to get the county dealership free from the clutches of the thief who stole his last company. Mr. East Coast Distributor was at the show. Although he was cool with Dennis at their lunch meeting, he dropped his poker face after the show. He begged Dennis to be his partner for the East Coast, and admitted that LamCo had not even sold twenty systems on the entire East Coast during the past three years. The dealers he sold usually only sold the system they got with the dealership before they went out of business. Mr. East Coast Distributor had sold nearly as many dealerships as systems. Three hundred in one county in two months was not a bad start.

The East Coast distributor was technically proficient, but could not sell a system. That was the main problem with LamCo. Their pitch went into technical talk, and only technical types would buy them. When Dennis arrived on the scene, the LamCo customers were so technically proficient that half of them had installed the system themselves. Dennis knew that Mr. and Mrs. Average American would neither comprehend nor be impressed with the technical talk, especially if they had to part with \$12,000 for it, based on information they largely could not comprehend. They wanted to hear it would save them money. With Dennis' SFS program, the customer really did not even have to care if it worked. All their risk was removed with Dennis' program. That was part of Dennis' genius. More than a hundred companies came and went over the years, trying to make the LamCo system happen, but Dennis was the only one who knew how to sell them.

I have never seen a more astute observer of the human condition than Dennis. Dennis once told me that the reason all those other LamCo dealers and others failed was because they did not understand that the LamCo system was not one that saved *energy*; it was one that saved *money*. All the times Dennis would have his companies stolen, the thieves immediately discarded Dennis' "crazy" marketing plans, and tried selling the systems for cash (the quick kill). They always said, "Mr. Customer, this is a great piece of equipment, and the price is \$10,000 cash." They all promptly went out of business, unable to sell any systems. Dennis' marketing programs were the real gold, not the LamCo system, but the greed-blinded thieves could never comprehend it.

Dennis did not want to have a partner, as his previous experiences soured him on that.

Dennis formed a joint venture with Mr. East Coast Distributor. Dennis would sell them as fast as possible, and Mr. East Coast Distributor could try installing them as fast as Dennis sold them. The market for the LamCo system in America was around 5 to 10 million homes, and Dennis wanted to go after them. The LamCo equipment was exactly what Carter's tax credit was encouraging. A one time tax credit of \$40 billion would decrease fossil fuel consumption by four times that much over twenty years. It was what the energy conservation movement was all about, and nobody sold anything remotely close to the LamCo system's performance. Tin can solar collectors on roofs were pathetic pretenders compared the LamCo system.

Dennis soon met the [Colorado cowboy who founded LamCo](#), and Mr. Colorado Cowboy only wanted Dennis to order 20 to 30 systems a month under the current deal. With the LamCo equipment and Dennis' experience and imagination, a million plays became possible. At about that time, the Delaware attorney general began looking into LamCo's "too-good-to-be-true" offer, which was actually the "it-does-twice-what-we-say" offer. The systems installed in the Philadelphia area qualified for preferential electric rates from electric companies, because they then heated their homes with electricity. Typical Philadelphia customers saved about 70% of their heating costs. In the example below, the customer saved *100%* of his heating costs, because of that preferential rate.



Click on image to enlarge

LamCo was trying to take the company public (sell its stock to the public), and Dennis was the biggest thing LamCo had ever seen. Dennis was flying high, moving to Long Island, about to carpet New York State with LamCo systems. Then the stock deal fell apart, Mr. Colorado Cowboy brought in new management, and suddenly LamCo made it hard to do business with them. They were not filling Dennis' orders, and began acting strangely. Then Mr. Colorado Cowboy called Dennis at 3 AM, telling him that LamCo had been put into a Chapter 7 (liquidation) bankruptcy, and for \$15,000, they could pull it into a Chapter 11 (work out the debts with creditors) bankruptcy. Dennis worked out a deal with LamCo to manufacture the systems and give LamCo a royalty. He sold dealerships, getting a ready-made sales force. With the LamCo system and Dennis' [SFS](#) program, the sky was the limit. They quickly trained their first dealers. Some of the dealers smelled like mobsters, and Dennis told Mr. East Coast

Distributor that he would not deal with mobsters.

LamCo's bank acted strangely. Dennis negotiated a deal with Mr. Colorado Cowboy's engineer buddy (who took apart that heat pump on Mr. Colorado Cowboy's roof [that fateful day](#)) who was his second in command, and Dennis paid more than \$400,000 to LamCo to buy two-thirds of the company and keep it alive. Days after giving nearly every cent he had to LamCo, Dennis came to work to be surrounded by Mr. East Coast Distributor and two ex-soldier karate experts, who took him into a back room. The "deal" they gave him was that if he signed over his company to them, they would not kill him. Mr. Colorado Cowboy apparently had some deal going with Mr. East Coast Distributor, and when Dennis cleaned out his bank account, Mr. East Coast Distributor got some, Mr. Colorado Cowboy got some, and so did their new Mafia buddies.

Once again, Dennis was kicked out of his company. That time, it was worse than that. The two karate goons who helped kick Dennis out of his company lived with Dennis, because they needed help and Dennis took them in. Not only did they kick him out of his company, Dennis was not even allowed to go back to his home and remove his family's possessions. They were out on the street with only the clothes on their backs. Worse than their clothes and other possessions being taken, all of Dennis' materials from his UCS days, materials he needed to resurrect UCS one day, were also now beyond reach, and that was the worst loss of all for Dennis. Those goons probably never realized how close they came to dying at Dennis' hands, as Dennis seriously thought of settling things the Vietnam way. Dennis then had his moment of truth. He conquered the urge, and has never considered violence as a solution again. I am a pacifist, but [I well know the urge to kill people](#).

Years later, Dennis heard what had happened. Mr. Colorado Cowboy took his chunk of Dennis' money and lived in South America for a while. Mobsters took over the operation that Dennis and Mr. East Coast Distributor had jointly ventured on. Then they pulled off a real scam, taking in more than a million dollars in dealership and system deposit money, and then folding the operation. That is a [familiar tale](#). The police rarely catch the real crooks, nor do they really seem eager to. Mr. East Coast Distributor "disappeared" soon after he helped rob Dennis of his company. He probably got cement shoes from his new gangster buddies.

When people catch a glimpse of Dennis' grand vision, they often get dollar signs in their eyes and greed takes over. In addition, when the sledgehammer of the system crashes down on Dennis as the energy monopolists protect their turf, fear takes over with people, and sometimes there are grotesque combinations of both. I have watched people participate in stealing Dennis' companies while he was in a headlock from the establishment, although they knew deep down that if they successfully stole his company and did something productive with it, they would end up like him. I had to wonder what, if anything, was going on inside their heads. The most common explanation Dennis has heard as he suffered those slings and arrows is: "It's nothing personal; it's only business."

Dennis Makes a Run at It

About the time his company was stolen once more, Dennis went home to Yakima to visit his family, and show them his fourth child, his first son. His two daughters, born between his first child and last, are adults today. Dennis' son died of crib death while visiting his family, and Dennis and his wife could not seem to move away, especially with their East Coast lives destroyed. It was early 1984. Washington was the hydroelectric state, and at the one-cent-per-kWh price that prevailed before 1982, there was no way that Dennis could ever sell his system, energy being so cheap there. Electricity was so cheap that much of Washington heated with electricity, and electricity-intensive industries such as [aluminum refining](#) moved there, to take advantage of cheap electricity.

I remember the TV news in the [winter of 1981-1982 in Seattle](#). Nearly every night there was a top-of-the-hour story about "Whoops." During the Nixon years there was nuclear euphoria, and the Nixon administration set a goal of 1000 nuclear reactors in America by the year 2000. During those years, a study showed that the watery Northwest would run out of hydroelectric power before long, and the Northwest utilities, led by the Bonneville Power Administration (BPA), formed the Washington Public Power Supply System (WPPSS), and billions of dollars of bonds were floated to build five nuclear reactors. The repeated energy crises in America, which lowered the demand curve, the Three Mile Island accident, skyrocketing projected costs for building nuclear reactors and the like doomed Nixon's nuke-in-every-county plans, and the WPPSS nuclear plants were mothballed, and in January 1982, Moody's bond rating service suspended ratings on the bonds for the 4th and 5th reactors. In July 1983, WPPSS declared a formal default on \$2.25 billion of its bonds, triggering the largest municipal bond default in U.S. history.[\[8\]](#) WPPSS began being called "Whoops" in the early 1980s.

When Dennis was in Yakima, electricity had just leapt from one cent to three in short order, and five cents appeared to be around the corner because of Whoops. The electric companies were running full-page ads, and suddenly electricity conservation was the most economical form of production, so their ads stated. A heat pump that averaged a COP of five in the Minnesota winter began looking very feasible in Washington. Yakima was in apple country, and they used hot water and hot air to process the apples. Originally Dennis thought that he could sell his heat pump to apple processors. Dennis began doing experiments in the Yakima summer, and the LamCo system was getting COPs of 12. A business tycoon who ran Yakima approached Dennis and told him he would not succeed if the tycoon did not allow it. The tycoon kind of compelled Dennis to become his partner, and Dennis had nothing else going on, so he joined with him.

Dennis' brashness and brilliance had been demonstrated long before, during his East Coast

days. The LamCo-style heat pump remains the best heating system the world market has ever seen, and in the early days of his involvement, Dennis labored mightily to get American business interested in it. He canvassed Wall Street; he approached heat pump manufacturers; he did everything he could to create a new industry around the LamCo-style heat pump. One day, his persistence paid off, and the plant manager of America's largest heat pump manufacturing facility let Dennis into his office. Air-to-air heat pumps attained a COP of around two in those days, but were relatively easy to install. The plant manager let Dennis into his office and said, "Well, Kid, so you have a superior heat pump, eh? I know about your heat pump. Even if it outperformed ours, the idiots in the field could never install one of yours properly. Come with me, Kid." The plant manager then led Dennis into the facility. It was one of Dennis' more sobering experiences. As far as the eye could see, sparks were flying and people were building heat pumps. After letting Dennis take in the scene for a minute, the plant manager said, "We did two billion dollars worth of business last year, Kid. What did you do?"

The plant manager was being slightly disingenuous, if a tad sardonic. The air-to-air heat pump was easier to install, but performed poorly compared to a properly installed LamCo-style heat pump. The plant manager was partly accurate. At that time, installing a LamCo-style heat pump was the province of a highly trained refrigeration mechanic, and the panel array was fabricated at the customer's site, which not only took time, but also required skill and experience. Although half of the early LamCo customers installed their own systems, many did not work well because they were not properly installed. After the panels were placed, the tubing braised and the system sealed, then the lines had to be evacuated by a vacuum pump for about 24 hours, then the system needed to be charged with refrigerant, there was a "balance" the system needed to attain, and other problems.

There was a newborn and evolving science of making the LamCo-style heat pump work properly, which was being discovered by trial-and-error in the field. Air-to-air heat pumps were about at the appliance level of development, being relatively easy to install, although their performance for heating was poor. The plant manager was not going to admit to Dennis that electric companies were the marketing conduit for heat pumps, as selling a heat pump usually meant replacing or complementing something that burned fossil fuels, so the heat pump was usually a way for the electric companies to expand their market into fossil fuel territory. A COP of two doubled the efficiency of the electricity used, so it could compete with fossil fuels in certain markets. A COP of six would mean only one unit of electricity used for six units of heat farmed from the environment. That is not much electricity, and in an all-electric state like Washington, replacing an electric heater with a LamCo-style heat pump would mean an 83% decline in electric consumption for heating. In Washington, that was a lot more conservation than the electric companies had in mind, though it would take Dennis awhile to figure that out.

Soon after Dennis got into the business, it became obvious that the way LamCo heat pumps were installed would not work, at the level of sales that Dennis had in mind. So Dennis became involved with developing the technology of the LamCo-style heat pump. In all the libel and derision directed Dennis' way since 1986, none of his detractors have ever mentioned how

he helped develop the LamCo-style heat pump. Dennis was instrumental in making it better. He invented what he called the “heat-injector,” which was a LamCo-style heat pump with an upright panel array. In the above pictures, that kind of array is seen; those upright panels, white with frost, looking like a big weather vane. Not only was the panel array pre-fabricated, it would also be evacuated and charged with refrigerant at the factory. With the heat injector, the panel array was placed on top of the system’s guts, making the whole thing a self-contained appliance, with installation largely limited to hooking up the water and electric lines. Dennis was instrumental in making numerous improvements in the technology, although he often had to fight his engineers and technicians, as most could not think past their textbooks and training.

Dennis is not a scientist or mechanic, but he had the kind of creative and thoughtful mind [that most engineers do not have](#). In order to become a capable LamCo-style heat pump technician, refrigeration mechanics had to discard much of what they learned in the refrigeration business. In all refrigeration and air conditioning applications, the goal was removing and getting rid of heat. The LamCo-style heat pump did the opposite: acquiring environmental heat. While the evaporators in industrial freezers and air conditioning systems took heat from closed rooms at constant temperatures, the LamCo-style heat pump’s evaporator sat in the sun, wind and rain, taking heat from the environment. An air-to-air heat pump held a few pounds of refrigerant; the LamCo-style heat pump held sixty pounds.

That huge evaporator array, sitting in the sun, taking heat from the environment, introduced parameters never before encountered in the refrigeration world, and new science and practice had to be developed. For instance, in refrigeration training, the rule of thumb was that a system could process about 12,000 BTUs of heat for every horsepower of refrigeration pump used.[\[9\]](#) The pressures generated by the LamCo-style panels were much higher than a standard heat pump or refrigeration application, so the LamCo-style systems often delivered about 25,000 BTUs per horsepower, which refrigeration textbooks said was impossible. Refrigeration mechanics and engineers had to flush that information from their minds, and many could not do it. Dennis did not have those limitations of education.

Dennis was not simply trying to get heat pump manufacturers interested in the LamCo-style heat pump. He was also knocking on Wall Street’s door, trying to get somebody to see what that heat pump, combined with Dennis’ marketing plans, could do. There was so much money on the table, from the U.S.’ awesomely wasteful energy practices, that an immense market awaited a technology like the LamCo-style heat pump. Dennis’ marketing plans *were* ingenious. Carter’s tax credit could fund the entire cost of selling, making and installing the LamCo-style heat pump, and customers risked none of their money. Until one has seen the shark tank of American capitalism up close, one might think that something like that would take off immediately. There are many examples of truly extraordinary technologies that have been around for generations and still marginalized, such as [Rife’s](#) and [Naessens’](#) microscopes, [Brown’s Gas](#), etc., because such technologies threaten the cash cows of established

technologies. The problem is probably greater with the LamCo-style heat pump. Not only were there technical problems to overcome, there may be no industry that [protects its turf as ruthlessly as the energy industry](#), as Dennis was about to discover.

Virtually without exception, businessmen were incapable of seeing the genius of what Dennis was doing. Dennis designed a program that would sell like hotcakes, but the profit would not be fully realized for several years. Such a plan seemed ludicrous to most businessmen, especially when they smelled the blood in the water of a quick kill. However, just before Mr. Colorado Cowboy helped steal hundreds of thousands of dollars from Dennis as they collapsed LamCo, Dennis finally got the attention of somebody who understood. He was the chairman of the board of a household name financial corporation. He understood what Dennis was doing, and Dennis was getting to the short strokes of getting that corporation to invest *one billion dollars* to carpet America with the LamCo-style heat pump. Just then, [Mr. Colorado Cowboy and friends made their play](#), blowing apart the billion-dollar deal so they could chisel a few hundred thousand from Dennis. Those chisellers and gangsters only wanted to steal a couple million dollars, and they blew apart the greatest opportunity America had for real energy conservation during all the years that have passed since the Oil Crisis of 1973-1974.

In Yakima, Dennis encountered a different kind of mindlessness. Mr. Rich, who ran Yakima, thought that those LamCo panels did not look sexy enough. He told Dennis that nobody would buy one of those systems, as ugly as they were. Dennis replied that people would not care what they looked like, if it saved them \$20,000 in energy bills. Soon after Dennis became involved with Mr. Rich, they became involved with an inventor who was making a solar system that looked like R2D2 from *Star Wars*. It was called "The Bubble." Its beauty entranced Mr. Rich, and he told Dennis that it would sell because of its sexiness. Dennis married his heat pump technology to it, and it eventually got a COP of three under good conditions, but it was not going to save the customer that much money. Mr. Rich fought Dennis every step of the way, and eventually told people he did not need Dennis anymore, with his "crazy" ideas. It was late 1984, and Dennis had wasted enough time in Yakima. There was only one year left of Carter's tax credit, and he had only one more year to get the industry off the ground. Driving a beat up station wagon with bald tires over the Cascade mountains during a snowstorm, with his wife praying that they would not be killed, with twenty dollars in his pocket, Dennis rolled into Seattle with nothing but his resolve and talent.

Dennis has always built his companies from scratch after they were stolen or wiped out. He and his wife have developed unique skills from having to do that time after time. Building a company that way is an amazing feat. In Seattle, Dennis entered a new phase of his adventures. When LamCo swindled him, what hurt him almost more than anything else was the bank that held the lien on LamCo's assets would not let Dennis get the rights to LamCo's patent.

Patents are largely a fool's dream of protection from competition. Patents usually only protect

large companies from other large companies, and even then the protection is more theoretical than actual. Wiping out the theoretical patent protection of the little inventor has been an American specialty for generations, particularly noticeable in the [automobile industry](#).^[10] Dennis did not know it, but the patent was worthless. Nevertheless, people thought it was worth something, and what happened, unbeknownst to Dennis, was that a West Coast LamCo dealer seized that patent through the bank. In Seattle, that dealer bragged to Dennis about what he had done, with no inkling of what his play had killed. When Dennis heard that guy bragging about it, he laughed. Obviously, it was not meant to be at that time, when Dennis was on the brink of his big deal.

In Seattle, a bank had gone into business, making the LamCo heat pump from the original patent that the dealer essentially stole. It was an incredible stroke of serendipity. The bank had invested a million dollars, and had a manufacturing facility. They had virtually no idea what they were doing, however, and were building them from the ten-year-old patent. With Dennis' help, the technology had advanced a long way from what was presented on that patent, and the bank also trying to sell them for cash. Their efforts were doomed. Dennis showed up in his beat-up station wagon and no place to sleep, and told the bank that their problems were over, and did not take Dennis long to start making waves. In February of 1985, with less than a year of the tax credit remaining, Dennis bought out the bank's dealers and was going to bail the bank out. They would not only recover their investment, but Dennis would take them to the moon with him. He was about to carpet Puget Sound with the LamCo-style heat pump.

Dennis had been trying to attract the electric companies' interest, believing the full-page ads about energy conservation. In reality, the electric companies were perpetrating a huge fraud upon the public, and Dennis threatened to ruin the racket. The economic reality was that the electric companies sold electricity provided by the Bonneville Power Administration (BPA), from all the hydroelectric dams that dotted the watery Pacific Northwest. The BPA was the wholesaler, and the local electric companies were retailers. Partly because the federal government absorbed most of the dam-building costs, residents of the Pacific Northwest had the United States' cheapest energy bills. Because electricity was so cheap, electricity-intensive industries such as [aluminum refining](#) were located there, and many homes used electricity for heating, generally with electric heaters.

Electricity, [when generated using fossil fuels](#), is an inefficient method for heating, as energy is wasted at the power plant due to entropy. Hydroelectric energy is not inefficient in that way, as it merely converts one form of mechanical energy (flowing water) to another (electricity). There are no thermodynamic, energy-conversion issues to contend with. Hydroelectric energy, however, is ultimately derived from the sun's energy that fell on earth's oceans, the latent heat of vaporization being carried in clouds to be dumped onto mountains as rain. The energy is released as gravity brings the water back to the oceans, and is farmed by using dams and hydroelectric turbines, like a windmill farms the energy of wind, which is also created by solar

energy. In U.S. energy economics, at the macroeconomic and microeconomic level, burning fossil fuels at the home is several times cheaper in obtaining a BTU of heat energy than it is to burn that fuel in an electric plant and use the resultant electricity to power an electric heater in the consumer's home. However, when ratepayers paid one cent per kWh for their electricity, heating with electricity was cheaper than fossil fuels. So, like no place else in the United States, many Washington homes heated with electricity, and most of an all-electric home's electric bill was used to heat the home.

When electricity went to three cents and higher to pay for Whoops (I pay more than six cents per kWh in my Seattle-area, all-electric home), as the ratepayer, as with the taxpayer (as in the [S&L scandal](#)) always holds the bag in the end, fossil fuel heating suddenly became a viable option for Washington residents and businesses. If Washington ratepayers en masse abandoned electric heating for fossil fuel heating, the local electric companies faced a disaster, as far as local markets went. The electric companies cooked up a scam to keep their markets, and the ratepayer was going to pay for it. They concocted the "Weatherization Program." On one hand, there would be *some* benefit for the consumer, but the purpose was to preserve Pacific Northwest electric company revenues and profit margins. When the 1970s energy crises rolled through the world economy, Americans and residents of other industrialized nations discovered the benefits of insulation and other energy-saving technologies. The projected increase in energy demand for U.S. households did not materialize, which helped doom Whoops. Energy consumption per household in the United States in 2002 is about a quarter less than it was in 1973.[\[11\]](#) Most of the savings came from insulating homes, to lower the energy consumption for heating and cooling.

If a Washington resident changed from electric heating to gas, for instance, his electrical usage would fall by more than half. He would also need to invest thousands of dollars in a gas furnace, and probably have to pay to have ductwork run through the home. The prospect of changing from electric baseboard heating to fossil fuel central heating could be daunting, but if a homeowner's electric bill increased by a factor of six due to Whoops costs, it would be worth it. Even more likely was a homeowner with a central electric furnace converting to a gas furnace. The Weatherization Program was designed to prevent homeowners from converting to fossil fuel heating. A cornerstone of the Weatherization Program was selling heat pumps to residents. At a COP of two, a homeowner's electricity consumption would be halved for heating. A standard heat pump cost several thousand dollars, and did not qualify for the renewable energy tax credit. If the homeowner's heat pump costs were subsidized, he might be induced to buy it rather than a gas furnace. It was still a hard sell, but if the electric companies manipulated the consumer with a propaganda barrage, they might pull it off. That is what all those full-page ads that Dennis saw were about.

Dennis thought that if the electric companies gushed over a heat pump that saved half of the homeowner's electric consumption, they would be ecstatic about the LamCo-style heat pump that not only saved 85% of consumption, but also qualified for Carter's tax credit. However,

that was far more conservation than the electric companies had in mind. The electric companies were looking at perhaps \$20,000 in lost electric revenues for every LamCo-style heat pump installed in Washington, during its estimated life. It simply came down to money. The LamCo-style heat pump could have meant billions of dollars in lost electric revenues for the electric companies.

It is easy to see that in the long run it would be good for everybody if the energy conservation that the electric companies publicly said they wanted, came to pass. No American corporation, however, looks far beyond next quarter's profits. [Making a profit is what it is all about for corporations](#), and maintaining market share, especially a monopolistic/oligopolistic one, is how those profits are ensured. Eliminating 80% of heating consumption in all-electric homes would be bad for business, as far as the electric companies saw it. The Pacific Northwest's electric companies vigorously promoted heat pumps in 1984. There were heavy inducements waved under homeowners' noses in those days. The electric companies would subsidize the heat pump purchase, offering zero-interest financing and other gimmicks. As Dennis began figuring out what was *really* happening, he looked at the numbers. If a homeowner was induced to buy a heat pump, raising the general electric rates paid for the "subsidy" he received. Essentially, the homeowner who bought a heat pump had the purchase unwittingly subsidized by his neighbors. That was the game the Pacific Northwest electric companies were playing in 1984, and Dennis stumbled right into it, thinking the electric companies would throw him a ticker tape parade. He got their attention, all right, with the BPA's energy conservation department thinking of Dennis and nothing else, for months, as [eventually admitted by the BPA](#) itself. Dennis and his heat pump was the scariest thing they had ever seen.

Accordingly, they began throwing their weight around early on, as Dennis made a run at it before the tax credits expired at the end of 1985. That bank was on the fast track to going out of business, with their investment in the LamCo-style heat pump. In February of 1985, with less than a year to go, Dennis kicked it into high gear in Seattle. He bought out the bank's dealers and sold more than 100 systems. He got a different bank to finance the tax credits for his [SFS](#) deals. Suddenly, that bank reneged on the deal. Dennis was going to bail out the "LamCo" bank, and use them to give the business credibility. He contacted the "LamCo" bank, and thought they would be happy to see system orders and the high-quality contracts he had with homeowners. He met with the bank representative, and Dennis got his first inkling that something was awry. The bank representative was impressed with Dennis' more than 100 contracts (the bank had sold only forty systems during the previous three years), but the bank did not even want to do business with Dennis. Dennis was stunned. "Why?!" he said in amazement. The bank representative then gave Dennis the news:

"Off the record, Dennis, our bank president is embarrassed to do business with you. There's

something big going on here and I don't have any idea what it is, but I've heard that no bank is going to take your deals. We don't even want to be involved with this thing. I know what you are doing and I see nothing wrong with it, but I don't know what I can do. Someone is out to get you.”[\[12\]](#)

After delivering that unofficial message, the bank representative officially fired Dennis as a dealer of their heat pump. All Dennis ever wanted was somebody who could build, install and finance them as fast as he could sell them. There was another company in California, also on its way out of business, which was making the LamCo-style heat pump. Eventually, *everybody* fell by the wayside, that bank even going out of business, and Dennis eventually had to make the systems himself.

Dennis just went for sales, stacking up contracts. With no local bank willing to fund the contracts, Dennis instructed the salesmen to ask the customers to go to their banks themselves and get the tax credit loan, on their own account. The banks would not even allow that, telling their customers that Dennis' company was a scam and he would skip town with the money. Dennis was dumbfounded. *Somebody* was out to get him, for sure. He just did not know who it might be.

In the spring of 1985, Dennis finally found another person who understood. It was another chairman of the board, of a finance company in Spokane, far enough away to not be intimidated by whoever was poisoning the Seattle climate. The man became excited. He was a shrewd businessman who built a finance company from scratch. He understood what Dennis was doing, and wanted to be part of it. To this day, he is the only man who ever committed serious money to fund Dennis. Mr. Financier also wanted a piece of the action, and one of his employees got Dennis involved with some people who sold Dennis a shell company. [\[13\]](#) When Dennis bought the shell, he owned more than 85% of the stock, and Mr. Financier got a 10% piece of it. Dennis quickly reached 1000 contracts for the system, and Mr. Financier committed a \$10 million line of credit to finance them.[\[14\]](#) It was looking like Dennis was finally going to make that hay while the tax credit sun still shined. He thought he just might build that industry for the superior technology, as he had dreamed of for several years by that time.

An article appeared in the local papers, in early June 1985, just as Mr. Financier was coming on board. The article called Dennis' company a scam, the equipment worthless, and stated that it would not qualify for the tax credit. The article further stated that a local electric company spokesman called for the Attorney General's office to investigate such an obvious scam, as well as all solar companies in Washington. The LamCo system had *always* qualified for the tax credit. It was not a typical heat pump, and Dennis eventually testified to the IRS regarding the LamCo-style heat pump, and even tried helping the government make the tax credit accountable, as the solar systems were largely *real* scams. The electric company even

went so far as to say that they had repeatedly asked Dennis' company for information about the LamCo-style heat pump, and Dennis had stonewalled them. That was in the Big Lie category. The opposite was true. By that time, Dennis had done everything he could think of to get the electric companies interested in his heat pump. He still thought they would love what he was doing. One day, he even had one of his units put on a truck, and had it running in the electric company parking lot, begging them to come out and test it. They refused to even come out of the building.[\[15\]](#) When that article appeared, Dennis began suspecting who might be "out to get" him.

A few days later, Dennis bought out that "LamCo" bank. In July, it was looking like Dennis was going to make it happen. They reached 1000 contracts, even though the electric companies were trying to talk customers out of signing Dennis' contracts, even though there was [zero risk to the customer](#). Just then, the Attorney General's office began an investigation of Dennis' company. Dennis heard the rumors and called the Attorney General's office, asking them what was happening. They denied even knowing who he was, for another Big Lie. Dennis was besieged with reports that all the electric companies were openly calling his business and heat pump a scam. At the same time, a man came to Dennis' office and sold himself as a consultant who could smooth things out between Dennis and the electric companies. He was a [corporate hit man](#) from the BPA. Before 1985 was finished, he would be responsible for many evil deeds, including the [death of one of Dennis' employees](#).

Dennis was getting tired of the rumors and lies coming from the Attorney General's office and the electric companies, so he called a meeting of all the electric companies, to be held on August 15, 1985. During the summer of 1985, Dennis' stock in his company made his net worth about \$50 million. They built a factory and were training installers, and it was looking like Dennis was going to sell and install thousands of systems before the tax credit expired at year's end. After fervent beseeching of the electric companies to attend, the August 15th meeting was largely only attended by Dennis' new employee, the [BPA hit man](#), and two young people who posed as university students interested in conservation. It later turned out that those two "college kids" were "investigators" for the Attorney General's office. They later acted like children during the "investigation," giggling at highly inappropriate times, and Dennis would eventually call them Hansel and Gretel in his writings.[\[16\]](#) Dennis filmed the meeting that all the electric companies were invited to. It was a catered event, and Dennis spoke at the nearly empty table, set with the food for the electric company representatives that never showed up. The next year I watched that video, and it was the only time I ever saw the BPA hit man.

Ms. Deputy Attorney General led the investigation. By the end of summer, Dennis was flying high, with sales streaming in, systems being manufactured and installers trained. Mr. Financier's stock in Dennis' company was worth millions of dollars, and he sold Dennis a plush house he owned in Bellevue (with a weight room and pool in the basement), for more stock in the company, and Dennis was finally making the Big Time. Unknown to Dennis, the evil deeds were just beginning. The electric companies were not going to stand by and watch Dennis

wipe out their market, even though they publicly said they wanted what he was doing. They called in their favors.

As autumn rolled around, the company was in a frenzy to make and install the systems they sold. Although I did not witness that heyday at his Seattle company, I saw it in Ventura, and it was like watching a rocket take off. Dennis' efforts in 1985 in Seattle stand today as the biggest effort ever made in the United States to bring viable alternative energy to the marketplace. Nothing I know of has come close. Accordingly, the energy gangsters' tactics became the most vicious. Ms. Deputy Attorney General had no leg to stand on regarding her "investigation." Even though the "scam" rumors abounded, the customers risked none of their money with the [SFS](#) program. The system had been installed all over the United States, and worked beautifully in climates far harsher than Seattle's, such as in Minnesota, where many happy customers of the LamCo-style heat pump lived. The system was legitimate, the marketing program was the most risk-free one the American market had ever seen, and Dennis was carpeting the Seattle area with salesmen who were closing on about 70% of their presentations, many who had no experience selling anything. In the marketing and sales world, what Dennis was doing was unheard of.

There were many hazards and oddities of those days, and some bear mentioning. Dennis' company took off like a rocket for a few reasons. One was the market that Whoops and the hydroelectric situation had created, along with the tax credit subsidy and the world's best heating system. Add in a marketing Einstein like Dennis, who is the Indiana Jones of alternative energy, and it was an explosive situation. Dennis created a "cookie cutter" marketing program, and flooded Seattle with his program and salespeople. As I later saw in Ventura, the skill was in creating a program that worked, and then it was the world's easiest sale. Many of Dennis' salespeople quickly got big heads, thinking that their big incomes and easy sales were because they were such brilliant salesmen. With Dennis' program, a chimpanzee could have closed those deals.

The electric companies were not going to take it lying down, and took advantage of [how the American public is brainwashed](#). Advertising and [public relations](#) (PR) are methods that corporations use to manage their image, to help them appear benevolent, when they are really all about making money any way they can (appearing to serve others, [when really the goal is being self-serving](#) - the classic tactic). If they were truly benevolent, not much PR work would be necessary. Virtually all advertising and PR is designed to change people's perception of reality. In the wake of Whoops, the Pacific Northwest electric companies suddenly discovered the virtues of conservation and created conservation departments, putting on the appearance of being the consumer's best friend. When customers heard the incredible, zero-risk sales pitch given by Dennis' salesmen, many called the conservation department of the local electric company, asking them if the Lam-Co-style heat pump was a good conservation idea. That would be similar to asking a Catholic priest what he thought of the [Cathars](#) in about 1215. The electric company conservation departments responded unsurprisingly, given their true goal of

eliminating the competition, especially one as scary as Dennis; they told their customers that Dennis' company was a scam, the heat pump worthless, etc. They told every lie they could dream up to frighten away those customers from dealing with Dennis' company. To cap it off, they said Dennis was being "investigated" by the Attorney General's office, an investigation that the electric companies publicly admitted that they initiated.

A fortunate thing about the LamCo-style heat pump was that every component but one was a standard refrigeration and electrical component. The only "exotic" piece of that heat pump was the evaporator panel. That panel presented a serious problem to anybody who tried getting into the business, however. The panels were not difficult to make, but not many places had the facilities to fabricate them. Huge industrial presses made the panels, and nobody could order eight panels from them to make one LamCo-style heat pump. The facilities with industrial presses only made the panels in lots of 1000, so somebody had to buy panels for 125 systems, or none at all. It was an economy-of-scale factor that doomed small operations. That was another reason why only Dennis was successful in the business. That industry Dennis dreamed of could only be created by selling, making and installing those heat pumps by the hundred.

Another problem Dennis had to constantly fight was what engineers and refrigeration mechanics thought they knew. A young engineer was in charge of the manufacturing facility that the Seattle "LamCo" bank had funded. The kid was about my age, was building them from the worthless patent of ten years earlier, and was referring to his refrigeration textbooks to guide him. It was a path to disaster. When Dennis began making the Big Time, he hired the kid, but had to continually correct what he was doing, because Mr. Young Engineer could not think past his textbooks. For instance, the LamCo-style heat pump operated at much higher pressures than typical refrigeration applications, which was also partly why it got much higher COPs than typical heat pumps. Mr. Young Engineer however, believed that his mission in life was making sure that no component would fail for twenty years on the LamCo-style heat pump. Consequently, he designed the system Dennis had built in his factory to choke down the pressures coming to the refrigerant pump from the panels. Choking down the pressures would ease the strain on the "compressor," but would also kill the heat pump's efficiency. It could turn a COP of six into a COP of two. Instead of saving the homeowner 85%, it would only save 50%, and instead of saving the customer \$20,000, would only save perhaps \$11,000 (in Washington, and far less elsewhere, where it competed against fossil fuels). Nobody would pay \$10,000 (or \$6000, after the tax credit was considered) for a piece of equipment that would only save \$11,000 over many years. The customer might as well buy a gas furnace under those conditions. Under the conditions Dennis had already seen the heat pump operate under, a refrigerant pump in a LamCo-style heat pump needed to be replaced every seven years or so, but would only cost \$300 (with more engineering, specifically designed for that application, those pumps could probably have lasted twenty). Mr. Young Engineer would gladly sacrifice \$9000 in energy savings to save \$300 in replacing the heat pump. That was the kind of shortsightedness that Dennis was always fighting with his technical people.

Another example of the limitations in the technical mind was the notion of 12,000 BTUs per hour that 4-horsepower systems could theoretically produce. Mr. Young Engineer read it in his refrigeration textbook, and it became his mantra. He tested a LamCo-style system, documenting 100,000 BTUs per hour with a four horsepower system, which was 25,000 BTUs per hour.[\[17\]](#) Even then, he still could not reject his knee-jerk notion that only 12,000 BTUs per hour was possible. He even testified to the 12,000 BTUs-per-hour notion at Dennis' preliminary hearing in late 1988, and then his report in his own hand was shown to him, and he hit his forehead, saying that he had forgotten that he had done it, but had to admit the "impossible" when faced with his own report.

The rumor campaign by the electric companies' "conservation" departments was doing a lot of damage. Customers who immediately signed up for the no-risk [SFS](#) offer got scared after hearing the slander concocted by the electric companies. Dennis gave a facility tour to his customers, and they became excited and realized that the electric companies were lying. Many of Dennis' customers had some illusions shattered, as they compared electric company propaganda to reality, but the tactics worked well enough to still scare off many customers, even after they had signed contracts.

The tax credit would not apply if those systems were not installed and running by the end of 1985. So, during the summer of 1985, Dennis geared up to make and install the systems himself. The manufacturer in California went out of business, and years later Dennis came into contact with the president of that failed company. That president told me that his company was wiped out, just as Dennis began needing systems made as fast as possible, by Chase Manhattan Bank, the [Rockefellers'](#) bank. They made a dirty play and wiped out Dennis' manufacturer, so Dennis had to make them himself. It is one of many times that the Rockefeller name has come up during the research for this site, including the [banking world](#). Maybe it was a coincidence, but eventually one wonders, when it happens "coincidentally," time after time.

The Attorney General's office began making its investigation officially known, not the bold-faced denials they earlier issued. In September, just as Mr. Financier committed \$10 million of financing to Dennis' company, and Dennis stock was worth \$50 million, Dennis was summoned to the Attorney General's office to make a deposition. There sat Hansel and Gretel with Ms. Deputy Attorney General, dropping their "cover" as college students. Hansel and Gretel acted like children, giggling with their all-knowing grins, and Dennis had to finally complain about their imbecilic behavior. By the questions they were asking, it became obvious that they were filling their slings with mud. Dennis did everything he could to cooperate with their "investigation," and his attorney told them they would cooperate in any way they could with the "investigation," as the company could ill afford any more bad publicity. It turned out that Ms. Deputy Attorney General was simply sharpening her ax, and waited until Dennis had his back turned.

By October, due to the climate of electric company rumormongering, banking relationships that evaporated overnight, libelous newspaper articles, the Attorney General's "investigation," and other unpleasantness, Dennis was thinking of relocating his business. The state of Indiana, suffering from the "Rust Belt" syndrome that had been plaguing the Midwest for years, was rolling out the red carpet, trying to lure Dennis' factory there. He went to meet with Indiana officials, but had his lawyer tell Ms. Deputy Attorney General that if she needed Dennis to hang around to assist her investigation, he would not take the trip to Indiana. Ms. Deputy Attorney General replied that her investigation was a formality, that everything looked fine, and that they could talk when Dennis came back from Indiana.[\[18\]](#)

Dennis went to Indiana to meet with the officials, and everything was going great, until Dennis' Indiana contact came to see him in a panic, and asked what was happening. Dennis' company was splashed all over the Seattle media. Dennis' wife came to the factory on the morning of October 9, to a parking lot full of TV camera crews and reporters. They asked her about the lawsuit that the Attorney General had filed against them, and her response was, "What lawsuit?" Ms. Deputy Attorney General had engineered a carefully planned media attack, when Dennis was out of state and unable to defend himself. Even though the media had splashed Dennis' company all over the airwaves, with one newspaper headline reading, "Attorney General Orders Company to Clean Up Act or Get Out of Town," in fact, no lawsuit had been filed. In a later situation, [I saw for myself](#) how media attacks could be used to wipe out companies. Two days later, the lawsuit was filed. The stock of Dennis' company plummeted in the wake of the media attack, and his stock lost \$30 million of value overnight. The so-called lawsuit had dozens of charges on it. Not one of them was legitimate. It was a string of rumors and lies. To demonstrate how legitimate the lawsuit was, one of its charges was that there was no manufacturing facility where the systems were being made. Guess where the lawsuit was finally served to Dennis' company? At the factory where the systems were being made. The Mafia acts with more integrity than Ms. Deputy Attorney General did then, and Dennis had experience with both.[\[19\]](#)

When a media attack is made that way, it does not matter if the Attorney General was making up everything from whole cloth, which was largely the case. Most people will flee when faced with such an assault. Every customer that had not put money down on the system immediately canceled his/her system order. About 400 customers had put down a deposit on the system, and those were the customers that did not flee. Those customers even signed a petition to ask the Attorney General's office to stop "protecting" them.

Dennis countered the Attorney General's media attack with a full-page ad that he wrote on the plane back from Indiana, and it ran in *The Seattle Times* on October 18, 1985.[\[20\]](#) Public protest buried the Attorney General in calls and letters, and it became one of the two biggest publicity black eyes that the Attorney General ever endured while trying to crush somebody.[\[21\]](#) Suddenly, Ms. Deputy Attorney General was eager to "settle" her so-called case with Dennis. Eventually, Dennis had his customers vote on whether he should settle their

fraudulent lawsuit, and they voted for him to, because they would all probably lose their deposit, as the company would be strangled if he did not. Dennis calls it the dirtiest deal he ever did, settling with those people. To this day, Dennis' detractors use that lawsuit's settlement as hard evidence that Dennis is a crook. [Mr. Deputy](#) even tried that angle on me on the day of his criminal raid, but when he realized that I knew what happened in Seattle, he stopped trying.

A media attack was merely one salvo of many. When the camera crews showed up in the parking lot, the [BPA hit man](#) made his move. He had worked less than ten weeks at Dennis' company, and instead of "smoothing" things out between Dennis and the electric companies, as he had solicited, he instead tried befriending all the key people at the company, and placing doubts in their heads whether Dennis was really fit to run his own company. Until the camera crews showed up in the parking lot, Dennis was flying very high. The BPA hit man then made his play, contacting every key person in the company that morning, trying to incite a mutiny. His plan was for Dennis to come back from Indiana to a company in ruins. It was not a smart move, as the company was in good shape and everybody could see that Dennis was what made it happen. Nobody who mattered was really convinced by Mr. Hit Man's play, and when Dennis came back, Mr. Hit Man was sent home, with pay, to stop trying to incite mutiny. Mr. Hit Man then waged a [several-month-long vendetta](#) against Dennis' company, which resulted in the [death of one of Dennis' employees](#) before the year was finished.

The attack by Mr. Hit Man was carefully coordinated with the Attorney General's office, as he was seen with Ms. Deputy Attorney General on more than one occasion. When asked about it, Ms. Deputy Attorney General said she had never heard of the man. Nearly everything that came out of her mouth in those days was a lie. Much later, after she quit her job, she would admit to Dennis that she was merely "[following orders](#)" as she tried destroying his company. That was also Eichmann's defense.

Through great heroism, Dennis' company survived the onslaught long enough to install those 400 systems by the end of 1985. After that, however, the media and Attorney General attacks, combined with the [phony bankruptcy suit](#) that Mr. Hit Man had waged, strangled the company in early 1986, [about the time I came to Dennis' company](#). Because of what had happened, the systems installed in late 1985 did not work well, nearly thrown on the homes to qualify for the tax credit that expired on December 31, some with only one panel. Mr. Financier was going to be ruined if those systems did not save the customer money in reduced energy bills.

When Mr. Hit Man [caused the death of Dennis' employee](#), Dennis came to a new level of inspiration. Even though the electric companies, BPA, Attorney General and others acted with great cowardice, siccing sociopaths and toadies such as Mr. Hit Man, Ms. Deputy Attorney General, the media and courts on him, Dennis finally figured out who was behind the attacks. He then declared war on the electric companies, sending them letters, telling them that they

had drawn first blood. [The day I met Dennis](#), March 18, 1986, he hired me on the spot, and that night he announced project W.P.P.E.E. at the Seattle Center.[\[22\]](#) I attended that show, and saw my future. The lightning bolt hit me pretty hard when I interviewed with Dennis' company, and I was going to be able to chase my free energy dreams from my childhood.

Over the years, countless people have blamed Dennis for what happened in Seattle, or used it to call him a crook. None of the charges have ever held water. I do not have the emotional reserves to go into chapter and verse of what Mr. Hit Man, Ms. Deputy Attorney General and their pals did. Dennis' *My Quest* and *The Alternative* do a creditable job of it. *My Quest* is an amazing document, written from Dennis' jail cell, and he did not expect to live to see this side of the bars when he wrote it. [Killing one of Dennis' employees](#) did not even slow down Mr. Hit Man. After he helped wipe out Dennis' company, he changed costumes and cultivated a reputation for being a [Tesla researcher](#). He was a wolf in sheep's clothing in the alternative energy crowd; the sheep had no idea that the [wolf was in their midst](#). How many like him are in the ranks of such organizations?

While Mr. Hit Man worked his evil, others were at it too. Ms. Deputy Attorney General essentially took Dennis' customers and Mr. Financier hostage. The entire [crux of her case](#) was that *one* person in Washington innocently misunderstood *one* thing Dennis said. That was the "crime." The Washington settlement and the plea bargain Dennis did in Ventura were due to the prosecutors taking innocents as hostage to compel Dennis to settle. They were both for civil law "violations," not criminal law, and Dennis still spent two years behind bars, while many lives were wrecked.

While the Seattle company was being bludgeoned by the Big Boys, some of Dennis' dealers made their play to steal customers, employees and the like. One was named Reggie; another was Terry. Dennis was desperately trying to keep the company alive. Employees betrayed the company, becoming spies for the crooks, etc. I was so on fire that I worked for months for free during that spring. Then in June, my boss, the controller, helped engineer the theft of Dennis' company out from under him. Once again, Dennis was screwed by a stock deal. The controller was entrusted to take care of the stock deal when Dennis bought the shell company, to ensure the deal was consummated properly. That was partly why he was hired. He instead used his position to steal the company. Dennis' company was stolen mere weeks after Mr. Financier's company was stolen, by some of the same people who stole Dennis' company. Mr. Financier thought that the thefts of both companies were related.[\[23\]](#)

When I joined Dennis' company, I had just left Los Angeles due to a [paranormal experience](#), and began realizing that [my profession was worthless](#). I went through a disillusionment process that lasted for several years. It was a gradual process, with salient events punctuating it periodically. The first one I got with Dennis happened when his company was stolen. Up until then, I was as excited as I have ever been, and felt that people who truly cared about

what Dennis was doing surrounded me. During those early days, what impressed me was Dennis' integrity in the face of adversity. It was a rough ride, working without pay, as the company was dying. I thought that those still there were trying to keep the vision alive.

Dennis' company was stolen in a shareholders' meeting. When the meeting began, it was uncertain who would prevail, Dennis or the thieves. There were scores of employees there that night, some who had left the company while I was there, and others I had never seen before. Dennis had a few hundred employees during the previous December, as they rushed to get those systems installed. As the night wore on, it became evident that the thieves would prevail. Some threw their lot in with the thieves from the beginning, while most began neutrally. There were about a dozen who were openly behind Dennis. When it became evident that the thieves would prevail, there was a moment when the thieves' ringleader took the podium, and said that nobody wanted Dennis around anymore. A cheer went up from the crowd. I looked out across the room, and people who I worked alongside, who gave Dennis standing ovations in meetings I had attended, were now cheering the thieves. When the crowd yelled, "Give us Barabbas!" it probably looked something like that. All those employees were really loyal to their paychecks, and if a thief appeared and put a dagger in Dennis' back, well, that was OK, as long as the paychecks kept coming. Those who cheered those thieves inherited the wind.

Dennis met the next day with the dozen "loyalists," and he left the state within days, trying to rebuild his company with some of his dealers. His wife left a few days later, to be with him. We sat in Seattle, waiting for Dennis to make something happen. One-by-one, the loyalists fell by the wayside. I sympathized with those who bowed out to feed their families. It was July, and we had enjoyed one paycheck since March. I used up my savings during those months, and eventually had to move back in with my grandparents. A few bowed out with honor, although some did not. There was another salient event that happened to me during that summer, which helped me eventually figure it out. It is discussed at this footnote.[\[24\]](#)

The Pursuit of Free Energy

By August 1986, I was the only one left from the Seattle company who still wanted to work with Dennis. One engineer built Dennis' Seattle factory, and he used to be the plant superintendent for Boeing's 747 manufacturing plant in Everett, which is the world's largest building. Mr. Engineer waited for Dennis to come up with money to pay him. He had bladder cancer, and when he got it, Boeing eased him into retirement. He was in his late 60s and virtually unemployable. I was a young buck in my 20s, and in August I told Dennis, who by that time had moved to Boston to try rebuilding, that I would sleep on a floor to try rebuilding what he was doing. Dennis originally tried dissuading me from moving out there, but when I proved persistent, he told me to come on out.

[I moved to Boston in November 1986](#). When Dennis announced Project W.P.P.E.E., he had no idea how he was going to make electricity and compete with the electric companies. Dennis and his family moved to Boston with little more than the clothes on their backs, once again. From a \$50 million net worth to nothing in less than a year...that was the kind of life that Dennis and his family led. Their few possessions were stored in that beat-up station wagon that Dennis drove into Seattle over the mountains in 1984. It was stored in Mr. Engineer's barn in Ellensburg, and I made a couple of trips over the mountains, loaded their stuff into a trailer, with some of my possessions, and towed it behind my 1973 Pinto to Boston.

Many lives were shattered by the Seattle events, as the electric companies wiped out the competition. One who suffered badly was [Mr. Inventor](#). He had a heat storage technology that Dennis was promoting, and he had a facility at Dennis' factory. Knowing what might happen, just before the thieves stole the company, several of us rented a truck and moved as much of Mr. Inventor's equipment to Mr. Engineer's barn in Ellensburg as we could. It was horrible what the thieves did, and Mr. Inventor suffered. Unfortunately, Mr. Inventor began blaming Dennis for what happened, which was ludicrous, but is a typical reaction. Mr. Inventor was going to make *somebody* pay for what he suffered through, even if it was his best ally.

Before I moved to Boston, I helped Mr. Inventor as much as I could, and we met several times. One night, he told me about the inventors' clubs that he belonged to over the years. He found that no inventor would support another in getting his invention out there. It was like a pack of dogs, each trying to be the alpha dog. He said that those inventors' groups were doomed because of the inventors' selfish natures. Up until that time, my exposure to inventing was [Mr. Mentor](#), and I never heard that kind of talk from him, but would instead hear how all his stuff was stolen or suppressed, and how all he wanted to do was help the world. My early exposure to inventing misdirected me. Thirty years later, Mr. Mentor is the closest thing I have seen to an altruistic inventor, and that early exposure misled me about how most of them act. What Mr. Inventor told me was not forgotten, and it lay in the back of my mind for years. The last delusion I shed (not completely shed until about ten years after Mr. Inventor told me that story) was that inventors, with their creative talent, somehow had a higher level of integrity than the average population. By 1997, I ruefully realized that that was not true. Creative talent does not confer integrity. Mr. Inventor was ironically the first one to begin demonstrating that fact to me.

A couple of days before I arrived in Boston, Dennis got his WPPEE lightning bolt. When Dennis arrived in Boston, just like he did in Seattle, he tried working *with* the electric companies and energy establishment. People like Dennis never begin as rebels, but as believers in the system. Only after they are repeatedly crucified do they begin getting "political" and "rebellious," because they have seen first-hand, and born the brunt of, how corrupt the system is. [Ralph McGehee](#) and [Rodney Stich](#) are similar, [as was I](#). Dennis spoke at a Department of Energy hearing, and in the audience was a man who worked at a company that used a 200° F heat source to generate electricity. The exhaust temperature of the LamCo-

style heat pump was about the same temperature. On Monday, the day after I got to Boston, Dennis and I drove to that company and visited with its president. We watched their turbine making electricity from that low-temperature heat source. It was then that Dennis began making his “free energy” noise. Dennis’ original idea was marrying his heat pump to that low-temperature heat engine to make free electricity. He called his idea “Low Temperature Phase Change.” At that time, Dennis knew nearly nothing about thermodynamics and had never heard of [Carnot](#), but he put on his P.T. Barnum hat. Before long, we were preparing to put on “The Greatest Energy Show on Earth.” Below is an image from our first show. Those were happy and innocent days for me.



Click on image to enlarge

Dennis *is* an evangelical P.T. Barnum, but that is not what he is *all* about. He does the P.T. Barnum stuff partly because it works (although it is a double-edged sword, making many uneasy), but also partly due to his migrant farm worker, *Grapes of Wrath* background. About my life’s happiest year was 1986, although I made almost no money that year. I was chasing a childhood dream that could have been immensely valuable for humanity. I ended that year doing a 45-day fast, partly because it was cheaper than eating. During 1986, my yuppie habits were beat out of me, as it got down to survival. I got to where I could live on about \$50 per week. It was a minor hardship, however, when compared to the thrill of chasing that dream.

In Boston, my life changed. I lived with Dennis and his family for about a year. Dennis and I had long talks into the night. Those days are covered [elsewhere](#), and Dennis covers them in his books. There was more betrayal and egos-in-charge in Boston, and just when it looked grim, I raised money to get us going again. I had a lot of innocence and naïveté to still lose, and within two years of raising that money, my life was shattered. In those early days in Boston, however, I was full of fire, had fully recovered from the stress of my LA days, and began working 70 hour weeks again, helping to get W.P.P.E.E. off the ground. Early on, as Dennis began making his free energy noise, I brought in my long-retired [mentor](#) to look at what we were doing. Were we chasing an impossible pipe dream? His response was that although classical thermodynamics said what we were trying to do was “impossible,” he was not so quick to call it impossible, and thought we had a chance, but not with Dennis’ turbine concept.

Mr. Mentor eventually gave Dennis his hydraulic heat engine design, with its pressure intensifier concept, to marry to Dennis' LamCo-style heat pump panels, and gave his opinion that free energy might be possible with that arrangement.

In Boston, although Dennis got the red carpet treatment from New England's most powerful electric executive, we experienced a media blackout and other fun. I tied into talent and money with Mr. Professor and others in my hometown of Ventura, and we moved there in the summer of 1987. In late 1987, Dennis found the program that worked, and the rocket ship that he built in Seattle [was taking off once more](#). We were building a prototype of Mr. Mentor's hydraulic heat engine, to try developing a free energy machine. On New Year's Day, 1988, we became involved with another hydraulic heat engine, invented by Victor Fischer. Unlike Mr. Mentor's idea, Fischer had already built and run his hydraulic heat engines, in Australia, spending millions of dollars in development. Fischer's and Mr. Mentor's hydraulic heat engines were similar in concept, and Fischer's had already been built, so we abandoned Mr. Mentor's idea to try building one of Fischer's engines on a scale small enough to power a home. It is incredible that both hydraulic heat engines came to Dennis a few months apart.

When Mr. Mentor [invented his engine at a stoplight](#), he was not trying to make a free energy machine or defeat the second law of thermodynamics. He was just designing the best engine for powering a car. Fischer, however, was taking on Carnot head on. About the only "inside" information I have about Fischer's engine was hearing him talk about it for about five minutes, soon after he came aboard in Ventura. He said that in Carnot's seminal work, he *assumed* an ideal gas in his ideal heat engine. Carnot then extrapolated his logic with his ideal gas heat engine to cover all heat engines, and Fischer said that that was where [Carnot](#) made his fatal error, and that liquid heat engines were ignored ever since. It harkens back to the notion that Carnot's theory may have owed the steam engine more than the steam engine owed thermodynamics. Fischer's hydraulic heat engine challenged Carnot's *assumption*, and also the classical interpretation of the second law of thermodynamics. Fischer thought, like Mr. Mentor did, that a hydraulic heat engine, combined with Dennis' LamCo-style panels, might have a chance at making free energy. It was not something that Dennis dreamed up. Fischer and Mr. Mentor are technical and scientific heavyweights, not fast-talking promoters. Fischer helped write thermodynamics textbooks, and he said that thermodynamics textbooks are, in large measure, expedient rubbish. What Fischer said sounded a lot like describing the expedient fairy tales that students are given by microbiology textbooks regarding [Pasteur and the spontaneous generation theory](#). The data from Fischer's first prototype had it coming closer to Carnot's ideal than any other heat engine ever had.

The main issue was that in Fischer's engine, only a percent or two of the working fluid ever became a gas, so far less entropy was created in the process, which made the efficiency rise dramatically. With both Fischer's and Mr. Mentor's engines, they *do not need cooled condensers*, which was what [Watt's engine](#) was all about. That is a formidable mindbender for physicists and engineers to ponder. No more bodies of water would need to be heated up to

cool down working fluids, as well as many subtle advantages. It is a radical new direction in heat engine technology, which could spell the end of the many environmentally destructive methods of today's heat engines.

Even if hydraulic heat engines could not provide free energy, it would be the first new heat engine cycle in a century, and could possibly sweep aside nearly all the others. Even without free energy, its potential is countless billions of dollars, and a great reduction in environmental harm.

Two days after Dennis publicly announced that Fischer had come aboard, and we were going to try making a free energy machine with his engine, [we were raided](#). Below are some images from the raid.



Click on image to enlarge

I watched them kick in Mr. Engineer's door. Mr. Researcher *watched them* ransack and clean out his office, and photograph the prototype blueprints while rolling them out on his desk. The Ventura County sheriff's department later denied doing it, even when they knew we saw them doing it.

When I moved to Boston and Dennis got his free energy vision, he had me contact Mr. Inventor and try to get him on board, and allow Dennis to promote his heat-storage technology. I had a dismaying conversation with Mr. Inventor. He blamed Dennis for what happened in Seattle, and said that unless Dennis gave him a lot of money, he would not work with him. In a candid moment in Seattle, Mr. Inventor admitted that he was probably too greedy for his own good, and he would probably hurt Dennis and himself with his greed. He was prophetic.

When we began flying high in Ventura, Dennis contacted his best salesman from the Seattle days, asking him if he wanted to come onboard and begin making the big money again. Dennis flew him and Mr. Inventor to Ventura. A few of those "loyalists" that fell by the wayside in 1986 banded together around Mr. Inventor. As Dennis showed his salesman and Mr. Inventor that he was rebuilding and going for the Big Time again, they declined to get involved. Just before the raid, we discovered their game plan. We received an extortion

demand from Mr. Inventor, that salesman, that [Mr. Young Engineer](#) and his installer sidekick for about \$250,000. The rationale was that Dennis was supposed to be paying Mr. Inventor thousands of dollars a week since Dennis' company was stolen, along with another \$100,000 thrown on top, and Mr. Inventor demanded it. Dennis was trying to recruit Mr. Inventor almost as a favor to him, to help heal what had happened in Seattle. With Mr. Mentor's and Fischer's stuff on the front burner, heat storage technology was kind of passé to us. For Dennis trying to act honorably, he received an extortion demand.

Soon after the extortion demand came the [raid](#). For me, it began going downhill rapidly. The year before, soon after I raised the money and began working 70-hour weeks, my stress symptoms from my [LA days](#) came back in full blossom. After the raid, I began looking like a raccoon again, with dark circles around my eyes. I had to work fifteen-hour days just to survive, with all our records seized in the raid and my office stripped to the walls. People have told me that I looked at least ten years older than I was, during those days. I wish that were the only toll. Family and friends disowned me, few of them having a glimmer about why I was with Dennis and what we were trying to do, nor seeming to want to know. In their eyes, I was either trying to get rich quick, under the spell of a con man, we were both deluded fools, or I was a crook myself. The personal devastation I endured during those days was far worse than getting the ax from the Big Boys. Going bankrupt was the *least* of my troubles in 1988.

By the spring of 1988 I was a pile of wrecked nerves, and I asked Dennis if I could take the summer off to try recovering. Dennis then got the [billion-dollar offer from the Big Boys](#). When he refused it, he was arrested the next month [on a million dollar bail](#). I was hiking in the Cascade Mountains in Washington as Dennis rotted in jail, and another apparent provocateur, from Texas, made his move. [Mr. Texas](#) made his play immediately after Dennis was arrested. In the wake of the deathblow aimed at us with the raid, Dennis tried getting the Ventura operation superfluous to the movement's success, and he recruited ten dealers to become regional directors for a national operation. The slickest presentation was Mr. Texas'. He also immediately initiated the same kinds of low-level political maneuvering amongst the dealers that [Mr. Hit Man](#) did with Dennis' Seattle employees. Dennis saw him doing it and suspected what he was up to, but I did not know about it, partly because I had largely left the operation by the spring of 1988.

Mr. Texas recruited some dupes to help him make his play. One was Mr. Stooge, who worked with his wife for us in Ventura. He became involved in Boston. Mr. Stooge wanted to replace me as Dennis' protégé, and Dennis told him that he doubted he had the integrity to be that. Dennis was prophetic. Mr. Texas made his move as soon as Dennis was jailed, and Mr. Stooge and another dealer joined with him, and they became known as The Trio. While Dennis' wife was desperately trying to raise the million dollar bail, Mr. Texas was making his play, dominating the other regional directors and dealers, getting quite a few to back him, while the others mostly faded to the sidelines, not knowing what to do.

The Trio went to Ventura and went to work, working closely with Mr. Deputy to shut down the Ventura operation. Mr. Texas threatened and lied to those who put up their homes and assets to try raising Dennis' bail. His intimidation tactics and lies worked. One of Dennis' first dealers in Ventura bought a LamCo-style system and installed it on his greenhouse facility at his ranch, which was only a 20-minute drive from our Ventura office. It was a beautiful installation, which the rancher and his son installed, and it saved him about \$500 per month. He posted up his \$600,000 ranch as bail collateral for Dennis. Mr. Texas told him he would lose his ranch if Dennis were found guilty. That was in the Big Lie category, but it worked, and the rancher pulled his ranch from bail consideration.[\[25\]](#) Mr. Texas used whatever intimidation and lies he could produce, to chase away anybody who might support Dennis. I was hiking while that was happening. My future wife said she missed me, when I talked to her between hiking trips, and in July 1988 I went back to Ventura.

As I rolled into Ventura, I thought I would drop by the office before I went home. I was surprised to find the parking lot nearly empty, and the office closed. Standing in front of the building were Mr. Engineer, Mr. Texas and Mr. Stooge. They walked up to me and shook my hand, with Mr. Texas and Mr. Stooge looking a little sheepish. I had no idea what was happening, and it was another salient moment. Dennis picked Mr. Engineer off the scrap heap in Yakima, and Mr. Engineer saw what happened in Seattle. Mr. Engineer would later admit to me how naïve he was, and that moment in front of the empty offices he proved how deeply his naïveté went, and probably his integrity. At that time, I had no idea what Mr. Texas and Mr. Stooge had been doing, but a few minutes before I drove up, Mr. Texas walked through our buildings, telling all the employees that he had just come from meeting with Mr. Deputy, and that anybody who continued working at our company would be arrested as Dennis' accomplices. All the employees ran out of the building, and many also stole anything that was not nailed down on their way out. I thought I had seen [ugliness in Seattle](#). What happened in Ventura made the Seattle events pale to insignificance.

As I shook their hands, Mr. Engineer told me that he and Mr. Researcher were going to go to work for Mr. Texas and Mr. Stooge. It smelled familiar. I left the empty office and called a shaken up [Mr. Professor](#), who told me what was happening. Mr. Texas had used his arts of enticement and intimidation on Mr. Professor, and he was no longer sure if Dennis was a "good guy." I told him what I thought was going on, which turned out to be correct.

Today, it looks like Mr. Texas was a free-lance crook, not a paid provocateur, as he was [arrested in a religious scam in 2003](#). The sad part was not the move Mr. Texas made, but that so many easily played into his hands; Mr. Stooge, Mr. Engineer and Mr. Researcher among them. Mr. Texas played the "[fake angel](#)" role, and it easily worked.[\[26\]](#)

Mr. Professor and I were about the only two people who helped Dennis in Ventura, besides Dennis' wife. I was a young buck, but Mr. Professor was a pillar of the community, about the most revered at the local college, and the best professor I ever had. We both had the most

dismaying experiences of our lives in those days.

Anybody who played ball with Mr. Texas would get a dagger in his/her back or chest eventually. Mr. Researcher scoffed at my warnings about Mr. Texas and friends. He made Dennis out to be a bad guy in his mind, so he could justify abandoning him. Mr. Engineer had a roll of ARL (a competitor of Underwriter Laboratories - UL) labels that were from the Seattle factory days, that they put on the Seattle systems. It became potentially valuable (not really, if one knew much about how it worked, as the labels were also specific to where the equipment was made), and Mr. Texas lured Mr. Engineer to Texas to come work for him, with the promise of a paycheck. Mr. Engineer drove out there. Mr. Texas used Mr. Engineer's relationship with Mr. Stooze to wrangle those ARL stickers away from him. About five minutes after Mr. Engineer parted with those stickers, Mr. Texas fired him, and Mr. Engineer drove all the way back home, penniless, to Ellensburg.

When The Trio made their move, Dennis and his wife even offered to let them take the company, but they would have to take it as only three of the ten regional dealers that Dennis had (i.e., the thieves could only own 30% of what they stole, not 100%). They rejected that offer and went for it all. The day I showed up, Dennis' wife was desperately trying to hold it together in the face of the hurricane. She allowed my credit card that I lent the company to reach a \$25,000 unpaid balance, which eventually bankrupted me, so she could keep the employees paid and hold the doors open another week. When Mr. Texas made his play, the forty employees were owed about a week's wages. The cameraman, who serendipitously was on hand when the raid happened and filmed part of it, was asked to leave the company when Dennis was arrested, because there was nothing for him to do. He refused to leave, and when Mr. Texas closed the business' doors, the cameraman stole \$6,000 of professional camera equipment to collect his "pay." The machinist sold off the machine shop equipment for \$5,000, pocketed the cash, and left town.

Dennis' wife was trying to give the company away to anybody who could keep it alive. A Colorado billionaire was interested, and Dennis' wife and Dennis' most loyal salesman (an ex-minister) flew to Colorado to meet with him. Mr. Texas stalked their every step, found out their plans, and called the billionaire, spewing threats and lies. The day after I showed up in Ventura, Dennis' wife flew to Colorado to give the company away to the billionaire. She wanted me to hold down the fort at the empty office. She was racing between our facilities (two office buildings, and a machine shop we had recently moved to another building in town), trying to hold it together. I sat in Dennis' office, waiting for her to show up to show me what I needed to do. She drove up, to race in, get something she needed, and race out. She parked the car right outside Dennis' office. In her haste, she left her keys in the ignition. On her key ring were her house keys and keys to our buildings. As I looked out the window, a car raced up behind her parked van, and out of the car leapt a man who we were training to be an installer. He stole her keys and drove off. He ransomed her keys for the few days of wages owed him, which amounted to five hundred dollars.

That was not the only problem with keys that she had. A woman worked with us in customer service the previous winter, and she left the company to move to Montana. Her adventure did not work out too well, and she came to our company that spring, asking us to hire her back. She also asked us to hire her boyfriend. We did, and he ran the customer service department, and he had keys to our buildings. When Mr. Texas closed the company's doors, Dennis' wife asked the man to give his keys back. He refused to do so, I suppose because he was also owed a week of wages. That evening, Dennis' wife showed me some work she wanted me to do on the computers. They had several Macintosh computers in the offices. Then she got on a plane with Dennis' salesman. The next day, I went to the office to do the work Dennis' wife instructed me to do. Our facilities were pretty large, and I went to the room where the computer was supposed to be, and it was not there. I had just turned thirty, was gradually recovering from the stress of the previous spring, in spite of what was going on, but I thought that I had become a little forgetful. I began walking through the buildings, looking for the computer I knew Dennis' wife had shown me the day before. I became increasingly bewildered, wandering around the buildings. I could not find *any* computers!

When Dennis' wife got back from Colorado, I apologized and told her that I could not find the computers, so I could not perform the work. Perhaps she took them and forgot to tell me. She quickly found out what happened. That woman and her boyfriend, like everybody else, had already judged Dennis and his wife, concluding that we were crooks, and they used the keys they refused to hand over to enter our buildings the night Dennis' wife flew to Colorado. Like everybody else, they were owed a week of wages, so they would collect their pay by stealing everything they could. They took all of our Macintosh computers that night, and they also stole office equipment we had been renting, and was not even ours. Then they put the icing on the cake. Although they had just proven themselves criminals, they were going to help Mr. Deputy bury Dennis. They stole all the customer service files and delivered them to Mr. Deputy, as "evidence" against Dennis. Mr. Deputy gladly received the stolen files, and it became a large portion of their 10,000 pages of discovery evidence for Dennis' trial.

Those were far from the only instances of Dennis' employees and dealers "getting theirs" as the company was killed. I witnessed about twenty attempts, during my years with Dennis, to steal his company. Some were pathetically funny, as greed-blinded, toothless piranhas made their plays. What Mr. Texas did, however, hurt. After I had seen Dennis' "buddies" try stealing his companies and committing other crimes several times, I told Dennis how shocking it was to see, and he responded with, "Yes, the first fifty times they did it, I was shocked too." Also, it was always "nice guys" who did it. Dennis says, "I've never been had by a man I didn't like."[\[27\]](#) They always show up with a friendly demeanor, otherwise they can never get close enough to jam their knife in his ribs.

While Mr. Hit Man merely abandoned his dupes to their fate when Dennis was taken out of the picture, Mr. Texas was not quite as gentle. When the Ventura company was completely destroyed and Dennis rotted behind bars, and it looked like he might never live to see freedom

again, Mr. Texas took off his mask and jammed his dagger into all those fools who supported his power play, including the other members of The Trio. When he did that, it seemed as if he was being paid. He put a lot of extra effort into screwing over anybody who was involved with Dennis' venture. Maybe the energy gangsters wanted to do it right that time, and not let Dennis live to try it again.

When [Mr. Deputy made faces](#) at me as I testified, it led to my final salient moment during my days with Dennis. [I then mortgaged my life](#) to try getting Dennis out of jail, a quixotic gesture that worked. Mr. Deputy was actively and consciously engaged in evil, and consequently has had a highly successful career in Ventura County law enforcement. Evil-minded people do well in evil systems. Up until that moment in the courtroom, I made excuses in my mind for his behavior. I never wanted to believe that people could be evil-minded, but Mr. Deputy finally rubbed my face in it that day. It was a turning point in my life.

When Dennis got out of prison in the mid-1990s, he went right back at trying to make a free energy machine using hydraulic heat engines, and was involved again with Fischer in the late 1990s. I could only stand back in awe, as I watched Dennis twice take his prison clothing off and immediately go for it again.

When I left home at age 21, I held the notion that perhaps one out of three people had enough integrity to do the right thing, even if their "reward" for doing so was not immediate or obvious. By the time I left college, that number had slipped to about one-in-five. My brutal years in Los Angeles, with me asking "[Easter Bunny](#)" questions that everybody laughed at, brought that number down to one-in-ten. The night when I watched those [Seattle employees cheer the thieves](#), I began waking up quickly, and thought it might be one-in-fifty by the time that summer was finished. When I saw the general apathy to what we were trying to [do in Boston](#), and began receiving personal attacks, my number slipped to one in a hundred. When I saw what happened in [Ventura](#), with us having a national profile, with people I had known most of my life acting dishonorably, and being attacked by friends and family, I finally came to realize that the number was one in thousands. That was the biggest and most painful surprise of my journey: personal integrity is the world's scarcest commodity.

That level of personal integrity, or lack thereof, I have now seen in other professions and industries. [Ralph McGehee](#) is one of only two CIA employees who ever figured out what the CIA was really all about and "legally" published their findings. What made Ralph unusual was not his considerable intelligence; it was his integrity. It was not until 1995 that somebody from the FBI did what Ralph did, and there was at least one offer by a policeman to murder the man before his book was published.[\[28\]](#) Similarly, only one in thousands of American medical doctors has the integrity to [realize and admit that orthodox cancer treatment does not work](#), and the courage to pursue and provide an actual cure. Many other examples can be provided.[\[29\]](#)

The energy gangsters do not have to work that hard to derail people like Dennis. They simply get him in a headlock, then watch his “friends” disembowel him, and let our rapacious system simply grind away, with its [zero-integrity members](#). The reason we do not have free energy, [cancer cures](#) and the like is because not enough people care enough. It is that simple.

Footnotes

[1] Much of this narrative can be found in Dennis’ writings, particularly *My Quest* and *The Alternative*. Both were largely written from his jail and prison cells, and can be purchased from his company. As of September 2005, his company address was United Community Services of America, 3002 Rt. 23 North, Newfoundland, NJ 07435.

[2] See Dennis Lee, *My Quest*, pp. 1-2.

[3] See Gatto, *Dumbing us Down*.

[4] See Stuart Ewen’s *PR!, A Social History of Spin*, pp. 3-18. See also Herman and Chomsky, *Manufacturing Consent*, and Chomsky, *Necessary Illusions*.

[5] The “kill ratio” is how a prosecutor’s effectiveness is measured. It is measured as the number of convictions divided by the number of prosecutions. I have seen some very cynical prosecutors in my day, even friends. More often than Americans want to admit, prosecutors abandon the principles of fair play and justice, and a prosecution investigator even admitted to us that he could not care less whether Dennis Lee was guilty of a crime. [Convictions were all he cared about](#). He also [admitted to lying](#) if it would gain him his coveted conviction.

[6] Richard Bach has written several mystical books, and *Jonathan Livingston Seagull* and *Illusions* may rank among the best mystical books ever written. For years though, Bach did not feel he was the author of *Jonathan Livingston Seagull*. The book *Jonathan Livingston Seagull* came to him one night in 1959. He was walking along a canal when he heard a voice say “Jonathan Livingston Seagull.” Then he went home, and the book came to him in a flood of images. He tried assembling the jumble of images into a manuscript and was unable to finish it. Eight years later he heard the voice again, and it finished dictating the book. I have also heard that it was not until Bach took [Silva Mind Control](#) that the rest of the book came to him. It can be a small mystical world sometimes, and in Bach’s circle of friends were Jane Roberts and her husband. When the Seth material began being published, Bach saw the similarities in what happened to him and what Jane Roberts was doing in channeling Seth. He visited Roberts and her husband and attended Seth channeling sessions. In a session that became part of the *Nature of Personal Reality*, Seth told Bach that although he did not feel that he authored *Jonathan Livingston Seagull*, he indeed was its author. In 1972, Jane/Seth told Bach:

"Information does not exist by itself. Connected with it is the consciousness of all those who understand it, perceive it or originate it. So there are not records in terms of objective, for ever-available banks of information into which you tune. Instead, the consciousness that held, or holds, or will hold the information attracts it like a magnet...The information itself wants to move toward consciousness. It is not dead or inert. It is not something you grab for, it is also something that wants to be grabbed, and so it gravitates to those who seek it.

"Your consciousness attracts the consciousness that is already connected with the material. That is one of my goodies for the evening! Information, then, becomes new and is reborn as it is interpreted through a new consciousness, as *Seagull* was.

"The inner portion of your being, using those abilities that have always been yours, interpreted the information through the kaleidoscope of your own being, using the best portions of yourself - producing, then, a brilliant truth in new clothes - but in clothes that no one could have given it but yourself. Now I will tell you: If you assign the authorship of *Seagull* to another, then you deny the uniqueness of your own inner self.

"The truth came to you and was given to you, but the originality and uniqueness was provided by your own inner being, which may now be so separated from your conscious self that it seems to be apart from it.

"So other things were also involved - not only the birth of a book, but the emergence of the inner self, through art, into the physical universe. Now part of the focus and the strength comes from those two births, and the intensity behind them is also the reason why the book's nativity strikes the world as strongly as it does. The two are merged in the book. You are looking for the author of *Seagull*, and I tell you I am looking at him. He may not have the face that you see when you look in the mirror, simply because you cannot see your true identity in a mirror. But I am looking at all that is visible of the author of *Seagull*, and you should know him best of all. And I will tell you through the years how to become acquainted with him, and more on speaking terms." See Roberts, *The Nature of Personal Reality*, pp. 55-56.

[7] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, p. 32.

[8] There are many sources of this information. For instance, see David Shapiro's *Generating Failure*, pp. 32-33.

[9] A horsepower of pump power is also called a "ton" in the refrigeration business, related to the cooling capacity of a ton of ice, from the days before home refrigerators existed.

[10] During Dennis' Seattle days, he became involved with an inventor I will call Mr. Inventor. During the 1950s, Mr. Inventor worked for General Motors. For years, GM had him work in a special department. They gave him patents. They said they were their patents, which they were going to file for. His job was finding a way around the patents, so they could "bullet-proof" them, so others could not engineer their way around them. For several years he defeated patents, giving his findings to his supervisors. It was like hiring a burglar to break into your own building, so the security systems could be tested. After several years that work, Mr. Inventor discovered that those patents were not GM patents after all. They were patents of small inventors and GM's rivals, and he was helping GM engineer their way around those patents. He was the proverbial industrial burglar, not realizing that he was not testing the security systems, but committing real crimes at his employer's behest. The [American automobile industry](#) has long been expert at stealing inventions and shutting out inventors from getting anything from it, [power steering](#) and intermittent windshield wipers being two infamous examples. Mr. Inventor also told me that back during his GM days, there was a little "accident" in Detroit, where a man bought a pick-up truck and it got about 70 MPG. He told his friends and neighbors about that strange situation. Under the hood, it did not look too unusual, but his high MPG quickly came to the auto company's notice. They told him they accidentally let that experimental pick-up truck get to a showroom, where he bought it. They said the truck's valves would burn up if he kept driving it, and they offered him a hefty sum to buy their truck back. I had [heard about that kind of dynamic for a long time](#), and I got it straight from the GM guy who specialized in defeating patents. It is no urban legend.

[11] See, for instance the report issued by the U.S. Department of Energy, called the Energy Information Administration's *Annual Energy Review*.

[12] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, p. 105.

[13] A "shell corporation" is one with no assets, but has all the needed registrations and red tape completed, to act as a corporate vehicle for somebody that needs one quickly. They are legitimate and common vehicles for business ventures to use. Today, one can be bought for about \$100,000.

[14] See Dennis Lee's *The Alternative*, exhibit 1H.

[15] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, pp. 110-111.

[16] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, p. 116.

[17] See Mr. Young Engineer's report of August 14, 1985, titled "Performance Test," where he documented a COP of nearly 7, with more than 100,000 BTUs per hour, in the documents reproduced at the back of Dennis Lee's *My Quest*.

[18] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, p. 119.

[19] Whenever this story is told, and I have told parts of it many times, more than 90% of Americans respond with something like, “Hey, he must have been doing something wrong. Nobody gets that kind of attention unless they are hurting somebody. Some of those charges must have been legitimate.” That response harkens back to [my spiritual understanding](#). Most people have given their power away to anything and everything, as they refuse to take responsibility for their lives, playing the victim game. Consequently, they do not want to believe they have given their power to an evil system, run by evil-minded people. That mindless defense of the system is what keeps pioneers such as Dennis at the margins. The same thing happens in [medicine](#), where all the cancer cures are suppressed, and the only legal “treatments” actually kill off the patients. With that kind of logic, Jesus, Gandhi and Martin Luther King, Jr. were crooks too, spending time behind bars because they tried helping people, to eventually be murdered.

[20] See Dennis Lee’s *The Alternative*, exhibit 1C.

[21] Characteristically, the other black eye he got was when he attempted to wipe out an activist who tried a cheap housing solution for homelessness in Seattle. The activist fought back, and a flyer campaign by the activist helped derail the Attorney General’s bid for governor in 1992. He barely lost.

[22] See Dennis Lee’s *The Alternative*, exhibit 1E. W.P.P.E.E. was pronounced “Whoopee” and it stood for Worldwide Privately Produced Electrical Energy. Those kinds of positive, silly acronyms say a lot about Dennis, in a very good way.

[23] See Dennis Lee’s *The Alternative*, exhibit 1J.

[24] When my controller-boss helped engineer the theft of Dennis’ company, I became a creditor of the stolen company, for a couple months of wages. The thieves looted Mr. Financier’s company, as well as anything they could scrape from the carcass of Dennis’. They really thought they could revive Dennis’ company in Seattle, and then sell his heat pump once again. It was another example of [mindless greed](#). My controller tried recruiting me to come work for the thieves, and he showed me some glossy PR stuff they had produced, to revive the company under a new name, SONOS.

Mere days after they stole Dennis’ company, they were in bankruptcy court, trying to get the [phony lawsuit](#) waged by Mr. Hit Man thrown out. I attended the hearings in downtown Seattle, with some of the other “loyalists.” I partly went to finally see [Mr. Hit Man](#) in the flesh, as I had heard so much about him. Like a smart hit man, his job was taking Dennis out of the picture, and when Dennis’ company was crushed, and stolen, and Dennis hurriedly left the state, Mr. Hit Man probably got a big bonus from the BPA, and moved to Florida, where he changed costumes and became a “[noted Tesla researcher](#).” When Mr. Hit Man concocted his phony lawsuit, probably assisted by Ms. Deputy Attorney General and friends, he had to round up some dupes to make his play, to give it at least the veneer of legitimacy. After months of campaigning, he eventually recruited some dupes at Dennis’ company, largely a greedy salesman and his wife, another salesman who may have been another electric company provocateur, and a mentally unbalanced Vietnam veteran who Dennis deceptively told Mr. Hit Man was his right-hand confidant. Mr. Vietnam and Mr. Hit Man became fast friends, and they

were the ones who drove that woman to [commit suicide](#). Those five were the minimum “creditors” required by law to wage an involuntary bankruptcy lawsuit.

Dennis will never know just how deeply it all went, but there was a lot more than met the eye in that bankruptcy courtroom. When Dennis was waging the battle against the phony lawsuit, somebody probably got to his highly regarded bankruptcy attorney, who suddenly could not utter a coherent sentence in the courtroom, as he “defended” Dennis. The same thing happened with Dennis’ [first attorney in Ventura](#). The judge was also probably influenced somehow, possibly by a straight bribe. With Dennis taken out of the picture, suddenly the judge saw the light, and he became skeptical of the claims made by the bankruptcy petitioners. Mr. Hit Man left the scene as fast as Dennis did, and he and his dupes had a “falling out.” They were left holding the bag, waging the lawsuit on their own. I doubt they ever figured out how they had been used, probably partly under the spell of mindless greed. Their so-called claims were laughable, without a shred of documentary support. Mr. Hit Man, who worked at Dennis’ company for about ten weeks, claimed that Dennis’ company owed him \$5000 in vacation pay. The claims by the other petitioners were even less substantial than his.

As I sat in the courtroom, listening to their senseless testimony about how Dennis’ company owed them so much money, the scene bordered on the surreal. The judge was probably working on the electric companies’ behalf, to even let such an obviously fraudulent lawsuit strangle Dennis’ company. Mr. Hit Man was on an evil mission, and had abandoned his dupes to their fate. My boss engineered the theft of Dennis’ company, while the new chairman of the board helped steal Dennis’ company as well as Mr. Financier’s. In the public seats were many people, including employees who wanted their back pay, and dealers like Reggie, who tried gutting Dennis’ company as it was dying. Reggie was rubbing his hands, hoping the company would be brought out of the phony bankruptcy so he could make a play of his own. There was a courtroom recess, and my controller-boss, his attorney and his group of thieves had a quick huddle, as they talked about strategy. Reggie eagerly left his seat in the audience and tried joining the huddle, and they turned on him, staring him down, asking him what the hell he thought he was doing. Reggie was excited and living in a delusional state, thinking that he was on the same team as the thieves, a notion they rudely disabused him of. When that day’s hearing was over, I said in awe to my “loyalist” friend, “It was like watching the sharks battle the piranha in there!” He noted that there were more than two groups making their plays in that courtroom, and it would have been more accurate to say it was the sharks versus the piranhas versus the barracudas versus the crocodiles. That day in that courtroom was one of my salient moments in my long process of disillusionment. The judge saw the light at last (wink, nudge). He not only threw out the bankruptcy case, he also recommended countersuing the pants off of those dupe petitioners.

[\[25\]](#) See Dennis Lee’s *The Alternative*, exhibit 3L.

[\[26\]](#) The fake angel dynamic is this: somebody shows up and announces that he is an angel. The angel says he will give you a reward, or save you, if you betray somebody (often giving an obviously trumped up rationale for doing so). After the betrayal, the reward either doesn’t materialize, or the angel then betrays the person who did his bidding. I saw the fake angel game played dozens of times during my adventures and for the research that went into making this web site. It usually works, as far as the “angel” getting what he wants.

[27] See Dennis Lee's *My Quest*, p. 162.

[28] See W. Wesley Swearingen's *FBI Secrets*, published in 1995.

[29] The [Jewish Holocaust of World War II](#) is a rich example of perpetrators, accomplices and victims, with scarcely a "hero" to be found. Another example is the "humanitarian" genocide that Belgium perpetrated in the Belgium Congo a century ago. Nearly a thousand Westerners had participated in the incipient genocide in the name of greed before the first person spoke up. Perhaps predictably, the person was George Washington Williams, an African-American. See Adam Hochschild's *King Leopold's Ghost*, p. 114. [John Perkins](#) is about the only "economic hit man" to go public with what his job was really all about.

The Next Section: [The Medical Racket](#) (777K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Observations, Opinions and Dilemmas

By Wade Frazier

Nearly a thirty-year journey finished with this web site's completion. Perhaps the most difficult part of writing this site was navigating between the personal and the objective. The purpose was telling the story of a young, idealistic boy who tried changing the world for the better, and what he discovered along the way, in the hope that some would find it useful. The purpose was not necessarily to tell an [objective tale](#) about the American past, for instance, but to tell [what I was taught about it](#), which is a different issue. Even though it was a personal journey, it dealt with planetary issues.

I began this project with little writing experience, although the talent runs in my family. It has been a long, arduous learning process. I do not feel very competent as a writer, and I even do some writing professionally (in the business realm). Getting out of my own way has been central to the process. I have been in my mid-life crisis since 2000. For several years I waited for it to arrive, listening for the doorbell, only to discover that it snuck in the back door. Mine is not worrying about my aging body, my fading looks or how my career and net worth are faring, but the notion that this thirty-year journey has been futile. I reached the second stage of my mid-life crisis on September 11, 2001, and it has been [agonizing ever since](#). All mid-life crises wrestle with delusions to a degree, and I still get to deal with mine. My [chief feature](#) is impatience; it has been a challenge to try overcoming it, and I am not there yet.

It is said that an artist's work is never finished, and that all artists look at their work with embarrassment after they create it, seeing a hundred ways they could have made it better. It has been continually that way for me as my work has taken shape since 1990. As of September 2002, this site presented about 80% of what I had envisioned for it, and I cannot look at a page without seeing a sentence that could have been better crafted, an observation that the reader could have done without, useful information to add and so forth. I may finish my site by 2010, but may never finish it in the way I originally envisioned.

The trend during the past several years has been making my writing less personal and more objective, although some readers have complained about that, wanting to hear "my voice" more. This site cannot please everybody. The [visions essay](#) is the gist and capstone of this site and my life's work. If enough people begin caring enough, heaven on earth is not far off. The nuts-and-bolts of making it happen are here or nearly so, but humanity is also flirting with making it hell on earth, or worse, with America leading the way. To have [two such diverse outcomes looming](#) can seem intriguing, but since I live here, I hope humanity begins waking up

to its potential before it is too late. For many people it is already too late, and there is not much to do but get ready to roast marshmallows over the dying embers of human civilization. It is not easy to be optimistic these days.

This site's writings have received a vast spectrum of feedback over the years. Some have called it "insane revisionism," others have compared it to the work of [Noam Chomsky](#), David Icke or Guy de Maupassant, while others have accused me of plagiarizing them or trying to rip off the public.

Everybody is entitled to their opinion, and opinions *do* matter, at least somewhat. Our awareness is all we take with us. I have taken nearly all feedback to my work seriously, and feedback has helped. Life can seem solipsistic when sitting at the computer for years on end. Every essay on this site has been somebody's favorite part of it. I am pleased to report that most feedback was of the decent and thoughtful variety, although the viciousness of the [attacks I received](#) (especially after the [World Trade Center attacks](#)) more than made up for the positive feedback I received. It was not worth it anymore to give the public easy access to me.

I cannot say what part of this site may be the "best" (or the "worst") but I *can* say what were the easiest, hardest, and the most and least fun parts to create. The most emotionally harrowing part to write was [my experiences](#) in [pursuing alternative energy](#) with Dennis Lee. I suffered from Post-Traumatic Stress Syndrome for years afterward, and will always be dealing with the aftermath. I am still putting my life back together. A great deal of the personal devastation I experienced is not written about on this site. I still do not want to rewrite my 1992 account of the [BPA Hit Man's](#) activities, although it has been slightly edited since then. I suspect that more effort went into the [medical essay](#) than any other, as well as its related [fluoridation essay](#), although the [American Empire](#) essay was probably the result of more reading than any other.

Writing the [visions](#) part of this site was probably the most fun I had, and I had to save it until the end, as it is this site's capstone. Writing the [spirit essay](#) was a relatively pleasant experience, and where my greatest interest lies. Most of the research done to create this web site felt like diving into a sewer everyday, and a continuous emotional toll has accompanied this long, grinding process. Finishing this site has been a great relief for several reasons. During 1999, I spent a few months researching and writing the first draft of my [war essay](#), and I still [drank then](#), and the daily process was reading and writing for several hours, then getting a six-pack (or more) of beer and drinking it. That essay covers territory that I do not want to revisit, although it is not complete and may never be. The last essay I wrote for my site as of December 2005 was on the [free energy conundrum](#). I hope that it might spark something with certain groups of activists, although I am not holding my breath.

I want to have fun; not study the dark side of our world. Until that dark side was understood, however, I doubted that realistic solutions to our problems were possible. That is why I did it.

This site is about living the harmless life, and focuses on *prevention*, and even if prevention fails (in America, it is virtually never even tried), violence is *never* an answer. The current [cancer paradigm](#) makes that clear. [Medical violence](#) is not the answer for failing to live healthily, but it sure makes a lot of money. Why sell people prevention by the ounce, when “cure” can be sold by the pound?

I doubt there is such a thing as objectivity. While I have tried to stick to the “facts” and keep my editorializing to a minimum, there are readers who want my opinion on various matters, particularly how I see events and the bigger picture. So, this essay will venture some of those views and will deal with mystical ideas I cannot “prove” to anybody. What follows are observations and opinions that some readers may find worth reading, while others will be happy that they are in a far corner of my work, out of the way.

I have never heard of a master denying that humans have souls. Also, no master has denied that souls come here more than once, in a concept loosely known as reincarnation, which not even the Biblical Jesus denied, since he stated that John the Baptist was Elijah’s reincarnation. [\[1\]](#) Although there is a big hole in the New Testament, with more than half of Jesus’ life missing, references to reincarnation survive. Reincarnation may not have been specifically removed from the Bible as many have stated, but the concept was so widely accepted in Jesus’ day that it was a non-issue. Jesus did not talk about it much, just as he did not talk about the sky being blue.[\[2\]](#)

Western materialist attempts to aver that Buddha denied reincarnation [are not convincing](#). Nobody need debate what ancient texts say. Recovering past-life memories is not difficult. I have led group regressions where everybody easily recovered a past life memory. When people [validate past life memories against historical information](#), which many have, doubts about reincarnation quickly fade. People cannot sincerely explore that subject before soon becoming overwhelmed with evidence of reincarnation, and the best evidence is for people to retrieve their own memories and validate them themselves. Then nobody can take away their *knowledge*. Far more convincing than the “knowledge” is the emotional resonance that comes with the memories. The emotional validation stays with people long after the historical facts have been unearthed.

We all live forever. Far better news than that, however, is that physical existence is creation’s most unpleasant plane. Most trans-physical dimensions experience conscious levels of God’s energy, love, that are truly unimaginable to earthly humans. Most accounts of the [human afterlife](#), significantly those retrieved during these days of sophisticated emergency medicine, when people [die and are revived](#), report feelings of love a million times more intense than anything felt on earth. I want to experience *that*, or as close as I can come to it, while I am here. I am less than happy that I live in a dimension so far removed from what is so obvious nearly everywhere else. That is the cruel part of being here, and sources I respect the most,

[Michael](#) among others, acknowledge how cruel earthly life is. All I can seemingly do while here is to try making this existence less cruel.

According to sources I respect, and I plan on validating their information with my own *experiences* before long, souls come to earth from [heavenly](#) and [hellish realms](#), and many places in-between, based on how they have been living. The motion pictures *Ghost* and *What Dreams May Come* are not very fictional, nor is *Star Trek*. While spiritual birds of a feather flock together on the other side, earth hosts many different levels of spiritual attainment. Some are on loan from heaven, more are on leave from hell, and most are middle-of-the-road souls just trying to get through life, and they usually end up in heaven's suburbs, and fairly quickly, [after they pass over](#).

Physical reality is where souls can make the most "progress." Progress to what? Why would we come here, if everyplace else seems so much better? Am I one of the foolish fallen ones? I wonder. I respect the notion that somehow I screwed up to get here. [Michael's](#) notion of leaving the Tao, or religious concepts of The Fall, or *The Course in Miracles'* author saying that this is not what the Creator intended, sounds good to me. So we messed up, or God did not put up good guardrails in Creation, and wayward souls ended up falling into duality and physical existence. If physical reality is a form of rehabilitation for lost and fallen souls, it makes sense. It is difficult to imagine a loving, just and intelligent creator whipping up physical reality, just to see what it was like. If that was the case, then this resident wants out, or at least a good peek at the bigger picture and what I came here to do.

When [Dannion Brinkley](#) had his spectacular NDE, he was told that humans were [mighty spiritual beings](#), among Creation's most courageous, coming to earth to help create with God. That theme can be found in many channeled works, among those having my highest respect, such as [Kryon](#) and [Zoosh](#). Lately (ever since the World Trade Center attacks), Kryon has been giving pep talks to his readers. Kryon, as with many others, says that earth is a unique experiment, and says things that can either be taken as arrogant or reason for hope, such as,

"Someday you'll understand that Earth is unique, the only place where God resides inside the biology called the Human Being."[\[3\]](#)

Zoosh says that humans are becoming the "Explorer Race," and that when we learn to solve our problems, we will help the rest of the universe do the same. [Barbara Marciniak's Pleiadians](#) says that many humans are here today to bust earth's systems, bring love back to physical reality and help seed the universe with it.

I have been dismayed by some post-9/11 channelings. I think there has been plenty of “channel distortion” lately, as the earthly personalities doing the channelings have been under stress. Some channelings have seemed quite naïve, while other times it seems that Pollyanna is being channeled. Maybe that is my mid-life crisis talking, but when a prominent channel said that Bush and gang [invaded Iraq](#) because Saddam Hussein was some kind of personification of evil, my respect for his work declined. That channel is Jewish, and that may have something to do with his Middle East channelings, or maybe he watches too much *Fox News*.

Whether those “cheer up” channelings are arrogant ravings or accurate observations, whether humans are soulless bags of chemicals or creation’s idiots, falling into duality and earthly experience because they gave away their free will and experienced The Fall,[\[4\]](#) and humans are either among Creations’ most derelict souls or among its bravest, the answer to *all* those possible realities is clear: *love is the only answer worth contemplating*.

Even if all the [mystical stuff](#) is hogwash, love is obviously the best of all possible feelings, and the one that most would want to experience as often as possible. By love, I do not mean the highly conditional love that Christians often sparingly dole out to other Christians (or even only to those of their particular sect), or the romantic lust people feel and call it love, or the “tough love” that parades as love these days, but the unconditional love that Jesus spoke of *and lived*, the love that loves the enemy and can raise the dead, the love that forgave Judas, even as Judas betrayed him, and the love that was behind Jesus asking his god to forgive his murderers, for they were blind. The love of a Gandhi, who blessed his murderer even as he fell from his bullets, is the kind of love I mean.

People who are pacifists for purely ethical reasons, peacefully living the Golden Rule simply because it is the right thing to do, may be the most advanced souls of all. Only by caring for each other can the [optimistic visions](#) come to pass. As [Neale Donald Walsh’s](#) god said, what is required is a revolution in consciousness. Nothing else will do it. No ideological system can, no technology can, no trick can, except awakening the human heart; the mind will then follow and our blindness will end. Others argue that the head needs to wake up first, and then the heart will follow. Some are head people, and others are heart people, but the [hells](#) of the astral plane are filled with brilliant people. I want my heart in charge, not my head, while I will not deny that there is an interaction, and one can help the other. As far as I have seen, however, love is queen, and the mind but a prince, and one that readily goes astray without the queen’s guidance.

There are many bodies of mystical material that describe humanity’s spiritual state, and Michael’s concept of [soul ages](#) is common. No age is better than any other, although the younger ages are the most self-centered ones, just as children are usually the most [self-centered](#) humans. Younger souls thereby incur the largest burdens of negative karma, which

they spend their later lives paying back. Nobody likes being called a Baby Soul, so I will use a soul-stage concept, using stages one through seven to correspond to Michael's soul age concept, where [stage-one](#) equals Infant Soul, and stage-seven equals Infinite Soul.

Michael's emotional detachment and seemingly sterile observations, where he observes that if [humans destroy their planet](#), they will “merely” find another suitable life form (probably without the means to manipulate its environment), and continue their evolutionary journey, can be unsettling. Even with such non-judgmental detachment, Michael admits that the evolutionary process *is* one way, and love is the greatest goal while in physical reality; the love that accepts everybody just as they are, which Michael calls agape.

Similar to Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs, stage-one souls are into survival. Stage-two souls believe in following rules. Stage-three souls believe that winning is *everything*. Stage-four souls explore their emotions, and stage-five souls are into love and acceptance. Each stage can choose love or fear, although earlier stages are more vulnerable to fear and being locked into their negative [overleaves](#), such as the warrior who coerces rather than persuades, the king who plays tyrant instead of master, the pragmatist who is dogmatic instead of practical, the soul exploring aggression who is belligerent rather than dynamic, and the idealist whose perspective is naïve rather than integrative.^[5] Michael says that the physical plane's great hazards “trip up” most souls, and in only about a third of its lifetimes will an older soul manifest its true stage of development. The United States is a stage-three culture, and stage-five souls usually fall prey to a stage-three culture's conditioning, and rarely manifest their stage-five soul awareness, with their life's goal being winning more than loving.

Religious fanatics, [nationalist flag-wavers](#) and many others from the political right are operating from stage-two soul awareness. Nationalism is a form of false consciousness, generally used to herd and control people, something obvious to [Orwell](#) and others. As the United States began acting more at variance with its founding ideals, [ideologists began concocting symbol-worship](#). Just as America completed one of history's greatest genocides, it [began worshipping the American flag](#) and [pledging allegiance to it](#). The use of flag worship, Bible worship and other idolatry was largely stage-three ruthlessness used to manipulate stage-two inexperience. The people running the White House, corporate America, and other parts of world's power structure often (if not predominately) operate from the negative pole of stage-three awareness, and humanity today is at the cusp between stages three and four, which Michael says is the greatest transition that any ensouled species makes, as it turns the corner from the outward journey to the inward journey. Michael says that a third of time an ensouled species does not “turn the corner,” but instead destroys itself, a third of the time by warfare and two-thirds of the time by destroying its environment.

America's radical left is largely operating from stage-four awareness. Although they often manifest the emotional depth typical of their stage, and have mostly rejected America's triune

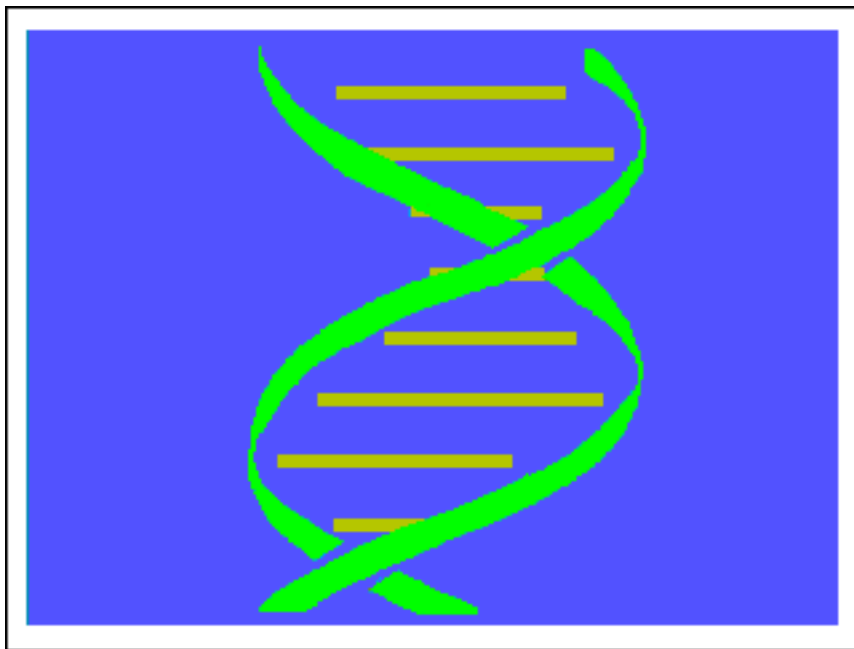
faith of capitalism, nationalism and organized religion, they still largely wear stage-three's materialistic blinders, which keeps them locked into the [Zero-Sum Game](#). They often believe their mission is mainly about tackling the corporations, governments and others abusing their power. They have yet to realize it is power *those abusers have been given*. Protestors of abuse by the powerful are mostly addressing evil's branches, not its root, and their ideology (believing in "structural analysis" to the extent they have knee-jerk rejections of the idea of [conscious manipulation of the system](#)), has helped blind them to the [possibilities of free energy](#), why it is suppressed, and how they can truly be an agent of change. They can open their eyes to a paradigm of abundance and love that few can imagine today. They also believe in violence as a solution.[\[6\]](#) They are so *close* to "getting" it, and this web site is partly aimed at them.

The mystical community is trying to bring stage-five awareness into play, and that they are [mostly women](#) is no accident. There can be naïveté and other problems in that community, and most mystical charlatans are men.[\[7\]](#) I am always suspicious when a man channels, "sometimes, you just need to kill people."[\[8\]](#) So, when is that? I prefer what [Seth says about the subject](#) to what any man channels about it. Male hormones can get in the way, and Jesus' temple tantrum shows that even masters are susceptible to its seductions.

If "Utopia" comes into being, it does not mean that all of humanity's problems disappear, or stage-two souls instantly become stage-five souls, but everybody can begin operating from the positive poles more often (operating from love). Desperate people do desperate things, and then operate from their negative overleaves, even seemingly frozen into them. If we eliminate human desperation, a lot will *immediately* change.

For those who think life is all about survival, *everybody* dying is not a success. For those who think that life is all about following the rules, whose rules? Rules drilled into our heads by rote so we could be controlled, or rules we discovered by our *experience*? How about [the rule of love](#)? For those who think life is all about winning, what kind of prize is it if everybody loses? What if *everybody* won? For those who think life is an intense emotional trip, how about if our lives were a trip of intense love?

About the only flag worth rallying around is the one below, courtesy of Alice Weiss.



It is the life flag. Every being with DNA can salute it, and honor every other creature with DNA as a fellow traveler.

[Real wealth](#) is health, cleanliness, pure and alive food, a secure and healthy environment, happiness, free time, etc. Gold is fool's wealth, a [mere symbol of it](#). Amassing piles of toys or "capital" is on one hand slightly less foolish, but also can be the [ticket to hell](#), and is quickly destroying the planet. To possess *nothing*, but to have use of whatever is *needed*, is an ideal that the "primitive" natives lived that the [European explorers encountered](#), and how the people depicted on *Star Trek* live. The ideas put forth in the [optimistic visions](#) can take humanity's real wealth to levels economists cannot begin putting numbers on. Such a transition would collapse many economic card houses, where *assumptions* of [greed](#) and [scarcity](#) simply evaporated. Rockefeller's [University of Chicago](#) would become unrecognizable, and might also vanish. The [Zero-Sum Game](#) would end, and humanity would begin to understand true abundance, which begins in the heart.

The best solution to toxic waste is to not create it in the first place. In the [optimistic visions](#), there would be no creation of toxic wastes, and what little might be created in intermediate steps can be easily isolated in safe environments and combined or reduced back into harmless substances. There would be no fluoride ions introduced to the environment, no persistent organic pollutants, no radioactive materials, and so forth. An intelligent and loving chemistry would be practiced, not the greed-driven and spiritually blind chemistry of today.

Creating and joining hierarchies may be how humanity lost its divine awareness and took The Fall. Hierarchical social, political and economic structures are a [dark path student's](#) dream, where the lever over it all is the coveted prize. The steeper the hierarchy, the more the dark path folks like it. That [hellish world Roads visited](#) was steeply hierarchical, literally, with those

at the food's chain's apex living in the penthouse. Today's world, where a Bill Gates has more "wealth" than that of 100 million of his fellow countrymen combined, is the wonder of [capitalism](#) and a dark path triumph. Native American societies, such as the stage-five [Iroquois culture](#), had little hierarchy, and no one person was vested with much "power." Their form of government became the model for the U.S. Constitution, but inventing the executive branch was the monarchical Europeans' first and greatest corruption of the Iroquoian system, and the executive branch has been the primary vehicle of undermining the American government. One way to tell if America really begins maturing is when it abolishes the executive branch altogether. Corporations are also steeply hierarchical institutions, and their abolition (or a radical redesign of them, making them vehicles of service of Creation, not as servants of greed and exploitation) will be more evidence that humanity is growing up. Ideologists have labored long and hard to make corporations and governments seem forces of nature, and as unchangeable, but they are human-constructed systems, often designed to exploit the many in favor of the few. They can be *reconstructed* or *deconstructed* as well.

There are no hierarchies in heaven, and nobody rules there. [Zoosh](#) says that the being Christians call Archangel Michael prefers to be known as Uncle Mike, and he likes putting his feet up on the table at gatherings of his pals. Yes, he may be "older," vaster and grander than earthly souls, but Uncle Mike would never say he was better, nor would he want to be "in charge."

The [full vision](#) would have perfect environments to grow crops, mostly fruit that would be eaten live. Human waste would be recycled, and not like the Chinese night-soil method, but in a way that would be as clean as everything else in that potential world. Human crops would have everything they needed to grow perfectly, and human love directed toward plants would be part of what those plants thrived off of. Creating a healthy and nutrient-rich [vegetarian](#) diet would be child's play in that potential world. There might be *some* need for artificially "fixing" nitrogen from the atmosphere, as a raw material for plants and microscopic organisms to use, but the awesome pollution seen today, such as the huge "[dead zones](#)" in the oceans, would not accompany that process. Soils would not be destroyed, nor would they blow and wash to the oceans as they have for the past several thousand years. The world's soil levels, one of the greatest measures of real wealth on earth, would increase greatly, and could support a myriad of life even greater than existed before the rise of domesticated humans.

The [housing industry](#) as known today would disappear. There can be artistry in creating dwellings that make Robert Jordan's vision of Tar Valon appear tame and unimaginative.[9] Dwellings could last thousands of years, or be completely recycled, with zero environmental impact. Imagine swimming pools with ninety-degree water, distilled and continually being recirculated and purified. Every home could have one, with a robotic lifeguard, among its other functions.

With free energy and an awakening of the human heart, those realities are not far off. In the

future worlds that [Wambach](#)'s subjects saw, there was even a community that stopped eating. Touching a musical disk every day gave those people all the energy they needed. Beyond electron energy is the healthier photon energy (the energy of light), and technology can literally become alive at some stage of our awakening. There is plenty of channeled material that speculates along the lines of this site's vision, and some has influenced me somewhat, although most of [my vision](#) is simply the fruit of pondering the possibilities of free energy for nearly thirty years, and what it could catalyze.

For instance, in the [Alexander](#) material, some of the communication revolution's possibilities were discussed. There can be interplay of technology and consciousness, where one assists the other. That [heavenly world](#) Roads saw was like that. As the human heart opens, so will the abilities of human consciousness. Telepathic abilities are already returning. Alexander says that communications technology can assist that evolution, and people could have a chip in their heads that can be part of a global communication system, linking everybody to everybody. It would not be subject to Big Brother control, but a tool of an awakened humanity, something to be discarded as our full telepathic abilities return. Language was invented when humans lost their mind-to-mind communication abilities. As with those [two worlds Roads saw](#), high-tech can be used for good or evil. I would not want anybody putting a chip in my head in a nation that [George Bush the Second](#) ran, but in an awakened humanity, I might sign up. Also, I do not trust any of today's [genetic "engineering,"](#) because the heart is not in charge in today's world.

Paddy McMahon channeled a version of Utopia in his *The Grand Design* series.^[10] In that vision, earthly Utopia began in a small nation that formed from stage-five souls, which created a political entity that does not exist today, of a few million people. They had no weapons; they raised the world's healthiest food and showed the rest of humanity what was possible. The vision given McMahon was about a generation into our future (after the big karmic blowout that may be just around the corner, which I hope as many survive as possible). That Utopian culture was largely vegetarian, as [carnivorism and violence are directly related](#). Humanity began realizing what was possible through their example. Evil-minded people simply could not handle the "vibe" there, which is why truly enlightened beings never need weapons. Our so-called "[space brothers](#)" from nearby star systems have defensive technology, but it is truly defensive, not adhering to the human adage that the best defense is a good offense. If beings come at them with hostile intent, their defensive technology does stuff like put the assailants to sleep. Then they wake up with their weapons gone. Also, love the enemy *works*. Those on the [dark path](#) have no idea how powerful love is.

The dark path folks *want* the so-called light workers to fight them. The simple act of seeing them as bad guys and wanting to fight them already makes the dark path team the winners, as it immediately adopts the victim paradigm. If humanity stopped being [such easy meat](#) and simply woke up to our own divinity, the dark path gang could no longer play their games, and

they would go away (and some might even abandon the dark path and seek rehabilitation).

If Americans choose to wake up they can help bring the world of this site's vision into being, and far beyond it, and soon. It cannot happen as long as people refuse to accept responsibility for their lives, playing the victim. People have karma, families have karma, and even nations. [America's karma](#) is dark and heavy, and the [World Trade Center attacks](#) were relatively gentle compared to what may be coming. The ethical bankruptcy of George Bush the First, [self-righteously defending mass murder](#), is not the kind of behavior that will bring a healed world into being. A sign of America's growing maturity will be when we face up to our vast crimes and seek to repair the damage. This site's vision is something that Americans are in a better position than anybody else on earth to begin to make happen. There are not yet death squads roaming American streets to wipe out people such as me, as they have done in [American client states for generations](#). Americans have to do little more today than just be willing to wake up, realize they have been lied to since their cradles, throw that garbage out, begin finding their inner strength and live by their hearts and the truth. Everything is easier said than done, but Americans are uniquely blessed in many ways, and are in the best position to begin turning earth into a true paradise.

There is an enlightened way to balance karma, and an unenlightened way that can lead to further rounds of agony. There does not have to be an Armageddon. Karma can be balanced in positive ways, not in eye-for-an-eye fashion. In this [site's vision](#), all Americans need to do is stop raping humanity and the planet, put their flags away and think a little, and they can embrace free energy and a host of wonders. *Everybody* can win. Then Americans can create a real Peace Corps, not the [neocolonial](#) tool that the [Peace Corps](#) partly is today. If America gets its act together, it can truly lead the world by its example, not by its murderous bullying and thievery. With our dark history, most people of other nations have little reason to trust our nation's motivation. If the peoples of other nations *invite us to*, encouraged by our new mature and responsible behavior, then we can perhaps help them attain what we may accomplish. It will take a long time of truly good works to change the view the world justifiably has of the United States. America is despised for good reason, with history and current dynamics that all the [flag-waving](#) can never completely hide. That can change, but it depends on *our* behavior. We are not so different from anybody else. Humans have far more in common than they do differences.

One paradox of today's world, and it has been this way for a while, is that the people who can least afford to raise children are the ones having them. Africa, Latin America and Asia have the world's highest birth rates, while Europe, North America, Japan and Australia have the world's lowest. Why is that? The colonial dynamic easily explains it. When the colonial powers [raped the world](#) they commandeered most of earth's humanly available resources. The subject peoples, for those who were not simply exterminated and their continents taken from them, have suffered from severe privation ever since. In the imperial world, children are seen differently than in the colonized world. In America for instance, children are a big

economic investment for no payoff (parents no longer live with their children when they get old, or use them as farmhands), so people have children for reasons other than economic gain and security. Most of the industrialized world has birth rates below population replacement rates. In the colonized world however, the long grind of [colonial](#) and [neocolonial](#) exploitation has rendered them so impoverished that children are the only assets they can enjoy; being exploitable labor when young, and pension plans when the parents get old.

An awakened humanity might decide that a billion people are all that should be on earth, or perhaps fifteen billion people living lightly on the earth is desired so as many souls can evolve as possible, in as positive an environment as possible. If the colonized peoples get away from the ragged edge of survival, they will no longer be *motivated by desperation* to have children. Children can be cherished for who they are, not seen as exploitable assets.

With love, anything is possible, and vistas we *cannot imagine* today can come into view. The future we will experience is up to each one of us, and will develop from what we *do* today. We all possess tremendous power to change our world for the better. Will we use it?

Peace.

Footnotes

[1] See the gospel of Matthew.

[2] See David Moore's *The Christian Conspiracy*, for instance.

[3] See Kryon, given through Lee Carroll, *Sedona Journal of Emergence*, September 2002, p. 30.

[4] See Paddy McMahon's *The Grand Design* for more on that idea.

[5] For an easy-to-read table of the positive and negative aspects of overleaves and roles, see José Steven's *Earth to Tao*, p. 254.

[6] The radical left usually subscribes to Enlightenment ideals and generally believes in materialism, with deism about as spiritual as any of them get, [David Edwards](#) being an encouraging exception to that rule. Consequently, [Howard Zinn](#), [Noam Chomsky](#), Michael Albert, Ward Churchill and others in my Pantheon of great souls all believe in violence. It is not their first answer by any means, but they all believe in its power to do good, to counter the "bad guys." Churchill and his co-writer sounded like

Machiavelli in finishing their *The COINTELPRO Papers*, where the FBI's evils were laid bare, by writing, "Under the circumstances, the FBI and its allies must be combated by all means available, and *by any means necessary*." See Churchill and Vander Wall's *The COINTELPRO Papers*, p. 328. Once the materialistic blinders are shed, violence can be seen for what it ultimately is: *an attack on ourselves*. We *all* reap what we sow.

[7] I was recently asked if I knew of even *one* man in the mystical community who did not use his power and position to have sex with women seekers, make a pile of cash at the expense of others, or other abuses of his positions and "powers." I had to think long and hard, and the few I thought *might* have made the grade I did not know very well. The New Age community is more than 80% women, and the few men there, if they are not *very* strange, have alternative hairstyles, mystical jewelry and other trappings; few can hold down a job, and the most accomplished often use women in the way that hummingbirds flit from flower to flower, sampling the garden. I have seen countless women look high and low for "enlightened" men in the "movement," and virtually all become bitterly disappointed when their search comes up empty.

[8] Neale Donald Walsch and Paddy McMahon have channeled variations on that theme.

[9] See his *Wheel of Time* series, particularly *The Great Hunt*, chapter 18.

[10] See McMahon's *The Grand Design*, esp. pp. 166-201, in volume 2.

The Next Section: [Links](#) (42K)

[Return to My Home Page](#) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)

Paul Bragg's Tarnished Legacy

By Wade Frazier

May 2007

[Introduction](#)

[Bragg's Claims – His Health Advice](#)

[Bragg's Claims – His Life's Story](#)

[The Documentary Evidence](#)

[Conclusion](#)

[Footnotes](#)

Introduction

When I was twelve, my father [discovered a booklet that saved his life](#), which prescribed a live food diet to reverse hardening of the arteries, and it did. That booklet was later [banned in the United States](#). When I was seventeen, my father brought home a book that prescribed a holistic health regimen that was based on live food, pure water, exercise, sunshine and fasting. The book was Paul Bragg's magnum opus, *The Miracle of Fasting*. It was generally my final influence in matters of holistic health.

I [recently encountered allegations](#) that [Bragg lied about his age](#), claiming that he was fourteen years older than he actually was. I was shocked, but it resolved several aspects of Bragg's life's story that made me wonder over the years. In addition, I had doubts about how his legacy was being handled.

Bragg's Claims – His Health Advice

When I first read *The Miracle of Fasting* in 1975, Paul Bragg was still alive and living in Hawaii. He died the next year. There are two lines of Bragg's claims that this essay will address:

1. The validity of the health regimen that Bragg promoted;
2. The validity of his life story, which he used as proof that his regimen worked.

The validity of Bragg's regimen, in light of what appear to be fabrications about this past, should only be verified by independent means, and is somewhat beyond the scope of this essay, but not entirely. As I recently reread parts of *The Miracle of Fasting*, much is consistent with alternative and (increasingly) mainstream health literature, as well as with the personal experiences of others and myself.

I began a [fasting regimen](#) after reading *The Miracle of Fasting*, but abandoned Bragg's water fasting advice after six years, and have done juice fasts ever since. Other parts of Bragg's regimen did not work for me. One of the Bragg Empire's bestselling products is Bragg Liquid Aminos, which is essentially soy juice. I had some about twenty years ago, got sick from it, and have never had it since. I dare not even consume soy sauce.

To revisit the [booklet that saved my father's life](#), live food is obviously what all animals are designed to eat, including humans. Humanity's ancestors began evolutionary adaptations as [they left the trees and learned to walk erect](#). The dietary adaptations of the [hunter-gatherer lifestyle were highly significant](#), including the addition of more flesh and cooking food. The [Domestication Revolution](#) introduced radical changes in the human health regimen, including the development of seed and root crops and milk products, sedentary living, new diseases and the beginning of economic, political and social hierarchies – in short, civilization. The [Industrial Revolution](#) introduced even greater divergence from our evolutionary heritage, and obesity has become epidemic in the West. Americans are [history's fattest and most sedentary humans](#), with two-thirds of us dying of easily preventable degenerative diseases, with arterial disease and cancer being the most prominent.

Bragg was far from alone in advocating live food, fasting and exercise as preventives and cures for civilization's diseases. Bragg's most impressive pupil is [Jack La Lanne](#), who is ninety-two years old today and still vigorously exercises and weight trains for two hours each morning and strikes muscleman poses. If Bragg was not living proof of the validity of exercise and nutrition, La Lanne is.

I first read about [how fluoride was a poison](#) by reading Bragg's *The Shocking Truth about Water*. I have largely consumed purified water for the past thirty years, being very strict in my late teens, when I went years without drinking tap water.

The water fasting, sunshine, vinegar, soy juice and other aspects of Bragg's regimen I have my doubts about. They may have validity, but people should independently investigate such health practices, and in fact [all health practices](#), both orthodox and alternative, to see what works best for them.

Bragg's Claims – His Life's Story

Bragg made a set of claims to support his health advice's validity, which comprise this essay's central focus. The story repeatedly told in Paul Bragg's books and interviews, and promoted by Patricia Bragg for many years, is related below.

Bragg was born in 1881 and raised on the family homestead in Virginia.^[1] His great grandfather was Confederate Civil War General Braxton Bragg.^[2] Bragg said that his diet was "terrible," with about 90% of it coming from a frying pan.^[3] At age sixteen, Bragg developed tuberculosis. After being given four months to live by his doctors, Bragg was taken by his nurse to the Swiss tuberculosis clinic founded and run by Dr. August Rollier. Bragg was cured by Rollier's treatment, which was based on live food, sunshine, fasting and exercise, with many health miracles attending his recovery. Bragg then devoted his life to what cured him and became a real-life superman. He was able to help his sister, Louise, attain glowing health after she had been sickly for her entire life. She then led a "fairy-tale" existence after Paul improved her health with his regimen.^[4] He wrestled in the Olympics in 1908 and 1912, fought in all the major battles of World War I, played tennis with Teddy Roosevelt and taught Teddy's sons boxing, met most of the U.S. presidents since then, and founded the first American health food store in Los Angeles in 1912.^[5]

Bragg then became the health consultant to the stars, with clients such as Gloria Swanson, Zsa Zsa Gabor, Clint Eastwood and Elizabeth Taylor. In his later years, his daughter Patricia was his assistant. Bragg moved to Hawaii in the 1960s and promoted his longevity, saying that he planned to live to be 120 years old. He swam and exercised for hours each day, and was living proof of his regimen's validity. There are many newspaper articles on Bragg in his later years.^[6] In them, Bragg makes many claims, including his 1881 birthday.

Six months before he died, Bragg was injured in a drowning incident in Hawaii. His health declined after the incident, while he kept up his speaking tours. While in Miami on tour, he collapsed and died of a heart attack on December 7, 1976, at age ninety-five.^[7] On his death certificate, on which Patricia Bragg is listed as the informant, Paul's birthday is documented as February 6, 1881, and his state of birth as Virginia.^[8]

That is quite a story. Unfortunately, recent research into Bragg's past reveals that very little of

the above story appears to be true.

The Documentary Evidence

I began having nagging doubts about Bragg's legacy when I read some Bragg Empire literature published not long after he died. When Bragg was still alive, I read an article about him in *People* magazine, published in about 1976. Bragg was asked at what age sexual activity ended, and he replied, "You'll have to ask somebody else, because I am only ninety-five." In the early 1980s, I read a reproduction of that article published by the Bragg Empire. That memorable quote instead read, "You'll have to ask somebody else, because I am ageless." The pictures that Bragg produced of himself in his books showed somebody who looked remarkably young for his age, perhaps *too* remarkably young. In a picture that Bragg said was taken in 1932 in Los Angeles, he looked like a Greek god, a deeply tanned, muscle-bound man in his thirties, although he was allegedly in his fifties.^[9] Pictures like that were impressive evidence that Bragg's regimen worked, turning himself from a dying tuberculosis victim into a superman. In pictures from his books, taken in his last years, the photos appeared to have been airbrushed, to presumably give him a more youthful appearance.

Patricia Bragg, who calls herself Paul's daughter, began using the word "crusade" to describe Paul's life's work. I did not recall Paul ever using that term while alive, but Patricia said "crusade" in his obituary, so maybe Paul called it that, but virtually all of the books I have, some published when Paul was alive, do not mention the word "crusade," although there is plenty of Bible-quoting in them. It appears that Patricia began using the term "Bragg Crusades" in the books around a decade after Paul died. Also, Patricia would imply in updated versions of Paul's books, published years after his death, that he was still alive. Patricia has disguised her age for many years.

Recently, researchers have investigated Bragg's claims and have located census records, Bragg's draft card, immigration records and numerous newspaper articles, stretching from 1913 to his death in 1976. In light of the documentation, very few of Bragg's life's story claims appear genuine. According to the U.S. Census of 1900, Paul C. Bragg was born in Indiana in February 1895, [not in Virginia in 1881](#).^[10] See the image below.



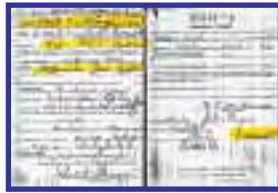
Click on image to enlarge

In the 1910 U.S. census, Bragg's birthplace of Indiana and birth year of 1895 is repeated.^[11]



Click on image to enlarge

When this information came to light, some challenged it, suggesting that it was a different Paul C. Bragg. Below is Bragg's 1917 draft card, signed by Bragg himself. Bragg presents his birthday as February 6, 1895, in Batesville, Indiana, and his profession as a life insurance salesman.[\[12\]](#)



Click on image to enlarge

Bragg's application for his social security number has also been obtained. It is reproduced below, and I have redacted his Social Security number from it.[\[13\]](#)



Click on image to enlarge

The signatures on the draft card and Social Security Number Application are virtually identical to the signature in Bragg's books. See a comparison, below. It is the same Paul C. Bragg.



Click on image to enlarge

On the draft card, Bragg wrote that he had been a private in the National Guard for the previous three years, and he requested exemption from the trenches in World War I, citing his dependent wife. His story about being in all the [“major battles” of World War I](#) seems doubtful.

Bragg's birth certificate has been discovered on microfilm in a public library in Batesville,

Indiana, where Bragg's [draft card](#) indicates he was born. The birth certificate confirms Bragg's 1895 birthday, and the [birth certificate's details](#) are presented at this footnote.[\[14\]](#) His birth was also announced in the local paper.[\[15\]](#)

It appears that Paul Bragg began lying about his age in the 1920s, when he began crafting his image as a health guru whose youthfulness was evidence of his message's validity.

Paul's heritage has been traced to Indiana since the mid-1800s, when his great grandfather, Andrew Bragg (not [Braxton](#)), moved there from Tennessee not long before Paul's grandfather, James H. Bragg, was born.[\[16\]](#) The "[family homestead in Virginia](#)" claim appears false. Paul's father was not a farmer, but a printer who worked for the U.S. government and moved to Washington D.C., where Paul was raised, in about 1898.

Paul's claim of being [cured of tuberculosis](#) at [August Rollier's](#) Swiss clinic also conflicts with his claim of being born in 1881. Rollier [founded his clinic in Leysin, Switzerland in 1903](#), which is about five years after Paul would have allegedly been cured there. Rollier was an MD born in 1874, so would have been only 24 years old when he treated Paul, if Paul's tale is true – a bit young to be an MD founding a clinic.

Paul began making the news as early as 1913, when he allegedly rescued two men from drowning. Not long after the rescue incidents, Paul left his home in Washington, D.C. and passed through Indiana on the way to a short-lived job in Missouri. In September 1913, Paul Bragg came to Indianapolis and bet \$1,000 that he could outwrestle anybody in his weight class. He was reported as being eighteen at the time.[\[17\]](#)

At age eighteen, instead of recovering from tuberculosis and learning to fast under Dr. Rollier's instruction, Bragg was rescuing drowning victims and challenging all comers to a wrestling match. There is also no record of Paul in the East Coast U.S. immigration archives during those years. It appears that Bragg may have never had tuberculosis, and so was never treated at the Swiss clinic for TB.

Where an eighteen-year-old boy could get \$1,000 in 1913 to bet on his wrestling skill is another mystery. In 1918, at the peak of World War I industrial activity, [American family income was about \\$1,500](#) and U.S. government workers made an average of \$0.49 per hour, up from \$0.28 in 1901. To have \$1,000 to wager (which was probably more than his father's income for the entire year) on his wrestling prowess is impressive, but in light of these revelations, I doubt he had the money to wager. Paul's claim of [founding the first health food store in Los Angeles in 1912](#) also appears unlikely, as does a different claim, when Bragg said he founded the store in New York City in 1912.

Bragg was apparently an accomplished wrestler and swimmer, but in 1908 he was only

thirteen years old – a little young to make the [Olympic team](#). According to the available records, Bragg was not on the 1908 or 1912 Olympic teams.[\[18\]](#)

None of the genealogical investigation performed so far has discovered any record of [Paul having a sister](#); he appears to have been one of three boys born to his parents, although his mother was in a marriage previous to the one in which she gave birth to Paul, so Paul may have had some half-siblings. However, according to Paul's story of his sister's health miracle, it happened soon after Paul's stint at Rollier's clinic, which we now know is probably a fictional event. Paul's sister might well have led a "fairy-tale" existence.

After his National Guard and life insurance salesman days, Paul became the physical director of the Frederick, Maryland YMCA in 1919, where he worked for a year. He was twenty-five years old when he resigned, apparently partly due to the YMCA's financial difficulties. For the next decade, the documentary trail is a bit sketchy at this time, but newspaper articles say that he moved around between South Carolina, New York and California, and apparently took a couple of trips to Polynesia in the early 1930s. In an interview in the *Dallas Morning News*, on April 12, 1929, Bragg gives his age as 49. He was really 34. His given age of 49 was not even consistent with his alleged 1881 year of birth. Paul also had some trouble with the authorities, as well as patients who sued him.[\[19\]](#)

From 1929 onward, Bragg kept to the story of his 1881 birthday until he died, unless he was dealing with American officials.[\[20\]](#) Patricia Bragg is *not* Paul's [daughter](#). Patricia is Paul's *former daughter in-law*. Paul's son Robert E. Bragg married Patricia Pendleton. Patricia was born in Alameda County, California, on April 29, 1929. In 1955, Robert and Patricia divorced, the divorce being final in 1956.[\[21\]](#)

This is not the only instance of American health pioneers having inflated claims of age. Many sources have claimed that Norman Walker, a juice fasting pioneer, lived to be well over one hundred years old. Recent research showed him to be [ninety-nine when he died](#), a ripe old age, to be sure, but far less than the claims made for him. In addition, some of Walker's claims regarding his credentials are dubious, such as the number of autopsies he attended and the degrees that he held.

Conclusion

Throughout Bragg's literature, he called himself a "life extension specialist." Lying about one's age is one way to "extend" one's life, but it is a fraudulent method of amassing life-extension credentials. Throughout Bragg's many publications, the author's biography began with, "Paul C. Bragg is himself the best testimonial for the value of his teachings." Today, that claim

appears ironic. The author's biography I am citing then stated what feats of endurance he was still capable of, even though he had been dead for several years when that edition of his booklet was published.[\[22\]](#)

In light of this essay's information, it is legitimate to question everything about Bragg's health advice, as well as his life's story. Many of the miraculous healing events that he cited in his own life, such as being [cured of TB](#) or passing mercury at his family homestead, do not jibe with when and where he was in those days. Did Bragg even fast all that much? He still looked pretty good at age eighty, but not *that* good. How much of his image was genuine? Did people following Bragg's advice damage their health? While the message may have been worthy, the messenger was dubious.

Bragg's apparently crafted a saleable life's story from *some* fact and large doses of fantasy. Being a life insurance salesman during World War I seemed an appropriate profession for him, as [the entire industry was viewed as a scam](#) in those days. I was raised in Southern California and worked in Los Angeles for five years. About half of my friends in LA were either in the entertainment business, used to be in it, or were trying to break into it. In LA, everybody wants to be somebody, people adopt stage names and forget their pasts, or invent more marketable ones. For Bragg to gravitate to LA, making a name for himself as a "life extension specialist," with fabricated credentials, is a typical Hollywood story. On a side note, while the California medical authorities were [persecuting genuine alternative cancer doctors](#), Bragg received a free ride. I [saw a similar dynamic](#) during my free energy days.

Bragg's books continue to be sold today, as the Bragg Empire barrels along. I see little potential harm and great potential benefit from the regimen that Paul promoted, but Bragg's lies were greater than little white ones. *Caveat Emptor*.

Footnotes

[\[1\]](#) His claims about being raised on the family "homestead" in Virginia are many. See, for instance, Paul Bragg's *The Miracle of Fasting*, 1976 edition, p. 64, 78.

[\[2\]](#) See William Helton's "Bragg's Motto: to rest is to rust" in Honolulu's *Sunday Star-Bulletin & Advertiser*, August 24, 1969.

[\[3\]](#) See Paul Bragg's *The Miracle of Fasting*, 1976 edition, chapter 3, p. 28.

[\[4\]](#) See Paul Bragg's *The Miracle of Fasting*, 1976 edition, chapter 17, pp. 102-103.

[5] Those stories are found throughout articles written on Bragg before he died. On his founding America's first health food store in 1912, see Ron Staton's "Bragg Could Brag About His Fitness," *Honolulu Star-Bulletin*, p. A-17, November 29, 1972.

[6] See also: Dave Koga's "Nonagenarian Has Lots to "Bragg" About," *Honolulu Star Bulletin*, May 6, 1975; Alston Vizzini's "Bragg and his diet are tied to be fit," *Honolulu Advertiser*, April 6, 1972.

[7] See *The Miami Herald*, p. 10-B, December 10, 1976.

[8] The State of Florida's Department of Health and Rehabilitative Statistics issued the death certificate, file number 76-084611, and it presents the same Social Security number that is on Paul's [1949 application](#). It can be obtained by contacting the Florida Department of Health.

[9] See Paul Bragg's *The Miracle of Fasting*, 1976 edition, chapter 22, p. 121.

[10] The census records are in the public domain, and can be obtained from the U.S. government, through The National Archives.

[11] Spence M. Grayson enumerated that census record, on April 19, 1910.

[12] A copy of the public domain draft card can also be obtained through The National Archives.

[13] A copy of the public domain social security number application can be obtained from the U.S. Social Security Administration.

[14] Below is the information obtained from Paul Bragg's birth certificate, which has the same birthday and birthplace information that is on Bragg's [draft card](#).

Child of this mother: 2

Sex: M

Color: W

Date of Birth: Feb 6, 1895

Place of birth: Ripley county

Born alive: yes

Legitimate: yes

Natural Labor: yes

Difficult Labor: no

Mother's Maiden Name: Carrie J. Chappies

Mother's age: 29

Fathers name: Robert E. Bragg

Father's age: 29

Father's occupation: Printer

Fathers place of birth: US

By whom return is made: J.R. Davies

Post Office address: Batesville

[15] See the *Batesville Tribune*, February 14, 1895, p.1, under the local news heading, which reads, "To R.E. Bragg and wife on Wednesday night, February 6th, a boy."

[16] According to recent military history research, Braxton did not have children. Also Braxton was a native of North Carolina, while Paul's great grandfather (Andrew) and great grandmother (Mary) with the Bragg surname were born in Tennessee, according to the 1850 census. Andrew and Mary's eldest child was born in Tennessee, and their second child, James H., was born in Indiana.

[17] See "Amateur, in City Few Hours, Offers \$1,000 Side Bet He Can Defeat Any in Class," *Indianapolis Star*, September 18, 1913.

[18] Via USA Wrestling in Colorado Springs, Colorado, the below lists of American wrestlers on the Olympic teams of 1908 and 1912 were obtained from Mike Chapman's *Encyclopedia of American Wrestling*. For the 1908 games held in London, freestyle was the only style contested. The U.S. team had six members, who were:

Name	Weight Class	Results
George N. Mehnert	119	Gold Medal
George S. Dole	132.5	Gold Medal
John H. Krug	146.5	Eliminated in the second round
John Craige	160.5	Eliminated in the second round

Frank Narganes	160.5	Eliminated in the second round
Lee J. Talbot	160.5+	Eliminated in the second round

For the 1912 games held in Stockholm, Greco-Roman was the only style contested. There were only two American wrestlers on the team, who were:

Name	Weight Class	Results
William J. Lyshon	132	Eliminated in the second round
George W. Retzer Jr.	132	Eliminated in the second round

[19] On the East Coast, Paul had trouble for practicing medicine without a license, and in California, he was found guilty of the “betrayal” of one of his eighteen-year-old clients. The judgment was \$4,000, and after Bragg reportedly told the woman that he would leave the state to avoid paying the judgment, and employ a legal gambit in order to shield his assets from attachment, he was jailed. Bragg reportedly admitted that it was not the first judgment that he had evaded in that manner, and that his evasion techniques were justified, as “all is fair in love or war.” See “Betrayal Case Decided for Girl,” *Los Angeles Times*, April 6, 1934 and “Judgment Case Figure Put in Jail,” April 14, 1934.

[20] See, for instance, the immigration record for the voyage of the S.S. President Roosevelt, sailing from Bermuda on June 24, 1940, to the Port of New York. Paul C. Bragg was passenger 30, and the record stated that he was born on February 6, 1895 in Batesville, Indiana, which is consistent with his [draft card](#).

[21] See “Son Accuses his Wife and Father in Court,” *Los Angeles Times*, December 21, 1955. See “Son Drops his Charge Linking Wife, Father,” *Los Angeles Times*, January 17, 1956. The articles can be obtained online from the *Los Angeles Times*, for a nominal fee. In the accompanying photographs, the Patricia Bragg who was married to Robert is obviously the same person who calls herself Paul’s daughter today.

[22] That quote is from the back page of Bragg’s *Super Brain Breathing for Health and Energy*, in the 1980 edition.

[Return to My Home Page](http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm) (The address on the Internet of my home page is <http://www.ahealedplanet.net/home.htm>)



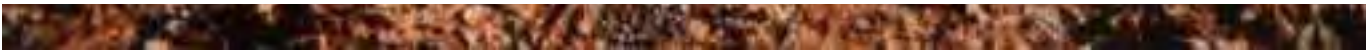












































The first image was taken in 1997. The second was taken in 2005. That is the same rock to my right in both images. There is no visible glacier in that second image. In the third image is from 2005, from closer to the glacier. As you can tell by comparing the mountainside above the glacier in those images, all the water in the last image was where the glacier was in 1997. The glacier receded more than two hundred yards in eight years. Holden, a village twelve miles downstream from this glacier, gets its electricity from hydroelectric power generated from watershed runoff. Their summer power largely comes from glacier runoff. When I visited Holden in 2003, they were having a science meeting about what to do when the glaciers that feed Holden all melt away in about twenty years. I was tempted to bring up free energy, but they have to do plenty of paradigm busting before they can wrap their minds around that concept.



















On January 21, 1990, the *New York Times* ran the below photograph. It depicts Lebanese journalists marching in a demonstration. The sign behind them translates to "Freedom of the press. Yes to the (printed) word, no to terror." The *Times* informed its readers that the sign said "In Allah's hands we are safe." Nabeel Abraham informed the *Times* of their error. The *Times* never printed a retraction or correction.

Wide World Photos



On September 12 of the same year, as George Bush the First was whipping up a murderous anti-Arab frenzy in America, the *New York Times* ran a picture of the Bank of Kuwait's logo on page C1. The Arabic script ringing the camel translates to "National Bank of Kuwait, Kuwait, 1952." The *Times* told its readers that the script translates to "There is no deity but Allah." Abraham again informed the *Times* about their "translation," and the *Times* again never printed a correction or retraction.



HOW THE NEWS WORKS... STEP ONE:
SPOKESMAN READS PREPARED STATEMENT
DETAILING INFORMATION GOVERNMENT
WISHES PUBLIC TO BELIEVE...

YOU SEE, THE PRESIDENT IS MORE
POWERFUL THAN A **LOCOMOTIVE** AND
ABLE TO LEAP TALL BUILDINGS AT A
SINGLE BOUND...



STEP TWO: REPORTERS RECORD INFORMA-
TION VERBATIM AND ASK A FEW SUPER-
FICIAL QUESTIONS WHICH ELICIT EVASIVE
ANSWERS...

BUT IS THE PRESI-
DENT FASTER THAN
A **SPEEDING BULLET?**

WE'VE GOT
NO COMMENT
AT THIS TIME.



STEP THREE: NEWSPAPERS AND TELEVISION
REWRITE GOVERNMENT PRESS RELEASE TO
GIVE ILLUSION OF ACTUAL REPORTAGE AND
THEN DISSEMINATE INFORMATION...



STEP FOUR: PUBLIC ACCEPTS GOVERNMENT
PRESS RELEASE AS VERIFIED FACTS UN-
COVERED BY A DILIGENT PRESS...

IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE
THAT THE PRESIDENT
HAS SUCH **AMAZING
POWERS!**

WELL, THEY
WOULDN'T
PRINT IT
IF IT WASN'T
TRUE!



©1991 Tom To Morrow





Images that Norman Schwarzkopf never regaled the American press with



This was a child who was hiding in a Baghdad bomb shelter on the night of February 13, 1991. The child was taking shelter there with about a thousand other women and children. The United States said the bomb shelter was an Iraqi military command center, a claim that was obviously false, and used a sophisticated bomb to penetrate the bomb shelter and incinerate its interior. Several hundred women and children died in that bomb shelter that night. The next day, on America's airwaves, the pundits were spinning the event as some sort of propaganda ploy by Saddam Hussein. From the Commission of Inquiry for the International War Crimes Tribunal, led by Ramsey Clark.



This was one of at least 100,000 Iraqi soldiers, mainly conscripts, who died in 1991 at the hands of the United States. This soldier, like nearly all the other dead ones, probably never even saw a U.S. soldier in the flesh before he died. Copyright 1991, Kenneth Jarecke/Contact Press Images.



This was an Iraqi soldier who was retreating from Kuwait under the orders of Saddam Hussein. He was one of many thousands of Iraq soldiers, civilians and Kuwaiti prisoners of war who were retreating to Iraq. They were in a caravan that was seven miles long. The United States spotted the retreating caravan, dropped bombs to disable the front and rear of the caravan, and then flew numerous missions, dropping cluster bombs and other weaponry on the helpless caravan. At least 10,000 people died on that stretch of highway, subsequently dubbed the "Highway of Death." Bombing a retreating army that posed no military threat is, by the Geneva Convention's definition, a war crime. Copyright 1991, Kenneth Jarecke/Contact Press Images.



Central Intelligence Agency
Publications Review Board
1016 Ames
Washington, D.C. 20505
Telephone No. (703) 351-2053

18 October 1990

Mr. Ralph W. McGehee
422 Arkansas Avenue
Herndon, VA 22070

Dear Mr. McGehee:

The Publications Review Board has completed its review of your data base entitled "CIABASE." The Board has no security objection to its publication and advises that you are not required to submit updated versions of your data base provided you do not include any intelligence information other than from open sources.

We would like to remind you that you should submit for review any brochures or other marketing information regarding the data base which contain biographical information describing your Agency career.

Your cooperation in this review process is appreciated.

Sincerely,

A handwritten signature in cursive script, reading "Anne Fischer".

Anne Fischer
Chairman, Publications Review Board

These images are from Gary Wean's *There's a Fish in the Courthouse*



Ofc. A.R.Cooper pointing at author's Sam Brown belt where bandit's bullet hit.





Nurse Edith Baier at Georgia Street Receiving Hospital treating bullet wound to author's hand.





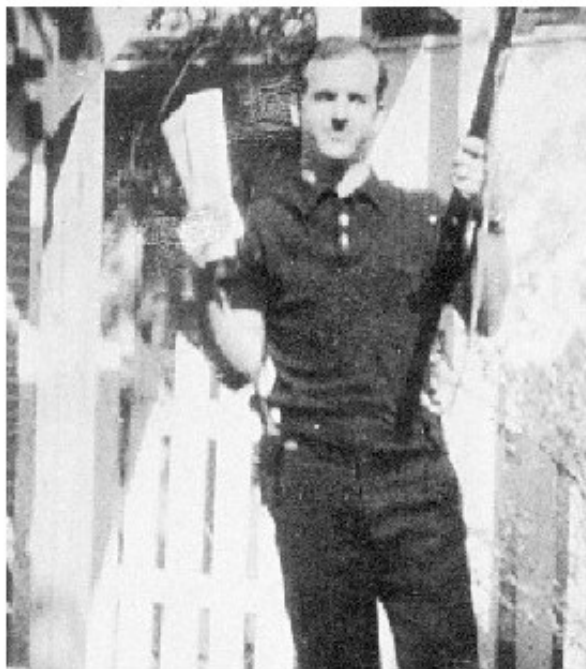


Photo 133-C.
"Discovered" in 1976



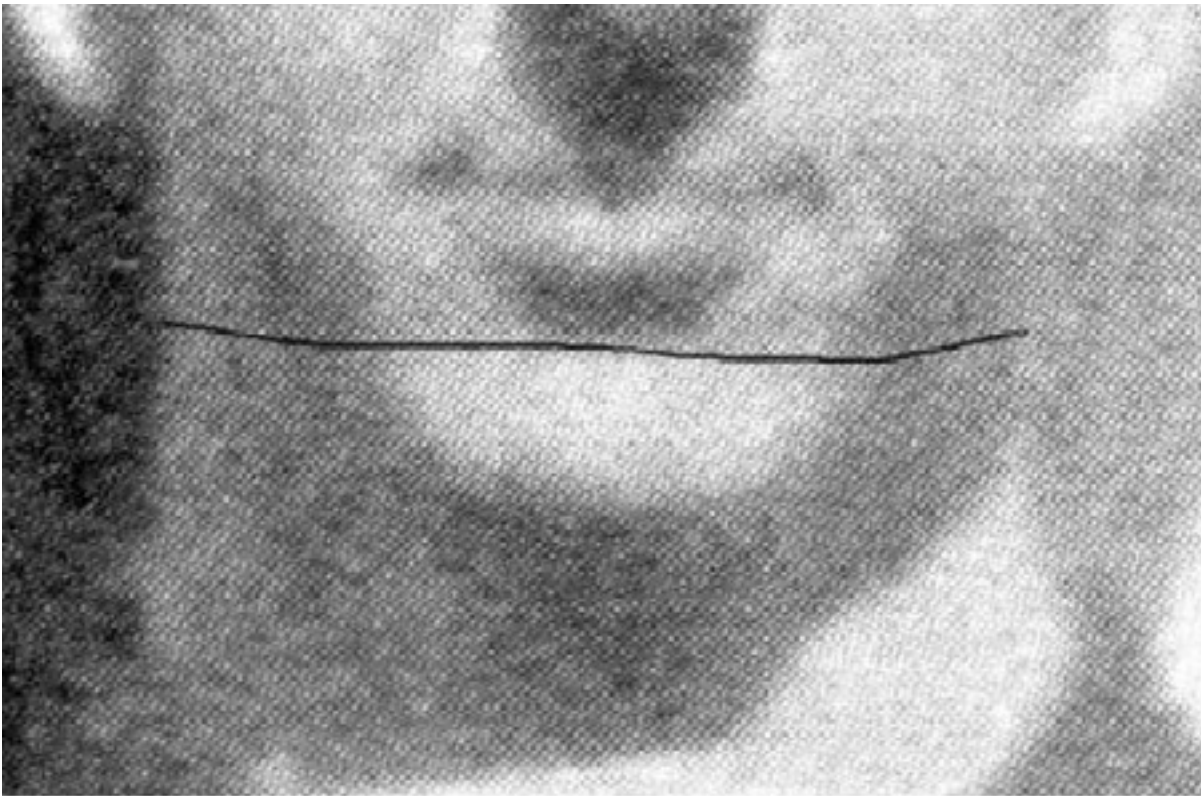
Dallas police 1964 reenactment of the backyard photos





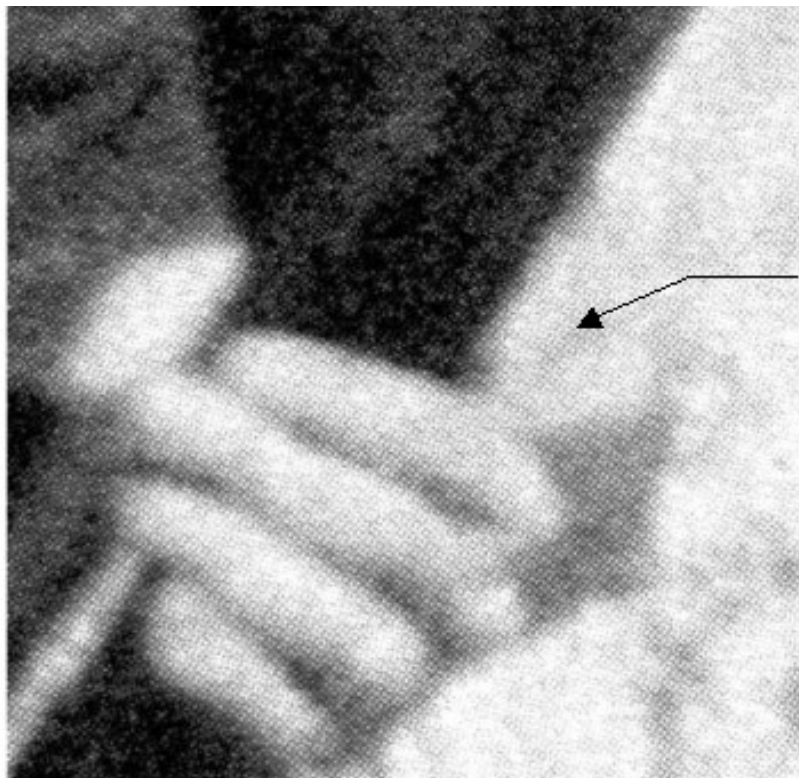
Did the man in the back yard have a pointy chin...

or a square chin?

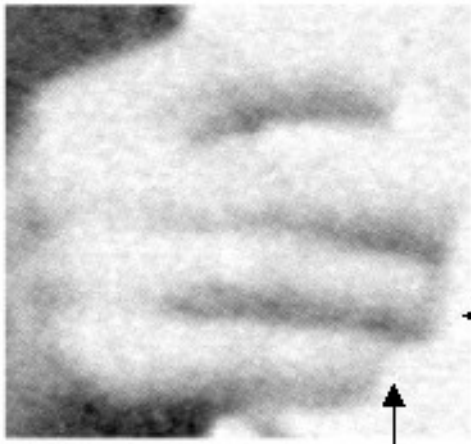


Possible crop line to forge Oswald's face onto the body

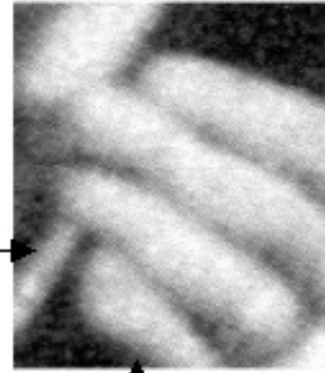




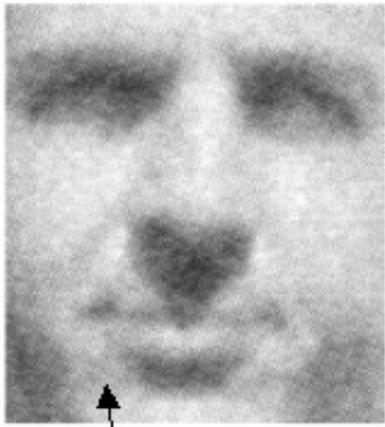
Where is
his
forearm?
Elbow?



Notice the flat fingertips. Did he have an accident with the meat cleaver?



Notice the rounded, tapered fingertips on his left hand.



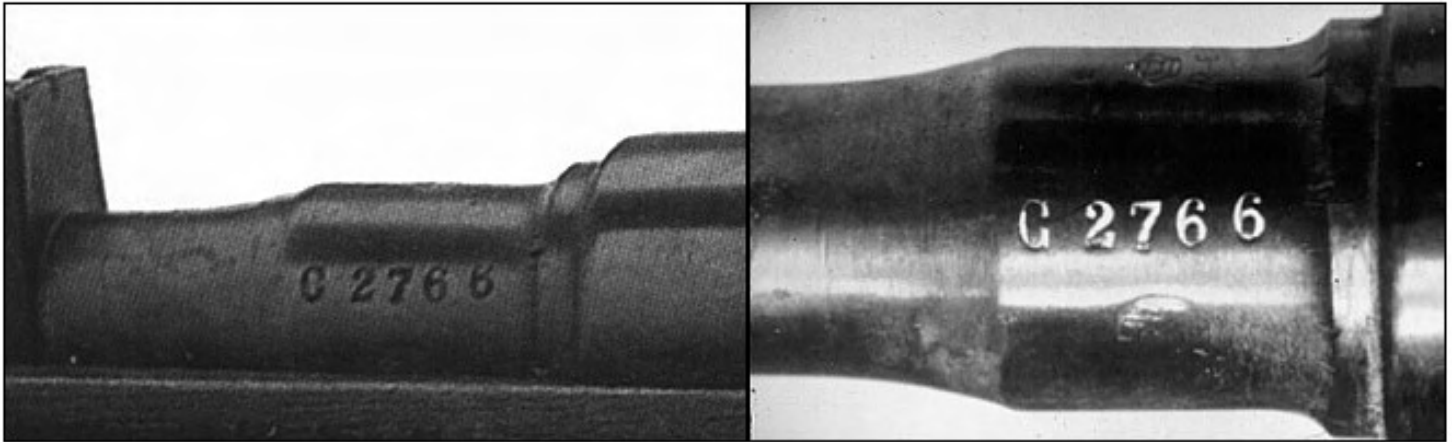
Note the healthy shadows below the eyebrows, nose and lower lip, the shadow lengths about equivalent to the distance the features stand out from the face.



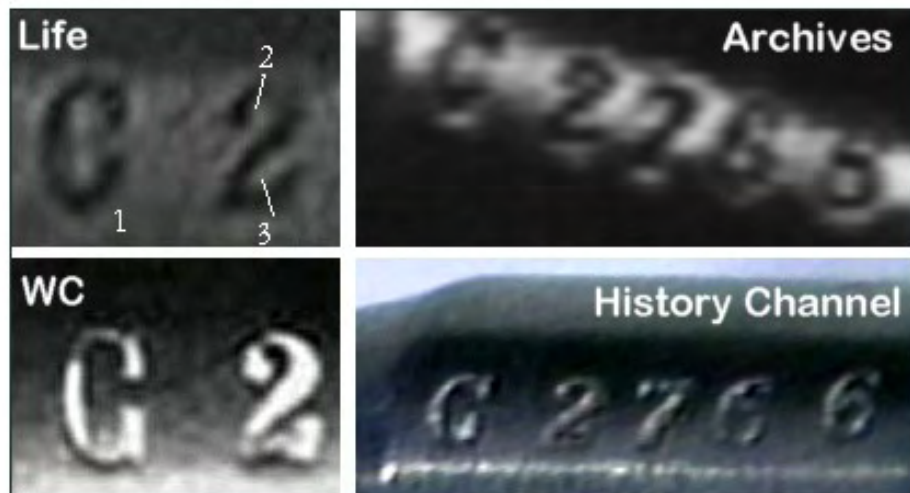
The fingers cast *no* shadow on the newspaper. This is even more evident in higher resolution photos.

The Serial Number Discrepancy

This is from an analysis by Jerry McLeer. The rifle was photographed during the Warren Commission investigation by FBI arms expert Robert Frazier. In 1983, the National Archives allowed Michael O'Neill of *Life Magazine* to photograph the murder weapon. McLeer presented several discrepancies between the two rifles, and the serial number discrepancies are most impressive.



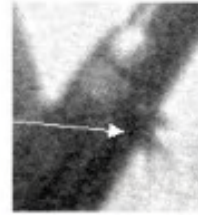
The right image is from the Warren Commission in 1964, the left image is from *Life Magazine*, from its photo session at the National Archives. Note how the section where the serial number is stamped slightly "balloons" going leftward, in the Warren Commission photo. Also note the irregularity in the metal surface below the serial number in the Warren Commission photo, an irregularity that is not present in the *Life Magazine* photo.



Note the distinct differences in the serial numbers, particularly in the "C" and "2." The "C" in the *Life* photo has a rounded bottom, while the Warren Commission "C" has a serif on the bottom that makes the "C" resemble a "G." Similarly, the "2" in the *Life*/National Archives rifle is less ornate than the Warren Commission rifle. "2," with the Warren Commission "2" having a "teardrop" end to it, a fatter vertical shaft, and the "tail" of the "2" nearly comes up and touches the vertical shaft. Note the difference in the gap between the tail and the shaft in both "2s." There is a very distinctly larger gap in the *Life*/National Archives "2."

These are obviously not the same serial numbers, which means they are not the same rifles. Whoever performed the forgery of creating two rifles obviously did a very sophisticated job, but there is no perfect crime, and this is some evidence of the forgery. McLeer presents far more evidence in his analysis.

Backyard photo
strap ring.



Murder weapon being
taken from book
depository.



National
Archives weapon



133-C strap

National
Archives
strap ring.



Official
autopsy
photograph



The location where
nearly every
Parkland Hospital
medical witness
placed JFK's major
head wound.



Like the crop line on
Oswald's chin, is this
a crop line where the
wound was covered
up? See the radical
change in the hair
above and below the
line; above is shiny
and wet, below is dry,
and it looks like a
different color.



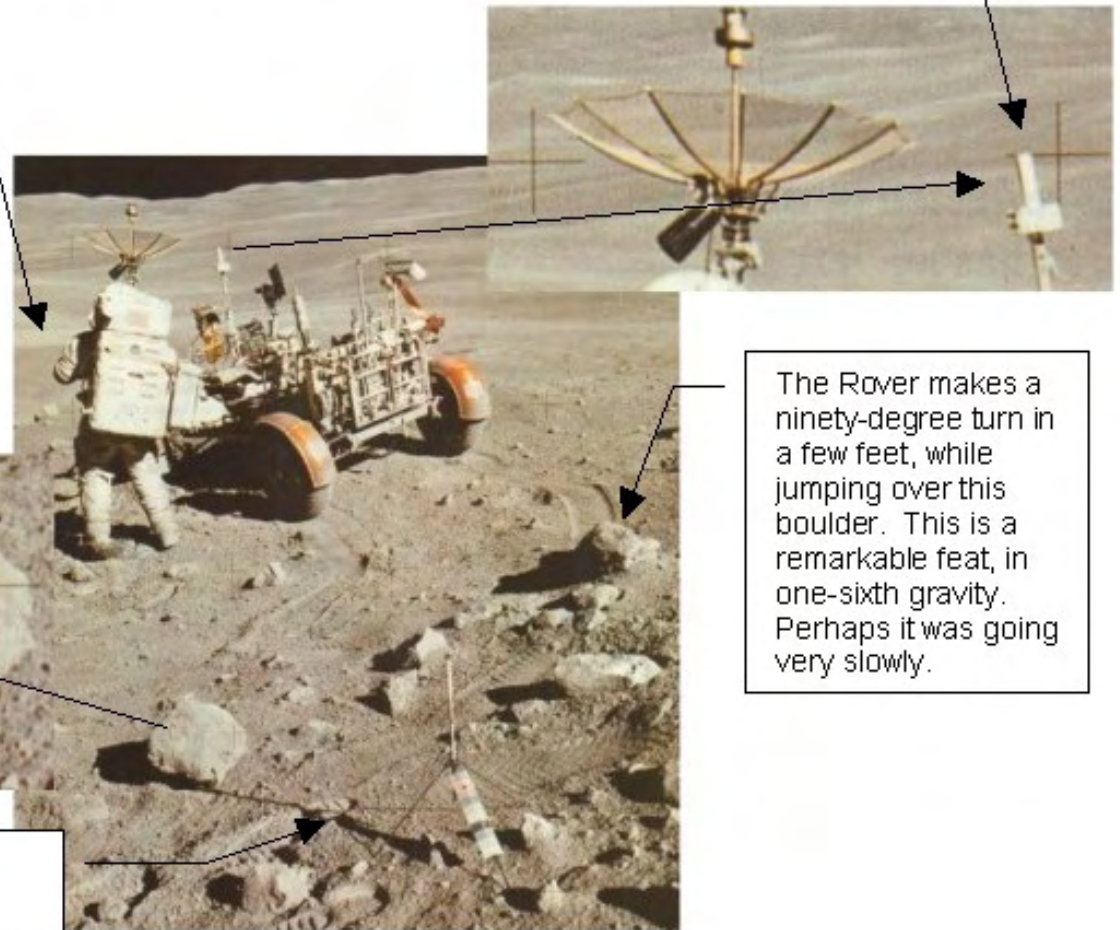
The Rover is superimposed over the crosshair. The debunkers say it is a case of the white of the Rover bleeding over the crosshair.

There is an abrupt transition from foreground to distance, as if the scene is shot with a backdrop. NASA says it is because of the moon's tight curvature that the marked contrast such as this exists in many lunar photos. NASA frame # AS16-107-17446

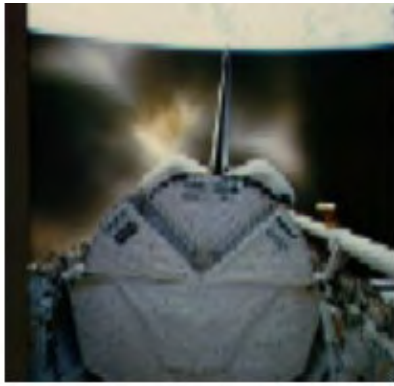
The famous "C" rock, thought to be a hoax by the debunkers, or perhaps an innocent color processing code. Steve Troy finally resolved the issue. See "C" in hyper-enlargement below. It is a hair that got on a lens when copying the image in a later generation.



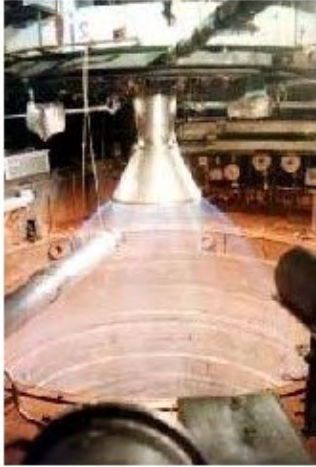
The shadows cast by the rocks and Rover are not parallel. An uneven terrain can explain this phenomenon.



The Rover makes a ninety-degree turn in a few feet, while jumping over this boulder. This is a remarkable feat, in one-sixth gravity. Perhaps it was going very slowly.



Space shuttle hypergolic
rocket exhaust



From the Clavius site. It is the exact fuel used in the LM, in a vacuum environment, at the Arnold Engineering Development Center. Though the jet appears more widely dispersed than the LM blast, this is a less visible flame than others. I would not call it invisible, though. That, combined with the daylight on the moon and video cameras, may account for the lack of visible exhaust.

Apollo 16 LM liftoff sequence



1



2



3

Brightest the light gets



4



5

No exhaust light or stream



6

Dust kicked up



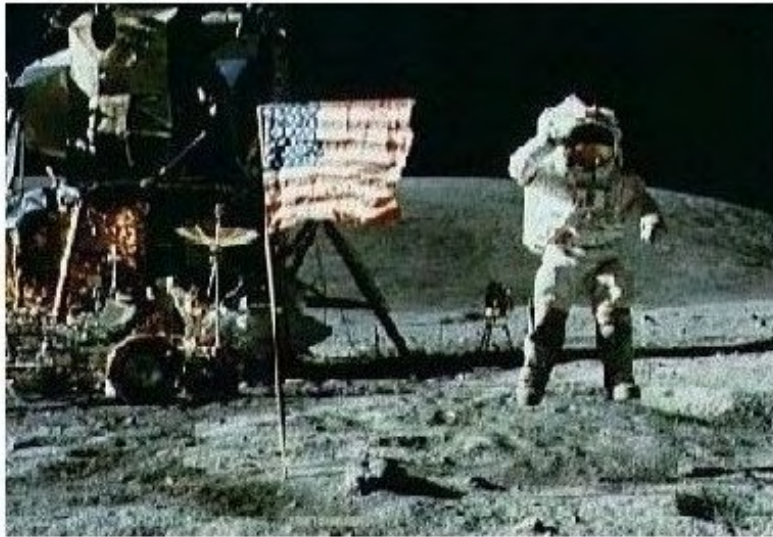
7

On its way, no visible light or exhaust.



Apollo 17
LM liftoff

Until now, this was considered to be the Greatest Athletic Feat ever Recorded on the Moon



The image on the left is taken with a still camera on Apollo 14. The image on the right is taken with a video camera on Apollo 17. Discussion of the faceplate sun reflection discrepancies is in the text.

Distance from bottom of boot to ground is the same distance as from bottom of boot to knee, which is 18 inches for a six-foot-tall man.

In one-sixth gravity, his leap should have reached more than four times the height that he could have reached on earth. Wearing a suit that weighed slightly more than he did, an eighteen-inch leap on the moon was the equivalent of a 4.5-inch earth "leap." My grandmother could have done that. Jumping up one stair in a home takes more effort.



He bent his legs and lowered and raised his arms normally for a standing jump.



A leap such as this, the equivalent of a mere 12 inch earth leap, would have been an impressive feat that displayed the one-sixth-earth gravity of the moon. It turns out, though, that somebody *did* perform a feat of that magnitude. It has not been part of the debate until now.

These frames are from the official NASA footage of the Apollo 13 mission. Although they supposedly had to conserve their electricity consumption to a minimum, they could still power their video camera to record the events on board. These frames were supposedly taken while in space well beyond earth orbit, between earth and its moon. There should be no "blue sky" out there. How can there be blue light coming through the windows? The obvious answer is that the footage was not taken on the way to the moon or on the way back, but in earth orbit. The debunker explanation has been that ice crystals on the windows caused the blue color. There were no visible ice crystals on the windows.



Here are some Apollo 11 photographs, supposedly taken beyond earth orbit, also with blue windows. perhaps there is a prosaic explanation. At this time, I am satisfied that this Apollo 11 footage was taken far beyond earth orbit.

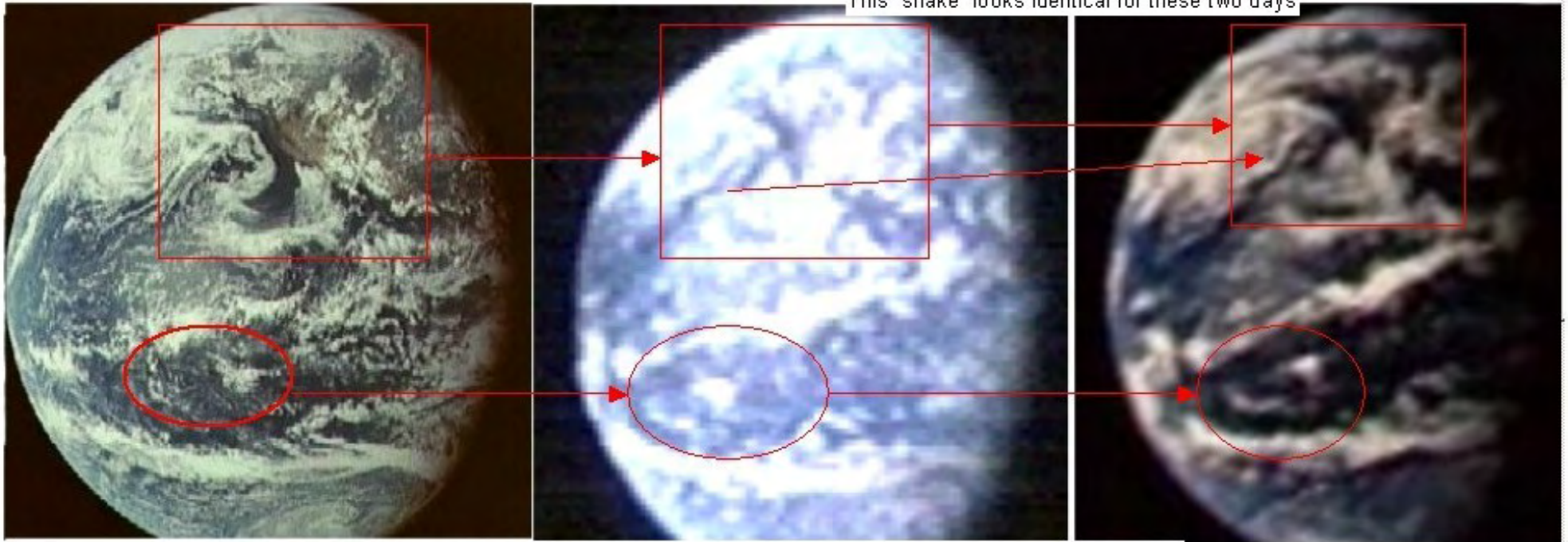


Day 1, GET 12 hours
NASA frame AS11-36-5337
50,000 miles out.

Day 2, GET 34 hours
Sibrel footage,
130,000 miles out

Day 3, GET 59 hours
AS11-36-5374
176,000 miles out

This "snake" looks identical for these two days



Three days during May 2001. San Joaquin Valley looks like a peninsula here too. The cloud patterns have not shifted all that much. The NASA footage appears to have reasonable relative lack of shift, at least to me.



He lands on the third stair of the LM with his leap.

Neil Armstrong, about to hop onto LM ladder and leave the lunar surface.

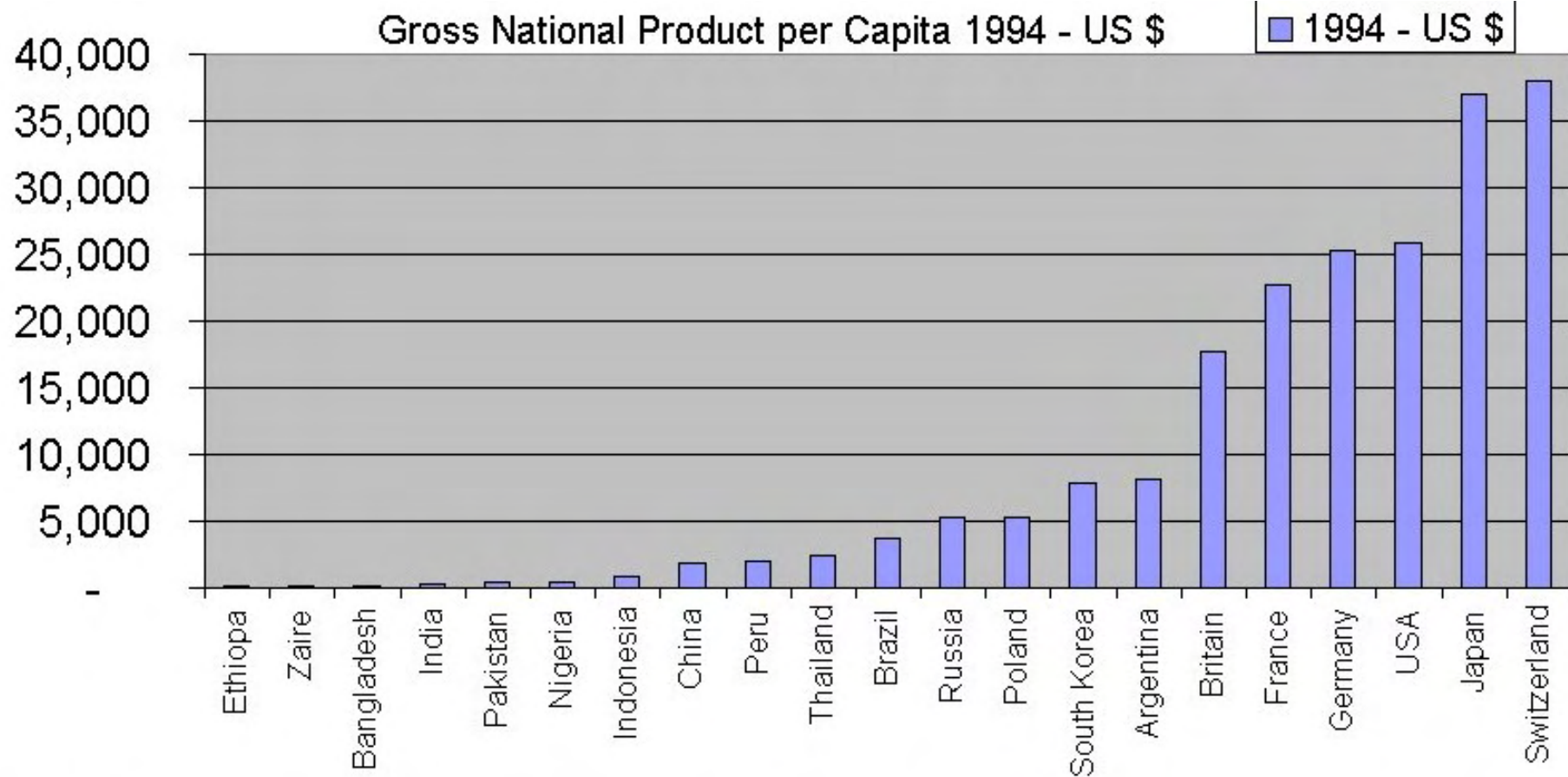
Puts hands to ladder here.

In mid-flight here.

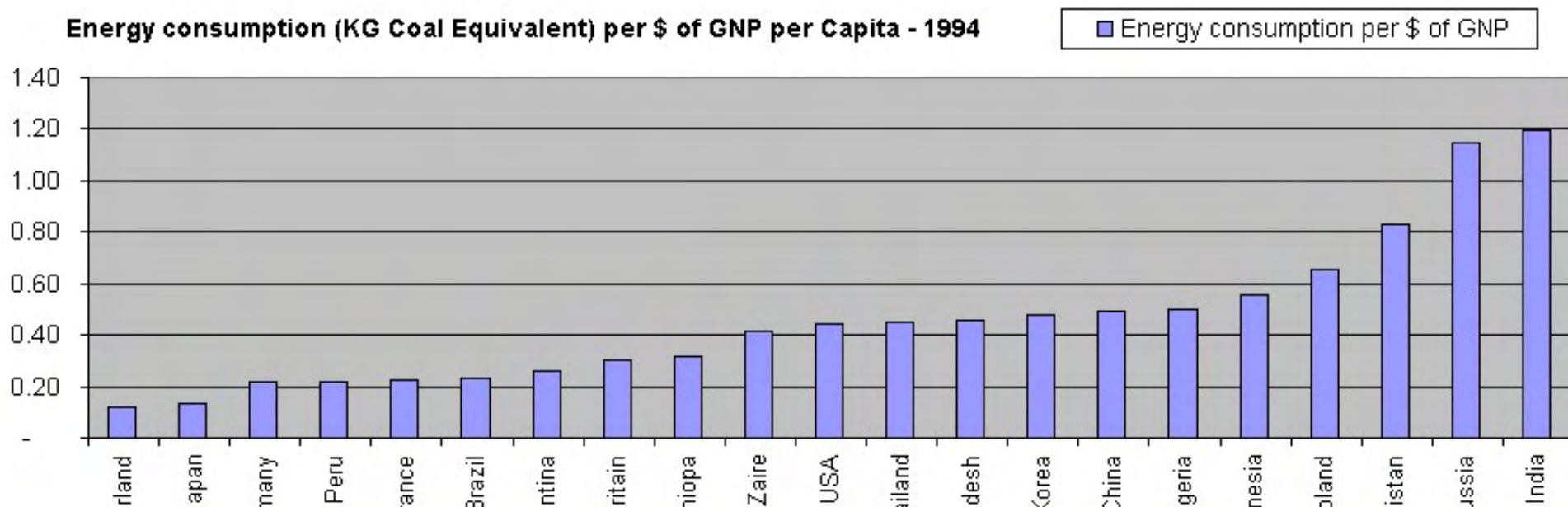
Notice how he bends his knees.

In comparing pre and post-leap frames, he appears to have achieved about chest height with his leap, or four feet high. Here is the evidence I sought for so long.





Energy consumption (KG Coal Equivalent) per \$ of GNP per Capita - 1994



Switze

J

Gerr

Fr

E

Arge

B

Etl

The

Bangla

South K

(

Ni

Indo

Pi

Pak

Ri

Iraq

Hello. My Iraq writings were incorporated into my American Empire essay at

<http://www.ahealedplanet.net/america.htm>

as of September 2002.

Wade Frazier



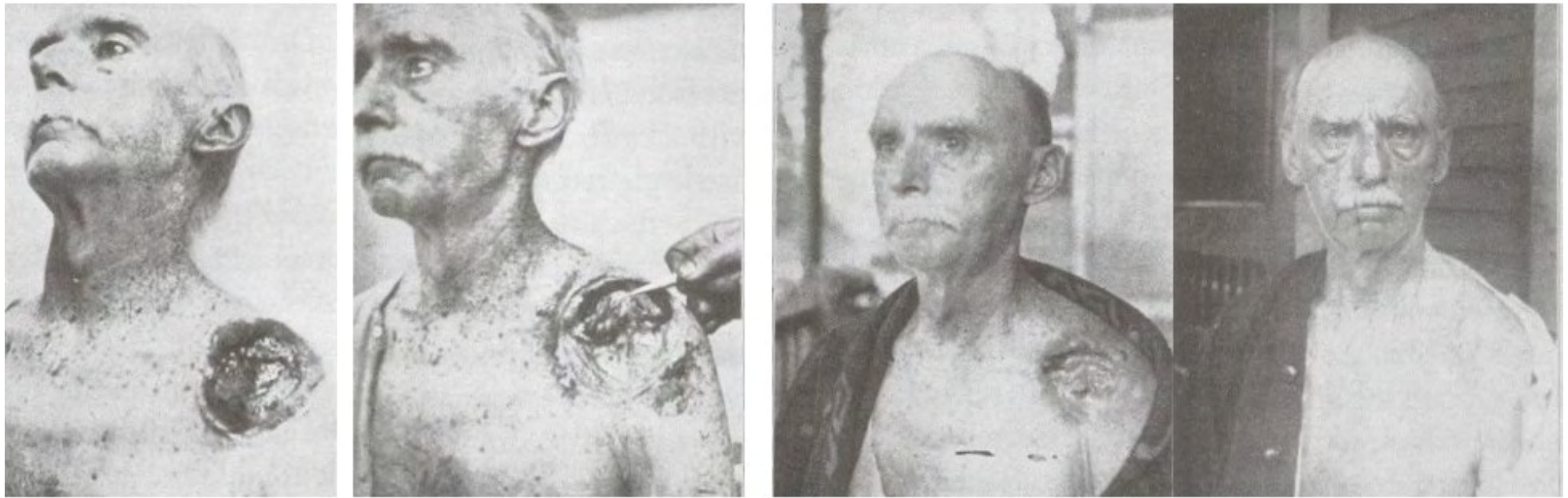
Snake Goddess, c. 1600 B.C.
Palace of Knossos, Crete.
Archeological Museum, Iráklion, Greece



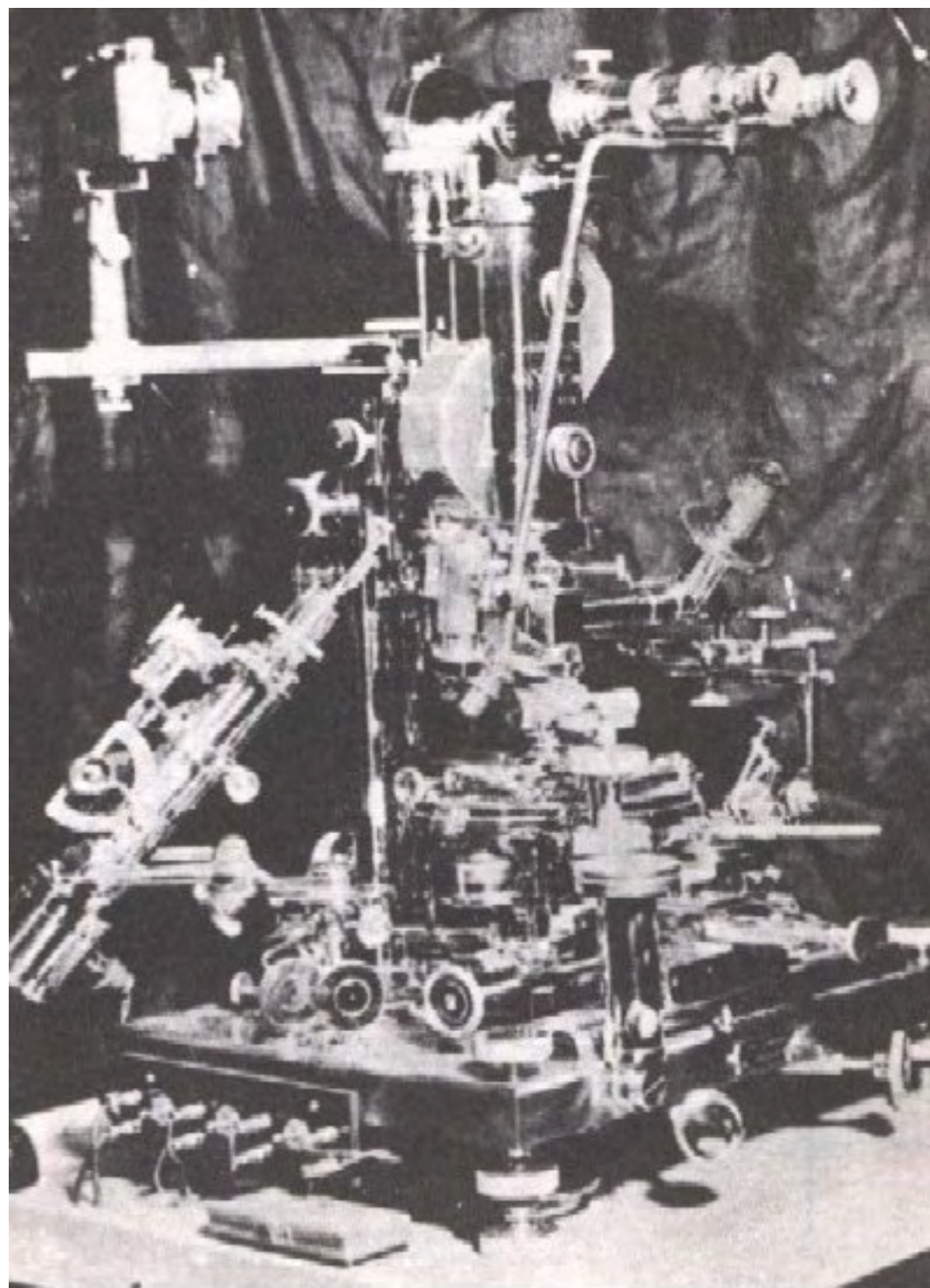
Temptation in the Garden of Eden.
Michelangelo, Sistine Chapel ceiling.



The caduceus, the symbol of medicine today.
The staff of Asclepius, the Greek god of
healing, had one serpent entwine his staff.
His daughters included Hygeia, the goddess
of health, and Panacea, the goddess of healing.



This series of photographs is of Chicago policeman Thomas Mannix. His cancerous shoulder had already been treated with surgery and radiation, and he was given a few weeks to live by orthodox medicine. Harry Hoxsey had recently opened his first cancer treatment clinic in early 1924, and impressed doctors arranged to have Hoxsey treat this terminal policeman, only to see if the treatment was toxic. They expected no improvement in the policeman's condition, and Hoxsey treated the man, with the results seen above. When the policeman miraculously recovered, Morris Fishbein became involved and Hoxsey was offered a contract to sign over the rights to Fishbein and friends. When Hoxsey refused to sign the contract, because Fishbein and friends would not treat patients if they could not pay, Fishbein led a crusade against Hoxsey that ultimately ruined Fishbein's career, as well as driving Hoxsey's cure from the United States.



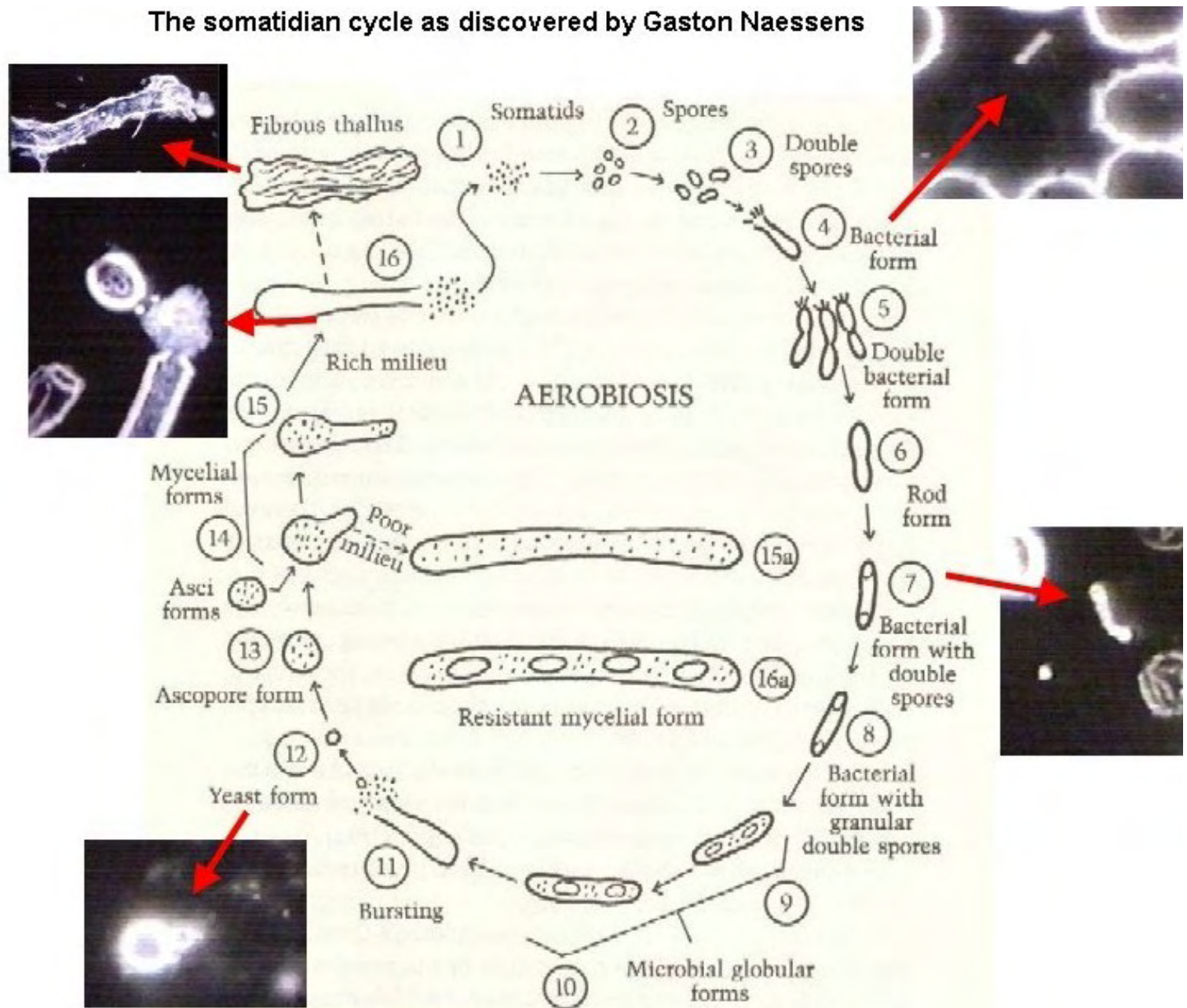
Royal Rife's Universal Microscope, built in 1933.

The somatidian cycle as discovered by Gaston Naessens

A typical stained blood specimen, seen with a light field microscope.



Living blood as seen with the Somatoscope. The inter-cellular "debris" are somatids and other organisms.



Some of the Unsung Heroes of Microbiology and Medicine

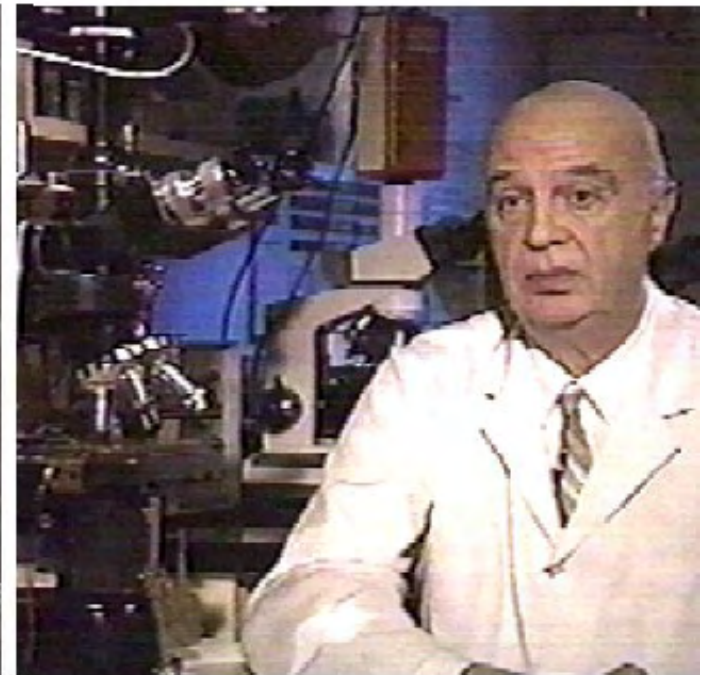
Antoine Béchamp (1816-1908), the father of pleomorphic microbiology, whose work Louis Pasteur apparently plagiarized, but corrupted due to his lack of understanding.



Royal Rife (1888-1971), inventor of the world's most powerful microscope in the 1930s, which had more than ten times the resolution of standard light microscopes. Rife confirmed Béchamp's pleomorphic theories and created an effective disease treatment based upon his discoveries. It cured cancer and other diseases.



Gaston Naessens (b. 1924), inventor of the Somatoscope, which gained optical resolutions similar to Rife's. Naessens also invented an effective disease treatment based on his discoveries. It cures cancer and other diseases.



THIS MODERN WORLD

by Tom Tomorrow

IT'S TIME FOR YET ANOTHER LOOK AT HOW THE NEWS WORKS...**STEP ONE:** A CORPORATION WHICH HAS BEEN CAUGHT ENGAGING IN SOME ILLEGAL OR UNETHICAL ACT HIRES A **PUBLIC RELATIONS FIRM...**

PEOPLE ARE **UPSET** BECAUSE WE'VE BEEN DUMPING **TOXIC SLUDGE** INTO THE WATER SUPPLY!

WELL--BY THE TIME **WE'RE** THROUGH, THEY'LL **THANK YOU** FOR IT!



STEP TWO: THE P.R. FIRM PROCEEDS TO MANIPULATE PUBLIC OPINION IN A VARIETY OF DEVIOUS, UNDERHANDED WAYS-- SUCH AS ANONYMOUSLY PLANTING OP-ED PIECES IN THE NATION'S **NEWSPAPERS...**

SEPTEMBER 27, 1992

What's So Bad About Toxic Sludge?

by Joe Pundit

When asked what their goal was with this column, the author stated that it was to provide a "balanced" view of the issue. The author stated that they were not taking sides, but were simply providing a "balanced" view of the issue. The author stated that they were not taking sides, but were simply providing a "balanced" view of the issue. The author stated that they were not taking sides, but were simply providing a "balanced" view of the issue.

...AS WELL AS SENDING OUT SLICKLY-PRODUCED "VIDEO NEWS RELEASES" WHICH MANY CASH-STRAPPED LOCAL NEWS DEPARTMENTS AIR VIRTUALLY **UNEDITED...** GIVING CORPORATE PROPAGANDA THE APPEARANCE OF OBJECTIVE **REPORTING...**

...AND SO YOU SEE, TOXIC SLUDGE IS ACTUALLY QUITE **GOOD** FOR YOU!

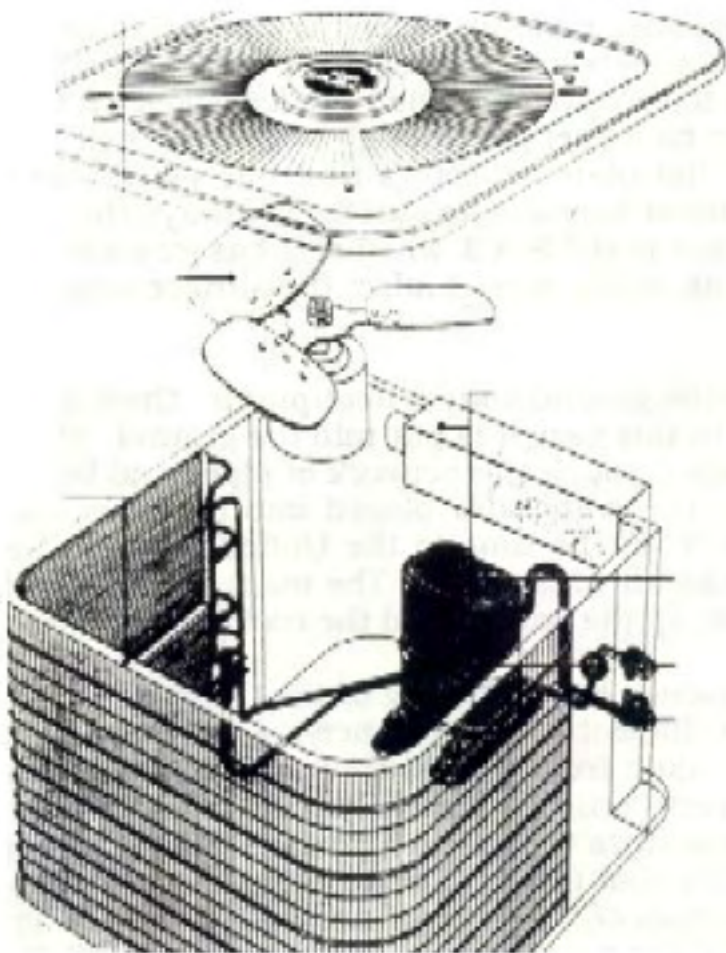


STEP THREE: PUBLIC OPINION IS **SWAYED** BY THIS ONSLAUGHT OF MEDIA MANIPULATION MASQUERADING AS **NEWS...** SINCE, AS P.R. FIRMS WELL UNDERSTAND, ANY LIE REPEATED **OF-TEN** ENOUGH BECOMES **TRUE...**

I CAN'T IMAGINE WHY WE EVER WORRIED ABOUT **TOXIC SLUDGE!**

YES--HOW **SILLY** WE WERE!





This is a diagram of a standard air-to-air heat pump for a typical American home. The evaporator looks like an automobile radiator, and provides a few square feet, at best, of evaporator contact with the environment. The fan increases the environmental heat exchange.



These are the evaporator arrays of some LamCo-style heat pumps in the field.



November 2, 1979

Bill:

Thank you for allowing us to instrument your one-third horsepower solar assisted LamCo system. The results were better than anticipated and I attribute this to the wind we experienced on that day. Even though the sky was partly cloudy and temperatures around 50 degrees farenheit, the empirical data showed a COP of seven.

Raw Data

1. Flow rate (heat exchanger) = 2 gal/min
2. Delta T = 6 degrees farenheit
3. Input power = 248.67 watts

Calculations

Input power to BTU's/hr =
 $248.67 \times 3.41 = 847.95 \text{ BTU's/hr}$

Output BTU's/hr =
 $8.32 \text{ lb/gal} \times 2 \text{ gal} = 16.64 \text{ lb/min}$
 $16.64 \text{ lb/min} \times 6 \text{ degrees} = 99.84 \text{ BTU's/min}$
 $99.84 \text{ BTU's/min} \times 60 = 5990.4 \text{ BTU's/hr}$

$$\text{COP} = \frac{5990.4 \text{ BTU out}}{847.95 \text{ BTU in}} = 7.06$$

Thanks again Bill,

W Senior Engineer

c/o Solar Heating System
JKD/ns

Bill: LamCo specifications for L-033 unit at 50° show a C.O.P. of 3.37. The letter shows that it more than doubled with partly cloudy and wind.

LamCo L-200

Installed 1/21/80

1979 Oil Use: 1562 Gallons

1979 Electric Use: 1/22/79 to 1/22/80 16,411 KWH

1980 Oil Use: 200 Gallons

1980 Electric Use: 1/22/80 to 1/22/81 18,477 KWH

Electric cost without residential heat rate: \$.08/KWH

Electric cost with residential heat rate: \$.058/KWH

Average Oil Cost 1980: \$ 1.20/gallon

Costs Without LamCo (Oil)

With LamCo

1562/gal. x \$1.20 = \$ 1,874.00

200/gal. x \$1.20 = \$ 240.00

Electric Without RH - \$.08/KWH

With RH - \$.058/KWH

16,411 KWH x \$.08 = \$1,312.00

18,477 KWH x \$.058 = \$ 1,072.00

Net Electric Difference Minus (-) \$ 240.00

SAVINGS

LamCo Electric - \$ 240.00
Oil 240.00
 000.00

Oil \$ 1,874.00

NET SAVINGS \$ 1,874.00

% SAVINGS \$ 1,874 ÷ \$ 1,874 = 100%

An Image From a Fun Day



This is Dennis, in his white tuxedo, speaking to a "crowd" of about 35 people, in the Old South Meeting Hall in Boston, where some of America's Founding Fathers met before they had the Boston Tea Party. This was Dennis' first Greatest Energy Show on Earth, which shows both his P.T. Barnum nature and his indefatigable patriotism. Those were happy and innocent days for me.

Some Images from a Not-So-Fun Day

These are pictures of Mr. Deputy and friends hauling off our demonstration units during the raid, with me supervising. Notice Mr. Deputy's gun. I am standing against the wall. Behind that wall was Mr. Researcher's office. Unbeknownst to me at that time, the sheriff's deputies had ransacked Mr. Researcher's office hours earlier, before their official search began, and took a few boxes of technical documents out of the building, which we never saw again, nor did they ever admit to taking them. Mr. Researcher and our machinist were able to see through the machine shop's windows, and they saw them (that deputy in the tie) photographing our prototype blueprints, while rolling them out on Mr. Researcher's desk. They repeatedly denied doing it, even though we saw them in the act. Mr. Deputy even told Mr. Researcher that Dennis stole his own documents the night after the raid, to fabricate an appearance of the sheriff's crime. Nobody believed that lie, but because Mr. Deputy had the gun, badge, jail and Kangaroo Court on his side, Mr. Researcher did not challenge his lie at the time. He testified in court to it years later, though.



This is an image of the deputies occupying the front lobby of our building, with Dennis' wife (out of view to the left of the doorway, outside of it) trying to challenge the legality of their occupation. We were on the outside looking in. Unknown to me, the man in the tie, barely visible in the background, had already photographed our prototype blueprints. The full extent of their crime was not evident until the next morning, when we were finally allowed back into our premises.



7-224

TWELFTH CENSUS OF THE UNITED STATES.

SCHEDULE No. 1.—POPULATION.

Supervisor's Dis
Enumeration DiX
X

of county

District of Columbia

Name of Institution,

town, or village, within the above-named division,

Washington City

Enumerated by me on the 5 day of June, 1900, H. D. Hall, Enumerator.

NAME In whose place of use 1. 1900, was the family.	RELATION.	PERSONAL DESCRIPTION.							NATIVITY. Place of birth of each person and parents of each person enumerated. If born in the United States, give the State or Territory; if of foreign birth, give the Country only.	CITIZENSHIP.		OCCUPATION, TRA PROFESSION of each person TEN YEAR
		DATE OF BIRTH.	Sex.	Color.	Married.	Single.	Widow.	Divorced.		1.	2.	

112	195	William	Son	M	M	July 1877	22			District of Columbia	District of Columbia	District of Columbia
113	196	Gray	Head	M	M	Sept 1858	41			Maryland	Maryland	Maryland
114	197	Emma	Wife	M	F	Jan 1870	30			District of Columbia	District of Columbia	District of Columbia
115	198	Robert E.	Son	M	M	Jan 1894	10			District of Columbia	District of Columbia	District of Columbia
116	199	Daphne	Daughter	M	F	Sept 1893	6			District of Columbia	District of Columbia	District of Columbia
117	200	Robert E.	Daughter	M	M	Jan 1897	6			Maryland	Maryland	Maryland
118	201	Briggs	Head	M	M	Feb 1865	35			Indiana	Indiana	Indiana
119	202	Jessie	Wife	M	F	Mar 1874	26			Indiana	Indiana	Indiana
120	203	Ellen	Son	M	M	Jan 1894	6			Indiana	Indiana	Indiana
121	204	Paul	Son	M	M	Feb 1896	6			Indiana	Indiana	Indiana
122	205	John	Son	M	M	Apr 1899	1			District of Columbia	Indiana	Indiana
123	206	Boxwell	Head	M	M	May 1875	25			Virginia	Virginia	Virginia
124	207	Lucinda	Wife	M	F	Jan 1879	21			Virginia	Virginia	Virginia
125	208	Madame	Head	M	F	Jan 1862	38			Indiana	Indiana	Indiana

REGISTRATION CARD 27/27

1 Name Paul C. Bragg (Last name) (First name) 22

2 Address 2435 N. New Jersey Ind. 100

3 Date of birth Feb 6th 1895

4 How you (1) a natural born citizen, (2) a naturalized citizen, (3) an alien, (4) or have you declared your intention to become a citizen? natural born

5 Where born Batesville Ind. U.S.A. (Town) (State) (Country)

6 If not a citizen, of what country are you a citizen or subject?

7 What is your present occupation, profession, or office? Insurance agent

8 By whom employed? Metropolitan Life Ins. Co.

9 Where employed? 1411 Merchants Bank Bldg.

10 How long a father, mother, or a child under 12, or a minor or brother under 12, solely dependent on you? wife

11 Married or single? Married Race Caucasian

12 What military service have you had? Rank private Natl. Guard

13 3 yrs Washington D. C.

14 Do you have other persons living with you? dependent wife

I affirm that I have written above answers and that they are true.

Paul C. Bragg

2271

13-3-12—A

REGISTRAR'S REPORT

1 Tell, briefly, or about (specify which)? med med

2 Color of eyes? dark Color of hair? dark Build? med

3 How person last seen, by, how, last, or last seen, or is he absent or deceased (specify)? med

I certify that my answers are true, that the person registered has read his own answers, that I have witnessed his signature, and that all of his answers of which I have knowledge are true, except as follows:

M. E. McDonald
(Signature of Registrar)

President Julius Pusquier

City or County Ind. 100

Date June 5, 1917
(Date of Registration)

Recorder Center M.

City or Division No. 2, City of Indianapolis,
State of Indiana, 100 City Trust Bldg.,
Indianapolis, Indiana.

Form SS-5
TREASURY DEPARTMENT
INTERNAL REVENUE SERVICE
(Revised 7-46)

APPLICATION FOR SOCIAL SECURITY ACCOUNT NUMBER
REQUIRED UNDER THE FEDERAL INSURANCE CONTRIBUTIONS ACT
READ INSTRUCTIONS ON BACK BEFORE FILLING IN FORM

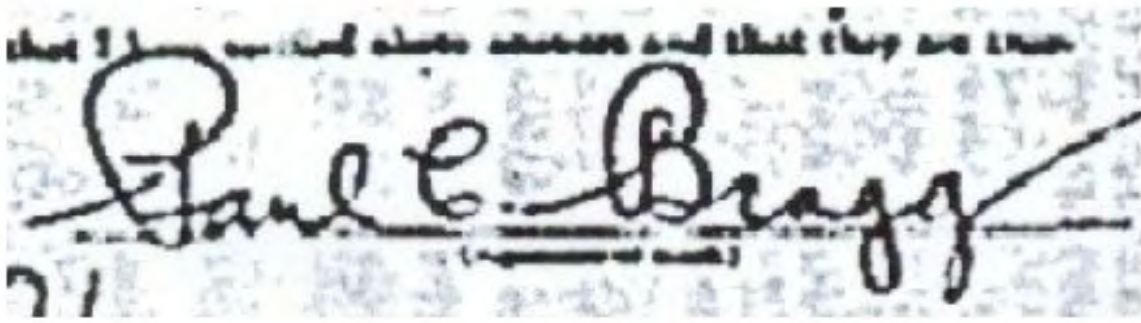
SSN Redacted

FILL IN EACH ITEM. PRINT IN BLACK OR DARK BLUE INK OR USE TYPEWRITER FOR ALL ITEMS EXCEPT SIGNATURE. IF THE INFORMATION CALLED FOR IN ANY ITEM IS NOT KNOWN, WRITE "UNKNOWN."

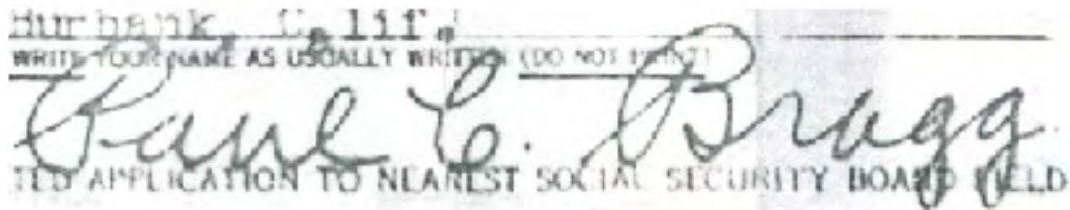
1. PRINT NAME YOU HAVE YOUR PRESENT EMPLOYER, OR IF UNEMPLOYED, THE NAME YOU WILL USE WHEN EMPLOYED		FIRST NAME Paul	MIDDLE NAME, IF YOU USE NO MIDDLE NAME OR INITIAL, DRAW A LINE ---- C.H.A.	LAST NAME Bragg
2. MAILING ADDRESS (NO. & ST., P. O. BOX, OR RFD) (CITY) (ZONE) (STATE) P.O. Box 310, Burbank, California				
4. AGE ON LAST BIRTHDAY 54	5. DATE OF BIRTH (MONTH) (DAY) (YEAR) Feb. 6, 1895			
7. FATHER'S FULL NAME, REGARDLESS OF WHETHER LIVING OR DEAD Robert Elton Bragg				
9. (MARK (X) WHICH) MALE FEMALE SEX ☒ ☐				
10. (MARK (X) WHICH) WHITE NEGRO OTHER RACE ☒ ☐ ☐				
12. BUSINESS NAME OF EMPLOYER, IF UNEMPLOYED, WRITE "UNEMPLOYED" Health Science, Inc. EMPLOYER'S ADDRESS (NUMBER AND STREET) (CITY) (ZONE) (STATE) 33 East Magnolia, Burbank, Calif.				
11. HAVE YOU EVER BEFORE APPLIED FOR OR HAD A SOCIAL SECURITY OR RAILROAD RETIREMENT NUMBER? (MARK (X) WHICH) YES NO DON'T KNOW ☐ ☒ ☐ IF ANSWER IS "YES," PRINT THE STATE IN WHICH YOU FIRST APPLIED AND WHEN STATE DATE ALSO PRINT YOUR ACCOUNT NUMBER IF YOU KNOW IT ACCOUNT NUMBER				
13. TODAY'S DATE Dec. 2, 1949		14. WRITE YOUR NAME AS USUALLY WRITTEN (DO NOT PRINT) Paul C. Bragg		

RETURN COMPLETED APPLICATION TO NEAREST SOCIAL SECURITY BOARD FIELD OFFICE

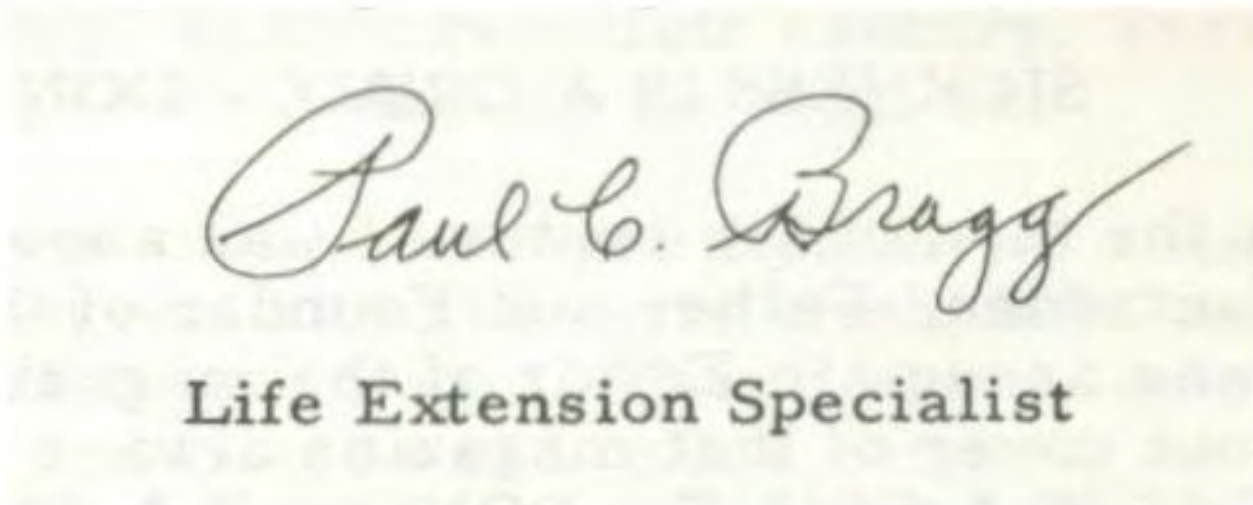
16-4539-4

A black and white photograph of a handwritten signature, "Paul C. Bragg", in cursive. The signature is written on a document that appears to be a draft card, with some printed text visible above and below the signature.

Above is Paul C. Bragg's signature from his 1917 draft card, which noted his birthday as February 6, 1895, in Indiana, and his profession as an insurance agent.

A black and white photograph of a handwritten signature, "Paul C. Bragg", in cursive. The signature is written on a document that appears to be a Social Security application, with printed text visible above and below the signature.

Above is Paul C. Bragg's signature from his 1949 Social Security Account Number application, which also noted his February 6, 1895 birthday.

A black and white photograph of a handwritten signature, "Paul C. Bragg", in cursive. The signature is written on a document that appears to be a book cover or endpaper, with printed text visible below the signature.

Above is Paul C. Bragg's signature in the 1976 edition of his *The Miracle of Fasting*. All three signatures are virtually identical, with the forward slant of the "P" and "B" in the 1976 signature evident in the 1949 signature. The same Paul C. Bragg made all three signatures.

C. Bragg made all three signatures.